

Volume 10

T-Z

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY



contents

Entries by Nationality xvii

Reader's Guide xxxi

Volume 1: A–Ba

Hank Aaron	1	Aeschylus	29
Ralph Abernathy	4	Spiro Agnew	31
Bella Abzug	7	Alvin Ailey	34
Chinua Achebe	10	Madeleine Albright	37
Abigail Adams	12	Louisa May Alcott	39
Ansel Adams	15	Alexander II	41
John Adams	17	Alexander the Great	43
Samuel Adams	20	Muhammad Ali	47
Joy Adamson	22	Woody Allen	49
Jane Addams	25	Isabel Allende	52
Alfred Adler	27	Julia Alvarez	54
		American Horse	57

Idi Amin	59	Lucille Ball	159
Hans Christian Andersen	62	David Baltimore	161
Carl David Anderson	64	Honoré de Balzac	164
Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	66	Benjamin Banneker	166
Marian Anderson	69	Frederick Banting	168
Fra Angelico	71	Klaus Barbie	170
Maya Angelou	73	Christiaan Barnard	173
Kofi Annan	76	Clara Barton	175
Susan B. Anthony	79	Count Basie	177
Virginia Apgar	81	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Benigno Aquino	84		
Yasir Arafat	86	<i>Volume 2: Be–Cap</i>	
Archimedes	89	Beatles	181
Hannah Arendt	91	William Beaumont	185
Jean-Bertrand Aristide	93	Simone de Beauvoir	187
Aristophanes	96	Samuel Beckett	189
Aristotle	98	Ludwig van Beethoven	192
Louis Armstrong	101	Menachem Begin	194
Neil Armstrong	102	Alexander Graham Bell	196
Benedict Arnold	105	Clyde Bellecourt	200
Mary Kay Ash	108	Saul Bellow	202
Arthur Ashe	110	William Bennett	204
Isaac Asimov	113	Ingmar Bergman	206
Fred Astaire	116	Irving Berlin	208
John Jacob Astor	118	Leonard Bernstein	210
Margaret Atwood	120	Chuck Berry	213
W. H. Auden	123	Mary McLeod Bethune	215
John James Audubon	125	Benazir Bhutto	218
Augustus	128	Owen Bieber	220
Aung San Suu Kyi	130	Billy the Kid	223
Jane Austen	132	Larry Bird	224
Baal Shem Tov	137	Shirley Temple Black	227
Charles Babbage	139	Elizabeth Blackwell	229
Johann Sebastian Bach	141	Tony Blair	232
Francis Bacon	143	William Blake	234
Roger Bacon	145	Konrad Bloch	237
Joan Baez	147	Judy Blume	239
F Lee Bailey	150	Humphrey Bogart	242
Josephine Baker	152	Julian Bond	244
George Balanchine	154	Daniel Boone	246
James Baldwin	156	John Wilkes Booth	248

William Booth	250	Al Capone	352
Lucrezia Borgia	252	Truman Capote	354
P. W. Botha	255	Frank Capra	357
Sandro Botticelli	257	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Margaret Bourke-White	259		
Boutros Boutros-Ghali	261	Volume 3: Car–Da	
Ray Bradbury	264	Lázaro Cárdenas	361
Ed Bradley	266	Stokely Carmichael	363
Mathew Brady	269	Andrew Carnegie	367
Johannes Brahms	271	Lewis Carroll	370
Louis Braille	273	Johnny Carson	372
Louis Brandeis	275	Kit Carson	374
Marlon Brando	278	Rachel Carson	377
Leonid Brezhnev	280	Jimmy Carter	379
Charlotte Brontë	283	George Washington Carver	383
Emily Brontë	284	Pablo Casals	386
Gwendolyn Brooks	286	Mary Cassatt	388
Helen Gurley Brown	289	Vernon and Irene Castle	390
James Brown	291	Fidel Castro	393
John Brown	294	Willa Cather	397
Rachel Fuller Brown	297	Catherine of Aragon	399
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	299	Catherine the Great	401
Robert Browning	302	Henry Cavendish	404
Pat Buchanan	305	Anders Celsius	407
Pearl S. Buck	308	Miguel de Cervantes	408
Buddha	310	Paul Cézanne	411
Ralph Bunche	312	Marc Chagall	414
Warren Burger	314	Wilt Chamberlain	416
Robert Burns	317	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	419
Aaron Burr	320	Charlie Chaplin	421
George Bush	323	Charlemagne	424
George W. Bush	326	Charles, Prince of Wales	427
Laura Bush	329	Ray Charles	430
Lord Byron	331	Geoffrey Chaucer	433
Julius Caesar	335	César Chávez	436
Caligula	338	Dennis Chavez	438
Maria Callas	340	Linda Chavez	440
Cab Calloway	342	Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	443
John Calvin	344	John Cheever	447
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	346	Anton Chekhov	449
Albert Camus	349	Dick Cheney	451

Mary Boykin Chesnut	454
Chiang Kai-shek	456
Julia Child	459
Shirley Chisholm	461
Frédéric Chopin	464
Jean Chrétien	467
Agatha Christie	469
Winston Churchill	472
Marcus Tullius Cicero	475
Liz Claiborne	478
Cleopatra VII	480
Bill Clinton	483
Hillary Rodham Clinton	487
Ty Cobb	490
Nat “King” Cole	492
Bessie Coleman	494
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	496
Marva Collins	499
Michael Collins	501
Confucius	503
Sean Connery	506
Joseph Conrad	508
Nicolaus Copernicus	510
Aaron Copland	513
Francis Ford Coppola	515
Bill Cosby	518
Jacques Cousteau	521
Noel Coward	523
Michael Crichton	525
Davy Crockett	527
Oliver Cromwell	529
Walter Cronkite	532
E. E. Cummings	535
Marie Curie	538
Roald Dahl	543
Dalai Lama	546
Salvador Dali	549
Clarence Darrow	551
Charles Darwin	554
Bette Davis	556
Miles Davis	558

Ossie Davis	561
Sammy Davis Jr.	563
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 4: De–Ga

James Dean	567
Claude Debussy	569
Ruby Dee	571
Daniel Defoe	574
Edgar Degas	576
Charles de Gaulle	579
F. W. de Klerk	581
Cecil B. DeMille	585
Deng Xiaoping	587
René Descartes	590
Hernando de Soto	592
John Dewey	594
Diana, Princess of Wales	597
Charles Dickens	600
Emily Dickinson	603
Denis Diderot	606
Joe DiMaggio	608
Walt Disney	611
Elizabeth Dole	613
Placido Domingo	616
Donatello	619
John Donne	621
Fyodor Dostoevsky	624
Frederick Douglass	626
Arthur Conan Doyle	629
Francis Drake	632
Alexandre Dumas	634
Paul Laurence Dunbar	636
Pierre du Pont	638
François Duvalier	640
Amelia Earhart	643
George Eastman	646
Clint Eastwood	648
Thomas Edison	650
Albert Einstein	654
Dwight D. Eisenhower	657

Mamie Eisenhower	661	Karl Friedrich Gauss	775
Joycelyn Elders	662	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
George Eliot	665		
T. S. Eliot	668	Volume 5: Ge–I	
Elizabeth I	672	Hans Geiger	779
Elizabeth II	675	Theodor Geisel	781
Duke Ellington	678	Genghis Khan	784
Ralph Waldo Emerson	680	J. Paul Getty	786
Desiderius Erasmus	683	Kahlil Gibran	788
Euclid	686	Althea Gibson	790
Euripides	688	Dizzy Gillespie	792
Medgar Evers	690	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	794
Gabriel Fahrenheit	695	Whoopi Goldberg	797
Fannie Farmer	696	William Golding	800
Louis Farrakhan	698	Samuel Gompers	801
William Faulkner	701	Jane Goodall	804
Dianne Feinstein	704	Benny Goodman	807
Enrico Fermi	707	Mikhail Gorbachev	809
Geraldine Ferraro	710	Berry Gordy Jr.	813
Bobby Fischer	713	Al Gore	816
Ella Fitzgerald	715	Jay Gould	818
F. Scott Fitzgerald	718	Stephen Jay Gould	821
Gustave Flaubert	721	Katharine Graham	824
Malcolm Forbes	723	Martha Graham	827
Henry Ford	725	Cary Grant	829
Francis of Assisi	729	Graham Greene	831
Benjamin Franklin	731	Wayne Gretzky	833
Sigmund Freud	735	Brothers Grimm	836
Betty Friedan	738	Woody Guthrie	838
Robert Frost	741	Alex Haley	843
John Kenneth Galbraith	745	Alexander Hamilton	846
Galen	748	Oscar Hammerstein	849
Galileo	750	John Hancock	852
George Gallup	753	George Frideric Handel	854
Indira Gandhi	754	Thomas Hardy	857
Mohandas Gandhi	758	Stephen Hawking	860
Gabriel García Márquez	762	Nathaniel Hawthorne	862
Judy Garland	764	William Randolph Hearst	865
Marcus Garvey	767	Werner Heisenberg	868
Bill Gates	769	Joseph Heller	870
Paul Gauguin	773	Lillian Hellman	872

Ernest Hemingway	875
Jimi Hendrix	878
Henry VIII	880
Patrick Henry	883
Audrey Hepburn	886
Katharine Hepburn	888
Herod the Great	891
William Herschel	893
Thor Heyerdahl	895
Edmund Hillary	898
S. E. Hinton	900
Hippocrates	902
Hirohito	904
Alfred Hitchcock	907
Adolf Hitler	909
Ho Chi Minh	912
Thomas Hobbes	915
Billie Holiday	918
Oliver Wendell Holmes	920
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	923
Homer	926
Soichiro Honda	929
bell hooks	931
Benjamin Hooks	933
Bob Hope	936
Anthony Hopkins	938
Lena Horne	940
Harry Houdini	943
Gordie Howe	946
Julia Ward Howe	949
Howard Hughes	951
Langston Hughes	954
Victor Hugo	957
Zora Neale Hurston	960
Saddam Hussein	962
Lee Iacocca	967
Henrik Ibsen	970
Imhotep	972
Washington Irving	975
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 6: J–L

Andrew Jackson	979
Jesse Jackson	983
Michael Jackson	986
Reggie Jackson	989
P. D. James	991
Thomas Jefferson	994
Mae Jemison	997
Jesus of Nazareth	1000
Jiang Zemin	1003
Joan of Arc	1005
Steve Jobs	1007
Elton John	1011
John Paul II	1013
Lyndon B. Johnson	1016
Magic Johnson	1020
Samuel Johnson	1023
Al Jolson	1025
James Earl Jones	1027
Quincy Jones	1029
Ben Jonson	1032
Michael Jordan	1034
James Joyce	1038
Benito Juárez	1040
Carl Jung	1043
Franz Kafka	1047
Wassily Kandinsky	1050
Immanuel Kant	1052
John Keats	1054
Helen Keller	1056
Gene Kelly	1058
Edward Kennedy	1061
John F. Kennedy	1064
John F. Kennedy Jr.	1069
Robert Kennedy	1071
Johannes Kepler	1074
Jack Kerouac	1076
Charles F. Kettering	1078
Ayatollah Khomeini	1081
Nikita Khrushchev	1083
B. B. King	1086

Billie Jean King	1089	Dolley Madison	1191
Coretta Scott King	1091	James Madison	1194
Martin Luther King Jr.	1094	Madonna	1197
Stephen King	1098	Ferdinand Magellan	1201
Rudyard Kipling	1101	Najib Mahfuz	1203
Henry Kissinger	1104	Norman Mailer	1205
Calvin Klein	1107	Bernard Malamud	1208
Kublai Khan	1109	Malcolm X	1210
Marquis de Lafayette	1113	David Mamet	1214
Lao Tzu	1115	Nelson Mandela	1216
Ralph Lauren	1117	Édouard Manet	1219
Emma Lazarus	1119	Wilma Mankiller	1221
Mary Leakey	1121	Mickey Mantle	1224
Bruce Lee	1124	Mao Zedong	1226
Spike Lee	1126	Rocky Marciano	1230
Tsung-Dao Lee	1129	Ferdinand Marcos	1233
Vladimir Lenin	1131	Marcus Aurelius	1236
Leonardo da Vinci	1136	Marie Antoinette	1238
C. S. Lewis	1139	Mark Antony	1240
Carl Lewis	1141	Thurgood Marshall	1243
Sinclair Lewis	1144	Karl Marx	1246
Roy Lichtenstein	1146	Mary, Queen of Scots	1249
Maya Lin	1148	Cotton Mather	1252
Abraham Lincoln	1150	Henri Matisse	1255
Charles Lindbergh	1154	Mayo Brothers	1258
Carl Linnaeus	1157	Willie Mays	1261
Joseph Lister	1159	Joseph McCarthy	1264
Andrew Lloyd Webber	1161	Hattie McDaniel	1267
Alain Locke	1163	John McEnroe	1270
John Locke	1166	Terry McMillan	1273
Jack London	1168	Aimee Semple McPherson	1275
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	1170	Margaret Mead	1277
Joe Louis	1173	Catherine de' Medici	1281
George Lucas	1175	Golda Meir	1284
Patrice Lumumba	1178	Rigoberta Menchú	1286
Martin Luther	1181	Felix Mendelssohn	1289
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Kweisi Mfume	1292
		Michelangelo	1295
Volume 7: M–Ne		Harvey Milk	1298
Douglas MacArthur	1185	John Stuart Mill	1301
Niccolò Machiavelli	1188	Edna St. Vincent Millay	1303

Arthur Miller	1305	Manuel Noriega	1401
Henry Miller	1308	Jessye Norman	1404
Slobodan Milosevic	1310	Nostradamus	1406
John Milton	1313	Rudolf Nureyev	1409
Joan Miró	1316	Joyce Carol Oates	1413
Molière	1318	Sandra Day O'Connor	1416
Claude Monet	1320	Georgia O'Keefe	1420
Thelonious Monk	1323	Laurence Olivier	1422
Marilyn Monroe	1325	Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	1425
Joe Montana	1327	Eugene O'Neill	1428
Montesquieu	1329	George Orwell	1430
Maria Montessori	1331	Ovid	1432
Thomas More	1334	Jesse Owens	1435
Jim Morrison	1336	Mohammad Reza Pahlavi	1439
Toni Morrison	1338	Arnold Palmer	1441
Samuel F. B. Morse	1341	Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus	1443
Moses	1343	Charlie Parker	1445
Grandma Moses	1345	Blaise Pascal	1447
Mother Teresa	1347	Louis Pasteur	1450
Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart	1350	Linus Pauling	1453
Hosni Mubarak	1353	Luciano Pavarotti	1456
Muhammad	1355	Ivan Pavlov	1459
Elijah Muhammad	1358	Anna Pavlova	1462
John Muir	1360	I. M. Pei	1464
Edvard Munch	1362	Pelé.	1467
Rupert Murdoch	1364	William Penn	1469
Benito Mussolini	1367	Pericles	1472
Vladimir Nabokov	1371	Eva Perón	1474
Ralph Nader	1373	Jean Piaget	1477
Napoleon Bonaparte	1376	Pablo Picasso	1479
Ogden Nash	1379	Sylvia Plath	1483
Nefertiti	1381	Plato	1485
Isaac Newton	1382	Pocahontas	1488
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Edgar Allan Poe	1490
 Volume 8: Ni–Re			
Friedrich Nietzsche	1387	Sidney Poitier	1493
Florence Nightingale	1390	Pol Pot	1495
Richard Nixon	1392	Marco Polo	1498
Alfred Nobel	1397	Juan Ponce de León	1501
Isamu Noguchi	1398	Alexander Pope	1502
		Cole Porter	1505
		Katherine Anne Porter	1507

Emily Post	1509	Richard Rodgers	1610
Colin Powell	1511	Auguste Rodin	1613
Dith Pran	1514	Will Rogers	1615
Elvis Presley	1517	Rolling Stones	1618
André Previn	1520	Eleanor Roosevelt	1621
Leontyne Price	1522	Franklin D. Roosevelt	1624
E. Annie Proulx	1524	Theodore Roosevelt	1628
Marcel Proust	1526	Diana Ross	1631
Ptolemy I	1528	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	1634
Joseph Pulitzer	1531	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	1636
George Pullman	1533	Carl Rowan	1639
Aleksandr Pushkin	1535	J. K. Rowling	1641
Vladimir Putin	1537	Peter Paul Rubens	1643
Pythagoras	1540	Wilma Rudolph	1646
Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	1543	Salman Rushdie	1649
Walter Raleigh	1547	Babe Ruth	1651
Sri Ramakrishna	1550	Nolan Ryan	1653
A. Philip Randolph	1552	Albert Sabin	1657
Harun al-Rashid	1555	Carl Sagan	1659
Ronald Reagan	1557	Andrei Sakharov	1662
Christopher Reeve	1561	J. D. Salinger	1664
Erich Maria Remarque	1564	Jonas Salk	1667
Rembrandt	1566	George Sand	1669
Janet Reno	1568	Carl Sandburg	1671
Pierre Auguste Renoir	1571	Margaret Sanger	1673
Paul Revere	1574	Jean-Paul Sartre	1676
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Oskar Schindler	1678
		Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	1681
		Franz Schubert	1684
		Charles M. Schulz	1687
		Martin Scorsese	1690
		Walter Scott	1693
		Haile Selassie	1696
		Selena	1698
		Sequoyah	1701
		William Shakespeare	1702
		George Bernard Shaw	1706
		Mary Shelley	1708
		Percy Shelley	1711
		Beverly Sills	1714
		Neil Simon	1716
Volume 9: Rh–S			
Cecil Rhodes	1577		
Condoleezza Rice	1580		
Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	1583		
Sally Ride	1585		
Leni Riefenstahl	1588		
Cal Ripken Jr.	1591		
Diego Rivera	1593		
Paul Robeson	1596		
Maximilien de Robespierre	1599		
Smokey Robinson	1601		
John D. Rockefeller	1604		
Norman Rockwell	1607		

Frank Sinatra	1719	Marshal Tito	1821
Upton Sinclair	1722	J. R. R. Tolkien	1824
Isaac Bashevis Singer	1724	Leo Tolstoy	1827
Bessie Smith	1727	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	1830
Socrates	1729	Eiji Toyoda	1832
Stephen Sondheim	1732	Harry S. Truman	1834
Sophocles	1734	Donald Trump	1837
Steven Spielberg	1737	Sojourner Truth	1840
Benjamin Spock	1740	Tu Fu	1843
Joseph Stalin	1743	Tutankhamen	1845
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	1747	Desmond Tutu	1847
Edith Stein	1749	Mark Twain	1850
Gertrude Stein	1752	John Updike	1855
John Steinbeck	1755	Vincent Van Gogh	1859
Robert Louis Stevenson	1757	Jan Vermeer	1862
Bram Stoker	1759	Jules Verne	1864
Oliver Stone	1761	Amerigo Vespucci	1867
Tom Stoppard	1764	Victoria	1869
Harriet Beecher Stowe	1766	Gore Vidal	1872
Antonio Stradivari	1769	Virgil	1874
Johann Strauss	1771	Antonio Vivaldi	1877
Igor Stravinsky	1773	Voltaire	1879
Barbra Streisand	1776	Wernher von Braun	1882
Sun Yat-sen	1779	Kurt Vonnegut	1884
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Richard Wagner	1889
		Alice Walker	1891
		Madame C. J. Walker	1894
		Barbara Walters	1897
Volume 10: T–Z		An Wang	1900
Maria Tallchief	1785	Booker T. Washington	1903
Amy Tan	1787	George Washington	1906
Elizabeth Taylor	1790	James Watt	1910
Peter Ilych Tchaikovsky	1792	John Wayne	1913
Alfred, Lord Tennyson	1795	Daniel Webster	1916
Valentina Tereshkova	1798	Noah Webster	1919
William Makepeace Thackeray	1801	Orson Welles	1922
Twyla Tharp	1804	Eudora Welty	1925
Clarence Thomas	1807	Edith Wharton	1928
Dylan Thomas	1810	James Whistler	1929
Henry David Thoreau	1813	E. B. White	1932
Jim Thorpe	1816	Walt Whitman	1935
James Thurber	1819		

Elie Wiesel	1938	Virginia Woolf	1962
Oscar Wilde	1940	William Wordsworth	1965
Laura Ingalls Wilder	1943	Wright Brothers	1969
Thornton Wilder	1946	Frank Lloyd Wright	1972
Tennessee Williams	1948	Richard Wright	1975
Woodrow Wilson	1951	William Butler Yeats	1979
Oprah Winfrey	1954	Boris Yeltsin	1982
Anna May Wong	1958	Paul Zindel	1987
Tiger Woods	1960	<i>Index</i>	xxxv



*entries by
nationality*

African American

Hank Aaron 1: 1
 Ralph Abernathy 1: 4
 Alvin Ailey 1: 34
 Muhammad Ali 1: 47
 Marian Anderson 1: 69
 Maya Angelou 1: 73
 Louis Armstrong 1: 101
 Arthur Ashe 1: 110
 Josephine Baker 1: 152
 James Baldwin 1: 156
 Benjamin Banneker 1: 166
 Count Basie 1: 177
 Chuck Berry 2: 213
 Mary McLeod Bethune 2: 215
 Julian Bond 2: 244
 Gwendolyn Brooks 2: 286

James Brown 2: 291
 Ralph Bunche 2: 312
 Stokely Carmichael 3: 363
 George Washington Carver 3: 383
 Wilt Chamberlain 3: 416
 Ray Charles 3: 430
 Benjamin Chavis Muhammad 3: 443
 Shirley Chisholm 3: 461
 Nat “King” Cole 3: 492
 Bessie Coleman 3: 494
 Marva Collins 3: 499
 Bill Cosby 3: 518
 Miles Davis 3: 558
 Ossie Davis 3: 561
 Sammy Davis Jr. 3: 563
 Ruby Dee 4: 571
 Frederick Douglass 4: 626

Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Jessye Norman	8: 1404
Joycelyn Elders	4: 662	Jesse Owens	8: 1435
Duke Ellington	4: 678	Charlie Parker	8: 1445
Medgar Evers	4: 690	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Louis Farrakhan	4: 698	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Althea Gibson	5: 790	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Alex Haley	5: 843	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Bessie Smith	9: 1727
bell hooks	5: 931	Sojourner Truth	10: 1840
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Alice Walker	10: 1891
Lena Horne	5: 940	Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Reggie Jackson	6: 989		
Mae Jemison	6: 997	<i>Albanian</i>	
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Mother Teresa	7: 1347
James Earl Jones	6: 1027		
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	<i>American</i>	
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Hank Aaron	1: 1
B. B. King	6: 1086	Ralph Abernathy	1: 4
Coretta Scott King	6: 1091	Bella Abzug	1: 7
Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094	Abigail Adams	1: 12
Spike Lee	6: 1126	Ansel Adams	1: 15
Carl Lewis	6: 1141	John Adams	1: 17
Alain Locke	6: 1163	Samuel Adams	1: 20
Malcolm X	7: 1210	Jane Addams	1: 25
Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Spiro Agnew	1: 31
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Alvin Ailey	1: 34
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Madeleine Albright	1: 37
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Louisa May Alcott	1: 39
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	Muhammad Ali	1: 47
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Woody Allen	1: 49
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Julia Alvarez	1: 54
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	American Horse	1: 57

Carl David Anderson	1: 64	Daniel Boone	2: 246
Marian Anderson	1: 69	John Wilkes Booth	2: 248
Maya Angelou	1: 73	Margaret Bourke-White	2: 259
Susan B. Anthony	1: 79	Ray Bradbury	2: 264
Virginia Apgar	1: 81	Ed Bradley	2: 266
Louis Armstrong	1: 101	Mathew Brady	2: 269
Neil Armstrong	1: 102	Louis Brandeis	2: 275
Benedict Arnold	1: 105	Marlon Brando	2: 278
Mary Kay Ash	1: 108	Gwendolyn Brooks	2: 286
Arthur Ashe	1: 110	Helen Gurley Brown	2: 289
Isaac Asimov	1: 113	James Brown	2: 291
Fred Astaire	1: 116	John Brown	2: 294
John Jacob Astor	1: 118	Rachel Fuller Brown	2: 297
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Pat Buchanan	2: 305
John James Audubon	1: 125	Pearl S. Buck	2: 308
Joan Baez	1: 147	Ralph Bunche	2: 312
F. Lee Bailey	1: 150	Warren Burger	2: 314
Josephine Baker	1: 152	Aaron Burr	2: 320
George Balanchine	1: 154	George Bush	2: 323
James Baldwin	1: 156	George W. Bush	2: 326
Lucille Ball	1: 159	Laura Bush	2: 329
David Baltimore	1: 161	Maria Callas	2: 340
Benjamin Banneker	1: 166	Cab Calloway	2: 342
Clara Barton	1: 175	Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Count Basie	1: 177	Al Capone	2: 352
William Beaumont	2: 185	Truman Capote	2: 354
Alexander Graham Bell	2: 196	Frank Capra	2: 357
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200	Stokely Carmichael	3: 363
Saul Bellow	2: 202	Andrew Carnegie	3: 367
William Bennett	2: 204	Johnny Carson	3: 372
Irving Berlin	2: 208	Kit Carson	3: 374
Leonard Bernstein	2: 210	Rachel Carson	3: 377
Chuck Berry	2: 213	Jimmy Carter	3: 379
Mary McLeod Bethune	2: 215	George Washington Carver	3: 383
Owen Bieber	2: 220	Mary Cassatt	3: 388
Billy the Kid	2: 223	Irene Castle	3: 390
Larry Bird	2: 224	Willa Cather	3: 397
Shirley Temple Black	2: 227	Wilt Chamberlain	3: 416
Judy Blume	2: 239	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	3: 419
Humphrey Bogart	2: 242	Ray Charles	3: 430
Julian Bond	2: 244	César Chávez	3: 436

Dennis Chavez	3: 438	Thomas Edison	4: 650
Linda Chavez	3: 440	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	3: 443	Dwight D. Eisenhower	4: 657
John Cheever	3: 447	Mamie Eisenhower	4: 661
Dick Cheney	3: 451	Joycelyn Elders	4: 662
Mary Boykin Chesnut	3: 454	T. S. Eliot	4: 668
Julia Child	3: 459	Duke Ellington	4: 678
Shirley Chisholm	3: 461	Ralph Waldo Emerson	4: 680
Liz Claiborne	3: 478	Medgar Evers	4: 690
Bill Clinton	3: 483	Fannie Farmer	4: 696
Hillary Rodham Clinton	3: 487	Louis Farrakhan	4: 698
Ty Cobb	3: 490	William Faulkner	4: 701
Nat "King" Cole	3: 492	Dianne Feinstein	4: 704
Bessie Coleman	3: 494	Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Marva Collins	3: 499	Geraldine Ferraro	4: 710
Aaron Copland	3: 513	Bobby Fischer	4: 713
Francis Ford Coppola	3: 515	Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715
Bill Cosby	3: 518	F. Scott Fitzgerald	4: 718
Michael Crichton	3: 525	Malcolm Forbes	4: 723
Davy Crockett	3: 527	Henry Ford	4: 725
Walter Cronkite	3: 532	Benjamin Franklin	4: 731
E. E. Cummings	3: 535	Betty Friedan	4: 738
Clarence Darrow	3: 551	Robert Frost	4: 741
Bette Davis	3: 556	John Kenneth Galbraith	4: 745
Miles Davis	3: 558	George Gallup	4: 753
Ossie Davis	3: 561	Judy Garland	4: 764
Sammy Davis Jr.	3: 563	Bill Gates	4: 769
James Dean	4: 567	Theodor Geisel	5: 781
Ruby Dee	4: 571	J. Paul Getty	5: 786
Cecil B. DeMille	4: 585	Althea Gibson	5: 790
John Dewey	4: 594	Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792
Emily Dickinson	4: 603	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	5: 794
Joe DiMaggio	4: 608	Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797
Walt Disney	4: 611	Samuel Gompers	5: 801
Elizabeth Dole	4: 613	Benny Goodman	5: 807
Frederick Douglass	4: 626	Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813
Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Al Gore	5: 816
Pierre Du Pont	4: 638	Jay Gould	5: 818
Amelia Earhart	4: 643	Stephen Jay Gould	5: 821
George Eastman	4: 646	Katharine Graham	5: 824
Clint Eastwood	4: 648	Martha Graham	5: 827

Woody Guthrie	5: 838	Helen Keller	6: 1056
Alex Haley	5: 843	Gene Kelly	6: 1058
Alexander Hamilton	5: 846	Edward Kennedy	6: 1061
Oscar Hammerstein	5: 849	John F. Kennedy	6: 1064
John Hancock	5: 852	John F. Kennedy Jr.	6: 1069
Nathaniel Hawthorne	5: 862	Robert Kennedy	6: 1071
William Randolph Hearst	5: 865	Jack Kerouac	6: 1076
Joseph Heller	5: 870	Charles F. Kettering	6: 1078
Lillian Hellman	5: 872	B. B. King	6: 1086
Ernest Hemingway	5: 875	Billie Jean King	6: 1089
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Coretta Scott King	6: 1091
Patrick Henry	5: 883	Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094
Katharine Hepburn	5: 888	Stephen King	6: 1098
S. E. Hinton	5: 900	Henry Kissinger	6: 1104
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Calvin Klein	6: 1107
Oliver Wendell Holmes	5: 920	Ralph Lauren	6: 1117
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	5: 923	Emma Lazarus	6: 1119
bell hooks	5: 931	Bruce Lee	6: 1124
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Spike Lee	6: 1126
Bob Hope	5: 936	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Lena Horne	5: 940	Carl Lewis	6: 1141
Harry Houdini	5: 943	Sinclair Lewis	6: 1144
Julia Ward Howe	5: 949	Roy Lichtenstein	6: 1146
Howard Hughes	5: 951	Abraham Lincoln	6: 1150
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Charles Lindbergh	6: 1154
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Alain Locke	6: 1163
Lee Iacocca	5: 967	Jack London	6: 1168
Washington Irving	5: 975	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	6: 1170
Andrew Jackson	6: 979	Joe Louis	6: 1173
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	George Lucas	6: 1175
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Douglas MacArthur	7: 1185
Reggie Jackson	6: 989	Dolley Madison	7: 1191
Thomas Jefferson	6: 994	James Madison	7: 1194
Mae Jemison	6: 997	Madonna	7: 1197
Steve Jobs	6: 1007	Norman Mailer	7: 1205
Lyndon B. Johnson	6: 1016	Bernard Malamud	7: 1390
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Malcolm X	7: 1210
Al Jolson	6: 1025	David Mamet	7: 1214
James Earl Jones	6: 1027	Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	Mickey Mantle	7: 1224
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Rocky Marciano	7: 1230

Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Pocahontas	8: 1488
Cotton Mather	7: 1252	Edgar Allan Poe	8: 1490
Mayo Brothers	7: 1258	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Cole Porter	8: 1505
Joseph McCarthy	7: 1264	Katherine Anne Porter	8: 1507
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Emily Post	8: 1509
John McEnroe	7: 1270	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Elvis Presley	8: 1517
Aimee Semple McPherson	7: 1275	André Previn	8: 1520
Margaret Mead	7: 1277	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	E. Annie Proulx	8: 1524
Harvey Milk	7: 1298	Joseph Pulitzer	8: 1531
Edna St. Vincent Millay	7: 1303	George Pullman	8: 1533
Arthur Miller	7: 1305	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Henry Miller	7: 1308	Ronald Reagan	8: 1557
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Christopher Reeve	8: 1561
Marilyn Monroe	7: 1325	Erich Maria Remarque	8: 1564
Joe Montana	7: 1327	Janet Reno	8: 1568
Jim Morrison	7: 1336	Paul Revere	8: 1574
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Samuel F. B. Morse	7: 1341	Sally Ride	9: 1585
Grandma Moses	7: 1345	Cal Ripken, Jr.	9: 1591
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
John Muir	7: 1360	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Vladimir Nabokov	7: 1371	John D. Rockefeller	9: 1604
Ralph Nader	7: 1373	Norman Rockwell	9: 1607
Ogden Nash	7: 1379	Richard Rodgers	9: 1610
Richard Nixon	8: 1392	Will Rogers	9: 1615
Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398	Eleanor Roosevelt	9: 1621
Jessye Norman	8: 1404	Franklin D. Roosevelt	9: 1624
Joyce Carol Oates	8: 1413	Theodore Roosevelt	9: 1628
Sandra Day O'Connor	8: 1416	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Georgia O'Keeffe	8: 1420	Carl Rowan	9: 1639
Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	8: 1425	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Eugene O'Neill	8: 1428	Babe Ruth	9: 1651
Jesse Owens	8: 1435	Nolan Ryan	9: 1653
Arnold Palmer	8: 1441	Albert Sabin	9: 1657
Charlie Parker	8: 1445	Carl Sagan	9: 1659
Linus Pauling	8: 1453	J. D. Salinger	9: 1664
I. M. Pei	8: 1464	Jonas Salk	9: 1667
Sylvia Plath	8: 1483	Carl Sandburg	9: 1671

Margaret Sanger	9: 1673	An Wang	10: 1900
Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	9: 1681	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Charles M. Schulz	9: 1687	George Washington	10: 1906
Martin Scorsese	9: 1690	John Wayne	10: 1913
Selena	9: 1698	Daniel Webster	10: 1916
Sequoyah	9: 1701	Noah Webster	10: 1919
Beverly Sills	9: 1714	Orson Welles	10: 1922
Neil Simon	9: 1716	Eudora Welty	10: 1925
Frank Sinatra	9: 1719	Edith Wharton	10: 1928
Upton Sinclair	9: 1722	James Whistler	10: 1929
Isaac Bashevis Singer	9: 1724	E. B. White	10: 1932
Bessie Smith	9: 1727	Walt Whitman	10: 1935
Stephen Sondheim	9: 1732	Elie Wiesel	10: 1938
Steven Spielberg	9: 1737	Laura Ingalls Wilder	10: 1943
Benjamin Spock	9: 1740	Thornton Wilder	10: 1946
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	9: 1747	Tennessee Williams	10: 1948
Gertrude Stein	9: 1752	Woodrow Wilson	10: 1951
John Steinbeck	9: 1755	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Oliver Stone	9: 1761	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Harriet Beecher Stowe	9: 1766	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Igor Stravinsky	9: 1773	Wright Brothers	10: 1969
Barbra Streisand	9: 1776	Frank Lloyd Wright	10: 1972
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Amy Tan	10: 1787	Paul Zindel	10: 1987
Elizabeth Taylor	10: 1790		
Twyla Tharp	10: 1804	<i>Arabian</i>	
Clarence Thomas	10: 1807	Muhammad	7: 1355
Henry David Thoreau	10: 1813		
Jim Thorpe	10: 1816	<i>Argentine</i>	
James Thurber	10: 1819	Eva Perón	8: 1474
Harry S. Truman	10: 1834		
Donald Trump	10: 1837	<i>Asian American</i>	
Sojourner Truth	10: 1840	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Mark Twain	10: 1850	Maya Lin	6: 1148
John Updike	10: 1855	Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398
Gore Vidal	10: 1872	I. M. Pei	8: 1464
Wernher von Braun	10: 1882	Amy Tan	10: 1787
Kurt Vonnegut	10: 1884	An Wang	10: 1900
Alice Walker	10: 1891	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Barbara Walters	10: 1897		

Australian

Rupert Murdoch 7: 1364

Austrian

Joy Adamson 1: 22

Alfred Adler 1: 27

Sigmund Freud 4: 735

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart 7: 1350

Franz Schubert 9: 1684

Johann Strauss 9: 1771

Belgian

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886

Brazilian

Pelé 8: 1467

Burmese

Aung San Suu Kyi 1: 130

Cambodian

Pol Pot 8: 1495

Dith Pran 8: 1514

Canadian

Margaret Atwood 1: 120

Frederick Banting 1: 168

Jean Chrétien 3: 467

John Kenneth Galbraith 4: 745

Wayne Gretzky 5: 833

Gordie Howe 5: 946

Aimee Semple McPherson 7: 1275

Chilean

Isabel Allende 1: 52

Chinese

Chiang Kai-shek 3: 456

Confucius 3: 503

Deng Xiaoping 4: 587

Jiang Zemin 6: 1003

Lao Tzu 6: 1115

Tsung-Dao Lee 6: 1129

Mao Zedong 7: 1226

I. M. Pei 8: 1464

Sun Yat-sen 9: 1779

Tu Fu 10: 1843

An Wang 10: 1900

Colombian

Gabriel García Márquez 7: 762

Congolese

Patrice Lumumba 6: 1178

Cuban

Fidel Castro 3: 393

Czech

Madeleine Albright 1: 37

Franz Kafka 6: 1047

Tom Stoppard 9: 1764

Danish

Hans Christian Andersen 1: 62

Dutch

Desiderius Erasmus 4: 683

Rembrandt 8: 1566

Vincent Van Gogh 10: 1859

Egyptian

Boutros Boutros-Ghali 2: 261

Cleopatra VII 3: 480

Imhotep 5: 972

Najib Mahfuz 7: 1203

Moses 7: 1343

Hosni Mubarak 7: 1353

Nefertiti 7: 1381

Tutankhamen 10: 1845

English

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	1: 66	Cary Grant	5: 829
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Graham Greene	5: 831
Jane Austen	1: 132	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Charles Babbage	1: 139	Thomas Hardy	5: 857
Francis Bacon	1: 143	Stephen Hawking	5: 860
Roger Bacon	1: 145	Henry VIII	5: 880
Beatles	2: 181	Alfred Hitchcock	5: 907
Elizabeth Blackwell	2: 229	Thomas Hobbes	5: 915
William Blake	2: 234	P. D. James	6: 991
William Booth	2: 250	Elton John	6: 1011
Charlotte Brontë	2: 283	Samuel Johnson	6: 1023
Emily Brontë	2: 284	Ben Jonson	6: 1032
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	2: 299	John Keats	6: 1054
Robert Browning	2: 302	Rudyard Kipling	6: 1101
Lord Byron	2: 331	Mary Leakey	6: 1121
Lewis Carroll	3: 370	Joseph Lister	6: 1159
Vernon Castle	3: 390	Andrew Lloyd Webber	6: 1161
Henry Cavendish	3: 404	John Locke	6: 1166
Charlie Chaplin	3: 421	John Stuart Mill	7: 1301
Charles, Prince of Wales	3: 427	John Milton	7: 1313
Geoffrey Chaucer	3: 433	Thomas More	7: 1334
Agatha Christie	3: 469	Isaac Newton	7: 1382
Winston Churchill	3: 472	Florence Nightingale	8: 1390
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	3: 496	Laurence Olivier	8: 1422
Joseph Conrad	3: 508	George Orwell	8: 1430
Noel Coward	3: 523	William Penn	8: 1469
Oliver Cromwell	3: 529	Alexander Pope	8: 1502
Charles Darwin	3: 554	Walter Raleigh	8: 1547
Daniel Defoe	4: 574	Cecil Rhodes	9: 1577
Diana, Princess of Wales	4: 597	Rolling Stones	9: 1618
Charles Dickens	4: 600	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	9: 1634
John Donne	4: 621	J. K. Rowling	9: 1641
Arthur Conan Doyle	4: 629	William Shakespeare	9: 1702
Francis Drake	4: 632	Mary Shelley	9: 1708
George Eliot	4: 665	Percy Shelley	9: 1711
T. S. Eliot	4: 668	Tom Stoppard	9: 1764
Elizabeth I	4: 672	Alfred, Lord Tennyson	10: 1795
Elizabeth II	4: 675	William Makepeace Thackeray	10: 1801
William Golding	5: 800	J. R. R. Tolkien	10: 1824
Jane Goodall	5: 804	Victoria	10: 1869
		Oscar Wilde	10: 1940

Virginia Woolf	10: 1963	Molière	7: 1318
William Wordsworth	10: 1965	Claude Monet	7: 1320
<i>Ethiopian</i>		Montesquieu	7: 1329
Haile Selassie	9: 1697	Napoleon Bonaparte	7: 1376
<i>Filipino</i>		Nostradamus	8: 1406
Benigno Aquino	1: 84	Blaise Pascal	8: 1447
Ferdinand Marcos	7: 1233	Louis Pasteur	8: 1450
<i>Flemish</i>		Marcel Proust	8: 1526
Peter Paul Rubens	9: 1643	Pierre Auguste Renoir	8: 1571
<i>Frankish</i>		Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	9: 1583
Charlemagne	3: 424	Maximilien de Robespierre	9: 1599
<i>French</i>		Auguste Rodin	9: 1613
John James Audubon	1: 125	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	9: 1636
Honoré de Balzac	1: 164	George Sand	9: 1669
Simone de Beauvoir	2: 187	Jean-Paul Sartre	9: 1676
Louis Braille	2: 273	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	10: 1830
John Calvin	2: 344	Jan Vermeer	10: 1862
Albert Camus	2: 349	Jules Verne	10: 1864
Paul Cézanne	3: 411	Voltaire	10: 1879
Jacques Cousteau	3: 521	<i>German</i>	
Marie Curie	3: 538	Hannah Arendt	1: 91
Claude Debussy	4: 569	John Jacob Astor	1: 118
Edgar Degas	4: 576	Johann Sebastian Bach	1: 141
Charles de Gaulle	4: 579	Klaus Barbie	1: 170
René Descartes	4: 590	Ludwig van Beethoven	2: 192
Denis Diderot	4: 606	Konrad Bloch	2: 237
Alexandre Dumas	4: 634	Johannes Brahms	2: 271
Gustave Flaubert	4: 721	Catherine the Great	3: 401
Paul Gauguin	4: 773	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Victor Hugo	5: 957	Gabriel Fahrenheit	4: 695
Joan of Arc	6: 1005	Karl Friedrich Gauss	4: 775
Marquis de Lafayette	6: 1113	Hans Geiger	5: 779
Édouard Manet	7: 1219	Brothers Grimm	5: 836
Marie Antoinette	7: 1238	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Henri Matisse	7: 1255	Werner Heisenberg	5: 868
		William Herschel	5: 893
		Adolf Hitler	5: 909
		Franz Kafka	6: 1047
		Immanuel Kant	6: 1052

Johannes Kepler 6: 1074
 Henry Kissinger 6: 1104
 Martin Luther 6: 1181
 Karl Marx 7: 1246
 Felix Mendelssohn 7: 1289
 Friedrich Nietzsche 8: 1387
 André Previn 8: 1520
 Erich Maria Remarque 8: 1564
 Leni Riefenstahl 9: 1588
 Oskar Schindler 9: 1678
 Edith Stein 9: 1749
 Wernher von Braun 10: 1882
 Richard Wagner 10: 1889

Ghanian

Kofi Annan 1: 76

Greek

Aeschylus 1: 29
 Archimedes 1: 89
 Aristophanes 1: 96
 Aristotle 1: 98
 Euclid 4: 686
 Euripides 4: 688
 Galen 4: 748
 Hippocrates 5: 902
 Homer 5: 926
 Pericles 8: 1472
 Plato 8: 1485
 Pythagoras 8: 1540
 Socrates 9: 1729
 Sophocles 9: 1734

Guatemalan

Rigoberta Menchú 7: 1286

Haitian

Jean-Bertrand Aristide 1: 93
 François Duvalier 4: 640

Hispanic American

César Chávez 3: 436
 Dennis Chavez 3: 438
 Linda Chavez 3: 440
 Selena 9: 1698

Hungarian

Joseph Pulitzer 8: 1531

Indian

Buddha 2: 310
 Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar 3: 419
 Indira Gandhi 4: 754
 Mohandas Gandhi 4: 758
 Sri Ramakrishna 8: 1550
 Salman Rushdie 9: 1649

Iranian

Ayatollah Khomeini 6: 1081
 Mohammad Reza Pahlavi 8: 1439

Iraqi

Saddam Hussein 5: 962

Irish

Samuel Beckett 2: 189
 Michael Collins 3: 501
 James Joyce 6: 1038
 C. S. Lewis 6: 1139
 George Bernard Shaw 9: 1706
 Bram Stoker 9: 1759
 Oscar Wilde 10: 1940
 William Butler Yeats 10: 1979

Israeli

Menachem Begin 2: 194
 Golda Meir 7: 1284

Italian

Fra Angelico 1: 71

Lucrezia Borgia	2: 252
Sandro Botticelli	2: 257
Caligula	2: 338
Frank Capra	2: 357
Donatello	4: 619
Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Francis of Assisi	4: 729
Galileo	4: 750
Leonardo da Vinci	6: 1136
Niccolò Machiavelli	7: 1188
Catherine de' Medici	7: 1281
Michelangelo	7: 1295
Maria Montessori	7: 1331
Benito Mussolini	7: 1367
Luciano Pavarotti	8: 1456
Antonio Stradivari	9: 1769
Amerigo Vespucci	10: 1867
Antonio Vivaldi	10: 1877

Jamaican

Marcus Garvey	4: 767
-------------------------	--------

Japanese

Hirohito	5: 904
Soichiro Honda	5: 929
Eiji Toyoda	10: 1832

Judean

Herod the Great	5: 891
---------------------------	--------

Lebanese

Kahlil Gibran	5: 788
-------------------------	--------

Libyan

Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	8: 1543
-------------------------------	---------

Lithuanian

Al Jolson	6: 1025
---------------------	---------

Macedonian

Alexander the Great	1: 43
Ptolemy I	8: 1528

Mexican

Lázaro Cárdenas	3: 361
Benito Juárez	6: 1040
Diego Rivera	9: 1593

Mongolian

Genghis Khan	5: 784
Kublai Khan	6: 1109

Native American

American Horse	1: 57
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Pocahontas	8: 1488
Sequoyah	9: 1701
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785

New Zealander

Edmund Hillary	5: 898
--------------------------	--------

Nigerian

Chinua Achebe	1: 10
-------------------------	-------

Norwegian

Thor Heyerdahl	5: 895
Henrik Ibsen	5: 970
Edvard Munch	7: 1362

Pakistani

Benazir Bhutto	2: 218
--------------------------	--------

Palestinian

Yasir Arafat	1: 86
------------------------	-------

Panamanian

Manuel Noriega 8: 1401

Persian

Harun al-Rashid 8: 1555

Polish

Baal Shem Tov 1: 137

Menachem Begin 2: 194

Frédéric Chopin 3: 464

Joseph Conrad 3: 508

Nicolaus Copernicus 3: 510

Marie Curie 3: 538

John Paul II 6: 1013

Albert Sabin 9: 1657

Isaac Bashevis Singer 9: 1724

Portuguese

Ferdinand Magellan 7: 1201

Roman

Augustus 1: 128

Julius Caesar 2: 335

Marcus Tullius Cicero 3: 475

Jesus of Nazareth 6: 1000

Marcus Aurelius 7: 1236

Mark Antony 7: 1240

Ovid 8: 1432

Virgil 10: 1874

Romanian

Elie Wiesel 10: 1939

Russian

Alexander II 1: 41

Isaac Asimov 1: 113

George Balanchine 1: 154

Irving Berlin 2: 208

Leonid Brezhnev 2: 280

Catherine the Great 3: 401

Marc Chagall 3: 414

Anton Chekhov 3: 449

Fyodor Dostoevsky 4: 624

Mikhail Gorbachev 5: 809

Wassily Kandinsky 6: 1050

Nikita Khrushchev 6: 1083

Vladimir Lenin 6: 1131

Vladimir Nabokov 7: 1371

Rudolf Nureyev 8: 1409

Ivan Pavlov 8: 1459

Anna Pavlova 8: 1462

Aleksandr Pushkin 8: 1535

Vladimir Putin 8: 1537

Andrei Sakharov 9: 1662

Joseph Stalin 9: 1743

Igor Stravinsky 9: 1773

Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky 10: 1792

Valentina Tereshkova 10: 1798

Leo Tolstoy 10: 1827

Boris Yeltsin 10: 1982

Scottish

Alexander Graham Bell 2: 196

Tony Blair 2: 232

Robert Burns 2: 317

Andrew Carnegie 3: 367

Sean Connery 3: 506

Arthur Conan Doyle 4: 629

Mary, Queen of Scots 7: 1249

John Muir 7: 1360

Walter Scott 9: 1693

Robert Louis Stevenson 9: 1757

James Watt 10: 1910

Serbian

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310

South African

Christiaan Barnard 1: 173

P. W. Botha 2: 255

F. W. de Klerk 4: 581

Nelson Mandela 7: 1216
Desmond Tutu 10: 1847

Spanish

Pablo Casals 3: 386
Catherine of Aragon 3: 399
Miguel de Cervantes 3: 408
Salvador Dali 3: 549
Hernando de Soto 4: 592
Placido Domingo 4: 616
Joan Miró 7: 1316
Pablo Picasso 8: 1479
Juan Ponce de León 8: 1501

Swedish

Ingmar Bergman 2: 206
Anders Celsius 3: 407
Carl Linnaeus 6: 1157
Alfred Nobel 8: 1397

Swiss

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886
Carl Jung 6: 1043
Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus 8: 1443
Jean Piaget 8: 1477

Tibetan

Dalai Lama 3: 546

Trinidadian

Stokely Carmichael 3: 363

Ugandan

Idi Amin 1: 59

Venetian

Marco Polo 8: 1498

Vietnamese

Ho Chi Minh 5: 913

Welsh

Roald Dahl 3: 543
Anthony Hopkins 5: 938
Dylan Thomas 10: 1810

Yugoslav

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310
Marshal Tito 10: 1821



reader's guide

U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography features 750 biographies of notable historic and contemporary figures from around the world. Chosen from American history, world history, literature, science and math, arts and entertainment, and the social sciences, the entries focus on the people studied most often in middle school and high school, as identified by teachers and media specialists.

The biographies are arranged alphabetically across ten volumes. The two- to four-page entries cover the early lives, influences, and careers of notable men and women of diverse fields and ethnic groups. Each essay includes birth and death information in the header and concludes with a list of sources

for further information. A contents section lists biographees by their nationality. Nearly 750 photographs and illustrations are featured, and a general index provides quick access to the people and subjects discussed throughout *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

Special thanks

Much appreciation goes to Mary Alice Anderson, media specialist at Winona Middle School in Winona, Minnesota, and Nina Levine, library media specialist at Blue Mountain Middle School in Cortlandt Manor, New York, for their assistance in developing the entry list. Many thanks also go to the following people for their important editorial contri-

butions: Taryn Benbow-Pfalzgraf (proofreading), Jodi Essey-Stapleton (copyediting and proofing), Margaret Haerens (proofreading), Courtney Mroch (copyediting), and Theresa Murray (copyediting and indexing). Special gratitude goes to Linda Mahoney at LM Design for her excellent typesetting work and her flexible attitude.

Comments and suggestions

We welcome your comments on the *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*. Please write: Editors, *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*, U•X•L, 27500 Drake Road, Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535; call toll-free: 1-800-877-4253; fax to 248-699-8097; or send e-mail via www.gale.com.



HANK AARON

Born: February 5, 1934

Mobile, Alabama

African American baseball player

Hank Aaron is major league baseball's leading home run hitter, with a career total of 755 home runs from 1954 to 1976. He also broke ground for the participation of African Americans in professional sports.

Early life

Henry Louis Aaron was born in Mobile, Alabama, on February 5, 1934, the third of

Herbert and Estella Aaron's eight children. His father was a shipyard worker and tavern owner. Aaron took an early interest in sports. Although the family had little money and he took several jobs to try to help out, he spent a lot of time playing baseball at a neighborhood park. Lacking interest in school because he believed he would make it as a ballplayer, Aaron transferred out of a segregated (restricted to members of one race) high school in his junior year to attend the Allen Institute in Mobile, which had an organized baseball program.

After high school graduation, Aaron played on local amateur and semi-pro teams, such as the Pritchett Athletics and the Mobile Black Bears, where he began to make a name



Hank Aaron.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

for himself. At this time Jackie Robinson (1919–1972) of the Brooklyn Dodgers was breaking the baseball color barrier by becoming the first African American player in the major leagues. At age seventeen, Aaron gained immediate success as a hard-hitting infielder. In 1951 the owner of the Indianapolis Clowns, part of the professional Negro American League, signed him as the Clowns' shortstop for the 1952 season.

Record breaker

Being almost entirely self-taught, Aaron batted cross handed in his early years,

“because no one had told him not to,” according to one of his biographers. Still, Aaron's sensational hitting with the Clowns prompted a Boston Braves scout to purchase his contract in 1952. Assigned to Eau Claire, Wisconsin, in the minor Northern League (where coaching corrected his batting style), Aaron batted .336 and won the league's rookie of the year award. The following year he was assigned to the Braves' Jacksonville, Florida team, in the South Atlantic (Sally) League. Even while enduring the taunting of fans and racial insults from fellow players in the segregated south, he went on to bat .362, with 22 homers and 125 runs batted in (RBIs). He was named the league's most valuable player in 1953.

During winter ball in Puerto Rico in 1953 and 1954 Aaron began playing positions in the outfield. In the spring of 1954 he trained with the major league Milwaukee Braves and won a starting position when the regular right fielder suffered an injury. Although Aaron was sidelined late in the season with a broken ankle, he batted .280 as a rookie that year. Over the next twenty-two seasons, this quiet, six-foot, right-handed All-Star established himself as one of the most durable and skilled hitters in major league history.

In fourteen of the seasons Aaron played for the Braves, he batted .300 or more. In fifteen seasons he hit 30 or more homers, scored 100 or more runs, and drove in 100 or more runs. In his long career Aaron led all major league players in RBIs with 2,297. He played in 3,298 games, which ranked him third among players of all time. Aaron twice led the National League in batting, and four times led the league in homers. His consistent hitting

produced a career total of 3,771 hits, again ranking him third all-time. When Aaron recorded his three thousandth hit on May 7, 1970, he was the youngest player (at thirty-six) since Ty Cobb (1886–1961) to reach that milestone. Aaron played in twenty-four All-Star games, tying a record. His lifetime batting average was .305, and in two World Series he batted .364. He also held the record for hitting home runs in three straight National League playoff games, which he accomplished in 1969 against the New York Mets.

A quiet superstar

Although Aaron ranked among baseball's superstars, he received less publicity than other players. In part this was due to Aaron's quiet personality and the continuing prejudice against African American players in the majors. Moreover, playing with the Milwaukee Braves (who became the Atlanta Braves in 1966) denied Aaron the publicity received by major league players in cities like New York or Los Angeles. During Aaron's long career the Braves only won two National League pennants and one divisional title. The Braves won the World Series in 1957, the year Aaron's 44 homers helped him win his only Most Valuable Player award. The following year Milwaukee repeated as National League champions but lost the World Series.

Year after year Aaron ranked among the National League's leading home run hitters. It was not until 1970, however, that sportswriters and fans began noticing that Aaron was about to challenge Babe Ruth's (1895–1948) record total of 714 homers. By 1972 Aaron's assault on the all-time homer record was big news, and his \$200,000 annual salary was the highest in the league. The following year

Aaron hit 40 homers, falling one short of tying Ruth's mark. Early in the 1974 season Aaron hit the tying homer in Cincinnati, Ohio. Then, on the night of April 8, 1974, before a large crowd in Atlanta, Georgia, and with a national television audience looking on, Aaron hit his 715th homer off Dodgers pitcher Al Downing, breaking Ruth's record. It was the highlight of Aaron's career, although it was tempered by a growing number of death threats and racist letters that made Aaron fear for his family's safety.

A new career

After the 1974 season Aaron left the Braves and went to play for the Milwaukee Brewers until his retirement in 1976. At the time of his retirement as a player, the forty-two-year-old veteran had raised his all-time homer output to 755. When he left the Brewers he became a vice president and director of player development for the Braves, where he scouted new team prospects and oversaw the coaching of minor leaguers. He later went on to become a senior vice president for the Braves. Overall, his efforts contributed toward making the Braves one of the strongest teams in the National League. In 1982 Aaron was voted into the Baseball Hall of Fame at Cooperstown, New York, and in 1997 Hank Aaron Stadium in Mobile was dedicated to him.

Aaron received two honors in October 1999. Congress passed a resolution recognizing him as one of baseball's greatest players and praising his work with his Chasing the Dream Foundation, which helps children age nine through twelve pursue their dreams. Later that month, Aaron was named to major league baseball's All-Century Team, whose

members were chosen by fans and a panel of baseball experts. In January 2002, Aaron was honored with one of the greatest tributes an athlete can receive: his picture appeared on a Wheaties cereal box.

For More Information

Aaron, Hank, with Lonnie Wheeler. *I Had a Hammer: The Hank Aaron Story*. New York: HarperCollins, 1991.

Rennert, Richard Scott. *Henry Aaron*. New York: Chelsea House, 1993.

Sweet, Kimberly Noel. *Hank Aaron: The Life of the Homerun King*. Montgomery, AL: Junebug Books, 2001.

RALPH ABERNATHY

Born: March 11, 1926

Linden, Alabama

Died: April 30, 1990

Atlanta, Georgia

African American civil rights activist

Civil rights leader Ralph Abernathy was the best friend and close assistant of Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968). He followed King as the president of the Southern Christian Leadership Conference (SCLC). The organization used nonviolent means to fight for civil rights for African Americans.

Family and youth

Ralph David Abernathy, one of twelve children, was born in Linden, Alabama, on

March 11, 1926. His father, William, the son of a slave, first supported his family as a sharecropper (a farmer who pays some of his crops as rent to the land's owner). In time William Abernathy saved enough money to buy five hundred acres of his own and built a prosperous farm. William Abernathy eventually emerged as one of the leading African Americans in his county. William Abernathy became the county's first African American to vote and the first to serve on the grand jury (a jury that decides whether or not evidence supports a formal charge against a person for a crime). William Abernathy also served as a deacon (a nonclergy church member) in his church.

Ralph Abernathy went to Alabama State University and graduated with a degree in mathematics in 1950. He later earned a master's degree in sociology from Atlanta University in 1951. During this time he also worked as the first African American disc jockey at a white Montgomery, Alabama, radio station. While attending college he was elected president of the student council and led successful protests that called for better cafeteria conditions and better living quarters for students. This experience was the beginning of a career leading protests and working to improve the lives of others.

From an early age Ralph Abernathy wanted to become a preacher and was encouraged by his mother to pursue his ambition. As he later recalled, he had noticed that the preacher was always the person who was most admired in his community. Before finishing college Abernathy became a Baptist minister. After completing his education he served as minister at the Eastern Star Baptist church in Demopolis, Alabama, near his home town of Linden. At age twenty-six

Abernathy became a full-time minister at the First Baptist Church in Montgomery. Martin Luther King Jr. began preaching at another of Montgomery's leading African American churches, Dexter Avenue Baptist, three years later. During this time King and Abernathy became close friends.

Montgomery bus boycott

In 1955 an African American woman from Montgomery named Rosa Parks refused to give up her bus seat so that a white passenger could sit down. She was arrested for this action and was later fined. This event began an important historic phase of the civil rights movement. Local ministers and the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) began a boycott of the city buses to end segregation. At the time, the buses in Montgomery were segregated (people were required by law to sit in separate sections based on their race). Parks had been sitting in one of the front seats, which was in the "white" section. African Americans were required by law to give up their seats to white riders if other seats were not available. The ministers formed the Montgomery Improvement Association (MIA) to coordinate the boycott and voted Martin Luther King Jr. its president.

The MIA convinced African American cab drivers to take African American workers to their jobs for a ten-cent fare. This made it more affordable for African Americans to avoid riding the buses. After the city government declared the ten-cent cab rides illegal, people with cars formed car pools so that the boycotters would not have to return to the buses. After 381 days the boycott ended with the buses completely desegregated. The boy-

cotters' victory over bus segregation was enforced by a United States district court.

During 1956 Abernathy and King had been in and out of jail and court as a result of their efforts to end the practice of separating people based on their race on buses. Toward the end of the bus boycott on January 10, 1957, Abernathy's home and church were bombed. By the time the boycott was over, it had attracted national and international attention. Televised reports of the MIA's activities inspired African American civil rights protesters all over the South.

Nonviolent civil rights movement

King and Abernathy's work together in the MIA was the beginning of years of partnership and friendship between them. Their friendship, as well as their joint efforts in the civil rights struggle, lasted until King's assassination in 1968. Soon after the bus boycott, they met with other African American clergymen in Atlanta, Georgia, to form the Southern Christian Leadership Conference (SCLC). The goal of the SCLC was to press for civil rights in all areas of life. King was elected president and Abernathy was named secretary-treasurer. The group began to plan for an organized, nonviolent civil rights movement throughout the South. Their aim was to end segregation and to push for more effective federal civil rights laws.

In the early 1960s the civil rights movement began to intensify. Students staged "sit-ins" by sitting in the "whites only" sections of lunch counters. Other nonviolent demonstrations and efforts to desegregate interstate buses and bus depots also continued. During this time Abernathy moved to Atlanta to become the pastor of West Hunter Baptist Church. In Atlanta, he would be able to work more closely with the SCLC and King, who was living in the city.

In the spring of 1963 SCLC leaders began to plan their efforts to desegregate facilities in Birmingham, Alabama. Publicity (of events shown on television) about the rough treatment of African American demonstrators directed the eyes of the world to that city's civil rights protest. Abernathy and King went to prison, while more than three thousand other African Americans in the city also endured periods of time in jail while working for equal rights. The Birmingham demonstra-

tions were successful, and the demands for desegregation of public facilities were agreed upon. After the Birmingham demonstrations, desegregation programs began in over 250 southern cities. Thousands of schools, parks, pools, restaurants, and hotels were opened to all people, regardless of their race.

March on Washington

The success of the Birmingham demonstration also encouraged President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963) to send a civil rights bill to Congress. In order to stress the need for this bill, the leaders of all of the nation's major civil rights organizations agreed to participate in a massive demonstration in Washington, D.C. On August 28, 1963, this "March on Washington" attracted over 250,000 African American and white demonstrators from all over the United States. By the next summer the Civil Rights Act, which banned discrimination (treating people unequally because of their differences) based on race, color, religion, or national origin, had been signed into law. In 1965 the Voting Rights Act, which banned discrimination in voting, was passed.

Leadership of the SCLC

On April 4, 1968, King was assassinated in Memphis, Tennessee. Abernathy was named the new leader of the SCLC. His first project was to complete King's plan to hold a Poor People's Campaign in Washington during which poor whites, African Americans, and Native Americans would present their problems to President Lyndon B. Johnson (1908–1973) and the Congress. As a result of these protests, Abernathy once again found himself in jail. This time he was charged with

unlawful assembly (an unlawful gathering of people for an illegal purpose). After the Poor People's Campaign, Abernathy continued to lead the SCLC, but the organization did not regain the popularity it had held under King's leadership.

Abernathy resigned from the SCLC in 1977. Later, he formed an organization that was designed to help train African Americans for better economic opportunities. He continued to serve as a minister and as a lecturer throughout the United States. In 1989 Abernathy published his autobiography, called *And the Walls Come Tumbling Down* (Harper, 1989). Abernathy died of a heart attack on April 30, 1990, in Atlanta.

For More Information

Abernathy, Ralph. *And the Walls Came Tumbling Down: An Autobiography*. New York: Harper & Row, 1991.

Oates, Stephen. *Let the Trumpet Sound*. New York: Harper & Row, 1982.

Reef, Catherine M. *Ralph David Abernathy (People in Focus Book)*. Parsippany, NJ: Dillon Press, 1995.

BELLA ABZUG

Born: July 24, 1920

New York, New York

Died: March 31, 1998

New York, New York

American lawyer, politician, and civil rights activist

Bella Abzug worked for civil and women's rights as a lawyer and as a politician. Throughout her long political career, she used her sharp tongue and unusual style to advance the issues that were her deepest concern. As she wrote in her autobiography, "I'm going to help organize a new political coalition of the women, the minorities and the young people, along with the poor, the elderly, the workers, and the unemployed, which is going to turn this country upside down and inside out."

An early interest in women's rights

Bella Stavisky was born on July 24, 1920, in the Bronx, New York. She was the daughter of Emanuel and Esther Stavisky, Russian Jewish immigrants who owned a meat market. During her youth she worked in her father's store until it failed in the 1920s, and he turned to selling insurance. In 1930 her father died, leaving her mother to support the family with his insurance money and by taking jobs in local department stores.

Bella's interest in women's rights began at a young age. Her family was deeply religious. While attending synagogue (a place for Jewish worship of God) with her grandfather, she was offended that women were not treated the same as men. According to the rules of Orthodox Judaism (a branch of the Jewish faith that strictly follows customs and traditions), women were forced to sit in the back rows of the balcony in synagogues.

Making a difference

Bella Stavisky attended an all-female high school in the west Bronx, where she was elected president of her class. She then went



Bella Abzug.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

on to Hunter College, where she served as student-body president and graduated in 1942. She taught Jewish history and Hebrew on the weekends. She marched in protests against the harm being done to Jewish people in Europe and against British and American neutrality in the Spanish Civil War. (The war was a revolt led by the military against Spain's Republican government that lasted from 1936 to 1939). During World War II (1939–45) she was one of thousands of American women entering war production industries, working in a shipbuilding factory. In 1944 she married Maurice Abzug, a stockbroker and writer. The couple had two daughters.

Bella Abzug decided that she could do more to help people if she became a lawyer. She entered Columbia Law School, where she became editor of the *Columbia Law Review*. After graduating in 1947, she worked as a labor lawyer and represented civil rights workers. She became committed to helping poor people gain justice and a decent life in the days following World War II.

In the 1950s Abzug became deeply involved in the early civil rights movement. In 1950 she agreed to defend an African American man named Willie McGee. McGee was accused of raping a white woman with whom he had been having an affair, found guilty, and sentenced to death under the harsh laws in place in Mississippi during that time. Although she lost the case, Abzug succeeded in delaying the man's execution for two years by appealing the ruling twice to the Supreme Court.

In the late 1960s Abzug continued to do what she could to help ethnic minorities, women's groups, and the poor. During these years she became active in the Democratic Party. After the Chicago Democratic Convention in 1968 she joined with other like-minded Democrats to found the New Democratic Coalition. She also joined in the movement to ban nuclear testing, a movement that became more of an antiwar movement as the United States deepened its involvement in the Vietnam War (1955–75). In this war, the United States supported the anti-Communist government of South Vietnam in its fight against a takeover by the Communist government of North Vietnam.

Elected to office

In 1970, with the support of labor organizations and the Jewish population,

Abzug was elected to the U.S. House of Representatives from New York City's Nineteenth District. She quickly gained national attention for her bold ideas and for the wide hats she wore within the halls of Congress. On her first day on the job she introduced a bill calling for American troops to be pulled out of Vietnam by July 4, 1971. Although the bill was defeated within a week, Abzug had made a name for herself as a politician with a tough style who was unafraid of her opponents.

While in office she coauthored the 1974 Freedom of Information Act (a law that gives people in America the right to access otherwise secret information from government agencies) and the 1974 Privacy Act (a law that gives U.S. citizens and permanent residents the right to access many government files that contain information about them). She was the first to call for the impeachment (a process in which a public official is put on trial in Congress with the Senate acting as the judge) of President Richard Nixon (1913–1994) for his involvement in criminal activity. She also cast one of the first votes for the Equal Rights Amendment, a proposed amendment to the Constitution that if passed would have guaranteed equality of rights to both men and women.

In 1972 New York City changed the way its congressional districts were set up, eliminating Abzug's district. She decided to run against the popular William Fitts Ryan (1922–1972) in the Twentieth District. She lost the primary, but Ryan died before the general election in November. As a result, Abzug became the Democratic candidate in the general election. She won and went on to serve in the House until 1976, when she gave up her seat to run for the Senate, a race she lost to Daniel Patrick Moynihan (1927–). She then

ran in the Democratic mayoral primary in New York but was defeated by Edward Koch (1924–). Never one to give up, she told reporters not to assume that she was finished with politics.

Continuing activism

Abzug continued to fight for peace and women's rights long after leaving office. President Jimmy Carter (1924–) appointed her as cochair, or joint leader, of the National Advisory Committee for Women. However, after the committee met with President Carter and pointed out that recent cuts in social services were having a negative effect on the nation's women, Abzug was dismissed from the committee. This led to the resignation of several other members, including the other cochair, and caused a massive public outcry against Carter.

Abzug devoted her energies to women's rights up to the final years of her life. As chair of New York City's Commission on the Status of Women, she directed a national campaign to increase the number of women in public office. Her presence at the United Nations 4th Women's Conference in Beijing, China, in 1991, attracted a great deal of attention. On March 31, 1998, after an operation on her heart, Abzug died in New York, bringing to an end a lifelong fight to improve the lives of women, minorities, and the poor.

For More Information

Abzug, Bella. *Bella*. Edited by Mel Ziegler. New York: Saturday Review Press, 1972.

Abzug, Bella, with Mim Kelber. *Gender Gap*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1984.

Faber, Doris. *Bella Abzug*. New York: Lothrop, Lee & Shepard, 1976.

CHINUA ACHEBE

Born: November 15, 1930

Ogidi, Nigeria

Nigerian novelist

Chinua Achebe is one of Nigeria's greatest novelists. His novels are written mainly for an African audience, but having been translated into more than forty languages, they have found worldwide readership.

Early life

Chinua Achebe was born on November 15, 1930, in Ogidi in Eastern Nigeria. His family belonged to the Igbo tribe, and he was the fifth of six children. Representatives of the British government that controlled Nigeria convinced his parents, Isaiah Okafor Achebe and Janet Ileogbunam, to abandon their traditional religion and follow Christianity. Achebe was brought up as a Christian, but he remained curious about the more traditional Nigerian faiths. He was educated at a government college in Umuahia, Nigeria, and graduated from the University College at Ibadan, Nigeria, in 1954.

Successful first effort

Achebe was unhappy with books about Africa written by British authors such as Joseph Conrad (1857–1924) and John Buchan (1875–1940), because he felt the descriptions of African people were inaccurate and insulting. While working for the Nigerian Broadcasting Corporation he composed his first novel, *Things Fall Apart*

(1959), the story of a traditional warrior hero who is unable to adapt to changing conditions in the early days of British rule. The book won immediate international recognition and also became the basis for a play by Biyi Bandele. Years later, in 1997, the Performance Studio Workshop of Nigeria put on a production of the play, which was then presented in the United States as part of the Kennedy Center's African Odyssey series in 1999. Achebe's next two novels, *No Longer At Ease* (1960) and *Arrow of God* (1964), were set in the past as well.

By the mid-1960s the newness of independence had died out in Nigeria, as the country faced the political problems common to many of the other states in modern Africa. The Igbo, who had played a leading role in Nigerian politics, now began to feel that the Muslim Hausa people of Northern Nigeria considered the Igbos second-class citizens. Achebe wrote *A Man of the People* (1966), a story about a crooked Nigerian politician. The book was published at the very moment a military takeover removed the old political leadership. This made some Northern military officers suspect that Achebe had played a role in the takeover, but there was never any evidence supporting the theory.

Political crusader

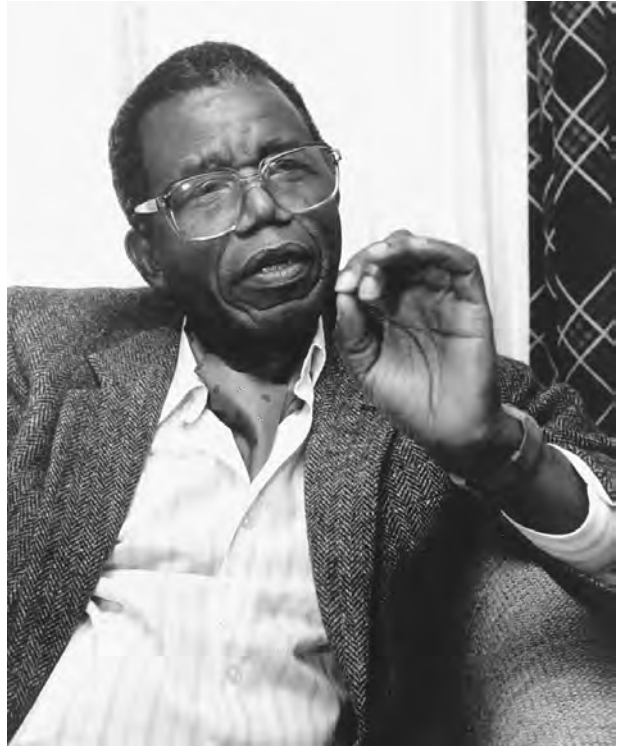
During the years when Biafra attempted to break itself off as a separate state from Nigeria (1967–70), however, Achebe served as an ambassador (representative) to Biafra. He traveled to different countries discussing the problems of his people, especially the starving and slaughtering of Igbo children. He wrote articles for newspapers and maga-

zines about the Biafran struggle and founded the Citadel Press with Nigerian poet Christopher Okigbo. Writing a novel at this time was out of the question, he said during a 1969 interview: “I can’t write a novel now; I wouldn’t want to. And even if I wanted to, I couldn’t. I can write poetry—something short, intense, more in keeping with my mood.” Three volumes of poetry emerged during this time, as well as a collection of short stories and children’s stories.

After the fall of the Republic of Biafra, Achebe continued to work at the University of Nigeria at Nsukka, and devoted time to the Heinemann Educational Books’ Writers Series (which was designed to promote the careers of young African writers). In 1972 Achebe came to the United States to become an English professor at the University of Massachusetts at Amherst (he taught there again in 1987). In 1975 he joined the faculty at the University of Connecticut. He returned to the University of Nigeria in 1976. His novel *Anthills of the Savanna* (1987) tells the story of three boyhood friends in a West African nation and the deadly effects of the desire for power and wanting to be elected “president for life.” After its release Achebe returned to the United States and teaching positions at Stanford University, Dartmouth College, and other universities.

Later years

Back in Nigeria in 1990 to celebrate his sixtieth birthday, Achebe was involved in a car accident on one of the country’s dangerous roads. The accident left him paralyzed from the waist down. Doctors recommended he go back to the United States for good to receive better medical care, so he accepted a



Chinua Achebe.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

teaching position at Bard College, Annandale-on-Hudson, New York. In 1999, after a nine-year absence, Achebe visited his homeland, where his native village of Ogidi honored him for his dedication to the myths and legends of his ancestors. In 2000 Achebe’s nonfiction book *Home and Exile*, consisting of three essays, was published by Oxford University Press.

For More Information

Carroll, David. *Chinua Achebe*. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1980.

Ezenwa-Ohaeto. *Chinua Achebe: A Biography*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1997.

Innes, C. L. *Chinua Achebe*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1990.

ABIGAIL ADAMS

Born: November 22, 1744

Weymouth, Massachusetts

Died: October 28, 1818

Quincy, Massachusetts

American political advisor and first lady

Though she believed her main role in life to be wife and mother, Abigail Adams also was a behind-the-scenes stateswoman. She used her talents to maintain her family during the many absences of her husband, John Adams, the second president of the United States, and to advise her husband about women's rights and slavery. Her detailed letters with her husband, family, and friends provide a historical record of the times and show her to have been a woman ahead of her time.

Early life

Abigail Smith was born in Weymouth, Massachusetts, on November 11, 1744, to William and Elizabeth Quincy Smith. Her well-educated father was the minister of the North Parish Congregational Church of Weymouth. Although many of Abigail's relatives were well-to-do merchants and ship captains, she was raised in a simple, rural set-

ting. She was educated at home, learning domestic skills, such as sewing, fine needlework, and cooking, along with reading and writing. She took advantage of her father's extensive library to broaden her knowledge. Her lack of formal education became a lifelong regret. As an adult, she favored equal education for women. She once argued that educated mothers raise educated children.

On October 25, 1764, Abigail married John Adams, a struggling, Harvard-educated country lawyer nine years her senior. Although John Adams was not from a prominent family, the couple was well matched intellectually and the marriage was a happy one. He admired and encouraged Abigail's outspokenness and intelligence. She supported him by running the family farm, raising their children, listening to him, and trying to help him with his problems.

Early political years

During the first few years of their marriage, John Adams lived mostly in Boston, Massachusetts, building his law career and becoming involved with the growing political unrest. This political unrest was brought about by the English government's attempts to tighten control over its colonies through the passage of laws and new taxes that many colonists did not support. Abigail, however, remained at Braintree (later Quincy), Massachusetts, to run the family farm. Although women at that time did not normally handle business affairs, Abigail traded livestock, hired help, bought land, oversaw construction, and supervised the planting and harvesting. "I hope in time to have the reputation of being as good a Farmess as my partner has of being a good Statesman," she once wrote.

During the next few years, hostilities between the American colonies and Great Britain increased, forcing John Adams away from home more often. He was chosen as a delegate to the First Continental Congress. (The congress was a group of colonial representatives who met in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, on September 5, 1774, and took a stand against the British government's policy of passing laws over the colonists without colonial representation.) He traveled constantly in addition to those duties, trying to earn as much money as he could practicing law. He tried to make these difficult times easier by writing long letters to Abigail, sometimes several a day. She, in turn, wrote to her husband of her own loneliness, doubts, and fears. She suffered from migraines and chronic insomnia. Despite her own bouts with illness, she gave birth to five children. One daughter, Susanna, born in 1768, lived for only a year.

War affects the family

When the Revolutionary War (1775–83) began with the battles of Lexington and Concord in Massachusetts on April 17, 1775, John Adams was called back to the Continental Congress. On June 15, 1775, the Second Continental Congress made George Washington commander in chief of the American army. The Congress also set up a government for the colonies. A year later, on July 4, 1776, the Congress approved the Declaration of Independence, in which the American colonies declared their independence from the government of Great Britain. During the war Abigail provided meals and lodging to soldiers who stopped at the Adams' home at all hours of the day and



Abigail Adams.

Courtesy of the National Portrait Gallery.

night. In the fall of 1775, the inhabitants of Braintree suffered an epidemic of dysentery, an often-fatal bowel infection. Abigail had to nurse her sick relatives in addition to caring for her children. Her mother and five other members of her family eventually died from the illness.

As the fighting drew closer to Boston, Abigail Adams wrote many letters describing the events of the time. In a letter written in March 1776, she urged her husband to take women's rights into consideration if and when the colonies gained independence: "In the new code of laws which I suppose it will be necessary for you to make, I desire you

would remember the ladies and be more generous and favorable to them than your ancestors . . . If particular care and attention is not paid to the ladies, we are determined to foment [promote] a rebellion, and will not hold ourselves bound by any laws in which we have no voice or representation.”

John Adams is sent to Europe

As the war continued, John Adams was sent to Europe to work on treaties with other countries and to seek loans for the colonies. He took one or two of his sons on these assignments, which continued after the war ended, giving America its independence from Great Britain in 1883. These constant separations were difficult for Abigail Adams, but she supported her husband. She wrote that she “found his honor and reputation much dearer to [her] than [her] own present pleasure and happiness.”

After five years, Abigail and her daughter, Nabby, joined her husband and sons in England. During the years in Europe, Abigail acted as hostess for both political and social gatherings and as an advisor to her husband. In April 1788, five years after Abigail's arrival, the family returned home.

John Adams is elected

After the American Revolution ended, the newly independent country of the United States needed a president. When the votes were counted in March 1789, George Washington (1732–1799) was the clear presidential winner. At the time, the person with the most votes became president, while the person with the next largest number became vice president. John Adams placed second and became vice president. Although Abigail

Adams had been upset by her husband's earlier political assignments, which forced him to be away from home for years at a time, she fully supported his decision to accept the vice presidency. The family moved to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, where the federal government was located at the time. Abigail assumed the role of hostess, welcoming visitors to the Adams's home. However, she returned to Braintree the next spring with her son, Thomas, who had fallen ill.

When Washington retired in 1797, John Adams ran for president and won the election. His wife joined him in Philadelphia in May. Abigail Adams quickly settled in as first lady; her husband discussed many important problems with her and often followed her advice. Abigail kept writing letters to friends and even continued managing the Quincy (formerly Braintree) farm through correspondence with her sister, Mary Cranch.

Whereas John Adams had never been in finer spirits, Abigail Adams became exhausted and ill with fever on a trip home to Quincy in the summer of 1797. This led to yet another separation when the president returned to Philadelphia in November. Abigail eventually recovered and returned to Philadelphia the next year, staying for the rest of her husband's term.

Retirement to Quincy

After losing his bid for reelection in 1800, John Adams retired to life on the farm. Abigail Adams continued to keep herself busy maintaining her home. The family remained plagued with illness. Both Mary Cranch and her husband died within days of each other. Nabby Adams had been diagnosed with cancer and underwent an opera-

tion. John Adams injured his leg in an accident and was unable to walk for several weeks. As always, Abigail Adams cared for them all.

In October of 1818, Abigail Adams suffered a stroke. She died quietly on October 28, 1818, surrounded by her family. John Adams lived several more years, passing away on July 4, 1826. Abigail Adams has the distinction of being the first woman in U.S. history to be the wife of one president (John Adams) and the mother of another (John Quincy Adams [1767–1848]).

For More Information

Akers, Charles W. *Abigail Adams*. New York: Longman, 2000.

Bober, Natalie S. *Abigail Adams*. New York: Atheneum Books for Young Readers, 1995.

Butterfield, L. H., et al., eds. *The Book of Abigail and John: Selected Letters of the Adams Family, 1762–1784*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1975.

Nagel, Paul C. *The Adams Women*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1987.

ANSEL ADAMS

Born: February 20, 1902

San Francisco, California

Died: April 22, 1984

Carmel, California

American photographer

Ansel Adams was a masterful photographer and a lifelong conservationist (a person who works to preserve and protect the environment) who encouraged understanding of, and respect for, the natural environment. Although he spent a large part of his career in commercial photography, he is best known for his photographs of landscapes.

Early life

Ansel Easton Adams, the only child of Charles Hitchcock and Olive Bray Adams, was born on February 20, 1902, in San Francisco, California, near the Golden Gate Bridge. In 1906 an aftershock from the famous earthquake of that year threw him to the floor and gave him a badly broken nose. His father, a successful businessman who owned an insurance agency and a chemical factory, sent him to private, as well as public, schools. Adams was shy and self-conscious about his nose and had problems in school. He received only an eighth-grade education, preferring to learn mainly through following his own interests. From a young age he enjoyed the outdoors, taking many long walks and exploring.

At age twelve Adams began playing the piano. He was serious about music and decided to pursue it as a career. But he was also interested in photography. A family trip to Yosemite National Park in 1916, where he made his first amateur photos, is said to have determined his direction in life. He then found a job as a photo technician for a commercial firm, which helped him learn more about his hobby. In 1919 he joined the Sierra Club, an organization devoted to protecting the wilderness of the Sierra Nevada. He spent



Ansel Adams.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

the next few summers working as a caretaker in the organization's headquarters in Yosemite Valley. Later in life, from 1936 to 1970, Adams was president of the Sierra Club, one of the many distinguished positions that he held.

In the 1920s Adams was spending as much time as he could in the Sierra Nevada, hiking, exploring, and taking photographs. He became friendly with leaders of the Sierra Club, had photos and writings printed in the club's official publication, and became more involved with the conservation movement. He even met his wife, Virginia Best, in Yosemite. They were married in 1928 and had two children.

Photography career

Ansel Adams gave up on the piano and decided to become a full-time professional photographer at about the time that some of his work was published in limited edition collections, such as *Parmelian Prints of the High Sierras* (1927) and *Taos Pueblo* (1930), with text written by Mary Austin. His first important one-man show was held in San Francisco in 1932 at the M. H. de Young Memorial Museum.

Adams went on to open the Ansel Adams Gallery for the Arts. He also taught, lectured, and worked on advertising assignments in the San Francisco area. During the 1930s he also began his extensive publications on methods of photography, insisting throughout his life on the importance of careful craftsmanship. In 1936 Alfred Stieglitz (1864–1946) gave Adams a one-man show in his New York gallery—only the second time the work of a young photographer was exhibited by Stieglitz.

In 1937 Adams moved to Yosemite Valley close to his major subject and began publishing a stream of volumes, including *Sierra Nevada: The John Muir Trail* (1938), *Illustrated Guide to Yosemite Valley* (1940), *Yosemite and the High Sierra* (1948), and *My Camera in Yosemite Valley* (1949).

New ideas on photography

In 1930 Adams met the famous photographer Paul Strand (1890–1976) while they were working in Taos, New Mexico, and the man and his work had a lasting effect on Adams's approach to photography. Strand encouraged Adams to change his approach from a soft expression of subjects to a much

**JOHN
ADAMS**

clearer, harder treatment, so-called “straight photography.” This idea was further reinforced by his association with the short-lived, but important, group of photographers known as *f/64* (referring to the lens opening which guarantees a distinct image), which included Edward Weston (1886–1958) and Imogen Cunningham (1883–1976). This group helped the development of photography as a fine art.

In one sense Ansel Adams’s work is an extensive record of what is still left of the wilderness, the shrinking untouched part of the natural environment. Yet to see his work only as photographic images is to miss the main point that he tried to make: without a guiding vision, photography is not necessarily an important activity. The finished product, as Adams saw it, must be thought up before it can be executed. With nineteenth-century artists and philosophers (seekers of wisdom) he shared the belief that this vision must be inspired by life on earth. Photographs, he believed, were not *taken* from the environment but were *made* into something greater than themselves.

Ansel Adams died on April 22, 1984. During his life he was criticized for photographing rocks while the world was falling apart. He responded by suggesting that “the understanding of the . . . world of nature will aid in holding the world of man together.”

For More Information

Adams, Ansel and Mary Street. *Ansel Adams: An Autobiography*. Boston: Little Brown, 1985.

Alinder, Mary Street. *Ansel Adams: A Biography*. New York: Holt, 1996.

Born: October 30, 1735

Braintree (now Quincy), Massachusetts

Died: July 4, 1826

Quincy, Massachusetts

American president, vice president, and politician

John Adams, the second president of the United States and the first vice president, also helped in the early years of the republic as a lawyer, writer, congressman, and public speaker. As president, he kept the country at peace when many were calling for war with France. Adams later described his peace decision as “the most splendid diamond in my crown.”

Early life and education

John Adams was born in Braintree (now Quincy), Massachusetts, on October 30, 1735, the first of three children born to John Adams and Susanna Boylston Adams. His father was a modest but successful farmer and local officeholder. After some initial reluctance, Adams entered Harvard and received his bachelor’s degree in 1755. For about a year he taught school in Worcester, Massachusetts.

Although he gave some thought to entering the ministry, Adams decided to study law instead. While developing his legal practice, he participated in town affairs and contributed essays to Boston newspapers. In 1764 he married Abigail Smith of Weymouth, Massachusetts, who was to provide him with important support and assistance during the full life that lay ahead.



John Adams.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Early political career

By 1765 Adams had become known for his skills as a lawyer. After Great Britain passed the Stamp Act, which imposed taxes on printed materials in the American colonies that many viewed as unfair, he moved into the center of Massachusetts political life. He contributed an important series of essays to the Boston newspapers and prepared a series of anti-Stamp Act resolutions for the Braintree town meetings. These resolutions were copied widely throughout the province. In April 1768 Adams moved to Boston and eventually was elected the city's representative to the Massachusetts legislature.

In the spring of 1771, largely for reasons of health, Adams returned to Braintree, where he divided his attention between farming and law. Within a year, however, he was back in Boston. In 1774 he was one of the representatives from Massachusetts to the First Continental Congress. As a representative he helped write letters of protest to Great Britain. He also continued to write newspaper articles about the colonies and their disputes with Britain.

The war and colonial independence

After the battles of Lexington and Concord in Massachusetts on April 17, 1775, began the Revolutionary War (1775–83), Adams returned to Congress. At this time he believed that independence from Britain would probably be necessary for the American colonies. Congress, however, was not yet willing to agree, and Adams fumed while still more petitions were sent off to England. The best chance of promoting independence, he argued, was for the various colonies to adopt new forms of government. Many provinces sought his advice on setting up these new governments.

By February 1776 Adams was fully committed to American independence. In May, Congress passed a resolution stating that measures should be taken to provide for the “happiness and safety” of the people. Adams wrote the introduction that in effect spelled out the principle of independence. He contributed little to the actual content of the Declaration of Independence but served as “the pillar of its support on the floor of the Congress,” according to Thomas Jefferson (1743–1826). On another committee Adams drew up a model treaty that encouraged Congress to enter into commercial alliances (business deals), but not

political alliances, with European nations. Exhausted by his duties, he left Philadelphia in mid-October for Massachusetts. For the next year or so he traveled from Massachusetts to Philadelphia to serve in Congress.

Foreign assignments

In November 1777, Congress elected Adams commissioner to France, and in February he left Boston for what would prove to be an extended stay. Adams spent the next year and a half trying to secure badly needed loans for Congress. He sent numerous long letters to friends and family describing European affairs and observed the French court and national life. After coming home to Massachusetts, Adams was asked by Congress to return to Europe to help negotiate the terms of a peace agreement, which would mark the end of the American Revolution, and then to work on a commercial treaty with Great Britain. The treaty of peace was signed on September 3, 1783.

Before returning permanently to the United States, Adams spent three years as American minister to the Court of Saint James in London. He was unable to make much progress there because relations between the United States and Britain just after the American Revolution were so strained. He also did not have the full support of Congress. Adams eventually resigned and returned to Boston.

The presidency

Once back in Boston, Adams began the final stage of his political career. He was elected vice president in 1789 and served for two terms under President George Washington (1732–1799). Adams was unhappy in

this post; he felt that he lacked the authority to accomplish much. In 1796, despite a strong challenge from Thomas Jefferson and the choice of his own Federalist Party (an early political party that supported a strong federal government) to run a candidate against him, Adams was elected as the second president of the United States.

Adams took office on March 4, 1797. From the beginning his presidency was a stormy one. His cabinet proved difficult to control, and many foreign policy problems arose. The French Revolution (1787–99) and fighting between England and France caused many Americans to take the sides of both those countries. Still others wanted the United States to remain neutral. Adams found himself caught in the middle.

Although anti-French feelings were running high, President Adams committed himself to a plan of peace with France. This decision enraged most of his opponents. The president's attempts to keep peace made sense; America was still young and not fully established, and entering into an unnecessary war could have been a disaster. Many members of his own Federalist Party were opposed to him, however, and in the end Adams lost the next election to Jefferson by a narrow margin. He was so disappointed over his rejection by the American people that he refused to stay to welcome his successor into office.

John Adams spent the remainder of his life at home on his farm. He retained a lively interest in public affairs, particularly when they involved the rising career of his son, John Quincy Adams (1767–1848), who would also become president. Adams divided his time between overseeing his farm and writing letters about his personal experi-

ences as well as more general issues of the day. He died at the age of ninety-one in Quincy, Massachusetts, just a few hours after Jefferson's death, on July 4, 1826.

For More Information

Brookhiser, Richard. *America's First Dynasty: The Adamses, 1735–1918*. New York: Free Press, 2002.

Ferling, John E. *John Adams: A Life*. Knoxville: University of Tennessee Press, 1992.

McCullough, David G. *John Adams*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 2001.

SAMUEL ADAMS

Born: September 27, 1722

Boston, Massachusetts

Died: October 2, 1803

Boston, Massachusetts

American colonial leader

The colonial leader Samuel Adams was an influential figure in the years leading up to the American Revolution (1775–83). His newspaper articles and organizational activities helped inspire American colonists to rebel against the British government.

Early life and education

Samuel Adams was born on September 27, 1722, in Boston, Massachusetts, the son of a woman of strong religious beliefs and of a prosperous brewer who was active in local politics. For this reason Adams was familiar at

a young age with Boston politics and politicians. As an adult he would play a strong role in Boston's political resistance to British rule.

The young Adams studied Greek and Latin in a small schoolhouse. He entered Harvard College at age fourteen. When he graduated in 1740 he was not sure what his career should be. He did not want to become a brewer like his father, nor did he want to enter the clergy. Although his father loaned him money to start his own business, Adams did not manage his funds well. As a result he went to work for his father's brewery after all. In 1749 he married Elizabeth Checkley.

For several years Adams struggled in his career. He worked as a tax collector in Boston, but he mismanaged funds and had to pay the difference when his accounts came up short. There seems to have been no charge that he was corrupt, only extremely inefficient. After his first wife died in 1757, he married Elizabeth Wells in 1764. Adams's second wife turned out to be a good manager. His luck had changed, for he was about to move into a political circle that would offer political opportunities unlike any in his past.

Political activities

Adams became active in politics, transforming himself from an inefficient tax gatherer into a leading patriot. As a member of the Caucus Club, one of Boston's local political organizations, Adams helped control local elections in 1764. When Britain began an attempt to tighten control over its American colonies by passing laws such as the Sugar Act (1764), Adams was influential in urging colonists to oppose these measures. The Sugar Act was a tax law imposed by the British aimed at increasing the prices Boston merchants paid

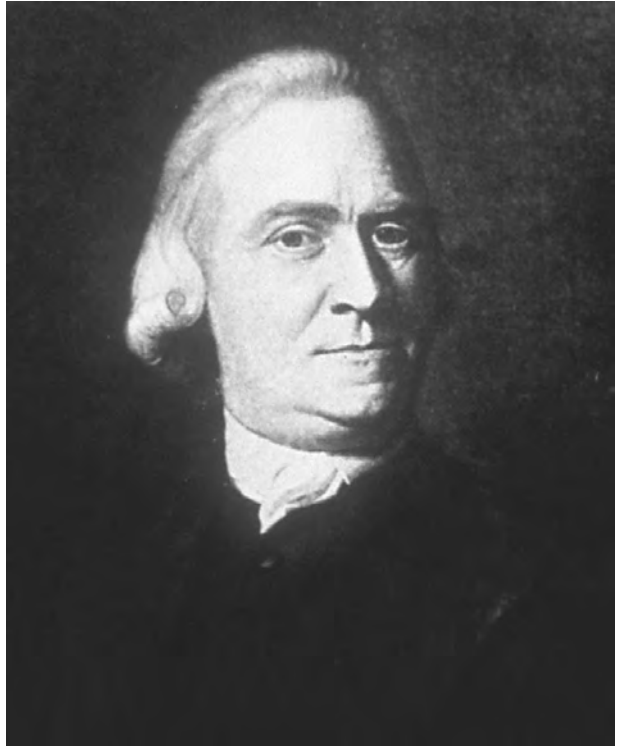
for molasses. Urged on by radicals in the Caucus Club, Adams wrote instructions to local representatives attacking the Sugar Act as an unreasonable law. Adams argued that the law violated colonists' rights because it had not been imposed with the approval of an elected representative. He argued that there should be "no taxation without representation."

During the next decade Adams wrote essays about political ideas that were developing in Boston. Eager publishers hurried his writings into print. Meanwhile the British Parliament passed an even harsher tax law than the Sugar Act. This tax law was the Stamp Act of 1765, which placed a tax on printed materials throughout the American colonies.

Adams's fiery essays and continual activities helped solidify American opinion against the Stamp Act. His columns in the *Boston Gazette* newspaper sent a stream of abuse against the British government. Riding a wave of popularity, Adams was elected into the Massachusetts legislature.

Adams's next move was to protest the Townshend Acts of 1767, which placed customs duties on imported goods. His stand against the Townshend Acts placed him in the front ranks of the leading colonists and gained him the hatred of both British general Thomas Gage (1721–1787) and England's King George III (1738–1820). To protest the Townshend Acts, Adams and other radicals called for an economic boycott of British goods. Though the actual success of the boycott was limited, Adams had proved that an organized and skillful minority could effectively combat a larger but disorganized group.

In the series of events in Massachusetts that led up to the first battles of the Revolu-



Samuel Adams.

tion, Adams wrote dozens of newspaper articles that stirred his readers' anger at the British. He appealed to American radicals and communicated with leaders in other colonies. In a sense, Adams was burning himself out. By the time of the battles of Lexington and Concord in Massachusetts on April 17, 1775, which marked the beginning of the Revolutionary War, his career as a revolutionary bandleader had peaked.

Declining power

Adams served in the Continental Congress between 1774 and 1781. However, after the first session his activities lessened and his

ties to other leaders cooled. He was uncertain about America's next steps and where he would fit into the scheme. Adams served in the 1779 Massachusetts constitutional convention, where he allowed his cousin, John Adams (1735–1826), to do most of the work. He attended the Massachusetts ratifying convention in 1788, but he contributed little to this meeting.

Although his political power had lessened, Adams served in political office for several more years. He was the lieutenant governor of Massachusetts from 1789 to 1793, when he became governor. He was reelected for three terms but did not seek reelection in 1797. Samuel Adams died in Boston on October 2, 1803.

For More Information

Alexander, John K. *Samuel Adams: America's Revolutionary Politician*. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield, 2002.

Fradin, Dennis B. *Samuel Adams: The Father of American Independence*. New York: Clarion Books, 1998.

Jones, Veda Boyd. *Samuel Adams: Patriot*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

JOY ADAMSON

Born: January 20, 1910

Troppau, Silesia, Austria

Died: January 3, 1980

Shaba Game Reserve, Kenya

Austrian naturalist, writer, and painter

Naturalist and wildlife preservationist Joy Adamson is best known for the books and films depicting her work in Africa, especially her inspirational book *Born Free*. Adamson spent almost forty years living on game reserves in Kenya, and became heavily involved in wildlife preservation activities.

An inspired childhood

Joy Adamson was born Friederike Victoria Gessner on January 20, 1910, in Troppau, Silesia, Austria, to a wealthy Austrian family. Her parents, Victor and Traute Gessner, divorced when Joy was ten years old. Her father worked as an architect and town planner. Hunting was a favorite sport on her family's estate but, after she shot a deer with the estate's gamekeeper as a teenager, Joy promised herself she would never kill for sport again. Growing up, Joy dreamed of becoming a concert pianist, but her hands were too small. So she turned to such varied fields as psychoanalysis (the study of the mental process), archaeology, and painting. She finally decided on medicine, but never completed her studies.

In 1935 Joy married Victor von Klarwill. Her new husband, a Jew, decided that the couple should move to Kenya to escape the rising Nazi movement in Austria. The Nazi movement started in Germany and aimed to "liquidate" or kill all Jews in Europe. Klarwill sent his young wife ahead to Africa. Unfortunately, on the voyage there, she met Peter Bally, a botanist (one who studies plants). When her husband arrived in Kenya, Joy announced her intention to divorce him. She married Bally shortly afterward, in 1938.

Bally traveled through Kenya, studying its plant life, and Joy accompanied him. She began to paint their findings, and eventually completed seven hundred paintings that were published in several books. Within only a few years, however, there was a second divorce, closely followed in 1943 by a third and final marriage for Joy. She had met and fallen in love with George Adamson, a game warden in an outlying area of Kenya. The couple spent the rest of their lives traveling through the Kenyan wilderness together.

Working with lions

George Adamson, as a game warden, often encountered lions and other wildlife during his travels. In 1956 he was forced to kill a lioness that attacked him while trying to protect her three cubs. Two of the cubs were sturdy enough to be sent to a zoo, but the Adamsons kept the third cub, a small female that they named Elsa. In her book, *Born Free*, Joy Adamson tells the story of how she and her husband raised the cub and then had to train it to fend for itself in the wilderness. After a great deal of work with Elsa, the Adamsons knew for certain that they had been successful when they left Elsa in the wild for a week and returned to find that she had killed a waterbuck, an African antelope. Elsa's story in *Born Free* ended with the news that the lioness had three cubs of her own.

In Adamson's two sequels to *Born Free*—*Living Free* and *Forever Free*—she writes about Elsa's cubs: Jespah, Gopa, and Little Elsa. In early 1961, Elsa became sick and died. She has a marker on her grave in the Meru Game Reserve in Kenya. The Adamsons then had to train her cubs, who were too young to be released into the wild,



Joy Adamson.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

to become hunters. Eventually the cubs were released, but were never sighted again.

Elsa an inspiration to many

All three “Elsa” books were extremely popular, and films were made of each of them—the 1966 *Born Free* was the most popular. The stars of the film series, Virginia McKenna and her husband Bill Travers, were so moved by the Adamsons' work that they later founded the Born Free Foundation in England to support wildlife conservation. It is estimated that the “Elsa” series and other Adamson books have been translated into at least thirty-five languages. According to

Adrian House's biography, *The Great Safari: The Lives of George and Joy Adamson, Born Free* served as inspiration for zoologist Iain Douglas-Hamilton, a major activist working to protect the African elephant from extinction. House also notes that anthropologist Desmond Morris credits *Born Free* with affecting an entire generation's attitude towards animals.

After Elsa's death and the release of her cubs, Adamson adopted a young cheetah, Pippa, who had been the house pet of a British army officer. For several years, Pippa was also trained to survive in the wild. Her story is told in Adamson's *The Spotted Sphinx*. Adamson also studied and worked with a variety of other animals, including baby elephants, buffaloes, and colobus monkeys. However, not all of the Adamsons' work with wildlife was successful. One lion that had been returned to the wilderness was destroyed after it returned to areas where humans lived, attacked a child, and killed one of the Adamsons' servants.

Wildlife preservation

As is still the case, preservation of African wildlife was a serious problem in the 1960s and the 1970s. The Kenyan government did not place a high priority on saving wildlife. Even in protected reserves poaching (illegal hunting for profit) was a common event.

Adamson went on an international tour to speak about wildlife preservation in 1962, and became a founder of the World Wildlife Fund and the Elsa Wild Animal Appeal. The money earned from her books was used to set up animal reserves and to fund several preservation organizations. Adamson was

also an early activist in the movement to boycott (to protest the selling and using of) clothing made from animal fur.

Mysteriously murdered in the wilderness

On January 3, 1980, the world heard the shocking news that Joy Adamson had been killed in the Shaba Game Reserve in northern Kenya, where she had been observing leopard behavior. Even more shocking was the original explanation for Adamson's death—that she had been attacked by a lion. Her body had been found on a road near her camp in Mawson, and it quickly became apparent to George Adamson and the authorities that human forces were responsible. Her injuries were caused by stabs from a sword-like weapon, not by a lion's fangs and claws. Plus, her tent had been opened, and the contents of a trunk had been scattered. Although authorities eventually convicted someone for the murder, the true story behind Joy Adamson's death remains a mystery.

A quiet funeral ceremony for Adamson was held near Nairobi, Kenya. Adamson had specified in her will that her ashes be buried in Elsa and Pippa's graves in the Meru Game Reserve. Her husband and several colleagues did just that. They took her ashes, divided them in half, and placed them in the graves of Adamson's two dear friends.

George Adamson carried on his work alone after his wife's murder. On August 20, 1989, George Adamson was also killed in the Kenyan wilderness, along with two coworkers. The murders were blamed on several shifta, or bandit-poachers, who were roaming the area. Nevertheless, the work of Joy and George Adamson lives on, through the books that Joy wrote and the organizations she founded.

For More Information

Adamson, Joy. *Born Free: A Lioness of Two Worlds*. New York: Pantheon, 1960.

House, Adrian. *The Great Safari*. New York: W. Morrow, 1993.

Neimark, Anne E. *Wild Heart*. San Diego: Harcourt Brace, 1999.

JANE ADDAMS

Born: September 6, 1860

Cedarville, Illinois

Died: May 21, 1935

Chicago, Illinois

American reformer and social worker

Jane Addams was called the “beloved lady” of American reform. She was a social worker, reformer, and pacifist. One of her most important accomplishments was to create a settlement house, a center that provides services to members of a poor community. Addams founded the most famous settlement house in American history, Hull House, in Chicago, Illinois.

Family and education

Jane Addams was born in Cedarville, Illinois, on September 6, 1860. She was the eighth child of John Huy Addams, a successful miller, banker, and landowner. She did not remember her mother, who died when she was three years old. She was devoted to and deeply influenced by her father. He was an idealist and philanthropist

who served as state senator of Illinois from 1854 to 1870.

Although Addams became an activist for the poor, she herself came from a prosperous family. As a young woman she attended Rockford Female Seminary in northern Illinois. There she was not only a fine student but also the class president for four years and the editor of the school magazine. Addams also developed an interest in the sciences, even though such studies were not stressed at the school. After her graduation in 1881 she entered the Women’s Medical College in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. However, after six months she was forced to end her studies to have a spinal operation. Addams was never quite free of illness throughout her life.

Finding a career

It took Addams a long time to recover from her operation. During this time she fell into a deep depression. This was partly because of her illness and partly because of her sensitivity to the way women of her status were expected to live in nineteenth-century America. Intelligent middle-class women like Addams were frequently well educated. However, they were expected to live simply as wives and mothers within homes dominated by men. Society discouraged women from putting their talents to use outside the home. Addams traveled in Europe between 1883 and 1885 and spent winters in Baltimore in 1886 and 1887. During this time she searched for comfort in religion. However, she did not find a satisfactory outlet for her abilities until she made a second trip to Europe in 1887. At this time she visited Toynbee Hall, the famous settlement house in London, England.



Jane Addams.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Toynbee Hall was a social and cultural center in the slums of the East End neighborhood in London. It was designed to introduce young men who wanted to join the ministry to the world of England's urban poor. Addams thought it would be a good idea to provide a similar opportunity for young middle-class American women. She decided "that it would be a good thing to rent a house in a part of the city where many . . . needs are found." She especially wanted to provide opportunities for well-educated young women to "learn of life from life itself."

Creation of Hull House

Hull House was located in one of Chicago's poorest immigrant slums. Addams originally thought Hull House would provide a service to young women who wanted more than a homemaker's life, but it soon developed into a great center for the poor of the neighborhood. Hull House provided a home for working girls, a theater, a boys' club, a day nursery, and numerous other services.

Thousands of people visited Hull House each year. It became the source of inspiration for dozens of similar settlement houses in other cities. Its success also made Addams famous throughout the United States. She became involved in an attempt to reform Chicago's corrupt politics. She served on a commission to help resolve the Pullman railroad strike of 1894. Addams supported workers' rights to organize and spoke and wrote about nearly every reform issue of the day. Her topics ranged from the need for peace to women's right to vote.

Voice for reform

Addams served as an officer for countless reform groups. These groups included the Progressive political party and the Women's International League for Peace and Freedom. She served as this group's president in 1915 and attended international peace congresses in a dozen European cities. Addams gained a reputation as a pacifist (a person who is against conflict and war). She won the Nobel Peace Prize in 1931.

Addams also wrote books on a wide range of subjects. Her achievements gained her honorary degrees from several universities and made her an informal adviser to sev-

eral American presidents. She died on May 21, 1935, in Chicago, Illinois.

For More Information

Addams, Jane. *Forty Years at Hull-House*. New York: Macmillan, 1935.

Davis, Allen F. *American Heroine*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1973.

Polikoff, Barbara Garland. *With One Bold Act*. Chicago: Boswell, 1999.

ALFRED ADLER

Born: February 7, 1870

Vienna, Austria

Died: May 28, 1937

Aberdeen, Scotland

Austrian psychiatrist

Austrian psychiatrist Alfred Adler was credited with developing several important theories on the motivation of human behavior. He founded the school of individual psychology, a comprehensive “science of living” that focuses on the uniqueness of the individual and a person’s relationships with society.

Childhood and early career

Alfred Adler was born on February 7, 1870, in a suburb of Vienna, Austria. He was the second of seven children of a Hungarian-born grain merchant. The Adlers were a musical family and Alfred was known for his singing voice. Although he was encouraged

to pursue a career in opera, in his childhood he suffered some illnesses and the death of a younger brother. These experiences contributed greatly to his early decision to become a physician, or medical doctor. He attended classical secondary school and received a degree from the University of Vienna Medical School in 1895. Later, he married Raissa Epstein, a Russian student.

Adler’s early career was marked by enthusiasm for social reform (improvement), often expressed in articles in socialist newspapers. (Socialism is a social system where the goods and services are owned by the government and distributed among the people.) His first professional publication was a social-medicine monograph (pamphlet) on the health of tailors.

In 1902 famed Austrian psychiatrist Sigmund Freud (1856–1939) invited Adler to join a small discussion group, which became the famous Vienna Psychoanalytic Society. Adler was an active member but did not consider himself a pupil or follower of Freud. He could not agree with Freud’s basic assumption that gender (male or female) was the main factor in the development of an individual’s personality. Whereas Freud tried to explain man in terms of his similarity to machines and animals, Adler sought to understand and influence man in terms of what makes man different from machines and animals, such as concepts and values. This humanistic view characterized all the ideas of his theory. In 1911 Adler resigned from Freud’s circle to found his own school.

Adler worked three years of hospital service during World War I (1914–18) when European forces fought for world domination. In 1919 he organized a child-guidance



Alfred Adler.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

clinic in Vienna, and also became a lecturer at the Pedagogical Institute. He was perhaps the first psychiatrist to apply mental hygiene (mental health) in the schools. Working with teachers in child-guidance clinics, he carried out his groundbreaking counseling before a small audience, dealing with the family and teacher as well as the child. This was probably the first “family therapy” and “community psychiatry” on record.

Beginning in 1926, Adler spent much time in the United States lecturing and teaching. When Adolf Hitler’s (1889–1945) Nazi

Party rose to power in Austria in 1932, Adler left with his wife and went to New York. On May 28, 1937, he died suddenly while on a lecture tour in Aberdeen, Scotland.

Adler’s legacy

Adler left behind many theories and practices that very much influenced the world of psychiatry. Today these concepts are known as Adlerian psychology. His theories focused on the feelings of inferiority, and how each person tries to overcome such feelings by overcompensating (trying too hard to make up for what is lacking). Adler claimed that an individual’s lifestyle becomes established by the age of four or five, and he stressed the importance of social forces, or the child’s environment, on the development of behavior. He believed that each person is born with the ability to relate to other people and realize the importance of society as a whole.

As a therapist, Adler was a teacher who focused on a patient’s mental health, not sickness. Adler encouraged self-improvement by pinpointing the error in patients’ lives and correcting it. He thought of himself as an enabler, one who guides the patient through “self-determination,” so that the patients themselves can make changes and improve their state. Adler was a pioneer in that he was one of the first psychiatrists to use therapy in social work, the education of children, and in the treatment of criminals.

For More Information

Grey, Loren. *Alfred Adler, the Forgotten Prophet: A Vision for the 21st Century*. Westport, CT: Praeger, 1998.

Hoffman, Edward. *The Drive for Self: Alfred*

Adler and the Founding of Individual Psychology. Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley, 1994.

Rattner, Josef. *Alfred Adler*. New York: F. Ungar, 1983.

AESCHYLUS

Born: 524 B.C.E.

Eleusis, Greece

Died: 456 B.C.E.

Gela, Italy

Greek playwright

The Greek playwright Aeschylus was the first European dramatist whose plays were preserved. He was also the earliest of the great Greek tragedians (writers of serious drama involving disastrous events), and was concerned with the common connection between man and the gods more than any of the other tragedians.

Early life

Aeschylus was born to a noble and wealthy Athenian family in the Greek town of Eleusis. His father was Euphorion, a wealthy man of the upper class. Aeschylus's education included the writings of Homer (Greek poet who lived during the 800s B.C.E. and wrote the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*). In fact it was Homer who proved most inspiring to Aeschylus when he began to write as a teen. He entered his tragedies into the annual competition in Athens and won his first award as a young adult in 484 B.C.E. Aeschy-

lus' writings were strongly Athenian and rich with moral authority. He carried home the first place award from the Athens competition thirteen times!

As a young man Aeschylus lived through many exciting events in the history of Athens. Politically the city underwent many constitutional reforms resulting in a democracy. Aeschylus became a soldier and took part in turning back a Persian invasion at the Battle of Marathon (490 B.C.E.). Nevertheless, Aeschylus's plays left a bigger mark in Greek history than any of his battle accomplishments.

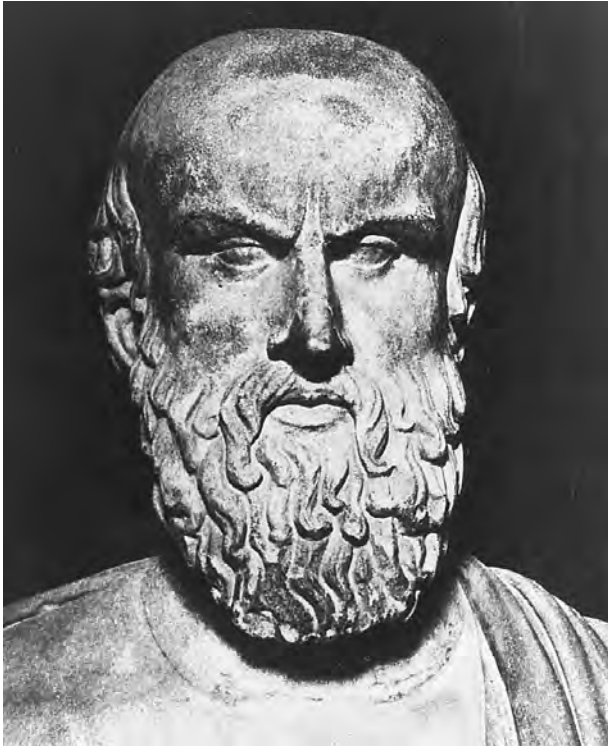
Contributions, style, and philosophy

Because Aeschylus was writing for the Greek theater in its beginning stages, he is credited with having introduced many features that are now considered traditional. Formerly plays were written for only one actor and a chorus. Aeschylus added parts for a second and a third actor as well as rich costumes and dance.

Corresponding with his grand style were his grand ideas. Mighty themes and mighty men crossed his stage. Aeschylus has been described as a great theologian (a specialist in the study of faith) because of his literary focus on the workings of the Greek gods.

The plays

Modern scholarship has shown that the first of Aeschylus's plays was *The Persians*. It is also the only play on a historical subject that has survived in Greek drama. This play is seen from a Persian point of view. His theme sought to show how a nation could suffer due to its pride. Of his ninety plays only seven are still preserved.



Aeschylus.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Prometheus Bound is perhaps Aeschylus' most well-known tragedy because of his depiction of the famous Prometheus, who is chained to a mountain peak and cannot move. He is being punished for defying the authority of the god Zeus by bringing fire to mankind. Zeus is depicted as a bully and Prometheus as a suffering but defiant rebel. Both are guilty of pride. Both must learn through suffering: Zeus to exercise power with mercy and justice, and Prometheus to respect authority.

Aeschylus' masterpiece is the *Oresteia*, the only preserved trilogy from Greek

drama. The three plays are *Agamemnon*, *The Choephoroi*, and *The Eumenides*. Though they form separate dramas, they are united in their common theme of justice. King Agamemnon returns to his home after the Trojan War (490–480 B.C.E.; a war in which the Greeks fought against the Trojans and which ended with the destruction of Troy) only to be murdered by his scheming wife, Clytemnestra, and her lover. The king's children seek revenge that ultimately leads to their trial by the gods. The theme of evil compounding evil is powerfully written.

Albin Lesky has noted, "Aeschylean tragedy shows faith in a sublime [splendid] and just [fair] world order, and is in fact inconceivable [unthinkable] without it. Man follows his difficult, often terrible path through guilt and suffering, but it is the path ordained [designed] by god which leads to knowledge of his laws. All comes from his will."

According to legend, Aeschylus was picked up by an eagle who thought he was a turtle. The eagle had been confused by Aeschylus's bald head. Aeschylus was killed when the eagle realized its mistake and dropped him.

For More Information

Beck, Robert Holmes. *Aeschylus: Playwright, Educator*. The Hague: Nijhoff, 1975.

Herington, John. *Aeschylus*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1986.

Spatz, Lois. *Aeschylus*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1982.

SPIRO AGNEW

Born: November 9, 1918

Baltimore, Maryland

Died: September 17, 1996

Ocean City, Maryland

American vice president and governor

Between the time of his nomination as Richard Nixon's running mate in August 1968 and his resignation in October 1973, Vice President Spiro Agnew was a leading spokesman for "The Silent Majority," a term used by Nixon to describe conservative, middle-class, white American voters. After being found guilty of tax evasion, Agnew became the second United States vice president to resign from office. (John Calhoun, Andrew Jackson's vice president, resigned in 1832.)

The early years

Spiro Theodore Agnew was born November 9, 1918, in Baltimore, Maryland. He was the son of Theodore S. Agnew and his Virginia-born wife, Margaret Pollard Akers. Spiro Agnew was, in his own words, a "typical middle class youth" who spoke and wrote very well and gained experience writing speeches for his father's many appearances before ethnic and community groups.

Agnew attended public schools in Baltimore before enrolling in Johns Hopkins University in 1937, where he studied chemistry. After three years he transferred to law school at the University of Baltimore, where he attended night classes. He supported himself by working for an insurance company, where

he met Elinor (Judy) Isabel Judefind, his future wife.

The war years

In September 1941 Agnew was drafted into the army, three months before the United States entered World War II (1939–45). After the attack on Pearl Harbor, Agnew was sent to Fort Knox to train as a tank officer. He married Judy in 1942 before leaving for combat duty in Europe. Agnew commanded a tank company, was awarded a Bronze Star (a medal given for outstanding service performed under combat conditions), and was discharged with the rank of captain. After his army discharge, Agnew went back to the University of Baltimore Law School and graduated in 1947. He completed advanced law studies at the University of Maryland in 1949 and passed the Maryland Bar (an association that oversees the state's lawyers) exam. He could now practice law in the state of Maryland.

After spending a brief time with a Baltimore law firm, Agnew moved to Towson, a suburb of Baltimore, and opened his own law practice. When the Korean War (1950–53) broke out, he was recalled to active duty for a year. (During the Korean war, the United States supported the government of South Korea in its fight against a takeover by the communist government of North Korea.)

Early political career

After returning from active military duty, Agnew restarted his own law firm and became involved in Baltimore County's local politics. He joined the Republican Party in 1956 and began working for national and local campaigns.



Spiro Agnew.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Agnew's first term in public office came in 1957 when he was appointed to a one-year term on the Baltimore County Zoning Board of Appeals. Agnew was reappointed for a three-year term in 1958 and eventually became the board chairman. He ran for associate circuit court judge in 1960, but lost, coming in fifth in a five-person race. Agnew then ran for chief county executive in 1962 and won. He was the first Republican executive elected in Baltimore County in seventy years.

From governor to vice president

Agnew's term as county executive was considered successful, and he became more

popular. In 1966 he became the Republican candidate for governor of Maryland. His main opponent, George Mahoney, was strongly opposed to civil rights. Agnew defeated Mahoney and became the fifty-fifth governor of Maryland.

As governor, Agnew was known as a progressive leader with moderate civil rights beliefs. While in office he passed several tax reform laws, increased funding for antipoverty programs, repealed a law banning interracial marriage, spoke out against the death penalty, and drafted tough clean water legislation. However, by 1968 civil unrest had grown stronger throughout the United States. Protests had begun against the Vietnam War (a war in Vietnam fought from 1955 to 1975 in which the anti-Communist government of South Vietnam, supported by the United States, fought against a takeover by the Communist government of North Vietnam). Riots broke out in many major cities after the assassination of Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968). Governor Agnew ordered state police to arrest civil rights demonstrators, encouraged the use of military force to control civil disturbances, and spoke out harshly against Vietnam War protesters.

At the 1968 Republican Convention in Miami Beach, Florida, Richard M. Nixon (1913–1994) was nominated as the Republican presidential candidate. Nixon chose Agnew as his vice presidential running mate. As part of his acceptance speech, Agnew said, "I fully recognize that I am an unknown quantity to many of you." Those who considered Agnew unqualified for national office began saying "Spiro who?" In truth, as the governor of a relatively small southern state, he was relatively unknown within the party. Nixon chose Agnew because he wanted

someone who was a southerner, an ethnic American, an experienced executive, a civil rights moderate, and a proven Republican vote-getter with appeal to Democrats.

The Nixon-Agnew victory over Hubert Humphrey (1911–1978) and Edmund S. Muskie (1914–1996) was close but clear cut, with a half million popular votes separating winners and losers. After the election, Agnew became the first vice president to have a White House office when Nixon gave him an office in the West Wing.

Controversial speeches and illegal activities

As vice president, Agnew began using attention-getting speeches to attack opponents of the Nixon administration. Patrick Buchanan (1938–), Cynthia Rosenwald, and William Safire (1929–) drafted many of his speeches. The vice president soon became known for his verbal attacks against college radicals, American permissiveness, and the media. At Ohio State University's graduation ceremonies in 1969, Agnew criticized the students' parents, calling their leadership a "sniveling hand-wringing power structure."

Nixon again chose Agnew as his running mate for the 1972 elections, and they overwhelmingly defeated their Democrat opponents, George McGovern (1922–) and R. Sargent Shriver (1921–). Early in his second term as vice president, Agnew came under investigation for crimes supposedly committed while he was an elected Maryland official. He was accused of accepting bribes from engineers who wanted contracts with the state of Maryland. He was also accused of failing to report campaign contributions as income. The situation became increasingly tense when Nixon came under attack for his

alleged involvement in a break-in at the Democratic Party's headquarters in the Watergate complex. There were rumors that both the president and the vice president might be impeached (tried in Congress for charges of misconduct in office).

The end of a political career

On October 1, 1973, Agnew pleaded "no contest" in federal court to one misdemeanor charge of income tax evasion. He was fined \$10,000 and put on probation for three years. He was also forced to resign from office. Agnew's friend Frank Sinatra (1915–1998) loaned him \$160,000 to pay legal expenses, back taxes, and other fees. Agnew was disbarred (not allowed to work as a lawyer) by the state of Maryland in 1974.

After leaving politics, Agnew became an international business consultant and the owner of several properties in Palm Springs, California, and in Maryland. In his 1980 memoir, titled *Go Quietly or Else*, Agnew implied that Nixon and Alexander M. Haig (1924–), Nixon's chief of staff, planned to assassinate him if he refused to resign, and that Haig told him "to go quietly . . . or else." Agnew also wrote a novel, *The Canfield Decision* (1986), about a vice president who was "destroyed by his own ambition."

In 1981 Agnew was sued by three citizens of Maryland who sought to have the money he had reportedly received illegally from the state returned. After a few years the citizens won their case, and Agnew had to reimburse \$248,735 to the state.

Agnew died of leukemia in Ocean City, Maryland, on September 17, 1996, at the age of 77.

For More Information

Agnew, Spiro T. *Go Quietly ... or Else*. New York: Morrow, 1980.

Cohen, Richard M, and Jules Witcover. *A Heartbeat Away; the Investigation and Resignation of Vice President Spiro T. Agnew*. New York: Viking Press, 1974.

ALVIN AILEY

Born: January 5, 1931

Rogers, Texas

Died: December 1, 1989

New York, New York

African American dancer and choreographer

Alvin Ailey founded the Alvin Ailey American Dance Theatre and won international fame as both a dancer and choreographer, a creator and arranger of dance performances.

Rough beginning

Alvin Ailey Jr. was born to Alvin and Lula Elizabeth Ailey on January 5, 1931, in Rogers, Texas. He was an only child, and his father, a laborer, left the family when Alvin Jr. was less than one year old. At the age of six, Alvin Jr. moved with his mother to Navasota, Texas. As he recalled in an interview in the *New York Daily News Magazine*, "There was the white school up on the hill, and the black Baptist church, and the segregated [only members of one race allowed] theaters and

neighborhoods. Like most of my generation, I grew up feeling like an outsider, like someone who didn't matter."

In 1942 Ailey and his mother moved to Los Angeles, California, where his mother found work in an aircraft factory. Ailey became interested in athletics and joined his high school gymnastics team and played football. An admirer of dancers Gene Kelly (1912–1996) and Fred Astaire (1899–1987), he also took tap dancing lessons at a neighbor's home. His interest in dance grew when a friend took him to visit the modern dance school run by Lester Horton, whose dance company (a group of dancers who perform together) was the first in America to admit members of all races. Unsure of what opportunities would be available for him as a dancer, however, Ailey left Horton's school after one month. After graduating from high school in 1948, Ailey considered becoming a teacher. He entered the University of California in Los Angeles to study languages. When Horton offered him a scholarship in 1949 Ailey returned to the dance school. He left again after one year, however, this time to attend San Francisco State College.

Early career

For a time Ailey danced in a nightclub in San Francisco, California, then he returned to the Horton school to finish his training. When Horton took the company east for a performance in New York City in 1953, Ailey was with him. When Horton died suddenly, the young Ailey took charge as the company's artistic director. Following Horton's style, Ailey choreographed two pieces that were presented at the Jacob's Pillow Dance Festival in Becket, Massachusetts. After the works

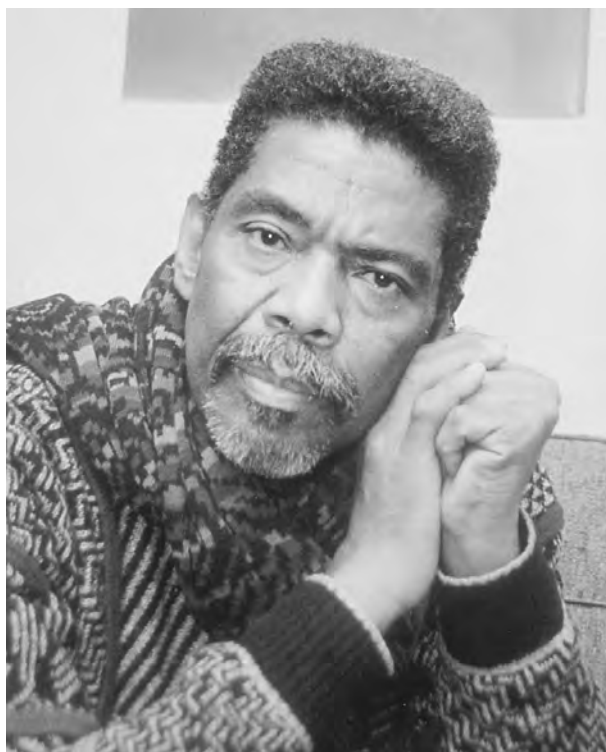
received poor reviews from the festival manager, the troupe broke up.

Despite the setback, Ailey's career stayed on track. A Broadway producer invited him to dance in *House of Flowers*, a musical based on Truman Capote's (1924–1984) book. Ailey continued taking dance classes while performing in the show. He also studied ballet and acting. From the mid-1950s through the early 1960s Ailey appeared in many musical productions on and off Broadway, among them: *The Carefree Tree*; *Sing, Man, Sing*; *Jamaica*; and *Call Me By My Rightful Name*. He also played a major part in the play *Tiger, Tiger, Burning Bright*.

In 1958 Ailey and another dancer with an interest in choreographing recruited dancers to perform several concerts at the 92nd Street Young Men's and Young Women's Hebrew Association in New York City, a place where modern dances and the works of new choreographers were seen. Ailey's first major piece, *Blues Suite*, was inspired by blues music. The performance drew praise. Ailey then scheduled a second concert to present his own works, and then a third, which featured his most famous piece, *Revelations*. Accompanied by the elegant jazz music of Duke Ellington (1899–1974), *Revelations* pulled the audience into African American religious life.

Established own dance company

In 1959 Ailey established the Alvin Ailey American Dance Theater, a group of eight black dancers. One year later, the theater became the resident dance company at the Clark Center for the Performing Arts in New York City. By the mid-1960s Ailey, who struggled with his weight, gave up dancing in favor



Alvin Ailey.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

of choreography. He also oversaw business details as the director of his ambitious dance company. By 1968 the company had received funding from private and public organizations but still had money problems, even as it brought modern dance to audiences around the world. Ailey also had the leading African American soloist (a person who performs by oneself) of modern dance, Judith Jamison (1944–). Having employed Asian and white dancers since the mid-1960s, Ailey had also integrated (included people of different races) his company. In 1969 the company moved to Brooklyn, New York, as the resident dance

company of the Brooklyn Academy of Music, an arts center with three theaters.

In the early 1960s the company performed in Southeast Asia and Australia as part of an international cultural program set up by President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963). Later the company traveled to Brazil, Europe, and West Africa. Ailey also choreographed dances for other companies, including *Feast of Ashes* for the Joffrey Ballet and *Anthony and Cleopatra* for the Metropolitan Opera at Lincoln Center in New York City. Ailey worked on projects with other artists, including one with Duke Ellington for the American Ballet Theater. For Ailey the decade peaked with the performance of *Masekela Language*, a dance based on the music of Hugh Masekela, a black South African trumpeter who lived in exile for speaking out against apartheid (South Africa's policy of separation based on race).

Ailey's Cry

By the late 1970s Ailey's company was one of America's most popular dance troupes. Its members continued touring around the world, with U.S. State Department backing. They were the first modern dancers to visit the former Soviet Union since the 1920s. In 1971 Ailey's company was asked to return to the City Center Theater in New York City after a performance featured Ailey's celebrated solo, *Cry*. Danced by Judith Jamison, she made it one of the troupe's best known pieces.

Dedicated to "all black women everywhere—especially our mothers," the piece depicts the struggles of different generations of black American women. It begins with the unwrapping of a long white scarf that becomes

many things during the course of the dance, and ends with an expression of belief and happiness danced to the late 1960s song, "Right On, Be Free." Of this and of all his works Ailey told John Gruen in *The Private World of Ballet*, "I am trying to express something that I feel about people, life, the human spirit, the beauty of things. . . ."

Later years

Ailey suffered a breakdown in 1980 that put him in the hospital for several weeks. At the time he had lost a close friend, was going through a midlife crisis, and was experiencing money problems. Still, he continued to work, and his reputation as a founding father of modern dance grew during the decade.

Ailey received many honors for his choreography, including a *Dance* magazine award in 1975; the Springarn Medal, given to him by the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) in 1979; and the Capezio Award that same year. In 1988 he was awarded the Kennedy Center Honors prize. Ailey died of a blood disorder on December 1, 1989. Thousands of people flocked to the memorial service held for him at the Cathedral of St. John the Divine.

For More Information

Ailey, Alvin, with A. Peter Bailey. *Revelations: The Autobiography of Alvin Ailey*. Secaucus, NJ: Carol Pub. Group, 1995.

Dunning, Jennifer. *Alvin Ailey: A Life in Dance*. Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley, 1996.

Probosz, Kathilyn Solomon. *Alvin Ailey, Jr.* New York: Bantam Books, 1991.

MADELEINE ALBRIGHT

Born: May 15, 1937

Prague, Czechoslovakia

Czech-born American businessperson, speaker, and secretary of state

On January 23, 1997, when Madeleine Albright was sworn in as the United States secretary of state, she became the first woman to hold this position. Albright's impressive career highlights a combination of scholarly research and political activity.

Family background and education

Madeleine Korbelt Albright was born Marie Jana Korbelt on May 15, 1937, in Prague, Czechoslovakia (now in the Czech Republic). Her grandmother gave her the nickname "Madeleine" when she was young, and her name was legally changed when she was an adolescent. Her father, Josef Korbelt, was a member of the Czechoslovakian diplomatic service (a person who deals with international relations). Her mother, Anna, was a homemaker. Between 1937 and 1948 her family lived in Prague, Czechoslovakia; Belgrade, Yugoslavia; and London, England.

In 1948, while working for the United Nations, Madeleine's father lived in India while the rest of the family lived in New York. When the Communists overthrew the Czechoslovakian government, her father was sentenced to death. Madeleine was eleven years old when her family was given political asylum, or a safe place to live, in the United States. Albright was strongly influenced by

her father and credits his influence for her own view of the world.

After becoming a U.S. citizen, Albright pursued an academic career. Her education reflects her interest in politics. She studied political science at Wellesley College and graduated in 1959. Albright then went on to earn advanced degrees in international affairs from the Department of Public Law and Government at Columbia University.

Albright married Joseph Medill Patterson Albright three days after graduating from Wellesley. She and her husband lived in Chicago, Illinois, and Long Island, New York, before moving to Washington, D.C. She and her husband had three daughters before they divorced.

Early political career

Albright began her political career by working for the unsuccessful presidential campaign in 1976 of Senator Edmund S. Muskie (1914–1996). She then served as Senator Muskie's chief legislative assistant from 1976 to 1978.

In 1978 Albright was asked by one of her former professors at Columbia University, Zbigniew Brzezinski (1928–), National Security Adviser under President Jimmy Carter (1924–), to be a legislative liaison for the National Security Council. She remained in this position until 1981. Albright spent the following year writing *Poland, the Role of the Press in Political Change*, about the role played by the press during a time of unusual political change in Poland during the 1980s.

Albright's next important career milestone came in 1982, when she joined the faculty of Georgetown University. At George-



Madeleine Albright.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

town she became a research professor of international affairs and the director of women students enrolled at the university's School of Foreign Service.

Albright became advisor to presidential candidate Walter Mondale (1928–) and his running mate, Geraldine Ferraro (1935–), during their 1984 presidential race. She was senior policy advisor to Michael S. Dukakis (1933–) during his 1988 presidential campaign. In 1989, Albright became president of the Center for National Policy, a nonprofit research organization. Over the next few years she was appointed to the boards of several institutions, including Wellesley College,

the Black Student Fund, and the Washington Urban League.

Ambassador to the United Nations

When Bill Clinton (1946–) sought the presidential nomination in 1992, Albright supported him. She served as his senior foreign policy advisor during his campaign. In the transition period she served as foreign policy liaison, or the person who is responsible for communicating information about foreign policy, in the White House. Then, Clinton chose Albright to be the U.S. ambassador to the United Nations (UN).

Albright immediately became a major force at the UN. She was familiar with world politics and she represented the United States, the UN's largest contributor to its activities and budget. As a UN ambassador, Albright learned to balance the needs of three different groups: the Clinton administration, the UN delegates, and the American public. She was involved in debates over UN peacekeeping activities and the direction of American foreign policy.

First woman to serve as Secretary of State

In 1996 Clinton nominated Albright for secretary of state and the U.S. Senate unanimously confirmed her nomination. On January 23, 1997, Madeleine Albright was sworn in as secretary of state. She became the highest-ranking female within the United States government.

Shortly after her confirmation, Albright's cousin, Dasha Sima, revealed to reporters at the *Washington Post* that Albright's family had been Czechoslovakian Jews, not Catholics as she had believed, and that three of her grandparents had died in concentration camps.

Before World War II (1939–45) the Nazi government in Germany had set up concentration camps to hold people who they saw as enemies of the state. Eventually minority groups, including Jews, were forced into these camps, where many people died during the course of the war. (Albright was quoted in *Newsweek* as saying, “I have been proud of the heritage that I have known about and I will be equally proud of the heritage that I have just been given.” A few months later, Albright flew to Prague and was honored by Czech Republic president Vaclav Havel (1936–).

Albright began a peace mission in the Middle East in the fall of 1997, first meeting with Israeli Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu (1949–), then with Palestinian leader Yasir Arafat (1929–), Syrian President Hafez al-Assad (1930–2000), Egyptian President Hosny Mubarak (1928–), King Fahd ibn Abdul Aziz of Saudi Arabia (1922–), and King Hussein of Jordan (1935–1999). Albright condemned terrorist activities, urged Netanyahu to make some concessions to the Palestinians, and then vowed not to meet with Israeli and Palestinian leaders again until they were “ready to make the hard decisions.” In July 2000 Albright returned to the Middle East. This time, talks between the new Israeli Prime Minister Ehud Barak (1942–) and Arafat ended when Barak said he was taking time out from the peace process.

Albright made history with her October 23, 2000, visit to North Korea’s leader Kim Jong II (1941–). She became the first U.S. secretary of state to visit North Korea.

Another career

After Albright’s term as secretary of state ended in January 2001, she became chairman

of the board for the National Democratic Institute. Albright is also a well-known public speaker. According to the Washington Speakers Bureau, “Madeleine Albright speaks with humor, insight, and eloquence about her life and career . . . she provides audiences with a unique, no-holds-barred account of service at the highest levels of the American government.”

In spring 2001 Albright became the Michael and Virginia Mortara Distinguished Professor in the Practice of Diplomacy. In a comment about her new teaching position Albright said, “I am very pleased . . . to have the opportunity to teach, and be inspired by, inquiring students.”

For More Information

Blackman, Ann. *Seasons of Her Life: A Biography of Madeleine Korbel Albright*. New York, NY: Scribner, 1998.

Dobbs, Michael. *Madeleine Albright: A Twentieth-Century Odyssey*. New York: H. Holt and Co., 1999.

LOUISA MAY ALCOTT

Born: November 29, 1832

Germantown, Pennsylvania

Died: March 6, 1888

Boston, Massachusetts

American writer

Louisa May Alcott is one of America’s best-known writers of juvenile (intended for young people) fiction.



Louisa May Alcott.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

She was also a reformer who worked to gain the right to vote for women and who opposed the drinking of alcohol.

Early poverty

Louisa May Alcott was born in Germantown, Pennsylvania, on November 29, 1832. She was one of four daughters of Bronson Alcott, an educator and philosopher (one who seeks an understanding of the world and man's place in it), and Abigail May Alcott. Her father was unsuited for many jobs and also unwilling to take many of them, and as a result he was unable to support his family. The Alcotts were very poor. Her father

moved the family to Boston, Massachusetts, in 1834 and founded the Temple School, in which he planned to use his own teaching methods. The school failed, and the family moved to Concord, Massachusetts, in 1840.

Alcott's father was a strong supporter of women's rights and an early abolitionist (opponent of slavery), and his friends were some of the most brilliant and famous men and women of the day. His friends included Henry David Thoreau (1817–1862), Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882), Margaret Fuller (1810–1850), and Theodore Parker (1810–1860). Alcott and her sisters became friends with these visitors as well, and were even tutored by them at times. This combination of intellectual richness and actual poverty helped Alcott develop her sense of humor.

Alcott soon realized that if she and her sisters did not find ways to bring money into the home, the family would be doomed to permanent poverty. In her early years she worked at a variety of tasks to make money to help her family, including teaching, sewing, and housework. At sixteen she wrote a book, *Flower Fables* (not published for six years), and she wrote a number of plays that were never produced. By 1860 her stories and poems were being published in the *Atlantic Monthly*. During the Civil War (1861–65; a war fought in the United States between the states in the North and the states in the South mainly over the issue of slavery), Alcott served as a nurse until her health failed. Her description of the experience in *Hospital Sketches* (1863) brought her work to the attention of many people.

Success arrives

The attention seemed to die out, however, when she published her first novel, *Moods*, in 1865, and she was glad to accept a job in 1867 as the editor of the juvenile magazine *Merry's Museum*. The next year she produced the first volume of *Little Women*, a cheerful and attractive account of her childhood. The character Jo represented Alcott herself, and Amy, Beth, and Meg represented her sisters. The book was an instant success, and a second volume followed in 1869. The resulting sales accomplished the goal she had worked toward for twenty-five years: the Alcott family had enough money to live comfortably.

After *Little Women* set the direction, Alcott continued producing similar works. She wrote *An Old-fashioned Girl* (1870), *Little Men* (1871), and *Work* (1873), an account of her early efforts to help support the family. During this time she took an active role in speaking out about the danger of drinking alcohol, and she also campaigned for women's suffrage (right to vote). She also toured Europe. In 1876 she produced *Silver Pitchers*, a collection containing "Transcendental Wild Oats," a description of her father's failed attempts to found a communal group (where people live together and share ownership and use of property) in Fruitlands, Massachusetts. In later life she produced a book almost every year and maintained a loyal following of readers.

Alcott died on March 6, 1888, in Boston, Massachusetts. She seems never to have become bitter about the struggles of her early years or her father's flaws. She did give some indication of her feelings about him, however, when she said that a philosopher was like a

man up in a balloon: he was safe, as long as three women held the ropes on the ground.

For More Information

Ruth, Amy. *Louisa May Alcott*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 1999.

Saxton, Martha. *Louisa May Alcott: A Modern Biography*. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 1995.

Stern, Madeleine B. *Louisa May Alcott*. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1950.

ALEXANDER II

Born: April 17, 1818

Moscow, Russia

Died: March 1, 1881

St. Petersburg, Russia

Russian emperor

Alexander II was emperor of Russia from 1855 to 1881. He is called the "czar liberator" because he freed the serfs (poor peasants who lived on land owned by nobles) in 1861. Alexander's reign is famous in Russian history and is called the "era of great reforms."

Alexander as a young man

Alexander II, the oldest son of Emperor Nicholas I (1796–1855), was born in Moscow, Russia, on April 17, 1818. Because he would become emperor one day, Alexander was taught many different subjects. Vasili Zhukovski (1783–1852), a famous Russian poet, was his principal tutor, or private



Alexander II.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

teacher. Alexander learned to speak Russian, German, French, English, and Polish. He gained a knowledge of military arts, finance, and diplomacy, or the study of dealing with foreign countries. From an early age he traveled widely in Russia and in other countries. For example, in 1837 he visited thirty Russian provinces, including Siberia (a frigid, northern region of Russia) where no member of the royal family had ever visited. Unlike his father, Alexander had various military and government jobs throughout his younger days. In fact during Nicholas's absence Alexander was given the duties of the czar, or Russian emperor.

Freeing the serfs

Before he became czar, Alexander did not believe that freeing the serfs was a good idea. He changed his mind because he believed that freeing the serfs was the only way to prevent them from revolting. However, freeing the more than forty million serfs was not an easy task. In 1861 Alexander created an emancipation, or freedom, law, which said that serfs could now marry, own property, and argue court cases. Each landowner had to determine the area of land owned by the serfs. Landowners also had to pay the serfs for the work they did. Each peasant family received their house and a certain amount of land. Land usually became the property of the village government, which had the power to distribute it among the families. Peasant families had to make payments for the land for more than forty-nine years. The original landowner kept only a small portion of the land.

The emancipation law of 1861 has been called the greatest single law in history. It gave the serfs a more dignified life. Yet there were many problems. In many cases the serfs did not receive enough land and they were overcharged for it. Since they had to pay for the land, they could not easily move. Still, overall it was a good law for the Russian people.

Reforms at home

Because the serfs were now free citizens, it was necessary to reform the entire local system of government. A law in 1864 created local assemblies, which handled local finances, education, agriculture, medical care, and maintenance of the roads. A new voting system provided representation to the peasants in these assemblies. Peasants and their

former landowners were brought together to work out problems in their villages.

During Alexander's reign other reforms were also started. Larger cities were given governmental assemblies similar to those of the villages. The Russian court system was reformed, and for the first time in Russian history, juries, or panels of citizens called together to decide court cases, were permitted. Court cases were debated publicly, and all social classes were made equal before the law. Censorship (or the silencing of certain opinions) was eased, which meant that people had more freedom of speech. Colleges were also freed from the rules imposed on them by Alexander's father Nicholas I.

Foreign policy

Alexander also had success in foreign relations. In 1860 he signed a treaty with China that ended a land dispute between the two nations. Russia successfully ended an uprising in Poland in 1863. Then in 1877 Alexander led Russia to war against Turkey in support of a group of Christians in the areas of Bosnia, Herzegovina, and Bulgaria.

A violent end

Despite the many reforms Alexander II made to improve the lives of the Russian people, in 1866 he became the target of revolutionaries, or people who fight for change. Terrorists, or people who use violence to achieve their goals, acted throughout the 1870s. They wanted constitutional changes, and they were also upset over several peasant uprisings that the government violently put down. A member of a terrorist group murdered Alexander II on March 1, 1881, in St. Petersburg, Russia.

For More Information

- Almedingen, E.M. *The Emperor Alexander II*. London: Bodley Head, 1962.
- Mosse, W. E. *Alexander II and the Modernization of Russia*. Rev. ed. New York: Collier, 1962.
- Van der Kiste, John. *The Romanovs, 1818–1959: Alexander II of Russia and His Family*. Stroud, Gloucestershire, England: Sutton, 1998.

ALEXANDER THE GREAT

Born: September 20, 356 B.C.E.

Pella, Macedonia

Died: June 13, 323 B.C.E.

Babylon

Macedonian king

Alexander the Great was one of the best-known rulers in ancient history. By the time of his death at thirty-two, he ruled the largest Western empire of the ancient world.

Education by tutors

Alexander was born in 356 B.C.E. to King Philip II of Macedon (382–336 B.C.E.) and Queen Olympias (375–316 B.C.E.). Growing up, Alexander rarely saw his father, who was usually involved in long military campaigns. Olympias, a fierce and possessive mother, dominated her son's youth and filled him with a deep resentment of his father. Nonetheless, their son's education was important to both parents.



Alexander the Great.

One of Alexander's first teachers was Leonidas, a relative of Olympias, who struggled to control the defiant boy. Philip hired Leonidas to train the youth in math, archery, and horsemanship (the training and care of horses). Alexander's favorite tutor was Lysimachus. This tutor devised a game in which Alexander impersonated the hero Achilles. Achilles was a heroic Greek warrior from a famous ancient poem called the *Iliad*. Achilles became the model of the noble warrior for Alexander, and he modeled himself after this hero. This game delighted Olympias because her family claimed the hero as an ancestor.

In 343 Philip asked Aristotle (384–322 B.C.E.), the famous Greek philosopher and scientist, to tutor Alexander. For three years in the rural Macedonian village of Mieza, Aristotle taught Alexander philosophy, government, politics, poetry, drama, and the sciences. Aristotle wrote a shortened edition of the *Iliad*, which Alexander always kept with him.

Beginnings of the soldier

Alexander's education at Mieza ended in 340 B.C.E.. While Philip was away fighting a war, he left the sixteen-year-old prince as acting king. Within a year Alexander led his first military attack against a rival tribe. In 338 he led the cavalry (troops who fight battles on horseback) and helped his father smash the forces of Athens and Thebes, two Greek city-states.

Alexander's relationship and military cooperation with his father ended soon after Philip took control of the Corinthian League. The Corinthian League was a military alliance made up of all the Greek states except for Sparta. Philip then married another woman, which forced Alexander and Olympias to flee Macedon. Eventually Philip and Alexander were reunited.

Alexander as king

In the summer of 336 B.C.E. at the ancient Macedonian capital of Aegai, Alexander's sister married her uncle Alexander. During this event Philip was assassinated by a young Macedonian noble, Pausanias. After his father's death Alexander sought the approval of the Macedonian army for his bid for kingship. The generals agreed and proclaimed him king, making Alexander the ruler of Macedon. In order to secure his

throne, Alexander then killed everyone who could have a possible claim to the kingship.

Although he was the king of Macedon, Alexander did not automatically gain control of the Corinthian League. Some Greek states rejoiced at Philip's murder, and Athens wanted to rule the League. Throughout Greece independence movements arose. Immediately Alexander led his armies to Greece to stop these movements. The Greek states quickly recognized him as their leader, while Sparta still refused to join. The League gave Alexander unlimited military powers to attack Persia, a large kingdom to the east of Greece.

Asian campaign

In October 335 B.C.E. Alexander returned to Macedon and prepared for his Persian expedition. In numbers of troops, ships, and wealth, Alexander's resources were inferior to those of Darius III (380–330 B.C.E.), the king of Persia. In the early spring of 334 Alexander's army met Darius's army for the first time. Alexander's army defeated the Persians and continued to move west. Darius's capital at Sardis fell easily, followed by the cities of Miletus and Halicarnassus. The territories Alexander conquered formed the foundations of his Asian empire.

By autumn 334 Alexander had crossed the southern coast of Asia Minor (now Turkey). In Asia Minor, Alexander cut the famous Gordian Knot. According to tradition, whoever undid the intricate Gordian Knot would become ruler of Asia. Many people began to believe that Alexander had god-like powers and was destined to rule Asia.

Then in 333 Alexander moved his forces east and the two kings met in battle at the

city of Issus. Alexander was outnumbered but used creative military formations to beat Darius's forces. Darius fled. Alexander then attacked the Persian royal camp where he gained lots of riches and captured the royal family. He treated Darius's wife, mother, and three children with respect. With Darius's army defeated, Alexander proclaimed himself king of Asia.

As a result of the defeat, Darius wanted to sign a truce with Alexander. He offered a large ransom for his family, a marriage alliance, a treaty of friendship, and part of his empire. Alexander ignored Darius's offer because he wanted to conquer all of Asia.

Campaign in Egypt

Alexander then pushed on into Egypt. Egypt fell to Alexander without resistance, and the Egyptians hailed him as their deliverer from Persian domination. In every country, Alexander respected the local customs, religions, and citizens. In Egypt he sacrificed to the local gods and the Egyptian priesthood recognized him as pharaoh, or ruler of ancient Egypt. They hailed Alexander as a god. Alexander then worked to bring Greek culture to Egypt. In 331 B.C.E. he founded the city of Alexandria, which became a center of Greek culture and commerce.

More fighting in Persia

In September 331 B.C.E. Alexander defeated the Persians at the Battle of Gaugamela. The Persian army collapsed, and again Darius fled. Instead of chasing after him, Alexander explored Babylonia, which was the region that Darius had abandoned. The land had rich farmlands, palaces, and treasures. Alexander became "King of Baby-

lon, King of Asia, King of the Four Quarters of the World.”

Alexander next set out for Persepolis, the capital of the Persian Empire. To prevent an uprising, Alexander burned Persepolis. In the spring of 330 he marched to Darius’s last capital, Ecbatana (modern Hamadan). There Alexander set off in pursuit of Darius.

By the time Alexander caught up with Darius in July 330, Darius’s assistants had assassinated him. Alexander ordered a royal funeral with honors for his enemy. As Darius’s successor, Alexander captured the assassins and punished them according to Persian law. Alexander was now the king of Persia, and he began to wear Persian royal clothing. As elsewhere, Alexander respected the local customs.

Iran and India

After defeating Darius, Alexander pushed eastward toward Iran. He conquered the region, built cities, and established colonies of Macedonians. In the spring of 327 B.C.E. he seized the fortress of Ariamazes and captured the prince Oxyartes. Alexander married Oxyartes’s daughter Rhoxana to hold together his Eastern empire more closely in a political alliance.

In the summer of 327 Alexander marched toward India. In northern India, he defeated the armies of King Porus. Impressed with his bravery and nobility, Alexander allowed Porus to remain king and gained his loyalty.

By July 325 the army continued north to the harsh and barren land in the Persian Gulf. The hardship and death that occurred after arriving brought disorganization to the army. It was also at this time that disorder

began to spread throughout the empire. Alexander was greatly concerned with the rule of his empire and the need for soldiers, officers, and administrators.

In order to strengthen the empire, Alexander then made an attempt to bind the Persian nobility to the Macedonians to create a ruling class. To accomplish this goal, he ordered eighty of his Macedonian companions to marry Persian princesses. Alexander, although married to Rhoxana, married Stateira, a daughter of Darius, to solidify his rule.

When Alexander incorporated thirty thousand Persians into the army, his soldiers grumbled. Later that summer, when he dismissed his aged and wounded Macedonian soldiers, the soldiers spoke out against Alexander’s Persian troops and his Persian manners. Alexander arrested thirteen of their leaders and executed them. He then addressed the army and reminded his soldiers of their glories and honors. After three days the Macedonians apologized for their criticism. In a thanksgiving feast the Persians joined the Macedonians as forces of Alexander.

Alexander’s death

In the spring of 323 B.C.E. Alexander moved to Babylon and made plans to explore the Caspian Sea and Arabia and then to conquer northern Africa. On June 2 he fell ill, and he died eleven days later.

Alexander’s empire had been a vast territory ruled by the king and his assistants. The empire fell apart at his death. The Greek culture that Alexander introduced in the East had barely developed. In time, however, the Persian and Greek cultures blended and prospered as a result of his rule.

For More Information

Briant, Pierre. *Alexander the Great*. New York: Harry N. Abrams, 1996.

Green, Peter. *Alexander of Macedon, 356–323 B.C.* Rev. ed. Harmondsworth, England: Penguin, 1974.

O'Brien, John Maxwell. *Alexander the Great*. New York: Routledge, 1992.

MUHAMMAD

ALI

Born: January 17, 1942

Louisville, Kentucky

African American boxer

Muhammad Ali was the only professional boxer to win the heavyweight championship three times. He provided leadership and an example for African American men and women around the world with his political and religious views.

Early life

Muhammad Ali was born Cassius Marcellus Clay Jr. on January 17, 1942, in Louisville, Kentucky, the first of Cassius Marcellus Clay Sr. and Odessa Grady Clay's two sons. His father was a sign painter who also loved to act, sing, and dance; his mother worked as a cleaning lady when money was tight. Ali began boxing at the age of twelve. His bicycle had been stolen, and he reported the theft to a policeman named Joe Martin, who gave boxing lessons in a local youth

center. Martin invited Ali to try boxing and soon saw that he had talent.

Martin began to feature Ali on his local television show, "Tomorrow's Champions," and he started Ali working out at Louisville's Columbia Gym. An African American trainer named Fred Stoner taught Ali the science of boxing. Among the many things Ali learned was how to move with the grace and ease of a dancer. Although his schoolwork suffered, Ali devoted all of his time to boxing and improved steadily.

"Float like a butterfly, sting like a bee"

As a teenager Ali won both the national Amateur Athletic Union (AAU) and Golden Gloves championships. At the age of eighteen he competed in the 1960 Olympic games held in Rome, Italy, winning the gold medal in the lighthweight division. This led to a contract with a group of millionaires called the Louisville Sponsors Group. It was the biggest contract ever signed by a professional boxer. Ali worked his way through a series of professional victories, using a style that combined speed with great punching power. He was described by one of his handlers as having the ability to "float like a butterfly, and sting like a bee."

Ali's unique style of boasting, rhyming, and expressing confidence brought him considerable media attention as he moved toward a chance to fight for the world heavyweight boxing championship. When he began to write poems predicting his victories in different fights he became known as "The Louisville Lip." Both the attention and his skill as a fighter paid off. In February 1964, when he was only twenty-two years old, he fought and defeated Sonny Liston for the heavyweight championship of the world.



Muhammad Ali.

Reproduced by permission of Hulton/Archive by Getty Images.

Religious change

Inspired by Muslim spokesman Malcolm X (1925–1965), Ali began to follow the Black Muslim faith (a group that supports a separate black nation) and announced that he had changed his name to Cassius X. This was at a time when the struggle for civil rights was at a peak and the Muslims had emerged as a controversial (causing disputes) but important force in the African American community. Later the Muslim leader Elijah Muhammad (1897–1975) gave him the name Muhammad Ali, which means “beloved of Allah.” (Allah is the god worshipped by Mus-

lims.) In his first title defense in May 1965 Ali defeated Sonny Liston with a first-round knockout. (Many called it a phantom punch because it was so fast and powerful that few watching the fight even saw it.) Ali successfully defended his title eight more times.

In April 1967 Ali was drafted into military service during the Vietnam War (1957–75; a war fought in an unsuccessful attempt to stop Communist North Vietnam from overtaking South Vietnam). He claimed that as a minister of the Black Muslim religion he was not obligated to serve. The press criticized him as unpatriotic, and the New York State Athletic Commission and World Boxing Association suspended his boxing license and stripped him of his heavyweight title. Ali told *Sports Illustrated*, “I’m giving up my title, my wealth, maybe my future. Many great men have been tested for their religious beliefs. If I pass this test, I’ll come out stronger than ever.” Ali was finally sentenced to five years in prison but was released on appeal, and his conviction was thrown out three years later by the U.S. Supreme Court.

Back in the ring

Ali returned to the ring and beat Jerry Quarry in 1970. Five months later he lost to Joe Frazier (1944–), who had replaced him as heavyweight champion when his title had been stripped. Ali regained the championship for the first time when he defeated George Foreman (1949–), who had beaten Frazier for the title, in a fight held in Zaire in 1974. Ali referred to this match as the “Rumble in the Jungle.” Ali fought Frazier several more times, including a fight in 1974 staged in New York City and a bout held in the Philippines in 1975, which Ali called the

“Thrilla in Manila.” Ali won both matches to regain his title as the world heavyweight champion. In 1975 *Sports Illustrated* magazine named Ali its “Sportsman of the Year.”

Ali now used a new style of boxing, one that he called his “rope-a-dope.” He would let his opponents wear themselves down while he rested, often against the ropes; he would then be strong and lash out in the later rounds. Ali successfully defended his title ten more times. He held the championship until Leon Spinks defeated him in February 1978 in Las Vegas, Nevada. Seven months later Ali regained the heavyweight title by defeating Spinks in New Orleans, Louisiana, becoming the first boxer in history to win the heavyweight championship three times. At the end of his boxing career he was slowed by a condition related to Parkinson’s disease (a disease of the nervous system that results in shaking and weakness of the muscles). Ali’s last fight (there were sixty-one in all) took place in 1981.

Role as statesman

As Ali’s boxing career ended, he became involved in social causes and politics. He campaigned for Jimmy Carter (1924–) and other Democratic political candidates and took part in the promotion of a variety of political causes addressing poverty and the needs of children. He even tried to win the release of four kidnapped Americans in Lebanon in 1985. As a result, his image changed and he became respected as a statesman. At the 1996 Summer Olympic Games in Atlanta, Georgia, the world and his country honored Ali by choosing him to light the Olympic torch during the opening ceremonies.

Ali remains in the public eye even as he continues to suffer from the effects of Parkin-

son’s disease. In 1998 he announced he was leaving an experimental treatment program in Boca Raton, Florida, claiming that the program’s leader was unfairly using his name to gain publicity. In 1999 Ali became the first boxer to ever appear on a Wheaties cereal box. Later that year he supported a new law to clean up the business side of boxing. After the terrorist attacks on the United States on September 11, 2001, Ali agreed to record sixty-second announcements for airing in Muslim countries to show that the United States remained friendly to those of the Muslim faith. Among many documentaries and books about Ali, a film version of his life, *Ali*, was released in December 2001.

For More Information

Myers, Walter Dean. *The Greatest: Muhammad Ali*. New York: Scholastic Press, 2001.

Remnick, David. *King of the World: Muhammad Ali and the Rise of an American Hero*. New York: Random House, 1998.

WOODY ALLEN

Born: December 1, 1935

Brooklyn, New York

American filmmaker, actor, author, and comedian

Woody Allen is one of America’s most prominent filmmakers. He has made many comedies and serious films that deal with subjects that

have always interested him—the relationships of men and women, death, and the meaning of life.

The early years

Woody Allen was born Allen Stewart Konigsberg on December 1, 1935, in the Flatbush area of Brooklyn, New York, into a family that he described as “typical noisy ethnic.” His father, Martin, held a variety of jobs including bartending, and his mother, Nettie, worked as a bookkeeper. His only sibling is a sister. As a teenager Woody did not show much intellectual or social interest and spent long hours in his bedroom practicing magic tricks. He started using the name Woody Allen at age seventeen when he began submitting jokes to a local newspaper. People noticed his jokes and asked him to write for other comedians.

After Allen graduated from high school, he enrolled in New York University as a motion picture major and, later, in the night school at City College, but he was unhappy. He dropped out of both schools to pursue his career as a comedy writer.

Before Allen turned twenty he had sold twenty thousand gags (short jokes) to the New York newspapers. By the time he turned twenty-three he was writing for one of television’s biggest comedy stars, Sid Caesar (1922–). He also hired a tutor from Columbia University to teach him literature and philosophy (the study of knowledge).

Allen began performing his own material in a small New York City nightclub in 1960. He worked six nights a week and learned how to work with an audience. He began to be noticed and started to appear on network television. Unlike other comics who favored polit-

ical humor, Allen made jokes about his own comic character whom he had invented, a little guy tormented by the big questions about life issues and his hard luck with women. Success in clubs and on television led to a comedy album that was nominated for a Grammy (a recording industry award) in 1964.

Begins film career

Allen had long been a lover of movies, American and foreign, but the first one he wrote and acted in, *What’s New, Pussycat?* (1965), turned out to be a very bad experience for him. He was so unhappy that he said he would never do another movie unless he was given complete control of the cast and how it looked in the end. Fortunately, *What’s New, Pussycat?* was so successful that Allen was given his wish for future movies.

Allen was successful in writing and directing films such as *Take the Money and Run* (1969), and *Bananas* (1971). His Broadway play *Don’t Drink the Water* was also made into a movie in 1969, although Allen neither directed it nor acted in it. His success continued with *Play It Again, Sam* (1972) (also based on a play he wrote), *Sleeper* (1973), and *Love and Death* (1975).

First serious film

Allen made his first serious film, *Annie Hall*, in 1977. It was a bittersweet (having both pleasure and pain) comedy about a romance that ends sadly. The movie won four Academy Awards (Oscars) including Best Screenplay (script) for Allen. He followed *Annie Hall* with *Interiors* (1978) and *Manhattan* (1979), both of which were more serious than comedic. His career as a serious filmmaker had definitely been recognized.

Annie Hall also marked the beginning of a nine-picture collaboration with movie cameraman Gordon Willis. Allen continued to use different filmmaking techniques to create a new style for each new film. He imitated the style of Italian director Federico Fellini (1920–1993) in his next film, *Stardust Memories* (1980). In that movie he plays a filmmaker who does not like his fans. During an interview with *Esquire* magazine in 1987, Allen said, “The best film I ever did, really, was *Stardust Memories*.”

Leading ladies

Allen has been married to or has been romantically involved with the women who have starred in his movies. These include Louise Lasser (1939–), Diane Keaton (1946–), and Mia Farrow (1945–). Lasser acted in several of Allen’s earlier films. Keaton appeared not only in *Annie Hall*, but also in *Bananas*; *Play It Again, Sam*; *Sleeper*; *Love and Death*; *Interiors*; *Manhattan*; and *Radio Days* (1987). Each relationship ended unhappily, but each actress received very favorable recognition for her roles in Allen’s films.

In 1982 Allen began working with his new off-screen partner, actress Mia Farrow, in a film that was loosely based on Shakespeare’s (1564–1616) *A Midsummer’s Night Dream*. Farrow also starred in *Zelig* (1983), *Broadway Danny Rose* (1984), and *The Purple Rose of Cairo* (1985). Hollywood gave three Oscars to the next movie they made, *Hannah and Her Sisters* (1986). They worked on several more films but ended their personal life together in 1992.

Later work

Allen continued to write and direct many films, including *Manhattan Murder*



Woody Allen.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Mystery (1993), which reunited (brought together again) him with Diane Keaton. It was pure comedy. *Bullets Over Broadway* (1994) was a critically-acclaimed (liked by reviewers) comedy and melodrama (a play or film relying on highly sensational events) set on Broadway in the 1920s.

Allen continued with another comedy in 1995, making *Mighty Aphrodite*, a modern story that includes scenes parodying (comically imitating) Greek tragedy. The next release, *Everyone Says I Love You*, (1996) marked Allen’s first attempt at a musical. Reports said that he waited until two weeks after the film’s stars signed their contracts to

mention that he was making a musical. On purpose he chose actors who were not necessarily musically trained in order to get more honest emotion in the songs. (Allen himself is a very accomplished musician. He plays clarinet in the style of old New Orleans jazz every week at a club in New York City and has performed music for several of his own films.)

Woody Allen's most recent films are *Small Time Crooks* (2000), *The Curse of the Jade Scorpion* (2001), and *Hollywood Ending* (2002). Most of Allen's films have been made on modest budgets in New York City. Of the many film writers and directors, he is one of the few who has complete control of his films.

Woody Allen has grown beyond his beginnings as a comedian. Today he is regarded as one of the most versatile (capable of doing many things) movie makers in America.

For More Information

Baxter, John. *Woody Allen: A Biography*. New York: Carroll & Graf, 2000.

Lax, Eric. *Woody Allen: A Biography*. New York: Knopf, 1991.

Meade, Marion. *The Unruly Life of Woody Allen: A Biography*. New York: Scribner, 2000.

ISABEL ALLENDE

Born: August 2, 1942

Lima, Peru

Chilean novelist, journalist, and dramatist

The author of several novels and a collection of short fiction, as well as plays and stories for children, Chilean author Isabel Allende has received international praise for her writing. Many of her books are noted for their feminine point of view and dramatic qualities of romance and struggle. Her first novel, *The House of the Spirits*, was made into a film in 1994.

Early years in Chile

Isabel Allende was born on August 2, 1942, in Lima, Peru. Her parents, Tomás (a Chilean government representative) and Francisca (Llona Barros) Allende divorced when she was three. After the divorce Isabel traveled with her mother to Santiago, Chile, where she was raised in her grandparents' home. Her grandmother's interest in fortune telling and astrology (the study of the influence of the stars on human behavior), as well as the stories she told, made a lasting impression on Allende. The house was filled with books, and she was allowed to read whatever she wanted.

Allende graduated from a private high school at the age of sixteen. Three years later, in 1962, she married her first husband, Miguel Frías, an engineer. Allende also went to work for the United Nations Food and Agricultural Organization in Santiago, where she was a secretary for several years. Later she became a journalist, editor, and advice columnist for *Paula* magazine. In addition she worked as a television interviewer and newscaster.

Exile in Venezuela

When her uncle, Chilean president Salvador Allende (1908–1973), was assassi-

nated in 1973 as part of a military takeover of the government, Isabel Allende's life changed greatly. At first she did not think that the new government would last, but later she came to realize that it was too dangerous to stay in Chile. As a result she, her husband, and their two children fled to Venezuela. Although she had established a successful career as a journalist in Chile, she had a difficult time finding similar work in Venezuela.

During her life in exile Allende was inspired to write her debut novel, *The House of the Spirits* (1982), which became a best seller in Spain and West Germany. Based on Allende's memories of her family and the political change in her native country, the book describes the personal and political conflicts in the lives of several generations of a family in a Latin American country. These events are communicated through the memories of the novel's three main characters: Esteban and Clara, the father and mother of the Trueba family, and Alba, their granddaughter who falls into the hands of torturers during a military takeover. *The House of the Spirits* earned the Quality Paperback Book Club New Voice Award nomination. The novel was adapted by the Danish writer and director Bille August and was released as a film in the United States in 1994.

The House of Spirits was followed by *Of Love and Shadows*, which concerns the switching at birth of two infant girls. One of the babies grows up to become the focus of a journalist's investigation, and the revelation of the woman's assassination compels the reporter and her photographer to go into exile. The novel received a *Los Angeles Times* Book Prize nomination.



Isabel Allende.

Reproduced by permission of Ms. Isabel Allende.

While on a lecture tour in San Jose, California, to promote the publication of *Of Love and Shadows* in the United States, Allende met William Gordon, a lawyer, who was an admirer of her work and with whom she fell in love. Having been divorced from her first husband for about a year, she married Gordon in 1988 and has lived with him in Marin, California, ever since.

Became powerful storyteller

As she became more popular, Allende decided to devote all of her time to writing and quit her job as a school administrator. Her next book, *Eva Luna* (1988), focused on

the relationship between Eva, an illegitimate (born to unmarried parents) writer and storyteller, and Rolfe Carlé, an Austrian filmmaker haunted by the knowledge of his father's criminal past. The novel received positive reviews and was voted One of the Year's Best Books by *Library Journal*. Allende followed up this novel with *The Stories of Eva Luna* (1991), in which Eva relates several stories to her lover Carlé.

The Eva Luna stories were followed by *The Infinite Plan* (1993) that, unlike her other books, features a male hero in a North American setting. Gregory Reeves is the son of a traveling preacher who settles in the Hispanic section of Los Angeles after becoming ill. Local gang members torment Reeves, as he is the only Caucasian (white) boy in the district. Eventually he finds his way out of the neighborhood, serves in the army, and goes on to study law. *The Infinite Plan* received less praise than Allende's previous books. Still, as novelist Jane Smiley pointed out in her *Boston Globe* review, "Not many [authors from foreign countries] have even attempted writing a novel from the point of view of a native of the new country."

Allende's next work, *Paula* (1995), was a heartbreaking account of the circumstances surrounding the long illness and death of her daughter in 1991. Published in 1999 *Daughter of Fortune* is the story of Eliza Sommers, a girl who breaks with nineteenth-century Chilean tradition to follow her lover to California. In September 1996 Allende was honored at the Hispanic Heritage Awards for her contributions to the Hispanic American community. In 1998 she received the Dorothy and Lillian Gish Prize for excellence in the arts. Another novel, *Portrait in Sepia*, was published in 2001.

For More Information

- Bloom, Harold, ed. *Isabel Allende*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.
- Correas de Zapata, Celia. *Isabel Allende: Life and Spirits*. Houston: Arte Público Press, 2002.
- Levine, Linda Gould. *Isabel Allende*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 2002.

JULIA ALVAREZ

Born: March 27, 1950

New York, New York

American novelist and poet

Julia Alvarez is a writer whose most notable work is *How the Garcia Girls Lost Their Accents*, a discussion of her life in the Dominican Republic and in the United States and the hardships members of her family faced as immigrants. Many of her works examine the conflicts and benefits that go along with living as both a Dominican and an American.

Background in the Dominican Republic

Julia Alvarez was born on March 27, 1950, in New York, New York, but she spent her early years in the Dominican Republic. She and her sisters were brought up along with their cousins, and were supervised by her mother, maids, and many aunts. Her father, a doctor who ran a nearby hospital, had met her mother while she was

attending school in the United States. Alvarez's family was highly influenced by American attitudes and goods. Alvarez and her sisters attended an American school, and, for a special treat, they ate ice cream from an American ice cream parlor. The entire extended family had respect and admiration for America; to the children, it was a fantasy land.

When Alvarez was ten years old, her father became involved with a plot to overthrow the dictator (military ruler) of the Dominican Republic, Rafael Leonidas Trujillo Molina. His plans were discovered, however. With the help of an American agent, he was able to get his family out of the country before being arrested or killed. The Alvarez family returned to New York. Describing the scene in *American Scholar* as their plane landed in the United States, Alvarez wrote, "All my childhood I had dressed like an American, eaten American foods, and befriended American children. I had gone to an American school and spent most of the day speaking and reading English. At night, my prayers were full of blond hair and blue eyes and snow. . . . All my childhood I had longed for this moment of arrival. And here I was, an American girl, coming home at last."

American experiences

Alvarez's homecoming was not what she had expected it to be. Although she was thrilled to be back in America, she would soon face homesickness and the feeling of not fitting in. She missed her cousins, her family's large home, and the respect her family had in the Dominican Republic. Alvarez, her parents, and her sisters squeezed them-



Julia Alvarez.

Reproduced by permission of Mr. Jerry Bauer.

selves and their possessions into a tiny apartment in Brooklyn, New York. Alvarez became a devoted reader, spending all of her free time with books and, eventually, writing.

Alvarez went on to college. In 1971 she earned her undergraduate degree at Middlebury College in Vermont, and in 1975 she went on to receive her master's degree in creative writing at Syracuse University. She became an English professor at Middlebury College and published several collections of poetry, including *Homecoming*, which appeared in 1984. By 1987 she was working on a collection of stories.

Success arrives

When Alvarez published *How the Garcia Girls Lost Their Accents* in 1991, the novel received considerable attention. Rather than a straight narrative, the book is a series of fifteen connected stories told in reverse order detailing the lives of four sisters and their parents. A comparison with Alvarez's article in *American Scholar* suggests that these stories are based on her own experience. Like her family, the Garcia family is Dominican and displaced in America. Like Alvarez and her sisters, the Garcia girls struggle to adapt to their new environment and the American culture. The praise Alvarez received for her first novel outweighed the criticism that a new novelist often encounters. She received grants from the National Endowment for the Arts and The Ingram Merrill Foundation, in addition to receiving a PEN Oakland/Josephine Miles Award for excellence in multicultural literature.

Alvarez's second novel, *In the Time of Butterflies*, was published in 1994. This work recounts the lives of the Mirabel sisters—Patria, Minerva, and Maria Terese (Mate)—who were assassinated after visiting their imprisoned husbands during the last days under the Trujillo government in the Dominican Republic. Each sister in turn relates her own part of the narrative, beginning with her childhood and gradually revealing how she came to be involved in the movement against the government. Their story is completed by that of the surviving sister, Dedé, who adds her own tale of suffering to the memory of her sisters. *In the Time of Butterflies* received a favorable reaction from reviewers, some of whom admired Alvarez's ability to express the wide range of feelings brought on by the revolution. The

novel was a finalist for the National Book Critics Award in 1994.

A collection of poems entitled *The Other Side/El Otro Lado* was published in 1995. It deals with the similar themes of power of language and having ties to two cultures. In the book's title poem Alvarez is commanded by a spirit conjurer (a kind of magician or psychic) to serve her own people in the Dominican Republic. But in the end she returns "to the shore I've made up on the other side, to a life of choice, a life of words." Her next work, *Yo!*, published in 1997, is based on Yolanda, one of her characters from *How the Garcia Girls Lost Their Accents*. Each section of the novel is told from the point of view of a different character, all of whom describe Yolanda as they see her. *Something to Declare*, published in 1998, collects a series of Alvarez's essays about her experiences growing up and finding her voice as a Latin American writer.

Alvarez gave up her teaching position at Middlebury in 1997 in order to devote all of her time to writing. She continues to stay in touch with her roots by visiting the Dominican Republic four or five times a year, partly to check on the coffee bean farm she and her husband own. Profits from the farm will be used to create a learning center for Dominican children. *In the Name of Salome*, which tells the story of Dominican poet Salome Urea and her daughter, Camila, was published in 2000.

For More Information

Alvarez, Julia. *Something to Declare*. Chapel Hill, NC: Algonquin Books of Chapel Hill, 1998.

Sirias, Silvio. *Julia Alvarez: A Critical Companion*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 2001.

AMERICAN HORSE

Born: early nineteenth century

Died: September 7, 1876

Sioux Native American tribal leader and warrior

American Horse was a Sioux chief during the Lakota Wars of the 1860s and 1870s. His capture and death was one in a series of defeats for the Sioux after the historic Battle of the Little Bighorn (1876).

The son of Old Smoke becomes a shirt-wearer

American Horse, also known as Iron Shield, was the son of Old Smoke, leader of the Smoke People. The Smoke People were also referred to as the Bad Faces. Historians are not sure about when American Horse was born. Little is known about American Horse's early life as a Lakota, but sources show that his cousin Red Cloud (1822–1909) and another Lakota, Crazy Horse (1844–1877), were lifelong friends. (The Sioux Nation is made of Lakotas, Nakotas, and Dakotas.)

In 1865 four warriors, including American Horse and Crazy Horse, were made shirt-wearers. Shirt-wearers were young warriors who had proved themselves to be strong, brave, and generous. During a ceremonial feast, each warrior was given a shirt made from the hides of two bighorn sheep and decorated with feathers, quillwork (decoration using porcupine quills or the shafts of bird feathers), and scalps. Although shirt-wearers were not considered chiefs by their people, they were looked upon as leaders.

They were expected to lead warriors in peace as well as in war, keeping the peace and respecting the rights of the weak.

Fort Laramie treaties

The 1851 Fort Laramie Treaty set aside an area in northern Wyoming for Lakota hunting grounds. The treaty called for peace among the northern tribes, promised safety to the Sioux, and approved roads and military posts. In 1862, however, Congress passed the Homestead Act in 1862, and three hundred thousand settlers crossed the Plains. In addition, gold was discovered in Montana. In 1862, John M. Bozeman (1835–1867) made a trail across the Lakota Territory. From 1863 to 1864, the Bozeman Trail was the main route to the Montana gold fields. The Lakotas attacked travelers on the trail. This was the start of the Lakota Wars.

In 1865, the southern Lakota signed a new peace treaty. When attacks along the Bozeman Trail continued, the government realized the northern Lakota leaders had not agreed to the treaty. The commander at Fort Laramie was ordered to have all Lakota sign a new treaty in 1868. The Fort Laramie Treaty of 1868 promised that the Lakota, Cheyenne, and Arapaho groups could travel the buffalo grounds of the upper Missouri as long as the buffalo herds survived. The treaty also required their children to attend Christian missionary schools and promised that Fort Phil Kearney would be burnt to the ground.

In the summer of 1870, American Horse joined Red Cloud and other Lakota leaders on a trip to Washington, D.C. On their journey, the Lakota leaders saw how many people lived in the East. Several of the leaders then



American Horse.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

agreed to move their people to reservations. Others, including Sitting Bull (1831–1890), American Horse, and Crazy Horse, refused.

The Black Hills

In 1874, while on a scouting mission in the Black Hills, Lieutenant Colonel George Armstrong Custer (1839–1876) discovered gold. This discovery brought a new wave of miners into the Black Hills. A Senate commission then met with Red Cloud and other chiefs and offered to buy their land. Seven thousand Lakota came to a special council meeting in September 1875. Red Cloud said he would not accept payment of less than

seventy million dollars and beef herds to last seven generations. Others called for war and vowed to protect their sacred land.

In December 1875, in the middle of a bitter Plains winter, the U.S. Interior Department ordered all Sioux to the Dakota reservations. Those who did not report by January 31, 1876, would be considered hostile. Because it was winter, when no one moved around on the northern plains, the Indians remained where they were. Unfamiliar with the area and the tribal customs, the Interior Department ordered the military to drive the Lakota onto the reservations. General George Crook (1828–1898) led his troops to the region to carry out the military's orders.

Little Bighorn

On March 17, 1876, a group of Crook's soldiers surprised a small Lakota camp, destroying all the tepees and winter food stores. The following month, Sitting Bull held a council to talk of war. As Sitting Bull prepared for war, many of the reservation Indians joined him. There were several minor skirmishes between soldiers and Lakotas before summer that year. By June, the Indians made camp at the Little Bighorn in the Bighorn Mountains.

Depending on who tells the story, either Custer surprised Sitting Bull's camp or Sitting Bull ambushed the Seventh Cavalry. Whichever version actually occurred, 189 soldiers, 13 officers, and 4 civilians died on June 25, 1876, at the Little Bighorn, according to official military records. Hundreds of warriors had overwhelmed the Seventh Cavalry. After their victory celebration, Sitting Bull's forces broke into smaller groups and began their summer buffalo hunt.

The Battle of Slim Buttes

General Crook and other military leaders began searching for the Sioux. By September 1876, Crook's troops had run out of supplies. He sent a small group of soldiers, led by Captain Anson Mills (1834–1924), for supplies. Mills's scout found signs of a Lakota camp, and on the morning of September 9, 1876, the soldiers stampeded the tribe's horses through the sleeping camp. A private saw Custer's Seventh Cavalry guidon, or pennant, hanging on American Horse's tepee. Mills's troops also found uniforms, guns, ammunition, a letter addressed to a Seventh Cavalry soldier, and other supplies. This was considered proof that American Horse had taken part in the Battle at the Little Bighorn in June. Later, other Lakota said American Horse had not taken part in Little Bighorn and that these things had been brought into his camp by other Native Americans. No historical evidence has ever been found to prove American Horse took part in the Little Bighorn battle.

When the soldiers attacked, many Lakota escaped into the surrounding bluffs and started firing back. A small group of Lakota managed to kill some of Mills's pack mules and held off the soldiers from inside a gulch. Mills sent a message to Crook asking for help.

After two hours of exchanging shots, Crook ordered the shooting stopped. Thirteen women and children surrendered. Crook asked the women to return to the gulch to tell the remaining holdouts they would be treated well if they surrendered. A young warrior helped American Horse out of the gulch along with nine more women and children. Two warriors, one woman, and a child were left behind, dead. Cyrus Townsend Brady in *The Sioux Indian Wars from the Powder River to*

the Little Big Horn said, "Even the women had used guns, and had displayed all the bravery and courage of the Sioux."

The death of American Horse

American Horse had been shot in the gut. When he came out of the gulch he was holding his wound and biting down on a piece of wood to keep from crying out. He handed Crook his gun and sat down by one of the fires. American Horse died that night. It was the first of many defeats for the Lakota.

In *Crazy Horse: The Strange Man of the Oglalas*, Marie Sandoz reported that American Horse said, "It is always the friendly ones who are struck," before he died. Other writers indicate American Horse said nothing before he died. In any event, American Horse is remembered as a brave Sioux fighter and leader who defended his people, the land, and the Sioux way of life.

For More Information

Biographical Dictionary of Indians of the Americas. Newport Beach, CA: American Indian Publishers, 1991.

IDI AMIN

Born: c. 1925

Koboko, West Nile Province, Uganda

Ugandan president

As president of Uganda from 1971 to 1979, Idi Amin (c. 1925–) became well known for his terrible violations

of human rights, for causing the collapse of the country's economy, and for causing social disorganization. Amin is remembered best as the tyrant of Uganda who was responsible for a reign filled with mass killings and disorder.

Early life

Idi Amin Dada was born sometime between 1925 and 1927 in Koboko, West Nile Province, in Uganda. His father was a Kakwa, a tribe that exists in Uganda, Zaire (now Congo), and Sudan. As a boy, Amin spent much time tending goats and working in the fields. He embraced Islam and attained a fourth-grade education. He was brought up by his mother, who abandoned his father to move to Lugazi, Uganda.

As Amin grew he matched the qualifications for military service desired by the British at that time. He was tall and strong. He spoke the Kiswahili language. He also lacked a good education, which implied that he would take orders well. Joining the army as a private in 1946, Amin impressed his superiors by being a good swimmer, rugby player, and boxer. He won the Uganda heavyweight boxing championship in 1951, a title he held for nine years. He was promoted to corporal in 1949.

Friendship with Obote

During the 1950s Amin fought against the Mau Mau African freedom fighters, who were opposed to British rule in Kenya. Despite his cruel record during the uprisings, he was promoted to sergeant in 1951, lance corporal in 1953, and sergeant-major and platoon commander in 1958. By 1961 Amin had become one of the first two Ugandan officers with the rank of lieutenant.

In 1962 Amin helped stop cattle rustling, or stealing, between neighboring ethnic groups in Karamoja, Uganda, and Turkana, Kenya. Because of the brutal acts he committed during these operations, British officials recommended to Apolo Milton Obote (1924–), Uganda's prime minister, that he be brought to trial as a criminal. Obote instead publicly criticized him, deciding it would have been politically unwise to put on trial one of the two African officers just before Uganda was to gain independence from Britain on October 9, 1962. Thereafter Amin was promoted to captain in 1962 and major in 1963. He was selected to participate in the commanding officers' course at Wiltshire school of infantry in Britain in 1963. In 1964 he was made a colonel.

Amin's close association with Obote apparently began in 1965. Obote sympathized with the followers of the murdered prime minister of the Congo, Patrice Lumumba (1925–1961). Obote asked Amin for help in establishing military training camps. Amin also brought coffee, ivory, and gold into Uganda from the Congo so that the rebels there could have money to pay for arms. The opponents of Obote wanted an investigation into the illegal entry of gold and ivory into Uganda. Obote appointed a committee to look into the issue. He promoted Amin to chief of staff in 1966, and to brigadier and major-general in 1967.

Amin seizes control

By 1968 the relationship between Obote and Amin had gone sour. An attempted assassination of Obote in 1969, and Amin's suspicious behavior thereafter, further widened the gap between the two men. It is

unclear why Obote promoted Amin in 1970 to become chief of general staff, a position that gave him access to every aspect of the armed forces. Amin overthrew Obote's government on January 25, 1971.

Ugandans joyfully welcomed Amin. He was a larger-than-life figure and yet simple enough to shake hands with common people and participate in their traditional dances. He was charming, informal, and flexible. Amin was thought to be a nationalist (a person who supports his or her country above all else). His popularity increased when he got rid of Obote's secret police, freed political prisoners, and told Ugandans that he would hand power back to the people.

During this period, Amin's other personality began to emerge: that of a merciless, unpredictable, cunning liar. His "killer squads" murdered Obote's supporters and two Americans who were investigating massacres (large-scale killings). It was becoming clear that Amin's seeming friendliness and clowning were only a mask to hide his brutality.

In 1972 he savagely attacked the Israelis and the British, with whom he had been friendly. He did not like that these countries would not sell him weapons. Once Mu'ammar al-Qaddafi (1942–) of Libya agreed to help, Amin immediately threw Israelis and fifty thousand Asians out of Uganda. Uganda's economy was wrecked because Asian traders were suddenly forced to leave. The action also earned Amin a poor international image.

Between 1972 and 1979 Amin's policy was to stay in power at any cost. Though he seemed brave, Amin was a coward. He was, for example, terrified in 1978 when a story circulated that a "talking tortoise" had pre-



Idi Amin.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

dicted his downfall. He constantly changed bodyguards, traveling schedules and vehicles, and sleeping places. He controlled the army through frequent reorganization. He also kept his army happy by giving them tape recorders, expensive cars, rapid promotions, and businesses that had been owned by Asian traders.

Trying to stay in power

Amin used violence and terror to eliminate his real and imaginary enemies. The human cost of Amin's rule was huge—not only in terms of the loss of thousands of Ugandans, but also because of its dehuman-

izing (making people feel less than human) effects. Human life had become less important than wealth.

Most government funds were devoted to the armed forces and to Amin's safety. Health, transport, production of food and cash crops (easily marketable crops), industrial and manufacturing sectors, and foreign investments were neglected. Despite his growing poor reputation, Amin was elected chairman of the Organization of African Unity (OAU), an organization of African nations, on July 28, 1975. In 1977 African countries blocked a United Nations resolution that would have condemned Amin for his gross violation of human rights.

By the late 1970s Amin's luck was running out. The economy was getting worse. Arabs were concerned about Amin's failure to show how Uganda was becoming an Islamic nation but also concerned about his killing of fellow Muslims. It was becoming difficult for Amin to import luxury goods for his army. To distract attention from the country's internal crises, Amin ordered an invasion of Tanzania in October 1978, supposedly because the latter planned to overthrow his government. Amin's army was forced back. Tanzanians and exiled Ugandan soldiers then invaded Uganda and continued their pursuit of Amin until his government was overthrown on April 11, 1979.

Amin fled to Libya, but he later moved to Jidda, Saudi Arabia. There he spends his time reciting the Koran (the holy book of Islam), reading books, playing an accordion, swimming, fishing, and watching television—especially sports programs and news channels. He follows events in his homeland closely.

For More Information

Grahame, Iain. *Amin and Uganda: A Personal Memoir*. London: Granada, 1980.

Gwyn, David. *Idi Amin: Deathlight of Africa*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1977.

Kyemba, Henry. *A State of Blood: The Inside Story of Idi Amin*. New York: Grosset & Dunlap, 1977.

HANS CHRISTIAN ANDERSEN

Born: April 2, 1805

Odense, Denmark

Died: August 4, 1875

Copenhagen, Denmark

Danish writer, author, and novelist

Hans Christian Andersen was the first Danish author to emerge from the lowest class. He enjoyed fame as a novelist, dramatist, and poet, but his fairy tales are his greatest contribution to world literature.

Early life

Hans Christian Andersen was born on April 2, 1805, in Odense, Denmark. His father was a shoemaker, and his mother earned money washing other people's clothes. His parents spoiled him and encouraged him to develop his imagination. At the age of fourteen, Andersen convinced his mother to let him try his luck in Copenhagen, Denmark, rather than studying to become a tailor. When she asked what he

planned to do in Copenhagen, he replied, "I'll become famous! First you suffer cruelly, and then you become famous."

For three years Andersen lived in one of Copenhagen's most run-down areas. He tried to become a singer, a dancer, and an actor, but he failed. When he was seventeen, a government official arranged a scholarship for him in order to give him a second chance to receive an education. But he was a poor student and was never able to study successfully. He never learned how to spell or how to write in Danish. As a result his writing style remained close to the spoken language and still sounds fresh today, unlike the work of other writers from the same era.

After spending seven years at school, mostly under the supervision of a principal who seems to have hated him, Andersen celebrated the passing of his university exams in 1828 by writing his first narrative. The story was a success, and it was quickly followed by a collection of poems. Andersen's career as an author had begun, and his years of suffering were at an end.

Literary career

In 1835 Andersen completed his first novel, *The Improvisatore*, and he published his first small volume of fairy tales, an event that attracted little attention at the time. *The Improvisatore*, like most of Andersen's novels, was based on his own life. It was a success not only in Denmark but also in England and Germany. He wrote five more novels, but as a writer of drama, Andersen failed almost completely. Many of his poems are still a part of popular Danish literature, however, and his most lasting contributions, after the fairy tales, are his travel books and his autobiography (the story of his own life).



Hans Christian Andersen.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

A lifelong bachelor, Andersen was frequently in love (with, among others, the singer Jenny Lind). He lived most of his life as a guest at the country homes of wealthy Danish people. He made many journeys abroad, where he met and in many cases became friends with well-known Europeans, among them the English novelist Charles Dickens (1812–1870).

Fairy tales

Andersen began his fairy-tale writing by retelling folk tales he had heard as a child from his grandmother and others. Soon, however, he began to create his own stories. Most

of his tales are original. The first volumes written from 1835 to 1837 contained nineteen stories and were called *Fairy Tales Told for Children*. In 1845 the title changed to *New Fairy Tales*. The four volumes appearing with this title contained twenty-two original tales and are considered Andersen's finest works. In 1852 the title was changed to *Stories*, and from then on the volumes were called *New Fairy Tales and Stories*. During the next years Andersen published a number of volumes of fairy tales. His last works of this type appeared in 1872. Among his most popular tales are "The Ugly Duckling," "The Princess and the Pea," and "The Little Mermaid."

At first Andersen was not very proud of his fairy-tale writing, and, after talks with friends and Danish critics, he considered giving them up. But he later came to believe that the fairy tale would be the "universal poetry" (poetry that exists in all cultures) of which so many romantic writers dreamed. He saw fairy tales as the poetic form of the future, combining folk art and literature and describing both the tragic and the comical elements of life. Andersen's tales form a rich, made-up world. While children can enjoy most of the tales, the best of them are written for adults as well. The tales also take on different meanings to different readers, a feat only a great poet can accomplish. Andersen died in Copenhagen, Denmark, on August 4, 1875.

For More Information

Bredsdorff, Elias. *Hans Christian Andersen*. New York: Scribner, 1975.

Wullschläger, Jackie. *Hans Christian Andersen: The Life of a Storyteller*. New York: Knopf, 2001.

CARL DAVID ANDERSON

Born: September 3, 1905

New York, New York

Died: January 11, 1991

San Marino, California

American physicist

The American physicist Carl David Anderson opened up the entire field of particle physics, the study of the atom, the smallest unit of matter. Because of his discoveries of the positron (positive electron) and the meson (similar to the negative electron), two particles that make up the atom, Anderson was awarded the Nobel Prize in Physics in 1936.

Childhood and education

On September 3, 1905, Carl David Anderson was born in New York, New York. He was the only child of Swedish parents, Carl and Emma Anderson. When he was a child Anderson wanted a career in athletics, as a high jumper. The Anderson family moved to Los Angeles, where Carl David attended Los Angeles Polytechnic High School and first became interested in science. In 1924 he entered the California Institute of Technology (Cal Tech), with which he would remain associated throughout his life. In 1927 Anderson received his bachelor's degree. He then continued his education in graduate school on a research grant, centering his graduate work on physics and mathematics.

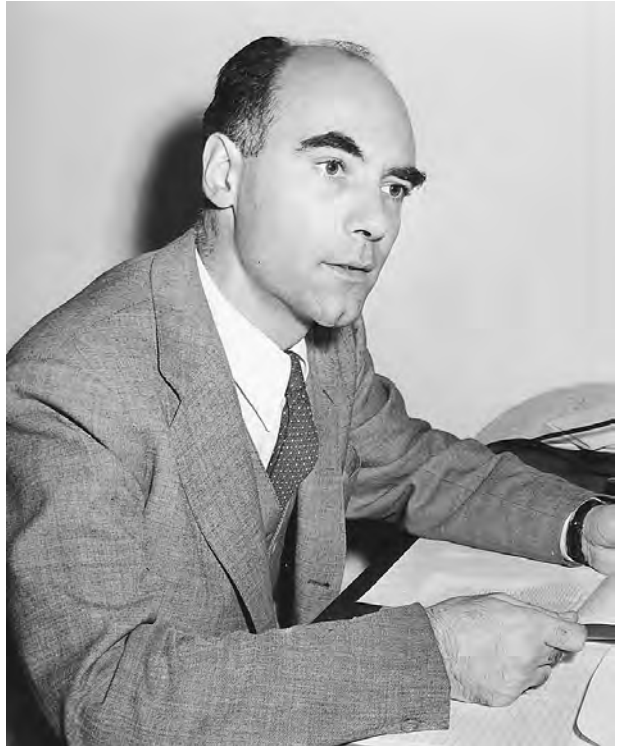
As a teacher Anderson obtained a doctorate degree with honors in 1930 under the physicist R. A. Millikan (1868–1953), who

was awarded the Nobel Prize in 1936 for his work in physics. After working with Millikan at Cal Tech as a researcher for three years, Anderson was promoted to assistant professor in 1933. He eventually worked his way to chairman of the Division of Physics, Mathematics, and Astronomy in 1962.

Discovery of the positron

In the years immediately after Anderson received his degree, he discovered the positron, or positive electron—a revolutionary discovery, because the positron became the first known antiparticle (the oppositely charged particles of an atom) and the first known positively charged particle other than the proton. Anderson made his discovery during his and Millikan's quest to determine the nature of cosmic rays (positive particles from outer space) by allowing the rays to pass through a Wilson cloud chamber (a device used to detect elementary particles) in a strong magnetic field. By 1931 he had found evidence indicating that the rays produced charged particles whose tracks were very similar to those produced by ordinary electrons, except that they were bent by the magnetic field in the opposite direction. His famous photograph taken on August 2, 1932, clearly displayed a positron crossing a lead plate placed in the cloud chamber.

The following spring P. M. S. Blackett (1897–1974) and G. P. S. Occhialini were working independently at the Cavendish Laboratory in England. They produced a number of cloud chamber photographs indicating that a gamma-ray photon (electromagnetic energy) interacting with the intense electromagnetic field surrounding a nucleus,



Carl David Anderson.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

the center part of an atom, can create a positron-electron pair—that is, matter (anything that has mass and occupies space). They also recognized, as Anderson at the time had not, that Anderson's positron was the same particle that had been predicted by P. A. M. Dirac's (1902–1984) 1928 relativistic quantum-mechanical theory of the electron, a theory that described the structure of the atom. (Many physicists had believed Dirac's theory to be imperfect because it used the yet-undiscovered positron.) Work by Anderson and others established beyond doubt the proper experimental conditions for the creation and destruction of positrons.

In 1936 Anderson made a second important experimental discovery: the existence of a charged particle in cosmic radiation (rays from the sun) with a mass (an amount of matter) of about 200 electron masses, or of about one-tenth the mass of a proton. Anderson named these particles mesotrons (later shortened to mesons). He believed them to be identical to the nuclear particle H. Yukawa (1907–1981) had theoretically predicted less than two years earlier. It was later realized, however, that Anderson's meson is actually the mu meson (or muon), and Yukawa's meson is actually the pi meson (or pion). After World War II (1939–45) Anderson continued to develop the field of particle physics, which his groundbreaking 1932 discovery had opened up for research.

Later life

Anderson received many honors, beginning at just thirty-one years of age with the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1936, which he shared with V. F. Hess (1883–1964). Anderson received several honorary doctoral degrees and became a member of the National Academy of Sciences.

In 1946 he married Lorraine Elvira Bergman. The Andersons had two sons, Marshall and David. Anderson maintained his research and teaching activities until his retirement in 1976. He died in San Marino, California on January 11, 1991, at the age of eighty-five.

For More Information

Heathcote, Niels H. de V. *Nobel Prize Winners in Physics, 1901–1950*. New York: H. Schuman, 1953.

Weiss, Richard J., ed. *The Discovery of Anti-Matter: The Autobiography of Carl David Anderson, the Youngest Man to Win the Nobel Prize*. River Edge, NJ: World Scientific Pub. Co, 1999.

ELIZABETH GARRETT ANDERSON

Born: 1836

Aldeburgh, Suffolk, England

Died: December 17, 1917

Aldeburgh, Suffolk, England

English physician and activist

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson was the first woman officially approved to practice medicine in Great Britain, and was a pioneer in opening education in medicine to women. She made great sacrifices and struggled to create new pathways for women in British medicine.

Childhood and schooling

Elizabeth Garrett was the second of ten children (four sons and six daughters) born to Newson Garrett, a successful businessman of Aldeburgh, Suffolk, England, and his wife, Louisa Dunnell Garrett. Her parents had not always been wealthy, and Garrett's father was eager to make sure his children's circumstances would improve. Believing that all his children—girls as well as boys—should receive the best education possible, Elizabeth's father saw to it that she and her sister Louie were taught at home by a governess (a

live-in, female tutor). In 1849 they were sent to the Academy for the Daughters of Gentlemen, a school in Blackheath, England, run by the aunts of famous poet Robert Browning (1812–1889). Garrett would later shudder when she recalled the “stupidity of the teachers” and the school’s lack of instruction in science and mathematics. Nonetheless the school’s rule requiring students to speak French proved to be a great benefit.

On her return to Aldeburgh two years later, Garrett studied Latin and mathematics with her brothers’ tutors. Garrett’s friend, the educator Emily Davies (1830–1921), encouraged her to reject the traditional life of the well-to-do English lady. Davies believed that women should be given the opportunity to obtain a better education and prepare themselves for a profession, especially medicine. But Davies herself did not feel suited to becoming a pioneer in medicine and encouraged Garrett to take on this role.

An important meeting

In 1859 Garrett met Elizabeth Blackwell, the first woman in America to graduate from a regular medical school. Blackwell was delivering a series of lectures in London, England, on “Medicine as a Profession for Ladies.” Blackwell compared what she considered the useless life of the well-to-do lady with the services that female doctors could perform. She stressed the contributions female doctors could make by educating mothers on nutrition (proper diet) and child-care, as well as working in hospitals, schools, prisons, and other institutions. Blackwell was enthusiastic about Garrett’s interest and potential, and she helped fuel Garrett’s interest in becoming a fully accredited physician



Elizabeth Garrett Anderson.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

(a physician who is recognized as having met all of the official requirements needed to practice medicine).

Although Garrett’s father at first found the idea of a woman physician “disgusting,” he went with Garrett as she visited well-known physicians, seeking advice on how to pursue her goal. The doctors told Garrett and her father that it was useless for a woman to seek a medical education, because a woman’s name would not be placed on the Medical Register, an official list of approved doctors. Unless a person’s name was listed on the Medical Register, that person could not legally practice medicine in England.

Struggle for education

Eventually, Garrett began a “trial period” of work as a surgical nurse (a nurse who assists during surgeries) at London’s Middlesex Hospital. She used the opportunity to attend surgical procedures and gain some of the training given to medical students. At the end of her three-month trial period, she unofficially became a medical student. She visited patients, worked in the dispensary (a unit where medical supplies and treatments are given out), and helped with emergency patients. The hospital staff accepted her as a guest, but would not officially accept her as a student.

Despite further rejections from Oxford and Cambridge universities and the University of London, Garrett would not be held back. Determined to earn a qualifying diploma in order to place her name on the Medical Register, she decided to pursue the degree of Licentiate of the Society of Apothecaries (L.S.A.). Apothecaries were pharmacists—that is, they prepared and gave out medications. Although the L.S.A. degree was not as impressive as the M.D. (Doctor of Medicine) degree, people with L.S.A.s were officially recognized as physicians. A person had to work for five years under the guidance of a doctor, take certain required lecture courses, and pass an examination to qualify. Although Britain’s organization for apothecaries was not at all an advocate of equal opportunity for women, its charter stated that it would examine “all persons” who had satisfied the regulations.

Garrett tried to study at St. Andrews University in Scotland, but the school refused to allow a woman to graduate from its programs. She was finally able to piece

together the required courses she needed. But when Garrett presented her qualifications to the Society of Apothecaries in the fall of 1865, they refused to allow her to take the examination that would qualify her for an L.S.A. degree. After Garrett’s father threatened to take them to court, they changed their minds. Garrett passed the qualifying examination and her name was listed in the Medical Register one year later.

Opening a women’s hospital

Garrett’s goal was to establish a hospital for women staffed by women. Thus in 1866 she opened the St. Mary’s Dispensary for Women in London. The dispensary (which was not a full-fledged hospital, but was a place where aid and supplies were distributed) filled a great need, and soon found it necessary to expand its services. In 1872, with a ward (unit) of ten beds, the dispensary became the New Hospital for Women and Children.

Garrett maintained a strong interest in the reform of education. At the time free basic education was becoming a reality for poorer children, and the working men of the district in which she practiced medicine asked her to run for election to the school board. She was elected to the London School Board in 1870, the same year she obtained her M.D. degree from the University of Paris. In 1869 Garrett applied for a position at the Shadwell Hospital for Children in London. One of the members of the hospital board of directors who interviewed her was James George Skelton Anderson, her future husband. They were married in 1871.

The New Hospital for Women provided a demonstration of what trained professional

women could accomplish. In 1878 Garrett became the first woman in Europe to successfully perform an ovariectomy (removal of one or both ovaries, the female reproductive glands that produce eggs). Garrett did not enjoy operating, however, and was perfectly willing to turn this part of hospital work over to other women surgeons on her staff. The hospital moved to a larger site in 1899, nearly twenty years before it was renamed the Elizabeth Garrett Anderson Hospital.

Later accomplishments

In 1874 Garrett helped establish the London School of Medicine for Women, where she taught for twenty-three years. Two years after its founding, the school was placed on the list of recognized medical schools, guaranteeing its graduates access to a medical license. In 1877 the school was attached to the Royal Free Hospital, and was permitted to grant the degrees that were required for enrollment on the British Medical Registry.

In 1902 the Andersons moved to Aldeburgh, England, and six years later Garrett became the town's first female mayor. It was one of many "firsts" in a life full of them. Anderson was England's first female doctor, the first female M.D. in France, the first female member of the British Medical Association (Britain's leading association of doctors), the first female dean of a medical school, and Britain's first female mayor. Her distinguished life came to an end on December 17, 1917, when she died in Aldeburgh.

For More Information

Garrett Anderson, Louisa. *Elizabeth Garrett Anderson, 1836–1917*. London: Faber & Faber, 1939.

Hume, Ruth Fox. *Great Women of Medicine*. New York: Random House, 1964.

Manton, Jo. *Elizabeth Garrett Anderson*. New York: Dutton, 1965.

MARIAN ANDERSON

Born: February 27, 1897

Philadelphia, Pennsylvania

Died: April 8, 1993

Portland, Oregon

African American opera singer

Marian Anderson is remembered as one of the best American contraltos (women with lower singing voices) of all time. She was the first African American singer to perform at the White House and the first African American to sing with New York's Metropolitan Opera.

Anderson's early years

Marian Anderson was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, on February 27, 1897. She was educated in the public schools. She displayed a remarkable skill for singing when she was very young, and she loved singing for her church choir. When she could not afford singing lessons, her fellow choir members raised the money that allowed her to study with a famous singing teacher.

When Anderson was twenty-three years old, she entered a competition and won first place over three hundred other singers. The



Marian Anderson.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

prize was the opportunity to sing with the New York Philharmonic orchestra. Further sponsorships enabled her to continue her studies in both the United States and in Europe.

Following Anderson's debuts (first performances on stage in a particular city) in Berlin, Germany, in 1930 and London, England, in 1932, she performed in Scandinavia (northern Europe), South America, and the Soviet Union. In Salzburg, Austria, she gave a sensational performance. The famous conductor Arturo Toscanini (1867–1957) was in the audience. After hearing her sing, Toscanini said she had “a voice heard but once in a century.”

Return to the United States

At the end of Anderson's European tour, she was signed to a contract for fifteen concerts in the United States. On December 30, 1935, she opened her American tour at New York's Town Hall. She performed pieces by European classical composers as well as several African American spirituals (traditional religious songs). The performance was a great success. Critics welcomed her as a “new high priestess of song.” In the words of a writer for the *New York Times*, the concert established her as “one of the great singers of our time.”

Over the next several years Anderson sang for U.S. president Franklin Delano Roosevelt (1882–1945) at the White House and for Great Britain's King George VI (1895–1952) during his 1939 visit to the United States. She made several cross-country tours and soon was booking engagements (scheduling jobs) two years in advance. In one year she traveled twenty-six thousand miles. It was the longest tour in concert history. She gave seventy concerts in five months. After World War II (1939–45; a war fought between Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States against Germany, Italy, and Japan) ended, she performed in major European cities again. By 1950 it was estimated that she had performed before nearly four million listeners.

Victory over racial discrimination

Anderson was a pioneer in winning recognition at home and abroad for African American artists. In 1939 an incident involving the Daughters of the American Revolution (DAR) helped focus public attention on racism. The DAR denied Anderson use of

their Constitution Hall in Washington, D.C., for an April concert. First Lady Eleanor Roosevelt resigned from the DAR in protest and had the U.S. government allow Anderson to perform at the Lincoln Memorial. Her concert there, on Easter morning, drew a live audience of seventy-five thousand, and millions more heard it over the radio.

In 1948 Anderson underwent a dangerous throat operation for a growth that threatened to damage her voice. For two months she was not permitted to use her voice. She was not sure if she would ever be able to sing again. When she was finally allowed to rehearse, her voice returned free of damage. Following her recovery, Anderson made her first post–World War II tour of Europe, including stops in Scandinavia, Paris (France), London (England), Antwerp (Belgium), Zurich (Switzerland), and Geneva (Switzerland).

Operatic debut

In 1955, and again in 1956, Anderson sang in an opera at New York's Metropolitan Opera House. This was the first time an African American had sung with the Metropolitan since it opened in 1883. Over the years Anderson continued to add to her accomplishments. She sang at the presidential inaugurations of Dwight D. Eisenhower (1890–1969) and John F. Kennedy (1917–1963). In 1957 Anderson made a concert tour of India and the Far East for the U.S. State Department. In 1958 President Eisenhower appointed her a delegate (representative) to the Thirteenth General Assembly of the United Nations (UN). She was awarded the UN Peace Prize in 1977. Anderson gave her farewell concert (last public performance) at Carnegie Hall in New York on

Easter Sunday in 1965. She died on April 8, 1993, in Portland, Oregon.

A *New York Times* music critic wrote about Anderson this way: “Those who remember her at her height ... can never forget that big resonant voice, with those low notes almost visceral [having to do with basic emotions] in nature, and with that easy, unforced ascent to the top register. A natural voice, a hauntingly colorful one, it was one of the vocal phenomena [rare event] of its time.”

For More Information

Broadwater, Andrea. *Marian Anderson: Singer and Humanitarian*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2000.

Keiler, Allan. *Marian Anderson: A Singer's Journey*. New York: Scribner, 2000.

Tedards, Anne. *Marian Anderson*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1988.

FRA ANGELICO

Born: c. 1400

Vicchio, Italy

Died: c. 1455

Rome, Italy

Italian painter and artist

The Italian painter Fra Angelico combined the religious style of the Middle Ages (a period in European history from around 500 to around 1500) with the Renaissance's (a period of revived interest



Fra Angelico.
 Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

in Greek and Roman culture that began in Italy during the fourteenth century) concern for representing mass, space, and light.

Early years

Not much is known about Fra Angelico's early life. He was born around 1400 and was named Guido di Pietro. Around 1418 he and his brother Benedetto took vows to become monks in the Order of Dominican Preachers in Fiesole, Italy, near Florence. Fra Angelico's religious name was Fra Giovanni da Fiesole. The titles Fra Angelico and Beato Angelico came into use only after his death, as a way of honoring his religious life and work.

In the early 1420s Fra Angelico and Fra Benedetto began operating a painter's workshop and a room for copying documents in Fiesole. Many of Fra Angelico's early works were created at the monastery (a house for persons who have taken religious vows) of San Domenico in Fiesole. The *Annunciation* of about 1430 and the *Linaiuoli Altarpiece* (*Madonna of the Linen Guild*) reveal the directions of Fra Angelico's art. His gentle people are modeled in chiaroscuro (the arrangement or treatment of light and dark parts), and these saints and angels stand out from the rest of the picture. Numerous large altarpieces (works of art that decorate the space above and behind an altar) were ordered from Fra Angelico and his popular shop in the 1430s.

Other projects

From 1438 to 1445 Fra Angelico worked on frescoes (paintings done on moist plaster with water-based colors) and altarpieces for the Dominican monastery of San Marco in Florence. The church and monks' quarters were newly rebuilt at this time under the supervision of Cosimo de' Medici, with Michelozzo as architect for the project. The frescoes by the master and his assistants were placed throughout the corridors, chapter house, and rooms. In the midst of the traditional subjects from the life of Christ, figures of Dominican saints meditate (focus all their thoughts) upon the sacred events. At the same time the dramatic effect is increased by the inclusion of architectural details of San Marco itself in some of the scenes.

A masterpiece of panel painting created at the same time as the San Marco project was the *Deposition* altarpiece, requested by

the Strozzi family for the Church of Sta Trinita. The richly colored and shining figures, the wide views of the Tuscan landscape serving as a backdrop to Calvary, and the division into sacred and nonreligious people reveal Fra Angelico as an artist in tune with the ideas and methods of the Renaissance. Yet all of the accomplishments in representation do not lessen the air of religious happiness.

Later years

The final decade of Fra Angelico's life was spent mainly in Rome (c. 1445–49 and c. 1453–55), with three years in Florence (c. 1450–52), as prior (second in command of a monastery) of San Domenico at Fiesole. His main surviving works from these final years are the frescoes of scenes from the lives of Saints Lawrence and Stephen in the Chapel of Pope Nicholas V in the Vatican, Rome. The dramatic figure groupings serve to sum up the highlights of the long tradition of fourteenth- and early fifteenth-century Florentine fresco painting. In the strict construction and rich detail of the architectural backgrounds, the dignity and luxury of a Roman setting are shown.

In spite of the fact that Fra Angelico's life unfolded in a monastic environment, his art stands as an important link between the first and later generations of Renaissance painting in Florence.

For More Information

- Pope-Hennessy, John. *Fra Angelico*. 2nd ed. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1974.
- Spike, John T. *Fra Angelico*. New York: Abbeville Press, 1996.

MAYA ANGELOU

Born: April 4, 1928

St. Louis, Missouri

African American author, poet, and playwright

Maya Angelou—author, poet, playwright, stage and screen performer, and director—is best known for *I Know Why the Caged Bird Sings* (1970), the story of her early life, which recalls a young African American woman's discovery of her self-confidence.

Eventful early life

Maya Angelou was born Marguerite Johnson on April 4, 1928, in St. Louis, Missouri. After her parents' marriage ended, she and her brother, Bailey (who gave her the name "Maya"), were sent to rural Stamps, Arkansas, to live with their grandmother, who owned a general store. Although her grandmother helped her develop pride and self-confidence, Angelou was devastated when she was raped at the age of eight by her mother's boyfriend while on a visit to St. Louis. After she testified against the man, several of her uncles beat him to death. Believing that she had caused the man's death by speaking his name, Angelou refused to speak for approximately five years. She attended public schools in Arkansas and later California. While still in high school she became the first ever African American female streetcar conductor in San Francisco, California. She gave birth to a son at age sixteen. In 1950 she married Tosh Angelos, a Greek sailor, but the marriage lasted only a few years.



Maya Angelou.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Later Angelou studied dance and drama and went on to a career in theater. She appeared in *Porgy and Bess*, which gave performances in twenty-two countries. She also acted in several plays on and off Broadway, including *Cabaret for Freedom*, which she wrote with Godfrey Cambridge. During the early 1960s Angelou lived in Cairo, Egypt, where she was the associate editor of *The Arab Observer*. During this time she also contributed articles to *The Ghanaian Times* and was featured on the Ghanaian Broadcasting Corporation programming in Accra, Ghana. During the mid-1960s she became assistant administrator of the School of Music and Drama at the Uni-

versity of Ghana. She was the feature editor of the *African Review* in Accra from 1964 to 1966. After returning to the United States civil rights leader Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr. (1929–1968) requested she serve as northern coordinator for the Southern Christian Leadership Conference.

Success as an author

I Know Why the Caged Bird Sings (1970), the first in a series of Angelou's autobiographical (telling the story of her own life) works, was a huge success. It describes Angelou's life up to age sixteen, providing a child's point of view about the confusing world of adults. The book concludes with Angelou having regained her self-esteem and caring for her newborn son. In addition to being a sharp account of an African American girl's coming of age, this work offers insights into the social and political climate of the 1930s.

Her next autobiographical work, *Gather Together in My Name* (1974), covers the period immediately after the birth of her son Guy and describes her struggle to care for him as a single parent. *Singin' and Swingin' and Gettin' Merry Like Christmas* (1976) describes Angelou's experiences on the stage and concludes with her return from the international tour of *Porgy and Bess*. *The Heart of A Woman* (1981) shows the mature Angelou becoming more comfortable with her creativity and her success. *All God's Children Need Traveling Shoes* (1986) recalls her four-year stay in Ghana. Angelou wrote about other subjects as well, including a children's book entitled *Kofi and His Magic* (1996).

Other works and awards

Angelou had been writing poetry since before her novels became popular. Her col-

lections include: *Just Give Me A Cool Drink of Water 'Fore I Diiiie* (1971); *Oh Pray My Wings Are Going to Fit Me Well* (1975); *And Still I Rise* (1976), which was made into an Off-Broadway production in 1979; *Shaker, Why Don't You Sing* (1983); *Life Doesn't Frighten Me*, illustrated by celebrated New York artist Jean Michel Basquiat (1993); *Soul Looks Back in Wonder* (1994); and *I Shall Not Be Moved* (1997). Angelou's poetry, with its short lyrics and jazzy rhythms, is especially popular among young people, but her heavy use of short lines and her simple vocabulary has turned off several critics. Other reviewers, however, praise Angelou's poetry for discussing social and political issues that are important to African Americans. For example Angelou's poem "On the Pulse of the Morning," which she recited at the 1993 swearing in of President Bill Clinton (1946–), calls for a new national commitment to unity and social improvement.

Angelou has received many awards for her work, including a nomination for National Book Award, 1970; a Pulitzer Prize nomination, 1972; a Tony Award nomination from the League of New York Theatres and Producers, 1973, for her performance in *Look Away*; a Tony Award nomination for best supporting actress, 1977, for *Roots*; and the North Carolina Award in Literature, 1987. In the 1970s she was appointed to the Bicentennial Commission by President Gerald Ford (1913–) and the National Commission on the Observance of International Women's Year by President Jimmy Carter (1924–). She was also named Woman of the Year in Communications by *Ladies' Home Journal*, 1976, and one of the top one hundred most influential women by *Ladies' Home Journal*, 1983. Angelou has also taught at several American

colleges and universities, including the University of California at Los Angeles, the University of Kansas, Wichita State University, and California State University at Sacramento.

Television and movies

Angelou also worked in television as a writer-producer for 20th Century-Fox, from which her full-length feature film *Sister, Sister* received critical praise. In addition she wrote the screenplays *Georgia, Georgia* and *All Day Long* along with television scripts for *Sister, Sister* and the series premiere of *Brewster Place*. She wrote, produced, and hosted the National Educational Television series *Blacks! Blues! Black!* She also costarred in the motion picture *How to Make an American Quilt* in 1995. Angelou made her first attempt at film directing with the feature length movie *Down in the Delta* (1998). The film told the story of a seventy-year-old woman and her personal journey. Angelou found directing to be a much different experience from writing because with directing you have "ninety crew and the cast and the sets and lights and the sound."

Although Angelou is dedicated to the art of autobiography—a sixth volume, *A Song Flung Up to Heaven*, was published in 2002—in her seventies she remains a force in several different fields. Since the early 1980s she has been Reynolds Professor and writer-in-residence at Wake Forest University. In the year 2000 she was honored by President Clinton with the National Medal of Arts, and in 2002 Hallmark introduced The Maya Angelou Life Mosaic Collection, a series of greeting cards containing her verse. She also has plans to write a cookbook and direct another feature film.

For More Information

Kite, L. Patricia. *Maya Angelou*. Minneapolis: Lerner Publications, 1999.

Loos, Pamela. *Maya Angelou*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2000.

Shapiro, Miles. *Maya Angelou*. New York: Chelsea House, 1994.

KOFI ANNAN

Born: April 8, 1938

Kumasi, Ghana

Ghanian-born international diplomat

International diplomat Kofi Annan of Ghana is the seventh secretary-general of the United Nations (UN), the multinational organization created to, among other things, maintain world peace. He is the first black African to head that organization and was awarded the Nobel Prize. Noted for his cautious style of diplomacy, Annan is sometimes criticized for his soft-spokenness, which some say may be mistaken for weakness.

A worldly scholar

Kofi Atta Annan was born in Kumasi, in central Ghana, Africa, on April 8, 1938. Since 1960 Ghana has been a republic within the British Commonwealth, a group of nations dependent on Great Britain. Named for an African empire along the Niger River, Ghana was ruled by Great Britain for 113 years as the Gold Coast. Annan is descended

from tribal chiefs on both sides of his family. His father was an educated man, and Annan became accustomed to both traditional and modern ways of life. He has described himself as being “atribal in a tribal world.”

After receiving his early education at a leading boarding school in Ghana, Annan attended the College of Science and Technology in the capital of Kumasi. At the age of twenty, he won a Ford Foundation scholarship for undergraduate studies at Macalester College in St. Paul, Minnesota, where he studied economics. Even then he was showing signs of becoming a diplomat, or someone skilled in international relations. Annan received his bachelor’s degree in economics in 1961. Shortly after completing his studies at Macalester College, Annan headed for Geneva, Switzerland, where he attended graduate classes in economics at the Institut Universitaire des Hautes Etudes Internationales.

Early career

Following his graduate studies in Geneva, Annan joined the staff of the World Health Organization (WHO), a branch of the United Nations. He served as an administrative officer and as budget officer in Geneva. Later UN posts took him to Addis Ababa, Ethiopia, and New York City, New York. Annan always assumed that he would return to his native land after college, although he was disturbed by the unrest and numerous changes of government that occurred there during the 1970s.

Annan became the Alfred P. Sloan fellow at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. At the end of his fellowship in 1972, he was awarded a master of science degree in man-

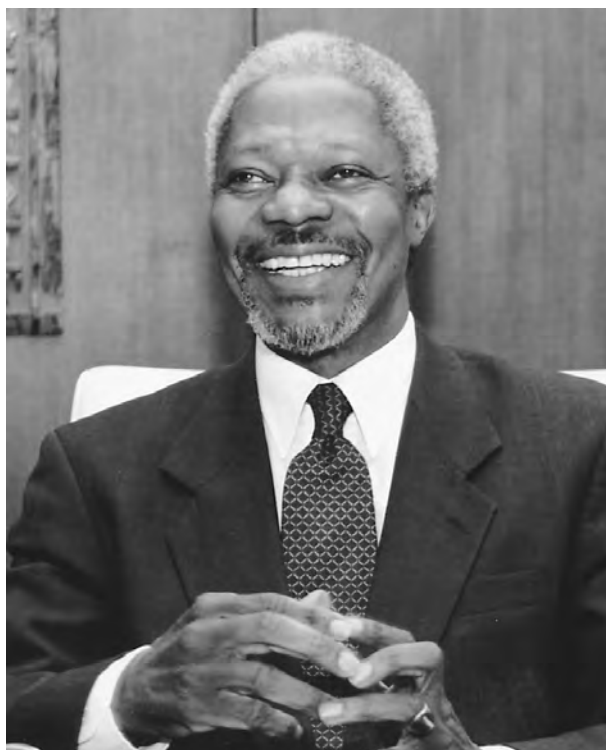
agement. Rather than return to Ghana upon graduation, he accepted a position at the UN headquarters in New York City.

Work with the UN

In 1974 he moved to Cairo, Egypt, as chief civilian personnel officer in the UN Emergency Force. Annan briefly changed careers in 1974 when he left the United Nations to serve as managing director of the Ghana Tourist Development Company.

Annan returned to international diplomacy and the United Nations in 1976. For the next seven years, he was associated with the Office of the United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees in Geneva. He returned to the UN headquarters in New York City in 1983 as director of the budget in the financial services office. Later in the 1980s, he filled the post of assistant secretary-general in the Office of Human Resources Management and served as security coordinator for the United Nations. In 1990, he became assistant secretary-general for another department at the United Nations, the Office of Program Planning, Budget, and Finance. In fulfilling his duties to the United Nations, Annan has spent most of his adult life in the United States, specifically at the UN headquarters in New York City.

Annan had by this time filled a number of roles at the United Nations, ranging from peacekeeping to managerial, and the 1990s were no different. In 1990 he negotiated the release of hostages in Iraq following the invasion of Kuwait. Five years later, he oversaw the transition of the United Nations Protection Force (UNPROFOR) to the multinational Implementation Force (IFOR), a UN peacekeeping organization. In this transfer of



Kofi Annan.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

responsibility, operations in the former Yugoslavia were turned over to the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO).

In recognition of his abilities, Annan was appointed secretary-general, the top post of the UN, by the UN General Assembly in December 1996. He began serving his four-year term of office on January 1, 1997. Joining him was his second wife, former lawyer Nane Lagergren of Sweden. She is the niece of the diplomat Raoul Wallenberg (1912–c. 1947), who saved thousands of European Jews from the German Nazis during World War II (1939–45), when American-led forces fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan.

Annan and Lagergren were married in 1985. The couple has one child.

Heading the United Nations

The post of secretary-general of the United Nations has been called one of the world's "oddest jobs." According to the United Nations web site, "Equal parts diplomat and activist . . . the Secretary-General stands before the world community as the very emblem of the United Nations." The secretary-general is the boss of ten thousand international civil servants and the chief administrator of a huge international parliamentary system (a governing body with representation from many nations).

In this post, Annan is expected to coordinate, although he does not control, the activities of such groups as the WHO and the United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization (UNESCO). He is also expected to practice "preventive diplomacy," meaning he and his staff must try to prevent, contain, or stop international disputes. Above all, Annan must try to maintain world peace.

In an address to the National Press Club, Annan declared, "If war is the failure of diplomacy, then . . . diplomacy . . . is our first line of defense. The world today spends billions preparing for war; shouldn't we spend a billion or two preparing for peace?"

Questioning his role

Almost immediately after Annan's election to secretary-general came the question: Is this man just too nice a person for the job? His reputation for "soft-spokenness," according to *U.S. News & World Report*, could be

mistaken for weakness. Another factor that made people question Annan's toughness was his involvement in the UN efforts at peacekeeping in Bosnia from 1992 to 1996. Despite the United Nations's presence, Bosnia remained the site of an ethnic war (a war between religious or cultural groups), in which thousands died. Sir Marrack Goulding, head of peacekeeping, once commented that Annan never expressed his doubts about the UN policy in a forceful manner. Annan disagreed, saying that he always pressed the involved countries—the United States, Britain, France, and Russia—to rethink their policy on sending soldiers to the peacekeeping force. Not one to raise his voice in anger, Annan favored diplomacy. In a press conference in Baghdad, Iraq, in 1998, Annan noted, "You can do a lot with diplomacy, but of course you can do a lot more with diplomacy backed up by fairness and force."

All eyes turned to Annan and his handling of the touchy situation with Iraq in 1998. Early in that year, threats of war seemed all too real. Saddam Hussein (1937–), president of Iraq, became once again a threatening presence by refusing to let UN observers into certain areas of his country, as had been previously agreed upon, to check for illegal possession of chemical-warfare items and the like. Then-president Bill Clinton (1946–) hinted strongly at the use of force to make Hussein agree to let in the UN officials. In his role as secretary-general, Annan went to Iraq in February of 1998 to meet with the Iraqi leader. After talking with Annan, Hussein agreed to what he had refused before—unlimited UN access to the eight sites that he had previously called completely off-limits. Because of Annan's intervention, war was avoided.

Annan in a new world

Annan's code of soft-spoken diplomacy was given a boost by the outcome of his talks with Saddam Hussein in 1998. UN observers wait to see how additional crises will be handled by the gentle but determined man from Ghana.

In the summer of 2001, the United Nations unanimously appointed Kofi Annan to his second five-year term as secretary-general. On October 12, 2001, the Nobel Peace Prize was awarded jointly to the United Nations and Kofi Annan. The Nobel citation pointed out that Annan had brought new life to the peacekeeping organization, highlighted the United Nations's fight for civil rights, and boldly taken on the new challenges of terrorism and acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; a disease of the immune system).

For More Information

Tessitore, John. *Kofi Annan: The Peacekeeper*. New York: Franklin Watts, 2000.

SUSAN B. ANTHONY

Born: February 15, 1820

Adams, Massachusetts

Died: March 13, 1906

Rochester, New York

*American women's rights activist, abolitionist,
and women's suffrage leader*

Susan B. Anthony was an early leader of the American women's suffrage (right to vote) movement and a pioneer in the struggle to gain equality for women. As an active abolitionist, or opponent of slavery, she campaigned for the freedom of slaves.

Early influences

Susan Brownwell Anthony was born on February 15, 1820, in Adams, Massachusetts. She was the second of seven children born to Daniel and Lucy Read Anthony. Her father, the owner of a cotton mill, was a religious man who taught his children to show their love for God by working to help other people. Susan began attending a boarding school in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, in 1837. She left and began working as a teacher after growing debt forced her father to sell his business and move the family to a farm near Rochester, New York.

Anthony continued teaching to help her family pay the bills until 1849, when her father asked her to come home to run the family farm so that he could spend more time trying to develop an insurance business. Many famous reformers, such as Frederick Douglass (1817–1895), William Lloyd Garrison (1805–1879), and Wendell Phillips (1811–1884), came to visit Anthony's father during this time. Hearing their discussions helped Susan form her strong views on slavery, women's rights, and temperance (the avoidance of alcohol).

Women's rights

Although her family attended the first women's rights convention held in Seneca Falls and Rochester, New York, in 1848,



Susan B. Anthony.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Anthony did not take up the cause until 1851. Until that time, she had devoted most of her time to the temperance movement. However, when male members of the movement refused to let her speak at rallies simply because she was a woman, she realized that women had to win the right to speak in public and to vote before they could accomplish anything else. Her lifelong friendship and partnership with Elizabeth Cady Stanton (1815–1902), who had proposed a resolution giving women the right to vote, also began in 1851.

Anthony attended her first women's rights convention in 1852. From that first

convention until the end of the Civil War (1861–65), she campaigned from door-to-door, in legislatures, and in meetings for the two causes of women's rights and the abolition of slavery. The passage of the New York State Married Woman's Property and Guardianship Law in 1860, which gave married women in New York greater property rights, was her first major legislative victory.

Formation of suffrage movement

The Civil War was fought between northern and southern states mainly over the issues of slavery and the South's decision to leave the Union to form an independent nation. With the outbreak of the Civil War, Anthony focused her attention on ending slavery. She organized the Women's National Loyal League, which gathered petitions to force passage of the Thirteenth Amendment to the Constitution to end slavery. When the war ended, she increased her efforts to gain the right to vote for women as well as for African American males. However, her former male allies from the antislavery movement were unwilling to help her fight for the first cause, saying the time was not yet right for women's suffrage.

Saddened by this defeat but refusing to give up the fight, Anthony worked solely for women's suffrage from this time to the end of her life, organizing the National Woman Suffrage Association with Stanton. The association's New York weekly, *The Revolution*, was created in 1868 to promote women's causes. After it went bankrupt in 1870, Anthony traveled across the country for six years giving lectures to raise money to pay the newspaper's ten-thousand-dollar debt.

In 1872 Susan B. Anthony and fifteen

supporters from Rochester became the first women ever to vote in a presidential election. That they were promptly arrested for their boldness did not bother Anthony. She was eager to test women's legal right to vote under the Fourteenth Amendment by taking the case to the U.S. Supreme Court. Free on bail of one thousand dollars, Anthony campaigned throughout the country with a carefully prepared legal argument: "Is It a Crime for a U.S. Citizen to Vote?" She lost her case in 1873 in Rochester following some questionable rulings by the judge and was barred from appealing the result to the Supreme Court.

Later years

Susan B. Anthony spent the rest of her life working for the federal suffrage amendment—an exhausting job that took her not only to Congress but to political conventions, labor meetings, and lecture halls in every part of the country. After she noticed that most historical literature failed to mention any women, in 1877 she and her supporters sat down to begin writing the monumental and invaluable *History of Woman Suffrage* in five volumes. She later worked with her biographer, Ida Husted Harper, on two of the three volumes of *The Life and Work of Susan B. Anthony*. The material was drawn mainly from the scrapbooks she had kept throughout most of her life, which are now in the Library of Congress, and from her diaries and letters.

Anthony remained active in the struggle for women's suffrage until the end of her life. She attended her last suffrage convention just one month before her death. She closed her last public speech with the words, "Failure is impossible." When she died in her Rochester home on March 13, 1906, only four states

had granted women the right to vote. Fourteen years later the Nineteenth Amendment, which gave women the right to vote, was added to the U.S. Constitution.

For More Information

Barry, Kathleen. *Susan B. Anthony: A Biography of a Singular Feminist*. New York: New York University Press, 1988.

Harper, Judith E. *Susan B. Anthony: A Biographical Companion*. Santa Barbara, CA: ABC-CLIO, 1998.

Sherr, Lynn. *Failure Is Impossible: Susan B. Anthony in Her Own Words*. New York: Times Books, 1995.

VIRGINIA APGAR

Born: June 7, 1909

Westfield, New Jersey

Died: August 7, 1974

New York, New York

American medical researcher and educator

Virginia Apgar forever changed the field of perinatology (the care of infants around the time of birth). She was the creator of the Apgar Newborn Scoring System, a method of evaluating the health of infants minutes after birth in order to make sure they receive proper medical care. Her lifetime of energetic work resulted in standard medical procedures for mothers and babies that have prevented thousands of infant deaths.



Virginia Apgar.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Going into medicine

Virginia Apgar was born on June 7, 1909, in Westfield, New Jersey. Her father, a businessman, and other members of the family shared a love of music, and Apgar played the violin during family concerts. Apgar's childhood home also contained a basement laboratory, where her father built a telescope and pursued scientific experiments with electricity and radio waves (electromagnetic waves in the range of radio frequencies). Perhaps due to this atmosphere of curiosity and investigation, Apgar decided she wanted a scientific career in the field of medicine. After graduating from high school, where she

played in the school orchestra and participated in athletics, she entered Mount Holyoke College with the plan of becoming a doctor. Although she had to take a number of jobs to support herself through college, she graduated with a bachelor's degree in 1929.

Apgar's financial situation did not improve when she enrolled at the College of Physicians and Surgeons at Columbia University in New York City the following September. The United States would soon be severely affected by the Great Depression (1929–39), a period of nationwide economic crisis. Determined to stay in school, Apgar borrowed money in order to complete her classes. She emerged in 1933 with a medical degree and a fourth-place rank in her graduating class, but also with a large financial debt. She began to consider how she could best support herself in the medical profession. She saw that even male surgeons were having trouble finding work in New York City. As a woman in what was then a male-dominated profession, she realized that her chances of success were slim. She felt that she was more likely to be successful in the field of anesthesiology, the study or practice of giving patients anesthesia. Administered by physicians called anesthesiologists, anesthetics are drugs or gas that numbs the pain of medical procedures or causes patients to lose consciousness before a procedure is performed.

Traditionally nurses had been responsible for administering anesthesia, but at that time doctors had also begun entering the field. Women physicians in particular were encouraged to pursue medical anesthesiology, perhaps because it was still considered a female area. Therefore in 1935 Apgar began a two-year program of study and work in

anesthesiology. During this time she studied not only at Columbia, but also at the University of Wisconsin in Madison and at Bellevue Hospital in New York.

Apgar's choice of career allowed her to realize her goal of securing a job. She was hired as director of the anesthesia division at Columbia University in 1938. Her new position, however, proved to be a challenging one. She struggled to get surgeons to recognize the anesthesiologist as a fellow doctor who was their equal, not their inferior. She eventually increased the number of physicians in the anesthesiology division, however, and in 1941 won adequate funding for the division and its employees after threatening to quit her post if the school refused her requests. A few years later Columbia University created a separate department of anesthesia for training physicians and conducting research. When the head of the new department was selected in 1949, however, Apgar was passed over in favor of a man. Instead she was named a full professor in the department, making her the first woman to reach such a level at Columbia.

The Apgar Newborn Scoring System

It was in this position as a teacher and researcher that Apgar would make her greatest contributions to medicine over the next ten years. She began to focus her work in the area of anesthesia used during childbirth. Apgar realized that the period just after a baby is born is an extremely important time for many infants. At the time babies were not usually evaluated (assessed in regard to their health) carefully at birth by doctors, who were often more concerned with the health of the mother. Because of this lack of an organ-

ized examination, many life-threatening conditions were not identified in infants. To provide a quick and efficient way to decide which babies required special care, Apgar created a five-part test that scored a child's heart rate, respiration (breathing), muscle tone, color, and reflexes. The test, known as the Apgar Newborn Scoring System, was to be performed one minute after birth. This later expanded to five and ten minutes as well. Developed in 1949, Apgar's system eventually became a worldwide standard among physicians for determining a child's chance of survival and rate of development.

Another victory for infant health was won with Apgar's research into the effects of anesthesia given to mothers during childbirth. During the time she researched these effects, Apgar found that the anesthesia called cyclopropane had a noticeable negative effect on a baby's overall condition. She immediately stopped using this anesthesia for mothers in labor, and other doctors across the country quickly did so also after Apgar published a report on her research.

Birth defect research

After a more than twenty-year career at Columbia, Apgar left her post as professor to earn a master of public health degree at Johns Hopkins University. Her new career took her to the March of Dimes organization, an organization that provides services and support to children and pregnant women. In 1959 she was hired as the head of the division on congenital birth defects (physical or developmental abnormalities that are caused before birth). In 1969 she became the head of the March of Dimes research program, and during her time in this role she changed the

foundation's focus so that it concentrated on trying to prevent birth defects. In an effort to educate the public about this topic, she also gave many lectures and cowrote a book titled *Is My Baby All Right?* in 1972. Later, as a professor at Cornell University, she became the first U.S. medical professor to specialize in birth defects.

During her lifetime Apgar made significant contributions to science not only in the laboratory, but also in the classroom. She instructed hundreds of doctors and left a lasting mark on the field of neonatal care (the care of newborns). Apgar received a number of awards recognizing her role in medicine, including the Ralph Waters Medal from the American Society of Anesthesiologists; the Gold Medal of Columbia University; and *Ladies' Home Journal* named her Woman of the Year in 1973. In addition she was the recipient of four honorary degrees, the American Academy of Pediatrics founded a prize in her name, and an academic chair was created in her honor at Mount Holyoke College.

On August 7, 1974, Apgar died in New York City at the age of sixty-five. She was remembered as an honest and encouraging teacher who inspired numerous doctors in their practice of medicine and research. The modern fields of anesthesiology and neonatal care owe much to her pioneering work.

For More Information

Apgar, Virginia, and Joan Beck. *Is My Baby All Right?: A Guide to Birth Defects*. New York: Trident Press, 1972.

Calmes, Selma. "Virginia Apgar: A Woman Physician's Career in a Developing Specialty." *Journal of the American Medical*

Women's Association (November/December 1984): 184–188.

Diamonstein, Barbaralee. *Open Secrets: Ninety-four Women in Touch with Our Time*. New York: Viking Press, 1972.

BENIGNO AQUINO

Born: November 27, 1932

Tarlac Province, Luzon, Philippines

Died: August 21, 1983

Manila, Philippines

Filipino politician

Benigno Aquino of the Philippines was a leading opponent of the rule of President Ferdinand Marcos (1917–1989), who governed the Philippines from 1966 to 1986. Aquino's opposition ended in August 1983 when, after living in the United States for three years, he returned to the Philippine capital of Manila and was assassinated (killed) at the airport. Aquino's death touched off massive demonstrations against President Marcos.

Youthful accomplishments

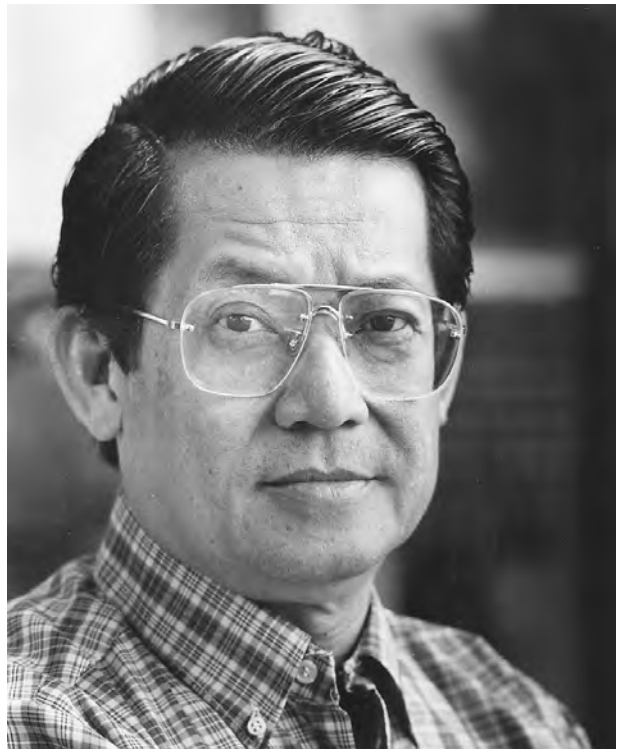
Benigno "Ninoy" Aquino was born on November 27, 1932, in Tarlac Province, on the island of Luzon, to a prominent family. He was the grandson of a general and the son of a Philippine senator who was also a wealthy landowner. His ambition and energy stood out early when, at age seventeen, he was sent by the *Manila Times* newspaper to report on the Korean War (1950–53). The war was between

the Democratic People's Republic of Korea (North Korea) and the Republic of Korea (South Korea), and was a war in which the United States and China eventually joined.

At age twenty-two Aquino became the Philippines' youngest mayor in his hometown of Concepcion. Just six years later he became governor of Tarlac province (a position similar to governing a state). In 1967 Aquino once again made history when he became the youngest senator ever elected in the Philippines. Meanwhile he married Corazon Cojuangco, with whom he eventually raised five children.

A fallen leader

Aquino became famous for his gifts as a public speaker and for his brilliant mind, as well as his great ambition. He became the leading candidate for the presidency in 1973, when President Marcos was scheduled to leave office after completing the maximum two terms as president. Aquino's ambition to be president was never realized, however, because President Marcos declared martial law (a state of emergency in which military authorities are given temporary rule). At the same time Marcos dissolved the constitution, claiming supreme power and jailing his political opponents, including Aquino. Aquino was charged with murder, subversion (intention to undermine legal authority), and illegal possession of firearms. Although he denied the charges, Aquino was found guilty and was convicted by a military tribunal, or military court, and spent over seven years in prison. In 1980 he was allowed to go to the United States for a heart bypass operation. He remained in the United States as a refugee until returning to the



Benigno Aquino.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Philippines in 1983. Upon arriving at the Manila airport he was shot and killed.

Following the assassination President Marcos was pressured to appoint a five-person, politically neutral investigative board, led by Judge Corazon Agrava. Marcos and the military stated that a lone gunman who had been hired by the Communist Party had carried out the assassination. The alleged gunman, who had been shot at the airport immediately following the shooting of Aquino, could not be cross-examined. The military carried out its own investigation, and reported that no military personnel were involved in the death.

The official commission's majority report found that Aquino was not slain by the alleged gunman, as Marcos and the military claimed, but was the victim of a "criminal conspiracy" by the military led by General Fabian C. Ver, who was the armed forces chief of staff. He was also a close friend and cousin of President Marcos. The commission's findings were astonishing, although from the beginning most Filipinos doubted the official version of the assassination. No proof was ever presented that directly showed Marcos was involved, but almost no one in the Philippines believed that military generals would order the execution of Aquino on their own. Those who suspected Marcos's involvement noted that Aquino posed a threat as someone who might unite the opposition and who had been the president's main rival for decades.

Aquino's legacy

As it turned out the democratic opposition to Marcos was strongest after its leader's death. As Marcos lost the trust of his people, the Philippine economy also fell apart. By 1985 the nation was in political and economic chaos, with Marcos under attack by the press and by the strengthened political opposition, which did well in elections.

In December 1985 the court proclaimed that General Ver and the others charged with Aquino's murder were not guilty. Marcos promptly returned Ver to his former position. Popular unrest with Marcos's rule grew steadily, however. Within weeks a political movement formed around Aquino's widow, Corazon. She was elected president of the Philippines in 1986, unseating Marcos.

For More Information

- Hill, Gerald N. and Kathleen Thompson. *Aquino Assassination: The Story and Analysis of the Assassination of Philippine Senator Benigno S. Aquino*. Sonoma, CA: Hilltop Pub. Co., 1983.
- White, Mel. *Aquino*. Dallas: Word Pub., 1989.

YASIR ARAFAT

Born: October 24, 1929

Cairo, Egypt

*Palestinian political leader, military leader,
and president*

Yasir Arafat was elected chairman of the Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO) in 1969. Though originally in favor of an all-out war to end Israel's occupation of Arab lands in the Middle East, from 1974 on he and the PLO claimed to be interested in a peaceful resolution to the Palestinian problem.

Background

Yasir Arafat was born Abdel-Rahman Abdel-Raouf Arafat al-Qudwa al-Husseini on October 24, 1929, to a Palestinian family living in Cairo, Egypt. His father was a merchant. Arafat's youth was spent in Cairo and Jerusalem. At that time, in the decades following World War I (1914–18), the British ruled Palestine. Many Jewish people from Europe sought to build a Jewish homeland there, but many Muslim and Christian Arabs who lived in Palestine opposed Jewish immi-

gration because they were afraid it would upset the cultural balance there.

While still in his teens Arafat became involved with a group seeking independence for Palestinian Arabs. When the British moved out of Palestine in 1948 and the Jewish state of Israel was created on a piece of Palestinian land, fighting broke out between the Jewish and Arab communities. The Jews were easily able to beat the Palestinians. As a result approximately one million Palestinians were forced to flee their homeland and seek refuge in neighboring Arab nations. Thus two-thirds of pre-war Palestine then became Israel. The rest came under the control of two Arab neighbors, Egypt and Jordan.

Fatah and the PLO

After the Palestinians' 1948 defeat, Arafat went to Cairo, where he studied engineering and founded a student union. By the end of the 1950s, he helped to found al-Fatah which became one of the main groups in the new Palestinian independence movement. Arafat was one of Fatah's most important founders and sat on the group's central committee. Fatah members argued that Palestinians should seek to regain their country by their own efforts, including guerrilla warfare (independent acts of war and terrorism) against Israel. This armed struggle was launched in 1965. The attacks did not damage the Jewish military, but they did increase Arafat's popularity. Meanwhile, in 1964, Palestinian freedom fighters in Arab countries had created their own confederation, which they called the Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO).

In 1967 the Israelis defeated the Arabs in the Six-Day War. Israel took over the rest of Palestine, along with sections of Egypt and



Yasir Arafat.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Syria. The Arab states were embarrassed by this defeat. Fatah members were able to assume control of the PLO, with Arafat elected chairman of the executive committee. Guerrilla camps were set up in Jordan along the border with Israel. In September 1970 Jordan's King Hussein (1935–1999) sent his army into the camps, killing many Palestinians in what became known as Black September. The PLO began to engage in terrorist acts, including the murder of eleven Israeli athletes at the Olympic Games in Munich, Germany, in 1972.

Endless peace talks

In 1973 Egypt and Syria attacked Israel in the Yom Kippur War, an attempt to regain

lands Israel occupied six years earlier. This led to efforts by the United States to seek peace in the region. In 1974 the PLO voted to be included in any settlement. It also called for the creation of a Palestinian national authority in two areas the Israelis occupied in 1967, the West Bank and the Gaza Strip. Participating in a debate on the Middle East at the United Nations General Assembly, Arafat said, "I have come bearing an olive branch and a freedom fighter's gun. Do not let the olive branch fall from my hand." The Israelis and the Americans refused to have any dealings with the PLO until it recognized a United Nations resolution regarding Israel's right to exist. Arafat and the PLO would not satisfy this condition.

Arafat and the PLO also opposed peace agreements proposed by Egyptian president Anwar Sadat (1918–1981) in 1977–79. These agreements were known as the Camp David Accords, because they had been drawn up in Maryland at the U.S. presidential retreat of that name. Egypt, Israel, and the United States signed them in 1978. They called for the establishment of Palestinian self-government in the West Bank and Gaza, but the plan never went into effect. The PLO continued its demand for an independent Palestinian state in the area. Arafat worked to make peace with Jordan and Egypt throughout the 1980s, and sought help from the United States in setting up a confederation between Jordan and a Palestinian entity that would be established in the West Bank and Gaza. King Hussein broke off talks with Arafat, however, saying that the PLO refused to compromise.

In 1993 Arafat and Israeli Prime Minister Yitzhak Rabin (1922–1995) signed the Oslo Accords. The following year the two men and

Israeli foreign minister Shimon Peres shared the Nobel Peace Prize for their efforts. The Oslo Accords placed the city of Jericho, the Israeli-occupied Gaza Strip, and eventually the remainder of the West Bank under Palestinian self-rule. In January 1996 Arafat was elected president of the Palestinian National Authority (PNA), the area's new governing body. Later that same year an agreement was reached to remove Israelis from the last occupied city in the West Bank. In return Arafat promised to amend the portion of the Palestinian National Charter calling for the destruction of Israel.

Same old situation

Israel's decision to build homes in Jerusalem started up the terrorism campaign once again in the Middle East, placing peace efforts on very shaky ground. In July 2000 peace talks between Arafat, U.S. president Bill Clinton (1946–), and Israeli Prime Minister Ehud Barak (1942–) at Camp David did not lead to any agreement. Arafat had said that he would declare a Palestinian state on September 13, 2000, with or without an agreement with Israel. He finally agreed to wait in the hopes that more talks might lead to a settlement.

Unfortunately, outbreaks of violence began between Palestinians and Israeli security forces. In October 2000 Arafat, Barak, and Clinton met and came up with a "statement of intent" to end the violence, but neither side was completely satisfied. Nearly one hundred people, almost all of them Palestinians, had been killed in the clashes between Israeli security forces and Palestinians. In November 2000 Arafat told Fatah activists to cease firing on Israelis. Steady gunfire followed news of Arafat's announcement, however, with Palestinians shooting at Israeli

positions from an apartment building. Israeli forces returned fire with machine guns.

Though Arafat was offered a peace proposal designed by Clinton and approved by Barak in January 2001, the leader found it unsatisfactory (it did not allow displaced Palestinians the right to return to their homeland), and the Arab-Israeli violence in the Middle East continued. After the attacks on the United States on September 11, 2001, the U.S. government increased the pressure on the Israelis and the Palestinians to reach a settlement. The United States hoped to involve Arab nations in the fight against terrorism. Despite Arafat's demands for it to stop, there seemed to be no end to the violence, however. In December 2001 the Israeli government severed all ties to the PNA, leaving little hope of a resolution anytime soon. And on two occasions in 2002, the Israeli army took over the majority of Arafat's compound, essentially making him a prisoner in his own home.

For More Information

Aburish, Saïd K. *Arafat: From Defender to Dictator*. London: Bloomsbury, 1998.

Wallach, Janet, and John Wallach. *Arafat: In the Eyes of the Beholder*. Rev. and updated ed. Secaucus, NJ: Carol Pub., 1997.

ARCHIMEDES

Born: c. 287 B.C.E.

Syracuse

Died: 212 B.C.E.

Syracuse

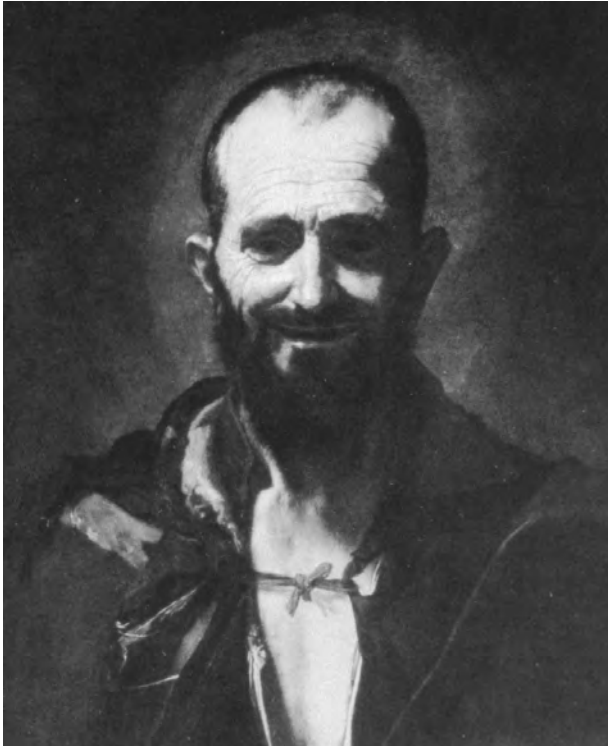
Greek mathematician

Archimedes is considered one of the greatest mathematicians of all time. He is also famed for his inventions and for the colorful—though unproven—ways he is believed to have made them.

Early life

Little is known about Archimedes's life. He probably was born in the seaport city of Syracuse, a Greek settlement on the island of Sicily in the Mediterranean Sea. He was the son of an astronomer (someone who studies outer space, such as the stars) named Phidias. He may also have been related to Hieron, King of Syracuse, and his son Gelon. Archimedes studied in the learning capital of Alexandria, Egypt, at the school that had been established by the Greek mathematician Euclid (third century B.C.E.). He later returned to live in his native city of Syracuse.

There are many stories about how Archimedes made his discoveries. A famous one tells how he uncovered an attempt to cheat King Hieron. The king ordered a golden crown and gave the crown's maker the exact amount of gold needed. The maker delivered a crown of the required weight, but Hieron suspected that some silver had been used instead of gold. He asked Archimedes to think about the matter. One day Archimedes was considering it while he was getting into a bathtub. He noticed that the amount of water overflowing the tub was proportional (related consistently) to the amount of his body that was being immersed (covered by water). This gave him an idea for solving the problem of the crown. He was so thrilled that he ran naked through the streets shouting, "Eureka!" (Greek for "I have discovered it!").



Archimedes.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

There are several ways Archimedes may have determined the amount of silver in the crown. One likely method relies on an idea that is now called Archimedes's principle. It states that a body immersed in a fluid is buoyed up (pushed up) by a force that is equal to the weight of fluid that is displaced (pushed out of place) by the body. Using this method, he would have first taken two equal weights of gold and silver and compared their weights when immersed in water. Next he would have compared the weight of the crown and an equal weight of pure silver in water in the same way. The difference between these two comparisons would indicate that the crown was not pure gold.

Archimedes also studied aspects of the lever and pulley. A lever is a kind of basic machine in which a bar is used to raise or move a weight, while a pulley uses a wheel and a rope or chain to lift loads. Such mechanical investigations would help Archimedes assist in defending Syracuse when it came under attack.

Wartime and other inventions

According to the Greek biographer Plutarch (c. C.E. 46–c. C.E. 120), Archimedes's military inventions helped defend his home city when it was attacked by Roman forces. Plutarch wrote that after Hieron died, the Roman general Marcus Claudius Marcellus (c. 268 B.C.E.–208 B.C.E.) attacked Syracuse by both land and sea. According to Plutarch Archimedes's catapults (machines that could hurl objects such as heavy stones) forced back the Roman forces on land. Later writers claimed that Archimedes also set the Roman ships on fire by focusing an arrangement of mirrors on them. Nevertheless, despite Archimedes's efforts, Syracuse eventually surrendered to the Romans. Archimedes was killed after the city was taken, although it is not known exactly how this occurred.

Perhaps while in Egypt, Archimedes invented the water screw, a machine for raising water to bring it to fields. Another invention was a miniature planetarium, a sphere whose motion imitated that of the earth, sun, moon, and the five planets that were then known to exist.

Contributions to mathematics

Euclid's book *Elements* had included practically all the results of Greek geometry up to Archimedes's time. But Archimedes

continued Euclid's work more than anyone before him. One way he did this was to extend what is known as the "method of exhaustion." This method is used to determine the areas and volumes of figures with curved lines and surfaces, such as circles, spheres, pyramids, and cones. Archimedes's investigation of the method of exhaustion helped lead to the current form of mathematics called integral calculus. Although his method is now outdated, the advances that finally outdated it did not occur until about two thousand years after Archimedes lived.

Archimedes also came closer than anyone had before him to determining the value of pi, or the number that gives the ratio (relation) of a circle's circumference (its boundary line) to its diameter (the length of a line passing through its center). In addition, in his work *The Sand Reckoner*, he created a new way to show very large numbers. Before this, numbers had been represented by letters of the alphabet, a method that had been very limited.

For More Information

Bendick, Jeanne, and Laura M. Berquist. *Archimedes and the Door to Science*. Minot, ND: Bethlehem Books, 1997.

Ibsen, D. C. *Archimedes: Greatest Scientist of the Ancient World*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1989.

HANNAH ARENDT

Born: October 14, 1906
Hanover, Germany

Died: December 4, 1975

New York, New York

German philosopher and writer

A Jewish girl forced to flee Germany during World War II (1939–45), Hannah Arendt analyzed major issues of the twentieth century and produced an original and radical political philosophy.

Early life and career

Hannah Arendt was born on October 14, 1906, in Hanover, Germany, the only child of middle-class Jewish parents of Russian descent. A bright child whose father died in 1913, she was encouraged by her mother in intellectual and academic pursuits. As a university student in Germany she studied with the most original scholars of that time: Rudolf Bultmann (1888–1976) and Martin Heidegger (1889–1976) in philosophy; the phenomenologist (one who studies human awareness) Edmund Husserl (1859–1938); and the existentialist (one who studies human existence) Karl Jaspers (1883–1969). In 1929 Arendt received her doctorate degree and married Gunther Stern.

In 1933 Arendt was arrested and briefly imprisoned for gathering evidence of Nazi anti-Semitism (evidence that proved the Nazis were a ruthless German army regime aimed at ridding Europe of its Jewish population). Shortly after the outbreak of World War II she fled to France, where she worked for Jewish refugee organizations (organizations aimed at helping Jews that were forced to flee Germany). In 1940 she and her second husband, Heinrich Blücher, were held captive in southern France. They escaped and made their way to New York in 1941.



Hannah Arendt.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Throughout the war years Arendt wrote a political column for the Jewish weekly *Aufbau*, and began publishing articles in leading Jewish journals. As her circle of friends expanded to include leading American intellectuals, her writings found a wider audience. Her first major book, *The Origins of Totalitarianism* (1951), argued that modern totalitarianism (government with total political power without competition) was a new and distinct form of government that used terror to control the mass society. “Origins” was the first major effort to analyze the historical conditions that had given rise to Germany’s Adolph Hitler (1889–1945) and Rus-

sia’s Joseph Stalin (1879–1953), and was widely studied in the 1950s.

Labor, work, and action

A second major work, *The Human Condition* (1958), followed. Here, and in a volume of essays, *Between Past and Future* (1961), Arendt clearly defined themes from her earlier work: in a rapidly developing world, humans were no longer able to find solutions in established traditions of political authority, philosophy, religion, or even common sense. Her solution was as radical (extreme) as the problem: “to think what we are doing.”

The Human Condition established Arendt’s academic reputation and led to a visiting appointment at Princeton University—the first time a woman was a full-time professor there. *On Revolution* (1963), a volume of her Princeton lectures, expressed her enthusiasm at becoming an American citizen by exploring the historical background and requirements of political freedom.

In 1961 Arendt attended the trial in Jerusalem of Adolf Eichmann (1906–1962), a Nazi who had been involved in the murder of large numbers of Jews during the Holocaust (when Nazis imprisoned or killed millions of Jews during World War II). Her reports appeared first in *The New Yorker* and then as *Eichmann in Jerusalem* (1964). They were frequently misunderstood and rejected, especially her claim that Eichmann was more of a puppet than radically evil. Her public reputation among even some former friends never recovered from this controversy.

Later career

At the University of Chicago (1963–1967) and the New School for Social Research

in New York City (1967–1975), Arendt's brilliant lectures inspired countless students in social thought, philosophy, religious studies, and history. Frequently uneasy in public, she was an energetic conversationalist in smaller gatherings. Even among friends, though, she would sometimes excuse herself and become totally absorbed in some new line of thought that had occurred to her.

During the late 1960s Arendt devoted herself to a variety of projects: essays on current political issues, such as civil unrest and war, published as *Crises of the Republic* (1972); portraits of men and women who offered some explanation on the dark times of the twentieth century, which became *Men in Dark Times* (1968); and a two-volume English edition of Karl Jaspers's *The Great Philosophers* (1962 and 1966).

In 1973 and 1974 Arendt delivered the well-received Gifford Lectures in Scotland, which were later published as *The Life of the Mind* (1979). Tragically, Arendt never completed these lectures as she died of a heart attack in New York City on December 4, 1975.

Arendt was honored throughout her later life by a series of academic prizes. Frequently attacked for controversial and sometimes odd judgments, Hannah Arendt died as she lived—an original interpreter of human nature in the face of modern political disasters.

For More Information

Kristeva, Julia. *Hannah Arendt*. New York: Columbia University Press, 2001.

McGowan, John. *Hannah Arendt: An Introduction*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1998.

JEAN-BERTRAND ARISTIDE

Born: July 15, 1953

Douyon, Haiti

Haitian president

A man of the people and loved by many in his home country, Jean-Bertrand Aristide was first elected president of Haiti by a large margin in 1990. He was removed from power in a military takeover in 1991, however. Aristide lived abroad until 1994, then a U.S. military occupation of Haiti restored him to power. In 1995 his hand-picked successor was elected president. In 2000 Aristide won his second term.

Early years and education

Jean-Bertrand Aristide was born on July 15, 1953, in Port-Salut, a small town along Haiti's southern coast. When Aristide was just three months old, his father passed away. His mother, who wanted to provide Jean and his sister with a better life, moved the family to Port-au-Prince, Haiti. Jean studied under the priests of the Society of St. Francis de Sales (or the Salesian Order) of the Roman Catholic Church. The Salesian Order, with European and American houses and members, focused on the religious instruction of Haiti's poor and orphaned children. Aristide received his early education in their schools and later attended their seminary (an institute for training priests) in Haiti. In 1979 he earned a bachelor's degree in psychology at the State University of Haiti. He was later sent to Israel, Egypt, Britain, and Canada for biblical studies. He learned to read and speak



Jean-Bertrand Aristide.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

French, Spanish, English, Hebrew, Italian, German, and Portuguese in addition to his native Creole, which is spoken by 90 percent of Haitians.

Religion and politics

Aristide became a priest in 1982. In 1988, however, he was expelled from the Salesian Order for preaching too politically and for what Aristide called his “fidelity [faithfulness] to the poor.” The Vatican (the headquarters of the Roman Catholic Church) in Rome, Italy, and his local bishop had warned him to preach less radically, or less outside the mainstream, and to stop turning

the members of his church against the Haitian state. From the time he became a priest, Aristide had condemned Haiti’s lack of democracy. At the Church of St. Jean Bosco in the poorest part of Port-au-Prince he argued that only a religious and political cleansing could save the country.

For all but the first five years of Aristide’s life, a harsh family dictatorship (a government in which power is controlled by one person or only a few people) led by François “Papa Doc” Duvalier (1907–1971) and his son, Jean-Paul “Baby Doc” Duvalier (1951–), had ruled Haiti. Human rights violations were common. Ordinary Haitians lived in fear of a violent group known as the “tonton macoutes,” who terrorized the population. The ruling family and the state were one and the same, and the Duvaliers preyed viciously on the people. Corruption was everywhere.

Aristide’s opposition to the dictatorship grew out of his religious beliefs and his feelings for the suffering Haitian people. He may have thought that the Duvalier dictatorship was crumbling. After months of popular protest, some of which was inspired by Aristide’s preachings, Baby Doc fled from Haiti to France in early 1986.

The military groups that succeeded Baby Doc in power also oppressed the poor. Aristide criticized the reigns of both General Prosper Avril and Lieutenant General Henri Namphy. In revenge the tonton macoutes attacked the Church of St. Jean Bosco in revenge, killing thirteen members of Aristide’s congregation in 1988. Two weeks later Aristide was expelled from the Salesian Order. The Roman Catholic Church ordered Aristide to Rome, but that resulted in one of the largest street demonstrations in Haitian

history. Tens of thousands of Haitians angrily blocking Aristide's departure by air.

Aristide had not lost his power, despite his expulsion from the order. After 1988 he continued to work with Port-au-Prince's desperately poor. He ran a shelter for children living on the street and opened a medical clinic.

A presidency interrupted

When the United Nations (UN), the United States, and the Organization of American States finally persuaded the military men of Haiti to hold elections, Aristide was not an expected candidate. The character of the race for the presidency changed dramatically, however, when Aristide decided to run only a few months before the election in December 1990. His pledge for justice for victims of dictatorship and violence struck a chord among the poor, nearly all of whom would be voting for the first time in the nation's first free election. He also spoke harshly against the United States, both as a supporter of the Duvaliers and as an exploiter of the world.

Aristide soundly defeated his competition for the presidency. He won 67 percent of the popular vote, but his Lavalas (Avalanche) Party, which had had little time to organize, took only a relatively small percentage of the seats in the Haitian parliament. Before military men led by General Raoul Cedras overthrew Aristide on September 30, 1991, the new president had alarmed the commercial and old-line ruling classes of Haiti. Aristide had preached violence against macoutes and had gone after people suspected of being secret Duvalierists. His constructive accomplishments in office had been few, not all that surprising given that his power in parliament was small.

The free world rallies

Aristide lived first in Venezuela and later in the United States. Soon after he was removed from power, the United States, the Organization of American States, and the UN embargoed, or stopped, Haitian exports and attempted to cease shipping oil and other imports. But those efforts were only partially successful. The Haitian people suffered from these economic policies much more than the military leaders.

All three groups then attempted to bargain a settlement between Aristide and Cedras. Several agreements fell apart when Aristide changed his mind. Others failed because the military leaders were endlessly suspicious of Aristide's real intentions.

In mid-1993 the administration of President Bill Clinton (1946–) and the UN persuaded Aristide and Cedras to meet near New York. They were to make an agreement that would return Aristide to the Haitian presidency for the final twenty-seven months of his single, nonrenewable term, and to provide an amnesty, or group pardon, for the military. But powerful people in Haiti refused to put the agreement in place. President Clinton sent more than twenty-three thousand U.S. troops to Haiti. The task of this military mission was to ensure the safe and successful return of Aristide to power. The goal was accomplished, and Aristide completed his term. On December 17, 1995, a Haitian presidential election took place, and Rene Preval was elected to succeed Aristide.

Again the president

In 2000 Aristide's Lavalas Family Party won control of Haiti's Senate. On November 26 of that same year Aristide became a can-

didate for Haiti's national election. He faced four small-time candidates. The main opposition parties said they would not participate in the election, claiming Aristide wanted to return Haiti to a dictatorship. Many of his opponents thought that the parliamentary elections had not been fair, especially when Aristide won the presidential election. In his inaugural address, or first speech as new president, Aristide pledged to investigate the Senate elections. He also pledged to improve Haiti by, among other things, building more schools and bettering its healthcare system.

After the 2000 elections many foreign countries refused to give hundreds of millions of dollars in aid to Haiti until the disputes that arose as a result of the elections were settled. In December 2001 Aristide once again became the target of a group attempting to overthrow his government. But this time the attackers were defeated and Aristide remained in power. In 2002 Aristide promised to work at improving the political situation in Haiti.

For More Information

Aristide, Jean-Bertrand. *In the Parish of the Poor*. Edited by Amy Wilentz. Maryknoll, NY: Orbis Books, 1990.

Aristide, Jean-Bertrand, and Christophe Wargny. *Aristide: An Autobiography*. Maryknoll, NY: Orbis Books, 1993.

ARISTOPHANES

Born: c. 448 B.C.E.

Athens, Greece

Died: c. 385 B.C.E.

Athens, Greece

Greek writer

Aristophanes was the greatest of the writers of the original Greek comedy, which flourished in Athens in the fifth century B.C.E., and the only one with any complete plays surviving. He wrote at least thirty-six comedies, of which eleven still exist.

His life

Aristophanes was born in Athens between 450 and 445 B.C.E. into a wealthy family. He had an excellent education and was well versed in literature, especially the poetry of Homer (eighth century B.C.E.) and other great Athenian writers. His writings also suggest a strong knowledge of the latest philosophical theories.

All of Aristophanes' boyhood was spent while Athens was one of the two leading Greek political powers and the center of artistic and intellectual activity. Between the ages of seventeen and twenty-three Aristophanes began submitting his comedies for the annual Athens competition. His easy humor and good choice of words made most laugh and at least one politician take him to court. Whatever punishment resulted was mild enough to allow Aristophanes to continue his clever remarks at the leader's expense in his forthcoming comedies.

His plays

Aristophanes' special touch with comedy is best explained with a look at the original Greek comedy. The original Greek comedy, Old Comedy, was a unique dramatic mixture of fantasy, satire (literary scorn of human foolishness), slapstick, and obvious sexuality. Aristophanes used beautiful rhyth-

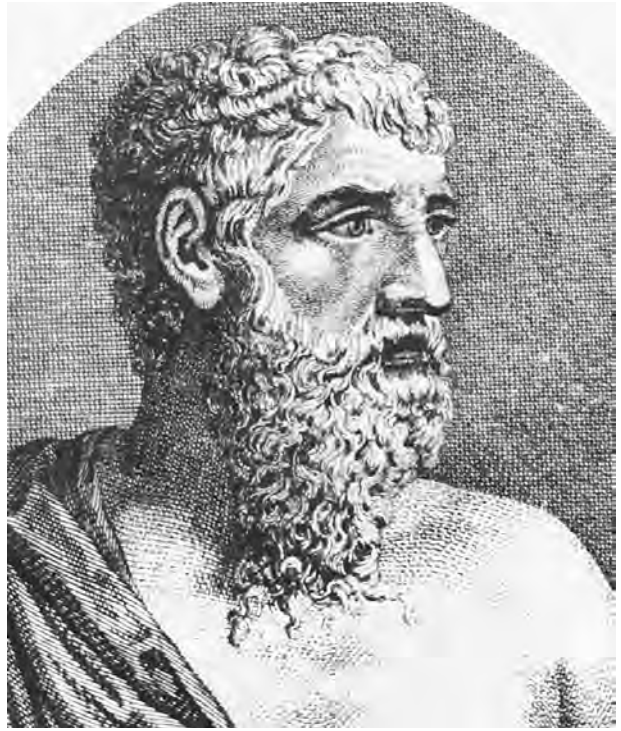
mic poetry as the format for all of his comedy. He had a way of shrinking the self-importance of people involved in politics, social life, and literature, but above all he used his unlimited amount of comic invention and high spirits.

In one such comedy, *The Knights*, Aristophanes represented the local Athenian leader as the greedy and dishonest slave of a dimwitted old gentleman (the Athenian people come to life). The slave is his master's favorite until displaced by an even more rude and nasty character, a sausage seller. At the time the featured politician was at the height of his popularity, yet Athenian tolerance even in wartime allowed Aristophanes first prize in the competition for comedies.

Downfall and death

All of Aristophanes' comedies kept pace with the political climate of Athens. In peacetime he wrote an emotionally charged and rude celebration of favorite things to do during peacetime. In times of Athenian plots and prewar conflict, he wrote his own conspiracies, such as *Lysistrata*, a depiction of the women of Greece banding together to stop the war by refusing to sleep with their husbands. With such a plot the play was inevitably rude but *Lysistrata* herself is one of his most attractive characters, and his sympathy for the difficulty of women in wartime makes the play a moving comment on the foolishness of war.

The Peloponnesian war (431–404 B.C.E.) between Athens and the Spartans began in 431 B.C.E. The leaders of Athens decided to wage war from the sea only. Meanwhile the Spartans burned the crops of Athens. Then the plague (outbreak of disease) hit Athens in



Aristophanes.

430 B.C.E., killing many. As Athens faced her worst enemy—starvation—Aristophanes' comedy continued to be crisp and cutting. *Frogs* received the first time honor of the request for a second performance.

The long war finally ended, when the Athenians were starved into surrender in the spring of 404 B.C.E. This sad defeat broke something in the spirit of the Athenians, and though they soon regained considerable importance both in politics and in intellectual matters, they were never quite the same again. In the sphere of comedy the no-holds-barred rudeness of the Old Comedy disappeared and was replaced by a more cautious, refined, and less spirited New Comedy.

The political climate was uneasy with the Spartans lording over Athens. Aristophanes had to hold his tongue in his plays, no longer poking fun at leaders and politics. He died nine years after *Lysistrata*, which still exists, and three years after his play *Plutus*. Dates of death range from 385–380 B.C.E. but it is certain that Aristophanes died in his beloved city, Athens.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Aristophanes*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

David, E. *Aristophanes and Athenian Society of the Early Fourth Century B.C.* Leiden: E.J. Brill, 1984.

Russo, Carlo Ferdinando. *Aristophanes, an Author for the Stage*. New York: Routledge, 1994.

ARISTOTLE

Born: c. 384 B.C.E.

Chalcidice, Greece

Died: c. 322 B.C.E.

Chalcis, Greece

Greek philosopher and scientist

The Greek philosopher and scientist Aristotle created the scientific method, the process used for scientific investigation. His influence served as the basis for much of the science and philosophy of Hellenistic (Ancient Greek) and Roman times, and even affected science and philosophy thousands of years later.

Early life

Aristotle was born in the small Greek town of Stagiros (later Stagira) in the northern Greek district of Chalcidice. His father, Nicomachus, was a physician who had important social connections. Aristotle's interest in science was surely inspired by his father's work, although Aristotle did not display a particularly keen interest in medicine. The events of his early life are not clear. It is possible that his father served at the Macedonian court (the political leaders of Macedonia, an ancient empire) as physician to Amyntas II (died c. 370 B.C.E.) and that Aristotle spent part of his youth there.

At the age of seventeen Aristotle went to Athens, Greece, and joined Plato's (c. 428–c. 348 B.C.E.) circle at the Academy, a school for philosophers. There he remained for twenty years. Although his respect and admiration for Plato was always great, differences developed which ultimately caused a break in their relationship. Upon Plato's death Aristotle left for Assos in Mysia (in Asia Minor, today known as Turkey), where he and Xenocrates (c. 396–c. 314 B.C.E.) joined a small circle of Platonists (followers of Plato) who had already settled there under Hermias, the ruler of Atarneus. Aristotle married the niece of Hermias, a woman named Pythias, who was killed by the Persians some time thereafter.

In 342 B.C.E. Aristotle made his way to the court of Philip of Macedon (c. 382–c. 336 B.C.E.). There Aristotle became tutor to Alexander (c. 356–c. 323 B.C.E.), who would become master of the whole Persian Empire as Alexander the Great. Little information remains regarding the specific contents of Alexander's education at the hands of Aristotle, but it would be interesting to know what

political advice Aristotle gave to the young Alexander. The only indication of such advice is found in the fragment of a letter in which the philosopher tells Alexander that he ought to be the leader of the Greeks but the master of the barbarians (foreigners).

Peripatetic School

Aristotle returned to Athens around 335 B.C.E. Under the protection of Antipater (c. 397–c. 319 B.C.E.), Alexander's representative in Athens, Aristotle established a philosophical school of his own, the Lyceum, located near a shrine of Apollo Lyceus. Also known as the Peripatetic School, the school took its name from its colonnaded walk (a walk with a series of columns on either side). The lectures were divided into morning and afternoon sessions. The more difficult ones were given in the morning, and the easier and more popular ones were given in the afternoon. Aristotle himself led the school until the death of Alexander in 323 B.C.E., when he left Athens, fearing for his safety because of his close association with the Macedonians. He went to Chalcis, Greece, where he died the following year of intestinal problems. His will, preserved in the writings of Diogenes Laertius (third century C.E.), provided for his daughter, Pythias, and his son, Nicomachus, as well as for his slaves.

His writings

Aristotle produced a large number of writings, but few have survived. His earliest writings, consisting for the most part of dialogues (writings in the form of conversation), were produced under the influence of Plato and the Academy. Most of these are lost, although the titles are known from the writ-



Aristotle.

ings of Diogenes Laertius and from others. Among these important works are *Rhetoric*, *Eudemus (On the Soul)*, *On Philosophy*, *Alexander*, *Sophistes*, *On Justice*, *Wealth*, *On Prayer*, and *On Education*. They were a wide variety of works written for the public, and they dealt with popular philosophical themes. The dialogues of Plato were undoubtedly the inspiration for some of them, although the fall out between Plato and Aristotle reveals itself to a certain extent in these works, too.

A second group of writings is made up of collections of scientific and historical material, among the most important of which is the surviving fragment of the *Constitution of the Athenians*. This formed part of the large

collection of *Constitutions*, which Aristotle and his students collected and studied for the purpose of analyzing various political theories. The discovery of the *Constitution of the Athenians* in Egypt in 1890 shed new light on the nature of the Athenian democracy (a government of elected officials) of Aristotle's time. It also revealed the difference in quality between the historical and scientific works of Aristotle and those that followed.

Theophrastus (c. 372–c. 287 B.C.E.) had kept Aristotle's manuscripts after the master's death in 322 B.C.E. When Theophrastus died Aristotle's works were hidden away and not brought to light again until the beginning of the first century B.C.E. They were then taken to Rome and edited by Andronicus (first century B.C.E.). The texts that survive today come from Andronicus's revisions and probably do not represent works that Aristotle himself prepared for publication. From the time of his death until the rediscovery of these writings, Aristotle was best known for the works that today are known as the lost writings.

Philosophical and scientific systems

The writings that did survive, however, are sufficient to show the quality of Aristotle's achievement. The *Topics and the Analytics* deal with logic (the study of reasoning) and dialectic (a method of argument) and reveal Aristotle's contributions to the development of debate. His view of nature is set forth in the *Physics and the Metaphysics*, which mark the most serious difference between Aristotelianism and Platonism: that all investigation must begin with what the senses record and must move only from that point to thought. As a result of this process of intel-

lectualizing, God, who for Plato represents beauty and goodness, is for Aristotle the highest form of being and is completely lacking in materiality. Aristotle's God neither created nor controls the universe, although the universe is affected by this God. Man is the only creature capable of thought even remotely resembling that of God, so man's highest goal is to reason abstractly, like God, and he is more truly human to the extent that he achieves that goal.

Aristotle's work was often misunderstood in later times. The scientific and philosophical systems set forth in his writings are not conclusions that must be taken as the final answer, but rather experimental positions arrived at through careful observation and analysis. During the slow intellectual climate of the Roman Empire, which ruled over much of Europe for hundreds of years after Aristotle died, and the totally unscientific Christian Middle Ages (476–1453), Aristotle's views on nature and science were taken as a complete system. As a result, his influence was enormous but not for any reason that would have pleased him.

Aristotle shares with his master, Plato, the role of stimulating human thought. Plato had a more direct influence on the development of that great spiritual movement in late antiquity (years before the Middle Ages), and Aristotle had a greater effect on science. Antiquity produced no greater minds than those of Plato and Aristotle. The intellectual history of the West would be extremely different without them.

For More Information

Barnes, Jonathan. *Aristotle*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1982.

Dunn, John, and Ian Harris. *Aristotle*. Lyme, NH: Edward Elgar Pub., 1997.

Ross, W. D. *Aristotle*. 6th ed. New York: Routledge, 1995.

LOUIS ARMSTRONG

Born: August 4, 1901

New Orleans, Louisiana

Died: July 6, 1971

New York, New York

African American jazz musician and singer

Louis Armstrong was a famous jazz trumpet player and singer. He is regarded as one of the most important and influential musicians in the history of jazz music.

Early life

Louis Daniel Armstrong was born in New Orleans on August 4, 1901. He was one of two children born to Willie Armstrong, a turpentine worker, and Mary Ann Armstrong, whose grandparents had been slaves. As a youngster, he sang on the streets with friends. His parents separated when he was five. He lived with his sister, mother, and grandmother in a rundown area of New Orleans known as “the Battlefield” because of the gambling, drunkenness, fighting, and shooting that frequently occurred there.

In 1913 Armstrong was arrested for firing a gun into the air on New Year’s Eve. He was sent to the Waif’s Home (a reform

school), where he took up the cornet (a trumpet-like instrument) and eventually played in a band. After his release he worked odd jobs and began performing with local groups. He was also befriended by Joe “King” Oliver, leader of the first great African American band to make records, who gave him trumpet lessons. Armstrong joined Oliver in Chicago, Illinois, in 1922, remaining there until 1924, when he went to New York City to play with Fletcher Henderson’s band.

Jazz pioneer

When Armstrong returned to Chicago in the fall of 1925, he organized a band and began to record one of the greatest series in the history of jazz. These Hot Five and Hot Seven recordings show his skill and experimentation with the trumpet. In 1928 he started recording with drummer Zutty Singleton and pianist Earl Hines, the latter a musician whose skill matched Armstrong’s. Many of the resulting records are masterpieces of detailed construction and adventurous rhythms. During these years Armstrong was working with big bands in Chicago clubs and theaters. His vocals, featured on most records after 1925, are an extension of his trumpet playing in their rhythmic liveliness and are delivered in a unique throaty style. He was also the inventor of scat singing (the random use of nonsense syllables), which originated after he dropped his sheet music while recording a song and could not remember the lyrics.

By 1929 Armstrong was in New York City leading a nightclub band. Appearing in the theatrical revue *Hot Chocolates*, he sang “Fats” Waller’s (1904–1943) “Ain’t Misbehavin’,” Armstrong’s first popular song hit. From this period Armstrong performed mainly popular



Louis Armstrong.

Reproduced by permission of Schomburg Center for Research in Black Culture.

song material, which presented a new challenge. Some notable performances resulted. His trumpet playing reached a peak around 1933. His style then became simpler, replacing the experimentation of his earlier years with a more mature approach that used every note to its greatest advantage. He rerecorded some of his earlier songs with great results.

Later years

Armstrong continued to front big bands, often of lesser quality, until 1947, when the big-band era ended. He returned to leading a small group that, though it included first-class musicians at first, became a mere back-

ground for his talents over the years. During the 1930s Armstrong had achieved international fame, first touring Europe as a soloist and singer in 1932. After World War II (1939–45) and his 1948 trip to France, he became a constant world traveller. He journeyed through Europe, Africa, Japan, Australia, and South America. He also appeared in numerous films, the best of which was a documentary titled *Satchmo the Great* (1957).

The public had come to think of Louis Armstrong as a vaudeville entertainer (a light, often comic performer) in his later years—a fact reflected in much of his recorded output. But there were still occasions when he produced well-crafted, brilliant music. He died in New York City on July 6, 1971.

For More Information

Bergreen, Laurence. *Louis Armstrong: An Extravagant Life*. New York: Broadway Books, 1997.

Giddins, Gary. *Satchmo*. New York: Doubleday, 1988.

Jones, Max, and John Chilton. *Louis: The Louis Armstrong Story 1900–1971*. London: Studio Vista, 1971.

NEIL ARMSTRONG

Born: August 5, 1930

Wapakoneta, Ohio

American astronaut

The American astronaut Neil Armstrong was the first person to walk on the moon. In one of the most famous remarks of the twentieth century, he called his first movements on the moon “one small step for man, one giant leap for mankind.”

Childhood interests

Neil Alden Armstrong was born on August 5, 1930, near Wapakoneta, Ohio. He was the eldest of three children of Stephen and Viola Engel Armstrong. Airplanes drew his interest from the age of six, when he took his first airplane ride. He began taking flying lessons at age fourteen, and on his sixteenth birthday he was issued a pilot's license. A serious pilot even at that age, Armstrong built a small wind tunnel (a tunnel through which air is forced at controlled speeds to study the effects of its flow) in the basement of his home. He also performed experiments using the model planes he had made. Through such activities he was preparing for what would be a distinguished career in aeronautics, or the design, construction, and navigation of aircrafts.

Armstrong was also interested in outer space at a young age. His fascination was fueled by a neighbor who owned a powerful telescope. Armstrong was thrilled with the views of the stars, the Moon, and the planets he saw through this device.

Years of training

Armstrong entered Indiana's Purdue University in 1947 with a U.S. Navy scholarship. After two years of study he was called to active duty with the navy and won his jet

pilot wings at Pensacola Naval Air Station in Florida. At twenty he was the youngest pilot in his squadron. He flew seventy-eight combat missions during the Korean War, a civil war from 1950 to 1953 between North and South Korea in which China fought on the Communist North Korean side and the United States fought to assist South Korea.

After the war Armstrong returned to Purdue and completed a degree in aeronautical engineering in 1955. He immediately accepted a job with the Lewis Flight Propulsion Laboratory of the National Advisory Committee for Aeronautics (NACA) in Cleveland, Ohio. A year later he married Janet Shearon.

Aeronautical career

Shortly afterward Armstrong transferred to the NACA High Speed Flight Station at Edwards Air Force Base in California. Here he became a skilled test pilot and flew the early models of such jet aircraft as the F-100, F-101, F-102, F-104, F-5D, and B-47. He was also a pilot of the X-1B rocket plane, a later version of the first plane that broke through the sound barrier (the dragging effect of air on a plane as it approaches the speed of sound).

Armstrong was selected as one of the first three NACA pilots to fly the X-15 rocket-engine plane. He made seven flights in this plane, which was a kind of early model for future spacecraft. Once he set a record altitude of 207,500 feet and a speed of 3,989 miles per hour. Armstrong also received an invitation from the National Aeronautics and Space Administration's (NASA) American space-flight program, but he showed little enthusiasm for becoming an



Neil Armstrong.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

astronaut. His real love was flying planes. Largely because of his experience with the X-15, he was selected as a pilot of the *Dynasoar*, an experimental craft that could leave the atmosphere, orbit earth, reenter the atmosphere, and land like a conventional airplane.

Becoming an astronaut

In 1962 Armstrong decided to become an astronaut and applied for NASA selection and training. In September 1962 he became America's first nonmilitary astronaut. His first flight assignment as an astronaut was as a backup, or alternate, pilot for Gordon Cooper of the *Gemini 5* mission. (Space programs cre-

ated around a certain spacecraft type are given names such as *Gemini* or *Apollo*, while individual missions within these programs are numbered, such as *Gemini 5*.)

Armstrong continued his specialized training on the *Gemini* spacecraft and was selected as the command pilot for the *Gemini 8* mission. With copilot David Scott he was launched from Cape Kennedy (now Cape Canaveral), Florida, on March 16, 1966. The *Gemini 8* achieved orbit and docked as planned with another orbiting vehicle, but shortly afterward the *Gemini 8* went out of control. Armstrong detached his craft, corrected the problem, and brought *Gemini 8* down in the Pacific Ocean only 1.1 nautical miles from the planned landing point.

Armstrong's cool and professional conduct made a strong impression on his superiors as the training for the *Apollo* program was developing. During a routine training flight on the lunar (moon) landing research vehicle (a training device that permits astronauts to maneuver a craft in a flight environment similar to that in landing on the Moon), Armstrong's craft went out of control. He ejected (forced out) himself and landed by parachute only yards away from the training vehicle, which had crashed in flames. With his usual controlled emotions, he walked away and calmly made his report.

Apollo 11 mission

In January 1969 Armstrong was selected as commander for *Apollo 11*, the first lunar landing mission. On July 16 at 9:32 A.M. Eastern Daylight Time (EDT), Armstrong, with astronauts Michael Collins and Edwin Aldrin, lifted off from the Kennedy Space Center in Florida.

Apollo 11 passed into the gravitational influence (pull of gravity) of the moon on July 18 and circled the moon twice. Armstrong and Aldrin entered a lunar module (a small spacecraft) named the *Eagle*, which then disconnected from the larger command and service module named *Columbia*. As they descended toward the lunar surface, their computer became overloaded, but under instructions from the mission control center in Houston, Texas, Armstrong managed to land the module. At 4:17:40 P.M. EDT on July 20, a major portion of the Earth's population was listening to Armstrong's radio transmission reporting that the *Eagle* had landed. At 10:56 P.M. he set foot on the moon, saying, "That's one small step for man, one giant leap for mankind."

Armstrong and Aldrin spent nearly two and a half hours walking on the moon. The astronauts set up various scientific instruments on the surface and left behind a plaque (metal plate) reading, "Here men from the planet Earth first set foot upon the Moon. We came in peace for all mankind." Armstrong and Aldrin then returned to the *Eagle* and launched themselves to meet up again with Collins, who had been orbiting in the *Columbia* spacecraft. On July 24 *Columbia* returned to earth.

Career after NASA

Apollo 11 was Armstrong's final space mission. He joined NASA's Office of Advanced Research and Technology, where one of his main activities was to promote research into controlling high-performance aircraft by computer. In 1971 he began working at the University of Cincinnati in Ohio, where he spent seven years as a professor of aerospace engineering.

Armstrong did continue some government work. In 1984 he was named to the

National Commission on Space, which completed a report outlining an ambitious future for U.S. space programs. He was also a leader of a government commission to investigate the disastrous explosion of the *Challenger* space shuttle that occurred in January 1986.

Armstrong has worked for several corporations since his astronaut days, including a position as chairman of AIL Systems, Inc., an aerospace electronics manufacturer. In 1999 he was honored at a ceremony at the National Air and Space Museum at the Smithsonian Institution in Washington, D.C., where he received the Langley Medal in honor of the thirtieth anniversary of the *Apollo 11* mission. Armstrong also makes occasional public appearances at the Neil Armstrong Air & Space Museum in his hometown of Wapakoneta, Ohio.

For More Information

Aldrin, Buzz, and Malcolm McConnell. *Men From Earth*. New York: Bantam, 1989.

Connolly, Sean. *Neil Armstrong: An Unauthorized Biography*. Des Plaines, IL: Heinemann Library, 1999.

Kramer, Barbara. *Neil Armstrong: The First Man on the Moon*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1997.

BENEDICT ARNOLD

Born: January 14, 1741

Norwich, Connecticut

Died: June 14, 1801

London, England

American military general

Although he fought with skill and courage in many campaigns during the American Revolution (1775–83), General Benedict Arnold is best known as the man who betrayed his country.

Youth and family

Benedict Arnold was born on January 14, 1741, in Norwich, Connecticut. He was one of only two of his mother's eleven children to survive into adulthood. His mother had been a prosperous widow before marrying Arnold's father, a merchant. However, Arnold's father did not manage the family's money well, and they were financially ruined when Arnold was thirteen. He was forced to leave school and go to work learning to be an apothecary, a position similar to that of a modern-day pharmacist.

As a young man, Arnold was a risk-taker who looked for outlets for his energetic and impulsive (taking action before thinking things through) nature. He volunteered for the French and Indian War (1754–63), a war fought between France and England in America for control of the colonial lands, but at eighteen he deserted in order to be with his mother, who was dying. In the 1760s he traded with Canada and the West Indies as a merchant and a sea captain. He took his hot-headed nature to sea with him, fighting at least two duels while on trading voyages. He was a financial success as a trader, but he was also accused of smuggling. In 1767 he married Margaret Mansfield, daughter of a government official in New Haven, Connecticut.

Joining the Revolution

News of the battles of Lexington and Concord (April 17, 1775) in Massachusetts,

the first battles of the Revolution, reached Arnold in April 1775. Upon hearing of these events he set out as the head of a company of Connecticut militia for Cambridge, Massachusetts, where George Washington (1732–1799) was gathering an army to fight the British forces. Although he marched to Massachusetts without military orders to do so, Arnold was soon given an official mission. His first military engagement was the attack the next month on Fort Ticonderoga in northeastern New York, where the British had a supply of artillery, a type of large-caliber weaponry that includes cannons. The attack operation was successful, but Arnold got little of the credit for this success. Credit went mostly to Ethan Allen (1738–1789) and the troops Allen commanded, known as the Green Mountain Boys.

Arnold's second assignment was with an expedition against Canada. Leaving Cambridge on September 19, 1775, he led his troops north through Maine into Canada. By land and water and in snow and storms, he reached Quebec, Canada, in early November. There he was joined by another troop, led by General Richard Montgomery, which had come by way of Lake Champlain and Montreal, Canada. Together the two forces assaulted Quebec on December 31, but the attack failed; Montgomery lost his life and Arnold was left with a severe leg wound. Arnold next went to Lake Champlain to prevent the British from using it as a means of traveling from Canada to New York. He lost two naval battles on the lake in October 1776, but he had effectively delayed the British in their southward movement. In the same month Congress made Arnold a brigadier general (an army officer above a colonel).

Honor and accusations

The winter of 1776–77 was an unhappy one for Arnold. His hot temper, impulsiveness, and impatience had earned him many enemies who now made all sorts of charges against him. He was accused of misconduct (poor behavior) on the march through Maine, of incompetence (failure to successfully carry out a mission) on Lake Champlain, and more. Worse yet, in February 1777 Congress promoted five other brigadier generals, all Arnold's juniors, to the rank of major general (an army officer who is above a brigadier general). Only Washington's pleas kept Arnold from resigning from the army. Fortunately, the coming of spring gave him the chance for a successful operation. While visiting his home in New Haven, Arnold heard of a British attack on American supply stations in Danbury, Connecticut. He rounded up the local militia and raced to stop the enemy. Although he got there too late to prevent the destruction of the supplies, he did force the British to flee. A grateful Congress promoted him to major general on May 2, but he was still below the other five in rank. Meanwhile, he faced a formal charge of stealing goods and property from Montreal merchants during the Canadian campaign. He was cleared of the charge, but his anger at the accusation moved him to resign from the army in July 1777.

Once again Washington pleaded with him—this time to rejoin the army. Washington needed him for service in northern New York to block a bold British plan. The British hoped to split New England from the other colonies by sending General John Burgoyne from Fort Ticonderoga down the Hudson River to New York City. Burgoyne not only



*Benedict Arnold.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

failed in his mission but also lost his whole army, which he surrendered at Saratoga, New York, in October 1777. Arnold played a major role in the two battles that led to the British defeat. Burgoyne himself said of Arnold that "it was his doing." Congress rewarded Arnold by restoring his position in rank above the other major generals.

Arnold's next assignment was command of the military post at Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, which the British had left in June 1778. In April 1779 he married Margaret Shippen, the daughter of a wealthy Philadelphian. (His first wife had died in 1775.) Moving in wealthy social circles, Arnold lived expen-

sively, spent beyond his means, and soon found himself heavily in debt. At the same time he was being charged with a number of offenses connected to using his military office for private gain. He demanded a trial in Congress, which began in May 1779. The verdict, or decision, handed down in December found him not guilty of most charges but ordered Washington to reprimand him. The general did this, but mildly, in April 1780.

End as a traitor

By this time Arnold had already started on the road to treason. Personally hurt by Congress's treatment and badly in need of money, he had begun to pass information on American troop movements and strength of units to the British in exchange for money as early as May or June of 1779. Early in the summer of 1780, he thought up a plan to turn over the important post at West Point, New York, to the English for the sum of ten thousand pounds. He persuaded Washington to place him in command there in order to carry out this scheme. However, Arnold's plan fell through when his contact, the British spy Major John André (1750–1780), was captured on September 21, 1780, with documents that showed Arnold was a traitor. André was hanged and Arnold fled to the British lines.

Arnold spent the rest of the war in a British uniform fighting his own countrymen. He went to London in 1781 and died there twenty years later on June 14, 1801, forgotten in England and despised in America. To this day, calling someone a "Benedict Arnold" in America is a way of saying that person has betrayed his or her side.

For More Information

- Brandt, Clare. *The Man in the Mirror: A Life of Benedict Arnold*. New York: Random House, 1994.
- Fritz, Jean. *Traitor: The Case of Benedict Arnold*. New York: B. P. Putnam's Sons, 1981.
- Martin, James Kirby. *Benedict Arnold, Revolutionary Warrior: An American Warrior Reconsidered*. New York: New York University Press, 1997.

MARY KAY ASH

Born: c. 1916

Hot Wells, Texas

Died: November 22, 2001

Dallas, Texas

American businesswoman

Mary Kay Ash used her training in direct sales to create her own multimillion-dollar cosmetics firm and provide women with the opportunity for advancement.

Early years

Mary Kay Wagner Ash believed that "a lady never reveals her age," and therefore the exact year of her birth is unknown. It is estimated to be 1916. She was born to Edward and Lula Wagner in Hot Wells, Texas, the youngest of four children. Her mother, who had studied to be a nurse, worked long hours managing a restaurant. When Mary Kay was two or three, her father was ill with tuberculo-

sis (an infection of the lungs). As a result, it was her responsibility to clean, cook, and care for her father while her mother was at work. She excelled in school, but her family could not afford to send her to college. She married at age seventeen and eventually had three children.

Working mother

During a time when few married women with families worked outside the home, Ash became an employee of Stanley Home Products in Houston, Texas. She conducted demonstration “parties” at which she sold company products, mostly to homemakers like herself. Energetic and a quick learner, Ash rose at Stanley to unit manager, a post she held from 1938 to 1952. She also spent a year studying at the University of Houston to follow her dream of becoming a doctor, but she gave it up and returned to sales work.

After Ash’s marriage ended in 1952, she took a sales job at World Gift Company in Dallas, Texas. She began to develop her theory of marketing and sales, which included offering sales incentives (something that spurs someone to action) to the customer as well as the sales force. Ash was intelligent and hardworking, but, unlike men, women were given hardly any opportunities for advancement at the time. Tired of being passed over for promotions in favor of the men she had trained, she quit. She planned to write a book about her experiences in the work force.

Starts her own company

Instead, in 1963, Ash founded her own company (with an investment of five thousand dollars) to sell a skin cream to which she had purchased the manufacturing rights. She named her company “Beauty by Mary



Mary Kay Ash.

Reproduced by permission of Halcyon Associates, Inc.

Kay.” Ash was determined to offer career opportunities in her company to any woman who had the energy and creativity required to sell Mary Kay cosmetics. Before long she had a force of female sales representatives who were eager to prove themselves. Ash’s second husband had died in 1963, a month before her company was established. Her oldest son helped guide her through the start-up phase of her company. Three years later she married Melville J. Ash, who worked in the wholesale gift business.

Believing it was important to reward hard workers, Ash gave away vacations, jewelry, and pink Cadillacs to her top perform-

ers. (By 1994 she had given away seven thousand cars valued at \$100 million.) With goals such as these to shoot for, her salespeople made the company a huge success. Within two years sales neared \$1 million. The company's growth continued, and new products were added. Every year since 1992 Mary Kay Cosmetics made *Fortune* magazine's list of five hundred largest companies. In addition the company was listed in a book entitled *The 100 Best Companies to Work for in America*. It now employs over 475 thousand people in over twenty-five countries.

Later years

Ash published her life story, *Mary Kay*, in 1981. It sold over a million copies, and she went on to write *Mary Kay on People Management* (1984) and *Mary Kay—You Can Have It All* (1995). In 1987 Ash became chairman *emeritus* of her company (meaning that she would hold the title of chairman even in her retirement). She helped raise money for cancer research after her third husband died of the disease. In 1993 she was honored with the dedication of the Mary Kay Ash Center for Cancer Immunotherapy Research at St. Paul Medical Center in Dallas. In 1996 the Mary Kay Ash Charitable Foundation was started to research cancers that mainly affect women.

Mary Kay Ash's health declined after she suffered a stroke in 1996. She died at her Dallas home on November 22, 2001. She was a tough businessperson with a thorough knowledge of marketing and sales. Through her belief in women's abilities and her willingness to give them a chance, she made the dream of a successful career a reality for hundreds of thousands of women worldwide.

For More Information

- Ash, Mary Kay. *Mary Kay: You Can Have It All*. Rocklin, CA: Prima, 1995.
- Steffoff, Rebecca. *Mary Kay Ash: Mary Kay, a Beautiful Business*. Ada, OK: Garrett Educational Corp., 1992.

ARTHUR ASHE

Born: July 10, 1943

Richmond, Virginia

Died: February 6, 1993

New York, New York

African American tennis player and activist

Arthur Ashe was the first African American player to compete in the international sport of tennis at the highest level of the game. After an early retirement from sports due to heart surgery, Ashe used his sportsman profile and legendary poise to promote human rights, education, and public health.

Early years

Arthur Robert Ashe Jr. was born on July 10, 1943, in Richmond, Virginia. He spent most of his early years with his mother, Mattie Cordell Cunningham Ashe, who taught him to read at age five. She died the next year of heart disease. Ashe's father, Arthur Ashe Sr., worked as a caretaker for a park named Brook Field in suburban North Richmond. Young Arthur lived on the grounds with four tennis courts, a pool, and three baseball diamonds. This was the key to his development

as a future star athlete. His early nickname was “Skinny” or “Bones,” but he grew up to be six feet one inch with a lean build.

Ashe began playing tennis at age six. He received instruction from R. Walter “Whirlwind” Johnson, an African American doctor from Lynchburg, Virginia, who opened his home in the summers to tennis prospects, including the great Althea Gibson (1927–). Johnson used military-style methods to teach tennis skills and to stress his special code of sportsmanship, which included respect, sharp appearance, and “no cheating at any time.”

An amateur tennis player

Ashe attended Richmond City Public Schools and received a diploma from Maggie L. Walker High School in 1961. After success as a junior player in the American Tennis Association (ATA), he was the first African American junior to receive a U.S. Lawn Tennis Association (USLTA) national ranking. When he won the National Interscholastics in 1960, it was the first USLTA national title won by an African American in the South. The University of California at Los Angeles (UCLA) awarded him a full scholarship.

In 1963 Ashe became the first African American player to win the U.S. Men’s Hard-court championships, and the first to be named to a U.S. Junior Davis Cup (an international men’s tournament) team. He became the National College Athletic Association (NCAA) singles and doubles champion, leading UCLA to the NCAA title in 1965. After graduating with a bachelor’s degree in business administration, Ashe served in the army for two years, during which he was assigned time for tennis competitions. In 1968 Ashe created a tennis program for U.S. inner cities.



Arthur Ashe.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

This was the beginning of today’s U.S. Tennis Association/National Junior Tennis League program, with five hundred chapters running programs for 150 thousand kids.

As professional tennis player

Two events changed Ashe’s life in the late 1960s. The first was the protest by African American athletes at the 1968 Olympic Games in Mexico City, Mexico, in opposition to separation based on race, or apartheid, in the Republic of South Africa. The second event was in tennis. He was the USLTA amateur champion and won the first U.S. Open Tennis Championship at Forest Hills. The USLTA

ranked him co-number one (with Rod Laver). He became a top money-winner after turning professional in 1969. In 1972 he helped found the Association of Tennis Professionals (ATP).

In 1973 Ashe became the first African American to reach the South African Open finals held in Johannesburg, South Africa, and he was the doubles winner with Tom Okker of the Netherlands. Black South Africans gave Ashe the name “Sipho,” which means “a gift from God” in Zulu. The year 1975 was Ashe’s best and most consistent season. He was the first and only African American player to win the men’s singles title at Wimbledon, beating the defending champion, Jimmy Connors. Ashe was ranked number one in the world and was named ATP Player of the Year.

In 1977 Ashe married Jeanne Moutousamy, a professional photographer and graphic artist. The couple had a daughter, Camera Elizabeth. Ashe almost defeated John McEnroe (1959–) in the Masters final in New York in January 1979, and was a semi-finalist at Wimbledon that summer before a heart attack soon after the tournament ended his career. After heart surgery Ashe announced his retirement from competitive tennis.

As international role model

After retiring from competition, Ashe served as captain of the U.S. Davis Cup team and led it to consecutive victories (1981–82). Ashe received media attention for his Davis Cup campaigns, his protests against apartheid in South Africa, and his call for higher educational standards for all athletes. But he spent most of his time dealing quietly with the “real world” through public speaking, teaching, writing, business, and public service. Ashe helped develop: the ABC Cities program,

combining tennis and academics; the Safe Passage Foundation for poor children, which includes tennis training; the Athletes Career Connection; the Black Tennis & Sports Foundation, to assist minority athletes; and 15-Love, a substance abuse program.

After heart surgery in 1983 Ashe became national campaign chairman for the American Heart Association and the only nonmedical member of the National Heart, Lung, and Blood Advisory Council. In the late 1970s he became an adviser to Aetna Life & Casualty Company. He was made a board member in 1982. He represented minority concerns and, later, the causes of the sick.

Ashe was elected to the UCLA Sports Hall of Fame, the Virginia Sports Hall of Fame, and the Eastern Tennis Association Hall of Fame. He became the first person named to the U.S. Professional Tennis Association Hall of Fame. He spent six years and \$300,000 of his own money to write *A Hard Road to Glory: A History of the African-American Athlete*, a three-volume work published in 1988. Ashe won an Emmy Award for writing a television version of his work. He also worked as a broadcaster at tennis matches, sports consultant at tennis clinics, and columnist for the *Washington Post*.

Later years

After brain surgery in 1988 came the discovery that Ashe had been infected with the human immunodeficiency virus (HIV), the virus that causes acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS, a fatal disease that attacks the body’s immune system). Doctors traced the infection back to a blood transfusion he received after his second heart operation in 1983. After going public with the news in 1992, Ashe established the Arthur

Ashe Foundation for the Defeat of AIDS to provide treatment to AIDS patients and to promote AIDS research throughout the world. He rallied professional tennis to help raise funds and to increase public awareness of the disease. He addressed the General Assembly of the United Nations (UN) on World AIDS Day, December 1, 1992.

Arthur Ashe died on February 6, 1993, in New York City. As Ashe's body lay in state at the governor's mansion in Virginia, mourners paid their respects at a memorial service held in New York City and at the funeral at the Ashe Athletic Center in Richmond. In 1996 Ashe's hometown of Richmond announced plans to erect a statue in his honor. The following year a new stadium at the National Tennis Center in Flushing Meadows, New York, was named after him.

For More Information

Ashe, Arthur, and Arnold Rampersad. *Days of Grace: A Memoir*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1993.

Lazo, Caroline. *Arthur Ashe*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 1999.

Martin, Marvin. *Arthur Ashe: Of Tennis & the Human Spirit*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1999.

ISAAC ASIMOV

Born: January 2, 1920

Petrovichi, Russia, Soviet Union

Died: April 6, 1992

New York, New York

Russian-born American writer

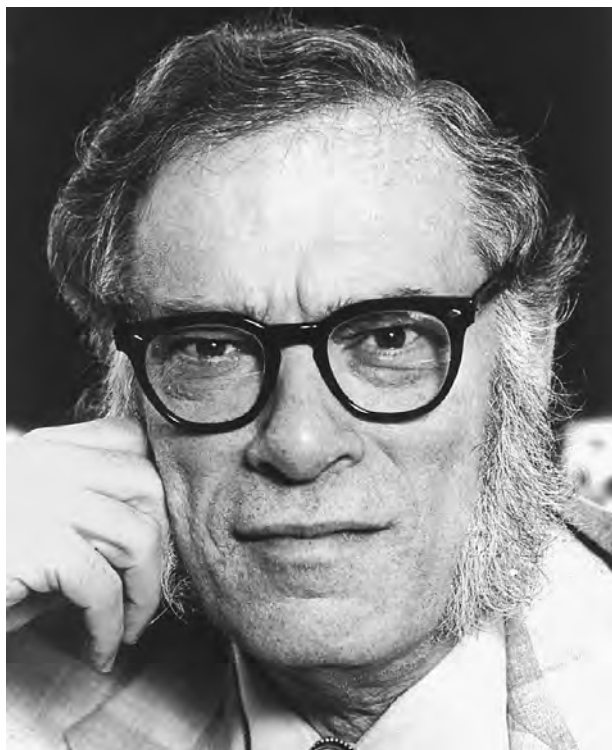
The author of nearly five hundred books, Isaac Asimov was one of the finest writers of science fiction in the twentieth century. Many, however, believe Asimov's greatest talent was for, as he called it, "translating" science, making it understandable and interesting for the average reader.

Early life

Isaac Asimov was born on January 2, 1920, in Petrovichi, Russia, then part of the Smolensk district in the Soviet Union. He was the first of three children of Juda and Anna Rachel Asimov. Although his father made a good living, changing political conditions led the family to leave for the United States in 1923. The Asimovs settled in Brooklyn, New York, where they owned and operated a candy store. Asimov was an excellent student who skipped several grades. In 1934 he published his first story in a high school newspaper. A year later he entered Seth Low Junior College, an undergraduate college of Columbia University. In 1936 he transferred to the main campus and changed his major from biology to chemistry. During the next two years Asimov's interest in history grew, and he read numerous books on the subject. He also read science fiction magazines and wrote stories. Asimov graduated from Columbia University with a bachelor's degree in chemistry in 1939.

Early influences

Asimov's interest in science fiction had begun as a boy when he noticed several of the early science fiction magazines for sale on the newsstand in his family's candy store. His father refused to let him read them. But



Isaac Asimov.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

when a new magazine appeared on the scene called *Science Wonder Stories*, Asimov convinced his father that it was a serious journal of science, and as a result he was allowed to read it. Asimov quickly became a devoted fan of science fiction. He wrote letters to the editors, commenting on stories that had appeared in the magazine, and tried writing stories of his own.

In 1937, at the age of seventeen, he began a story entitled “Cosmic Corkscrew.” By the time Asimov finished the story in June 1938, *Astounding Stories* had become *Astounding Science Fiction*. Its editor was John W. Campbell, who would go on to influence

the work of some of the most famous authors of modern science fiction, including Arthur C. Clarke (1917–), Poul Anderson (1926–2001), L. Sprague de Camp (1907–2000), and Theodore Sturgeon (1918–1985). Since Campbell was also one of the best-known science fiction writers of the time, Asimov was shocked by his father’s suggestion that he submit his story to the editor in person. But mailing the story would have cost twelve cents while subway fare, round trip, was only ten cents. To save the two cents, he agreed to make the trip to the magazine’s office, expecting to leave the story with a secretary.

Campbell, however, had invited many young writers to discuss their work with him. When Asimov arrived he was shown into the editor’s office. Campbell talked with him for over an hour and agreed to read the story. Two days later Asimov received it back in the mail. It had been rejected, but Campbell offered suggestions for improvement and encouraged the young man to keep trying. This began a pattern that was to continue for several years, with Campbell guiding Asimov through his beginnings as a science fiction writer. His first professionally published story, “Marooned off Vesta,” appeared in *Amazing Stories* in 1939.

Growing fame

During the 1940s Asimov earned a master’s degree and a doctorate, served during World War II (1939–45) as a chemist at the Naval Air Experimental Station in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, and became an instructor at Boston University School of Medicine. He also came to be considered one of the three greatest writers of science fiction in the 1940s (along with Robert

Heinlein and A. E. Van Vogt), and his popularity continued afterward. Stories such as “Nightfall” and “The Bicentennial Man,” and novels such as *The Gods Themselves* and *Foundation’s Edge*, received numerous honors and are recognized as among the best science fiction ever written.

Asimov’s books about robots—most notably *I, Robot*, *The Caves of Steel*, and *The Naked Sun*—won respect for science fiction by using elements of style found in other types of books, such as mystery and detective stories. He introduced the “Three Laws of Robotics”: “1. A robot may not injure a human being or, through inaction, allow a human being to come to harm. 2. A robot must obey the orders given it by human beings except where such orders would conflict with the First Law. 3. A robot must protect its own existence as long as such protection does not conflict with the First or Second Laws.” Asimov said that he used these ideas as the basis for “over two dozen short stories and three novels . . . about robots.” The three laws became so popular, and seemed so sensible, that many people believed real robots would eventually be designed according to Asimov’s basic principles.

Also notable among Asimov’s science fiction works is the “Foundation” series. This group of short stories, published in magazines in the 1940s and then collected and reprinted in the early 1950s, was written as a “future history,” a story being told in a society of the future which relates events of that society’s history. *Foundation*, *Foundation and Empire*, and *Second Foundation* were enormously popular among science fiction fans. In 1966 the World Science Fiction Convention honored them with a special Hugo

Award as the best all-time science fiction series. Even many years after the original publication, Asimov’s future history series remained popular—in the 1980s, forty years after he began the series, Asimov added a new volume, *Foundation’s Edge*.

Branching out

Asimov’s first works of fiction written mainly for a younger audience were his “Lucky Starr” novels. In 1951, at the suggestion of his editor, he began working on a series of science-fiction stories that could easily be adapted for television. “Television was here; that was clear,” he said in his autobiography (the story of his life), *In Memory Yet Green*. “Why not take advantage of it, then?” *David Starr: Space Ranger* was the first of six volumes of stories involving David ‘Lucky’ Starr, agent of the outer space law enforcement agency called the Council of Science. The stories, however, were never made for television.

Asimov’s first nonfiction book was a medical text entitled *Biochemistry and Human Metabolism*. Begun in 1950 it was written with two of his coworkers at the Boston University School of Medicine. His many books on science, explaining everything from how nuclear weapons work to the theory of numbers, take complicated information and turn it into readable, interesting writing. Asimov also loved his work as a teacher and discovered that he was an entertaining public speaker. Before his death in 1992, Asimov commented, “I’m on fire to explain, and happiest when it’s something reasonably intricate [complicated] which I can make clear step by step. It’s the easiest way I can clarify [explain] things in my own mind.”

For More Information

Asimov, Isaac. *I. Asimov: A Memoir*. New York: Doubleday, 1994.

Asimov, Isaac. *It's Been a Good Life*. Edited by Janet Jeppson Asimov. Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books, 2002.

Boerst, William J. *Isaac Asimov: Writer of the Future*. Greensboro, NC: Morgan Reynolds, 1999.

FRED ASTAIRE

Born: May 10, 1899

Omaha, Nebraska

Died: June 22, 1987

Los Angeles, California

American actor, dancer, and choreographer

Fred Astaire was a famous dancer and choreographer (one who creates and arranges dance performances) who worked in vaudeville (traveling variety entertainment acts), musical comedy, television, radio, and Hollywood musicals.

Early years

Fred Astaire was born Frederick Austerlitz on May 10, 1899, in Omaha, Nebraska. His parents, Frederic E. and Ann Gelius Austerlitz, enrolled him in dancing school at age four to join his older sister Adele. The two Austerlitz children proved extraordinarily talented and the family moved to New York, where the children continued their

training in singing, dancing, and acting. In 1905 Fred and Adele began performing in vaudeville. By 1917 they had changed their last name to Astaire and began performing in musicals. They appeared in successful productions on Broadway and in London, England, including the musical comedies *Lady, Be Good* in 1924, *Funny Face* in 1927, and a revue titled *The Band Wagon* in 1931.

When Adele retired from show business in 1932 to marry, Astaire sought to reshape his career. He took the featured role in the musical *Gay Divorce*. This show proved Astaire could succeed without his sister and helped establish the pattern of most of his film musicals: it was a light comedy, built around a love story for Astaire and his partner that was amusing, but basically serious—and featuring some great dancing, including routines Astaire was beginning to develop himself.

Astaire goes to Hollywood

In 1933 Astaire married Phyllis Livingston Potter and shortly afterward went to Hollywood. He had a featured part in *Flying Down to Rio* (1933). The film was a hit, and it was obvious that Astaire was a major factor in the success. *The Gay Divorcee* (1934), a film version of *Gay Divorce*, was the first of Astaire's major pictures with Ginger Rogers (1911–1995) and an even bigger hit. With seven more films in the 1930s (the most popular of which was *Top Hat* in 1935), Astaire and Rogers became one of the legendary partnerships in the history of dance, featuring high spirits, bubbling comedy, and romantic chemistry. By the end of the 1930s the profits from the Astaire-Rogers films were beginning to decline. Over the next few years

Astaire made nine films at four different studios and continued to create splendid dances, appearing with a variety of partners.

Other ventures

In 1946 Astaire retired from motion pictures to create a chain of successful dancing schools. In 1947 he returned to movies to make the highly profitable *Easter Parade* at Metro Goldwyn Mayer (MGM). Nine more musicals followed. Astaire's success was marred in 1954, however, when his beloved wife died from cancer.

By the mid-1950s the era of the Hollywood musical was coming to an end, and Astaire moved into other fields. On television he produced four award-winning musical specials with Barrie Chase as his partner. He also tried his hand at straight acting roles with considerable success in eight films between 1959 and 1982. Over the years he played a number of characters on television in dramatic specials and series. In 1980, as he entered his eighties, Astaire married Robyn Smith, a successful jockey in her mid-thirties. He died seven years later.

Ginger Rogers, Astaire's longtime dance partner, passed away in 1995. Rogers is often quoted as having said, "I did everything Fred did, only backwards and in high heels." Their partnership lasted sixteen years, from 1933 to 1949.

Looking back

Fred Astaire appeared in 212 musical numbers, of which 133 contain fully developed dance routines, many of which are of great artistic value. And, because he worked mainly in film, the vast majority of Astaire's



Fred Astaire.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

works are preserved in their original form. Astaire's dances are a blend of tap and ballroom dancing with bits from other dance forms thrown in. What holds everything together is Astaire's class, wit, and apparent ease of execution.

Astaire spent weeks working out his choreography. He also created an approach to filming dance that was often copied in Hollywood musicals: both camerawork and editing are used to support the flow of the dancing, not to overshadow it. Although his shyness and self-doubt could make him difficult to work with, Astaire was an efficient planner and worker. His courtesy, profes-

sionalism, and struggle for improvement earned him the admiration of his coworkers.

In January 1997, with Robyn Astaire's blessing, Astaire's image returned to television through special effects editing—Dirt Devil inserted its vacuum cleaners into dance scenes from Astaire's films for three of its commercials. The press criticized the commercials. The general feeling was that replacing Ginger Rogers with a vacuum cleaner was in poor taste.

For More Information

Adler, Bill. *Fred Astaire: A Wonderful Life*. New York: Carroll & Graf, 1987.

Gallafent, Edward. *Astaire & Rogers*. New York: Columbia University Press, 2002.

Mueller, John. *Astaire Dancing: The Musical Films*. New York: Knopf, 1985.

JOHN JACOB ASTOR

Born: July 17, 1763

Waldorf, Germany

Died: March 29, 1848

New York, New York

*German-born American businessman
and industrialist*

An American fur trader and businessman, John Astor used his profits from fur trading to invest in a wide range of business enterprises. By the time of his death he was the richest man in America.

Childhood poverty

John Jacob Astor was born in Waldorf, near Heidelberg, Germany, on July 17, 1763. He was named after his father Jacob Astor, a poor but happy butcher. His mother, Maria Magdalena Vorfelder, learned to be very careful with the little money the family had (a quality she passed on to her son). She died when Astor was three years old. Despite the family's poverty, Astor received a good education from the local schoolmaster. When he reached the age of fourteen he went to work as an assistant to his father. He did this for two years before striking out on his own in 1779. Astor joined one of his brothers in London, England, where he learned to speak English and worked to earn money to pay his way to America.

In 1783, after the peace treaty ending the American Revolution (1775–83; when the American colonies fought for independence from Great Britain) had been signed, Astor sailed for the United States to join another brother who had gone there earlier. The ship carrying Astor to America became stuck in ice before completing its voyage and remained there for two months. During this time, Astor met a German man on the ship who told him how much money there was to be made in fur trading. Astor finally landed at Baltimore, Maryland, in March 1784.

Success in fur trading

Astor soon joined his brother in New York and began to demonstrate his talent for business. He worked for several furriers and began buying furs on his own. In 1784 and 1785 Astor made trips to western New York to buy furs for his employers, purchasing some for himself at the same time. He acquired

enough furs to make a trip to England profitable. In London he established connections with a well-known trading house, signed an agreement to act as the New York agent for a musical instrument firm, and used his profits from the furs to buy merchandise to use for trade with the Native Americans. Not yet twenty-two, he had already proved himself a shrewd and intelligent businessman.

Astor's early success convinced him that a fortune could be made in the fur trade. He began to spend more time managing and expanding his business. Between 1790 and 1808 his agents collected furs from as far west as Mackinaw, Michigan. The Jay Treaty of 1794, which led to the British leaving forts and trading posts in the Old Northwest, worked to Astor's advantage, and he expanded his operations in the Great Lakes region. Through an arrangement with the British Northwest Company, he purchased furs directly from Montreal, Canada. By about 1809 he was recognized as one of the leading fur traders in the United States.

Fur business grows

Following the Louisiana Purchase in 1803, which added land that contained part or all of thirteen more states to the union, Astor turned his attention to the fur trade in the Pacific Northwest. He obtained a charter (a grant of rights or privileges from the ruler of a state or country) for the American Fur Company and planned to establish a main fort at the mouth of the Columbia River, with sub-forts in the interior. His fleet of ships would collect the furs and sell them in China, where goods would be purchased for sale in Europe; in Europe merchandise could be bought to sell in the United States when the ships returned.



John Jacob Astor.

Courtesy of the National Portrait Gallery.

Although the town of Astoria was established on the Columbia, the company's operations were unsuccessful. After the War of 1812 Astor renewed his efforts to gain control of the fur trade in North America. Through influence in Congress he helped win passage of laws that banned foreigners from engaging in the trade (except as employees) and that eliminated the government's trading post serving independent traders. By the late 1820s he had sole control of the fur trade in the Great Lakes region and most of the Mississippi Valley. This put him into direct competition with the Rocky Mountain Fur Company and British fur interests in the Pacific

Northwest. However, by 1830 Astor's interest in the company had begun to decline.

Other importing

Through Astor's dealings in the fur trade he became involved in general merchandising. During the 1790s he had begun to import and sell a large variety of European goods. During this early period he showed little interest in establishing trade relations with China. Between 1800 and 1812, however, his trade with China expanded and became a large part of his business dealings in Europe. The War of 1812 temporarily disrupted his plans, but it also gave him an opportunity to purchase ships at a bargain price, since declining trade had made other merchants anxious to dispose of their fleets.

After the war Astor had a large fleet of sailing vessels and again became active in the China and Pacific trade. For a time he was involved in smuggling Turkish opium (an addictive drug) into China but found the profits were not worth the risk and abandoned this venture. Between 1815 and 1820 he enjoyed a commanding position in trade with China. Thereafter his interest declined, and he turned his attention to other business activities. One explanation for Astor's success as a merchant was that he had the money to buy quality merchandise at a low cost and a fleet of ships that could transport the goods to markets more quickly than his rivals.

Still dealing in later years

Astor retired from the American Fur Company and withdrew from both domestic and foreign trade in 1834. He turned to other investments, including real estate, money-lending, insurance companies, banking, rail-

roads and canals, public securities, and the hotel business. The most important was real estate. He had invested some capital in land early in his career. After 1800 he concentrated on real estate in New York City. He profited not only from the sale of lands and rents but from the increasing value of lands within the city. During the last decade of his life his income from rents alone exceeded \$1,250,000. His total wealth was estimated at \$20–30 million (the greatest source being his land holdings on Manhattan Island) at his death on March 29, 1848, at the age of 84.

For More Information

Haeger, John D. *John Jacob Astor: Business and Finance in the Early Republic*. Detroit: Wayne State University Press, 1991.

Madsen, Axel. *John Jacob Astor: America's First Multimillionaire*. New York: John Wiley, 2001.

MARGARET ATWOOD

Born: November 18, 1939

Ottawa, Ontario, Canada

Canadian author, novelist, poet and cultural activist

One of Canada's best-known writers, Margaret Atwood is an internationally famous novelist, poet, and critic. She is also committed to positive change in our way of life.

Early freedom

Margaret Eleanor Atwood was born in Ottawa, Ontario, Canada, in 1939. She moved with her family to Sault Ste. Marie, Canada, in 1945 and to Toronto, Canada, in 1946. Until she was eleven she spent half of each year in the northern Ontario wilderness, where her father worked as an entomologist (insect scientist). Her writing was one of the many things she enjoyed in her “bush” time, away from school. At age six she was writing morality plays, poems, comic books, and had started a novel. School and preadolescence brought her a taste for home economics. Her writing resurfaced in high school, though, where she returned to writing poetry. Her favorite writer as a teen was Edgar Allan Poe (1809–1849), who was famous for his dark mystery stories.

Atwood was sixteen years old when she made her commitment to pursue writing as a lifetime career. She studied at Victoria College, University of Toronto, where she received a bachelor's degree in 1961. Then she went on to complete her master's degree at Radcliffe College in Cambridge, Massachusetts, in 1962. Atwood also studied at Harvard University in Cambridge, Massachusetts, from 1962 to 1963 and from 1965 to 1967.

Honors and awards

Atwood has received more than fifty-five awards, including two Governor General's Awards, the first in 1966 for *The Circle Game*, her first major book of poems; the second for her 1985 novel, *The Handmaid's Tale*, which was made into a movie. In 1981 she worked on a television drama, *Snowbird*,



Margaret Atwood.

Reproduced by permission of Mr. Jerry Bauer.

and had her children's book *Anna's Pet* (1980) adapted for stage (1986). Her recognition is often reflective of the wide range of her work. She is also a major public figure and cultural commentator.

Most of Atwood's fiction has been translated into several foreign languages. A new Atwood novel becomes a Canadian, American, and international bestseller immediately. There is a Margaret Atwood Society, a *Margaret Atwood Newsletter*, and an ever-increasing number of scholars studying and teaching her work in women's studies courses and in North American literature courses worldwide.

Style and statement

Atwood has alternated prose (writing that differs from poetry due to lack of rhyme and closeness to everyday speech) and poetry throughout her career, often publishing a book of each in the same or consecutive years. While in a general sense the poems represent “private” myth and “personal” expression and the novels represent a more public and “social” expression, there is, as these dates suggest, continual interweaving and cross-connection between her prose and her poetry. The short story collections, *Dancing Girls* (1977), *Bluebeard’s Egg* (1983), and especially the short stories in the remarkable collection *Murder in the Dark* (1983) bridge the gap between her poetry and her prose.

Atwood writes in an exact, vivid, and witty, style in both prose and poetry. Her writing is often unsparing in its gaze at pain and unfairness: “you fit into me / like a hook into an eye / a fish hook / an open eye” (from *Power Politics*) “Nature” in her poems is a haunted, clearly Canadian wilderness in which, dangerously, man is the major predator of and terror to the “animals of that country,” including himself.

Atwood’s novels are sarcastic jabs at society as well as identity quests. Her typical heroine is a modern urban woman, often a writer or artist, always with some social-professional commitment. The heroine fights for self and survival in a society where men are the all-too-friendly enemy, but where women are often participants in their own entrapment.

Atwood is also a talented photographer and watercolorist. Her paintings are clearly descriptive of her prose and poetry and she did, on occasion, design her own book cov-

ers. Her collages and cover for *The Journals of Susanna Moodie* bring together the visual and the written word.

Popular and accessible

Atwood is known as a very accessible writer. One of her projects, the official Margaret Atwood Website, is edited by Atwood herself and updated frequently. The Internet resource is an extensive, comprehensive guide to the literary life of the author. It also reveals a peek into Atwood’s personality with the links to her favorite charities, such as the Artists Against Racism site, or humorous blurbs she posts when the whim hits. As well, the site provides dates of lectures and appearances, updates of current writing projects, and reviews she has written. The address is: <http://www.owtoad.com>

Margaret Atwood’s contribution to Canadian literature was most recently recognized in 2000, when she received Britain’s highest literary award, the \$47,000 Booker Prize. Atwood donated the prize money to environmental and literary causes. Her generosity is not at all a surprising development to her many fans.

For More Information

Cooke, Nathalie. *Margaret Atwood: A Biography*. Toronto: ECW Press, 1998.

Howells, Coral Ann. *Margaret Atwood*. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1996.

VanSpanckeren, Kathryn, and Jan Garden Castro. *Margaret Atwood: Vision and Forms*. Carbondale: Southern Illinois University Press, 1988.

W. H. AUDEN

Born: February 21, 1907

York, England

Died: September 28, 1973

Vienna, Austria

English-born American poet

The English-born American poet W. H. Auden was one of the greatest poets of the twentieth century. His works center on moral issues and show strong political, social, and psychological (involving the study of the mind) orientations.

Early life

Wystan Hugh Auden was born on February 21, 1907, in York, England. He was the last of three sons born to George and Constance Auden. His father was the medical officer for the city of Birmingham, England, and a psychologist (a person who studies the mind). His mother was a devoted Anglican (a member of the Church of England). The combination of religious and scientific themes are buried throughout Auden's work. The industrial area where he grew up shows up often in his adult poetry. Like many young boys in his city, he was interested in machines, mining, and metals and wanted to be a mining engineer. With both grandfathers being Anglican ministers, Auden once commented that if he had not become a poet he might have ended up as an Anglican bishop.

Another influential childhood experience was his time served as a choirboy. He states in his autobiographical sketch, *A Certain World*,

“it was there that I acquired a sensitivity to language which I could not have acquired in any other way.” He was educated at St. Edmund's preparatory school and at Oxford University. At Oxford fellow undergraduates Cecil Day Lewis, Louis MacNeice, and Stephen Spender, with Auden, formed the group called the Oxford Group or the “Auden Generation.”

At school Auden was interested in science, but at Oxford he studied English. He disliked the Romantic (nineteenth-century emotional style of writing) poets Percy Bysshe Shelley (1792–1822) and John Keats (1795–1821), whom he was inclined to refer to as “Kelly and Sheets.” This break with the English post-Romantic tradition was important for his contemporaries. It is perhaps still more important that Auden was the first poet in English to use the imagery (language that creates a specific image) and sometimes the terminology (terms that are specific to a field) of clinical psychoanalysis (analysis and treatment of emotional disorders).

Early publications and travels

In 1928, when Auden was twenty-one, a small volume of his poems was privately printed by a school friend. *Poems* was published a year later by Faber and Faber (of which T. S. Eliot [1888–1965] was a director). The *Orators* (1932) was a volume consisting of odes (poems focused on extreme feelings), parodies (take offs) of school speeches, and sermons that criticized England. It set the mood for a generation of public school boys who were in revolt against the empire of Great Britain and fox hunting.

After completing school Auden traveled with friends in Germany, Iceland, and China. He then worked with them to write *Letters*



W. H. Auden.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

from *Iceland* (1937) and *Journey To A War* (1939). In 1939 Auden took up residence in the United States, supporting himself by teaching at various universities. In 1946 he became a U.S. citizen, by which time his literary career had become a series of well-recognized successes. He received the Pulitzer Prize and the Bollingen Award and enjoyed his standing as one of the most distinguished poets of his generation. From 1956 to 1961 he was professor of poetry at Oxford University.

Poetic themes and techniques

Auden's early poetry, influenced by his interest in the Anglo-Saxon language as well

as in psychoanalysis, was sometimes riddle-like and clinical. It also contained private references that most readers did not understand. At the same time it had a mystery that would disappear in his later poetry.

In the 1930s W. H. Auden became famous when literary journalists described him as the leader of the so-called "Oxford Group," a circle of young English poets influenced by literary Modernism, in particular by the artistic principles adopted by T. S. Eliot. Rejecting the traditional poetic forms favored by their Victorian predecessors, the Modernist poets favored concrete imagery and free verse. In his work Auden applied concepts and science to traditional verse forms and metrical (having a measured rhythm) patterns while including the industrial countryside of his youth. Coming to the United States was seen by some as the start of a new phase of his work. World War II (1939–45; a war in which France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan) had soured him to politics and warmed him to morality and spirituality.

Among Auden's highly regarded skills was the ability to think in terms of both symbols and reality at the same time, so that intellectual ideas were transformed. He rooted ideas through creatures of his imagining for whom the reader could often feel affection while appreciating the stern and cold outline of the ideas themselves. He nearly always used language that was interesting in texture as well as brilliant verbally. He employed a great variety of intricate and extremely difficult technical forms. Throughout his career he often wrote pure lyrics of grave beauty, such as "Lay Your Sleeping

Head, My Love” and “Look Stranger.” His literary contributions include librettos (opera texts) and motion picture documentaries. He worked with Chester Kallmann on the librettos, the most important of which was T. S. Eliot’s *The Rakes Progress* (1951).

Auden was well educated and intelligent, a genius of form and technique. In his poetry he realized a lifelong search for a philosophical and religious position from which to analyze and comprehend the individual life in relation to society and to the human condition in general. He was able to express his dislike for a difficult government, his suspicion of science without human feeling, and his belief in a Christian God.

Later works

In his final years Auden wrote the volumes *City without Walls, and Many Other Poems* (1969), *Epistle to a Godson, and Other Poems* (1972), and *Thank You, Fog: Last Poems* (1974), which was published posthumously (after his death). All three works are noted for their lexical (word and vocabulary relationship) range and humanitarian (compassionate) content. Auden’s tendency to alter and discard poems has prompted publication of several anthologies (collected works) in the decades since his death on September 28, 1973, in Vienna, Austria. The multivolume *Complete Works of W. H. Auden* was published in 1989. Auden is now considered one of the greatest poets of the English language.

For More Information

Davenport-Hines, R. P. T. *Auden*. London: Heinemann, 1995.

Hecht, Anthony. *The Hidden Law: The Poetry of W. H. Auden*. Cambridge, MA.: Harvard University Press, 1993.

Smith, Stan. *W. H. Auden*. New York: Blackwell, 1997.

JOHN JAMES AUDUBON

Born: April 26, 1785

Les Cayes, Saint Dominigue (French colony)

Died: January 27, 1851

New York, New York

French-born American artist and ornithologist

American artist and ornithologist (one who studies birds) John James Audubon was a leading natural history artist who made drawings of birds directly from nature. He is mainly remembered for his *Birds of America* series.

Early life and move to France

John James Audubon was born in Saint Dominigue (now Haiti) on April 26, 1785. He was the son of Jean Audubon, a French adventurer, and Mademoiselle Rabin, about whom little is known except that she was a Creole and died soon after her son’s birth. Audubon was an illegitimate child, meaning that his father was not married to his mother. Audubon’s father had made his fortune in San Domingo as a merchant, a planter, and a dealer of slaves. In 1789 Audubon went with his father and a half sister to France, where they joined his father’s wife. Their father and his wife adopted the children in 1794.



John James Audubon.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Audubon's education was arranged by his father. He was sent to a nearby school and was tutored in mathematics, geography, drawing, music, and fencing. According to Audubon's own account, he had no interest in school, preferring instead to fish, hunt, and explore the outdoors. He was left with his stepmother most of the time while his father served as a naval officer. Audubon became a spoiled, stubborn youth who managed to resist all efforts to both educate him and keep him under control. When residence at a naval base under his father's direct supervision failed to have any effect, he was sent briefly to Paris to study art, but he disliked that also.

Business career in America

Audubon's father decided to send his son to America, where he owned a farm near Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. At first the boy lived with friends of his father. They tried to teach him English and other things, but after a time he demanded to live on his father's farm. There Audubon continued living the life of a country gentleman—fishing, shooting, and developing his skill at drawing birds, the only occupation to which he was ever willing to give effort. When Audubon began his work in the early nineteenth century, there was no such profession as a “naturalist” in America. The men who engaged in natural history investigations came from all walks of life and paid for their work—collecting, writing, and publication—from their own resources. Audubon developed a system of inserting wires into the bodies of freshly killed birds in order to move them into natural poses for his sketches.

In 1805 Audubon returned briefly to France after a long battle with his father's business agent in America. While in France he formed a business partnership with Ferdinand Rozier, the son of one of his father's associates. Together the two returned to America and tried to operate a lead mine on the farm. Then in August 1807 the partners decided to move west. There followed a series of business failures in various cities in Kentucky, caused largely by Audubon's preference for roaming the woods rather than keeping the store. During this period he married Lucy Bakewell. After the failures with Rozier, Audubon, in association with his brother-in-law, Thomas Bakewell, and others, attempted to start several more businesses, the last being a lumber mill in Hen-

derson, Kentucky. In 1819 this venture failed and Audubon was left with only the clothes on his back, his gun, and his drawings. This disaster ended his business career.

“Birds of America”

For a time Audubon made crayon portraits (drawings of individual people) for \$5 per portrait. Then he moved to Cincinnati, Ohio, where he became a taxidermist (one who stuffs and mounts the skins of animals) in the Western Museum that had been recently founded by Dr. Daniel Drake. In 1820 the possibility of publishing his bird drawings occurred to him. He set out down the Ohio and Mississippi rivers, exploring the country for new birds and paying his expenses by painting portraits. For a while he supported himself in New Orleans by tutoring and painting. His wife also worked as a tutor and later opened a school for girls. She became the family’s main financial support while Audubon focused on publishing his drawings.

In 1824 Audubon went to Philadelphia to seek a publisher. He met with opposition, however, from the friends of Alexander Wilson (1766–1813), the other major American ornithologist with whom Audubon had begun a bitter rivalry in 1810. He finally decided to raise the money for a trip to Europe, where he felt he would find greater interest in his drawings. He arrived in Liverpool, England, in 1826, then moved on to Edinburgh, Scotland, and to London, England, signing up subscribers for his volumes in each city. Audubon finally reached an agreement with a London publisher, and in 1827 volumes of *Birds of America* began to appear. It took eleven years in all for the publication and reprintings of all the volumes.

The success of Audubon’s bird drawings brought him immediate fame, and by 1831 he was considered the leading naturalist of his country, despite the fact that he possessed no formal scientific training. There was an intense popular interest in the marvels of nature during this era. Anyone who could capture the natural beauty of wild specimens was certain to take his place among the front ranks of those recognized as “men of science.” Audubon had succeeded in giving the world the first great collection of American birds, drawn in their natural habitats as close to nature as possible.

Later years

With his great work finally finished in 1838, and the *Ornithological Biography* (a text-only book about birds) in publication, Audubon returned to America to prepare a “miniature” edition. He also began drawings for a new book (in collaboration with John Bachman), *Viviparous Quadrupeds of North America*, for which his sons contributed many of the drawings.

In 1841 Audubon bought an estate on the Hudson River and settled down to advise and encourage young scientists. It was during this period that the romantic picture of Audubon as the “American Woodsman,” the great lover of birds, began to emerge. After several years of illness, Audubon suffered a slight stroke in January 1851, followed by partial paralysis and great pain. Audubon died on January 27, 1851.

For More Information

Blaugrund, Annette. *John James Audubon*. New York: Abrams, 1999.

Burroughs, John. *John James Audubon*. Woodstock, NY: Overlook Press, 1987.

Ford, Alice. *John James Audubon: A Biography*. Rev. ed. New York: Abbeville Press, 1988.

AUGUSTUS

Born: September 23, 63 B.C.E.

Rome (now in Italy)

Died: August 19, C.E. 14

Nola (now in Italy)

Roman emperor

Augustus was the first emperor of Rome. He established the principate, the form of government under which Rome ruled its empire for three hundred years. He had an extraordinary talent for statesmanship (the ability to take an active role in the shaping of a government) and sought to preserve the best traditions of republican Rome, the period in ancient Rome's history when governing power was in the hands of the Senate rather than the emperor.

Caesar's legacy

Augustus was born Gaius Octavius on September 23, 63 B.C.E., in Rome. His father had held several political offices and had earned a fine reputation, but he died when Octavius was four. The people who most influenced young Octavius were his mother, Atia, who was the niece of the Roman leader Julius Caesar (c. 100–44 B.C.E.), and Julius Caesar himself. Unlike Caesar, one of Rome's military heroes, Augustus was sickly as a

young boy. Poor health troubled him throughout his life. Nevertheless his mother, who made sure the finest teachers tutored him at home, groomed him for the world of politics. By the age of sixteen he was planning to join his great-uncle and serve in Caesar's army.

At this time Rome and the areas it controlled were governed by the Senate, composed largely of members of a small group of upper class citizens who had inherited their positions. The generals who commanded the armies that conquered new territory for Rome's rule increasingly challenged the Senate's authority, however. One such general, Caesar, had basically become a dictator (someone who assumes absolute power) of Rome. The Senate strongly opposed Caesar, and in 44 B.C.E. conspirators (a group of people who plot in secret) assassinated (killed) him.

When Caesar's will was read, it revealed that Caesar had adopted Octavius as his son and heir. Octavius then set out to claim his inheritance in 43 B.C.E., changing his name to Octavian (Gaius Julius Caesar Octavianus in Latin).

Rise to power

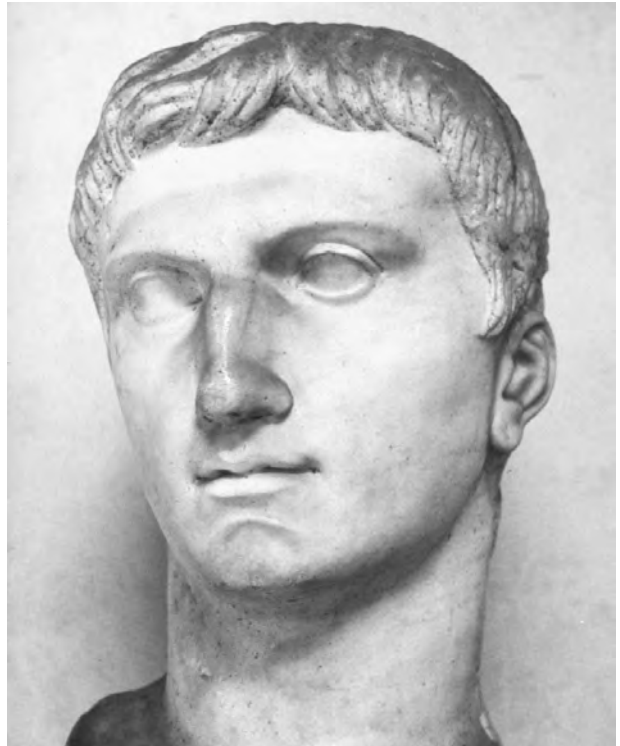
Octavian's rival at this time was Mark Antony (c. 83–30 B.C.E.), who had taken command of Caesar's legions, the largest Roman military units. The two men became enemies immediately when Octavian announced his intention to take over his inheritance. Antony was engaged in war against the Senate to avenge Caesar's murder and to further his own ambitions. Octavian sided with the Senate and joined in the fight. Antony was defeated in 43 B.C.E., but the Senate refused Octavian the triumph he felt

he was owed. As a result Octavian abandoned the senators and joined forces with Antony and Lepidus, another of Caesar's officers. The three men, who called themselves the Second Triumvirate (a group of three officials or government leaders in ancient Rome), defeated their opponents in 42 B.C.E. and assumed full governing power.

They then divided the empire into areas of influence. Octavian took the West; Antony, the East; and Lepidus, Africa. Over time Lepidus lost power, and it seemed impossible that Antony and Octavian could avoid clashing. In 32 B.C.E. Octavian declared war against Queen Cleopatra of Egypt, to whom Antony was romantically and politically tied. After a decisive naval victory in this conflict, Octavian was left as master of the entire Roman world. The following year Antony and Cleopatra committed suicide (killed themselves), and in 29 B.C.E. Octavian returned to Rome in triumph.

Political authority and achievements

Octavian's power was based on his control of the army, his financial resources, and his enormous popularity. The system of government he established, however, also recognized and made important compromises toward renewing republican feeling. In 27 B.C.E. he went before the Senate and announced that he was restoring the rule of the Roman world to the Senate and the people. To show their appreciation, the members of the Senate voted him special powers and gave him the title Augustus, indicating his superior position in the state. A joint government developed that in theory was a partnership. Augustus, however, was in fact the senior partner. The government was formalized in 23 B.C.E., when the Senate



Augustus.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

gave Augustus enormous control over the army, foreign policy, and legislation.

As emperor Augustus concerned himself with every detail of the empire. He secured its boundaries, provided for the defense of remote areas, reorganized the army, and created a navy. He also formed a large civil service department, which attended to the general business of managing Rome's vast empire. Augustus was also interested in encouraging a return to the religious dedication and morality of early Rome. His efforts included passing laws to regulate marriage and family life and to control promiscuity (loose sexual behavior). He made adultery

(when a married person has a sexual relationship with someone other than his or her spouse) a criminal offense, and he encouraged the birthrate by granting privileges to couples with three or more children.

The succession

Augustus suffered many illnesses, but he outlived his preferred choices for legal heir. He was finally forced to appoint as his heir Tiberius, his third wife's son by her first marriage. Tiberius took power upon Augustus's death on August 19, C.E. 14.

For More Information

Jones, A. H. M. *Augustus*. New York: Norton, 1971.

Nardo, Don. *The Age of Augustus*. San Diego: Lucent, 1997.

Southern, Pat. *Augustus*. New York: Routledge, 1998.

AUNG SAN SUU KYI

Born: June 19, 1945

Rangoon, Burma (present-day Myanmar)

Burmese political leader

In 1988 Aung San Suu Kyi became the major leader of the movement toward the reestablishment of democracy in Burma (now Myanmar). In 1991, while under house arrest by the government for her activities, she was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize.

Early life

Aung San Suu Kyi was born in Rangoon, Burma, on June 19, 1945, the youngest of three children of Bogyoke (Generalissimo) Aung San and Daw Khin Kyi. (In Burma all names are individual and people do not have last names.) Her father is known as the founder of independent Burma in 1948 and is beloved in that country. He played a major role in helping Burma win independence from the British, and he was able to win the respect of different ethnic groups through the force of his personality and the trust he inspired. Her mother had been active in women's political groups before marrying Aung San, and the couple often hosted political gatherings in their home, even after the births of their children. In July 1947 Aung San, along with most of his cabinet, was assassinated by members of an opposing political group. He never saw his country become independent on January 4, 1948.

Aung San Suu Kyi spent her early years in Burma. She later joined her mother, who was appointed as Burmese ambassador (representative) to India in 1960. She was partly educated in secondary school in India and then attended St. Hugh's College, Oxford University, in England. While there, she studied politics, economics (the production, distribution, and use of goods and services), and philosophy (the study of ideas) and received her bachelor's and master's degrees. From her father she developed a sense of duty to her country, and from her mother, who never spoke of hatred for her husband's killers, she learned forgiveness. She also became influenced by the teachings of Indian leader Mohandas Gandhi (1869–1948), who was a believer in nonviolent civil disobedience.

For two years Aung San Suu Kyi worked at the United Nations (U.N.) in New York, New York. In 1972 she married Michael Vailancourt Aris, a well-known scholar she had met while studying at Oxford. They had two sons and settled in England. Before they were married, Aung San Suu Kyi warned her fiancé that the people of Burma might need her one day and she would have to go back. She served as a visiting scholar at the Center for Southeast Asian Studies, Kyoto University, Japan, from 1985 to 1986 and at the Indian Institute of Advanced Studies in Simla, India, in 1987.

Government takeover and house arrest

After her mother suffered a stroke in 1988, Aung San Suu Kyi returned to Rangoon, Myanmar, to help take care of her. Later that year, there was a revolt against the overly strict administration associated with the militarily led Burma Socialist Party. This revolt started as a student brawl with no real political meaning. However, it was handled badly by the military and spread, becoming an expression of the unhappiness of the people that dated back to the last takeover in 1962. Unfortunately, the new group that took power, called the State Law and Order Restoration Council (SLORC), did not improve conditions in the country. In August 1988 Aung San Suu Kyi gained national recognition as the effective leader of the National League for Democracy (NLD), later opposed to the military-led SLORC. She became the general secretary of the NLD and was a popular and effective speaker in favor of democracy throughout the country. As a result she was placed under house arrest by the SLORC for attempting to split the army, a charge she denied.



Aung San Suu Kyi.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Although Aung San Suu Kyi was not allowed to run for office in the May 1990 election, her party, the NLD, much to the surprise of the military, won 80 percent of the legislative seats. However, the winning candidates were never permitted to take office. For the first years of her house arrest Aung San Suu Kyi was not allowed to have any visitors, but later her immediate family was allowed to see her. In January 1994 the first visitor outside of her family, U.S. Congressman Bill Richardson, a Democrat from New Mexico, was allowed to meet with her. The United Nations called for her release, as did a number of other national and international groups, including Amnesty

International, the worldwide human rights organization. She won many awards for democracy and human rights, including the Sakharov Prize for Freedom of Thought (European Parliament, 1991), the Nobel Peace Prize (1991), and the International Simon Bolívar Prize (1992).

Restrictions continue

Aung San Suu Kyi remained under military watch and house arrest until July 1995. Afterward the government continued to restrict her movement both inside the country and abroad. During Aung San Suu Kyi's first year of freedom, she was only permitted to take short trips in and around her home city of Rangoon and did not travel outside Myanmar. She continued, however, to serve as the vocal leader of the NLD and push for democracy. The military government, meanwhile, closed schools, ignored the healthcare needs of the people, and forced many citizens into slave labor while torturing and imprisoning others.

In 1999 Michael Vaillancourt Aris, Aung San Suu Kyi's husband, died in England. He had been denied permission by the Myanmar government to visit his wife during the last year of his life. The government suggested she go to visit him, but she remained at home, fearing that if she left, she would not be allowed to reenter the country. In September 2000 she was again placed under house arrest after attempting to travel to rural areas outside Myanmar to meet with NLD members. In December of that year U.S. president Bill Clinton (1946–) awarded her the Presidential Medal of Freedom, the highest U.S. honor given to a civilian (nonmember of a military, police, or firefighting unit). The U.S. government also continued the ban on new invest-

ment in Myanmar and discouraged companies from doing business there as a protest against the military government's treatment of Aung San Suu Kyi and other citizens of Myanmar.

In December 2001, in Oslo, Norway, Nobel Prize winners gathered to protest Aung San Suu Kyi's continued detention and signed an appeal to the Myanmar government requesting that she and fifteen hundred other political prisoners be set free. In May 2002 Aung San Suu Kyi was finally released from house arrest. Once again free to move about the country, Aung San Suu Kyi drew large crowds wherever she spoke to her followers about freedom in Myanmar. "The NLD is working for the welfare of everyone in the country, not for NLD alone," she told an audience of supporters a few days after her release.

For More Information

- Parenteau, John. *Prisoner for Peace: Aung San Suu Kyi and Burma's Struggle for Democracy*. Greensboro, NC: Morgan Reynolds, 1994.
- Stewart, Whitney. *Aung San Suu Kyi: Fearless Voice of Burma*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 1997.
- Victor, Barbara. *The Lady: Aung San Suu Kyi, Nobel Laureate and Burma's Prisoner*. Boston: Faber & Faber, 1998.

**JANE
AUSTEN**

Born: December 16, 1775

Steventon, England

Died: July 18, 1817

Winchester, England

English author, novelist, and writer

The English writer Jane Austen was one of the most important novelists of the nineteenth century. In her intense concentration on the thoughts and feelings of a limited number of characters, Jane Austen created as profound an understanding and as precise a vision of the potential of the human spirit as the art of fiction has ever achieved. Although her novels received favorable reviews, she was not celebrated as an author during her lifetime.

Family, education, and a love for writing

Jane Austen was born on December 16, 1775, at Steventon, in the south of England, where her father served as a rector (preacher) for the rural community. She was the seventh of eight children in an affectionate and high-spirited family. As one of only two girls, Jane was very attached to her sister throughout her life. Because of the ignorance of the day, Jane's education was inadequate by today's standards. This coupled with Mr. Austen's meager salary kept Jane's formal training to a minimum. To supplement his income as a rector, Mr. Austen tutored young men. It is believed that Jane may have picked up Latin from staying close to home and listening in on these lessons. At the age of six she was writing verses. A two-year stay at a small boarding school trained Jane in needlework, dancing, French, drawing, and spelling, all training geared to produce marriageable young women. It was this social atmosphere and feminine identity that Jane so skillfully satirized (mocked) in her many works of fiction. She never married herself, but did receive at least one proposal and led an active and happy life, unmarked by dramatic incident and surrounded by her family.



Jane Austen.

Austen began writing as a young girl and by the age of fourteen had completed *Love and Friendship*. This early work, an amusing parody (imitation) of the overdramatic novels popular at that time, shows clear signs of her talent for humorous and satirical writing. Three volumes of her collected young writings were published more than a hundred years after her death.

Sense and Sensibility

Jane Austen's first major novel was *Sense and Sensibility*, whose main characters are two sisters. The first draft was written in 1795 and was titled *Elinor and Marianne*. In 1797 Austen rewrote the novel and titled it *Sense*

and Sensibility. After years of polishing, it was finally published in 1811.

As the original and final titles indicate, the novel contrasts the temperaments of the two sisters. Elinor governs her life by sense or reasonableness, while Marianne is ruled by sensibility or feeling. Although the plot favors the value of reason over that of emotion, the greatest emphasis is placed on the moral principles of human affairs and on the need for enlarged thought and feeling in response to it.

Pride and Prejudice

In 1796, when Austen was twenty-one years old, she wrote the novel *First Impressions*. The work was rewritten and published under the title *Pride and Prejudice* in 1813. It is her most popular and perhaps her greatest novel. It achieves this distinction by virtue of its perfection of form, which exactly balances and expresses its human content. As in *Sense and Sensibility*, the descriptive terms in the title are closely associated with the two main characters.

The form of the novel is dialectical—the opposition of ethical (conforming or not conforming to standards of conduct and moral reason) principles is expressed in the relations of believable characters. The resolution of the main plot with the marriage of the two opposites represents a reconciliation of conflicting moral extremes. The value of pride is affirmed when humanized by the wife's warm personality, and the value of prejudice is affirmed when associated with the husband's standards of traditional honor.

During 1797–1798 Austen wrote *Northanger Abbey*, which was published

posthumously (after death). It is a fine satirical novel, making sport of the popular Gothic novel of terror, but it does not rank among her major works. In the following years she wrote *The Watsons* (1803 or later), which is a fragment of a novel similar in mood to her later *Mansfield Park*, and *Lady Susan* (1804 or later), a short novel in letters.

Mansfield Park

In 1811 Jane Austen began *Mansfield Park*, which was published in 1814. It is her most severe exercise in moral analysis and presents a conservative view of ethics, politics, and religion.

The novel traces the career of a Cinderella-like heroine, who is brought from a poor home to Mansfield Park, the country estate of her relative. She is raised with some of the comforts of her cousins, but her social rank is maintained at a lower level. Despite their strict upbringing, the cousins become involved in marital and extramarital tangles, which bring disasters and near-disasters on the family. But the heroine's upright character guides her through her own relationships with dignity—although sometimes with a chilling disdainfulness (open disapproval)—and leads to her triumph at the close of the novel. While some readers may not like the rather priggish (following rules of proper behavior to an extreme degree) heroine, the reader nonetheless develops a sympathetic understanding of her thoughts and emotions. The reader also learns to value her at least as highly as the more attractive, but less honest, members of Mansfield Park's wealthy family and social circle.

Emma

Shortly before *Mansfield Park* was published, Jane Austen began a new novel, *Emma*, and published it in 1816. Again the heroine does engage the reader's sympathy and understanding. Emma is a girl of high intelligence and vivid imagination who is also marked by egotism and a desire to dominate the lives of others. She exercises her powers of manipulation on a number of neighbors who are not able to resist her prying. Most of Emma's attempts to control her friends, however, do not have happy effects for her or for them. But influenced by an old boyfriend who is her superior in intelligence and maturity, she realizes how misguided many of her actions are. The novel ends with the decision of a warmer and less headstrong Emma to marry him. There is much evidence to support the argument of some critics that *Emma* is Austen's most brilliant novel.

Persuasion

Persuasion, begun in 1815 and published posthumously in 1818, is Jane Austen's last complete novel and is perhaps most directly expressive of her feelings about her own life. The heroine is a woman growing older with a sense that life has passed her by. Several years earlier she had fallen in love with a suitor but was parted from him

because her class-conscious family insisted she make a more appropriate match. But she still loves him, and when he again enters her life, their love deepens and ends in marriage.

Austen's satirical treatment of social pretensions and worldly motives is perhaps at its keenest in this novel, especially in her presentation of Anne's family. The predominant tone of *Persuasion*, however, is not satirical but romantic. It is, in the end, the most uncomplicated love story that Jane Austen ever wrote and, to some tastes, the most beautiful.

The novel *Sanditon* was unfinished at her death on July 8, 1817. She died in Winchester, England, where she had gone to seek medical attention, and was buried there.

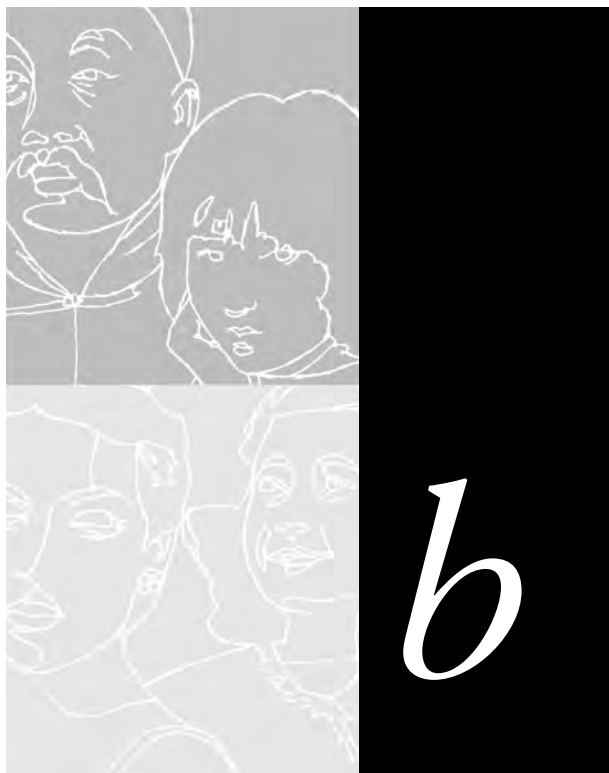
For More Information

Myer, Valerie Grosvenor. *Jane Austen, Obstinate Heart: A Biography*. New York: Arcade Pub., 1997.

Nokes, David. *Jane Austen: A Life*. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 1997.

Tomalin, Claire. *Jane Austen: A Life*. New York: Knopf, 1997.

Tyler, Natalie. *The Friendly Jane Austen: A Well-Mannered Introduction to a Lady of Sense and Sensibility*. New York: Viking, 1999.



BAAL SHEM TOV

Born: c. 1700

Okopy, Poland

Died: c. 1760

Polish religious leader

The founder of modern Hasidism was the Polish-born Israel ben Eliezer, who is generally known as Baal Shem Tov.

Early life

Israel ben Eliezer was born to aged parents in Okopy, Poland, a small town that is

now in the Ukraine, Russia. Most of what is known of his childhood is the product of legend and is difficult to verify. He was apprenticed (worked underneath someone in order to learn a trade from them) to the local teacher. Later he worked as an aid to the sexton (a person who looks after the grounds and building) of the synagogue (Jewish religious site), where he spent his nights studying the Cabala, or Jewish mystic lore.

Ben Eliezer married at the traditional age of eighteen, but his wife died shortly afterward. He then moved to Brody, in Galicia (a region of Eastern Europe), where he met and married the rabbi's sister. They moved to a distant village in the Carpathians (a mountain range in Eastern Europe). There Ben

Eliezer worked as a laborer, but he managed to devote considerable time to prayer and contemplation in the forest.

Becomes a religious leader

At this time Ben Eliezer learned the use of medicinal herbs for treating disease and became known as a healer and a worker of wonders. He was called the Baal Shem Tov, which means Good Master of the Name (of God). He ministered (treated) to his rural neighbors, both Christians and Jews, and performed miraculous cures of both body and soul. He is said to have undergone an important self-revelation at the age of thirty-six through the intervention of a divine spirit.

About 1740 the Besht (the common abbreviation of Baal Shem Tov) settled in Miedzyboz, Podolia. His kindness and holiness attracted many followers, who were called Hasidim (the pious). The Besht's teachings emphasized spiritual communion (a meeting that takes place, not between physical bodies, but between spirits) with God, which was achieved not only in prayer but also in every aspect of everyday life. He taught that all man's deeds must express his worship of God. He disagreed with people who studied the Torah (Jewish religious writings) and worshipped as if it were a school lesson, precise and academic. He told his followers that worshipping should be done with a complete act of body, mind, and soul and should be joyous.

The Besht angered other Jews, who preferred to emphasize the rational discipline of prayer and study of the Torah. The Besht believed that he was a righteous person whose prayers opened the gates of heaven. He believed that others who had superhuman powers like him were born in every genera-

tion. He called these righteous leaders the tzadikim (the "righteous ones"). His teaching especially appealed to those who were uneducated, because he said that the way to reach God did not require great learning. He used anecdotes (short, clever, or amusing stories) and parables (short stories told for the purpose of teaching a virtue or a religious idea) to illustrate his ideas. He criticized asceticism, the practice of denying oneself worldly pleasure in order to illustrate spiritual devotion. Instead he emphasized joy in observing Jewish law.

His followers, the Hasidim, changed many of the ways Judaism was traditionally practiced. For instance, they prayed in small rooms instead of in synagogues. This practice horrified other Jews, who felt it was too big a break with tradition.

Becomes a legend

Many legends grew up about the Besht. It was said he understood the language of plants and animals, and that he could walk on water. Some said that he talked to the Messiah (the king of the Jews who had been foretold by the prophets) on a regular basis. Still others believed that freedom would come to all Jews when the teachings of Baal Shem Tov were believed all over the world.

Baal Shem Tov wrote no works, but after his death his followers published compilations of his sayings and teachings. The Besht and the Hasidism had, and continue to have, a notable impact on Jewish life.

For More Information

Ben-Amos, Dan, and Jerome R. Mintz, eds. *In Praise of the Baal Shem Tov; the Earliest Collection of Legends about the Founder of*

Hasidism. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1970. Reprint, Northvale, NJ: Jason Aronson, 1993.

Buber, Martin. *The Legend of the Baal-Shem*. New York: Harper, 1955. Reprint, Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1995.

Heschel, Abraham J. *A Passion for Truth*. Woodstock, VT: Jewish Lights Pub., 1995.

Heschel, Abraham J. *The Circle of the Baal Shem Tov: Studies in Hasidism*. Edited by Samuel H. Dresner. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1985.

Klein, Eliahu. *Meetings with Remarkable Souls: Legends of the Baal Shem Tov*. Northvale, NJ: J. Aronson, 1995.

Rosman, Murray Jay. *Founder of Hasidism: A Quest for the Historical Baal Shem Tov*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1996.

CHARLES BABBAGE

Born: December 26, 1791

London, England

Died: October 18, 1871

London, England

English mathematician and inventor

Charles Babbage was an English inventor and mathematician whose mathematical machines were based on ideas that were later put to use in modern computers. Indeed, Babbage is sometimes

even called the inventor of the computer. He was also a pioneer in the scientific understanding of manufacturing processes.

A bright, curious child

Charles Babbage was born on December 26, 1791, in London, England. His father, Benjamin Jr., was a banker and merchant. One of his grandfathers, Benjamin Sr., had been mayor of Totnes, England. Babbage was always curious—when he would receive a new toy, he would ask his mother, Elizabeth, what was inside of it. He would then take apart the toy to figure out how it worked. Babbage was also interested in mathematics at a young age, and he taught himself algebra.

The Babbage family was wealthy, and Charles received much of his early education from private tutors. In 1810 he entered Trinity College at Cambridge University. He found that he knew more about mathematics than did his instructors. Very unhappy with the poor state of mathematical instruction there, Babbage helped to organize the Analytical Society, which played a key role in reducing the uncritical following of Sir Issac Newton (1642–1727; English scientist, mathematician, and astronomer) at Cambridge and at Oxford University.

In 1814, the same year of Babbage's graduation from Cambridge, he married Georgiana Whitmore. They had eight children together, but only three lived beyond childhood. Georgiana herself died in 1827.

Mathematical engines

In 1822 Babbage produced the first model of the calculating engine, which



Charles Babbage.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

would become the main interest of his life. The machine calculated and printed mathematical tables. He called it a “difference engine” after the mathematical theory upon which the machine’s operation was based. The government was interested in his device and made a vague promise to fund his research. This encouraged Babbage to begin building a full-scale machine.

But Babbage had underestimated the difficulties involved. Many of the machine tools he needed to shape the wheels, gears, and cranks of the engine did not exist. Therefore, Babbage and his craftsmen had to design the

tools themselves. The resulting delays worried the government, and the funding was held back.

Meanwhile, the idea for a far grander engine had entered Babbage’s ever-active mind: the “analytical engine.” This machine would be able to perform any mathematical operation according to a series of instructions given to the machine. Babbage asked the government for a decision on which engine to finish. After an eight-year pause for thought, the government decided that it wanted neither.

Other interests

Babbage managed to squeeze in an incredible variety of activities between dealing with the government and working on his engines. In addition to other subjects, he wrote several articles on mathematics, the decline of science in England, the rationalization of manufacturing processes, religion, archeology, tool design, and submarine navigation. He helped found the Astronomical Society, which later became the Royal Astronomical Society, as well as other organizations. He was Lucasian professor of mathematics at Cambridge for ten years. He was better known, though, for his seemingly endless campaign against organ-grinders (people who produce music by cranking a hand organ) on the streets of London.

He always returned to his great engines—but none were ever finished. He died on October 18, 1871, having played a major part in the nineteenth-century rebirth of British science.

For More Information

Campbell, Kelley Martin, ed. *The Works of Charles Babbage*. New York: New York University Press, 1988.

Collier, Bruce. *Charles Babbage and the Engines of Perfection*. Oxford, England: Oxford University Press, 1998.

Moseley, Maboth. *Irascible Genius: A Life of Charles Babbage, Inventor*. London: Hutchinson, 1964.

JOHANN SEBASTIAN BACH

Born: March 21, 1685

Eisenach, Germany

Died: July 28, 1750

Leipzig, Germany

German composer, organist, and musician

The works of the German composer and organist Johann Sebastian Bach are the utmost expression of polyphony (a style of musical composition in which two independent melodies are played side by side in harmony). He is probably the only composer ever to make full use of the possibilities of art available in his time.

Early life

Johann Sebastian Bach was born on March 21, 1685, in Eisenach, Germany, the youngest child of Johann Ambrosius Bach, a church organist, and Elizabeth Lämmerhirt Bach. There were musicians in the Bach family going back seven generations. The family

was also devoutly Lutheran (a religion based on the faith of its believers that God has forgiven their sins). Bach received violin lessons from his father. He also had a beautiful voice and sang in the church choir. In 1694 his mother and father died within two months of each other. At age ten, Johann Sebastian moved to Ohrdruf, Germany, to live with his brother, Johann Christoph, who was the organist at St. Michael's Church. From him Johann Sebastian received his first instruction on keyboard instruments.

When an opening developed at St. Michael's School in Lüneburg in 1700, Bach was awarded a scholarship for his fine voice. After his voice changed, he was transferred to the orchestra and played violin. Bach often traveled to Hamburg, Germany, to hear other musicians. During this time he also began composing chorale preludes (organ compositions that were played before hymns sung in the Lutheran worship service). Bach graduated from St. Michael's School in 1702.

Develops organ skill

In 1703 Bach was hired as an organist in a church in Arnstad, Germany, which gave him time to practice on his favorite instrument and to develop his talent. He got into trouble on several occasions, once for fighting with a fellow musician and once for being caught entertaining a "strange maiden" in the balcony while he was practicing the organ. In 1705 Bach obtained a month's leave to visit a church in Lübeck, Germany, to hear the organist there. Bach was so impressed that he remained there for four months without sending word back to Arnstad about what he was doing. After returning to Arnstad, he began composing long organ preludes. After



Johann Sebastian Bach.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

people complained, he made the preludes extremely short. He also began changing and adding parts to the hymns that confused the churchgoers.

In 1707 Bach was appointed organist at a church in Mühlhausen, Germany, a larger and richer city than Arnstadt. Later that year Bach married Maria Barbara Bach, his cousin. Bach wanted to present Mühlhausen with what he called “well-ordered church music.” His pastor, Johann Frohne, liked both the mass and the music to be simple. The brilliant Cantata No. 71, *Gott ist mein König* (God Is My King), was written for the service at which new members were placed into the city council in

February 1708. It so impressed the council that the music was printed and put into the city records. Still, the conflict between Bach’s musical ideas and those of his pastor caused Bach to look elsewhere for a new position.

Working for royalty

Bach arrived in Weimar, Germany, in 1708 as court organist to Duke Wilhelm Ernst. His new position doubled his salary and allowed him to work in a stricter Lutheran environment. The years 1708 to 1710 saw an enormous output of original organ music by Bach. His reputation at the time, however, came mainly from his organ playing, not his compositions. Crown Prince Frederick of Sweden, who heard Bach play in 1714, was so astonished that he took a diamond ring from his finger and gave it to the organist.

In 1716 Bach became upset when he was not offered the opportunity to replace the duke’s court conductor, who had died. At the same time Prince Leopold of Cöthen, Germany, heard of Bach and offered him a position. When Bach requested his release to go to Cöthen, Duke Wilhelm refused to accept such short notice. Bach, who had already accepted an advance in salary, became so angry that he was placed under arrest and jailed for almost a month. Bach began his duties at Cöthen after his release.

Prime of his life

In Cöthen Bach’s prime responsibility was to conduct the court orchestra, in which the prince himself participated. In 1720 Bach’s wife died, leaving him a widower with seven children. Late in 1721 he married Anna Magdalena Wülken, a twenty-year-old

singer. She had to take over the difficult role of wife to a man of genius and also that of mother to his children, the oldest of whom was twelve years old. But she seems to have been equal to both tasks. In addition, during the next twenty years she presented Bach with thirteen more children.

Bach produced his greatest instrumental works during the Cöthen period. The other Cöthen musicians were all skilled performers, and their talent inspired Bach to write special music for them. Bach also wrote his major orchestral works during this period. He wrote many of his keyboard works for the instruction of his own children. However, after Prince Leopold married, he had less time for music, and the court orchestra had less to do. This decrease in importance, plus Bach's concern over his children's education, led him to look for another position in a strong Lutheran area. In 1723 he was named cantor (choir leader) of Leipzig, Germany, to replace the deceased Johann Kuhnau.

The Leipzig committee was reluctant to hire Bach. His reputation was mainly as an organist, not as a composer, and his ability as an organist was not needed since the cantor was not required to play at the services. His duties were primarily to provide choral music (designed for a choir) for two large churches, St. Thomas and St. Nicholas. In addition, special music was required on certain days of the church year and for other occasions such as funerals. Bach promised to perform not only the musical duties but also other responsibilities in connection with the St. Thomas School, such as teaching classes in music, giving private singing lessons, and even teaching Latin. While in Leipzig Bach composed the bulk of his choral music.

Later years

Bach gradually lost his eyesight during his final years, and he was totally blind the last year of his life. A few days before his death he read parts of the hymn *Vor deinen Thron tret' ich allhier* (Before Thy Throne I Stand) for his son-in-law to write down. Following a stroke and a high fever, Bach died on July 28, 1750. Four of his sons carried on the musical tradition of the Bach family. For Bach writing music was an expression of faith. Every composition was "in the name of Jesus" and "to the glory of God alone." His influence on music is well stated in the words of Johannes Brahms (1833–1897): "Study Bach: there you will find everything."

For More Information

- Boyd, Malcolm. *J. S. Bach*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1999.
- Eidam, Klaus. *The True Life of Johann Sebastian Bach*. New York: Basic Books, 2001.
- Wolff, Christoph. *Johann Sebastian Bach: The Learned Musician*. New York: W. W. Norton, 2000.

FRANCIS BACON

Born: October 28, 1909

Dublin, Ireland

Died: April 28, 1992

Madrid, Spain

English painter and artist



Francis Bacon.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

The English artist Francis Bacon was one of the most powerful and original figure painters in the twentieth century. He was particularly noted for the obsessive intensity of his work.

Early life

Francis Bacon was born in Dublin, Ireland, on October 28, 1909, to English parents. Raised with three siblings, Francis Bacon is a descendant of the sixteenth-century statesman and essayist of the same name. He left home at the age of sixteen and spent two years in Berlin, Germany, and Paris, France. In Paris he saw an art exhibit

by the painter Pablo Picasso (1881–1973). Though he had never taken an art class, Bacon began painting with watercolors. He then settled in London, England, with the intention of establishing himself as an interior decorator and furniture designer. However, he soon turned to painting exclusively.

Bacon began oil painting in 1929. The few early paintings that survive (he destroyed most of them) show that he began as a late cubist (a twentieth-century movement that used geometric shapes). By 1932 he turned to a form of surrealism (using fantastic imagery of the subconscious) based partly on Pablo Picasso's works from about 1925 to 1928. Bacon began to draw attention in 1933 with his work *Crucifixion*, and the same year he took part in exhibitions in London.

Gains prominence after World War II

Bacon exhibited very rarely until 1945. It was only after World War II (1939–45; a war in which British, French, Soviet, and U.S. forces fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan) that his paintings became known outside his immediate circle of friends. At this time he also began to paint the human figure. The pictures that made his reputation are of such subjects as a melting head in front of a curtain and a screaming figure crouching under an umbrella. These extremely original works are impressive not only as powerful expressions of pain, but also for the magnificence of their presentation and professional quality.

By the early 1950s Bacon had developed a more direct treatment of the human figure, working almost always from photographs rather than from real life. Images taken from newspaper clippings or from the photographs

of humans and animals by the nineteenth-century photographer Eadweard Muybridge were sometimes combined with images from the well-recognized paintings of the old masters. For instance, a series of paintings inspired by the portrait of Pope Innocent X by the Spanish painter Diego Velázquez (1599–1660) also uses a screaming face and eyeglasses that came from a close-up of a wounded nurse in Sergei Eisenstein's film *The Battleship Potemkin*. Such a combination of images drawn from completely unrelated sources is characteristic of Bacon's work.

Major themes and subjects

From the 1950s through the end of Bacon's painting career and life in the early 1990s, the consistent theme of his work was the isolation and pain of the individual, with a single figure (usually male) seated or standing in a small, windowless interior, as if confined in a private hell. His subjects were artists, friends, lovers, and even himself. His painting technique consisted of using rags, his hands, and dust along with paint and brush.

Bacon consistently denied that his paintings were used to explain his own life. The facts of his life, however, have tempted art critics and historians to draw links between his personal life and the subject matter of his paintings. One of the great tragedies of his life was the death of his longtime lover George Dyer, who apparently killed himself. Dyer's death occurred just before the opening of Bacon's major retrospective (a collection of the artist's work) in Paris, France, in 1971. Bacon's famous and moving *Triptych* (1973) was a three-paneled work of his dying friend hunched over a toilet, shadowed in a door frame and vomiting into a sink.

In a period dominated by abstract art, Bacon stood out as one of the few great representatives of the figure-painting tradition. During the last decade of his life major retrospective exhibitions were mounted at such sites as the Marlborough Gallery in New York, New York, in 1984, Moscow, Russia, in 1989, and the Museum of Modern Art in New York City in 1990. Bacon died of heart failure in Madrid, Spain, on April 28, 1992.

The year 1999 saw the release of the book *Francis Bacon: A Retrospective*, which analyzed the work of the artist. The book coincided with a national tour of many of Bacon's paintings.

For More Information

- Farson, Daniel. *The Gilded Gutter Life of Francis Bacon*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1994.
- Peppiatt, Michael. *Francis Bacon: Anatomy of an Enigma*. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 1997.
- Schmied, Wieland. *Francis Bacon: Commitment and Conflict*. Munich: Prestel, 1996.

ROGER BACON

Born: c. 1214
Ilchester, Somerset, England
Died: c. 1292
Oxford, England
English philosopher



Roger Bacon.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

The medieval English philosopher Roger Bacon insisted on the importance of a so-called science of experience. In this respect he is often thought of as a forerunner of modern science. Little is known for certain about the details of Roger Bacon's life or about the chronology of and inspiration for his major works.

Childhood, education, and university life

It appears that Bacon was born in Ilchester, Somerset, England. He was born into a noble family, although not a major one. In his youth he studied the works of the ancient Greeks as well as arithmetic, geometry,

astronomy, and music. At thirteen years old he entered Oxford University, where he spent the next eight years. He eventually received an advanced arts degree.

In the 1240s, perhaps in the early years of the decade, Bacon lectured at the University of Paris, France, on the works of the ancient Greek philosopher Aristotle (c. 384–c. 322 B.C.E.). During this period he also wrote three works on logic, or the study of how to reason correctly. Within relatively few years there were three important events in Bacon's life: his return to England from France, the awakening of his scientific interests, and his entry into the Franciscan order, the Christian group founded by St. Francis of Assisi (1182–1226).

A universal science

Early on Bacon had the idea for a universal, or general, science that would promote the spread of Christianity, prolong life, aid health, and unite theology (the study of God and His ways) and the science of experience. He praised science as being “most beautiful and most useful.” Bacon had other reasons for urging Christians to take up a science of experience. At the time there were many who believed that a struggle with the antichrist (or great evildoer whose arrival on Earth was predicted in the Bible) was near at hand. Bacon saw a science of experience as a Christian weapon for the fight.

It is quite likely that Bacon became a Franciscan in 1252. By Bacon's time the work begun by St. Francis had posed problems for his followers. Franciscans were required to take a vow of poverty, but their work had grown to such size and importance that it was impossible to continue it unless the order

owned property and other possessions. The owning of property by the Franciscan order, however, was seriously questioned by a group of Franciscans. Bacon joined this group.

His works

About 1257 Bacon was taken from England to France and, for unknown reasons, underwent some kind of confinement, perhaps even an imprisonment, in a French monastery. One theory is that people questioned him because of his scientific interests, but it is more likely that his views on Franciscan life proved unpopular with some Franciscans in England.

During this period of confinement Bacon wrote his greatest works: *Opus majus* (major work), *Opus minus* (minor work), and *Opus tertium* (third work). Disagreements among scholars concerning the order and purposes of these works show once again the many unknowns concerning Bacon's life. In *Opus majus* he made use of scientific materials already written, added new material, and included a section on moral theory. With respect to the sciences, the overall tone of *Opus majus* is a plea, attempting to persuade the pope (the head of the Catholic Church) about the importance of experimental knowledge.

After the three works, Bacon wrote a great part of *Communium naturalium* (general principles of natural philosophy), one of his finest works. In 1272 he published another book on the study of philosophy in which the old, angry, argumentative Bacon reemerges. In it he claimed to see the presence of the antichrist in the then-warring Christian groups, and he took in general the extreme view of Franciscan life. It is also pos-

sible that an imprisonment in the final years of his life stems from this book.

Science's early friend

In many ways Bacon was ahead of his time. His works mention flying machines, self-driven boats, and an "instrument small in size, which can raise and lower things of almost infinite weight." He studied the heavens. He seems to have studied the refraction (bending) of light under experimental conditions. However, in his so-called science of experience he did not make any known advances in what is today called physics, nor did he make any known practical inventions. There is no evidence that Bacon made any important contribution to science, but there is much evidence that he was instead a reader, writer, and champion of science.

For More Information

Bridges, John Henry. *The Life and Work of Roger Bacon*. London: Williams & Norgate, 1914.

Easton, Stewart C. *Roger Bacon and His Search for a Universal Science*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1952.

Westacott, Evalyn. *Roger Bacon in Life and Legend*. Folcroft, PA: Folcroft Library Editions, 1974.

JOAN
BAEZ

Born: January 9, 1941

Staten Island, New York

American musician, singer, and activist

American folk singer Joan Baez is recognized for her nonviolent, anti-establishment (against a nation's political and economic structure), and anti-war positions. She has used her singing and speaking talents to criticize violations of human rights in a number of countries.

Early life

Joan Baez was born on January 9, 1941, in Staten Island, New York. Her father, Albert V. Baez, was a physicist who came to the United States from Mexico at a very early age, and her mother was of western European descent. Joan inherited her father's dark complexion, and the occasional racial prejudice (hatred of a race) she suffered as a child probably led to her later involvement in the civil rights movement, a movement that called for equal rights for all races. Although as an adult she claimed not to share her parents' strict religious faith, it undoubtedly contributed to what some called her keen "social conscience."

Baez was exposed to an intellectual atmosphere with classical music during her childhood, but rejected piano lessons in favor of the guitar and rock and roll. Her father's research and teaching positions took the family to various American and foreign cities. When Joan was ten, she spent a year in Iraq with her family. There she was exposed to the harsh and intensely poor conditions of the Iraqi people, something that undoubtedly had an affect on her later career as a singer and activist. Baez went on to attend high school in Palo Alto, California, where she excelled in music more than in academic subjects. Shortly after her high school graduation in 1958, her family moved to Boston,

Massachusetts, where Baez's interest in folk music surfaced after visiting a coffee shop where amateur folk singers performed.

From Boston coffeehouses to Newport, Rhode Island

Baez briefly attended Boston University, where she made friends with several semi-professional folk singers from whom she learned much about the art. In addition to simple folk songs, she began to sing Anglo American ballads, blues, spirituals, and songs from various countries. As she worked to develop her technique and range of songs, Baez began to perform professionally in Boston coffeehouses and quickly became a favorite of Harvard University students. She was also noticed by other folk singers, including Harry Belafonte (1927–), who offered her a job with his singing group.

In the summer of 1959 Baez was invited to sing at the Newport Folk Festival in Rhode Island. This performance made her a star—especially to young people—and led to friendships with other important folk singers such as the Seeger family and Odetta. Although the performance brought her offers to make recordings and concert tours, she decided to resume her Boston coffee shop appearances.

After Baez's second Newport appearance in 1960, she made her first album for Vanguard Records. Simply labeled *Joan Baez*, it was an immediate success. She was then such a "hot item" that she could choose her own songs and prop designs for her performances. In the following years Baez sang to capacity crowds on American college campuses and concert halls and on several foreign tours. Her eight gold albums and one gold single demonstrated her popularity as a singer.

Politics a source of controversy

While many critics agreed that Baez's untrained singing voice was unusually haunting, beautiful, and very soothing, they saw her spoken words, lifestyle, and actions as conflicting and sometimes anti-American. In the changing world of the 1960s, Baez became a center of controversy (open to dispute) when she used her singing and speaking talents to urge nonpayment of taxes used for war purposes and to urge men to resist the draft during the Vietnam War (1965–73; when the United States aided South Vietnam's fight against North Vietnam). She helped block induction centers (which brought in new recruits) and was twice arrested for such violations of the law.

Baez was married to writer and activist David Harris in March 1968. She was pregnant with their son, Gabriel, in April 1969, and three months later she saw her husband arrested for refusing induction into the military forces. He spent the next twenty months in a federal prison in Texas.

In the early 1970s Baez began to speak with greater harshness. By the end of the decade she had offended dozens of her former peace-activist allies—such as Jane Fonda (1937–) and attorney William Kunstler—with her views on postwar Vietnam. As she had done in the case of Chile and Argentina (without public outcries from former associates), Baez called for human rights to be extended to those centers in the war-torn country.

Baez's career through the 1980s and 1990s

In later years Baez's singing career faltered despite various attempts to revive it. Her 1985 effort featured a more conventional



Joan Baez.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

hairstyle and attire. Her supporters believed she would regain her prominence in the entertainment industry because her voice, although deeper, had the same qualities that made her so successful earlier. Meanwhile, she was quite busy throughout the world as the head of the Humanitas International Human Rights Committee, which concentrated on distracting (in any possible nonviolent way) those whom it believed exercised unauthorized power.

Baez has continued to make music and to influence younger performers. In 1987 Baez released *Recently*, her first studio solo album in eight years. She was nominated for a 1988 Best

Contemporary Folk Recording Grammy Award for "Asimbonanga," a song from the album. Also in 1988 Baez recorded *Diamonds and Rust in the Bullring* in Bilbao, Spain. The album was released the following April. In 1990 Baez toured with the Indigo Girls and the threesome were recorded for a Public Broadcasting Service (PBS) video presentation, "Joan Baez In Concert." In 1993 two more Baez recordings were released: *Play Me Backwards*, consisting of new material; and *Rare, Live & Classic*, a collection of her career from 1958 to 1989, featuring twenty-two previously unreleased tracks. Baez released *Gone from Danger* in 1997 and *Farewell Angelina* in 2002.

The singer's interest in politics and human rights has continued as well. In 1993 she was invited by Refugees International to travel to Bosnia-Herzegovina in order to help bring attention to the suffering there. In September of that same year Baez became the first major artist to perform in a professional concert on Alcatraz Island (the former Federal Penitentiary) in San Francisco, California. It was a benefit performance for her sister Mimi Farina's organization, Bread & Roses. She returned to the island for a second benefit in 1996 along with the Indigo Girls and Dar Williams. She has also supported the gay and lesbian cause. In 1995 she joined Janis Ian in a performance at the National Gay and Lesbian Task Force's Fight the Right fundraising event in San Francisco.

In 2001 Farrar, Straus, and Giroux released *Positively Fourth Street* by David Hajdu. The book is an intimate portrait that explores the relationships between Joan, Mimi Farina, Richard Farina, and fellow folkster Bob Dylan (1941–) during New York City's folk scene of the early 1960s.

For More Information

Baez, Joan. *And a Voice to Sing With*. New York: Summit Books, 1987.

Garza, Hedda. *Joan Baez*. New York: Chelsea House, 1991.

F. LEE BAILEY

Born: June 10, 1933

Waltham, Massachusetts

American attorney and author

F. Lee Bailey is a "superstar" lawyer and best-selling author. Bailey has been involved in a number of well-known cases, such as the trials of Patty Hearst, the Boston Strangler, and O. J. Simpson. Controversy has followed him throughout his career, often due to his willingness and ability to promote himself.

Early life and education

Francis Lee Bailey was born on June 10, 1933, in Waltham, Massachusetts. His mother was a teacher and nursery school director, and his father worked in newspaper advertising. Bailey grew up with two siblings. His parents divorced when he was ten years old. After attending Kimball Union Academy in New Hampshire, he entered Harvard University. An outstanding student, he nonetheless dropped out of Harvard to serve as a fighter pilot in the U.S. Marine Corps. Flying would be a lifelong passion. Bailey then went

to law school at Boston University. Shortly after graduating in 1960, he married Florence Gott, but the two divorced in 1961.

The beginnings of stardom

Bailey was first noticed when he defended a doctor, George Elderly, who was charged with murdering his wife. The doctor—whose story served as the basis for the television series and film *The Fugitive*—was found not guilty. Soon thereafter, another doctor, Samuel H. Sheppard, who was also accused of murdering his wife, was found not guilty because of Bailey's defense. Bailey was on his way to stardom.

This new standout lawyer did not shy away from the spotlight. Indeed, Bailey drew criticism for appearing on television talk shows and discussing various cases. The Supreme Court of New Jersey even disallowed him from practicing in that state for a year. His second wife and former secretary, Froma, stood by while he was written about in magazines much the way a film star might be. He divorced Froma in 1972 and married Lynda Hart that same year.

Again Bailey used his stardom to further his career. He wrote *The Defense Never Rests* and *For the Defense*, as well as legal textbooks. Though Bailey lost his defense of Albert DeSalvo, a mental patient who admitted to being the Boston Strangler—a serial killer who had murdered thirteen women—the case did not damage Bailey's reputation.

Questions arise

The same could not be said, however, for the defense Bailey provided for Patty Hearst. The daughter of a publishing giant,



F. Lee Bailey.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Hearst claimed to have been kidnapped by a terrorist organization (an organization that achieves its ends by using violence) and forced to participate in a series of bank robberies. Bailey conducted a spirited defense, but Hearst was found guilty. She served twenty-two months in prison and eventually hired another lawyer, hoping for a second trial on the grounds that Bailey had not done his job well. Bailey's loss marked a turning point in the public's judgment of his courtroom abilities.

Bailey divorced Hart in 1980, then waited a full five years before getting married again, this time to flight attendant Patricia

Shiers. He continued to publish books, make speeches for \$10,000 each, and speak regularly for a cause he cared a lot about: the necessity of reducing lawsuits.

Another strike against Bailey came when he represented the families of the passengers who had been on Korean Airlines flight 007, which was shot down over the Soviet Union in 1983. Though he made several public statements about his commitment to the case, his law firm put in a much smaller number of hours than did the two other law firms working on it.

In the mid-1990s Bailey was asked to join the defense team of O. J. Simpson, the football star turned actor who was accused (and later found not guilty) of murdering his ex-wife Nicole and her friend Ronald Goldman in Los Angeles, California. Bailey's questioning of Los Angeles police detective Mark Fuhrman was one of the most dramatic moments of the trial. Bailey, perhaps not surprisingly, gave himself high marks. "Other lawyers whom I respect told me that given what I had to work with, it was good." However, Edward Felsenthal of the *Wall Street Journal* said that "Americans who recently named F. Lee Bailey the most admired lawyer in the country might feel differently now that they have actually watched him in action in the O.J. Simpson case."

More troubles

In 1996 Bailey's reputation was questioned again. He was jailed after failing to hand over illegally obtained shares of stock and money from a former drug-dealer client to a court. Bailey was taken to court again in 1999 for refusing to give up \$2 million from a jailed client. In 2001 the state of Florida prohibited Bailey from practicing law there.

In a television appearance Bailey argued that a person "in the business of defending criminal cases is going to live in controversy all of his or her life." Whether or not this is generally true, it certainly has been true for him. At the same time he has been a trail-blazer for the superstar lawyers who have followed him.

For More Information

Bailey, F. Lee, and Harvey Aronson. *The Defense Never Rests*. New York: Stein and Day, 1971.

Whitten, Les. *F Lee Bailey*. New York: Avon, 1971.

JOSEPHINE BAKER

Born: June 3, 1906

St. Louis, Missouri

Died: April 12, 1975

Paris, France

African American dancer and singer

Josephine Baker was an African American dancer and singer who lived in Paris, France, and was regarded as one of the most famous Americans living overseas.

Becoming Josephine Baker

Josephine Baker was born in a poor, black ghetto of St. Louis, Missouri, on June 3, 1906, to twenty-one-year-old Carrie MacDonald. Her mother hoped to be a music hall dancer but was forced to make a living as a

laundress. Olive-skinned Eddie Carson, her father, was a drummer for vaudeville shows (theater that used a wide variety of acts) and was not seen much by his daughter. At the age of eight Josephine was hired out to a white woman as a maid. She was forced to sleep in the coal cellar with a pet dog and was scalded on the hands when she used too much soap in the laundry. At the age of ten she returned to school. Josephine witnessed the cruel East St. Louis race riot of 1917. She left the St. Louis area three years later.

From watching the dancers in a local vaudeville house, at age sixteen Josephine “graduated” to dancing in a touring show based in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, where her grandmother lived. She had already been married twice: to Willie Wells (for a few weeks in 1919), and to Will Baker (for a short time in 1921). She took her second husband’s name as her own—Josephine Baker.

In August 1922 Baker joined the chorus line of the touring show *Shuffle Along* in Boston, Massachusetts. Afterwards Baker was in New York City for the *Chocolate Dandies* (at the Cotton Club) and the floorshow at the Plantation Club in Harlem with Ethel Waters (c. 1900–1977). She drew the attention of the audience by clowning, mugging, and improvising. With her long legs, slim figure, and comic presence, her special style as an entertainer began to take shape.

Baker goes to Paris

Baker went to Paris, France, for a top salary of \$250 a week (more than twice what she was paid in New York) to dance at the Théâtre des Champs Elysées as a variety dancer in *La Revue Nègre*. With other African Americans, including jazz star Sidney Bechet,

she introduced “le jazz hot” and went on to international fame on the wave of French intoxication for American jazz and exotic nudity. She quickly became the favorite of artists and left-intellectuals such as painter Pablo Picasso (1881–1973), poet E. E. Cummings (1894–1962), playwright Jean Cocteau (1889–1963), and writer Ernest Hemingway (1899–1961).

Baker survived a lawsuit regarding her abandoning *Le Revue Nègre* for a star billing at the Folies-Bergère in 1926. (The legal case was one of many in her life.) She was twenty when she was a sensation in the “jungle”

banana dance: naked but for a string of rubber bananas around her waist. Soon banana-clad Josephine dolls were selling like hot cakes. Also, in 1926, she recorded her throaty voice for the first time. Magazine covers and posters added to her fame, and by 1936 Baker was one of the highest paid performers in the world.

A heroine in World War II

Baker married Jean Lion, a French industrialist, but the two were divorced by 1940, during the early months of World War II (1939–45; a war in which German-led forces fought against the United States and European nations). When Germany occupied Belgium, Baker became a Red Cross nurse, watching over refugees, or those forced to flee their own countries. When Germany finally occupied France itself, she worked for the French Resistance (the secret army that fought against the occupying German forces) as an underground courier, transmitting information “pinned inside her underwear” to Captain Jacques Abtey.

After spending years avoiding the United States, Baker returned in August 1963 to attend the civil rights march in Washington, D.C., a march that pushed for equal rights among all races. In October of that year she made a trip to Manhattan to sing, dance, and “fight bias,” as *The New York Times* said. She flaunted her age: she would say she was sixty when she was really fifty-seven, but she seemed ageless to reporters.

Baker died in her sleep of a stroke on April 12, 1975. The Roman Catholic funeral service was held at the Church of the Madeleine in Paris, which was, after all, her true home. Josephine Baker will forever be

remembered as someone who pulled herself out of poverty and the trauma of humiliation and made herself an international star, principally due to her love of dancing.

For More Information

Baker, Jean-Claude. *Josephine: The Hungry Heart*. New York: Random House, 1993.

Hammond, Bryan, and Patrick O'Connor. *Josephine Baker*. Boston: Little Brown, 1988.

Rose, Phyllis. *Jazz Cleopatra*. New York: Doubleday, 1989.

GEORGE BALANCHINE

Born: January 22, 1904

St. Petersburg, Russia

Died: April 30, 1983

New York, New York

Russian-born American choreographer

The Russian-born American choreographer George Balanchine formed and established the classical style (relating to music in the European tradition) of ballet in America.

Early life

George Balanchine was born Georgi Melitonovitch Balanchivadze in St. Petersburg, Russia, on January 22, 1904, the son of Meliton and Maria (Vassiliev) Balanchivadze. His father was a composer. Balanchine studied the piano as a child and considered a career in the

military, which his mother encouraged. However, at the age of ten, he entered the Imperial Ballet School, where he learned the precise and athletic Russian dancing style.

After the Russian Revolution of 1917 (the rebellion of the Russian people against the ruler of Russia), Balanchine continued his training in a new government theater. In 1921 he entered the St. Petersburg Conservatory of Music to study piano while continuing work in ballet at the State Academy of Opera and Ballet. He used a group of dancers from the school to present his earliest choreographed works. One of the students was Tamara Gevergeyeva, whom Balanchine married in 1922. She was the first of his four wives, all of whom were dancers. In 1924, when the group traveled to Europe to perform as the Soviet State Dancers, Balanchine refused to return to the Soviet Union.

The manager of the Ballets Russes, Sergei Diaghilev (1872–1929), discovered Balanchine in 1925 in Paris, France. When Diaghilev's most famous choreographer, Nijinska, left the group, Balanchine took her place. At the age of twenty-one he became the main choreographer of the most famous ballet company (a group of ballet dancers who perform together) in the world. Balanchine did ten ballets for Diaghilev, and it was Diaghilev who changed the Russian's name to Balanchine. When Diaghilev died and the company broke up in 1929, Balanchine moved from one company to another until, in 1933, he formed his own company, Les Ballets.

Work in America

Also in 1933 Balanchine met Lincoln Kirstein, a young, rich American, who invited him to head the new School of Amer-



George Balanchine.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

ican Ballet in New York City. With the School of American Ballet and later with the New York City Ballet, Balanchine established himself as one of the world's leading classical choreographers. Almost single-handedly he brought standards of excellence and quality performance to the American ballet, which up to that point had been merely a weak copy of the great European companies.

In 1934 the American Ballet Company became the resident company at the Metropolitan Opera in New York. Audiences were treated to three new Balanchine ballets, *Apollo*, *The Card Party*, and *The Fairy's Kiss*—works that revolutionized American classical

ballet style. Balanchine's style proved a bit too daring for the Metropolitan, leading to a conflict that ended the working relationship in 1938. Over the next several years he worked on Broadway shows and films and two ballets, *Ballet Imperial* and *Concerto Barocco*, which were created in 1941 for the American Ballet Caravan, a touring group.

In 1946, following Kirstein's return from service in World War II (1939–45), he and Balanchine established a new company, the Ballet Society. The performance of Balanchine's *Orpheus* was so successful that his company was invited to establish permanent residence at the New York City Center. It did so and was renamed the New York City Ballet. Finally Balanchine had a school, a company, and a permanent theater. He developed the New York City Ballet into the leading classical company in America—and, to some critics, in the world. Here he created some of his most enduring works, including his *Nutcracker* and *Agon*.

Keys to his success

Balanchine's choreography was not dependent on the ballerina's skills, the plot, or the sets, but on pure dance. The drama was in the dance, and movement was solely related to the music. For Balanchine the movement of the body alone created artistic excitement. He placed great importance on balance, control, precision, and ease of movement. He rejected the traditional sweet style of romantic ballet, as well as the more acrobatic style of theatrical ballet, in favor of a style that was stripped to its essentials—motion, movement, and music. His dancers became instruments of the choreographer, whose ideas and designs came from the music itself.

Balanchine died in New York City on April 30, 1983. Summing up his career in the *New York Times*, Anna Kisselgoff said, "More than anyone else, he elevated choreography in ballet to an independent art. In an age when ballet had been dependent on a synthesis (combination) of spectacle, storytelling, décor, mime, acting and music, and only partly on dancing, George Balanchine insisted that the dance element come first."

For More Information

Buckle, Richard, and John Taras. *George Balanchine, Ballet Master*. New York: Random House, 1988.

Kristy, Davida. *George Balanchine: American Ballet Master*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 1996.

McDonagh, Don. *George Balanchine*. Boston: Twayne, 1983.

JAMES BALDWIN

Born: August 2, 1924

New York, New York

Died: November 30, 1987

Saint-Paul-de-Vance, France

African American author and playwright

The author James Baldwin achieved international recognition for his expressions of African American life in the United States. During the 1960s he was one of the most outspoken leaders of the civil rights movement.

Early life

James Arthur Baldwin, the son of Berdis Jones Baldwin and the stepson of David Baldwin, was born in Harlem, New York City, on August 2, 1924. He was the oldest of nine children and from an early age loved to read. His father was a preacher in the Pentecostal church, and at the age of fourteen Baldwin also became a preacher. At eighteen he graduated from DeWitt Clinton High School, where he had written for a magazine put out by the school. Baldwin then realized that he wanted to write for a living.

In 1944 Baldwin met another writer named Richard Wright (1908–1960), who helped Baldwin secure a fellowship (a writing award) that provided him with enough money to devote all of his time to literature. By 1948 Baldwin had decided that he could get more writing done in a place where there was less prejudice, and he went to live and work in Europe with money from another fellowship. While overseas Baldwin completed the books *Go Tell It on the Mountain* (1953), *Notes of a Native Son* (1955), and *Giovanni's Room* (1956).

Spokesperson for civil rights movement

Returning to the United States after nine years overseas, Baldwin became known as the leading spokesperson among writers for the civil rights of African Americans. He gave popular lectures on the subject, and he quickly discovered that social conditions for African Americans had become even worse while he was abroad. As the 1960s began—and violence in the South increased—Baldwin grew increasingly angry. He responded with three powerful books of essays: *Nobody Knows My Name* (1961); *The Fire Next Time* (1963), in

which he predicts future outbursts of black anger; and *More Notes of a Native Son*. These works were accompanied by *Another Country* (1962), his third novel. *Going to Meet the Man* (1965) is a group of short stories from the same period. During this time Baldwin's descriptions of Richard Avedon's photography were published under the title *Nothing Personal* (1964). Four years later came another novel, *Tell Me How Long the Train's Been Gone*.

In addition, the mid-1960s saw Baldwin's two published plays produced on Broadway. *The Amen Corner*, first staged in Washington, D.C., in 1955, was presented at New York City's Ethel Barrymore Theatre in April 1965.

Similar in tone to *Go Tell It on the Mountain*, it describes the strong religious feeling of the Pentecostal church. *Blues for Mr. Charlie*, which premiered at Broadway's ANTA Theatre in April 1964, is based on the case of Emmett Till, a fourteen-year-old African American from Chicago who was murdered by white people in Mississippi in 1955.

The assassinations of three of Baldwin's friends—civil rights marcher Medgar Evers (1926–1963), the Reverend Martin Luther King, Jr. (1929–1968), and the black Muslim leader Malcolm X (1925–1965)—destroyed any hopes Baldwin had that problems between the races would be solved in the United States, and he returned to France in the early 1970s. His later works of fiction include *If Beale Street Could Talk* (1974) and *Just Above My Head* (1979). Nonfiction writings of this period include: *No Name in the Street* (1972); *The Devil Finds Work* (1976), an examination of African Americans in the movie industry; and *The Evidence of Things Not Seen* (1985), a discussion of issues of race surrounding the child murders in Atlanta, Georgia, in 1979 and 1980. A volume of poetry, *Jimmy's Blues*, was issued in 1985.

Literary achievement

Baldwin's greatest achievement as a writer was his ability to address American race relations by discussing the effects of racism (unequal treatment based on race) on the mind. In his essays and fiction he considered the point of view of both the offender and the victim. He suggested that all people, not just one group of people, suffer in a racist climate. Baldwin's fiction and plays also explore the burdens society places on individuals. Two of his best-known works, the

novel *Go Tell It on the Mountain* and the play *The Amen Corner*, were inspired by his years with the Pentecostal church in Harlem. In *Go Tell It on the Mountain*, for instance, a teenage boy struggles with a strict stepfather and experiences a religious awakening. Love in all of its forms became a key ingredient in Baldwin's writing. Later Baldwin novels deal honestly with homosexuality (sexual desire for members of the same sex) and love affairs between members of different races.

Baldwin's writing is noted for its beauty and power. His language seems purposely chosen to shock and shake the reader into a concerned state of action. His major themes are repeated: the terrible pull of love and hate between black and white Americans; the conflicts between guilt or shame and sexual freedom; the gift of sharing and extending love; and the charm of goodness versus evil. He describes the rewards of artistic achievement among the problems of modern life, including racism, industrialism (the influence of large corporations on everyday life), materialism (the pursuit of material wealth above all else), and a global power struggle. Everything that lessens or harms the human spirit is strongly attacked.

Final years

Baldwin remained overseas much of the last fifteen years of his life, but he never gave up his American citizenship. The citizens of France came to consider Baldwin one of their own, and in 1986 he was given one of the country's highest honors when he was named Commander of the Legion of Honor. He died of stomach cancer on November 30, 1987, in Saint-Paul-de-Vance, France, but he was buried in Harlem. One of his last works to

see publication during his lifetime was a collection of essays called *The Price of the Ticket: Collected Nonfiction, 1948–1985*.

For More Information

Leeming, David Adams. *James Baldwin: A Biography*. New York: Knopf, 1994.

Washington, Bryan R. *The Politics of Exile: Ideology in Henry James, F. Scott Fitzgerald, and James Baldwin*. Boston: Northeastern University Press, 1995.

Weatherby, William J. *James Baldwin: Artist on Fire*. New York: D. I. Fine, 1989.

LUCILLE BALL

Born: August 6, 1911

Jamestown, New York

Died: April 26, 1989

Los Angeles, California

American actress and comedienne

The face of comedienne Lucille Ball, immortalized as Lucy Ricardo on the television program *I Love Lucy*, is said to have been seen by more people worldwide than any other. Known as “Lucy” to generations of television viewers who delighted at her rubber-faced antics and zany impersonations, she was a shrewd businesswoman, serious actress, and Broadway star as well.

A struggling star

Born Lucille Desiree Ball on August 6, 1911, she and her mother, DeDe, made their

home with her grandparents in Celoron, outside Jamestown, New York. Her father died in 1915 of typhoid fever, a sometimes deadly disease that spreads through milk or water. Along with her brother, Lucille was then raised by her mother and grandparents, who took her to the theater and encouraged her to take part in her school plays.

Lucy’s mother also strongly encouraged her daughter’s love for the theater. The two were close, and DeDe Ball’s laugh can be heard on almost every *I Love Lucy* sound track. But from Lucy’s first unsuccessful foray to New York, New York, where she lost a chorus part in the musical *Stepping Stones*, through her days in Hollywood, California, as “Queen of the Bs” (grade B movies were known for their lower production values), the road to *I Love Lucy* was not an easy one.

In 1926 Lucy enrolled at the John Murray Anderson/Robert Milton School of Theater and Dance in New York. Her participation there, unlike that of star student Bette Davis (1908–1989), was a terrible failure. The school’s owner even wrote to tell Lucy’s mother that she was wasting her money. Lucy went back to high school in Celoron.

After a brief rest, Lucy returned to New York City with the stage name Diane Belmont. She was chosen to appear in Earl Carroll’s *Vanities*, for the third road company of Ziegfeld’s *Rio Rita*, and for *Step Lively*, but none of these performances materialized. She then found employment at a Rexall drugstore on Broadway and later she worked in Hattie Carnegie’s elegant dress salon, while also working as a model. Lucille Ball’s striking beauty always set her apart from other comediennes. At the age of seventeen, Lucy was stricken with rheumatoid arthritis, a severe swelling of the joints,



Lucille Ball.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

and returned to Celoron yet again, where her mother nursed her through an almost three-year bout with the illness.

Returning to New York

Determined, Ball found more success in New York the next time, when she became the Chesterfield Cigarette Girl. In 1933 she was cast as a last-minute replacement for one of the twelve Goldwyn girls in the Eddie Canter movie *Roman Scandals*, directed by Busby Berkeley. (Ball's first on-screen appearance was actually a walk-on in the 1933 *Broadway Thru a Keyhole*.) During the filming, when Ball volunteered to take a pie in

the face, the legendary Berkeley is said to have commented, "Get that girl's name. That's the one who will make it."

Favorable press from Ball's first speaking role in 1935 and the second lead in *That Girl from Paris* (1936) helped win her a major part in the Broadway musical *Hey Diddle Diddle*, but the project was dropped after the premature death of the male lead. It would take roughly another fifteen years for Ball to gain stardom.

Ball worked with many comic "greats," including the Three Stooges, the Marx Brothers, Laurel and Hardy, and Buster Keaton (1895–1966), with whom she developed her extraordinary skill in the handling of props. She gave a solid performance as a rising actress in *Stage Door* (1937), and earned praise from critic James Agee for her portrayal of a bitter, handicapped nightclub singer in *The Big Street* (1942).

Lucy goes red

Ball first acquired her flaming red hair in 1943, when Metro Goldwyn Mayer (MGM) officials signed her to appear opposite Red Skelton in Cole Porter's (1891–1964) *DuBarry Was a Lady*. (Throughout the years, rumors flew as to the color's origin, including one that Ball decided upon the dye job in an effort to somehow rival actress Betty Grable.)

It was on the set of a small film, *Dance, Girl, Dance*, that Lucille Ball first met her future husband, Cuban bandleader Desi Arnaz (1917–1986). Married in 1940, they were separated for much of the first decade of their marriage because of Desi's travels. The union, also plagued by Arnaz's work schedule, alcohol abuse, and outside affairs, dissolved in 1960.

I Love Lucy

Determined to work together and to save their marriage, Ball and Arnaz developed a television pilot (one show developed to sell to studios). Studio executives were not ready. The duo was forced to take their “act” on the road to prove its potential and to borrow five thousand dollars to found Desilu Productions. (After buying out Arnaz’s share and changing the corporation’s name, Ball eventually sold it to Gulf Western for \$18 million.) It worked, and *I Love Lucy* premiered on October 15, 1951.

Within six months the show was rated number one. It ran six seasons in its original format and then evolved into hour-long specials. It won over twenty awards, among them five Emmys, the highest award for television programming.

The characters Lucy and Ricky Ricardo became household words, with William Frawley (1887–1966) and Vivian Vance (1909–1979) superbly cast as long-suffering neighbors Fred and Ethel Mertz. More viewers tuned in for the television birth of “Little Ricky” Ricardo than for President Dwight D. Eisenhower’s (1890–1969) inauguration (swearing in as president). The show was the first in television history to claim viewing in more than ten million homes. It was filmed before a studio audience and helped revolutionize television production by using three cameras.

Lucy’s legacy

The Lucy Ricardo character may be viewed as a downtrodden housewife, but compared to other situation comedy wives of television’s “golden years,” she was free of regular household duties. The show’s prem-

ise was her desire to share the showbiz limelight with her performer husband and to leave the pots and pans behind. Later series featured Ball as a single mother and as a working woman “up against” her boss.

Following her retirement from prime time in 1974 Ball continued to make many guest appearances on television. Broadway saw her starring in *Mame* (1974), a role with which she identified. (Her other Broadway appearance after her career had “taken off” was in *Wildcat* in 1960.) Her last serious role was that of a bag lady in the 1983 made-for-television movie *Stone Pillow*.

Ball was married to comic Gary Morton from 1961 until the time of her death on April 26, 1989, eight days after open-heart surgery. She was survived by her husband, her two children by Arnaz, Luci and Desi Jr., and millions of fans who continue to watch her in reruns of *I Love Lucy*.

For More Information

Ball, Lucille, and Betty Hannah Hoffman.

Love, Lucy. New York: Putnam, 1996.

Brady, Kathleen. *Lucille: The Life of Lucille Ball*. New York: Hyperion, 1994.

Morella, Joe, and Edward Z. Epstein. *Forever Lucy*. Secaucus, NJ: L. Stuart, 1986.

DAVID BALTIMORE

Born: March 7, 1938

New York, New York

American virologist

The American virologist David Baltimore was only thirty-seven years old when he received the Nobel Prize in Physiology and Medicine for his significant work in cancer research.

Early life and education

David Baltimore was born on March 7, 1938, in New York, New York, the son of Richard and Gertrude (Lipschitz) Baltimore. As a student Baltimore excelled in math, but quickly developed an intense interest in science. While still a high school student, he spent a summer at the Jackson Memorial Laboratory in Bar Harbor, Maine, experiencing biology under actual research conditions. This so affected him that upon entering Swarthmore College in 1956 he declared himself a biology major. Later he switched to chemistry to complete a research thesis (a research report, usually a requirement for graduation). He graduated in 1960 with a bachelor's degree with high honors. Between his sophomore and junior years at Swarthmore he spent a summer at the Cold Spring Harbor Laboratories. There the influence of George Streisinger led him to molecular biology, a branch of biology concerned with the structure and development of biological systems.

Baltimore spent two years doing graduate work at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT) in biophysics. He then left for a summer at the Albert Einstein Medical College and to take the animal virus course at Cold Spring Harbor under Richard Franklin and Edward Simon. In 1965 he became a research associate at the Salk Institute of Biological Studies, working in association with Renato Dulbecco. Here he met fellow scien-

tist, Alice S. Huang, and the two were married on October 5, 1968. In 1972 Baltimore was appointed to a full professorship at MIT. In 1974 he joined the staff of the MIT Center for Cancer Research under Salvador Luria.

Received recognition

Baltimore received many awards for his work in cancer research. In 1971 he was the recipient of the Gustav Stern award in virology (the study of viruses), the Warren Triennial Prize, and the Eli Lilly and Co. award in microbiology (a type of biology that investigates microscopic life forms) and immunology (a branch of science that involves the study of the immune system). His most prestigious award came in 1975 when he shared the Nobel Prize in Physiology and Medicine with Howard M. Temin and Renato Dulbecco for research on retroviruses (types of viruses) and cancer. His research demonstrated that the flow of genetic information in such viruses did not have to go from DNA to RNA (deoxyribonucleic acid and ribonucleic acid, living cells that help define an individual's characteristics) but could flow from RNA to DNA, a finding that changed the central belief of molecular biology.

Baltimore's interests later took him further into the study of how viruses reproduce themselves and into work on the immune systems of animals and humans, where he concentrated upon the process of developing antibodies (proteins that help the immune system fight infection). Central to much of this work was DNA technology, in which he maintained an active interest.

Baltimore proved himself an effective educator, conducting seminars with graduate students as well as his peers. He also became suc-

cessful at directing research rather than doing it himself, again working closely with students.

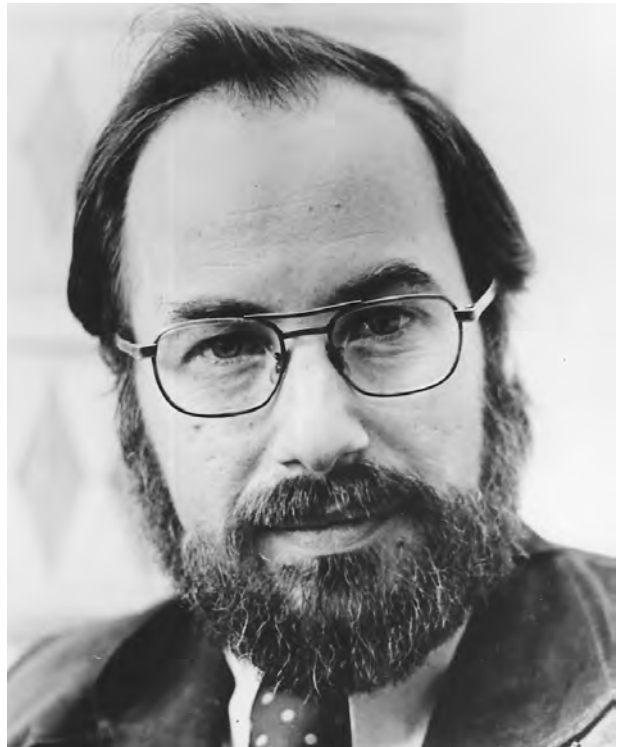
Research controversy

In 1989 Thereza Imanishi-Kari, with whom Baltimore coauthored a 1986 paper on immunology, was charged with falsifying data. Imanishi-Kari, an MIT assistant professor, was cleared in 1996 when a top government ethics panel (a group that judges behavior) declared they found no wrongdoing. Although Baltimore was never connected to any wrongdoing, the incident caused him to withdraw the paper. He was also pressured by colleagues to resign (quit) from his presidency at New York's Rockefeller University, which he did in 1991.

In 1998 Daniel Kevles, a humanities and scientific policy professor at the California Institute of Technology who had followed the case closely, wrote "The Baltimore Case: A Trial of Politics, Science, and Character." Kevles investigated the events and proposed that Imanishi-Kari and Baltimore were unjustly given a bad name.

Baltimore Chairs AIDS Vaccine Research Panel

Baltimore was an early supporter of government-sponsored research on acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS, an incurable virus that attacks the body's immune system). In December 1996 Baltimore became the head of a new AIDS vaccine research panel for the Office of AIDS Research at the National Institute of Health. The panel was formed to step up the search for an AIDS vaccine. He also became the president of the California Institute of Technology in 1997.



David Baltimore.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

In 2000 President Bill Clinton (1946–) awarded Baltimore the National Medals of Science and Technology, the highest American award for science. He was honored for his discoveries in molecular biology, immunology, and virology.

Baltimore remains active in the scientific community. He is a strong supporter of the highly controversial issue of stem-cell research, a cancer research that takes cells from embryos. Baltimore argues that the study of such cells can greatly increase disease research. "Embryonic stem cells hold remarkable promise for reversing the devastation of human disease," Baltimore wrote in

The Wall Street Journal in 2002. “To refuse to allow [the country] to participate in this exciting research would be an affront [an offense] to the American people, especially those who suffer from diseases that could one day be reversed by these miraculous cells.”

For More Information

Crotty, Shane. *Ahead of the Curve: David Baltimore's Life in Science*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 2001.

Sarasohn, Judy. *Science on Trial: The Whistle Blower, the Accused, and the Nobel Laureate*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1993.

HONORÉ DE BALZAC

Born: May 20, 1799

Tours, France

Died: August 19, 1850

Paris, France

French novelist

The French novelist Honoré de Balzac was the first writer to use fiction to convey the social scene prevailing at a particular period in one country's history.

Childhood

Honoré de Balzac was born in Tours, France, on May 20, 1799, the eldest son of four children of Bernard François and Anne Charlotte Balzac. His mother was thirty-two years younger than his father, and the young Honoré was taken into another home and

cared for until the age of four. His mother saw the birth of her son as her duty and treated him indifferently. Her lack of affection overshadowed his childhood. Sent to boarding school at the age of eight, Honoré sought a place to escape from the fierce school discipline. He found this place in books. But excessive reading eventually brought on a nervous condition, which affected his health, and he was brought home in 1813. The following year his family moved to Paris, France, where he completed his secondary education in law.

Adulthood

Rebelling against his parents, Balzac refused to enter the legal profession and instead declared writing as his profession. Despite disappointment, his father provided a small allowance with the understanding that he had to be financially independent within two years. Working together with friends, Balzac wrote several sensational (superficial, appealing to the senses) novels, none signed with his own name. These books were without literary merit, but he earned his living by them.

Searching for ways to make his fortune more rapidly, Balzac next entered a series of business ventures using borrowed funds. These commercial ventures were also failures, leaving him with very large debts.

Thereafter he published the first novel that he signed with his own name. *Le Dernier Chouan* was a historical novel. Since historical novels were the fashion, the book was well received. But real fame came to him two years later, when he published *La Peau de chagrin*, a fantasy that acts as an allegory (a symbolic representation) of the conflict between the will to enjoy and the will to survive.

Author and socialite

The constant struggle to earn enough to keep his creditors at bay drove him to a timetable of work that eventually ruined his health. He increased his hours from ten to fourteen or even eighteen a day, keeping himself awake with frequent cups of strong coffee. Whenever Balzac took a break from his writing, he would frequent fashionable salons (stylish lounges), where he was well received by female readers.

The Human Comedy

Balzac's lifework consists of a series of some ninety novels and short stories collected under the title *La Comédie humaine* (*The Human Comedy*) in 1841. *The Human Comedy* was subdivided into smaller groups of novels: "Scenes of Private Life," "Scenes of Political Life," "Scenes of Parisian," "Provincial," and "Country Life." There was a separate group of "Philosophical Studies."

The novels were linked by both history and character. This practice enhanced the realistic illusion and also permitted Balzac to develop the psychology (involving the mind) of individual characters more fully than would have been feasible within the limits of a single novel.

Social and ethical assumptions

In a preface to his work in 1842, he defined his function as that of "secretary of French society." Accordingly, every class of people, from aristocrat to peasant, has a place in *The Human Comedy*.

Balzac often assigned the basest (lowest in value or quality) motivations to his characters. He once wrote that the lust for gold and the search for pleasure were the sole



Honoré de Balzac.

principles that ruled humanity. The monomaniac—the man obsessed by a purpose or passion, to the point of sacrificing his own comfort and the welfare of his dependents—is constantly encountered in Balzac's more impressive novels.

Balzac was writing in an age when the struggle for existence or social advancement among the poor was at its fiercest. Balzac himself disliked the disorderly individualism that he observed around him. Human nature, in his view, was basically depraved (morally wrong; evil); any machinery—legal, political, or religious—whereby the wickedness of men could be stopped, ought to be repaired and strengthened.

Marriage and death

During his last years Balzac suffered from poor health, and his morale had been weakened by the disappointments he endured in his one great love affair. In 1832 he had received his first letter from Madame Hanska, the wife of a Polish nobleman. Thereafter they kept up a correspondence, interrupted by occasional vacations spent together in different parts of Europe. In 1841 her husband died, but Madame Hanska obstinately refused to marry Balzac. Only when he fell gravely ill did she agree. The wedding took place at her home on March 14, 1850. The long journey back to France took a serious toll on Balzac's health, and he died on August 18, 1850.

For More Information

Keim, Albert, and Louis Lumet. *Honoré de Balzac*. New York: Haskell House, 1974.

Robb, Graham. *Balzac: A Life*. New York: Norton, 1994.

BENJAMIN BANNEKER

Born: November 9, 1731

Baltimore County, Maryland

Died: October 9, 1806

Baltimore County, Maryland

African American scientist and inventor

From 1792 through 1797 Benjamin Banneker, an African American mathematician and amateur astronomer,

calculated ephemerides (tables of the locations of stars and planets) for almanacs that were widely distributed and influential. Because of these works, Banneker became one of the most famous African Americans in early U.S. history.

Early life

On November 9, 1731, Benjamin Banneker was born in Baltimore County, Maryland. He was the son of an African slave named Robert, who had bought his own freedom, and of Mary Banneky, who was the daughter of an Englishwoman and a free African slave. Benjamin grew up on his father's farm with three sisters. After learning to read from his mother and grandmother, Benjamin read the bible to his family in the evening. He attended a nearby Quaker country school for several seasons, but this was the extent of his formal education. He later taught himself literature, history, and mathematics, and he enjoyed reading.

As he grew into an adult, Banneker inherited the farm left to him by his grandparents. He expanded the already successful farm, where he grew tobacco. In 1761, at the age of thirty, Banneker constructed a striking wooden clock without having ever seen a clock before (although he had examined a pocket watch). He painstakingly carved the toothed wheels and gears of the clock out of seasoned wood. The clock operated successfully until the time of his death.

Interest in astronomy

At the age of fifty-eight Banneker became interested in astronomy (the study of the universe) through the influence of a neighbor, George Ellicott, who lent him sev-

eral books on the subject as well as a telescope and drafting instruments (tools used in astronomy). Without further guidance or assistance, Banneker taught himself the science of astronomy. He made projections for solar (of the Sun) and lunar (of the Moon) eclipses and computed ephemerides for an almanac. In 1791 Banneker was unable to sell his observations, but these rejections did not stop his studies.

In February 1791 Major Andrew Ellicott (1754–1820), an American surveyor (one who maps out new lands for development), was appointed to survey the 10-mile square of the Federal Territory for a new national capital. Banneker worked in the field for several months as Ellicott's scientific assistant. After the base lines and boundaries had been established and Banneker had returned home, he prepared an ephemeris for the following year, which was published in Baltimore in *Benjamin Banneker's Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland and Virginia Almanack and Ephemeris, for the Year of Our Lord, 1792; Being Bissextile, or Leap-Year, and the Sixteenth Year of American Independence*. Banneker's calculations would give the positions of the planets and stars for each day of the year, and his almanacs were published every year from 1792 until 1797.

Communications with Thomas Jefferson

Banneker forwarded a copy of his calculations to Thomas Jefferson (1743–1826), then secretary of state, with a letter criticizing Jefferson for his proslavery views and urging the abolishment (ending) of slavery of African American people. He compared such slavery to the enslavement of the American colonies by the British crown. Jefferson



Benjamin Banneker.

Reproduced by permission of Fisk University Library.

acknowledged Banneker's letter and forwarded it to the Marquis de Condorcet, the secretary of the Académie des Sciences in Paris. The exchange of letters between Banneker and Jefferson was published as a separate pamphlet, and was given wide publicity at the time the first almanac was published. The two letters were reprinted in Banneker's almanac for 1793, which also included "A Plan for an Office of Peace," which was the work of Dr. Benjamin Rush (1745–1813). The abolition societies of Maryland and Pennsylvania were very helpful in the publication of Banneker's almanacs, which were widely distributed as an example of an

African American's work and to demonstrate the equal mental abilities of the races.

The last known issue of Banneker's almanacs appeared for the year 1797, because of lessening interest in the antislavery movement. Nevertheless, he prepared ephemerides for each year until 1804. He also published a treatise (a formal writing) on bees and computed the cycle of the seventeen-year locust.

Banneker never married. He died on October 9, 1806, and was buried in the family burial ground near his house. Among the memorabilia preserved from his life were his commonplace book and the manuscript journal in which he had entered astronomical calculations and personal notations. Writers who described his achievements as that of the first African American scientist have kept Banneker's memory alive. Recent studies have proven Banneker's status as an extremely capable mathematician and amateur astronomer.

For More Information

Bedini, Silvio A. *The Life of Benjamin Banneker*. New York: Scribner, 1971.

Ferris, Jerri. *What Are You Figuring Now? A Story About Benjamin Banneker*. New York: Scholastic, 1988.

Pinckney, Andrea Davis. *Dear Benjamin Banneker*. San Diego: Harcourt Brace, 1994.

FREDERICK BANTING

Born: November 14, 1891
Alliston, Ontario, Canada

Died: February 21, 1941

Newfoundland, Canada

Canadian medical researcher and scientist

The Canadian medical scientist Frederick Banting was codiscoverer of insulin, a hormone that regulates the sugar in the blood and helps in the treatment of diabetes (a disorder that causes the body to have difficulty maintaining a healthy blood sugar level). Because of this discovery, Banting became the first Canadian to be awarded the Nobel Prize.

Childhood

Frederick Grant Banting was born in Alliston, Ontario, Canada, on November 14, 1891, to William Thompson Banting, a well-established farmer, and Margaret Grant Banting, who had moved to Canada from Ireland. The youngest of five children, Banting attended the local elementary schools before enrolling at the University of Toronto in 1911 in an arts course leading to theology (the study of religion). He decided, however, that he wanted to be a doctor, and in 1912 he registered as a medical student.

With World War I (1914–18, a war in which German-led forces fought for European control) under way, Banting left college in 1915 to join the medical corps as a private (the lowest military rank). Doctors were urgently needed, however, and he was sent back to finish his studies, graduating in 1916. Banting was commissioned (made an officer) in the Royal Canadian Army Medical Corps and left for England, where he received exceptional surgical experience in several army hospitals.

In 1920 Banting moved to London, Ontario, and opened a medical office. One evening he read an article dealing with new discoveries in fighting diabetes, a blood disorder. Banting's interest in diabetes stemmed from his school days when a classmate had died because of the disorder. This event affected him deeply, and now his mind eagerly looked for possibilities worthy of investigation.

Initiation of the insulin work

In 1920 Banting went to Toronto for an interview with the professor of physiology (the study of life systems) Dr. J. J. R. Macleod (1876–1902). Banting described his ideas and his desire to investigate the fluids released by the pancreas, a gland located near the stomach. He begged for an opportunity to try out his theories in the laboratory, but Macleod refused, for he knew that Banting had no training in research. Banting returned to Toronto several times to try to persuade Macleod. Finally, impressed by his enthusiasm and determination, Macleod promised Banting the use of the laboratory for eight weeks during the summer. Macleod knew that if Banting was to have any success, someone who knew the latest chemical techniques would have to work with him. Charles Best (1899–1978), completing courses in physiology and biochemistry (the study of biological processes), had been working on a problem related to diabetes in Macleod's department. Banting and Best met and decided that work would begin on May 17, 1921, the day following Best's final examination.

Discovery of insulin

The first attempts to produce a diabetic condition upon which to study the effect of



*Frederick Banting.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

pancreatic secretions were not successful. The observations were repeated time and again until, finally, there was convincing evidence that the fluids taken from the pancreas secretions did produce the dramatic effect that was being sought in animals lacking a pancreas.

As the material was extracted from the microscopic islands of Langerhans (cells of the pancreas, different from the majority, which are grouped together in tissue named after Paul Langerhans [1847–1888], the German physician who discovered them), it was called "isletin." Later the name was changed to "insulin," meaning island. Again and again

the same successful results were obtained, and when Macleod returned to Toronto at the end of the summer, he was finally convinced that Banting and Best had captured the correct hormone (a substance produced by an organ) to prove Banting's theory.

On November 14, 1921, Banting and Best presented their findings before the Physiological Journal Club of the University of Toronto, and later that month a paper entitled "The Internal Secretion of the Pancreas" was submitted for publication in the *Journal of Laboratory and Clinical Medicine*. News of the discovery brought scientists from many parts of the world, as well as diabetics and their families, to Toronto.

Nobel Prize and other honors

In 1923 Banting received the Nobel Prize in Physiology or Medicine jointly with Macleod. With characteristic generosity he divided his share with Best. That year the university established the Banting and Best Department of Medical Research with a special grant from the Ontario Legislature. In 1934 Banting was made a knight commander of the British Empire and the following year was elected a fellow (associate) of the Royal Society of London.

Banting was killed in a plane crash on the coast of Newfoundland on February 21, 1941, while on a war mission to England. Because of his research and advancements, Banting has improved the lives of diabetics around the world.

For More Information

Bankston, John. *Frederick Banting and the Discovery of Insulin*. Bear, DE: Mitchell Lane, 2002.

Bliss, Michael. *Banting: A Biography*. Toronto, Ont.: McClelland and Stewart, 1984.

Shaw, Margaret Mason. *Frederick Banting*. Don Mills, Ont.: Fitzhenry & Whiteside, 1976.

KLAUS BARBIE

Born: October 25, 1913

Bad Godesberg, Germany

Died: September 25, 1991

Lyon, France

German military leader

Klaus Barbie, known as the "Butcher of Lyon," was a leader in the Nazi group called the SS, and was head of anti-Resistance operations in France during the German occupation of World War II (1935–45). As a war criminal (someone who commits crimes that violate the conventions of warfare during wartime) Barbie lived in Bolivia as Klaus Altmann for thirty years before he was arrested and returned to France for trial.

Shadow of war

Klaus Barbie was born October 25, 1913, in the town of Bad Godesberg, a few miles down the Rhine River from Bonn, Germany. The son of a schoolteacher, he spent an uneventful childhood as a good but not brilliant student with a gift for languages. His father had served and had been wounded in

World War I (1914–18). Klaus Barbie grew up in a Germany that had been bitterly humiliated by its defeat in the war.

Barbie's father died in 1932, leaving the family with little money. With no funds to go to college, he began working for the National Socialist Germany Workers Party (Nazi Party), the party that brought Adolf Hitler (1889–1945) to power in Germany.

A sinister career

Hitler became chancellor (head of the government) of Germany in 1933. Two years later, when Barbie was twenty-two, he joined the Schutzstaffel (SS), the Nazi Party's security squad that swore loyalty not to Germany but to Hitler. He served in the Sicherheitsdienst (SD), the intelligence and security branch of the SS, and was assigned to a number of posts in Europe for the next six years. During this time, as the German war machine swept westward, Barbie won a reputation as a shrewd, dedicated SS officer. He earned increases in his position, and admiring superiors expressed their approval of his performance.

After Germany invaded France in 1941, Barbie became head of operations to control the Resistance, the underground organization of French patriots resisting Nazi rule. He is widely believed to have been responsible for the torture and death of Jean Moulin (1899–1943), the secret head of France's anti-Nazi coalition. As head of the Gestapo security police in Lyon, Barbie also appears to have been responsible for a number of "actions" against innocent French Jews. Among them a raid on an orphanage in the town of Izieu, which sent over fifty boys and girls to the gas chambers at the concentration camp of Auschwitz in Poland.



Klaus Barbie.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Postwar activities

When the war in Europe ended in spring 1945 with the Nazis' defeat, Barbie hid from the Allies (the nations allied against Germany, including Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States) until April 1947. At this point he was recruited by the Counter Intelligence Corps of the U.S. Army in occupied Germany. Although the army had a warrant for Barbie's arrest as someone suspected of underground activities, the regional commander decided that his skills as an interrogator (someone who questions suspects or prisoners) made him more valuable as a spy than as a prisoner.

Over the next four years Barbie took on increasing responsibility for the army. At one time he ran a spy network that included scores of informants in East and West Germany and France. Barbie soon became one of the army's most trusted spies. In 1949, however, his presence became known to French war crimes investigators, who demanded that the "Butcher of Lyon" be turned over to them to stand trial for his crimes.

The U.S. army took a fateful step. It decided not to surrender Barbie to the French, fearing embarrassment by his service and worrying that he might disclose wide-ranging U.S. intelligence efforts to the French. With the aid of a Croatian priest, it delivered Barbie to Genoa, Italy, under the false name of "Klaus Altmann." There he and his wife and two young children boarded an Italian ship to Buenos Aires, Argentina. The "Altmann" family quickly moved to the mountainous city of La Paz, Bolivia, where Barbie supported himself as an auto mechanic.

Barbie's skills as a spy did not go unnoticed in the military government of Bolivia, and before long he became an associate of high-ranking generals. It is likely that he served as an adviser to Bolivia's secret security police. It is known that he became the director of Transmaritima Boliviana, a company organized to hire ships to bring supplies to land-locked Bolivia. He lived as any prosperous businessman might and was often seen in La Paz's cafes and restaurants.

True identity discovered

The past began to catch up with Barbie in 1971. Beate Klarsfeld, a German-born homemaker married to French lawyer Serge

Klarsfeld, discovered from a German prosecutor's files that Barbie was living in Bolivia under the name of Altmann. In a dramatic move, she went to La Paz and chained herself to a fence, demanding that "Altmann" be tried for his crimes.

Although Klarsfeld's initial effort was unsuccessful, the spotlight of publicity was on Barbie to stay. For over a decade, "Altmann" denied that he was Barbie, but his identity was no secret to the regimes that had kept Bolivia under military rule. Finally, in 1982, a civilian government came to power. In February 1983 Barbie was arrested and turned over to French officials.

Barbie's return to France created tremendous publicity and soul-searching in the country, which had never fully come to terms with its mixed record of both collaboration with and resistance to the Nazis. Shortly after his return, the prosecutor in Lyon announced that Barbie would stand trial on several charges of "crimes against humanity." These events had consequences in America as well. Following a five-month investigation, the U.S. Department of Justice revealed Barbie's post-war role for U.S. intelligence and issued a formal apology to France for "delaying justice in Lyon" for nearly thirty-three years.

Justice served

Like nearly all the others who committed horrifying deeds under the Nazis, Barbie showed little remorse for his crimes. "There are no war crimes," he said. "There are only acts of war." When he was expelled from Bolivia, he seemed indifferent, saying, "I did my duty. I have forgotten. If they [the French] have not forgotten, that is their business."

The French had not forgotten. Nevertheless, three years after his return Barbie was still in a jail cell in Lyon, with no date set for his trial. The long awaited trial was again delayed in 1986, when the French Court of Indictments ruled that Barbie could be tried for crimes against Resistance fighters as well as for “crimes against humanity.” Barbie was imprisoned for life in 1987 for crimes including the murders of at least four Jews and Resistance workers and fifteen thousand deportations to death camps. He was the last German war criminal of rank to be tried. Barbie died of cancer in a prison hospital in Lyon on September 25, 1991.

For More Information

Beattie, John. *The Life and Career of Klaus Barbie: An Eyewitness Record*. London: Methuen, 1984.

Murphy, Brendan. *The Butcher of Lyon: The Story of Infamous Nazi Klaus Barbie*. New York: Empire Books, 1983.

CHRISTIAAN BARNARD

Born: November 8, 1922

Beaufort West, South Africa

Died: September 2, 2001

Paphos, Cyprus

South African surgeon

The South African surgeon Christiaan Barnard performed the world's first human heart transplant operation in 1967 and the first double-heart transplant in 1974.

Childhood and education

Christiaan N. Barnard was born to Dutch descendants on November 8, 1922, in Beaufort West, South Africa. Barnard, along with his three brothers, grew up extremely poor and attended the local public schools. Barnard then went on to the University of Cape Town, where he received a master's degree in 1953.

Barnard worked for a short time as a doctor before joining the Cape Town Medical School staff as a research fellow in surgery. With the hope of pursuing his research interests and gaining new surgical skills and experiences, he enrolled at the University of Minnesota Medical School in 1955. After two years of study he received his Ph.D. (doctorate degree) and returned to his native country to embark upon a career as a cardiothoracic (heart) surgeon.

A distinguished surgeon

Before Barnard left for America, he had gained recognition for research in gastrointestinal pathology (intestinal diseases), where he proved that the fatal birth defect known as congenital intestinal atresia (a gap in the small intestines) was due to the fetus (undeveloped baby) not receiving enough blood during pregnancy. Barnard proved that this condition could be cured by a surgical procedure. Upon his return to South Africa, he introduced open-heart surgery to that country, designed artificial valves for the human heart, and experimented with the transplantation of the hearts of dogs. All of this served as preparation for his 1967 human heart transplant.

Although Barnard was a pioneering cardiac surgeon, his advances were based on



Christiaan Barnard.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

work that came before him. Of crucial importance was the first use of hypothermia (artificial lowering of the body temperature) in 1952, and the introduction in the following year of an effective heart-lung machine. These advances, combined with other techniques perfected in the 1960s, enabled a surgeon for the first time to operate upon a heart that was motionless and free of blood.

The first transplant

After a decade of heart surgery, Barnard felt ready to accept the challenge posed by the transplantation of the human heart. In 1967 he encountered Louis Washkansky, a

fifty-four-year-old patient who suffered from extensive coronary artery disease (the arteries around the heart) and who agreed to undergo a heart transplant operation. On December 2, 1967, the heart of a young woman killed in an accident was removed while Washkansky was prepared to receive it. The donor heart was kept alive in a heart-lung machine that circulated Washkansky's blood until the patient's diseased organ could be removed and replaced with the healthy one.

In order to fool the body's defense mechanism that would normally reject a foreign organism, Barnard and his team of heart specialists gave the patient large doses of drugs, which allowed the patient's body to accept the new organ. Washkansky's body was not able to defend itself against infection, however, and he died on December 21, 1967, of double pneumonia, a disease effecting the lungs. Despite Washkansky's death, Barnard was praised around the world for his surgical feat. Within a year (January 1968) Barnard replaced the diseased heart of Philip Blaiberg, a fifty-eight-year-old retired dentist. This time the drug dosage was lowered, and Blaiberg lived for twenty months with his new heart. After Barnard's successful operations, surgeons in Europe and the United States began performing heart transplants, improving upon the procedures first used in South Africa.

Later career

Seven years after Barnard performed his first heart transplant, he made medical history once again when he performed a "twin-heart" operation on November 25, 1974. This time he removed only the diseased por-

tion of the heart of fifty-eight-year-old Ivan Taylor, replacing it with the heart of a ten-year-old child. The donor heart acted as a booster and back-up for the patient's diseased organ. Although Barnard was optimistic about this new operation, which he believed was less radical than a total implantation, the patient died within four months.

Rheumatoid arthritis (a severe swelling of the joints), which had plagued Barnard since the 1960s, limited his surgical experimentation in later years. As a result, he turned to writing novels as well as books on health, medicine, and South Africa while also serving as a scientific consultant.

Barnard's advances in heart surgery brought him honors from a host of foreign medical societies, governments, universities, and philanthropic (charitable) institutions. He has also been presented many honors, including the Dag Hammarskjöld International Prize and Peace Prize, the Kennedy Foundation Award, and the Milan International Prize for Science. Barnard died on September 2, 2001, while on vacation in Paphos, Cyprus. He was seventy-eight.

Shortly before Barnard's death, he spoke with *Time* magazine and left these inspiring words: "The heart transplant wasn't such a big thing surgically," he said. "The point is I was prepared to take the risk. My philosophy is that the biggest risk in life is not to take the risk."

For More Information

Bankston, John. *Christiaan Barnard and the Story of the First Successful Heart Transplant*. Bear, DE: Mitchell Lane, 2002.

Barnard, Christiaan, and Curtis B. Pepper. *One Life*. London: Harrap, 1970.

CLARA BARTON

Born: December 25, 1821

North Oxford, Massachusetts

Died: April 21, 1922

Glen Echo, Maryland

American humanitarian

A humanitarian works for the well-being of others. The American humanitarian Clara Barton was the founder of the American Red Cross. Her work helping people in times of war and times of peace made her a symbol of humanitarianism.

Early life and career

Clara Barton was born on December 25, 1821, in North Oxford, Massachusetts. She was the youngest child of Stephen Barton, a farmer and state law maker who had served in the American Revolution (1775–83), and his wife, Sarah. She later recalled that his tales made war familiar to her at an early age. Barton acquired skills that would serve her well when, at age eleven, she helped look after a sick older brother. In return her brother taught her skills that young women did not usually learn, such as carpentry.

The teenage Barton was very shy but was also well spoken and well read. Her mother suggested that she put her gifts to work by becoming a teacher. At age fifteen Barton began teaching at nearby schools. In 1850 she left to teach at Bordentown, New Jersey. Families in Bordentown were required to pay for children's schooling. Thus many children were unable to attend. Barton offered to teach without salary if children could attend for free. She



Clara Barton.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

later took pride in having established the first free school in New Jersey and in having raised enrollment from six to six hundred. However, when town officials decided to appoint a male principal over her, she resigned.

Civil War activities

Barton was working for the patent office in Washington, D.C., when the Civil War (1861–65) began. She decided to serve the Federal troops by personally collecting and storing supplies that people had given freely in support of the troops. In Washington she collected and stored food and medical sup-

plies that could be distributed to the troops. In 1862 she was permitted to travel to places where the fighting was taking place. Barton was with Federal forces during the siege of Charleston, South Carolina, and also at battles in other areas.

Barton did not work primarily as a nurse during the war. She became increasingly skilled at obtaining and passing out supplies. However, her courage and concern for people made her presence strongly felt everywhere she went.

In 1865 Barton decided to begin the project of locating missing soldiers. With President Lincoln's approval, she set up the Bureau of Records in Washington and traced perhaps twenty thousand men.

Franco-Prussian War

Barton suffered from periods of poor health. In 1869 she went to Geneva, Switzerland, hoping to improve her condition through rest and change. There she met officials of the recently organized International Red Cross, a group that worked to help victims of war. They urged her to seek U.S. agreement to the Geneva Convention, a treaty that permitted medical personnel to be treated as neutral parties who could aid the sick and wounded during wars. Before Barton could turn to this task the Franco-Prussian War (1870–71), a war in which France was defeated by a group of German states led by Prussia, began.

Barton helped organize military hospitals during this war. Her most original idea was to put needy women in Strasbourg, France, to work sewing garments for pay. She also introduced this work system in Lyons, France. In 1873 she was awarded the Iron

Cross of Merit by the German emperor, William I (1797–1888). It was one of many such honors for Barton.

American Red Cross

Barton then returned to the United States and settled in Danville, New York. In 1877 she wrote to a founder of the International Red Cross and offered to lead an American branch of the organization. Thus, at age fifty-six she began a new career. In 1881 Barton incorporated the American Red Cross; that is, she organized it as a legal corporation. The American Red Cross was devoted to helping people in need during peacetime as well as wartime. She herself served as its president. A year later her extraordinary efforts brought about U.S. agreement to the Geneva Convention.

In 1883 Barton also served as superintendent of the Women's Reformatory Prison in Sherborn, Massachusetts. However, she remained devoted to her major cause. In 1882 she traveled as a Red Cross worker to assist victims of fires in Michigan and earthquake victims in Charleston, South Carolina. In 1884 she brought supplies to flood victims along the Ohio River. Five years later she went to Johnstown, Pennsylvania, after it suffered a disastrous flood. Barton also traveled to Russia and Turkey to assist those in need. As late as 1900 she visited Galveston, Texas, to supervise assistance after a tidal wave.

Retirement and death

In 1900 Congress reincorporated the Red Cross and demanded a review of its funds. Soon public pressures and conflict within the Red Cross itself became too much for Barton. She resigned from the organization in 1904.

By this point Barton was a figure of international fame. She retired to Glen Echo, Maryland, and died there on April 12, 1912.

For More Information

Burton, David H. *Clara Barton: In the Service of Humanity*. Westwood, CT: Greenwood Press, 1995.

Dubowski, Cathy East. *Clara Barton: Healing the Wounds*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Silver Burdett Press, 1991.

Oates, Stephen B. *A Woman of Valor: Clara Barton and the Civil War*. New York: Free Press, 1994.

COUNT BASIE

Born: August 21, 1904

Red Bank, New Jersey

Died: April 26, 1984

Hollywood, Florida

African American bandleader and musician

Count Basie was an extremely popular figure in the jazz world for half a century. He was a fine pianist and leader of one of the greatest jazz bands in history.

Early years

William Basie was born in Red Bank, New Jersey, on August 21, 1904. His parents, Harvey and Lillian (Childs) Basie, were both musicians. Basie played drums in his school band and took some piano lessons from his



Count Basie.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

mother. But it was in Harlem, New York City, that he learned the basics of piano, mainly from his sometime organ teacher, the great Fats Waller (1904–1943).

Basie made his professional debut playing piano with vaudeville acts (traveling variety entertainment). While on one tour he became stranded in Kansas City, Missouri. After working briefly as house organist in a silent movie theater, he joined Walter Page's Blue Devils in 1928. When that band broke up in 1929, he Bennie Moten's band hired him. He played piano with them, with one interruption, for the next five years. It was

during this time that he was given the nickname "Count."

After Moten died in 1935, Basie took what was left of the band, expanded the personnel, and formed the first Count Basie Orchestra. Within a year the band developed its own variation of the Kansas City swing style—a solid rhythm backing the horn soloists, who were also supported by sectional riffing (the repeating of a musical figure by the non-soloing brass and reeds). This familiar pattern was evident in the band's theme song, "One O'Clock Jump," written by Basie himself in 1937.

Success in the swing era

By 1937 Basie's band was, with the possible exception of Duke Ellington's (1899–1974), the most famous African American band in America. Basie's band regularly worked some of the better big city hotel ballrooms. With many of the other big bands of the swing era he also shared the less appealing one-nighters (a series of single night performances in a number of small cities and towns that were traveled to by bus).

Many of the band's arrangements were "heads"—arrangements worked out without planning in rehearsal and then written down later. The songs were often designed to showcase the band's brilliant soloists. Sometimes the arrangement was the reworking of a standard tune—"I Got Rhythm," "Dinah," or "Lady, Be Good." Sometimes a member of the band would come up with an original, written with a particular soloist or two in mind. Two of Basie's earliest favorites, "Jumpin' at the Woodside" and "Lester Leaps In," were created as features for saxophonist Lester Young. They were referred to as "flagwavers,"

fast-paced tunes designed to excite the audience. The swing era band (1935–45) was unquestionably Basie's greatest. The superior arrangements (reflecting Basie's good taste) and the skilled performers (reflecting Basie's sound management) gave the band a permanent place in jazz history.

Later years

The loss of key personnel (some to military service), the wartime ban on recordings, the 1943 musicians' strike, the strain of one-nighters, and the bebop revolution of the mid-1940s all played a role in the death of the big-band era. Basie decided to form a medium-sized band in 1950, juggling combinations of all-star musicians. The groups' recordings were of the highest quality, but in 1951 Basie returned to his first love—the big band—and it thrived. Another boost was provided in the late 1950s by the recording of "April in Paris," which became the trademark of the band for the next quarter of a century.

A stocky, handsome man with heavy-lidded eyes and a sly smile, Basie was a shrewd judge of talent and character, and he was extremely patient in dealing with the egos of his musicians. He and his band recorded with many other famous artists, including Duke

Ellington (1899–1974), Frank Sinatra (1915–1998), Ella Fitzgerald (1917–1996), and Sarah Vaughan (1924–1990). Perhaps the most startling of the band's achievements was its fifty-year survival in a culture that experienced so many changes in musical fashion, especially after the mid-1960s, when jazz lost much of its audience to other forms of music.

In 1976 Basie suffered a heart attack, but he returned to the bandstand half a year later. During his last years he had difficulty walking and so rode out on stage in a motorized wheelchair. He died of cancer in Hollywood, Florida, on April 26, 1984. His wife, Catherine, had died in 1983. They had one daughter. The band survived Basie's death, with trumpeter Thad Jones directing until his own death in 1986.

For More Information

Basie, Count. *Good Morning Blues: The Autobiography of Count Basie*. New York: Random House, 1985.

Dance, Stanley. *The World of Count Basie*. New York: C. Scribner's Sons, 1980.

Kliment, Bud. *Count Basie*. New York: Chelsea House, 1992.

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY



contents

Entries by Nationality xvii

Reader's Guide xxxi

Volume 1: A–Ba

Hank Aaron	1	Aeschylus	29
Ralph Abernathy	4	Spiro Agnew	31
Bella Abzug	7	Alvin Ailey	34
Chinua Achebe	10	Madeleine Albright	37
Abigail Adams	12	Louisa May Alcott	39
Ansel Adams	15	Alexander II	41
John Adams	17	Alexander the Great	43
Samuel Adams	20	Muhammad Ali	47
Joy Adamson	22	Woody Allen	49
Jane Addams	25	Isabel Allende	52
Alfred Adler	27	Julia Alvarez	54
		American Horse	57

Idi Amin	59	Lucille Ball	159
Hans Christian Andersen	62	David Baltimore	161
Carl David Anderson	64	Honoré de Balzac	164
Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	66	Benjamin Banneker	166
Marian Anderson	69	Frederick Banting	168
Fra Angelico	71	Klaus Barbie	170
Maya Angelou	73	Christiaan Barnard	173
Kofi Annan	76	Clara Barton	175
Susan B. Anthony	79	Count Basie	177
Virginia Apgar	81	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Benigno Aquino	84		
Yasir Arafat	86	Volume 2: <i>Be–Cap</i>	
Archimedes	89	Beatles	181
Hannah Arendt	91	William Beaumont	185
Jean-Bertrand Aristide	93	Simone de Beauvoir	187
Aristophanes	96	Samuel Beckett	189
Aristotle	98	Ludwig van Beethoven	192
Louis Armstrong	101	Menachem Begin	194
Neil Armstrong	102	Alexander Graham Bell	196
Benedict Arnold	105	Clyde Bellecourt	200
Mary Kay Ash	108	Saul Bellow	202
Arthur Ashe	110	William Bennett	204
Isaac Asimov	113	Ingmar Bergman	206
Fred Astaire	116	Irving Berlin	208
John Jacob Astor	118	Leonard Bernstein	210
Margaret Atwood	120	Chuck Berry	213
W. H. Auden	123	Mary McLeod Bethune	215
John James Audubon	125	Benazir Bhutto	218
Augustus	128	Owen Bieber	220
Aung San Suu Kyi	130	Billy the Kid	223
Jane Austen	132	Larry Bird	224
Baal Shem Tov	137	Shirley Temple Black	227
Charles Babbage	139	Elizabeth Blackwell	229
Johann Sebastian Bach	141	Tony Blair	232
Francis Bacon	143	William Blake	234
Roger Bacon	145	Konrad Bloch	237
Joan Baez	147	Judy Blume	239
F Lee Bailey	150	Humphrey Bogart	242
Josephine Baker	152	Julian Bond	244
George Balanchine	154	Daniel Boone	246
James Baldwin	156	John Wilkes Booth	248

William Booth	250	Al Capone	352
Lucrezia Borgia	252	Truman Capote	354
P. W. Botha	255	Frank Capra	357
Sandro Botticelli	257	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Margaret Bourke-White	259		
Boutros Boutros-Ghali	261	<i>Volume 3: Car–Da</i>	
Ray Bradbury	264	Lázaro Cárdenas	361
Ed Bradley	266	Stokely Carmichael	363
Mathew Brady	269	Andrew Carnegie	367
Johannes Brahms	271	Lewis Carroll	370
Louis Braille	273	Johnny Carson	372
Louis Brandeis	275	Kit Carson	374
Marlon Brando	278	Rachel Carson	377
Leonid Brezhnev	280	Jimmy Carter	379
Charlotte Brontë	283	George Washington Carver	383
Emily Brontë	284	Pablo Casals	386
Gwendolyn Brooks	286	Mary Cassatt	388
Helen Gurley Brown	289	Vernon and Irene Castle	390
James Brown	291	Fidel Castro	393
John Brown	294	Willa Cather	397
Rachel Fuller Brown	297	Catherine of Aragon	399
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	299	Catherine the Great	401
Robert Browning	302	Henry Cavendish	404
Pat Buchanan	305	Anders Celsius	407
Pearl S. Buck	308	Miguel de Cervantes	408
Buddha	310	Paul Cézanne	411
Ralph Bunche	312	Marc Chagall	414
Warren Burger	314	Wilt Chamberlain	416
Robert Burns	317	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	419
Aaron Burr	320	Charlie Chaplin	421
George Bush	323	Charlemagne	424
George W. Bush	326	Charles, Prince of Wales	427
Laura Bush	329	Ray Charles	430
Lord Byron	331	Geoffrey Chaucer	433
Julius Caesar	335	César Chávez	436
Caligula	338	Dennis Chavez	438
Maria Callas	340	Linda Chavez	440
Cab Calloway	342	Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	443
John Calvin	344	John Cheever	447
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	346	Anton Chekhov	449
Albert Camus	349	Dick Cheney	451

Mary Boykin Chesnut	454
Chiang Kai-shek	456
Julia Child	459
Shirley Chisholm	461
Frédéric Chopin	464
Jean Chrétien	467
Agatha Christie	469
Winston Churchill	472
Marcus Tullius Cicero	475
Liz Claiborne	478
Cleopatra VII	480
Bill Clinton	483
Hillary Rodham Clinton	487
Ty Cobb	490
Nat “King” Cole	492
Bessie Coleman	494
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	496
Marva Collins	499
Michael Collins	501
Confucius	503
Sean Connery	506
Joseph Conrad	508
Nicolaus Copernicus	510
Aaron Copland	513
Francis Ford Coppola	515
Bill Cosby	518
Jacques Cousteau	521
Noel Coward	523
Michael Crichton	525
Davy Crockett	527
Oliver Cromwell	529
Walter Cronkite	532
E. E. Cummings	535
Marie Curie	538
Roald Dahl	543
Dalai Lama	546
Salvador Dali	549
Clarence Darrow	551
Charles Darwin	554
Bette Davis	556
Miles Davis	558

Ossie Davis	561
Sammy Davis Jr.	563
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 4: De–Ga

James Dean	567
Claude Debussy	569
Ruby Dee	571
Daniel Defoe	574
Edgar Degas	576
Charles de Gaulle	579
F. W. de Klerk	581
Cecil B. DeMille	585
Deng Xiaoping	587
René Descartes	590
Hernando de Soto	592
John Dewey	594
Diana, Princess of Wales	597
Charles Dickens	600
Emily Dickinson	603
Denis Diderot	606
Joe DiMaggio	608
Walt Disney	611
Elizabeth Dole	613
Placido Domingo	616
Donatello	619
John Donne	621
Fyodor Dostoevsky	624
Frederick Douglass	626
Arthur Conan Doyle	629
Francis Drake	632
Alexandre Dumas	634
Paul Laurence Dunbar	636
Pierre du Pont	638
François Duvalier	640
Amelia Earhart	643
George Eastman	646
Clint Eastwood	648
Thomas Edison	650
Albert Einstein	654
Dwight D. Eisenhower	657

Mamie Eisenhower	661	Karl Friedrich Gauss	775
Joycelyn Elders	662	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
George Eliot	665		
T. S. Eliot	668	Volume 5: Ge–I	
Elizabeth I	672	Hans Geiger	779
Elizabeth II	675	Theodor Geisel	781
Duke Ellington	678	Genghis Khan	784
Ralph Waldo Emerson	680	J. Paul Getty	786
Desiderius Erasmus	683	Kahlil Gibran	788
Euclid	686	Althea Gibson	790
Euripides	688	Dizzy Gillespie	792
Medgar Evers	690	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	794
Gabriel Fahrenheit	695	Whoopi Goldberg	797
Fannie Farmer	696	William Golding	800
Louis Farrakhan	698	Samuel Gompers	801
William Faulkner	701	Jane Goodall	804
Dianne Feinstein	704	Benny Goodman	807
Enrico Fermi	707	Mikhail Gorbachev	809
Geraldine Ferraro	710	Berry Gordy Jr.	813
Bobby Fischer	713	Al Gore	816
Ella Fitzgerald	715	Jay Gould	818
F. Scott Fitzgerald	718	Stephen Jay Gould	821
Gustave Flaubert	721	Katharine Graham	824
Malcolm Forbes	723	Martha Graham	827
Henry Ford	725	Cary Grant	829
Francis of Assisi	729	Graham Greene	831
Benjamin Franklin	731	Wayne Gretzky	833
Sigmund Freud	735	Brothers Grimm	836
Betty Friedan	738	Woody Guthrie	838
Robert Frost	741	Alex Haley	843
John Kenneth Galbraith	745	Alexander Hamilton	846
Galen	748	Oscar Hammerstein	849
Galileo	750	John Hancock	852
George Gallup	753	George Frideric Handel	854
Indira Gandhi	754	Thomas Hardy	857
Mohandas Gandhi	758	Stephen Hawking	860
Gabriel García Márquez	762	Nathaniel Hawthorne	862
Judy Garland	764	William Randolph Hearst	865
Marcus Garvey	767	Werner Heisenberg	868
Bill Gates	769	Joseph Heller	870
Paul Gauguin	773	Lillian Hellman	872

Ernest Hemingway	875
Jimi Hendrix	878
Henry VIII	880
Patrick Henry	883
Audrey Hepburn	886
Katharine Hepburn	888
Herod the Great	891
William Herschel	893
Thor Heyerdahl	895
Edmund Hillary	898
S. E. Hinton	900
Hippocrates	902
Hirohito	904
Alfred Hitchcock	907
Adolf Hitler	909
Ho Chi Minh	912
Thomas Hobbes	915
Billie Holiday	918
Oliver Wendell Holmes	920
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	923
Homer	926
Soichiro Honda	929
bell hooks	931
Benjamin Hooks	933
Bob Hope	936
Anthony Hopkins	938
Lena Horne	940
Harry Houdini	943
Gordie Howe	946
Julia Ward Howe	949
Howard Hughes	951
Langston Hughes	954
Victor Hugo	957
Zora Neale Hurston	960
Saddam Hussein	962
Lee Iacocca	967
Henrik Ibsen	970
Imhotep	972
Washington Irving	975
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 6: J–L

Andrew Jackson	979
Jesse Jackson	983
Michael Jackson	986
Reggie Jackson	989
P. D. James	991
Thomas Jefferson	994
Mae Jemison	997
Jesus of Nazareth	1000
Jiang Zemin	1003
Joan of Arc	1005
Steve Jobs	1007
Elton John	1011
John Paul II	1013
Lyndon B. Johnson	1016
Magic Johnson	1020
Samuel Johnson	1023
Al Jolson	1025
James Earl Jones	1027
Quincy Jones	1029
Ben Jonson	1032
Michael Jordan	1034
James Joyce	1038
Benito Juárez	1040
Carl Jung	1043
Franz Kafka	1047
Wassily Kandinsky	1050
Immanuel Kant	1052
John Keats	1054
Helen Keller	1056
Gene Kelly	1058
Edward Kennedy	1061
John F. Kennedy	1064
John F. Kennedy Jr.	1069
Robert Kennedy	1071
Johannes Kepler	1074
Jack Kerouac	1076
Charles F. Kettering	1078
Ayatollah Khomeini	1081
Nikita Khrushchev	1083
B. B. King	1086

Billie Jean King	1089	Dolley Madison	1191
Coretta Scott King	1091	James Madison	1194
Martin Luther King Jr.	1094	Madonna	1197
Stephen King	1098	Ferdinand Magellan	1201
Rudyard Kipling	1101	Najib Mahfuz	1203
Henry Kissinger	1104	Norman Mailer	1205
Calvin Klein	1107	Bernard Malamud	1208
Kublai Khan	1109	Malcolm X	1210
Marquis de Lafayette	1113	David Mamet	1214
Lao Tzu	1115	Nelson Mandela	1216
Ralph Lauren	1117	Édouard Manet	1219
Emma Lazarus	1119	Wilma Mankiller	1221
Mary Leakey	1121	Mickey Mantle	1224
Bruce Lee	1124	Mao Zedong	1226
Spike Lee	1126	Rocky Marciano	1230
Tsung-Dao Lee	1129	Ferdinand Marcos	1233
Vladimir Lenin	1131	Marcus Aurelius	1236
Leonardo da Vinci	1136	Marie Antoinette	1238
C. S. Lewis	1139	Mark Antony	1240
Carl Lewis	1141	Thurgood Marshall	1243
Sinclair Lewis	1144	Karl Marx	1246
Roy Lichtenstein	1146	Mary, Queen of Scots	1249
Maya Lin	1148	Cotton Mather	1252
Abraham Lincoln	1150	Henri Matisse	1255
Charles Lindbergh	1154	Mayo Brothers	1258
Carl Linnaeus	1157	Willie Mays	1261
Joseph Lister	1159	Joseph McCarthy	1264
Andrew Lloyd Webber	1161	Hattie McDaniel	1267
Alain Locke	1163	John McEnroe	1270
John Locke	1166	Terry McMillan	1273
Jack London	1168	Aimee Semple McPherson	1275
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	1170	Margaret Mead	1277
Joe Louis	1173	Catherine de' Medici	1281
George Lucas	1175	Golda Meir	1284
Patrice Lumumba	1178	Rigoberta Menchú	1286
Martin Luther	1181	Felix Mendelssohn	1289
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Kweisi Mfume	1292
		Michelangelo	1295
Volume 7: M–Ne		Harvey Milk	1298
Douglas MacArthur	1185	John Stuart Mill	1301
Niccolò Machiavelli	1188	Edna St. Vincent Millay	1303

Arthur Miller	1305	Manuel Noriega	1401
Henry Miller	1308	Jessye Norman	1404
Slobodan Milosevic	1310	Nostradamus	1406
John Milton	1313	Rudolf Nureyev	1409
Joan Miró	1316	Joyce Carol Oates	1413
Molière	1318	Sandra Day O'Connor	1416
Claude Monet	1320	Georgia O'Keefe	1420
Thelonious Monk	1323	Laurence Olivier	1422
Marilyn Monroe	1325	Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	1425
Joe Montana	1327	Eugene O'Neill	1428
Montesquieu	1329	George Orwell	1430
Maria Montessori	1331	Ovid	1432
Thomas More	1334	Jesse Owens	1435
Jim Morrison	1336	Mohammad Reza Pahlavi	1439
Toni Morrison	1338	Arnold Palmer	1441
Samuel F. B. Morse	1341	Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus	1443
Moses	1343	Charlie Parker	1445
Grandma Moses	1345	Blaise Pascal	1447
Mother Teresa	1347	Louis Pasteur	1450
Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart	1350	Linus Pauling	1453
Hosni Mubarak	1353	Luciano Pavarotti	1456
Muhammad	1355	Ivan Pavlov	1459
Elijah Muhammad	1358	Anna Pavlova	1462
John Muir	1360	I. M. Pei	1464
Edvard Munch	1362	Pelé.	1467
Rupert Murdoch	1364	William Penn	1469
Benito Mussolini	1367	Pericles	1472
Vladimir Nabokov	1371	Eva Perón	1474
Ralph Nader	1373	Jean Piaget	1477
Napoleon Bonaparte	1376	Pablo Picasso	1479
Ogden Nash	1379	Sylvia Plath	1483
Nefertiti	1381	Plato	1485
Isaac Newton	1382	Pocahontas	1488
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Edgar Allan Poe	1490
		Sidney Poitier	1493
		Pol Pot	1495
		Marco Polo	1498
		Juan Ponce de León	1501
		Alexander Pope	1502
		Cole Porter	1505
		Katherine Anne Porter	1507
Volume 8: Ni–Re			
Friedrich Nietzsche	1387		
Florence Nightingale	1390		
Richard Nixon	1392		
Alfred Nobel	1397		
Isamu Noguchi	1398		

Emily Post	1509	Richard Rodgers	1610
Colin Powell	1511	Auguste Rodin	1613
Dith Pran	1514	Will Rogers	1615
Elvis Presley	1517	Rolling Stones	1618
André Previn	1520	Eleanor Roosevelt	1621
Leontyne Price	1522	Franklin D. Roosevelt	1624
E. Annie Proulx	1524	Theodore Roosevelt	1628
Marcel Proust	1526	Diana Ross	1631
Ptolemy I	1528	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	1634
Joseph Pulitzer	1531	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	1636
George Pullman	1533	Carl Rowan	1639
Aleksandr Pushkin	1535	J. K. Rowling	1641
Vladimir Putin	1537	Peter Paul Rubens	1643
Pythagoras	1540	Wilma Rudolph	1646
Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	1543	Salman Rushdie	1649
Walter Raleigh	1547	Babe Ruth	1651
Sri Ramakrishna	1550	Nolan Ryan	1653
A. Philip Randolph	1552	Albert Sabin	1657
Harun al-Rashid	1555	Carl Sagan	1659
Ronald Reagan	1557	Andrei Sakharov	1662
Christopher Reeve	1561	J. D. Salinger	1664
Erich Maria Remarque	1564	Jonas Salk	1667
Rembrandt	1566	George Sand	1669
Janet Reno	1568	Carl Sandburg	1671
Pierre Auguste Renoir	1571	Margaret Sanger	1673
Paul Revere	1574	Jean-Paul Sartre	1676
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Oskar Schindler	1678
		Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	1681
		Franz Schubert	1684
Volume 9: Rh–S		Charles M. Schulz	1687
Cecil Rhodes	1577	Martin Scorsese	1690
Condoleezza Rice	1580	Walter Scott	1693
Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	1583	Haile Selassie	1696
Sally Ride	1585	Selena	1698
Leni Riefenstahl	1588	Sequoyah	1701
Cal Ripken Jr.	1591	William Shakespeare	1702
Diego Rivera	1593	George Bernard Shaw	1706
Paul Robeson	1596	Mary Shelley	1708
Maximilien de Robespierre	1599	Percy Shelley	1711
Smokey Robinson	1601	Beverly Sills	1714
John D. Rockefeller	1604	Neil Simon	1716
Norman Rockwell	1607		

Frank Sinatra	1719	Marshal Tito	1821
Upton Sinclair	1722	J. R. R. Tolkien	1824
Isaac Bashevis Singer	1724	Leo Tolstoy	1827
Bessie Smith	1727	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	1830
Socrates	1729	Eiji Toyoda	1832
Stephen Sondheim	1732	Harry S. Truman	1834
Sophocles	1734	Donald Trump	1837
Steven Spielberg	1737	Sojourner Truth	1840
Benjamin Spock	1740	Tu Fu	1843
Joseph Stalin	1743	Tutankhamen	1845
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	1747	Desmond Tutu	1847
Edith Stein	1749	Mark Twain	1850
Gertrude Stein	1752	John Updike	1855
John Steinbeck	1755	Vincent Van Gogh	1859
Robert Louis Stevenson	1757	Jan Vermeer	1862
Bram Stoker	1759	Jules Verne	1864
Oliver Stone	1761	Amerigo Vespucci	1867
Tom Stoppard	1764	Victoria	1869
Harriet Beecher Stowe	1766	Gore Vidal	1872
Antonio Stradivari	1769	Virgil	1874
Johann Strauss	1771	Antonio Vivaldi	1877
Igor Stravinsky	1773	Voltaire	1879
Barbra Streisand	1776	Wernher von Braun	1882
Sun Yat-sen	1779	Kurt Vonnegut	1884
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Richard Wagner	1889
		Alice Walker	1891
		Madame C. J. Walker	1894
		Barbara Walters	1897
		An Wang	1900
		Booker T. Washington	1903
		George Washington	1906
		James Watt	1910
		John Wayne	1913
		Daniel Webster	1916
		Noah Webster	1919
		Orson Welles	1922
		Eudora Welty	1925
		Edith Wharton	1928
		James Whistler	1929
		E. B. White	1932
		Walt Whitman	1935
Volume 10: T–Z			
Maria Tallchief	1785		
Amy Tan	1787		
Elizabeth Taylor	1790		
Peter Ilych Tchaikovsky	1792		
Alfred, Lord Tennyson	1795		
Valentina Tereshkova	1798		
William Makepeace Thackeray	1801		
Twyla Tharp	1804		
Clarence Thomas	1807		
Dylan Thomas	1810		
Henry David Thoreau	1813		
Jim Thorpe	1816		
James Thurber	1819		

Elie Wiesel	1938	Virginia Woolf	1962
Oscar Wilde	1940	William Wordsworth	1965
Laura Ingalls Wilder	1943	Wright Brothers	1969
Thornton Wilder	1946	Frank Lloyd Wright	1972
Tennessee Williams	1948	Richard Wright	1975
Woodrow Wilson	1951	William Butler Yeats	1979
Oprah Winfrey	1954	Boris Yeltsin	1982
Anna May Wong	1958	Paul Zindel	1987
Tiger Woods	1960	<i>Index</i>	xxxv



*entries by
nationality*

African American

Hank Aaron 1: 1
 Ralph Abernathy 1: 4
 Alvin Ailey 1: 34
 Muhammad Ali 1: 47
 Marian Anderson 1: 69
 Maya Angelou 1: 73
 Louis Armstrong 1: 101
 Arthur Ashe 1: 110
 Josephine Baker 1: 152
 James Baldwin 1: 156
 Benjamin Banneker 1: 166
 Count Basie 1: 177
 Chuck Berry 2: 213
 Mary McLeod Bethune 2: 215
 Julian Bond 2: 244
 Gwendolyn Brooks 2: 286

James Brown 2: 291
 Ralph Bunche 2: 312
 Stokely Carmichael 3: 363
 George Washington Carver 3: 383
 Wilt Chamberlain 3: 416
 Ray Charles 3: 430
 Benjamin Chavis Muhammad 3: 443
 Shirley Chisholm 3: 461
 Nat “King” Cole 3: 492
 Bessie Coleman 3: 494
 Marva Collins 3: 499
 Bill Cosby 3: 518
 Miles Davis 3: 558
 Ossie Davis 3: 561
 Sammy Davis Jr. 3: 563
 Ruby Dee 4: 571
 Frederick Douglass 4: 626

Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Jessye Norman	8: 1404
Joycelyn Elders	4: 662	Jesse Owens	8: 1435
Duke Ellington	4: 678	Charlie Parker	8: 1445
Medgar Evers	4: 690	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Louis Farrakhan	4: 698	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Althea Gibson	5: 790	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Alex Haley	5: 843	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Bessie Smith	9: 1727
bell hooks	5: 931	Sojourner Truth	10: 1840
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Alice Walker	10: 1891
Lena Horne	5: 940	Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Reggie Jackson	6: 989		
Mae Jemison	6: 997	<i>Albanian</i>	
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Mother Teresa	7: 1347
James Earl Jones	6: 1027		
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	<i>American</i>	
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Hank Aaron	1: 1
B. B. King	6: 1086	Ralph Abernathy	1: 4
Coretta Scott King	6: 1091	Bella Abzug	1: 7
Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094	Abigail Adams	1: 12
Spike Lee	6: 1126	Ansel Adams	1: 15
Carl Lewis	6: 1141	John Adams	1: 17
Alain Locke	6: 1163	Samuel Adams	1: 20
Malcolm X	7: 1210	Jane Addams	1: 25
Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Spiro Agnew	1: 31
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Alvin Ailey	1: 34
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Madeleine Albright	1: 37
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Louisa May Alcott	1: 39
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	Muhammad Ali	1: 47
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Woody Allen	1: 49
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Julia Alvarez	1: 54
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	American Horse	1: 57

Carl David Anderson	1: 64	Daniel Boone	2: 246
Marian Anderson	1: 69	John Wilkes Booth	2: 248
Maya Angelou	1: 73	Margaret Bourke-White	2: 259
Susan B. Anthony	1: 79	Ray Bradbury	2: 264
Virginia Apgar	1: 81	Ed Bradley	2: 266
Louis Armstrong	1: 101	Mathew Brady	2: 269
Neil Armstrong	1: 102	Louis Brandeis	2: 275
Benedict Arnold	1: 105	Marlon Brando	2: 278
Mary Kay Ash	1: 108	Gwendolyn Brooks	2: 286
Arthur Ashe	1: 110	Helen Gurley Brown	2: 289
Isaac Asimov	1: 113	James Brown	2: 291
Fred Astaire	1: 116	John Brown	2: 294
John Jacob Astor	1: 118	Rachel Fuller Brown	2: 297
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Pat Buchanan	2: 305
John James Audubon	1: 125	Pearl S. Buck	2: 308
Joan Baez	1: 147	Ralph Bunche	2: 312
F. Lee Bailey	1: 150	Warren Burger	2: 314
Josephine Baker	1: 152	Aaron Burr	2: 320
George Balanchine	1: 154	George Bush	2: 323
James Baldwin	1: 156	George W. Bush	2: 326
Lucille Ball	1: 159	Laura Bush	2: 329
David Baltimore	1: 161	Maria Callas	2: 340
Benjamin Banneker	1: 166	Cab Calloway	2: 342
Clara Barton	1: 175	Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Count Basie	1: 177	Al Capone	2: 352
William Beaumont	2: 185	Truman Capote	2: 354
Alexander Graham Bell	2: 196	Frank Capra	2: 357
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200	Stokely Carmichael	3: 363
Saul Bellow	2: 202	Andrew Carnegie	3: 367
William Bennett	2: 204	Johnny Carson	3: 372
Irving Berlin	2: 208	Kit Carson	3: 374
Leonard Bernstein	2: 210	Rachel Carson	3: 377
Chuck Berry	2: 213	Jimmy Carter	3: 379
Mary McLeod Bethune	2: 215	George Washington Carver	3: 383
Owen Bieber	2: 220	Mary Cassatt	3: 388
Billy the Kid	2: 223	Irene Castle	3: 390
Larry Bird	2: 224	Willa Cather	3: 397
Shirley Temple Black	2: 227	Wilt Chamberlain	3: 416
Judy Blume	2: 239	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	3: 419
Humphrey Bogart	2: 242	Ray Charles	3: 430
Julian Bond	2: 244	César Chávez	3: 436

Dennis Chavez	3: 438	Thomas Edison	4: 650
Linda Chavez	3: 440	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	3: 443	Dwight D. Eisenhower	4: 657
John Cheever	3: 447	Mamie Eisenhower	4: 661
Dick Cheney	3: 451	Joycelyn Elders	4: 662
Mary Boykin Chesnut	3: 454	T. S. Eliot	4: 668
Julia Child	3: 459	Duke Ellington	4: 678
Shirley Chisholm	3: 461	Ralph Waldo Emerson	4: 680
Liz Claiborne	3: 478	Medgar Evers	4: 690
Bill Clinton	3: 483	Fannie Farmer	4: 696
Hillary Rodham Clinton	3: 487	Louis Farrakhan	4: 698
Ty Cobb	3: 490	William Faulkner	4: 701
Nat "King" Cole	3: 492	Dianne Feinstein	4: 704
Bessie Coleman	3: 494	Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Marva Collins	3: 499	Geraldine Ferraro	4: 710
Aaron Copland	3: 513	Bobby Fischer	4: 713
Francis Ford Coppola	3: 515	Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715
Bill Cosby	3: 518	F. Scott Fitzgerald	4: 718
Michael Crichton	3: 525	Malcolm Forbes	4: 723
Davy Crockett	3: 527	Henry Ford	4: 725
Walter Cronkite	3: 532	Benjamin Franklin	4: 731
E. E. Cummings	3: 535	Betty Friedan	4: 738
Clarence Darrow	3: 551	Robert Frost	4: 741
Bette Davis	3: 556	John Kenneth Galbraith	4: 745
Miles Davis	3: 558	George Gallup	4: 753
Ossie Davis	3: 561	Judy Garland	4: 764
Sammy Davis Jr.	3: 563	Bill Gates	4: 769
James Dean	4: 567	Theodor Geisel	5: 781
Ruby Dee	4: 571	J. Paul Getty	5: 786
Cecil B. DeMille	4: 585	Althea Gibson	5: 790
John Dewey	4: 594	Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792
Emily Dickinson	4: 603	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	5: 794
Joe DiMaggio	4: 608	Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797
Walt Disney	4: 611	Samuel Gompers	5: 801
Elizabeth Dole	4: 613	Benny Goodman	5: 807
Frederick Douglass	4: 626	Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813
Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Al Gore	5: 816
Pierre Du Pont	4: 638	Jay Gould	5: 818
Amelia Earhart	4: 643	Stephen Jay Gould	5: 821
George Eastman	4: 646	Katharine Graham	5: 824
Clint Eastwood	4: 648	Martha Graham	5: 827

Woody Guthrie	5: 838	Helen Keller	6: 1056
Alex Haley	5: 843	Gene Kelly	6: 1058
Alexander Hamilton	5: 846	Edward Kennedy	6: 1061
Oscar Hammerstein	5: 849	John F. Kennedy	6: 1064
John Hancock	5: 852	John F. Kennedy Jr.	6: 1069
Nathaniel Hawthorne	5: 862	Robert Kennedy	6: 1071
William Randolph Hearst	5: 865	Jack Kerouac	6: 1076
Joseph Heller	5: 870	Charles F. Kettering	6: 1078
Lillian Hellman	5: 872	B. B. King	6: 1086
Ernest Hemingway	5: 875	Billie Jean King	6: 1089
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Coretta Scott King	6: 1091
Patrick Henry	5: 883	Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094
Katharine Hepburn	5: 888	Stephen King	6: 1098
S. E. Hinton	5: 900	Henry Kissinger	6: 1104
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Calvin Klein	6: 1107
Oliver Wendell Holmes	5: 920	Ralph Lauren	6: 1117
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	5: 923	Emma Lazarus	6: 1119
bell hooks	5: 931	Bruce Lee	6: 1124
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Spike Lee	6: 1126
Bob Hope	5: 936	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Lena Horne	5: 940	Carl Lewis	6: 1141
Harry Houdini	5: 943	Sinclair Lewis	6: 1144
Julia Ward Howe	5: 949	Roy Lichtenstein	6: 1146
Howard Hughes	5: 951	Abraham Lincoln	6: 1150
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Charles Lindbergh	6: 1154
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Alain Locke	6: 1163
Lee Iacocca	5: 967	Jack London	6: 1168
Washington Irving	5: 975	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	6: 1170
Andrew Jackson	6: 979	Joe Louis	6: 1173
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	George Lucas	6: 1175
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Douglas MacArthur	7: 1185
Reggie Jackson	6: 989	Dolley Madison	7: 1191
Thomas Jefferson	6: 994	James Madison	7: 1194
Mae Jemison	6: 997	Madonna	7: 1197
Steve Jobs	6: 1007	Norman Mailer	7: 1205
Lyndon B. Johnson	6: 1016	Bernard Malamud	7: 1390
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Malcolm X	7: 1210
Al Jolson	6: 1025	David Mamet	7: 1214
James Earl Jones	6: 1027	Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	Mickey Mantle	7: 1224
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Rocky Marciano	7: 1230

Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Pocahontas	8: 1488
Cotton Mather	7: 1252	Edgar Allan Poe	8: 1490
Mayo Brothers	7: 1258	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Cole Porter	8: 1505
Joseph McCarthy	7: 1264	Katherine Anne Porter	8: 1507
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Emily Post	8: 1509
John McEnroe	7: 1270	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Elvis Presley	8: 1517
Aimee Semple McPherson	7: 1275	André Previn	8: 1520
Margaret Mead	7: 1277	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	E. Annie Proulx	8: 1524
Harvey Milk	7: 1298	Joseph Pulitzer	8: 1531
Edna St. Vincent Millay	7: 1303	George Pullman	8: 1533
Arthur Miller	7: 1305	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Henry Miller	7: 1308	Ronald Reagan	8: 1557
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Christopher Reeve	8: 1561
Marilyn Monroe	7: 1325	Erich Maria Remarque	8: 1564
Joe Montana	7: 1327	Janet Reno	8: 1568
Jim Morrison	7: 1336	Paul Revere	8: 1574
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Samuel F. B. Morse	7: 1341	Sally Ride	9: 1585
Grandma Moses	7: 1345	Cal Ripken, Jr.	9: 1591
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
John Muir	7: 1360	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Vladimir Nabokov	7: 1371	John D. Rockefeller	9: 1604
Ralph Nader	7: 1373	Norman Rockwell	9: 1607
Ogden Nash	7: 1379	Richard Rodgers	9: 1610
Richard Nixon	8: 1392	Will Rogers	9: 1615
Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398	Eleanor Roosevelt	9: 1621
Jessye Norman	8: 1404	Franklin D. Roosevelt	9: 1624
Joyce Carol Oates	8: 1413	Theodore Roosevelt	9: 1628
Sandra Day O'Connor	8: 1416	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Georgia O'Keeffe	8: 1420	Carl Rowan	9: 1639
Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	8: 1425	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Eugene O'Neill	8: 1428	Babe Ruth	9: 1651
Jesse Owens	8: 1435	Nolan Ryan	9: 1653
Arnold Palmer	8: 1441	Albert Sabin	9: 1657
Charlie Parker	8: 1445	Carl Sagan	9: 1659
Linus Pauling	8: 1453	J. D. Salinger	9: 1664
I. M. Pei	8: 1464	Jonas Salk	9: 1667
Sylvia Plath	8: 1483	Carl Sandburg	9: 1671

Margaret Sanger	9: 1673	An Wang	10: 1900
Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	9: 1681	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Charles M. Schulz	9: 1687	George Washington	10: 1906
Martin Scorsese	9: 1690	John Wayne	10: 1913
Selena	9: 1698	Daniel Webster	10: 1916
Sequoyah	9: 1701	Noah Webster	10: 1919
Beverly Sills	9: 1714	Orson Welles	10: 1922
Neil Simon	9: 1716	Eudora Welty	10: 1925
Frank Sinatra	9: 1719	Edith Wharton	10: 1928
Upton Sinclair	9: 1722	James Whistler	10: 1929
Isaac Bashevis Singer	9: 1724	E. B. White	10: 1932
Bessie Smith	9: 1727	Walt Whitman	10: 1935
Stephen Sondheim	9: 1732	Elie Wiesel	10: 1938
Steven Spielberg	9: 1737	Laura Ingalls Wilder	10: 1943
Benjamin Spock	9: 1740	Thornton Wilder	10: 1946
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	9: 1747	Tennessee Williams	10: 1948
Gertrude Stein	9: 1752	Woodrow Wilson	10: 1951
John Steinbeck	9: 1755	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Oliver Stone	9: 1761	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Harriet Beecher Stowe	9: 1766	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Igor Stravinsky	9: 1773	Wright Brothers	10: 1969
Barbra Streisand	9: 1776	Frank Lloyd Wright	10: 1972
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Amy Tan	10: 1787	Paul Zindel	10: 1987
Elizabeth Taylor	10: 1790		
Twyla Tharp	10: 1804	<i>Arabian</i>	
Clarence Thomas	10: 1807	Muhammad	7: 1355
Henry David Thoreau	10: 1813		
Jim Thorpe	10: 1816	<i>Argentine</i>	
James Thurber	10: 1819	Eva Perón	8: 1474
Harry S. Truman	10: 1834		
Donald Trump	10: 1837	<i>Asian American</i>	
Sojourner Truth	10: 1840	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Mark Twain	10: 1850	Maya Lin	6: 1148
John Updike	10: 1855	Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398
Gore Vidal	10: 1872	I. M. Pei	8: 1464
Wernher von Braun	10: 1882	Amy Tan	10: 1787
Kurt Vonnegut	10: 1884	An Wang	10: 1900
Alice Walker	10: 1891	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Barbara Walters	10: 1897		

Australian

Rupert Murdoch 7: 1364

Austrian

Joy Adamson 1: 22

Alfred Adler 1: 27

Sigmund Freud 4: 735

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart 7: 1350

Franz Schubert 9: 1684

Johann Strauss 9: 1771

Belgian

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886

Brazilian

Pelé 8: 1467

Burmese

Aung San Suu Kyi 1: 130

Cambodian

Pol Pot 8: 1495

Dith Pran 8: 1514

Canadian

Margaret Atwood 1: 120

Frederick Banting 1: 168

Jean Chrétien 3: 467

John Kenneth Galbraith 4: 745

Wayne Gretzky 5: 833

Gordie Howe 5: 946

Aimee Semple McPherson 7: 1275

Chilean

Isabel Allende 1: 52

Chinese

Chiang Kai-shek 3: 456

Confucius 3: 503

Deng Xiaoping 4: 587

Jiang Zemin 6: 1003

Lao Tzu 6: 1115

Tsung-Dao Lee 6: 1129

Mao Zedong 7: 1226

I. M. Pei 8: 1464

Sun Yat-sen 9: 1779

Tu Fu 10: 1843

An Wang 10: 1900

Colombian

Gabriel García Márquez 7: 762

Congolese

Patrice Lumumba 6: 1178

Cuban

Fidel Castro 3: 393

Czech

Madeleine Albright 1: 37

Franz Kafka 6: 1047

Tom Stoppard 9: 1764

Danish

Hans Christian Andersen 1: 62

Dutch

Desiderius Erasmus 4: 683

Rembrandt 8: 1566

Vincent Van Gogh 10: 1859

Egyptian

Boutros Boutros-Ghali 2: 261

Cleopatra VII 3: 480

Imhotep 5: 972

Najib Mahfuz 7: 1203

Moses 7: 1343

Hosni Mubarak 7: 1353

Nefertiti 7: 1381

Tutankhamen 10: 1845

English

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	1: 66	Cary Grant	5: 829
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Graham Greene	5: 831
Jane Austen	1: 132	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Charles Babbage	1: 139	Thomas Hardy	5: 857
Francis Bacon	1: 143	Stephen Hawking	5: 860
Roger Bacon	1: 145	Henry VIII	5: 880
Beatles	2: 181	Alfred Hitchcock	5: 907
Elizabeth Blackwell	2: 229	Thomas Hobbes	5: 915
William Blake	2: 234	P. D. James	6: 991
William Booth	2: 250	Elton John	6: 1011
Charlotte Brontë	2: 283	Samuel Johnson	6: 1023
Emily Brontë	2: 284	Ben Jonson	6: 1032
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	2: 299	John Keats	6: 1054
Robert Browning	2: 302	Rudyard Kipling	6: 1101
Lord Byron	2: 331	Mary Leakey	6: 1121
Lewis Carroll	3: 370	Joseph Lister	6: 1159
Vernon Castle	3: 390	Andrew Lloyd Webber	6: 1161
Henry Cavendish	3: 404	John Locke	6: 1166
Charlie Chaplin	3: 421	John Stuart Mill	7: 1301
Charles, Prince of Wales	3: 427	John Milton	7: 1313
Geoffrey Chaucer	3: 433	Thomas More	7: 1334
Agatha Christie	3: 469	Isaac Newton	7: 1382
Winston Churchill	3: 472	Florence Nightingale	8: 1390
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	3: 496	Laurence Olivier	8: 1422
Joseph Conrad	3: 508	George Orwell	8: 1430
Noel Coward	3: 523	William Penn	8: 1469
Oliver Cromwell	3: 529	Alexander Pope	8: 1502
Charles Darwin	3: 554	Walter Raleigh	8: 1547
Daniel Defoe	4: 574	Cecil Rhodes	9: 1577
Diana, Princess of Wales	4: 597	Rolling Stones	9: 1618
Charles Dickens	4: 600	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	9: 1634
John Donne	4: 621	J. K. Rowling	9: 1641
Arthur Conan Doyle	4: 629	William Shakespeare	9: 1702
Francis Drake	4: 632	Mary Shelley	9: 1708
George Eliot	4: 665	Percy Shelley	9: 1711
T. S. Eliot	4: 668	Tom Stoppard	9: 1764
Elizabeth I	4: 672	Alfred, Lord Tennyson	10: 1795
Elizabeth II	4: 675	William Makepeace Thackeray	10: 1801
William Golding	5: 800	J. R. R. Tolkien	10: 1824
Jane Goodall	5: 804	Victoria	10: 1869
		Oscar Wilde	10: 1940

Virginia Woolf	10: 1963	Molière	7: 1318
William Wordsworth	10: 1965	Claude Monet	7: 1320
<i>Ethiopian</i>		Montesquieu	7: 1329
Haile Selassie	9: 1697	Napoleon Bonaparte	7: 1376
<i>Filipino</i>		Nostradamus	8: 1406
Benigno Aquino	1: 84	Blaise Pascal	8: 1447
Ferdinand Marcos	7: 1233	Louis Pasteur	8: 1450
<i>Flemish</i>		Marcel Proust	8: 1526
Peter Paul Rubens	9: 1643	Pierre Auguste Renoir	8: 1571
<i>Frankish</i>		Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	9: 1583
Charlemagne	3: 424	Maximilien de Robespierre	9: 1599
<i>French</i>		Auguste Rodin	9: 1613
John James Audubon	1: 125	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	9: 1636
Honoré de Balzac	1: 164	George Sand	9: 1669
Simone de Beauvoir	2: 187	Jean-Paul Sartre	9: 1676
Louis Braille	2: 273	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	10: 1830
John Calvin	2: 344	Jan Vermeer	10: 1862
Albert Camus	2: 349	Jules Verne	10: 1864
Paul Cézanne	3: 411	Voltaire	10: 1879
Jacques Cousteau	3: 521	<i>German</i>	
Marie Curie	3: 538	Hannah Arendt	1: 91
Claude Debussy	4: 569	John Jacob Astor	1: 118
Edgar Degas	4: 576	Johann Sebastian Bach	1: 141
Charles de Gaulle	4: 579	Klaus Barbie	1: 170
René Descartes	4: 590	Ludwig van Beethoven	2: 192
Denis Diderot	4: 606	Konrad Bloch	2: 237
Alexandre Dumas	4: 634	Johannes Brahms	2: 271
Gustave Flaubert	4: 721	Catherine the Great	3: 401
Paul Gauguin	4: 773	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Victor Hugo	5: 957	Gabriel Fahrenheit	4: 695
Joan of Arc	6: 1005	Karl Friedrich Gauss	4: 775
Marquis de Lafayette	6: 1113	Hans Geiger	5: 779
Édouard Manet	7: 1219	Brothers Grimm	5: 836
Marie Antoinette	7: 1238	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Henri Matisse	7: 1255	Werner Heisenberg	5: 868
		William Herschel	5: 893
		Adolf Hitler	5: 909
		Franz Kafka	6: 1047
		Immanuel Kant	6: 1052

Johannes Kepler 6: 1074
 Henry Kissinger 6: 1104
 Martin Luther 6: 1181
 Karl Marx 7: 1246
 Felix Mendelssohn 7: 1289
 Friedrich Nietzsche 8: 1387
 André Previn 8: 1520
 Erich Maria Remarque 8: 1564
 Leni Riefenstahl 9: 1588
 Oskar Schindler 9: 1678
 Edith Stein 9: 1749
 Wernher von Braun 10: 1882
 Richard Wagner 10: 1889

Ghanian

Kofi Annan 1: 76

Greek

Aeschylus 1: 29
 Archimedes 1: 89
 Aristophanes 1: 96
 Aristotle 1: 98
 Euclid 4: 686
 Euripides 4: 688
 Galen 4: 748
 Hippocrates 5: 902
 Homer 5: 926
 Pericles 8: 1472
 Plato 8: 1485
 Pythagoras 8: 1540
 Socrates 9: 1729
 Sophocles 9: 1734

Guatemalan

Rigoberta Menchú 7: 1286

Haitian

Jean-Bertrand Aristide 1: 93
 François Duvalier 4: 640

Hispanic American

César Chávez 3: 436
 Dennis Chavez 3: 438
 Linda Chavez 3: 440
 Selena 9: 1698

Hungarian

Joseph Pulitzer 8: 1531

Indian

Buddha 2: 310
 Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar 3: 419
 Indira Gandhi 4: 754
 Mohandas Gandhi 4: 758
 Sri Ramakrishna 8: 1550
 Salman Rushdie 9: 1649

Iranian

Ayatollah Khomeini 6: 1081
 Mohammad Reza Pahlavi 8: 1439

Iraqi

Saddam Hussein 5: 962

Irish

Samuel Beckett 2: 189
 Michael Collins 3: 501
 James Joyce 6: 1038
 C. S. Lewis 6: 1139
 George Bernard Shaw 9: 1706
 Bram Stoker 9: 1759
 Oscar Wilde 10: 1940
 William Butler Yeats 10: 1979

Israeli

Menachem Begin 2: 194
 Golda Meir 7: 1284

Italian

Fra Angelico 1: 71

Lucrezia Borgia	2: 252
Sandro Botticelli	2: 257
Caligula	2: 338
Frank Capra	2: 357
Donatello	4: 619
Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Francis of Assisi	4: 729
Galileo	4: 750
Leonardo da Vinci	6: 1136
Niccolò Machiavelli	7: 1188
Catherine de' Medici	7: 1281
Michelangelo	7: 1295
Maria Montessori	7: 1331
Benito Mussolini	7: 1367
Luciano Pavarotti	8: 1456
Antonio Stradivari	9: 1769
Amerigo Vespucci	10: 1867
Antonio Vivaldi	10: 1877

Jamaican

Marcus Garvey	4: 767
-------------------------	--------

Japanese

Hirohito	5: 904
Soichiro Honda	5: 929
Eiji Toyoda	10: 1832

Judean

Herod the Great	5: 891
---------------------------	--------

Lebanese

Kahlil Gibran	5: 788
-------------------------	--------

Libyan

Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	8: 1543
-------------------------------	---------

Lithuanian

Al Jolson	6: 1025
---------------------	---------

Macedonian

Alexander the Great	1: 43
Ptolemy I	8: 1528

Mexican

Lázaro Cárdenas	3: 361
Benito Juárez	6: 1040
Diego Rivera	9: 1593

Mongolian

Genghis Khan	5: 784
Kublai Khan	6: 1109

Native American

American Horse	1: 57
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Pocahontas	8: 1488
Sequoyah	9: 1701
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785

New Zealander

Edmund Hillary	5: 898
--------------------------	--------

Nigerian

Chinua Achebe	1: 10
-------------------------	-------

Norwegian

Thor Heyerdahl	5: 895
Henrik Ibsen	5: 970
Edvard Munch	7: 1362

Pakistani

Benazir Bhutto	2: 218
--------------------------	--------

Palestinian

Yasir Arafat	1: 86
------------------------	-------

Panamanian

Manuel Noriega 8: 1401

Persian

Harun al-Rashid 8: 1555

Polish

Baal Shem Tov 1: 137

Menachem Begin 2: 194

Frédéric Chopin 3: 464

Joseph Conrad 3: 508

Nicolaus Copernicus 3: 510

Marie Curie 3: 538

John Paul II 6: 1013

Albert Sabin 9: 1657

Isaac Bashevis Singer 9: 1724

Portuguese

Ferdinand Magellan 7: 1201

Roman

Augustus 1: 128

Julius Caesar 2: 335

Marcus Tullius Cicero 3: 475

Jesus of Nazareth 6: 1000

Marcus Aurelius 7: 1236

Mark Antony 7: 1240

Ovid 8: 1432

Virgil 10: 1874

Romanian

Elie Wiesel 10: 1939

Russian

Alexander II 1: 41

Isaac Asimov 1: 113

George Balanchine 1: 154

Irving Berlin 2: 208

Leonid Brezhnev 2: 280

Catherine the Great 3: 401

Marc Chagall 3: 414

Anton Chekhov 3: 449

Fyodor Dostoevsky 4: 624

Mikhail Gorbachev 5: 809

Wassily Kandinsky 6: 1050

Nikita Khrushchev 6: 1083

Vladimir Lenin 6: 1131

Vladimir Nabokov 7: 1371

Rudolf Nureyev 8: 1409

Ivan Pavlov 8: 1459

Anna Pavlova 8: 1462

Aleksandr Pushkin 8: 1535

Vladimir Putin 8: 1537

Andrei Sakharov 9: 1662

Joseph Stalin 9: 1743

Igor Stravinsky 9: 1773

Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky 10: 1792

Valentina Tereshkova 10: 1798

Leo Tolstoy 10: 1827

Boris Yeltsin 10: 1982

Scottish

Alexander Graham Bell 2: 196

Tony Blair 2: 232

Robert Burns 2: 317

Andrew Carnegie 3: 367

Sean Connery 3: 506

Arthur Conan Doyle 4: 629

Mary, Queen of Scots 7: 1249

John Muir 7: 1360

Walter Scott 9: 1693

Robert Louis Stevenson 9: 1757

James Watt 10: 1910

Serbian

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310

South African

Christiaan Barnard 1: 173

P. W. Botha 2: 255

F. W. de Klerk 4: 581

Nelson Mandela 7: 1216
Desmond Tutu 10: 1847

Spanish

Pablo Casals 3: 386
Catherine of Aragon 3: 399
Miguel de Cervantes 3: 408
Salvador Dali 3: 549
Hernando de Soto 4: 592
Placido Domingo 4: 616
Joan Miró 7: 1316
Pablo Picasso 8: 1479
Juan Ponce de León 8: 1501

Swedish

Ingmar Bergman 2: 206
Anders Celsius 3: 407
Carl Linnaeus 6: 1157
Alfred Nobel 8: 1397

Swiss

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886
Carl Jung 6: 1043
Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus 8: 1443
Jean Piaget 8: 1477

Tibetan

Dalai Lama 3: 546

Trinidadian

Stokely Carmichael 3: 363

Ugandan

Idi Amin 1: 59

Venetian

Marco Polo 8: 1498

Vietnamese

Ho Chi Minh 5: 913

Welsh

Roald Dahl 3: 543
Anthony Hopkins 5: 938
Dylan Thomas 10: 1810

Yugoslav

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310
Marshal Tito 10: 1821



reader's guide

U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography features 750 biographies of notable historic and contemporary figures from around the world. Chosen from American history, world history, literature, science and math, arts and entertainment, and the social sciences, the entries focus on the people studied most often in middle school and high school, as identified by teachers and media specialists.

The biographies are arranged alphabetically across ten volumes. The two- to four-page entries cover the early lives, influences, and careers of notable men and women of diverse fields and ethnic groups. Each essay includes birth and death information in the header and concludes with a list of sources

for further information. A contents section lists biographees by their nationality. Nearly 750 photographs and illustrations are featured, and a general index provides quick access to the people and subjects discussed throughout *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

Special thanks

Much appreciation goes to Mary Alice Anderson, media specialist at Winona Middle School in Winona, Minnesota, and Nina Levine, library media specialist at Blue Mountain Middle School in Cortlandt Manor, New York, for their assistance in developing the entry list. Many thanks also go to the following people for their important editorial contri-

butions: Taryn Benbow-Pfalzgraf (proofreading), Jodi Essey-Stapleton (copyediting and proofing), Margaret Haerens (proofreading), Courtney Mroch (copyediting), and Theresa Murray (copyediting and indexing). Special gratitude goes to Linda Mahoney at LM Design for her excellent typesetting work and her flexible attitude.

Comments and suggestions

We welcome your comments on the *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*. Please write: Editors, *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*, U•X•L, 27500 Drake Road, Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535; call toll-free: 1-800-877-4253; fax to 248-699-8097; or send e-mail via www.gale.com.



BEATLES

English rock and roll band

In the 1960s a new band known as the Beatles burst on the pop music scene and changed it forever. Band members included George Harrison (1943–2001), John Lennon (1940–1980), Paul McCartney (1942–), and Ringo Starr (1940–). With the release of three anthologies (collections) in the mid-1990s, the Beatles remain one of the best-selling musical groups of all time.

Early days

The Beatles came from Liverpool, England, and were originally inspired by the

simple guitar-and-washboard style “skiffle” music. Skiffle was a lively type of acoustic (nonelectric) music that used songs from British and American folk and popular music. Later such U.S. pop artists as Elvis Presley (1935–1977), Buddy Holly (1936–1959), and Little Richard (1932–) influenced them. All four members of the Beatles had an early interest in music.

The Beatles started when John Lennon formed his own group, called the Quarrymen, in 1956. Paul McCartney joined the group as a guitarist in 1957. Fourteen-year-old George Harrison, though a skilled guitarist, did not initially impress seventeen-year-old Lennon, but eventually won a permanent spot in the developing group. The



The Beatles.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Beatles went through several additional members as well as through several name changes. After the Quarrymen they became Johnny and the Moondogs. Later they called themselves the Silver Beatles, and, eventually, simply The Beatles. They played not only in Liverpool, but also in Scotland and in Hamburg, Germany, in 1960.

When the Beatles' bass player, Stu Sutcliffe, decided to leave, McCartney took over that instrument. Upon their return to England, a record shop manager named Brian Epstein approached the band about becoming their manager. Within a year of signing Epstein on

as manager, the Beatles gained a recording contract from EMI Records producer George Martin. Drummer Pete Best left the group and a sad-eyed drummer named Richard Starkey, better known as Ringo Starr, joined.

Despite initial doubts, George Martin agreed to use Lennon and McCartney originals on both sides of the Beatles' first single. "Love Me Do," released on October 5, 1962, convinced Martin that, with the right material, the Beatles could achieve a number one record. He was proven correct.

First successes

The Beatles' "Please Please Me," released in Britain on January 12, 1963, was an immediate hit. The Beatles' first British album, recorded in one thirteen-hour session, remained number one on the charts for six months. The United States remained uninterested until, one month before the Beatles' arrival, EMI's U.S. company, Capitol Records, launched an unprecedented (never done before) fifty thousand dollar promotional campaign. The publicity and the Beatles' American tour-opening performance on *The Ed Sullivan Show*, the most popular entertainment show on television at the time, paid off handsomely. They were given the nicknames "The Fab Four" and "The Mop Tops" (because of their hair styles). The devotion of their fans was called Beatlemania.

The Beatles' "I Want to Hold Your Hand," released in the United States in January 1964, hit number one within three weeks. After seven weeks at the top of the charts, it dropped to number two to make room for "She Loves You," which gave way to "Can't Buy Me Love." As many as three new songs a week were released, until, on April 4,

1964, the Beatles held the top five slots on the Billboard (a recording industry publication) list of top sellers. They also had another seven songs in the top one hundred, plus four album positions, including the top two. One week later fourteen of the top one hundred songs were the Beatles'—a feat that had never been matched before, nor has it since.

New career in movies

Also in 1964 the Beatles appeared in the first of several innovative full-length feature films. Shot in black-and-white and well-received by critics, *A Hard Day's Night* was a fictional representation of a day in the life of the group. Critics and fans loved it. *Help* was released in July 1965. It was a madcap (recklessly foolish) fantasy filmed in color. Exotic locations in Europe and the Bahamas made *Help* visually more interesting than the first film, but critics were less impressed.

Growth and controversy

The Beatles' 1965 and 1966 albums *Rubber Soul* and *Revolver* marked a turning point in the band's recording history. The most original of their collections to date, both combined Eastern, country-western, soul, and classical motifs with trend-setting covers, breaking any mold that seemed to define "rock and roll." In both albums balladry (songs that tell stories), classical instrumentation, and new structure resulted in brilliant new concepts. Songs such as "Tomorrow Never Knows," "Eleanor Rigby," and the lyrical "Norwegian Wood" made use of sophisticated (subtle and complex) recording techniques. This was the beginning of the end for the group's touring, since live performances of such songs were technically impossible at the time.

The Beatles became further distanced from their fans, when, in an interview with a *London Evening Standard* writer, Lennon said, "We're more popular than Jesus Christ now." Later Lennon said he was misunderstood. Some American teenagers took Lennon's words literally, however. They burned Beatles' albums, and the group finished their last U.S. tour amid riots and death threats.

The change of rock and roll

Acclaimed by critics, with advance sales of more than one million, the Beatles' *Sgt. Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band* (1967) was perhaps the high point of their recording career. It was not simply a "collection" of Lennon-McCartney and Harrison originals. Presented in a stunning and evocative album package, it was thematically (everything related to one idea) whole and artistically pleasing. Most critics believe it will remain timeless. It contains imaginative melodies and songs about many life experiences, philosophy, and unusual imagery. The Beatles' music had evolved from catchy love songs to profound ballads and social commentary. Trying new things seemed to be an essential part of the Beatles' lives. Influenced greatly by Harrison's interest in India, the Beatles visited the Maharishi Mahesh Yogi in India.

The long winding road down

The Beatles' next cooperative project was the scripting and directing of another film, *Magical Mystery Tour* (1967) for the British Broadcasting Company (BBC). It was an unrehearsed, unorganized failure. Intended to be fresh, it drew criticism as a compilation of adolescent humor, gag bits, and undisciplined boredom. The accompanying album, howev-

er, featured polished studio numbers such as McCartney's "Fool on the Hill" and Lennon's "I Am the Walrus," as well as "Penny Lane," "Hello Goodbye," and "Strawberry Fields Forever," which were not included in the film.

Growing differences between artistic approaches pointed to the Beatles breaking up. In 1968 they recorded a two-record set, simply called *The Beatles*. It was the first album released by the group's new record company, Apple. *The White Album*, as it was commonly known, had a variety of songs that had no connection to each other and, some felt, that were often difficult to understand. There particularly appeared to be a growing break between Lennon and McCartney. McCartney contributed ballads like "Blackbird," while Lennon gave antiwar statements like "Revolution" and made fun of the Maharishi. Harrison, on the other hand, shone in "While My Guitar Gently Weeps," aided by Eric Clapton's tasteful guitar solo. For the first time Starr was allotted the space for an original, the country-western "Don't Pass Me By," which became a number-one hit in Scandinavia (northern Europe), where it was released as a single.

The Beatles' animated feature film *Yellow Submarine* was released in July 1968. A fantasy about the Beatles battling against the Blue Meanies, the film was visually pleasing, but did not make much money when it was first released.

The remainder of 1968 and 1969 saw the individual Beatles continuing to work apart. Starr appeared in the film *The Magic Christian*. Lennon performed live outside the Beatles in a group called the Plastic Ono Band with his wife Yoko Ono (1933–).

Last works

The Beatles spent months filming and recording for *Let It Be*. It was supposed to be a film of how the group worked together. It ended up as a film showing the group falling apart. Editing would have made release before 1970 impossible, so the project was put on hold. Instead, for the final time, the Beatles gathered to produce an album "the way we used to do it," as McCartney was quoted in Philip Norman's book, *Shout!* The result was as stunning as *Sgt. Pepper* had been. All their problems seemed to vanish on the album *Abbey Road* (1969). The Beatles were at their best. The album contained such classics as "Come Together," "Golden Slumbers," "Octopus's Garden," and Harrison's "Here Comes the Sun" and "Something," which Lennon hailed the best track on the album. They won yet another Grammy Award.

American producer Phil Spector (1940–) took over the Beatles' *Let It Be* project in 1970. The resulting film and album, released in 1971, got mixed reviews. Band members were seen quarreling and unresponsive to McCartney's attempts to raise morale (spirit). By the end of 1970 all four Beatles had recorded solo albums. In 1971 McCartney sued to legally end the group. Throughout the 1970s promoters attempted to reunite them without success.

The end of an era

Mark David Chapman murdered John Lennon on December 8, 1980, in New York City, New York. In the mid-1990s, however, new music was released under the original band name. The remaining Beatles played over songs Lennon had left on tape. The singles

“Free as a Bird” and “Real Love” were released as parts of anthologies featuring material from earlier Beatles recording sessions.

George Harrison died on November 29, 2001, in Los Angeles, California, of brain cancer. Both Paul McCartney and Ringo Starr continue to record. The Beatles were a major influence not only in rock and roll but also in the creation of modern popular music. The Beatles were inducted into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame in 1988. Lennon and McCartney have also been inducted as solo performers.

For More Information

The Beatles Anthology. San Francisco: Chronicle Books, 2000.

Davies, Hunter. *The Beatles*. 2nd rev. ed. New York: W. W. Norton, 1996.

Hertsgaard, Mark. *A Day in the Life*. New York, NY: Delacorte Press, 1995.

Knight, Judson. *Abbey Road to Zapple Records: A Beatles Encyclopedia*. Dallas: Taylor, 1999.

Turner, Steve. *A Hard Day's Write: The Stories Behind Every Beatles Song*. New York: HarperPerennial, 1999.

Venezia, Mike. *The Beatles*. New York: Children's Press, 1997.

WILLIAM BEAUMONT

Born: November 21, 1785
Lebanon, Connecticut

Died: April 25, 1853

St. Louis, Missouri

American surgeon

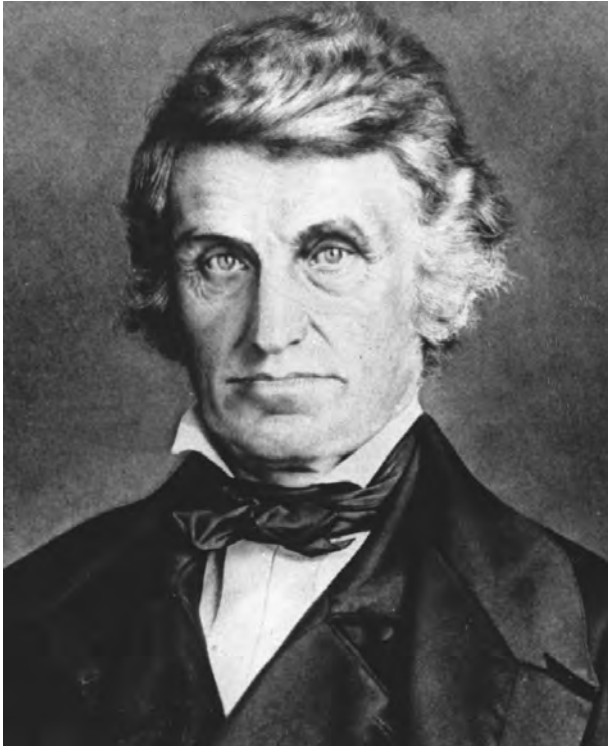
The American surgeon William Beaumont is remembered for extensive studies of the human digestive system based on the experiments of a live patient.

Early life and career

William Beaumont was born in Lebanon, Connecticut, on November 21, 1785. He grew up on the family farm and attended village schools until 1806, when he left home to become the village schoolmaster in Champlain, New York. He began studying medicine in his spare time, and in 1810 he became an apprentice (one who works for another to learn a profession) to a doctor in Vermont. While living with the doctor and performing household duties, Beaumont gained invaluable experience by watching and sometimes assisting the doctor. While still a student, he began a lifelong habit of keeping a journal describing daily events and the symptoms and treatment of patients.

In 1812 the Third Medical Society of the State of Vermont recommended Beaumont as a medical practitioner. Soon afterward Beaumont served as a surgeon's mate in the War of 1812, where American forces clashed with the British over, among other things, trade. In his journal he described long and exhausting days and nights spent treating the wounded.

After the war Beaumont returned to private practice in Plattsburg, New York. In 1820 he reenlisted as an army surgeon and was sent to Fort Mackinac in the Michigan Territory. His account of the journey contains



William Beaumont.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

vivid descriptions of the voyage along the recently completed Erie Canal (a key waterway that connects the Great Lakes) and through the Canadian wilderness. He was the only doctor in the territory, and his practice included soldiers and their families, Native Americans, trappers, and settlers. In 1821 Beaumont returned briefly to Plattsburgh and married Deborah Platt.

A new development

On June 6, 1822 Alexis St. Martin, a young Canadian, suffered a stomach wound in a hunting accident. Beaumont was called to treat him. He described the terrible wound:

“The whole charge, consisting of powder and duck shot, was received in the left side at not more than two or three feet distance from the muzzle of the piece . . . carrying away by its force integuments [skin of the organs] more than the size of the palm of a man’s hand.”

With Beaumont’s skillful surgery and care that followed, St. Martin recovered but was left with a permanent opening in his stomach. When authorities threatened to send the recovering man back to Canada, Beaumont supported him in his own house for several years. During this time he was able to study the digestive process by examining the interior of the patient’s stomach as various foods were ingested (swallowed). Beaumont’s observations and chemical analyses of gastric juices (acidic juices found in the stomach) provided the foundations for conclusions which are still used today.

In 1824 when Beaumont was transferred to Fort Niagara, New York, he attempted to take St. Martin with him, but the young man returned to Canada. President John Quincy Adams (1767–1848) promoted Beaumont to the rank of surgeon in 1826. He served at Green Bay, Wisconsin, and later at Fort Crawford, Wisconsin. Meanwhile, he had finally persuaded St. Martin to come to Fort Crawford for further experiments, but his plans to take his patient to Europe for demonstrations and study were interrupted by an outbreak of cholera, an oftentimes fatal infection transmitted through water.

Later in 1832 Beaumont used a six-month leave of absence to take St. Martin to Washington, D.C., for an extensive series of experiments. Both the surgeon general and the secretary of war supported the project with funds and facilities, and they even enlisted St. Martin

in the army as sergeant in exchange for his cooperation. These experiments led to Beaumont's *Experiments and Observations on the Gastric Juice and the Physiology of Digestion* (1833). The book is divided into two parts, one which details the experiments themselves, and another that discusses the processes of digestion.

Beaumont had additional experiments in mind, but St. Martin returned to Canada forever in 1834. Beaumont's last post was in St. Louis, Missouri, where he remained for the rest of his life. After his retirement in 1840, he continued private practice until his death on April 25, 1853.

For More Information

Epstein, Sam, and Beryl Epstein. *Dr. Beaumont and the Man with the Hole in His Stomach*. New York: Coward, McCann & Geoghegan, 1978.

Horsman, Reginald. *Frontier Doctor: William Beaumont, America's First Great Medical Scientist*. Columbia: University of Missouri Press, 1996.

SIMONE DE BEAUVOIR

Born: January 9, 1908

Paris, France

Died: April 14, 1986

Paris, France

French author and writer

The work of Simone de Beauvoir, a French writer, became the basis of the modern women's movement.

Her writing dealt with the struggles of women in a male-controlled world.

Early years

The first of two daughters of Georges and Françoise de Beauvoir, a middle-class couple, Simone de Beauvoir was born in Paris, France, on January 9, 1908. Her father was a lawyer and had no religious beliefs; her mother was a strong believer in Catholicism. Simone was educated at a strict Catholic school for girls. After World War I (1914–18), her father suffered money problems, and the family moved to a smaller home. Beauvoir entered the Sorbonne and began to take courses in philosophy (the search for an understanding of the world and man's place in it) to become a teacher. By this time she no longer believed all she had been taught in Catholic school. She also began keeping a journal—which became a lifetime habit—and writing some stories.

Link with Sartre

When Beauvoir was twenty-one she joined a group of philosophy students including Jean-Paul Sartre (1905–1980). Her relationship with Sartre was to continue throughout most of their lives. Sartre was the father of existentialism—a belief that man is on his own, “condemned to be free,” as Sartre said in *Being and Nothingness*. He was also the single most important influence on Beauvoir's life. In 1929 he suggested that, rather than be married, the two sign a contract that could be renewed or cancelled after two years. When the agreement ended, Sartre was offered a job teaching philosophy in Le Havre, France, and Beauvoir was offered a similar job in Marseilles, France. He suggest-



Simone de Beauvoir.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

ed they get married, but after some thought they both rejected the idea.

The first installment of Beauvoir's autobiography (the story of her life), *Memoirs of a Dutiful Daughter*, describes her rejection of her parents' middle-class lives. The second volume, *The Prime of Life*, covers the years 1929 through 1944, a time when she and Sartre were both teaching in Paris and she was, she said, too happy to write. That happiness ended with the beginning of World War II (1939–45) and problems in her relationship with Sartre, who became involved with another woman and was also imprisoned for more than a year. During this

unhappy time Beauvoir composed her first major novel, *She Came to Stay* (1943), a study of the effects of love and jealousy. In the next four years she published *The Blood of Others*, *Pyrrhus et Cinéas*, *Les Bouches Inutiles*, and *All Men are Mortal*. *America Day By Day*, a chronicle of Beauvoir's 1947 trip to the United States, and the third part of her autobiography, *Force of Circumstances*, cover the period during which the author was writing *The Second Sex*.

The Second Sex

Written in 1949, *The Second Sex* had two main ideas: that man, who views himself as the essential being, has made woman into the inessential being, "the Other," and that femininity as a trait is an artificial posture. Sartre influenced both of these ideas. *The Second Sex* was perhaps the most important writing on women's rights through the 1980s. When it first appeared, however, it was not very popular. *The Second Sex* does not offer any real solutions to the problems of women except the hope "that men and women rise above their natural differentiation (differences) and unequivocally (firmly) affirm their brotherhood." The description of Beauvoir's own life revealed the possibilities available to the woman who found ways to escape her situation. Hers was a life of equality, and she remained a voice and a model for those women not living free lives.

The fourth installment of her autobiography, *All Said And Done*, was written when Beauvoir was sixty-three. In it she describes herself as a person who has always been secure in an imperfect world: "Since I was 21, I have never been lonely. The opportunities granted to me at the beginning helped me not

only to lead a happy life but to be happy in the life I led. I have been aware of my shortcomings and my limits, but I have made the best of them. When I was tormented by what was happening in the world, it was the world I wanted to change, not my place in it." On April 14, 1986, Simone de Beauvoir died in a Paris hospital. Sartre had died six years earlier.

For More Information

Bair, Deirdre. *Simone de Beauvoir: A Biography*. New York: Summit Books, 1990.

Beauvoir, Simone de. *The Prime of Life*. Cleveland: World Pub. Co., 1962. Reprint, New York: Paragon House, 1992.

Keefe, Terry. *Simone de Beauvoir*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1998.

SAMUEL BECKETT

Born: April 13, 1906

Dublin, Ireland

Died: December 22, 1989

Paris, France

Irish novelist, playwright, and poet

Samuel Beckett, the Irish novelist, playwright, and poet was one of the most original and important writers of the twentieth century, winning the Nobel Prize in Literature in 1969.

Early life in Ireland

Samuel Beckett was born in Dublin, Ireland, on April 13, 1906, to middle-class par-

ents, William and Mary Beckett. Mary Beckett was a devoted wife and mother, who spent good times with her two sons in both training and hobbies. His father shared his love of nature, fishing, and golf with his children. Both parents were strict and devoted Protestants.

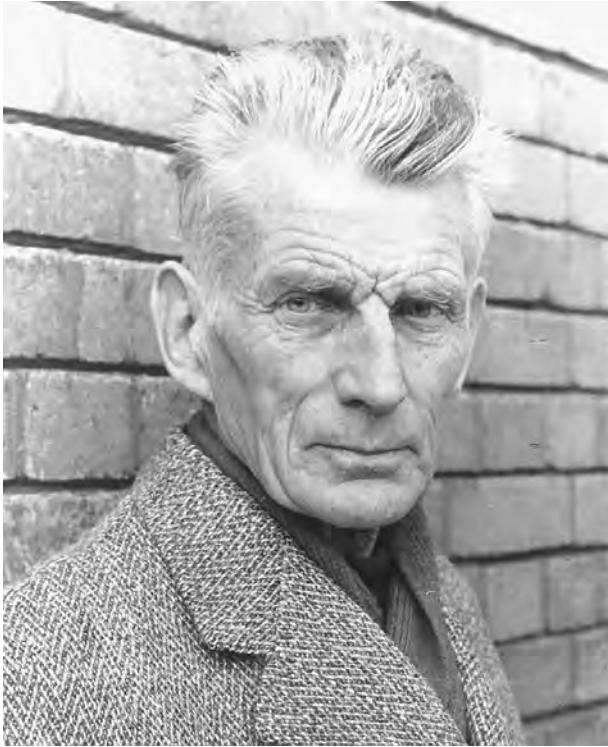
Beckett's tenth year came at the same time as the Easter Uprising in 1916 (the beginning of the Irish civil war for independence from British rule). Beckett's father took him to see Dublin in flames. Meanwhile, World War I (1914–18) had already involved his uncle, who was fighting with the British army. Here was the pairing of opposites at an early age: Beckett wrote of his childhood as a happy one, yet spoke of "unhappiness around me."

He was a quick study, taking on the French language at age six. He attended the Portora Royal boarding school in Enniskillen, County Fermanagh, Ireland, where he continued to excel in academics and became the light-heavyweight boxing champion. He also contributed writings to the school paper. His early doodles were of beggar women, hoboes, and tramps. Schoolmasters often labeled him moody and withdrawn.

In 1923 he entered Trinity College in Dublin to specialize in French and Italian. His academic record was so distinguished that upon receiving his degree in 1927, he was awarded a two-year post as *lecteur* (assistant) in English at the *École Normale Supérieure* in Paris, France.

Literary apprenticeship

In France Beckett soon joined the informal group surrounding the Irish writer James



Samuel Beckett.

Reproduced by permission of Jerry Bauer.

Joyce (1882–1941) and was invited to contribute the opening essay to a defense and explanation of Joyce's still unfinished *Finnegans Wake* (1939). Beckett also moved in French literary circles. During this first stay in Paris he won a prize for the best poem on the subject of time. *Whoroscope* (1930) was his first separately published work and marked the beginning of his lifelong interest in the theme of time.

Beckett returned to Dublin in 1930 to teach French at Trinity College. During the year he earned a Master of Arts degree. After several years of wandering through Europe writing short stories and poems and being employed at odd jobs, he finally settled in Paris in 1937.

First novels and short stories

More Pricks than Kicks (1934), a volume of short stories derived, in part, from the then unpublished novel *Dream of Fair to Middling Women* (1993), recounts episodes from the life of Belacqua. Belacqua, similar in character to all of Beckett's future heroes, lives what he calls "a Beethoven pause," the moments of nothingness between the music. But since what comes before and what follows man's earthly life (that is, eternity) are nothing, then life also (if there is to be continuity) must be a nothingness from which there can be no escape.

Beckett's first novel, *Murphy* (1938), is a comic tale complete with a philosophical (the search for meaning in one's life) problem that Beckett was trying to solve. As *Murphy* turns from the ugly world of outer reality to his own inner world, Beckett reflects upon the relationship between mind and body, the self and the outer world, and the meaning of freedom and love.

During World War II (1939–45; a war in which France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States fought against and defeated the combined powers of Germany, Italy, and Japan) Beckett served in the French Resistance movement (a secret organization of Jews and non-Jews who worked against the Nazis, the political party in control of Germany from 1933 until 1945). In 1953 he wrote another novel, *Watt*. Like each of his novels, it carries Beckett's search for meaning a step further than the preceding one, or, as several critics have said, nearer the center of his thought. In many respects *Watt*'s world is everyone's world and he resembles everyone. Gradually *Watt* discovers that the words men invent may have no relation to

the real meaning of the thing, nor can the logical use of language ever reveal what is illogical or unreasonable, the unknown and the self.

Writings in French

By 1957 the works that finally established his reputation as one of the most important literary forces on the international scene were published, and, surprisingly, all were written in French. Presumably Beckett had sought the discipline of this foreign language to help him resist the temptation of using a style that was too personally suggestive or too hard to grasp. In trying to express the inexpressible, the pure anguish (causing great pain) of existence, he felt he must abandon "literature" or "style" in the conventional sense and attempt to reproduce the voice of this anguish. These works were translated into an English that does not betray the effect of the original French.

The trilogy of novels *Molloy* (1951), *Malone Dies* (1951), and *The Unnamable* (1953) deals with the subject of death; Beckett, however, makes life the source of horror. To all the characters life represents a separation from the continuing reality of themselves. Since freedom can exist only outside time and since death occurs only in time, the characters try to rise above or "kill" time, which imprisons them. Recognizing the impossibility of the task, they are finally reduced to silence and waiting as the only way to endure the anguish of living. Another novel, *How It Is*, first published in French in 1961, emphasizes the loneliness of the individual and at the same time the need for others, for only through the proof of another can one be sure that one exists. The last of his

French novels to be published was *Mercier and Camier*.

Plays and later works

Beckett reached a much wider public through his plays than through his novels. The most famous plays are *Waiting for Godot* (1953), *Endgame* (1957), *Krapp's Last Tape* (1958), and *Happy Days* (1961). The same themes found in the novels appear in these plays in a more condensed and accessible form. Later Beckett experimented successfully with other media: the radio play, film, pantomime, and the television play.

Beckett maintained a large quantity of output throughout his life, publishing the poetry collection, *Mirlitonades* (1978); the extended prose (writing that has no rhyme and is closest to the spoken word) piece, *Worstward Ho* (1983); and numerous novellas (stories with a complex and pointed plot) and short stories in his later years. Many of these pieces were concerned with the failure of language to express the inner being. His first novel, *Dreams of Fair to Middling Women*, was finally published after his death in 1993.

Although they lived in Paris, Beckett and his wife enjoyed frequent stays in their small country house nearby. Unlike his tormented characters, he was distinguished by a great serenity of spirit. He died peacefully in Paris on December 22, 1989.

Samuel Beckett differed from his literary peers even though he shared many of their preoccupations. Although Beckett was suspicious of conventional literature and theater, his aim was not to make fun of it as some authors did. Beckett's work opened new possibilities for both the novel and the

theater that his successors have not been able to ignore.

For More Information

Cronin, Anthony. *Samuel Beckett: The Last Modernist*. New York: HarperCollins, 1997.

Dukes, Gerry. *Samuel Beckett*. New York: Penguin, 2001.

Knowlson, James. *Damned to Fame: The Life of Samuel Beckett*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1996.

LUDWIG VAN BEETHOVEN

Born: December 16, 1770

Bonn, Germany

Died: March 26, 1827

Vienna, Austria

German composer

German composer Ludwig van Beethoven is considered one of the most important figures in the history of music. He continued to compose even while losing his hearing and created some of his greatest works after becoming totally deaf.

Early years in Bonn

Ludwig van Beethoven was born in Bonn, Germany, on December 16, 1770. He was the eldest of three children of Johann and Maria Magdalena van Beethoven. His father, a musician who liked to drink, taught him to play piano and violin. Young Ludwig was

often pulled out of bed in the middle of the night and ordered to perform for his father's drinking companions, suffering beatings if he protested. As Beethoven developed, it became clear that to reach artistic maturity he would have to leave Bonn for a major musical center.

At the age of twelve Beethoven was a promising keyboard player and a talented pupil in composition of the court organist Christian Gottlob Neefe (1748–1798). He even filled in as church organist when Neefe was out of town. In 1783 Beethoven's first published work, a set of keyboard pieces, appeared, and in the 1780s he produced portions of a number of later works. In 1787 he traveled to Vienna, Austria, apparently to seek out Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart (1756–1791) as a teacher. He was forced to return to Bonn to care for his ailing mother, who died several months later. His father died in 1792.

Years in Vienna

In 1792 Beethoven went back to Vienna to study with the famous composer Joseph Haydn (1732–1809). Beethoven was not totally satisfied with Haydn's teaching, though, and he turned to musicians of lesser talent for extra instruction. Beethoven rapidly proceeded to make his mark as a brilliant keyboard performer and as a gifted young composer with a number of works to his credit. In 1795 his first mature published works appeared, and his career was officially launched.

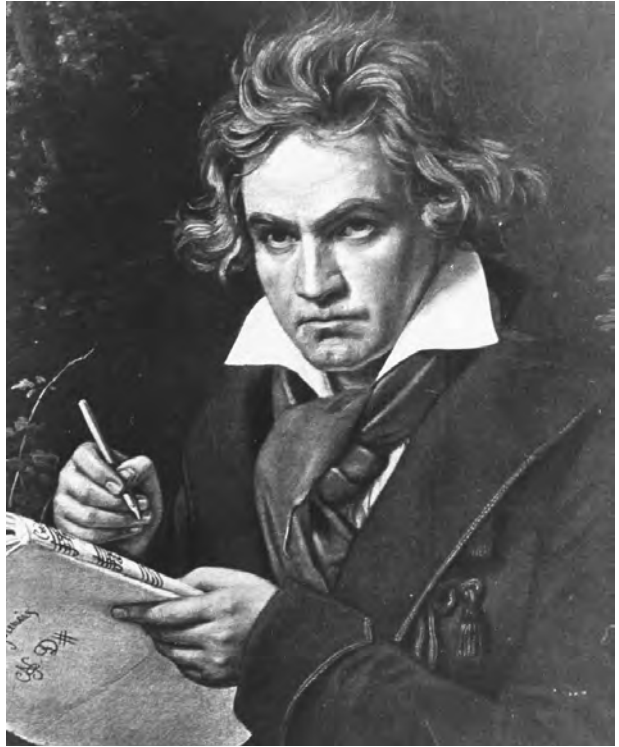
Beethoven lived in Vienna from 1792 to his death in 1827, unmarried, among a circle of friends, independent of any kind of official position or private service. He rarely traveled, apart from summers in the countryside. In 1796 he made a trip to northern Germany, where his schedule included a visit to the court

of King Frederick William of Prussia, an amateur cellist. Later Beethoven made several trips to Budapest, Hungary. In 1808 Beethoven received an invitation to become music director at Kassel, Germany. This alarmed several of his wealthy Viennese friends, who formed a group of backers and agreed to guarantee Beethoven an annual salary of 1,400 florins to keep him in Vienna. He thus became one of the first musicians in history to be able to live independently on his music salary.

Personal and professional problems

Although publishers sought out Beethoven and he was an able manager of his own business affairs, he was at the mercy of the crooked publishing practices of his time. Publishers paid a fee to composers for rights to their works, but there was no system of copyrights (the exclusive right to sell and copy a published work) or royalties (profits based on public performances of the material) at the time. As each new work appeared, Beethoven sold it to one or more of the best and most reliable publishers. But this initial payment was all he would receive, and both he and his publisher had to contend with rival publishers who brought out editions of their own. As a result Beethoven saw his works published in many different versions that were unauthorized, unchecked, and often inaccurate. Several times during his life in Vienna Beethoven started plans for a complete, authorized edition of his works, but these plans were never realized.

Beethoven's two main personal problems, especially in later life, were his deafness and his relationship with his nephew, Karl. Beethoven began to lose his hearing during his early years in Vienna, and the condition



*Ludwig van Beethoven.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

gradually grew worse. So severe was the problem that as early as 1802 he actually considered suicide. In 1815 he gave up hope of performing publicly as a pianist. After 1818 he was no longer able to carry on conversations with visitors, who were forced to communicate with him in writing. The second problem arose when he became Karl's guardian upon the death of his brother in 1815. Karl proved to be unstable and a continuing source of worry to an already troubled man.

Beethoven's deafness and his temper contributed to his reputation as an unpleasant personality. But reliable accounts and a careful reading of Beethoven's letters reveal him to be a powerful and self-conscious man,

totally involved in his creative work but alert to its practical side as well, and one who is sometimes willing to change to meet current demands. For example, he wrote some works on commission, such as his cantata (a narrative poem set to music) for the Congress of Vienna, 1814.

Examining Beethoven

Beethoven's deafness affected his social life, and it must have changed his personality deeply. In any event, his development as an artist would probably have caused a crisis in his relationship to the musical and social life of the time sooner or later. In his early years he wrote as a pianist-composer for an immediate and receptive public; in his last years he wrote for himself. Common in Beethoven biographies is the focus on Beethoven's awareness of current events and ideas, especially his attachment to the ideals of the French Revolution (1789–99; the revolt of the French middle class to end absolute power by French kings) and his faith in the brotherhood of men, as expressed in his life-long goal of composing a version of "Ode to Joy," by Friedrich Schiller (1759–1805), realized at last in the Ninth Symphony. Also frequently mentioned is his genuine love of nature and outdoor life.

No one had ever heard anything like Beethoven's last works; they were too advanced for audiences and even professional musicians for some time after his death in 1827. Beethoven was aware of this. It seems, however, he expected later audiences to have a greater understanding of and appreciation for them. Beethoven reportedly told a visitor who was confused by some of his later pieces, "They are not for you but for a later age."

For More Information

Autexier, Philippe A. *Beethoven: The Composer As Hero*. Edited by Carey Lovelace. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1992.

Balcavage, Dynise. *Ludwig van Beethoven, Composer*. New York: Chelsea House, 1996.

Solomon, Maynard. *Beethoven*. 2nd ed. New York: Schirmer Books, 1998.

MENACHEM BEGIN

Born: August 16, 1913

Brest-Litovsk, Poland

Died: March 9, 1992

Jerusalem, Israel

Polish-born Israeli prime minister

Menachem Begin was active in both the movement to establish an independent Jewish state in Palestine and in the early Israeli government. After serving many years in the Knesset (the Israeli legislature), Begin became Israel's prime minister in 1977.

Early years

Menachem Begin was born the son of Zeev-Dov and Hassia Begin in Brest-Litovsk, White Russia (later Poland), on August 16, 1913. He was educated at the Mizrahi Hebrew School and later studied law at the University of Warsaw in Warsaw, Poland. Begin had witnessed many acts of violence against Jews in Europe. He went to work for a group associated with the Revisionist Zion-

ist Movement, which Vladimir Jabotinsky had founded. The movement called for the creation of an independent Jewish state in Palestine, which at that time was controlled by Great Britain.

In 1939 Begin married Aliza Arnold, with whom he had three children. Later that year the British moved to put limits on the immigration (coming to a country of which one is not a native) of Jews to Palestine. Begin organized a protest in Warsaw in response and was imprisoned by the Polish police. Begin escaped, but he was arrested in 1940 by Soviet authorities. He was held in Siberia from 1940 to 1941, but was released because he was a Polish citizen. In 1942 Begin arrived in Palestine as part of the Polish army.

Active in Palestine

In 1943, after his release from the Polish army, Begin became commander of the Irgun Tzevai Leumi, a military organization dedicated to the establishment of a Jewish state in Palestine. He declared “armed warfare” against the government in Palestine at the beginning of 1944, and led a determined struggle against the British. With the independence of the State of Israel in 1948, Begin founded the Herut (Freedom) Party and represented it in the Knesset of Israel, starting with its first meetings in 1949. He became known as a gifted public speaker, writer, and political leader.

Begin remained in the legislature until he joined the Government of National Unity on the eve of the Six-Day War of June 1967. In that war Israeli forces gained control from Arab groups of two major sections of Palestine. Begin and several others resigned from the government in August 1970 over opposi-



Menachem Begin.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

tion to Israeli acceptance of U.S. Secretary of State William Rogers' peace proposal, which suggested that Israel should return territories taken over during the Six-Day War. Begin stayed active in politics as leader of the Likud group that opposed the ruling party.

As prime minister

In May 1977 Begin became Israel's prime minister. In November of that year he became the first Israeli prime minister to meet with an Arab head of state, when he welcomed Egyptian President Anwar Sadat (1918–1981) to Jerusalem. In March 1979 he and Sadat signed the Egypt-Israel peace

treaty on the White House lawn in Washington, D.C. For Begin, and for Israel, it was an important but difficult accomplishment. Although it brought peace with Israel's main enemy, it forced Israel to give up some of the land for which it had fought.

Begin again became prime minister after the Knesset elections of 1981. In June 1982 the Israelis invaded Lebanon, causing a war that led to much criticism from other countries, including the United States. Many of these problems eased over time, but the effects of the war were felt long after Begin retired from public life. Still, he remained the most popular of Israeli politicians. The standard of living in Israel rose under his rule, and although the United States and Israel often disagreed about the issues of the Arab-Israeli conflict, assistance and political support from the United States to Israel rose to all-time high levels while Begin was in office.

Later years

Begin's decision to resign as prime minister of Israel in September 1983 brought to an end a major era in Israeli politics. It was a shock to Israelis despite Begin's earlier statements that he would retire from politics at age seventy. Begin apparently believed that he could no longer perform his tasks as he felt he ought to. Plus, he seemed to be deeply affected by both the death of his wife the previous year and by the continuing losses of Israeli forces in Lebanon. Begin spent most of his remaining years in his apartment, and was seldom seen in public. Often he left home only to attend memorial services for his wife or to visit the hospital. He died of complications from a heart attack on March 9, 1992, in Jerusalem.

For More Information

- Brackett, Virginia. *Menachem Begin*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.
- Seidman, Hillel. *Menachem Begin: His Life and Legacy*. New York: Shengold, 1990.
- Sofer, Sasson. *Begin: An Anatomy of Leadership*. Oxford; New York: B. Blackwell, 1988.

ALEXANDER GRAHAM BELL

Born: March 3, 1847

Edinburgh, Scotland

Died: August 2, 1922

Baddeck, Nova Scotia, Canada

Scottish-born American inventor

Alexander Graham Bell, Scottish-born American inventor and teacher of the deaf, is best known for perfecting the telephone to transmit, or send, vocal messages using electricity. The telephone began a new age in communications technology.

The young man

Alexander Graham Bell was born on March 3, 1847, in Edinburgh, Scotland. His father, Alexander Melville Bell, was an expert on the mechanics of the voice and on elocution (the art of public speaking). His grandfather, Alexander Bell, was an elocution professor. Bell's mother, Eliza, was hard of hearing but became an accomplished pianist (as well as a painter), and Bell took an interest in music. Eliza taught Alexander, who was the middle of three brothers, until he was ten

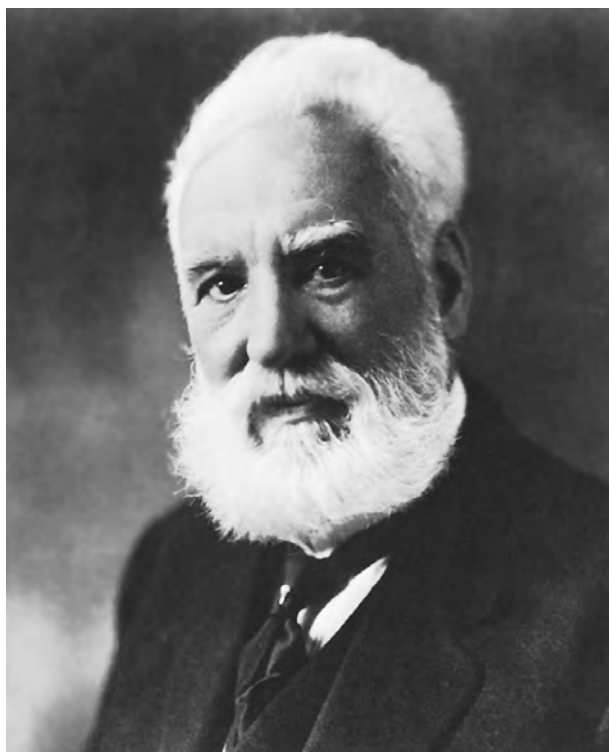
years old. When he was a youth he took a challenge from a mill operator and created a machine that removed the husks from grain. He would later call it his first invention.

After studying at the University of Edinburgh and University College, London, England, Bell became his father's assistant. He taught the deaf to talk by adopting his father's system of visible speech (illustrations of speaking positions of the lips and tongue). In London he studied Hermann Ludwig von Helmholtz's (1821–1894) experiments with tuning forks and magnets to produce complex sounds. In 1865 Bell made scientific studies of the resonance (vibration) of the mouth while speaking.

Both of Bell's brothers had died of tuberculosis (a fatal disease that attacks the lungs). In 1870 his parents, in search of a healthier climate, convinced him to move with them to Brantford, Ontario, Canada. In 1871 he went to Boston, Massachusetts, to teach at Sarah Fuller's School for the Deaf, the first such school in the world. He also tutored private students, including Helen Keller (1880–1968). As professor of voice and speech at Boston University in 1873, he initiated conventions for teachers of the deaf. Throughout his life he continued to educate the deaf, and he founded the American Association to Promote the Teaching of Speech to the Deaf.

Inventing the telephone

From 1873 to 1876 Bell experimented with many inventions, including an electric speaking telegraph (the telephone). The funds came from the fathers of two of his students. One of these men, Gardiner Hubbard, had a deaf daughter, Mabel, who later became Bell's wife.



Alexander Graham Bell.

To help deaf children, Bell experimented in the summer of 1874 with a human ear and attached bones, magnets, smoked glass, and other things. He conceived the theory of the telephone: that an electric current can be made to change its force just as the pressure of air varies during sound production. That same year he invented a telegraph that could send several messages at once over one wire, as well as a telephonic-telegraphic receiver.

Bell supplied the ideas; Thomas Watson created the equipment. Working with tuned reeds and magnets to make a receiving instrument and sender work together, they transmitted a musical note on June 2, 1875. Bell's telephone receiver and transmitter were iden-

tical: a thin disk in front of an electromagnet (a magnet created by an electric current).

On February 14, 1876, Bell's attorney filed for a patent, or a document guaranteeing a person the right to make and sell an invention for a set number of years. The exact hour was not recorded, but on that same day Elisha Gray (1835–1901) filed his caveat (intention to invent) for a telephone. The U.S. Patent Office granted Bell the patent for the "electric speaking telephone" on March 7. It was the most valuable single patent ever issued. It opened a new age in communications technology.

Bell continued his experiments to improve the telephone's quality. By accident, Bell sent the first sentence, "Watson, come here; I want you," on March 10, 1876. The first public demonstration occurred at the American Academy of Arts and Sciences convention in Boston two months later. Bell's display at the Philadelphia Centennial Exposition a month later gained more publicity. Emperor Dom Pedro of Brazil (1825–1891) ordered one hundred telephones for his country. The telephone, which had been given only eighteen words in the official catalog of the exposition, suddenly became the "star" attraction.

Establishing an industry

Repeated demonstrations overcame public doubts. The first two-way outdoor conversation was between Boston and Cambridge, Massachusetts, by Bell and Watson on October 9, 1876. In 1877 the first telephone was installed in a private home; a conversation took place between Boston and New York using telegraph lines; in May the first switchboard (a central machine used to connect different telephone lines), devised by E. T. Holmes in Boston, was a burglar alarm con-

necting five banks; and in July the first organization to make the telephone a commercial venture, the Bell Telephone Company, was formed. That year, while on his honeymoon, Bell introduced the telephone to England and France.

The first commercial switchboard was set up in New Haven, Connecticut, in 1878, the same year Bell's New England Telephone Company was organized. Charles Scribner improved switchboards, with more than five hundred inventions. Thomas Cornish, a Philadelphia electrician, had a switchboard for eight customers and published a one-page telephone directory in 1878.

Questioning Bell's patent

Other inventors had been at work between 1867 and 1873. Professor Elisha Gray (of Oberlin College in Ohio) invented an "automatic self-adjusting telegraph relay," installed it in hotels, and made telegraph printers. He also tried to perfect a speaking telephone from his multiple-current telegraph. The Gray and Batton Manufacturing Company of Chicago developed into the Western Electric Company.

Another competitor was Professor Amos E. Dolbear, who insisted that Bell's telephone was only an improvement on an 1860 invention by Johann Reis, a German who had experimented with pigs' ears and may have made a telephone. Dolbear's own instrument could transmit tones but not voice quality.

In 1879 Western Union, with its American Speaking Telephone Company, ignored Bell's patents and hired Thomas Edison (1847–1931), along with Dolbear and Gray, as inventors and improvers. Later that year

Bell and Western Union formed a joint company, with the latter getting 20 percent for providing wires, equipment, and the like. Theodore Vail, organizer of Bell Telephone Company, combined six companies in 1881. The modern transmitter was born mainly in the work of Emile Berliner and Edison in 1877 and Francis Blake in 1878. Blake's transmitter was later sold to Bell.

The claims of other inventors were contested. Daniel Drawbaugh, who was from rural Pennsylvania and had little formal schooling, almost won a legal battle with Bell in 1884 but was defeated by a four-to-three vote in the Supreme Court (the highest court in the United States). This claim made for the most exciting lawsuit over telephone patents. Altogether the Bell Company was involved in 587 lawsuits, of which five went to the Supreme Court. Bell won every case. The defending argument for Bell was that no competitor had claimed to be original until seventeen months after Bell's patent. Also, at the 1876 Philadelphia Exposition, major electrical scientists, especially Lord Kelvin (1824–1907), the world's leading authority, had declared Bell's invention to be "new." Professors, scientists, and researchers defended Bell, pointing to his lifelong study of the ear and his books and lectures on speech mechanics.

The Bell Company

The Bell Company built the first long-distance line in 1884, connecting Boston and New York. Bell and others organized The American Telephone and Telegraph Company in 1885 to operate other long-distance lines. By 1889 there were 11,000 miles of underground wires in New York City.

The Volta Laboratory was started by Bell in Washington, D.C., with France awarding the Volta Prize money (about \$10,000) for his invention. At the laboratory Bell and his associates worked on various projects during the 1880s, including the photophone, induction balance, audiometer, and phonograph improvements. The photophone transmitted speech by light. The induction balance (electric probe) located metal in the body. The audiometer, used to test a person's hearing, indicated Bell's continued interest in deafness. The first successful phonograph record was produced. The Columbia Gramophone Company made profitable Bell's phonograph records. With the profits Bell established an organization in Washington to study deafness.

Bell's later interests

Bell was also involved in other activities that took much of his time. The magazine *Science* (later the official publication of the American Association for the Advancement of Science) was founded in 1880 because of Bell's efforts. He made many addresses and published many papers. As National Geographic Society president from 1896 to 1904, he contributed to the success of the society and its publications. In 1898 he became a member of a governing board of the Smithsonian Institution. He was also involved in sheep breeding, hydrodynamics (the study of the forces of fluids, such as water), and projects related to aviation, or the development and design of airplanes.

Aviation was Bell's primary interest after 1895. He aided physicist and astronomer Samuel Langley (1834–1906), who experimented with heavier-than-air flying machines; invented a special kite (1903); and founded

the Aerial Experiment Association (1907), bringing together aviator and inventor Glenn Curtiss (1878–1930), Francis Baldwin, and others. Curtiss provided the motor for Bell's man-carrying kite in 1907.

Bell died in Baddeck, Nova Scotia, Canada, on August 2, 1922. His contribution to the modern world and its technologies was enormous.

For More Information

Grosvenor, Edwin S., and Morgan Wesson.

Alexander Graham Bell. New York: Harry Abrams, 1997.

Mackay, James A. *Alexander Graham Bell: A Life*. New York: J. Wiley, 1998.

Weaver, Robyn M. *Alexander Graham Bell*. San Diego: Lucent, 2000.

CLYDE BELLECOURT

Born: 1939

White Earth Reservation, Minnesota

Native American tribal activist

As one of the original founders of the American Indian Movement (AIM), Clyde Bellecourt has been an activist for the rights of Native Americans for many years. Many have questioned Bellecourt's methods, but no one questions his dedication to improving the lives of his people.

Early struggles

Clyde Bellecourt was born in 1939 on the White Earth Indian Reservation in Min-

nesota, one of many tracts of land set aside by the United States government for Native Americans. He was the seventh of twelve children born to Charles and Angeline Bellecourt, who were members of the Ojibwa tribe. His father had fought in World War I (1914–18), a destructive war that involved many European countries and the United States, and suffered injuries that prevented him from working. The family lived in a small house and was very poor.

Bellecourt had problems in school and eventually dropped out. He was angry that Native Americans, if they were talked about in school at all, were usually described as killers or savages. Bellecourt said that he could not consider George Washington (1732–1799) the father of the country because Washington did not look anything like Bellecourt's father or grandfather. After quitting school and failing to find work, he became involved in burglaries and robberies and wound up in prison.

Education leads to action

In prison in Minnesota, Bellecourt had given up hope. He decided to go on a hunger strike, figuring he would die. A fellow inmate brought him a book dealing with his Ojibwa history. Reading the book made Bellecourt proud once again to be a Native American and filled him with hope. He began relating what he learned to his fellow inmates. As he said to Peter Matthiessen in *In the Spirit of Crazy Horse*, "I guess we had the first real Indian Studies program in the country."

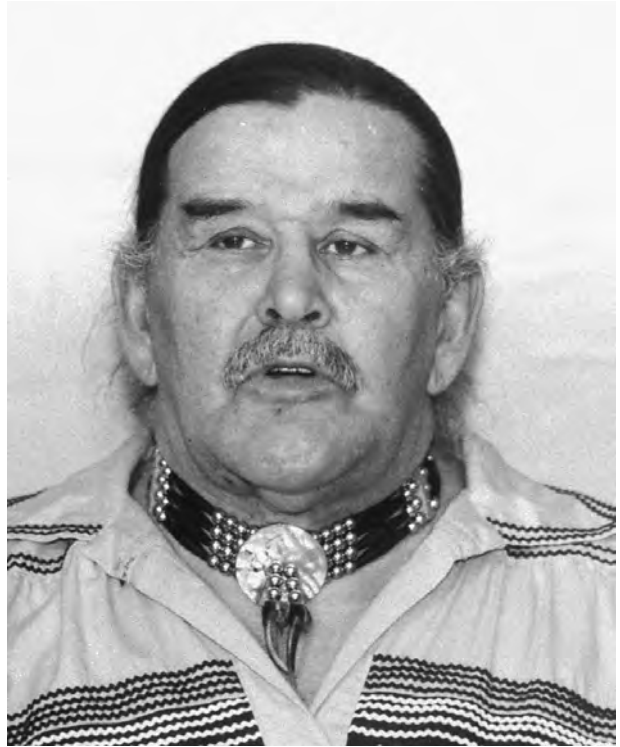
After his release from prison, Bellecourt and two others founded the American Indian Movement (AIM) in 1968 to educate even more people and to work for improved con-

ditions and rights for Native Americans. The organization established job training, education programs and youth centers, forced the government to improve public housing for Indians, and set up schools such as the Heart of the Earth Center for American Indian Education in Minneapolis, Minnesota. The center focused on American Indian history and traditions.

However, in the early 1970s AIM often took extreme measures in its attempts to call attention to the Native American cause. Bellecourt and others presented a list of twenty demands to the U.S. government during an armed takeover of a Bureau of Indian Affairs building in 1972. These demands included a separate government for Native Americans, the return of many lands to their Native American owners, the drawing up of new treaties between the United States and the Native Americans, and the creation of a special agency in Washington, D.C. for the rebuilding of Native American communities. A similar armed takeover occurred in 1973 at Wounded Knee, South Dakota, which had become a national symbol after the release of Dee Brown's book *Bury My Heart at Wounded Knee* (1971). While many of the group's demands were not met, these incidents called attention to the problems facing Native Americans and forced the government to address them.

Struggles continue

Over the years, some members of AIM became unhappy with Bellecourt's leadership. In November 1994, Bellecourt and his brother Vernon were banned for life from the movement after an AIM investigation alleged that the brothers had been involved in eight crimes, including drug-related activities and



Clyde Bellecourt.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

working secretly with the U.S. government. The brothers denied doing anything wrong, saying the charges were made up by other members of the movement who wanted their power. The American Indian Movement split into two groups as a result.

Bellecourt remains active in trying to improve the lives of Native Americans, emphasizing the need for more and better education. In 2001 he called for changes in the Minneapolis public school system after a study showed that only 15 percent of American Indian students who entered high school in 1996 graduated four years later. Bellecourt is the current director of the Peacemaker Center for

Indian Youth, chairman of the Heart of the Earth Center, and organizer of the National Coalition on Racism in Sports and the Media.

For More Information

Matthiessen, Peter. *In the Spirit of Crazy Horse*. New York: Viking Press, 1983.

Nabakov, Peter. *Native American Testimony: A Chronicle of Indian-White Relations from Prophecy to the Present, 1492–1992*. New York: Viking Press, 1991.

SAUL BELLOW

Born: July 10, 1915

Lachine, Quebec, Canada

Canadian-born American author, essayist, and dramatist

An American author of fiction, essays, and drama, Saul Bellow became famous in 1953 with his novel *The Adventures of Augie March*. He won the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1976.

Early life

Saul Bellow was born of Russian immigrant parents in Lachine, Quebec, Canada, on July 10, 1915. He learned to speak Hebrew, Yiddish, and French as well as English. When he was nine his family moved to Chicago, Illinois, and to this city Bellow remained deeply devoted. He was raised in a strict Jewish household, and his mother, who died when he was fifteen, wanted him to become a rabbi (a Jewish master or teacher). After her death

he drifted away from religious study and began to read a wide variety of books. He quickly decided he wanted to be a writer.

After two years at the University of Chicago, Bellow transferred to Northwestern University and obtained a bachelor's degree in anthropology (the study of the origins and behavior of human beings) in 1937. He had wanted to study English literature but was warned that many universities would not hire Jewish professors to teach the subject. Four months after enrolling as a graduate student at the University of Wisconsin, he quit school forever.

During the next decade Bellow held a variety of writing jobs—with the Works Progress Administration (WPA) Writers' Project, the editorial department of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, the Pestalozzi-Froebel Teachers College, and the Merchant Marine. His first story was published in 1941, and he published two novels. *Dangling Man* (1944), in the form of a journal, concerns a young Chicagoan waiting to be drafted into military service. *The Victim* (1947), a more ambitious work, describes a New Yorker struggling with domestic and religious conflicts. Both novels received mixed reviews.

Writing career

After World War II (1939–45) Bellow joined the University of Minnesota English Department, spent a year in Paris, France, and Rome, Italy, and taught briefly at New York University, Princeton University, and Bard College. Above all, however, he concentrated on writing fiction. With the publication of *The Adventures of Augie March* (1953), Bellow won his first National Book Award. Bellow followed it in 1956 with *Seize the Day*,

a collection of three short stories, a one-act play, and a novella (a short novel or long short story). The novella, the title of which is also the title of the volume, is about one day in the life of a middle-aged New Yorker facing a major domestic crisis. Some critics feel that this collection was Bellow's finest work.

In *Henderson the Rain King* (1959) Bellow described an American millionaire's flight from a tangled marriage and his adventures in Africa. His next novel, *Herzog* (1964), won him a second National Book Award and international fame. It portrays Moses Herzog, a middle-aged university professor, and his battles with his faithless wife, his friend, and himself. Through a series of unmailed letters, many of them highly comic, Herzog finally resolves his struggles by achieving self-control.

In 1962 Bellow became a professor at the University of Chicago, a post that allowed him to continue writing fiction and plays. *The Last Analysis* had a brief run on Broadway in 1964. Six short stories, collected in *Mosby's Memoirs and Other Stories* (1968), and his sixth novel, *Mr. Sammler's Planet* (1969), elevated Bellow's reputation. *Humboldt's Gift* (1975) added the Pulitzer Prize and the Nobel Prize for Literature to Bellow's list of awards.

Later years

Bellow's later novels did not receive the same praise. *The Dean's December* (1982) and *More Die of Heartbreak* (1987) retained his style, but some disliked the bitter tone that had never shown up in previous Bellow works. After 1987 Bellow released a number of novellas that met with similarly mixed reviews. Despite the coolness toward his later work, Bellow's best fiction has been compared to the Russian masters, Leo Tolstoy (1828–1910) and



Saul Bellow.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Fyodor Dostoevsky (1821–1881). Robert Penn Warren's review of *Augie March* in *The New Republic* in 1953 sums up reaction to his work: "It is, in a way, a tribute . . . to point out the faults of Saul Bellow's novel, for the faults merely make the virtues more impressive."

In 1995 Bellow nearly died after eating poisonous fish in the Caribbean. After a long, slow recovery, he wrote *Ravelstein*, a novel, which was released in 2000. Also in the year 2000 he was recognized with a lifetime achievement award from the *New Yorker*, and he became a father for the fourth time, at age eighty-four, when his fifth wife gave birth to a daughter.

For More Information

- Atlas, James. *Bellow: A Biography*. New York: Random House, 2000.
- Hyland, Peter. *Saul Bellow*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1992.
- Miller, Ruth. *Saul Bellow: A Biography of the Imagination*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

WILLIAM BENNETT

Born: July 3, 1943

Brooklyn, New York

*American agency director, scholar, teacher,
and government official*

American teacher and scholar William Bennett was chairman of the National Endowment for the Humanities (1981–85), secretary of the Department of Education (1985–88), and director of the Office of National Drug Control Policy (1989–90). He continues his efforts to improve education and fight drugs, and he is an active voice for traditional values.

Early life and education

William John Bennett was born into a middle-class Roman Catholic family in Flatbush (Brooklyn), New York, on July 3, 1943. Describing himself as “streetwise,” he first attended a public school but later transferred to Jesuit-run Holy Cross Boy’s School. His family moved to Washington, D.C., where he

graduated from Gonzaga High School, another Catholic institution. Bennett was mostly raised by his mother, but he also looked up to male American heroes such as actors, athletes, or presidents. He began to believe that, in addition to adult encouragement, heroes were necessary for a child’s moral development. His high school football coach was also a role model of toughness, and he convinced Bennett of the value of sports.

Bennett went to Williams College to play football. He was a lineman who earned the nickname “the ram” from an incident where he butted down a female student’s door. He worked his way through college (and later graduate school) with scholarships, loans, and part-time and summer jobs. Graduating in 1965, he studied philosophy (the search for an understanding of the world and man’s place in it) at the University of Texas, where he earned a doctorate in 1970. He did not study all the time. In 1967 he went on a blind date with singer Janis Joplin, and he also played guitar with a band called Plato and the Guardians. Bennett also taught philosophy and religion at the University of Southern Mississippi for a year. After earning a law degree at Harvard University in 1971, he held several teaching and administrative posts at Boston University from 1971 to 1976.

Government service

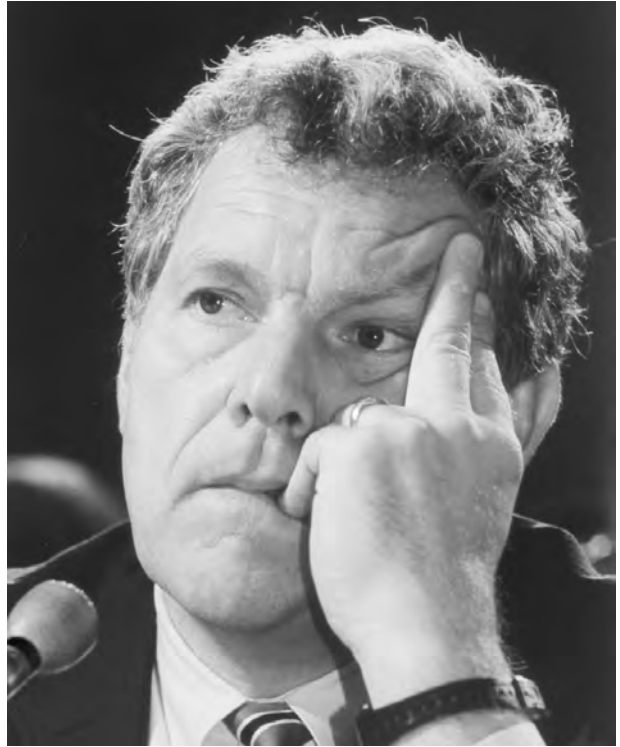
Bennett gained national attention through his involvement with the National Endowment for the Humanities (NEH) and the National Humanities Faculty, a conservative group whose members believe in maintaining traditional values and institutions as they are. He also wrote articles on various topics. In May

1976 he became executive director of the National Humanities Center, which he had cofounded with Charles Frankel, a philosophy professor from Columbia University, who took the office of president. In 1979 Bennett coauthored *Counting by Race: Equality from the Founding Fathers to Bakke and Weber* with the journalist Terry Eastland. The book attacked affirmative action (a series of programs designed to give special consideration in hiring and education to members of groups who have been discriminated against in the past).

As a registered Democrat, Bennett described himself as open-minded about conservative causes. He worked on the Heritage Fund's *Mandate for Leadership* (1980), a series of recommendations for President-elect Ronald Reagan (1911–). When Bennett became a Republican, Reagan rewarded him by appointing him head of NEH in December 1981. As director, Bennett caused much controversy (dispute over opposing views). He agreed with Reagan's budget cuts for the agency and criticized projects made with NEH funds. With the release of a 1984 report titled *To Reclaim a Legacy: A Report on the Humanities in Higher Education*, Bennett stated that his major goal was to teach students the core of Western values. This earned him the scorn of women's and civil rights groups, as did his refusal to comply with affirmative action programs at NEH. In November 1984 the office of secretary of the Department of Education became open, and Reagan decided to appoint Bennett.

Controversy in two jobs

Bennett caused more controversy as the secretary of the Department of Education than he had at NEH. In his first press confer-



William Bennett.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

ence he supported Reagan's student loan program cuts, saying that some individuals should not go to college. He attacked the educational establishment; said some colleges and universities were overpriced; expressed outrage that student loans were not being repaid; and criticized Stanford University's revised course schedule, which he felt placed less importance on Western civilization in favor of a larger study of world cultures. He remained in the public eye with appearances as a substitute teacher in a number of city schools and with many speeches and articles. He also published more books on education, including *First Lessons: A Report on Elementary*

Education (1987), which lists his personal beliefs concerning elementary education. Bennett's focus in education was on the three C's: content, character, and choice.

Bennett resigned from the Department of Education in September 1988 to join a Washington law firm. He had married Mary Elayne Glover late in life (1982) and needed the extra income to support his two sons. The pull of public service proved too great, however. In January 1989 President George Bush (1924–) appointed him head of the Office of National Drug Control Policy with the mission to rid the nation of drugs. Bennett himself was a longtime smoker. He successfully kicked the habit in order to set an example. He pushed for more severe penalties for drug dealers, even suggesting that guilty parties should be beheaded as was done in Saudi Arabia. He urged the use of American military forces in Colombia and Peru to destroy drug supplies, and set a goal of making Washington a drug-free city. Bennett resigned in November 1990 to devote his time to public speaking and journalism.

Spokesperson for morality

In 1993 Bennett published *The Book of Virtues*, a collection of stories, poems, and fables intended to teach values to children. The book sold very well and led him to publish similar books, including *The Moral Compass: Stories for a Life's Journey* (1995). Conservatives in the Republican Party mentioned Bennett as a possible presidential candidate in 1994, but he did not run. Instead, he continued to speak out on issues, such as opposing some popular music and television talk shows that found their way into the 1996 presidential campaign. He was

also popular as a public speaker and served as codirector of Empower America, an organization dedicated to the promotion of conservative ideas.

Bennett continues to work in education as chairman of K12, an Internet-based school. He continues his antidrug work as cochairman of the Partnership for a Drug-Free America with former New York Governor Mario Cuomo. And he continues to speak out about American values and morals. In 1998 he and Senator Joseph Lieberman presented the first "Silver Sewer" Award to Seagram, Inc., for its involvement in the production of offensive television shows and music. In 2002 Bennett published *Why We Fight: Moral Clarity and the War on Terrorism*.

For More Information

Bennett, William J. *Our Children and Our Country: Improving America's Schools and Affirming the Common Culture*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1988.

New York Times (January 11, 1985).

Wilson Library Bulletin (Spring 1982).

INGMAR BERGMAN

Born: July 14, 1918

Uppsala, Sweden

Swedish film director

Ingmar Bergman is widely regarded as one of the greatest directors in the history of motion pictures. His works are

marked by intense characters, as well as intellectual and symbolic content.

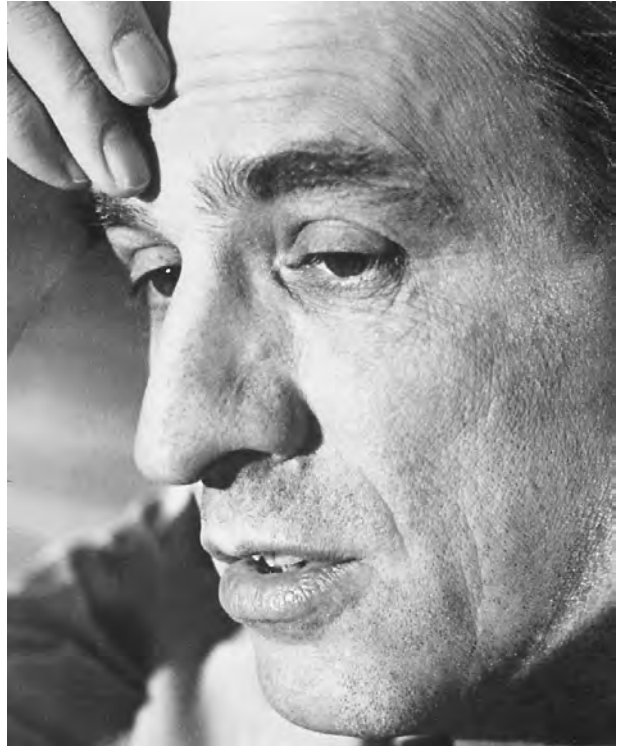
Early life

Ingmar Bergman was born on July 14, 1918, in Uppsala, Sweden, the son of a Lutheran minister who believed in strict discipline for his children. Raised under these circumstances, Bergman developed a love for movies, which he used as an escape from his rigid upbringing. By the age of six Bergman was making his own movies, primitive works that he pieced together from film scraps. A few years later, after seeing his first stage production, Bergman began producing his own plays for a puppet theater.

In 1937 Bergman entered the University of Stockholm, where he became an active member of the student theatrical group. In 1942, after a brilliant production of William Shakespeare's (1564–1616) *Macbeth*, the aspiring director was appointed to the Swedish Royal Opera. In the years following he divided his talents equally between stage and film efforts.

Film career

In 1945 Bergman directed his first film, *Crisis*, the story of an unhappy love affair which ends in suicide (taking one's own life). Several films followed closely, but in 1956 Bergman reached the peak of critical and popular praise with *The Seventh Seal*. *The Seventh Seal* is a morality (having to do with the difference between wrong and right) play about a knight who, seeking to satisfy his religious doubts and unravel the mystery of the universe, challenges Death to a game of chess. Even Bergman's critics agree that this film has visual daring with great dramatic power.



Ingmar Bergman.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

A year later Bergman directed *Wild Strawberries*, a touching study of the difference between youth and old age. With his next film, *The Magician* (1959), Bergman returned to his earlier use of symbolism, where objects or events are used to represent something else. It is the story of a group of wandering magicians and their encounters with otherworldly spirits. *The Virgin Spring* followed in 1960, as well as several lesser works.

In 1961 Bergman embarked upon his ambitious trilogy (three works), beginning with *Through a Glass Darkly*, an intense, almost hysterical, study of family violence. The second contribution, *Winter Light* (1962), pres-

ents the emptiness which follows loss of faith. The final portion, *The Silence* (1963), explores the problems of noncommunication. The trilogy is concerned with the problem of God's absence rather than His presence, and with the pain stemming from personal isolation rather than the puzzle of human existence itself. It represents Bergman's increasingly complex view of the world.

Later works

This sophistication is also evident in the coldly poetic *Persona* (1966). This film tells of a bizarre relationship between a young actress who has lapsed into complete silence and the talkative nurse who cares for her. *The Hour of the Wolf* (1968), about an artist who is haunted by specters (ghosts), marks what some feel is a regrettable return to Bergman's earlier use of mysticism, or a spiritual search.

Due to tax problems Bergman spent much of the 1970s overseas, where he produced work for television in Norway and Germany as well as in Sweden. His major theatrical films of this period include *Cries and Whispers* (1971) and *Autumn Sonata* (1978). Highly regarded among the television work are *Scenes from a Marriage* (1973) and *The Magic Flute* of the same year.

In 1982 Bergman released one of his most autobiographical (having to do with a person's own life) films, the richly detailed *Fanny and Alexander*. Announced as his final film, it brings together many different themes from his previous works and is seen as a powerful summary of his life and career. Since *Fanny and Alexander* Bergman has published an autobiography, *The Magic Lantern* (1988); a novel, *Best Intentions* (1989); and has continued to write and direct for Swedish

television and theater. *Best Intentions* was produced from Bergman's script for Swedish television in 1991.

The year 2001 saw the release of *Faithless*, written by Bergman but directed by actress Liv Ullmann (1939–). Bergman believed the movie's subject—one man's destructive affair with a married woman—was too personal and emotionally draining.

Bergman's reputation has diminished somewhat in recent years, but he is still regarded as one of the great directors, and his films remain among the most widely recognized in the world. Many well-known American directors, such as Woody Allen (1935–), have paid tribute to Bergman in their own films.

For More Information

- Bergman, Ingmar. *Images: My Life in Film*. New York: Arcade, 1994.
- Bergman, Ingmar. *The Magic Lantern: An Autobiography*. New York: Viking Penguin, 1988.
- Vermilye, Jerry. *Ingmar Bergman: His Films and Career*. Secaucus, NJ: Carol Pub. Group, 1997.

IRVING BERLIN

Born: May 11, 1888

Temun, Russia

Died: September 22, 1989

New York, New York

Russian-born American composer and songwriter

The American composer Irving Berlin produced over eight hundred songs, many of which attained worldwide popularity. His patriotic songs, especially “God Bless America,” summed up the feelings of Americans at the time.

Early struggles

Irving Berlin was born Israel Baline in Temun, Russia, on May 11, 1888. He was the youngest of Moses and Leah Lipkin Baline’s eight children. His father, a cantor (a singer in a Jewish place of worship) who gave him singing lessons, was the first to expose Israel to music. The family fled the persecutions (the act of tormenting and harassing regularly) of Jews in Russia in 1893 and settled in New York City. The first years in America were very difficult—at one time every member of the family sold newspapers on the streets. Things got worse when Moses Baline died in 1896. At age fourteen Israel left home and began making money by singing in bars and on the streets of New York. He attended school for two years but had no formal musical education; he never learned to read or write music.

First efforts at songwriting

In 1906 Baline went to work as a singing waiter at a restaurant in New York’s Chinatown. He waited tables and entertained customers by singing popular songs of the time with his own made-up lyrics. It was while working here that he wrote his first song, “Marie from Sunny Italy,” which he worked on together with another restaurant employee. He also changed his name, becoming I. Berlin, lyricist (songwriter). This was the name he chose to appear on the



Irving Berlin.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

sheet music when the song was published shortly after in 1907.

Berlin began to gain recognition as a clever lyric writer. He provided words for “Queenie, My Own,” “Dorando,” and “Sadie Salome, Go Home.” The last was something of a success, and he was hired by a publisher to write words for new songs. Although he had difficulty writing English and had to have someone who understood musical notation (characters and symbols) write down the melodies that he created with one finger, within a year Berlin was established as a rising talent in the popular-music business.

Around this time music publishers became interested in ragtime, the highly original creation of African American musicians in the South and Midwest during the 1880s and 1890s. Berlin contributed lyrics—and a few tunes—to several mild ragtime songs. In 1911 he wrote the words and music for “Alexander’s Ragtime Band,” which started toward worldwide popularity when sung by Emma Carus in Chicago, Illinois, that year. It is one of the most famous of all “ragtime” songs, with its sheet music having sold over one million copies.

Created musicals

Berlin’s fame continued to grow. He wrote his first complete musical score in 1914, *Watch Your Step*, followed by *Stop, Look, Listen*. In the Army during World War I (1914–18) he wrote a successful soldier show entitled *Yip, Yip, Yaphank* (1919), which contained “Oh, How I Hate to Get Up in the Morning.” In 1919 he founded his own music publishing company, Irving Berlin, Inc.

Berlin’s most successful shows included *Ziegfeld Follies* (1919, 1920, 1927), *Music Box Revues* (1921–24), *As Thousands Cheer* (1933), *This Is the Army* (1942), *Annie Get Your Gun* (1946), and *Call Me Madam* (1950). His best-known musical scores for films include *Top Hat* (1935), *Follow the Fleet* (1936), and *Holiday Inn* (1942). Among Berlin’s best-known songs are “White Christmas” and “God Bless America,” which are holiday favorites to this day.

Berlin’s hundredth birthday was celebrated in a televised special from Carnegie Hall. When he died in New York on September 22, 1989, he was remembered as a sym-

bol of the nation. As fellow songwriter Jerome Kern was quoted in Alexander Woollcott’s biography of Berlin: “Irving Berlin has no place in American Music. He is American Music.”

For More Information

Bergreen, Laurence. *As Thousands Cheer: The Life of Irving Berlin*. London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1990.

Furia, Philip. *Irving Berlin: A Life in Song*. New York: Schirmer Books, 1998.

Jablonski, Edward. *Irving Berlin: American Troubadour*. New York: Henry Holt, 1999.

LEONARD BERNSTEIN

Born: August 25, 1918

Lawrence, Massachusetts

Died: October 14, 1990

New York, New York

American composer, conductor, and pianist

Leonard Bernstein was an American composer (writer of music), conductor, and pianist. His special gift of bridging the gap between the concert hall and the world of Broadway made him one of the most glamorous musical figures of his day.

Childhood

Leonard Bernstein was born Louis Bernstein in Lawrence, Massachusetts, on August 25, 1918, to Russian-Jewish immigrants. A

shy and sickly child, Louis Bernstein fell in love with music after a relative gave his family an old, weathered upright piano. He began taking piano lessons and changed his name to Leonard at the age of sixteen.

The family soon moved to Boston, Massachusetts, where Leonard studied at Boston Latin School. He excelled in academics and graduated in 1935. From there Bernstein went on to Harvard University, where he studied business. Although he had taken piano lessons from the age of ten and engaged in musical activities at college, his musical training began in 1939 at the Curtis Institute. The following summer, at the Berkshire Music Festival, he met Serge Koussevitsky, who was to be his chief mentor (teacher) during his early years.

A sudden star

On Koussevitsky's recommendation two years later, Artur Rodzinski made Bernstein his assistant conductor at the New York Philharmonic. The suddenness of this appointment, coming after two somewhat directionless years, was replaced only by the dramatic events of November 14, 1943. With less than 24 hours' notice and no rehearsal, Bernstein substituted for the sick Bruno Walter (1876–1962) at Carnegie Hall and led the Philharmonic through a difficult program that he had barely studied. By the concert's end the audience knew it had witnessed the debut of a born conductor. The *New York Times* ran a front-page story the following morning, and Bernstein's career as a public figure had begun. During the next few years he was guest conductor of every major orchestra in the United States until, in 1958, he became music director of the New York Philharmonic.

Bernstein's career might have filled several average lives. It is surprising that one who had never given a solo recital (performance) would be recognized as a pianist. Nevertheless, he was recognized as such from his appearances as conductor-pianist in performances of Mozart concertos and the Ravel *Concerto in G*.

Bernstein as composer

As a composer Bernstein was a controversial (open to dispute) figure. His large works, including the symphonies *Jeremiah* (1943), *Age of Anxiety* (1949), and *Kaddish* (1963), are not considered masterpieces. Yet

they are skillfully shaped and show his sensitivity to small changes of musical variety. He received more praise for his Broadway musicals. The vivid *On the Town* (1944) and *Wonderful Town* (1952) were followed by *Candide* (1956), which, though not a box-office success, is considered by many to be Bernstein's most original score. *West Side Story* (1957) received international praise. Bernstein's music, with its strong contrasts of violence and tenderness, determines the feeling of the show and contributes to its special place in the history of American musical theater.

His role as an educator, in seminars at Brandeis University (1952–1957) and in teaching duties at Tanglewood, should not be overlooked. He found an even larger audience through television, where his animation and distinguished simplicity had an immediate appeal. Two books of essays, *Joy of Music* (1959) and *Infinite Variety of Music* (1966), were direct products of television presentations.

Influence as a conductor

Bernstein had his greatest impact as a conductor. His appearances overseas—with or without the Philharmonic—brought about an excitement approaching frenzy. These responses were due in part to Bernstein's energy and emotion. It is generally agreed that his readings of twentieth-century American scores showed a dedication and authority rarely approached by other conductors of his time. His performances and recordings also ushered in a revival of interest in the music of Austrian composer Gustav Mahler (1860–1911).

There was some surprise when, in 1967, Bernstein resigned (stepped down) as music

director of the Philharmonic. But it was in keeping with his nature and the diversity of his activities that he sought new channels of expression. After leaving the Philharmonic Bernstein traveled extensively, serving as guest conductor for many of the major symphonies of the world, including the Vienna Philharmonic and the Berlin Philharmonic. He became something of a fixture in those cities in the last few decades of his life.

Controversy

More controversially, Bernstein also became caught up in the cultural upheaval of the late 1960s. He angered many when he claimed all music, other than pop, seemed old-fashioned. Politically, too, he drew criticism. When his wife hosted a fund-raiser for the Black Panthers (an extreme African American political group) in 1970, charges of anti-Semitism (against the Jewish people) were leveled against Bernstein himself. Press reports caused severe damage to his reputation. Bernstein also brought criticism with his stance against the Vietnam War (1955–75; a war in which American forces aided South Vietnam in their struggle against North Vietnam). His activism ultimately led J. Edgar Hoover (1895–1975) and the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) to monitor his activities and associations.

In 1971 *Mass: A Theatre Piece for Singers, Players and Dancers* premiered at the Kennedy Center in Washington, D.C. It was, according to biographer Humphrey Burton, “the closest [Bernstein] ever came to achieving a synthesis [blending together] between Broadway and the concert hall.” The huge cast performed songs in styles ranging from

rock to blues to gospel. *Mass* debuted on Broadway later that year.

Later works

Later Bernstein compositions include the dance drama, *Dybbuk* (1974); *1600 Pennsylvania Avenue* (1976), a musical about the White House that was a financial and critical disaster; the song cycle *Songfest: A Cycle of American Poems for Six Singers and Orchestra* (1977); and the opera *A Quiet Place* (1983, revised 1984).

In the 1980s Bernstein continued his hectic schedule of international appearances and supporting social concerns. He gave concerts to mark the fortieth anniversary of the bombing of Hiroshima (which brought an end to America's struggle with Japan during World War II [1939–45]) and a benefit for the research of acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; an incurable disease that attacks the body's immune system). On Christmas Day, 1989, Bernstein led an international orchestra in Berlin, which was in the midst of celebrating the collapse of the Berlin Wall (a wall that stood for more than three decades and separated East Berlin from West). In a typically grand gesture, Bernstein changed the words of "Ode to Joy" to "Ode to Freedom."

Despite health problems Bernstein continued to tour the world in 1990 before returning to Tanglewood for a concert on August 19. He had first conducted a professional orchestra there in 1940, and this performance, fifty years later, was to be his last. He died in New York City, on October 14, 1990, of a heart attack brought on by emphysema (a breathing condition) and other complications.

For More Information

Burton, Humphrey. *Leonard Bernstein*. New York: Doubleday, 1994.

Peysner, Joan. *Bernstein: A Biography*. New York: Beech Tree Books, 1987.

Secrest, Meryle. *Leonard Bernstein: A Life*. New York: A. A. Knopf, 1994.

CHUCK BERRY

Born: October 18, 1926

San Jose, California

African American singer, musician, and songwriter

Chuck Berry, known as the "father of rock and roll," has been a major influence on popular music. Though his career and life reached great peaks and declined to low valleys, he has survived while his contemporaries (others from the same time period) have vanished.

Early years

Charles Edward Anderson Berry was born on October 18, 1926, in San Jose, California. His father was a carpenter. Shortly after his birth, the family (he had three sisters and two brothers) moved to St. Louis, Missouri, where they lived a middle-class life. Berry sang in a church choir and a school glee club and took up the guitar in junior high school, learning how to play on his own. Before he could graduate from high school, Berry was arrested and convicted of armed robbery and served three years in a reform



Chuck Berry.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

school. A year after his release in October 1947, he was married and started a family.

Music career

Berry worked as a carpenter and a hair stylist after he was married, but he also continued to play guitar. In late 1952 a piano player named Johnnie Johnson called and asked him to play a New Year's Eve show at the Cosmopolitan Club in St. Louis. The band would play steadily at the club for the next three years. Berry's influence changed not only the band's name (to the Chuck Berry Combo) but also its style. The music was a mostly fast-paced combination of country,

pop, and rhythm and blues. Berry also admired the comical sense of singer Louis Jordan, which he added to his performances.

In 1955, on the advice of blues great Muddy Waters (1915–1983), Berry contacted Leonard and Phil Chess, owners of Chess Records in Chicago, Illinois. They were interested in the young artist and put him in the studio. Within a few months one of Berry's songs, "Maybellene," was a hit. He went on to have a string of top ten hits, including "Roll Over Beethoven," "Rock and Roll Music," "Johnny B. Goode," and "Carol." Berry was also a popular live performer. He was known for his "duck walk," which he created as a child "scooting forward" under a table to chase a ball. Berry began to spend some of his newfound wealth—around 1957 he opened Berry Park in Wentzville, Missouri. With a guitar-shaped swimming pool, golf course, hotel rooms, and nightclub, it was, next to his fleet of Cadillacs, his pride and joy.

Problems arise

Things went smoothly until 1961, when Berry was found guilty of transporting a teenage girl across a state line for immoral purposes. He spent from February 1962 until October 1963 behind bars in Springfield, Missouri. During his prison term he took courses to complete his high school education and wrote songs such as "Tulane," "No Particular Place To Go," and "Nadine." By the time Berry was released from jail, groups such as the Beatles were recording versions of Berry classics and introducing his music to new audiences.

By the mid-1960s, though, Berry's type of rock was losing ground to artists such as Eric Clapton (1945–) and Jimi Hendrix

(1942–1970) who were trying to break new ground. A switch from Chess to Mercury Records (1966–69) did little to help Berry. He continued touring without a regular backup band, using pickup bands made up of local musicians. In 1972 Berry, back with Chess, produced his biggest hit, “My Ding-a-Ling.” It topped the charts on both sides of the Atlantic, selling two million copies. Berry had hit paydirt, but this only led to another run-in with the law. In 1979 he spent three months in a California prison after being convicted of failing to pay income tax.

Later years

Berry’s legal troubles continued into his later years. In 1990 the police, acting on a tip that he was selling cocaine, raided his estate. The charges were later dropped. Berry was also involved in a class-action lawsuit brought by women who claimed they had been videotaped in the bathrooms of Berry Park without their consent. The lawsuit was settled out of court. Meanwhile, more collections of Berry’s hits were released, including a live recording released in 1995.

While Chuck Berry’s career has had peaks and valleys, he has survived while most of his contemporaries are long gone. Berry has been honored with both a star in the Hollywood Walk of Fame and an election to the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame. In 2000 he was honored for lifetime achievement at the Kennedy Center for the Performing Arts in Washington, D.C. And he continues to perform, reportedly accepting no less than \$10,000 per show and playing for no more than forty-five minutes.

For More Information

- Berry, Chuck. *The Autobiography*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1988.
- Guralnick, Peter. *Feel Like Going Home*. New York: Vintage, 1981.
- Logan, Nick, and Bob Woffinden. *The Illustrated Encyclopedia of Rock*. New York: Harmony Books, 1977.

MARY MCLEOD BETHUNE

Born: July 10, 1875

Mayesville, South Carolina

Died: May 18, 1955

Daytona Beach, Florida

African American educator

Mary McLeod Bethune, an African American teacher, was one of the great educators in United States history. She was a leader of women, an adviser to several American presidents, and a powerful champion of equality among races.

Early life and education

Mary McLeod was born in Mayesville, South Carolina. Her parents, Samuel and Patsy McLeod, were former slaves, as were most of her brothers and sisters. (Mary was the fifteenth of seventeen children.) After her parents were freed, they saved up and bought a small farm of their own. Mary helped her parents on the family farm. When she was eleven years old, she entered a school established by a missionary from the

was very popular. Her classmates looked to her as a leader. After graduating in 1893 she attended the Moody Bible Institute in Chicago, Illinois.

Career as an educator

After graduation from the Moody Bible Institute, Mary wished to become a missionary in Africa. However, she was told that African Americans were not allowed to take positions like that. She became an instructor at the Presbyterian Mission School in Mayesville in 1896 and later at Haines Institute in Augusta, Georgia, in 1896 and 1897. While she was working at Kindell Institute in Sumpter, South Carolina, in 1897 and 1898, she met Albertus Bethune, whom she later married and had a son with. Her devotion to the education of African American children caused problems with the marriage, however, and the couple eventually separated.

In 1904 the construction of the Florida East Coast Railroad brought hundreds of African Americans to the area looking for work. Bethune saw a need for education to improve the lives of these people. She began her career as an educator in earnest when she rented a two-story house in Daytona Beach, Florida, and began the difficult task of establishing a school for African American girls. Thus, in an era when most African American children received little or no education, the Daytona Literary and Industrial School for Training Negro Girls was begun in October 1904, with six pupils (five girls and her own son). There was no equipment—crates were used for desks, charcoal took the place of pencils, and ink came from crushed berries.

Presbyterian Church. She walked five miles to and from school each day, then spent her evenings teaching everything she had learned to the rest of her family.

Later Mary received a scholarship to attend Scotia Seminary, a school for African American girls in Concord, North Carolina. She was strongly influenced by both white and black teachers there and met some of the people with whom she would work closely later. Although she was very serious about her studies, this did not prevent her from becoming a lively dancer and developing a lasting love of music. Dynamic and alert, she

At first Bethune did everything herself—teaching, administrative duties, handling the money, and keeping the school clean. She also searched garbage dumps for items that the school could restore and use, such as furniture and pieces of wood. Later she was able to secure a staff, many of whom worked loyally for her for many years. To help pay for expansion of the school, Bethune and her pupils baked pies and made ice cream to sell to nearby construction workers. In addition to her regular classes, Bethune organized classes for the children of turpentine workers. In these ways she satisfied her desire to serve as a missionary.

As the school at Daytona grew, it needed more money to run successfully. Bethune began to seek donations from anywhere she could. In 1912 she interested James M. Gamble of the Procter and Gamble Company of Cincinnati, Ohio, who contributed to the school and served as chairman of its board of trustees until his death. In 1923 Bethune's school for girls merged with Cookman Institute of Jacksonville, Florida, a school for boys. The new school became known as Bethune-Cookman Collegiate Institute, soon renamed Bethune-Cookman College. Bethune served as president of the college until her retirement in 1942. She remained a trustee of the college to the end of her life. By 1955 the college had a faculty (teachers and administrative staff) of one hundred and a student enrollment of over one thousand.

Other activities

Bethune's business activities were confined to the Central Life Insurance Company of Tampa, Florida, of which she was president for several years; the Afro-American Life

Insurance Company of Jacksonville, which she served as director; and the Bethune-Volusia Beach Corporation, a recreation area and housing development she founded in 1940. In addition she wrote numerous magazine and newspaper articles and contributed chapters to several books. In 1932 she founded and organized the National Council of Negro Women and became its president. By 1955 the organization had a membership of eight hundred thousand.

Bethune also gained national recognition in 1936, when President Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882–1945) appointed her director of African American affairs in the National Youth Administration and a special adviser on minority affairs. She served for eight years and supervised the development of employment opportunities and recreational facilities for African American youth throughout the United States. She also served as special assistant to the secretary of war during World War II (1939–45). In the course of her government assignments she became a close friend of Eleanor Roosevelt (1884–1962). During her long career Bethune received many honorary (received without fulfilling the usual requirements) degrees and awards, including the Haitian Medal of Honor and Merit (1949), the highest award of the Haitian government. Mary McLeod Bethune died in Daytona Beach on May 18, 1955, of a heart attack. She was buried on the campus of Bethune-Cookman College.

For More Information

Halasa, Malu. *Mary McLeod Bethune*. New York: Chelsea House, 1989.

Poole, Bernice Anderson. *Mary McLeod Bethune*. Los Angeles: Melrose Square, 1994.

BENAZIR BHUTTO

Born: June 21, 1953

Karachi, Pakistan

Pakistani prime minister

Benazir Bhutto became prime minister of Pakistan in 1988. She was the first woman in modern times to head the government of an Islamic state, and she followed her father, Zulfikar Ali Bhutto, who served as prime minister from 1971 to 1977.

Political family

Benazir Bhutto was born in Karachi, Pakistan, on June 21, 1953, the first of four children of Zulfikar Ali Bhutto and Nusrat Bhutto. Benazir's parents were often away from home during her childhood on business related to her father's different jobs within the Pakistani government. Although the Bhutto family followed the Muslim religion, Benazir attended Catholic schools. She was also tutored at home in nonreligious subjects, the Muslim faith, and Arabic.

Benazir Bhutto went to the United States when she was sixteen and attended Radcliffe College in Cambridge, Massachusetts, where she earned a degree in government. At this time she experienced quite a different culture from her Pakistani home. While she was at Cambridge, her father became prime minister of Pakistan. Between 1973 and 1977 Bhutto attended Oxford University in Oxford, England. In December 1976 she was elected president of Oxford Union, becoming the first Asian woman to head that famous debating society.

Voice of democracy

In 1977 Zulfikar Bhutto was arrested and his government was taken over by General Zia ul-Haq (1924–1988), who declared martial law (the exercise of control by military officials over an area). Although many questioned the verdict, Benazir Bhutto's father was found guilty of plotting to kill a political opponent and was hanged in 1979. Bhutto decided to work to restore democracy to her country, although she and her mother were often arrested. She traveled widely, criticizing the Zia government for its violations of civil and human rights. Bhutto urged her supporters to avoid violence, preferring to gain power through the political process.

Martial law ended in December 1985, but the government that Zia, as president and army chief of staff, had installed did not allow free elections. Hoping to revive the campaign for representative government, Bhutto returned to Pakistan in April 1986. She traveled across the country and attracted large crowds of supporters. Bhutto also married Asif Ali Zardari in December 1987. The son of a politically active and wealthy family, Zardari's background was similar to that of his wife—not surprising since it was a traditional arranged marriage. They had two children.

Becomes prime minister

After Zia died suddenly in August 1988, Bhutto led the People's Party to victory in elections held in November and became prime minister. It was difficult for her to make the kinds of changes she wanted, however. For example, she was unable to change laws that degraded women because she feared losing the support of religious groups, many of whom believed it was "un-Islamic"

for a woman to be the head of government in the first place. She also had to be careful in dealing with the military, which she depended on to help control ethnic and regional disorders and violence in Pakistan. Bhutto also had little success in improving education and health care and in cleaning up government corruption (unlawful conduct).

To her credit Bhutto took steps to restore basic human rights. Restrictions on the press were lifted, and unions and student groups were allowed to gather freely. She also won respect by outsmarting her opponents in their attempts to oust her from office. Bhutto emphasized economic growth (increase in the production, distribution, and use of goods and services) and argued for less government influence in the economy. She also demonstrated skill in winning international support for Pakistan and sought improved relations with India.

No job security

In August 1990 President Ghulam Ishaq Khan, supported by the Pakistan military, dismissed Bhutto from office, claiming that her rule had been corrupt and had abused its power. Her husband was also arrested on several charges, including kidnapping. In elections soon afterward, Bhutto's party suffered a major defeat. Nawaz Sharif, a conservative (one who prefers to keep things as they are) businessman, was named prime minister. Bhutto vowed to return to office and spent the next few years trying to regain support. She was again elected as prime minister of Pakistan in October 1993.

In November 1996, however, Bhutto was ousted and accused of corruption for a second time by Farooq Leghari, the man she



Benazir Bhutto.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

had chosen for president. After failing to regain power in elections held in February 1997, she claimed that the elections were fixed and said she no longer desired the prime minister's post. In April 1999 Bhutto was sentenced to five years in jail, banned from politics for five years, and fined \$8.6 million on charges of corruption during her last term in office. Her husband received the same sentence. Bhutto maintained her innocence, and in April 2001 the Pakistani Supreme Court ordered new trials for both her and her husband.

Despite the fact that Bhutto remained in exile from Pakistan, in autumn 2001 she

traveled to India to campaign for a return to politics in her home country. At the time she planned to enter the race for prime minister of Pakistan in the October 2002 elections. In spring 2002, Pakistani President Pervez Musharraf (1943–) stated that Benazir Bhutto would not be allowed to become a candidate in the elections.

Bhutto continues to claim that she is innocent of corruption charges and remains involved in the politics of Pakistan as the leader of a Pakistani political group.

For More Information

Bhutto, Benazir. *Daughter of Destiny: An Autobiography*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1989.

Hughes, Libby. *Benazir Bhutto: From Prison to Prime Minister*. Minneapolis: Dillon Press, 1990.

OWEN BIEBER

Born: December 28, 1929

Grand Rapids, Michigan

American union leader

From 1983 to 1995 Owen Bieber was president of the United Automobile, Aerospace and Agricultural Implement Workers of America, the third-largest labor union in the United States. He was a key figure in the U.S. auto industry during a period of dramatic change.

Early years

Owen Bieber, the son of Albert F. and Minnie (Schwartz) Bieber, was born in North Dorr, Michigan, on December 28, 1929. After graduating from Catholic grade school and high school in 1948, he went to work at McNerney Spring and Wire Company in nearby Grand Rapids, Michigan, the same auto supply plant where his father worked. Bieber was already a large man, and his first job was bending by hand the thick border wire on car seats. A year later, at age nineteen, Bieber was elected as an officer of his plant's union, United Automobile Workers (UAW) Local 687. Bieber began to work his way up the union ranks in Grand Rapids. By 1955 he was elected to the local bargaining committee and was involved in talks on local plant issues. In 1956 he was elected president of the local chapter. Bieber, a devoted Democrat, also worked on behalf of Senator John Kennedy's (1917–1963) campaign for the U.S. presidency in 1960.

Bieber's hard work brought him to the attention of leaders at the UAW's regional office in Grand Rapids, and he continued to move up. In 1972 he was appointed director of the region, a position he held until 1980, when he was elected a vice president of the UAW and moved to the union's Detroit headquarters. Bieber served as director of the UAW's General Motors (GM) department, the union's largest department with more than four hundred thousand members. It was Bieber's first public exposure beyond Michigan, as GM's plants stretched across the country. By early 1982, because of low car sales and foreign competition, Bieber found himself agreeing to the first contract in the history of GM in which workers made con-

cessions (gave back things already won). GM workers agreed, among other things, to put off annual wage increases and accept less paid time off the job. The workers approved the contract by only a slim margin.

Elected president

In 1983 the UAW was forced to find a replacement for then-president Douglas Fraser, who was retiring. Bieber, who was known for being tight-lipped, was the last of three men to declare his interest in the job in late 1982. Nonetheless, he was selected by the union's executive board in a fifteen to eleven vote. The nomination, supported by a vote of delegates to the UAW's constitutional convention, surprised some who noted Bieber's shyness and lack of experience with the national labor scene. Bieber's first three-year term was highlighted by the job security measures he won in the contracts with the Big Three automakers—General Motors Corporation, Ford Motor Company, and Chrysler Corporation. In 1985 Bieber also won a more than \$2,100 payback for each Chrysler worker for concessions given to the automaker when it was struggling to stay in business from 1979 to 1983. This made Bieber very popular among UAW officials and workers.

But there were problems in Bieber's first term, most notably the pullout of the 120,000 Canadian UAW members in 1985. The action, which followed friction between Bieber and Canadian UAW leader Bob White during 1984's GM contract talks in Canada, deprived the union of its international image for the first time in its history. U.S. automakers were badly hurt from competition from lower-cost foreign carmakers



Owen Bieber.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

and a slowdown in auto sales in the early 1980s. Bieber struggled to find a balance between the companies' demands to be competitive and the needs of his members to keep their jobs. The UAW demanded a national industrial policy to help protect jobs. It also proposed a requirement that foreign carmakers build a certain percentage of car parts in the United States to help create jobs for American workers.

Fights for rights

In 1984 Bieber was named to Chrysler Corporation's board of directors. Industry observers remarked that the seat really

belonged to the Chrysler workers who had granted major concessions during the company's earlier financial problems and were the single largest group of shareholders in the corporation. In 1985 Bieber was in the awkward position of calling a strike against Chrysler when contract talks broke down. The strike was settled a week later following a forty-two-hour bargaining session, but neither side was happy with the new contract. The company blamed the expensive strike on Bieber's angry and ineffective bargaining style. Bieber told *Ward's Auto World* that future contract talks with the Big Three automakers would focus more on issues such as job security, reduced work time, and national health care rather than simply money.

Bieber helped create some original labor agreements. For example, he got the automakers to create job guarantee programs that ban them from laying off workers when machines take over their jobs. Instead, the companies must find new work for the employees and retrain them if necessary. In return, the union agreed to smaller than usual increases in pay. Bieber also worked on the first labor contracts for GM's Saturn small-car project, which began producing a new generation of American cars in 1990. The contract lets auto workers share in some management decisions regarding how the plant is operated. In return, the UAW agreed that Saturn workers would receive starting pay that is slightly less than the going rate at traditional auto plants.

Weakening influence

By 1992 Bieber and the UAW were stuck in a bitter losing battle with Caterpil-

lar Inc., a manufacturer of earth moving equipment. When contract talks failed, Caterpillar began hiring replacement workers. The strike lasted five months before the UAW gave in and ordered its members back to work without a contract. In a desperate attempt to show the strength of the UAW as 1993 Big Three contract talks approached, Bieber made an angry speech at a 1992 UAW convention. He warned auto companies against pushing the union too hard, saying that ". . . it takes two to make peace but only one to make a war."

Despite Bieber's speech, the UAW was still facing a bleak future, and Bieber's leadership of the union was doing little to improve the situation. In 1992 GM announced plans to close twenty-one plants and cut an estimated fifty thousand UAW members from its workforce. Union membership also declined. In 1978 the UAW had represented 86 percent of the auto industry's workforce. That figure fell to 68 percent by 1992, and since 1979 total UAW membership had fallen from 1.5 million to 1.1 million. Pressure began to build on Bieber to turn things around or to resign. In 1995 Stephen Yokich, head of the UAW's GM department and longtime rival of Bieber's, took over the job after Bieber reached the retirement age of sixty-five. In his farewell speech, Bieber spoke out against Japan's unfair trade practices and warned unions that they would have to watch out for Republican attempts to hurt working families.

For More Information

Automotive News (November 22, 1982).

Flint Journal (November 18, 1982).

Industry Week (July 5, 1993).

BILLY THE KID

Born: November 23, 1859

New York, New York

Died: July 14, 1881

Fort Sumner, New Mexico

American criminal and murderer

William H. Bonney, known as Billy the Kid, was the youngest and most famous example of a gun-fighter from the American West. His legend survived and grew long after his death.

Beginning of a short life

On November 23, 1859, Henry McCarty was born in New York City but moved to Kansas with his family when he was very young. His father died soon after the move and his mother remarried and moved west to New Mexico. Henry took his stepfather's name, Antrim, and eventually changed his name to William H. Bonney.

There are very few facts about Bonney's career that can be verified. His problems with the law began at age fifteen, when he was thrown in jail for theft in Silver City, New Mexico. After escaping to Arizona, he shot and killed an older man who had bullied him into a fight. Bonney then fled back to New Mexico.

Reputation grows

Back in New Mexico, Bonney became involved in the Lincoln County War (1878–79), a violent struggle between rival groups of cattle ranchers and merchants. He proved to be a fearless fighter and an excellent

shot. However, two of those shots ended up killing Sheriff James Brady and a deputy. As a result, Bonney was wanted for murder. "His equal for sheer inborn savagery," wrote journalist Emerson Hough, "has never lived." Such statements sent Bonney's reputation soaring and won him the nickname Billy the Kid.

Billy struck a deal with Territorial Governor Lew Wallace. He agreed to testify against other murderers in return for having the charges against him dropped. However, after gaining his freedom, Billy returned to his criminal ways. He led several other men in stealing cattle from some Texas ranchers. Wallace then ordered him arrested. Sheriff Pat Garrett soon took the Kid into custody. A judge told Billy that "You are sentenced to be hanged by the neck until you are dead, dead, dead!" Billy the Kid's reply was "And you can go to hell, hell, hell!"

A violent end

Billy the Kid was somehow able to overpower and kill his jail guard, shoot another deputy, and escape. This time the lawmen would take no chances. In July 1881 Sheriff Garrett and his posse (a group of men organized by the sheriff to assist him) trapped Billy at a house in Fort Sumner, New Mexico. They ambushed him in a dark room and shot him to death. The next day he was buried in a borrowed white shirt that was too large for his slim body. Admirers scraped together \$208 for a gravestone, which was later broken into pieces and stolen by souvenir hunters. Billy had lived exactly twenty-one years, seven months, and twenty-one days.

Over the years, the legend of Billy the Kid grew as a result of several books and movies made about his life, many of which exaggerat-



Billy the Kid.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

ed the facts. For example, he did not kill twenty-one people; he killed four men and participated in the killing of several others. Far worse than the inaccuracy of the stories were their attempts to make a hero out of a thief and murderer.

For More Information

Cline, Donald. *Alias Billy the Kid: The Man Behind the Legend*. Santa Fe, NM: Sunstone Press, 1986.

Utley, Robert M. *Billy the Kid: A Short and Violent Life*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1989.

LARRY BIRD

Born: December 7, 1956

West Baden, Indiana

American basketball player and coach

Few players have left a mark on 1980s professional basketball like Larry Bird, the famous forward for the Boston Celtics.

Younger years

Larry Bird was born on December 7, 1956. He was the fourth of Joe and Georgia Bird's six children. His birthplace, West Baden, Indiana, is a small village just outside the slightly larger town of French Lick, Indiana, which had a population of two thousand. French Lick was once a famous resort community that people visited for its mineral springs (healthful waters). French Lick had fallen upon hard times by the time Bird was a youngster. His father managed to find factory work in the town, but the Bird family always struggled to make ends meet. The Birds had enough coal to stay warm, but many nights the old furnace would break down. The house would fill with black smoke, and the family would all have to stand outside, freezing, while Joe Bird tried to fix things.

Bird and his brothers played all sorts of sports, including baseball and softball. In fact, Bird did not settle on basketball as his primary sport until he was in high school. When he realized he might excel in the sport, he began to practice day and night. "I played when I was cold and my body was aching

and I was so tired,” he told *Sports Illustrated*. “I don’t know why, I just kept playing and playing.... I guess I always wanted to make the most out of it.”

Bird sharpened his talents in one of the most demanding basketball arenas. In Indiana, the sport reigns supreme. When he was in high school in French Lick, he played guard during his sophomore and junior years. He showed no great ability at the time, and at 6 feet 3 inches (1.9 meters) he was not especially tall. By his senior year, however, Bird had grown four more inches. At 6 feet 7 inches (2 meters) he became an impressive physical specimen and retained his agility (ability to move quickly) and hustle (speed, drive). Many universities wanted him for their teams, but Bird decided to stay at home. He entered Indiana University in the fall of 1974. Bird lasted only twenty-four days at the college. He felt uncomfortable about the size and the impersonality (lack of emotion) of the school. He returned to French Lick and entered junior college there, but within two months he had dropped out of that college as well.

Bird had a short marriage that ended in divorce. In order to support himself and his daughter from that marriage, Bird took a job with the City Department of French Lick. He drove a garbage truck and helped to maintain parks and roads in the district. Such work may have seemed a low point to some people, but Bird told *Sports Illustrated* that he actually enjoyed it. “I loved that job,” he said. “It was outdoors, you were around your friends.... I felt like I was really accomplishing something. Had the chance to make my community look better.”

Overcomes tragedies

Bird faced personal loss during the same period when his father committed suicide. After that tragic event, Bird decided to return to college. This time he went to Indiana State. He had little confidence in his academic abilities, but felt that he could help the basketball team, the Sycamores. By that time he had grown another two inches. He was 6 feet 9 inches (2.1 meters) in height and weighed 220 pounds (99.9 kilograms).

Bird had to sit out his first season at Indiana State because of rules having to do with players moving from one school to another. That year the Sycamores went 13–12 (won thirteen games and lost twelve). When he was allowed to play in the 1976–77 season, his first year on the team, the same Sycamores earned a 25–3 record—their best in almost thirty years. When he was at Indiana State, Bird became the most talked about college player in the country. Bird always played with and for the team and always shared his fame with his fellow players both on and off the court.

The Boston Celtics drafted Bird in 1978. He had the option of playing professional basketball right away, but he chose to stay in school and finish his degree. The Celtics worked out a deal for Bird after his graduation. The contract signed on June 8, 1979, gave Bird \$650,000 per year for five years, a total of \$3.25 million. This sum was a record for a rookie (first-year player) in any sport. The Boston fans made no secret of their expectations for their new headliner. Bird did not disappoint them.

Bird took the National Basketball Association (NBA) by storm as a rookie in 1979, dominating the league almost without a



Larry Bird.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

break throughout his career. He helped the Celtics regain their position as a basketball superpower. He made the NBA All-Star team his first year, played in every regular season Celtics game, and led the team to a first place finish in its league. Bird was named Rookie of the Year and finished third in the Most Valuable Player polls.

Bird soars with Celtics

Those who had predicted that Bird could never turn Boston around had to take back their statements. After Bird's first year,

the team played in the championship series again and won in 1981, 1984, and 1986. The Celtics' games at the Boston Garden (their home stadium) were sold out for years because fans wanted to watch Bird play.

Bird was never the flashiest of players in the NBA. He was not very fast on the court and was not a remarkable jumper. Bird has achieved greatness the old-fashioned way—by being consistent, by contributing not as a grandstanding superstar but as a team player, and by attacking every game with every ounce of effort. He spent hours practicing both with his team and alone. Sportswriters and fans alike have been amazed at how Bird knew the game, the basketball court, and where the ball was going to be. His timing and feel for the game was exceptional. He always seemed to know where he should go and where he should be.

Bird was always somewhat injury-prone. He missed much of the 1988–89 season after major surgery on both heels. He continued to battle back problems and other injuries throughout the next few seasons. He retired from the Celtics after a thirteen-year career. He played his last game of basketball as a member of the U.S. Olympic Dream Team (a basketball team made up of U.S. superstars) at the 1992 Summer Olympic games in Barcelona, Spain.

After retiring as a player, Bird worked for the Celtics as a consultant. In 1997, Bird returned to his home state of Indiana and became the coach of the Indiana Pacers. He led his team to the Eastern Conference finals in 1998 and 1999; in 2000, the Pacers lost to the Los Angeles Lakers in the finals before Bird stepped down as coach.

For More Information

Bird, Larry, and Jackie MacMullan. *Bird Watching*. New York: Warner, 1999.

Bird, Larry, and Bob Ryan. *Drive*. New York: Doubleday, 1989.

Shaw, Mark. *Larry Legend*. Lincolnwood, IL: Masters Press, 1998.

SHIRLEY TEMPLE BLACK

Born: April 23, 1928

Santa Monica, California

American actress and ambassador

Shirley Temple Black is widely regarded as an American heroine who devoted her career first to films and then to public service. The United States ambassador to Czechoslovakia from 1989 until 1992, she is still remembered by millions of fans for her success as a child movie star in the 1930s.

A child star

Shirley Temple was born in Santa Monica, California, on April 23, 1928. The youngest of three children, her father was a bank teller, who later worked as his daughter's manager and financial advisor when she became famous. As a child Shirley Temple began to take dance steps almost as soon as she began to walk. Her mother began taking her to dancing classes when she was about three and a half years old. She also took her daughter on endless rounds of visits to agents, hoping to secure a show business

career. The hard work soon paid off—little Shirley obtained a contract at a small film studio, and one of the great careers in film history began.

Shirley Temple's first contract was with Educational Pictures Inc., for whom she worked in 1932 and 1933. She appeared in a short movie entitled *Baby Burlesks*, followed by a two-reeler, *Frolics of Youth*, that would lead to her being contracted by the Fox Film Corporation at a salary of \$150 per week. The first full-length feature that she appeared in for Fox was *Carolina* (1934). It was another Fox release of that year that made her a star: *Stand Up and Cheer*. She appeared in eight other full-length films that year, including *Little Miss Marker* and *Bright Eyes*. The first of these is especially notable because it was her first starring role. In 1934 the Academy of Motion Pictures Arts and Sciences awarded her with a special miniature Oscar "in grateful recognition of her outstanding contribution to screen entertainment during the year, 1934."

Through the rest of the decade Shirley Temple's star soared. It was not only her adorable dimples and fifty-six corkscrew curls that would keep her at the top of the box office listings. She was a spectacularly talented child, able to sing and dance with style and genuine feeling. Gifted with perfect pitch, she was a legendary quick study who learned her lines and dance routines much faster than her older and more experienced costars.

Unfortunately, little of the built-up popularity would be Temple's to claim by the time she was an adult. As she reports in her autobiography (a person's own life story), her father's questionable management of her



Shirley Temple Black.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

funds, coupled with both of her parents' spending, enabled her to enjoy only a fraction of the immense fortune she had earned. By 1940 she had appeared in forty-three feature films and shorts, and an entire industry had sprung up with products celebrating the glories of Shirley Temple: dolls, dresses, coloring books, and other merchandise.

Trying to grow up

By the decade's end Temple was no longer quite a child. When *The Blue Bird* (1940) proved unpopular at the box office, and the next film she starred in fared poorly as well, Twentieth-Century Fox devised a

means of getting rid of the "property" that had saved the fledgling studio from bankruptcy. She tried to maintain her acting career through the 1940s, but never again did she come even close to the stardom of her childhood. Film audiences would simply not allow the adorable girl who had sung "On the Good Ship Lolly Pop" and "Animal Crackers (in My Soup)" to grow up.

It is arguable that nothing could have been done to preserve Temple's youthful magic. Yet her ongoing struggles as an adult would prove her to be as heroic in her own life as she had ever been on the screen. A difficult first marriage to actor John Agar caused her to mature quickly. Almost immediately thereafter came the realization that her parents had been looking out for their own best interests rather than hers.

Political role

In 1950 Temple married the successful California businessman Charles Black, with whom she raised her children. Her concern over domestic social problems caused her to realize that life as a private citizen could not satisfy her desire to make the world a better place. She ran for Congress in 1967 and was defeated. This was only the beginning of her involvement in public service, however. In 1969 she was appointed to serve as a representative to the United Nations (UN), a multinational organization aimed at world peace. Her work at the United Nations led to a second career for Shirley Temple Black. In 1972 she was appointed representative to the UN Conference on the Human Environment and also served as a representative on the Joint Committee for the USSR-USA Environmental Treaty. The next year she served as a

U.S. commissioner for the United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization (UNESCO).

Black overcame a great challenge in 1972 when she successfully battled breast cancer. When she publicly disclosed that she had had a mastectomy (the surgical removal of a breast), she gave courage to millions of women. Two years later she was appointed ambassador to Ghana, where the people of that nation warmly received her. In all of her various diplomatic functions, Black's intelligence and spirit contributed greatly to her country's reputation and furthered its world position. Democratic President Jimmy Carter (1974–) paid tribute to her tact and flawless taste when he chose her (Black had been a lifelong Republican) to make the arrangements for his inauguration (swearing in as president) and inaugural ball in 1977.

By 1981 Black was such an established pillar of the public service community that she became one of the founding members of the American Academy of Diplomacy. In 1988 she was appointed Honorary Foreign Service Officer of the United States, the only person with that rank. She went on to serve as the U.S. ambassador to Czechoslovakia (today known as the Czech Republic and Slovakia) from 1989 until 1992. Such honors are ultimately the true measure of her career's meaning.

Recognition and later career

Latter-day film industry recognition such as the Life Achievement Award of the American Center of Films for Children or the full-sized Oscar that Black was given in 1985 were echoes of a past that, while still meaningful for "Shirley Temple," were not quite

relevant for Shirley Temple Black. According to Black, her more than twenty-five years of social service have been just as enjoyable as her years in Hollywood.

Black, through her lifetime of service in the arts and public life, has demonstrated the spirit of self-sacrifice and hard work that Americans have aspired to for generations. She is regarded as a true American heroine. Her lifetime achievements were duly honored on December 6, 2001, when she was honored in a ceremony at the Kennedy Center for the Performing Arts in Washington, D.C.

For More Information

Black, Shirley Temple. *Child Star: An Autobiography*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1988.

Blashfield, Jean F. *Shirley Temple Black: Actor and Diplomat*. Chicago: Ferguson, 2000.

ELIZABETH BLACKWELL

Born: February 3, 1821

Bristol, England

Died: May 31, 1910

Hastings, England

*English physician, educator, reformer,
and women's rights activist*

The first woman in America to receive a medical degree, Elizabeth Blackwell crusaded for the admission of women to medical schools in the United States and Europe.



Elizabeth Blackwell.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Early life and childhood

Elizabeth Blackwell was born on February 3, 1821, in Bristol, England to Samuel and Hannah Blackwell. Because Samuel Blackwell was a dissenter (one who refuses to accept the authority of an established church), the Blackwell children were denied public schooling. Samuel hired private tutors who went against English tradition and instructed the girls in the same subjects as the boys. Hannah Blackwell inspired her children by introducing them to music and literature.

When Elizabeth was twelve years old, Samuel Blackwell brought his family to New

York, New York. Samuel Blackwell soon became a strong supporter of abolition, the movement to end slavery in America. He also established a sugar refinery in New York City and was doing quite well until the economy faltered in 1837 and he lost most of his wealth.

In 1838 the Blackwells moved to Cincinnati, Ohio, hoping for a new start. But within a few months Samuel Blackwell died, leaving his family unprovided for. The three oldest girls supported the family for several years by operating a boarding school for young women.

Seeking an education

In 1842 Elizabeth Blackwell accepted a teaching position in Henderson, Kentucky, but local racial attitudes offended her strong abolitionist beliefs and she resigned at the end of the year. On her return to Cincinnati, a friend who had undergone treatment for a gynecological disorder (having to do with women's reproductive organs) told Blackwell that if a woman doctor had treated her, she would have been spared an embarrassing ordeal. She also urged Elizabeth to study medicine. At first Blackwell disregarded the idea of becoming a doctor. But eventually her ideas changed, and the thought of becoming a doctor turned into an obsession. Friends discouraged her, though, and even recommended that, if she chose to study medicine, her best choice was to move to France, disguise herself as a man, and only then would she be accepted into medical school.

In 1845 Blackwell moved to Asheville, North Carolina, where she taught school and, with the help of physician John Dick-

son, studied medicine in her spare time. Her next move, in 1846, was to a girls' school in Charleston, South Carolina, where she had more time to devote to her medical studies, this time under the guidance of Dickson's brother, Samuel.

When Blackwell's attempts to enroll in the medical schools of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, and New York City were rejected (by twenty-nine different schools), she wrote to a number of small northern colleges. In 1847 she was admitted to the Geneva, New York, Medical College. Blackwell later learned that her application to the Geneva school was initially rejected and she was only admitted as some sort of practical joke, for no woman had ever attempted to gain admittance into a medical school.

All eyes were upon the young woman whom many regarded as immoral (sinful) or simply mad. At first Blackwell was even barred from attending classroom demonstrations. Soon, however, Blackwell's quiet personality and hard work won over her classmates and teaching staff. Her graduation in 1849 was highly publicized on both sides of the Atlantic. She then entered La Maternité Hospital for further study and practical experience. While working with the children, she contracted purulent conjunctivitis, an eye infection which left her blind in one eye.

Setting up practice

Handicapped by partial blindness, Dr. Blackwell gave up her ambition to become a surgeon and began practice at St. Bartholomew's Hospital in London. In 1851 she returned to New York City, where she

applied for several positions as a physician, but was rejected because she was a woman.

Blackwell then established a private practice in a rented room, where her sister Emily, who had also pursued a medical career, soon joined her. Their modest dispensary (medical office) later became the New York Infirmary and College for Women, operated by and for women. Dr. Blackwell also continued to fight for the admission of women to medical schools. In the 1860s she organized a unit of female field doctors during the Civil War (1861–65), where Northern forces fought against those of the South over, among other things, slavery and secession (the withdrawal of the Southern States from the Federal Union).

In 1869 Dr. Blackwell set up practice in London and continued her efforts to open the medical profession to women. Her articles and her autobiography (1895) attracted widespread attention. From 1875 to 1907 she was professor of gynecology at the London School of Medicine for Women. She died at her home in Hastings in 1910, leaving behind a legacy that would pave the way for countless generations of female physicians.

For More Information

Brown, Jordan. *Elizabeth Blackwell*. New York: Chelsea House, 1989.

Glimm, Adele. *Elizabeth Blackwell: First Woman Doctor of Modern Times*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 2000.

Kline, Nancy. *Elizabeth Blackwell: A Doctor's Triumph*. Berkeley, CA: Conari Press, 1997.

TONY BLAIR

Born: May 6, 1953

Edinburgh, Scotland

Scottish-born prime minister of Great Britain

British politician and Prime Minister Tony Blair represented a new era in Parliament and made major changes to the Labour Party along the way.

Father's influence

Anthony Charles Lynton Blair was born in Edinburgh, Scotland, on May 6, 1953. His father, Leo, a successful lawyer, chose to run for Parliament in 1963. He suffered a stroke just before the election, leaving him unable to speak for three years. His three children had to learn to take care of themselves to be able to cope with the family's stress. His father also encouraged the children to achieve in politics what he himself could not, and as Blair said in an interview with Martin Jacques for the *London Sunday Times*, "I felt I couldn't let him down."

But there was another part of the family tree whose genes influenced the young Blair. His natural grandparents (his father was adopted) had been actors and dancers, and Blair followed in their footsteps during his student days. He received rave reviews for his performances at Fettes College, organized gigs for rock groups, and later, as a student at St. John's College at Oxford University, was the lead singer for Ugly Rumors, a rock band that played the music of such bands as Fleetwood Mac, the Rolling Stones, and the Doobie Brothers.

In time, however, Blair followed his father's career and received a law degree from Oxford University in Oxford, England, in 1975. He then worked as an intern (a student working under the guidance of an experienced person) with Queen's Counsel (QC) Alexander Irvine. Irvine remembered Blair in the *New Yorker* as being able to absorb difficult issues: "One of his principal skills was absorbing enormously complicated material. Make your best points on the issues—he was very good at that." Blair worked on employment law cases. His ability to communicate well proved very useful as he became involved in local politics. Blair married Cherie Booth, another intern and a top graduate of the London School of Economics, in March 1980. They had four children.

Rising up the ranks

Blair's father had belonged to the Tory Party (also known as the Conservatives, who preferred to maintain traditions and avoid change). Having witnessed the power of the local miners where he grew up, Blair joined the Labour Party. The miners were the main strength of the Labour Party in England, which at this time was in crisis. Strikes by several unions in the winter of 1978 had contributed to a large Tory victory in 1979, because the people viewed the Labour Party as being controlled by the unions. In 1983 Blair was elected to Parliament along with 208 other Labour Party MPs (Members of Parliament), the smallest number since 1935.

After Conservative Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher's (1925–) reelection in 1983, Neil Kinnock became the new leader of the opposition Labour Party. Kinnock promoted Blair to several posts, including spokesper-

son on treasury and economic affairs from 1984 to 1987, and spokesperson on trade and industry in 1987. Blair also spent time investigating the causes of the October 1987 stock market crash. After the 1992 election, which brought the Tory John Major (1943–) to power, Kinnock had to resign and John Smith replaced him. After Smith's death in 1994, Blair was elected as leader of the Labour Party.

Government and individual responsibility

Blair realized that the Labour Party had to change its message; it could not win over voters using the old ideas of the welfare state and its emphasis on national industry and union privileges. He supported policies to decrease crime, lower taxes, improve trade, and give more power to local and regional governments. Blair also called for a nation “where people succeed on the basis of what they give to their country,” as noted in *Knight-Ridder/Tribune News Service*. There would be an increasing emphasis on family and community values, and it would be the government's job to create conditions under which families could prosper.

Blair was able to push through his ideas because the Labour Party had changed how it elected its leaders. In the past officials had been elected by a system of block votes, which were divided among special interest groups and leaders—trade unions and MPs, for example—rather than by one vote per person. Blair had tried to institute “one person, one vote” at his local party branch in 1980, but failed. However, the system had just been changed to a version of one vote per person when Blair ran for the party leadership in 1994. This worked to his advantage



Tony Blair.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

because the new voting method had the most benefit for a skilled politician such as him.

A new party platform

Blair also succeeded in convincing Labour Party members to rewrite Clause Four of the party charter. The clause called for the redistribution of wealth through “common ownership of the means of distribution, production, and exchange,” which is basically a definition of socialism. With the change the party could no longer be labeled just the party of the working class. This “New Labour” supported free enterprise while working to lower budget deficits (the amount

by which spending exceeds income) and control inflation (a general increase in prices). Although some argued that the Labour Party now seemed very similar to the Conservatives, Blair won the national election in May 1997, with Labour winning a majority of 179 seats out of 659 in the House of Commons.

Blair believed that the government had a duty to help people, and his proposed reforms to welfare spending and social programs were well received. He established a training program for welfare recipients to provide education and increase employment opportunities. He also came up with a plan to improve the British National Health Service, making sure that all British citizens had access to health care. Blair also won praise for ending the thirty-year war in Northern Ireland between the Catholic minority and the Protestant, British-favoring majority. In April 1998 the leaders in Northern Ireland reached an agreement to create a new Northern Ireland Assembly, giving the Irish Republic (the Southern portion of the island) a say in the affairs of the North. In return, the Irish Republic agreed to cease efforts to reclaim the North. A British-Irish Council was also created to link Northern Ireland with Wales, Scotland, and England.

A Euro-star

In Europe Blair took a more traditional stand. He was aware that many within the country disapproved of too much British involvement with other European countries. The country maintained its right to “opt-out” of certain provisions agreed to by other members of the European Union. It chose not to participate in the European Monetary Union at its creation in 1998. (That group was created to gradually phase in a new com-

mon currency that all of its members would use.) Other European politicians began to imitate Blair’s policies, including Gerhard Schroeder (1944–) in Germany and Dutch Prime Minister Wim Kok.

On May 20, 2000, Blair’s wife, Cherie, gave birth to the couple’s fourth child, Leo. The boy was the first child born to a serving British prime minister in 152 years. In the June 2001 elections Blair and the Labour Party won easily, marking the first time in the party’s history that it won a second full term. Blair took on new duties after the terrorist attacks on the United States on September 11, 2001. He offered full support to the United States and its President, George W. Bush (1946–). Blair visited the leaders of more than seventy countries to seek their support in the war on terrorism, and he met often with President Bush to discuss the results of those meetings.

For More Information

- Abse, Leo. *Tony Blair*. New York: Robson Books/Parkwest, 2002.
- Hinman, Bonnie. *Tony Blair*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.
- Rentoul, John. *Tony Blair*. London: Warner Books, 1996.

WILLIAM
BLAKE

Born: November 28, 1757

London, England

Died: August 12, 1827

London, England

English poet, engraver, and painter

William Blake was an English poet, engraver, and painter. A boldly imaginative rebel in both his thought and his art, he combined poetic and pictorial genius to explore life.

Youth

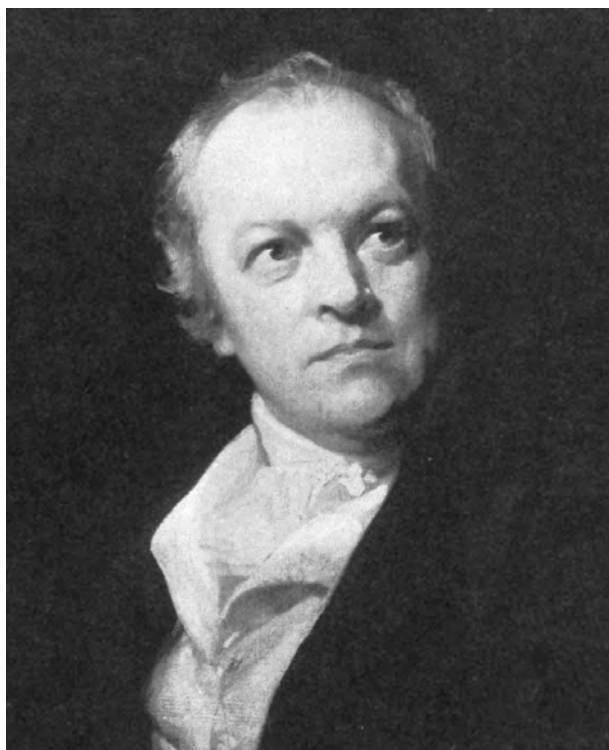
William Blake was born in London, England, on November 28, 1757, the second son of a mens' clothing merchant. Except for a few years in Sussex, England, his entire life was spent in London. From his earliest years he saw visions. He would see trees full of angels or similar sights. If these were not true mystical visions, they were the result of the artist's intense spiritual understanding of the world. From his early teens Blake wrote poems, often setting them to melodies of his own composition.

At age ten Blake started at the well-known Park's drawing school, and at age fourteen he began a seven-year apprenticeship (studying and practicing under someone skilled) to an engraver. It was as an engraver that Blake earned his living for the rest of his life. After he was twenty-one, Blake studied for a time at the Royal Academy of Arts, but he was unhappy with the instruction and soon left.

In August 1782 Blake married Catherine Boucher, who had fallen in love with him at first sight. He taught her to read and write, and she later became a valued assistant. His "sweet shadow of delight," as Blake called Catherine, was a devoted and loving wife.

Early works

When he was twenty-six, he wrote a collection entitled *Poetical Sketches*. This volume



William Blake.

Reproduced by permission of the National Portrait Gallery (London).

was the only one of Blake's poetic works to appear in conventional printed form—he later invented and practiced a new method.

After his father died in 1784, Blake set up a print shop next door to the family shop. In 1787 his beloved brother Robert died; thereafter William claimed that Robert communicated with him in visions. It was Robert, William said, who inspired him with a new method of illuminated etching. The words and or design were drawn in reverse on a plate covered with an acid-resisting substance; acid was then applied. From these etched plates pages were printed and later

hand-colored. Blake used his unique methods to print almost all of his long poems.

In 1787 Blake produced *Songs of Innocence* (1789) as the first major work in his new process, followed by *Songs of Experience* (1794). The magnificent lyrics in these two collections carefully compare the openness of innocence with the bitterness of experience. They are a milestone because they are a rare instance of the successful union of two art forms by one man.

Days of betrayal

Blake spent the years 1800 to 1803 in Sussex working with William Hayley, a minor poet and man of letters. With good intentions Hayley tried to cure Blake of his unprofitable enthusiasms. Blake finally rebelled against this criticism and rejected Hayley's help. In *Milton* (c. 1800–1810), Blake wrote an allegory (story with symbols) of the spiritual issues involved in this relationship. He identified with the poet John Milton (1608–1674) in leaving the safety of heaven and returning to earth. Also at this time in life Blake was accused of uttering seditious (treasonous) sentiments. He was later found not guilty but the incident affected much of Blake's final epic (long lyric poem highlighting a single subject), *Jerusalem* (c. 1804–1820).

Back in London, Blake worked hard at his poems, engraving, and painting, but he suffered several reverses. He was the victim of fraud in connection with his designs for Blair's (1699–1746) poem *The Grave*. He also received insulting reviews of that project and of an exhibition he gave in 1809 to introduce his idea of decorating public buildings with portable frescoes (paintings done on moist plaster using water-based paints).

Blake had become a political sympathizer with the American and French Revolutions. He composed *The Four Zoas* as a mystical story predicting the future showing how evil is rooted in man's basic faculties—reason, passion, instinct, and imagination. Imagination was the hero.

Later years

The next decade is a sad and private period in Blake's life. He did some significant work, including his designs for Milton's poems *L'Allegro* and *Il Penseroso* (1816) and the writing of his own poem *The Everlasting Gospel* (c. 1818). He was also sometimes reduced to writing for others, and the public did not purchase or read his divinely inspired predictions and visions. After 1818, however, conditions improved. His last six years of life were spent at Fountain Court surrounded by a group of admiring young artists. Blake did some of his best pictorial work: the illustrations to the *Book of Job* and his unfinished *Dante*. In 1824 his health began to weaken, and he died singing in London, England, on August 12, 1827.

Continuing influence

Blake's history does not end with his death. In his own lifetime he was almost unknown except to a few friends and faithful sponsors. He was even suspected of being mad. But interest in his work grew during the middle of the nineteenth century, and since then very committed reviewers have gradually shed light on Blake's beautiful, detailed, and difficult mythology. He has been acclaimed as one who shares common ideals held by psychologists, writers (most notably William Butler Yeats [1865–1939]), extreme students of

religion, rock-and-roll musicians, and people studying Oriental religion. The works of William Blake have been used by people rebelling against a wide variety of issues, such as war, conformity (behaving in a certain way because it is accepted or expected), and almost every kind of repression.

For More Information

Ackroyd, Peter. *Blake*. New York: Knopf, 1996.

Bentley, G. E., Jr. *The Stranger from Paradise: A Biography of William Blake*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2001.

King, James. *William Blake, His Life*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

KONRAD BLOCH

Born: January 21, 1912

Neisse, Germany

Died: October 15, 2000

Burlington, Massachusetts

German biochemist

Konrad Bloch's investigations of the complex processes by which animal cells produce cholesterol have increased our understanding of the biochemistry of living organisms and have helped further research into treatment of various common diseases. For his contributions to the study of how the body creates cholesterol, he was awarded the 1964 Nobel Prize in Physiology or Medicine.

Early years and education

Konrad Emil Bloch was born on January 21, 1912, in the German town of Neisse (now Nysa, Poland) to Frederick (Fritz) D. Bloch and Hedwig Bloch. After receiving his early education in local schools, Bloch attended the Technische Hochschule (technical university) in Munich, Germany, from 1930 to 1934. He quickly developed an interest in organic chemistry, partly through the influence of his teacher, Hans Fischer. Also at this time he was inspired while attending lectures by leading chemists of the time, including Adolph Windaus (1876–1959), Rudolph Willstätter (1872–1942), and Heinrich Wieland (1877–1957).

He earned a degree in 1934, the year after Adolf Hitler (1889–1945) became chancellor (leader) of Germany. Bloch moved to Switzerland after graduating and lived there until 1936. While in Switzerland he conducted his first published biochemical research. He worked at the Swiss Research Institute in Davos, where he performed experiments involving the biochemistry of the bacteria (microscopic parasites) that causes tuberculosis, a deadly disease that attacks the lungs and bones.

In 1936 Bloch left Switzerland for the United States, where he earned his doctorate degree in biochemistry in 1938 at the College of Physicians and Surgeons at Columbia University. Bloch joined the school's faculty and later accepted a position at Columbia on a research team led by Rudolf Schoenheimer (1898–1941). With his associate David Rittenberg, Schoenheimer had developed a method of using radioisotopes (radioactive forms of atoms) to track the path of particular molecules in



Konrad Bloch.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

cells and living organisms. This method was especially useful in studying the biochemistry of cholesterol.

Cholesterol, which is found in all animal cells, contains twenty-seven carbon atoms in each molecule. It plays an essential role in the cell's functioning, as it stabilizes cell membrane (walls of the cell). Before Bloch's research, scientists knew little about cholesterol, although many believed there was a connection between the amount of cholesterol and other fats in the diet and arteriosclerosis (an unhealthy buildup of cholesterol deposits inside the arteries).

Conducts research on cholesterol

After Schoenheimer died in 1941, Rittenberg and Bloch continued to conduct research on cholesterol. From their research they learned that acetate (a salt of acetic acid, an important acid found in the body) is a major part of cholesterol. This was the beginning of Bloch's work for many years—the investigation of the complex pattern of steps in the cholesterol's biosynthesis, the production of complex cells from simple cells.

Between 1946 and 1954 Bloch continued his research into the origin of all twenty-seven carbon atoms in the cholesterol molecule. Bloch's research explained the significance of acetic acid as a building block of cholesterol, and showed that cholesterol is an essential component of all body cells. In fact, Bloch discovered that all steroid-related substances (hormones, or substances released by organs for the organic process) in the human body are derived from cholesterol.

In 1941, Bloch married Lore Teutsch, whom he met in Munich. They had two children, Peter and Susan.

Awarded Nobel Prize

In 1964 Bloch and his colleague Feodor Lynen, who had independently performed related research, were awarded the Nobel Prize for Physiology or Medicine. The same year Bloch was honored with the Fritzsche Award from the American Chemical Society and the Distinguished Service Award from the University of Chicago School of Medicine.

Bloch's work is significant because it contributed to creating "an outline for the chemistry of life," as E. P. Kennedy and F. M. Westheimer of Harvard wrote in *Science*.

More importantly, his contributions to understanding the biosynthesis of cholesterol have contributed to efforts to understand the human body's regulation of cholesterol levels in blood and tissue.

Bloch was known for his extreme modesty. When he was awarded the Nobel Prize, the *New York Times* reported that he refused to have his picture taken in front of a sign that read, "Hooray for Dr. Bloch!" On October 15, 2000, Bloch died of heart failure at the Lahey Clinic in Burlington, Massachusetts. He was eighty-eight years old.

According to the *Harvard University Gazette*, Dean Jeremy R. Knowles called Bloch, "a marvelously perceptive biochemist and genius," and added that Bloch's "deep understanding of metabolism laid the chemical foundations of today's biology."

For More Information

Modern Men of Science. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1966, pp. 46–47.

Nobel Prize Winners. New York: H. W. Wilson Co., 1987, p 104.

Kennedy, E. P. and F. H. Westheimer. "Nobel Laureates: Bloch and Lynen Win Prize in Medicine and Physiology." *Science* (October 23, 1964): pp. 504–506.

JUDY BLUME

Born: February 12, 1938

Elizabeth, New Jersey

American writer

Perhaps the most popular author ever of works for upper elementary to junior high school readers, Judy Blume is the creator of honest, often humorous stories that focus on the concerns of teenagers. Her books, including others written for both younger and older audiences, have sold over seventy million copies around the world.

Early life and education

Judy Sussman was born on February 12, 1938, in Elizabeth, New Jersey. She was closer to her father, Ralph Sussman, a dentist, than to her mother, Esther (Rosenfeld) Sussman, a shy homemaker who passed on her love of reading to her daughter. Judy loved going to the library to read adult novels as well as children's books. She was coeditor of her high school newspaper and went on to attend New York University (NYU), where she met John Blume, an attorney. They were married in 1959. After earning her degree in education in 1960, she gave birth to a daughter in 1961 and a son in 1963.

While a homemaker, Judy Blume realized that she needed an outlet for her creative energy and decided that she wanted to write. She composed several children's novels and took writing courses at NYU. Her husband was not encouraging. He told her that he thought it was great that she was writing if it meant she would not shop as much. Her confidence grew, though, as she began to sell a few stories to magazines and even had one of her children's books accepted for publication.

Huge success

The release of a book written for an adolescent audience, *Are You There, God? It's Me,*



Judy Blume.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Margaret, in 1970 brought huge success to Blume. The novel describes eleven-year-old Margaret's worries and fears about starting her period and choosing her own religion. At the time of its publication, Blume was praised for her warm and funny descriptions of childhood feelings and conversation. She was also criticized, however, for the book's references to the human body and its processes. There were many attempts in different cities to have the book removed from library shelves. This book is now considered a groundbreaking work due to the honesty with which Blume presents previously taboo (not talked about) subjects.

Blume went on to write other successful books for different age groups. *Tales of a Fourth-Grade Nothing* (1972) and *Superfudge* (1980), two entertaining tales about ten-year-old Peter and his uncontrollable baby brother, Fudge, were especially popular with readers. Blume also caused another controversy (dispute) with the release of *Forever* (1975), in which she relates the details of her eighteen-year-old heroine's first sexual experience. Despite the fact that it was published as an adult book, protesters pointed out that Blume's popularity with readers and uncomplicated writing style attracted a preteen audience that could be influenced by the details of the novel. In *Tiger Eyes* (1981), Blume relates the story of how fifteen-year-old Davey adjusts to her father's murder. Hailed by many critics as Blume's finest work for her successful handling of a complicated plot, *Tiger Eyes* includes such issues as alcoholism, suicide, and violence.

Praise and criticism

Reviewers commended Blume for her honesty, warmth, and wit, praising her keen observation of childhood and strong appeal to children. Her books for younger children, such as *Tales of a Fourth Grade Nothing*, *Blubber*, and *Otherwise Known as Sheila the Great*, deal with problems such as getting along with one's brothers and sisters, establishing self-confidence, and having no friends. Books for young adults, such as *Are You There, God? It's Me, Margaret*, *Deenie*, and *Just As Long as We're Together*, consider matters of divorce, friendship, family breakups, and sexual development.

Blume's discussion of sexuality reflects her ability to target the issues that most

interest young people. She explained to John Neary of *People*, “I think I write about sexuality because it was uppermost in my mind when I was a kid: the need to know, and not knowing how to find out. My father delivered these little lectures to me, the last one when I was 10, on how babies are made. But questions about what I was feeling, and how my body could feel, I *never* asked my parents.”

Although Blume’s work is consistently popular with readers, it has often been the target of criticism. Some have charged that her readable style, with its focus on small detail, lacks the depth to deal with the complicated issues that she raises. Other reviewers point out that the problems of her characters are often left unresolved by the end of the book. Many critics, however, think it is to Blume’s credit that she does not settle every problem for her readers.

As a result of Blume’s popularity, she began to receive hundreds of fan letters every week, some of them asking her advice on different issues. In 1986 she collected a number of these letters from her readers and published them, along with her own comments, as *Letters to Judy: What Your Kids Wish They Could Tell You*. The resulting book was meant for both children and adults to help them better communicate with each other. Blume feels so strongly about the lack of communication between children and their parents that she used the profits from sales of *Letters to Judy*, among other projects, to help finance the KIDS Fund, which she established in 1981. Each year the fund contributes approximately \$45,000 to various nonprofit organizations set up to help young people communicate with their parents.

Older audience

Over the years Blume’s writing has matured and her audience has expanded with each new book. While she wrote for younger children at first, as her audience aged she began writing for teenagers and later for adults. Her first adult novel, *Wifey*, deals with a woman’s search for more out of life and marriage. *Smart Women* finds a divorced woman trying to deal with single motherhood and new relationships. *Summer Sisters* examines the relationship between two adult women whose friendship has grown apart since the teenage years of their lives. Blume enjoys writing for all audiences: “I wish that older readers would read my books about young people, and I hope that younger readers will grow up to read what I have to say about adult life. I’d like to feel that I write for everybody.”

As a result of the controversy surrounding some of her books, Blume also increased her activities opposing censorship (the act of examining materials such as books or films and removing anything considered objectionable or obscene) and supporting intellectual freedom. In 1999 she edited *Places I Never Meant to Be*, a collection of stories written by people whose work was the target of censorship efforts. Having divorced her first husband, Blume lives in Key West, Florida, with her second husband, George Cooper, also a writer. They were married in 1987.

Judy Blume continues to write for children and adults. She is also involved in a new project adopting her earlier children’s novels into home videos.

For More Information

Lee, Betsy. *Judy Blume’s Story*. Minneapolis: Dillon Press, 1981.

Nault, Jennifer. *Judy Blume*. Mankato, MN: Weigl Publishers, 2002.

Weidt, Maryann N. *Presenting Judy Blume*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1990.

HUMPHREY BOGART

Born: January 23, 1899

New York, New York

Died: January 14, 1957

Hollywood, California

American actor

The American stage and screen actor Humphrey Bogart was one of Hollywood, California's, most durable stars and a performer of considerable skill, subtlety, and individuality.

Early years

Humphrey Deforest Bogart was born on January 23, 1899, in New York City to Deforest Bogart, a surgeon, and Maud Humphrey Bogart, an illustrator. He attended several private schools, including Trinity School in New York and Phillips Academy in Andover, Massachusetts. He performed poorly and was expelled at one point. Somewhat surprisingly Humphrey was not particularly interested in drama as a schoolboy.

Bogart left school to serve in the U.S. Navy during World War I (1914–18; a war that involved many European countries as well as Russia, the United States, and areas in the Middle East). While on assignment in the

military police, a prisoner tried to escape and struck Bogart in the mouth. Bogart was left with a scar and a slight lisp. These gave a more sinister quality to his already gravelly voice. When he returned home he worked briefly as a Wall Street (the area of New York City where the stock exchange is located) clerk.

Start in theater

Bogart was never interested in dramatics when he was growing up. However, one of his parents' neighbors was a producer for the theater and offered Bogart a job in his office. Eventually, Humphrey became a stage manager (the person who assists the director and runs the stage for a play or musical) and then began acting himself. Acting did not always come easy for him. Although he did get roles, at one time he became so nervous that he ran offstage in the middle of a performance.

After a considerable struggle Bogart achieved recognition with his two most important stage appearances: in Maxwell Anderson's (1888–1959) comedy *Saturday's Children* (1928) and Robert E. Sherwood's (1896–1955) gangster morality play, *The Petrified Forest* (1936). In *The Petrified Forest* he played a mentally ill killer, Duke Mantee. This performance, as well as his performance in the popular film version with Bette Davis (1908–1989) and Leslie Howard (1893–1943), led to typecasting (repeatedly being asked to perform similar roles) him as a tough guy. He played mobsters in the movies *Dead End* (1937), *Angels with Dirty Faces* (1938), and *The Roaring Twenties* (1940).

Achieved star status with classic films

Not until Bogart's performance as the cold, uncommitted private detective Sam Spade in John Huston's (1906–1987) adaptation of Dashiell Hammett's novel, *The Maltese Falcon* (1941), did Bogart reveal his potential as a screen personality. His co-starring role with Ingrid Bergman (1915–1982) as Rick Blaine in Michael Curtiz's (1888–1962) war drama *Casablanca* (1942) added to his legend and led to his first Academy Award nomination. He lost, but the film won Best Picture honors.

Bogart next performed in *To Have and Have Not* (1944), a screen version of Ernest Hemingway's (1899–1961) novel of the Great Depression (1929–39; a period during which poverty was widespread due to terrible economic conditions) transformed into a comedy of social consciousness. Bogart was cast opposite Lauren Bacall (1924–). The following year Bogart divorced his third wife and married Bacall. They had two children together.

Although Bogart appeared in several poor movies, most of his films were above the standard Hollywood level. His best motion pictures of the 1940s include *Sahara* (1943), a realistic World War II (1939–45; a war where Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States battled Germany, Italy, and Japan) drama; *The Big Sleep* (1946), a sophisticated (subtle and complex) detective thriller based on the Raymond Chandler (1888–1959) novel; and *Key Largo* (1948). *The Treasure of Sierra Madre* (1948) may be one of the greatest films ever released. Of Bogart's portrayal of a madman in *The Treasure of Sierra Madre*, the film critic Pauline Kael (1919–2001) wrote, "In a brilliant char-



Humphrey Bogart.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

acterization, Humphrey Bogart takes the tough-guy role to its psychological limits..."

In a very different film, the adventure-comedy *The African Queen* (1951), Bogart won an Academy Award for his humorously expressive depiction of the earthy, gin-guzzling boat captain who brings life to a straight-laced Katharine Hepburn (1907–).

Later works

In *The Barefoot Contessa* (1953) Bogart gave depth to his role as a shattered, alcoholic film director. In *Beat the Devil* (1954), he portrayed a disreputable adventurer. *The*

Caine Mutiny (1954) provided Bogart with one of his finest roles, as the unstable Captain Queeg. In his last film, the sharp-edged boxing drama *The Harder They Fall* (1956), Bogart gave a strong performance as an investigator of sports corruption. A year later, on January 14, 1957, after a long struggle with throat cancer, he died in Hollywood.

Bogart was not only admired for his great talent, but also for his professionalism. He always arrived on the set knowing his lines and knowing exactly what he was supposed to do. He always cooperated willingly with the directors of his films. At his funeral, director John Huston, Bogart's longtime friend, paid him tribute: "He is quite unreplaceable. There will never be anybody like him."

For More Information

Myers, Jeffrey C. *Bogart: A Life in Hollywood*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1997.

Sperber, A. M., and Eric Lax. New York: William Morrow and Co., 1997.

JULIAN BOND

Born: January 14, 1940

Nashville, Tennessee

African American civil rights leader, political activist, and politician

Julian Bond is a civil rights leader, political activist, and politician who has spent most of his life fighting for equality in America. He has remained committed to the

causes he believes in since joining the civil rights movement as a young college student.

Family and education

Horace Julian Bond, born on January 14, 1940, in Nashville, Tennessee, was the descendant of several generations of black educators and preachers. When his father Horace Mann Bond became president of Lincoln University in Oxford, Pennsylvania, the family moved into an environment that was mostly white. While in Oxford, the elder Bond caused a stir because of his protests against segregated facilities (people being required to use different facilities based on their race) and white attitudes of racial superiority. Young Julian, however, adjusted relatively easily to his new environment. He attended elementary school with white children and won the sixth grade award for being the brightest student in the class. He was sent to George School, near Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, for his high-school education. He encountered a few instances of racial prejudice (being judged because of his race) during these years, but on the whole he adjusted well to the academic environment—although his grades were only average.

His father later became president of Atlanta University and the family moved to Atlanta, Georgia. Despite rumors of racial unrest, Bond decided to attend Morehouse College in Atlanta after his graduation from high school. Bond started college in 1957.

Early involvement in the civil rights movement

At Morehouse, Bond became the coordinator and spokesman for civil rights demonstrations. He started an Atlanta student civil

rights group called the Committee on Appeal for Human Rights.

In 1960 Ella Baker (1903–1986), secretary of the civil rights organization known as the Southern Christian Leadership Conference (SCLC) invited students to meet at Shaw University, in Raleigh, North Carolina, to coordinate their efforts. Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968), president of the SCLC, and Reverend James Lawson Jr., a believer in nonviolent resistance, spoke to the students and invited them to join the SCLC. Instead of joining the SCLC, several hundred students, including Bond, decided to form their own organization. They called their organization the Student Nonviolent Coordinating Committee (SNCC).

Bond was appointed communications director for the SNCC. He kept this position from 1960 until 1966. He became very active in the SNCC, dropped out of college, and did not complete his degree at Morehouse until 1971.

Elected office in Georgia

Segregation in the South meant that very few African Americans held positions in government or in public service. The SNCC felt that it was important for African American candidates to seek elective offices. When the SNCC asked Bond to run for the Georgia House of Representatives, he reluctantly agreed to enter the race. Bond campaigned by visiting people door-to-door in the 136th legislative district. He gained the confidence of the people and easily won the election.

Just before the legislative session opened in 1966, Bond was contacted by a newsman and asked if he supported a statement against



Julian Bond.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

the Vietnam War (1955–75; a war fought in Vietnam in which South Vietnam, supported by the United States, was fighting against a takeover by Communist North Vietnam) that had been released by the SNCC. When Bond said he had not seen the release, the newsman read it to him. Bond then said he basically agreed with the statement. Upon hearing this, the other Georgia legislators voted to keep him from taking his seat in the House. Almost a year later, the U.S. Supreme Court declared the House vote to be unconstitutional. Bond was installed in the Georgia House of Representatives in January 1967, more than one year after his election victory.

During his time as a Georgia state representative, Bond supported civil rights laws, welfare legislation, a minimum-wage provision, legislation to end the death penalty, and antipoverty and urban renewal programs.

In 1968 Bond led an SNCC-backed delegation to the Democratic National Convention in Chicago. Their purpose was to challenge the delegation led by Georgia governor Lester Maddox (1915–) and to make sure African American delegates represented African American voters. Bond's delegation won half the votes away from the traditional delegates.

Political career ends

Bond served in the Georgia House of Representatives until 1975. In 1976 he won a seat in the Georgia state senate. In 1986, however, Bond gave up his state senate seat to run for U.S. Congress. Bond's political life took a downward turn as he lost the Democratic primary to his former friend and colleague, John Lewis (1940–). Then in 1987 Bond's marital problems became headline news when his wife accused him of adultery and of cocaine use.

In the early 1990s, Bond served as a visiting professor at several universities, including Harvard University and the University of Virginia. He also narrated a Public Broadcasting Service (PBS) documentary about the civil rights movement, hosted television's *America's Black Forum*, wrote many newspaper and magazine articles, and had a newspaper column that was printed in newspapers across the country.

Since 1998 Bond has served as chairman of the National Association for the Advance-

ment of Colored People (NAACP). In 2002 Bond was reelected to his fifth term as chairman of the NAACP. He said that he was looking "forward to another year of progress in our fight for freedom, justice, and equality for all citizens." It is clear through these words that Bond has remained as committed to civil rights as he was when he first joined the movement.

For More Information

Jordan, Denise. *Julian Bond: Civil Rights Activist and Chairman of the NAACP*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2001.

Williams, Roger M. *The Bonds: An American Family*. New York: Atheneum, 1971.

DANIEL BOONE

Born: November 2, 1734

Reading, Pennsylvania

Died: September 26, 1820

St. Charles, Missouri

American explorer

An American frontiersman and explorer, Daniel Boone was the greatest woodsman in United States history. He left behind many lands that he had discovered, protected, settled, and improved. He was the subject of many stories after his death that exaggerated both his accomplishments and his flaws.

An early interest in the outdoors

Daniel Boone was born near Reading, Pennsylvania, on November 2, 1734, the sixth of eleven children born to Squire Boone, a farmer and land speculator (a person who buys land hoping that it will increase in value and be sold for a profit), and Sarah Morgan. His formal education was limited; he was more interested in the outdoors. He and his family moved to North Carolina in 1751. After working for his father, Boone became a wagoner (a wagon driver) and a blacksmith.

In 1755 Boone joined General Edward Braddock (c. 1695–1755), commander in chief of British forces in North America, as a wagoner. Boone participated in Braddock's attempt to capture Fort Duquesne (doo-KANE; now Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania) during the French and Indian War (1754–63), a war fought between the British and the French for control over land in North America. While on march he met John Finley, a hunter, whose talk of the Kentucky wilderness greatly influenced Boone's career. When Braddock's command was destroyed by a French and Indian ambush, Boone fled for his life on horseback.

Boone married Rebecca Bryan on August 14, 1756, and settled down in North Carolina, believing that he had all he needed—"a good gun, a good horse, and a good wife." Finley's stories of Kentucky, though, never really left Boone's mind.

Expeditions and settlement

In 1767 Boone led his first expedition as far westward as the area of Floyd County, Kentucky. In 1769, with Finley and four others, he cleared a trail through the Cumber-



Daniel Boone.

land Gap that soon became a highway to the frontier. As an agent for Richard Henderson (1735–1785) and his Transylvania Company, Boone led the first group of colonists to Kentucky, reaching the site of Boonesborough in April 1775. Later that year he brought west another party, which included his family.

Boone became the leader of the Kentucky settlement, as hunter, surveyor (a person who measures and plots land), and Indian fighter. When Kentucky became a county of Virginia, he was given the rank of major in the militia. Boone's misfortunes began in July 1776, when his daughter was captured by Shawnee and Cherokee tribespeople. He was

able to rescue her but two years later was himself captured by the Shawnee. Though he escaped and helped defend Boonesborough against Indian raiders, while on his way east he was robbed of money other settlers had given him to buy land. He was forced to repay the angry settlers. From this time on, Boone was followed by debts and lawsuits.

Moving westward

Boone held many government offices, including lieutenant colonel of Fayette County, legislative representative, and sheriff. In 1786 he moved to Maysville, Kentucky, and was elected to the legislature. Bad luck continued to follow him, however; he lost his land because of a mistake made in the records. In 1788 he abandoned Kentucky and moved to Point Pleasant in what is now West Virginia. He was appointed lieutenant colonel of Kanawha County in 1789 and its legislative delegate in 1791.

Boone and his family later moved west to Spain's Alta Luisiana (or Upper Louisiana, now Missouri). When asked why he had left Kentucky, he answered, "Too many people! Too crowded, too crowded! I want some elbow room." What he really wanted was to settle on land that would not be taken away from him later. The Spaniards were pleased to have him as a colonist, giving him a large land grant and a position of leadership in his district. However, when the United States took over the land, Boone's claim was denied once again, although Congress restored part of it in 1814.

Later life

Boone took great satisfaction from traveling back to his beloved Kentucky in about 1810 to pay off his outstanding debts,

although he was left with only fifty cents. After his wife died three years later, Boone spent his remaining years in St. Charles, Missouri, at the home of his son. He died there on September 26, 1820.

Boone was moderately well known from several books about his wilderness adventures when Lord Byron (1788–1824) wrote about him in the 1823 poem *Don Juan*. This made the explorer world famous three years after his death and led people to tell many exaggerated stories about him. Love of adventure, skill in the outdoors, and dignity in the face of misfortune made Daniel Boone a symbol of early America.

For More Information

- Draper, Lyman C. *The Life of Daniel Boone*. Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books, 1998.
- Faragher, John Mack. *Daniel Boone: The Life and Legend of an American Pioneer*. New York: Holt, 1992.

JOHN WILKES BOOTH

Born: May 10, 1838

Bel Air, Maryland

Died: April 26, 1865

Port Royal, Virginia

American assassin and actor

One of the most promising American actors of his time, John Wilkes Booth was a vocal supporter of the

South during the Civil War (1861–65) and was the assassin of President Abraham Lincoln (1809–1865).

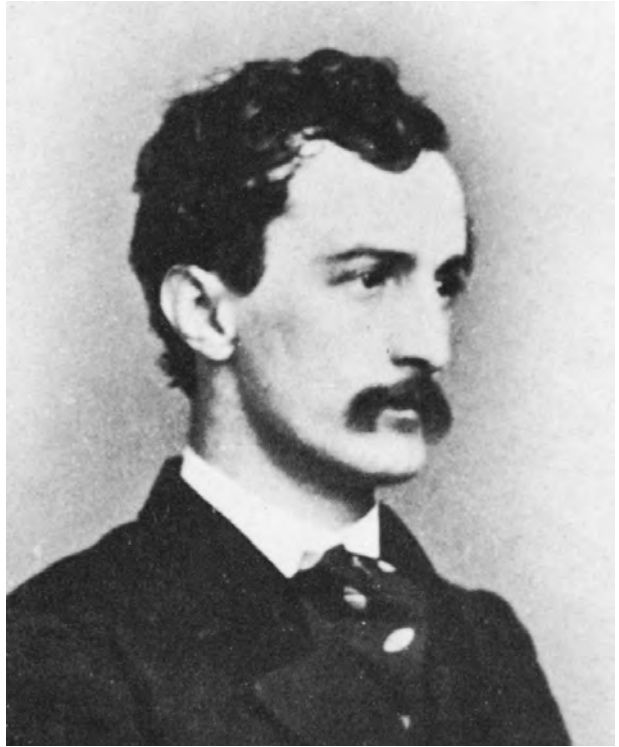
Son of an actor

John Wilkes Booth was born in Bel Air, Maryland, the son of Junius Brutus Booth, an actor, and Mary Ann Holmes. He was a spoiled child whose education was limited because of his failure to attend school regularly. His father was often on the road, appearing in plays in other parts of the country, and he died when Booth was only fourteen years old.

Booth was very handsome and charming, and he decided while still in his teens to become an actor like his father and his brother Edwin. Although he sometimes refused to learn his lines and was unwilling to work very hard at acting, he had natural talent that made him popular in performances of the plays of William Shakespeare (1564–1616), especially in Richmond, Virginia. In 1860, the year Lincoln was elected president, Booth became more popular as he played to approving audiences across the country. It seemed that he would soon be famous.

Sympathized with the South

Unlike the rest of his family, John Wilkes Booth had always been a supporter of the South. He believed the Civil War was necessary to maintain Southern freedom. Booth resented the Northern position that slavery had to be outlawed. He attended the execution of John Brown (1800–1859), one of the most famous abolitionists (opponents of slavery) in history. Booth wrote that he considered abolitionists to be “traitors” and that they deserved the same fate as Brown.



John Wilkes Booth.

When a breathing problem in 1863 forced Booth to leave the stage for a while, he began to work on a plan to kidnap President Lincoln and deliver him to Richmond. He may have intended to use the president in an exchange to secure the release of some Confederate (Southern) prisoners. It is not known whether this was all Booth's idea or if he was acting on the orders of someone else. He enlisted six other Confederate supporters in the scheme. In March 1865 they planned to capture Lincoln near Washington, D.C., but the president failed to appear. Booth's anger over the mission's failure is believed to have led to his decision to assassinate Lincoln.

Booth learned at noon on April 14 that Lincoln would attend a performance of a play called *Our American Cousin* at Ford's Theater in Washington that evening. Vice President Andrew Johnson (1808–1875) and Secretary of State William Seward (1801–1872) were also supposed to be killed, but the other members of Booth's gang failed to carry out these murders. Booth went to the theater in the afternoon and fixed the door of the president's private box so that he would be able to get in later. At about ten o'clock Booth entered the theater, shot Lincoln, and jumped to the stage, shouting "Sic semper tyrannis! (Latin for 'Thus ever to tyrants!') The South is avenged!" Lincoln died the next morning.

Pursued and killed

Booth had broken a leg when he jumped to the stage after the shooting. The pain slowed him down as he tried to make his escape, and he and another suspect were forced to seek medical help. A doctor named Samuel Mudd treated Booth's leg and fed the two men. For several days they tried to cross the Potomac River, and when they finally succeeded, they traveled to the farm of Richard Garrett, south of the Rappahannock River. Pursuers found them in Garrett's barn on April 26. When Booth refused to give himself up, the barn was set on fire. His figure was seen briefly just as a shot was fired. Although one of the pursuers claimed to have shot Booth, it is unclear whether he was killed or committed suicide.

Booth's pro-South friends were quickly rounded up and put on trial. Four of them were sentenced to death. Mudd and two others received life sentences. One of these men

died in 1867; the other man and Mudd were both pardoned (allowed to go free and not serve the sentences for the crimes of which they had been convicted) in 1869. John Wilkes Booth, the leader of the group, will be forever remembered for his twisted vision of patriotism. He never understood the horror caused by his act, and he died with these last words: "Tell Mother . . . I died for my country."

For More Information

Otfinoski, Steven. *John Wilkes Booth and the Civil War*. Woodbridge, CT: Blackbirch Press, 1999.

WILLIAM BOOTH

Born: April 10, 1829

Nottingham, England

Died: August 20, 1912

London, England

English preacher and humanitarian

The English evangelist (crusading preacher) William Booth founded the Salvation Army, an international Christian organization for charitable and evangelical work (encouraging people to save their souls through religious faith).

Early life

William Booth was born near Nottingham, England, on April 10, 1829, the only son of Samuel and Mary Moss Booth's four

children. His father was a building contractor. As a youth, Booth worked as an assistant to a pawnbroker (a moneylender who requires the deposit of an item belonging to the borrower in exchange for the loan). Neither he nor his parents were especially religious. After a conversion (change in beliefs) at age fifteen, however, Booth began preaching in the streets on behalf of a Methodist chapel. The Methodist religion considers preaching more important than ceremony in inspiring devotion.

In 1849 Booth went to London, where he worked for another pawnbroker. Three years later, however, thinking he could do something to help the many poor people he came into contact with, he became a full-time Methodist preacher. His education ended at age thirteen, but through reading and learning from other preachers, he improved his speaking and writing. In 1855 he married Catherine Mumford, an intelligent and determined woman, and went on to have eight children. Encouraged by her in his religious studies, Booth became a minister in 1858.

Booth's beliefs

Booth's belief system was simple and unwavering. He drew both his beliefs and his basic practice from the model set by John Wesley (1703–1791), the founder of Methodism, a century earlier. It required no official religious education. He believed that without personal acceptance of Christ as his savior (one who saves another from destruction), the sinful man would endure eternal suffering. Although the opportunity for acceptance was freely offered to all, it was certain to be ignored by the people in the new run-down



William Booth.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

industrial towns, who openly practiced unlawful and immoral behavior. Thus, it was necessary for preachers to reach the ignorant, the drunks, and the criminals and offer them the chance of saving their souls.

Driven by this purpose, in 1861 the Booths left Methodism, and in 1865 they established the Christian Mission in East London, England. During the next twelve years Booth developed the preaching methods later employed by the Salvation Army. Among these were the use of secular (nonreligious) living quarters and the use of reformed sinners as workers. Booth was mainly interested in saving souls. He held no

extreme political or social views, and he only gradually came to accept that social improvement might have to come before religious conversion. Thus he slowly built a social program of food kitchens, housing, and group organization. He wrote, however, “The Social is the bait, but it is Salvation that is the hook that lands the fish.”

The conversion of the Christian Mission into the Salvation Army occurred somewhat accidentally in 1878. Booth had earlier expressed the seriousness of his mission in military terms, titles, and ideas. This organizational style, not unique to his army, was in tune with the current popularity of and respect for the military. The army’s paper, the *War Cry*, appeared at the end of 1879. Although the army met with considerable opposition through the 1880s, by 1890 Booth had become internationally famous. The day-to-day administrative work of the Salvation Army fell increasingly to Bramwell Booth, General Booth’s oldest child and his chief of staff.

Mrs. Booth died in 1890, the year in which Booth wrote, with much assistance from a reforming journalist named W. T. Stead, his famous book, *In Darkest England and the Way Out*. In it Booth colorfully and sympathetically detailed the problems of the people his army most often tried to reach, and he insisted that the “way out” must involve the changing of men as well as their surroundings.

For More Information

Barnes, Cyril J. *William Booth and His Army of Peace*. Amersham, England: Hulton Educational, 1975.

Barnes, Cyril J. *Words of William Booth*. London: Salvationist Publishing, 1975.

Bennett, David. *William Booth*. Minneapolis, MN.: Bethany House, 1986.

LUCREZIA BORGIA

Born: April 18, 1480

Rome, Italy

Died: June 24, 1519

Ferrara, Italy

Italian duchess

Lucrezia Borgia, Duchess of Ferrara, earned a reputation as a political schemer in fifteenth century Italy. In actuality, she was simply used by her father and brother to further their own political goals.

Early life

Lucrezia Borgia was born during Italy’s Renaissance period (1320–1520), a time when artists, architects, and scientists rose to world appreciation. She was born into one of the most well-known families in world history: the Borgias, who sought to control as much of Italy as they could. The Borgias legacy, however, is not one to be desired, as they earned a reputation for being evil, violent, and politically corrupt.

Lucrezia Borgia was born on April 18, 1480, the daughter of Cardinal Rodrigo Borgia (c. 1431–1503), later to become Pope Alexander VI, and his mistress Vannozza Cat-

tanei, who was also the mother of Lucrezia's two older brothers, Cesare and Giovanni. The task of raising Lucrezia, however, was given to Rodrigo's cousin, the widow Adriana daMila. While living in a palace in Rome, Lucrezia was educated at the Convent of St. Sixtus on Via Appia. Lucrezia was slender with light blue-green eyes and golden hair, which she later bleached to maintain its goldenness. A painting by Pinturicchio (1454–1513), "Disputation of Saint Catherine," is said to be modeled after her. It portrays a slender, young woman with wavy, blonde hair cascading down her back.

The first marriage

Young Lucrezia was no more than eleven when she was first affected by the political ambitions of her father (who had by this time become Pope Alexander VI) and her older brother, Cesare. Her father annulled (cancelled) a marriage contract between Lucrezia and a Spanish nobleman. Instead he gave Lucrezia to Giovanni Sforza, lord of Pesaro, a twenty-seven-year old with a fierce temper.

By the time Lucrezia was seventeen, Alexander and Cesare, were looking to align themselves with Spain and Naples against France and the Sforza family. Sensing he was losing favor with the Borgia family, Giovanni fled for his life. Soon Lucrezia's marriage was annulled and Giovanni was humiliated.

The second marriage

For Lucrezia's next husband, Cesare and Rodrigo chose seventeen-year-old Alfonso of Aragon, the Duke of Bisceglie and son of the late king of Naples. But by the time her first marriage was officially annulled on December 27, 1497, Lucrezia was six months preg-



Lucrezia Borgia.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

nant. Rumors swirled throughout Italy as to who the father was.

Alfonso of Aragon was reputed to be a handsome youth with fine manners, and by all evidence Lucrezia truly loved him. But only a year later, political changes were once again stirring. Alexander and Cesare now looked to align with France, and Lucrezia's marriage to Alfonso stood in the way. Fearing for his life, Alfonso also fled Rome. Lucrezia met up with her husband in Nepi and soon the two returned to Rome.

On July 15, 1500, hired killers attacked Alfonso, stabbing him several times. On August 18, as Alfonso was recovering, Cesare

reportedly came to him and whispered in his ear that “what was not finished at breakfast would be complete by dinner.” Returning to Alfonso’s room later that day, Cesare ordered everyone out and directed his strongman to strangle Lucrezia’s young husband.

Left a widow at the age of twenty, Lucrezia spent most of her time weeping over the loss of her husband. Tired of watching her mourn, her father and brother sent her to Nepi in the Etruscan Hills. On her return to Rome in November 1500, she began assisting her father as a sort of secretary, often opening and responding to his mail when he was not in residence.

A new husband

Once again politics determined Lucrezia’s marriage to the twenty-four-year-old widower Alfonso d’Este, eldest son of Ercole d’Este, Duke of Ferrara. Lucrezia was eager for the marriage. She regarded Rome as a prison and thought she would have a better chance of leading her own life in Ferrara, away from her ambitious father and brother.

On February 2, 1502, Lucrezia and Alfonso were wed. Lucrezia had married a man who not only was interested in artillery, tournaments, dogs, and horses, but who also played the viol (a musical instrument that was popular during the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries) and made pottery. On the other hand, he was also known for his cruelty, stinging, and strange behavior.

Life in Ferrara

The people of Ferrara adored Lucrezia, praising her for her beauty and “inner grace of personality.” Content to socialize with

artists, courtiers, poets, and citizens of the Renaissance court, she helped make Ferrara a center for artists and writers.

In 1503 Alexander died, along with many of Cesare’s political plans. Finally, some stability appeared in Lucrezia’s life. When Ercole died in 1505, she and Alfonso became the reigning duke and duchess of Ferrara. Lucrezia had several children by Alfonso d’Este. In 1512 Lucrezia withdrew from public life, possibly from the news that Rodrigo, her son by Alfonso of Aragon, had died. She began to spend more time in her apartments or in nearby convents, and turned to religion.

As the years progressed, her body thickened, and she was said to have aged greatly. She also suffered from spells of deep sadness. On June 14, 1519, while giving birth to a stillborn girl (dead upon birth), she developed a fever that caused her to lose much of her strength. She died ten days later at the age of thirty-nine.

Many historians view Lucrezia Borgia as a political pawn whose marriages were used for her family’s political gains. Born into a vicious and greedy family, Lucrezia was very much a product of her times, and she accepted these ambitions and their consequences for the good of the family.

For More Information

Bellonci, Maria. *The Life and Times of Lucrezia Borgia*. London: Phoenix Press, 2000.

Chamberlin, E. R. *The Fall of the House of Borgia*. New York: Dial Press, 1974.

Clouas, Ivan. *The Borgias*. Translated by Gilda Roberts. New York: F. Watts, 1989.

P. W. BOTH A

Born: January 12, 1916

Orange Free State, South Africa

*South African political leader, president,
and prime minister*

After serving for six years as prime minister, P. W. Botha became the first executive state president of the Republic of South Africa in 1984. His administration was marked by tension and riots. He tried to improve conditions for nonwhite residents of South Africa, but he also used force to take down opposition. Botha is best known for his stubbornness, a trait that earned him the nickname of “The Old Crocodile.”

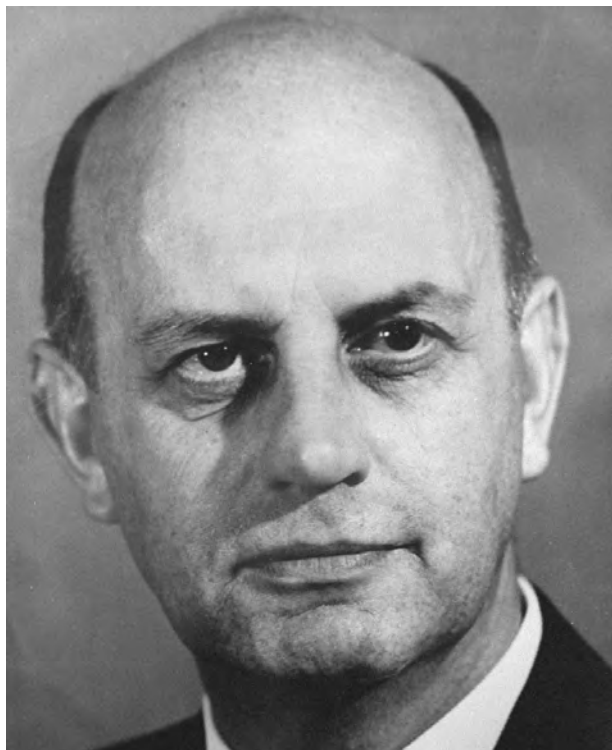
Afrikaner upbringing

Pieter Willem Botha was born on January 12, 1916, in the Paul Roux district of the Orange Free State. He is what is referred to in South Africa as an Afrikaner, a white person who speaks Afrikaans (a form of the Dutch language) as his native language. Botha’s father, also named Pieter, fought in the Boer War (1899–1902). In this war the Boers, white descendants of Dutch colonists who controlled two republics in South Africa, tried to prevent the takeover of those republics by the British. Botha attended secondary school in Bethlehem. He started his career in politics as a teenager, joining the National Party. He entered the University of the Orange Free State in Bloemfontein, South Africa, to study law, but left the university at age twenty in order to begin a full-time political career.

The rural Orange Free State was among the most Afrikaans-speaking regions of South Africa. For many decades it was known for its extreme political conservatism (desire to maintain traditions and opposition to change) among whites. Thus, it was not surprising that Botha became involved with the conservative National Party, although at the time it was still a minor party in South African white politics. Botha was appointed as a political organizer for the Nationalists in neighboring Cape Province. In March 1943 he married Elsie Rossouw, with whom he had two sons and three daughters. He was put in charge of publicity during the campaign leading up to the May 1948 general election, an election the National Party unexpectedly won.

Many different government jobs

In the 1948 election Botha won a seat in the House of Assembly, the lower chamber of South Africa’s parliament. He would hold this seat for the next thirty-six years. Also in 1948 Botha was made chief secretary of the National Party in the Cape Province, a post he held for a decade. These years are said to have changed Botha’s conservatism in favor of “Cape liberalism,” meaning that he became more open to change and aware of the needs of nonwhite people in the province. Botha continued to earn promotions and take on more responsibility. In 1966 he became defense minister, a position he held for the next fourteen years. During this time, military spending increased greatly, and South Africa produced enough of its own weapons that it no longer needed to get them from other countries. Botha also created new opportunities in the military for women and nonwhite South Africans.



P. W. Botha.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

When Prime Minister B. J. Vorster resigned in 1978, Botha won the election to succeed him, a result that took many by surprise. Botha's campaign was helped by a scandal that hurt the reputation of another candidate. Botha announced his intention to direct the country toward reform and away from the policy of "apartheid" (separation of blacks and whites) that had been a way of life in South Africa. The new prime minister told his fellow whites to "adapt or die." The conservatives in the National Party strongly resisted this suggestion, and for years the struggle over policy within the party hurt Botha's attempts at reform. One example of

this was the new South African Constitution of 1983, which for the first time admitted nonwhites to membership in parliament. It was only a minor improvement, as the real power remained in the hands of the white president and white members of parliament.

More tension, more pressure

In 1984 Botha was elevated to the post of executive state president, and the position of prime minister was eliminated. He introduced some reforms, such as allowing the creation of black labor unions and ending the ban on marriages between people of different races. However, his lack of a firm resolve was seen as a barrier to real change. As promises to give full citizenship rights to all blacks and mixed-race people remained unfulfilled, tensions within the country's black population increased. Botha was also criticized for his refusal to free Nelson Mandela (1918–), a black leader of the African National Congress who had been imprisoned since 1964 for treason. The country was torn by rioting and began to be pressured by other countries to end the system of apartheid and free Mandela.

In May 1986 the government backed a series of attacks in Zimbabwe, Botswana, Zambia, and South Africa. The attacks led to more rioting, which left dozens of people dead, tens of thousands homeless, and caused an increase in racial tension. By June 12 the government declared a national state of emergency. Other countries condemned Botha's government for these activities and decided to stop trading with South Africa. Still, Botha and the National Party held strong, and the price of gold, South Africa's chief export, rose sharply. By the time of the

parliamentary elections in March 1988, Botha had begun to return to his conservative roots and ordered a ban on organizations that opposed apartheid.

International relations

In terms of South Africa's international relations, Botha made some attempts at friendship with other countries—although he also warned South Africans to be aware of the possibility of a “total onslaught” against the republic by foreign countries. He met with President Kaunda of Zambia in 1982, and in March 1984 he signed the “Nkomati Accord” with President Samora Machel of Mozambique. This agreement sought to end fighting along the common border between the two countries. Botha also officially visited seven Western European capitals, the first South African head of government to do so in many decades.

Botha and Mandela meet

In January 1989 Botha suffered a stroke that left him partially paralyzed. He retained the presidency, but it was rumored that he would resign. On July 5, 1989, a historic meeting took place between Botha and Mandela. Mandela was not released from prison at that time, but the meeting was seen as a breakthrough between the white ruling party and the black majority. Botha officially resigned from the presidency on August 14, 1989, and on May 6, 1990, he resigned from the National Party.

Looking back

Botha has refused to apologize for his role in maintaining the apartheid system,

which was eventually eliminated under Frederik W. de Klerk (1936–), who took over after Botha's resignation. In 1996 and 1997 Botha was charged in connection with a series of bombings that had taken place in the 1980s against the African National Congress. In 1998 he was put on trial and was implicated in the 1988 bombing of the headquarters of the South African Council of Churches. Botha's refusal to testify led a court to find him guilty of contempt (showing disrespect for the authority and dignity of a court by disobedience) in August 1998. He was ordered to pay \$1,600 or serve a year in prison. Botha appealed the decision. In June 1999 the High Court in Cape Town, South Africa, overturned the conviction.

For More Information

Pottinger, Brian. *The Imperial Presidency: P. W. Botha, the First Ten Years*. Johannesburg: Southern Book Publishers, 1988.

Scott, John. *Venture to the Exterior*. Port Elizabeth, South Africa: Acme Pub., 1984.

Thompson, Leonard, and Andrew Prior. *South African Politics*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1982.

SANDRO BOTTICELLI

Born: c. 1445

Florence, Italy

Died: c. 1510

Florence, Italy

Italian painter and artist



Sandro Botticelli.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

The Italian painter Botticelli was one of the major artists in Florence during the Renaissance (a period of revived interest in Greek and Roman culture that began in Italy during the fourteenth century).

Early style

Sandro Botticelli was born in 1445 in Florence, Italy, the son of a tanner (one who converts animal skins into leather). Not much is known about his childhood or early life. In 1460 he began training with Fra Filippo Lippi (c. 1406–1469), one of the greatest painters of the Renaissance. Botticelli's

first works followed the current version of the popular style in Florence used by artists such as Andrea del Verrocchio (1435–1488). This style placed great importance on the human figure rather than on space. Botticelli's major early works are *Fortitude* (1470) and *St. Sebastian* (1474). In some of these he changed the appearance of muscular energy and physical action found in Verrocchio's work. The people in Botticelli's work are shown as melancholy and thoughtful.

These qualities are most evident in Botticelli's best-known works, *Spring* and the *Birth of Venus*, executed for the estate of a cousin of Lorenzo the Magnificent, Lorenzo di Pierfrancesco de' Medici. Their precise subject matter has been the subject of much debate and has never been agreed on. Both works were certainly designed with the help of a scholar, but if there was a story invented for the occasion that would explain the works, it was not recorded. Since Venus has a central position in both works, it is possible to consider the two figures of Venus as a contrasting pair.

Botticelli continued using this early style after 1480 (the *Birth* is perhaps as late as 1485), but a new style soon emerged in frescoes (paintings done on moist plaster with water-based colors) such as *St. Augustine* (1480) in the Church of the Ognissanti, Florence; the *Annunciation* (1481) for San Martino, Florence; and three frescoes (1481–82) in the Sistine Chapel, Rome, Italy, executed during Botticelli's only trip away from Florence. These frescoes show a new concern with the construction of stage like spaces and stiffer figures, also seen in a series of altarpieces (works of art that decorate the space above and behind an altar) of 1485 and 1489. The influ-

ence of the work of Domenico Ghirlandaio (1449–1494) and of Flemish painting can be seen, but it is clear that Botticelli's art had not undergone any major changes.

Mature style

After 1490 Botticelli concentrated on paintings with many small figures, so that the entire picture surface seemed more alive. Many works exhibited this new method, such as the *Calumny of Apelles*, a drawing of a description of a painting by an ancient Roman writer; the *Crucifixion*, with a rain of arrows falling on a view of Florence in the background; the *Last Communion of St. Jerome*, the most intense of several works showing physical collapse of the body; and the *Nativity* (1501), which used an old design of Fra Angelico (c. 1400–1455) and an inscription referring to current predictions of the end of the world.

Botticelli became crippled in his later years and failed to receive painting assignments. He may have continued to work on his set of drawings (never finished) illustrating Dante's (1265–1321) *Divine Comedy*. By about 1504, when the young Raphael (1483–1520) came to Florence to observe the new styles of Leonardo da Vinci (1452–1519) and Michelangelo (1475–1564), Botticelli's art must have seemed old-fashioned, although it had been widely copied in the 1490s.

Wide swings in popularity

Sandro Botticelli was born several generations after Donatello (1386–1466), Masaccio (1401–1428), and their associates who gave Florentine art its direction, and just before it took a great turn in the works of Leonardo da Vinci, Michelangelo, and others. Botticelli worked in an established, almost

traditional manner at a point just before such a style went out of fashion.

Successful in the 1470s and 1480s, then forgotten at the time of his death in 1510, Botticelli was popular in the nineteenth century, especially in England.

For More Information

- Argan, Giulio. *Botticelli: Biographical and Critical Study*. New York: Skira, trans. 1957.
- Lightbown, R. W. *Sandro Botticelli*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1978.
- Venezia, Mike. *Botticelli*. Chicago: Children's Press, 1991.

MARGARET BOURKE-WHITE

Born: June 14, 1904

New York, New York

Died: August 27, 1971

Darien, Connecticut

American photographer and journalist

American photographer Margaret Bourke-White was a leader in the new field of photo-journalism. As a staff photographer for *Fortune* and *Life* magazines, she covered the major political and social issues of the 1930s and 1940s.

Discovering photography

Born in New York City on June 14, 1904, Margaret Bourke-White was the daughter of Joseph and Minnie White. (She



Margaret Bourke-White.
 Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

added “Bourke,” her mother’s name, after her first marriage ended.) Raised in a strict household, Bourke-White attended local public schools in Bound Brook, New Jersey, after her family moved there. In high school Bourke-White served as the yearbook editor and showed promise in her writing talents.

Bourke-White attended several different universities during her moves back and forth from the Midwest and the East. She first revealed her talent for photography while a student at Cornell University in upstate New York, where she also completed her bachelor’s degree in 1927. Using a secondhand Ica Reflex camera with a broken lens, she sold

pictures of the scenic campus to other students. After graduation Bourke-White opened a studio in Cleveland, Ohio, where she found the industrial landscape “a photographic paradise.” Initially specializing in architectural photography, her prints of the Otis Steel factory came to the attention of *Time* magazine publisher Henry Luce, who was planning a new publication devoted to the glamour of business.

Building a career

In the spring of 1929 Bourke-White accepted Luce’s offer to become the first staff photographer for *Fortune* magazine, which made its debut in February 1930. Her subjects included the Swift meatpacking company, shoemaking, watches, glass, paper mills, orchids, and banks. Excited by the drama of the machine, she made several trips to the Soviet Union (the former country made up of Russia and several smaller nations) and was the first photographer to seriously document its rapid industrial development. She published her work in the book *Eyes on Russia* (1931).

Bourke-White, working out of a New York City studio in the new Chrysler Building, also handled profitable advertising accounts. In 1934, in the midst of the Depression (a decade-long period of severe economic hardship in the 1930s), she earned over \$35,000. But a *Fortune* assignment to cover the drought (a severe shortage of water) in the Midwest states opened her eyes to human suffering and steered her away from advertising work. She began to view photography less as a purely artistic medium and more as a powerful tool for informing the public. In 1936 she worked with Erskine Caldwell (1903–1987), the author of *Tobacco Road*, on a photo-essay

revealing social conditions in the South. The results of their efforts became her best-known book, *You Have Seen Their Faces* (1937).

In the fall of 1936 Bourke-White joined the staff of *Life* magazine, which popularized the photo-essay. Her picture of the Fort Peck dam in Montana adorned the cover of *Life* magazine's first issue, November 11, 1936. On one of her first assignments she flew to the Arctic circle. While covering the Louisville flood in 1937 she composed her most famous single photograph: a contrast between a line of African Americans waiting for emergency relief and a billboard with a picture of an untroubled white family in a car and a caption celebrating the American way of life.

Later years

During World War II (1939-45; a war in which the Allies—Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States—fought against the Axis—Germany, Italy, and Japan), Bourke-White served as a war correspondent affiliated with both *Life* and the U.S. Air Force. She survived a torpedo attack on a ship she was taking to North Africa and accompanied the bombing mission that destroyed the German airfield of El Aouina near Tunis. She later covered the Italian campaign (recorded in the book *They Called It "Purple Heart Valley"*) and was with General George Patton (1885–1945) in the spring of 1945 when his troops opened the gates at Buchenwald, Germany, a concentration camp (a camp for prisoners of war). Her photos revealed the horrors to the world.

In December of 1949 she went to South Africa for five months where she recorded the cruelty of apartheid, the unfair social and political treatment of black people in South Africa.

In 1952 she went to Korea, where her pictures focused on family sorrows arising from war.

Shortly after her return from Korea she noticed signs of Parkinson's disease, the nerve disorder which she battled for the remainder of her life. Her autobiography (the story of a person's own life), *Portrait of Myself*, was started in 1955 and completed in 1963. On August 27, 1971, Margaret Bourke-White died at her home in Darien, Connecticut. She left behind a legacy as a determined woman, an innovative visual artist, and a compassionate human observer.

For More Information

Rubin, Susan Goldman. *Margaret Bourke-White: Her Pictures Were Her Life*. New York: Abrams, 1999.

Siegel, Beatrice. *An Eye on the World: Margaret Bourke-White, Photographer*. New York: F. Warne, 1980.

Silverman, Jonathon. *For the World to See: The Life of Margaret Bourke-White*. New York: Viking Press, 1983.

BOUTROS BOUTROS-GHALI

Born: November 14, 1922

Cairo, Egypt

*Egyptian diplomat, lawyer, and
UN secretary-general*

Appointed the sixth secretary-general of the United Nations (UN) in November 1991, Boutros Boutros-



Boutros Boutros-Ghali.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Ghali is respected around the world for his distinguished career as a lawyer, scholar, and international diplomat. As secretary-general of the United Nations, he sought to reestablish the leadership role of that international organization in world affairs.

Upbringing and education

Boutros Boutros-Ghali was born in Cairo, Egypt, on November 14, 1922, into one of the Egyptian Coptic-Christian community's most influential and wealthiest families. As a youth Boutros-Ghali displayed a sense of humor that remains a quality for which he is well liked. His father, Yusuf, at one time served as the country's finance minister, while

a grandfather had been prime minister of Egypt from 1908 until his assassination in 1910. At a young age Boutros-Ghali learned about Western culture. His sophistication and fluency in English and French, in addition to Arabic, can be traced to his upbringing in an upper-class family and his formal schooling. After completing a law degree in 1946 at Cairo University in Egypt, he spent the next four years in France, earning diplomas in higher studies in public law and in economics, as well as a doctorate in international law from Paris University in 1949.

Life as a scholar and statesman

Returning to Egypt, Boutros-Ghali became a professor of international law and international relations at Cairo University. During his twenty-eight years in university life he was a Fulbright scholar at Columbia University (1954–1955) in New York City, and director of the research center at the Hague Academy of International Law (1967–1969) in the Netherlands. He participated in many international conferences and delivered guest lectures at major universities abroad—from Princeton University in the United States to the Warsaw Institute of International Relations in Poland to Nairobi University in Kenya. His list of scholarly publications ran to more than one hundred articles on foreign policy problems and at least twelve books. Membership on the UN Commission of International Law (1979–1992) gave him a better understanding of the workings of that organization, and it would serve him well later in his career.

Boutros-Ghali left university life in October 1977 with what proved to be an excellent sense of timing. Appointed Egyptian minister of state for foreign affairs, he accompanied President Anwar Sadat (1918–1981), who

wanted to find a way to end the Arab-Israel conflict, on the historic journey to Jerusalem to meet with the prime minister of Israel on November 19, 1977. After this Boutros-Ghali attended the peace summit at Camp David in the United States the following September as part of the Egyptian delegation. During the 1980s he was involved in Egyptian politics as a leading member of the National Democratic Party and as a delegate to the Egyptian parliament. In May 1991 President Hosni Mubarak (1929–) promoted him to deputy prime minister for international affairs. Boutros-Ghali's deepening involvement in Egyptian national and external affairs ended toward the end of 1991, with the invitation to head the United Nations.

To the United Nations

Upon taking office in January 1992, UN Secretary-General Boutros Boutros-Ghali became the world's leading spokesman for, and practitioner of, internationalism (the goal of which is for countries to peacefully cooperate to solve problems). The new head of the UN viewed the end of the Cold War (the decades-long rivalry between the United States and the Soviet Union that saw each country significantly build up its military) and the example set during the Persian Gulf War (a war that began after Iraq invaded Kuwait in 1990) as presenting a historic opportunity for changing the nature of world politics. Boutros-Ghali used his position at the UN to call all countries and governments to fulfill the original 1945 UN pledge of a global political system. He held up the United Nations and its various agencies as an organization that could promote international peace and security, economic development, and human rights through international cooperation. But on the

immediate and more practical level, much of his energy went toward putting the United Nations' own house in order.

The secretary-general's ambitious list of UN-related goals included: making the organization more efficient and coordinating the efforts of UN workers in New York City with those in Geneva, Switzerland; making sure that the funding of the United Nations would be enough to meet the needs of the increased number and complexity of its missions around the globe; and strengthening the commitment of each of the more than 180 member states to the United Nations. The most important of Boutros-Ghali's goals was to broaden the United Nations' role of peacekeeping. His goal was to ensure greater effectiveness by the time of the United Nations' fiftieth anniversary in 1995.

This program of reform made Secretary-General Boutros-Ghali a controversial figure in world affairs. He found himself having sharp political differences, not only with the United States and other Western governments, but also with UN military field commanders. This seemed uncharacteristic for the rather modest former Egyptian statesman and scholar. Nevertheless, he continued to commit the United Nations to searching for peace in Cyprus, the Middle East, Angola, Cambodia, and elsewhere.

Silencing the critics

Indeed, that Boutros-Ghali was named secretary-general had surprised many UN experts, who generally dismissed him as too moderate and lacking personality. They saw his selection as a gesture toward developing nations, especially the fifty-one African countries that belonged to the United Nations. Noting that he

was sixty-nine, they thought he would be more of a temporary caretaker than a voice for change for an action-oriented United Nations. But the secretary-general's critics apparently had underestimated his leadership qualities and inner resolve. Certainly, Boutros-Ghali's long public career and experience in international and Middle East diplomacy were impressive qualifications for the difficult position.

Boutros-Ghali continued to be committed to bringing democracy to nations that had a history of conflict. He oversaw the stationing of more than seventy thousand UN peacekeeping troops during his years in office. Boutros-Ghali remained willing to speak his mind until the end of his term in 1996.

After leaving the United Nations, in 1997 Boutros-Ghali was named secretary-general of the International Organization of the Francophonie. The organization has fifty-one member states that together make up the French-speaking world. In 2001 the University of Ottawa in Canada recognized the outstanding role Boutros-Ghali played in world politics by awarding him an honorary doctorate.

For More Information

Boutros-Ghali, Boutros. *Unvanquished: A U.S.-U.N. Saga*. New York: Random House, 1999.

RAY BRADBURY

Born: August 22, 1920

Waukegan, Illinois

American writer, editor, poet, screenwriter, and dramatist

Ray Bradbury was among the first authors to combine the ideas of science fiction with a more developed writing style. In much of Bradbury's fiction, everyday events are transformed into unusual and sometimes dangerous situations.

Early life

Ray Bradbury was born on August 22, 1920, in Waukegan, Illinois, to Leonard Spaulding Bradbury and Esther Marie (Moberg) Bradbury. His father was a lineman for the electric company. He was greatly influenced by his Aunt Neva, a costume designer and dressmaker, who took him to plays and encouraged him to use his imagination. At the age of twelve, after seeing the performance of a magician named Mr. Electrico at a carnival, Bradbury began to spend hours every day writing stories. Bradbury's family moved to Arizona briefly before settling in Los Angeles, California, in 1934. Bradbury continued to write and also spent a great deal of time reading in libraries and going to the movies.

Early career

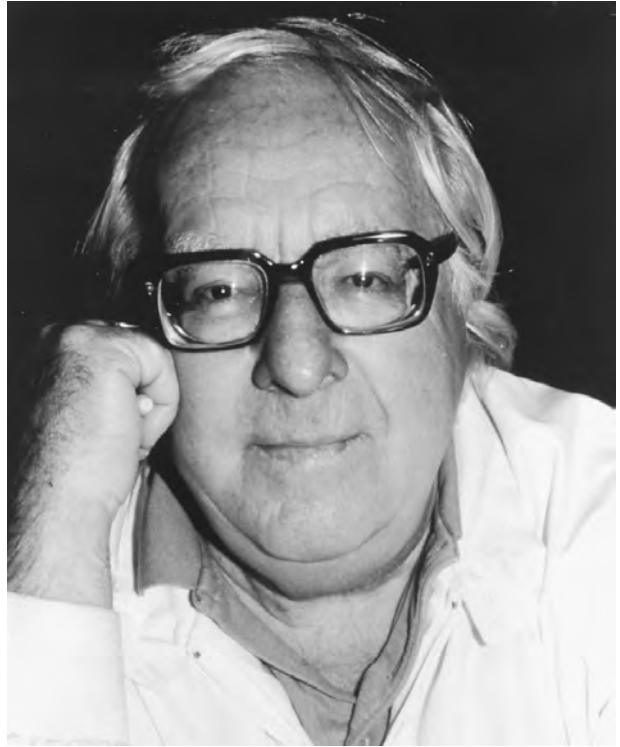
After graduating from high school in 1938, Bradbury was turned down for military service because of bad eyesight. He earned a living selling newspapers while working on his writing. He sold his first story in 1943, and others were published in such magazines as *Black Mask*, *Amazing Stories*, and *Weird Tales*. *Dark Carnival* (1947) is a collection of Bradbury's early stories of fantasy (fiction with unusual plots and characters). Themes such as the need to retain human values and the importance of the imagination are found in these stories. Many of these pieces were republished with new material in *The October Country* (1955).

The publication of *The Martian Chronicles* (1950), an account of man's colonization of Mars, established Bradbury's reputation as an author of quality science fiction. *The Martian Chronicles* contain tales of space travel and adapting to an environment, and combines many of Bradbury's major themes, including the conflict between individual and social expectations (that is, freedom versus confinement and going along with the crowd) and the idea of space as a frontier wilderness. *The Martian Chronicles* also reflects many issues of the post-World War II era, such as racism (unequal treatment based on race), censorship (preventing the viewing of materials such as books or films that are considered harmful), and the threat of nuclear war. In another collection of short stories, *The Illustrated Man* (1951), the stories are based on the tattoos of the title character.

Other works

Bradbury's later short story collections were not as well received as his earlier work. Although Bradbury used many of the same methods in writing these stories as in his science fiction works, he shifted his focus from outer space to more familiar earthbound settings. *Dandelion Wine* (1957), for example, has as its main subject the midwestern youth of Bradbury's main character, Douglas Spaulding. Other collections include *A Medicine for Melancholy* (1959), *The Machineries of Joy* (1964), *I Sing the Body Electric!* (1969), and *Long after Midnight* (1976). Many of Bradbury's stories have been filmed for science fiction television programs such as *The Twilight Zone* and *Alfred Hitchcock Presents*.

Bradbury also wrote several adult novels. The first of these, *Fahrenheit 451* (1953), concerns a future society in which books are



Ray Bradbury.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

burned because they are perceived as threats to social order. In *Something Wicked This Way Comes* (1962) a father attempts to save his son and a friend from the evil forces of a mysterious traveling carnival. Both of these novels were made into films. *Death Is a Lonely Business* (1985) is a detective story featuring Douglas Spaulding, the main character of *Dandelion Wine*, as a struggling magazine writer.

Still active

Over the past five decades Bradbury has managed to produce a tremendous amount of different kinds of work, including short stories, plays, novels, film scripts, poems, chil-

dren's books, and nonfiction. He gives the credit to the steady writing routine that he has followed every day for fifty years. He also claims to remember everything about every book he has read and every film he has seen.

Bradbury also uses an unusual method of writing. In *Extrapolation* William F. Touponce quotes Bradbury saying: "In my early twenties I floundered into a word-association process in which I simply got out of bed each morning, walked to my desk, and put down any word or series of words that happened along in my head." Bradbury suffered a stroke in November 1999 but recovered. In November 2000 he received a National Book Award for lifetime achievement. Bradbury published a new novel, *From the Dust Returned*, in 2001.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Ray Bradbury*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2001.

Weist, Jerry. *Bradbury, an Illustrated Life: A Journey to Far Metaphor*. New York: Morrow, 2002.

ED

BRADLEY

Born: June 22, 1941

Philadelphia, Pennsylvania

African American television and radio journalist

Award-winning American journalist Ed Bradley remains best-known for his work on the weekly news program *60 Minutes*.

Early days

Edward R. Bradley was born on June 22, 1941. His parents separated soon after he was born. His father moved to Detroit, Michigan, where he owned a vending-machine business and a restaurant. Bradley lived with his mother in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, and spent part of each summer with his father. His parents worked very hard. Often they held two jobs that kept them busy twenty hours a day. Even so, they never let him think he could not make a better life for himself. They told him he could be anything he wanted to be and he believed it.

Drifting into broadcast news

Bradley received a bachelor's degree in education from Cheyney State College in Cheyney, Pennsylvania, in 1964. To make extra money during his college years, he delivered telephone books and gave fellow students rides at fifty cents a trip. After graduating from college he taught sixth grade. He got a chance to work in radio as a disc jockey and news reporter for WDAS-FM radio in Philadelphia, but he was not paid for his work.

Bradley covered his first news story when rioting broke out in north Philadelphia. WDAS found itself short-staffed (without enough people). Bradley went to the station and got a tape recorder and an engineer (a technical person). He said, "For the next 48 hours, without sleep, I covered the riots.... I was getting these great scoops [first interviews].... And that kind of hooked me on the idea of doing live stuff, going out and covering the news."

Bradley proved himself to be a capable newsman. The station began to pay him a

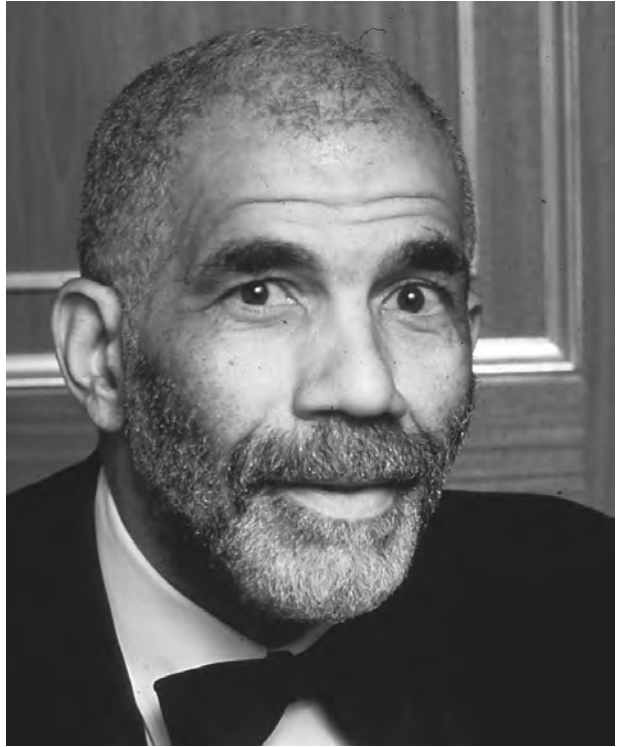
small salary—\$1.25 an hour. From there he moved on to WCBS radio, an all-news station, in New York City. He worked there for three and a half years. Then he became bored with his work. He quit and decided to move to Paris, France. Bradley enjoyed the cultural life of Paris. He thought he would write novels and poetry until he ran out of money. Then he took the only job he could find. He joined CBS again as a stringer (an occasional writer) in their Paris office in 1971. Like all stringers, he was only paid for the stories that were accepted.

Bradley wanted to get back into the real news business. He was transferred to the Saigon, Vietnam, office of CBS news in Southeast Asia to cover the Vietnam War (1955–75; a war in which North Vietnam fought against U.S.-backed South Vietnam). While there he was wounded in an attack and eventually was sent back to the United States.

Covering the White House

After other assignments Bradley covered Jimmy Carter (1924–) in his 1976 campaign for the presidency. After the election CBS assigned him to its Washington, D.C., office where he became the first African American to be a White House correspondent (reporter). Even though it was a very important position, Bradley hated it. It required him to be in a small office, doing the same things day after day. He wanted action.

From that time until 1981, Bradley also served as the anchor (main newscaster) for the CBS *Sunday Night News* and also as principal correspondent for *CBS Reports*. In 1981 he replaced Dan Rather (1931–) as a correspondent for the weekly news program *60 Minutes*.



Ed Bradley.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Bradley's work has won him many Emmy Awards (awards for excellence in television) for broadcast journalism as well as other awards for his achievements. A correspondent for CBS's *60 Minutes* since 1981, Bradley has become one of the most visible African Americans on network television news.

Work on 60 Minutes

Though Bradley resists being pigeon-holed (narrowly described) as an African American reporter and is said to hate covering African American stories, some of his finest moments with CBS occurred when he covered racial issues. "Murder—Teen-age

Style” is one example. His report “Blacks in America: With All Deliberate Speed” was a look at race relations in the United States. He won an Emmy and other awards for the program. The documentary contrasted the status of African Americans in Mississippi and in Philadelphia between 1954 and 1979.

CBS sent Bradley to report on the Vietnamese refugees known as “boat people.” “The Boat People” aired in 1979, earning Bradley another Emmy and several other awards. It was also shown on *60 Minutes* in an edited form. Bradley had been considered for *60 Minutes* in the late 1970s, but reporter Harry Reasoner was chosen instead. Then, when Dan Rather left the news program to take over Walter Cronkite’s (1916–) position as anchor of the *CBS Evening News*, Bradley was asked to join the program.

The new face on 60 Minutes

Bradley’s presence changed the chemistry (the way things work) of *60 Minutes*, with his sensitive, compassionate approach to interviewing. Dan Rather had been more aggressive. Coworkers and critics alike have pointed out Bradley’s ability to establish a rapport (relationship) with his subjects. Mike Wallace, a cohost on *60 Minutes*, remarked that Bradley’s approach is “instinctive—he has no idea how he does it.” Bradley himself resists analyzing his style. He said in an interview, “I’d rather not think about it and just go out and do it, and it will come naturally.” When Bradley interviewed singer Lena Horne (1917–) in December 1981, *TV Guide* described the journalist’s work as “a textbook example of what a great television interview can be.” Bradley alternated Horne’s performances with interview segments in which

Horne discussed her personal and professional life. Bradley created an intimate (personal) portrait of the singer. Bradley said “it told a lot about the way women are treated, a lot of things about the way blacks are treated. It told a lot of things about interracial marriages, difficulties in the film and entertainment industries and how those things have changed and not changed.” Bradley has said that he feels “Lena” is among his best work. “Lena” won Bradley his first Emmy as a member of the *60 Minutes* team.

Not all of Bradley’s interviews have been friendly ones. He has had many unpleasant interviews because he refuses to back down from unpleasant issues. In a 1995 *TV Guide* viewers poll of active CBS journalists, Bradley was the highest scorer in seven out of eight categories.

Bradley today

Bradley’s need for adventure has not lessened and he still travels often. Bradley summed up his attitude about his career in an interview with *People* magazine in 1983. He said, “The bottom line of this job is fun. And when it stops being fun, then I’ll stop doing it.” Bradley marked his twenty-first season with *60 Minutes* during the 2000–2001 season. He continues to produce the news stories that made him famous.

For More Information

Hewitt, Don. *Minute by Minute*. New York: Random House, 1985.

Madsen, Axel. *60 Minutes: The Power and the Politics of America’s Most Popular News Show*. New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1984.

MATHEW BRADY

Born: c. 1823

Warren County, New York

Died: January 15, 1896

New York, New York

American photographer

The American photographer, publisher, and historian (a professional writer of history) Mathew Brady was known for his portraits (pictures of a person showing his or her face) of famous people and his vast photographic record of the Civil War (1861–65).

Mysterious background

Mathew B. Brady (he never knew what the initial “B” stood for) was born in Warren County, New York. The exact place and year are not known. In later life Brady told a reporter, “I go back near 1823–24.” Not much more is known of his parents, Andrew and Julia Brady. Mathew spent his youth in Saratoga Springs, New York, and became a friend of the painter William Page, who was a student of the painter and inventor Samuel F. B. Morse (1791–1872). Around 1839 Brady went to New York City with Page. Nothing certain is known of his activity there until 1843, when the city directory listed his occupation as a jewel-case manufacturer.

New business

The process of creating daguerreotypes (a form of photograph in which the picture was formed on metal) had been introduced to America in 1839, and Morse became one

of the first to practice the craft and to teach it. Brady met Morse through Page, and he learned to take daguerreotypes from him. In 1843 Brady added cases specially made for daguerreotypes to his line of goods, and a year later he opened a successful “Daguerreian Miniature Gallery.” Brady had mastered the process so thoroughly that he could produce several different pictures from one sitting, which helped the growth of his business. He also won medals every year from 1844 to 1850 from the American Institute of Photography for the quality of his pictures.

Brady once said that “the camera is the eye of history.” With this in mind, in 1845 he began to build a vast collection of portraits, which he named *The Gallery of Illustrious Americans*. Two years later he opened a studio in Washington, D.C., so that he could have portraits made of presidents, cabinet ministers, congressmen, and other government leaders. The book, published in 1850, was intended to be the first in a series, but it was a failure, and no more editions were made.

Brady traveled to England in 1851 to display his daguerreotypes, which continued to win him praise. Shortly after his return he opened a second New York studio. His eyesight was now failing, and he relied more and more on assistants to do the actual photography. One of these assistants was Alexander Gardner, a Scotsman who knew his way around the newly invented wet-plate photographic process, which was rapidly taking the place of the daguerreotype. Gardner specialized in making enlargements up to 17 by 20 inches, which Brady called “Imperials”; they cost \$750 each. Gardner



Mathew Brady.

*Courtesy of the National Archives and
Records Administration.*

was put in charge of the gallery in Washington in 1858.

Perhaps the most famous of Brady's portraits was the standing figure of Abraham Lincoln (1809–1865) taken at the time of his Cooper Union speech in 1861. Lincoln is reported to have said that the photograph and the speech put him in the White House.

Ambitious project

When the Civil War broke out, Brady decided to make a photographic record of

it. The project was a bold one. At his own expense he organized teams of photographers—in his biography James D. Horan states that there were twenty-two of them. Each was equipped with a traveling dark-room, for at that time the pictures had to be processed on the spot. Brady later remembered that he spent over \$100,000 and “had men in all parts of the Army, like a rich newspaper.”

When the war ended, the collection comprised some ten thousand negatives. The project had cost Brady his fortune. He could not afford to pay the storage bill for one set of negatives, which were sold at auction to the War Department. The Anthony Company, a photographic materials dealer, seized a second collection for nonpayment of debts. Today Brady's large and brilliant historical record is divided between the National Archives and the Library of Congress in Washington, D.C.

Although Brady maintained his Washington gallery, he never fully recovered from his business losses. In 1895 he planned a series of slide lectures about the Civil War. While he was preparing them in New York, he became ill and entered the Presbyterian Hospital, where he died on January 15, 1896.

For More Information

Hoobler, Dorothy, and Thomas Hoobler. *Photographing History: The Career of Mathew Brady*. New York: Putnam, 1977.

Sullivan, George. *Mathew Brady: His Life and Photographs*. New York: Cobblehill Books, 1994.

JOHANNES BRAHMS

Born: May 7, 1833

Hamburg, Germany

Died: April 3, 1897

Vienna, Austria

German composer, pianist, and conductor

The German composer (writer of music), pianist, and conductor Johannes Brahms was one of the most significant composers of the nineteenth century. His works combine the warm feeling of the Romantic period with the control of classical influences such as Johann Sebastian Bach (1685–1750) and Ludwig van Beethoven (1770–1827).

Early life

Johannes Brahms was born in Hamburg, Germany, on May 7, 1833, the son of Johann Jakob and Christina Nissen Brahms. His father, an innkeeper and a musician of moderate ability, taught him to play violin and piano. When Brahms was six years old he created his own method of writing music in order to get the melodies he created on paper. At the age of seven he began studying piano under Otto Cossel. He played a private concert at the age of ten to obtain funds for his future education. Also at ten years old he began piano lessons with Eduard Marxsen (1806–1887).

To help out his family, Brahms gave music lessons and played the piano in taverns and local dance halls while in his early teens. The constant work proved to be a strain on him and affected his health. Brahms

was offered a chance to take a long rest at Winsen-an-der-Luhe, Germany, where he conducted a small male choir for whom he wrote his first choral compositions. Upon his return to Hamburg he gave several concerts, but after failing to win recognition he continued playing at taverns, giving inexpensive piano lessons, and arranging popular music for piano.

Impressing other musicians

In 1850 Brahms met the Hungarian violinist Eduard Reményi, who introduced him to gypsy dance songs that would influence his later compositions. In the next few years Brahms composed several works for piano. Reményi and Brahms went on several successful concert tours in 1853. They met the German violinist Joseph Joachim (1831–1907), who introduced them to Franz Liszt (1811–1886) at Weimar, Germany. Liszt received them warmly and was greatly impressed with Brahms's compositions. Liszt hoped to recruit him to join his group of composers, but Brahms declined; he was not really a fan of Liszt's music. Joachim also wrote a letter praising Brahms to the composer Robert Schumann (1810–1856).

In 1853 Brahms met Schumann and his wife Clara. Schumann's enthusiasm for the young composer knew no bounds. Schumann wrote articles praising Brahms and also arranged for the publication of Brahms's first compositions. During 1854 Brahms wrote the *Piano Trio No. 1*, the *Variations on a Theme of Schumann* for piano, and the *Ballades* for piano. Also that year Brahms was summoned to Düsseldorf, Germany, when Schumann had a breakdown and attempted suicide. For the next few years Brahms stayed close to the



Johannes Brahms.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Schumanns, assisting Clara even after Schumann's death in 1856. To earn his living, he taught piano privately but also spent some time on concert tours. Two concerts given with the singer Julius Stockhausen served to establish Brahms as an important song composer.

Works of the middle years

Brahms's *Piano Concerto in D Minor* (1858) was performed the next year with Joachim conducting in the German cities of Hanover, Leipzig, and Hamburg. Only in Hamburg was it favorably received. Brahms was also appointed conductor of a ladies' choir in Hamburg, for whom he wrote the

Marienlieder. In 1860 Brahms became enraged after hearing claims that all musicians were accepting the experimental musical theories of the "New German" school headed by Liszt. He criticized many of these musicians in the press. During this period Brahms moved to Hamburg and buried himself in composing, throwing in frequent public appearances.

In 1863 Brahms gave a concert in Vienna, Austria, to introduce his songs to the Austrian public. Brahms also met the composer Richard Wagner (1813–1883) at this time. Although Brahms had criticized Wagner in the press, each was still able to admire some things in the other's work on occasion. In 1863 Brahms became conductor of the Singakademie in Vienna. A year later he resigned, but for the rest of his life Vienna was home to him. He began to do what he had always wished: to make composing his main source of income. As his fame and popularity grew, he composed more and more with only some occasional teaching and performing. In 1865 Brahms's mother, long separated from her husband, died. During the next year Brahms worked on the *German Requiem* in her memory.

The next years saw an increase in composing activity. Brahms's most important publications were the *Variations on a Theme of Paganini* for piano, the *String Sextet in G Major*, and several song collections. It is not always possible to date Brahms's compositions exactly because of his habit of revising a work or adding to it frequently. Thus, the *German Requiem*, practically finished in 1866, was not published in its final form until 1869. It was also given its first complete performance that year.

Late masterpieces

Brahms's father died in 1872. After a short holiday, Brahms accepted the post of artistic director of the Gesellschaft der Musikfreunde (Friends of Music) in Vienna. Masterpieces continued to pour from his pen. He composed, went on concert tours chiefly to improve his own music, and took long holidays. He now had plenty of money and could do as he pleased. He resigned as conductor of the Gesellschaft der Musikfreunde in 1875, for even those duties had become a burden to him. That summer he worked on his *Symphony No. 1* and sketched the *Symphony No. 2*.

In 1880 the University of Breslau offered Brahms a doctor's degree, in appreciation of which he wrote two orchestral concert pieces. By this time he had discovered Italy, and for the rest of his life he vacationed there frequently. Vacations for Brahms meant composing, and he produced symphonies (long and complicated compositions for symphony orchestras), piano and violin concertos (music written for one or more instruments), and many other compositions and publications.

Much of the credit for the worldwide acceptance of Brahms's orchestral works was due to the activities of their great interpreter, Hans von Bülow, who had transferred his loyalty from the Liszt-Wagner camp to Brahms. Bülow exerted tremendous energy in seeing that Brahms's compositions received properly executed performances.

When he was about sixty years old, Brahms began to age rapidly, and his production decreased sharply. He often spoke of having arrived at the end of his creative activity. Nonetheless, the works of this last period are awesome in their magnificence and concentration, and the last of his published

works, the *Vier ernste Gesänge* (Four Serious Songs), are among the high points of his career. Brahms's health took a turn for the worse after he heard the news of the death of Clara Schumann in 1896. On April 3, 1897, he died of cancer of the liver. He was buried next to Beethoven and Franz Schubert (1797–1828) and was honored by Vienna and the entire musical world.

For More Information

- Geiringer, Karl. *Brahms, His Life and Work*. 3rd ed. New York: Da Capo Press, 1982.
- May, Florence. *The Life of Johannes Brahms*. 2nd ed. St. Clair Shores, MI: Scholarly Press, 1977.
- Swafford, Jan. *Johannes Brahms: A Biography*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1997.

LOUIS BRAILLE

Born: January 4, 1809

Coupray, France

Died: January 6, 1852

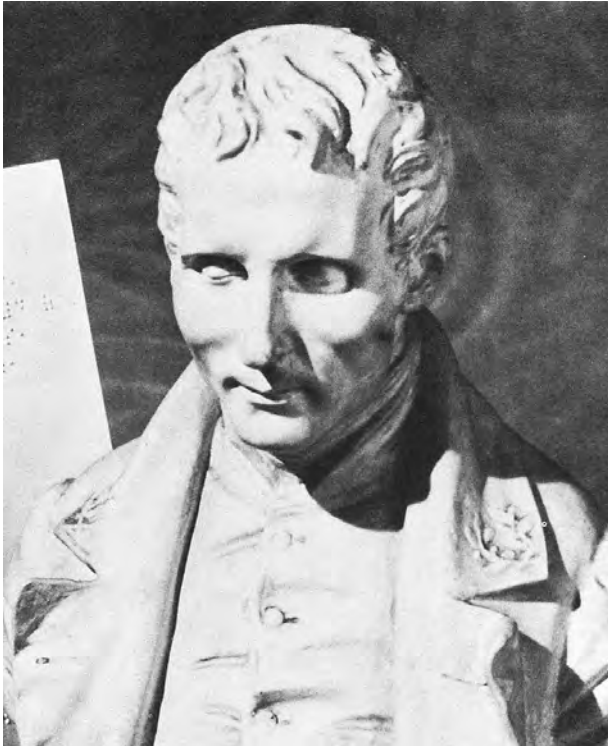
Paris, France

French teacher and advocate for the blind

Louis Braille designed the coding system, based on patterns of raised dots, by which the blind can read through touch.

Childhood accident

Louis Braille was born in Coupray, France, on January 4, 1809, the only child of Louis and Constance Braille. His father made



Louis Braille.

leather saddles and harnesses for farmers in the area. At the age of three, while playing in his father's shop, young Louis was struck in the eye by an awl (a pointed tool for piercing holes in leather or wood). Within weeks of the accident, an eye infection took away his sight completely. Few opportunities existed for the blind at the time, so his father urged him to attend school with sighted children. He was an excellent student, mostly because of his exceptional memory.

In 1819 Braille received a scholarship to the Institut National des Jeunes Aveugles (National Institute of Blind Youth), founded

by Valentin Haüy (1745–1822). He continued to excel in his studies and also began playing the piano and organ. The same year Braille entered the school, Captain Charles Barbier invented sonography, or night writing, a system of embossed symbols (standing out from the surface) used by soldiers to communicate silently at night on the battlefield. The fifteen-year-old Braille was inspired by a lecture Barbier gave at the Institute a few years later. Braille adapted Barbier's system to replace the awkward embossed-word books in the Institute's library, which were the only thing he and his classmates could use up to that point.

Useful new system

Braille began experimenting with cut shapes from leather as well as nails and tacks hammered into boards. He finally settled on a fingertip-sized six-dot code, based on the twenty-six letters of the alphabet, which could be recognized with a single contact of one finger. By changing the number and placement of dots, he coded letters, punctuation, numbers, familiar words, scientific symbols, mathematical and musical notation, and capitalization. With the right hand the reader touched individual dots, and with the left hand he or she moved on toward the next line, grasping the text as smoothly and rapidly as sighted readers. Using the Braille system, students were also able to take notes and write themes by punching dots into paper with a pointed instrument that was lined up with a metal guide.

At the age of twenty, Braille published a written account describing the use of his coded system. In 1837 he issued a second publication featuring an expanded system of coding text. King Louis Philippe (1773–1850)

LOUIS BRANDEIS

praised the system publicly after a demonstration at the Paris Exposition of Industry in 1834, and Braille's fellow students loved it. But sighted instructors and school board members worried that growing numbers of well-educated blind individuals might take away their jobs. They decided to stick with the embossed-letter system.

Recognition after death

Braille became somewhat well known as a musician, composer, and teacher, but he grew seriously ill with incurable tuberculosis (a lung infection) in 1835 and was forced to resign his teaching post. Shortly before his death, a former student of his, a blind musician, gave a performance in Paris, France. She made a point of letting the audience know that she had learned everything she knew using the forgotten system developed by the now-dying Braille. This created renewed interest in and a revival of the Braille system, although it was not fully accepted until 1854, two years after the inventor's death. The system underwent alteration from time to time. The version employed today was first used in the United States in 1860 at the Missouri School for the Blind.

For More Information

Bickel, Lennard. *Triumph Over Darkness: The Life of Louis Braille*. Sydney; Boston: Allen & Unwin Australia, 1988.

Bryant, Jennifer. *Louis Braille: Inventor*. New York: Chelsea House, 1993.

Neimark, Anne E. *Touch of Light: The Story of Louis Braille*. New York: Harcourt, Brace & World, 1970.

Born: November 13, 1856

Louisville, Kentucky

Died: October 5, 1941

Washington, D.C.

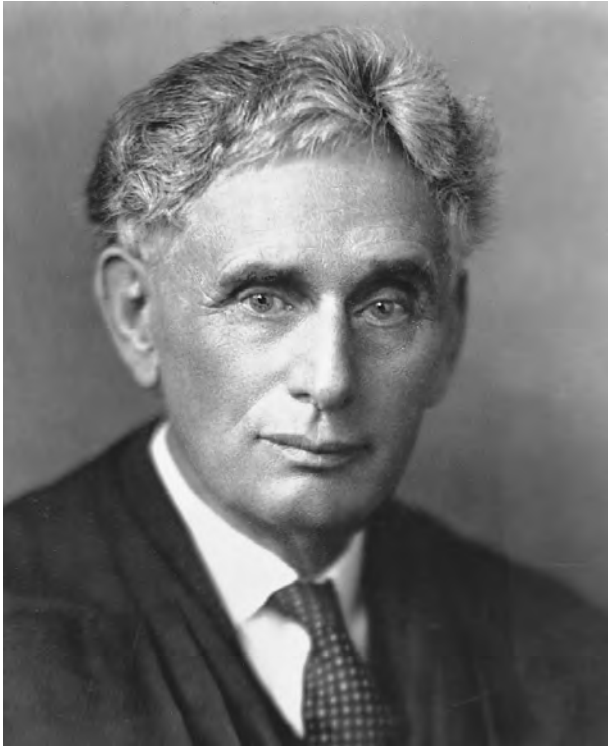
American Supreme Court justice

Louis Brandeis was a lawyer who dedicated his life to public service, earning the nickname the "people's attorney." As an associate justice of the U.S. Supreme Court, he tried to balance the developing powers of modern government and society with the defending of individual freedoms.

Early life and education

Louis Dembitz Brandeis was born on November 13, 1856, in Louisville, Kentucky, to Adolph and Fredericka Dembitz Brandeis. His parents were Bohemian Jews who had come to America after the revolutionary movement of 1848 to create an independent Bohemia failed and was crushed by Austria. The Brandeis family was educated, and they believed in strengthening the processes of democracy in order to protect the common man's dignity and right to self-development.

Brandeis lived and studied in Europe for three years after graduating from Louisville public schools at the age of fifteen. In 1875, at the age of eighteen, Brandeis entered Harvard Law School without a college degree, achieving one of the most outstanding records in the school's history. At the same time he tutored fellow students in order to earn money, which was necessary because of



Louis Brandeis.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

business losses suffered by his father. Although Brandeis was not the required age of twenty-one, the Harvard Corporation passed a special resolution granting him a bachelor of law degree in 1877. After another year of legal study at Harvard, he was allowed to practice law.

Years of public service

In 1879 Brandeis began a partnership with his classmate Samuel D. Warren. Together they wrote one of the most famous law articles in history, "The Right to Privacy," published in the December 1890 *Harvard Law Review*. In it Brandeis stated the view he

later repeated in the Supreme Court case of *Olmstead v. United States* (1928): he argued that the makers of the Constitution, as evidence of their effort to protect Americans, intended for people to have "the right to be let alone ... the right most valued by civilized men." During this stage of his career, Brandeis spent much time helping the Harvard Law School. Though he declined an offer to become an assistant professor, in 1886 he helped found the Harvard Law School Association, a group of alumni (graduates of the school), and he served for many years as its secretary.

By 1890 Brandeis was earning good money as a lawyer and was able to serve, without pay, in support of various public causes. When a fight arose, for example, over preservation of the Boston subway system, he helped save it. He also helped lead the opposition to the New Haven Railroad's attempt to remain the sole provider of transportation in New England. He worked to change Massachusetts' liquor laws in an attempt to prevent liquor dealers from bribing lawmakers rather than complying with the laws. The Massachusetts State Legislature's adoption of a savings-bank life insurance system was the result of his investigation of the problems of existing insurance programs.

Brandeis also took part in the effort to bring legal protections to industrial workers, and as part of this effort he contributed a major idea to the Supreme Court legal process. In 1908, while defending an Oregon law that established fair wages and hours for women laborers, Brandeis introduced what came to be known as the "Brandeis brief." In the brief he took into consideration the various factors that had led to the passing of the

law. Many lawyers followed the Brandeis brief. In their arguments they presented scientific evidence and expert opinion on the social problems of the day that were reflected in court cases.

Appointment to the Supreme Court

President Woodrow Wilson (1856–1924) offered Brandeis a position in his Cabinet in 1913, but the Boston lawyer preferred to remain simply a counselor to the president. Brandeis continued his investigations into the growing concentration of wealth in large corporations and such effects on democracy. In 1914 he published *Other People's Money, and How the Bankers Use It*, in which he set down his views in opposition to corporate growth.

Wilson's nomination of Brandeis to the Supreme Court on January 28, 1916, started a dirty political fight. Six former presidents of the American Bar Association and former president of the United States William Howard Taft (1857–1930) criticized Brandeis for his “radical” (extreme) political views. Some anti-Semitism (prejudice against Jewish people) was involved, as Brandeis was the first Jew ever nominated for America's highest court. Finally, however, the fight was won in the Senate, and Brandeis took his seat on June 5, 1916, where he served with distinction until his retirement on February 13, 1939.

Brandeis often joined his fellow justice Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr. (1841–1935) in disagreeing with the Court's willingness to make judgments about fiscal (economic) and social policy that opposed those of individual states. Also with Holmes Brandeis bravely defended civil liberties throughout this era. When he did approve of wide use of state

powers, it was only in the interest of furthering individual self-fulfilment. He also rejected the ability of states to infringe upon (take away from) a citizen's liberty. Two examples are the Olmstead case, which involved wire-tapping, and *Whitney v. California*, in which Brandeis opposed a California law prohibiting free speech.

Personal interests

Brandeis married Alice Goldmark in 1891, and they had two daughters. Part of his personal life was his commitment to fellow Jews. He became a leading supporter of the movement to develop an independent Jewish nation in Palestine. Another of Brandeis's great interests was the building up of strong regional schools as a means of strengthening local areas against the threat of national control of education. To this end, beginning in 1924, he helped plan and develop the law school and general library of the University of Louisville.

Brandeis died on October 5, 1941. His commitments to justice, education, and Judaism were honored several years later in the founding of Brandeis University in Waltham, Massachusetts.

For More Information

Freedman, Suzanne. *Louis Brandeis: The People's Justice*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1996.

Gal, Allon. *Brandeis of Boston*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1980.

Strum, Philippa. *Louis D. Brandeis: Justice for the People*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1984.

MARLON BRANDO

Born: April 3, 1924

Omaha, Nebraska

American actor

American actor Marlon Brando has fascinated the public with his intense onscreen presence. His film career began in the 1950s and has included powerful roles in such classic films as *On the Waterfront*, *A Streetcar Named Desire*, and *The Godfather*.

Early life

Marlon Brando was born in Omaha, Nebraska, on April 3, 1924. When he was six years old his family moved to Illinois. His father was a salesman and his mother acted in amateur plays. Brando did not have a happy family life. He frequently argued with his father. He also did poorly in school. Sports and dramatics were the only things that interested him. He failed all other subjects.

In an effort to control Brando and give him some discipline, his father sent him to a military school. Brando was seventeen years old at the time. He stayed there for almost three years, but he refused to respect authority and caused so much trouble that he was expelled in his senior year. Because of his behavior, Brando never graduated from high school. He has said that not having a high school education and diploma has always been a source of embarrassment for him.

The young actor

Brando returned to his family and ended up taking a job digging ditches. Finally his

father offered to finance his education. Brando moved to New York, where one of his sisters was trying to become an actress. He began to study with the famous acting coach Stella Adler at the Actors' Studio, a very important acting school. While at the Actors' Studio, Brando learned the "method approach." In method acting actors are taught to draw on their own personal emotions and experiences as a way to portray their characters. Older acting systems relied heavily on teaching actors physical gestures as the way to express themselves.

Brando made his Broadway debut in *I Remember Mama* in 1944. The New York theater critics voted him Broadway's Most Promising Actor for his performance in 1946. In 1947 he played his greatest stage role, Stanley Kowalski in Tennessee Williams's (1911–1983) drama *A Streetcar Named Desire*.

Brando goes to Hollywood

Before James Dean (1931–1955), Marlon Brando popularized the jeans-and-T-shirt look, as a movie idol during the early 1950s. Hollywood was impressed with Brando, and in 1950 he made his motion picture debut as a severely injured war veteran in *The Men*. He went on to play Stanley Kowalski in the 1951 film version of *A Streetcar Named Desire*. The movie was both a popular and a critical success.

Brando played a variety of different characters over the next several years. In his next movie, *Viva Zapata!* (1952), he played Emiliano Zapata, who rose from being a peasant (a poor farmer) to becoming the president of Mexico. He was Marc Antony in the film version of William Shakespeare's (1564–1616) *Julius Caesar* (1953). He played a motorcycle-

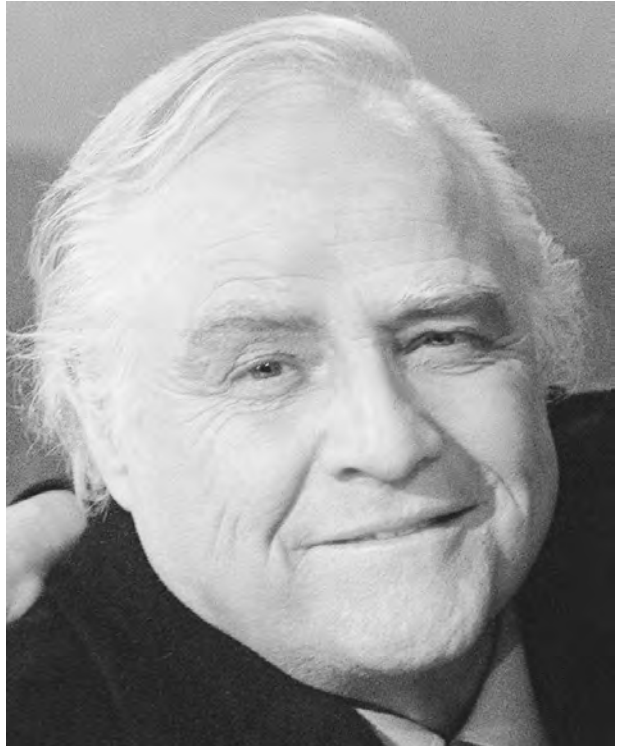
gang leader in *The Wild One* (1954), portrayed Napoleon Bonaparte (1769–1821) in *Désirée* (1954), and sang and danced as Sky Masterson in the musical comedy *Guys and Dolls* (1955). Brando won his first Academy Award in 1954 for his role in *On the Waterfront*, a hard-hitting look at New York City labor unions (a workers' group organized to help workers receive fair wages).

A period of decline

From 1955 to 1958 people in the movie industry always voted Brando as one of the top ten film attractions in the nation. During the 1960s, however, his career had more downs than ups. In 1962 Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer (MGM) studios decided to remake *Mutiny on the Bounty*, which had originally been filmed in 1935. The movie was a disaster at the box office. It failed to earn even half of its enormous budget (the money it cost to make it). Brando's excessive self-indulgence (spoiled behavior) reached its height during the filming of this movie. He was criticized for his tantrums (fits of bad temper) on the set and for trying to alter the script. Off the set he ate too much and would not associate with the cast and crew. For the rest of the 1960s Brando acted in several movies, but none of them was considered to be of very high quality.

Second rise

Brando's career was reborn in 1972 with his portrayal of Mafia (a secret, criminal organization) leader Don Corleone in *The Godfather*. He won his second Oscar for that role, but he refused to accept it because of how he felt Hollywood showed Native Americans in its movies. Brando did not appear at



Marlon Brando.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

the Academy Awards ceremony to personally deny the trophy. Instead, he had a Native American Apache woman named Sacheen Littlefeather read his protest. In 1994 Brando changed his mind and tried to get the gold Oscar statuette, but his request was denied.

Life after the Oscar

Brando continued to work in many films after *The Godfather*, both as a star and in smaller roles in dramas and comedies. Critics have said that both the movies themselves as well as Brando's performances have been of very uneven quality. Young people

who have not seen Brando's amazing efforts in his early films will not find the same genius in his later movies. The small roles he has played do not demand the acting range for which he had once achieved so much praise.

A life of turmoil

The unhappy family life Brando had as a child has been mirrored in his own family life as an adult. He has had many failed marriages and has experienced personal tragedy from the actions of two of his children. A son served time in prison for manslaughter and a daughter committed suicide.

Brando's years of self-indulgence are visible. He overate until he weighed well over three hundred pounds in the mid-1990s. However, to judge Brando by his appearance today and dismiss his work because of his later, less significant acting jobs, would be a mistake. The range of the roles he played is a testament to his ability to explore many aspects of the human psyche (mind). Brando seems perfectly content knowing his best work is behind him. He still remains an influence for actors today, and has won popular acclaim and critical consensus as one of the greatest cinema actors of the late twentieth century.

For More Information

Cary, Gary. *Marlon Brando: The Only Contender*. London, England: Robson, 1985.

Nickens, Christopher. *Brando: A Biography in Pictures*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1987.

Schickel, Richard. *Brando: A Life in Our Times*. New York, NY: Atheneum, 1991.

LEONID BREZHNEV

Born: December 12, 1906

Kamenskoe, Ukraine, Russia

Died: November 10, 1982

Moscow, Russia

Russian political leader and general secretary

Leonid Brezhnev held a number of important government posts in the former Soviet Union, and was the best known of a three-man committee that held power there from 1964 until his death in 1982. He played a large role in improving relations between the Soviet Union and the United States in the 1970s.

Early life and education

Leonid Ilich Brezhnev was born on December 12, 1906, in Kamenskoye (now Dneprodzerzhinsk), an industrial town in the Ukraine. He was one of three children of Ilya Yakovlevich Brezhnev and Natalya Denisovna. His father worked in a steel mill, as had members of several previous generations of the family. Brezhnev's childhood was far from ideal. During his youth a civil war raged in the Ukraine, the Russian Revolution occurred in 1917, and World War I (1914–18) was fought. Brezhnev was forced to leave school at the age of fifteen to go to work. He continued as a part-time student of land surveying at a trade school and graduated at the age of twenty-one.

In the years after his graduation, Brezhnev held a number of minor government posts. He also joined the Communist Party, whose members believed in a system in

which there was no private property, and goods were owned and shared by all people. Under Soviet leader Joseph Stalin (1879–1953), peasant farmers were ordered to sell their extra grain to the state rather than keeping it for themselves. Brezhnev was one of many party members who beat and threatened the peasants to get them to cooperate. Eventually Brezhnev enrolled in the Kamenskoe Metallurgical Institute, graduating in 1935 as an engineer. He left the field of engineering after a short time, however, in favor of returning to government and party work.

Moving up in the party

By the beginning of World War II (1939–45) Brezhnev was an important party leader in his native region. After the outbreak of the war, he served in the branch of the Soviet Red Army responsible for setting up Stalin's "Russification" policy (under which, for example, children were forced to study Russian subjects in school, and newspapers were ordered to be printed in Russian only). He earned many promotions and was given more responsibilities, eventually achieving the rank of major general. When he left the army in 1946, he continued to move steadily ahead as a party official. He gained national prominence in 1950, with his election as first secretary of the Central Committee of the Moldavian S.S.R., one of the republics that made up the Soviet Union. Two years later he left Moldavia for Moscow, Russia, to serve under Stalin in the powerful Secretariat (official organization) of the Central Committee of the Communist Party.

The progress of Brezhnev's career was briefly interrupted by Stalin's death in 1953.



Leonid Brezhnev.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Brezhnev was removed from the Secretariat and assigned to lesser posts, first in the Ministry of Defense and later in the Central Committee of the Kazakh republic. But because he proved to be such a successful administrator, he was recalled to Moscow in 1956 to serve again in the Secretariat. He worked closely with Nikita Khrushchev (1894–1971), the new head of the Secretariat and the most powerful man in the Soviet Union. In 1960, with the support of Khrushchev, Brezhnev was chosen chairman of the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet. This post brought Brezhnev great prestige but not great power.

National leadership

After three years Brezhnev returned to the Secretariat, where he allied himself with other leaders who were unhappy with Khrushchev's record. In 1964 this group succeeded in removing Khrushchev from power, after which Brezhnev took over the most important of Khrushchev's former positions, that of first secretary of the party's Central Committee. Brezhnev became seen as the leader of the Soviet Union. In 1966 his title was changed from first secretary to general secretary, the title under which Stalin had served. But Brezhnev was not as powerful as either Stalin or Khrushchev had been. Instead, according to the arrangement that had followed Khrushchev's removal, he became the first among equals and shared power with two others, the chairman of the Council of Ministers and the chairman of the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet.

During the 1970s Brezhnev led the Soviet Union in a number of military actions, including the invasion of Czechoslovakia (now the Czech Republic) in 1968 and warfare in the People's Republic of China in 1969. In order to remain popular with its Eastern European group of republics, which were the strongest supporters of Communism, the Soviet Union turned to hostile enforcement of its political system. Perhaps the harshest example was the Soviet attack launched on Afghanistan in 1979, which continued after Brezhnev's death. In addition, the Soviet economy (the system of production, distribution, and use of goods and services), which had flourished at first, had stopped growing by the mid-1970s.

Although the end of the Brezhnev years saw an increase in tensions between the United States and the Soviet Union, the two world powers still developed respect for each other. During the years President Richard Nixon (1913–1994) was in office (1969–74), the two leaders of the United States and the Soviet Union often visited each other. They improved relations enough to allow the creation of a joint United States-Soviet space program in 1975, a large purchase of American wheat by the Soviets, and other cooperative efforts.

As Brezhnev's health declined, so did Soviet power and unity. This was shown by an increasing amount of criticism from people within the country, such as Andrei Sakharov (1921–1989), a scientist who was imprisoned for speaking out in favor of human rights and against nuclear weapons. Although countries such as Poland, which nearly broke free of Soviet control in 1981, were still no match for the power of Soviet armies, their growing unhappiness eventually led to the break up of the Communist Soviet Union in later years. After several years of serious health problems, Brezhnev died in Moscow on November 10, 1982, leaving the Soviet Union without strong leadership until the arrival of Mikhail Gorbachev (1931–) in 1985.

For More Information

Brezhnev, Leonid I. *Leonid I. Brezhnev, His Life and Work*. New York: Sphinx Press, 1982.

Murphy, Paul J. *Brezhnev, Soviet Politician*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland, 1981.

Navazelskis, Ina L. *Leonid Brezhnev*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.

CHARLOTTE BRONTË

Born: April 21, 1816

Thornton, Yorkshire, England

Died: March 31, 1855

Haworth, Yorkshire, England

English novelist

Charlotte Brontë was one of three English sisters who had books published in the mid-1800s. Her writing described, with a dramatic force that was entirely new to English fiction, the conflict between love and independence and the struggle of the individual to maintain his or her self-esteem.

Early life

Charlotte Brontë was born in Thornton in Yorkshire, England, on April 21, 1816, the third of Patrick Brontë and Maria Branwell's six children. Her father was an Anglican minister who moved the family to Haworth, also in Yorkshire, in 1820 after finding work at a church there. Except for a brief and unhappy period when she attended a religious school—later described in the opening chapters of *Jane Eyre*—most of Charlotte's early education was provided at home by her father. After the early death of her mother, followed by the passing of her two older sisters, Brontë, now nine years old, lived in isolation with her father, aunt, sisters Anne and Emily, and brother Patrick Branwell.

With their father not communicating much with them, and having no real contact with the outside world, the children spent their time reading and creating their own imaginary worlds. They recorded the events

occurring in these imaginary worlds in miniature writing on tiny sheets of paper. Anne and Emily made up a kingdom called Gondal, while Charlotte and Patrick created the realm of Angria, which was ruled by the Duke of Zamorna. Zamorna's romantic conquests make up the greater part of Charlotte's contributions. He was a character who ruled by strength of will and feeling and easily conquered women—they recognized the evil in him but could not fight their attraction to him.

The conflict between this dream world and her everyday life caused Brontë great suffering. Although her life was outwardly calm, she lived out the struggles of her made-up characters in her head. At age fifteen she began to work as a schoolteacher. She and both of her sisters later worked watching over the children of wealthy families. While attending a language school in Brussels, Belgium, in 1843 and 1844, she seems to have fallen in love with a married professor at the school, but she never fully admitted the fact to herself.

Books published

After returning to Haworth in 1844, Charlotte Brontë became depressed. She was lonely and felt that she lacked the ability to do any creative work. She discovered that both of her sisters had been writing poetry, as she had. They decided to each write a novel and offer all of them together to publishers. Her sisters' novels were accepted for publication, but Charlotte's *The Professor*, based upon her Brussels experience, was rejected. (It was not published until after her death.) However, the publisher offered her friendly criticism and encouraged her to try again.

Charlotte Brontë's second novel, *Jane Eyre*, was published in 1847. It became the most successful book of the year. She hid at first



Charlotte Brontë.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

behind the pseudonym (pen, or assumed, writing name) Currer Bell, but later she revealed that she was the author of the book. Of all Brontë's novels, *Jane Eyre* most clearly shows the traces of her earlier stories about the imaginary Angria in the character of Rochester, with his mysterious ways and shady past. However, the governess, Jane, who loves him, does not surrender to Rochester. Instead she struggles to maintain her dignity and a balance between the opposing forces of passion and her religious beliefs.

During 1848 and 1849, within eight months of each other, Brontë's remaining two sisters and brother died. Despite her grief she

managed to finish a new novel, *Shirley* (1849). It was set in her native Yorkshire during the Luddite industrial riots of 1812, when textile workers whose jobs had been taken over by machines banded together to destroy the machines. *Shirley* used social issues as a ground for a study of the bold and active heroine and a friend who represents someone with more traditional feminine qualities. In her last completed novel, *Villette* (1853), Brontë again turned to the Brussels affair, treating it now more directly.

Despite her success as a writer, Charlotte Brontë continued to live a quiet life at home in Yorkshire. In 1854 she married Arthur Nicholls, a man who had once worked as an assistant to her father, but she died within a year of their marriage on March 31, 1855.

For More Information

- Gaskell, Elizabeth. *The Life of Charlotte Brontë*. 2 vols. New York: D. Appleton, 1857.
- Gordon, Lyndall. *Charlotte Brontë: A Passionate Life*. London: Vintage, 1995.
- Moglen, Helene. *Charlotte Brontë: The Self Conceived*. New York: Norton, 1976.

EMILY BRONTË

Born: August 20, 1818

Thornton, Yorkshire, England

Died: December 19, 1848

Haworth, Yorkshire, England

English novelist

Emily Brontë was one of three English sisters who had books published in the mid-1800s. Her only major work, *Wuthering Heights*, is considered one of the greatest novels in the history of literature.

Early years and imaginary worlds

Emily Brontë was born in Thornton in Yorkshire, England, on August 20, 1818, the daughter of Patrick and Maria Branwell Brontë. Her father had been a schoolteacher and tutor before becoming an Anglican minister. She grew up in Haworth in the bleak West Riding area of Yorkshire. Except for an unhappy year at a religious school (described by her sister Charlotte as the Lowood Institution in *Jane Eyre*), Emily's education was provided at home by her father, who let his children read freely and treated them as intellectual equals. The early death of their mother and two older sisters drew the remaining children close together.

Living in an isolated village, separated socially and intellectually from the local people, the Brontë sisters (Charlotte, Emily, and Anne) and their brother Patrick Branwell spent the majority of their time in made-up worlds. They described these imaginary worlds in poems and tales and in "magazines" written in miniature script on tiny pieces of paper. As the children grew older, their personalities changed. Emily and Anne created the realm of Gondal. Located somewhere in the north, it was, like West Riding, a land of wild moors (open, grassy areas unsuitable for farming). Unlike Charlotte and Patrick's dream world called Angria, Gondal's laws reflected those of the real world. But this did not mean that Emily found it any easier than her sister to live



Emily Brontë.

happily as a governess or schoolteacher, which seemed to be their only options for the future.

When, at the age of seventeen, Emily attempted formal schooling for the second time, she suffered a breakdown after three months. She began a teaching position the following year but had to give that up as well. In 1842 she accompanied her sister Charlotte to Brussels, Belgium, for a year to study languages. During this time she impressed the professor as having a finer, more powerful mind than her sister. In October of that year, however, the death of an aunt brought the sisters back home to Haworth. Emily would spend the rest of her life there.

Back home and writing

Emily Brontë did not mind the isolation of Haworth, as being outdoors in the moors gave her a feeling of freedom. Here she experienced the world in terms of forces of nature that cannot be considered good or evil. She believed in the presence of supernatural powers (such as ghosts or spirits) and began to express her feelings in poems such as “To Imagination,” “The Prisoner,” “The Visionary,” “The Old Stoic,” and “No Coward Soul.”

After Emily Brontë and her sisters discovered that they had all been writing poetry, the three of them put together a collection of poems written under pseudonyms (fake names) that was published in 1846. It did not attract any attention. The sisters then decided to each write a novel and submit all three jointly to publishers. Emily’s *Wuthering Heights* was published in 1847. Set in the moors, it is a story of love and revenge involving a character named Heathcliff, who was abandoned by his parents as an infant, and his effect on two neighboring families. Critical reaction was negative, at least partly due to the many errors in the first printing. Later *Wuthering Heights* came to be considered one of the great novels of all time.

Emily Brontë died of tuberculosis at Haworth on December 19, 1848. Refusing all medical attention, she struggled to perform her household tasks until the end.

For More Information

Chitham, Edward. *A Life of Emily Brontë*. New York: B. Blackwell, 1987.

Frank, Katherine. *A Chainless Soul: A Life of Emily Brontë*. Boston: Houghton Mufflin, 1990.

**GWENDOLYN
BROOKS**

Born: June 7, 1917

Topeka, Kansas

Died: December 3, 2000

Chicago, Illinois

African American poet

Gwendolyn Brooks was the first African American to receive a Pulitzer Prize for Poetry and is best known for her poetic descriptions of African American city life.

Early life

Gwendolyn Brooks was born on June 7, 1917, in Topeka, Kansas, the eldest child of Keziah (Wims) Brooks, a schoolteacher, and David Anderson Brooks, a janitor, who, because he lacked the funds to finish school, did not achieve his dream of becoming a doctor. Brooks grew up in Chicago, Illinois. Her parents often read to her and encouraged her to do well in school, but she was a shy girl. According to George Kent, she was “spurned by members of her own race because she lacked social or athletic abilities, a light skin, and good grade hair.”

Brooks was deeply hurt by this rejection and spent most of her childhood writing. She became known to her family and friends as “the female Paul Lawrence Dunbar” (1872–1906; a famous African American poet). She received compliments on her poems and encouragement from James Weldon Johnson (1871–1938) and Langston Hughes (1902–1967), well-known writers with whom she began correspondence and whose readings she

attended in Chicago. By the age of sixteen she had written over seventy-five poems.

Early career

After graduating from Wilson Junior College in 1936, Brooks worked as director of publicity for a youth organization of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People. She participated in poetry readings and workshops at Chicago's South Side Community Art Center, producing verse that would appear in her first published volume, *A Street in Bronzeville*, in 1945. In 1939 she married Henry L. Blakeley, another young writer, and together they would raise two children. Brooks continued to write poetry when the children were asleep or later while they were in school. A second collection titled *Annie Allen* was released in 1949. In 1950 Brooks was awarded a Pulitzer Prize for Poetry, becoming the first African American to be granted this honor. She also wrote a novel, *Maud Martha*, in 1953. Other poetry collections included *The Bean Eaters* (1960) and *Selected Poems* (1962).

Brooks's work from this period contains descriptions mostly of African American people involved in their day-to-day city activities. In them she used a strict technical form, lofty word choice, and complicated word play. Critics labeled her early work as intellectual and scholarly. Although these poems speak out against the oppression (cruel exercise of power against a particular group) of blacks and women, some of them require close reading to uncover their true meanings. In many of these works she criticized the prejudice that African American people have toward one another by calling attention to their favored treatment of light-skinned



Gwendolyn Brooks.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

African American people. In *Annie Allen* and *Maud Martha* she examines the traditional roles of mother and father, and husband and wife, concluding that they can be damaging to those who try to live up to artificial ideals. But these messages tend to be hidden somewhat by her complicated language.

New tone

In 1967 Brooks's work achieved a new tone and vision. She changed to a more simple writing style so that her themes could come across more strongly. This change can be traced to her growing political awareness, previously hinted at in *Selected Poems*, after

witnessing the strong spirit of several young African American authors at the Second Black Writers' Conference held at Fisk University. Among such works are *In the Mecca* (1968), *Riot* (1969), *Aloneness* (1971), *Family Pictures* (1971), the autobiographical (description of her own life) *Report from Part One* (1972), *The Tiger Who Wore White Gloves: Or, What You Are You Are* (1974), *Beckonings* (1975), and *Primer for Blacks* (1980). These works are much more direct and are designed to increase the reader's level of racial awareness. No longer using traditional poetic forms, Brooks now favored free verse. She also increased the use of her vernacular (a language spoken by people of a particular group or from a certain area) to make her works more understandable for African Americans, not just for university audiences and the editors of poetry magazines.

During the 1970s Brooks taught poetry at numerous institutions for higher learning, including Northeastern Illinois State College (now Northeastern Illinois University), the University of Wisconsin at Madison, and the City College of the City University of New York. She continued to write. Yet, while her concern for African Americans and hope for racial harmony was the main subject of her verse in the early 1970s, the energy and positive feeling of *Riot* and *Family Pictures* was replaced in the late 1970s with a sense of disappointment resulting from the disagreements and lack of unity among members of the civil rights and "Black Power" movements. This mood was reflected in *Beckonings* (1975) and *To Disembark* (1980), where she urged African Americans to break free from the controls of white American society and seemed to favor violence and disorder as acceptable ways of achieving that freedom.

Later years

Brooks spent her time encouraging others to write by sponsoring writers' workshops in Chicago and poetry contests at prisons. In short, she took poetry to her people, continuing to test its worth by reading and speaking in taverns, lounges, and other public places as well as in academic circles. In 1985 she was named as the poetry consultant (one who gives advice) for the Library of Congress. In 1990 her works were guaranteed a permanent home when Chicago State University established the Gwendolyn Brooks Center on its campus. In later years Brooks continued to write, with *Children Coming Home* and *Blacks* both being published in 1992. She also continued to inspire others to write, focusing on young children by speaking and giving poetry readings at schools around the country.

In 1997, on her eightieth birthday, Gwendolyn Brooks was honored with tributes from Chicago to Washington, D.C. Although she received many words of tribute, perhaps the best description of Brooks's life and career came from her publisher, Haki Madhubuti, when he said, "She is undoubtedly one of the top one hundred writers in the world. She has been a chronicler (record keeper) of black life, specifically black life on the South Side of Chicago. She has become almost a legend in her own time." Gwendolyn Brooks died of cancer at her Chicago home on December 3, 2000.

For More Information

- Bloom, Harold, ed. *Gwendolyn Brooks*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2000.
- Kent, George E. *A Life of Gwendolyn Brooks*. Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 1990.

Melhem, D. H. *Gwendolyn Brooks: Poetry and the Heroic Voice*. Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 1987.

HELEN GURLEY BROWN

Born: February 18, 1922

Green Forest, Arkansas

American editor and author

American author and editor Helen Gurley Brown first achieved fame for her best-selling book *Sex and the Single Girl*. After becoming editor of *Cosmopolitan*, she transformed it into a top-selling magazine for young women in more than twenty-seven different countries.

Early years

Helen Gurley Brown was born in Green Forest, Arkansas, on February 18, 1922. The family lived in Little Rock, Arkansas, until her father, Ira M. Gurley, a schoolteacher, was killed in an elevator accident when Helen was ten years old. Her mother, Cleo Gurley, was left to raise their two daughters. (Helen's sister was partially paralyzed from polio, a disease that affects the spine.) "I never liked the looks of the life that was programmed for me—ordinary, hillbilly, and poor," Brown wrote later.

After Brown's father died, the family moved to Los Angeles, California. In high school, Brown set about working harder than anyone else, wrote for school publications,

and wound up finishing at the top of her class. She attended Texas State College for Women from 1939 to 1941 before returning to Los Angeles, where she attended Woodbury Business College. She also took a job at Los Angeles radio station KHJ, answering fan mail for six dollars a week to help support her mother and sister.

In the workforce

Brown worked at eighteen different secretarial jobs between the ages of eighteen and twenty-five. From 1942 to 1945 she worked at Music Corporation of America, a Beverly Hills talent agency. In later years she would recall how secretaries were required to use the back stairs because the fancy lobby staircase was only for the use of clients and male executives of the company.

A major career move for Brown occurred in 1948, when she became the first woman to hold a copywriter position at Foote, Cone & Belding, a Los Angeles advertising agency. Her ability to write bright, noticeable copy won her two Francis Holmes Advertising Copywriters awards during her years at the firm. She went on to work for Kenyon & Eckhardt, a Hollywood advertising agency, as an account executive and copywriter from 1958 to 1962.

In 1959, at the age of thirty-seven, Helen Gurley married David Brown, then vice president of production at the 20th Century Fox movie studio. In later years Brown co-produced films such as *Jaws*, *Cocoon*, and *The Sting*. The couple had no children. Brown once remarked that one secret of the success of their marriage was that her husband never interrupted her on Saturdays and Sundays when she was working upstairs in her office.



Helen Gurley Brown.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Brown's first book, *Sex and the Single Girl* (1962), became a national best-seller and changed single women's attitudes toward their own lives. At a time when *Reader's Digest* and *The Ladies Home Journal* still insisted that a "nice" girl had only two choices, "she can marry him or she can say no," Brown openly proclaimed that sex was an important part of a single woman's life. According to Brown, "The single girl is the new glamour girl." She also told her own story, describing herself as a "mouseburger" who, through patience, planning, and never giving up, advanced in her chosen field and then married the man of her dreams.

Magazine success

In 1965 Brown was hired as editor in chief of a failing general interest magazine called *Cosmopolitan*. She revised the magazine's cover image, creating a carefree, sexy *Cosmo* girl. "A million times a year I defend my covers," Brown admitted. "I like skin, I like pretty. I don't want to photograph the girl next door." The magazine, like its editor, was filled with advice on how to move ahead in a career, meet men, lose weight, and be a good sexual partner. There was no time for the negative. "I wasn't allowed to write critical reviews," movie critic Liz Smith confessed. The new *Cosmopolitan* often created controversy (dispute), especially when it published a nude centerfold of actor Burt Reynolds in 1972. By 1990 *Cosmopolitan* had grown from sales of eight hundred thousand copies per issue in the United States to more than 2.5 million. It was one of the most widely read women's magazines in the world, and became the sixth best-selling newsstand magazine in any category.

Brown's advice changed little over the years, both in the magazine and the books she occasionally published on topics similar to those discussed in the magazine. She still refused to print four-letter words but described sexual acts in great detail. "I am still preoccupied with sex," she confessed. "If you want to enchant a man and eventually marry him, you are good to him, easy with him, adorable to be around." During a *Fortune* magazine interview in October 1996, Brown shared several of her rules for being a good executive. Her guidelines included paying a compliment before criticizing someone, saying "no" to time wasters, doing what you dread first, and working harder than anybody else.

In addition to the Francis Holmes Achievement awards, Brown received several awards for journalism, including a Distinguished Achievement Award from the University of Southern California in 1971; an award for editorial leadership from the American Newspaper Woman's Club of Washington, D.C., in 1972; and the Distinguished Achievement Award in Journalism from Stanford University in 1977. In 1985 she received the New York Women in Communications Matrix award. She has been referred to as a "living landmark" by the New York Landmarks Conservancy, and the Helen Gurley Brown Research professorship was established in her name at Northwestern University's Medill School of Journalism in 1986. She was named to the Publisher's Hall of Fame in 1988.

Advice continues

In January 1996, after thirty-two years, Helen Gurley Brown was replaced as editor in chief of *Cosmopolitan* by Bonnie Fuller, founding editor of *Marie Claire* magazine. "She [Fuller] thoroughly understands the *Cosmo* girl, and her success . . . certainly prepared her to succeed to the editorship of *Cosmopolitan*," said Brown. She was given the position of editor in chief of *Cosmopolitan's* international publishing program. In 2000 Brown's eighth book *I'm Wild Again: Snippets from My Life and a Few Brazen Thoughts* was published. Filled with stories, the book revealed information on her face lifts, staying thin, and how to keep a man and succeed in a career.

For More Information

Brown, Helen Gurley. *I'm Wild Again: Snippets from My Life and a Few Brazen Thoughts*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 2000.

Falkof, Lucille. *Helen Gurley Brown: The Queen of Cosmopolitan*. Ada, OK: Garrett Educational Corp., 1992.

JAMES BROWN

Born: May 3, 1933

Barnwell, South Carolina

African American singer

“G odfather of Soul” James Brown unleashed a string of rhythm-and-blues hits through the 1960s and early 1970s. His influence and work ethic earned him the reputation as “the hardest-working man in show business.”

Difficult childhood

James Joe Brown Jr. was born on May 3, 1933, in Barnwell, South Carolina, to Joe and Susie Brown. His mother left the family when James was only four years old. His father, looking for work, moved the remaining family to Augusta, Georgia, to live with an aunt, who oversaw a brothel (a house for prostitutes). Growing up, Brown was heavily influenced by jazz and rhythm-and-blues, two musical types dominated by African Americans. Other influences were the circuses and traveling shows with their variety of acts, both singing and dancing.

But Brown's musical dreams were soon drowned out by his tough childhood. He grew up fast, and by his teens Brown had drifted into crime. At sixteen he went to jail for multiple car thefts. Though initially sen-



James Brown.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

tenced to eight to sixteen years of hard labor, he got out in less than four years for good behavior. After unsuccessful attempts at boxing and baseball, he formed a gospel group called the Swanees with his prison pal Johnny Terry.

“The Hardest-Working Man in Show Business”

The Swanees shifted toward the popular mid-1950s “doo-wop” style and away from gospel, changing their name to the Famous Flames. Brown sang lead and played drums; their song “Please, Please, Please” was released

as a single in 1956 and sold a million copies. By 1960 the group had become the James Brown Revue and was generating proto-funk dance hits like “(Do the) Mashed Potato.” Deemed the “King of Soul” at the Apollo Theater, New York City’s black music capital, Brown proceeded over the years to burn up the charts with singles like “Papa’s Got a Brand New Bag,” “I Got You (I Feel Good),” “It’s a Man’s Man’s Man’s World,” “Cold Sweat,” “Funky Drummer,” and many others.

Brown’s unique style mixed a handful of influences, but his intensity of punctuating vocal sounds—groans, grunts, wails, and screams—came right out of the southern church. His calls to sax player Maceo Parker to “blow your horn,” and trademark cries of “Good God!” and “Take it to the bridge!” became among the most recognizable catchphrases in popular music. His band—though its members shifted constantly—maintained a reputation as one of the tightest in the business. Starting and stopping on a dime, laying down merciless grooves, it followed Brown’s lead as he worked crowds the world over into a frenzy. Brown adopted a series of extravagant titles over the years, but during this period he was known primarily as “The Hardest-Working Man in Show Business.”

Activism

The increasingly militant stance of many African American activists in the late 1960s led Brown—by now among an elite group of influential African Americans—to flirt with the “Black Power” movement. Even so, the singer generally counseled nonviolence and won praise from President Lyndon B. Johnson (1908–1973) when a broadcast of his

words helped head off a race riot. He was also saluted by Vice President Hubert Humphrey (1911–1978) for his proeducation song “Don’t Be a Dropout.” Brown’s music did begin to incorporate more obvious political messages, many of which stated his belief that African Americans needed to take control of their economic destinies.

The year 1970 saw the release of Brown’s powerful single “(Get Up, I Feel Like Being a) Sex Machine,” a relentless funk groove featuring several hot young players, notably Bootsy Collins and his brother Phelps, also known as “Catfish.” Brown soon signed with Polydor Records and took on the nickname the “Godfather of Soul,” after the highly successful movie *The Godfather*. Further refining his hard funk sound, he released hits like “Get on the Good Foot,” “Talking Loud and Saying Nothing,” and “Soul Power.” With the 1970s box-office success of black action films—known within the industry as “blaxploitation” pictures—Brown began writing movie soundtracks, scoring such features as *Slaughter’s Big Rip-Off* and *Black Caesar*.

Taxes, tragedy, and trouble

James Brown may have been one of the biggest pop stars in the world, but he also found himself in a fare share of trouble. In 1975 the Internal Revenue Service (IRS) claimed that he owed \$4.5 million in taxes from 1969 to 1970, and many of his other investments collapsed. His band quit after a punishing tour of Africa, and most tragically, his son Teddy died in an automobile accident. Brown’s wife later left him, taking their two daughters.

By the late 1970s, the arrival of disco music created career problems for the “God-

father of Soul.” Things improved slightly after Brown appeared as a preacher in the smash 1980 comedy film *The Blues Brothers*, but his big comeback of the 1980s came with the release of “Living in America,” the theme from the film *Rocky IV*, which he performed at the request of movie star Sylvester Stallone (1946–). The single was his first million-selling hit in thirteen years. As a result, Brown signed a new deal with CBS Records; in 1986 he was inducted into the Rock ‘n’ Roll Hall of Fame. “Living in America” earned him a Grammy Award for best R&B performance by a male artist.

Jailed after 1988 chase

Through it all, Brown had been struggling with substance abuse. In May of 1988 he faced charges of assault, weapons and drug possession, and resisting arrest. In December he made national headlines when he was arrested again after leading police on a two-state car chase and was sentenced to six years in State Park Correctional Facility in Columbia, South Carolina. His confinement became a political issue for his fans, and Brown was ultimately released in early 1991.

Unfortunately, Brown’s troubles were not at an end. In December of 1994, he was charged with misdemeanor domestic violence after a confrontation with his third wife, Adrienne. And on October 31, 1995, Brown was again arrested for spousal abuse. He later blamed the incident on his wife’s addiction to drugs, stating in a press release, “She’ll do anything to get them.” Just over two months later, Adrienne died at the age of forty-seven after undergoing cosmetic surgery.

But things seemed to be getting back on track for Brown. In 1998 he released the album *I'm Back* and in 2000 he was inducted into the Songwriters' Hall of Fame at a New York ceremony. The following year, he married his girlfriend of three years, singer Tammie Rae Hynie.

Brown's ability for survival and the shining legacy of his work managed to overshadow such ugly incidents. "I came from nothing and I made something out of myself," Brown commented in a *New York Times* interview. "I dance and I sing and I make it happen. I've made people feel better. I want people to be happy."

For More Information

Brown, James. *The Godfather of Soul*. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1990.

Murray, Charles Shaar. *Crosstown Traffic: Jimi Hendrix and the Rock 'n' Roll Revolution*. New York: St. Martin's, 1989.

Rose, Cynthia. *Living in America: The Soul Saga of James Brown*. New York: Serpent's Tail, 1990.

JOHN BROWN

Born: May 4, 1800

Torrington, Connecticut

Died: December 2, 1859

Charles Town, Virginia

American abolitionist

John Brown was one of the most famous abolitionists, or opponents of slavery, in history. He traveled widely to gather

support and money for his cause. Many people who helped him were either unaware or did not care that he often used violence to achieve his goals. His attack on Harpers Ferry, Virginia, in 1859, freed no slaves and resulted in his own trial and death.

Declares "eternal war with slavery"

John Brown was born at Torrington, Connecticut, on May 4, 1800, to Owen Brown and Ruth Mills Brown. His father worked as a tanner, changing animal skins into leather. A religious youth, Brown studied briefly for the ministry but quit to learn the tanner's trade. He married Dianthe Lusk in 1820, and the couple had seven children before her death in 1832. In 1833 he married Mary Ann Day, with whom he had thirteen children in the next twenty-one years. Of Brown's twenty children, twelve survived.

When Brown was twelve years old, he saw an African American boy mistreated; this incident, he said, led him to declare "eternal war with slavery." He felt that slavery could be destroyed only with bloodshed, deciding in 1839 that the South should be invaded and the slaves freed at gunpoint. For the next decade, he attempted a number of business ventures, none successfully. He moved his family ten times, until settling in 1849 on a farm at North Elba, New York.

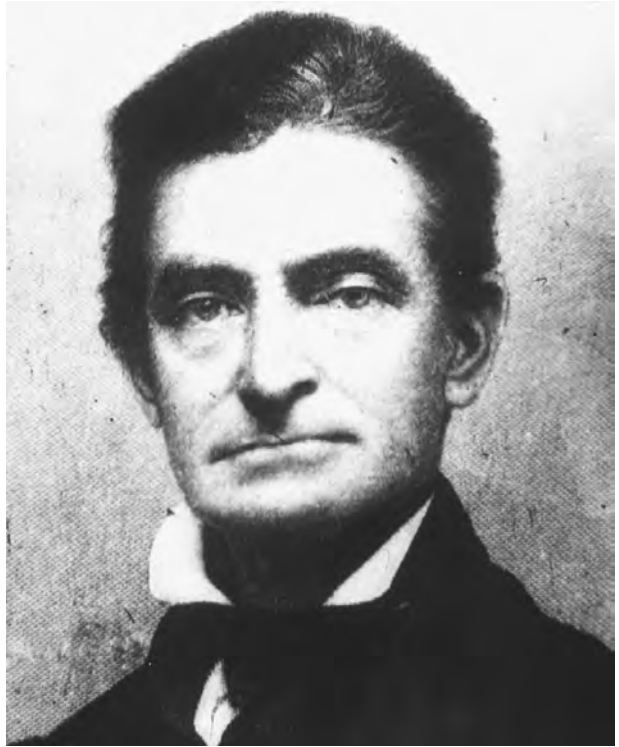
Kansas struggle

After the Kansas-Nebraska Act of 1854, the territory hung in the balance while supporters and opponents of slavery tried to gain control. According to the Kansas-Nebraska Act, the people living in the territory would decide whether or not slavery would be allowed in Kansas and Nebraska.

Brown traveled through the East, urging an end to slavery in Kansas and gathering money for weapons to help achieve that end. "Without the shedding of blood," he said, there could be "no remission of sin." In other words, he believed that the people who supported slavery and the slave system would not be freed from the guilt of what he saw as a sin until slavery was ended. He thought that the only way to end slavery was through fighting, even if it would result in the death of some people. In September he settled near Osawatomie, Kansas. "I am here," he said, "to promote the killing of slavery." In 1856 he led a raid on a proslavery settlement at Pottawatomie, Kansas, killing five men before escaping. This incident made him nationally known, and while some people criticized him, to others he was a hero.

Brown spent the summer of 1856 in New England collecting money for his fight against slavery. Important public figures, some unaware of the details of his activities, were impressed by his dedication and helped him gather recruits, guns, and money. In August he and his supporters fought with settlers at Osawatomie, and his son Frederick was killed. "I will die fighting for this cause," Brown wrote, "There will be no peace in this land until slavery is done for."

Brown went east in early 1857 with plans to invade the South; he gathered supporters at Tabor, Iowa, for training. He held meetings with eastern abolitionists, and in early 1858 sent his son John Jr. to survey the country around Harpers Ferry, the site of a Federal arsenal (a place where items used by the military, such as equipment and weapons are made or stored). In April he held a meeting of his men in Chatham, Ontario, Canada.



John Brown.

Courtesy of the National Archives and Records Administration.

He explained to them that he planned to invade the South, arm the slaves, and set up a free state under a new constitution. He returned to Kansas using a different name and led a raid into Missouri, killing one man and taking some slaves back to Canada.

Brown was now considered a criminal in the eyes of the state of Missouri and the U.S. government, and both offered rewards for his capture. However, in parts of the North he was seen as a hero, and donations poured in. In early 1859 he toured the East again to raise money, and in July he rented a farm five miles north of Harpers Ferry, where he

recruited twenty-one men for final training. He intended to seize the arsenal, distribute arms to the slaves he thought would support him, and set up a free state for African Americans within the South. However, Harpers Ferry was an isolated mountain town, with few slaves nearby.

Raid on Harpers Ferry

On the night of October 16, 1859, Brown set out for Harpers Ferry with eighteen men and a wagon full of supplies, leaving three men behind to guard the farm. Brown's party slipped into town and easily captured the armory (a storage place for weapons) watchmen. For some reason, Brown allowed the midnight train to go through; the train's conductor sounded an alarm the next morning.

Shooting broke out early on October 17, 1859, between Brown's men and local residents. Soldiers soon arrived from Charles Town, West Virginia. By nightfall Brown's group was trapped in the armory's engine house; all but five were wounded. That night ninety marines arrived from Washington, D.C., to join the fight against Brown and his men. The next morning the marines stormed the engine house, slashing Brown with their swords. Of Brown's original party, ten died and seven were captured; on the other side the victims included a marine and four other men, one of them a free African American killed by mistake.

Brown was jailed at Charles Town. His trial took place a week later as he lay wounded on a stretcher. "I believe that to have interfered as I have done," he said, "in behalf of His despised poor, I did no wrong, but right. . . . I am ready for my fate." He was

convicted of treason (a crime against the government) against Virginia, conspiracy (plotting) with African Americans, and first-degree murder. The court sentenced Brown to death on November 2. He was to be executed a month later.

Beginning of a legend

News of Brown's deed shocked the nation. Many praised him, including Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882), who called him "that new saint who will make the gallows like a cross." However, many believed that his crime had been terribly evil. Seventeen of Brown's acquaintances sent letters on his behalf to Governor Wise of Virginia, but Wise ignored them.

Brown was hanged at Charles Town on December 2, 1859, with four of his men, after handing a note to his jailer on his way to the gallows: "I John Brown am now quite certain that the crimes of this guilty land: will never be purged away; but with Blood." The note predicted what was to come in the near future. In fact, the end to slavery in the United States came with the end of the Civil War (1861–65). The Civil War was fought to decide whether or not slavery would be allowed in new territories and in an effort to prevent the southern states from leaving the Union and forming an independent nation. Many people throughout the North gathered to mourn Brown, and church bells tolled at the hour of his execution. He was buried in North Elba, a hero among abolitionists. By the time a song about him, set to the music of an old hymn and named "John Brown's Body," became popular in 1861, he was already a legend.

For More Information

Cox, Clinton. *Fiery Vision: The Life and Death of John Brown*. New York: Scholastic, 1997.

Dubois, W. E. B. *John Brown: A Biography*. Armonk, NY: M. E. Sharpe, 1997.

Oates, Stephen B. *To Purge This Land with Blood: A Biography of John Brown*. Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press, 1984.

RACHEL FULLER BROWN

Born: November 23, 1898

Springfield, Massachusetts

Died: January 14, 1980

Albany, New York

American biochemist

Rachel Fuller Brown, with her associate Elizabeth Hazen, developed the first effective antibiotic against fungal disease in humans—the most important biomedical breakthrough since the discovery of penicillin two decades earlier. Nystatin earned more than \$13 million in royalties during Brown's lifetime, which she and Hazen dedicated to scientific research.

Early life

Rachel Fuller Brown was born in Springfield, Massachusetts, on November 23, 1898, to Annie Fuller and George Hamilton Brown. Her father, a real estate and insurance agent, moved the family to Webster Groves, Mis-

souri, where she attended grammar school. Although Fuller did not take an immediate interest in science, she was fascinated with insects and she collected and studied them. In school, however, Fuller went out of her way to avoid science classes.

In 1912 Brown's father left the family. She and her younger brother returned to Springfield with their mother, who, to support them, worked as a secretary, then as an administrator in several Episcopalian churches. Because of the family's financial situation, it looked as though Brown's education would end after high school. But Brown's hard work and determination impressed Henrietta F. Dexter, a wealthy friend of her grandmother, who decided to fund Brown's tuition to Mount Holyoke College in nearby South Hadley, Massachusetts.

At Mount Holyoke Brown was initially a history major, but she discovered chemistry when fulfilling a science requirement. She decided to double-major in history and chemistry, earning her degree in 1920. She later went to the University of Chicago to complete her master's degree in organic chemistry. For three years she taught chemistry and physics at the Francis Shimer School near Chicago. With her savings she returned to the university to complete her doctorate degree in organic chemistry, with a minor in bacteriology. She submitted her thesis (a research project required for graduation) in 1926, but there was a delay in arranging her oral examinations, which she needed to complete in order to get her degree. As her funds ran low, Brown was forced to leave Chicago before her exams. She took a job as an assistant chemist at the Division of Laboratories and Research of the



Rachel Fuller Brown.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

New York State Department of Health in Albany, New York. The department was famous for its identifications of several human disease-causing agents. Seven years later, when she returned to Chicago for a scientific meeting, Brown arranged to take her oral examinations and was finally awarded her degree.

Discovers fungal antibiotic

Brown's early work at the Department of Health focused on identifying the types of bacteria that caused pneumonia, a disease that causes inflammation of the lungs. Brown helped to develop a pneumonia vaccine (an agent used to fight the disease) still in use

today. In 1948 she embarked on the project with her associate Elizabeth Hazen, a leading authority on fungus, that would bring them their greatest respect from her peers: the discovery of an antibiotic to fight fungal infections. Penicillin, a groundbreaking antibiotic used to fight a variety of illnesses, had been discovered in 1928, and in the following years antibiotics were increasingly used to fight bacterial illnesses. One side effect, however, was the rapid growth of fungus that could lead to sore mouths or upset stomachs. Other fungal diseases without cures included infections attacking the central nervous system, athlete's foot (a foot fungus), and ringworm (a contagious skin disease).

Microorganisms (animals or plants of microscopic size) called actinomycetes that lived in soil were known to produce antibiotics. Although some killed fungus, they also proved fatal to test mice. Hazen ultimately narrowed the search down to a microorganism taken from soil near a barn on a friend's dairy farm in Virginia, later named *streptomyces norsei*. Brown's chemical analyses revealed that the microorganism produced two antifungal substances, one of which proved too toxic (deadly) with test animals to pursue for human medical use. The other, however, seemed to have promise—it was not toxic to test animals, and attacked both a fungus that invaded the lungs and central nervous system and candidiasis, an infection of the mouth, lungs, and vagina.

Brown purified (cleansed) this second antibiotic into small white crystals, and in 1950 Brown and Hazen announced at a meeting of the National Academy of Sciences that they had found a new antifungal agent. They patented (gained official right to the product)

it through the nonprofit Research Corporation, naming it “nystatin” in honor of the New York State Division of Laboratories and Research. The license for the patent was issued to E. R. Squibb and Sons, which developed a safe and effective method of mass production. The product—called Mycostatin—became available in tablet form in 1954 to patients suffering from candidiasis. Nystatin has also proved valuable in agricultural and livestock applications, and has even been used to restore valuable works of art.

Later career

In 1951 the Department of Health laboratories promoted Brown to associate biochemist. Brown and Hazen continued their research and discovered two additional antibiotics, phalamycin and capacidin. Brown and Hazen were awarded the 1955 Squibb Award in Chemotherapy, the treatment of disease through chemical agents. Brown won the Distinguished Service Award of the New York State Department of Health when she retired in 1968, and the Rhoda Benham Award of the Medical Mycological Society of the Americas in 1972. In 1975 Brown and Hazen became the first women to receive the Chemical Pioneer Award from the American Institute of Chemists. In a statement published in the *Chemist* shortly before she died, Brown hoped for a future of “equal opportunities and accomplishments for all scientists regardless of sex.”

In retirement Brown maintained an active community life, and became the first female vestry (administrator) member of her Episcopalian church. By her death on January 14, 1980, she had paid back Henrietta Dexter, the wealthy woman who had made it possible for

her to attend college. Perhaps even more significant, she used the royalties (money earned) from nystatin to help create new funds for scientific research and scholarships.

For More Information

Baldwin, Richard S. *The Fungus Fighters: Two Women Scientists and Their Discovery*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1981.

Vare, Ethlie Ann and Greg Ptacek. *Mothers of Invention*. New York: Morrow, 1988, pp. 124–126.

Yost, Edna. *Women of Modern Science*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1984, pp. 64–79.

ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING

Born: March 6, 1806

Durham, England

Died: June 29, 1861

Florence, Italy

English poet

The works of the English poet Elizabeth Barrett Browning enjoyed great popularity during her lifetime. Her most enduring poetry has proved to be *Sonnets from the Portuguese*.

Life at Hope End

Elizabeth Barrett was the first of twelve children born to Edward and Mary Moulton (the Moultons later took the last name Barrett) on March 6, 1806, in Durham, England.



Elizabeth Barrett Browning.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Her father was a possessive and demanding man loved by his children even though he rigidly controlled their lives. Elizabeth's childhood was ideal in that the Barretts lived in a lovely setting, a country house called Hope End. She was an excellent rider and enjoyed growing up with her many siblings.

Though she never received any formal education, Elizabeth loved to read. By age eight she had learned to read Homer in the original Greek and had begun to write poetry. In 1819 her father had printed fifty copies of her classic "The Battle of Marathon." In 1826 she published anonymously (without her name), *An Essay on Mind, with Other*

Poems, an attempt, as she later noted, to survey history, science, metaphysics (the fundamental nature of reality and being), and poetry from classical Greece to the Victorian day in eighty-eight pages. Elizabeth's fascination with metaphysics and religion became somewhat of an obsession that she described as, "not the deep persuasion of the mild Christian but the wild visions of an enthusiast."

Elizabeth's youthful happiness was not to last. In 1821 she began to suffer from a nervous disorder that caused headaches, weakness, and fainting spells. Some sources trace this lifelong illness to an impatient decision to harness her own horse at age fifteen. Reportedly she fell with the saddle on top of her, damaging her spine. An ongoing prescription for opium (an addictive drug used to relieve pain) was probably a life shortening remedy but a common one for the times. Her mother's health was also unstable. When Elizabeth was twenty her mother became fatally ill. Meanwhile, her father had lost all of his wealth. Rather than move immediately, he refinanced beyond any possibility of repayment so that Mrs. Barrett would never have to leave her beautiful home. After her death, Elizabeth and her family left Hope End forever.

Publications

Barrett continued her poetic career in 1833 with the anonymous publication of *Prometheus Bound: Translated from the Greek of Aeschylus, and Miscellaneous Poems*. Two years later the Barretts moved to London, England, and in 1838 settled permanently at 50 Wimpole Street. Here Elizabeth started literary friendships that encouraged her writing. During the same year Elizabeth published

her first book under her own name, *The Seraphim and Other Poems*. Though these poems are often filled with heavy-handed sorrow and moral messages, the critics hailed her as a new poet of “extraordinary ability.”

In 1838 Barrett’s illness worsened and she relocated to a sea resort for her health. Her favorite brother Edward stayed with her. Two years later Edward drowned after a disagreement with Elizabeth. This shock worsened her poor health. For the next five years she remained in her room and saw no one except her family and a few close friends. In 1844, however, the publication of *Poems* secured her fame. Such poems as “The Dead Pan” and “Lady Geraldine’s Courtship” seem shrill and sentimental to today’s readers, but they were very popular with Victorian readers and won high praise from critics both in England and the United States.

Romance and renewed health

By far the most significant result of *Poems* was the beginning of Barrett’s relationship with the poet Robert Browning (1812–1889). Attracted by her praise of his poetry, Browning wrote to her on January 10, 1845, and thus began England’s most famous literary love affair. Barrett’s illness had led her to feel “completely dead to hope of any kind.” Six years his senior and an invalid, Elizabeth could not believe her good fortune. Her progress out of despair into hope and finally joy can be traced in her letters to Browning and in her *Sonnets from the Portuguese*, written during their courtship and expressing her love for him. The world-famous romance line, “How do I love thee, let me count the ways^{1/4}” comes straight from these sonnets. Because Elizabeth’s father had forbidden any of his children

to marry, the couple was secretly married on September 12, 1846. In anger and frustration, Mr. Barrett refused ever to see his daughter again. Fortunately Elizabeth had inherited other money.

The Brownings journeyed south through France to Italy. Casa Guidi in Florence was their home for the rest of Mrs. Browning’s life. There her health was so improved that on March 9, 1849, she gave birth to a son, Robert Wiedeman Barrett Browning. In 1850 Browning issued a revised edition of *Poems* containing the *Sonnets from the Portuguese*, which her husband had urged her to publish. Modern readers usually find these sonnets her best work. But Victorian readers much preferred her *Aurora Leigh*, a long poem in blank verse (unrhymed verse) published in 1856.

Social Justice

The major interest of Browning’s later years was the Italian struggle for unity and independence. (Until 1859 Italy was a part of Austria). Her keen commitment to social justice is evident in both *Casa Guidi Windows* (1851) and *Poems before Congress* (1860). In these she attempted to win sympathy for the Italian cause.

This emphasis on social justice led to her poem, *A Curse For A Nation*, to be published in a Bostonian abolitionist (antislavery) journal. Elizabeth’s 1857 publication of *Aurora Leigh* featured an artist heroine committed to social reform but thwarted by the male domination of the age. Some call it autobiographical. Years later Virginia Woolf (1882–1941) called this heroine, “the true daughter of her age.” Woolf’s praise attracted many modern readers to Elizabeth Barrett Browning’s work. Elizabeth was a primary inspiration for Emily

Dickinson (1830–1886) as well. No nineteenth century female poet was more esteemed than Elizabeth Barrett Browning.

On June 29, 1861, she died quietly in her husband's arms with a "smile on her face."

For More Information

Forster, Margaret. *Elizabeth Barrett Browning: A Biography*. New York: Doubleday, 1989.

Markus, Julia. *Dared and Done: The Marriage of Elizabeth Barrett and Robert Browning*. New York: Knopf, 1995.

Taplin, Gardner B. *The Life of Elizabeth Barrett Browning*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1957.

ROBERT BROWNING

Born: May 7, 1812

London, England

Died: December 12, 1889

Venice, Italy

English poet

The English poet Robert Browning is best known for his dramatic monologues (dramatic readings done by only one character). By vividly portraying a central character against a social background, these poems explore complex human motives in a variety of historical periods.

Youth

Robert Browning was born on May 7, 1812, in Camberwell, London, England. His father, a senior clerk with the Bank of England, provided a comfortable living for his family and passed on a love of art and literature to Robert. His mother, an excellent amateur pianist, gave him a love of music, while her strong and simple religious faith provided him with a lifelong belief in the existence of God. Robert was a bright child creating "masterpieces" of jam and pencil at the age of two and attending day school as "an infant."

Browning went to primary school until he was fourteen, when his parents decided that he should be sent neither to a public nor a private school, but should instead be taught at home by a tutor. His training included riding, fencing, boxing, singing, and dancing along with the basics. The Brownings were a small, close-knit family, and Robert spent much time reading in his father's library of over seven thousand volumes. His father's love of the Greek tragedies prompted drawing room romps with the chairs as cities of Troy. Robert was very attached to all species of animals, hosting a wide variety of pets in his childhood. In 1828 Browning entered the University of London, but he dropped out after just half a year.

Early poems and plays

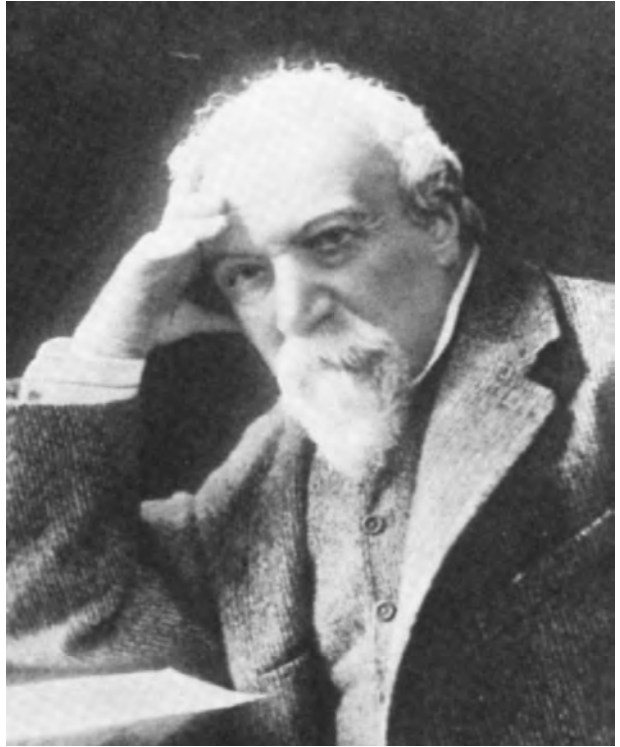
Browning began to write verses at the age of six. His first published work was *Pauline: A Fragment of a Confession*, issued anonymously (without his name) in 1833. The hero of the poem is a young poet, obviously Browning himself, who bares his soul to a patient heroine. When a critic commented that the anonymous author seemed "pos-

sessed with a more intense and morbid [involving thoughts of death] self-consciousness than I ever knew in any sane human being," Browning promised himself to never again reveal his thoughts directly to his readers. Henceforth, he would "only make men and women speak."

This major step in Browning's poetic development was evident in his next long poem, *Paracelsus* (1835), whose hero was a Renaissance (a revival in art and knowledge during the thirteenth to fifteenth centuries that started in Italy and moved to the rest of Europe) alchemist (early chemist). Though Browning later called the poem "a failure," it received favorable reviews and brought about important friendships with the authors William Wordsworth (1770–1850) and Thomas Carlyle (1795–1881) and with the actor William C. Macready (1793–1873). Encouraged by these friendships, Browning began to emerge in the London social scene.

Encouraged by Macready, Browning turned to writing drama. But his first play, *Strafford* (1837), closed after only five performances. During the next ten years he wrote six other plays, none of which were successfully produced. All of Browning's plays are marred by abundant character analysis and meager dramatic action.

In 1838 Browning traveled to northern Italy to acquire firsthand knowledge of its setting and atmosphere for his next long poem. But the publication of *Sordello* in 1840 was a disaster that dealt Browning's growing reputation a severe blow. Critics unanimously declared the poem totally unclear and unreadable, and modern readers still find it difficult.



Robert Browning.

Development of the dramatic monologue

After the disappointing reception of both *Strafford* and *Sordello*, Browning turned to the dramatic monologue. He experimented with and perfected this form in the long poem *Pippa Passes* (1841) and two collections of shorter poems, *Dramatic Lyrics* (1842) and *Dramatic Romances and Lyrics* (1845).

Usually written in blank verse (unrhymed verse), the dramatic monologue is the speech of a single character in a moment of some dramatic significance. In the course of his monologue, the speaker reveals what this situation is, as well as the setting of the situation and to whom he is speaking. Of greatest interest, however, is

what he reveals about his own motives and personality. Often the speaker, while trying to justify himself to his listeners, actually reveals the faults of his character to the reader. Such works as “My Last Duchess,” “Soliloquy of the Spanish Cloister,” and “The Bishop Orders His Tomb” are poems in which the reader is given the pleasure of discovering more about the speaker than he understands about himself.

Marriage to Elizabeth Barrett

After reading Elizabeth Barrett’s flattering reference to him in her *Poems*, Browning wrote to her in January 1845. At that time, Barrett was an invalid confined to her room by a nervous disorder. The two became frequent correspondents nonetheless, and on May 20, 1845, Browning made his first personal visit. With his constant urging, she gained steadily in strength, hope, and will until she agreed to a secret marriage on September 12, 1846. Such secrecy was necessary because Barrett’s father had forbidden all of his children to marry.

Shortly after their marriage, the Brownings left London for Italy, and they made Casa Guidi in Florence their home from 1847 until 1861. It was there that their son, Robert Wiedeman Barrett Browning, was born on March 9, 1849.

Mature poetry

In 1855 Browning published *Men and Women*, a collection of fifty-one poems. Though the volume contained many of the dramatic monologues that are best known and loved by modern readers, it was not popular with Browning’s peers. But it did receive several favorable critical reviews.

After gradually declining in health for several years, Elizabeth Browning died on June 29, 1861. Browning found that he could no longer remain in Florence because of the memories it brought forth. He resolved to “go to England, and live and work and write.” In 1864 he published *Dramatis Personae*. Though some of the dramatic monologues in the collection are complex and difficult or overlong, this was the first of Browning’s works to become popular with the general reading public. His popularity increased with the publication of *The Ring and the Book* in 1868–69. This long poem is based on a murder and subsequent trial in Rome, Italy, in 1698. In a Florentine bookstall Browning had found an “old Yellow Book” that contained records of these events. The poem is composed of twelve dramatic monologues, in which the major characters give their interpretations of the crime. The accounts contradict each other, but eventually the truth emerges from behind the tangled web of lies and excuses.

The Ring and the Book was enthusiastically received by the public, and Browning became an important figure in London society. He was a frequent guest at dinners, concerts, and receptions. In the next ten years Browning wrote with great energy, publishing a volume almost every year. But none of these works match the quality of *Men and Women*, and they are little read today.

Extended influence

Though in the early stages of his career Browning’s poetic reputation was far less than that of his wife, by 1870 he had achieved equal status with the famous poet Alfred, Lord Tennyson (1809–1892). The

energy and roughness of Browning's poetry, however, contrasts sharply with the melancholy and polish of Tennyson's. Today, through his influence on Ezra Pound (1885–1972) and T. S. Eliot (1885–1965), Browning seems the most modern and enduring of all the mid-Victorian poets.

Browning died at his son's home in Venice, Italy, on December 12, 1889. In the "Epilogue" to his last collection of lyrics, Browning described himself as "One who never turned his back but marched breast forward,/ Never doubted clouds would break." He was buried in Westminster Abbey.

For More Information

Halliday, F. E. *Robert Browning: His Life and Work*. London: Jupiter, 1975.

Markus, Julia. *Dared and Done: The Marriage of Elizabeth Barrett and Robert Browning*. New York: Knopf, 1995.

Ryals, Clyde de L. *The Life of Robert Browning: A Critical Biography*. Cambridge, MA: Blackwell, 1993.

PAT BUCHANAN

Born: November 2, 1938

Washington, D.C.

American politician, writer, and broadcaster

Pat Buchanan is one of the country's most famous conservatives. Buchanan writes books and articles and appears on television to express his extreme conser-

vative views on the issues that he believes are important to the future of the United States. He has also campaigned unsuccessfully for the presidency several times.

Early life

Patrick Buchanan was born in Washington, D.C., on November 2, 1938. His father, William Baldwin Buchanan, was a partner in a Washington, D.C., accounting firm. His mother, Catherine Elizabeth (Crum) Buchanan, was a nurse and a homemaker. Buchanan had six brothers and two sisters. His father taught the children good manners but also encouraged debates and fights. Buchanan would later say that his conservative views and beliefs were shaped by growing up in this large Irish-Catholic family.

Buchanan attended a Catholic elementary and high school, following in the steps of his father and brothers. Deciding to stay in Washington and to continue at a Catholic school, he enrolled in Georgetown University in 1956, studying for a degree in English. In his senior year he received a traffic ticket. Believing that his ticket was wrongfully given, he verbally and physically assaulted the police. He was then arrested and fined, and the incident left him with a minor police record. The university also suspended him for a year.

A career in the media

While suspended from Georgetown, Buchanan learned accounting and took a serious look at his future. He decided to pursue a career in journalism and returned to complete his college education with a more mature attitude. After he graduated with honors from Georgetown in 1961, he entered the journalism school at Columbia Universi-



Pat Buchanan.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

ty. While he disliked studying the technical side of newspaper publishing, he found that he enjoyed writing. He went on to earn his master's degree in 1962.

Buchanan began his career as a reporter with the *St. Louis Globe-Democrat*. He quickly became an editorial writer for this conservative midwestern newspaper. He was appointed the paper's assistant editorial page editor in 1964. Thinking it would be many years before he could become an editor, and wanting some challenges in his life, he thought about a new career direction. He was eager to become more directly involved with politics.

Working for the president

In 1966 he arranged a meeting with Richard Nixon (1913–1994), whom he impressed with his conservative outlook and tough political style. Nixon hired him as an assistant. At that time Nixon, who had served two terms as vice president, was a partner in a New York City law firm. Nixon was involved in Republican Party activities and was preparing to run in the 1968 presidential election. Buchanan assisted Nixon with his speeches, newspaper articles, study tours, and other campaign activities.

Following Nixon's 1968 election, Buchanan joined the new presidential administration as a special assistant. He wrote speeches for Nixon and for Vice President Spiro Agnew (1918–1996). He helped make plans for the 1972 reelection campaign. During this time he met Shelly Ann Scarney, who was a receptionist at the White House. They married in 1971. In 1973 Buchanan devoted his attention to the Watergate crisis, which involved criminal activity in the 1972 Nixon campaign. He testified before the Senate Watergate Committee later that year and denied having suggested or used any illegal tactics.

After Nixon's resignation from office in August 1974, Buchanan stayed on for several months as an adviser to President Gerald Ford (1913–). Buchanan then left the White House and became a newspaper writer and public speaker. He later worked in radio and television, broadcasting his conservative views on political and social issues. With his style and viewpoints, he became known across the country as a spokesman for conservatives, who support traditional values and tend politically to resist change.

Buchanan returned to the White House in 1985 as director of communications at the start of President Ronald Reagan's (1911–) second term. He stayed only two years and then went back to broadcasting, writing, and giving lectures, where he made more money.

Buchanan runs for office

In 1992 Buchanan announced he was running in the Republican Party presidential primary. His campaign against President George Bush (1924–), who was seeking reelection, was designed to position himself as an “outsider” and to promote a strong conservative program. He ran with an “American First” theme, arguing that the country should limit its obligations in other countries and take care of business at home. Buchanan attracted attention from a public facing layoffs of workers, falling real estate values, increased taxes, and general unhappiness with government. He spoke for aid to religious schools, prayer in public schools, and limits on illegal immigrants. Buchanan called himself a “street corner” conservative, saying that he learned his beliefs at the dinner table, in schools, and on the street corners of his youth.

In the early 1992 New Hampshire primary Buchanan won 37 percent of the votes. However, in each succeeding primary he received fewer and fewer votes. He found it difficult to maintain a campaign organization and to raise funds, but he ran for the White House a second time in 1995, again basing his campaign on conservatism. His campaign slogan was “Reclaiming the American Dream.” However, he lost once again. Buchanan also founded and directed The American Cause, an educational foundation that emphasizes his political beliefs.

One last try

On March 2, 1999, Buchanan announced his bid to become the Republican candidate for president in the 2000 election. Buchanan took a disappointing fifth place finish at the Iowa primary in August 1999. On October 25, 1999, Buchanan announced his departure from the Republican Party to join the Reform Party. He declared his intention to become the Reform Party's candidate for the presidency. Some Republicans expressed relief over Buchanan's party switch following the release of his book *A Republic, Not an Empire*, which was published in September 1999. In this book he expressed opinions that many disagreed with regarding America's involvement in issues outside the United States.

Buchanan's run for president in the 2000 election caused a split in the Reform Party. Those opposed to Buchanan tried to prevent his name from being listed on the ballot. This, in addition to health problems and declining interest in the issues he wanted to discuss, led him to finish fourth in the election. He received less than 1 percent of all the votes cast.

Buchanan continues to remain in the public eye by writing books and newspaper articles, and giving lectures on conservative topics. In 2002 he published *The Death of the West: How Dying Populations and Immigrant Invasions Imperil Our Country and Civilization*. In this book Buchanan discusses his strong stand against immigration and his belief that immigrants are a threat to the American way of life.

For More Information

Buchanan, Patrick. *Conservative Votes, Liberal Victories: Why the Right Has Failed*. New

York: Quadrangle/New York Times Book Co., 1975.

Buchanan, Patrick. *Right from the Beginning*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1988.

Grant, George. *Buchanan: Caught in the Crossfire*. Nashville, TN: Thomas Nelson, 1996.

PEARL S. BUCK

Born: June 26, 1892

Hillsboro, West Virginia

Died: March 6, 1973

Danby, Vermont

American novelist and writer

Pearl S. Buck was the first woman to win a Nobel Prize in Literature. Buck's life in China as an American citizen fueled her literary and personal commitment to improve relations between Americans and Asians.

Early years

Pearl Sydenstricker was born in Hillsboro, West Virginia, on June 26, 1892. Her parents, Absalom and Caroline Sydenstricker, were Presbyterian missionaries, who were on a twelve-year leave from duty from their activities in Chinkiang, China at the time of her birth. The Sydenstrickers had returned to Hillsboro after losing all but two of their children to tropical disease. Despite their experience they returned to China when Pearl was just five months old. Unlike other foreign

families, the Sydenstrickers lived in the Chinese village. Pearl spoke Chinese before learning English. Her daily lessons included morning lessons from her mother and afternoon lessons from her Chinese tutor. Pearl recalled never feeling different from the Chinese children. But at age nine the family was forced to flee to Shanghai during the antiferocious Boxer Rebellion of 1900. They returned to China at the end of the rebellion, but Pearl attended boarding school in Shanghai at age fifteen. She moved to the United States two years later and started at the Randolph-Macon Woman's College in Virginia. After receiving a bachelor's degree in 1914, she took a teaching assistantship at the college but almost immediately returned to China to care for her ailing mother.

In 1917 she married John Lossing Buck, an American agricultural specialist, with whom she settled in northern China. From 1921 until 1934 they lived chiefly in Nanking, where her husband taught agricultural theory. Buck occasionally taught English literature at several universities in the city, although most of her time was spent caring for her mentally disabled daughter and her infirm parents. In 1925 Buck returned to the United States to pursue graduate studies at Cornell University, where she received a master's degree in English in 1926. Back in Nanking the following year, she barely escaped a revolutionary army attack on the city. Meanwhile, because of her family's financial difficulties, she resolved to begin writing.

Novels reflect love of China

Buck's first novel, *East Wind: West Wind* (1930) was a study of the conflict between the old China and the new. This was followed

by *The Good Earth* (1931), an intense novel of Chinese peasant life, which won her a Pulitzer Prize. In 1933 Buck received a second master's degree, this time from Yale University, and in 1934 she took up permanent residence in the United States. In 1935 she divorced John Buck and married Richard J. Walsh, her publisher. Her extensive literary output resulted in a 1938 Nobel Prize in Literature, the first ever awarded to a woman.

Humanitarian efforts occupy later life

In the next three decades, while continuing to write many volumes, Buck worked to promote racial tolerance and ease the struggles of disadvantaged Asians, particularly children. In 1941 she founded the East and West Association to promote greater understanding among the world's peoples. In 1949 she established Welcome House, an adoption agency for Asian American children. Her special interest in children resulted in many books for them. A steadfast supporter of multiracial families, in 1964 she organized the Pearl S. Buck Foundation, which supports Asian American children and their mothers living abroad.

Although Buck's literary career embraced a variety of types, almost all of her stories are set in China: the extremely popular novel *Dragon Seed*, its less popular sequel *The Promise* (1943), and many later novels, including *Peony* (1948), *Letter from Peking* (1957), and *The New Year* (1968). Among her other works are the highly successful *The Living Reed* (1963), which details the history of a Korean family during the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. In the late 1940s Buck also wrote a trilogy under the pen name John Sedges.



Pearl S. Buck.

Honored for generous spirit

Buck's play *A Desert Incident* was produced in New York City in 1959. Her ability as an essayist is represented by *American Argument* (written with Eslanda Goode Robeson, 1949). *Friend to Friend* (1958) was an open, honest conversation with Philippine president Carlos P. Rómulo (1899–1985).

Buck died of lung cancer in 1973, with more than one hundred written works to her credit. But even more significant, perhaps, were the over three hundred awards she received for her humanitarian efforts on behalf of improved race relations worldwide.

For More Information

Conn, Peter J. *Pearl S. Buck: A Cultural Biography*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1996.

La Farge, Ann. *Pearl Buck*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1988.

Sherk, Warren. *Pearl S. Buck: Good Earth Mother*. Philomath, OR: Drift Creek Press, 1992.

BUDDHA

Born: c. 563 B.C.E.

Kapilavastu, India

Died: c. 483 B.C.E.

Kusinagara, India

Indian religious teacher and philosopher

The Buddha was an Indian philosopher (seeker of wisdom), religious teacher, and the historical founder of Buddhism. He is regarded by some as a human spiritual teacher (concerned with religious values) and by others as an all-knowing supreme being.

Early years

The Buddha, or “enlightened one” (free from ignorance and misunderstanding), was born Siddhartha Gautama in northern India near the town of Kapilavastu. His father was ruler of a poor Indian tribe, the Shakyas. His mother died seven days after giving birth to him. Some legends say that he was able to walk and talk at birth. It is also written that he first fell into a state of meditation (focus-

ing all of one’s thoughts on something) as a boy while sitting under a tree watching his father plow a field. Meditation was to become an important part of his life.

It is said that Gautama’s father, in order to prevent him from worrying about the problems of suffering, death, and injustice, built a special palace for him surrounded with distracting luxuries. Gautama eventually married and had a son. But he continued to dwell on the great religious questions, and at the age of twenty-nine he made a bold move. He officially gave up his worldly commitments, left his family, and began a search for the answers to the questions that bothered him.

Gautama is said to have experimented with many different teachings for seven years but found none of them acceptable. He set them all aside, and at last, in a single night of deep meditation, he achieved a major breakthrough, an absolutely clear awareness of the real questions of life and the unique religious means for dealing with them. This enlightenment confirmed the truth of his insight, and at this point he became the Buddha.

The Buddha’s teaching

It is told that at the moment of the Buddha’s enlightenment he was entitled to its immediate rewards—complete salvation (freedom from sin) and spiritual release from the bonds of existence. This would have meant that his doctrine (teachings) would never have been made known to other men. Another problem was how to communicate the teachings properly. After debating these issues, the Buddha decided to bring the message to others out of his love and concern for all men. This legend shows that the formal teaching is just the beginning. Understand-

ing the teaching and putting it into practice varies greatly, depending on the ability of those who hear it, their needs, and their historical and cultural situation. In a sense, the history of Buddhism, in all its different forms, is proof of this fact.

The teaching is basically optimistic (hopeful about the future). It holds that every human being—regardless of his social position or past life—can through his own efforts obtain control of himself, of his ideas and passions, and of his destiny. Its main principles are caring for others, love, and noninjury to living creatures, and they place great importance on the obligation of all people to promote friendship and peace. The teachings are universal standards of behavior that have obvious benefits in terms of improving interpersonal relationships and social order. Buddha's political teachings were drawn from those of his own clan. The king had the obligation to care for his people and, especially, to set high moral standards. A man who cannot do this is not worthy to rule. (In the traditions the Buddha is represented as consulting frequently with the leaders of the great states and petty kingdoms, teaching his beliefs and seeking to end all warfare.)

Teaching attracts followers

The traditions relate that the Buddha first preached his doctrine (Dharma) in Benares, India's great holy city. He began his missionary work soon after with a handful of followers, offering the teaching to all who would hear and understand. The lives and practices of this little band were at first centered on the spiritual authority of the Buddha himself. As the number of followers grew, the loosely structured community (Sangha)



Buddha.

became more organized. It seems probable that by the time of the Buddha's death, at the age of eighty, a number of basic institutional patterns had been set. These included a code of rules to keep order and a collection of the Buddha's sayings. The major ceremonies included the twice-monthly uposatha, a gathering of the monks to recite the rules. Women were admitted to the order. Within the community all barriers of class, race, sex, and previous background were ignored under the impact of the universal message of the teaching.

Despite this appearance of routine organization, the Buddha in one of his last

sermons is shown as rejecting all forms of religious authority: "Be lamps unto yourselves, O monks." The main purpose of the rules was to guard the independence of each monk in his own spiritual quest. All those who had become official monks had an equal vote on matters affecting the welfare of the community. When disagreements within the group could not be resolved, those who disagreed simply left and formed a new community. Monks guilty of breaking the code of rules were expected to confess and to punish themselves. The Buddha is occasionally represented as being confused and disgusted by the often selfish behavior of the monks. On at least one occasion he took time to wash and care for a sick monk who had been neglected by the others. His own cousin, Devadatta, is believed to have started a movement to replace the Buddha as head of the order.

Although most of the Buddha's followers devoted their entire lives to the teachings, the power of the Buddha's personality also attracted many lay (nonreligious) followers, known as the "householders." The tradition relates that the Buddha said only that it was harder for the lay followers to attain final salvation, or nirvana, but this did not stop its members from trying. Lay devotees promised to follow the five rules (no killing, stealing, lying, having sex outside of marriage, or consumption of alcoholic beverages) for the sake of "well-being in this world and the next."

Buddha's influence today

The most striking feature of Buddhism is the wide variety of faiths and practices its teachings have inspired. In Tibet the political system was ruled until recently by spiritual

leaders, the Dalai and Panchen Lamas, who were regarded as supreme versions of the Buddha. Tibetan Tantrism is a combination of Buddhist and primitive teachings. In China and Japan, Zen Buddhism represents a special meditation-based adaptation that has been strongly influenced by Chinese values. In Sri Lanka Theravada Buddhism has served as an effective state religion, and is often combined with primitive animism (belief in spirits) and magic.

In looking for a single point of unity in all of these different forms of Buddhism, it is to be found only in the Buddha himself, who persists in all the traditions as a model of spiritual perfection and saving power.

For More Information

- Armstrong, Karen. *Buddha*. New York: Viking, 2001.
- Carrithers, Michael. *The Buddha: A Very Short Introduction*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2001.
- Roth, Susan L. *Buddha*. New York: Delacorte Press, 1994.

**RALPH
BUNCHE**

Born: August 7, 1904

Detroit, Michigan

Died: December 9, 1971

New York, New York

African American diplomat and professor

Ralph Bunche was the highest American official in the United Nations. In 1950 he became the first African American to win the Nobel Peace Prize for his work on the negotiations that led to a truce in the First Arab-Israeli War (1948–49).

Childhood and early career

Ralph Johnson Bunche was born in Detroit, Michigan, on August 7, 1904. (His given last name was Bunch, but as a teenager he added the “e” because he thought it looked better.) Bunche’s father was a barber, and his parents were very poor. In time they also became very ill and both died when he was thirteen years old. After his parents’ deaths Bunche and his young sister went to live with his maternal grandmother in Los Angeles. While going to school he helped support the family by working as a janitor, a carpet-layer, and a seaman. His grandmother’s strong will and her wisdom had a lasting influence on him.

Bunche attended the University of California at Los Angeles on scholarships and graduated in 1927. He earned a master’s degree at Harvard University in 1928 and a doctor of philosophy (Ph.D.) degree in government and international relations at Harvard in 1934.

In 1928 Bunche began teaching in the Department of Political Science at Howard University. He was department chairman from 1937 to 1942. In 1930 he married Ruth Harris, one of his students. The couple had three children. In 1950 he was appointed to the faculty of Harvard University, but after two leaves of absence he resigned in 1952, without having taught there.



Ralph Bunche.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

United Nations

Bunche was an expert on colonialism. The term colonialism refers to a nation’s possession or control over a colony. (For example, both the United States and Nigeria were once colonies ruled by Great Britain.) During World War II (1939–45), Bunche worked in the U.S. Office of Strategic Services as an expert on African and Far Eastern affairs. In 1944 he moved to the U.S. State Department. From 1944 to 1946 Bunche was active as an expert on trusteeship in the planning and establishment of the United Nations (UN). (Trusteeship is the overseeing of a colony or territory by a country or countries given the

authority to do so by the UN.) In 1947 Bunche was asked to join the UN Secretariat by the UN's Secretary General, Trygve Lie (1896–1968). Bunche served as director of the Trusteeship Division.

At the UN Bunche was given some difficult assignments. In 1947 he was a member of the UN Special Committee on Palestine that recommended Palestine's division into Jewish and Arab states. The Arabs refused to accept the UN plan. This led to the first Arab-Israeli War. When the UN's chief negotiator in that conflict was assassinated in 1948, Bunche took his place. From January to June 1949 he led the difficult negotiations between Arab and Israeli groups on the Greek island of Rhodes. The negotiations eventually led to an agreement to end the fighting. Both sides praised his achievement, and in 1950 he was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize for his work.

From 1955 to 1971 Bunche held important positions at the UN. He directed UN peacekeeping operations in the Suez area of the Middle East (1956), in the Congo (1960), and on the island of Cyprus (1964). He was also responsible for the UN's program involving the peaceful uses of atomic energy. In June 1971 he retired while suffering from a fatal illness.

Concern with race relations

Bunche was the grandson of a slave. His personal experience of prejudice (making judgments about a person solely based on his or her race) and his concern about race relations led him to become a teacher and an expert in the problems of colonialism. In 1936 he was codirector of the Institute of Race Relations at Swarthmore College. From 1938 to 1940 he assisted the Swedish sociol-

ogist Gunnar Myrdal (1898–1987) in his investigation of racial problems in the United States. Their research led to Myrdal's book *An American Dilemma*.

For twenty-two years Bunche was a member of the board of directors of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP). In 1965 he participated in marches in Selma and Montgomery, Alabama. Led by Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968), the marches protested racial discrimination.

Bunche received many honorary degrees and awards. President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963) presented him with the Medal of Freedom in 1963. Bunche died in New York City on December 9, 1971.

For More Information

Henry, Charles P. *Ralph Bunche: Model Negro or American Other?* New York: New York University Press, 1999.

Schraff, Anne E. *Ralph Bunche: Winner of the Nobel Peace Prize*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1999.

Urquhart, Brian. *Ralph Bunche: An American Life*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1993.

**WARREN
BURGER**

Born: September 17, 1907

St. Paul, Minnesota

Died: June 25, 1995

Washington, D.C.

American Supreme Court justice

Warren Burger worked his way through law school. Through hard work, political connections, and a firm belief in law and order, he became chief justice of the U.S. Supreme Court from 1969 to 1986. In addition to leading the court in a series of famous decisions, he called for changes to improve the court system, including better training and education for lawyers and judges.

An early interest in law

Warren E. Burger was born on September 17, 1907, in St. Paul, Minnesota. He was the fourth of seven children born to Charles Joseph Burger, a railroad cargo inspector and traveling salesman, and Katherine (Schnittger) Burger, a homemaker. The family struggled to make ends meet, and by age nine Burger was delivering newspapers to help out. As a fourth-grader, he became ill and missed a year of school. During this time, he began reading law books and biographies of American historical figures.

Unable to attend Princeton because of his family's limited resources, Burger took courses at the University of Minnesota for two years and then enrolled in a night law school. Combining study with work as a life insurance salesman, he earned his law degree from St. Paul College of Law in 1931. He then joined a law firm in St. Paul. In addition to handling a variety of civil and criminal cases, he taught contract law at St. Paul College of Law for a dozen years. On November 8, 1933, he married Elvera Stromberg, a fellow student from the University of Minnesota.

Political career

Burger became active in Republican politics and helped organize the Minnesota



Warren Burger.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Young Republicans in 1934. He played an important role in the successful 1938 campaign for governor of Harold Stassen (1907–2001). At both the 1948 and 1952 Republican National Conventions, Burger acted as a manager for Stassen's unsuccessful presidential campaign. During the 1952 gathering Burger supported Dwight D. Eisenhower (1890–1969), helping him win the presidential election.

After the election President Eisenhower made Burger head of the Justice Department's Civil Division. Burger supervised a staff of approximately 180 lawyers. Although he had almost no experience in maritime law (law

involving goods that are transported on the seas), Burger successfully handled several cases involving shipping for the government and even helped end a dockworker's strike on the East Coast in 1953.

Law and order judge

In 1955 Eisenhower named Burger to the U.S. Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia. While on that bench, Burger wrote several articles and gave lectures on a variety of topics. His opinions on criminal cases attracted attention. He said that confessions should be admitted into evidence even when the police have broken legal rules in obtaining them. He also argued that physical evidence should be allowed even if it has been obtained through forcible entry (forced entry without legal permission).

During the 1968 presidential campaign, Richard Nixon (1913–1994) told a public worried about the rising crime rate that the Supreme Court was “seriously hamstringing the peace forces in our society and strengthening the criminal forces.” In other words, the court was making decisions that made it difficult to enforce laws and was thus helping criminals. He promised, if elected, to ensure that the court would no longer stand in the way of law enforcement (the people and government agencies that work to catch and punish criminals). The victorious Nixon's first step toward that goal was appointing Burger to succeed Earl Warren (1891–1974) as chief justice. In Burger's most famous criminal case, the loser was the president. In 1974 Burger ordered Nixon to turn over tape recordings to Watergate special prosecutor Leon Jaworski (1905–1982). These tapes contained evidence that Nixon had commit-

ted a crime. This ruling led directly to the president's decision to leave office before the end of his term.

In more routine criminal cases, Burger as chief justice was everything Nixon had hoped for. Burger led the court in a series of decisions that went against Warren court rulings. In *Harris v. New York* (1971), he announced that a statement obtained without reading a suspect his or her rights as required by *Miranda v. Arizona* (1966) could be used in court cases. Burger also helped give new life to the death penalty, which had been legalized again by the court in 1976 but was rarely carried out. With the chief justice lashing out at lawyers who used whatever methods they could to keep their clients alive, the Supreme Court rejected almost all appeals in such cases. (In an appeal, a case or a decision in a case is reviewed by a higher court.) Executions began to occur with greater frequency.

Civil rights and liberties

Burger was less sympathetic toward civil liberties claims than Earl Warren had been. Despite having worked in Minnesota with groups seeking to improve race relations, his rulings on civil rights were inconsistent—some for, some against. Burger's decisions on matters involving the First Amendment's establishment of religion clause were also inconsistent. He urged strict separation between church and state in one case involving state funding to assist religious schools, but in two other cases he supported the presence of religion in state functions: He upheld Nebraska's practice of opening legislative sessions with a prayer delivered by a state-paid Protestant chaplain, as well as the right of the

town of Pawtucket, Rhode Island, to display a nativity scene in front of its city hall.

Burger also made it more difficult for civil rights and civil liberties claims to be decided on in federal court. The Burger court increased the number of officials who could not be sued (have a law suit brought against them) for damages (payment to a person or people who suffered a loss or an injury) for violating citizens' constitutional rights. The court also made it more difficult for citizens to file class-action suits, lawsuits in which one or more persons sue on behalf of a large group whose members have suffered an injustice or inequality.

Legacy of reform

Despite being less receptive to civil rights and civil liberties claims, the Burger court was not as different from the Warren court as some people expected it to be. Although often critical of the work of the Warren court, the Burger court did not undo it. None of the Warren court's major decisions was reversed. Even in the area of criminal law, the Burger court limited the effect of, rather than overturned, Warren court rulings.

After seventeen years on the court Burger had been responsible for many reforms and improvements in the justice process. At his suggestion many courts began to employ professional administrators (people who supervise the way a court runs), and an institute was set up to train them. Burger was in favor of continuing education for judges. His attacks on the abilities of trial lawyers inspired improvements in their training. He also improved the working relationship between federal courts and state courts that served the same geographic

areas. In 1986 Burger resigned as chief justice to work full time as head of the U.S. Constitution Bicentennial Commission. He was also chancellor, or chief officer, of the College of William and Mary, from 1986 to 1993. Warren Burger died in Washington, D.C., on June 25, 1995.

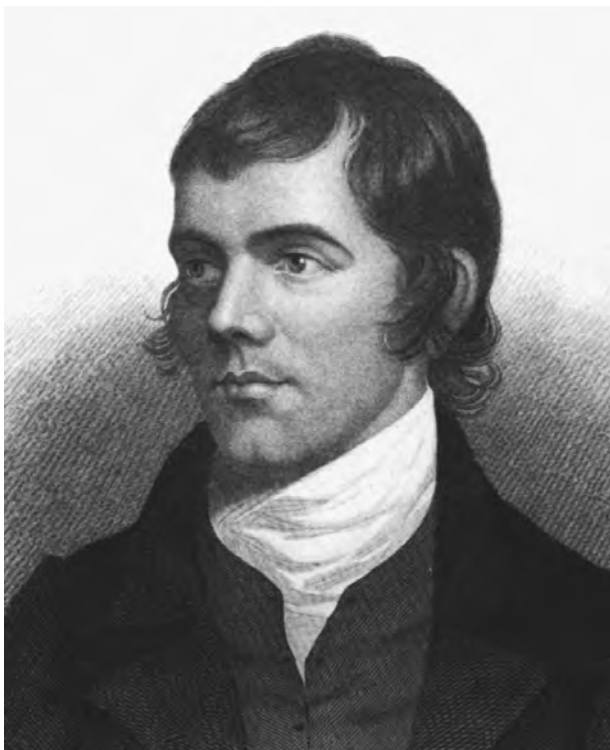
For More Information

- Blasi, Vincent. *The Burger Court: The Counter-Revolution That Wasn't*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1983.
- Funston, Richard Y. *Constitutional Counter-revolution? The Warren Court and the Burger Court: Judicial Policy Making in Modern America*. Cambridge, Mass.: Schenkman Pub. Co., 1977.
- Woodward, Bob and Scott Armstrong. *The Brethren*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1979.

ROBERT BURNS

Born: January 25, 1759
Alloway, Ayrshire, Scotland
Died: July 21, 1796
Dumfries, Scotland
Scottish poet

Intense feeling and technical skill characterizes the work of the Scottish poet Robert Burns. His best work is in Scots, the language of southern Scotland. He is one of the greatest authors of that language in the last four centuries.



Robert Burns.

Early life and education

Robert Burns was born in Alloway, Ayrshire, Scotland, on January 25, 1759, to hard-working farmer parents. He began helping his father with farm work at the age of twelve. The difficulty of the labor later had a crippling effect on his health. Although Burns's formal schooling was limited, he loved to read and for a time he was tutored by John Murdoch, who thoroughly educated him in eighteenth-century English literature.

The family worked hard on the Ayrshire farm and at several others, but their lives were never made easier. Ongoing troubles with landlords and their agents fueled the rebellion that Burns felt against authority,

which later became a major theme in his poetry. In 1784 his father died, and the family moved a few miles away to Mossgiel, Scotland. Here and in the nearby town of Mauchline, Scotland, the charming and attractive Burns began numerous love affairs, some of which extended to about 1790. (By the end of his short life he was to have fathered fourteen children by six different mothers.)

Achievement and sudden fame

While continuing to do farm work in Mossgiel, Burns began writing poetry, and his talents developed in a spectacular way. Many of his poems expressed his love of the country and its people and poked fun at his favorite target, followers of Calvinism (a religion that features a strict belief in God's absolute will over the affairs of humans). In 1786 he published *Poems, Chiefly in the Scottish Dialect* at nearby Kilmarnock, Scotland, and the book was a success. At this time Burns was twenty-seven, and he had written some of the most effective and biting pieces of satire (ridicule or scorn) in the language. Among them were "Holy Willie's Prayer" (a dramatic speech that mocked a believer in Calvinism) and "The Holy Fair" (a humorous description of a Scottish religious camp meeting).

Other important poems that appeared in his first volume were "Address to the Unco Guid" (an appeal to the religious not to look down on sinners); "The Jolly Beggars" (a dramatic poem celebrating poor people); the masterful "Address to the Deil" (that is, to the Devil); "The Cotter's Saturday Night" (in praise of the Scottish countryside); and the moving "Auld Farmer's Salutation to His

Mare” and “To a Mouse” (the latter a poem written to a field mouse who has been killed by a farmer while plowing). These and other poems by Burns are almost unequaled in their combination of accurate local language and depth of feeling. Not for centuries had such fine poetry been written in the Scots tongue.

But 1786 was also a year of great distress for Burns. His affair with Jean Armour had resulted in the birth of twins, and her parents refused to allow the couple to marry because of Burns’s reputation as a critic of religion. In addition, Burns was in love with Mary Campbell, for whom he wrote the song “Highland Mary,” but she died in 1786 as a result of giving birth to his child. Burns considered leaving the country for Jamaica, but he abandoned the plan and spent the winter in Edinburgh, Scotland, where he was praised and honored for the success of his book. Early in 1787 a new edition of his poems was published that made him famous not only throughout Scotland but also in England and internationally. After a summer and fall spent touring Scotland (the only real traveling he ever did) and restarting his affair with Jean, Burns spent a second winter in Edinburgh. In March 1788 Burns returned to Mauchline and finally married Jean, who had given birth to a second set of his twins.

Later years and his songs

After his wedding Burns turned his efforts to supporting his family. In 1788 he leased a farm at Ellisland, Scotland, forty-five miles from Mauchline. After annoying delays in the building of his house and several rough years trying to make an income from his farmland, he moved with Jean and the children to Dumfries, Scotland. In 1789 he

had begun working as a tax inspector, a profession in which he continued until his death. At Ellisland Burns had little free time, but it was there that he wrote his masterpiece of comic humor “Tam o’Shanter,” his one outstanding piece of narrative verse.

Burns also wrote numerous songs (some of them original lyrics for old tunes, some reworkings of old lyrics) for *The Scots Musical Museum*, a collection of Scottish songs with which he had been associated since 1787. From 1792 until his death he also contributed to a similar work, *A Select Collection of Original Scottish Airs*. Most of Burns’s poetic efforts in the Ellisland and Dumfries periods was in this area of song writing and song editing (he had written songs earlier but had usually not published them), and the results were very popular. Among the lyrics that he composed or reworked were “Mary Morison,” “Highland Mary,” “Duncan Gray,” “Green Grow the Rash-es, O,” “Auld Lang Syne,” “John Anderson, My Jo,” “Scots Wha Hae Wi’ Wallace Bled,” “A Man’s a Man for A’ That,” “A Red, Red Rose,” and “Ye Banks and Braes o’ Bonie Doon.” These are true song lyrics—that is, they are not poems meant to be set to music but rather are poems written to melodies that define the rhythm.

Burns’s years in Dumfries were years of work and hardship, but contrary to reports written after his death, he was not shunned by others and he did not fall into moral decline. His fellow townsmen and his coworkers respected him. His health, which always caused him problems, began to fail, and he died of heart disease on July 21, 1796. His wife gave birth to their last child on the day of his funeral.

For More Information

Lindsay, Maurice. *Robert Burns: The Man, His Work, The Legend*. 2nd ed. London, MacGibbon & Kee, 1968.

McIntyre, Ian. *Dirt & Deity: A Life of Robert Burns*. London: HarperCollins, 1995.

Sprott, Gavin. *Robert Burns: Pride and Passion*. Edinburgh: HMSO, 1996.

AARON BURR

Born: February 6, 1756

Newark, New Jersey

Died: September 14, 1836

Port Richmond, Staten Island, New York

American vice president, lawyer, and politician

American lawyer and politician Aaron Burr (1756–1836) was vice president under Thomas Jefferson (1743–1826). Political conspiracy and his famous duel with Alexander Hamilton (1755–1804) secured Burr an unfavorable place in American history.

Early life, education, and revolution

Aaron Burr was born in Newark, New Jersey, on February 6, 1756, the son of a Presbyterian minister. His father died when Aaron was just nineteen months old, shortly after moving the family to Princeton, New Jersey. Within the year, his mother and grandparents died as well. Orphaned along with his older sister Sarah, Burr was placed

in the care of his twenty-year-old uncle, Timothy Edwards.

Burr graduated from Princeton University at the age of seventeen. He studied religion for a while but eventually decided to study law instead. His studies were halted by the outbreak of the American Revolution (1775–83). Burr joined the Continental Army, fighting for American independence from Great Britain. He fought in the battles of New York, Quebec, and Monmouth. In 1779 Burr's health forced him to resign from the military, and he resumed his law studies in New York City.

In 1782 Burr was admitted to the New York Bar, an association for lawyers. The same year, he married Theodosia Bartow Prevost, a woman ten years older than him and the widow of a British army officer. Aaron and Theodosia had four children together. Tragically, only his daughter Theodosia lived to be an adult.

After establishing a successful law practice in Albany, New York, Burr returned to New York City in 1783, where he quickly gained a reputation as a superior lawyer. During his years as a New York City lawyer, Burr clashed with many other city lawyers, including Alexander Hamilton.

Moving into politics

In the 1790s Burr began a career in politics. A member of the Jeffersonian Party (a political party whose members supported a weak federal government and a strict interpretation of the Constitution), Burr also had close dealings with the opposing Federalist Party (a political party whose members supported a strong federal government and a

loose interpretation of the Constitution). Working well between the era's two dominant political parties was beneficial to Burr, but it also created problems for him. On one hand, Burr worked well as a mediator, or middleman, between the two opposing parties. On the other hand, his failure to make a clear choice between political parties raised suspicion among other politicians.

In 1791 Burr won a seat in the U.S. Senate by defeating Philip Schuyler (1733–1804), Alexander Hamilton's father-in-law. This strengthened Hamilton's feelings of professional and personal hatred toward Burr.

During his term as senator, Burr's political uncertainties became more and more evident and resulted in several professional setbacks. In 1796 he lost his seat in the senate. From 1797 to 1799, Burr served in the New York legislature but was defeated for reelection.

Election and controversy

The presidential election of 1800 gave Burr the opportunity to develop his career in national politics. Running against the popular Thomas Jefferson, Burr convinced his Jeffersonian friends in Congress to support him as well as Jefferson. By doing this, Burr all but shut out the opposing Federalist candidates.

The presidential election ended in a tie, with both Burr and Jefferson winning the same number of votes. Congress, where rumors circulated about Burr's Federalist leanings, was then given the task of breaking the tie and choosing the next president. Meanwhile, Alexander Hamilton argued strongly that Jefferson should be elected the fifth president of the United States. In the



Aaron Burr.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

end, Jefferson won the presidency. At that time, Burr, the runner-up for president, became vice president.

Burr had become vice president, but his political career was near its end. He soon began to lose support among the party loyalists. In 1804 the Jeffersonians did not renominate Burr for vice president.

The Hamilton-Burr duel

Although Burr's political career had ended, his story in American history was far from finished. In July 1804, Burr's legendary duel with Hamilton took place. For years,

the two had built up a dislike for one another. Burr initially tried to avoid the duel, which at the time was legal in parts of the country, but Hamilton demanded it take place. His insistence on the duel brought about his own death, as Burr mortally wounded him with a pistol shot. News of Hamilton's death spread and Burr was forced to flee, fearing for his safety. By the time things calmed down, Burr had lost what remained of his political support in New York and within the Jeffersonian party.

Burr's plot

As if killing a political enemy was not enough, Burr continued his involvement in questionable activities. In 1806 his plot to gain power in western territories was uncovered. About a year before the duel with Hamilton, Burr had begun to plan to create an independent nation. Burr planned to do so either by invading and taking over Spanish territory near the area that would later become Florida or by separating the Mississippi Valley from the rest of America. Burr met with several political and military leaders in order to win support. He even tried to get funding from England, but failed and turned to private sources.

In August 1806 Burr began building support in the Ohio Valley. President Jefferson found out about Burr's activities and sent out a warning to western officials telling them to carefully watch Burr's moves. The president also warned American citizens not to participate in his plan. Meanwhile, Burr and about one hundred followers moved south along the Ohio River. The plot came to an end when Burr was trapped between the Ohio militia and forces in New Orleans. He

fled to Mobile, Alabama, but was arrested a few miles from Spanish Florida.

A patriot on trial

For his plans in the west, Burr was charged with the high misdemeanor, or serious offense, of launching a military expedition against the Spanish Territory. For his attempt to separate parts of the United States, Burr was also charged with treason, the betrayal of one's own country. The high misdemeanor charge was dropped and Burr was found innocent of treason.

Although he was legally a free man and the charges against him had been dropped, Burr's political career was finished. For the next several years he wandered through Europe, where he tried without success to gain support for a revolution in Mexico, to free the Spanish colonies, and to start a war between England and the United States.

After Burr returned to America in 1812, ill and financially ruined, he attempted to reestablish his career in law. For a time he was moderately successful. Then a tragedy in his personal life occurred in December 1812, when his cherished daughter Theodosia died at sea.

The years passed, and by 1830 Burr was heavily dependent on friends for financial support. Over the next several years, a series of strokes left him paralyzed and completely dependent on his cousin's care. Burr died on Staten Island, New York, on Sept. 14, 1836.

For More Information

Kennedy, Roger G. *Burr, Hamilton, and Jefferson: A Study in Character*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2000.

Melton, Buckner F., Jr. *Aaron Burr: Conspiracy to Treason*. New York: Wiley, 2001.

Rogow, Arnold A. *A Fatal Friendship: Alexander Hamilton and Aaron Burr*. New York: Hill and Wang, 1998.

GEORGE BUSH

Born: June 12, 1924

Milton, Massachusetts

American president, vice president, and politician

A successful businessman, George Bush emerged as a national political leader during the 1970s. He served two terms as vice president (1981–89) under Republican President Ronald Reagan (1911–), and in 1988, he was elected the forty-first president of the United States.

Life as a boy

George Herbert Walker Bush was born on June 12, 1924, in Milton, Massachusetts. His parents, both from prominent Wall Street families, were Prescott and Dorothy Walker Bush. Prescott Bush served as a U.S. senator from Connecticut from 1952 to 1962. George Bush grew up in the wealthy New York City suburb of Greenwich, Connecticut, vacationing in the summers in Kennebunkport, Maine.

From student to soldier

As a boy Bush attended exclusive private schools where he excelled both in the class-

room and on the athletic field. After graduating from Phillips Academy in 1942, he enrolled in the U.S. Navy Reserve. Bush was assigned as a navy flight pilot in 1943, serving until the end of World War II (1939–45). Meanwhile, he had become secretly engaged to Barbara Pierce, and the couple married on January 6, 1945, in Rye, New York. The Bushes became the parents of six children, one of whom died of leukemia (a blood disease) when she was three years old.

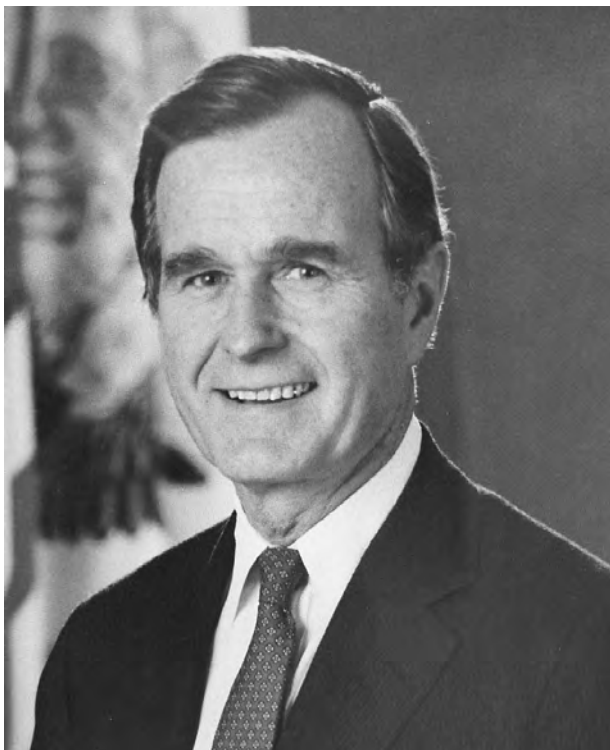
From baseball to businessman

After the war, Bush enrolled at Yale University in September 1945. An ambitious and highly competitive student, he earned a degree in economics within three years. Although a married military veteran, Bush was active in campus social and athletic activities. He played three years of baseball and eventually captained the team.

Following graduation in 1948, Bush became an oilfield supply salesman in Odessa, Texas. Rising quickly in an industry that was experiencing a postwar boom, Bush started his own oil and gas drilling firm in 1953. After merging with another firm in 1955, Bush moved the corporate headquarters to Houston, Texas, in September 1958.

A taste of politics

After becoming a millionaire businessman, Bush became active in local Republican politics and served as Houston County party chairman. In 1964 he challenged the popular Democratic senator Ralph Yarborough (1904–1996) for a seat in the Senate. In the campaign, Bush took a stand against civil rights laws, supported U.S. withdrawal from the United Nations if the organization admit-



George Bush.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

ted the People's Republic of China, and backed cuts in foreign spending. Bush lost the election.

Despite the loss, Bush did not withdraw from politics. In 1966 he won election to the House of Representatives from a Houston suburban district, and became a two-term congressman, serving from 1966 to 1970. While in Congress, Bush supported a "freedom of choice" alternative to school desegregation. (Desegregation was the process of putting people of different races together to end policies of segregation, which had kept races separate.) Bush also supported the major issues of President Richard Nixon

(1913–1994), including the Family Assistance Plan (a program to help needy people by giving them a minimum amount of money while requiring them to look for or keep jobs), during 1969 and 1970. In 1970 Bush again ran for senator and was again defeated.

Washington and Watergate

As a reward for his loyalty, President Nixon appointed Bush U.S. ambassador to the United Nations in February 1971. Given Bush's lack of foreign-policy experience, some viewed this appointment as a political favor. Bush, however, proved to be able and popular in the position, particularly in his handling of difficult situations involving countries in the Far East.

In December 1972, at Nixon's request, Bush gave up his position as ambassador of the United Nations to accept the post of chairman of the Republican National Committee. This appointment turned out to be a demanding assignment when the Senate, in the spring of 1973, began a highly publicized investigation into the so-called "Watergate Affair." Named for the Washington, D.C., complex in which it took place, the Watergate scandal involved burglary and illegal recordings of Nixon's opponents during the 1972 presidential election. Nixon's personal involvement was eventually exposed.

In early 1973, Bush was involved in the House debates about whether or not to impeach (to try a U.S. public official in the U.S. Congress for misconduct in office) President Nixon. Bush publicly supported the president and questioned the motives of the president's political enemies. Following Nixon's decision to leave office in August

1974, Bush was assigned to head a U.S. relations office in Peking, China.

Rebuilding the CIA

Bush remained as the head of the U.S. relations office in Peking until December 1975. The following month he accepted appointment as director of the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA). At the time, the CIA was viewed unfavorably by the American public. Bush actively tried to restore morale within the agency and to deflect criticisms of the agency's past role and authority. In 1977, Bush resigned as director of the CIA and returned to Houston to become chairman of the First National Bank of Houston.

Looking toward the White House

Soon after his return to Texas, Bush began campaigning for the Republican presidential nomination of 1980. Using the contacts he made while in Washington, Bush traveled the country with his family, establishing his own fund-raising organization. After formally announcing his candidacy in May 1979, he quickly emerged as the principal opponent of Ronald Reagan (1911–), the Republican frontrunner and former governor of California. However, Bush's failure to find a major issue that would set him apart from his opponent ended his presidential hopes. In a surprise decision, Reagan chose Bush as his vice presidential running mate.

With Reagan's decisive victory over Democratic president Jimmy Carter (1924–) in 1980, Vice President Bush proved to be a loyal, hardworking supporter of the president. Renominated in 1984, Bush retained the vice presidency with yet another Reagan landslide victory.

President in a changing world

In 1988, Bush defeated Massachusetts governor Michael Dukakis (1933–) to become the forty-first president of the United States. With this victory, many felt he had overcome his weak image as a leader. The world began changing rapidly during Bush's presidency. The Cold War, which had raised tensions between Eastern and Western nations since the 1950s, came to a halt when the Communist governments of the Soviet Union and eastern Europe fell. America's crushing defeat of Iraq in the Persian Gulf War (1990–91), which resulted in the removal of Iraqi troops from Kuwait, also boosted Bush's popularity.

As president, Bush also had his share of problems. Many historians believe that Bush ran a negative campaign in 1988 that affected his ability to govern the country and gain the trust of the American people. Other critics said he lacked vision and leadership. He also had a relatively inexperienced vice president in former Indiana senator Dan Quayle (1947–). In 1992, with the country in the midst of a recession (a slowdown in economic activity), he lost his reelection to Democrat Bill Clinton (1946–).

Life after politics

In retirement, has Bush kept a relatively low profile, preferring to travel and spend time with his grandchildren. In March 1997, at the age of seventy-two, he became (many believe) the first American president to jump out of an airplane. He also cowrote *A World Transformed*, a personal account of his dealings with foreign policy during his time as president.

In November 1997 the George Bush Presidential Library and Museum opened on the campus of Texas A&M University, in College Station, Texas. It is the tenth presidential library overseen by the National Archives and includes information covering Bush's long public career—from ambassador to world leader. Located within the complex is the George Bush School of Government & Public Service, which will provide graduate education to those who wish to lead and manage organizations serving the public interest.

Electing to stay mainly in the background, Bush watched as his son, George W. Bush, became president in the 2000 election, one of the closest presidential races in history.

For More Information

Greene, John Robert. *The Presidency of George Bush*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 2000.

Hill, Dilys M., and Phil Williams, eds. *The Bush Presidency: Triumphs and Adversities*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1994.

Parmet, Herbert S. *George Bush: The Life of a Lone Star Yankee*. New York: Scribner, 1997.

GEORGE W. BUSH

Born: July 6, 1946

New Haven, Connecticut

American president, politician, and businessman

In 2000 George W. Bush (1946–) became the forty-third president of the United States, marking a rise to the top American political office in a relatively short political career. Bush's victory was the second time in American history that the son of a former president took on the world's most powerful political job.

A privileged childhood

George Walker Bush was born in New Haven, Connecticut, on July 6, 1946, to Barbara and George Herbert Walker Bush. His parents moved the family to Texas when George W. was two years old. There his father made a fortune in the oil business. As the eldest of six children, George W. was expected to shine. He was an all-around athlete, a fair student, and an occasional troublemaker in school—he was once punished for painting a mustache on his face during music class. In seventh grade, he ran for class president and won.

While his family lived in Houston, Texas, George W. was sent back east to enroll at Phillips Academy, a private school in Andover, Massachusetts. Although George W. became actively involved in sports, playing baseball, basketball, and football, his high school academic record was far from exceptional. However, through his family's powerful connections, Bush landed a spot at Yale University in Connecticut, where both his father and grandfather had attended.

At Yale, Bush was a popular student. He became president of the Delta Kappa Epsilon fraternity and enjoyed socializing, watching and playing football, and dating. Grades were not a high priority, and because of his mischievous behavior, Bush had a few minor

run-ins with the law. Despite his background of privilege, Bush became more at ease with all kinds of people in college. "I was never one to feel guilty," he said about his wealth and family connections. "I feel lucky."

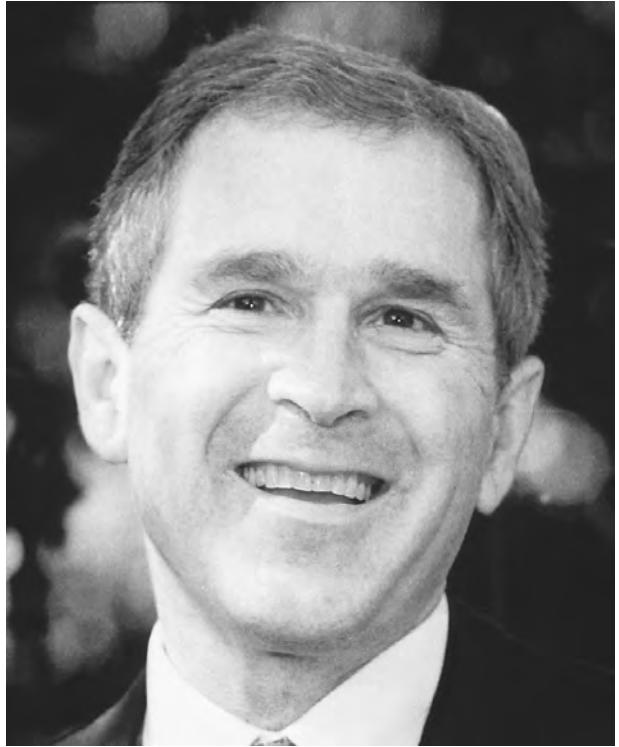
After Yale

After graduating from Yale in 1968, Bush moved back to Houston where he worked for an agribusiness company (a company that produces farm products and equipment) and for a mentoring program (a program in which people counsel or guide others). But the recent graduate was unfocused. Later, after beginning his political career, questions arose about how he had managed to avoid serving in the Vietnam War (1965–75; a war fought in Vietnam in which the United States supported South Vietnam in its fight against a takeover by North Vietnam). He was a member of a Texas Air National Guard unit stationed at Ellington Air Force Base. The unit included other sons of powerful people. At the time, the National Guard had a long waiting list of young men eager to avoid combat service in Vietnam during the war, but Bush managed to sail through easily.

Texas oilman and the beginning of a political career

Eventually Bush decided to continue his education. He was not accepted by the University of Texas Law School. Instead, he entered Harvard's Business School. After graduation, he retraced his father's footsteps and returned to Midland, Texas, in 1975 to try his luck in the oil business. Bush's first attempt to strike oil was not successful.

In 1977, after the unsuccessful business venture, Bush became interested in politics



George W. Bush.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

and suddenly announced that he would run for a seat in the U.S. Congress. At the same time, Bush met Laura Welch; three months later, they were married. Later, they would have twin daughters, Jenna and Barbara. As a candidate for a seat in the U.S. House of Representatives, Bush campaigned as a conservative Republican but lost the close election. Afterwards, Bush turned his focus back to his oil company. By this time, gas prices were falling sharply, and the oil business was not doing well. By the mid-1980s, Bush had left the oil business, but not before selling his stock in the company for nearly \$850,000.

In 1988, Bush worked on his father's presidential campaign, traveling far and wide to raise money and gain support from powerful people. Bush found Washington to be an unwelcoming place, and he returned to Texas after his father won the presidency. In the process, however, he had, he said, "earned his spurs" in his father's eyes. Later, he returned to Washington to work on his father's failed 1992 presidential campaign.

From baseball to the governor's mansion

Late in 1988, after returning to Texas, Bush put together a group of seventy investors and bought the Texas Rangers, a struggling professional baseball team. Bush quickly emerged as the leader of the investment group. The team soon became successful, and in 1998 the investment group sold the Rangers, earning Bush more than \$14 million. The money would later be used to fund his campaign for president.

When his father lost to Bill Clinton (1946–) in the 1992 presidential race, George W. decided to try for political office once again. His status as the most well-known owner of the Rangers and as the son of a former president gave him an advantage as he campaigned for governor of Texas. He won the 1994 election, defeating incumbent governor An Richards.

Governor of Texas

Famous for making connections, Bush used his management skills in the governor's office, but his political personality still needed some work. He complained that he did not like to read long books and that he hated meetings and briefings. Regardless, Governor

Bush did work hard supporting education reform and public schools.

A key to Bush's popularity in Texas was his ability to appeal to both moderate Republicans and the state's Christian conservatives (people who resist change and prefer to keep traditions), who had come to control the more conservative side of the Republican Party. Bush described himself as a born-again Christian, something that helped him with the conservative voters. He also downplayed issues like his stand against abortion (a woman's right to end a pregnancy) in an attempt to appeal to a wider range of voters. He used that same formula to win the Republican presidential nomination in 2000.

The 2000 presidential campaign

After winning the Republican nomination, Bush selected Dick Cheney (1941–) as his vice presidential running mate. Cheney had been secretary of defense under Bush's father. Choosing a respected and experienced running mate showed that Bush would surround himself with people who were capable of helping him run the country.

Bush had an early lead, but his opponent, Democratic vice president Al Gore (1948–), bounced back. The media focused on Bush's tendencies to misuse words in speeches. Meanwhile, Gore, an experienced foreign diplomat and two-time vice president, criticized Bush for his weaknesses with foreign policy.

Voting day came and went with no clear winner. Problems with ballots in several counties in Florida prompted ballot recounts. Weeks later, after a five-to-four decision of the U.S. Supreme Court ended

the recounts, Bush finally emerged as the winner.

A president challenged

Fewer than nine months into office, Bush's leadership skills were tested like no other president before him. On September 11, 2001, terrorists hijacked four U.S. jetliners, crashing one into rural Pennsylvania, another into the Pentagon building outside Washington, D.C., and two into the World Trade Center buildings in New York City. The tragedy, which killed thousands and destroyed the World Trade Center, prompted Bush to announce a "War on Terrorism." The new war became the focus of Bush's presidency.

For More Information

Ivins, Molly, and Lou Dubose. *Shrub*. New York: Random House, 2000.

Minutaglio, Bill. *First Son*. New York: Times Books, 1999.

Mitchell, Elizabeth. *W: Revenge of the Bush Dynasty*. New York: Hyperion, 2000.

LAURA BUSH

Born: November 4, 1946

Midland, Texas

American first lady

A former librarian and elementary-school teacher from Texas, Laura Bush's marriage to President George W. Bush moved her into the national spotlight.

As first lady, she has continued to support the issues that are important to her, including improving education in the United States.

An only child

Laura Welch Bush was born Laura Welch on November 4, 1946, in Midland, Texas. She was the only child of Harold Welch, a home builder, and Jenna Hawkins Welch, who served as bookkeeper for her husband's business. Her parents encouraged her early love of reading. They attempted several times to have a second child but were not successful; in some cases the siblings survived only for a few days. This situation added to Laura's shyness and eagerness to please. "I felt very obligated to my parents," she told the *New York Times*. "I didn't want to upset them in any way."

After graduating from high school, Laura Welch went on to Southern Methodist University in Dallas, Texas. She earned a bachelor's degree in early education in 1968. She taught in public schools in Texas for a few years before deciding to earn a master's degree in library science from the University of Texas at Austin. She settled in that city after her 1973 graduation and became a librarian for the local public school system.

Marries into a political family

On a visit back to Midland, Laura Welch was introduced to George Walker Bush (1946–). At the time, George W. Bush owned an oil business. The couple played miniature golf on their first date and were married just three months later, in November 1977. She agreed to the marriage only with the condition that she would never be asked to make a speech for a political campaign. At the time,



Laura Bush.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

George W. Bush's father George H.W. Bush (1924–), was planning to make a bid for the 1980 Republican presidential nomination.

Laura Bush quit working when she married but took college literature courses. She and her husband had twin daughters, named Barbara and Jenna in honor of their grandmothers. In time, her husband decided to enter politics, and Laura Bush became the wife of the Texas governor in 1995. In spite of her shyness, the new role forced her to become a more public person. She was finally convinced to make speeches, and over the next few years she developed a greater degree of confidence in her ability to speak in pub-

lic. As the state's first lady, she took up literacy (the ability to read and write) and breast cancer awareness as her causes, raising nearly one million dollars for the state's public libraries. She is also credited with convincing her husband to give up drinking, which he did after she expressed concern that his habits were becoming harmful to his health and their family life.

Becomes first lady

When her husband decided to become a candidate in the 2000 Republican presidential election, as she told another *New York Times* reporter, Richard L. Berke, their teenage daughters were not enthusiastic. "They didn't want him to run, because they wanted to be perfectly private teenagers like every teenager," Laura Bush said. She may have also wished for a more private life, but as she said, "I would never say to George, for something that he really wanted to do, that he couldn't do that."

While campaigning for her husband, Laura Bush managed to make a favorable impression while saying little. She delivered the first major speech at the Republican National Convention in Philadelphia in July 2000. In this speech she discussed her husband's promise to improve early childhood development programs and increase funding for teacher training. She also talked about the home they were building in Texas in which they planned to host the next generation of Bush children. "One day, God willing, George will be a fabulous grandfather. In the meantime, he'll make a great president," she said in conclusion. Bush went on to win one of the closest presidential elections in history, and he took office in January 2001.

Although she planned to keep a fairly low profile during her husband's term, Laura Bush was forced to change her plans after terrorists attacked the United States on September 11, 2001. She provided comfort for the country as it mourned the victims and worked to rebuild after the attacks. She became an even greater source of support for her husband as he worked to find and punish those responsible and ensure that such a thing would never happen again.

For More Information

Felix, Antonia. *Laura: America's First Lady, First Mother*. Avon, MA: Adams Media Corp., 2002.

LORD BYRON

Born: January 22, 1788

London, England

Died: April 19, 1824

Missolonghi, Greece

English poet

The English poet Lord Byron was one of the most important figures of the Romantic Movement (1785–1830; a period when English literature was full of virtuous heroes and themes of love and triumph). Because of his works, active life, and physical beauty he came to be considered the perfect image of the romantic poet-hero.

His beginnings

George Gordon Noel Byron, sixth Baron Byron, was born on January 22, 1788, into a

family of fast-decaying nobility. Captain “Mad Jack” Byron was a “gold digger,” marrying Catherine Gordon chiefly for her annual income. After spending most of her money and fathering George, he died in 1791. George was left with an unbalanced mother, the contempt of his aristocratic relatives for the poor widow and her son, and a birth defect necessitating that he walk on the balls and toes of his feet for the rest of his life. All this worked together to hurt the boy's pride and sensitivity. This created in him a need for self-assertion, which he soon sought to gratify in three main directions: love, poetry, and action.

Despite the awkward way he walked and the numerous “remedies” that Byron suffered through, his boyhood was full of play and mischief. His favorite activities were riding and swimming, both sports where he was physically able. But he willingly played cricket, appointing a schoolmate to run for him. At eight years old he fell hopelessly in love with a cousin. At sixteen when he heard of her engagement he reportedly was physically ill. Though said by most of his peers and teachers to have been a genius, Byron was half-hearted in his schoolwork. But he read constantly. He had a strong appetite for information and a remarkable memory. Nevertheless his biography reports Byron as having been the ringleader of numerous school revolts. He spoke of his school friends as “passions.”

On the death of his granduncle in 1798, Byron inherited the title and estate. After four years at Harrow (1801–1805), he went to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he became conscious for the first time of the difference between the high goals of idealism (romanticism) and the less important realities of experience. His quest for some genuine passion



Lord Byron.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

among the frail women of his world accounts for the crowded catalog of his love affairs.

Early works

In 1807 Byron published his first book of poetry, *Hours of Idleness*. In the preface he apologized, “for obtruding [forcing] myself on the world, when, without doubt, I might be at my age, more usefully employed.” The book was harshly criticized by the *Edinburgh Review*. Byron counterattacked in *English Bards and Scotch Reviewers* (1809), the first manifestation (sign) of a gift for satire (making fun of human weaknesses) and a sarcastic wit (making fun of someone or something in a harsh way by say-

ing the opposite of what is meant), which singled him out among the major English romantics, and which he may have owed to his aristocratic outlook and his classical education.

In 1809 a two-year trip to the Mediterranean countries provided material for the first two cantos (the main divisions of long poems) of *Childe Harold’s Pilgrimage*. Their publication in 1812 earned Byron instant glory. They combined the more popular features of the late-eighteenth-century romanticism: colorful descriptions of exotic nature, disillusioned meditations on the vanity of earthly things, a lyrical exaltation of freedom, and above all, the new hero, handsome and lonely, yet strongly impassioned even for all of his weariness with life.

Social life

While his fame was spreading, Byron was busy shocking London high society. After his affairs with Lady Caroline Lamb and Lady Oxford, his incestuous (a sexual relationship between close relatives) love for his half sister Augusta not only made him a reprobate (a person who is completely without morals), but also strengthened the sense of guilt and doom that he had always felt. From then on the theme of incest was to figure strongly in his writings, starting with the epic tales (long poems that tell stories) that he published between 1812 and 1816: *The Giaour*, *The Bride of Abydos*, *The Corsair*, *Lara*, *The Siege of Corinth*, and *Parisina*. According to Byron, incestuous love, criminal although genuine and irresistible, was a suitable metaphor (symbol) for the tragic condition of man, who is cursed by God, rebuked (judged harshly) by society, and hated by himself because of sins for which he is not

responsible. The tales, therefore, add a new dimension of depth to the Byronic hero: in his total alienation (separation from one's surroundings) he now actively takes on the tragic fatality that turns natural instinct into unforgivable sin, and he deliberately takes his rebellious stand as an outcast against all accepted beliefs of the right order of things.

While thus seeking relief in imaginative exploration of his own tortured mind, Byron had been half hoping to find peace and reconciliation in a more settled life. His marriage to Anna Isabella Milbanke (January 1, 1815) soon proved a complete failure. She left him after a year. London society could have ignored the peculiarities of Byron's private life, but a satire against the Prince Regent, "Stanzas to a Lady Weeping," which he had appended (added on) to *The Corsair*, brought about an outpouring of criticism from the Tories (a political party in England that was loyal to the English monarchy). In their hands Byron's separation from his wife became an efficient weapon. On April 25, 1816, Byron had to leave his native country, never to return.

His travels

In Switzerland Byron spent several months in the company of the poet Percy Bysshe Shelley (1792–1822). Under Shelley's influence he read William Wordsworth (1770–1850) and immersed himself in the unpleasant spirituality that permeated the third canto of *Childe Harold*. But *The Prisoner of Chillon* and Byron's first drama, *Manfred*, took the Byronic hero to a new level of inwardness: his greatness now lay in the

refusal to bow to the hostile powers that oppressed him, whether he discovered new selfhood in his very dereliction (negligence) or sought the fulfillment of his assertiveness in self-destruction.

In October 1816 Byron left for Italy and settled in Venice. His compositions of 1817, however, show signs of a new outlook. Spontaneous maturation (growing up) had thus paved the way for the healing influence of Teresa Guiccioli, Byron's last love. The poet had at last begun to come to terms with his desperate idea of life.

It is characteristic of Byron's strength of character that he increasingly sought to translate his ideas into action, repeatedly voicing the more radical Whig (a political party in England that supported reform in government and society) viewpoint in the House of Lords in 1812–1813. He also ran real risks to help the Italian Carbonari (a secret group in Italy that worked for a representative government based on a constitution) in 1820–1821. His early poetry had contributed to sensitizing the European mind to the struggle of Greece under Turkish rule. In 1824 Byron joined the Greek freedom fighters at Missolonghi, Greece, where he died of fever on April 19.

For More Information

- Bloom, Harold, ed. *George Gordon, Lord Byron*. New York: Chelsea House, 1986.
- Graham, Peter W. *Lord Byron*. New York: Twayne, 1998.
- Marchand, Leslie A. *Byron: A Biography*. 3 vols. New York: Knopf, 1957.



JULIUS CAESAR

Born: July 12, 100 B.C.E.

Rome

Died: March 15, 44 B.C.E.

Rome

Roman general and politician

Julius Caesar was a Roman general and politician who overthrew the Roman Republic and established the rule of the emperors. Caesar used the problems and hardships of the period to create his own supreme political and military power. Roman Emperor Julius Caesar is regarded as one of the most

powerful and successful leaders in the history of the world. His life and his violent death have been widely celebrated in literature and film.

Young Caesar

Gaius Julius Caesar was born on July 12, 100 B.C.E. to Gaius Caesar and Aurelia. His father had gained moderate political success and the family claimed a long and noble history, which therefore entitled Caesar's family to certain traditional privileges and offices. Caesar received the classic education of a young Roman at Rome and in Rhodes. Cicero (106–43 B.C.E.), a Roman statesman and philosopher, considered Caesar one of the most cultured and literate of Romans. Caesar served as a young officer in Asia Minor and



Julius Caesar.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

was *quaestor* (financial official) in Farther Spain (69 B.C.E.).

Caesar's first important political success came in 63 B.C.E., when he was elected *pontifex maximus*, the chief religious office in Rome that carried important political possibilities. Caesar was then elected *praetor* (an elected Roman official) for 62 B.C.E. and served his propraetorship in Spain. Caesar was quick to take advantage of his power by waging a successful campaign against some native tribes in Lusitania, a Roman province in western Europe. Meanwhile, his political enemies accused him of provoking, or starting, the war.

First Triumvirate

In 59 B.C.E. Caesar won an election to become consul, or an official ruling over foreign lands. The Senate, immediately moving to block his hopes of future political power, assigned him to lands that offered Caesar no possibilities for military glory. Caesar, who desired more glamorous political and military opportunities, saw that he needed allies to overcome his opponents in the Senate.

Caesar soon found the alliance that would become known as the First Triumvirate. He aligned himself with the Roman General Pompey (106–48 B.C.E.), who brought wealth and military might, and Crassus (140–91 B.C.E.), a powerful Roman politician who brought important political connections. The alliance was further sealed in 58 B.C.E. with the marriage of Caesar's only daughter, Julia, to Pompey.

Revolt in Gaul

Caesar was awarded the governorship of Gaul, a Roman province occupied by several tribes. While Roman control in Gaul was limited, Rome did have political relations with tribes beyond the actual border of the province. Caesar quickly took advantage of these connections and the shifting power position in Gaul to extend the realm of Roman control.

Caesar decided to undertake an expedition against Britain, whose tribes maintained close contacts with Gaul. These expeditions in 55 and 54 B.C.E. created great enthusiasm in Rome, as for the first time Roman arms had advanced overseas to conquer new peoples. Caesar probably thought that his main task of conquest was complete. In 52 B.C.E.,

however, Gaul rose in widespread rebellion against Caesar under Vercingetorix, a nobleman of the tribe of the Arverni. This revolt greatly threatened Caesar's power base.

At the same time, the political situation in Rome was equally chaotic. The tribune (Roman official) Clodius had been murdered, and his death was followed by great disorder in Rome. Caesar had crossed the Alps to watch the changing conditions in Rome. When the news of revolt in Gaul reached him, he recrossed the Alps and rallied his divided army. Caesar's forces lost several battles to Vercingetorix and the Arverni. Vercingetorix made the mistake of taking refuge in the fortress of Alesia, however. Caesar used the best of Roman siege techniques and encircled the fortress to capture the enemy. Soon Vercingetorix was forced to surrender.

Dissolving the Triumvirate

Caesar's long absence from Rome had partially weakened his political power. At the same time Caesar's conquests were well publicized. His *Commentaries*, which described the campaigns, circulated among the reading public in Rome. Caesar sought to place his conquests in the best possible light, and the *Commentaries* stressed the importance of defending the friends and allies of Rome against traditional Roman enemies. He had made vast additions to the Roman Empire (about 640,000 square miles) at the expense of peoples who had long been enemies of Rome.

Pompey, on the other hand, had remained in Rome and strengthened his political position by appearing as a leader in a time of chaos. Other tensions in the alliance came with Julia's death in 54 B.C.E., which

removed an important bond between the two men. The death of Crassus in 53 B.C.E. further weakened the relationship between Pompey and Caesar.

Civil war

When Caesar returned to Rome in 50 B.C.E., the Senate looked to put him on trial for acts he committed while acting as consul. Caesar now had two choices: he could bow to the will of the Senate and be destroyed politically, or he could start a civil war. Caesar chose war.

At the beginning the greater power seemed to rest with Pompey and the Senate, as Pompey had powerful resources with which to draw support against Caesar. However, Caesar had at his command a tough, loyal, and experienced army, as well as an extensive following in Italy. Most of all, he was fighting for his own interests alone and did not have to face the divisions of interest, opinion, and leadership that plagued Pompey.

Pompey quickly decided to abandon Italy to Caesar and fell back to the East. Caesar secured his position in Italy and Gaul and then defeated Pompey at Pharsalus on Aug. 9, 48 B.C.E. Pompey fled to Egypt and was killed by the young pharaoh (king) Ptolemy (63–47 B.C.E.).

Caesar followed Pompey to Egypt and became involved in the struggle for power in the house of Ptolemy, a family in Egypt that ruled for generations. The main result of his time in Egypt was the affair that developed between Caesar and Cleopatra (51–30 B.C.E.), Ptolemy's sister and joint ruler of Egypt. She would later give birth to Caesar's son, Caesarion.

Consolidation of the empire

Although his rival was eliminated, much work remained to make Caesar's position secure. He adopted a policy of special clemency, or mercy, toward his former enemies and rewarded political opponents with public office. For himself he adopted the old Roman position of dictator, a ruler with absolute power.

There has been much debate about what political role Caesar planned for himself. He certainly thought the old government was weak and desired to replace it with some form of rule by a single leader. Just before his death, Caesar was appointed dictator for life. About the same time, he began issuing coins with his portrait on them, something never before practiced in Rome up to that time. Caesar was planning major improvements to transform the capital of the empire he commanded. New colonial foundations were under way, and he reordered the defective Roman calendar.

Death and legacy

In Rome dissatisfaction was growing in the Senate over the increasingly permanent nature of Caesar's rule. A conspiracy (secret plan) was formed to remove Caesar and restore the government to the Senate. The conspirators hoped that, with Caesar's death, government would be restored to its old republican form and all of the factors that had produced Caesar would disappear. The conspiracy progressed with Caesar either ignorant of it or not recognizing the warning signs. On the Ides of March (March 15), 44 B.C.E., he was stabbed to death in the Senate house of Pompey by a group of men that included old friends and allies.

With Caesar's murder, Rome plunged into thirteen years of civil war. Caesar remained for some a symbol of an over-dominant leader, and for others the founder of the Roman Empire whose ghost has haunted Europe ever since. For all, he is a figure of genius and courage equaled by few in history.

For More Information

- Gelzer, Matthias. *Caesar: Politician and Statesman*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1921. trans., 1968.
- Grant, Michael. *Julius Caesar*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1969.
- Nardo, Don. *Julius Caesar*. San Diego: Greenhaven Press, 2002.

CALIGULA

Born: August 31, 12 C.E.

Antium, Italy

Died: January 24, 41 C.E.

Rome, Italy

Italian emperor

Caligula (12–41 C.E.) was the third emperor of Rome. During his short reign, Caligula emerged as one of the most dominant leaders of Rome's early emperors. But his insanity, coupled with his power as Emperor of Rome, would secure him a most unusual legacy.

Early life

Caligula was born Gaius Julius Caesar Germanicus in Antium (modern Anzio) on August 31, 12 C.E. His mother, Agrippina,

was the granddaughter of Emperor Augustus (63 B.C.E.–14 C.E.). Caligula's father, Germanicus, was Emperor Tiberius's (42 B.C.E.–37 B.C.E.) nephew, adopted son, and heir who would inherit his father's throne. Gaius was brought up among the soldiers his father commanded on the Rhine, a river in central Europe. His mother dressed the young boy in the uniform of a Roman soldier, and for this reason the soldiers called him Caligula ("Little Boots"), the name by which he is commonly known.

In 41 C.E. Augustus died, leaving Tiberius to inherit the role of emperor. Tiberius hesitated at naming a successor. Although Caligula's father was the best candidate, Tiberius was jealous of him and kept Germanicus away from Rome for several years. In 19 C.E. Germanicus died under mysterious circumstances. His death was mourned throughout the empire, because he was, by all accounts, an honorable and courageous man. After his father's death Caligula lived in Rome, first with his mother, then with Livia (Augustus's wife), and then with his grandmother. Finally, in 32 C.E., he joined Tiberius in his retirement on the island of Capri.

By this time Tiberius had groomed his two sons, Nero and Drusus, to succeed him as emperor. But by 33 C.E., Nero and Drusus had died, leaving Caligula next in line to succeed Tiberius. Caligula held public office in 31 and 33 C.E. but, apart from that brief experience, had no other training for political life. Caligula's experience at Tiberius's court seems largely to have been in the art of hiding what his biographer Suetonius (c. 69–122 C.E.) called his "natural cruelty and viciousness."



Caligula.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Emperor Caligula

Tiberius died in 37 C.E., and in March Caligula took the throne as emperor. During the first months of his reign he dissolved the legacies Tiberius and Livia left to the Roman people. The new emperor was generous. He freed political prisoners and established popular and splendid games and chariot races. He was respectful to the Senate and adopted his cousin Tiberius Gemellus as his son and heir. Caligula also recalled political exiles, or people who had been forced to leave Rome during the reigns of previous emperors.

But by the spring of 38 C.E. the character of Caligula's rule changed drastically. An ill-

ness late in 37 C.E. seemed to have seriously affected his mind. Suetonius claims that, after the illness, Caligula submitted completely to the role of Oriental despot, or absolute ruler. He soon regarded himself as a god. Personal altars to himself were built all over his empire.

In all things he became irrational and cruel. He murdered, among others, Tiberius Gemellus, humiliated the Senate, and spent money recklessly. He revived treason trials so that he could confiscate the property of the convicted. Caligula's behavior included building a bridge that crossed between his palace and nearby temples so he could communicate with the gods. Also, he appointed his favorite horse as high priest. Caligula spent the winter of 39 and 40 C.E. in Gaul and on the Rhine and planned to invade Germany or Britain. His plans aroused some patriotic support, but the project was soon abandoned.

After his return to Rome, Caligula lived in constant fear of an assassination (an organized murder). His fear was realized when a tribune, or group of Roman officials, of the Praetorian Guards murdered him on Jan. 24, 41 C.E. His fourth wife and his daughter, who was his only child, were murdered at the same time.

For More Information

Balsdon, J. P. V. D. *The Emperor Gaius (Caligula)*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1977.

Barrett, Anthony. *Caligula: The Corruption of Power*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1991.

Ferrill, Arther. *Caligula: Emperor of Rome*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1991.

MARIA CALLAS

Born: December 3, 1923

New York, New York

Died: September 16, 1977

Paris, France

American opera singer

Maria Callas was one of the great coloratura sopranos (female vocalists who specialize in an elaborate form of opera singing) of the twentieth century. She revitalized opera and increased its appeal because of her dramatic skill.

Childhood in America

By most accounts Maria Callas was born Maria Kalogeropoulos in New York City, New York, on December 3, 1923, just four months after her parents, George and Evangelia (Litza) Kalogeropoulos, arrived in New York harbor after moving from Greece. Callas was formally baptized Cecilia Sophia Anna Maria. It was around the time of her birth that her father shortened the family name to Callas. By the time she started school, Maria Kalogeropoulos was known as Maria Callas.

At age seven Callas began her musical studies by taking piano lessons. She loved opera music even as a youngster, and she had a beautiful voice. She especially loved to sing *La Paloma*. She took great comfort in listening to the many opera records in her family's collection. Young Callas soon discovered that she had a natural talent and a flair for the dramatic. She won several amateur talent contests while she was in elementary school,

and she was a popular performer on children's radio shows.

When Callas graduated from the eighth grade in 1937, her mother decided to return to Greece in order for Callas to receive voice training in the classical tradition. She was a dedicated student, driven by a spirit of excellence. Callas's teachers, and later her directors and producers, were continually amazed at her exceptional memory. She easily learned music and lyrics in a matter of days, where others would require weeks or months.

Finds success in Italy

After World War II (1939–45; when Germany, Italy, and Japan clashed with European and American forces), her music coach, Elvira de Hidalgo, encouraged Callas to move to Italy to establish her career. Her Italian debut, held on August 3, 1947, was a performance of *La Gioconda* at the Verona Arena. She went on to perform *Tristan and Isolde* and *Turandot* in Venice, Italy, in 1948. She sang the title role in Bellini's *Norma*, her most popular role, for the first time in Florence, Italy, in 1948. Critics took note, and her career began to soar.

Almost immediately upon her arrival in Verona, Italy, in 1947 she married Giovanni Battista Meneghini, a wealthy Veronian industrialist. Meneghini withdrew from his business interests to manage Callas's promising career, and generally devoted his life to fulfilling her every need. During the late 1940s and 1950s Callas toured Argentina, Mexico, and Brazil. She worked with famed Maestro Tullio Serafin, as well as noted directors Franco Zeffirelli (1923–), Francesco Siciliani, and Luchino Visconti.



Maria Callas.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Finds fame in America

Callas's United States debut was at the Lyric Opera of Chicago (Illinois) in 1954. On October 19, 1956, she debuted at the New York Metropolitan Opera (the Met), where she performed in *Norma*. Coinciding with her Metropolitan Opera debut, Callas was featured on the October 27, 1956, cover of *Time*.

During the peak of Callas's career she easily fit the stereotype (an oversimplified version) of a portly and highly emotional opera singer, but in 1952 she experienced a dramatic weight loss. By 1954 she was sixty-five pounds lighter. She continued to perform, and her career exploded into greatness.

She added new operas, including *Madame Butterfly*, which she had previously avoided because she felt awkward and ungraceful.

The years of decline

During the late 1950s the vocalist's personal life began to deteriorate, and this tragically affected her career. She had an affair with powerful businessman Aristotle Onassis (c. 1900–1975), and she and her husband separated in 1959, divorcing finally in 1971. Onassis eventually divorced his wife, Tina, but married Jacqueline Kennedy (1929–1994), widow of the late president John F. Kennedy (1917–1963), though he also remained involved with Callas.

The intrigues of Callas's personal life soon overshadowed her professional life. The stresses of jet-set living, as well as the strain she had put on her voice throughout her career, began to take their toll. A series of high-profile cancellations continued her downward spiral. Although she returned briefly to perform at the Met between 1964 and 1965, she never resurfaced as the great talent of her youth.

Callas died unexpectedly in Paris, France, on September 16, 1977, shortly before her fifty-fifth birthday. Just as no record exists of Callas's birth, her death also remains shrouded in mystery, the cause of her death never fully explained.

For More Information

Bret, David. *Maria Callas: The Tigress and the Lamb*. New York: Robson Books/Parkwest, 1998.

Stassinopoulos, Arianna. *Maria Callas, The Woman Behind the Legend*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1981.

CAB CALLOWAY

Born: December 25, 1907

Rochester, New York

Died: November 18, 1994

Hockessin, Delaware

*African American singer, songwriter,
and bandleader*

Best known for the song "Minnie the Moocher," Cab Calloway was a famous singer and bandleader beginning in the 1920s, and he remained active in music throughout his golden years.

Early years

Cabell Calloway III was born on December 25, 1907, in Rochester, New York, the second of Cabell and Eulalia Reed Calloway's six children. When he was six his family moved to Baltimore, Maryland, where his father practiced law and sold real estate. Young Cab enjoyed singing in church, but he was expected to follow in his father's footsteps and study law. Except, his older sister Blanche had found work singing with a show in Chicago, Illinois, and after graduating from high school Calloway appealed to her for advice. She sent him a train ticket, and when he arrived in Chicago she gave him acting lessons and found him a job as a singer. He attended Crane College briefly, but he was committed to show business.

Popular bandleader

By 1925 Calloway was working as a drummer with the Sunset Cafe band in Chicago. By his twentieth birthday he had

organized his own orchestra and was singing lead vocals again. The group, Cab Calloway and his Alabamians, became popular in Chicago, and eventually was hired to play at the Savoy Ballroom in New York City. That engagement did not go well, and Calloway dissolved the band. He was about to return to Chicago when he landed a part in a Broadway comedy, *Connie's Hot Chocolates*, in which Calloway was praised for his rendition of "Ain't Misbehavin'."

After Broadway manager Irving Mills encouraged Calloway to form another band, Calloway put together another orchestra and immediately found work in New York nightclubs. In 1929 he was invited to fill in for Duke Ellington (1899–1974) at the Cotton Club, and for the next decade the two band-leaders played alternating engagements at the famous venue. It was during his Cotton Club years that Calloway developed his crisp, jazzy song-and-dance style.

Calloway was one of the first performers to purposely use scat singing, or random use of nonsense syllables. As with so many others, he began scat singing when he forgot a song's lyrics. Audiences loved the sound, however, so he began to write tunes with scat choruses. Calloway's trademark song "Minnie the Moocher" is one such composition. Its refrain—"hi de hi de hi de ho"—invites the audience to sing along. Recordings of "Minnie the Moocher" have sold millions of copies worldwide.

Musician, actor, author

Calloway was very popular in the 1930s and 1940s. He appeared in such films as *International House* and *Stormy Weather*. He helped to popularize the jitterbug with songs



Cab Calloway.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

like "Jumpin' Jive," "Reefer Man," and "It Ain't Necessarily So." He even wrote a book, *Hepster's Dictionary*, which sold two million copies. Although Calloway is not always associated with the big-band era, he worked with many brilliant musicians who were attracted by the top salaries he was able to pay.

During World War II (1939–45) Calloway entertained troops in the United States and Canada. After the war he returned to club work and to Broadway, most notably as the character of Sportin' Life in *Porgy and Bess*. In the 1960s he took another Broadway role, that of Horace Vandergelder in the all-black ver-

sion of *Hello, Dolly!* His work with Pearl Bailey (1918–1990) was the highlight of a long friendship—he had helped Bailey get a start in show business in 1945.

Popular in his eighties

Calloway's appearance in the 1980 film *The Blues Brothers* gave him the opportunity to perform "Minnie the Moocher" for an audience young enough to be his grandchildren. Dressed in a white suit with tails, he made the song the highlight of the film. Critics praised Calloway, and his popularity soared. Calloway continued to perform into his eighties, sometimes joined by his daughter Chris. The *Philadelphia Inquirer* observed that "his moves have slowed a bit since the '30s.... But every bit of his voice is still there—and every bit of the style and grace that made the legend."

Cab Calloway died in November 1994, five months after suffering a stroke. He was survived by his wife, Nuffie, whom he married in 1953. When once asked if he had any heroes in the music business, Calloway scoffed at the very idea. "I'll tell you who my heroes are," he said. "My heroes are the notes, man. The music itself. You understand what I'm saying? I love the music. The music is my hero."

For More Information

Calloway, Cab. *Of Minnie the Moocher and Me*. New York: Crowell, 1976.

Simon, George T. *The Big Bands*. New York: Macmillan, 1967.

Simon, George T. *Best of the Music Makers*. Garden City, New York: Doubleday, 1979.

JOHN CALVIN

Born: July 10, 1509

Noyon, Picardy, France

Died: May 27, 1564

Geneva, Switzerland

French religious leader and reformer

The French religious reformer John Calvin created a strict version of Protestantism, which originally arose in opposition to the Catholic Church. He is known for his belief in predestination (meaning God has already chosen who will and will not be saved) and his view of the state as enforcer of church laws.

Early life

John Calvin was born at Noyon in Picardy, France, on July 10, 1509. He was the second son of Gérard Cauvin, who was secretary to the bishop of Noyon. It was decided early in his life that Calvin would serve the Catholic Church, and at the age of twelve he became a chaplain at the Cathedral of Noyon. In August 1523 he went to Paris, France, and entered the Collège de la Marche at the University of Paris, where he soon became skilled in Latin. He then attended the Collège de Montaigu until 1528. Then, at the suggestion of his father, he moved to Orléans, France, to study law.

In 1531 Calvin returned to Paris with his law degree. At this time Protestant opposition to the church was growing. The ideas of Martin Luther (1483–1546) concerning the saving of one's soul by faith alone were becoming popular in the city, and Calvin

became involved in the movement for church reform. In January 1534 he fled Paris during a crackdown on Protestants and went to Angoulême, France, where he began writing down a full description of his beliefs. After several trips back to Paris he finally settled in Basel, Switzerland.

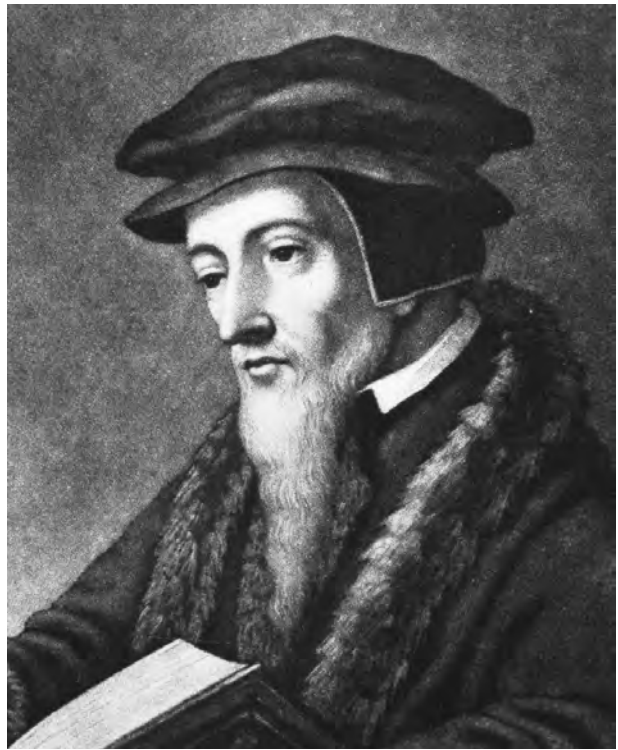
Calvin's ideas

In 1536 Calvin expressed his new beliefs in the most famous book on Protestantism ever, the *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, which he continued to work on until his death. The book's theme is the majesty of God and the worthlessness of man. God has predestined (decided in advance) who will be granted eternal glory or suffer eternal damnation, and man can do nothing to change this decision. Calvin was not the creator of this idea, but no one ever expressed it more clearly.

Calvin also advised people to pray, saying men must worship even though they may have no chance to be saved. The prayer should be simple, and all fancy ceremony should be rejected. Calvin said that Christ is present whenever believers gather in prayer, and that priests have no special powers. He also stated that there was no separation of Church and state; both must work together to preserve the word of God, and the state was allowed to use force if necessary against those engaging in false teachings.

Geneva reformer

After returning briefly to France in 1536, Calvin left his homeland permanently. Traveling through Geneva, Switzerland, he met Guillaume Farel, a Protestant who asked him to stick around. In 1537 the city fathers



John Calvin.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

in Geneva elected Calvin to the preaching office. A council operating as the government soon banned Catholicism and all immoral behavior. In 1538 a combination of Libertines (freedom lovers) and Catholics, opposed to the new rules, took control of the council. Calvin was banished and went to Strasbourg, France, where he married Idelette de Bure in 1540. Their only child died in infancy. Things went badly in Geneva after Calvin left. Disgusted with the behavior of the people, the council asked Calvin to return in 1541, promising total cooperation in restoring order.

Back in Geneva, Calvin went right to work organizing the Reformed church. In

1542 the council approved his new regulations. The ministry was divided into pastors, teachers, lay (nonreligious) elders, and deacons. The pastors governed the Church, and their permission was required to preach in Geneva. To control public behavior, an elected group of pastors and elders were given the right to search people's homes; to banish anyone from the city; to force attendance at weekly sermons; and to ban gambling, drinking, dancing, and immodest dress. Criticism of Calvin or other church officials was forbidden, as were immoral writings and books about Catholicism. Punishment for first offenses was usually a fine. Repeat offenders were banished, and extreme offenses carried the death penalty. From 1541 until Calvin's death fifty-eight people were executed and seventy-six were banished in order to preserve morals and order.

Last years

Calvin's last years were spent criticizing his enemies and updating Geneva's laws and the *Institutes*. Geneva became a model of order and cleanliness and was admired by visitors. Men trained by Calvin carried his ideas all over Europe. He lived to see his following grow in the Netherlands, Scotland, Germany, and even France. On May 27, 1564, Calvin died after a long illness, having left a huge mark on the Christian world.

For More Information

Bouwsma, William J. *John Calvin: A Sixteenth-Century Portrait*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1988.

Cottret, Bernard. *Calvin: A Biography*. Grand Rapids, MI: W. B. Eerdmans, 2000.

Wellman, Sam. *John Calvin: Father of Reformed Theology*. Ulrichsville, OH: Barbour, 2001.

BEN NIGHTHORSE CAMPBELL

Born: April 13, 1933

Auburn, California

Native American senator and congressman

As a result of his election on November 3, 1992, Ben Nighthorse Campbell of Colorado became the first Native American to serve in the U.S. Senate in more than sixty years. A member of the Northern Cheyenne tribe, Campbell was also a world-famous athlete and was captain of the U.S. judo team for the 1964 Olympics in Tokyo, Japan.

A troubled youth

Ben Campbell (he added "Nighthorse" as an adult) was born in Auburn, California, on April 13, 1933, to Mary Vierra, a Portuguese immigrant, and Albert Campbell, a member of the Northern Cheyenne tribe. He had a hard childhood with a mother frequently hospitalized for tuberculosis, an infectious disease that affects the lungs. Campbell's father was an alcoholic who failed to support the family, and his mother was often too sick to take care of and support the children. At such times she placed Campbell and his younger sister, Alberta, in the care of an orphanage. Indeed, by the time he turned ten years old Nighthorse had

spent half of his life in St. Patrick's Catholic Orphanage in Sacramento, California.

With little supervision at home, the youngster spent much of his time in the streets getting into trouble. He was frequently absent from high school, earning mostly poor grades. While still a teenager he was involved in such activities as stealing guns and cars, shoplifting, and driving drunk. At age fifteen he was arrested for stealing gasoline. A year later he was arrested and briefly jailed for driving drunk and crashing into a gas station. The police released him back into the custody of his parents.

Life began to change as Campbell learned a new skill. While working as a fruit picker in California's Sacramento Valley, he became friends with some Japanese youths who taught him judo. That sport, according to the senator, "kept me off the streets and out of jail." After leaving high school, he served in the U.S. Air Force from 1951 to 1953 during the Korean War (1950–53), a war in Korea in which the United States joined South Korea in its fight against Communist North Korea. Campbell was stationed in Korea, where he gained the military rank of Airman, Second Class. He studied to receive his high school equivalency diploma and continued with his judo training. Studying with Korean judo instructors during times when he was not on military duty, Campbell earned a brown belt in the sport.

From judo to jewelry

After finishing his military service, Campbell entered San Jose State University and supported himself by picking fruit and driving a truck. As a senator Campbell remembered this early work experience and



Ben Nighthorse Campbell.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

was still a member of the Teamsters labor union (which includes truckers) who proudly displayed his union membership card. In 1957 he received a bachelor's degree in physical education and fine arts. Upon graduation he moved to Tokyo for four years to work on his judo and study at Meiji University.

Campbell's ability in judo won him All American status in that sport and helped him become a three-time U.S. judo champion. He won the gold medal in the Pan-American Games in 1963 and served as captain of the U.S. judo team at the Tokyo Olympics the next year. Later he coached the U.S. international judo team.

Although Campbell worked many jobs, ranging from farm laborer to policeman, he found financial success as a designer of Native American jewelry. He had been interested in this Native American art form since his childhood, but in Japan he learned how to laminate different metals, a technique that involves beating, splitting, or layering metals in thin sheets. Although jewelry makers who used more traditional methods said that this technique did not follow the style of Native American art, others recognized Campbell as an important artist creating new artistic forms. He won more than two hundred design awards for his handmade rings, bracelets, and pendants. Some of his work has sold for as much as twenty thousand dollars. By 1977 Campbell's success had allowed him to move to a 120-acre ranch on the Southern Ute Indian Reservation near Ignacio, Colorado. There he trained champion quarter horses until an injury forced him to stop.

Beginnings of political career

Campbell's involvement in politics came about because of bad weather. Unable to fly his single-engine airplane to the West Coast to deliver some jewelry because of heavy storms, he visited a meeting of Colorado Democrats who were seeking a candidate for the state's Fifty-ninth House District. At that meeting Democratic leaders persuaded Campbell to run for that office. To nearly everyone's surprise he defeated his better-known opponent and served in the state legislature for four years. In 1986 voters of Colorado's Third Congressional District elected Campbell as a Democrat to the U.S. House of Representatives after a closely fought election. With this victory Campbell became

only the eighth Native American ever elected to Congress. He won reelection to this seat three times.

In Congress Campbell earned a reputation for having a "straightshooting approach." His charm, sincerity, leadership qualities, and mix of political beliefs helped him gain support from a wide variety of groups within and outside of Congress. Although he was a strong conservative in areas of financial management (he supported an amendment to the U.S. Constitution that would require a balanced budget), he was a liberal on social issues. His stand on abortion (the purposeful termination of a pregnancy), for example, is strongly prochoice, or in favor of a woman's right to choose to have an abortion. He played an important role in gaining laws to settle disputes involving Native American water rights. In 1991 he won a fight to change the name of Custer Battlefield Monument in Montana to the Little Bighorn Battlefield National Monument, in honor of the Native Americans who died there in 1876 in battle against the troops of General George Custer (1839–1876). Campbell was also instrumental in establishing the National Museum of the American Indian within the Smithsonian Institution.

Campbell as senator

After six years in the House of Representatives, Campbell decided to run for the Senate seat vacated by Tim Wirth (1939–), a liberal Democrat who decided not to run for a second term. He defeated Josie Heath and former governor Dick Lamm (1935–) in the Democratic primary. On November 3, 1992, he beat the conservative Republican state senator Terry Considine for the Senate. As a

Democratic senator he almost always supported the programs of the Clinton administration (1993–2001).

On March 3, 1995, Campbell made a decision that shocked much of the political world. He decided to move from the Democratic Party to the Republican Party. It has been stated that the balanced-budget amendment persuaded Campbell to change his political views. Campbell served the remainder of his first six-year term as a Republican and was reelected for a second term in 1998, after running as a Republican.

For More Information

Viola, Herman J. *Ben Nighthorse Campbell, an American Warrior*. New York: Orion Books, 1993.

ALBERT CAMUS

Born: November 7, 1913

Mondovi, Algeria

Died: January 4, 1960

Paris, France

French novelist, essayist, and playwright

The French novelist, essayist, and playwright Albert Camus was the literary spokesman for his generation. His obsession with the philosophical problems of the meaning of life and man's search for value made him well loved by readers, resulting in his award of the Nobel Prize in Literature at the age of forty-four.

Childhood

Albert Camus was born on November 7, 1913, in Mondovi, Algeria, then part of France. His French father was killed in World War I (1914–18; a war that involved many European countries, such as Russia, the United States, and areas of the Middle East) when Albert was just one year old. His mother, of Spanish origin, was able to provide a small income and home in a needy neighborhood of Algiers, Algeria, through unskilled labor. His childhood was one of poverty and of sunshine. Life in Algeria left Camus feeling rich because of the temperate climate. Camus said, "I lived in destitution but also in a kind of sensual delight." His Spanish heritage provided him with a self-respect in poverty and a passion for honor. Camus started writing at an early age.

His schooling was completed only with help from scholarships. At the University of Algiers, he was a brilliant student of philosophy (the study of value and meaning in life), focusing on the comparison of Hellenism (ideals associated with Ancient Greece) and Christianity. Camus is described as both a physical and mental athlete. While still a student, he founded a theater and both directed and acted in plays. At seventeen he contracted tuberculosis (a disease that mainly affects the lungs), which kept him from further sports, the military, and teaching jobs. Camus worked at various jobs before becoming a journalist in 1938. His first published works were *L'Envers et l'endroit* (1937; *The Wrong Side and the Right Side*) and *Noces* (1938; *Festivities*), books of essays dealing with the meaning of life and its joys, as well as its underlying meaninglessness.

Albert Camus's writing marks a break with the traditional bourgeois (middle class)



Albert Camus.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

novel. He is less interested in psychological (involving the study of the mind) analysis than in philosophical problems in his books. Camus developed an idea of the “absurd,” which provides the theme for much of his earlier work: the “absurd” is the gulf between man’s desire for a world of happiness, a world which he can understand rationally, and the actual world, which is confused and irrational. The second stage in Camus’s thought developed from the first—man should not simply accept the “absurd” universe, but should “revolt” against it. This revolt is not political but in the name of traditional values.

L’Étranger

His first novel, *L’Étranger* (The Stranger), published in 1942, focuses on the negative aspect of man. The theme of the novel is embodied in the “stranger” of its title, a young clerk called Meursault, who is narrator as well as hero. Meursault is a stranger to all expected human emotions. He is a human sleepwalking through life. The crisis of the novel takes place on a beach, when Meursault, involved in a quarrel not of his causing, shoots an Arab. The second part of the novel deals with his trial for murder and his sentence to death, which he understands about as much as why he killed the Arab. Meursault is absolutely honest in describing his feelings, and it is this honesty that makes him a “stranger” in the world and ensures the verdict of guilty. The total situation symbolizes the absurd nature of life, and this effect is increased by the deliberately flat and colorless style of the book.

Unable to find work in France during World War II (1939–45; a war in which Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan), because Germany invaded and occupied France, Camus returned to Algeria in 1941 and finished his next book, *Le Mythe de Sisyphe* (The Myth of Sisyphus), also published in 1942. This is a philosophical essay on the nature of the meaninglessness of life, which is shown in the mythical figure of Sisyphus, who is sentenced for eternity to roll a heavy rock up a mountain only to have it roll back down again. Sisyphus becomes a symbol of mankind and, in his constant efforts, achieves a certain sad victory.

In 1942 Camus, back in France, joined a Resistance group and engaged in underground journalism until the Liberation in 1944, when he became editor of the former Resistance newspaper *Combat* for three years. Also during this period his first two plays were staged: *Le Malentendu* (Cross-Purpose) in 1944 and *Caligula* in 1945. Here again the principal theme is the meaninglessness of life and the finality of death. It was in playwriting that Camus felt most successful.

In 1947 Camus published his second novel, *La Peste* (The Plague). Here, Camus focuses on the positive side of man. In describing a fictional attack of bubonic plague (a highly contagious outbreak of disease that causes many deaths) in the Algerian city of Oran, he again treats the theme of the absurd, represented by the meaningless and totally unearned suffering and death caused by the plague. But now the theme of revolt is strongly developed. Man cannot accept this suffering without a fight. The narrator, Dr. Rieux, explains his ideal of “honesty”—preserving his strength of character by struggling as best he can, even if unsuccessfully, against the outbreak of disease. On one level the novel can be taken as a fictional representation of the German occupation of France. It also has a wider appeal, though, as a symbol of the fight against evil and suffering, the major moral problem of human experience.

Later works

Camus's next important book was *L'Homme révolté* (1951; The Rebel). Another long essay, this work treats the theme of revolt in political, as well as philosophical,

terms. Camus, who had been a member of the Communist Party (a political party whose members support the idea that the government should control the production and distribution of goods) for one year, afterward maintained a position of political independence from the parties in France. In this book he develops the idea that man should not tolerate the irrationality of the world, while at the same time making a careful distinction between revolt and revolution. Revolution, despite its initial ideals, he sees as something that always ends in a cruelty as great or greater than the one it set out to destroy. Instead Camus asks for revolt: a more individual protest, in tune with the values of tolerance and moderation. Above all he strongly rejects the Marxist belief that “history” will inevitably produce a world revolution and that any action committed in its name will therefore be justified. For Camus, the end can never justify the means.

In 1957 Camus received the great honor of the Nobel Prize in Literature for his works. In the same year he began to work on a fourth important novel and was also about to become the director of a major Paris theater, when, on January 4, 1960, he was killed in a car crash near Paris. He was forty-six years old. This was a tragic loss to literature, since he had yet to write the works of his full maturity as an artist and a thinker.

For More Information

Lottman, Herbert R. *Albert Camus: A Biography*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1979.

Todd, Olivier. *Albert Camus: A Life*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1997.

AL CAPONE

Born: January 17, 1899

Brooklyn, New York, New York

Died: January 25, 1947

Palm Island, Florida

American gangster and criminal

Al “Scarface” Capone was an American gangster who rose to power during the Prohibition era (1920–33), when the United States banned the production and sale of liquor. His vicious career illustrated the power and influence of organized crime in the United States.

“Scarface” is born

Alphonso Caponi was born on January 17, 1899, in Brooklyn, New York. He was one of seven children born to Gabriel and Teresa Caponi, who came to the United States from Italy in 1893. His father was a barber. Capone attended school through the sixth grade, at which point he beat up his teacher one day and was himself beaten by the school’s principal afterward.

Like many other American children at the time, Capone was taught that the main purpose of life was to acquire wealth and that the United States was the land of opportunity. He discovered that prejudice (unfair treatment) based on his ethnic background made it difficult to succeed in school and that others looked down on the children of immigrants and members of the working class. Angered by the gap between the American dream and his own reality, Capone began to engage in criminal activities as a

way of achieving success in what he saw as an unjust society.

Capone worked at odd jobs for a while but found his calling when a gangster named Johnny Torrio (1882–1957) hired him to work in a bar owned by Torrio’s friend. Torrio knew Capone did not mind violence and often had him beat up people who were unable to repay loans. Over time, Capone learned more and more about the criminal world. During a fight in a bar he received a razor cut on his cheek, which gained him the nickname “Scarface.” He then met a woman named Mae Coughlin (1897–1986), with whom he had a child named Albert Francis Capone (nicknamed Sonny). Capone and Coughlin married a short time later, on December 18, 1918.

Success in Chicago

In 1919 the U.S. government approved the Eighteenth Amendment to the Constitution, a law prohibiting (or preventing) the manufacture, sale, and transport of liquor. The same year, Capone fled Brooklyn for Chicago to avoid a murder charge. In Chicago he joined the Five Points Gang and quickly moved up its ranks. He became the top assistant to the gang’s leader, his old friend Johnny Torrio, who had set up operations in the city. Capone worked as a bartender and enforcer for Torrio and was arrested many times for assaulting people, but Torrio’s influence saved him from jail.

After Torrio fled the country, Capone found himself in control of part of the bootlegging (illegal supplying of alcohol) in Chicago that had sprung up after Prohibition (preventing by law the production, sale, or transportation of liquor). The citizens of

Chicago had not been in favor of Prohibition. Many of them were more than willing to break the law by purchasing alcohol. Capone took advantage of this attitude and conducted his business openly. As he would tell reporter Damon Runyon, "I make money by supplying a public demand. If I break the law, my customers . . . some of the best people in Chicago, are as guilty as me."

Capone protected his business interests, which also included gambling houses, by waging war on rival gangs. During the St. Valentine's Day massacre in 1929, seven members of a rival gang led by George "Bugsy" Moran were shot to death in a Chicago garage. Protecting these businesses also often involved either bribing or beating up public officials. As Capone's profits continued to grow, he began to act as if he were a well-to-do businessman rather than a vicious criminal. Many people, including members of the police and city government, admired him. Between 1927 and 1931 he was viewed by many as the real ruler of Chicago.

The truth is that Capone was totally unworthy of admiration. He was a cold-blooded criminal who killed hundreds of people without a second thought. He paid off mayors, governors, and other elected officials to allow his crooked operations to continue. He could even influence elections by having members of his gang intimidate people into voting the way he wanted. Capone's reign of terror gave the city of Chicago a reputation as a gangster-infested place that it would hold for years, even after he was long gone.

Menace to society

Most of the rest of the country (and even some people in Chicago) correctly regarded



Al Capone.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Capone as a menace. In the late 1920s President Herbert Hoover (1874–1964) ordered his secretary of the treasury to find a way to put Capone behind bars. Capone had up to this point managed to escape jail time for any of his crimes. The government's decision to crack down on him just added to the problems he was having. His profits from bootlegging had started to decline as a result of the coming of the Great Depression (a period from 1929 to 1939 during which nearly half the industrial workers in the country lost their jobs) and the ending of Prohibition.

After detailed investigations, U.S. Treasury agents were able to arrest Capone for failure to

file an income tax return. Forced to defend himself while being tried on a different charge in Chicago, Capone's testimony regarding his taxes did not match previous statements he had made, and he was found guilty of tax fraud. In October 1931 he was sentenced to ten years of hard labor, which he served in a prison in Atlanta, Georgia, and in prison on Alcatraz Island in California's San Francisco Bay.

Capone suffered from syphilis, a disease passed from person to person through sexual contact. The disease can affect the brain if left untreated. Capone became physically weak and started to lose his mind. As a result, his power within the nation's organized crime system ended. Released on parole in 1939, Capone spent the rest of his life at his estate in Palm Island, Florida, where he died on January 25, 1947.

For More Information

Hornung, Rick. *Al Capone*. New York: Park Lane Press, 1998.

Kobler, John. *Capone*. New York: Putnam, 1971.

Pasley, Fred D. *Al Capone: The Biography of a Self-Made Man*. 2nd ed. London, Faber, 1966.

TRUMAN CAPOTE

Born: September 30, 1924

New Orleans, Louisiana

Died: August 25, 1984

Los Angeles, California

American author

Truman Capote is one of the most famous and controversial writers in contemporary American literature. He is best known for *In Cold Blood*, a nonfiction novel about the murder of an American family. Because of his style and themes, reviewers of his early fiction categorized him as a Southern Gothic writer (a style of fiction that uses gloomy settings and has mysterious events). Other works, however, display a humorous and sentimental tone.

The young man

Truman Streckfus Persons was born on September 24, 1924, in New Orleans, Louisiana. His parents, Archulus Persons and Lillie Mae Faulk, were divorced when he was four years old. He lived with relatives in Monroeville, Alabama, while his mother and her second husband, Cuban businessman Joseph Capote, lived in New York.

His closest friends at this time were an elderly cousin, Miss Sook Faulk, and a neighboring tomboy, Harper Lee (1926–). She later became an award-winning author herself, writing *To Kill a Mockingbird*. Both friends appear as characters in Capote's early fiction.

When Truman was nine years old, his mother brought her son to live in Manhattan, New York. He then took on his adopted last name, Capote. He continued to spend summers in the South. He did poorly in school, even though psychological tests proved that his Intelligence Quotient (IQ) was above genius level. Truman developed an outgoing personality to hide his loneliness and unhappiness.

Early writing

Truman began secretly writing at an early age. When he completed high school,

he worked for *The New Yorker*. There he wrote articles and short stories. He also made important social contacts and later became a frequent guest on television talk shows. When he was seventeen, several magazines published his short stories. That exposure eventually led to a contract to write his first book, *Other Voices, Other Rooms*. Set in the South, the novel centers on a young man's search for his father and his loss of innocence as he passes into manhood. Many critics and readers believed that the novel was autobiographical (a story about himself).

Many of Capote's early stories were written when he was in his teens and early twenties. Collected in *A Tree of Night and Other Stories*, these stories show the influence of Gothic writers such as Edgar Allan Poe (1809–1849), Nathaniel Hawthorne (1804–1864), and William Faulkner (1897–1962). Many of the stories are filled with bizarre incidents and characters suffering from mental and physical disorders. Yet some of the tales have a humorous tone. Critics often place his early fiction into two categories: light stories or bizarre stories. In later years Capote commented that many of those stories reflected the anxiety and feelings of insecurity he experienced as a child.

Mid-career writing

In some of Capote's works of the 1950s, his attention is turned away from traditional fiction. In *Local Color* he wrote a collection of pieces retelling his impressions and experiences while in Europe. In *The Muses Are Heard: An Account* he wrote essays about his travels in Russia with a touring theater company that presented the play *Porgy and Bess*.

Before Capote found his main subject, he published one more traditional novel,

Breakfast at Tiffany's. It was an engaging story of Manhattan playgirl Holly Golightly. In 1952 the novel was adapted as a Broadway drama. Critics believe *Breakfast at Tiffany's* is a good example of a maturity lacking in Capote's early fiction. Though Capote conceived his story as fiction, he was already drawing heavily from real life incidents. Capote saw the second phase of his development as a writer come to a close with *Breakfast at Tiffany's*. He turned his efforts toward writing as an art form.

From these projects Capote developed the idea of creating work that would combine fact and fiction. The result was *In Cold*

Blood. Originally, chapters of the book appeared in several issues of *The New Yorker* and the work was later published in book form. This book describes the murder of Kansas farmer Herbert W. Clutter and his family in November 1959. Capote and Harper Lee, his childhood friend, went to Holcomb, Kansas, to research the case. The town residents were not only emotionally shocked and upset about the murders, but they were also deeply suspicious of Capote and his motives. He retraced the killers' flight to Miami, Florida, and Acapulco, Mexico. He did months of research on the criminal mind and interviewed a number of death row killers. Before he began writing, Capote had gathered over six thousand pages of notes. All told, the project, which Capote regarded as the third phase of his writing development, took almost six years. *In Cold Blood*, published in 1965, became a bestseller. Capote received an Edgar Award from the Mystery Writers of America.

In the late 1960s Capote began suffering from writer's block. He spent most of his time revising or throwing out his works in progress. During the mid-1970s he published several chapters of *Answered Prayers* in *Esquire* magazine. It was a gossip-filled chronicle of society's jet set (an international group of wealthy people who lead expensive, social lives). The stories revealed intimate details about his society friends. Most critics found the chapters disappointing. His friends felt betrayed and refused to have contact with him.

Television personality and later years

During his youth, Capote developed a flashy and humorous style. He often became a frequent guest on television shows. He

admitted that he was obsessed with fame. He constantly sought social privilege and public celebrity, objectives he achieved back in 1948 with the appearance of his first novel, *Other Voices, Other Rooms*. Throughout his life Capote made friends with the rich and famous, observing their weaknesses with a watchful eye and developing trust and close friendships he would later betray.

Final years and career assessment

In 1983, *Music for Chameleons*, a final collection of short prose pieces, was published. Capote approached his writing by setting himself at "center stage." It included using dialogue, stage direction, narrative, and a variety of literary techniques. Critics gave less than warm reviews of *Music for Chameleons*.

Afterward, Capote took to alcohol, drug addiction, and suffered poor health. He died in Los Angeles, California, on August 24, 1984, shortly before his sixtieth birthday. According to his friends and editors, the only portions of *Answered Prayers* he had managed to complete were those that had appeared in *Esquire* several years before.

Critical assessment of Capote's career is highly divided, both in terms of individual works and his overall contribution to literature. Though the nonfiction novel was his most original contribution to the literary world, Capote also produced short stories, plays, straight reportage, television adaptations from books or plays, and film scripts. His main faults were overwriting and creating strange plots. Most praise his storytelling abilities and the quality of his prose.

For More Information

Brinnin, John Malcolm. *Truman Capote: Dear Heart, Old Buddy*. New York: Delacorte Press, 1986.

Clarke, Gerald. *Capote: A Biography*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1986.

Grobel, Lawrence. *Conversations with Capote*. New York: New American Library, 1985.

FRANK CAPRA

Born: May 18, 1897

Palermo, Sicily, Italy

Died: September 3, 1991

Los Angeles, California

Italian-born American filmmaker

Filmmaker Frank Capra was Hollywood's top director in the 1930s. He created several immensely popular movies that captured the mood of the Depression-era United States, and he earned more Academy Award nominations than any of his contemporaries.

Early years and education

Frank Capra was born in Palermo, Sicily, Italy, on May 18, 1897, the youngest of Salvatore and Sarah Nicolas Capra's seven children. His father was a fruitgrower. When Frank was six years old his family left Sicily for the United States, ending up in Los Angeles, California. Capra fought to go to college against his parents' wishes, working several jobs to pay his way through the California

Institute of Technology. After graduating and serving in the army, he had trouble finding a decent job. His relatives on the other hand, none of whom had college degrees, were all employed. While in San Francisco, California, Capra, with twelve cents to his name, answered a newspaper advertisement placed by an actor who was looking for a director to help him create film versions of his favorite poetry.

Begins film career

Capra turned out films based on poems such as Rudyard Kipling's (1865–1936) "Ful-tah Fisher's Boarding House." He then sold them to the regular movie studios for a profit. After a series of these, Capra went to work for Harry Cohn, who ran a small company called CBC, which would grow into Columbia Pictures. For a while Capra also worked with Harry Langdon (1884–1944), a famous comedian of the silent movie era. It was with Langdon that Capra made his first feature films, *Tramp, Tramp, Tramp*, *The Strong Man*, and *Long Pants*. All were successful, but Langdon wanted to direct his own movies, so he fired Capra. Capra went back to work for Harry Cohn at Columbia.

Capra turned out a series of action movies that were well made and did very well at the box office. It was in this period that Capra made his first film with sound, *The Younger Generation*. In 1930 Capra began working with a writer named Jo Swerling after Swerling attacked one of his scripts in front of Harry Cohn. Impressed with Swerling's criticisms, Capra asked Cohn to hire the New York writer. Swerling was an important influence on Capra. Their first film together, *Ladies of Leisure*, starred Barbara



Frank Capra.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Stanwyck (1907–1990) and showed Capra developing his personal style.

Won Oscars

Although Capra worked regularly with both Swerling and Stanwyck, his breakthrough project came from another writer, Robert Riskin (1897–1955). *It Happened One Night* won the Academy Award (Oscar) for Best Picture, Best Director (Capra), and Best Actor and Actress (Clark Gable [1901–1960] and Claudette Colbert [1903–1996], respectively). One of the most famous scenes takes place on a broken down bus in which the riders, to entertain themselves, sing “The

Daring Young Man on the Flying Trapeze.” It is vintage Frank Capra material, offering a vision of a world in which social differences are broken down and a democratic feeling of togetherness is achieved.

Capra’s next big film, *Mr. Deeds Goes to Town*, also written by Riskin, won Capra another Oscar for Best Director. In it Capra’s belief in the goodness of the common man shows through more clearly. When Mr. Deeds becomes wealthy through an inheritance, he decides to give a significant part of his fortune to the poor. This leads his family to try to have him declared insane. At his trial, Mr. Deeds, played by Gary Cooper (1901–1961), refuses to speak in his own defense until his own faith in the goodness of humanity is restored. As his faith is restored, so is the audience’s, and the film ends happily. In 1938 Capra won his third Best Director Oscar for *You Can’t Take It With You*, an adaptation of a popular play. It is the story of a common woman, played by Jean Arthur, whose love saves the soul of a millionaire’s son, played by Jimmy Stewart (1908–1997). It was Capra’s first film with Stewart.

The next year Capra and Stewart would make *Mr. Smith Goes to Washington*, the perfect expression of Capra’s political belief that the innocent goodness of one man can overcome the greed and cynicism (distrust) of politicians, industrialists (those who own or manage an industry), and the media. The film ends with the hero’s twenty-three-hour speech on the floor of the Senate where he refuses to be defeated. At one point Mr. Smith admits that “the only causes worth fighting for are lost causes.”

War intervenes

In Jimmy Stewart Capra found an actor capable of expressing the theme of a common man as hero in a bad situation. A good case can be made that the change in America's self-image caused by World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis—Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies—England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States) can be seen in the change in Jimmy Stewart's self-image in his two most famous roles for Capra. At the end of *Mr. Smith Goes to Washington*, Mr. Smith manages to maintain his hopeful attitude, while George Bailey of *It's a Wonderful Life* goes through a much darker change to find happiness. Capra's last film before the United States entered the war was *Meet John Doe*, starring Gary Cooper.

During World War II Capra entered the armed services and made propaganda (ideas spread to further a cause or belief) films for the Allies. They were considered the finest films made on the Allied side. After the war Capra started his own film company, Liberty Films Inc. It was then that he made *It's a Wonderful Life*, the story of an extraordinary but deeply discouraged man who, around Christmas, is allowed to see what the world would have been like if he had never been born. The film would become one of the classics of the American screen, but when it was released, it was not a success. His next film, *State of the Union*

with Spencer Tracy (1900–1967) and Katherine Hepburn (1907–), was a mean-spirited and confusing political picture that did nothing to bolster Capra's sagging reputation.

Later years

Capra made only five more films, and none was comparable to the artistic success of his earlier efforts or of *It's a Wonderful Life*. He made his last film, *Pocketful of Miracles*, in 1961. It was another box office disappointment, and from then until his death in 1991 he never got behind the camera again. In 1971, he published his autobiography, *The Name Above the Title*.

Although Frank Capra does not have a reputation among critics equal to those of other directors, his best films are still popular with audiences, especially with young people who identify with Capra's heroes. In the end it is probably his simple vision—combined with a mastery of the film form itself—that has made him so enduringly popular.

For More Information

Capra, Frank. *The Name above the Title; an Autobiography*. New York: Macmillan, 1971. Reprint, New York: Da Capo Press, 1997.

McBride, Joseph. *Frank Capra: The Catastrophe of Success*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1992.

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY



contents

Entries by Nationality xvii

Reader's Guide xxxi

Volume 1: A–Ba

Hank Aaron	1	Aeschylus	29
Ralph Abernathy	4	Spiro Agnew	31
Bella Abzug	7	Alvin Ailey	34
Chinua Achebe	10	Madeleine Albright	37
Abigail Adams	12	Louisa May Alcott	39
Ansel Adams	15	Alexander II	41
John Adams	17	Alexander the Great	43
Samuel Adams	20	Muhammad Ali	47
Joy Adamson	22	Woody Allen	49
Jane Addams	25	Isabel Allende	52
Alfred Adler	27	Julia Alvarez	54
		American Horse	57

Idi Amin	59	Lucille Ball	159
Hans Christian Andersen	62	David Baltimore	161
Carl David Anderson	64	Honoré de Balzac	164
Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	66	Benjamin Banneker	166
Marian Anderson	69	Frederick Banting	168
Fra Angelico	71	Klaus Barbie	170
Maya Angelou	73	Christiaan Barnard	173
Kofi Annan	76	Clara Barton	175
Susan B. Anthony	79	Count Basie	177
Virginia Apgar	81	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Benigno Aquino	84		
Yasir Arafat	86	<i>Volume 2: Be–Cap</i>	
Archimedes	89	Beatles	181
Hannah Arendt	91	William Beaumont	185
Jean-Bertrand Aristide	93	Simone de Beauvoir	187
Aristophanes	96	Samuel Beckett	189
Aristotle	98	Ludwig van Beethoven	192
Louis Armstrong	101	Menachem Begin	194
Neil Armstrong	102	Alexander Graham Bell	196
Benedict Arnold	105	Clyde Bellecourt	200
Mary Kay Ash	108	Saul Bellow	202
Arthur Ashe	110	William Bennett	204
Isaac Asimov	113	Ingmar Bergman	206
Fred Astaire	116	Irving Berlin	208
John Jacob Astor	118	Leonard Bernstein	210
Margaret Atwood	120	Chuck Berry	213
W. H. Auden	123	Mary McLeod Bethune	215
John James Audubon	125	Benazir Bhutto	218
Augustus	128	Owen Bieber	220
Aung San Suu Kyi	130	Billy the Kid	223
Jane Austen	132	Larry Bird	224
Baal Shem Tov	137	Shirley Temple Black	227
Charles Babbage	139	Elizabeth Blackwell	229
Johann Sebastian Bach	141	Tony Blair	232
Francis Bacon	143	William Blake	234
Roger Bacon	145	Konrad Bloch	237
Joan Baez	147	Judy Blume	239
F Lee Bailey	150	Humphrey Bogart	242
Josephine Baker	152	Julian Bond	244
George Balanchine	154	Daniel Boone	246
James Baldwin	156	John Wilkes Booth	248

William Booth	250	Al Capone	352
Lucrezia Borgia	252	Truman Capote	354
P. W. Botha	255	Frank Capra	357
Sandro Botticelli	257	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Margaret Bourke-White	259		
Boutros Boutros-Ghali	261	<i>Volume 3: Car–Da</i>	
Ray Bradbury	264	Lázaro Cárdenas	361
Ed Bradley	266	Stokely Carmichael	363
Mathew Brady	269	Andrew Carnegie	367
Johannes Brahms	271	Lewis Carroll	370
Louis Braille	273	Johnny Carson	372
Louis Brandeis	275	Kit Carson	374
Marlon Brando	278	Rachel Carson	377
Leonid Brezhnev	280	Jimmy Carter	379
Charlotte Brontë	283	George Washington Carver	383
Emily Brontë	284	Pablo Casals	386
Gwendolyn Brooks	286	Mary Cassatt	388
Helen Gurley Brown	289	Vernon and Irene Castle	390
James Brown	291	Fidel Castro	393
John Brown	294	Willa Cather	397
Rachel Fuller Brown	297	Catherine of Aragon	399
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	299	Catherine the Great	401
Robert Browning	302	Henry Cavendish	404
Pat Buchanan	305	Anders Celsius	407
Pearl S. Buck	308	Miguel de Cervantes	408
Buddha	310	Paul Cézanne	411
Ralph Bunche	312	Marc Chagall	414
Warren Burger	314	Wilt Chamberlain	416
Robert Burns	317	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	419
Aaron Burr	320	Charlie Chaplin	421
George Bush	323	Charlemagne	424
George W. Bush	326	Charles, Prince of Wales	427
Laura Bush	329	Ray Charles	430
Lord Byron	331	Geoffrey Chaucer	433
Julius Caesar	335	César Chávez	436
Caligula	338	Dennis Chavez	438
Maria Callas	340	Linda Chavez	440
Cab Calloway	342	Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	443
John Calvin	344	John Cheever	447
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	346	Anton Chekhov	449
Albert Camus	349	Dick Cheney	451

Mary Boykin Chesnut	454
Chiang Kai-shek	456
Julia Child	459
Shirley Chisholm	461
Frédéric Chopin	464
Jean Chrétien	467
Agatha Christie	469
Winston Churchill	472
Marcus Tullius Cicero	475
Liz Claiborne	478
Cleopatra VII	480
Bill Clinton	483
Hillary Rodham Clinton	487
Ty Cobb	490
Nat “King” Cole	492
Bessie Coleman	494
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	496
Marva Collins	499
Michael Collins	501
Confucius	503
Sean Connery	506
Joseph Conrad	508
Nicolaus Copernicus	510
Aaron Copland	513
Francis Ford Coppola	515
Bill Cosby	518
Jacques Cousteau	521
Noel Coward	523
Michael Crichton	525
Davy Crockett	527
Oliver Cromwell	529
Walter Cronkite	532
E. E. Cummings	535
Marie Curie	538
Roald Dahl	543
Dalai Lama	546
Salvador Dali	549
Clarence Darrow	551
Charles Darwin	554
Bette Davis	556
Miles Davis	558

Ossie Davis	561
Sammy Davis Jr.	563
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 4: De–Ga

James Dean	567
Claude Debussy	569
Ruby Dee	571
Daniel Defoe	574
Edgar Degas	576
Charles de Gaulle	579
F. W. de Klerk	581
Cecil B. DeMille	585
Deng Xiaoping	587
René Descartes	590
Hernando de Soto	592
John Dewey	594
Diana, Princess of Wales	597
Charles Dickens	600
Emily Dickinson	603
Denis Diderot	606
Joe DiMaggio	608
Walt Disney	611
Elizabeth Dole	613
Placido Domingo	616
Donatello	619
John Donne	621
Fyodor Dostoevsky	624
Frederick Douglass	626
Arthur Conan Doyle	629
Francis Drake	632
Alexandre Dumas	634
Paul Laurence Dunbar	636
Pierre du Pont	638
François Duvalier	640
Amelia Earhart	643
George Eastman	646
Clint Eastwood	648
Thomas Edison	650
Albert Einstein	654
Dwight D. Eisenhower	657

Mamie Eisenhower	661	Karl Friedrich Gauss	775
Joycelyn Elders	662	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
George Eliot	665		
T. S. Eliot	668	Volume 5: Ge–I	
Elizabeth I	672	Hans Geiger	779
Elizabeth II	675	Theodor Geisel	781
Duke Ellington	678	Genghis Khan	784
Ralph Waldo Emerson	680	J. Paul Getty	786
Desiderius Erasmus	683	Kahlil Gibran	788
Euclid	686	Althea Gibson	790
Euripides	688	Dizzy Gillespie	792
Medgar Evers	690	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	794
Gabriel Fahrenheit	695	Whoopi Goldberg	797
Fannie Farmer	696	William Golding	800
Louis Farrakhan	698	Samuel Gompers	801
William Faulkner	701	Jane Goodall	804
Dianne Feinstein	704	Benny Goodman	807
Enrico Fermi	707	Mikhail Gorbachev	809
Geraldine Ferraro	710	Berry Gordy Jr.	813
Bobby Fischer	713	Al Gore	816
Ella Fitzgerald	715	Jay Gould	818
F. Scott Fitzgerald	718	Stephen Jay Gould	821
Gustave Flaubert	721	Katharine Graham	824
Malcolm Forbes	723	Martha Graham	827
Henry Ford	725	Cary Grant	829
Francis of Assisi	729	Graham Greene	831
Benjamin Franklin	731	Wayne Gretzky	833
Sigmund Freud	735	Brothers Grimm	836
Betty Friedan	738	Woody Guthrie	838
Robert Frost	741	Alex Haley	843
John Kenneth Galbraith	745	Alexander Hamilton	846
Galen	748	Oscar Hammerstein	849
Galileo	750	John Hancock	852
George Gallup	753	George Frideric Handel	854
Indira Gandhi	754	Thomas Hardy	857
Mohandas Gandhi	758	Stephen Hawking	860
Gabriel García Márquez	762	Nathaniel Hawthorne	862
Judy Garland	764	William Randolph Hearst	865
Marcus Garvey	767	Werner Heisenberg	868
Bill Gates	769	Joseph Heller	870
Paul Gauguin	773	Lillian Hellman	872

Ernest Hemingway	875
Jimi Hendrix	878
Henry VIII	880
Patrick Henry	883
Audrey Hepburn	886
Katharine Hepburn	888
Herod the Great	891
William Herschel	893
Thor Heyerdahl	895
Edmund Hillary	898
S. E. Hinton	900
Hippocrates	902
Hirohito	904
Alfred Hitchcock	907
Adolf Hitler	909
Ho Chi Minh	912
Thomas Hobbes	915
Billie Holiday	918
Oliver Wendell Holmes	920
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	923
Homer	926
Soichiro Honda	929
bell hooks	931
Benjamin Hooks	933
Bob Hope	936
Anthony Hopkins	938
Lena Horne	940
Harry Houdini	943
Gordie Howe	946
Julia Ward Howe	949
Howard Hughes	951
Langston Hughes	954
Victor Hugo	957
Zora Neale Hurston	960
Saddam Hussein	962
Lee Iacocca	967
Henrik Ibsen	970
Imhotep	972
Washington Irving	975
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 6: J–L

Andrew Jackson	979
Jesse Jackson	983
Michael Jackson	986
Reggie Jackson	989
P. D. James	991
Thomas Jefferson	994
Mae Jemison	997
Jesus of Nazareth	1000
Jiang Zemin	1003
Joan of Arc	1005
Steve Jobs	1007
Elton John	1011
John Paul II	1013
Lyndon B. Johnson	1016
Magic Johnson	1020
Samuel Johnson	1023
Al Jolson	1025
James Earl Jones	1027
Quincy Jones	1029
Ben Jonson	1032
Michael Jordan	1034
James Joyce	1038
Benito Juárez	1040
Carl Jung	1043
Franz Kafka	1047
Wassily Kandinsky	1050
Immanuel Kant	1052
John Keats	1054
Helen Keller	1056
Gene Kelly	1058
Edward Kennedy	1061
John F. Kennedy	1064
John F. Kennedy Jr.	1069
Robert Kennedy	1071
Johannes Kepler	1074
Jack Kerouac	1076
Charles F. Kettering	1078
Ayatollah Khomeini	1081
Nikita Khrushchev	1083
B. B. King	1086

Billie Jean King	1089	Dolley Madison	1191
Coretta Scott King	1091	James Madison	1194
Martin Luther King Jr.	1094	Madonna	1197
Stephen King	1098	Ferdinand Magellan	1201
Rudyard Kipling	1101	Najib Mahfuz	1203
Henry Kissinger	1104	Norman Mailer	1205
Calvin Klein	1107	Bernard Malamud	1208
Kublai Khan	1109	Malcolm X	1210
Marquis de Lafayette	1113	David Mamet	1214
Lao Tzu	1115	Nelson Mandela	1216
Ralph Lauren	1117	Édouard Manet	1219
Emma Lazarus	1119	Wilma Mankiller	1221
Mary Leakey	1121	Mickey Mantle	1224
Bruce Lee	1124	Mao Zedong	1226
Spike Lee	1126	Rocky Marciano	1230
Tsung-Dao Lee	1129	Ferdinand Marcos	1233
Vladimir Lenin	1131	Marcus Aurelius	1236
Leonardo da Vinci	1136	Marie Antoinette	1238
C. S. Lewis	1139	Mark Antony	1240
Carl Lewis	1141	Thurgood Marshall	1243
Sinclair Lewis	1144	Karl Marx	1246
Roy Lichtenstein	1146	Mary, Queen of Scots	1249
Maya Lin	1148	Cotton Mather	1252
Abraham Lincoln	1150	Henri Matisse	1255
Charles Lindbergh	1154	Mayo Brothers	1258
Carl Linnaeus	1157	Willie Mays	1261
Joseph Lister	1159	Joseph McCarthy	1264
Andrew Lloyd Webber	1161	Hattie McDaniel	1267
Alain Locke	1163	John McEnroe	1270
John Locke	1166	Terry McMillan	1273
Jack London	1168	Aimee Semple McPherson	1275
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	1170	Margaret Mead	1277
Joe Louis	1173	Catherine de' Medici	1281
George Lucas	1175	Golda Meir	1284
Patrice Lumumba	1178	Rigoberta Menchú	1286
Martin Luther	1181	Felix Mendelssohn	1289
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Kweisi Mfume	1292
		Michelangelo	1295
Volume 7: M–Ne		Harvey Milk	1298
Douglas MacArthur	1185	John Stuart Mill	1301
Niccolò Machiavelli	1188	Edna St. Vincent Millay	1303

Arthur Miller	1305	Manuel Noriega	1401
Henry Miller	1308	Jessye Norman	1404
Slobodan Milosevic	1310	Nostradamus	1406
John Milton	1313	Rudolf Nureyev	1409
Joan Miró	1316	Joyce Carol Oates	1413
Molière	1318	Sandra Day O'Connor	1416
Claude Monet	1320	Georgia O'Keefe	1420
Thelonious Monk	1323	Laurence Olivier	1422
Marilyn Monroe	1325	Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	1425
Joe Montana	1327	Eugene O'Neill	1428
Montesquieu	1329	George Orwell	1430
Maria Montessori	1331	Ovid	1432
Thomas More	1334	Jesse Owens	1435
Jim Morrison	1336	Mohammad Reza Pahlavi	1439
Toni Morrison	1338	Arnold Palmer	1441
Samuel F. B. Morse	1341	Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus	1443
Moses	1343	Charlie Parker	1445
Grandma Moses	1345	Blaise Pascal	1447
Mother Teresa	1347	Louis Pasteur	1450
Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart	1350	Linus Pauling	1453
Hosni Mubarak	1353	Luciano Pavarotti	1456
Muhammad	1355	Ivan Pavlov	1459
Elijah Muhammad	1358	Anna Pavlova	1462
John Muir	1360	I. M. Pei	1464
Edvard Munch	1362	Pelé.	1467
Rupert Murdoch	1364	William Penn	1469
Benito Mussolini	1367	Pericles	1472
Vladimir Nabokov	1371	Eva Perón	1474
Ralph Nader	1373	Jean Piaget	1477
Napoleon Bonaparte	1376	Pablo Picasso	1479
Ogden Nash	1379	Sylvia Plath	1483
Nefertiti	1381	Plato	1485
Isaac Newton	1382	Pocahontas	1488
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Edgar Allan Poe	1490
 Volume 8: Ni–Re			
Friedrich Nietzsche	1387	Sidney Poitier	1493
Florence Nightingale	1390	Pol Pot	1495
Richard Nixon	1392	Marco Polo	1498
Alfred Nobel	1397	Juan Ponce de León	1501
Isamu Noguchi	1398	Alexander Pope	1502
		Cole Porter	1505
		Katherine Anne Porter	1507

Emily Post	1509	Richard Rodgers	1610
Colin Powell	1511	Auguste Rodin	1613
Dith Pran	1514	Will Rogers	1615
Elvis Presley	1517	Rolling Stones	1618
André Previn	1520	Eleanor Roosevelt	1621
Leontyne Price	1522	Franklin D. Roosevelt	1624
E. Annie Proulx	1524	Theodore Roosevelt	1628
Marcel Proust	1526	Diana Ross	1631
Ptolemy I	1528	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	1634
Joseph Pulitzer	1531	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	1636
George Pullman	1533	Carl Rowan	1639
Aleksandr Pushkin	1535	J. K. Rowling	1641
Vladimir Putin	1537	Peter Paul Rubens	1643
Pythagoras	1540	Wilma Rudolph	1646
Mu'ammad al-Qadhafi	1543	Salman Rushdie	1649
Walter Raleigh	1547	Babe Ruth	1651
Sri Ramakrishna	1550	Nolan Ryan	1653
A. Philip Randolph	1552	Albert Sabin	1657
Harun al-Rashid	1555	Carl Sagan	1659
Ronald Reagan	1557	Andrei Sakharov	1662
Christopher Reeve	1561	J. D. Salinger	1664
Erich Maria Remarque	1564	Jonas Salk	1667
Rembrandt	1566	George Sand	1669
Janet Reno	1568	Carl Sandburg	1671
Pierre Auguste Renoir	1571	Margaret Sanger	1673
Paul Revere	1574	Jean-Paul Sartre	1676
Index	xxxv	Oskar Schindler	1678
		Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	1681
Volume 9: Rh–S		Franz Schubert	1684
Cecil Rhodes	1577	Charles M. Schulz	1687
Condoleezza Rice	1580	Martin Scorsese	1690
Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	1583	Walter Scott	1693
Sally Ride	1585	Haile Selassie	1696
Leni Riefenstahl	1588	Selena	1698
Cal Ripken Jr.	1591	Sequoyah	1701
Diego Rivera	1593	William Shakespeare	1702
Paul Robeson	1596	George Bernard Shaw	1706
Maximilien de Robespierre	1599	Mary Shelley	1708
Smokey Robinson	1601	Percy Shelley	1711
John D. Rockefeller	1604	Beverly Sills	1714
Norman Rockwell	1607	Neil Simon	1716

Frank Sinatra	1719	Marshal Tito	1821
Upton Sinclair	1722	J. R. R. Tolkien	1824
Isaac Bashevis Singer	1724	Leo Tolstoy	1827
Bessie Smith	1727	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	1830
Socrates	1729	Eiji Toyoda	1832
Stephen Sondheim	1732	Harry S. Truman	1834
Sophocles	1734	Donald Trump	1837
Steven Spielberg	1737	Sojourner Truth	1840
Benjamin Spock	1740	Tu Fu	1843
Joseph Stalin	1743	Tutankhamen	1845
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	1747	Desmond Tutu	1847
Edith Stein	1749	Mark Twain	1850
Gertrude Stein	1752	John Updike	1855
John Steinbeck	1755	Vincent Van Gogh	1859
Robert Louis Stevenson	1757	Jan Vermeer	1862
Bram Stoker	1759	Jules Verne	1864
Oliver Stone	1761	Amerigo Vespucci	1867
Tom Stoppard	1764	Victoria	1869
Harriet Beecher Stowe	1766	Gore Vidal	1872
Antonio Stradivari	1769	Virgil	1874
Johann Strauss	1771	Antonio Vivaldi	1877
Igor Stravinsky	1773	Voltaire	1879
Barbra Streisand	1776	Wernher von Braun	1882
Sun Yat-sen	1779	Kurt Vonnegut	1884
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Richard Wagner	1889
		Alice Walker	1891
		Madame C. J. Walker	1894
		Barbara Walters	1897
		An Wang	1900
		Booker T. Washington	1903
		George Washington	1906
		James Watt	1910
		John Wayne	1913
		Daniel Webster	1916
		Noah Webster	1919
		Orson Welles	1922
		Eudora Welty	1925
		Edith Wharton	1928
		James Whistler	1929
		E. B. White	1932
		Walt Whitman	1935
Volume 10: T–Z			
Maria Tallchief	1785		
Amy Tan	1787		
Elizabeth Taylor	1790		
Peter Ilych Tchaikovsky	1792		
Alfred, Lord Tennyson	1795		
Valentina Tereshkova	1798		
William Makepeace Thackeray	1801		
Twyla Tharp	1804		
Clarence Thomas	1807		
Dylan Thomas	1810		
Henry David Thoreau	1813		
Jim Thorpe	1816		
James Thurber	1819		

Elie Wiesel	1938	Virginia Woolf	1962
Oscar Wilde	1940	William Wordsworth	1965
Laura Ingalls Wilder	1943	Wright Brothers	1969
Thornton Wilder	1946	Frank Lloyd Wright	1972
Tennessee Williams	1948	Richard Wright	1975
Woodrow Wilson	1951	William Butler Yeats	1979
Oprah Winfrey	1954	Boris Yeltsin	1982
Anna May Wong	1958	Paul Zindel	1987
Tiger Woods	1960	<i>Index</i>	xxxv



*entries by
nationality*

African American

Hank Aaron 1: 1
 Ralph Abernathy 1: 4
 Alvin Ailey 1: 34
 Muhammad Ali 1: 47
 Marian Anderson 1: 69
 Maya Angelou 1: 73
 Louis Armstrong 1: 101
 Arthur Ashe 1: 110
 Josephine Baker 1: 152
 James Baldwin 1: 156
 Benjamin Banneker 1: 166
 Count Basie 1: 177
 Chuck Berry 2: 213
 Mary McLeod Bethune 2: 215
 Julian Bond 2: 244
 Gwendolyn Brooks 2: 286

James Brown 2: 291
 Ralph Bunche 2: 312
 Stokely Carmichael 3: 363
 George Washington Carver 3: 383
 Wilt Chamberlain 3: 416
 Ray Charles 3: 430
 Benjamin Chavis Muhammad 3: 443
 Shirley Chisholm 3: 461
 Nat “King” Cole 3: 492
 Bessie Coleman 3: 494
 Marva Collins 3: 499
 Bill Cosby 3: 518
 Miles Davis 3: 558
 Ossie Davis 3: 561
 Sammy Davis Jr. 3: 563
 Ruby Dee 4: 571
 Frederick Douglass 4: 626

Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Jessye Norman	8: 1404
Joycelyn Elders	4: 662	Jesse Owens	8: 1435
Duke Ellington	4: 678	Charlie Parker	8: 1445
Medgar Evers	4: 690	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Louis Farrakhan	4: 698	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Althea Gibson	5: 790	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Alex Haley	5: 843	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Bessie Smith	9: 1727
bell hooks	5: 931	Sojourner Truth	10: 1840
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Alice Walker	10: 1891
Lena Horne	5: 940	Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Reggie Jackson	6: 989		
Mae Jemison	6: 997	<i>Albanian</i>	
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Mother Teresa	7: 1347
James Earl Jones	6: 1027		
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	<i>American</i>	
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Hank Aaron	1: 1
B. B. King	6: 1086	Ralph Abernathy	1: 4
Coretta Scott King	6: 1091	Bella Abzug	1: 7
Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094	Abigail Adams	1: 12
Spike Lee	6: 1126	Ansel Adams	1: 15
Carl Lewis	6: 1141	John Adams	1: 17
Alain Locke	6: 1163	Samuel Adams	1: 20
Malcolm X	7: 1210	Jane Addams	1: 25
Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Spiro Agnew	1: 31
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Alvin Ailey	1: 34
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Madeleine Albright	1: 37
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Louisa May Alcott	1: 39
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	Muhammad Ali	1: 47
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Woody Allen	1: 49
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Julia Alvarez	1: 54
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	American Horse	1: 57

Carl David Anderson	1: 64	Daniel Boone	2: 246
Marian Anderson	1: 69	John Wilkes Booth	2: 248
Maya Angelou	1: 73	Margaret Bourke-White	2: 259
Susan B. Anthony	1: 79	Ray Bradbury	2: 264
Virginia Apgar	1: 81	Ed Bradley	2: 266
Louis Armstrong	1: 101	Mathew Brady	2: 269
Neil Armstrong	1: 102	Louis Brandeis	2: 275
Benedict Arnold	1: 105	Marlon Brando	2: 278
Mary Kay Ash	1: 108	Gwendolyn Brooks	2: 286
Arthur Ashe	1: 110	Helen Gurley Brown	2: 289
Isaac Asimov	1: 113	James Brown	2: 291
Fred Astaire	1: 116	John Brown	2: 294
John Jacob Astor	1: 118	Rachel Fuller Brown	2: 297
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Pat Buchanan	2: 305
John James Audubon	1: 125	Pearl S. Buck	2: 308
Joan Baez	1: 147	Ralph Bunche	2: 312
F. Lee Bailey	1: 150	Warren Burger	2: 314
Josephine Baker	1: 152	Aaron Burr	2: 320
George Balanchine	1: 154	George Bush	2: 323
James Baldwin	1: 156	George W. Bush	2: 326
Lucille Ball	1: 159	Laura Bush	2: 329
David Baltimore	1: 161	Maria Callas	2: 340
Benjamin Banneker	1: 166	Cab Calloway	2: 342
Clara Barton	1: 175	Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Count Basie	1: 177	Al Capone	2: 352
William Beaumont	2: 185	Truman Capote	2: 354
Alexander Graham Bell	2: 196	Frank Capra	2: 357
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200	Stokely Carmichael	3: 363
Saul Bellow	2: 202	Andrew Carnegie	3: 367
William Bennett	2: 204	Johnny Carson	3: 372
Irving Berlin	2: 208	Kit Carson	3: 374
Leonard Bernstein	2: 210	Rachel Carson	3: 377
Chuck Berry	2: 213	Jimmy Carter	3: 379
Mary McLeod Bethune	2: 215	George Washington Carver	3: 383
Owen Bieber	2: 220	Mary Cassatt	3: 388
Billy the Kid	2: 223	Irene Castle	3: 390
Larry Bird	2: 224	Willa Cather	3: 397
Shirley Temple Black	2: 227	Wilt Chamberlain	3: 416
Judy Blume	2: 239	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	3: 419
Humphrey Bogart	2: 242	Ray Charles	3: 430
Julian Bond	2: 244	César Chávez	3: 436

Dennis Chavez	3: 438	Thomas Edison	4: 650
Linda Chavez	3: 440	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	3: 443	Dwight D. Eisenhower	4: 657
John Cheever	3: 447	Mamie Eisenhower	4: 661
Dick Cheney	3: 451	Joycelyn Elders	4: 662
Mary Boykin Chesnut	3: 454	T. S. Eliot	4: 668
Julia Child	3: 459	Duke Ellington	4: 678
Shirley Chisholm	3: 461	Ralph Waldo Emerson	4: 680
Liz Claiborne	3: 478	Medgar Evers	4: 690
Bill Clinton	3: 483	Fannie Farmer	4: 696
Hillary Rodham Clinton	3: 487	Louis Farrakhan	4: 698
Ty Cobb	3: 490	William Faulkner	4: 701
Nat “King” Cole	3: 492	Dianne Feinstein	4: 704
Bessie Coleman	3: 494	Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Marva Collins	3: 499	Geraldine Ferraro	4: 710
Aaron Copland	3: 513	Bobby Fischer	4: 713
Francis Ford Coppola	3: 515	Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715
Bill Cosby	3: 518	F. Scott Fitzgerald	4: 718
Michael Crichton	3: 525	Malcolm Forbes	4: 723
Davy Crockett	3: 527	Henry Ford	4: 725
Walter Cronkite	3: 532	Benjamin Franklin	4: 731
E. E. Cummings	3: 535	Betty Friedan	4: 738
Clarence Darrow	3: 551	Robert Frost	4: 741
Bette Davis	3: 556	John Kenneth Galbraith	4: 745
Miles Davis	3: 558	George Gallup	4: 753
Ossie Davis	3: 561	Judy Garland	4: 764
Sammy Davis Jr.	3: 563	Bill Gates	4: 769
James Dean	4: 567	Theodor Geisel	5: 781
Ruby Dee	4: 571	J. Paul Getty	5: 786
Cecil B. DeMille	4: 585	Althea Gibson	5: 790
John Dewey	4: 594	Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792
Emily Dickinson	4: 603	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	5: 794
Joe DiMaggio	4: 608	Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797
Walt Disney	4: 611	Samuel Gompers	5: 801
Elizabeth Dole	4: 613	Benny Goodman	5: 807
Frederick Douglass	4: 626	Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813
Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Al Gore	5: 816
Pierre Du Pont	4: 638	Jay Gould	5: 818
Amelia Earhart	4: 643	Stephen Jay Gould	5: 821
George Eastman	4: 646	Katharine Graham	5: 824
Clint Eastwood	4: 648	Martha Graham	5: 827

Woody Guthrie	5: 838	Helen Keller	6: 1056
Alex Haley	5: 843	Gene Kelly	6: 1058
Alexander Hamilton	5: 846	Edward Kennedy	6: 1061
Oscar Hammerstein	5: 849	John F. Kennedy	6: 1064
John Hancock	5: 852	John F. Kennedy Jr.	6: 1069
Nathaniel Hawthorne	5: 862	Robert Kennedy	6: 1071
William Randolph Hearst	5: 865	Jack Kerouac	6: 1076
Joseph Heller	5: 870	Charles F. Kettering	6: 1078
Lillian Hellman	5: 872	B. B. King	6: 1086
Ernest Hemingway	5: 875	Billie Jean King	6: 1089
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Coretta Scott King	6: 1091
Patrick Henry	5: 883	Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094
Katharine Hepburn	5: 888	Stephen King	6: 1098
S. E. Hinton	5: 900	Henry Kissinger	6: 1104
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Calvin Klein	6: 1107
Oliver Wendell Holmes	5: 920	Ralph Lauren	6: 1117
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	5: 923	Emma Lazarus	6: 1119
bell hooks	5: 931	Bruce Lee	6: 1124
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Spike Lee	6: 1126
Bob Hope	5: 936	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Lena Horne	5: 940	Carl Lewis	6: 1141
Harry Houdini	5: 943	Sinclair Lewis	6: 1144
Julia Ward Howe	5: 949	Roy Lichtenstein	6: 1146
Howard Hughes	5: 951	Abraham Lincoln	6: 1150
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Charles Lindbergh	6: 1154
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Alain Locke	6: 1163
Lee Iacocca	5: 967	Jack London	6: 1168
Washington Irving	5: 975	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	6: 1170
Andrew Jackson	6: 979	Joe Louis	6: 1173
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	George Lucas	6: 1175
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Douglas MacArthur	7: 1185
Reggie Jackson	6: 989	Dolley Madison	7: 1191
Thomas Jefferson	6: 994	James Madison	7: 1194
Mae Jemison	6: 997	Madonna	7: 1197
Steve Jobs	6: 1007	Norman Mailer	7: 1205
Lyndon B. Johnson	6: 1016	Bernard Malamud	7: 1390
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Malcolm X	7: 1210
Al Jolson	6: 1025	David Mamet	7: 1214
James Earl Jones	6: 1027	Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	Mickey Mantle	7: 1224
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Rocky Marciano	7: 1230

Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Pocahontas	8: 1488
Cotton Mather	7: 1252	Edgar Allan Poe	8: 1490
Mayo Brothers	7: 1258	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Cole Porter	8: 1505
Joseph McCarthy	7: 1264	Katherine Anne Porter	8: 1507
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Emily Post	8: 1509
John McEnroe	7: 1270	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Elvis Presley	8: 1517
Aimee Semple McPherson	7: 1275	André Previn	8: 1520
Margaret Mead	7: 1277	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	E. Annie Proulx	8: 1524
Harvey Milk	7: 1298	Joseph Pulitzer	8: 1531
Edna St. Vincent Millay	7: 1303	George Pullman	8: 1533
Arthur Miller	7: 1305	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Henry Miller	7: 1308	Ronald Reagan	8: 1557
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Christopher Reeve	8: 1561
Marilyn Monroe	7: 1325	Erich Maria Remarque	8: 1564
Joe Montana	7: 1327	Janet Reno	8: 1568
Jim Morrison	7: 1336	Paul Revere	8: 1574
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Samuel F. B. Morse	7: 1341	Sally Ride	9: 1585
Grandma Moses	7: 1345	Cal Ripken, Jr.	9: 1591
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
John Muir	7: 1360	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Vladimir Nabokov	7: 1371	John D. Rockefeller	9: 1604
Ralph Nader	7: 1373	Norman Rockwell	9: 1607
Ogden Nash	7: 1379	Richard Rodgers	9: 1610
Richard Nixon	8: 1392	Will Rogers	9: 1615
Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398	Eleanor Roosevelt	9: 1621
Jessye Norman	8: 1404	Franklin D. Roosevelt	9: 1624
Joyce Carol Oates	8: 1413	Theodore Roosevelt	9: 1628
Sandra Day O'Connor	8: 1416	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Georgia O'Keeffe	8: 1420	Carl Rowan	9: 1639
Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	8: 1425	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Eugene O'Neill	8: 1428	Babe Ruth	9: 1651
Jesse Owens	8: 1435	Nolan Ryan	9: 1653
Arnold Palmer	8: 1441	Albert Sabin	9: 1657
Charlie Parker	8: 1445	Carl Sagan	9: 1659
Linus Pauling	8: 1453	J. D. Salinger	9: 1664
I. M. Pei	8: 1464	Jonas Salk	9: 1667
Sylvia Plath	8: 1483	Carl Sandburg	9: 1671

Margaret Sanger	9: 1673	An Wang	10: 1900
Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	9: 1681	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Charles M. Schulz	9: 1687	George Washington	10: 1906
Martin Scorsese	9: 1690	John Wayne	10: 1913
Selena	9: 1698	Daniel Webster	10: 1916
Sequoyah	9: 1701	Noah Webster	10: 1919
Beverly Sills	9: 1714	Orson Welles	10: 1922
Neil Simon	9: 1716	Eudora Welty	10: 1925
Frank Sinatra	9: 1719	Edith Wharton	10: 1928
Upton Sinclair	9: 1722	James Whistler	10: 1929
Isaac Bashevis Singer	9: 1724	E. B. White	10: 1932
Bessie Smith	9: 1727	Walt Whitman	10: 1935
Stephen Sondheim	9: 1732	Elie Wiesel	10: 1938
Steven Spielberg	9: 1737	Laura Ingalls Wilder	10: 1943
Benjamin Spock	9: 1740	Thornton Wilder	10: 1946
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	9: 1747	Tennessee Williams	10: 1948
Gertrude Stein	9: 1752	Woodrow Wilson	10: 1951
John Steinbeck	9: 1755	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Oliver Stone	9: 1761	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Harriet Beecher Stowe	9: 1766	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Igor Stravinsky	9: 1773	Wright Brothers	10: 1969
Barbra Streisand	9: 1776	Frank Lloyd Wright	10: 1972
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Amy Tan	10: 1787	Paul Zindel	10: 1987
Elizabeth Taylor	10: 1790		
Twyla Tharp	10: 1804	<i>Arabian</i>	
Clarence Thomas	10: 1807	Muhammad	7: 1355
Henry David Thoreau	10: 1813		
Jim Thorpe	10: 1816	<i>Argentine</i>	
James Thurber	10: 1819	Eva Perón	8: 1474
Harry S. Truman	10: 1834		
Donald Trump	10: 1837	<i>Asian American</i>	
Sojourner Truth	10: 1840	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Mark Twain	10: 1850	Maya Lin	6: 1148
John Updike	10: 1855	Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398
Gore Vidal	10: 1872	I. M. Pei	8: 1464
Wernher von Braun	10: 1882	Amy Tan	10: 1787
Kurt Vonnegut	10: 1884	An Wang	10: 1900
Alice Walker	10: 1891	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Barbara Walters	10: 1897		

Australian

Rupert Murdoch 7: 1364

Austrian

Joy Adamson 1: 22

Alfred Adler 1: 27

Sigmund Freud 4: 735

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart 7: 1350

Franz Schubert 9: 1684

Johann Strauss 9: 1771

Belgian

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886

Brazilian

Pelé 8: 1467

Burmese

Aung San Suu Kyi 1: 130

Cambodian

Pol Pot 8: 1495

Dith Pran 8: 1514

Canadian

Margaret Atwood 1: 120

Frederick Banting 1: 168

Jean Chrétien 3: 467

John Kenneth Galbraith 4: 745

Wayne Gretzky 5: 833

Gordie Howe 5: 946

Aimee Semple McPherson 7: 1275

Chilean

Isabel Allende 1: 52

Chinese

Chiang Kai-shek 3: 456

Confucius 3: 503

Deng Xiaoping 4: 587

Jiang Zemin 6: 1003

Lao Tzu 6: 1115

Tsung-Dao Lee 6: 1129

Mao Zedong 7: 1226

I. M. Pei 8: 1464

Sun Yat-sen 9: 1779

Tu Fu 10: 1843

An Wang 10: 1900

Colombian

Gabriel García Márquez 7: 762

Congolese

Patrice Lumumba 6: 1178

Cuban

Fidel Castro 3: 393

Czech

Madeleine Albright 1: 37

Franz Kafka 6: 1047

Tom Stoppard 9: 1764

Danish

Hans Christian Andersen 1: 62

Dutch

Desiderius Erasmus 4: 683

Rembrandt 8: 1566

Vincent Van Gogh 10: 1859

Egyptian

Boutros Boutros-Ghali 2: 261

Cleopatra VII 3: 480

Imhotep 5: 972

Najib Mahfuz 7: 1203

Moses 7: 1343

Hosni Mubarak 7: 1353

Nefertiti 7: 1381

Tutankhamen 10: 1845

English

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	1: 66	Cary Grant	5: 829
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Graham Greene	5: 831
Jane Austen	1: 132	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Charles Babbage	1: 139	Thomas Hardy	5: 857
Francis Bacon	1: 143	Stephen Hawking	5: 860
Roger Bacon	1: 145	Henry VIII	5: 880
Beatles	2: 181	Alfred Hitchcock	5: 907
Elizabeth Blackwell	2: 229	Thomas Hobbes	5: 915
William Blake	2: 234	P. D. James	6: 991
William Booth	2: 250	Elton John	6: 1011
Charlotte Brontë	2: 283	Samuel Johnson	6: 1023
Emily Brontë	2: 284	Ben Jonson	6: 1032
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	2: 299	John Keats	6: 1054
Robert Browning	2: 302	Rudyard Kipling	6: 1101
Lord Byron	2: 331	Mary Leakey	6: 1121
Lewis Carroll	3: 370	Joseph Lister	6: 1159
Vernon Castle	3: 390	Andrew Lloyd Webber	6: 1161
Henry Cavendish	3: 404	John Locke	6: 1166
Charlie Chaplin	3: 421	John Stuart Mill	7: 1301
Charles, Prince of Wales	3: 427	John Milton	7: 1313
Geoffrey Chaucer	3: 433	Thomas More	7: 1334
Agatha Christie	3: 469	Isaac Newton	7: 1382
Winston Churchill	3: 472	Florence Nightingale	8: 1390
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	3: 496	Laurence Olivier	8: 1422
Joseph Conrad	3: 508	George Orwell	8: 1430
Noel Coward	3: 523	William Penn	8: 1469
Oliver Cromwell	3: 529	Alexander Pope	8: 1502
Charles Darwin	3: 554	Walter Raleigh	8: 1547
Daniel Defoe	4: 574	Cecil Rhodes	9: 1577
Diana, Princess of Wales	4: 597	Rolling Stones	9: 1618
Charles Dickens	4: 600	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	9: 1634
John Donne	4: 621	J. K. Rowling	9: 1641
Arthur Conan Doyle	4: 629	William Shakespeare	9: 1702
Francis Drake	4: 632	Mary Shelley	9: 1708
George Eliot	4: 665	Percy Shelley	9: 1711
T. S. Eliot	4: 668	Tom Stoppard	9: 1764
Elizabeth I	4: 672	Alfred, Lord Tennyson	10: 1795
Elizabeth II	4: 675	William Makepeace Thackeray	10: 1801
William Golding	5: 800	J. R. R. Tolkien	10: 1824
Jane Goodall	5: 804	Victoria	10: 1869
		Oscar Wilde	10: 1940

Virginia Woolf 10: 1963
William Wordsworth 10: 1965

Ethiopian

Haile Selassie 9: 1697

Filipino

Benigno Aquino 1: 84
Ferdinand Marcos 7: 1233

Flemish

Peter Paul Rubens 9: 1643

Frankish

Charlemagne 3: 424

French

John James Audubon 1: 125
Honoré de Balzac 1: 164
Simone de Beauvoir 2: 187
Louis Braille 2: 273
John Calvin 2: 344
Albert Camus 2: 349
Paul Cézanne 3: 411
Jacques Cousteau 3: 521
Marie Curie 3: 538
Claude Debussy 4: 569
Edgar Degas 4: 576
Charles de Gaulle 4: 579
René Descartes 4: 590
Denis Diderot 4: 606
Alexandre Dumas 4: 634
Gustave Flaubert 4: 721
Paul Gauguin 4: 773
Victor Hugo 5: 957
Joan of Arc 6: 1005
Marquis de Lafayette 6: 1113
Édouard Manet 7: 1219
Marie Antoinette 7: 1238
Henri Matisse 7: 1255

Molière 7: 1318
Claude Monet 7: 1320
Montesquieu 7: 1329
Napoleon Bonaparte 7: 1376
Nostradamus 8: 1406
Blaise Pascal 8: 1447
Louis Pasteur 8: 1450
Marcel Proust 8: 1526
Pierre Auguste Renoir 8: 1571
Armand-Jean du Plessis
 de Richelieu 9: 1583
Maximilien de Robespierre 9: 1599
Auguste Rodin 9: 1613
Jean-Jacques Rousseau 9: 1636
George Sand 9: 1669
Jean-Paul Sartre 9: 1676
Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec 10: 1830
Jan Vermeer 10: 1862
Jules Verne 10: 1864
Voltaire 10: 1879

German

Hannah Arendt 1: 91
John Jacob Astor 1: 118
Johann Sebastian Bach 1: 141
Klaus Barbie 1: 170
Ludwig van Beethoven 2: 192
Konrad Bloch 2: 237
Johannes Brahms 2: 271
Catherine the Great 3: 401
Albert Einstein 4: 654
Gabriel Fahrenheit 4: 695
Karl Friedrich Gauss 4: 775
Hans Geiger 5: 779
Brothers Grimm 5: 836
George Frideric Handel 5: 854
Werner Heisenberg 5: 868
William Herschel 5: 893
Adolf Hitler 5: 909
Franz Kafka 6: 1047
Immanuel Kant 6: 1052

Johannes Kepler 6: 1074
 Henry Kissinger 6: 1104
 Martin Luther 6: 1181
 Karl Marx 7: 1246
 Felix Mendelssohn 7: 1289
 Friedrich Nietzsche 8: 1387
 André Previn 8: 1520
 Erich Maria Remarque 8: 1564
 Leni Riefenstahl 9: 1588
 Oskar Schindler 9: 1678
 Edith Stein 9: 1749
 Wernher von Braun 10: 1882
 Richard Wagner 10: 1889

Ghanian

Kofi Annan 1: 76

Greek

Aeschylus 1: 29
 Archimedes 1: 89
 Aristophanes 1: 96
 Aristotle 1: 98
 Euclid 4: 686
 Euripides 4: 688
 Galen 4: 748
 Hippocrates 5: 902
 Homer 5: 926
 Pericles 8: 1472
 Plato 8: 1485
 Pythagoras 8: 1540
 Socrates 9: 1729
 Sophocles 9: 1734

Guatemalan

Rigoberta Menchú 7: 1286

Haitian

Jean-Bertrand Aristide 1: 93
 François Duvalier 4: 640

Hispanic American

César Chávez 3: 436
 Dennis Chavez 3: 438
 Linda Chavez 3: 440
 Selena 9: 1698

Hungarian

Joseph Pulitzer 8: 1531

Indian

Buddha 2: 310
 Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar 3: 419
 Indira Gandhi 4: 754
 Mohandas Gandhi 4: 758
 Sri Ramakrishna 8: 1550
 Salman Rushdie 9: 1649

Iranian

Ayatollah Khomeini 6: 1081
 Mohammad Reza Pahlavi 8: 1439

Iraqi

Saddam Hussein 5: 962

Irish

Samuel Beckett 2: 189
 Michael Collins 3: 501
 James Joyce 6: 1038
 C. S. Lewis 6: 1139
 George Bernard Shaw 9: 1706
 Bram Stoker 9: 1759
 Oscar Wilde 10: 1940
 William Butler Yeats 10: 1979

Israeli

Menachem Begin 2: 194
 Golda Meir 7: 1284

Italian

Fra Angelico 1: 71

Lucrezia Borgia	2: 252
Sandro Botticelli	2: 257
Caligula	2: 338
Frank Capra	2: 357
Donatello	4: 619
Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Francis of Assisi	4: 729
Galileo	4: 750
Leonardo da Vinci	6: 1136
Niccolò Machiavelli	7: 1188
Catherine de' Medici	7: 1281
Michelangelo	7: 1295
Maria Montessori	7: 1331
Benito Mussolini	7: 1367
Luciano Pavarotti	8: 1456
Antonio Stradivari	9: 1769
Amerigo Vespucci	10: 1867
Antonio Vivaldi	10: 1877

Jamaican

Marcus Garvey	4: 767
-------------------------	--------

Japanese

Hirohito	5: 904
Soichiro Honda	5: 929
Eiji Toyoda	10: 1832

Judean

Herod the Great	5: 891
---------------------------	--------

Lebanese

Kahlil Gibran	5: 788
-------------------------	--------

Libyan

Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	8: 1543
-------------------------------	---------

Lithuanian

Al Jolson	6: 1025
---------------------	---------

Macedonian

Alexander the Great	1: 43
Ptolemy I	8: 1528

Mexican

Lázaro Cárdenas	3: 361
Benito Juárez	6: 1040
Diego Rivera	9: 1593

Mongolian

Genghis Khan	5: 784
Kublai Khan	6: 1109

Native American

American Horse	1: 57
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Pocahontas	8: 1488
Sequoyah	9: 1701
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785

New Zealander

Edmund Hillary	5: 898
--------------------------	--------

Nigerian

Chinua Achebe	1: 10
-------------------------	-------

Norwegian

Thor Heyerdahl	5: 895
Henrik Ibsen	5: 970
Edvard Munch	7: 1362

Pakistani

Benazir Bhutto	2: 218
--------------------------	--------

Palestinian

Yasir Arafat	1: 86
------------------------	-------

Panamanian

Manuel Noriega 8: 1401

Persian

Harun al-Rashid 8: 1555

Polish

Baal Shem Tov 1: 137
Menachem Begin 2: 194
Frédéric Chopin 3: 464
Joseph Conrad 3: 508
Nicolaus Copernicus 3: 510
Marie Curie 3: 538
John Paul II 6: 1013
Albert Sabin 9: 1657
Isaac Bashevis Singer 9: 1724

Portuguese

Ferdinand Magellan 7: 1201

Roman

Augustus 1: 128
Julius Caesar 2: 335
Marcus Tullius Cicero 3: 475
Jesus of Nazareth 6: 1000
Marcus Aurelius 7: 1236
Mark Antony 7: 1240
Ovid 8: 1432
Virgil 10: 1874

Romanian

Elie Wiesel 10: 1939

Russian

Alexander II 1: 41
Isaac Asimov 1: 113
George Balanchine 1: 154
Irving Berlin 2: 208
Leonid Brezhnev 2: 280
Catherine the Great 3: 401

Marc Chagall 3: 414
Anton Chekhov 3: 449
Fyodor Dostoevsky 4: 624
Mikhail Gorbachev 5: 809
Wassily Kandinsky 6: 1050
Nikita Khrushchev 6: 1083
Vladimir Lenin 6: 1131
Vladimir Nabokov 7: 1371
Rudolf Nureyev 8: 1409
Ivan Pavlov 8: 1459
Anna Pavlova 8: 1462
Aleksandr Pushkin 8: 1535
Vladimir Putin 8: 1537
Andrei Sakharov 9: 1662
Joseph Stalin 9: 1743
Igor Stravinsky 9: 1773
Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky 10: 1792
Valentina Tereshkova 10: 1798
Leo Tolstoy 10: 1827
Boris Yeltsin 10: 1982

Scottish

Alexander Graham Bell 2: 196
Tony Blair 2: 232
Robert Burns 2: 317
Andrew Carnegie 3: 367
Sean Connery 3: 506
Arthur Conan Doyle 4: 629
Mary, Queen of Scots 7: 1249
John Muir 7: 1360
Walter Scott 9: 1693
Robert Louis Stevenson 9: 1757
James Watt 10: 1910

Serbian

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310

South African

Christiaan Barnard 1: 173
P. W. Botha 2: 255
F. W. de Klerk 4: 581

Nelson Mandela 7: 1216
Desmond Tutu 10: 1847

Spanish

Pablo Casals 3: 386
Catherine of Aragon 3: 399
Miguel de Cervantes 3: 408
Salvador Dali 3: 549
Hernando de Soto 4: 592
Placido Domingo 4: 616
Joan Miró 7: 1316
Pablo Picasso 8: 1479
Juan Ponce de León 8: 1501

Swedish

Ingmar Bergman 2: 206
Anders Celsius 3: 407
Carl Linnaeus 6: 1157
Alfred Nobel 8: 1397

Swiss

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886
Carl Jung 6: 1043
Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus 8: 1443
Jean Piaget 8: 1477

Tibetan

Dalai Lama 3: 546

Trinidadian

Stokely Carmichael 3: 363

Ugandan

Idi Amin 1: 59

Venetian

Marco Polo 8: 1498

Vietnamese

Ho Chi Minh 5: 913

Welsh

Roald Dahl 3: 543
Anthony Hopkins 5: 938
Dylan Thomas 10: 1810

Yugoslav

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310
Marshal Tito 10: 1821



reader's guide

U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography features 750 biographies of notable historic and contemporary figures from around the world. Chosen from American history, world history, literature, science and math, arts and entertainment, and the social sciences, the entries focus on the people studied most often in middle school and high school, as identified by teachers and media specialists.

The biographies are arranged alphabetically across ten volumes. The two- to four-page entries cover the early lives, influences, and careers of notable men and women of diverse fields and ethnic groups. Each essay includes birth and death information in the header and concludes with a list of sources

for further information. A contents section lists biographees by their nationality. Nearly 750 photographs and illustrations are featured, and a general index provides quick access to the people and subjects discussed throughout *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

Special thanks

Much appreciation goes to Mary Alice Anderson, media specialist at Winona Middle School in Winona, Minnesota, and Nina Levine, library media specialist at Blue Mountain Middle School in Cortlandt Manor, New York, for their assistance in developing the entry list. Many thanks also go to the following people for their important editorial contri-

butions: Taryn Benbow-Pfalzgraf (proofreading), Jodi Essey-Stapleton (copyediting and proofing), Margaret Haerens (proofreading), Courtney Mroch (copyediting), and Theresa Murray (copyediting and indexing). Special gratitude goes to Linda Mahoney at LM Design for her excellent typesetting work and her flexible attitude.

Comments and suggestions

We welcome your comments on the *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*. Please write: Editors, *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*, U•X•L, 27500 Drake Road, Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535; call toll-free: 1-800-877-4253; fax to 248-699-8097; or send e-mail via www.gale.com.



LÁZARO CÁRDENAS

Born: May 21, 1895

Jiquilpán de Juárez, Michoacán, Mexico

Died: October 19, 1970

Mexico City, Mexico

Mexican president and revolutionary

Lázaro Cárdenas was a Mexican revolutionary leader and president. During his administration he carried out major land reforms that benefited the Mexican people and brought the country's oil industry back under Mexican control, thus restoring the people's faith in the revolution.

Early life

Lázaro Cárdenas was born of mixed white and Tarascan Indian ancestry in Jiquilpán de Juárez in the state of Michoacán, Mexico, on May 21, 1895. The oldest son of a shopkeeper, he left school after fourth grade to work in a tax office. As a young man Cárdenas was quiet and serious. After his father died in 1911, he became the father figure for his seven brothers and sisters, several of whom would follow him into military and political careers.

Cárdenas was a fierce and ambitious patriot and was greatly affected when the Mexican Revolution (1910–11) broke out. During this time Cárdenas was working at a local jail in order to support his family. In 1913 he released his prisoners and together they joined the



Lázaro Cárdenas.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

maderistas, the rebels resisting the government of General Victoriano Huerta (1854–1916).

Military career

After the Convention of Aguascalientes, Cárdenas fought briefly in the army of Pancho Villa (1878–1923), who also was fighting against Huerta. In 1915 Cárdenas joined the Constitutionalists, and in the revolt of Agua Prieta he sided with Álvaro Obregón (1880–1928) against Villa. In 1923 he was captured. He later escaped, and was then forced to hide out in Guadalajara, Mexico, for several months. Soon afterwards Cárdenas quickly rose through the military ranks.

During the 1923 rebellion he commanded loyal forces in Michoacán. The following year he was promoted to brigadier general and given command of military operations in Huasteca, Michoacán, and the Isthmus. Cárdenas's rise to military power was greatly helped by his friendship with his commanding general, Plutarco Elias Calles (1877–1945).

Political career

By 1924 Calles had become president of Mexico. Thanks in part to his relationship with the president, in 1928 Cárdenas became governor of Michoacán, his home state. He served there until 1932. As governor he actively supported land reform, developed education, and aided labor and peasant organizations through his radical group, Confederación Revolucionaria Michoacana de Trabajo. To his reputation as an honest military serviceman he added a similar reputation of serving the people of Mexico.

During the following years, Cárdenas served as minister of the government and as minister of war. Cárdenas showed great support for Calles during these years and his loyalty would soon pay off. In 1934 Calles effectively nominated Cárdenas as the presidential candidate for the National Revolutionary Party (PNR). Calles thought he would be able to control his old friend. By this time, however, the Depression (an extended period of economic hardship) had settled in across Mexico. People rallied Cárdenas as a reformer (someone pushing to change social policies) and he gained support for the presidency.

President of Mexico

Cárdenas won and entered office with a radical mandate, or command, in the new Six

Year Plan. He proceeded to carry it out and gave the people personal attention and patience. His six-year term was marked by maintaining his revolutionary faith. Much of his term was spent on the road visiting remote villages and listening to the complaints and ideas of the people of Mexico.

When Calles challenged his tolerance toward labor, Cárdenas forced him to leave Mexico. Labor gained new power as it reorganized under Lombardo Toledano (1894–1968) in the Mexican Confederation of Labor. Cárdenas confiscated forty-five million acres of land and distributed them to the ejidos, or peasant communities. The lands included new collective types with large financial and technical support in the cotton region of La Laguna and the henequen (a fiber that comes from the agave plant) area of Yucatán. The nationalization of the railroads was completed and turned over to governmental control. In 1938 petroleum holdings in Mexico owned by foreign countries were also nationalized. This action would be described as Mexico's declaration of economic independence.

Ending his career

In 1938 Cárdenas crushed the last significant regional revolt, which was led by Saturnino Cedillo in San Luis Potosi. Mexico then opened its doors to political exiles (those forced to leave a country for political reasons). These exiles included the Russian revolutionist Leon Trotsky (1879–1940) and a considerable number of Republican Spanish refugees. In the presidential election of 1940 Cárdenas backed moderately conservative Manuel Ávila Camacho (1897–1955) and served him as secretary of defense in 1943. For more than a quarter century Cárdenas remained a political force in Mexico.

In 1960, during the Bay of Pigs episode, where there was a failed attempt to assassinate Cuban prime minister Fidel Castro (1926–), Cárdenas took a strong pro-Castro position, but avoided getting involved in the matter. Cárdenas consistently disappointed those who wanted to link his name with violence and the disruption of the political process. In October 1968 he strongly urged the students to end violence. He remained a supporter of rapid reform, but by peaceful means. He died on October 19, 1970, in Mexico City, Mexico.

For More Information

Ashby, Joe C. *Organized Labor and the Mexican Revolution under Lázaro Cárdenas*. Chapel Hill, NC: University of North Carolina Press, 1967.

Cárdenas, Lázaro. *Epistolario de Lázaro Cárdenas*. Mexico: Siglo Veintiuno Editores, 1974.

Townsend, William Cameron. *Lázaro Cárdenas: Mexican Democrat*. 2nd ed. Waxhaw, NC: International Friendship, 1979.

Weyl, Nathaniel, and Sylvia Weyl. *The Reconquest of Mexico: The Years of Lázaro Cárdenas*. London: Oxford University Press, 1939.

STOKELY CARMICHAEL

Born: June 29, 1941

Port of Spain, Trinidad

Died: November 15, 1998

Conakry, Guinea

Trinidadian-born American civil rights activist



Stokely Carmichael.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Stokely Carmichael was a civil rights activist during the turbulent 1960s. He soared to fame by popularizing the phrase “Black Power.” Carmichael championed civil rights for African Americans in a rapidly changing world.

Inspiration in New York

Stokely Carmichael was born in Port of Spain, Trinidad, on June 29, 1941. His father moved his family to the United States when Stokely was only two years old. In New York City’s Harlem neighborhood, Carmichael’s self-described “hip” presence quickly made

him popular among his white, upper-class schoolmates. Later his family moved to the Bronx, where Carmichael soon discovered the lure of intellectual life after being admitted to the Bronx High School of Science, a school for gifted students.

Carmichael’s political interests began with the work of African American civil rights activist Bayard Rustin (1910–1987), whom he heard speak many times. At one point Carmichael volunteered to help Rustin organize African American workers in a paint factory. But the radical and unfriendly views of Rustin and other similar African American activists would eventually push Carmichael away from the movement.

The civil rights movement

While Carmichael was in school in the Bronx in the early 1960s, the civil rights movement exploded into the forefront of American culture. The Supreme Court declared that school segregation (separating people based on their race) was illegal. African Americans in Montgomery, Alabama, successfully ended segregation on the city’s buses through a yearlong boycott. During the boycott, they recruited others to stop using the buses until the companies changed their policies. During Carmichael’s senior year in high school, four African American freshmen from a school in North Carolina staged a famous sit-in, or peaceful protest, at the white-only lunch counter in a department store.

The action of these students captured the imagination of young Carmichael. He soon began participating in the movements around New York City. Carmichael also traveled to Virginia and South Carolina to join

sit-ins protesting discrimination (treating people differently based solely on their race).

Joining the movement

Carmichael refused offers to attend white colleges and decided to study at the historically black Howard University in Washington, D.C. At Howard, Carmichael majored in philosophy and became more and more involved in the civil rights movement.

Carmichael joined a local organization called the Nonviolent Action Group. This group was connected with an Atlanta-based civil rights organization, the Student Nonviolent Coordinating Committee (SNCC). Whenever he had free time, Carmichael traveled south to join the “freedom riders,” an activist group that rode interstate buses in an attempt to end segregation on buses and in bus terminals.

Although the “freedom riders” gained support in some parts of the country, they met resistance in other areas, especially the South. Some of the freedom rider buses were bombed or burned. The riders themselves were often beaten and jailed. In the spring of 1961, when Carmichael was twenty, he spent forty-nine days in a Jackson, Mississippi, jail. One observer said that Carmichael was so rebellious during this period that the sheriff and prison guards were relieved when he was released.

After graduating in 1964 with a bachelor’s degree in philosophy, Carmichael stayed in the South. He constantly participated in sit-ins, picketing, and voter registration drives (organized gatherings to help people register to vote). He was especially active in Lowndes County, Alabama, where he helped

found the Lowndes County Freedom Party, a political party that chose a black panther as its symbol. The symbol was a perfect choice to oppose the white rooster that symbolized the Alabama Democratic Party.

Turning from nonviolence

The turning point in Carmichael’s experience came as he watched when African American demonstrators were beaten and shocked with cattle prods by police. With his activism deepening and as he saw the violence toward both violent and nonviolent protesters, he began to distance himself from nonviolent methods, including those of Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968).

In 1965 Carmichael replaced the moderate John Lewis (1940–) as the president of the SNCC. He then joined Martin Luther King Jr. in his now famous “Freedom March.” King led thousands from Selma to Montgomery, Alabama, to register black voters. But Carmichael had trouble agreeing with King that the march should be nonviolent and that people from all races should participate. During this march Carmichael began to express his views about “Black Power” to the media. Many Americans reacted strongly to this slogan that some people believed was antiwhite and promoted violence.

“Black Power” and backlash

Carmichael’s ideas of “Black Power,” which he turned into the book *Black Power* (coauthored by Charles V. Hamilton), and his article “What We Want,” advanced the idea that racial equality was not the only answer to racism in America. Carmichael and Hamilton linked the struggle for African American empowerment, or the process of gaining

political power, in America to the end of imperialism worldwide (or the end of powerful countries forcing their authority on weaker countries, especially those in Africa).

With racial tensions at an all-time high, journalists demanded that Carmichael define the phrase “Black Power.” Soon Carmichael began to believe that no matter what his explanation, the American public would interpret it negatively. In one interview, Carmichael spoke of rallying African Americans to elect officials who would help the black community. However, Carmichael sometimes explained the term “Black Power” in a different way when he spoke to African American audiences. As James Haskins recorded in his book, *Profiles in Black Power* (1972), Carmichael explained to one crowd, “When you talk of ‘Black Power,’ you talk of building a movement that will smash everything Western civilization has created.” Carmichael and his movement continued to be seen by many in America as a movement that could spark a “Race War.”

With the civil rights movement in full swing, the SNCC became more of a way to spread Carmichael’s “Black Power” movement. When Carmichael declined to run for reelection as leader of the SNCC, however, the organization soon dissolved.

An international focus

By this time, Carmichael’s political attention had shifted as well. He began speaking out against what he called U.S. imperialism (domination of other nations) worldwide. Reports told of Carmichael traveling the world making statements against American policies in other countries, especially America’s involvement in the Vietnam War (1955–75), a

war fought in Vietnam in which the United States supported South Vietnam in its fight against a takeover by Communist North Vietnam. These reports only fueled dislike and fear of Carmichael in the United States.

In 1968, the radical and violent Oakland, California-based Black Panther Party made Carmichael their honorary prime minister. He resigned from that post the following year, rejecting Panther loyalty to white activists.

Carmichael then based himself in Washington, D.C., and continued to speak around the country. In May 1968 he married South African singer-activist Miriam Makeba.

Leaving America behind

In 1969 Carmichael left the United States for Conakry, Republic of Guinea, in West Africa. While in Guinea, Carmichael took the name Kwame Ture. Over the next decades, he founded the All-African Revolutionary Party.

Unlike many of his peers who emerged from the civil rights movement, Carmichael’s passion and beliefs always remained strong. He continued to support a revolution as the answer to the problems of racism and unfairness until his death from prostate cancer on November 15, 1998, in Conakry, Guinea.

For More Information

Carmichael, Stokely. *Stokely Speaks: Black Power to Pan-Africanism*. New York: Random House, 1971.

Carmichael, Stokely, and Charles V. Hamilton. *Black Power; the Politics of Liberation in America*. New York: Random House, 1967.

Cwiklik, Robert. *Stokely Carmichael and Black Power*. Brookfield, CT: Millbrook Press, 1993.

Zinn, Howard. *SNCC, The New Abolitionists*. Boston: Beacon Press, 1964.

ANDREW CARNEGIE

Born: November 25, 1835

Dunfermline, Scotland

Died: August 11, 1919

Lenox, Massachusetts

Scottish-born American industrialist and philanthropist

The Scottish-born American industrialist and philanthropist Andrew Carnegie was the leader of the American steel industry from 1873 to 1901. He donated large sums of his fortune to educational, cultural, and scientific institutions.

Youth and early manhood

Andrew Carnegie was born on November 25, 1835, in Dunfermline, Scotland, the son of William Carnegie, a weaver, and Margaret Morrison Carnegie. The invention of weaving machines replaced the work Carnegie's father did, and eventually the family was forced into poverty. In 1848 the family left Scotland and settled in Allegheny City, Pennsylvania. Carnegie's father found a job in a cotton factory, but he soon quit to return to his home handloom, making linens and trying to sell them door to door. Carnegie also worked in the cotton factory, but after his father died in 1855, his strong desire to help take care of the family

pushed him to educate himself. He became an avid reader, a theatergoer, and a lover of music.

Carnegie became a messenger boy for the Pittsburgh telegraph office. He later became a telegraph operator. Thomas A. Scott, superintendent of the western division of the Pennsylvania Railroad, made the eighteen-year-old Carnegie his secretary. Carnegie was soon earning enough salary to buy a house for his mother. During the Civil War (1861–65), when Scott was named assistant secretary of war in charge of transportation, Carnegie helped organize the military telegraph system. But he soon returned to Pittsburgh to take Scott's old job with the railroad.

A future in steel

Between 1865 and 1870 Carnegie made money through investments in several small iron mills and factories. He also traveled throughout England, selling the bonds of small United States railroads and bridge companies. Carnegie began to see that steel was eventually going to replace iron for the manufacture of rails, structural shapes, pipe, and wire. In 1873 he organized a steel rail company. The first steel furnace at Braddock, Pennsylvania, began to roll rails in 1874. Carnegie continued building by cutting prices, driving out competitors, shaking off weak partners, and putting earnings back into the company. He never went public (sold shares of his company in order to raise money). Instead he obtained capital (money) from profits—and, when necessary, from local banks—and he kept on growing, making heavy steel alone. By 1878 the company was valued at \$1.25 million.

In the 1880s Carnegie's purchases included a majority stake in the H. C. Frick



Andrew Carnegie.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Company, which had vast coal lands and over one thousand ovens in Connellsville, Pennsylvania, and the Homestead mills outside of Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania. Frick became his partner and eventually chairman of the Carnegie Company. Carnegie had moved to New York City in 1867 to be close to the marketing centers for steel products; Frick stayed in Pittsburgh as the general manager. They made a good team. Behind the scenes, Carnegie planned new projects, cost controls, and the improvement of plants; Frick was the working director who watched over the mass-production programs that helped keep prices down.

Carnegie spent his leisure time traveling. He also wrote several books, including *Triumphant Democracy* (1886), which pointed out the advantages of American life over the unequal societies of Britain and other European countries. To Carnegie access to education was the key to America's political stability and industrial accomplishments. In 1889 he published an article, "Wealth," stating his belief that rich men had a duty to use their money to improve the welfare of the community. Carnegie remained a bachelor until his mother died in 1886. A year later he married Louise Whitfield. They had one child together. The couple began to spend six months each year in Scotland, though Carnegie kept an eye on business developments and problems.

Trials of the 1890s

Carnegie's absence from the United States was a factor in the Homestead mill strike of 1892. After acquiring Homestead, Carnegie had invested in new plants and equipment, increased production, and automated many of the mill's operations, cutting down the number of workers that were needed. These workers belonged to a union, the Amalgamated Association of Iron and Steel Workers, with which the Carnegie Company had established wage and work agreements on a three-year basis. Carnegie believed that workers had a right to bargain with management through their unions. He also recognized the right to strike, as long as the action was conducted peacefully. He viewed strikes as trials of strength, with peaceful discussion resolving the conflict.

In contract talks during 1892, Frick wanted to lower the minimum wage because

of the need for fewer workers. The union would not accept this and organized a strike. Carnegie was in Scotland, but he had instructed Frick that if a strike occurred the plant was to be shut down. Frick decided to smash the union by hiring people from the Pinkerton Agency as replacement workers and by trying to open the company properties by force. Two barges carrying three hundred Pinkertons moved up the Monongahela River and were shot at from the shore. The Pinkertons fired back, but they eventually surrendered. Five strikers and three Pinkertons were killed, and there were many injuries. The strikers had won; the company property remained closed. Five days later the governor of Pennsylvania sent in soldiers to restore order and open the plant. The soldiers were eventually withdrawn, and two months later the union called off the strike. Carnegie was criticized for his lack of action.

In the 1890s Carnegie also began to meet with tougher competition from newer, bigger companies who were interested in controlled prices and sharing the market. Companies that he had sold to for years threatened to cut down their purchases unless he agreed to cooperate. These threats made him decide to fight back. He refused to enter into any agreements with other companies. Moreover, he decided to invade their territories by making similar products and by expanding his sales activities into the West. Eventually, though, he decided to sell his company to the newly formed U.S. Steel Corporation in 1901 for almost \$500 million. Carnegie's personal share was \$225 million.

Carnegie's philanthropy

In retirement, Carnegie began to set up trust funds "for the improvement of mankind." He built some three thousand public libraries all over the English-speaking world. In 1895 the Carnegie Institute of Pittsburgh was opened, housing an art gallery, a natural history museum, and a music hall. He also built a group of technical schools that make up the present-day Carnegie Mellon University. The Carnegie Institution of Washington was set up to encourage research in the natural and physical sciences. Carnegie Hall was built in New York City. The Foundation for the Advancement of Teaching was created to provide pensions for university professors. Carnegie also established the Endowment for International Peace to seek an end to war.

In all, Carnegie's donations totaled \$350 million. The continuation of his broad interests was put under the general charge of the Carnegie Corporation, with a donation of \$125 million. Carnegie died on August 11, 1919, at his summer home near Lenox, Massachusetts.

For More Information

Carnegie, Andrew. *The Autobiography of Andrew Carnegie*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1920.

Hacker, Louis M. *The World of Andrew Carnegie, 1865–1901*. Philadelphia: Lipincott, 1968.

Livesay, Harold C. *Andrew Carnegie and the Rise of Big Business*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1975.

Wall, Joseph F. *Andrew Carnegie*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1970.

LEWIS CARROLL

Born: January 27, 1832

Daresbury, Cheshire, England

Died: January 14, 1898

Guildford, Surrey, England

English church official, author, and mathematician

The English church official Lewis Carroll was the author of *Alice in Wonderland* and *Through the Looking Glass*, famous adventure stories for children that adults also enjoy. He was also a noted mathematician and photographer.

Early life and education

Lewis Carroll was born Charles Lutwidge Dodgson on January 27, 1832, the eldest son and third of eleven children born to Frances Jane Lutwidge and the Reverend Charles Dodgson. Carroll had a happy childhood. His mother was patient and gentle, and his father, despite his religious duties, tutored all of his children and raised them to be good people. Carroll frequently made up games and wrote stories and poems, some of which were similar to his later published works, for his seven sisters and three brothers.

Although his years at Rugby School (1846–49) were unhappy, he was recognized as a good student, and in 1850 he was admitted to further study at Christ Church, Oxford, England. He graduated in 1854, and in 1855 he became mathematical lecturer (more like a tutor) at the college. This permanent appointment, which not only recognized his academic skills but also paid him a decent sum, required Carroll to take holy

orders in the Anglican Church and to remain unmarried. He agreed to these requirements and was made a deacon in 1861.

Photography and early publication

Among adults Carroll was reserved, but he did not avoid their company as some reports have stated. He attended the theater frequently and was absorbed by photography and writing. After taking up photography in 1856, he soon found that his favorite subjects were children and famous people, including English poet Alfred Lord Tennyson (1809–1892), Italian painter and poet D. G. Rossetti (1828–1882), and English painter John Millais (1829–1896). Helmut Gernsheim wrote of Carroll's photographs of children, "He achieves an excellence which in its way can find no peer." Though photography was mostly a hobby, Carroll spent a great deal of time on it until 1880.

In the mid-1850s Carroll also began writing both humorous and mathematical works. In 1856 he created the pseudonym (assumed writing name) "Lewis Carroll" by translating his first and middle names into Latin, reversing their order, then translating them back into English. His mathematical writing, however, appeared under his real name.

Alice books

In 1856 Carroll met Alice Liddell, the four-year-old daughter of the head of Christ Church. During the next few years Carroll often made up stories for Alice and her sisters. In July 1862, while on a picnic with the Liddell girls, Carroll recounted the adventures of a little girl who fell into a rabbit hole. Alice asked him to write the story out for her. He did so, calling it *Alice's Adventures under*

Ground. After some changes, this work was published in 1865 as *Alice's Adventures in Wonderland* with illustrations by John Tenniel.

Encouraged by the book's success, Carroll wrote a second volume, *Through the Looking Glass and What Alice Found There* (1872). Based on the chess games Carroll played with the Liddell children, it included material he had written before he knew them. The first section of "Jabberwocky," for example, was written in 1855. More of Carroll's famous Wonderland characters—such as Humpty Dumpty, the White Knight, and Tweedledum and Tweedledee—appear in this work than in *Alice in Wonderland*.

Unlike most of the children's books of the day, *Alice* and *Through the Looking Glass* did not attempt to convey obvious moral lessons. Nor did they contain what critics have tried to insist are there—hidden meanings relating to religion or politics. They are delightful adventure stories in which a normal, healthy, clearheaded little girl reacts to the "reality" of the adult world. Their appeal to adults as well as to children lies in Alice's intelligent response to ridiculous language and action.

Later publications

Carroll published several other nonsense works, including *The Hunting of the Snark* (1876), *Sylvie and Bruno* (1889), and *Sylvie and Bruno Concluded* (1893). He also wrote a number of pamphlets poking fun at university affairs, which appeared under a fake name or without any name at all, and he composed several works on mathematics under his true name. In 1881 Carroll gave up his lecturing to devote all of his time to writing. From 1882 to 1892, however, he was



Lewis Carroll.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

curator of the common room (manager of the staff club) at Christ Church. After a short illness, he died on January 14, 1898.

Assessment of the man

The Reverend C. L. Dodgson was a reserved, fussy bachelor who refused to get wrapped up in the political and religious storms that troubled England during his lifetime. Lewis Carroll, however, was a delightful, lovable companion to the children for whom he created his nonsense stories and poems. Biographers and historians have long been confused that one man could have two completely different sides.

One solution is that he had two personalities: “Lewis Carroll” and “the Reverend Mr. Dodgson,” with the problems that go along with having a split personality. There were peculiar things about him—he stammered ever since he was a child, he was extremely fussy about his possessions, and he walked as much as twenty miles a day. But another solution seems more nearly correct: “Dodgson” and “Carroll” were parts of one personality. This personality, because of happiness in childhood and unhappiness in the years thereafter, could blossom only in a world that resembled the happy one he knew while growing up.

For More Information

Cohen, Morton N. *Lewis Carroll: A Biography*. New York: A. A. Knopf, 1995.

Greene, Carol. *Lewis Carroll, Author of Alice in Wonderland*. Chicago: Children’s Press, 1992.

Stoffel, Stephanie Lovett. *Lewis Carroll in Wonderland: The Life and Times of Alice and Her Creator*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1997.

Thomas, Donald S. *Lewis Carroll: A Biography*. New York: Barnes & Noble Books, 1999.

Wood, James P. *The Snark Was a Boojum: A Life of Lewis Carroll*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1966.

JOHNNY CARSON

Born: October 23, 1925

Corning, Iowa

American television host

Johnny Carson has been called the “King of Late Night Television.” He became a pioneer in television as host of *The Tonight Show* for thirty years. His interviewing and comic techniques won over a huge audience and produced numerous imitators.

Younger years

Johnny Carson was born on October 23, 1925, in Corning, Iowa. At the age of eight, Carson’s father moved the family to Norfolk, Nebraska. It was there that Carson grew up and began developing his talent for entertaining. At twelve Carson found a book of magic and became fascinated by it. He ordered a magic kit and began practicing. He wanted to be a magician. Carson’s first paid performance was at the Norfolk Rotary Club when he was fourteen years old. He had a magician’s stand with the name “The Great Carsoni” on a black velvet cloth draped over the front. Carson also performed for his mother’s bridge club and the Methodist Church socials.

Carson was in his senior year of high school when Japan bombed Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941. After graduation he enlisted with the United States Navy. He was never in combat, but during this time he would help entertain the troops by giving shows using his ventriloquist dummy, Eddie. After the navy Carson returned to Norfolk and attended the University of Nebraska. He graduated in 1949 with a major in speech and a minor in radio. His final thesis (an academic paper) was on “How to Write Comedy Jokes.”

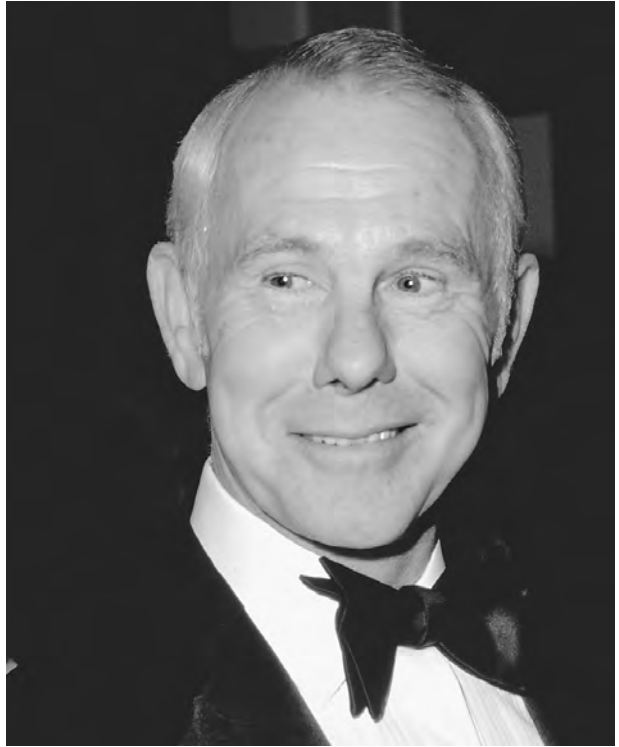
Start in broadcasting

Carson joined the radio station WOW-AM in Omaha, Nebraska, directly out of college. He was given his own show, which

debuted on August 1, 1949. *The Johnny Carson Show* went on the air for forty-five minutes in the morning. He became known for using cheerful banter (good-humored teasing) while reading the news. His show was a success.

Carson decided to see if he could make it in Hollywood, California. He could not find a job for months. Finally, Carson was offered a job at KNXT to read the station call letters, the time, and the weather. The job did not give the fame or status he experienced in Omaha, but it was Hollywood and that was where he wanted to be. After a year Carson was given his own television show called *Carson's Cellar*. Many skits and characters that were later seen by millions on the *Tonight Show* made their television debut on *Carson's Cellar*. Carson worked very hard at his job. He put in extra hours, working both in and out of the studio on his show. After *Carson's Cellar* went off the air, he became a game show host for *Earn Your Vacation* and a comedy writer for Red Skelton (1913–1997). His hard work paid off. He was once asked to fill in for Skelton when the comedian was injured in rehearsals. Carson impressed the television network management.

Carson signed a contract with the Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS) shortly after. A year later Johnny Carson had his own half-hour comedy show called *The Johnny Carson Show*. However, because of problems the network was having with writers and directors, the program was canceled after four months. CBS failed to renew his contract. Carson was left unemployed with a wife and three sons to support. He accepted a job as game show host for *Do You Trust Your Wife?*, which later became *Who Do You Trust?*, on the American Broadcasting Companies



Johnny Carson.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

(ABC) network. He had to move to New York City for the job. New York was not as easy as Hollywood, but Carson kept working hard. He was asked to substitute for Jack Paar, who was the host of a program called *The Tonight Show*, for two weeks in 1958. He performed a comedy routine for *The Perry Como Show* about the same time. Slowly, Carson was making a name for himself again.

The Tonight Show

Steve Allen (1921–2000) started *The Tonight Show* on the radio in 1951 in Los Angeles, California. The show moved to television in 1954 in New York. Allen hosted the

show for two-and-a-half years, and was eventually replaced by Jack Paar. Several million viewers watched every night from 11:15 P.M. to 1:00 A.M. Johnny Carson took over on October 1, 1962. The rest is television history.

Over thirty years Carson developed perfect stage presence. His opening comic monologue (an act read by one person) and golf swing, his attention to comic details like timing, delivery, and gestures, plus his fair treatment of guests, made him a natural host of the most popular television show of the time. Carson believed that if the guest sparkled, so would the show. Over the years many of the country's greatest entertainers, celebrities, and everyday people sat and talked with Carson. He was a major influence in helping new performers. Comedians David Letterman (1947–), Jay Leno (1950–), George Carlin, and Joan Rivers all got their big break from appearing on *The Tonight Show*. Jay Leno eventually replaced Carson as the show's host.

Carson's personality in his private life is very different from the personality he played on the television set. On *The Tonight Show* Carson always seemed very relaxed and seemed to enjoy making casual chat with his guests. Outside the studio, Carson preferred to remain distant. He was almost shy and small talk did not impress him. Carson preferred to save himself for his audience. He has been divorced three times and often worked those experiences into his monologues.

After The Tonight Show

After hosting *The Tonight Show* 4,531 times for millions of people over thirty years, Carson decided to retire from the show. On Friday, May 22, 1992, Johnny Carson did his famous golf swing for the last time.

Carson lives in Malibu, California, with his wife, Alex Mass. He manages to play tennis and sail his boat when he is not working at his company, Carson Production Group. He reportedly entertains thoughts of releasing *The Tonight Show* reruns for sale directly to local cable television channels. Carson had surgery to treat coronary (heart) artery disease in 1999. In 2002 he donated seventy-five thousand dollars to build a skateboard park in his hometown of Corning, Iowa. Many people think that every host of late-night television has a show today because of what Johnny Carson accomplished.

For More Information

- Corkery, Paul. *Carson: The Unauthorized Biography*. Ketchum, ID: Randt & Co., 1987.
- Leamer, Laurence. *King of the Night: The Life of Johnny Carson*. New York: Morrow, 1989.
- McMahon, Ed. *For Laughing Out Loud*. New York: Warner Books, 1998.

KIT CARSON

Born: December 24, 1809

Madison County, Kentucky

Died: May 23, 1868

Fort Lyon, Colorado

American frontiersman, soldier, western guide, and Indian agent

Kit Carson (1809–1868) was a frontiersman, western guide, and trapper. He first gained fame as a distinguished

guide for explorers in the western frontier, when America had a love affair with the untamed land west of the Mississippi River. Thanks in part to fictional tales and exaggerated magazine stories, Carson's reputation as a guide soon turned to that of legend, and the myth of Kit Carson was born.

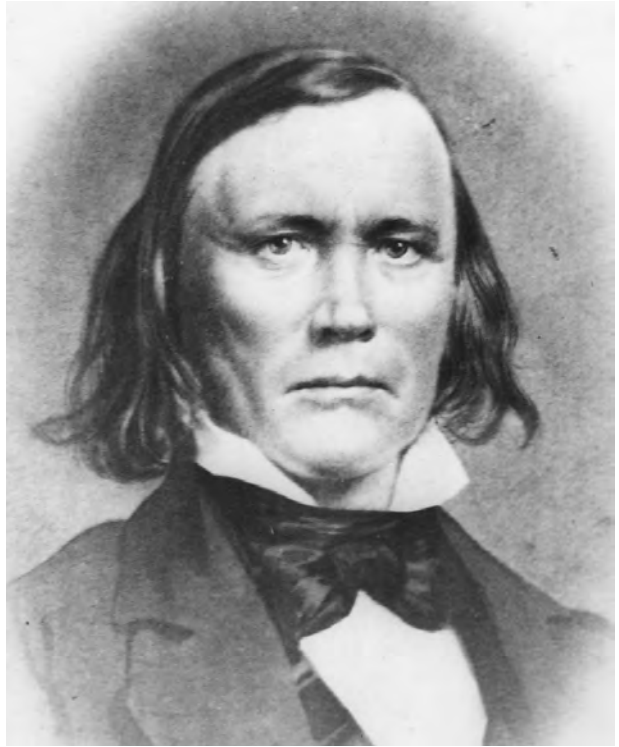
Before he became a legend

Christopher "Kit" Carson was born in Madison County, Kentucky, on December 24, 1809. His father, Lindsey Carson, fought in the American Revolution (1775–83), a war in which the American colonies fought to win their independence from Great Britain. He married Rebecca Robinson in 1796. Kit was the sixth of ten children. The Carson family soon settled in Howard County, Missouri. When Kit was just nine years old, his father was killed in a tragic accident.

It is doubtful that Carson received much of a formal education, because he remained nearly illiterate, or unable to read and write, his entire life. At the age of fourteen he became an apprentice (a person who works for someone with a specific skill in order to learn that skill) to a saddlemaker. After less than two years, Carson left the saddlemaker and joined a group of traders who were on their way to Santa Fe, New Mexico.

Life on the western frontier

Carson's career in the West spanned the years from 1825 to 1868, a period of rapid national expansion, exploration, and settlement. From 1827 to 1829 young Carson spent time working as a cook, driving a wagon, interpreting Spanish, and mining copper. In August 1829 he gained invaluable experience after joining a trapping party



*Kit Carson.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

bound for California. For the next year and a half Carson trapped animals along the streams of Arizona and southern California.

In 1831 Carson returned to New Mexico, where he immediately joined up with the experienced trapper, Thomas Fitzpatrick (c. 1799–1854). With Fitzpatrick's men, Carson headed north into the rugged central Rocky Mountains. For the next ten years, Carson worked as a trapper all over western America in what is today known as Utah, Colorado, Wyoming, Idaho, and Montana. During this time spent in the wilderness of North America, Carson learned everything he needed to know in order to become a respected guide.

In 1836 Carson married an Arapaho Indian woman. The couple had two children, only one of whom—a daughter—survived. After his first wife died, Carson married a Cheyenne woman. The marriage did not last, and Carson took his daughter to St. Louis, Missouri, to further her education. For the next eight years, Carson split his time between his daughter in St. Louis and his trapping duties in Taos, New Mexico.

A turning point

In 1842 Carson's fate arrived by steamboat when explorer John C. Frémont landed in St. Louis. Frémont came to St. Louis looking to hire the well-known guide Andrew S. Drips to lead his expedition to the Wind River in Wyoming. Unable to find Drips, Frémont chose Carson instead. From June until September, Carson guided Frémont's party west through South Pass to the Wind River Mountains and then back to Missouri.

Over the next several years, Carson, along with Fitzpatrick, worked as a guide for Frémont on three expeditions through Oregon and California. The timing could not have been better for Frémont—or for Carson. The American public was fascinated with life in the West and the tales of hostile Indian tribes and unsettled land that could be found on the western frontier. Frémont's published reports on his expeditions soon became famous, as did Kit Carson. Although many of Carson's adventures would become wildly exaggerated, no one could deny his contributions to the settling of the American West. Many of Carson's accomplishments were popularized in Dr. De Witt C. Peters's 1858 book, *The Life and Adventure of Kit Carson, the Nestor of the Rocky Mountains*. (By referring to

Carson as a *nestor*, Dr. Peters meant that Carson was is a leader in his field.)

A soldier's career

In 1846 Carson served in California with Frémont at the outbreak of the Mexican War (a war fought between Mexico and the United States from 1846 until 1848 that resulted in U.S. ownership of much of the area that is now known as the American Southwest, which had formerly been part of Mexico). During this time his duties were quite dangerous, as he carried dispatches, or messages, between command posts in enemy territory. When Carson was sent to Washington with dispatches, he was stopped by General Stephen W. Kearny (1794–1848) in New Mexico. Kearny ordered Carson to lead his troops west to California. At the battle of San Pascual (1846), with Kearny's tired men losing the battle, Carson, along with two others, was able to slip through enemy lines to call for reinforcements. Although Kearny's men were unable to take San Pascual, the reinforced army soon captured San Diego, San Gabriel, and Los Angeles, California, in rapid succession. Later, President James K. Polk (1795–1849) called Carson a hero and appointed him lieutenant in the mounted (on horseback) rifle regiment. However, the Senate rejected this appointment, and Carson returned to Taos.

Career as an Indian agent

By 1849 Carson had settled near Taos to farm and do occasional scouting for army units fighting hostile tribes. Carson also served in the Office of Indian Affairs, first as an agent and then as a superintendent of Indian affairs for the Colorado Territory. In 1854 he became

the agent for several southwestern tribes. For years, Carson worked to keep peace and to ensure fair treatment of Native Americans.

While working for the Office of Indian Affairs, Carson often clashed with his superior, Territorial Governor David Meriwether. Carson disagreed with many of Meriwether's policies and thought that Native Americans were being treated unfairly. In 1856 their conflicts boiled over when Meriwether suspended Carson. Meriwether later arrested Carson, charging him with disobedience and cowardice. Carson soon apologized and got his job back working as an agent.

Back in the army

With the outbreak of the Civil War (1861–65), Carson left his position with Indian Affairs and was soon appointed a lieutenant colonel commanding the First New Mexico Volunteer Regiment. The Civil War was a war between the northern states and southern states that was fought to decide whether or not slavery would be allowed in new territories, and whether or not the South would leave the Union to form an independent nation. During the war, Carson fought against invading Confederates (soldiers from the southern states) at the battle of Val Verde. Carson also directed successful campaigns against the Apache and Navajo from 1862 until 1864. In his last battle he defeated the Kiowa, Comanche, and Apache tribes in the Texas panhandle. In 1865 he was appointed as brigadier general (an army officer who is above a colonel) of volunteers. For the next two years Carson held assignments in the West until he left the army in 1867.

In 1868 Carson was appointed superintendent of Indian affairs for the Colorado Ter-

ritory. He never had a chance to work in this position. He died May 23, 1868, at Fort Lyon, Colorado.

Although Carson's later career serving his country in the army and establishing relations with Native Americans was impressive, the name Kit Carson will forever bring to mind thoughts of the wild frontier and westward expansion.

For More Information

Carson, Kit. *Kit Carson's Autobiography*. Edited by Milo Milton Quaife. Chicago: R. R. Donnelley & Sons Co., 1935. Reprint, Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1966.

Carter, Harvey L. *Dear Old Kit: The Historical Christopher Carson*. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1968.

Ellis, Edward Sylvester. *The Life of Kit Carson*. Lake Wales, FL: Lost Classics Book Co., 1998.

Gleiter, Jan, and Kathleen Thompson. *Kit Carson*. Milwaukee: Raintree Childrens Books, 1987. Reprint, Austin, TX: Raintree Steck-Vaughn, 1995.

RACHEL CARSON

Born: May 27, 1907

Springdale, Pennsylvania

Died: April 14, 1964

Silver Spring, Maryland

American biologist and writer



Rachel Carson.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Rachel Carson was an American biologist and writer whose book *Silent Spring* awakened the public to the dangers of pollution and its impact on the environment. Because of her work, she is considered a pioneer in the modern environmental movement.

Childhood and education

Rachel Louise Carson was born May 27, 1907, in Springdale, Pennsylvania. A quiet child who kept to herself, she spent long hours learning about nature through her mother, a musician and schoolteacher. Carson's mother also inspired her daughter's

interest in literature, and at a very young age Carson knew she wanted to become a writer. Carson sealed her ambitions to write when, at the age of ten, she published her first piece in a national children's magazine.

In high school, Carson was an intelligent and motivated student who impressed her teachers. In college Carson studied English at the Pennsylvania College for Women in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania. But she changed her major to biology after rediscovering her love for science. After earning her undergraduate degree, she studied creative writing at Johns Hopkins University, where she earned a master's degree. She completed her postgraduate studies at the Woods Hole Marine Biological Laboratory in Massachusetts.

Biologist to celebrated writer

In 1936 Carson served as an aquatic biologist with the U.S. Bureau of Fisheries. A year later Carson published a well-received essay in the national publication *Atlantic Monthly*, which would ultimately lead to her first book, *Under the Sea Wind* (1941). She soon became editor-in-chief of the Fish and Wildlife Service, U.S. Department of the Interior, a department dedicated to the conservation (protection) of wildlife. During this time she honed her writing skills, which focused on wildlife conservation. In 1951 *The Sea around Us* brought its author instant fame. At the top of the best-seller list for thirty-nine weeks, it was translated into thirty languages. For the book the shy, soft-spoken Carson received the National Book Award, the Gold Medal of the New York Zoological Society, and the John Burroughs Medal.

The following year Carson left the government to undertake full-time writing and

research. As a scientist and as an observant human being, the overwhelming effects of technology upon the natural world increasingly disturbed her. She wrote at the time: "I suppose my thinking began to be affected soon after atomic science [an energy process which can have an extreme effect on the environment] was firmly established . . . It was pleasant to believe that much of Nature was forever beyond the tampering reach of man: I have now opened my eyes and my mind. I may not like what I see, but it does no good to ignore it."

Takes on pollution

When *Silent Spring* appeared in 1962, the poetic pen and scientific mind of Carson produced an impact equaled by few scientists. In fact, she had aroused an entire nation. More than a billion dollars worth of chemical sprays were being sold and used in America each year. Carson traced the course of chlorinated hydrocarbons, a harmful substance found in the pesticides (chemicals used to protect crops from insects), through energy cycles and food chains. She learned that highly toxic (deadly) materials, contaminating the environment and lasting for many years in waters and soils, also tended to build up in the human body. Insect species that were the targets for these poisons began developing immunities (resistance) to pesticides, and because of these poisons in the insects, birds were not reproducing. In fact, the entire food chain and environmental balance was becoming disrupted because of these chemicals. Carson proposed strict limitations on spraying programs and an accelerated research effort to develop natural and biological controls for harmful insects.

The pesticide industry reacted with a massive campaign to damage the reputation of Carson and her findings. Firmly and gently, she spent the next two years educating the public at large. "I think we are challenged as mankind has never been challenged before," she once said, "to prove our maturity and our mastery, not of nature, but of ourselves." She died on April, 14, 1964, in Silver Spring, Maryland. Though her work was just beginning at the time of her death, through her pen Carson opened the eyes of a nation and inspired environmental activism in a country that was rapidly losing its own natural resources.

For More Information

Graham, Frank. *Since Silent Spring*. Boston: Houghton-Mifflin, 1970.

Lear, Linda. *Rachel Carson: Witness for Nature*. New York: H. Holt, 1997.

Lear, Linda, ed. *Lost Woods: The Discovered Writing of Rachel Carson*. Boston: Beacon Press, 1998.

JIMMY CARTER

Born: October 1, 1924

Plains, Georgia

American president, governor, and humanitarian

Jimmy Carter was a state senator, governor, and the first U.S. president to be elected from the deep South in 132 years, serving one term (1977–81). In 1980 he lost



Jimmy Carter.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

his bid for reelection but continues to be a much admired peacemaker and human rights leader at home and abroad.

Childhood and education

James Earl Carter was born in Plains, Georgia, on October 1, 1924. He was the first child of farmer and small businessman James Earl Carter and former nurse Lillian Gordy Carter. At five, Jimmy already showed a talent for business: he began to sell peanuts on the streets of Plains. At the age of nine, Carter invested his earnings in five bales of cotton, which he stored for several years and then sold at a profit. With this money he was able to purchase five old houses in Plains.

Upon his graduation from high school in 1941, Carter enrolled in Georgia Southwestern College, but in 1942 he was appointed to the United States Naval Academy at Annapolis. Carter entered the academy in 1943 and showed a special talent for electronics and naval tactics. He would eventually work on the nation's first nuclear-powered submarines. During his time in the navy he also met Rosalynn Smith (1927–), whom he married on July 7, 1947. The couple had four children.

Civic activist to politician

Carter wanted to become an admiral (a high-ranking officer in the navy), but in 1953, following his father's death from cancer, he returned to Plains to manage the family-owned farm and peanut warehouses. In order to keep up with modern farming methods, he studied at the Agricultural Experimental Station in Tifton, Georgia. During these years in Plains, Carter was active in a number of civic organizations. He set himself apart from others by showing his concern for members of all races, which could be traced back to his mother's refusal to accept many of the deep South's racist (dislike or disrespect of a person based on the color of his or her skin) traditions.

Carter's interest in politics may have come from his father, who had served in the Georgia legislature. In 1962 he ran for a seat in the Georgia Senate and defeated his Republican opponent by approximately one thousand votes. As a state senator, Carter promised to read every single bill that came up. When it looked as if he would not be able to keep this promise because of the large number of bills, he took a speed reading course to solve the problem. He earned a rep-

utation as an effective legislator and was reelected to the state senate in 1964.

In 1966 Carter decided to run for governor of Georgia. He lost to Lester Maddox (1915–) in the Democratic primary election. Although disappointed, Carter pushed forward. Between 1966 and 1970 he traveled throughout the state, making close to eighteen hundred speeches, studying the problems of Georgia, and campaigning. In the 1970 election, Carter's hard work paid off and he won Georgia's top position.

Governor of Georgia

When he was elected governor, Carter announced his intention to help all poor and needy Georgians, regardless of race. This speech won Carter national attention for the first time. He called for an end to prejudice (unequal treatment based on a person's race) and for education, jobs, and "simple justice" for the poor. As governor, he signed into law a bill ensuring that all areas of Georgia would have equal state aid for education. Carter also worked to cut government waste, combining three hundred state agencies into only thirty. The number of African American appointees on state boards and agencies increased, and the number of African American state employees rose by 40 percent. During his term, laws were passed to protect historical sites, to conserve the environment, and to encourage openness in government.

Carter became increasingly involved in national Democratic Party politics. In 1972 he headed the Democratic Governors Campaign Committee, and in 1974 he was chair of the Democratic National Campaign Committee. That same year Carter officially declared his intention to run for president in 1976, even

though he was still little known outside the state of Georgia. As late as October 1975 a public opinion poll on possible Democratic candidates did not even list his name. Carter's rise to national prominence began in January 1976 with his intensive and industrious campaigning. By March he was the top choice among Democrats to run for president.

The 1976 election

Carter's success began with a victory in the New Hampshire primary in February. He convinced voters that he would be able to act independently and effectively. In his campaign he also vowed to restore moral leadership to the presidency. After the Watergate incident, when Richard Nixon (1913–1994) stepped down as president rather than face criminal charges, this was what people wanted to hear. Carter was elected on the first ballot at the 1976 Democratic National Convention.

With his running mate, Minnesota Democrat Walter Mondale (1928–), Carter made unemployment a central issue of his campaign, urging the creation of jobs through increased federal spending and the growth of business. Carter promised to reorganize the many offices and departments of the federal government and to develop a national energy policy. He also agreed to pardon those who had refused to fight in the Vietnam War (1955–75; this civil war between South Vietnam, supported by the United States, and the Communist forces of North Vietnam had just ended and was long considered a U.S. failure.) America's involvement through the troubled years took the form of military funds, advisors, and thousands of soldiers.

When Carter defeated Gerald Ford (1913–) in the general election, he became

the first president from the deep South since Zachary Taylor (1784–1850). Carter's victory margin came from African Americans, from those with low incomes, and from others who thought that they were being hurt by the policies of the Ford administration. One of Carter's challenges was to reach out to groups that had not really supported him, such as Catholics and Italian Americans.

His record as president

Carter's presidency began well. Congress approved his plans to dissolve or combine federal agencies that provided similar services and passed legislation aimed at lowering income taxes. In August 1977 his proposal to establish the Department of Energy as a new executive department was adopted. Unfortunately, inflation (a general increase in prices that reduces the value of money) continued to rise during his term, reaching 15 percent by mid-1980. Carter became more unpopular as a result. A July 1980 poll showed that only 21 percent of those responding approved of the job he was doing, the lowest rating recorded for any American president.

Carter's term was also marked by mixed success in foreign affairs. In 1977 he attracted worldwide attention and praise when he cut off United States aid to nations believed to have committed human rights violations. However, two 1977 treaties dealing with the Panama Canal earned him mixed reviews. The treaties promised to give control of the canal to Panama at the end of 1999 and ensured neutrality of the waterway. Carter also helped in the creation of a peace treaty between Israel and Egypt in 1979 at Camp David, Maryland. With Carter as witness, President Anwar el-Sadat (1918–1981) and Prime Minister Men-

achem Begin (1913–1992) signed a pact that ended war between the two countries.

Carter's most dramatic moments in foreign policy affairs began in November 1979 when a group of students seized the United States embassy in Teheran, Iran, and took fifty-two U.S. citizens captive. When Carter's responses—including stopping all imports from Iran—did not resolve the situation, he ordered an armed rescue in April 1980, which failed and led to the deaths of eight marines. The hostages were finally released on the last day that Carter held office. Carter had run for reelection in 1980, but he was defeated by former California governor Ronald Reagan (1911–) by a wide margin.

After the presidency

Carter has devoted his career since leaving office to trying to achieve peace and help humanity. In 1981 he established the Carter Center, which sponsors a number of programs, including the promotion of human rights in third-world countries and maintaining detailed medical records for local Atlanta children. The Carter Center also monitors elections in newly democratic countries and works to fight disease. In addition to these efforts, Carter and his wife, Rosalynn, have spent their summers volunteering to build housing for the poor through the Habitat for Humanity organization.

Carter remains involved in international relations as well. In 1990 he persuaded Nicaraguan opposition leader Daniel Ortega (1945–) to step down and let an elected president step in. In the early 1990s Carter brought messages from Somali warlord Mohamed Farrah Aidid (1934–1996) to President Bill Clinton (1946–) that helped avoid a

military conflict. In June 1994 Carter negotiated with North Korean dictator Kim Il Sung (1912–1994) to freeze his country's nuclear weapons program.

Carter had been criticized for his handling of foreign relations during his presidency, but his tireless work on all kinds of issues since leaving office has earned him great praise. In 1999 Carter was awarded with the Presidential Medal of Freedom, the nation's highest honor for private citizens. In 2002 he was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize for his continuing efforts to bring peace to warring countries, to advance human rights, and to promote economic development in poor countries.

For More Information

Carter, Jimmy. *The Blood of Abraham: Insights into the Middle East*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1985.

Carter, Jimmy. *Keeping Faith: Memoirs of a President*. New York: Bantam Books, 1982.

Fink, Gary M. *Prelude to the Presidency*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1980.

Morris, Kenneth E. *Jimmy Carter: American Moral*. Athens: University of Georgia Press, 1996.

GEORGE WASHINGTON CARVER

Born: c. 1864

Diamond Grove, Missouri

Died: January 5, 1943

Tuskegee, Alabama

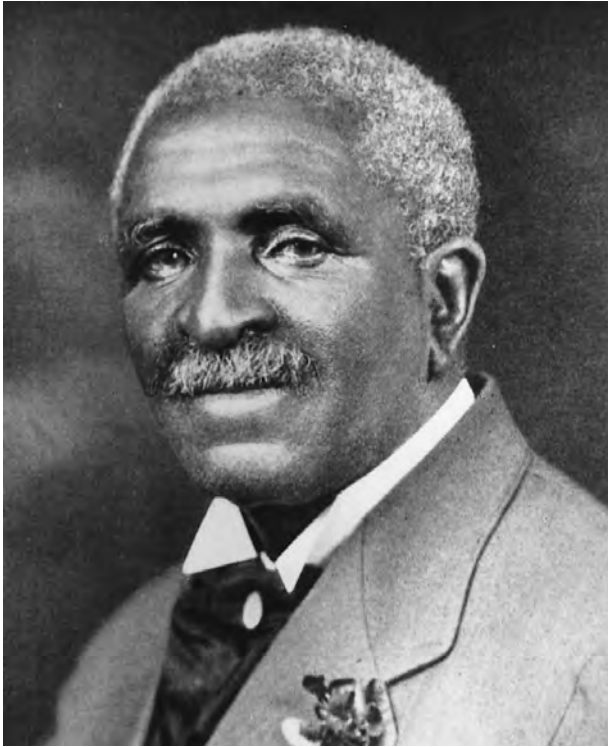
African American agricultural chemist

George Washington Carver started his life as a slave and worked his way to becoming a respected and world-renowned agricultural chemist. He helped develop agricultural techniques used around the world.

Early years

George Washington Carver was born in Kansas Territory near Diamond Grove, Missouri, during the bloody struggle between free-soilers and slaveholders. His father, a slave on a nearby farm, was killed shortly before Carver was born. Carver himself became the kidnap victim of night riders while still a baby. With his mother and brother, James, he was held for ransom. Before they were rescued, his mother died. Moses Carver, a German farmer, ransomed (traded) the infant Carver for a \$300 racehorse. Thus he was orphaned and left in the custody of a white guardian from early childhood.

Carver was a talented student, but even his talents could not overcome racism (feelings of racial superiority). He was not allowed to attend the local schools because of his color. Instead, Carver had responsibility for his own education. His first school was in Neosho, Kansas. Neosho had once been a Confederate capital. Now it had become the site of the Lincoln School for African American children, a school for black children some nine miles from Carver's home. Every day Carver walked there with his brother James. His first teacher was Stephen S. Frost, an African American. Carver and his brother faithfully went to school for several years. Finally James, tired of formal schooling, quit to become a house painter, but not George.



George Washington Carver.

Reproduced by permission of Fisk University Library.

He continued until he was seventeen. Then he went on to complete his high school work in Minneapolis, Kansas, and finally graduated in his mid-twenties. At the time Carver had wished to become an artist. His sketch of the rose *Yucca gloriosa* won him a first prize at the World's Columbian Exposition in 1893.

An agricultural education

Carver applied to study at the Iowa State College of Agricultural and Mechanical Arts, but he was turned down when it was learned that he was of African heritage. He then applied to Simpson College at Indianola, Iowa, where he was the second African

American to be admitted. Tuition was \$12 a year, but it was hard to come by even this small amount. Carver worked as a cook at a hotel in Winterset, Iowa, to raise the money.

After attending Simpson College for three years, he once again applied for admission to Iowa State. He was admitted and was placed in charge of the greenhouse of the horticultural department while doing graduate work. Carver quickly won the respect and admiration of the faculty and student body. He earned his master's degree in agriculture in 1896, and, by the time he left, Carver was an expert at mycology (the study of fungi) and plant cross-fertilization.

A career begins

In April 1896 Carver received a unique offer from the African American educator Booker T. Washington (1856–1915) to teach at Tuskegee Institute in Alabama. Said Washington: "I cannot offer you money, position or fame. The first two you have. The last from the position you now occupy you will no doubt achieve. These things I now ask you to give up. I offer you in their place: work—hard, hard work, the task of bringing a people from degradation, poverty, and waste to full manhood. Your department exists only on paper and your laboratory will have to be in your head."

Carver accepted the challenge. He arrived at the tiny railroad station at Chehaw, Alabama, on October 8, 1896. In a report to Washington he wrote: "8:00 to 9:00 A.M., Agricultural Chemistry; 9:20 to 10:00 A.M., the Foundation of Colors (for painters); 10:00 to 11:00 A.M., a class of farmers. Additional hours in the afternoon. In addition I must oversee and rather imperfectly super-

wise seven industrial classes, scattered here and there over the grounds. I must test all seeds, examine all fertilizers, based upon an examination of soils in different plots.”

Through the years Carver gained a national, as well as an international, reputation. Chinese and Japanese farmers raised many unique problems for him. Questions were referred to him from Russia, India, Europe, and South America. He later had to turn down a request to journey to the Soviet Union, the country that once consisted of Russia and other smaller nations. In 1916 he was elected a member of the Royal Society for the Encouragement of Arts in England, the world's oldest scientific organization. Later, in 1918, he went to the War Department in Washington, D.C., to demonstrate his findings on the sweet potato. He was awarded the Spingarn Medal of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) in 1923.

The personality of Carver

An early close friend of Carver was Henry A. Wallace; the pair knew each other for forty-seven years. Wallace said that Carver often took him on botanical (relating to plants) expeditions, and it was he who first introduced Wallace to the mysteries of plant fertilizers. Carver was a shy and modest bachelor, an unmarried man. An attack of whooping cough (a contagious disease that attacks the respiratory system) as a child had permanently caused him to have a high-pitched tenor voice. He considered it a high duty to attend classes and was seldom absent. In 1908 he returned to the West to visit his ninety-six-year-old guardian, Moses Carver, and to visit the grave of his brother, James, in Missouri.

A careful and modest scientist, Carver was not without a sense of humor. When one of his students, hoping to play a trick on him, showed him a bug with the wings of a fly and the body of a mosquito, Carver was quick to label it “a humbug.”

Developments and world fame

Carver utilized the materials at hand. He was interested in crop rotation and soil conservation. From the clay soil of Alabama he extracted a full range of dyestuffs, including a brilliant blue. He created sixty products from the pecan. From the common sweet potato he developed a cereal coffee, a shoe polish, paste, oils—about one hundred products. From the peanut he came up with over 145 products. Carver suggested peanuts, pecans, and sweet potatoes replace cotton as money crops. He published all of his findings in a series of nearly fifty bulletins.

The testimony of Carver before the congressional House Ways and Means Committee in 1921 led to the passage of the Fordney-McCumber Tariff Bill of 1922. Scheduled to speak a short ten minutes, he was granted several time extensions because of the intense interest in his presentation. At the lecture he appeared in a greenish-blue suit many seasons old, having refused to invest in a new suit and announced, “They want to hear what I have to say; they will not be interested in how I look.”

In 1935 Carver was chosen to work with the Bureau of Plant Industry of the U.S. Department of Agriculture. He received the Theodore Roosevelt Medal in 1939 for distinguished achievement in science. During his lifetime Carver had made many friends. Automobile manufacturer Henry Ford (1863–

1947) was his frequent host. Carver was also a treasured friend of inventor Thomas A. Edison (1847–1931). It was Edison who offered to make him independent with his own laboratories and an annual stipend (fixed payment) of \$50 thousand. Other famous friends included horticulturist Luther Burbank (1849–1926), industrialist Harvey Firestone (1868–1938), and naturalist John Burroughs (1837–1921). He was also a friend of three presidents: Theodore Roosevelt (1858–1919), Calvin Coolidge (1872–1933), and Franklin Delano Roosevelt (1882–1945).

Carver had earned the salary of \$125 a month from the beginning until the end of his service at Tuskegee Institute, which spanned forty-six years. He might have had much more. In 1940 he gave his life savings, \$33 thousand, to establish the George Washington Carver Foundation at Tuskegee Institute to continue research in agriculture and chemistry. He later left his entire estate to the foundation, a total of about \$60 thousand. He died on January 5, 1943.

At the dedication of a building in his honor at Simpson College, Ralph Bunche (1904–1971), a Nobel Prize winner, pronounced Carver to be “the least imposing celebrity the world has ever known.” Carver’s birthplace was made a national monument on July 14, 1953.

For More Information

Gray, James Marion. *George Washington Carver*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Silver Burdett Press, 1991.

Holt, Rackham. *George Washington Carver: An American Biography*. Rev. ed. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1963.

McKissack, Pat, and Fredrick McKissack. *George Washington Carver: The Peanut Scientist*. Rev. ed. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 2002.

Moore, Eva. *The Story of George Washington Carver*. New York: Scholastic, 1995.

PABLO CASALS

Born: December 29, 1876

Vendrell, Catalonia, Spain

Died: October 23, 1973

San Juan, Puerto Rico

Spanish composer, cellist, and conductor

Pablo Casals was regarded as one of the greatest cello players and composers (writers of music) of the twentieth century. He was also an active protester against oppressive governments (those that misuse their power and mistreat citizens), including that of the Spanish tyrant Francisco Franco (1892–1975).

Early life

Pablo Casals was born on December 29, 1876, in Vendrell, in the Catalonian region of Spain. He was the second of eleven children of Carlos Casals and Pilar Defillo de Casals. Casals’s father, the local church organist, would play the piano while the infant Casals rested his head against it and sang along. By the age of four Casals was playing the piano, and at five he joined the church choir. At six he was composing songs with his father, and by the age of nine he could play the violin and organ. From the

age of ten Casals began each day with a walk, taking inspiration from nature. He would then play two Johann Sebastian Bach (1685–1750) pieces on the piano when he returned home.

Masters the cello

Casals became interested in the cello after seeing the instrument in a music recital at age eleven; soon, his father built him one. His parents argued about his future; his father wanted him to study carpentry, but his mother would not hear of it and enrolled him in the Municipal School of Music in Barcelona, Spain. Casals clashed with his strict instructors, preferring to play the cello in his own, more expressive, manner. His progress was extraordinary, and Casals's new way of playing made the cello a more popular instrument.

Among those impressed by Casals was the Spanish composer Isaac Albéniz (1860–1909). After hearing Casals play, Albéniz gave him a letter of introduction to Count Guillermo de Morphy, secretary to the Queen Regent of Spain, Maria Cristine. In 1894 Casals traveled to Madrid, Spain, and gave concerts for the queen and her court. Over the next few years his reputation spread as he played with various orchestras in Madrid. With his formal debut as a concert soloist in Paris, France, in 1899, Casals's career was assured.

New respect for Bach's music

Sometime in 1890, while Casals and his father were in a Barcelona bookstore, he found a volume of Bach's six suites (arrangements of music) for solo cello. Previously the suites were considered merely musical exercises, but Casals saw in them something deeper. He studied and practiced the suites every day for a dozen years before performing



Pablo Casals.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

them publicly; he continued to play at least one suite every day for the rest of his life.

Casals's performance of the suites shocked listeners by correcting the previously held belief that Bach's solo music for strings had no warmth or artistic value. Casals's love of Bach's music carried over into the rest of his life. As he told José Maria Corredor in *Conversations With Casals*, "I am everyday more convinced that the main-spring of any human enterprise must be moral strength and generosity." Casals came to understand the suffering of the poor as he walked the streets of Barcelona. He vowed to use his music to help his fellow people.

Silenced cello in protest

Casals often wrote letters and organized concerts on behalf of the oppressed, and he refused to perform in countries, such as the Soviet Union, Germany, and Italy, whose governments mistreated their citizens. After the Spanish Civil War (1936–39), when General Francisco Franco took power, Casals announced he would never return to Spain while Franco was in charge. He settled in Prades, France, and gave occasional concerts until 1946, when, to take a stand against tyrants such as Franco, Casals vowed never to perform again.

However, encouraged by friends, Casals resumed playing in 1950, participating in the Prades Festival organized to honor Bach. At the end of the festival and every concert he gave after that, Casals played “Song of the Birds,” a Catalonian folk song, to protest the continued oppression in Spain. In 1956 he settled in Puerto Rico and started the Casals Festival, which led to the creation of a symphony orchestra and a music school on the island. Casals never returned to Spain.

Casals also continued to refuse to perform in countries that officially recognized the Franco government. Until his death in 1973, Casals made only one exception—in 1961 he performed at the White House for U.S. President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963), a man he greatly admired. In 1971, at the age of ninety-five, he performed his “Hymn of the United Nations” before the United Nations General Assembly. Casals sought to inspire harmony among people, with both his cello and his silence.

For More Information

Blum, David. *Casals and the Art of Interpretation*. New York: Holmes & Meier, 1977.

Casals, Pablo. *Song of the Birds: Sayings, Stories, and Impressions of Pablo Casals*. London: Robson Books, 1985.

Garza, Hedda. *Pablo Casals*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1993.

Goodnough, David. *Pablo Casals: Cellist for the World*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1997.

Hargrove, Jim. *Pablo Casals: Cellist of Conscience*. Chicago: Children’s Press, 1991.

MARY CASSATT

Born: May 23, 1845

Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania

Died: June 14, 1926

Mesnil-Beaufresne, France

American painter and artist

American painter Mary Cassatt is considered a member of the French impressionists, a nineteenth-century style that emphasized impressions of scenes or objects. Best known for her series of paintings of a mother and child, she also portrayed fashionable society.

Early life and career

Mary Stevenson Cassatt was born in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, on May 23, 1845, the second of Robert and Katherine Johnson Cassatt’s four children. As a child she lived for a time in France. The family then moved to Germany so that one son could pursue his studies in engineering, while another son

could gain special medical attention. Upon returning to the United States in 1855, Mary studied at the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. In 1866, against her father's wishes, she began her travels in Italy, Spain, and Holland. She finally settled in Paris, France, where she shocked her parents by revealing her intentions to pursue a career as a painter.

In 1866 Cassatt began her studies in France, where she came to know other famed French painters, such as Charles Chaplin and Thomas Couture (1815–1879). After a pair of rejections, she exhibited at the Salon (French art galleries) and met the famed painter Edgar Degas (1834–1917), who later became her mentor (advisor).

Soaring career

Despite Cassatt's success at the Salon, her heart lay with the impressionists, and in 1877, at Degas's suggestion, she joined the group and exhibited with them in 1879. Her work sold well, particularly in Philadelphia, and she in turn bought paintings by the French impressionists. She also helped American friends, such as the Havemeyers, form their collections of impressionist paintings. Cassatt remained strongly American, as do many expatriates (those living abroad). She wrote the American painter J. Alden Weir (1852–1919) that “at some future time I shall see New York the artists' ground.”

Cassatt's brother, Alexander, brought his family to Paris in 1880, the first of many trips. Although she never married, she was enchanted by her nieces and nephews and excelled in painting children, who dominate her subject matter. Although her early works were done in an impressionist style, she



Mary Cassatt.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

remains known as the painter and poet of the nursery.

Painting style

Cassatt stopped being an impressionist painter midway through her career. Her early works portray the delicacy, the effects, the play of light and shadow of the style, but she never seemed to use broken colors and her use of complementary colors was slight. Paintings like *La Lo* have impressionistic qualities and have the instant effect of being caught out of the corner of the eye. Her paintings of mothers and children, however, are figurative and three-dimensional. The

drawing is classical and complete, and the color, far from being light and separated into its component parts, is flat and sometimes rather sharp, much like the Japanese prints that influenced her so much. These careful figure studies, completely finished, seem to exist entirely in the atmosphere of the nursery, with no sound except the little cries.

The paintings of Mary Cassatt, filled with light and joy, give a false impression of this strong-minded and somewhat difficult woman. She was at her best in her relations with other artists, for only in this environment did she consider herself among her intellectual equals. In later life she suffered from ill health and failing eyesight and was totally blind at her death. She died in her home at Mesnil-Beaufresne, France, on June 14, 1926.

For More Information

Mathews, Nancy Mowll. *Mary Cassatt: A Life*. New York: Villard Books, 1994.

Pollock, Griselda. *Mary Cassatt: Painter of Modern Women*. London: Thames & Hudson, 1998.

Sills, Leslie. *Visions: Stories about Women Artists*. Morton Grove, IL: A. Whitman, 1993.

Sweet, Frederick A. *Miss Mary Cassatt, Impressionist from Pennsylvania*. Norman, OK: University of Oklahoma Press, 1966.

VERNON CASTLE

Born: May 2, 1887
Norwich, England

Died: February 15, 1918

Fort Benbrook, Texas

English dancer

IRENE CASTLE

Born: April 17, 1893

New Rochelle, New York

Died: January 29, 1969

Eureka Springs, Arkansas

American dancer

Ballroom dancers Vernon and Irene Castle led the craze for ragtime and Broadway routines adopted as social dances in the years before World War I (1914–18).

Early years

Vernon Castle was born Vernon William Blythe in Norwich, England, on May 2, 1887. His parents were William and Jane Blythe. Although he graduated from Birmingham University with a degree in engineering, he also worked as a magician in clubs and at private parties. He moved to New York with his sister Coralie and her husband Laurence Grossmith, who were actors. Although he had his engineering degree, Blythe soon turned to show business and adopted the last name Castle. In the early 1900s Castle appeared in a series of shows produced by Broadway comedian Lew Fields (1867–1941). Castle's specialty was slapstick comedy, a physical comedy with many crude practical jokes. He was often cast as "second banana" to Fields and served as dancing partner to Lotta Faust and Topsy Siegrist.

Irene Castle was born Irene Foote on April 17, 1893, in New Rochelle, New York.

She was the second daughter of Dr. Hubert Townsend Foote and Annie Elroy (Thomas) Foote, whose father was press agent for the Barnum and Bailey Circus. She attended several boarding schools but did not graduate from high school. An energetic youth, Irene rode horses and belonged to the swim team. As a child she studied dancing with Rosetta O'Neill, who taught a generation of children ballroom dancing. When she was a teenager Irene appeared in amateur theatricals, often singing "The Yama-Yama Man"—the song made popular by Bessie McCoy in the Broadway show *The Three Twins* (1908). After becoming a star, Irene credited certain aspects of her style to McCoy, "the high shoulder, the way I held my hands, and anything that looked well about my dancing."

The Castles meet

Vernon and Irene met in 1910 at the Rowing Club in New Rochelle, New York, which by then was a popular place for people in the entertainment business to live. Vernon arranged an audition for Irene with Lew Fields, who hired her as a replacement dancer for *The Summer Widowers*, her first professional appearance. Despite her father's doubts about welcoming an actor into the family, the couple was married in New Rochelle on May 28, 1911. They went to England for their honeymoon to meet Castle's family, but returned to New York in time for the August opening of *The Hen-Pecks*, with both Castles in the cast.

The Castles returned to Europe in 1912 because Vernon was to appear in a French revue (musical show), performing the barber-shop sketch from *The Hen-Pecks*. The revue also included a dance for the Castles set to the



Vernon and Irene Castle.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

music of the young songwriter Irving Berlin's (1888–1989) *Alexander's Ragtime Band*. While in Paris the Castles tried out a ballroom dance routine at the Café de Paris and made an instant impression. Later Irene credited their popularity to being "young, clean, married and well-mannered," but their appeal was based also on her appearance, as she was the image of "the girl next door." The Castles projected their delight in dancing with each other and made the new dances look easy.

Popularity in America

The Castles sailed back to New York after six months in Paris. They were booked

(hired) by Louis Martin for his fashionable Café de l'Opera, and New York went dance crazy over the Castles. In the period after 1910, when the Castles were busy developing their many dances—the Texas tommy, foxtrot, grizzly bear, and others—the dance and musical style of African Americans had started to become a popular part of American life. The Castles were considered the first white entertainers to hire African American musicians.

The Castles were cast in Charles Dillingham's 1912 Broadway production of *The Lady of the Slipper*, but they left the show. Next came *The Sunshine Girl* (1913) and the opening of Castle House, their dancing school across from the Ritz Hotel and Sans Souci, a supper club (a place that offers food and entertainment), in New York. Later they opened Castles in the Air on the roof of the 44th Street Theatre. Vernon taught dancing to fashionable ladies during the day and performed with his wife in their current Broadway show at night. In 1914 the Castles made a silent feature film, *The Whirl of Life*, loosely based on their own rise to fame. They also made a series of short films of their own dances.

Irene became a fashion leader. When she bobbed her hair, millions of women followed. Irene's light, floating "Castle frocks," headache band, and Dutch bonnet were widely photographed, described in the journals, and copied. She endorsed (supported) fashion designs and sewing patterns through the *Ladies Home Journal* and Butterick Patterns.

The Castles opened on Broadway in Irving Berlin's *Watch Your Step* (December 8, 1914, New Amsterdam Theatre). Vernon Castle played the role of Joseph Lilyburn, a

dance teacher. Irene Castle played herself in a number with the boys chorus, "Show Us How To Do The Foxtrot." The hit of the show, however, was Berlin's "Syncopated Walk," which gave America a sample of the jazz music to come in the decade ahead.

Vernon goes to war

After the start of World War I (a war in which Germany fought against European powers and the United States to control Europe), Vernon, who was a British citizen, grew restless as the dark news poured in from Europe. He left *Watch Your Step* in 1915. The Castles gave two farewell performances at the Hippodrome in New York with an orchestra led by John Philip Sousa (1854–1932). Vernon sailed for England, where he joined the Royal Air Force.

While Vernon was away, Irene continued playing in *Watch Your Step* until 1916, then made *Patria*, a fifteen-part silent film. (She appeared in sixteen more films before 1923.) Vernon became an aerial photographer and was awarded for bravery. He was killed in a plane crash at Fort Benbrook, Texas, on February 15, 1918, on a training mission with a student pilot.

Irene carries on

Irene appeared in vaudeville (stage performance with varying acts) with William Reardon in an act that Fred Astaire helped create. Her public career ended by 1923, when she married her third husband, Frederick McLaughlin, and moved to Chicago. (Her second marriage, to Robert E. Treman, ended in divorce.) The McLaughlins had two children. Irene married her fourth husband, George Enzinger, after McLaughlin's death.

In 1939 Irene acted as adviser to the Fred Astaire-Ginger Rogers film *The Story of Vernon and Irene Castle*. She also performed in several summer stock plays. Her chief interest in later life was in the field of animal rescue work.

Irene Castle died in Eureka Springs, Arkansas, on January 29, 1969. She is buried next to Vernon Castle at Woodlawn Cemetery, New York.

For More Information

Castle, Irene. *Castles in the Air*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1958.

Castle, Irene. *My Husband*. New York: Scribner, 1919.

Castle, Vernon, and Irene Castle. *Modern Dancing*. New York: Harper & Brothers, 1914.

FIDEL CASTRO

Born: August 13, 1926

Birán, Oriente Province, Cuba

Cuban revolutionary and prime minister

Fidel Castro is the Cuban prime minister and first secretary of the Communist party of Cuba. A lawyer by training, Castro led the Cuban Revolution and transformed the island into the first communist state in the Western Hemisphere.

Young Castro and campus activist

Fidel Castro Ruz was born on August 13, 1926, on his family's successful sugar planta-

tion near Birán, Oriente Province, Cuba. Castro's parents had not planned to send their young son to school, but he was so set on getting an education that he talked them into letting him go when he was only six or seven years old. Castro studied in Jesuit schools in Oriente and in Havana, Cuba. He was a motivated student who did well in agriculture, history, and Spanish, and he was also an exceptional athlete. Meanwhile he showed little interest in socializing.

In 1945 Castro entered law school at the University of Havana, where student activism, violence, and gang fights were common. Castro soon joined the activists and associated with one of the gangs, the Unión Insurreccional Revolucionaria. Although police suspected him of the murder of a rival student leader and other violent actions, nothing was proven. Castro developed a reputation for his personal ambition and public speaking ability, yet he never became a well-known student leader. On several occasions he was defeated in student elections.

A taste of revolution

In 1947 Castro temporarily left the university in order to join an expedition led by writer Juan Bosch to overthrow the government of Dominican dictator Rafael Trujillo (1891–1961). The coup was called off during the ocean voyage to Dominica. Castro jumped into the shark-infested waters and swam to shore carrying a gun over his head.

The following year Castro participated in one of the most controversial episodes of his life: the Bogotazo, a series of riots in Bogotá, Colombia, following the assassination of Liberal party leader Jorge E. Gaitán (1902–1948). He joined the mobs and roamed the



Fidel Castro.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

streets, distributing anti-United States material and stirring a revolt. Pursued by Colombian authorities, the Cuban students sought asylum, or protection, in the Cuban embassy. Afterwards, Castro flew back to Havana and resumed his law studies.

At the university Castro was exposed to different ideologies (ideas shared by a class). The ideas of fascism (a strong central government headed by one absolute ruler) and communism (where goods and services are owned by the government and distributed among the people) were widely discussed. Castro soon found a calling with Cuba's Orthodox party, which stressed economic inde-

pendence, political liberty, social justice, and an end to corruption. Castro also became a devoted follower of the party's charismatic leader, Eduardo Chibás.

While still a student, Castro married Mirta Díaz-Balart, a philosophy student whose wealthy family had political ties to powerful Cuban military leader Fulgencio Batista (1901–1973). The couple had one son, Fidelito, in 1949. Because Castro had no income with which to support his family, the marriage eventually ended.

Leading the revolution

Early in 1952 Castro began campaigning for a seat in congress as a replacement for Chibás. Elections were never held, however. On March 10 General Batista and his army overthrew the regime of Cuban president Carlos Prío Socarrás. For Castro, violence seemed the only way to oppose the military takeover. He organized a group of followers and on July 26, 1953, attacked the Moncada military barracks in Oriente Province. Castro was captured, tried, and sentenced to fifteen years in prison.

After being released by an amnesty (a government pardon) in 1955, Castro was sent to Mexico City, Mexico. There he began organizing an expedition against Batista called the 26th of July Movement. On December 2, 1956, Castro and eighty other men landed in Oriente Province. After encounters with the army, in which all but twelve of his men were killed or captured, Castro fled to the Sierra Maestra. In these mountains, Castro designed a guerrilla operation, where a small band of revolutionaries would attempt to remove Batista.

Castro emerged as the undisputed leader of the anti-Batista movement, and his guerrillas increased their control over rural areas. On April 9, 1958, Castro called a national strike. It was called off after Batista ordered strikers to be shot on sight, causing massive shootings. Soon Batista began losing power within his military.

Revolution changed course

On January 1, 1959, Castro and his July 26th Movement assumed power and began public trials and executions of “criminals” of the Batista government. On February 15 Castro replaced José Miró Cardona as prime minister and appointed his own brother, Raul, as commander of the armed forces. A powerful speaker and a charismatic leader, Castro began exercising an almost mystical hold over the Cuban masses. As previous revolutionaries had done, he lectured the Cubans on morality and public virtue. He also emphasized his commitment to democracy and social reform, and he promised to hold free elections—all while denying that he was a communist.

Castro confiscated (forcefully took) wealth “illegally” acquired by Batista’s followers. He greatly reduced rents, and passed a law that confiscated inherited property—all moves hinting at Castro’s communist leanings. By the end of 1959 many military leaders left and were replaced by communist radicals. Newspapers critical of these new leaders were quickly silenced.

This internal trend toward a communist agenda appeared in foreign policy too. Castro accused the United States of taking actions against his revolution. Afterwards, Cuba established relations with other communist

countries, mainly the very powerful Soviet Union. On January 3, 1961, U.S. President Dwight Eisenhower (1890–1969) broke relations with Cuba.

Declaration of a socialist state

In April 1961 anti-Castro exiles, supported by the United States under the leadership of its newly elected president, John F. Kennedy (1917–1963), attempted an invasion of Cuba at the Bay of Pigs. The invasion failed. In December 1961 Castro merged all groups that had fought against Batista into the Integrated Revolutionary Organizations. In 1965 it became the Communist Party of Cuba—the island’s only ruling party.

In foreign affairs Castro moved closer to the Soviet Union. In October 1962 Cuban-Soviet relations reached a boiling point during the Cuban Missile Crisis, where the United States faced off with the communist powers over the presence of Soviet-owned nuclear arms in Cuba. When President Kennedy avoided confrontation and directly negotiated the missiles’ removal with Soviet leader Nikita Khrushchev (1894–1971), Castro felt humiliated.

Spread of the revolution

Another source of conflict in Cuban-Soviet relations was Castro’s determination to take his revolution into other countries. After the 1964 Havana Conference, the Soviet Union was temporarily able to slow down Castro’s support for armed struggle in Latin America. But by 1966 Castro founded the Asia-Africa-Latin America People’s Solidarity Organization to promote revolution on three continents.

In July 1967 Castro formed the Latin American Solidarity Organization, which was designed to spark violence in Latin America. Castro's efforts, however, were mostly unsuccessful, as evidenced by the failure of former Cuban revolutionist Che Guevara's (1928–1967) guerrilla campaign in Bolivia in 1967. Nevertheless, Castro's efforts in this regard continued through the 1970s.

Repression culminated in boat lift

Despite the improvements that Castro brought to Cuba, he was constantly criticized for human rights abuses. Political prisoners crowded Cuban jails, while homosexuals, intellectuals, and others were constant victims of government-sponsored violence.

One of Castro's goals was to remove opposition to his rule, which he accomplished not only with executions and imprisonments, but also through forcing people to leave the country. The largest of these, the Mariel Boat Lift, occurred in response to a riot in Havana. In mid-April of 1980 Castro opened the port of Mariel to outsiders, particularly exiled Cubans living in Miami, Florida, who sailed into port to claim their relatives. Castro took advantage of the situation. He loaded boats with prison inmates, long-term psychiatric patients, and other people whose presence in Cuba was not welcomed. More than 120 thousand Cubans left their homeland for the United States, causing a small crisis upon reaching Miami.

Communism loses steam

With the collapse of the Soviet Union in the early 1990s, Castro's revolution began to lose momentum. Without support from its

Soviet allies, unemployment and inflation (increase in prices) both grew in Cuba. Castro began pressing the United States to lift the trade embargo (suspension of trade) it had imposed upon Cuba since the revolution. The U.S. government remained firm, however, refusing to negotiate with Cuba on trade matters until Castro ended his form of government.

U.S.-Cuban relations had begun to show signs of warming by the latter part of the 1990s. Castro visited the United States in 1996, and invited Cuban exiles then living in the United States to return to their homeland and start businesses.

In the summer of 2000 a Cuban-U.S. media frenzy erupted when a Cuban mother and her son escaped Cuba on a makeshift boat. The mother died during the trip, but the son, Elian Gonzalez, was rescued and brought to America. Castro was heavily involved in the dispute over custody between Elian's relatives in the United States and his father in Cuba. Elian eventually returned to live with his father in Cuba.

On July 26, 2000, Castro led what may have been the largest government-organized march in Cuban history to protest the United States embargo of Cuba. The march also celebrated the forty-seventh anniversary of the Cuban Revolution.

On August 13, 2001, Castro celebrated his seventy-fifth birthday. The leader of Cuba is said to be showing his age, but he still manages to speak for hours on end and sleeps only a few hours every night. He also named his brother Raul Castro as his successor (the person who will take over for him when he leaves office).

For More Information

- Castro, Fidel. *My Early Years*. New York: Ocean Press, 1998.
- Geyer, Georgie Anne. *Guerrilla Prince: The Untold Story of Fidel Castro*. Rev. ed. Kansas City: Andrews McMeel, 2001.
- Quirk, Robert E. *Fidel Castro*. New York: Norton, 1993.
- Rice, Earle. *The Cuban Revolution*. San Diego: Lucent Books, 1995.

WILLA CATHER

Born: December 7, 1873

Winchester, Virginia

Died: April 24, 1947

New York, New York

American author

The American author Willa Cather is noted for her strong and thoughtful descriptions of prairie life in the last years of the midwestern frontier. Her poetic style was greatly different from other kinds of writing at the time.

Early life

Willa Sibert Cather was born in Winchester, Virginia, on December 7, 1873 (although she often lied about her year of birth and other things). She was the first of Charles Fectigue and Mary Virginia Boak Cather's seven children. Her father moved the family to Red Cloud, Nebraska, when Cather was nine years old, where he ran a farm loan

business. Her immediate love for the prairie and her involvement in the lives of Bohemian and Scandinavian immigrants provided her with both the material and a simple manner of expression for her novels.

Although Cather was educated mainly by her mother, she had enough knowledge of English literature and Latin to do excellent work at the University of Nebraska. At this time she became interested in a career in journalism. She began working as a drama critic for newspapers in Lincoln, Nebraska, while still in school. After receiving a degree in 1895, she moved to Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, and found employment as an editor, drama critic, and high school teacher.

First efforts

In 1903 Cather published a collection of poems, *April Twilights*. In 1905 a collection of short stories, *The Troll Garden*, was issued. Neither collection really displayed her talent. Her first novel, *Alexander's Bridge*, the story of an engineer's love for two women, was published in 1912.

With a moving story of the prairie, *O Pioneers!* (1913), Cather at last discovered her subject matter. This tale of Alexandra Bergson, daughter of Swedish settlers, whose devotion to the land and to her younger brother interferes with her own chance for happiness, is a major novel and an important source for Cather's later work. In *Song of the Lark* (1915), she presents the story of a young woman's attempt at artistic accomplishment in a small town. *My Antonia* (1918), generally considered her finest novel, is based on a successful city lawyer's memories of his prairie boyhood and his love for Antonia Shimerda, a bright Bohemian girl.



Willa Cather.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Cather's next novel, *One of Ours* (1922), about a man who goes to war in order to escape his midwestern farm environment, won the Pulitzer Prize. *A Lost Lady* (1923) tells the story of an educated, thoughtful young woman faced with the materialism (desire for wealth and material goods) of the post-pioneer period. *The Professor's House* (1925) is a study of the problems of youth and middle age. These three novels differ from Cather's earlier studies of prairie life in that the midwestern atmosphere is now described as a force working against the artistic dreams and intellectual development of the characters.

New location

With the passing of the frontier, Cather permanently left the Midwest, both physically and as a source of subject matter for her novels. She lived off and on in New York and Europe until the late 1920s, then she discovered the Southwest desert, which came to serve as a substitute for the prairie. *Death Comes for the Archbishop* (1927) describes the dedicated missionaries (religious workers who travel around to spread the word of their faith to others) in Mexico during the 1850s. *Shadows on the Rock* (1931) is a description of French-Catholic life in seventeenth-century Quebec. Both novels represent Cather's interest in Roman Catholicism and her admiration for the qualities of courage and endurance that she observed in her life.

Willa Cather's devotion to the land and her respect for those rooted to it are key elements of her work. Man and nature are viewed as characters of equal importance in a cosmic drama. Despite her love for the prairie, she realized that neither frontier life nor its people were perfect. She was aware of, and described honestly, the intellectual stagnation (failure to move forward) and small-minded prejudice that existed side by side with the good qualities of frontier life.

In her last years Cather devoted herself to nonfiction and criticism. *Not Under Forty* (1936) contains an expression of her ideas about writing. Partly in order to devote herself to her writing, Cather never married. She died on April 24, 1947, in New York City.

For More Information

Keene, Ann T. *Willa Cather*. New York: J. Messner, 1994.

Lee, Hermione. *Willa Cather: Double Lives*. New York: Pantheon, 1989.

Stout, Janis P. *Willa Cather: The Writer and Her World*. Charlottesville: University of Virginia Press, 2000.

CATHERINE OF ARAGON

Born: December 16, 1485

Alcalá de Henares, Spain

Died: January 7, 1536

Kimbolton, Huntingdon, England

Spanish queen consort

Catherine of Aragon was to represent a political union between a strong and powerful Spain and the up-and-coming England. Instead she became a model of excellence during a stormy period in European history. She was the first wife of King Henry VIII (1491–1547), and she never gave up the crown, even after her husband tried to divorce her in his quest for a son and heir.

Early life

Catherine of Aragon was the last child born to the two reigning monarchs, or rulers, of Spain, King Ferdinand of Aragon (1452–1516) and Queen Isabella of Castile (1451–1504). Catherine was described as a small and plump princess with pink cheeks, light skin, and reddish-gold hair. Her childhood was filled with battles and celebrations, as her parents worked to expand the realm of their influence.

Catherine's education was of great importance to Queen Isabella, who made sure that her daughter studied a wide variety of subjects. Catherine was a dedicated student who was capable of speaking French, Latin, Spanish, and later English. She trained in law, genealogy (the study of family histories), the bible, and history. Catherine also worked to develop her skills in dancing, drawing, and music, and she learned how to embroider, spin, and weave. She had a strong religious upbringing and developed a faith that would play a major role later in her life.

Knowing that marrying their daughters to the royalty of powerful nations could strengthen their foothold in Europe, the king and queen chose these alliances carefully. In May 1499 the first of several wedding ceremonies was held when Catherine was married to Prince Arthur of England, son of Henry VII (1457–1509).

Princess and queen

In 1501 Catherine arrived in England as the Princess of Wales. She was welcomed with great celebration. But five months after their marriage, the Prince of Wales died. The comforts that Catherine had enjoyed as a new bride were soon stripped, as King Henry VII refused to support her. For seven years she was the Princess Dowager (widow) of Wales, no longer under the care of her father and refused care by her father-in-law.

When Henry VII passed away, his second son Henry VIII took the throne. This brought Catherine new hope of a marriage and the chance to take her rightful place as queen of England. Henry VIII went against the advice of his council and took Catherine as his bride, a mere six weeks after taking the



Catherine of Aragon.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

throne. Catherine was well received by the English subjects as their Queen.

Catherine loved her young, athletic, and charming husband. Over the next five years, Catherine gave birth to several children, all of whom were stillborn (dead upon birth) or died during infancy. In February 1516 the birth of Princess Mary was much celebrated. With this birth, Catherine hoped that she could give birth to a son that could survive. But in 1518 Catherine had another stillborn daughter. There were no other children. Despite Henry's frustration, he comforted his wife during each loss.

Catherine as Regent

While Henry was away at war, he named Catherine as the Queen Regent of the Kingdom. This showed how much faith he had in her. In this role Catherine assumed the rule of England while Henry was away. She addressed the English army as they prepared for an invasion by the Scottish. Later Catherine sent Henry the bloodied coat of the Scottish King, who was killed in the battle as proof of her devotion and service to him.

Catherine's religious dedication increased with her age, as did her interest in academics. She continued to broaden her knowledge and provide training for her daughter. Education among women became fashionable, partly from Catherine's influence. She also donated large sums of money to several colleges.

Rejected by Henry

King Henry, with no male heir, grew fearful as to who would take over his throne. It was around this time that Anne Boleyn (c.1507–1536), a lady in waiting to Catherine, captured Henry's interest. Because Boleyn refused to be anything less than queen, Henry needed a way out of his current marriage. In 1527 Henry used a passage from the Bible as proof that his marriage to his dead brother's widow was not viewed favorably by God, and was therefore cursed with no sons. But the religious court did not agree with this claim and Henry was unable to get out of his marriage.

Catherine refused to withdraw from public life and retire to a nunnery. She firmly believed that her marriage to Henry was divinely ordained, or authorized by God, and to interfere with this would endanger her

soul. In the meantime, Henry secretly married Anne Boleyn. In 1533 Catherine's marriage was finally declared invalid by the Archbishop of Canterbury. Stripped of her throne, she was to return to her title of Princess Dowager of Wales by order of the King.

In the end, Henry was cruel to Catherine. He forced her to live in seclusion and refused to allow her to see their daughter, Mary. Catherine died at Kimbolton Castle near Huntington in 1536. Towards the end of her life she maintained herself less in the style of royalty and more like a nun. Catherine was buried in Peterborough Cathedral under the emblem of Wales and Spain, not of England.

For More Information

- Fraser, Antonia. *The Wives of Henry VIII*. New York: Knopf, 1993.
- Luke, Mary M. *Catherine, the Queen*. New York: Coward-McCann, 1967.
- Mattingly, Garrett. *Catherine of Aragon*. Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1941. Reprint, New York: AMS Press, 2002.
- Paul, John E. *Catherine of Aragon and Her Friends*. New York: Fordham University Press, 1966.
- Weir, Alison. *Henry VIII: The King and His Court*. New York: Ballantine Books, 2001.
- Weir, Alison. *The Six Wives of Henry VIII*. New York: Grove Weidenfeld, 1991.

CATHERINE THE GREAT

Born: April 21, 1729

Stettin, Prussia (now Szczecin, Poland)

Died: November 6, 1796

Tsarskoye Selo (now Pushkin, Russia)

German-born Russian empress

The Russian empress Catherine II, known as Catherine the Great, reigned from 1762 to 1796. She expanded the Russian Empire, improved administration, and energetically pursued the policy of Westernization (the process of changing to western ideas and traditions). Under her rule Russia grew strong and rivaled the great powers of Europe and Asia.

Royal childhood

Catherine II was born Sophia Augusta Frederica in the German city of Stettin, Prussia (now Szczecin, Poland), on April 21, 1729. She was the daughter of Prince Christian August of Anhalt-Zerbst and Princess Johanna Elizabeth of Holstein-Gottorp. Catherine's parents, who had been hoping for a son, did not show a great deal of affection toward their daughter. As a child, Catherine was close to her governess Babette, who Catherine described as, "the kind of governess every child should have." Catherine's education emphasized the subjects considered proper for one of her class: religion (Lutheranism), history, French, German, and music.

When Catherine was fifteen, she went to Russia at the invitation of Empress Elizabeth to meet the heir to the throne, the Grand Duke Peter (1728–1762), an immature and disagreeable youth of sixteen. Soon after Catherine converted to the Russian Orthodox faith, she and the young Grand Duke were married in 1745.



Catherine the Great.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

The marriage turned out to be an unhappy one in which there was little evidence of love or even affection. Peter was soon unfaithful to Catherine, and after a time she became unfaithful to him. Whether Peter was the father of Paul and Anna, the two children recorded as their offspring, remains a question.

However, her loveless marriage did not overshadow her intellectual and political interests. A sharp-witted and cultured young woman, she read widely, particularly in French. She liked novels, plays, and verse but was particularly interested in the writings of the major figures of the French Enlighten-

ment (a period of cultural and idealistic transformation in France), such as Diderot (1713–1784), Voltaire (1694–1778), and Montesquieu (1689–1755).

Rise to power

Catherine was ambitious as well as intelligent and looked forward to the time she would rule Russia. Unlike her husband, the German-born Catherine took care to demonstrate her dedication to Russia and the Russian Orthodox (an independent branch of the Christian faith) faith. This loyalty, she thought, would earn her a rightful place on the throne and win support of the Russian people.

When Empress Elizabeth died on December 25, 1761, Peter was proclaimed Emperor Peter III, and Catherine became empress. Only a few months after coming to the throne, Peter had created many enemies within the government, the military, and the church. Soon there was a plot to overthrow him, place his seven-year-old son Paul on the throne, and name Catherine as regent (temporary ruler) until the boy was old enough to rule on his own. But those involved in the plot had underestimated Catherine's ambition. They thought that by getting rid of Peter, Catherine would become more of a background figure. She aimed for a more powerful role for herself, however. On June 28, 1762, with the aid of her lover Gregory Orlov, she rallied the troops of St. Petersburg to her support and declared herself Catherine II, the sole ruler of Russia. She had Peter arrested and required him to abdicate, or step down from power. Shortly after his arrest he was killed in a brawl with his captors.

Early reign (1762–1764)

Catherine had ambitious plans regarding both domestic and foreign affairs. But during the first years of her reign her attention was directed toward securing her position. She knew that a number of influential persons considered her a usurper, or someone who seized another's power illegally. They viewed her son, Paul, as the rightful ruler. Her reaction to this situation was to take every opportunity to win favor among the nobility and the military. At the same time she struck sharply at those who sought to replace her with Paul.

As for general policy, Catherine understood that Russia needed an extended period of peace in order for her to concentrate on domestic (homeland) affairs. This peace could only be gained through cautious foreign policy. The able Count Nikita Panin (1718–1783), whom she placed in charge of foreign affairs, was well chosen to carry out such a policy.

Attempts at reform (1764–1768)

By 1764 Catherine felt secure enough to begin work on reform, or improving social conditions. Catherine's rule was greatly influenced by the ideas of the Enlightenment, and it was in the spirit of the Enlightenment that Catherine undertook her first major reform. Russia's legal system was based on an old and inefficient Code of Laws, dating from 1649. Catherine's proposal, "The Instruction," was widely distributed in Europe and caused a sensation because it called for a legal system far in advance of the times. It proposed a system providing equal protection under law for all persons. It also emphasized prevention of criminal acts rather than harsh punishment for them.

In June 1767 the Empress created the Legislative Commission to revise the old laws in accordance with the "Instruction." Catherine had great hopes about what the commission might accomplish, but it made little progress, and Catherine suspended the meetings at the end of 1768.

War and revolt (1768–1774)

Foreign affairs began to demand Catherine's attention. She had sent troops to help her former lover, Polish king Stanislaw (1677–1766), suppress a revolt that aimed at reducing Russia's influence in Poland. Soon Turkey and Austria joined in by supporting the revolution in Poland. Two years later, after lengthy negotiations, Catherine concluded peace talks with Turkey. From this Russia received its first foothold on the Black Sea coast. Russian merchant ships were allowed the right of sailing on the Black Sea and through the Dardanelles, a key waterway in Europe.

Even before the peace talks ended, Catherine had to concern herself with a revolt led by the Cossack Yemelyan Pugachev (1726–1775). The rebel leader claimed that reports of Peter III's death were false and that he was Peter III. Soon tens of thousands were following him, and the uprising was within threatening range of Moscow. Pugachev's defeat required several major expeditions by the imperial forces. A feeling of security returned to the government only after his capture late in 1774.

Domestic affairs (1775–1787)

Much of Catherine's fame rests on what she accomplished during the dozen years following the Pugachev uprising. Here she

directed her time and talent to domestic affairs, particularly those concerned with the way the government functioned. Catherine was also concerned with expanding the country's educational system. In 1786 she adopted a plan that would create a large-scale educational system. Unfortunately, she was unable to carry out the entire plan, but she did add to the number of the country's elementary and secondary schools. Some of the remaining parts of her plan were carried out after her death.

The arts and sciences also received much attention during Catherine's reign. Not only because she believed them to be important in themselves, but also because she saw them as a means by which Russia could earn a reputation as a center of civilization. Under her direction St. Petersburg was turned into one of the world's most dazzling capitals. Theater, music, and painting flourished with her encouragement.

As she grew older, Catherine became greatly troubled because her heir, Paul, was becoming mentally unstable and she doubted his ability to rule. She considered naming Paul's oldest son, Alexander, as her successor. Before she was able to alter her original arrangement, however, she died of a stroke on November 6, 1796. While her legacy is open to debate, there is no doubt that Catherine was a key figure in developing Russia into a modern civilization.

For More Information

Alexander, John T. *Catherine the Great: Life and Legend*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1989.

Dixon, Simon. *Catherine the Great*. New York: Longman, 2001.

Erickson, Carolly. *Great Catherine*. New York: Crown Publishers, 1994.

HENRY CAVENDISH

Born: October 10, 1731

Nice, France

Died: February 24, 1810

London, England

English physicist and chemist

The English physicist and chemist Henry Cavendish determined the value of the universal constant of gravitation, made noteworthy electrical studies, and is credited with the discovery of hydrogen and the composition of water.

Early years

Henry Cavendish was born in Nice, France, on October 10, 1731, the oldest son of Lord Charles Cavendish and Lady Anne Grey, who died a few years after Henry was born. As a youth he attended Dr. Newcomb's Academy in Hackney, England. He entered Peterhouse, Cambridge, in 1749, but left after three years without taking a degree.

Cavendish returned to London, England to live with his father. There, Cavendish built himself a laboratory and workshop. When his father died in 1783, Cavendish moved the laboratory to Clapham Common, where he also lived. He never married and was so reserved that there is little record of his having any social life except occasional meetings with scientific friends.

Contributions to chemistry

During his lifetime Cavendish made notable discoveries in chemistry, mainly between 1766 and 1788, and in electricity, between 1771 and 1788. In 1798 he published a single notable paper on the density of the earth. At the time Cavendish began his chemical work, chemists were just beginning to recognize that the “airs” that were evolved in many chemical reactions were clear parts and not just modifications of ordinary air. Cavendish reported his own work in “Three Papers Containing Experiments on Factitious Air” in 1766. These papers added greatly to knowledge of the formation of “inflammable air” (hydrogen) by the action of dilute acids (acids that have been weakened) on metals.

Cavendish’s other great achievement in chemistry is his measuring of the density of hydrogen. Although his figure is only half what it should be, it is astonishing that he even found the right order. Not that his equipment was crude; where the techniques of his day allowed, his equipment was capable of precise results. Cavendish also investigated the products of fermentation, a chemical reaction that splits complex organic compounds into simple substances. He showed that the gas from the fermentation of sugar is nearly the same as the “fixed air” characterized by the compound of chalk and magnesia (both are, in modern language, carbon dioxide).

Another example of Cavendish’s ability was “Experiments on Rathbone-Place Water” (1767), in which he set the highest possible standard of accuracy. “Experiments” is regarded as a classic of analytical chemistry (the branch of chemistry that deals with separating substances into the different chemi-



*Henry Cavendish.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

cals they are made from). In it Cavendish also examined the phenomenon (a fact that can be observed) of the retention of “calcareous earth” (chalk, calcium carbonate) in solution (a mixture dissolved in water). In doing so, he discovered the reversible reaction between calcium carbonate and carbon dioxide to form calcium bicarbonate, the cause of temporary hardness of water. He also found out how to soften such water by adding lime (calcium hydroxide).

One of Cavendish’s researches on the current problem of combustion (the process of burning) made an outstanding contribution to general theory. In 1784 Cavendish deter-

mined the composition (make up) of water, showing that it was a combination of oxygen and hydrogen. Joseph Priestley (1733–1804) had reported an experiment in which the explosion of the two gases had left moisture on the sides of a previously dry container. Cavendish studied this, prepared water in measurable amount, and got an approximate figure for its volume composition.

Electrical research

Cavendish published only a fraction of the experimental evidence he had available to support his theories, but his peers were convinced of the correctness of his conclusions. He was not the first to discuss an inverse-square law of electrostatic attraction (the attraction between opposite—positive and negative—electrical charges). Cavendish's idea, however, based in part on mathematical reasoning, was the most effective. He founded the study of the properties of dielectrics (non-conducting electricity) and also distinguished clearly between the amount of electricity and what is now called potential.

Cavendish had the ability to make a seemingly limited study give far-reaching results. An example is his study of the origin of the ability of some fish to give an electric shock. He made up imitation fish of leather and wood soaked in salt water, with pewter (tin) attachments representing the organs of the fish that produced the effect. By using Leyden jars (glass jars insulated with tinfoil) to charge the imitation organs, he was able to show that the results were entirely consistent with the fish's ability to produce electricity. This investigation was among the earliest in which the conductivity of aqueous (in water) solutions was studied.

Cavendish began to study heat with his father, then returned to the subject in 1773–1776 with a study of the Royal Society's meteorological instruments. (The Royal Society is the world's oldest and most distinguished scientific organization.) During these studies he worked out the most important corrections to be employed in accurate thermometry (the measuring of temperature). In 1783 he published a study of the means of determining the freezing point of mercury. In it he added a good deal to the general theory of fusion (melting together by heat) and freezing and the latent heat changes that accompany them (the amount of heat absorbed by the fused material).

Cavendish's most celebrated investigation was that on the density of the earth. He took part in a program to measure the length of a seconds pendulum close to a large mountain (Schiehallion). Variations from the period on the plain would show the attraction put out by the mountain, from which the density of its substance could be figured out. Cavendish also approached the subject in a more fundamental way by determining the force of attraction of a very large, heavy lead ball for a very small, light ball. The ratio between this force and the weight of the light ball would result in the density of the earth. His results went unquestioned for nearly a century.

Unpublished works

Had Cavendish published all of his work, his already great influence would undoubtedly have been greater. In fact, he left in manuscript form a vast amount of work that often anticipated the work of those who followed him. It came to light only bit

by bit until the thorough study undertaken by James Maxwell (1831–1879) and by Edward Thorpe (1845–1925). In these notes is to be found such material as the detail of his experiments to examine the conductivity of metals, as well as many chemical questions such as a theory of chemical equivalents. He even had a theory of partial pressures before John Dalton (1766–1844).

However, the history of science is full of instances of unpublished works that might have influenced others but in fact did not. Whatever he did not reveal, Cavendish gave other scientists enough to help them on the road to modern ideas. Nothing he did has been rejected, and for this reason he is still, in a unique way, part of modern life.

For More Information

Berry, A. J. *Henry Cavendish*. London: Hutchinson, 1960.

Jungnickel, Christa. *Cavendish: The Experimental Life*. Lewisburg, PA: Bucknell University Press, 1999.

ANDERS CELSIUS

Born: November 27, 1701

Uppsala, Sweden

Died: April 25, 1744

Uppsala, Sweden

Swedish astronomer

Anders Celsius was an astronomer who invented the Celsius temperature scale, the most widely used in the world today. Celsius was primarily an astronomer and did not even start working on his temperature scale until shortly before his death.

Early life and career

Anders Celsius was born in Uppsala, Sweden, on November 27, 1701. The son of an astronomy professor and the grandson of a mathematician and an astronomer, Celsius chose a life in the world of academics. He studied at the University of Uppsala, where his father taught, and in 1730 he, too, was awarded a professorship there. His earliest research concerned the aurora borealis (also known as the northern lights, which are an unusually spectacular illumination of the night sky), and he was the first to suggest a connection between these lights and changes in the Earth's magnetic field.

Celsius traveled for several years, including an expedition into Lapland with French astronomer Pierre-Louis Maupertuis (1698–1759) to measure a degree of longitude (an angular distance of the earth). Upon his return he was appointed steward (manager) to Uppsala's new observatory, a building designated for studying the universe. He began a series of observations using colored glass plates to record the magnitude (size) of certain stars. This was the first attempt to measure the intensity of starlight with a tool other than the human eye.

The Celsius scale

The work for which Celsius is best known is his creation of a hundred-point scale for temperature; although he was not



Anders Celsius.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

the first to have done so, as several hundred-point scales existed at that time. What set Celsius's scale apart from all of the others was his decision to assign the freezing and boiling points of water as the constant temperatures at either end of the scale.

When Celsius introduced his scale in 1747, it was the reverse of today's scale, with the boiling point of water being zero degrees and the freezing point being one hundred degrees. A year later the two constants were switched, creating the temperature scale used today. Celsius originally called his scale centigrade (from the Latin for "hundred steps"). For years it was simply referred to as the

Swedish thermometer. In 1948 most of the world adopted the hundred-point scale, calling it the Celsius scale.

On April 25, 1744, at the age of forty-two, Anders Celsius died of tuberculosis, a terrible disease that attacks the lungs, bones, and other body parts. He left behind many dissertations (long writings) on astronomy, as well as a well-received book entitled, "Arithmetics for the Swedish Youth," published in 1741. But for all of his accomplishments in his life's work of astronomy, the name Celsius is forever tied to an instrument used every day throughout most of the world.

For More Information

Bruno, Leonard C. *Math and Mathematicians*. Vol. 3. Detroit: Gale, 2002.

Shimek, William J. *The Celsius Thermometer*. Minneapolis, MN: Lerner, 1975.

World of Invention, 2nd ed. Detroit: Gale, 1999.

MIGUEL DE CERVANTES

Born: c. 1547

Alcalá de Henares, Spain

Died: April 23, 1616

Madrid, Spain

Spanish author and novelist

Spanish author Miguel de Cervantes is one of the greatest novelists of the Spanish language. His masterpiece, *Don Quixote*, is one of the most important and influential books in the history of the novel.

Early years

Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra was born in Alcalá de Henares in the old kingdom of Toledo, Spain. His birth date is unknown but a record states that he was christened on October 9, 1547. It is likely that because of the Christian name he was given, he was born on September 29, Michaelmas, the feast of St. Michael the Archangel. He was the second son and the fourth of seven children of the pharmacist-surgeon Rodrigo de Cervantes and his wife, Leonor de Cortinas.

Nothing is known of Miguel Cervantes' life until 1569. In that year Juan López de Hoyos, a humanist (having to do with human concerns and values) teacher who was devoted to literary culture and whose ideas emphasized nonreligious concerns, brought out a volume in memory of the death of Queen Isabel de Valois in 1568. Cervantes contributed three poems to this work, and López de Hoyos wrote of him as "our dear and beloved pupil." Since López de Hoyos was an admirer of the Dutch humanist Erasmus (c. 1466–1536), Cervantes' attitudes about religion and his admiration toward Erasmus is reflected in his works. Other than the probable likelihood that he studied with the Jesuits in Seville, Spain, that is all that is known about his education.

Military career

In 1570 Cervantes joined the Spanish forces at Naples, Italy. At this time the Ottoman (Turkish) Empire and the Mediterranean countries (Christians) were at war over control of land and power. As a soldier he witnessed the naval victory at the Gulf of Lepanto (now Gulf of Corinth), Greece, on October 7, 1571. Aboard the *Marquesa*, in the thick of the battle, he was wounded twice in



Miguel de Cervantes.

the chest and once in the left hand. The last wound maimed his hand for life. Cervantes often mentioned this victory in his works.

The fleet returned to Messina, and there Cervantes recovered. He saw battle action from 1572 through 1574. While on garrison duty in Palermo, Italy, he felt he was ready for a promotion to captain. He got letters of recommendation and obtained leave to sail back to Spain. With his brother Rodrigo he sailed from Naples on the *Sol* in September 1575.

Five years of captivity

On September 26 the *Sol* was captured with its crew and passengers. Cervantes lived

in slavery for five years. In captivity he demonstrated an unbreakable will and honorable courage. He led several escape attempts but failed. Twice his family gave priests ransom money, but the amounts were not enough. The first ransom money was used to rescue his brother.

Christian merchants supplied the difference for the second attempt. On September 19, 1580, Cervantes was released. On October 10, before leaving Algiers, Cervantes wrote his *Información*, which described his conduct while in captivity. Two weeks later he sailed for Madrid, Spain, and on December 18, 1580, he signed a statement about his release. He had proved himself as a true Christian soldier, equally heroic in battle and in captivity.

Early works

While in Tomar, Portugal, in 1581, Cervantes was given money to accomplish a royal mission to Oran. This he did, but the royal service was not very rewarding. In a signed letter, addressed to the royal secretary and dated February, 17, 1582, Cervantes tells of his misfortunes in trying to obtain a post in the Peninsula. He also states that he is ready to apply for some post in the Indies, and reports some progress in the writing of the *Galatea*. This novel was to be his first published book, but it did not appear until 1585.

About this same time, Cervantes turned to writing for the theater, an activity that guaranteed a certain income if the plays were successful. In the *Adjunta to his Viaje del Parnaso* (1614) and in the prologue to his *Ocho comedias y ocho entremeses* (1615), he tells of his dramatic successes and his eventual downfall. In a manuscript discovered in 1784

it was learned that of these early plays only two have survived: *Los tratos de Argel* and *La Numancia*.

On December 12, 1584, Cervantes married Doña Catalina de Palacios Salazar y Vozmediano, from Esquivias, in the old kingdom of Toledo, Spain. About a year or two before his wedding, Cervantes had an affair with Ana Franca de Rojas, with whom he had a daughter, Isabel de Saavedra, who was to become an important figure in his later years.

Royal service continues

In 1587 Cervantes was in Seville, Spain. The war between Spain and England was gearing up. The preparation of the Spanish Armada for its disastrous expedition against England was happening on a grand scale. But his new post as commander of the navy brought him only grief, shame, and discomfort. The Cathedral church of Seville excommunicated (denied the rights of church practices and membership) him for taking their grain in Ecija. He traveled considerably, but his finances went from bad to worse. On May 21, 1590, he wrote to the king requesting one of four vacant posts in the Indies. His request was denied. As he had before, he turned to the theater for financial help. Cervantes agreed to write six plays, but payment would be withheld if the producer did not find each of the plays to be "one of the best ever produced in Spain." Nothing is known of the outcome of this contract. For the next seven years Cervantes was in and out of jail for bad financial deals.

Don Quixote

Little documentation for the years from 1600 to 1603 exists. It is very probable that

Cervantes was jailed again for financial reasons. Most of his time must have been taken up by the writing of *Don Quixote*. In January 1605 *Don Quixote* was published in Madrid. It was an immediate success. In the words of the German philosopher F. W. J. von Schelling, *Don Quixote* is “the most universal, the most profound and the most picturesque portrait of life itself.”

Again, from 1605 to 1608, there is little known information about Cervantes. When he reappeared in Madrid, his illegitimate (born out of wedlock) daughter, Isabel de Saavedra, involved him in a series of lawsuits having to do with her financial matters. Once more Cervantes sought escape from Spain, and in 1610 he tried to go to Naples as an attendant to the newly appointed governor, the Count of Lemos. He was turned down, but nevertheless, he dedicated five books, including the second *Quixote*, to the Count of Lemos.

Later works

When Cervantes was sixty-five years old he entered a period of extraordinary literary creativity. His *Novelas ejemplares* were published in Madrid in 1613. They are twelve little masterpieces, with which Cervantes created the art of short story writing in Spain.

In 1614 his poem *Viaje del Parnaso* was published. But that same year a counterfeit (fake; not genuine) copy of *Don Quixote*, signed with a false name, was published. The identity of this author remains the greatest mystery of Spanish literature. His writing was not affected by the publication of the counterfeit, and in 1615 he published *Ocho comedias y ocho entremeses*, concrete proof of his devotion to the theater. Later in 1615 Cervantes published his own second part of *Don*

Quixote. The only fitting praise of the authentic second part of *Don Quixote* is to say that it is even better than the first part.

Cervantes then put all of his energy into finishing *Los trabajos de Persiles y Sigismunda*, a novel of adventures. He had probably begun it at the turn of the century. He signed the dedication to the Count of Lemos (dated April 19, 1616) on his deathbed. He died four days later in Madrid. His widow published his last work in 1617. Cervantes' unmarked grave is in the convent of the Calle de Lope de Vega in Madrid, Spain.

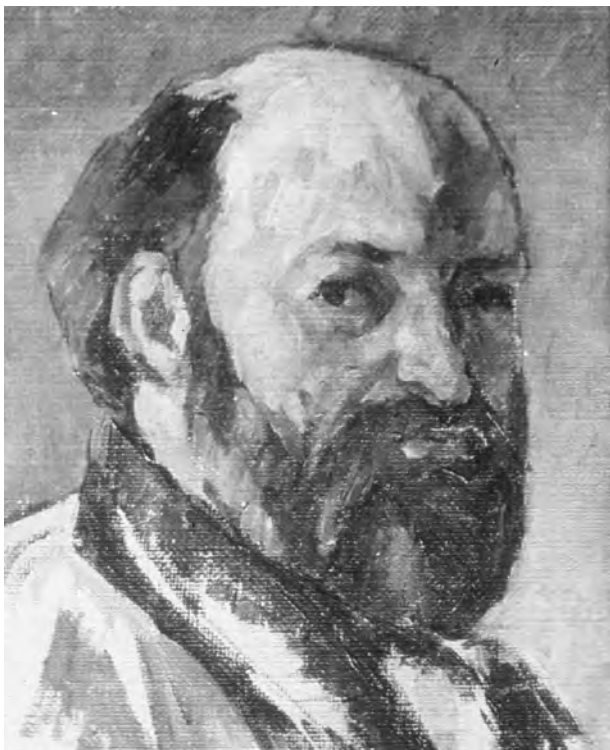
For More Information

- Canavaggio, Jean. *Cervantes*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1990.
- De Armas, Frederick Alfred. *Cervantes, Raphael and the Classics*. Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press, 1998.
- Entwistle, William J. *Cervantes*. Oxford, England: The Clarendon Press, 1940.

PAUL CÉZANNE

Born: January 19, 1839
Aix-en-Provence, France
Died: October 22, 1906
Aix-en-Provence, France
French painter

The French painter Paul Cézanne was one of the most important figures in the development of modern painting, in particular abstract art and cubism, a



Paul Cézanne.

Reproduced by permission of Art Resource.

style of painting in which geometric shapes are used.

Struggling to become an artist

Paul Cézanne was born in Aix-en-Provence, France, on January 19, 1839. His father, Philippe Auguste, was the cofounder of a successful banking firm, which afforded Cézanne financial security that was unavailable to most of his fellow artists. In 1852 Cézanne entered the Collège Bourbon, where he met and became friends with Émile Zola (1840–1902). This friendship was important for both men: with youthful spirit they dreamed of successful careers in the Paris art

world, Cézanne as a painter and Zola as a writer. Consequently, Cézanne began to study painting and drawing at the École des Beaux-Arts (School of Design) in Aix in 1856. His father was against the pursuit of an artistic career, and in 1858 he persuaded Cézanne to enter law school at the University of Aix. Although Cézanne continued his law studies for several years, at the same time he was enrolled in the École des Beaux-Arts in Aix, where he remained until 1861.

In 1861 Cézanne finally convinced his father to allow him to go to Paris, France. He planned to join Zola there and to enroll in the École des Beaux-Arts in Paris, but his application was rejected. Although he had gained inspiration from visits to the famous art museum, the Louvre, particularly from studying the painters Diego Velázquez (1599–1660) and Caravaggio (1573–1610), Cézanne experienced self-doubt and returned to Aix within the year. He entered his father's banking house but was bored with the work. At the same time he continued to study at the École des Beaux-Arts in Aix.

The remainder of the decade was a period of uncertainty for Cézanne. He returned to Paris in 1862 and stayed for a year and a half. During this period he met Claude Monet (1840–1926) and Camille Pissarro (1830–1903), and he became familiar with the revolutionary work of Gustave Courbet (1819–1877) and Édouard Manet (1832–1883). But he was never entirely comfortable with Parisian life and occasionally returned to Aix, where he could work and be alone.

Works of the 1860s

Cézanne's paintings from the 1860s are odd and bear little resemblance to the artist's

mature and more important style. The subject matter is dark and depressing and includes fantasies, dreams, religious images, and a general theme concerned with death.

A fascinating aspect of Cézanne's style in the 1860s is its sense of energy. Each piece seems the work of an artist who could be either madman or genius. That Cézanne would evolve into the latter, however, can in no way be known from these earlier examples. Although Cézanne received encouragement from Pissarro and other artists during the 1860s and enjoyed the occasional critical backing of his friend Zola, his pictures were consistently rejected by the annual salons (art exhibitions in France) and earned him harsh criticism.

Cézanne and impressionism

In 1872 Cézanne moved to Pontoise, France, where he spent two years working very closely with Pissarro. During this period Cézanne became convinced that one must paint directly from nature. The result was that romantic and religious subjects began to disappear from his canvases. In addition, the dark range of his palette (range of colors) began to give way to fresher, more vibrant colors.

Cézanne, as a direct result of his stay in Pontoise, decided to participate in the first exhibition of the Société Anonyme des Artistes Peintres, Sculpteurs et Graveurs in 1874. Radical artists who had been constantly rejected by the official salons organized this historic exhibition. It inspired the term "impressionism," a revolutionary art form where the "impression" of a scene or object is generated and light is simulated by primary colors.

After 1877 Cézanne gradually withdrew from the impressionists and worked in increasing isolation at his home in southern France. This withdrawal was linked with two factors. First, the more personal direction his work began to take, a direction not taken by the other impressionists. Second, the disappointing responses that his art continued to generate among the public at large. In fact, Cézanne did not show his art publicly for almost twenty years after the third impressionist show.

Cézanne's paintings from the 1870s clearly show the influence of impressionism. In the *House of the Hanged Man* (1873–1874) and the *Portrait of Victor Choquet* (1875–1877) he painted directly from the subject and used the short, loaded brushstrokes that are characteristic of the style as it was forged by Monet, Pissarro, and Pierre-Auguste Renoir (1841–1919).

Mature work

During the 1880s Cézanne saw less and less of his friends, and several personal events affected him deeply. In 1886 he married Hortense Fiquet, a model with whom he had been living for seventeen years. Also, his father died that same year. Probably the most significant event of this year, however, was the publication of the novel *L'Oeuvre* by his friend Zola. The hero of the story is a painter (generally acknowledged to be a combination of Cézanne and Manet) whom Zola presented as an artistic failure. Cézanne took this as an insult to both him and his career and, bitterly hurt, he never spoke to Zola again.

Cézanne's isolation in Aix began to lessen during the 1890s. In 1895, owing

largely to the urging of Pissarro, Monet, and Renoir, the dealer Ambroise Vollard (1865–1939) showed a large number of Cézanne's paintings, and public interest in his work slowly began to develop. In 1899, 1901, and 1902 Cézanne sent pictures to the annual Salon des Indépendants in Paris. In 1904 he was given an entire room at the Salon d'Automne. While painting outdoors in the fall of 1906 Cézanne was overtaken by a storm and became ill. He died in Aix on October 22, 1906. At the Salon d'Automne of 1907 his achievement was honored with a large retrospective exhibition (an exhibit that shows an artist's life work).

Cézanne's paintings from the last twenty-five years of his life led to the development of modern art. Working slowly and patiently, he developed a style that has affected almost every radical phase of twentieth-century art. This new form is apparent in many works, including the *Bay of Marseilles from L'Estaque* (1883–1885), *Mont Sainte-Victoire* (1885–1887), the *Cardplayers* (1890–1892), the *White Sugar Bowl* (1890–1894), and the *Great Bathers* (1895–1905).

For More Information

- Cézanne, Paul. *Paul Cézanne, Letters*. Rev. ed. Edited by John Rewald. New York: Hacker Art Books, 1984.
- Mack, Gerstle. *Paul Cézanne*. New York: A. A. Knopf, 1935. Reprint, New York: Octagon Books, 1976.
- Mason, Antony. *Cézanne*. Hauppauge, NY: Barron's, 1994.
- Verdi, Richard. *Cézanne*. New York: Thames and Hudson, 1992.

MARC CHAGALL

Born: July 7, 1887

Vitebsk, Russia

Died: March 28, 1985

Maritimes, France

Russian painter and artist

Russian painter Marc Chagall was one of the great masters of the School of Paris. He was also praised as an influence on surrealism, a twentieth-century artistic movement that expressed the subconscious in wild imagery.

An inspired childhood

Marc Chagall was born Moishe Shagal on July 7, 1887, in Vitebsk, Russia, to a poor Jewish family that included ten children. His father, Zakhar Chagall, worked in a fish factory and his mother, Ida Chagall, worked in the family home and ran a grocery store. The years of his childhood, the family circle, and his native village became the main themes of his art. These first impressions lingered in his mind like original images and were transformed into paintings with such titles as the *Candlestick with the Burning Lights*, the *Cow and Fish Playing the Violin*, the *Man Meditating on the Scriptures*, the *Fiddler on the Roof*, and *I and My Village*. According to French poet and critic André Breton (1896–1966), with Chagall “the metaphor [comparison of images] made its triumphant return into modern painting.” And it has been said that Pablo Picasso (1881–1973) was a triumph of the mind, but Chagall was the glory of the heart.

Chagall received early schooling from a teacher friend who lived nearby. He then attended the town school, but he only did well in geometry. He became an apprentice (a person who works for another in order to learn a profession) to a photographer but did not like the work. He then decided that he wanted to become an artist and talked his parents into paying for art lessons. He began his artistic instruction under the direction of a painter in Vitebsk. In 1907 he moved to St. Petersburg, Russia, where he attended the school of the Imperial Society for the Protection of the Arts and studied briefly with famed Russian painter Leon Bakst (1866–1924). These were difficult years for Chagall. He was extremely poor and was unable to support himself with his artwork. He took a job as a servant and also learned how to paint signs. In Bakst's studio he had his first contact with the modern movement that was sweeping Paris, and it freed his inner resources. His pictures of this early period are pleasant images of his childhood.

With some help from a patron (someone who supported him financially), Chagall went to Paris in 1910. The poets Blaise Cendrars (1887–1961), Max Jacob (1876–1944), and Guillaume Apollinaire (1880–1918), and the painters Roger de La Fresnaye (1885–1925), Robert Delaunay (1885–1941), and Amedeo Modigliani (1884–1920) became his friends. Chagall participated in the art showings at the Salon des Indépendants and the Salon d'Automne in 1912, but it was his first one-man show in Herwarth Walden's Der Sturm Gallery in Berlin, Germany, which established him internationally as a leading artist.



Marc Chagall.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

Travels inspired new works

Chagall lived in Russia for the duration of World War I (1914–18). During the Russian Revolution (the uprising to overthrow the government of the czar [Russian king] in 1917) he was made a commissar (an official) for art, but he resigned in 1919 after a clash with the suprematist painters (Russian artists that used nonobjective art and basic geometric shapes). In 1922 Chagall left Russia for good, going to Berlin, Germany and then back to Paris. The art dealer Ambroise Vollard (1865–1939) commissioned (hired) him to illustrate Nikolay Gogol's (1809–1852) "Dead Souls" (ninety-six etchings) in 1923

and “La Fontaine’s Fables” (one hundred etchings) in 1927.

A journey to Palestine and Syria in 1931 gave Chagall firsthand knowledge of the land, which he represented in his illustrations for the Bible (1931–1939 and 1952–1956). He is considered the greatest interpreter of the Bible since Rembrandt (1606–1669). He used biblical themes in paintings, graphic works, and stained glass (two windows for the Cathedral in Metz, France, 1960 and 1962; twelve windows for the medical center in Jerusalem, 1961). Chagall started a new series of large paintings, the “Biblical Message,” in 1963.

Chagall traveled throughout France and elsewhere from 1932 to 1941, when he settled in the United States, where he remained until 1947. He designed the sets and costumes for the ballets *Aleko* (1942) and *The Firebird* (1945). Bella, his beloved wife, inspiration, and model, whom he had married in 1915, died in 1944.

In 1948, the year after Chagall returned to France, he started *Arabian Nights*, a series of lithographs (prints created by a printing process using stone or metal plates that have been treated so that the image to be printed picks up the ink and the blank area does not). He began working in ceramics in 1950 and made his first sculptures the following year. In 1952 he married Valentina “Vava” Brodsky. His famous “Paris” series, a sequence of fantastic scenes set against the background of views of the city, was created between 1953 and 1956.

Chagall continued to create great artworks throughout the later years of his life. In the 1960s and 1970s, his stained glass art

appeared in such buildings as the United Nations (UN) in New York City. In 1973 a museum of his works was opened in Nice, France. In 1977, the Louvre, a world-famous art museum in Paris, exhibited sixty-two of his paintings, an extremely rare event for a living artist. Chagall died at the age of ninety-seven in 1985.

For More Information

Alexander, Sidney. *Marc Chagall: A Biography*. New York: G.P. Putnam’s Sons, 1978.

Baal-Teshuva. *Jacob, Marc Chagall 1887–1985*. New York: Random, 1998.

Chagall, Marc. *My Life*. New York: Orion Press, 1960. Reprint, New York: Oxford University Press, 1989.

WILT CHAMBERLAIN

Born: August 21, 1936

Philadelphia, Pennsylvania

Died: October 12, 1999

Los Angeles, California

African American basketball player

Wilt Chamberlain is considered one of the world’s all-time greatest professional basketball players.

Born to play basketball

Wilt Chamberlain was born August 21, 1936, in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, one of nine children raised by William and Olivia Chamberlain. His father worked in a local

publishing company, while his mother performed outside housework. The Chamberlains lived in a racially-mixed middle-class neighborhood, and Wilt enjoyed a relatively pleasant childhood.

At Shoemaker Junior High School Wilt began to play on the basketball team. He also played on the playgrounds against older players who taught him a lot about the game. He later said, "I still think you could pick up a team from the street corners of Philly that would give most colleges a real hard time." Wilt attended Overbrook High School in Philadelphia beginning in 1952. At that time he was already 6'11" tall, and had developed what he termed a "deep love for basketball."

Recruited by more than two hundred universities

Chamberlain's high school basketball career was astounding. In three seasons he scored more than 2,200 points. As a result more than two hundred universities recruited Chamberlain, but he wanted to get away from big cities and preferred to play in the Midwest. He chose the University of Kansas because of the recruiting by Hall of Fame coach Phog Allen.

At Kansas Chamberlain continued his brilliant play on the basketball court, scoring fifty-two points in his first varsity game. During his first varsity season, he led the Jayhawks to the finals of the National Collegiate Athletic Association (NCAA) tournament, but they lost to North Carolina in double overtime. During his college career he averaged over thirty points per game and was twice selected to All-American teams. Following his junior year, he decided to quit college and become a professional.



Wilt Chamberlain.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Because Chamberlain did not play his final season at Kansas, he was not eligible to join a National Basketball Association (NBA) team for one more year. He instead joined the Harlem Globetrotters and spent the year traveling the world and entertaining adults and youngsters alike. He later claimed that his year with the Globetrotters was his most enjoyable season of basketball.

Scoring machine

In 1959 Chamberlain joined the NBA's Philadelphia Warriors and made an immediate impact on the league. He could score almost at will. Opposing teams gave up trying

to stop him and instead tried only to contain him. His scoring average during the 1959-60 season was 37.9 points per game—more than eight points per game higher than anyone else had ever scored in the history of the league. He was named both Rookie of the Year and Most Valuable Player, the first person to receive both awards in the same season.

For the next six seasons Chamberlain led the league in scoring. In the 1961-62 season he averaged 50.4 points and scored 100 points in one game. In 1962-63 he averaged 44.8 points per game. Chamberlain was simply one of the greatest scoring machines in the history of basketball.

Despite Chamberlain's scoring achievements, he and his teammates were not winning NBA championships. The Boston Celtics and their center Bill Russell (1934–) dominated the game in the late 1950s and early 1960s. Russell had revolutionized basketball with his defense as much as Chamberlain had with his offense, and Russell always had a great group of supporting players. Chamberlain always took a great deal of abuse from the media and fans because of his lack of success against Russell.

Wins championship with the 76ers

Finally, in 1967, Chamberlain reversed his fortunes. He had been traded to the new Philadelphia team, the 76ers, and in 1967 they finished the regular season with the best record in the history of the league. In the championship series, the 76ers polished off the San Francisco Warriors to win the first world title for Chamberlain.

Several years later Chamberlain was traded again, this time to the Los Angeles

Lakers. The Lakers had featured numerous great players through the years, including Elgin Baylor (1934–) and Jerry West (1938–), but had not won a championship since moving to Los Angeles from Minneapolis, Minnesota, in 1960. In 1972, however, the Lakers seemed poised to finally win a championship. They finished the year with the best regular season record in history, breaking the record set by Chamberlain and the 76ers in 1967. In the championship series, the Lakers played the powerful New York Knickerbockers, led by Willis Reed (1942–), Dave DeBusschere (1940–), Bill Bradley (1943–), and Walt Frazier (1945–). In the fourth game of the series Chamberlain suffered a fractured wrist. Although the Lakers led the series three games to one, the series still seemed in doubt because of Chamberlain's injury. Despite understandable pain, Chamberlain played the next game with football linemen's pads on both hands. He scored 24 points, grabbed 29 rebounds, and blocked 10 shots. The Lakers won the game and the series four games to one, bringing the first world championship to Los Angeles.

Following the 1973 season, Chamberlain left the NBA as the all-time leader in points scored (more than 30,000), rebounds (over 22,000), and with four Most Valuable Player awards and more than forty league records. After retiring from basketball, Chamberlain was involved in a wide variety of activities. He sponsored several amateur athletic groups, including volleyball teams and track clubs. He invested wisely through the years and spent his retirement years as a wealthy man. He also kept in outstanding physical condition. When he walked into a room or onto a basketball court, he was a legendary presence.

Controversial books

Chamberlain gained further notoriety in 1991 with the release of his second and most talked about autobiography, *A View from Above*. The book contains observations on athletes of the 1990s, gun control, and his fourteen years in the NBA, among other topics. But it was the claim that he had slept with twenty thousand women that landed him in the celebrity spotlight and in the public hot seat. Reflecting upon this claim, Chamberlain regretted the way he discussed sex in the book and became a champion of safe sex. In 1997 Chamberlain published *Who's Running the Asylum?: The Insane World of Sports Today*. His last book provides a critical discussion of the sports industry and the NBA, including his own ranking of basketball's greatest players.

Chamberlain died on October 12, 1999, in his Bel Air, California, home. Chamberlain had been treated for an irregular heartbeat in 1992 and was on medication to treat the condition. Chamberlain is remembered as one of the most dominant players to ever grace a basketball court. His record of 100 points in a game is a record that will be hard to break.

For More Information

Chamberlain, Wilt. *A View from Above*. New York: Villard Books, 1991.

Frankl, Ron. *Wilt Chamberlain*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1995.

Greenberger, Robert. *Wilt Chamberlain*. New York: Rosen Central, 2002.

Libby, Bill. *Goliath: The Wilt Chamberlain Story*. New York: Dodd, Mead, 1977.

SUBRAHMANYAN CHANDRASEKHAR

Born: October 19, 1910

Lahore, India (now part of Pakistan)

Died: August 21, 1995

Chicago, Illinois

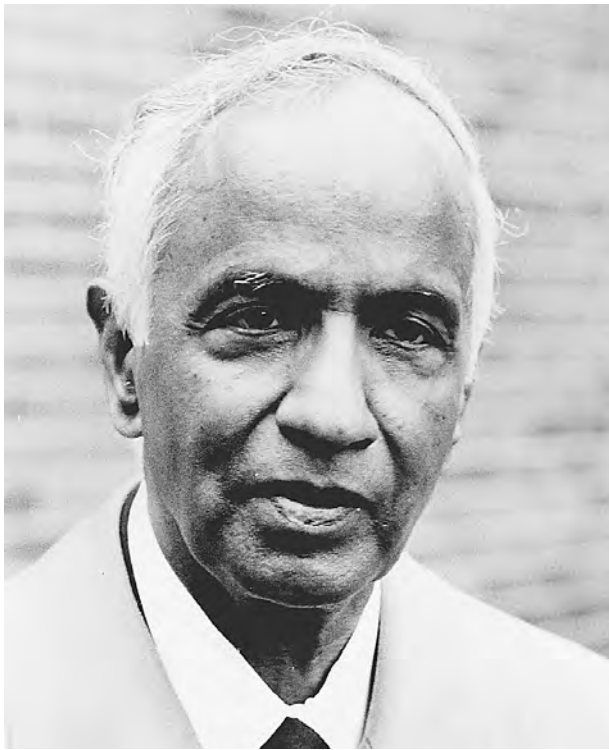
*Indian-born American astrophysicist
and mathematician*

Subrahmanyan Chandrasekhar worked on the origins and structures of stars, earning an important place in the world of science. The Nobel Prize-winning physicist's most celebrated work concerns the radiation of energy from stars, particularly the dying fragments known as white dwarf stars.

Early years

Subrahmanyan Chandrasekhar, better known as Chandra, was born on October 19, 1910, in Lahore, India (now part of Pakistan), the first son of C. Subrahmanyan Ayyar and Sitalakshmi (Divan Bahadur) Balakrishnan. Chandra came from a large family—he had six brothers and three sisters. As the firstborn son, Chandra inherited his paternal grandfather's name, Chandrasekhar. His uncle was the Nobel Prize-winning Indian physicist, Sir C. V. Raman (1888–1970).

Chandra received his early education at home, beginning when he was five. From his mother he learned Tamil (a language spoken in India), from his father, English and arithmetic. He set his sights upon becoming a scientist at an early age, and to this end, undertook some independent study of calculus and physics. Private tutors taught Chandra until 1921, when he enrolled in the Hindu High School in Triplicane, India. With typical drive



Subrahmanyan Chandrasekhar.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

and motivation, he studied on his own and rose to the head of the class, completing school by the age of fifteen.

After high school Chandra attended Presidency College in Madras, India. For the first two years he studied physics, chemistry, English, and Sanskrit. For his bachelor's honors degree he wished to take pure mathematics but his father insisted that he take physics. Chandra registered as an honors physics student but attended mathematics lectures, where his teachers quickly realized his brilliance. Chandra also took part in sporting activities and joined the debating team. A highlight of his college years was the publication of his paper,

"The Compton Scattering and the New Statistics." These and other early successes while still an eighteen-year-old undergraduate only strengthened Chandra's determination to pursue a career in scientific research, despite his father's wish that he join the Indian civil service.

Upon graduating with a master's degree in 1930, Chandra set off for Trinity College in Cambridge, England. As a research student at Cambridge he turned to astrophysics, inspired by a theory of stellar (stars) evolution that had occurred to him as he made the long boat journey from India to Cambridge. In the summer of 1931 he worked with physicist Max Born (1882–1970) at the Institut für Theoretische Physik at Göttingen in Germany. In 1932 he left for Copenhagen, Denmark, where he was able to devote more of his energies to pure physics. A series of Chandra's lectures on astrophysics given at the University of Liège, in Belgium in February 1933 received a warm reception.

White dwarfs

During a four-week trip to Russia in 1934—where he met physicists Lev Davidovich Landau (1908–1968), B. P. Geraismovic, and Viktor Ambartsumian—he returned to the work that had led him into astrophysics to begin with: white dwarfs. Upon returning to Cambridge, he took up researching white dwarfs again.

As a member of the Royal Astronomical Society since 1932, Chandra was entitled to present papers at its twice monthly meetings. It was at one of these that Chandra, in 1935, announced the results of the work that would later make his name. As stars evolve, he told the assembled audience, they release energy generated by their conversion of hydrogen into helium and even heavier elements. As

they reach the end of their life, stars have less hydrogen left to convert so they release less energy in the form of radiation. They eventually reach a stage when they are no longer able to generate the pressure needed to maintain their size against their own gravitational pull, and they begin to shrink, eventually collapsing into themselves. Their electrons (particle with a negative charge) become so tightly packed that their normal activity is shut down and they become white dwarfs, or tiny objects of enormous density.

The Yerkes Observatory

In 1937 Chandra returned home to India to marry Lalitha Doraiswamy. The couple settled in the United States. A year later Chandra was charged with developing a graduate program in astronomy and astrophysics and with teaching some of the courses at the University of Chicago's Yerkes Observatory. His reputation as a teacher soon attracted top students to the observatory's graduate school. He also continued researching stellar evolution, stellar structure, and the transfer of energy within stars.

In 1944 Chandra achieved a lifelong goal when he was elected to the Royal Society of London, the world's oldest scientific organization. In 1952 he became the Morton D. Hull Distinguished Service Professor of Astrophysics in the departments of astronomy and physics, as well as at the Institute for Nuclear Physics, at the University of Chicago's Yerkes Observatory. Later the same year he was appointed managing editor of the *Astrophysical Journal*, a position he held until 1971.

Chandra became a United States citizen in 1953. He retired from the University of Chicago in 1980, although he remained on as

a post-retirement researcher. In 1983 he published a classic work on the mathematical theory of black holes. His semi-retirement also left him with more time to pursue his hobbies and interests: literature and music, particularly orchestral, chamber, and South Indian.

Chandra died in Chicago on August 21, 1995, at the age of eighty-two. Throughout his life Chandra strove to acquire knowledge and understanding. According to an autobiographical essay published with his Nobel lecture, he was motivated "principally by a quest after perspectives."

For More Information

The Biographical Dictionary of Scientists, Astronomers. London: Blond Educations Company, 1984, p. 36.

Goldsmith, Donald. *The Astronomers.* New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Land, Kenneth R., and Owen Gingerich, eds. *A Sourcebook in Astronomy and Astrophysics.* Cambridge, MA.: Harvard University Press, 1979.

Wali, K. C. *Chandra: a Biography of S. Chandrasekhar.* Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1991.

CHARLIE CHAPLIN

Born: April 16, 1889

London, England

Died: December 25, 1977

Vevey, Switzerland

English actor, director, and writer

The film actor, director, and writer Charlie Chaplin was one of the most original creators in the history of movies. His performances as “the tramp”—a sympathetic comic character with ill-fitting clothes and a mustache—won admiration from audiences across the world.

Rough childhood

Charles Spencer Chaplin was born in a poor district of London, England, on April 16, 1889. His mother, Hannah Hill Chaplin, a talented singer, actress, and piano player, spent most of her life in and out of mental hospitals; his father, Charles Spencer Chaplin Sr. was a fairly successful singer until he began drinking. After his parents separated, Charlie and his half-brother, Sidney, spent most of their childhood in orphanages, where they often went hungry and were beaten if they misbehaved. Barely able to read and write, Chaplin left school to tour with a group of comic entertainers. Later he starred in a comedy act. By the age of nineteen he had become one of the most popular music-hall performers in England.

Arrives in the United States

In 1910 Chaplin went to the United States to tour in *A Night in an English Music Hall*. He was chosen by filmmaker Mack Sennett (1884–1960) to appear in the silent Keystone comedy series. In these early movies (*Making a Living*, *Tillie’s Punctured Romance*), Chaplin changed his style. He stopped overacting and became more delicate and precise in his movements. He created the role of “the tramp.”

Appearing in over thirty short films, Chaplin realized that the speed and craziness

of Sennett’s productions was holding back his personal talents. He left to work at the Essanay Studios. Some of his films during this period were *His New Job*, *The Tramp*, and *The Champion*, notable for their comic and sympathetic moments. His 1917 films for the Mutual Company, including *One A.M.*, *The Pilgrim*, *The Cure*, *Easy Street*, and *The Immigrant*, displayed sharper humor. In 1918 Chaplin built his own studio and signed a million-dollar contract with National Films, producing silent-screen classics such as *A Dog’s Life*, comparing the life of a dog with that of a tramp; *Shoulder Arms*, which poked fun at World War I (1914–18); and *The Kid*, a touching story of slum life.

Established star

In 1923 Chaplin, D. W. Griffith (1875–1948), Douglas Fairbanks (1883–1937), and Mary Pickford (1893–1979) formed United Artists (UA) to produce high-quality feature-length movies. *A Woman of Paris* (1923), a drama, was followed by two of Chaplin’s funniest films, *The Gold Rush* (1925) and *The Circus* (1928). Chaplin directed *City Lights* (1931), a beautiful tale about the tramp’s friendship with a drunken millionaire and a blind flower girl. Many critics consider it his finest work. Although movies had made the change over to sound, *City Lights* was silent except for one scene in which the tramp hiccups with a tin whistle in his throat while trying to listen politely to a concert.

Modern Times (1936), a farce (broad comedy with an unbelievable plot) about the cruelty and greed of modern industry, contains some of the funniest gags and comic sequences in film history, the most famous being the tramp’s battle with an eating

machine gone crazy. Chaplin's character of Hynkel in *The Great Dictator* (1940) is a powerful satire (the use of humor to criticize a person or institution) of German military leader Adolf Hitler (1889–1945). It was the last film using the tramp, and ends with Chaplin pleading for love and freedom.

It was with these more involved productions of the 1930s and 1940s that Chaplin achieved true greatness as a film director. *Monsieur Verdoux*, directed by Chaplin in 1947 (and condemned by the American Legion of Decency), is one of the strongest moral statements ever put on the screen. Long before European filmmakers taught audiences to appreciate the role of the writer and director, Chaplin revealed his many talents by handling both roles in his productions.

Political views stir trouble

The love showered upon Chaplin in the early years of his career was more than equaled by the anger directed toward him during the 1940s and early 1950s. The American public was outraged by the outspoken quality of his political views, the problems in his personal life, and the often bitter elements expressed in his art. A socialist (one who believes all people should have equal ownership in the production of goods and services) and an atheist (one who denies the existence of God), Chaplin expressed a hatred for dictatorship (government in which power is held by one person or a single small group). This made people suspicious of him. This feeling increased when he released *Monsieur Verdoux*, in which he showed that mass murder and the abuse of workers in an attempt to increase business profits were similar. Critics praised the film, but it was more



Charlie Chaplin.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

popular with European audiences than those in America.

During the next five years Chaplin devoted himself to *Limelight* (1952), a gentle and sometimes sad work based in part on his own life. It was much different from *Monsieur Verdoux*. "I was . . . still not convinced," Chaplin wrote, "that I had completely lost the affection of the American people, that they could be so politically conscious or so humorless as to boycott [refuse to pay attention to] anyone that could amuse them." Further hurting Chaplin's image was a much-publicized lawsuit brought against him by a woman who claimed he was the father of her

child. Although Chaplin proved he was not the child's father, reaction to the charges turned many people against him.

While on vacation in Europe in 1952, Chaplin was notified by the U.S. attorney general that his reentry into the United States would be challenged. He was charged with committing immoral acts and being politically suspicious. Chaplin, who had never become a United States citizen, sold all of his American possessions and settled in Geneva, Switzerland, with his fourth wife, Oona O'Neill, daughter of the American playwright Eugene O'Neill (1888–1953), and their children. In 1957 Chaplin visited England to direct *The King in New York*, which was never shown in the United States. *My Autobiography* (the story of his own life) was published in 1964. Most critics considered Chaplin's 1967 film, *A Countess from Hong Kong*, a disaster.

Return to the United States

By the 1970s times had changed, and Chaplin was again recognized for his rich contribution to film. He returned to the United States in 1972, where he was honored by major tributes in New York City and Hollywood, California, including receiving a special Academy Award. In 1975 he became Sir Charles Chaplin after Queen Elizabeth II (1926–) of England knighted him. Two years later, on December 25, 1977, Chaplin died in his sleep in Switzerland.

All of Chaplin's works display the physical grace, ability to express feeling, and intellectual vision possessed by the finest actors. A film about Chaplin's life, titled *Chaplin*, was released in 1992.

For More Information

- Chaplin, Charlie. *Charlie Chaplin's Own Story*. Edited by Harry M. Geduld. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1985.
- Chaplin, Charlie. *My Autobiography*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1964. Reprint, New York: Plume, 1992.
- Hale, Georgia. *Charlie Chaplin: Intimate Close-Ups*. Metuchen, NJ: Scarecrow Press, 1995.
- Lynn, Kenneth S. *Charlie Chaplin and His Times*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1997.
- Milton, Joyce. *Tramp: The Life of Charlie Chaplin*. New York: HarperCollins, 1996.
- Schroeder, Alan. *Charlie Chaplin: The Beauty of Silence*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1997.

CHARLEMAGNE

Born: c. 742

Died: January 28, 814

Aachen (now in Germany)

Frankish king and ruler

Charlemagne, or Charles the Great, was king of the Franks between 768 and 814, and emperor of the West between 800 and 814. He founded the Holy Roman Empire, strengthened European economic and political life, and promoted the cultural revival known as the Carolingian Renaissance. Charlemagne's rule greatly influenced Europe's push to create a unique civilization different from that of Rome or other ancient empires.

Early life

Charlemagne, the son of Pepin the Short and Bertrada, was born in 742. Although his parents married before his brother Carloman was born, they were not legally married at the time of Charlemagne's birth, and he was thus thought to be illegitimate (born out of wedlock). In 741 Pepin had become mayor of the palace, and in 751 he deposed (removed from office) the last Merovingian king and was declared king of the Franks, a powerful Germanic tribe that lived in the region today known as France. Little is known about Charlemagne's childhood. In 754, however, he participated in the ceremony where Pope Stephen II appointed Pepin king. Charlemagne also joined Pepin on many military campaigns.

When Pepin died in October 768, Charlemagne and Carloman were both proclaimed king and were to rule the kingdom together. In the division of the realm, however, Carloman received a larger and richer portion. Under these circumstances relations between the brothers turned sour. But Carloman died unexpectedly in 771, leaving Charlemagne the sole ruler of the entire kingdom.

Territorial expansion

Charlemagne moved aggressively, especially in Italy, to remove those who threatened his power. He immediately attacked and defeated King Desiderius of the Lombards. Shortly thereafter Charlemagne was crowned king of the Lombards at Pavia. The Frankish conquest of Italy—first of Lombardy in the north and later Benevento in the south—brought new wealth and people into his kingdom.



Charlemagne.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

During his Italian operations Charlemagne also declared war against the Saxons, a Germanic tribe who threatened the northeastern frontier of Francia. Begun in 772, this cruel and bitter war finally ended in 804. Francia absorbed the land of Saxony and enforced the Christian religion on the Saxon tribes.

On his eastern frontier Charlemagne defeated Tassilo, the duke of Bavaria. To his empire Charlemagne added the Bavarian duchy, or territory controlled by a duke. He divided the western portion of the duchy into counties, each controlled by a count loyal to the king.

Further to the east the major power and ultimate threat to the Frankish realm was the vast Slavic kingdom of the Avars, or Huns, an Asiatic tribe that had settled along the upper Danube River. Between 791 and 795 Charlemagne crushed the power of the Avars and added their kingdom as a state. This victory opened the entire Danubian Plain to German colonization and the eastern expansion of Christianity—the beginning of the *Drang nach Osten*, or push to the East.

Holy Roman Empire

By 800 Charlemagne had succeeded in greatly extending his power while crushing several enemies. He ruled all of the Christianized western provinces, except the British Isles, that had once been part of the Roman Empire. As the sworn protector of the Church, Charlemagne was in fact the political master of Rome itself. The papacy, or office of the pope, also recognized Charlemagne's power. The pope crowned Charlemagne Holy Roman Emperor on Christmas Day, 800.

Charlemagne attempted to create unity and harmony within his vast realm and to support laws and promote learning that would achieve his goals of the empire. Charlemagne, in contrast to his Merovingian predecessors (who constantly traveled throughout their realms) attempted to create a fixed capital to rival that of Byzantium, an ancient culture legendary for its beauty and wealth.

A closer look at Charlemagne

The major record of Charlemagne's personal achievements is the *Vita Caroli Magni*, the first medieval biography. Written by Einhard between 817 and 836, this biography is

largely a firsthand account, as Einhard was a member of the palace school during Charlemagne's reign and was his close associate.

In the *Vita* is the actual physical description of the man who has since become one of the greatest legendary heroes of the Middle Ages (476–1453 C.E.). Toward his friends Charlemagne was lighthearted, and he particularly enjoyed the company of others. Yet toward his enemies he was often a cruel warrior feared for his strength and ability. Although primarily a man of action, he had great admiration for learning and spoke Latin fluently. He studied Greek and the liberal arts and thus combined, to some extent, the personality of a warrior and a scholar.

Charlemagne's administration

What is most striking about Charlemagne's rule was that he was able to maintain, largely through the strength of his own personality, a centralized state wherein royal authority came first. Charlemagne also maintained a small group of the best warriors, the *vassi dominici*, who helped him enforce his authority. During the course of his reign Charlemagne sent a number of written instructions to his officials. These enactments, known as the *Capitularii* had the force of law and were executed directly by the royal agents. They are extremely valuable as sources in understanding the social and legal structure of Carolingian France.

In general, Charlemagne's reign was a period of internal calm and prosperity because of his military and political ability. He succeeded, through diplomatic negotiations, in having his imperial title recognized by the Byzantine emperor. Through his program of cultural revival and changes to the

Church, he succeeded in improving the level of civilization in the West.

Carolingian culture

Charlemagne's support of the arts and letters had several purposes beyond the general improvement of culture and literacy in the empire. One of the major purposes was to provide an educated clergy (a group of religious servants) that could undertake many of the administrative tasks of government. A second purpose was to win the acceptance of orthodox doctrine, or rules of the church, as well as a uniform religious practice throughout the empire. Such uniformity not only strengthened the Church but also centralized the administration of the empire. Still, a third purpose of this cultural revival was to improve the status and authority of Charlemagne himself, who thus appeared as the defender and protector of the Church, of orthodoxy, and of education.

The intellectual traditions and educational institutions supported by Charlemagne greatly influenced the development of Western culture. Charlemagne expanded the number of schools, and the quality of education was greatly improved.

His last years

In 806, at the age of sixty-four, Charlemagne took measures to provide for the succession of his empire. He divided the realm among his three sons—Charles, Pepin, and Louis. But the death of Charles in April 810 was soon followed by that of Pepin. The remaining son, Louis, later called “the Pious,” the least warlike and aggressive of the three, was left as the sole heir to the empire. He was crowned by his father in 813.

The last years of Charlemagne's reign saw difficult times. Civil disorder increased as did disease and famine (drastic food shortages). Additionally, there were troubles on the frontiers. In many respects, the future looked dark. In 811 Charlemagne made his final will, giving a more sizable portion of his treasures to various churches of the realm than to his own heirs. He died on January 28, 814, and was buried at his palace at Aachen.

For More Information

- Bullough, Donald. *The Age of Charlemagne*. 2nd ed. New York: Exeter Books, 1980.
- Collins, Roger. *Charlemagne*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1998.
- Lamb, Harold. *Charlemagne: The Legend and the Man*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1954.
- Riché, Pierre. *Daily Life in the World of Charlemagne*. Philadelphia, PA: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1978.

CHARLES, PRINCE OF WALES

Born: November 14, 1948

London, England

English prince

Charles, Prince of Wales, is next in line for the British throne. He was probably the most photographed and written about person in the Western world in the late 1970s, but his ex-wife, Diana, Princess of Wales (1961–1997), surpassed him in popu-



Charles, Prince of Wales.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

larity. He became a single parent to his and Diana's two sons after her death and an active voice in favor of economic and social issues.

Early life

Prince Charles Philip Arthur George, the eldest of four children of Princess Elizabeth (1926–) and Prince Philip (1921–), was born on November 14, 1948, in Buckingham Palace. After the death in February 1952 of his grandfather, King George VI (1895–1952), and his mother's succession as Queen Elizabeth II, Prince Charles became the Duke of Cornwall, a position that includes the ownership of a large portion of valuable

property, and placed him next in line for the throne of the United Kingdom.

Charles, who was an obedient, shy, and somewhat awkward child, was first taught at home by a governess. In 1956, however, his parents broke from tradition and decided to send him to a local day school, Hill House in Knightsbridge. During his time at Hill House Prince Charles was often pursued by members of the London press. This continued after his enrollment in 1957 at Cheam in Hampshire, England, an upper-class preparatory school his father had attended. In July 1958, during Charles's stay at Cheam, the queen named him Prince of Wales and Earl of Chester. Still, Prince Charles was treated much like the other boys at Cheam, sharing a room with nine others and doing chores. While at Cheam the prince developed his sense of humor and his interest in theatre.

More education and military training

In part to avoid the press, Prince Charles chose to attend Gordonstoun, a school located in a remote area of northern Scotland. It was known for its strict rules, its tough living conditions, and its emphasis on social responsibility and community service. The prince attended Gordonstoun from 1962 to January 1966, and then was sent to Australia to attend Timbertop, a branch of the Geelong Grammar School. The isolated location and physical activity provided the prince with an increased sense of self-reliance. "Australia," he was later to say, "conquered my shyness." Prince Charles returned to Gordonstoun in September 1966 and during his last year rose to become head boy, or guardian, of the school. He enjoyed acting in plays and became interested in classical music.

After much thought, it was decided that Prince Charles would complete his academic career at Trinity College in Cambridge, England, where his grandfather George VI had also attended. The prince entered Trinity in October 1967 and continued his musical and acting pursuits while earning average grades in archaeology and history. In 1969 Prince Charles was sent to University College of Wales at Aberystwyth in order to learn Welsh history, language, and literature in preparation for the official ceremony that would name him Prince of Wales. He returned to Cambridge in the fall of 1969 and received his degree in 1970, the first member of the royal family to do so. Following family tradition, he spent the next seven years in the military. He attended the Royal Air Force College at Cranwell and the Royal Naval College at Dartmouth. During his time in the Royal Navy the prince served tours of sea duty, learned to fly helicopters and to skydive, and was given command of the Her Majesty's Ship (HMS) Barrington.

Prince, husband, and father

In 1977 Prince Charles began his role as Prince of Wales. Up to this time the prince had taken part in some public events. From 1977 on, however, his public activities as Prince of Wales increased in number and importance. He lent support to many charitable causes, especially those having to do with youth and the environment. He represented the royal family at home and served as a goodwill ambassador (representative) abroad. In 1978 he visited South America and in the same year represented the queen at the funerals of respected Commonwealth statesmen Sir Robert Menzies (1894–1978) and Jomo Kenyatta (c. 1893–1978). The prince went to

Yugoslavia in 1979, to the Far East in the same year, to India in 1980, and to Australia in the spring of 1981.

In February 1981 Charles's engagement to the Lady Diana Frances Spencer, daughter of Earl Spencer, was officially announced. The royal wedding, on July 29, 1981, was a magnificent and moving event that was viewed by millions worldwide on television. Marriage and the birth of his two sons, Prince William in June 1982 and Prince Henry in September 1984, did not affect the prince's busy schedule. Princess Diana accompanied him on many trips, and because of her youth, beauty, and style she developed a loyal following of her own that served to support but later overshadow her husband's position.

Troubles at Buckingham Palace

While there had always been rumors that Charles and Diana were having problems with their marriage, the royal couple continued to make public appearances and raise their two sons. The twelve-year age difference between Charles and Diana, the intellectual gap between the two, and the claim that Charles had been pressured into marriage by his father were often discussed as possible causes of problems in the marriage. Reports began to emerge in the mid-1980s that Charles was having an affair with Camilla Parker Bowles, an old girlfriend he had once proposed to, but there was no proof until a series of tapes surfaced in the early 1990s.

The revealing of taped phone conversations between Charles and Camilla proved that they were having an affair and eventually led to Charles and Diana's separation in December 1992. Because Diana retained custody of their two sons, it was originally spec-

ulated that she would still be able to be crowned queen one day. However, when the royal divorce was announced in 1995 these plans were dropped, though she was able to retain the title of Princess of Wales. In addition to keeping her title, Diana was awarded a settlement of \$23 million plus \$600 thousand a year to maintain her private office, from which she continued her charity work.

For Charles the major problem was how to get the British people to accept Camilla after his popular ex-wife. One positive sign was in July 1997 when the British newspaper *The Daily Telegraph* gave their relationship its blessing: "She is good for his peace of mind, and is, therefore, performing a public service. It would make the best of a bad job if the public were to come gradually to accept this." The message seemed to imply that Charles was preparing the British people to accept Camilla as their possible future queen. For her part, Camilla emerged slowly as a society fundraiser, an important role for a possible member of the royal family.

New challenges

Prince Charles faced his biggest challenge after the August 31, 1997, death of his ex-wife, Princess Diana, in an auto accident. He became a single parent to princes William and Harry. British newspapers warned him that he "must cast off his stiff upper lip and reach out to his sons and the people of Britain, or he could lose both." Charles was prepared for the task, engaging in public displays of affection with his sons and introducing Camilla to them. He realized that his support was vital to their recovery from the loss of their mother.

Prince Charles continues to take seriously the motto of the Prince of Wales, "Ich

Dien," which means "I serve," and he does so by trying "to show concern for people, to display interest in them as individuals, and to encourage them in a whole host of ways." He works to promote organic farming methods (farming without the use of chemical fertilizers and pesticides [bug sprays]). During a trip to Argentina in 1999, he visited a memorial honoring Argentine soldiers who were killed in the war with Britain over the Falkland Islands in 1982. Charles also took an interest in Britain's housing problem, criticized modern architecture and helped plan new and better housing developments. It seems that he has changed the public's perception of him as stuffy and out of touch. As *Maclean's* Joe Chidley wrote while talking about a visit by the prince to Canada in 2001, "The response to Charles's visit seemed in keeping with the man himself—introspective [thoughtful], and preferring substance over ceremony."

For More Information

- Barry, Stephen P. *Royal Secrets : The View from Downstairs*. New York: Villard Books, 1985.
- Dimbleby, Jonathan. *The Prince of Wales: A Biography*. New York: W. Morrow, 1994.
- Martin, Ralph G. *Charles & Diana*. New York: Putnam, 1985.

**RAY
CHARLES**

Born: September 23, 1932

Albany, Georgia

African American musician and pianist

The African American musician Ray Charles was widely admired as a singer, pianist, and composer (writer of music). He combined elements of jazz, gospel, and rhythm-and-blues to create a new kind of African American music known as soul.

Early life

Ray Charles Robinson was born in Albany, Georgia, on September 23, 1932. His father, Bailey Robinson, worked as a railroad mechanic and handyman; his mother, Aretha Robinson, worked in a sawmill and sometimes washed other people's clothes to make extra money. In his autobiography (the story of his own life) *Brother Ray*, Charles remembered that "The old man . . . was hardly ever around." The family moved to Greenville, Florida, when Charles was still a child. At the age of five Charles watched his four-year-old brother drown in a laundry tub despite his efforts to save the boy.

Soon afterward Charles began to go blind. At the age of seven his right eye was removed, soon after which he became totally blind. He was sent to the Saint Augustine School for the Blind, in Florida, where he learned to read Braille (a system of raised dots on paper that the blind can use to read) and began to play the piano, clarinet, and saxophone. His blindness required him to use his strong memory for music and his gift of perfect pitch. At fifteen years of age Charles lost his mother; two years later his father passed away. The suffering Charles experienced, having gone blind and been left an orphan at an early age, gave his music added depth of feeling.



Ray Charles.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Early career

After graduation from the Saint Augustine School, Charles traveled across Florida and performed with country and western bands. It was an experience that helped him later, when he added western songs to his performances. Shortly afterward he began touring with rhythm-and-blues bands, arranging and composing music as well as playing the piano, clarinet, and saxophone. In order to avoid being confused with boxing champion Ray Robinson (1921–1989), he dropped his last name and became known as Ray Charles.

Charles grew tired of Florida and decided to use his savings to go as far away as possible.

He wound up in Seattle, Washington, where he formed a band called the McSon Trio, which eventually had its own local television show. He also made several records for the Swingtime record company. In 1950 he moved to Los Angeles, California (where Swingtime was based), and continued to record and perform.

As a singer, blues singers Guitar Slim (1926–1959) and Percy Mayfield influenced Charles. At the piano, the jazz arrangements of Lloyd Glenn influenced him. The influence of gospel music was always present in his style. Charles's singing of romantic songs continued in the smooth tradition of Nat "King" Cole (1917–1965), but was boosted by deep-throated growls and high notes that were often thought to be coming from a female voice. His strong voice, his mixing of styles, and his skill as a musician gave him international appeal, but for an English-speaking audience his storytelling power added something extra that made Charles stand out from other artists.

Invented soul music

In 1954 a recording session with Atlantic Records combined gospel with rhythm-and-blues and established Charles's "sweet new style" in American music. Charles used the forms of both gospel music and standard blues in recording such songs as "My Jesus Is All the World to Me," "I Got a Woman," and "Baby, Let Me Hold Your Hand." Charles referred to his invention of soul music as a combination of jazz and gospel. He continued to tour, spending most of the 1950s on the road.

In 1959, on the ABC-Paramount label, Charles recorded his famous "Georgia on My Mind," which later became the official song of the state of Georgia. Charles won ten Grammy

Awards from the National Academy of Recording Arts and Sciences. In 1976 he recorded songs from George Gershwin's (1898–1937) *Porgy and Bess* with Cleo Laine. A television ad for Pepsi in the 1990s helped make sure that Charles would be known to a new generation of music lovers. He also kept the albums coming, including *My World*, *The Best of Ray Charles: The Atlantic Years*, and *Love Affair*. He also appeared in films such as *Ballad in Blue*, *The Blues Brothers*, *Limit Up*, and *Spy Hard*.

Views on Elvis

In 1994 Charles appeared on the NBC news show *Now*, admitting that "I'm probably going to lose at least a third of my fans," when he told interviewer Bob Costas (1952–) that Elvis Presley (1935–1977) had just copied what African American artists were already doing. "To say that Elvis was . . . 'the king,' I don't think of Elvis like that because I know too many artists that were far greater than Elvis." While this statement caused a stir, it was known that rock music, especially in its early years, was heavily rooted in blues. Many rock artists performed and became popular by playing music that originally belonged to African American blues singers.

Later years

Charles is married to the former Della Altwine, herself a gospel singer, with whom he has three children. He is also good friends with Stevie Wonder (1950–), Quincy Jones (1933–), and other musicians. Yet there is always a feeling of loneliness in his music that is, perhaps, best reflected in his recordings with Betty Carter (1930–1998) and his recordings from *Porgy and Bess*. Charles put it best himself in a 1989 *Downbeat* interview with Jeff Levinson: "Music is my breathing. That's my

apparatus. I've been doing it for 40 years. And I'm going to do it until God himself says, 'Brother Ray, you've been a nice horse, but now I'm going to put you out to pasture.'"

Ray Charles also remains in the news for his generous donations to educational institutions. In 2000 he gave Wilberforce University in Ohio a two-million-dollar gift to fund music scholarships, and in 2001 he donated one million dollars to all-black Morehouse College in Atlanta, Georgia. Both universities awarded honorary degrees (received without having met the usual requirements) to Charles. Charles also appeared in Las Vegas, Nevada, in 2001 to promote a new line of slot machines that the Alliance Gaming Corporation had created for the blind to use.

For More Information

Charles, Ray. *Brother Ray: Ray Charles' Own Story*. New York: Da Capo Press, 1992.

Lydon, Michael. *Ray Charles: Man and Music*. New York: Riverhead, 1998.

Ritz, David. *Ray Charles: Voice of Soul*. New York: Chelsea House, 1994.

Turk, Ruth. *Ray Charles: Soul Man*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 1996.

Winski, Norman. *Ray Charles*. Los Angeles: Melrose Square, 1994.

GEOFFREY CHAUCER

Born: c. 1345

London, England

Died: October 1400

London, England

English poet, author, and courtier

Called the father of English poetry, Geoffrey Chaucer is ranked as one of the greatest poets of the late Middle Ages (c.E. 476 c.–1500). He was admired for his philosophy as well as for his poetic talents. His best-known works are *The Canterbury Tales* and *Troilus and Criseyde*.

Early years and marriage

The exact date and place of Geoffrey Chaucer's birth are not known. The evidence suggests, however, that he was born about 1345, or a year or two earlier, in his father's house located on Thames Street, London, England. It is likely that young Geoffrey attended school at St. Paul's Cathedral, and that he was introduced to great writing and the poetry of Virgil (70–19 B.C.E.) and Ovid (43 B.C.E.–? C.E.).

The first historical record of Chaucer reveals that in 1357 he was a page (a young boy in the service of a knight) in the household of the Countess of Ulster, the wife of Prince Lionel. During 1359–1360 Chaucer was in France with Prince Lionel (1338–1368). This was during the period of the Hundred Years' War (1137–1453) between England and France. Chaucer was taken prisoner. The English King Edward III (1312–1377) paid a ransom for his release.

Little is known of Chaucer for the next six years. Documents indicate that in 1366 he was traveling in Spain on a diplomatic mission. Soon after his return he married Philippa, the daughter of Sir Payne Roet.



Geoffrey Chaucer.

Philippa was a lady of the queen's chamber. Chaucer developed close ties with John of Gaunt (1340–1399), the Duke of Lancaster, and other nobility (people of high status). In 1368 Chaucer was promoted from page to squire (a position of status above a page and below a knight).

Early poetry and continued diplomatic missions

The year 1369 marked a turning point both in the fortunes of England and in the career of young Chaucer. John of Gaunt, the Duke of Lancaster, asked Chaucer to compose a memorial poem, written in English, to be recited at the Mass for his deceased wife.

Prior to 1369 poetry in the English court had been written in French. French was the natural language of both the king and his queen. It is possible that he had written his English devotional poem, “An A B C,” which is a translation from a French source, for the queen at some time before her death. The theme of his poem, *The Book of the Duchess*, which was written for intellectual and sophisticated people, was a fitting memorial to one of the highest-ranking ladies of the English royal household.

Chaucer was sent abroad on diplomatic missions in 1370 and again in 1372–1373. The latter mission took him to Florence and Genoa, Italy. There he may have deepened his acquaintance with the poetic traditions established by Dante (1265–1321) and Petrarch (1304–1374).

Times were good for Chaucer and Philippa because they were economically secure. John of Gaunt, the Duke of Lancaster, gave Chaucer a yearly salary of ten pounds, the normal income for a squire in an aristocratic or distinguished household. The king appointed Chaucer a position as controller (chief accounting officer) of taxes on wools, skins, and hides in the port of London. This position brought ten pounds annually and a bonus of ten marks. The City of London granted Chaucer a free residence above Aldgate. He remained at Aldgate until 1386, though he went abroad several times on diplomatic missions for King Edward, who died in 1377, and for King Richard II (1367–1400). In 1382 Chaucer was made controller of taxes on wine and other goods with the right to employ a deputy.

Troilus and Criseyde

While he was living above Aldgate, Chaucer completed his translation of *Consolation of Philosophy* by Boethius (c. 480–524), a Roman philosopher, whose phrases and ideas repeat throughout Chaucer's poetry. He also probably composed some short poems and *Troilus and Criseyde*, a tragedy. This long poem is set against the background of the Trojan War and is based on an earlier poem by Giovanni Boccaccio (1313–1375), an Italian poet.

Chaucer lost his positions at the custom house in 1386 and moved to a residence in Kent, England. He served as a Member of Parliament from Kent. It is likely that Philippa died in 1387. Chaucer received his highest position, the clerkship of the royal works, in 1389. He served as clerk until he resigned in 1391. For a time thereafter he served as deputy forester for the royal forest at North Petherton, England. The king granted him a pension of twenty pounds in 1394, and in 1397 an annual cask of wine was added to this grant. King Henry IV (1553–1610) renewed and increased these grants in 1399.

The Canterbury Tales

Between 1387 and 1400 Chaucer must have devoted much time to the writing of his most famous work, *The Canterbury Tales*. Chaucer gives his tale of pilgrimage, or journey to a sacred site, national suggestions by directing it toward the shrine of St. Thomas Becket (c. 1118–1170), a citizen of London and a national hero. The humor is sometimes very subtle, but it is also often broad and outspoken.

His original plan for *The Canterbury Tales* called for two tales each from over twenty pilgrims (people who travel to a holy site) making a journey from Southwark, England, to the shrine of St. Thomas Becket at Canterbury, England, and back. He later modified the plan to write only one tale from each pilgrim on the road to Canterbury, but even this plan was never completed. The tales survive in groups connected by prologues (introductions) and epilogues (conclusions), but the proper arrangement of these groups is not altogether clear. The series is introduced in a "General Prologue" that describes the pilgrimage and the pilgrims taking part in it.

Life after Canterbury Tales

In addition to the translation and major works mentioned, Chaucer wrote a number of shorter poems and translated at least part of *Roman de la rose*, a late medieval French poem by Guillaume de Lorris and Jean de Meun. Chaucer's interests also included science. He prepared a translation of a Latin article on the use of the astrolabe, an instrument for finding the latitude of the sun and planets. He may also have been the translator of a work concerning the use of an equatorium, an instrument for calculating the positions of the planets.

In December 1399 Chaucer retired and leased a house in the garden of Westminster Abbey, London. In October 1400 Chaucer died.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Geoffrey Chaucer*. New York: Chelsea House, 1999.

Childress, Diana. *Chaucer's England*. North Haven, CT: Linnet Books, 2000.

Chute, Marchette G. *Geoffrey Chaucer of England*. New York: E. P. Dutton, 1946.

Wagenknecht, Edward. *The Personality of Chaucer*. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1968.

CÉSAR CHÁVEZ

Born: March 31, 1927

Yuma, Arizona

Died: April 22, 1993

San Luis, Arizona

Hispanic American labor leader and champion of migrant worker rights

César Chávez was an Hispanic American labor leader who organized the first effective union of farm workers in the history of California agriculture.

Early years

César Chávez was born on March 31, 1927, near Yuma, Arizona. He was the second of Librado and Juana Estrada Chávez's six children. His parents owned a store and worked on a farm of over one hundred acres that Chávez's grandfather, Césario Chávez, had established. The Chávez family was kicked off its land for failing to pay its taxes during the Great Depression of the 1930s (when nearly half the industrial workers in the United States lost their jobs, leading to lower demand for goods and services). The family then joined the many migrant (traveling) laborers streaming into California.

Chávez quit school while in the seventh grade to work full-time in the fields, but he was not really educated even to that level—he could barely read and write. In 1944 he joined the U.S. Navy and served for two years. Since he was never allowed to advance beyond low-level jobs, he continued as a farm worker in California upon completing his service. In 1948 he married Helen Fabela of Delano, California. Migrant farm workers at that time worked long hours in the fields for very little money. Sometimes their employers would not pay them at all, and there was nothing they could do—nowhere to turn. Many of the farm workers were not U.S. citizens. In an interview with the *Farm Worker Press*, Chávez remembered, “When I was nineteen I joined the National Agricultural Workers Union. But it didn't have any more success than any of the other farm workers' unions.”

Organizing and boycotting

As Chávez worked in the vineyards (land containing grapevines) and fruit orchards of California, he used his free time to educate himself. He read about famous labor leaders and became interested in the teachings of Mohandas Gandhi (1869–1948), the Indian leader who preached nonviolent resistance in his country's struggle for independence. Chávez, after a couple of failed strikes by his fellow workers, realized that better organization was needed. In 1952 he met Fred Ross, who was organizing Mexican Americans in California's barrios (mainly Spanish-speaking cities or towns) into the Community Service Organization (CSO). The organization concentrated on voter registration, citizenship classes, and helping Mexican American com-

munities obtain needed facilities (such as schools and medical care) in the barrios. The organization also helped individuals with typical problems such as getting welfare, dealing with crooked salesmen, and police injustice.

Chávez's work in the voter registration drive in Sal Si Puedes ("Get out if you can"), a rough San Jose, California, barrio, was so effective that Ross hired him as an organizer. Over the next ten years Chávez rose to become national director of CSO. In 1962, when the CSO rejected his proposal to start a farm workers' union, he quit the organization. At thirty-five years of age, with \$1,200 in savings, he took his wife and eight children to Delano to begin the slow, step-by-step organizing process that grew into the National Farm Workers Association (NFWA). Three years later, when members of the Agricultural Workers Organizing Committee of the American Federation of Labor and Congress of Industrial Organizations (AFL-CIO) went on strike against the vineyards in Delano, they asked for support from Chávez's NFWA.

Thus began the great California table-grape strike, which lasted five years. In 1966 the two unions merged to form the United Farm Workers Organizing Committee (UFWOC) of the AFL-CIO, headed by Chávez. During the struggle to organize the vineyards, Chávez began an international boycott (to join together in refusing to deal with an item, person, or company in an effort to change practices) of California table grapes. This boycott brought such pressure on local grape growers that most eventually signed with Chávez's union. The boycott ended in September 1970. Soon after this victory Chávez started another boycott, this



César Chávez.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

time against lettuce growers who used nonunion labor. Chávez became the first man ever to organize a farm workers' union in California that obtained signed contracts from the agricultural industry.

Believed in nonviolence

Chávez was an outspoken believer in Gandhi's idea of social change through nonviolent means. In 1968, to prevent violence in the grape strike, he fasted (went without eating) for twenty-five days. The fast was broken at an outdoor mass attended by some four thousand people, including Senator Robert F. Kennedy (1925–1968). Chávez fasted on sev-

eral other occasions, including twenty-four days in 1972 to protest antiunion laws in Arizona and for thirty-six days in 1988 to call attention to the continued poor treatment of vineyard workers. Chávez grew dangerously weak after this fast. Another protest involved Chávez leading a two-hundred-mile march from Delano to Sacramento, California, to call attention to the demands of the farm workers.

In July 1970 Chávez's union faced one of its most serious challenges, when the Teamsters Union signed contracts that applied to farm workers with some two hundred growers in California. Chávez met the challenge head on: within three weeks the largest agricultural strike ever to hit California had spread along the coastal valleys. About seven thousand farm workers went on strike to win recognition of Chávez's UFWOC as their bargaining agent, with the national boycott again used as the weapon. However, the union gradually lost its strength. From 1972 to 1974, membership decreased from nearly sixty thousand to just five thousand. But Chávez's efforts had made a difference. From 1964 to 1980, wages of California migrant workers had increased 70 percent, workers received health care benefits, and a formal policy for handling worker grievances (complaints) was established.

Chávez continued to fight for the rights of workers up until the day of his death on April 22, 1993. He had had nothing but a few glasses of water in the six days before his death. He was elected to the Labor Department's Hall of Fame in 1999 for his work toward improving the treatment of farm workers.

For More Information

Cedeño, Maria E. *Cesar Chavez: Labor Leader*. Brookfield, CT: Millbrook Press, 1993.

Collins, David R. *Farmworker's Friend: The Story of César Chávez*. Minneapolis, MN.: Carolrhoda Books, 1996.

Ferriss, Susan, et. al. *The Fight in the Fields: César Chávez and the Farmworkers Movement*. New York: Harcourt Brace, 1997.

Gonzales, Doreen. *César Chávez: Leader for Migrant Farm Workers*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1996.

DENNIS CHAVEZ

Born: April 8, 1888

Los Chavez, United States Mexican Territory
(present-day New Mexico)

Died: November 18, 1962

Washington, D.C.

Hispanic American politician and statesman

The first Hispanic American to be elected to the United States Senate, Democrat Dennis Chavez had a long and distinguished career in government service, first as a member of the U.S. House of Representatives and then as a senator from the state of New Mexico. Chavez was a strong supporter of education and civil rights.

Early life

The third of eight children, Dionisio Chavez was born to David and Paz (Sanchez) Chavez on April 8, 1888. His family lived in what was then the United States Mexican Territory. (The area did not become the state of New Mexico until 1912.) When Chavez was seven, the family moved to Albuquerque,

New Mexico. At school his name was changed to Dennis. Chavez quit school in the eighth grade and went to work. For the next five years he drove a grocery wagon to help support his family. He joined the Albuquerque Engineering Department in 1905, earning a large increase in income. Even after Chavez left school, he spent his evenings at the local public library. He was greatly interested in reading about politics, especially anything involving his hero, Thomas Jefferson (1743–1826).

Chavez worked as a Spanish interpreter for Senate candidate Andreius A. Jones (1862–1927) during Jones's 1916 campaign. Jones rewarded him with a clerk's position in the U.S. Senate in 1918. While clerking, Chavez entered Georgetown University to study law. Although he had never finished high school, he was admitted after taking a special entrance examination. He earned a law degree from Georgetown in 1920 and returned to Albuquerque, where he established a successful law practice.

Political career begins

A Democrat like his hero Thomas Jefferson, Chavez became active in local politics, winning a seat in the New Mexico House of Representatives. In 1930 he ran successfully for a seat in the U.S. House of Representatives, defeating the incumbent (prior officeholder), Republican Albert Simms (1882–1964). The population of New Mexico was still very small and Chavez served as the state's only representative. He was reelected once and then turned his sights toward the U.S. Senate.

In 1934 he ran against the powerful Republican incumbent, Bronson Cutting



Dennis Chavez.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

(1888–1935). After a hard-fought, bitter campaign and a narrow defeat, Chavez challenged Cutting's victory, claiming that vote fraud had taken place. In May 1935, before the issue could be decided, Cutting was killed in an airplane crash. Chavez was appointed by New Mexico's governor Clyde Tingley (1883–1960) to serve in Cutting's place. Five senators expressed their unhappiness with this by walking out of the Senate as Chavez was being sworn in. Chavez, however, was the clear choice of the people of New Mexico when he was officially elected to the position in 1936, defeating a popular Republican candidate.

Served with distinction

New Mexico voters showed their support for Chavez by reelecting him to the Senate five times. Although he was often criticized for his independent positions on various issues, Chavez was a strong supporter of the New Deal programs of President Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945). These programs tried to increase employment and bring about political and social reforms in the 1930s by expanding the functions of the federal government. Chavez also supported Roosevelt's 1937 plan to enlarge the Supreme Court, which many others opposed. Chavez's service on important congressional committees, such as those dealing with education, labor, and Indian affairs, allowed him to fight for causes he believed in. He protested cuts in the amount of land given to Indians and demanded an investigation of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs.

In 1938 Chavez coauthored the Chavez-McAdoo Bill, which established a federal radio station in South America to compete with broadcasts that were being made there by fascist governments (military governments controlled by one party that deny the freedoms of individuals and use violence and terror to silence any opposition). However, in a surprising move the following year, he urged U.S. recognition of Spain's fascist leader, General Francisco Franco (1892–1975). Chavez also voted on behalf of measures to help farmers and took an interest in matters involving employment programs and unemployment benefits.

Chavez earned the nickname "Puerto Rico's Senator" in 1942 when he started an investigation into the causes of poor social and economic conditions in Puerto Rico. His

support of a bill to improve living conditions and attract industry to Puerto Rico and the Virgin Islands was important in helping it pass when it was put to a vote in the Senate. He also attracted national attention during his long fight for the creation of a federal Fair Employment Practices Commission. The bill was designed to protect workers from discrimination (unequal treatment) on the basis of race, religion, or national origin by employers or labor unions doing governmental work. The bill was eventually defeated in 1946—by only an eight-vote margin.

Dennis Chavez was the only national Hispanic American elected official of his time. He worked tirelessly to further the interests of the state of New Mexico and is credited for bringing significant amounts of federal funding as well as key military bases to the state. Chavez died in Washington, D.C., of a heart attack on November 18, 1962, at the age of seventy-four.

For More Information

Kanellos, Nicolás. *Hispanic American Almanac*. 3rd ed. Detroit: Gale, 2002.

Meier, Matt S. *Mexican American Biographies, A Historical Dictionary: 1836–1987*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1988.

LINDA
CHAVEZ

Born: June 17, 1947

Albuquerque, New Mexico

Hispanic American civil rights activist and author

Throughout her career Hispanic American civil rights activist Linda Chavez has helped change the role of Hispanics in America. Chavez believes that Hispanics and other minorities should be awarded advancement not because of their race but rather for their own achievements.

A childhood without color

Linda Chavez was born into a middle-class family in Albuquerque, New Mexico, on June 17, 1947. Her parents, both devoted Catholics, came from different racial backgrounds. Her mother was Anglo American and her father was Hispanic. Racial prejudice was not a concern during her early years as the city of Albuquerque was mostly Hispanic. Her father was proud of his heritage as a descendant of seventeenth-century Spanish settlers and also took pride in the United States. He served as an American during World War II (1941–45). Chavez's father considered his Hispanic background part of private life, not public. Her father's quiet approach to his racial identity was influential in Chavez's own ideas later in her career.

Prejudice and the possibilities of education

Chavez first came into contact with racial prejudice when her family moved to Denver, Colorado, when she was nine. Chavez witnessed firsthand the negative attitudes about minorities that would later inspire her to join in civil rights movements supporting the causes of Hispanics, African Americans, and women. She also became determined to excel in her schoolwork to overcome the low expectations that some people had of her as a Hispanic.



Linda Chavez.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

After graduating from high school, Chavez attended the University of Colorado, where she decided to pursue a career in teaching—a career that she felt could play an important role in social reform. During her undergraduate studies, she married Christopher Gersten in 1967, but she kept her maiden name.

After graduating from the University of Colorado in 1970, Chavez went on to the University of California at Los Angeles (UCLA), where she began a graduate program in English literature. However, she became upset with the way she was treated by faculty and students because she was

Hispanic. Chavez left the university in 1972 and moved to Washington, D.C., with her husband.

Active in education issues

In the nation's capital, Chavez did not return to teaching but remained active in educational issues. She worked with the National Education Association (NEA), the largest teachers' union in the country. She served as a consultant (someone who gives expert advice) on education to the federal government's Department of Health, Education, and Welfare. In addition, she became an active member of the Democratic National Committee, participating in the promotion of a number of liberal causes. She eventually obtained a position with the nation's second-largest teachers' union, the American Federation of Teachers (AFT), which was known as an influential force in education policy.

Looking for a role in Washington

While editor of the AFT publication, *American Educator*, Chavez wrote a series of articles urging a return to "traditional values" in American schools. These writings soon brought her to the attention of conservatives in Washington.

Throughout the 1970s Chavez became increasingly dissatisfied with liberal views on minorities in America. She felt that liberals sought her out simply because of her representation as a Hispanic leader, not for her own ideas. Similarly, she developed a growing concern over national programs such as affirmative action (efforts to create equal opportunities for minorities and women in areas such as education and employment). Chavez believed that Hispanics should not be

stereotyped, or forced into traditional roles, as helpless minorities who could not get ahead without government aid. She believed Hispanics should be encouraged to succeed through individual effort.

With the election of Ronald Reagan (1911–) to the presidency in 1980, Chavez's ideas received praise from conservatives. She became a consultant for the Reagan administration in 1981. In 1983 she was appointed by the president to serve as director of the U.S. Commission on Civil Rights. Chavez continued to criticize certain parts of the country's civil rights laws, especially programs such as affirmative action. Meanwhile, many liberal activists accused her of supporting Republican efforts to weaken the government's role in guaranteeing civil rights to minorities.

Jumping into politics

Finding herself lacking support from most Democrats, Chavez officially joined the Republican Party after being hired onto Reagan's White House staff in 1985. As director of the Office of the White House Public Liaison, Chavez was the most powerful woman on the staff. Her position gave her an increased level of influence with the president, but she left this post after less than a year's time in order to run for senator in Maryland.

For the senatorial race, Chavez ran as a Republican in a mostly Democratic state. The state's citizens were distrustful of Chavez's short residence in Maryland as well as her track record in her shifting political beliefs. On election day, Chavez was handed a devastating defeat. Soon afterwards, she removed herself from the political arena.

From power to the pen

Now free of political loyalties, Chavez returned to producing ideas for social and educational change. The Manhattan Institute for Policy Research, a conservative research institute, made her a fellow (an associate). She also became a regular contributor to many national publications. Her 1991 book, *Out of the Barrio: Toward a New Politics of Hispanic Assimilation*, brought renewed attention from politicians and the press. The work once again showed her belief that affirmative action and other programs created an unrealistic and unflattering picture of Hispanics as a group. As had been the case throughout her career, Chavez's words were often talked about in the media, but they created debate and raised awareness about the state of the nation's attitude toward minorities.

In 1995 she founded the Center for Equal Opportunity in Washington, D.C., a public policy organization that concentrates on three subjects: racial preferences, immigration and integration, and multicultural education.

In 2000 Chavez was honored by the Library of Congress as a "Living Legend" for her continued involvement and contributions to American culture. In 2001 the newly elected President George W. Bush (1946–) nominated Chavez for Secretary of Labor. Chavez later withdrew her name from consideration. It is believed that she did so because of media allegations that she had housed an undocumented immigrant in her home, which is against the law in the United States.

Despite the criticism she has received from many liberal and Hispanic American groups for her conservative views, Chavez has emerged as one of the most visible and influ-

ential figures fighting for civil rights and educational reforms. Her example as a successful political personality has made her a role model for many in the Hispanic community, inspiring a growing number of politicians in the minority group to join the Republican Party.

For More Information

Chavez, Linda. *Out of the Barrio: Toward a New Politics of Hispanic Assimilation*. New York: Basic Books, 1991.

Telgen, Diane, and Jim Kamp, eds. *Notable Hispanic American Women*. Detroit: Gale, 1993.

BENJAMIN CHAVIS MUHAMMAD

Born: January 22, 1948

Oxford, North Carolina

*African American activist, religious leader,
and author*

Lifelong activist Benjamin Chavis Muhammad overcame racial injustice and wrongful imprisonment to become a vocal leader in the civil rights movement, which pressed for equality between the races.

Descended from activists

Benjamin Franklin Chavis Jr. (he took the last name Muhammad later in life) was born in 1948 in Oxford, North Carolina, into a long and distinguished line of preachers. His parents were Benjamin Chavis Sr. and



Benjamin Chavis Muhammad.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Elisabeth Chavis. He grew up the only son in a family of four children. His great-great-grandfather, John Chavis, is considered to be the first black graduate of Princeton University, because he graduated from a New Jersey seminary (religious school) that later became the university. John Chavis, according to Benjamin, was killed in 1838 for teaching slave children to read and write.

In the mid-twentieth century, even as the walls of segregation (the act of separating people based on race) began to crumble, the worldviews of civil rights leaders like Chavis Muhammad and Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968) were shaped against this back-

drop of hatred and bigotry (intolerance of non-whites). Chavis became involved in his church, finding shelter from such hostile attitudes.

Chavis attended school at the North Carolina Colored Orphanage, where his mother worked as a teacher. His father made him a member of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) when Chavis was twelve.

Benjamin Chavis Muhammad's first act of protest against racial injustice came when he was a wide-eyed thirteen year old. On his way home from school each day, Chavis Muhammad would pass a whites-only library in Oxford, North Carolina. One day, tired of tattered hand-me-downs and desirous of a book with two intact covers on it, he boldly walked into the library. The librarians told him to leave, but he questioned that demand. "He asked why," a childhood friend told the *New York Times*. "A lot of us when we were told to go away . . . would just do so, but Ben would always challenge, always ask why." The librarians called his parents, but the incident, like the spunkiness of the boy at its center, could not be calmed and tempers flared. In a short time the library was opened to all races. A child's simple act of disobedience and intellectual curiosity had shattered the overt racism of an institution whose sole mission, young Chavis Muhammad knew, should have been the enrichment of minds—those of blacks and whites.

College education and continuing civil rights work

After graduation from high school, where Chavis Muhammad kept up his early interest in and support for racial equality, he went on to St. Augustine's College in Raleigh,

North Carolina. After two years at St. Augustine's, Chavis Muhammad went on to the University of North Carolina, graduating in 1969 with a bachelor's degree in chemistry.

In 1968—the year of King's assassination, which some observers feel brought an end to the modern civil rights era—Chavis Muhammad became a field officer for the United Church of Christ's Commission for Racial Justice. The Commission was organized in 1963 in response to the assassination of civil rights activist Medgar Evers (1925–1963) and the infamous Birmingham, Alabama, church bombing that killed four African American schoolgirls in 1963. The Commission coordinated racial justice strategies for national and regional organizations and led community organization and criminal justice campaigns.

In February of 1971 Chavis Muhammad was in Wilmington, North Carolina, to drum up support for a school desegregation lawsuit that had been brought by the NAACP. On a night of racial violence, Mike's Grocery, a white-owned store in a black part of town, was firebombed. A year later, the Wilmington 10 (as the nine black men, including Chavis Muhammad, and one white woman came to be known) were convicted of arson (illegally starting a fire) and were sentenced to a combined total of 282 years in prison. The lengthiest term, thirty-four years, was slapped on Chavis Muhammad.

World focused on his imprisonment

The case immediately attracted worldwide attention and became a celebrated focus of the civil rights movement in the United States. Defense attorneys pointed out 2,685 errors in the trial, but appeals were denied. The Wilmington 10 went to prison in 1976.

While in prison, Chavis Muhammad, who had been taught by King to see the positive in a negative experience, was frequently escorted in leg irons and handcuffs to Duke University, where he earned a master's degree from the divinity school (religious school) under a study-release program. A hard-working student, Chavis Muhammad dodged the prison's strict, 10 P.M., lights-out rule by reading his school books in the bathroom, which was lighted all night.

The Wilmington 10 case took a dramatic turn when three key witnesses from the trial admitted they had made up their stories after being pressured by local law enforcement authorities. North Carolina governor James Hunt reduced the sentences but left the convictions intact. Finally, in 1980, after Chavis Muhammad and the other activists had been released, a Justice Department investigation led to a federal appellate court's reversal of the convictions.

By 1985 Chavis Muhammad had been elected executive director of the United Church of Christ's Commission for Racial Justice and soon emerged as a national figure. He organized gang summits (meetings between leaders) to criticize the skyrocketing violence, the school drop-out rate, and rampant drug involvement hurting America's young people. He also participated in mainstream national politics and served as the clergy coordinator (religious coordinator) for the Reverend Jesse Jackson's (1941–) 1984 presidential campaign.

Pioneered concept of "Environmental Racism"

While Chavis Muhammad was at the Commission for Racial Justice, he became

associated with the growing environmental movement. In 1983 Chavis Muhammad had joined in a protest against the depositing of tons of contaminated soil in rural Warren County, North Carolina, where the population was 75 percent black and mostly poor. Chavis Muhammad, educated in school as a chemist and in the streets as an activist, saw the political issue clearly: industry's garbage was being passed off on the lower class, politically helpless members of society. Although the protest failed at getting the landfill removed, it did stop further landfills being added to Warren County.

Coining the term "environmental racism," Chavis Muhammad ordered a study that documented the extent of the crisis: three of the five largest toxic waste landfills in the country were in minority neighborhoods. He criticized federal, state, and local governments, as well as the mainstream environmental organizations, which were headed by whites and, in his view, cared more about the wetlands than the health of black people.

Chavis Muhammad's speech at the 1987 First National People of Color Environmental Leadership Summit cast much needed light on the environmental devastation destroying minority communities—not only those of African Americans, but of Mexican American farmers, Native Americans, and the peoples of Alaska. Thus he became one of the most visible spokespersons on environmental policy. After the election of President Bill Clinton (1946–) in 1992, Chavis Muhammad served as a senior advisor to the transition team studying the departments of Energy, the Interior, and Agriculture, as well as the Environmental Protection Agency.

Controversy

When Chavis Muhammad won the election in 1993 as the executive director of the NAACP, he proclaimed: "Now is the time for healing. Now is the time for unity." It was soon discovered, however, that Chavis Muhammad had begun setting aside the organization's funds to use for a legal settlement on a sexual harassment case (the verbal or physical mistreatment of a sexual nature). In a twist of events, the NAACP's board of directors fired Chavis Muhammad in 1994. In 1996 a District of Columbia Superior Court ruled that the organization would not have to pay any part of a \$332,400 settlement reached in the case.

In a change of religious beliefs, Chavis converted to the Nation of Islam, a religious and cultural organization for African Americans, in February 1997 and took the name Muhammad. Chavis Muhammad's desire to join the Nation of Islam and still remain a minister of the United Church of Christ (UCC) was not allowed. The Eastern North Carolina Association of the UCC voted to terminate Chavis Muhammad's ministerial standing in April 1997. He said that God called him to the Nation of Islam, and that he hoped to unite Christians and Muslims in building a new nation.

Chavis Muhammad continues to work for the rights of African Americans. He was one of the organizers of the Million Family March that took place in Washington, D.C., in 2000.

For More Information

Black Enterprise (July 1993): 7.

Chavis, Benjamin F., Jr. *Psalms from Prison*. New York: Pilgrim Press, 1983.

Detroit Free Press (April 14, 1993).

Ebony (July 1993): 76–80.

JOHN CHEEVER

Born: May 27, 1912

Quincy, Massachusetts

Died: June 18, 1982

Ossining, New York

American writer and author

American writer John Cheever is best known for his keen, often critical, view of the American middle class. His stories are characterized by his attention to detail, his careful writing, and his ability to find the extraordinary in the ordinary.

Childhood and marriage

John Cheever was born on May 27, 1912, in Quincy, Massachusetts. His parents, Frederick Lincoln Cheever and Mary Liley Cheever, had two sons. His father owned a shoe factory until he lost it due to the Great Depression of the 1930s (a time of severe economic hardship). His mother owned a gift shop and supported the family with the shop's profits.

Cheever attended Thayer Academy, a preparatory school in Braintree, Massachusetts. He was expelled from Thayer at age seventeen for smoking and poor grades. The result was Cheever's first published work, "Expelled." The short story appeared in *The New Republic* on October 1, 1930. The story is about ordinary lives and was written with

precise observation and straightforward language. It is a style and approach that Cheever developed over five decades.

After leaving school Cheever toured Europe with his older brother, Frederick. Upon their return, the brothers settled in Boston, Massachusetts. Frederick helped to support John as he wrote stories. In the mid-1930s Cheever moved to New York City. He lived in a bleak, \$3-a-week boarding house on Hudson Street in Greenwich Village. During this period Cheever helped support himself by writing book summaries for potential MGM (Metro Goldwyn Mayer) movies. Malcolm Cowley, editor of *The New Republic*, also arranged for Cheever to spend time at Yaddo, a writers' colony in Saratoga, New York. It was also during this time that Cheever began his long association with *The New Yorker* magazine. In 1934 the magazine published the first of 119 Cheever stories.

On March 22, 1941, Cheever married Mary Winternitz. They had three children. He spent four years in the army during World War II (1939–45) and later spent two years writing television scripts for, among other programs, "Life with Father."

Writing about "Cheever Country"

In 1943 Cheever's first book of short stories, *The Way Some People Live*, was published. War and the Great Depression serve as a backdrop for these stories. This book reveals a lifelong theme for Cheever: the way some people live. His next collection of short stories earned him the serious praise of critics. *The Enormous Radio, and Other Stories*, written in Cheever's Scarborough, New York, home, was published in 1953. These fourteen stories plunge the reader deep into what



John Cheever.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

critics call “Cheever Country.” The characters are good people who begin life with a sense of well-being and order. Later that order and well-being are stripped away and never quite fully restored. The title story, for example, portrays an average young couple that wants to someday move from their New York apartment to Westchester. Their sense of the ordinary is shattered when they buy a radio that has the fantastic ability to broadcast bits of their neighbors’ lives. The radio picks up the sounds of telephones, bedtime stories, quarrels, and tales of dishonesty. This peep behind closed doors serves to destroy the couple’s own outward feelings of harmony.

The story ends with the young married couple arguing as the radio fills the room with news reports.

In 1951 Cheever was made a Guggenheim Fellow, a fellowship grant established in 1925 for writers. This grant gave him the money and the freedom to write. In 1955 his short story, “The Five-Forty-Eight,” was awarded the Benjamin Franklin magazine award, and the following year he took his wife and three children to Italy. Upon their return the family settled in Ossining, New York. He was elected to the National Institute of Arts and Letters in 1957 and won the National Book Award for the first of his novels, *The Wapshot Chronicle*. From 1958 through 1977 Cheever continued to write seven more books.

Personal problems and illness

Cheever, at the height of his success, began a twenty-year struggle with alcoholism. This was a problem he did not fully admit to until his family placed him in a rehabilitation center in 1975. Earlier, in 1972, he had suffered a massive heart attack. After a long period of recovery, he wrote *Falconer*. This “dark” novel draws on his experience as a writing instructor in Sing Sing prison, as well as on his recovery from alcoholism and drug addiction. *Falconer* contains rough language, violence, and a prison setting. This novel is a departure from Cheever Country. Moreover, it is the first of his works to deal directly with homosexuality. Cheever’s journals reveal that, like the main character of *Falconer*, Cheever questioned his sexual preference and identity.

In the end Cheever could not fit the image he carefully developed for himself—

much like the fictional characters he created. John Cheever died of cancer on June 18, 1982. His final work, *Oh What A Paradise It Seems*, was published after his death.

For More Information

- Cheever, John. *The Journals of John Cheever*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1993.
- Cheever, Susan. *Home Before Dark*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1984.
- Coale, Samuel. *John Cheever*. New York: F. Ungar, 1977.
- Donaldson, Scott. *John Cheever: A Biography*. New York: Random House, 1988.
- Waldeland, Lynne. *John Cheever*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1979.

ANTON CHEKHOV

Born: January 17, 1860

Taganrog, Russia

Died: July 2, 1904

Badenweiler, Germany

Russian dramatist and author

The Russian author Anton Chekhov is among the major short-story writers and dramatists in history. He wrote seventeen plays and almost six hundred stories.

Early life in Russia

Anton Pavlovich Chekhov was born in Taganrog in South Russia on the Azov Sea on January 17, 1860. He was the third of six

children of Pavel Egorovich Chekhov, a grocery store owner. Chekhov's grandfather was a serf (a peasant who lives and works on land owned by another) who bought his family's freedom in 1841. The young Chekhov and his brothers and sisters worked in the family store and studied in the local school. Their extremely religious father often beat them. In 1876 his father's business failed, and the family moved to Moscow, Russia, for a fresh start. Chekhov, then sixteen, was left behind to finish his schooling.

The blond, brown-eyed Chekhov was a self-reliant, amusing, energetic, and attractive young man. In August 1879 he joined his parents in Moscow, where his father was a laborer and his mother did part-time sewing work. Chekhov immediately entered the medical school of Moscow University. He soon took his father's place as head of the household, a responsibility he carried the rest of his life. After graduating in 1884 he went to work in the hospital at Chikino, Russia, but by December of that year he had begun coughing up blood—the first symptom of the tuberculosis (an infection in the lungs) that eventually caused his death.

First works

In an attempt to add to his income in Moscow, Chekhov wrote for the humor magazines he himself liked to read. His first story was published in March 1880 by a magazine called the *Dragonfly*, which went on to publish nine more of his stories, most of them signed "Antosha Chekhonte," that year. In the fall of 1881 he had stories accepted by the *Alarm Clock*, and he and his older brothers' work was published in a new humor magazine, the *Spectator*. His first book was *The*



Anton Chekhov.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Tales of Melpomene, a collection of six humor pieces published with his own money (on credit) in mid-1884. Chekhov's first stories were full of wit and enthusiasm and showed his promise as a writer.

Chekhov's first book published by someone else, *Motley Stories*, came out in 1886 with his real name on it. The book did well, and Chekhov was recognized as a new talent. He began practicing medicine less and writing more. In February 1887 he was elected to the Literary Fund, an honor given only to prominent authors. *In the Twilight*, a collection of short stories, appeared in August. Chekhov's first completed play, *Ivanov*, was

produced in Moscow in November 1887. He stopped writing for humor magazines in favor of serious fiction and drama in an attempt to, as he stated in a letter, "depict life as it actually is."

Many successes

"The Steppe" (1888), a story of the Russian countryside revolving around the adventures of nine-year-old Egorushka while on his way to a distant town with his uncle, began a new phase in Chekhov's writing career. Not only was it accepted by the high-class *Northern Messenger* magazine—bringing Chekhov a considerable sum of money—but it also was highly praised by other famous writers. In October 1888 he won the Academy of Sciences' Pushkin Prize. "The Lights," "The Name-Day Party," and "An Attack of Nerves" all appeared in this year.

Chekhov spent the summer of 1888 in the Ukraine (where his brother Nikolai died) and at Yalta. The events of this period inspired "A Dreary Story" (1889), in which a dying old man thinks back on what he considers his pointless life. After another collection of stories, *Children*, was published in March 1889, Chekhov decided that he could now support his family by his writing alone. He wrote some one-act plays and worked on *The Wood Demon*, but the St. Petersburg (Russia) Theatrical Committee rejected the play, deeply wounding him. In March 1890 his seventh book, a collection of stories entitled *Gloomy People*, appeared. Late in April 1890 Chekhov set out for the prison colony on the Siberian island of Sakhalin. After spending three months studying the island, Chekhov returned home and wrote *Sakhalin Island*, which was later published in serial form.

In February 1892 Chekhov bought a 675-acre estate outside of Moscow called Melikhovo, and he settled down on it with his family. Guests streamed out to visit him. By the end of 1893 he was supporting his family comfortably. He began writing more slowly and focusing more on writing plays than before, but his stories continued to appear in the leading St. Petersburg and Moscow magazines. Chekhov was popular and admired. He had a number of pretty, lively, and talented women friends, but none whom he felt strongly enough about to propose marriage. But in 1898, when he was thirty-eight and seriously ill, he met the actress Olga Knipper, and they began an affair.

Series of famous plays

Chekhov's play *The Sea Gull* drew heavily on a romance between his former love Lidiya Mizinova and his writer friend I. N. Potapenko. The play had failed in its first presentation in 1896, but in 1898 in the new Moscow Art Theater it was such a spectacular success that the gull became, and remains, the theater's official emblem. Chekhov's other great plays followed quickly: *Uncle Vanya*, a new version of *The Wood Demon*, in 1897; *Three Sisters* in 1900–01; and *The Cherry Orchard* in 1903–04. They are all about the passing of the old order. In each, a group of upper-class landowners struggles to preserve their cultural values against the social change insisted on by the middle- and lower-class teachers, writers, and businessmen to whom the new life belongs.

Chekhov was at the height of his fame. He encouraged younger writers such as Ivan Bunin (1870–1953) and Leonid Andreyev (1871–1919), recommended writers for the

Pushkin Prize, and was eagerly sought out for advice and comment. In 1900 he became the first writer elected to membership in the Russian Academy of Sciences, and in 1901 he and Olga Knipper were married. She acted in Moscow during the season while he stayed in Yalta to improve his health. The letters between them indicate a deep affection. Chekhov's health worsened in 1904, and his doctors told him that he had to go to a hospital. In June 1904 he set off for Badenweiler, Germany. A friend who saw him in Moscow the day before he left for Europe quoted Chekhov as having said, "Tomorrow I leave. Good-bye. I'm going away to die." On July 2, 1904, he died in a hotel at Badenweiler. His body was returned to Moscow for burial.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Anton Chekhov*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1999.

Callow, Philip. *Chekhov, the Hidden Ground: A Biography*. Chicago: Ivan R. Dee, 1998.

Chekov, Anton. *The Undiscovered Chekhov: Thirty-Eight New Stories*. New York: Seven Stories, 1999.

Rayfield, Donald. *Anton Chekhov: A Life*. New York: Henry Holt, 1998.

DICK
CHENEY

Born: January 30, 1941

Lincoln, Nebraska

American vice president, secretary of defense, congressman, and government official

Dick Cheney is the forty-sixth vice president of the United States, serving under President George W. Bush (1946–). He helped plan the war on terrorism that began after the country was attacked in 2001. He also served as secretary of defense under President George Bush (1924–) and spent almost his entire career working for the federal government.

The young man

Born in Lincoln, Nebraska, on January 30, 1941, Richard B. Cheney was raised in Casper, Wyoming, by his parents, Richard H. Cheney, a Department of Agriculture employee, and Marjorie L. Dickey. He attended Yale University but left in his second year to return home, where he worked for the next two years. Resuming his studies at the University of Wyoming in 1963, he earned his bachelor's degree in political science in 1965 and his master's degree one year later. In 1964 he married Lynne Vincent, and the couple had two daughters.

The road to Washington, D.C.

Cheney went to work in the Wyoming state legislature and for Governor Warren Knowles (1908–1993) of Madison, Wisconsin, before landing a position in Washington on the staff of Congressman William Steiger (1938–1978) of Wisconsin. He went on to work as special assistant to Donald Rumsfeld (1932–), director of the Office of Economic Opportunity, under President Richard Nixon (1913–1994).

After Cheney left Washington for a little over a year to work for an investment company, in August 1974 the call came to join

Rumsfeld on the staff of President Gerald Ford (1913–). Cheney served as deputy assistant to the president. He remained loyal, good-natured, hardworking, and civil. He preferred just to work and did not try to attract attention to himself. These traits brought him to the post of assistant to the president and chief of staff when Rumsfeld became Ford's choice to head the Department of Defense.

Back to Wyoming, and back to Washington

Ford's loss to Jimmy Carter (1924–) in the 1976 presidential election sent Cheney back to Wyoming and private employment. But the lure of Washington was too great, and in 1978 he ran for Congress as a Republican, winning the election despite suffering a heart attack during his campaign.

From January 1979 until March 1989, Congressman Cheney sided with conservatives on most issues. For example, he was in favor of spending more money on weapons to defend the country, and he opposed abortion (the purposeful termination of a pregnancy).

His dedication in Congress made him a natural choice to serve on the House committee that was set up to investigate charges that President Ronald Reagan (1911–) had traded weapons to Iran in return for the release of fifty-two Americans who had been taken prisoner there. Cheney defended the Reagan administration's actions.

Secretary of defense

In 1989 President George Bush (1924–) chose Cheney for the job of secretary of defense. Cheney won praise for the invasion

of Panama and for the removal of that country's chief of state, General Manuel Noriega (1938–), who had been charged with bringing drugs into the United States. But Secretary Cheney's most important test came in August 1990, when Iraq invaded Kuwait. On January 16, 1991, the United States began a violent air war against Iraq. This was followed by a ground attack launched a month later that destroyed most of Iraq's military forces in 100 hours. The war made Cheney and Chief of Staff Colin Powell (1937–) popular heroes.

After the war with Iraq, Cheney turned to the task of reducing the strength of the U.S. military, closing some military bases and trying to find other ways to cut costs. He and the Bush team reduced the military budget, shrank the size of U.S. military forces, and signed a number of treaties in an effort to maintain peace around the world.

Called back to serve

After Bush lost his bid for reelection to Bill Clinton (1946–), Cheney returned to the business world as chief executive at the Halliburton Company, an oil drilling and construction services company. He remained a voice in government affairs, often commenting on Clinton administration choices, and he was mentioned by many as a possible candidate for vice president.

In 2000, Texas governor George W. Bush (1946–) asked Cheney to join his presidential campaign as his vice presidential candidate. After winning the election, Bush and Cheney were sworn in on January 20, 2001. Cheney went about his business quietly as always, leading many who were not familiar with his behind-the-scenes style to wonder if his



Dick Cheney.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

health was a problem after having suffered four heart attacks.

However, after the terrorist attacks on the United States on September 11, 2001, Cheney showed how important he was to the administration. He advised the president to create the Office of Homeland Security and played a major role in planning and monitoring the country's war on terrorism. He also met with congressional leaders and foreign ministers to seek their support for the fight. Cheney's experience gained during the war against Iraq ten years earlier proved of great value to both President Bush and the country as a whole.

For More Information

Andrews, Elaine K. *Dick Cheney: A Life in Public Service*. Brookfield, CT: Millbrook Press, 2001.

Congressional Quarterly Almanac. 1987, vol. LXIII.

Ford, Gerald. *A Time to Heal*. New York: Harper & Row, 1979.

Osborne, John. *White House Watch: The Ford Years*. Washington, DC: New Republic Book Co., 1977.

MARY BOYKIN CHESNUT

Born: March 31, 1823

Statesburg, South Carolina

Died: November 22, 1886

Camden, South Carolina

American diarist and writer

Mary Boykin Chesnut kept a famous diary that captured the struggles people experienced during the American Civil War (1861–65; a war between the northern and southern states). Her journal of the war years gives readers an in-depth view of what life was like for Southerners, especially women, during the war.

Early years

Mary Boykin Chesnut was born Mary Boykin Miller on March 31, 1823, in Statesburg, South Carolina. She was the oldest child of Mary Boykin Miller, the daughter of wealthy owners of a plantation (a large farm or estate

with resident workers or slaves). Her father was Stephen Decatur Miller, a prominent politician who strongly supported states' rights, the idea that individual U.S. states should have supreme powers over the national government to set their own policies, including the power to legalize slavery. He was a South Carolina senator at the time of Chesnut's birth and had previously served as a member of the U.S. House of Representatives. During her early years, Chesnut and her family lived on her grandparents' plantation near Camden, South Carolina. When her father was elected governor of South Carolina in 1828, the Millers moved to the capital city of Columbia, returning to Camden when Stephen Miller won a U.S. Senate seat in 1830. By the time her father resigned from the Senate in 1833 due to health problems, Chesnut had begun attending a local school in Camden.

When Chesnut was twelve, she was sent to Charleston, South Carolina, to attend Madame Talvande's French School for Young Ladies. There she completed her education with classes in literature, science, and history, as well as instruction in music, singing, and dancing. In 1836 she met James Chesnut, Jr., a Princeton University graduate who had visited the school to see his niece. James took an interest in the lively and intelligent girl, and over the following years he began to show romantic interest in her, despite objections from the Chesnut family. Even though Mary's family took her away for a time to Mississippi, partly to avoid James Chesnut's attentions, she married James on April 23, 1840, at the age of seventeen. She settled with her husband at his family's plantation outside Camden.

Senator's wife

When James Chesnut was elected to the U.S. Senate in 1858, the couple moved to

Washington, D.C. There Mary Chesnut enjoyed the social scene and became interested in the intense political arguments over states' rights. Mary supported the position that her father had promoted during his career and that her husband now championed. Although neither she nor James believed in the institution of slavery, they did uphold the right of states to make their own decisions on such matters.

Abraham Lincoln's election to the presidency in 1860 angered Southerners, and with the secession (formal withdrawal) of Southern states from the United States, the threat of civil war loomed. On November 10, 1860, James Chesnut became the first Southern senator to resign from his post.

Chesnut's diary

In February 1861 Mary began a diary that recorded the explosive happenings around her during the years of the Civil War. Following her husband on his duties in the South, she provides a firsthand view of the political world of the Confederacy (the name for the Southern states that had seceded and fought as a group). After the war's first battles, she soon began to write of the horrors of the war as well. She recorded the stories she heard about various battles as well as her personal experiences, including tending sick and wounded soldiers and mourning the loss of friends and acquaintances. She strongly criticized the decisions of Southern leaders, and she complained about her lack of power as a woman in the South.

As the war worsened for the South, defeat seemed impossible to avoid by the beginning of 1865. To avoid danger, Mary moved to North Carolina, where, with growing hopelessness, she recorded the news of



Mary Boykin Chesnut.
Reproduced by permission of
the Granger Collection, Ltd.

the Confederate army's collapse. In April of 1865, Confederate general Robert E. Lee (1807–1870) surrendered in Appomattox, Virginia, ending the Civil War.

Publication of diary

After the war the Chesnuts returned to Camden. In 1873 Mary began to evaluate the extensive diaries that she had compiled during the war, and eventually she decided to publish them. While working to prepare and polish the material over the next few years, she published one story from her diary in the *Charleston Weekly News and Courier*. This was

the only item that Mary published during her life.

In the late 1870s and early 1880s, Mary's work was interrupted by a series of illnesses affecting her lungs and heart. Both her husband and mother had died in January 1885, and she was left depressed and with a reduced income. She died of a heart attack in Camden on November 22, 1886.

After Mary's death, printed versions of her work appeared in the early 1900s. Although editors removed some material, even these incomplete versions became extremely popular for their wealth of information about the difficulties of Southern life during the Civil War. The diary also revealed her strong support for greater rights for Southern women, whom Mary felt were also enduring a kind of slavery in the traditional male-dominated society of the South. In 1981 a publication entitled *Mary Chesnut's Civil War* provided for the first time the complete version of her diary, revealing the full depths of Mary Chesnut's valuable personal history of the Civil War.

For More Information

Chesnut, Mary Boykin. *A Diary from Dixie*.

Rev. ed. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1980.

Decredico, Mary A. *Mary Boykin Chesnut: A Confederate Woman's Life*. Madison, WI: Madison House, 1996.

Muhlenfeld, Elisabeth. *Mary Boykin Chesnut: A Biography*. Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1981.

Woodward, C. Vann, ed. *Mary Boykin's Civil War*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1981.

CHIANG KAI-SHEK

Born: October 30, 1887

Ch'i-k'ou, Chekiang, China

Died: April 5, 1975

Taiwan

Chinese president and political leader

Chiang Kai-shek was a Chinese political leader and the major figure of Chinese history from 1927 to 1948. He led the Chinese Republic during World War II (1939–45) and was eventually forced from power by the Chinese Communists. After 1950 he served as president of the Republic of China on Taiwan.

Early years and military education

Chiang Kai-shek was born in Ch'i-k'ou, Chekiang, China, on October 30, 1887. Chiang was the son of a salt merchant and grew up in the densely populated province of Zhejiang. He received a traditional Chinese schooling which centered around Confucianism, a religious system based on the Chinese philosopher Confucius (551–479 B.C.E.).

In 1905 Chiang went to Ningpo to study and decided to pursue a military career. In 1906 he went to Tokyo where fellow Chekiangese Ch'en Ch'i-mei sponsored Chiang's entry into Sun Yat-sen's (1866–1925) revolutionary party, the T'ung-meng hui. When the revolution broke out in Wuhan, China, on October 10, 1911, Chiang returned to Shanghai, China, to fight under Ch'en. A series of triumphs by Ch'en and other revolutionists in the lower Yangtze Valley set the stage for the installation of Sun Yat-sen as

temporary president of the Chinese Republic. In 1916, Ch'en was assassinated.

In the fall of 1917 Sun Yat-sen moved to Canton, China, where he tried to establish a military base through an alliance with a local warlord, Ch'en Chiung-ming. Chiang was assigned to Ch'en's staff, but as a Chekiangese, Chiang was not readily accepted among Ch'en's Cantonese followers.

Military organizer

By early 1922 differences in policy between Sun and Ch'en had reached the breaking point and Sun and Chiang hid on a gunboat, a small, armed craft. But before long, fortune turned once again in Sun's favor, and by February 1923 he was back in Canton. On April 20 Chiang assumed duties as Sun's chief of staff. Sun by now had turned for support to the revolutionary group in Moscow, and Chiang headed a group to seek military assistance in the former Soviet Union, a formerly powerful country made up of Russia and several other nations.

On May 3, 1923, Chiang became commandant of the Whampoa Military Academy. There, with Soviet advisers and arms, Chiang organized a military elite, the Whampoa Clique. After Sun Yat-sen died on March 12, 1925, a power struggle followed, and Chiang won. With support from the chief Soviet adviser, Michael Borodin, Chiang made the most of these circumstances and established himself as an able leader. Chiang also rid the party of leading Communists, people that believe in a political system where goods and services are owned by the government.

Having strengthened his political position, Chiang prepared to carry out Sun Yat-



Chiang Kai-shek.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

sen's dream of national reunification, or to bring the country back under one government. On July 9, 1926, he became supreme commander of the Northern Expeditionary Forces. Chiang's troops struck northward and Shanghai was occupied on March 22, 1927, and Nanking on March 24. In less than a year Chiang had brought the wealthy and heavily populated provinces of southern, central, and eastern China under Nationalist control.

However, Chiang was unable to untangle the remaining political and military rivalries. He briefly retired in 1927 to arrange his marriage to Soong Mei-ling. Chiang's bride was a member of a leading Christian family of

Shanghai, and one of her sisters, Soong Ch'ing-ling, was the widow of Sun Yat-sen. As a condition of the marriage, Chiang agreed to study Christianity; he eventually became a devout (deeply religious) Methodist.

“Peacetime” Leader

The decade from 1928 to 1937 was peaceful only in comparison to what came before it and what followed. Not a year passed without bloodshed among militarists, Nationalists, Communists, and Japanese invaders. German advisers and arsenals helped build a modern army, which finally drove out the Communists from their base in Kiangsi and forced their demolished army to flee.

These were also years of promising developments in the Chinese cities, especially in the lower Yangtze Valley and Manchuria. With their emphasis on modern, urban development, the Nationalists secured the cooperation of many talented, foreign-educated intellectuals, and higher education flourished. At the same time Chiang initiated a “New Life Movement,” seeking to introduce China’s millions with military discipline and enthusiasm for Confucian values. However, neither this nor the ideas of Sun Yat-sen provided an attractive alternative to Marxism, the social and political philosophy that is the basis for communism. Moreover, two unresolved problems, the poor state of rural China and the thrust of Japanese aggression, provided opportunities for the Communists.

Kidnapped at Sian on December 12, 1936, by the Manchurian warlord Chang Hsüeh-liang, Chiang was forced to accept Chang’s demands that he join the Communists in a united front against Japan. But two

weeks later Chiang returned to Nanking a national hero.

Wartime commander

During the first year of the Second Sino-Japanese War (1937–45), where Japanese and Chinese forces clashed over land, Chiang’s popularity soared. From August to December 1937 his German-trained armies fought a magnificent holding action around Shanghai and Nanking. Proud and stubborn, Chiang symbolized China’s resistance against the Japanese war machine. His supremacy was confirmed in March 1938, when he assumed the title of Tsung-tsai (Party Leader).

By 1941, however, the wartime enthusiasm was beginning to crumble. The economy was headed into a tailspin, and the break with the Chinese Communist Party (CCP) was almost complete. By the time the United States entered the war with Japan in December, war-weary Chinese were losing faith. The American alliance proved disappointing. Through the good offices of President Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945), Chiang was able to join the Great Powers in world diplomatic councils, but he received little respect from British prime minister Winston Churchill (1874–1965) and Soviet premier Joseph Stalin (1879–1953).

Defeat in victory

By Victory in Japan Day (V-J Day) on August 14, 1945, unresolved prewar problems that increased by wartime conditions had weakened Chiang’s government and allowed Marxist Mao Tse-tung (1893–1976) to expand control over a population of some one hundred million Chinese. The Marshall

mission, sent by President Harry Truman (1884–1972) on October 27, 1945, to work with both sides, failed to prevent the outbreak of civil war. Overconfident at the outset, Chiang committed serious mistakes on the battlefield.

By 1948 the tide of battle had turned against the Nationalists. Mukden fell on November 1, 1948, followed two months later by Peiping. On January 21, 1949, Chiang retired from the presidency, leaving Li Tsung-jen with the thankless job of trying to salvage something from a situation beyond repair.

Island exile

Many of the goals that escaped Chiang on the vast mainland came within reach on the island of Taiwan (Formosa), a seat of the Chinese Nationalist government. There, he gained unchallenged and virtually unlimited power. After 1954 the island enjoyed a spectacular economic boom, making its standard of living second only to Japan's among the nations of Asia.

The year 1972 proved to be pivotal for Chiang Kai-shek and Taiwan because President Richard Nixon (1913–1994) visited the People's Republic of China. President Nixon also agreed that Taiwan was a part of China. These diplomatic setbacks, mixed with failing health, had many questioning Chiang Kai-shek's ability to lead the country. His son, Chiang Ching-kuo, who was appointed premier in May, assumed most of Chiang Kai-shek's duties. For the last three years of his life, Chiang Kai-shek was the ceremonial leader of the Republic of China, but his son was the practical leader. Chiang Kai-shek suffered a fatal heart attack on April 5, 1975.

For More Information

- Chieh-ju Chen. *Chiang Kai-shek's Secret Past*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 1993.
- Crozier, Brian. *The Man Who Lost China: The First Full Biography of Chiang Kai-shek*. New York: Scribner, 1976.
- Dolan, Sean. *Chiang Kai-shek*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.
- Lattimore, Owen. *China Memoirs*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1991.

JULIA CHILD

Born: August 15, 1912

Pasadena, California

American chef, author, and television host

Chef, author, and television personality Julia Child has probably done more for French-style food preparation than anyone else in history.

Early life

Julia Child was born Julia McWilliams in Pasadena, California, on August 15, 1912, one of John and Julia McWilliams's three children. The children were raised in comfort: they were all sent to private schools, and the family had servants, including a cook. The children, all of whom were unusually tall, loved outdoor sports. In 1930 Julia went to Smith College in Massachusetts, where she majored in history. After graduation she took a job as a copywriter for a furniture company in New York City and enjoyed an active social life.



Julia Child.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Work and marriage

At the outbreak of World War II (1939–45) Julia joined the Office of Strategic Services, hoping to work as a spy. She was eventually sent abroad, but she worked as a file clerk, slept on cots, and wore an army uniform. While in Ceylon (now Sri Lanka) in 1943 she met Paul Cushing Child, a member of a distinguished Boston family, who was working as a maker of maps. Their romance bloomed when both were assigned to China. It was there that Paul, a noted lover of fine food, introduced her to cooking.

After the war Julia began to study cooking in Beverly Hills, California. She and Paul

were married in September 1946 and moved to Washington, D.C., where he had taken a position with the Foreign Service. After he was sent to Paris, France, in 1948, Julia came to appreciate French food. She decided she wanted to learn about French cooking and, after studying the language, she enrolled at the famous Cordon Bleu cooking school. With two fellow students, Simone Beck and Louisette Bertholle, she formed a cooking school called L'Ecole des Trois Gourmandes (School of the Three Gourmets). Julia began working on a cookbook with Simone Beck, writing while following her husband as he was sent to different parts of Europe.

New popularity

In 1961 Paul retired, and the Childs settled in a large house with a well-equipped kitchen in Cambridge, Massachusetts. Julia's book, *Mastering the Art of French Cooking*, was published the same year. With its clear instructions and explanations and its many useful photographs, it was an immediate success. Child was hailed as an expert, and she began writing articles on cooking for magazines and newspapers. In 1963, after appearing on a television panel show, Child began a weekly half-hour cooking program, *The French Chef*. This proved even more successful than her book: her off-beat style, good humor, knowledge, and flair for teaching made her very popular. Her work was recognized with a Peabody Award in 1965 and an Emmy Award in 1966.

The French Chef Cookbook, based on the television series, was published in 1968. More well-received cookbooks and television shows followed, and in the 1970s and 1980s Child wrote regular columns for magazines and

made many appearances on television in addition to hosting her own show. She was also a founder of the American Institute of Wine and Food, an association of restaurants dedicated to increasing knowledge of food and wine.

Later years

In 1989 Child's husband suffered a stroke and was moved to a nursing home. She coped with her loneliness by exercising, writing, doing public speaking, and working on television programs. She even provided a cartoon voice for a children's video. In August 1992 170 guests paid \$100 or more to attend her eightieth birthday party (proceeds went to the American Institute of Wine and Food). She became the first woman elected to the Culinary Institute Hall of Fame in October 1993.

In 1994 Paul Child died. Although saddened by his death, she brought out a new book and television series combination in each of the next two years. She also continued to host an annual trip to Italy for food lovers. In 2000 Child won the Legion d'Honneur, France's highest honor. In 2001 she moved to Montecito, California, and oversaw the opening of a restaurant named after her, Julia's Kitchen in Napa, California. In 2002 she donated the kitchen from her Cambridge home to the Smithsonian Institution, where it will be restored as an exhibit at the National Museum of American History.

Although a strong supporter of classic French cooking, Julia Child changed her approach during her career to reflect modern needs and trends, such as cooking with less fat and red meat and focusing on meals that can be prepared quickly. Above all, she tries to increase the public's awareness and appreciation of wholesome, well-prepared food.

For More Information

Coffey, Roberta Wallace. "Julia and Paul Child." *McCalls* (October 1988).

Fitch, Noel Riley. *Appetite for Life: The Biography of Julia Child*. New York: Doubleday, 1997.

Jaynes, Gregory. "A Holiday Bird and a Free-Range Chat with Julia." *Life* (December 1989).

Snodgrass, Mary Ellen. *Late Achievers: Famous People Who Succeeded Late in Life*. Englewood, CO: Libraries Unlimited, 1992.

SHIRLEY CHISHOLM

Born: November 30, 1924

Brooklyn, New York

African American congresswoman and politician

In 1968 Shirley Chisholm became the first black woman to serve in the United States Congress. Chisholm is a model of independence and honesty and has championed several issues including civil rights, aid for the poor, and women's rights.

Early education and hardship

Shirley Chisholm was born in Brooklyn, New York, to Barbadian parents. When she was three years old, Shirley was sent to live with her grandmother on a farm in Barbados, a former British colony in the West Indies. She received much of her primary education in the Barbadian school system, which



Shirley Chisholm.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

stressed the traditional British teachings of reading, writing, and history. Chisholm credits much of her educational successes to this well-rounded early education.

Return to New York

When Chisholm was ten years old, she returned to New York during the height of the Great Depression (1929–39). The Great Depression was a time of severe economic hardship when many people in the United States were unemployed. Life was not easy for the Chisholms in New York, and Shirley's parents sacrificed much for their eight children.

Chisholm attended New York public schools and was able to compete well in the mainly white classrooms. She attended Girls' High School in Bedford-Stuyvesant, a section of Brooklyn. Chisholm won tuition scholarships to several distinguished colleges but was unable to afford the room and board. At the urging of her parents she decided to live at home and attend Brooklyn College.

While training to be a teacher, Chisholm became active in several campus and community groups. She developed an interest in politics and learned the arts of organizing and fund-raising. Soon, she developed a deep resentment toward the role of women in local politics, which, at the time, consisted mostly of staying in the background and playing a secondary role to their male equals. Through campus politics and her work with the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), an organization that was formed in 1909 to work for equal rights for African Americans, Chisholm found a way to voice her opinions about economic and social structures in a rapidly changing nation.

From the classroom to politics

After graduating with honors from Brooklyn College in 1946, Chisholm began work as a nursery school teacher and later as a director of schools for early childhood education. She became politically active with the Democratic Party and quickly developed a reputation as a person who challenged the traditional roles of women, African Americans, and the poor. In 1949, she married Conrad Chisholm, and the couple settled in Brooklyn.

During her successful career as a teacher, Chisholm became involved in several organi-

zations including the League of Women Voters and the Seventeenth Assembly District Democratic Club.

An outspoken politician

After a successful career as a teacher, Chisholm decided to run for the New York State Assembly. Her ideals were perfect for the times. In the mid-1960s the civil rights movement was in full swing. Across the nation, activists were working for equal civil rights for all Americans, regardless of race. In 1964 Chisholm was elected to the assembly.

During the time that she served in the assembly Chisholm sponsored fifty bills, but only eight of them passed. One of the successful bills she supported provided assistance for poor students to go on to higher education. Another provided employment insurance coverage for personal and domestic employees. Still another bill reversed a law that caused female teachers in New York to lose their tenure (permanence of position) while they were out on maternity leave.

A new congresswoman

Chisholm served in the state assembly until 1968, when she decided to run for the U.S. Congress. Her opponent was the civil rights leader James Farmer (1920–). Chisholm won the election and began a long career in the U.S. House of Representatives, lasting from the Ninety-first through the Ninety-seventh Congress (1969–1982).

As a member of Congress, Chisholm attempted to focus her attention on the needs of her constituents (the voters she represented). She served on several House committees including Agriculture, Veterans' Affairs,

Rules and Education, and Labor. During the Ninety-first Congress, when she was assigned to the Forestry Committee, she protested her appointment and said that she wanted to work on committees that dealt with issues that were affecting her district. Forestry issues had little or no importance to the people she represented in Bedford-Stuyvesant.

Taking a stand

With the Vietnam War (1955–75) raging overseas, Chisholm protested the amount of money being spent for the defense budget while social programs suffered. The Vietnam War was a conflict in which South Vietnam, supported by the United States, was fighting against a takeover by the Communist government of North Vietnam. Chisholm argued that money should not be spent for war while many Americans were hungry, poorly educated, and without adequate housing.

Chisholm was also a strong supporter of women's rights. Early in her career as a congresswoman, she took a stand on the issue of abortion (a woman's right to prevent the birth of a child) and supported a woman's right to choose. She also spoke against traditional roles for women professionals (including secretaries, teachers, and librarians), arguing that women were capable of entering many other professions. Black women especially, she felt, had been pushed into stereotypical roles, or conventional professions, such as maids and nannies. Chisholm supported the idea that they needed to escape, not just by governmental aid, but also by self-effort. Her antiwar and women's liberation views made Chisholm a popular speaker on college campuses.

Presidential contender

In 1972 Chisholm ran for the highest office in the land—President of the United States of America. In addition to her interest in civil rights, she spoke out about the judicial system in the United States, police brutality, prison reform, gun control, drug abuse, and numerous other topics. Chisholm did not win the Democratic nomination, but she did win an impressive 10 percent of the votes within the party. As a result of her candidacy, Chisholm was voted one of the ten most admired women in the world.

After her unsuccessful presidential campaign, Chisholm continued to serve in the U.S. House of Representatives for another decade. As a member of the Black Caucus (a group of lawmakers who represent African Americans) she was able to watch black representation in the Congress grow and to welcome other black female congresswomen. In 1982, she announced her retirement from Congress.

Life after politics

From 1983 to 1987 Chisholm served as Purington Professor at Mt. Holyoke College in Massachusetts, where she taught politics and women's studies. In 1985 she was the visiting scholar at Spelman College, and in 1987 she retired from teaching altogether. Chisholm continued to be involved in politics by cofounding the National Political Congress of Black Women in 1984. She also worked for the presidential campaigns of Jesse Jackson (1941–) in 1984 and 1988. In 1993 President Bill Clinton nominated Chisholm for the position of Ambassador to Jamaica. Because of declining health, she turned down the nomination.

Although Chisholm broke ground as the nation's first black congresswoman and the first black presidential candidate, she has said she would rather be remembered for continuing throughout her life to fight for rights for women and African Americans.

For More Information

- Chisholm, Shirley. *The Good Fight*. New York: Harper & Row, 1973.
- Chisholm, Shirley. *Unbought and Unbossed*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1970.
- Itzkowitz, Leonore K. *Shirley Chisholm for President*. 1974.
- Jackson, Garnet. *Shirley Chisholm, Congresswoman*. Cleveland: Modern Curriculum Press, 1994.
- Pollack, Jill S. *Shirley Chisholm*. New York: F. Watts, 1994.
- Scheader, Catherine. *Shirley Chisholm: Teacher and Congresswoman*. Hillsdale, NJ: Enslow, 1990.

FRÉDÉRIC CHOPIN

Born: February 22, 1810

Zelazowa Wola, Poland

Died: October 17, 1849

Paris, France

Polish composer

Frédéric Chopin, a Polish composer (a writer of music) and pianist, was one of the creators of the typically roman-

tic character piece. All of his works include the piano.

Early life

Frédéric François Chopin was born on February 22, 1810, near Warsaw, Poland. He was the second of four children of Nicholas Chopin, a Frenchman, and his Polish wife, Justina, who had been a well-educated but poor relative in the Skarbek household, where Nicholas had been a tutor. At an early age, Chopin displayed artistic talents—he was an artist, wrote poetry, and played piano without any formal instruction. The gifted child also began composing his own music and had his first piece of music published when he was just seven years old.

Young Chopin had a good education and later studied music privately with Joseph Elsner, founder and director of the Warsaw Conservatory. In 1817 Chopin's first composition was performed publicly. A year later he himself performed in public, playing a concerto (music written for one or more instruments) by Adalbert Gyrowetz. By this time the young Chopin began drawing comparisons to Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart (1756–1791), another composer who had demonstrated spectacular talent at a young age.

Musical training

In 1826 Chopin became a full-time student at Elsner's conservatory, where he received an excellent foundation in theory, harmony, and melody. Elsner, after recognizing that Chopin's style was too original to force into traditional patterns, granted Chopin the freedom to develop along clear personal lines.



Frédéric Chopin.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

After visiting Berlin, Germany, where Chopin was exposed to the music of George Frederick Handel (1685–1759) and Felix Mendelssohn (1809–1847), Chopin returned to Warsaw and heard Nicolò Paganini (1782–1840). Chopin recognized that he must leave Warsaw for exposure to other musicians. He went to Vienna, Austria, to try to arrange the publication of several of his works. After a successful debut at the Kärntnerthor Theater on August 11, 1829, he returned home only to prepare for a concert tour, this time through Germany and Italy. In Vienna Chopin composed the B Minor Scherzo and the G Minor Ballade, as well as

others that demonstrated Chopin's fully developed personal style.

Middle period

When the twenty-year-old Chopin arrived in Paris, poor physical health prevented him from giving public performances. Nevertheless, he became a significant figure in Parisian artistic circles, numbering among his friends musicians, writers, and painters, as well as many wealthy and talented women.

Chopin recognized that he did not have the stamina (strength) to compete in public against such talents as Franz Liszt (1811–1886) and Sigismund Thalberg (1812–1871). So long as he was able to earn enough by teaching, Chopin preferred composition to playing concerts. His musical tastes were public knowledge. Friendly with Hector Berlioz (1803–1869) and Mendelssohn, he was not impressed with their music. Nor, for that matter, did he appreciate Robert Schumann's (1810–1856) work, despite Schumann's warm welcome written for the *Neue Zeitschrift für Musik* when Chopin first arrived in Paris. Schumann introduced Clara Wieck to Chopin's work, and eventually her performances of Chopin's pieces made favorable impressions on many audiences.

Final years

Several young ladies appear to have been the object of Chopin's affections over the years, but the most celebrated female with whom he had a relationship was Aurore Dudevant, known as George Sand, whom he met in 1836. For nine years, beginning in 1838, after he had composed the "Funeral March" (which later became part of the B-flat Minor Sonata), she was his closest associate.

Despite failing health, the composer completed his twenty-four Preludes in Valldemosa, Majorca (one of the Balearic Islands in the western Mediterranean).

In 1846 Sand's children became a problem. Chopin sided with Solange, Sand's daughter, in arguments against Sand and her son, Maurice. Separation became inevitable, and the beginning of the end for Chopin. His health failed, and he lost all interest in composition. Chopin then moved to England, where he gave several private performances in London and on May 15 played for Queen Victoria (1819–1901). After a rest in Scotland, he returned to London in the fall of 1848, where on November 16 he played a benefit for Polish refugees at the Guildhall. He returned to Paris shortly afterward, where he died of tuberculosis (a disease that attacks the lungs and bones) on October 17, 1849, in Paris, France.

Although Chopin's output was rather small compared to other great composers, his works such as his sonatas (music for one instrument) in B flat minor (1840) and the concertos in E minor (1833) are still some of the most popular pieces in classical music.

For More Information

- Dineen, Jacqueline. *Frédéric Chopin*. Minneapolis: Carolrhoda Books, 1996.
- Vernon, Roland. *Introducing Chopin*. Parsippany, NJ: Silver Burdett Press, 1996.
- Walker, Alan, ed. *The Chopin Companion; Profiles of the Man and the Musician*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1966.
- Zamoyski, Adam. *Chopin: A New Biography*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1979.

JEAN CHRÉTIEN

Born: January 11, 1934

Shawinigan, Quebec, Canada

Canadian prime minister and politician

Jean Chrétien was elected ten times to Canada's House of Commons, held almost every major cabinet office, and in October 1993 was elected as his nation's twentieth prime minister.

Early years

Joseph-Jacques-Jean Chrétien was born on January 11, 1934, in Shawinigan, Quebec, Canada. He was the eighteenth of nineteen children (only nine of whom lived past infancy) born to Wellie Chrétien and his wife, Marie Boisvert-Chrétien. Shawinigan was a town built around pulp-and-paper mills, and the Chrétien family lived in an apartment that was owned by the mill where Jean's father worked. In 1939 Jean's mother became ill. He was sent to a boarding school, where he worked hard at getting into trouble and not studying—trying to get expelled so that he could go back home.

Jean's father was a Liberal Party organizer in addition to working three jobs. Jean began attending Liberal rallies and working for the party at age twelve. After graduating from high school, he won a scholarship to Laval University Law School in Quebec City, Canada, adding to his income with summer work at the Shawinigan paper mill. He was admitted to the Quebec bar, earning the right to practice law there, in 1958, a year after marrying Aline Chaîne.

Career in government

In 1963 Chrétien was elected to Parliament from his home area of St. Maurice-Lafleche. When he took office he spoke barely a word of English, but he quickly caught the attention of Prime Minister L. B. Pearson (1897–1972) and Finance Minister Mitchell Sharp. They liked his quick mind, genuine Canadian patriotism, and commitment to a strong national government. Chrétien worked under Sharp as minister of state for finance, and he became minister of national revenue (income) in January 1968. Later that year Pearson was replaced as prime minister by Pierre Elliott Trudeau (1919–2000), and Chrétien was appointed Trudeau's minister of Indian affairs. He proposed a series of reforms to Canada's native people that met with much criticism.

Chrétien found that he preferred to be where the cash was. He was president of the Treasury Board, 1974–76; minister of industry, trade, and commerce, 1976–77; and the first French Canadian minister of finance, 1977–79. When the province of Quebec elected a government that called for policies to give the province more independence, the federal government used Chrétien to make the point that people living in Quebec had real power in Ottawa, and that their problems could be solved in a national setting.

The Trudeau Liberals were out of office briefly in 1979, but they swept back into power in February 1980. Chrétien was minister of justice with special responsibility to lead the federal side in a referendum (vote) called by the Quebec government to determine whether the province ought to secede (withdraw) from Canada. The Chrétien side won the referendum (which rejected the plan) by a



Jean Chrétien.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

convincing margin. When Trudeau announced his retirement, Chrétien ran to become chief of the Liberal Party, finishing second in June 1984 to John Turner (1929–), who took over as prime minister. Chrétien was appointed deputy prime minister and secretary of state for external affairs. Later that year the Liberals under Turner lost badly to Brian Mulroney's (1939–) Conservatives. Chrétien returned to private law practice in 1986.

Return to office

After Turner's resignation in 1990, Chrétien again ran to become the leader of the Liberal Party, this time winning easily. The media

criticized him—he was labeled “yesterday’s man”—and a long illness in 1991 interfered with his work. In the national election of October 1993, however, experience showed, and the Liberal Party was returned to power, with Chrétien assuming control as prime minister. His first months were marked by efforts to promote honesty in government and to make budget cuts. In 1995 Chrétien helped defeat the Quebec Referendum, yet another attempt to make Quebec a separate entity from Canada. He was reelected in 1997.

Between 1994 and 1997 Chrétien had cut Canada's budget deficit (the amount by which spending exceeds income) by 70 percent, and by 2000 the country had a budget surplus (money available to spend). In September of that year Chrétien announced a \$23.4 billion (\$16 billion U.S.) increase in health care spending, as well as improved monitoring of the quality of health care.

In November 2000 Chrétien and the Liberal Party won a larger-than-expected victory in elections, and Chrétien became the country's first leader since 1945 to win three straight elections. During the campaign Chrétien was accused of using his influence to help his friends receive business loans, but a police review of the charges concluded that there was not enough evidence to proceed with an official investigation. There was speculation that the charges and Chrétien's advancing age might lead him to resign, but he announced that he intended to continue as prime minister.

In spring 2001 Chrétien attended the Summit of the Americas in Quebec City, Canada. During this meeting, thirty-four leaders of Western countries discussed such policies as creating a free trade agreement,

working to improve education, supporting democracy, fighting against the illegal drug trade, and working to improve people's living conditions.

After the terrorist attacks on the United States in September 2001, in which hijackers took control of jetliners and crashed them into the World Trade Center and the Pentagon, Canada sent troops to aid the United States in its fight against terrorists in Afghanistan. In March 2002 Chrétien met with U.S. president George W. Bush (1946–) to discuss Canada's continuing support in the United States–led fight. During this meeting Chrétien directed a comment toward the United States from Canada: "We are your neighbors, friends, and family. We have to work together. This problem concerns all nations of the world."

For More Information

Chrétien, Jean. *Straight from the Heart*. Toronto: Key Porter Books, 1985; revised edition, 1994.

Martin, Lawrence. *Chrétien*. Toronto: Lester Pub., 1995.

AGATHA CHRISTIE

Born: September 15, 1890

Torquay, England

Died: January 12, 1976

Wallingford, England

English author and playwright

Agatha Christie was the best-selling mystery writer of all time. She wrote ninety-three books and seventeen plays, including the longest-running play of modern-day theater, *The Mousetrap*. She is the only mystery writer to have created two important detectives as characters, Hercule Poirot and Miss Marple.

Childhood and family

The daughter of an American father and a British mother, Agatha Mary Clarissa Miller was born at Torquay in the United Kingdom on September 15, 1890. Her family was comfortable, although not wealthy. She was educated at home, with later studies in Paris, France. Christie taught herself to read at five years old. She grew up in a family environment full of stories—from the dramatic, suspenseful tales her mother told her at bedtime to her elder sister's frightening creations. She began creating her own fictions, too, with the help of her nanny, her dolls, and her pets. In 1914 she was married to Colonel Archibald Christie, with whom she had one daughter.

Early characters

In Christie's first book, *The Mysterious Affair at Styles* (1920), she introduced one of her two best-known detectives, Hercule Poirot. Poirot's character also makes clear Christie's debt to the mystery writer Sir Arthur Conan Doyle (1859–1930), the creator of the fictional detective Sherlock Holmes. Like Holmes, Poirot is a committed and convincing spokesman for a rational (reasoned and unemotional) approach to solving mysteries. (Poirot places his faith in his brain's "little grey cells"). Poirot's friend and companion, Captain Hastings, also



Agatha Christie.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

shares much in common with Holmes's friend Dr. John Watson. Hastings, like Watson, is a retired military man who is too trusting and often foolish, but he occasionally stumbles upon some observation that inspires the far-more-intelligent Poirot.

While writing in imitation of Conan Doyle, Christie experimented with many other versions of the sleuth, a term for a detective or solver of mysteries. Some of Christie's early sleuths included the married couple Tuppence and Tommy Beresford, whose specialty was hunting down spies. The Beresfords first appeared in her book

The Secret Adversary (1922), where their breezy and almost offhand approach to detection provided a sharp contrast to the methods of Poirot. Another Christie detective, Colonel Race—a mysterious man of few words—first appeared in *The Man in the Brown Suit* (1924). However, since his principal area of activity was in the English colonies (territories then under British government control), Christie only used him occasionally afterwards.

Superintendent Battle, who was strong, dependable, and hardworking, came onto the scene in *The Secret of Chimneys* (1925) and later solved *The Seven Dials Mystery* (1929). He was not a greatly attractive character, however, so Christie only used him as a minor character after that. Other sleuths who first appeared during this experimental period were the weird pair of Harley Quin and Mr. Satterthwaite, as well as the clever Parker Pyne. Pyne specialized not in solving murders, but in influencing the lives of others so as to bring them happiness or adventure. Pyne was often fortunate enough to have the assistance of Mrs. Ariadne Oliver, a mystery novelist who bore an uncanny resemblance to her creator, Agatha Christie.

A mysterious breakdown

The year 1926 was an important one for Christie. It saw the publication of her first hugely successful novel, *The Murder of Roger Ackroyd*, in which the narrator (the character in whose voice the story is told) is the murderer. It was also a year of personal tragedy. Christie's mother died in 1926, and Christie discovered that her husband was in love with another woman. She suffered a mental breakdown and on December 6 she disappeared

from her home, and her car was found abandoned in a quarry. Ten days later, acting on a tip, police found her in a hotel in Harrogate, England, where she had been staying the entire time, registered under the name of the woman with whom her husband was having his affair. Christie claimed to have had amnesia (severe memory loss), and the case was not pursued further. She divorced her first husband two years later.

In 1930 Christie married Sir Max Mallowan, a leading British archaeologist. She often accompanied him on his expeditions in Iraq and Syria and placed some of her novels in those countries. In *Come, Tell Me How You Live* (1946) she wrote a humorous account of some of her travels with her husband.

Major works

In 1930 Christie also produced what is believed by many to be her best-written novel, *Murder at the Vicarage*. This mystery also marked the first appearance of Jane Marple, who became one of Christie's favorite sleuths and who showed up frequently thereafter in her books. Miss Marple was one of those complicated characters in whom readers delight. Behind her old-fashioned, grandmotherly appearance, Miss Marple's mind was coldly aware that all human beings are weak and that some are completely immoral.

In the mid-1930s Christie began to produce novels that bore her special manner. In them she arranged a situation that seemed highly unrealistic or unlikely, and then she placed characters, who acted for the most realistic of reasons, into this framework. In *Murder in the Calais Coach* (1934) the murder is committed through the planning of a dozen people. In *And Then There Were None*

(1939) nine murderers are invited to an island by an ex-judge who kills them out of an unshakeable sense of justice. In *Easy to Kill* (1939) four murders are committed in a tiny town without any suspicions being aroused, while in *A Murder Is Announced* (1950) the killer notifies others that the crime will occur in advance. Also interesting in these books is Christie's philosophy that it is quite acceptable to kill a killer, particularly one whose crime is especially horrible.

Christie wrote several works in addition to her fiction, including seventeen plays. Her favorite play was *Witness for the Prosecution* (1953), but the public disagreed. *The Mousetrap* opened in London in 1952 and was a huge success, playing there for over thirty years. In addition, many of Christie's mysteries were made into movies. In 1998 her play *Black Coffee* was adapted into a novel by another writer, Charles Osborne.

In 1971 Christie was named a Dame of the British Empire—a title given by the English king or queen in honor of a person's extraordinary service to the country or for personal merit. Five years later Christie died on January 12, 1976.

For More Information

Bunson, Matthew. *The Complete Christie: An Agatha Christie Encyclopedia*. New York: Pocket Books, 2000.

Dommermuth-Costa, Carol. *Agatha Christie: Writer of Mystery*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 1997.

Gill, Gillian. *Agatha Christie: The Woman and Her Mysteries*. New York: Free Press, 1990.

Morgan, Janet. *Agatha Christie: A Biography*. New York: Knopf, 1985.

Osborne, Charles. *The Life and Crimes of Agatha Christie*. London: Collins, 1982, revised edition, 1990.

WINSTON CHURCHILL

Born: November 30, 1874

Oxfordshire, England

Died: January 24, 1965

Oxfordshire, England

English prime minister, statesman, and author

The English statesman and author Sir Winston Churchill led Britain during World War II (1939–45) and is often described as the “savior of his country.” Sir Winston Churchill’s exact place in the political history of the twentieth century is, and will continue to be, a subject of debate. But his strong personality and forceful determination made him a popular figure during the war years.

Early life

Winston Leonard Spencer Churchill was born on November 30, 1874, at Blenheim Palace—a home given by Queen Anne to Churchill’s ancestor, the Duke of Marlborough. He was the eldest son of Lord Randolph Churchill, a Tory Democrat (a British political party) who achieved early success as a rebel in his party. Later, after Randolph Churchill failed, he was cruelly described as “a man with a brilliant future behind him.” His mother was Jenny Jerome, the beautiful and talented daughter of Leonard Jerome, a

New York businessman. Winston idolized his mother, but his relations with his father, who died in 1895, were cold and distant. It is generally agreed that as a child Winston was not shown warmth and affection by his family.

As a child Churchill was sensitive and suffered from a minor speech impediment. He was educated following the norms of his class. He first went to preparatory school, then to Harrow in 1888 when he was twelve years old. Winston was not especially interested in studying Latin or mathematics and spent much time studying in the lowest level courses until he passed the tests and was able to advance. He received a good education in English, however, and won a prize for reading aloud a portion of Thomas Macaulay’s (1800–1859) *Lays of Ancient Rome* (1842). After finishing at Harrow, Winston failed the entrance test for the Royal Military College at Sandhurst three times before finally passing and being allowed to attend the school. His academic record improved a great deal once he began at the college. When he graduated in 1894 he was eighth in his class.

Military journalist

Very early on Churchill demonstrated the physical courage and love of adventure and action that he kept throughout his political career. His first role was that of a soldier-journalist. In 1895 he went to Cuba to write about the Spanish army for the *Daily Graphic*. In 1896 he was in India, and while on the North-West Frontier with the Malakand Field Force he began work on a novel, *Savrola: A Tale of the Revolution in Laurania*. The book was published in 1900.

More important, however, were Churchill’s accounts of the military cam-

paigns in which he participated. *Savrola* was followed by a book about the reconquest of the Sudan (1899), in which he had also taken part. As a journalist for the *Morning Post*, he went to Africa during the Boer War (1899–1902), where British forces fought against Dutch forces in South Africa. The most romantic of his adventures as a youth was his escape from a South African prison during this conflict.

Young politician

In 1899 Churchill lost in his first attempt at election to the House of Commons, one of two bodies controlling Parliament in England. This was to be the first of many defeats in elections, as Churchill lost more elections than any other political figure in recent British history. But in 1900 he entered the House of Commons, in which he served off and on until 1964.

Churchill's early years in politics were characterized by an interest in the radical reform (improvement) of social problems. The major intellectual achievement of this period of Churchill's life was his *Liberalism and the Social Problem* (1909). In this work he stated his belief in liberalism, or political views that stress civil rights and the use of government to promote social progress. Churchill was very active in the great reforming government of Lord Asquith between 1908 and 1912, and his work fighting unemployment was especially significant.

In 1912 Churchill became first lord of the Admiralty, the department of British government that controls the naval fleet. He switched his enthusiasm away from social reform to prepare Britain's fleet for a war that threatened Europe. While at the Admiralty,



Winston Churchill.

Churchill suffered a major setback. He became committed to the view that the navy could best make an impact on the war in Europe (1914–18) by way of a swift strike through the Dardanelles, a key waterway in central Europe. This strategy proved unsuccessful, however, and Churchill lost his Admiralty post. In 1916 he was back in the army, serving for a time on the front lines in France.

Interwar years

Churchill soon reentered political life. He was kept out of the Lloyd George War Cabinet by conservative hostility toward his style and philosophy. But by 1921 Churchill held a post as a colonial secretary. A clash with Turkish

president Kemal Atatürk, however, did not help his reputation, and in 1922 he lost his seat in the House of Commons. The Conservative Party gained power for the first time since 1905, and Churchill began a long-term isolation, with few political allies.

In 1924 Churchill severed his ties with liberalism and became chancellor of the Exchequer (British treasury) in Stanley Baldwin's (1867–1947) government. Churchill raised controversy when he decided to put Britain back on the gold standard, a system where currency equals the value of a specified amount of gold. Although he held office under Baldwin, Churchill did not agree with his position either on defense or on imperialism, Britain's policy of ruling over its colonies. In 1931 he resigned from the conservative "shadow cabinet" in protest against its Indian policy.

Churchill's years between world wars were characterized by political isolation. During this period he made many errors and misjudgments. Chief among these was his warlike approach to the general strike of 1926. Thus, he cannot be viewed simply as a popular leader who was kept waiting in the wings through no fault of his own.

World War II

The major period of Churchill's political career began when he became prime minister and head of the Ministry of Defense early in World War II, when British and American Allies fought against the Axis of Germany, Italy, and Japan.

"I felt as if I was walking with destiny, and that all my past life had been but a preparation for this hour," Churchill wrote in the

first volume of his account of the war. (This account was later published in six volumes from 1948 to 1953.) His finest hour and that of the British people came at the same time. His leadership, which was expressed in noble speeches and constant personal activity, stated precisely what Britain needed to survive through the years before the United States entered the war.

The evacuation of Dunkirk and the air defense of the Battle of Britain became legend, but there were and are controversies over Churchill's policies. It has been argued that Churchill was too sensitive to the Mediterranean as a theater of war, which led to mistakes in Crete and North Africa. The value of his resistance to the idea of a second front as the Germans advanced into Russia has also been questioned. And there has been considerable debate over the courses he pursued at international conferences, such as those at Yalta in February 1945.

Many believed some of Churchill's policies were responsible for the "cold war" of the 1950s and 1960s, where relations between Eastern Communist powers and Western powers came to a standstill over, among other things, nuclear arms. Although criticisms may be made of Churchill's policies, his importance as a symbol of resistance and as an inspiration to victory cannot be challenged.

Last years

The final period of Churchill's career began with the British people rejecting him in the general election of 1945. In that election 393 Labour candidates were elected members of Parliament against 213 Conservatives and their allies. It was one of the most striking

reversals of fortune in democratic history. It may perhaps be explained by Churchill's aggressive campaign combined with the British voters' desire for social reconstruction.

In 1951, however, Churchill again became prime minister. He resigned in April 1955 after an uneventful term in office. For many of the later years of his life, even his personal strength was not enough to resist the persistent cerebral arteriosclerosis, a brain disorder, from which he suffered. He died on January 24, 1965, and was given a state funeral, the details of which had been largely dictated by himself before his death.

There is little doubt that Winston Churchill was a political figure of enormous influence and importance. His record, both before 1939 and after 1945, was for the most part undistinguished. But as Anthony Storr writes: "In 1940 Churchill became the hero that he had always dreamed of being. . . . In that dark time, what England needed was not a shrewd, equable, balanced leader. She needed a prophet, a heroic visionary, a man who could dream dreams of victory when all seemed lost. Winston Churchill was such a man."

For More Information

Charmley, John. *Churchill, The End of Glory: A Political Biography*. New York: Harcourt Brace, 1993.

Churchill, Winston S. *Memories and Adventures*. New York: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1989.

Gilbert, Martin. *Churchill: A Life*. London: Heinemann, 1991.

Manchester, William. *The Last Lion: Winston Spencer Churchill, Alone 1932–1940*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1988.

Manchester, William. *The Last Lion: Winston Spencer Churchill, Visions of Glory, 1874–1932*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1988.

MARCUS TULLIUS CICERO

Born: January 3, 106 B.C.E.

Arpinum, Latinum

Died: December 7, 43 B.C.E.

Formiae, Latinum

Roman orator and writer

Marcus Tullius Cicero was Rome's greatest speaker and a productive writer of verse, letters, and works on philosophy and politics that greatly influenced European thought. His speeches and writings would become models for generations to come.

Early life

Marcus Tullius Cicero was born on January 3, 106 B.C.E., at Arpinum near Rome, the oldest son of a wealthy landowner, also named Marcus Tullius Cicero. At a young age Cicero began studying the writings in his father's library. Both Cicero and his brother Quintus became greatly interested in philosophy and public speaking. When his father noticed this interest, he decided to take his sons to Rome for the best education that could be found. Rome was also a place where the boys could increase their social standing.

At an early age Cicero saw military service during the Social War (90–89 B.C.E.), but he managed to avoid involvement in the civil



Marcus Tullius Cicero.

wars that followed. Cicero's first appearances in court were made during the dictatorship (a form of government where one person rules with absolute power) of Sulla (81–80 B.C.E.). In one case, while defending Sextus Roscius of Ameria on a false charge of murder, he boldly made some outspoken comments on certain aspects of Sulla's regime. It would not be the last time Cicero spoke out about those of higher power.

In 79 B.C.E. Cicero left Rome to study in Rhodes. By 76 B.C.E. he was back in Rome, where he married Terentia, whose family was wealthy and perhaps part of the ruling class. In 75 B.C.E. he held the office of *quaestor*, which brought him membership in the Sen-

ate, the highest council in the Roman empire. In 70 B.C.E. he achieved his first great success, when he prosecuted Caius Verres for extreme mismanagement of government in Sicily.

In 69 B.C.E. Cicero held the office of *aedile* (public works and games) and that of *praetor* (judge). In 66 B.C.E., Cicero made his first major political speech in support of the extension of General Pompey's (106–48 B.C.E.) command in the Mediterranean. During the following years he acted as a self-appointed defender of that general's interests. In 63 B.C.E. Cicero became consul, or an official representing the government in a foreign land. He had reached the highest political office at the earliest legal age, a remarkable achievement for a complete outsider.

Disappointment and exile

In the years after his consulship, Cicero watched Caesar (100–44 B.C.E.), Pompey (106–48 B.C.E.), and Crassus (140–91 B.C.E.) form the First Triumvirate, a powerful alliance within the Senate. Cicero refused offers to become a fourth member of this alliance, and he publicly expressed dislike for the violent methods Caesar used in his consulship. This led to Cicero's exile, or forced removal, to Macedonia. He lived there for sixteen months, until the efforts of his friends secured his recall in August 57 B.C.E.

During the next eight months Cicero tried to separate Pompey from his partners. Early in the summer of 56 B.C.E. Pompey ordered Cicero to stop his efforts. For the next four years he was largely out of politics, devoting himself to writing and occasionally emerging to make public appearances.

After Pompey's death Cicero took no part in politics and devoted himself to writing works on philosophy and other matters. Apart from his increasing dislike of Caesar's absolute rule, Cicero's life was made unhappy during these years by domestic sorrows. In the winter of 47–46 B.C.E. he divorced Terentia after thirty years of marriage. The following summer he was deeply grieved by the death of his much-loved daughter Tullia.

Second Triumvirate

Cicero was not involved in the conspiracy against Caesar, though he strongly approved of it. After Caesar's assassination, he took a major part in establishing a compromise between Mark Antony (c. 81–30 B.C.E.) and those who killed Caesar. Before long he concluded that Antony was as great a threat to liberty as Caesar had been. But Octavian (63 B.C.E.–14 C.E.), having seized power in Rome by force, reached an agreement with Antony and Lepidus (died 152 B.C.E.) to set themselves up as a three-man dictatorship. They started by outlawing many of their enemies, and among the first names on the list was Cicero's. He could have perhaps escaped, but his efforts were half-hearted. In December 43 B.C.E. he met his death at the hands of Antony's men with courage and dignity.

As a politician Cicero was ultimately unsuccessful, since he was not able to prevent the overthrow of the republican system of government. It is in his speeches and his writings that Cicero's legacy truly lies.

The speeches and dialogues

The texts of fifty-seven speeches have survived and Cicero delivered at least fifty more, nearly all of which were published but have since been lost. The collection of the existing

speeches is impressive both for its bulk and its quality. Of the legal speeches, "Pro Cluentio" (66 B.C.E.) is the longest and most complicated, but it gives a vivid picture of life in a small Italian town. The much shorter "Pro Archia" (62 B.C.E.) is notable for its sincere and persuasive defense of a life devoted to literary pursuits. Of the political speeches the "Catilinarians" are the most famous. The fourteen "Philippics" are probably the finest, however, because in them Cicero concentrated all of his energy and skill with a directness that he did not always achieve.

Nearly all of Cicero's works on philosophy, politics, or rhetoric (the study of speaking) are in dialogue form. They were written in an elegant Latin language of which Cicero was such a master. Several are devoted to ethics, religion, and other philosophical subjects. They are extremely valuable because in them he reproduced the theories of many of the leading Greek philosophers of the post-Aristotelian schools, such as the Stoics and the Epicureans, whose own works did not survive.

Another group of Cicero's work is concerned with political theory, especially "De republica" (54–51 B.C.E.), of which barely one-third survives, and "De legibus," started in 52 B.C.E. but perhaps never completed. These works were also to some extent based on Greek ideas. But the basis was reinforced by the Roman genius for the art of government and Cicero's own considerable experience of politics.

The letters

The collection of Cicero's letters is undoubtedly the most interesting and valuable part of all his enormous literary output. It includes nearly eight hundred letters writ-

ten by him, and nearly another one hundred written to him by a wide variety of correspondents. The surviving letters belonged mainly to his last years. There are only twelve dating before his consulship, while more than a quarter of the collection was written in the last eighteen months of his life.

Some of the letters were as carefully composed as the speeches or dialogues. Most of them, especially those to his brother or to close friends like Atticus, have an originality that is often lacking in his more calculated work. In these intimate letters Cicero used a very informal style, with frequent use of slang and words or phrases in Greek.

The letters cover an immense range of topics, but above all, they give an incredibly vivid picture of Cicero himself. The letters demonstrate his energy and industry, his courage, his loyalty, and his basic honesty, kindness, and humanity. Thanks to his letters, we know Cicero as we know no other Roman.

For More Information

Everett, Anthony. *Cicero: The Life and Times of Rome's Greatest Politician*. New York: Random House, 2002.

Forsyth, Fiona. *Cicero: Defender of the Republic*. New York: Rosen Central, 2002.

LIZ CLAIBORNE

Born: March 31, 1929

Brussels, Belgium

American fashion designer and businesswoman

Founder of one of the world's most successful women's apparel (clothing) manufacturing companies, Liz Claiborne is a pioneer in designing reasonably priced, quality clothing for modern working women.

Early life

Elisabeth Claiborne was born on March 31, 1929, in Brussels, Belgium. She was the only child of American parents, Omer V. Claiborne, a banker for the Morgan Guaranty Trust Company, and Louise Fenner Claiborne. Her father taught her to appreciate art and her mother taught her to sew. Claiborne spent her early years in Belgium and learned to speak French before English. In 1939 the family left Belgium for their home in New Orleans, Louisiana. Claiborne's father did not consider formal education important. Before she could graduate from high school, her father sent her to study art in Belgium and France. Although her parents expected her to become an artist, Claiborne wanted to pursue a career as a clothing designer.

When Claiborne was twenty-one years old her sketch for a woman's coat won a design competition sponsored by *Harper's Bazaar* magazine. She began working in New York City as a design assistant and model. During the 1950s she designed sportswear, dresses, and tailored clothing. From 1960 to 1975 she was the main designer for the junior dress division of Jonathan Logan, a major women's apparel manufacturer. During this time Claiborne also raised her son from her first marriage to Ben Schultz and two stepchildren from her second marriage to Arthur Ortenberg, a clothing manufacturer.

Starts her own company

Claiborne saw a need for more comfortable professional clothes for working women. Unable to convince her employer to try to meet that need, Claiborne started her own company. Liz Claiborne, Inc. was founded in 1976 with approximately \$250,000, including \$50,000 of Claiborne and her husband's savings. Ortenberg was the company's secretary and treasurer; industry executive and friend Leonard Boxer handled production; and Jerome Chazen joined the company in 1977 to run the company's marketing operations.

Claiborne's clothes were instantly popular. Total sales for the first year were over two million dollars. Priced in a moderate range and sold in department stores, Liz Claiborne clothes became known among working women for their good quality materials, comfortable fit, good construction, and color selection. Sales increased to \$117 million in 1981. The company was considered one of the best managed in the highly competitive women's fashion business.

Continued success

Within a few years after the first shares of stock in Liz Claiborne, Inc., went on sale in 1981, Claiborne and Ortenberg were millionaires. The company's market share and profits continued to grow. Claiborne added shoes, men's clothing, and perfume to the product line. The company's success was helped by what Ortenberg described as an "exploding market" of millions of women who graduated from college and entered the workforce during the 1980s. Encouraged by Claiborne's merchandise, women were becoming more confident about dressing for work.



Liz Claiborne.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

In 1986, when company sales reached \$1.2 billion, it joined the list of *Fortune* magazine's five hundred largest industrial companies in the United States, one of only two companies on the list that had been started by a woman. Also in 1986 Claiborne, who was company president, became chairman of the board and chief executive officer. She continued to advise the company's design teams, placing great importance on the company's goals of providing good fit, color, comfort, and value.

Later years

Claiborne and her husband retired from active management of the company in 1989

in order to pursue environmental and charity work. The Liz Claiborne and Art Ortenberg Foundation was established in 1989 to provide support for protection of the wilderness. In 1990 Claiborne and her husband were elected to the National Business Hall of Fame. Claiborne was elected to the National Sales Hall of Fame in 1991, and she received an honorary (received without meeting the normal requirements) doctorate degree from the Rhode Island School of Design the same year.

Liz Claiborne, Inc., remains a fashion power and now employs over seven thousand people. The company continued its growth by purchasing other clothing companies such as Lucky Brand Dungarees and Laundry. In 2000, after receiving complaints from Muslims, the company was forced to recall eight thousand pairs of jeans with verses from the Koran (the holy book of the Islam faith) printed on them. The company also received some criticism over the 2001 release of a perfume called Mambo, which was seen as an attempt to cash in on the growing Hispanic population of the United States.

Liz Claiborne and her husband remain active in a number of charities and avoid the public eye as much as possible. At the 2000 American Fashion Awards presented by the Council of Fashion Designers of America, Claiborne was honored for her environmental work, particularly in helping to fight the killing of African elephants for their ivory tusks.

For More Information

“Can Ms. Fashion Bounce Back?” *Business Week* (January 16, 1989).

Klensch, Elsa. *Vogue* (August 1986).

Steele, Valerie. *Women of Fashion, Twentieth Century Designers*. New York: Rizzoli International, 1991.

CLEOPATRA VII

Born: 69 B.C.E.

Alexandria, Egypt

Died: August 30, 30 B.C.E.

Alexandria, Egypt

Egyptian ruler

Cleopatra VII was the last ruler of Egypt from the house of the Ptolemy, a family that had ruled Egypt for generations. She earned an unfavorable reputation during her age, but as the lover of the Roman emperors Julius Caesar (100–44 B.C.E.) and, later, Mark Antony (c. 81–30 B.C.E.), Cleopatra has become a romantic legend in modern times.

The House of Ptolemy

Third daughter of Ptolemy XII Auletes (c. 61–51 B.C.E.), Cleopatra was born Cleopatra VII Philopator. Her family could be traced back to the Macedonian house of the Lagid Ptolemies, who took the throne after the death of Alexander the Great (356–323 B.C.E.). Fifteen consecutive Egyptian rulers from the house of Ptolemy led Egypt, beginning in 306 B.C.E. with Ptolemy I (died 284 B.C.E.) and ending with Cleopatra's death. The Ptolemaic rule was centered in the beautiful Egyptian city of Alexandria.

Historians report that Cleopatra had three sisters and two younger brothers. Both of her brothers ruled Egypt with Cleopatra

before their early deaths—Ptolemy XIII (died 44 B.C.E.) drowned during a fight with Caesar; Cleopatra killed Ptolemy XIV (47–30 B.C.E.) herself.

Much like those that ruled before him, Ptolemy XII's court was plagued with violence and corruption. Cleopatra learned her political lessons from her father. She watched his humiliating efforts to maintain himself on the throne of Egypt by buying the support of powerful Romans. On one such trip to Rome, Ptolemy XII's daughter, Berenice, seized the throne. But her rule did not last, as she was put to death upon her father's return to Alexandria.

When Ptolemy XII Auletes died, he willed the throne to his children, Cleopatra and her brother, Ptolemy XIII. The two ruled jointly as Cleopatra VII and Ptolemy XIII Philopator. The ministers of Cleopatra's ten-year-old brother found him much easier to control than his sister, however. As a result, Cleopatra was driven from Egypt in 48 B.C.E.

Cleopatra and Julius Caesar

Cleopatra made preparations to return to Egypt by force, but when Caesar arrived in Alexandria after the Battle of Pharsalus, she saw the opportunity to use him. She had herself smuggled to him in a rug. Ptolemy XIII died fighting Caesar, who restored Cleopatra to the throne with another brother, Ptolemy XIV, as coregent, or acting ruler.

The relationship between Caesar and Cleopatra grew from their mutual longing for power and money. Caesar wanted the riches found in Cleopatra's court, while she longed for power in Rome. Contrary to legend, Caesar did not stay long in Egypt with Cleopatra.



Cleopatra VII.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Although in 46 B.C.E. she gave birth to a son whom she named Ptolemy Caesarion, Caesar never formally recognized him. That same year Caesar invited her to Rome. Although he spent little time with her, her presence in Rome may have contributed to the sour feeling towards him which led to his assassination (political murder).

After Caesar was killed by a group of men plotting to overthrow his empire, Cleopatra returned to Alexandria in April 44 B.C.E. Shortly thereafter Ptolemy XIV died under mysterious circumstances. It is commonly believed that Cleopatra herself poisoned him. After her brother's death, she

made her son, Caesarion, her partner on the throne, and they awaited the outcome of the political struggle in Rome. She responded eagerly when Mark Antony summoned her and other puppet rulers to Tarsus in Cilicia after the Battle of Philippi. Matching her preparations to the man whose weaknesses she knew, she dazzled Antony and bent him to her will. She easily cleared herself of a charge of helping Brutus (85–42 B.C.E.) and Cassius (died c. 31 B.C.E.) in the conspiracy to assassinate Caesar. Also, at her request, Antony put to death three people she considered a threat to her throne.

Cleopatra and Mark Antony

In the winter of 41 and 40 B.C.E. Antony followed Cleopatra to Alexandria, where he enjoyed the pleasures of the Ptolemaic court and the company of the queen. Cleopatra hoped to tie him to her emotionally, but Antony left Egypt in the spring of 40 B.C.E.

In the autumn of 37 B.C.E. Antony sent his wife, Octavia, the sister of Roman Emperor Octavian (63–14 B.C.E.) back to Italy on the excuse that she was pregnant. He then went to Antioch to make final preparations for his invasion of Parthia. In Antioch he again sent for Cleopatra and went through a ritualistic marriage—a marriage with a ceremony but that was not recognized under Roman law. Antony was therefore still legally married to Octavia, although he recognized the twins Cleopatra had with him. Additionally, he made extensive grants of territory to her, including Cyprus, Cyrene, and the coast of Lebanon—all lands that were previously part of the Ptolemaic empire.

In 36 B.C.E. Cleopatra returned to Alexandria to await the birth of her third child with

Antony. The failure of the Parthian campaign and Octavian's exploitation of Antony's misadventure drove Antony further into the arms of Cleopatra. In return, she gave him immense financial help in rebuilding his shattered army.

When Antony defeated Artavasdes of Armenia in 34 B.C.E., he celebrated his triumph not in Rome but in Alexandria. On the following day he declared Cleopatra and Ptolemy Caesarion joint rulers of Egypt and Cyprus and overlords of all lands west and east of the Euphrates, a river in southwest Asia. For Cleopatra, acquiring these lands meant uniting the Ptolemaic empire with the land of the former Seleucid empire—all under her control. (Founded by the King of Babylon, Seleucus I [c.354–281 B.C.E.], the Seleucids were a family of kings that ruled over Macedonia from 312–64 B.C.E. The Romans had broken up the empire shortly before the time of Cleopatra's rule.) Meanwhile, Antony staked out his claims on Egypt's wealth for the coming struggle with Octavian.

Antony and Octavian

In Italy Octavian used the donations at Alexandria and Antony's relations with Cleopatra to turn public opinion against Antony. The Battle of Actium (September 2, 31 B.C.E.) was a fight for the control of the Roman Empire and led to disaster. Because Cleopatra's money built the fleet and supported it, she insisted on fighting at sea. When she fled from the battle with the war chest, Antony had little choice but to follow.

After Actium, Cleopatra tried to negotiate with Octavian for the recognition of her children as her successors in Egypt. But such recognition would cost her—Octavian

demanded Antony's death. Cleopatra refused. After the final battle outside Alexandria on August 1, 30 B.C.E., Octavian's troops defeated Antony. After receiving a false report that Cleopatra was already dead, he stabbed himself. Antony died in Cleopatra's arms inside her mausoleum (tomb), where she had barricaded herself with the treasures of the Ptolemies to keep them from Octavian.

Tricked into surrendering herself, Cleopatra tried again to negotiate with Octavian. Cleopatra was refused. She then carefully planned her own death. On August 10, after paying last honors to Antony, she retired to her quarters for a final meal. How Cleopatra died is not known, but on her left arm two tiny pricks were found, presumably from the bite of an asp (a snake).

For More Information

Flamarion, Edith. *Cleopatra: The Life and Death of a Pharaoh*. New York: Harry Abrams, 1997.

Green, Robert. *Cleopatra*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1996.

Gregory, Kristiana. *Cleopatra VII, Daughter of the Nile*. New York: Scholastic, 1999.

Walker, Susan, and Peter Higgs, eds. *Cleopatra of Egypt: From History to Myth*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 2001.

BILL CLINTON

Born: August 19, 1946

Hope, Arkansas

American president and governor

Bill Clinton won the 1992 Democratic presidential nomination and defeated George Bush to become the forty-second president of the United States. He was elected to a second term in 1996. As a former president, Clinton continues to work for a variety of issues that became important to him during his political career.

Early life

William Jefferson Clinton was born in Hope, Arkansas, on August 19, 1946. He was a fifth-generation Arkansan. His mother, Virginia Kelly, named him William Jefferson Blythe III after his father, who died in a car accident before his son's birth. When Bill was four years old, his mother left him with her parents while she trained as a nurse.

When Bill was eight, his mother married Roger Clinton. The family moved to Hot Springs, Arkansas, where they lived in small house with no indoor plumbing. Bill's stepfather was an alcoholic, and family life was frequently disrupted by domestic violence. When he was fifteen, Bill warned his stepfather never to hit his mother or half-brother, Roger Jr., again. "That was a dramatic thing," Clinton recalled years later in an interview with *Time* magazine. Despite his rocky relationship with his stepfather, Bill changed his last name to Clinton as a teenager.

When Clinton was seventeen, he met then President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963). As a result, Clinton decided that he wanted a career in politics. He entered Georgetown University in 1964. As a college student, he was committed to the movement against the Vietnam War (1955–75; a war in Vietnam in which South Vietnam, assisted by the United States, fought against a takeover by North



Bill Clinton.

Reproduced by permission of the White House.

Vietnam), as well as to the civil rights struggle. Clinton graduated from Georgetown in 1968 with a degree in international affairs. He was awarded a Rhodes scholarship, which allowed him to spend the next two years continuing his studies at Oxford University. In 1970 he entered law school at Yale University. After graduation, Clinton went into private practice as a lawyer in Fayetteville, Arkansas. He also began teaching at the University of Arkansas Law School.

Arkansas politics

In 1974 Clinton decided to begin the political career that he had wanted since he

was a teenager. He ran for Congress, but lost the election in a very close vote. On October 11, 1975, Clinton married Hillary Rodham (1947–), whom he had met when they were fellow law students at Yale. In 1976 he was elected attorney general of Arkansas, an office he held from 1977 to 1979.

In 1978 Clinton ran for the office of governor of Arkansas. His election made him the youngest-ever governor of that state. In his first term Clinton tried to make numerous changes, many of which were extremely unpopular, including an attempt to raise the cost of vehicle licenses. In 1980 he ran for reelection as governor but lost to Republican Frank White (1933–). When Clinton campaigned for election in 1982 against White, he explained that he had learned the importance of adaptability and compromise. He received 55 percent of the vote and once again became governor of Arkansas.

While Clinton was governor of Arkansas, he pushed for the reform of schools, health care, and welfare. He also continued to be active in Democratic national politics. In 1991 he was voted most effective governor by his peers and was chosen to head the Democratic Leadership Conference. That same year Clinton announced that he was entering the 1992 race for president.

Clinton becomes president

Clinton had much competition for the Democratic nomination for president. He came from a small state that many people thought of as unsophisticated and underdeveloped. Critics felt that his lack of experience in national government gave him little understanding of foreign policy. Clinton,

however, insisted that he had a fresh point of view to bring to government.

Clinton's campaign was also marked by personal scandal. He faced charges of extramarital relationships and questions about his avoidance of military service during the Vietnam War. Clinton remained in the race, however, and became the Democratic nominee, selecting Senator Albert Gore (1948–) as his running mate. Clinton focused his campaign on economic issues, especially unemployment and health care. In November 1992 Clinton was elected president, defeating both the president then in office, Republican George Bush (1924–), and independent candidate Ross Perot (1930–).

Once in office Clinton continued to work on economic issues, and interest rates and unemployment began to drop. He also appointed his wife to be the head of a task force to explore national health care reform. He supported the 1993 North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA), which made a single trading unit of the United States, Canada, and Mexico.

Reelection, scandal, and impeachment

As the end of Clinton's first term approached, a new scandal arose. The scandal was called Whitewater, after the suspicious deal in which Clinton and his wife had bought land along the Whitewater River in Arkansas. In 1996 Clinton was elected to a second term as president. He won the election by a landslide, defeating his Republican opponent, Senator Robert Dole (1923–), with 49 percent of the popular vote and 379 electoral votes. Clinton's second term, however, became overshadowed by the investigation into Whitewater of lawyer Kenneth Starr (1946–).

The investigation became more serious when charges of Clinton's affair with Monica Lewinsky (1973–), a White House intern, were made public. At first Clinton denied the affair, but he later stated that he had been in an inappropriate relationship with Lewinsky. On December 19, 1998, the House of Representatives ruled to impeach Clinton, or try him in Congress for charges of lying under oath about his relationship with Lewinsky. The Senate then conducted an impeachment trial. Clinton was only the second president in U.S. history to face a Senate impeachment hearing. On February 12, 1999, the Senate found Clinton innocent. He apologized to the American people and to Congress for what he had done.

Clinton's second term

Clinton became the first U.S. president to address Russia's Duma, or lower house of parliament, on June 5, 2000. In his speech, he said that Russians did not need to fear America's missile defense program and that their future would be vital to the twenty-first century. Later that month, he signed into law a long-awaited e-signatures bill, which gave on-line "electronic" signatures the same legal status as handwritten signatures.

The Whitewater investigation was concluded on September 20, 2000, with a statement that there was not enough evidence to prove that either Clinton or his wife had taken part in any criminal wrongdoing.

On October 16, 2000, Clinton attended an emergency meeting with Israeli Prime Minister Ehud Barak (1942–) and Palestinian leader Yasir Arafat (1929–), who wanted to come to an agreement to end ongoing violence in their countries. Barak and Arafat

left the meeting with a “statement of intent” to end the violence, but neither side was completely satisfied. In that same month, Clinton sealed a major achievement of his administration by signing a bill which gave China permanent, normal trade status. This was considered the most important U.S. trade legislation since the passage of the North American Free Trade Agreement in 1993.

Later that year, Clinton signed into law a bill that set the blood-alcohol limit for drunkenness at 0.08 percent. This was a stricter level than most states had used previously. Supporters of the bill said that this national standard, which is used to determine whether or not a driver is legally drunk, could save hundreds of lives every year. Clinton signed another important bill into law in 2000, when he permanently established a separate reserve of heating oil for the Northeast. The law made it easier for the White House to withdraw oil from reserves in case of emergency. Finally, on November 13, 2000, Clinton began a historic journey to Asia, becoming the first American president to visit Vietnam since the Vietnam War. The purpose of the visit was to work on relations between Hanoi (the capital of Vietnam) and Washington, D.C.

After the presidency

On January 19, 2001, Clinton’s last day as president, he publicly admitted that he gave misleading testimony in the Lewinsky investigation. He faced no criminal charges, but his license to practice law was suspended. Clinton was also ordered to pay a \$25,000 fine and admit that he had broken one of the Arkansas Bar’s rules of conduct.

Clinton continues to raise money for and speak on behalf of many issues. The many causes to which he devotes time and money include the economic development of small businesses, City Year (a national service program for young people), and acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; a disease of the immune system) research and education.

Despite the scandals and difficulties that plagued the second half of his presidency, Clinton continues to be an active public figure, supporting many issues and causes that are important to the world. The youngest president since John F. Kennedy, he has come a long way from his small childhood home in Arkansas.

For More Information

- Allen, Charles E., and Jonathan Portis. *The Comeback Kid: The Life and Career of Bill Clinton*. New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1992.
- Klein, Joe. *The Natural: The Misunderstood Presidency of Bill Clinton*. New York: Doubleday, 2002.
- Cohen, Daniel. *The Impeachment of William Jefferson Clinton*. Brookfield, CT: Twenty-First Century Books, 2000.
- Maraniss, David. *First in His Class*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1995.
- Moore, Jim, and Rick Ihde. *Clinton, Young Man in a Hurry*. Fort Worth, TX: Summit Group, 1992.
- O’Clery, Conor. *America: A Place Called Hope?* Dublin, Ireland: O’Brien Press, 1993.

HILLARY RODHAM CLINTON

Born: October 26, 1947

Chicago, Illinois

American first lady, U.S. senator, and lawyer

Described as the first major U.S. female political figure since Eleanor Roosevelt (1884–1962), Hillary Rodham Clinton has become a strong force in American politics. As first lady, married to Bill Clinton (1946–), the forty-second president of the United States, she became active in domestic policy. Her election as a U.S. senator from New York in 2000 marked the first time that a first lady still in the White House was elected to office.

Her early years

Hillary Diane Rodham Clinton was born on October 26, 1947, in Chicago, Illinois, and grew up, along with two younger brothers, in suburban Chicago. Her parents, Hugh and Dorothy Howell Rodham, raised their children with traditional middle-American values that stressed family, church, school, and social obligations.

As a youth, Clinton was influenced by her religious education, especially from the Reverend Don Jones, who introduced Rodham to some of the issues, causes, and movements of the time. It was under Jones's guidance that she read religious philosophers and helped the needy by babysitting the children of migrant farm workers. Another influence was meeting the Reverend Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–68) during his trip to Chicago on a speaking tour.

In 1965 Clinton enrolled in Wellesley College in Massachusetts, where she majored in political science and minored in psychology. Her undergraduate studies inspired her developing world view. A natural communicator, she motivated many of the movements for change occurring on the Wellesley campus. Graduating with highest honors in 1969, Clinton gave the first student address delivered during graduation ceremonies in the history of the college. In the fall she enrolled in Yale University Law School.

Washington and Watergate

Clinton's experiences at Yale helped to focus her areas of interest and commitment toward issues related to children, especially the poor and disadvantaged. For a summer, Clinton worked with Marian Wright Edelman (1939–), a civil rights attorney who headed the Washington Research Project, a nonprofit group based in Washington, D.C. The group would later become known as the Children's Defense Fund. Afterwards, Clinton returned to Yale, where she volunteered in several projects aimed at improving the legal system to address children's rights.

After graduating in 1973, Clinton moved to Washington and took a full-time position with the Children's Defense Fund as a staff lawyer. In January 1974, she was chosen as one of forty-three lawyers handpicked to work on the legal staff of the House Judiciary Committee.

At the time, the committee was preparing documents resulting from the Watergate scandal. Watergate was named for the Washington, D.C., complex in which it took place. The Watergate scandal involved burglary and the illegal tapings of the conversations of the



Hillary Rodham Clinton.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

Democratic opponents of Republican president Richard Nixon (1913–1994) during the 1972 presidential campaign. Eventually the American public would learn of Nixon's involvement in the scandal. The president's involvement all but forced him to step down from office.

After Nixon left office on August 9, 1974, the legal staff broke up. Soon Clinton accepted a teaching position at the University of Arkansas Law School. It was in Arkansas in 1975 that she married Bill Clinton, whom she had met while attending Yale.

Life in Little Rock

Two years after their marriage, Bill Clinton became attorney general of Arkansas, and the couple moved to the state's capitol, Little Rock. In 1977 Hillary Clinton joined the Rose Law Firm, said to be one of the oldest law firms west of the Mississippi River. Her primary focus, however, remained in the area of children's rights, and she helped found Arkansas Advocates for Children and Families. In January 1978, following her husband's successful bid for governor, Clinton became Arkansas's first lady. In February 1980, she gave birth to a daughter, Chelsea Victoria.

In her eleven years as first lady of Arkansas, Clinton continued to pursue activities aimed at public service and policy reforms in the state. In her husband's second term she served as chair of the Arkansas Education Standards Committee. In 1985 Hillary Clinton led the establishment of the Home Instruction Program for Pre-School Youngsters (HIPPPY). The program brought instruction and tutorials into impoverished, or lower-income, homes, and became one of the largest programs of its kind in the country.

In 1987 she was elected chairperson of the board of the Children's Defense Fund and of the New World Foundation, a charity organization headquartered in New York that had helped launch the Children's Defense Fund. Also in that year, Hillary and Bill Clinton were awarded the National Humanitarian Award by the National Conference of Christians and Jews. For the first time, Hillary Clinton enjoyed national attention when the *National Law Journal*, in 1988 and again in 1991, named her as one of the "One Hundred Most Influential Lawyers in America."

Life in the White House

After Bill Clinton was elected president of the United States in 1992, Hillary's involvement in political issues, both in the United States and in foreign countries, increased. She began to remold the role of the first lady. Hillary Clinton remained an advocate for many of the programs and issues to which she earlier devoted her time and professional skills. She provided leadership in a number of areas, including the Task Force on National Health Care, which was responsible for proposals and passing reform packages before Congress.

Her White House agenda went beyond health care reform and included pushing for children's and women's issues. Hillary Clinton proved to be an active and vital figure in the White House throughout her husband's presidency. In August of 1995, Hillary Clinton was invited to deliver the keynote address (a speech that covers the issues that are most important to a particular group of people) at the United Nations International Conference on Women near Beijing, China.

In November 1996, Bill Clinton was reelected president of the United States. In that same year Hillary Clinton published her first book entitled *It Takes a Village: And Other Lessons Children Teach Us*. The book became a best-seller.

On September 20, 2000, Independent Counsel Robert Ray announced his final report reviewing the Clinton's 1970s-era Whitewater real estate partnership. Although the first family's involvement in the partnership was somewhat unclear, "Whitewater," as it would become known, was a real estate scandal that followed the Clintons throughout the 1990s. Ray said in his final report reviewing the scandal that there was not

enough evidence to prove that either President Clinton or Hillary Rodham Clinton had been guilty of any criminal wrongdoing.

New York senator

In 2000 Hillary Clinton announced that she was running for a seat in the U.S. Senate from New York and was later named as the Democratic nominee. Her Republican opponent was originally Rudolph Giuliani (1944–), the mayor of New York. However, when Giuliani had to drop out of the race after becoming ill, Republican Rick Lazio (1958–) jumped into the race. On November 7, 2000, Clinton won the election.

On September 11, 2001, terrorists attacked the United States and destroyed the World Trade Center towers in Manhattan, New York. Clinton then focused her energy on developing a plan to help that section of the city to rebuild. As a senator, Clinton also continues to work for laws to help children, women, and families.

For More Information

King, Norman. *Hillary: Her True Story*. New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1993.

Milton, Joyce. *The First Partner—Hillary Rodham Clinton*. New York: William Morrow, 1999.

O'Brien, Patricia. "The First Lady with a Career." *Working Woman* (August 1992).

Sheehy, Gail. *Hillary's Choice*. New York: Random House, 1999.

Warner, Judith. *Hillary Clinton: The Inside Story*. New York: Signet, 1993.

Wheeler, Jill C. *Hillary Rodham Clinton*. Edina, MN: ABDO Pub. Co., 2002.

TY COBB

Born: December 18, 1886

Narrows, Georgia

Died: July 17, 1961

Atlanta, Georgia

American baseball player

Ty Cobb is regarded by some as the greatest all-around baseball player who ever lived. During his career, Cobb set dozens of records, including lifetime batting average, which still remains unbroken.

Early life and career

Tyrus Raymond Cobb was born on December 18, 1886, in Narrows, Georgia, to William Herschel Cobb, a school administrator and state senator, and Amanda Chitwood. Cobb grew up in Royston, Georgia, and began playing sandlot ball (playground baseball) as soon as he could swing a bat. While his father wanted him to pursue an academic career, Cobb was determined to make it as a professional baseball player.

In 1904, despite family objections, he signed with the Augusta baseball team of the South Atlantic League and soon attracted notice. Cobb's aggressive play won him a contract in Augusta that would pay him \$125 a month. Grantland Rice (1880–1954), the famous sportswriter, saw him play for Augusta and named him the “Georgia Peach,” a title that Cobb wore proudly.

Dominating the game

At a time when pitchers dominated the game and batting averages were low, Cobb

was a brilliant exception. He hit .326 in his last season in the minors before joining the Detroit Tigers of the American League on August 27, 1905. In 1906 Cobb hit .320, the fifth best average in the league and 35 points ahead of anyone else on his team. The next year he won the American League batting championship, hitting .350 and leading Detroit to the World Series. He quickly became the biggest attraction in baseball and would hit .300 or better for twenty-three straight years. During that time, he hit over .400 in three different seasons—his all-time high being .420 in 1911. Cobb led the league in hitting twelve times, nine of them in a row. During his peak years, 1909 to 1919, he so dominated baseball that historians refer to it as the era of the “Cobbian game.”

In 1909, for example, Cobb had the best year of any baseball player to that date, leading both leagues in hitting with an average of .377 and leading the American League in every offensive category. Once again he led the Tigers to a pennant (league championship), though they lost the World Series. As most of his teammates were markedly less talented than Cobb, he would never be on a world championship team, about the only honor available to a ball player that he did not win. This remained so even during his years as a player-manager for Detroit from 1921 to 1926, when the team never finished better than second place.

A baseball genius

Cobb, in addition to his batting skills, amazing fielding, and talents as a base runner, was the fiercest competitor in baseball.

Not satisfied with simply winning, he had to run up the highest possible score and therefore put ruthless pressure on the opposition until the last man was out. A perfectionist in an era of what was called “inside baseball,” which emphasized hit-and-run plays, base stealing, and bunting, he mastered every aspect of his craft. Cobb was also a supremely intelligent player, a kind of baseball genius. “Know thy enemy” was his guiding rule, and his thorough knowledge of every competitor enabled him to “read” the opposition as no one else could.

The reasons why Cobb’s intelligence was so much admired in his playing days can be read in his autobiography (a book written by a person about their life). The chapter on hitting is a brilliant essay on how to keep the opposition off balance by never doing the same thing twice. “I tried to be all things to all pitchers,” Cobb wrote, summing up his teachings nicely. If that chapter is all about technique, the next one, “Waging War on the Base Paths,” is all about psychology (the study of mental behavior).

Once Cobb, annoyed by a catcher who was always telling journalists that Cobb’s reputation was overblown, performed an astonishing feat. On stepping up to the plate, he told the catcher that he was going to steal every base. After singling to first, Cobb then stole second, third, and home on four straight pitches.

Later career and legacy

Cobb remained a star after 1920, when the rise of Babe Ruth (1895–1948) and the introduction of a livelier ball changed the game to one in which batting power mattered



Ty Cobb.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

more than strategy. But the new “Ruthian game” was not to Cobb’s taste, and although he remained a skillful batter, his legs began to give out. In 1927 Cobb signed with the Philadelphia Athletics, and even though he averaged .357 at the plate, it was clear that his days as a player were numbered. He spent most of 1928 on the bench and retired at season’s end.

When Cobb left baseball, he held forty-three records. Although all but one have since been broken, his fantastic lifetime batting average of .367 appears safe. That he was the best all-around player who ever lived was recognized in 1936, when he led everyone in

votes for the first group of Baseball Hall of Fame inductees. He came in ahead of legends Ruth, Honus Wagner (1874–1955), Christy Mathewson (1880–1925), and Walter Johnson (1887–1946)—the other four original selectees.

Cobb the man

As a player Cobb was godlike, but as a man he had little to offer. Angry, ready to argue, touchy, and a loner, his teammates at first hated him for what one of them called his “rotten disposition” (bad attitude). He was tolerated only after his value became obvious. A bully on the field, Cobb was also the same off of it. In a racist age (a period where many believed one race was superior to another) he was notably abusive to African Americans. Cobb was a poor husband and father too. Both his marriages ended in divorce, and even though he had five children by his first wife, his relations with them were not close. As sometimes happens, he did better as a grandfather.

Like many ex-athletes, Cobb was restless in retirement, living simply despite his wealth—much of which he gave away. In 1953 he founded the Cobb Educational Foundation, which awarded college fellowships to needy Georgia students. Among his other charitable works was the hospital he built in Royston as a memorial to his parents. Cobb died in Atlanta, Georgia, on July 17, 1961, widely admired but not loved, unlike the other great ballplayer of his time, Babe Ruth.

For More Information

Alexander, Charles C. *Ty Cobb*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1984.

Cobb, Ty, and Al Stump. *My Life in Baseball*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1961.

Creevy, Patrick. *Tyrus*. New York: Forge, 2002.

Stump, Al. *Cobb: A Biography*. Chapel Hill, NC: Algonquin Books of Chapel Hill, 1994.

NAT “KING”
COLE

Born: March 17, 1919

Montgomery, Alabama

Died: 1965

Santa Monica, California

African American musician, singer, and pianist

The American musician Nat “King” Cole was beloved by millions as a singer of popular songs, but his specialty was piano in the tradition of “cool” jazz.

A musical childhood

Nathaniel Adams Coles, the youngest son of the Reverend Edwards Coles and Perlina (Adams) Coles, was born on March 17, 1917, in Montgomery, Alabama. (Cole would drop the “s” from his name early in his career.) Cole’s father moved the family to Chicago, Illinois, in 1921. His father served as pastor of the Truelight Spiritual Temple on the South Side of Chicago. By the time he reached the age of twelve, Cole was playing the organ and singing in the choir of his father’s church under his mother’s choir direction.

Cole took piano lessons in order to learn how to read music. Inspired by show business, Cole formed his own big band, the Rogues of Rhythm. His older brother Eddie, previously bassist with Noble Sissle's orchestra, joined him.

The genius of Cole, Moore, and Miller

In Hollywood for a series of gigs, Cole put together a trio that would become legendary. Cole's first bass player, later replaced by the legendary Johnny "Thrifty" Miller, was Wesley Prince, who introduced Cole to Oscar Moore, a movie studio guitarist. Although Irving Ashby eventually replaced Moore, the trio reached its peak with the combined genius of Cole, Moore, and Miller. The three musicians each possessed exceptional gifts of improvisation (to make up without practice), which blended original inventions with jazz standards.

Legend has it that during an after-hours vocalization with his trio, a young woman in the club crowned Cole the "King," an affectionate nickname, which stuck ever after. From this Cole would take his rightful place among the royalty of jazz, which included "Count" Basie (1904–1984) and "Duke" Ellington (1899–1974).

With the arrival of the spring of 1944 came a second Capital recording of "Straighten Up and Fly Right" and, on the flip side, "I Just Can't See for Lookin'." After this Cole strung together several hits: "Gee, Baby, Ain't I Good to You?" "Bring Another Drink," "If You Can't Smile and Say Yes," "Shy Guy," and then two real winners, "Frim Fram Sauce" and "Route 66."

End of the trio

As success mounted, the jazz lessened and Cole's popular vocalization increased. At



Nat "King" Cole.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

the same time, the trio began to fade into the background, sometimes not appearing at all. With his recording of Mel Tormé's "Christmas Song," a new career was launched for Cole. This left little room for Moore and Miller and the trio broke up.

Cole, now a solo artist, settled in Los Angeles, California. He divorced his first wife, Nadine, whom he had married in 1937. He married for a second and last time to singer Marie Ellington. Although not related, Marie sang with Duke Ellington's band. Cole and Marie had three daughters: Carol, Timlin, and Natalie.

Later years and legacy

After a string of hits, Cole's life came to a sad ending. The sound quality of his voice came not only from his broad Southern accent and velvety voice, but also from his cigarette smoking. On a WNEW New York interview shortly before his untimely death in 1965 from throat cancer, host William B. Williams asked Cole how he could smoke so much and still be a singer. Cole responded by saying he had learned two things: the choice of the right key for a song meant everything, and smoking helps a singer get a husky sound in his voice that the audience loves. "So," Cole said, "if you want to sing, keep on smoking."

When Cole died, a legendary jazz artist and a voice millions knew as the voice of a friend was lost to the world. Cole's smooth, relaxed delivery established a style out of which others grew, including the styles of Mel Torme, Johnny Ray, Johnny Mathis (1935–), Oscar Peterson (1925–), Frankie Laine, Tony Bennett (1926–), and early Ray Charles (1930–).

On March 6, 2000 Cole was inducted into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame in the Early Influences category. The category includes artists whose music predates rock and roll, but who inspired and had a major effect on rock and roll music.

For More Information

Epstein, Daniel Mark. *Nat King Cole*. New York: Farrar, Straus & Giroux, 1999.

Gourse, Leslie. *Unforgettable*. St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Press, Skip. *Natalie & Nat King Cole*. Parsippany, NJ: Crestwood House, 1995.

BESSIE COLEMAN

Born: January 26, 1892

Atlanta, Texas

Died: May 1, 1926

Jacksonville, Florida

African American aviator

Bessie Coleman was the first African American to earn an international pilot's license. She dazzled crowds with her stunts at air shows and refused to be slowed by racism (a dislike or disrespect of a person based on their race).

Early life

Bessie Coleman was born on January 26, 1892, in a one-room, dirt-floored cabin in Atlanta, Texas, to George and Susan Coleman, the illiterate (unable to read and write) children of slaves. When Bessie was two years old, her father, a day laborer, moved his family to Waxahachie, Texas, where he bought a quarter-acre of land and built a three-room house in which two more daughters were born. In 1901 George Coleman left his family. Bessie's mother and two older brothers went to work and Bessie was left as caretaker of her two younger sisters.

Education for Coleman was limited to eight grades in a one-room schoolhouse that closed whenever the students were needed in the fields to help their families harvest cotton. Coleman easily established her position as family leader, reading aloud to her siblings and her mother at night. She often assured her ambitious church-going mother that she intended to "amount to something." After

completing school she worked as a laundress and saved her pay until 1910 when she left for Oklahoma to attend Langston University. She left after one year when she ran out of money.

Back in Waxahachie Coleman again worked as a laundress until 1915, when she moved to Chicago, Illinois, to live with her older brother, Walter. Within months she became a manicurist and moved to a place of her own while continuing to seek—and finally, in 1920, to find—a goal for her life: to become a pilot.

Learning to fly

After befriending several leaders in South Side Chicago's African American community, Coleman found a sponsor in Robert Abbott (1868–1940), publisher of the nation's largest African American weekly, the *Chicago Defender*. There were no African American aviators (pilots) in the area and, when no white pilot was willing to teach her to fly, Coleman turned to Abbott, who suggested that she go to France. The French, he insisted, were not racists and were the world's leaders in aviation.

Coleman left for France late in 1920. There she completed flight training at the best school in France and was awarded her Fédération Aéronautique Internationale (F.A.I.; international pilot's license) license on June 15, 1921. She traveled Europe, gaining further flying experience so that she could perform in air shows.

Her mission

Back in New York in August 1922, Coleman outlined the goals for the remainder of



Bessie Coleman.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

her life to reporters. She would be a leader, she said, in introducing aviation to her race. She would found a school for aviators of any race, and she would appear before audiences in churches, schools, and theaters to spark the interest of African Americans in the new, expanding technology of flight.

Intelligent, beautiful, and well spoken, Coleman often exaggerated her already remarkable accomplishments in the interest of better publicity and bigger audiences. As a result, the African American press of the country, primarily weekly newspapers, quickly proclaimed her “Queen Bess.”

In 1923 Coleman purchased a small plane but crashed on the way to her first scheduled West Coast air show. The plane was destroyed and Coleman suffered injuries that hospitalized her for three months. Returning to Chicago to recover, it took her another eighteen months to find financial backers for a series of shows in Texas. Her flights and theater appearances there during the summer of 1925 were highly successful, earning her enough to make a down payment on another plane. Her new fame was also bringing in steady work. At last, she wrote to one of her sisters, she was going to be able to earn enough money to open her school for fliers.

A tragic ending

Coleman left Orlando, Florida, by train to give a benefit exhibition for the Jacksonville Negro Welfare League, scheduled for May 1, 1926. Her pilot, William D. Wills, flew her plane into Orlando, but had to make three forced landings because the plane was so worn and poorly maintained. On April 30, 1926, Wills piloted the plane on a trial flight while Coleman sat in the other cockpit to survey the area over which she was to fly and parachute jump the next day. Her seat belt was unattached because she had to lean out over the edge of the plane while picking the best sites for her program. At an altitude of 1,000 feet, the plane dived, then flipped over, throwing Coleman out. Moments later Wills crashed. Both were killed.

Coleman had three memorial services—in Jacksonville, Orlando, and Chicago, the last attended by thousands. She was buried at Chicago's Lincoln Cemetery and gradually,

over the years following her death, achieved recognition at last as a hero of early aviation.

For More Information

Borden, Louise. *Fly High!: The Story of Bessie Coleman*. New York: Margaret K. McElderry, 2001.

Fisher, Lillian M. *Brave Bessie: Flying Free*. Dallas, TX: Hendrick-Long Publishing Co., 1995.

Rich, Doris L. *Queen Bess: Daredevil Aviator*. Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution Press, 1993.

SAMUEL TAYLOR COLERIDGE

Born: October 21, 1772

Devonshire, England

Died: July 25, 1834

Highgate, England

English poet and author

Samuel Taylor Coleridge was a major poet of the English Romantic period, a literary movement characterized by imagination, passion, and the supernatural. He is also noted for his works on literature, religion, and the organization of society.

Childhood talents

Samuel Taylor Coleridge, the tenth and last child of the vicar of Ottery Saint Mary near Devonshire, England, was born on October 21, 1772. After his father's death in 1782, he was sent to Christ's Hospital for

schooling. He had an amazing memory and an eagerness to learn. However, he described his next three years of school as, “depressed, moping, friendless.” In 1791 he entered Jesus College, Cambridge, England. Because of bad debts, Coleridge joined the 15th Light Dragoons, a British cavalry unit, in December 1793. After his discharge in April 1794, he returned to Jesus College, but he left in December without completing a degree.

The reason he left was because of his developing friendship with Robert Southey (1774–1843). Both young men were very interested in poetry and shared the same dislike for the neoclassic tradition (a return to the Greek and Latin classics). Both were also radicals in politics. From their emotional and idealistic conversations, they developed a plan for a “pantisocracy,” a vision of an ideal community to be founded in America. This plan never came to be. On October 4, 1795, Coleridge married Sara Fricker, the sister of Southey’s wife-to-be. By that time, however, his friendship with Southey had already ended.

Poetic career

The years from 1795 to 1802 were for Coleridge a period of fast poetic and intellectual growth. His first major poem, “The Eolian Harp,” was published in 1796 in his *Poems on Various Subjects*. Its verse and theme contributed to the growth of English Romanticism, illustrating a blending of emotional expression and description with meditation.

From March to May 1796 Coleridge edited the *Watchman*, a periodical that failed after ten issues. While this failure made him realize that he was “not fit for public life,” his next poem, “Ode to the Departing Year,”



Samuel Taylor Coleridge.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

shows that he still had poetic passion. Yet philosophy and religion were his overriding interests. In *Religious Musings* (published in 1796), he wrote about the unity and wholeness of the universe and the relationship between God and the created world.

The most influential event in Coleridge’s career was his friendship with William Wordsworth (1770–1850) and his wife Dorothy from 1796 to 1810. This friendship brought a joint publication with Wordsworth of the *Lyrical Ballads*, a collection of twenty-three poems, in September 1798. The volume contained nineteen of Wordsworth’s poems and four of Coleridge’s. The most famous of

these was “The Rime of the Ancient Mariner.” Coleridge later described the division of labor between the two poets: Wordsworth was “to give the charm of novelty to things of every day by awakening the mind’s attention from the lethargy of custom, and directing it to the loveliness and the wonders of the world before us,” while Coleridge’s “endeavours should be directed to persons and characters supernatural, or at least romantic.”

A second, enlarged edition of Coleridge’s *Poems* also appeared in 1798. It contained further lyrical and symbolic works, such as “This Lime-Tree Bower, My Prison” and “Fears in Solitude.” At this time Coleridge also wrote “Kubla Khan,” perhaps the most famous of his poems, and began the piece “Christabel.”

Personal difficulties

After spending a year in Germany with the Wordsworths, Coleridge returned to England and settled in the Lake District. For the next twelve years Coleridge had a miserable life. The climate made his many ailments worse. For pain relief he took laudanum, a type of opium drug, and soon became an addict. His marriage was failing, especially once Coleridge fell in love with Sara Hutchinson, Wordsworth’s sister-in-law. Poor health and emotional stress affected his writing. However, in 1802, he did publish the last and most moving of his major poems, “Dejection: An Ode.” After a two-year stay in Malta (a group of islands in the Mediterranean), he separated from his wife in 1806. The only bright point in his life was his friendship with the Wordsworths, but by 1810, after his return to the Lake District, their friendship had lessened. Coleridge then moved to London.

Meanwhile, Coleridge’s poetry and his brilliant conversation had earned him public recognition, and between 1808 and 1819 he gave several series of lectures, mainly on William Shakespeare (1564–1616) and other literary topics. His only dramatic work, *Oso-rio*, written in 1797, was performed in 1813 under the title *Remorse*. “Christabel” and “Kubla Khan” were published in 1816.

Later life

Coleridge spent the last eighteen years of his life at Highgate, near London, England, as a patient under the care of Dr. James Gillman. There he wrote several works which were to have tremendous influence on the future course of English thought in many fields: *Biographia literaria* (1817), *Lay Sermons* (1817), *Aids to Reflection* (1825), and *The Constitution of Church and State* (1829).

When Coleridge died on July 25, 1834, at Highgate, he left bulky manuscript notes that scholars of the mid-twentieth century found and began editing. When the material is eventually published, scholars and the general public will realize the extraordinary range and depth of Coleridge’s philosophical thoughts, and will understand his true impact on generations of poets and thinkers.

For More Information

Ashton, Rosemary. *The Life of Samuel Taylor Coleridge: A Critical Biography*. Cambridge, MA: Blackwell Publishers, 1996.

Campbell, James Dykes. *Samuel Taylor Coleridge: A Narrative of the Events of His Life*. Norwood, PA: Norwood Editions, 1977.

Holmes, Richard. *Coleridge: Early Visions*. New York: Viking, 1990.

MARVA COLLINS

Born: August 31, 1936

Monroeville, Alabama

African American teacher

Schoolteacher Marva Collins founded Chicago's Westside Preparatory School in 1975. The success of the school and her teaching methods brought her media attention and inspired a made-for-TV film.

Influenced by father

Collins was born Marva Delores Nettles on August 31, 1936, in Monroeville, Alabama. She has described her childhood as "wonderful" and filled with material comforts that included riding in luxury cars and having her own horse. Her father, Alex Nettles, owned a general store and later purchased a ranch and a funeral home. He was very attentive and supportive to Marva and her younger sister, Cynthia. By challenging Marva to use her mind, he gave her a strong sense of pride and self-esteem.

Marva attended Clark College in Atlanta, Georgia. After graduating in 1957 with a degree in secretarial sciences, she returned to Alabama to teach typing, bookkeeping, and business law at Monroe County Training School. Marva never intended to be a teacher, however, so she left the profession in 1959 to take a position as a medical secretary at Mount Sinai Hospital in Chicago, Illinois. While in the city she met Clarence Collins, a draftsman (one who draws plans and sketches) whom she married in September 1960.

Starts her own school

In 1961 Marva Collins returned to teaching in Chicago schools, because she missed helping youngsters discover the joy of learning. She became annoyed with the many other teachers who did not share her enthusiasm for the job. With her pension money and the support of her husband, Collins opened the Westside Preparatory School in the basement of Daniel Hale Williams University. She welcomed students who had been rejected by other schools and were labeled "unteachable." She planned to give them the time and attention they needed.

Collins decided not to accept funds from the federal government because she did not want to follow all the regulations that came with such backing. She soon moved the school into the second floor of her home, which she and her husband remodeled to handle approximately twenty children ranging in age from four to fourteen years old. The school was eventually moved to its own building near Collins's home, and enrollment increased to over two hundred students. By offering a great deal of individual attention, strict discipline (enforcing obedience and order), as well as focusing on reading, math, and language skills, Collins was able to raise the test scores of her students, many of whom went on to college and did well. "It takes an investment of time to help your children mature and develop successfully," declared Collins in *Ebony*.

Media attention and criticism

Collins started attracting attention in 1977 after a newspaper article on her and her school was printed. Several national publications picked up the story, and she was featured on the television program *60 Minutes*. A made-



Marva Collins.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

for-TV movie entitled *The Marva Collins Story*, starring Cicely Tyson, aired on the Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS) in 1981. In 1980 newly elected President Ronald Reagan (1911–) considered Collins for the post of secretary of education. Preferring to continue teaching and running her school, Collins announced that she would not accept the position if it were offered to her. She also turned down positions with the Chicago and Los Angeles County school systems. In 1982 she published a book explaining her method of teaching, *Marva Collins' Way*.

In 1982 critics charged that she had broken her vow not to accept federal funds and

that she had exaggerated her students' test scores. An investigation revealed that Collins received sixty-nine thousand dollars through the federal Comprehensive Employment and Training Act. Collins claimed that the money had come to her through a social services agency, and that she had no idea it had originally come from Washington, D.C. On the issue of Collins's success as a teacher, many parents of Westside students rallied in her support, as did Morley Safer of *60 Minutes*, who was quoted in *Newsweek* as saying, "I'm convinced that Marva Collins is one hell of a teacher." Many studies of students taught by Collins's methods showed dramatic improvement in their test scores and success in later life.

Collins received donations from many individuals, including rock star Prince, who became cofounder and honorary chairman of Collins's National Teacher Training Institute. Collins has received numerous awards for her work, and has taught her methods to over one-hundred thousand teachers, school administrators, and business people. She lives in Hilton Head, South Carolina, and is a popular public speaker. There are now five schools using her teaching methods: three in Chicago; one in Cincinnati, Ohio; and one in Milwaukee, Wisconsin.

For More Information

American Spectator (April 1983).

Black Enterprise (June 1982).

Collins, Marva. *Ordinary Children, Extraordinary Teachers*. Norfolk, VA: Hampton Roads Publishing Company, 1992.

Collins, Marva, and Civia Tamarkin. *Marva Collins' Way*. Los Angeles: J. P. Tarcher, 1990.

MICHAEL COLLINS

Born: October 16, 1890

Clonakilty, Ireland

Died: August 22, 1922

West Cork, Ireland

Irish revolutionary

The Irish revolutionary leader Michael Collins was a founder of the Irish Free State. Much of his work helped to secure independence from Great Britain for most of Ireland.

Early life and inspiration

Michael Collins was born near Clonakilty, County Cork, Ireland, on October 16, 1890, to a successful farmer, Michael John Collins, and Mary Anne O'Brien. When the couple married, she was twenty-three years old and he was sixty. The couple would have eight children, with Michael being the youngest.

Raised in a beautiful but remote part of southwest Ireland, Collins was educated at local primary schools. At the Lisavair National School, Collins was inspired by his teacher, Denis Lyons, a member of a secret organization, the Irish Republican Brotherhood (IRB), whose aim was to gain Ireland's independence from Great Britain. Collins was also influenced by the stories of local men who had taken part in the 1798 Rebellion, a conflict that sparked a feud between the Irish Protestants and Catholics. From these stories Collins learned of Irish pride, rebellion, executions, and the general harsh treatment imposed on his country by the British.

In 1906 Collins went to London, England, to enter the civil service as a postal clerk. For ten years Collins lived in London, where he became active in various Irish organizations, including the Gaelic League, a society that promoted the use of the Irish language. Also during this time, Collins was influenced by the writings of Arthur Griffith (1872–1922), an Irish nationalist (a person devoted to the interest of a country) who founded the Irish political party Sinn Fein (We Ourselves). In 1909 Collins himself became a member of the IRB, and would later become the IRB treasurer for the South of England.

By this time Collins had grown into a leader. Well-built at about six feet in height, Collins was a good athlete who possessed great endurance. He was good looking, very friendly, and generally had a strong character, something that would win him both friends and enemies.

Revolution

Collins returned to Ireland in 1916 to take part in the Easter Rising, a rebellion against British rule. After the rebellion was crushed, Collins was interned (held captive) in North Wales along with most of the other rebels from the IRB. When the internees were released in December 1916, he went to Dublin, where his sharp intelligence and dynamic energy soon secured him a leadership position in the reviving revolutionary movement.

After their victory in the general election of December 1918, the revolutionaries established an Irish Parliament (body of government), Dail Eireann, in January 1919. The Dail officially announced an Irish Republic



Michael Collins.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

(government elected and run by the people of Ireland) and set up an executive to take over the government of the country. British attempts to crush the Republican movement were met with guerrilla warfare (using small bands of soldiers) from the Irish Republican Army (IRA).

Collins played the most important role in this struggle. As director of intelligence (information) of the IRA, he crippled the British intelligence system in Ireland and replaced it with an effective Irish network. At the same time he performed other important military functions, headed the IRB, and, as minister of finance (executive in charge of

money) in the Republican government, successfully raised and handed out large sums of money on behalf of the rebel cause. Despite constant efforts, the British were unable to capture Collins or stop his work. The “Big Fellow” became an idolized and near-legendary figure in Ireland, and he won a reputation in Britain and abroad for ruthlessness, resourcefulness, and daring.

Diplomacy

After the truce of July 1921, Collins reluctantly agreed to Irish president Eamon de Valera’s (1882–1975) request to serve on the peace-making talks headed by Arthur Griffith. During the autumn negotiations in London, the British government firmly rejected any settlement that involved recognition of the republic. Instead its representatives offered Dominion status for Ireland (self-governing, but still part of the British Commonwealth) with the right of exclusion (to be left out) for loyalist Northern Ireland. Collins decided to accept these terms, in the belief that rejection meant renewal of the war and quick defeat for Ireland, and that the proposed treaty would soon lead to unity and complete freedom for his country. Using these arguments, he and Griffith persuaded their side to sign the treaty on December 6, 1921, and Dail Eireann to approve it on January 7, 1922.

De Valera and many Republicans refused to accept the agreement, however, believing that it meant a betrayal of the republic and would mean continued domination by Britain. As the British evacuated southern Ireland, Collins and Griffith did their best to maintain order and enforce the treaty signed with the British. They found their efforts frustrated by the opposition of an armed Republican minor-

CONFUCIUS

ity, however. Collins sought desperately to satisfy the forces that opposed the treaty without abandoning the treaty altogether, but he found it impossible to make a workable compromise.

In late June 1922, after the population had supported the settlement in an election, Collins agreed to use force against the opposition. This action sparked a civil war, a bitter conflict in which the forces of the infant Irish Free State eventually overcame the extreme Republicans in May 1923. Collins did not live to see the end of the war, though. He was killed in an ambush in West Cork on August 22, 1922, just ten days after the death of Arthur Griffith.

Much of Collins's success as a revolutionary leader was due mainly to his realism (being practical) and extraordinary efficiency. He also possessed an amazing vision and humanity in his character, however, which appealed to friend and foe alike. The treaty that cost him his life did not end the argument, as he had hoped, but it did make possible the peaceful gaining of full political freedom for most of Ireland.

For More Information

- Coogan, Tim Pat. *Michael Collins: A Biography*. London: Hutchinson, 1990.
- Feehan, John M. *The Shooting of Michael Collins*. Dublin, Ireland: Mercier Press, 1981.
- Mackay, James A. *Michael Collins: A Life*. Edinburgh, Scotland: Mainstream, 1996.
- O'Connor, Frank. *The Big Fellow; a Life of Michael Collins*. New York: T. Nelson & Sons, 1937. Reprint, New York: Picador USA, 1998.
- Taylor, Rex. *Michael Collins*. London: Hutchinson, 1958.

Born: c. 551 B.C.E.

Tuo, China

Died: c. 479 B.C.E.

Qufu, China

Chinese teacher and philosopher

The Chinese teacher and philosopher Confucius was the founder of the school of philosophy known as the Ju or Confucianism, which is still very influential in China.

Information on his life

Confucius is the Latinized name of K'ung Fu-tzu (Great Master K'ung). His original name was K'ung Ch'iu; he is also known as K'ung Chung-ni. The most detailed traditional account of Confucius's life is contained in the *Records of the Historian* (Shih chi) by Ssu-ma Ch'ien, who lived from 145 B.C.E. to 86 B.C.E. Many modern scholars have dismissed this biography as only legend. Nevertheless, from this manuscript one can reconstruct a satisfactory outline of the philosopher's life and influence.

According to the *Records of the Historian*, Confucius was a descendant of a branch of the royal house of Shang, the dynasty (a family of rulers) that ruled China prior to the Chou, and a dynasty which ruled China from around 1122 B.C.E. to 221 B.C.E. His family, the K'ung, moved to the small state of Lu, located in the modern province of Shantung in northeastern China.

It was believed that Confucius's father divorced his first wife at an advanced age, because she had borne him only daughters



Confucius.

and one disfigured son. He then married a fifteen-year-old girl from the Yen clan, who gave birth to Confucius. Ssu-ma Ch'ien refers to the relationship as a "wild union," which very possibly indicates that Confucius was an illegitimate child, or a child born out of wedlock.

In the *Analects*, Confucius's book of teachings, he writes that during his youth he was poor and was forced to acquire many different skills. It is clear that even though the fortunes of his family had declined, he was no commoner. Confucius unquestionably belonged to the aristocratic (ruling) class known as the shih. In the time of Confucius most shih served as court officials, scholars, and teachers. Confucius's first occupation

appears to have been as keeper of the Lu granary. Later he worked as supervisor of the fields. Both were low positions but consistent with his shih status.

Career as a teacher

It is not known exactly when Confucius began his teaching career, but it does not appear to have been much before the age of thirty. In 518 B.C.E. he is said to have met the famous teacher Lao Tzu (sixth century B.C.E.), who reportedly bluntly criticized Confucius for his stuffiness and arrogance.

Confucius eventually returned to Lu around 515 B.C.E. For several years after his return he does not appear to have accepted a governmental position. Instead it appears he spent most of his time studying and teaching, gathering a large number of students around him. Although one can only guess about the school's exact course work, it undoubtedly included instruction in ritual, music, history, and poetry.

Around 498 B.C.E., Confucius decided to leave his home in Lu and embark on a long journey throughout eastern China. He was accompanied by several of his disciples (followers). They wandered throughout the eastern states of Wei, Sung, and Ch'en and at various times had their lives threatened. Confucius was almost assassinated (killed) in Sung. On another occasion he was mistaken for the adventurer Yang Hu and was arrested and held until his true identity became known.

Confucius was received with great respect by the rulers of the states he visited, and he even seems to have received occasional payments. He spent much of his time

developing his ideas on the art of government, as well as continuing his teaching. He acquired a large following, and the solidification of the Confucian school probably occurred during these years. Not all of his disciples followed him on his travels. Several of them actually returned to Lu and assumed positions with the Chi clan. It may have been through their influence that in 484 B.C.E. Confucius was invited back to Lu.

Final years

Confucius was warmly received in Lu, but there is no indication that he was given a responsible position. Little is known about his last years, although this would have been a logical time for him to work on the many texts and documents he supposedly gathered on his journey. Much of his time was devoted to teaching, and he seems to have remained more or less distant from political affairs.

This was an unhappy period for Confucius. His only son died about this time; his favorite disciple, Yen Hui, died the very year of his return to Lu; and in 480 B.C.E. another disciple, Tzu-lu, was killed in battle. Confucius felt all of these losses deeply, and his sadness and frustration must have been intensified by the realization that his political ideas had found no support among the rulers of his own state. Confucius died in 479 B.C.E. His disciples conducted his funeral and observed a mourning period for him.

Confucius's teachings

Although we cannot be certain that Confucius wrote any of the works he is credited with, it is still possible to know something about the general nature of his philosophy. Shortly after his death his disciples

compiled a work known as the *Lun yü*, commonly translated as the *Analects* but more accurately rendered as the *Edited Conversations*. This work consists of conversations between Confucius, his students, and an occasional ruler.

The primary emphasis of the *Lun yü* is on political philosophy. Confucius taught that the primary task of the ruler was to achieve the welfare (well-being) and happiness of the people of his state. To accomplish this aim, the ruler first had to set a moral (good character) example by his own conduct. This example would in turn influence the people's behavior.

Confucius is the first Chinese thinker to introduce concepts that became fundamental not only to Confucian philosophy but to Chinese philosophy in general. The most important of these are jen (benevolence), yi (propriety, or being proper), and li (ritual, or ceremony). Confucius believed that the chün-tzu, or "gentleman," must set the moral example for others in society to follow. In the *Lun yü* jen, what has been translated as humaneness or benevolence (being kind) is a quality a chün-tzu should develop and attempt to encourage in others. Li is considered the rules and ritual that are observed in religious and nonreligious ceremonies and, as applied to the chün-tzu, composed rules of behavior. Yi represents what is right and proper in a given situation. The chün-tzu, by observing the ritual and because of his good nature, always knows what is right.

Confucius was basically a humanist and one of the greatest teachers in Chinese history. His influence on his immediate disciples was deep. His students continued to explain his theories until, in the first Han dynasty

(206 B.C.E.–8 C.E.), the theories became the basis of the state ideology, the body of ideas reflecting the social needs of a culture.

For More Information

Johnson, Spencer. *The Value of Honesty: The Story of Confucius*. La Jolla, CA: Value Communications, 1979.

Kaizuka, Shigeki. *Confucius*. New York: Macmillan, 1956. Reprint, Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 2002.

Kelen, Betty. *Confucius: In Life and Legend*. New York: T. Nelson, 1971.

Reid, T. R. *Confucius Lives Next Door*. New York: Random House, 1999.

Watson, Burton. *The Tso Chuan*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1992.

SEAN CONNERY

Born: August 25, 1930

Edinburgh, Scotland

Scottish actor

From humble beginnings as a school dropout, Sean Connery became a major movie star at the age of thirty-two, when he was cast as the sophisticated secret agent James Bond. Connery went on to distinguish himself in a number of major motion pictures, including his Oscar-winning performance in *The Untouchables*. With more than sixty movies to his credit, Connery has become one of the world's most prominent movie stars.

A Depression-era childhood

Thomas Sean Connery, born on August 25, 1930, began his life in the humblest of surroundings. He was the eldest of two sons born in Edinburgh, Scotland, to Joseph and Euphemia Connery. His family was so poor that young Thomas had to sleep in the bottom drawer of his parents' dresser. He started working to help support the family at age nine, delivering milk and assisting a butcher. He left school at age thirteen. Connery joined the British Royal Navy in 1946, but received a medical discharge three years later.

In 1953 Connery won third place in the Mr. Universe competition (a contest measuring strength). He also heard about auditions for the musical *South Pacific*. He decided he wanted to try out, took a course in dancing and singing, and was cast for a role in the chorus.

Becoming an actor

At the time Connery was undecided between becoming an actor and becoming a professional soccer player. He eventually decided to take the advice of actor Robert Henderson, who encouraged him to pursue acting. After *South Pacific*, Connery got his first television role in *Requiem for a Heavyweight*. He received critical acclaim for this role, and went on to make a series of B (inexpensively made) movies from 1955 to 1962. During this time Connery met Terence Young, who was to be the director of the James Bond films.

"Bond, James Bond"

Connery was still doing B movies when he was asked to interview for *Dr. No*, the first

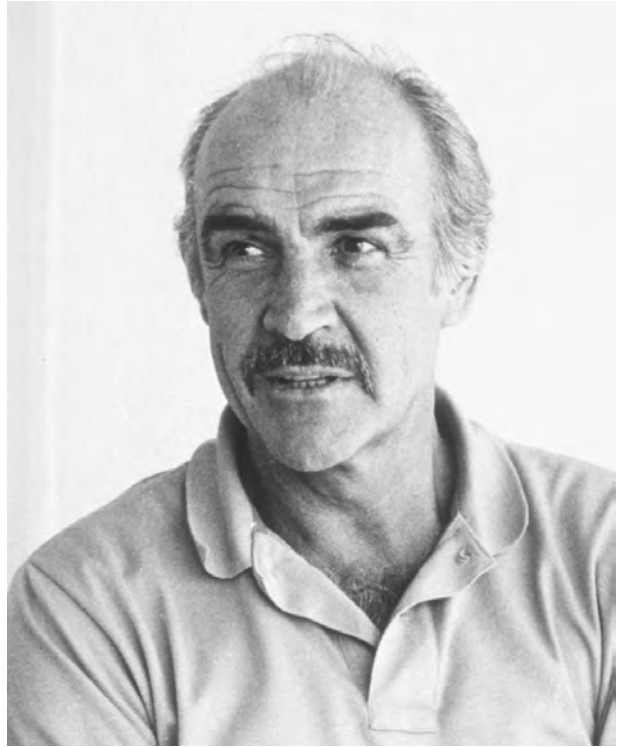
James Bond film. Producer Harry Saltzman felt that he had the masculinity the part required because he punctuated his words with physical movement. Connery was signed without a screen test (a short film scene to audition actors for a movie role). *Dr. No* was an instant success, propelling the little-known Connery into fame virtually overnight. The serious-minded and very private Connery did not like this sudden attention.

In 1962 Connery married actress Diane Cilento. The couple divorced in 1974 and their only son, Jason, is now a movie actor. Connery married Micheline Roquebrune in 1975.

Between 1962 and 1967 Connery made five James Bond movies (*Dr. No*, *From Russia with Love*, *Goldfinger*, *Thunderball*, and *You Only Live Twice*). He became tired of the constant publicity and invasion of privacy that came with being a movie star. He also argued with Albert Broccoli, the producer of the Bond movies. Connery wanted to slow the pace of the series and complete a feature every eighteen months instead of each year. But the nation was Bond-crazy and the films were a gold mine. Connery agreed to star in *Diamonds Are Forever* in 1971, demanding a salary of \$1.25 million, plus a percentage. At that time it was an unprecedented sum of money for such a role. After completing the film, Connery said “never again” to Bond roles and donated all of his salary to the Scottish International Education Trust, an organization he had founded to assist young Scots in obtaining an education.

Life after Bond

After the Bond films Connery focused on movie roles he found interesting. He would also do films if he felt his help was needed.



Sean Connery.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

With a few exceptions, however, most of the films Connery did in the decade following *Diamonds Are Forever* were not noteworthy.

In the early 1980s Connery was asked to reprise the James Bond role he had made famous, starring in *Never Say Never Again*. Connery again drew rave reviews as an aging Bond trying to get back in shape for a daring mission.

Roles increased with age

After *Never Say Never Again* Connery began acting in more films. He went on to win an Academy Award in 1988 for his sup-

porting role of Malone in *The Untouchables*. Connery continues to prove his versatility and maturity as an actor. More recent films include *The Name of the Rose* (1986), *Indiana Jones and the Last Crusade* (1989), *The Hunt for Red October* (1990), *Rising Sun* (1993), *Just Cause* (1995), *First Knight* (1995), *The Rock* (1996), and *Finding Forrester* (2000).

In 1998 Connery received the Fellowship Award, the British Academy of Film and Television Arts highest honor. In 1999 U.S. president Bill Clinton honored Connery at the Kennedy Center Honors program. The program recognizes the nation's outstanding performers from the world of the arts. On July 5, 2000, Queen Elizabeth II (1926–) knighted Connery. On January 11–12, 2001, Connery won the Lifetime Achievement Award from the Palm Springs International Film Festival.

For More Information

Callan, Michael Feeney. *Sean Connery*. New York: Stein and Day, 1983.

Katz, Ephraim. *The Film Encyclopedia*. 4th ed. New York: HarperResource, 2001.

McCabe, Bob. *Sean Connery: A Biography*. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 2000.

Yule, Andrew. *Sean Connery: From 007 to Hollywood Icon*. New York: D. I. Fine, 1992.

JOSEPH CONRAD

Born: December 3, 1857
Berdyczew, Poland

Died: August 3, 1924

Bishopsbourne, England

Polish-born English writer and novelist

Polish-born English novelist Joseph Conrad is one of the great modern writers of England. His novels reflect his concerns with the complex individual, and how sympathy and imagination can blur clear judgment—which is essential to life. The character development in Conrad's books is engaging and powerful.

Childhood in Poland and Russia

Józef Teodor Konrad Nalecz Korzeniowski (Joseph Conrad) was born to Joseph Theodore Appollonius Korzeniowski and Evelina Korzeniowski on December 3, 1857, in Berdyczew, Poland. His father was a writer and a translator of the works of William Shakespeare (1564–1616). He was also a member of a movement seeking Polish independence from Russia. In 1862 the family was forced to move to Russia because of his father's political activities. Conrad's mother died three years later in 1865. It was not until 1867 that Conrad and his father were allowed to return to Poland.

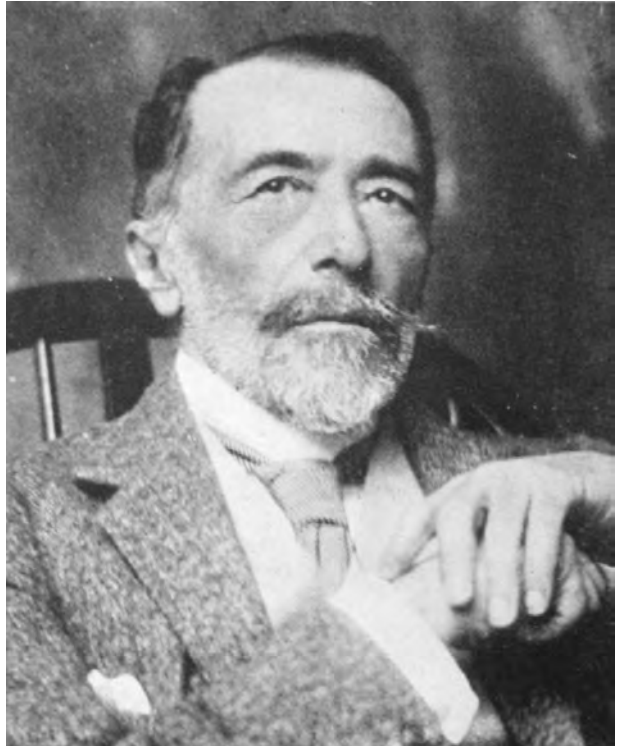
In 1868 Conrad attended high school in the Austrian province of Galicia for one year. The following year he and his father moved to Cracow, Poland, where his father died in 1869. From the time spent with his father, Conrad became a lover of literature, especially tales of the sea. After his father's death, his uncle, Thaddus Bobrowski, took Conrad in and raised him.

Merchant marine service and marriage

As a teenager the future novelist began dreaming of going to sea. In 1873, while on vacation in western Europe, Conrad saw the sea for the first time. In the autumn of 1874 Conrad went to Marseilles, France, where he entered the French marine service. For the next twenty years Conrad led a successful career as a ship's officer. In 1877 he probably took part in the illegal shipment of arms from France to Spain in support of the pretender to the Spanish throne, Don Carlos (1788–1855). At about this time Conrad seems to have fallen in love with a girl who was also a supporter of Carlos. The affair ended in a duel with an American named J. M. K. Blunt. This was the first time Conrad thought of taking his own life.

In June 1878 Conrad went to England for the first time. He worked as a seaman on English ships, and in 1880 he began his career as an officer in the British merchant service, rising from third mate to master. His voyages took him to distant and exotic places such as Australia, India, Singapore, Java, and Borneo, which would provide the background for much of his fiction. In 1886 he became a British citizen. He received his first command in 1888. In 1890 he traveled to the Belgian Congo, Zaire, and Africa, which inspired his great short novel *The Heart of Darkness*.

In the early 1890s Conrad had begun to think about writing fiction based on his experiences in the East. In 1893 he discussed his work in progress, the novel *Almayer's Folly*, with a passenger, the novelist John Galsworthy (1867–1933). A year later he retired from the merchant marines and completed *Almayer's Folly*, which was published in 1895.



Joseph Conrad.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

It received favorable reviews and Conrad began a new career as a writer.

In 1896 he married Jessie George, an Englishwoman. Two years later, just after the birth of Borys, the first of their two sons, they settled in Kent in the south of England, where Conrad lived for the rest of his life. John Galsworthy was the first of a number of English and American writers who befriended Conrad. Others were Henry James (1843–1916), Arnold Bennett (1867–1931), Rudyard Kipling (1865–1936), Stephen Crane (1871–1900), and Ford Madox Hueffer Ford (1873–1939), with whom Conrad collaborated on two novels.

Early novels, political novels

From 1896 through 1904 Conrad wrote novels about places he visited as a merchant marine and he explored themes such as the uncertainties of human sympathy. His early novels included *An Outcast of the Islands* (1896), *The Nigger of the "Narcissus"* (1897), *The Heart of Darkness* (1899), and *Lord Jim* (1900).

The next three novels reflected Conrad's political side. The theme of *Nostramo* (1904) was the relationship between man's deepest needs (his psychology) and his public actions and decisions. The description of London, England, in *The Secret Agent* (1907) was similar to Charles Dickens's works. It portrayed a city of mean streets and shabby lives. In *Under Western Eyes* (1911) Conrad examined the Russian temperament.

Conrad's next novel, *Chance* (1914), was a study of solitude and sympathy. Because of its financial success and the efforts of his American publisher, he was able to live without worrying about money for the rest of his life. *Victory* (1915), his last important novel, further examined the theme of solitude and sympathy.

Last novels and death

Although Conrad's last novels, *The Shadow Line* (1917) and *The Rover* (1923), were written as a farewell, he received many honors. In 1923 he visited the United States to great fanfare. The year after, he declined an offer of knighthood in England.

On August 3, 1924, Conrad died of a heart attack and was buried at Canterbury, England. His gravestone bears these lines from Edmund Spenser (1552–1599): "Sleep after toyle, port after stormie seas,/ Ease after warre, death after life, does greatly please."

For More Information

Baines, Jocelyn. *Joseph Conrad: A Critical Biography*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1960. Reprint, Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1975, 1960.

Karl, Frederick R., and Laurence Davies, eds. *The Collected Letters of Joseph Conrad*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1996.

Meyers, Jeffrey. *Joseph Conrad: A Biography*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1991.

NICOLAUS COPERNICUS

Born: February 19, 1473

Torun, Poland

Died: May 24, 1543

Frauenberg, East Prussia (now Frombork, Poland)

Polish astronomer

The Polish astronomer Nicolaus Copernicus was the founder of the heliocentric ordering of the planets, which at the time was a revolutionary idea that stated the Earth and other planets revolve around the Sun.

Early life

Nicolaus Copernicus was born on February 19, 1473, in Torun, Poland, about 100 miles south of Danzig. He belonged to a family of merchants. His uncle, the bishop and ruler of Ermland, was the person to whom Copernicus owed his education, career, and security.

Copernicus studied at the University of Cracow from 1491 to 1494. While he did not

attend any classes in astronomy, it was during his student years there that Copernicus began to collect books on mathematics and astronomy (the study of the universe). Copernicus returned to Torun in 1494. In 1496, through the efforts of his uncle, he became a canon (priest) at Frauenburg, remaining in that office for the remainder of his life. Copernicus then set out for Bologna, Italy, to study canon law. In Bologna Copernicus came under the influence of Domenico Maria de Novara, an astronomer. There Copernicus also recorded some planetary positions, and he did the same in Rome, where he spent the year of 1500.

Upon returning to Ermland in 1506, Copernicus stayed in his uncle's castle at Heilsberg as his personal physician (doctor) and secretary. During that time he translated from Greek into Latin the eighty-five poems of Theophylactus Simacotta, the seventh-century poet. The work, printed in Cracow in 1509, demonstrated Copernicus's interest in the arts.

The heliocentric system

At this time Copernicus was thinking about problems of astronomy, and the heliocentric system in particular. The system is outlined in a short manuscript known as the *Commentariolus*, or small commentary, which he completed about 1512. In it there was a list of seven axioms (truths), all of which stated a feature specific to the heliocentric system. The third stated in particular: "All the spheres revolve about the sun as their midpoint, and therefore the sun is the center of the universe."

The *Commentariolus* produced no reaction, either in print or in letters, but Copernicus's fame began to spread. Two years later he turned down an invitation to be present as an astronomer at the Lateran Council, which had the reform (improvement) of the calendar as one of its aims. His secretiveness only seemed to further his reputation. In 1522 the secretary to the King of Poland asked Copernicus to pass an opinion on *De motu octavae sphaerae* (*On the Motion of the Eighth Sphere*), just published by Johann Werner, a mathematician. This time he granted the request in the form of a letter in which he took a rather low opinion of Werner's work. More important was the closing of the letter, in which Copernicus stated



Nicolaus Copernicus.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

nicus's fame began to spread. Two years later he turned down an invitation to be present as an astronomer at the Lateran Council, which had the reform (improvement) of the calendar as one of its aims. His secretiveness only seemed to further his reputation. In 1522 the secretary to the King of Poland asked Copernicus to pass an opinion on *De motu octavae sphaerae* (*On the Motion of the Eighth Sphere*), just published by Johann Werner, a mathematician. This time he granted the request in the form of a letter in which he took a rather low opinion of Werner's work. More important was the closing of the letter, in which Copernicus stated

that he intended to present his own opinion about the motion of the stars.

Copernicus could pursue his study only in his spare time. As a canon he was involved in various affairs, including legal and medical, but especially administrative and financial matters. For all his failure to publish anything in astronomy, his manuscript studies presented in *Commentariolus* continued to circulate, and more and more was rumored about his theory.

Criticisms

Not all the comments were flattering, though. German religious reformer Martin Luther (1483–1546) said Copernicus was “the fool who will turn the whole science of astronomy upside down.” In 1531 a local schoolmaster produced an unflattering play about him in Elbing, Prussia. In Rome things went better, for the time being at least. In 1533 John Widmanstad, a secretary to the pope, lectured on Copernicus’s theory before Pope Clement VII (1536–1605) and several cardinals (religious leaders ranking just below the pope). Widmanstad’s hand was behind the letter that Cardinal Schönberg sent from Rome to Copernicus in 1536 urging him to publish his thoughts, or to share them with him at least.

In 1539 Georg Joachim (Rheticus), a young scholar from Wittenberg, arrived in Frauenburg and printed an account, known as the *Narratio prima*, of Copernicus’s book, which was nearing completion. Rheticus was also instrumental in securing the printing of Copernicus’s book in Nuremberg, Germany, although the final supervision remained in the care of Andrew Osiander, a Lutheran clergyman (religious leader). He might have been

the one who gave the work its title, *De revolutionibus orbium coelestium*, which is not found in the manuscript. But Osiander certainly had written the anonymous preface (the introduction to the book written by an unknown author), in which Copernicus’s ideas were claimed to be meant by their author as mere hypotheses (theories) that had nothing to do with the physical reality.

Copernicus received the printed copy of his work in six books, only a few hours before his death on May 24, 1543. Although there were many gaps in Copernicus’s theories, he could have done a better job as an observer. He added only twenty-seven observations to the data he took over from Ptolemy (c. 100–c. 165 C.E.), a second century astronomer, and from more recent astronomical tables. The invention of the telescope was still more than half a century away. To explain the absence of stellar parallax (a change in the direction) due to the orbital motion of the earth, Copernicus could only say that the stars were immensely far away. Here, the observational evidence would not come for another three hundred years. Also, while Ptolemy actually used only forty epicycles (describes the orbit of planets), their total number in Copernicus’s system was eighty-four, hardly a convincing proof of its greater simplicity.

Still, the undeniable strength of Copernicus’s work lay in its appeal to simplicity. The rotation of the earth made the daily revolution of thousands of stars unnecessary. The orbital motion of the earth fit perfectly into the sequence set by the periods of other planets with its period of 365 days. Most importantly, the heliocentric ordering of planets eliminated the need to think of the retrograde motion (direction opposite of the earth’s motion) of the planets as a physical reality. In

the tenth chapter of the first book Copernicus made the straightforward statement: "In the center rests the sun. For who would place this lamp of a very beautiful temple in another or better place than this wherefrom it can illuminate everything at the same time."

The thousand copies of the first edition of the book did not sell out, and the work was reprinted only three times prior to the twentieth century. No "great book" of Western intellectual history circulated less widely and was read by fewer people than Copernicus's *Revolutions*. Still, it not only instructed man about the revolution of the planets but also brought about a revolution in human thought by serving as the building block of modern astronomy.

For More Information

Andronik, Catherine M. *Copernicus: Founder of Modern Astronomy*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2002.

Hallyn, Fernand. *The Poetic Structure of the World: Copernicus and Kepler*. New York: Zone Books, 1990.

Koyré, A. *The Astronomical Revolution: Copernicus, Kepler, Borelli*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1973.

AARON COPLAND

Born: November 14, 1900

Brooklyn, New York

Died: December 2, 1990

New York, New York

American composer

Aaron Copland was one of the most important figures in American music during the second quarter of the twentieth century, both as a composer (a writer of music) and as a spokesman who was concerned about making Americans aware of the importance of music. He won the Pulitzer Prize for music in 1945.

Early life and education

Aaron Copland was born on November 14, 1900, in Brooklyn, New York, the youngest of five children born to Harris Morris Copland and Sarah Mittenthal Copland. The family lived above a department store, which they owned. One of Copland's sisters showed him how to play piano when he was eleven years old, and soon afterward he began taking lessons from a teacher in the neighborhood. At age fifteen he decided he wanted to be a composer. While attending Boys' High School he began to study music theory beginning in 1917.

Copland continued his music lessons after graduating from high school, and in 1921 he went to France to study at the American Conservatory in Fontainebleau, where his main teacher was the French composer Nadia Boulanger (1887–1979). During his early studies, Copland had been attracted to the music of Scriabin (1872–1915), Debussy (1862–1918), and Ravel (1875–1937). The years in Paris provided him an opportunity to hear and absorb all the most recent trends in European music, including the works of Stravinsky (1882–1971), Bartók (1881–1945), and Schoenberg (1847–1951).



Aaron Copland.

Composing career

After Copland completed his studies in 1924, he returned to America and composed the *Symphony for Organ and Orchestra*, his first major work, which Boulanger played in New York City in 1925. *Music for the Theater* (1925) and a Piano Concerto (1926) explored the possibilities of combining jazz and symphony music. Serge Koussevitzky (1874–1951), conductor of the Boston Symphony Orchestra, became interested in what he heard from the young composer, and he helped gain a wider audience for Copland's—and much of America's—music.

In the late 1920s Copland turned to an increasingly experimental style, featuring

irregular rhythms and often jarring sounds. His works were entirely personal; there are no outside influences that can be identified in the *Piano Variations* (1930), *Short Symphony* (1933), and *Statements*. The basic features of these works remained in one way or another central to his musical style in the following years.

The 1920s and 1930s were a period of deep concern about the limited audience for new (and especially American) music, and Copland was active in many organizations devoted to performance and sponsorship. These included the League of Composers, the Copland-Sessions concerts, and the American Composers' Alliance. His organizational abilities earned him the title of "American music's natural president" from his fellow composer Virgil Thomson (1896–1989).

Promoter of "American" music

Beginning in the mid-1930s through 1950, Copland made a serious effort to widen the audience for American music and took steps to change his style when writing pieces requested for different occasions. He composed music for theater, ballet, and films, as well as for concert situations. In his ballets—*Billy the Kid* (1938), *Rodeo* (1942), and *Appalachian Spring* (1944; Pulitzer Prize, 1945)—he made use of folk melodies and relaxed his previous style to arrive at a sound more broadly recognized as "American." Other well-known works of this period are *El Salón México* (1935) and *A Lincoln Portrait* (1942), while the Piano Sonata (1943) and the Third Symphony (1946) continue the development of his concert music. Among his famous film scores are those for *Of Mice and Men* (1939), *Our Town*

(1940), *The Red Pony* (1948), and *The Heiress* (1949).

Copland's concern for establishing a tradition of music in American life increased when he became a teacher at The New School for Social Research at Harvard University, and as head of the composition department at the Berkshire Music Center in Tanglewood, Massachusetts, a school founded by Koussevitzky. His Norton Lectures at Harvard (1951–52) were published as *Music and Imagination* (1952). Earlier books are *What to Listen for in Music* (1939) and *Our New Music* (1941).

Beginning with the *Quartet for Piano and Strings* (1950), Copland made use of the methods developed by Austrian American composer Arnold Schoenberg, who developed a tonal system not based on any key. This confused many listeners. Copland's most important works of these years include the *Piano Fantasy* (1957), *Nonet for Strings* (1960), *Connotations* (1962), and *Inscape* (1967). *The Tender Land* (1954) represents an extension of the style of ballet to the opera stage.

Later years

Copland spent the final years of his life living primarily in the New York City area. He engaged in many cultural missions, especially to South America. Although he had been out of the major spotlight for almost twenty years, he remained semiactive in the music world up until his death, conducting his last symphony in 1983.

Aaron Copland died in New York City on December 2, 1990. He was remembered as a man who encouraged young composers to find their own voice, no matter the style, just as he had done for sixty years.

For More Information

Copland, Aaron, and Vivian Perlis. *Copland: 1900 through 1942*. New York: St. Martin's/Marek, 1984.

Copland, Aaron, and Vivian Perlis. *Copland: Since 1943*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1989.

Pollack, Howard. *Aaron Copland: The Life and Work of an Uncommon Man*. New York: Henry Holt & Company, 1999.

FRANCIS FORD COPPOLA

Born: April 7, 1939

Detroit, Michigan

American director and writer

Schooled in low-budget filmmaking, Francis Ford Coppola has gone on to direct some of the most financially successful and critically praised movies in U.S. cinematic history, including *The Godfather* and *Apocalypse Now*.

Raised in show-business family

Francis Ford Coppola was born in Detroit, Michigan, on April 7, 1939. His father, Carmine, was a musician who played with Arturo Toscanini's NBC Symphony Orchestra. His mother, Italia, was an actress who at one time had appeared in films. Coppola's younger sister, Talia, would later follow her mother's footsteps into the world of film acting, changing her name to Talia Shire and starring in the film *Rocky*, with Sylvester Stal-



Francis Ford Coppola.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

lone (1946–). A few years after his birth, Coppola and his family moved to the suburbs of New York City, where he would spend most of his childhood.

All of the Coppola children were driven to succeed in show business and the arts. Coppola's father, who had achieved success as a musician for hire but longed to compose scores (write music) of his own, led by example. Francis seemed the least likely to fulfill his father's dreams, however. He was an awkward child who did poorly at school. At age nine he was stricken with polio, a crippling disease that usually occurs in children. The illness forced him into bed for a year, a period during which

he played with puppets, watched television, and became lost in an inner fantasy world. After his recovery he began to make movies with an eight-millimeter camera and a tape recorder. Francis was fascinated by movies as a child. Some of his favorites were *Dracula*, *The Thief of Baghdad*, and Walt Disney cartoons.

Student of film

While a student at Great Neck High School on Long Island, Coppola began to study filmmaking more formally. He soon became enchanted with the work of director Sergei Eisenstein (1898–1948). Coppola also trained in music and theater to round out his education. In 1956 he enrolled at Hofstra College in Hempstead, New York, on a drama scholarship. Here he acted in and directed student productions, and he founded his own cinema (movie) workshop. So determined was Coppola to direct his own pictures that he once sold his car to pay for a 16-millimeter camera.

After graduating from Hofstra, Coppola moved to the West Coast to attend film school at the University of California in Los Angeles, California. But he was impatient to escape the classroom and start making his own films. He signed on to direct an adult movie, which caught the attention of low-budget director Roger Corman. Corman hired Coppola to work on his movies as a jack-of-all-trades (a person who can do many different jobs). Coppola's strong work ethic prompted Corman to allow him to direct his own picture. The result was *Dementia 13* (1963), a gory horror movie Coppola had written in three days and shot for forty thousand dollars. That year Coppola married Eleanor Neil, his set decorator on the picture.

Establishes his reputation

Warner Brothers selected the promising young filmmaker to direct their big-budget musical *Finian's Rainbow*. But the subject matter took Coppola away from his strengths and the film was panned (not favorably reviewed) by critics. *The Rain People* (1969) represented Coppola's attempt to return to "personal," not to mention low-budget, moviemaking. A travelogue about a housewife on the run, the movie was made up as the crew went along, evidence of Coppola's flair for the experimental.

Coppola might have remained in an avant-garde (inventive and experimental) rut were it not for his next project. As cowriter of the mega-hit *Patton*, Coppola earned an Academy Award and quickly restored his reputation. Paramount Pictures next asked him to direct its screen adaptation of Mario Puzo's best-selling novel, *The Godfather*. It would prove to be Coppola's greatest triumph.

Glory gained from The Godfather

Filming *The Godfather* posed many challenges. Coppola fought hard to control the casting decisions. He also resisted studio attempts to cut his budget and to update the setting. Italian American groups protested the depiction of organized crime in the original screenplay. Even Coppola's own crew at times lost faith in his ability to control the enormous project. Nevertheless, he steered the movie to completion.

The Godfather tells the sweeping story of the Corleone crime family, focusing on the rise of young Michael Corleone to control of the family's empire. Propelling the drama forward are powerful performances by Marlon

Brando (1924–) and newcomer Al Pacino (1940–). After its release in 1972, critics were floored by the film's depiction of America's criminal underworld. The film became a sensational hit with moviegoers as well, and *The Godfather* swept the Academy Awards that year. Coppola was a winner in the Best Director and Best Screenplay categories.

Now a wealthy man thanks to the success of *The Godfather*, Coppola could at last pick and choose his own projects. In 1974 he made *The Conversation*, an edgy drama about secret surveillance (observation). Coppola returned to the world of organized crime with 1974's *The Godfather Part II*, which won him a second Academy Award statuette as Best Director of 1974.

Apocalypse and aftermath

Coppola's next project was *Apocalypse Now*, a film about the Vietnam War (1955–75; a war fought between United States-aided South Vietnam against the Communist forces of North Vietnam). But the expensive production was slowed by bad weather, budget overruns, and the bizarre behavior of its star, Marlon Brando. When it finally reached the screen in 1979, many critics hailed the film as a masterpiece. It was nominated for several Academy Awards and did well at the box office.

Coppola then moved into the world of independent films, which he released through his own Zoetrope Studio. These pictures, including *Rumble Fish* (1983) and *The Cotton Club* (1984), received mixed reviews and had many wondering if Coppola was washed up. He did manage to create a hit with the offbeat *Peggy Sue Got Married* (1985), a film about a woman who travels

back in time to her high school days. The project seemed like a work-for-hire, however. Closer to Coppola's heart was *Tucker: The Man and His Dream*, a 1988 picture about an automaker who could have been a stand-in for the director himself.

Later works

In 1990 Coppola completed *The Godfather Part III*. While not as praised as the previous two installments, it nevertheless was a box office success and won back the confidence of the major studios. His *Bram Stoker's Dracula* (1992) received mixed critical response, but helped solidify his comeback.

Out of debt and at ease working for the major studios, Coppola seems content with his cinematic legacy. He expanded his interests into publishing in 1997 with *Zoetrope Short Stories*, a magazine dedicated to literary, not Hollywood, material.

In 1998 Coppola helped launch the first Classically Independent Film Festival in San Francisco, California. Outside the film industry Coppola is the owner of a California winery that produces wine under the Niebaum-Coppola label. In 2001 Coppola rereleased *Apocalypse Now*, with an additional forty-nine minutes of footage not included in the original movie. Just like the original, the rerelease was a hit with both critics and the public alike.

For More Information

Cowie, Peter. *Coppola: A Biography*. New York: Scribner, 1990.

Lewis, Jon. *Whom God Wishes to Destroy: Francis Coppola and the New Hollywood*.

Durham, NC: Duke University Press, 1995.

Schumacher, Michael. *Francis Ford Coppola: A Filmmaker's Life*. New York: Crown, 1999.

BILL COSBY

Born: July 12, 1937

Germantown, Pennsylvania

African American comedian and actor

An entertainer for many decades, Bill Cosby has starred in live performances and films, recorded albums, written books, and created television shows. His long-running, hugely popular *The Cosby Show* was in the top of the television ratings from its debut in 1984 through 1992.

Early years

William Henry Cosby Jr. was born in Germantown, Pennsylvania, on July 12, 1937, to Anna and William Cosby. One of Cosby's four brothers died at age six. Cosby's father joined the navy and was away from home for months at a time. Cosby, as the oldest son, helped his mother pay the bills by doing odd jobs such as delivering groceries and shining shoes.

Bill was regarded as a comedian even as a child. He particularly enjoyed the comedy of Sid Caesar (1922–). In high school he was captain of the track and football teams, and played basketball and baseball. He tried to

keep up with his schoolwork, but he dropped out of high school to join the navy in the early 1950s. Cosby's mother had always stressed the importance of education to her children. She would often read books to them, including Mark Twain (1835–1910) novels and the Bible. Eventually Bill earned his high school diploma through correspondence school and was accepted at Temple University in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, on an athletic scholarship.

Stand-up comedy

While at Temple Cosby took a job as a bartender in a neighborhood café. The bar had hired a comedian who often did not show up for his act. Cosby filled in, entertaining the crowd with jokes and humorous stories. His reputation as a funny bartender spread throughout the city. Cosby soon got offers to do stand-up comedy in other clubs.

Cosby's humor always focuses on stories about his family, everyday occurrences, boyhood experiences, and commonly held beliefs. He does not do racial humor. He told *Newsweek*, "I'm trying to reach all the people." Cosby was soon making people laugh in large, well-known nightspots all over the country. He reached a point where his career as a comedian showed more promise than his prospects as a student, so he left Temple in 1962.

Early albums

Cosby's first album was *Bill Cosby Is a Very Funny Fellow ... Right!* (1963). He won a Grammy Award for it. His second album, *I Started Out As a Child*, released in 1964, received another Grammy honor as Best Comedy Album of the Year. Each of Cosby's albums earned more than \$1 million in sales. His popularity continued and he won con-



Bill Cosby.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

secutive Best Comedy Album awards every year from 1964 to 1969.

Television

American comedian Allan Sherman (1924–1973) was one of Cosby's biggest fans, as well as his producer. When Sherman filled in for Johnny Carson (1925–) as guest host of *The Tonight Show* in 1963, he asked Cosby to be his guest. *The Tonight Show* producers were skeptical about having an African American comic on the show, but Sherman insisted and Cosby was a big hit. Sheldon Leonard, producer of mid-1960s hits including *The Danny Thomas Show*, *The Dick Van Dyke Show*, and

The Andy Griffith Show, saw *The Tonight Show* the night Cosby was on. He signed Cosby to play opposite Robert Culp on a new dramatic series. *I Spy* was an immediate success. It was also the first prime-time television program to star an African American. Cosby won the Emmy Award for Best Actor in a Dramatic Series in 1967, 1968, and 1969.

Cosby's second prime-time series, *The Bill Cosby Show*, began in 1969, just one year after *I Spy* went off the air. It was number one in its first season. However, ratings steadily dropped over the next two years, and the show was canceled in the spring of 1971.

Cartoons

Cosby produced *Fat Albert and the Cosby Kids* as a special in 1971. The show debuted in 1972 as a regular series on Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS). The Saturday afternoon cartoon featured a group of kids living and learning together in an urban (city) area much like the poor section of Philadelphia where Cosby grew up. So that his audience would learn good behavior and solid values, Cosby employed a panel of educators to act as advisers. He also appeared in each episode to discuss its message. The program won a variety of awards, and audience estimates numbered about six million.

Left prime-time television

Cosby made two more attempts at prime time with *The New Bill Cosby Show* and *Cos* in 1972 and 1976, respectively. Both were unsuccessful variety shows that included dancing, skits, and monologue (a comedic or dramatic act read by one person) sessions.

During the mid-1970s Cosby did live performances and recorded comedy albums. Most

material on these albums came from Cosby's childhood experiences. Examples include plotting an escape from a bed he had been told was surrounded by thousands of poisonous snakes, having his tonsils out at age five, and having everything he ever made in shop class turn into an ashtray. Cosby also made several films, but they were generally overlooked.

Commitment to education

Cosby earned his undergraduate degree from Temple University in 1971. In 1977 he completed his Ph.D. (an advanced degree beyond a master's) in education at the University of Massachusetts, Amherst. Cosby's commitment to education included regular appearances on *The Electric Company*, produced by the Children's Television Workshop, during the 1970s. He also appeared as the host of the Picturepages segment on *Captain Kangaroo* in the early 1980s.

More television

By 1984 Cosby had become disappointed with what he saw on television and came up with his own idea for a sitcom (a comedy series). The networks were doubtful, as his last two attempts at prime time were failures. Cosby gave the National Broadcasting Company (NBC) a segment featuring himself as Dr. Heathcliff Huxtable discussing sex with his two teenage daughters. His idea was to have the characters be a happy, middle-class family dealing with everyday problems and incidents. Cosby would play a doctor, who was married to a lawyer. *The Cosby Show* aired in September 1984 and was an immediate success. It finished the season as the third most watched prime-time television show and was number one for the next four seasons. The show was

sold directly to local television stations in October 1988. *Cosby*, which debuted in the fall of 1996, was the most recent Cosby television show. It was cancelled after four seasons.

Cosby has been his own manager and producer and has written several books, including the best-selling *Fatherhood*, published in 1986. He also has done a number of television commercials. Cosby and his wife, Camille, have been married since 1964 and have four daughters. A son, Ennis, was tragically killed in 1997 at age twenty-seven. Cosby was inducted into the Television Hall of Fame in 1992. In 1998 he was honored with a Kennedy Center Award for lifetime achievement in the performing arts.

For More Information

Adler, Bill. *The Cosby Wit*. New York: Carroll & Graf, 1986.

Cosby, Bill. *Cosbyology: Essays and Observations from the Doctor of Comedy*. New York: Hyperion, 2001.

Ruuth, Marianne. *Bill Cosby*. Los Angeles: Melrose Square Publishing, 1992.

Smith, Ronald L. *Cosby: The Life of a Comedy Legend*. Rev. ed. Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books, 1997.

JACQUES COUSTEAU

Born: June 11, 1910

Saint-André-de-Cubzac, France

Died: June 25, 1997

Paris, France

French oceanographer, inventor, photographer, explorer, and environmentalist

Jacques Cousteau was an undersea explorer, a photographer, an inventor of diving devices, and a writer. Most important was his work that he produced and wrote for television, which enlightened audiences around the world on the subjects of the ocean's natural treasures and the effects of pollution.

Early life and inspiration

Jacques-Yves Cousteau was born June 11, 1910, in Saint-André-de-Cubzac, France, to Daniel and Elizabeth Cousteau. After their son's birth, the Cousteaus returned to Paris, France, where Daniel worked as a lawyer. Although Cousteau was a sickly child, who the doctors told not to participate in any strenuous activity, he learned to swim and soon developed a passionate love for the sea. He combined this love with an early interest in invention and built a model of a marine crane when he was eleven years old.

In school Cousteau was bored and often misbehaved. He was even expelled at one time. In 1930 Cousteau entered France's naval academy, the Ecole Navale, in Brest. He graduated three years later and then entered the French navy. In 1936 he was given a pair of underwater goggles, the kind used by divers. Cousteau was so impressed with what he saw beneath the sea that he immediately set about designing a device that would allow humans to breath underwater.

This project was put on hold during World War II (1939–45; a war in which England, the Soviet Union, and the United States clashed with Germany, Japan, and Italy). Cousteau became a gunnery (heavy guns) officer and was later awarded the prestigious Legion d'Honneur for his work with the



Jacques Cousteau.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

French resistance, a military group fighting against the occupying German army.

Even during the war Cousteau turned his attention to the world below the sea. In 1942 he designed the Aqua-Lung, an early underwater breathing device. Cousteau then helped remove mines from French seas left over from the war. One of these minesweepers (boats used to remove mines from the bottom of the ocean) would become Cousteau's research ship, the *Calypso*.

Work aboard the *Calypso*

On the *Calypso*'s first research voyage to the Red Sea, the maritime (having to do with

sea travel) and diving expertise of her crew was combined with the scientific expertise of academic scientists who came aboard. These expeditions advanced knowledge of the deep by gathering underwater flora (plants) and fauna (animals) and by extensively photographing the underwater world, which is more vast than the surface above water.

When the French Ministry of Education finally provided grants to cover two-thirds of the expenses, Cousteau resigned from the navy in 1957, with the rank of lieutenant commander, to become director of the Oceanographic Museum in Monaco.

Raising awareness

In 1960 Cousteau was an important part of the movement to prevent the dumping of French atomic waste into the Mediterranean Sea. This movement ended in success. Throughout his life Cousteau enjoyed much recognition for his tireless support of ocean ecology (the relationship between organisms and their environment). In 1959 he addressed the first World Oceanic Congress, an event that received widespread coverage and led to his appearance on the cover of *Time* magazine on March 28, 1960.

In April of 1961 Cousteau was awarded the *National Geographic's* Gold Medal at a White House ceremony hosted by President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963). It was through Cousteau's television programs, however, that his work captured the imagination of a worldwide audience. In 1966 Cousteau's first hour-long television special, "The World of Jacques-Yves Cousteau," was broadcast. It was well received by critics. The program's high ratings were important in landing Cousteau a contract with the American Broadcasting

Company (ABC), which resulted in the series “The Undersea World of Jacques Cousteau” in 1968. The program ran for eight seasons and starred Cousteau, his sons, Philippe and Jean-Michel, and sea creatures from around the globe. In order to raise public opinion against pollution, in 1975 he founded the Cousteau Society, an international organization with branches in several countries (including the United States at Norfolk, Virginia).

In honor of his achievements, Cousteau received the U.S. Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1985. In 1987 he was inducted into the Television Academy’s Hall of Fame, and later received the founder’s award from the International Council of the National Academy of Television Arts and Sciences. In 1988 the National Geographic Society honored him with its Centennial Award, and in 1989 France admitted him membership in its prestigious Academy.

Cousteau died in Paris, France, on June 25, 1997, at the age of eighty-seven. While some critics have challenged his scientific credentials, Cousteau never claimed “expert status” in any discipline. But perhaps to a greater degree than any of his fellow scientists, Cousteau enlightened the public by exposing the irreversible effects of environmental destruction.

For More Information

Cousteau, J., and Alexis Sivirine. *Jacques Cousteau’s Calypso*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1983.

DuTemple, Lesley A. *Jacques Cousteau*. Minneapolis: Lerner Publications, 2000.

King, Roger. *Jacques Cousteau and the Undersea World*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2001.

Klingel, Cindy. *Jacques Cousteau*. Chanhassen, MN: Child’s World, 1998.

NOEL COWARD

Born: December 16, 1899

Teddingham, Middlesex, England

Died: March 26, 1973

Kingston, Jamaica

English playwright, composer, and actor

The English playwright, actor, and composer Noel Coward was known for his likable sophistication and sharp sense of humor. Although he wrote some of the most popular plays of his time, he was also known for his entertaining personality and his abilities as a witty storyteller.

Early acting and plays

Noel Coward was born on December 16, 1899, in Teddingham, Middlesex, a suburb of London, England. He studied at the Royal Chapel School in London. He came from a musical family, with parents who sang in a choir. A restless and outgoing youth, Coward soon found his way to the stage. At age twelve he made his first appearance on stage in a children’s play. A year later he won praise for his portrayal of “Slightly,” a character in *Peter Pan*.

Coward’s first effort as a playwright, *Rat Trap*, was a realistic study of its characters’ emotions. It was written in 1917 but was not published until 1926. In 1918 he played the leading role in his next play, *The Last Track*. The first drama to receive critical attention



Noel Coward.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

was *The Vortex* (1924), a serious play about drug addiction. During this period he was regarded as the spokesman for the younger generation, although his works were often criticized for being immoral.

In 1929 Coward starred in a Broadway (the New York City theater district) production of his play *Bitter Sweet*. *Bitter Sweet* was a romantic musical (a play featuring songs) that was popular in both Great Britain and the United States. This play's popular song, "I'll See You Again," is regarded as Coward's best-known effort as a composer. His other songs include the witty "Mad Dogs and Englishmen" and "I'll Follow My Secret Heart."

A flourishing career

Coward's important plays throughout the next ten years included *Private Lives* (1930), a sophisticated comedy about a married couple; *Cavalcade* (1931), a patriotic depiction of British tradition; *Design for Living* (1937), a stylish comedy; and *Blithe Spirit* (1941), a fantasy concerning spiritualism (the practice of trying to communicate with the dead, such as in a séance).

During World War II (1939–45)—a war in which Great Britain, France, the United States, the Soviet Union, and other allies fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan, who were attempting to conquer large portions of Europe, Africa, and Asia—Coward performed for troops on the major battlefronts. He later wrote about his experiences in *Middle East Diary* (1945). In 1942 he wrote, acted, and codirected with David Lean in the movie *In Which We Serve*, which showed life aboard a British destroyer (a small, highly armed warship). He continued to work with Lean on the film version of *Blithe Spirit* (1945) and on the script for *Brief Encounter* (1946), one of movie screen's most tender love stories.

Coward's dramas in following years—including *Peace in Our Time* (1947), *Quadrille* (1952), *Nude with Violin* (1956), and *Sail Away* (1961)—were not as fresh as his earlier works. However, he made up for his declining writing ability by starting a new career as an entertainer and raconteur (someone who tells stories or relates incidents with an amusing style and skill). In 1960 he gave his finest acting performance as a spy in the film *Our Man in Havana*, directed by Carol Reed and written by the English novelist and screenwriter Graham Greene (1904–1991). Coward

also wrote two volumes of autobiographical recollections, titled *Present Indicative* (1937) and *Future Indefinite* (1954). His other fictional works include two collections of short stories, *To Step Aside* (1939) and *Star Quality* (1951), and a novel, *Pomp and Circumstance* (1960), which portrayed British life on a South Seas island.

Coward was honored in recognition of his talents and service to his country when he was made a knight by England's Queen Elizabeth (1926–) in 1970. He died on March 26, 1973, in Kingston, Jamaica.

For More Information

Coward, Noel. *The Noël Coward Diaries*.

Edited by Graham Payn and Sheridan Morley. Boston: Little, Brown, 1982.

Hoare, Philip. *Noel Coward: A Biography*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1996.

Payn, Graham, and Sheridan Morley. *The Noël Coward Diaries*. New York: Da Capo Press, 2000.

MICHAEL CRICHTON

Born: October 23, 1942

Chicago, Illinois

American novelist and screenwriter

Michael Crichton has been a physician, a teacher, a movie director, and a screenwriter, but he is probably best known for his novels. His writings often combine aspects of science, tech-

nology, and suspense, and he has been called a pioneer of the “techno-thriller” with novels such as *The Andromeda Strain*, *Sphere*, and *Jurassic Park*. Many of his books have been adapted and made into popular movies. He is also the creator of the television series *ER*.

Childhood interests

John Michael Crichton was born in Chicago, Illinois, and raised on Long Island in New York. His father was a journalist, and Crichton has said that his own broad knowledge may have come from his father's wide interests. His mother also regularly took her children to museums, plays, and movies. Crichton was often ill as a child, which led him to spend much time indoors playing with electric trains and performing amateur scientific experiments.

The young Crichton also began to write. At fourteen years of age he wrote and sold articles to the *New York Times* travel section. In 1964 he earned a bachelor's degree from Harvard University. The following year Crichton entered Harvard's medical school, where he began to write novels in order to support his medical studies. He used the pen name (a fictional name adopted by an author who does not want to use his real name) John Lange.

Early books

In 1969 Crichton published his first book under his own name, *The Andromeda Strain*. This novel, which tells the story of a disastrous virus brought to Earth from outer space, brought fame to Crichton. It became the first of many works that were brought to the movie screen. Crichton soon began a full-time writing career.



Michael Crichton.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Crichton became involved in moviemaking, as well. He directed his screenplay (movie script) of his novel *Westworld* (1973) and wrote the screenplay for his book *The Great Train Robbery* (published in 1975; released in a movie version in 1978). In *Westworld*, which concerns robots who begin to make their own decisions while inhabiting an amusement park, Crichton shows how technology can blur the line between reality and fantasy. *The Great Train Robbery* tells the story of an actual robbery that occurred in nineteenth-century England.

Dangers of science and technology

With his 1980 novel *Congo*, Crichton returned to a plot involving one of his favorite themes: the dangers of science, technology, and greed. In the novel three adventurers travel through dense African rain forests in search of some diamonds that can drastically change computer technology. Amy, a gorilla that is capable of communicating in human language, accompanies the three adventurers. *Congo* was made into a movie in 1995.

An encounter with alien life forms and alien technology was the focus of Crichton's next novel, *Sphere* (1987; released as a movie in 1997). In this book scientists undertake an underwater exploration of an alien spaceship, which lies one thousand feet below the surface. While the scientists explore the spacecraft, disastrous events occur, including an attack by a mysterious, huge squid.

Huge creatures—dinosaurs—are also important in Crichton's *Jurassic Park* (1990). In this tale of greed and technology, a billionaire attempts to build an amusement park on a remote island. The park features actual life-sized dinosaurs created through the wonders of the most advanced science. The project goes terribly wrong when the dinosaurs are freed to roam at will, leading to a deadly battle between the ferocious creatures and a small band of humans.

In 1994 the film version of *Jurassic Park* helped to ensure the worldwide popularity and success of Crichton's novel. The movie's sequel, *The Lost World*, was based on Crichton's book of the same name (published 1995; released as a movie in 1997).

Other projects

Crichton's other novels include *The Terminal Man* (1972; with a movie version appearing in 1974), *Rising Sun* (1992; movie version 1993), *Disclosure* (1993; movie version 1995), and *Eaters of the Dead* (1976; filmed as *The Thirteenth Warrior* in 1999). He has also written a number of nonfiction books, including *Five Patients: The Hospital Explained* (1970) and *Travels* (1988). Crichton's fame, however, is not limited to his literary efforts. In addition to writing screenplays for movies adapted from his books, he has also directed a number of popular films of his own, including *Coma* and *Looker*. He is also the creator of the long-running television drama *ER*. In a fitting tribute to Crichton's fictional creations, a real-life Jurassic dinosaur species, called *Bienosaurus crichtoni*, was named after the author after its discovery in China.

In April 1999, Crichton formed Timeline Studios, a video game company that failed to reach the success of *Timeline*, Crichton's novel of the same name. Like so many of Crichton's previous books, *Timeline* was snapped up by Hollywood for a film adaptation, scheduled to hit movie screens in 2003.

For More Information

Aaseng, Nathan. *Michael Crichton*. San Diego:

Lucent Books, 2002.

American Spectator (May 1992): 71.

American Way (September 1975): 66–69.

Atlantic Monthly (May 1972): 108–10.

DAVY CROCKETT

Born: August 17, 1786

Hawkings County, Tennessee

Died: March 6, 1836

San Antonio, Texas

American frontiersman and politician

Davy Crockett, American frontiersman and politician, became a folk hero during his own lifetime. Crockett grew up on the frontier and later used his knowledge of it in his political campaigns. Although he is known chiefly as a hunter and a soldier, Crockett also worked for land for settlers, relief for people in debt, and an expanded banking system for Tennessee.

Early life

David "Davy" Crockett, the son of John and Rebecca Crockett, was born on August 17, 1786, in East Tennessee. He was the fifth of nine children. Crockett's father put him to work driving cattle to Virginia when he was twelve years old. After running away from home to escape a beating from his father, Crockett traveled throughout Virginia. He decided that his lack of education limited his marriage possibilities, so he learned to read, to write a little, and to "cypher," or add and subtract.

In 1806 Crockett married Mary Finely and became a farmer. Frontier farming proved unrewarding, and in 1813 he decided to move his family to Franklin County, Tennessee.



Davy Crockett.

Life on the frontier

In 1813, shortly after Crockett moved to Franklin County, frontiersmen ambushed a band of Creek Indian warriors in southern Alabama. Nearby settlers gathered at Fort Mims. The Native Americans attacked the fort and killed over five hundred people. Crockett then volunteered to serve with the frontier military forces in the fight against the Native Americans. In September and October he served as a scout. He went on leave and then returned to military service from September 1814 to February 1815. During this time Crockett served as a scout and a hunter and apparently encountered little fighting.

In 1815 Crockett's first wife died, and he married Elizabeth Patton. While traveling with neighbors in Alabama, he contracted malaria, a disease that causes chills and fever, and was left along the road to die. He recovered and returned to his family, much to their surprise. He has been quoted as remarking about his reported death, "I know'd this was a whopper of a lie, as soon as I heard it."

Local and state politics

In 1817 Crockett and his family moved to Lawrence County, Tennessee. He worked as a justice of the peace and later served as county commissioner. In 1818 he was elected lieutenant colonel of the local military regiment. In 1821 he campaigned for a seat in the state legislature. During the campaign Crockett realized the frontiersmen's isolation and need for recreation. Therefore, he gave short speeches laced with stories that helped lead to his election. Having grown up among the poor settlers, Crockett served as their spokesman. He proposed bills to reduce taxes, to settle land claim disputes, and to protect their general economic interests. In 1823 Crockett was elected to the Tennessee legislature.

Congressional career

In 1825 Crockett ran for a seat in the U.S. Congress but was defeated. He ran again and won in 1827 and was reelected in 1829. Crockett did not agree with many of the policies of President Andrew Jackson (1787–1845). He took a stand against the president on several issues, including Native American removal and land policy. In 1831 when Crockett ran for a third term, he was defeated. Two years later he regained his seat by a narrow margin. In 1834 he published

his autobiography, *A Narrative of the Life of David Crockett of the State of Tennessee*. Then, another defeat in 1835 marked the end of his congressional career.

Death at the Alamo

In 1835 Crockett and four neighbors headed into Texas looking for new land. By January 1836 he had joined the Texas Volunteers, and within a month he reached San Antonio, Texas. Crockett then joined Texans in their fight to hold the Alamo against a Mexican army. In the first week of March he and the other defenders of the Alamo died during the siege and capture of that fort by Mexican troops. Popular tradition says that Crockett was one of the last defenders who died during the final assault. In reality, Crockett was one of the first defenders to die—alone and unarmed, on March 6, 1836.

Crockett's death at the Alamo made him more famous than his political activities did. Through newspaper accounts and other writings—both fact and fiction—legends concerning Crockett's adventures grew. Descriptions of Crockett are varied, but it is generally thought that he was about 5 feet 8 inches tall, with brown hair, blue eyes, and rosy cheeks. He was noted for his humor, his honesty, and his skill as an entertaining public speaker. Those who knew him realized that he was a man of ability and character.

For More Information

Chemerka, William R. *The Davy Crockett Almanac and Book of Lists*. Austin, TX: Eakin Press, 1999.

Moseley, Elizabeth R. *Davy Crockett, Hero of the Wild Frontier*. Champaign, IL: Gar-

rard, 1967. Reprint, New York: Chelsea Juniors, 1991.

Rourke, Constance. *Davy Crockett*. Rev. ed. New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1998.

OLIVER CROMWELL

Born: April 25, 1599

Huntingdon, England

Died: September 3, 1658

London, England

English statesman and general

The English statesman and general Oliver Cromwell won decisive battles in the English civil war. He then established himself and his army as the ruling force in England and later took the title Lord Protector of Great Britain and Ireland. A remarkable ruler, Cromwell helped reestablish England as a leading European power following several years of decline.

Early life

Oliver Cromwell was born on April 25, 1599, in Huntingdon, England. His father, Richard Cromwell, was a younger son of one of the richest men in the district, Sir Henry Cromwell of Hinchinbrook, who was known as the "Golden Knight." Little is known of Cromwell's childhood, except that his circumstances were modest and he was sent to the local school and developed intense religious beliefs.

In 1616 Cromwell entered Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge. He left the following



Oliver Cromwell.

year after the death of his father. For the next few years he lived in London. In 1620 he married Elizabeth Bourchier, the daughter of Sir James Bourchier, a wealthy leather merchant. Cromwell then returned to his small estate in Huntingdon. There he farmed his land and played a small part in local affairs, earning a reputation as a champion of the poor. During these years Cromwell experienced periods of deep depression. After much spiritual torment he became convinced that he was the instrument of God.

Political situation in 1640

When Cromwell entered Parliament (the governing body of England) in 1640, Charles

I (1600–1649) had ruled England for eleven years. The king had pursued policies in religion and finance, which had disagreed with many country gentlemen, including Cromwell. Furthermore, Charles I had plunged into war with Scotland, who soundly defeated the king.

The mood of Parliament was highly critical. Cromwell joined men in Parliament who believed Parliament should limit the power of the king and the Anglican Church. A middle-aged man without parliamentary experience, Cromwell rarely spoke, but when he did it was usually in support of extreme measures. Cromwell was dedicated to the reform, or improvement, of the Church and of the court. He was also highly critical of the king.

Civil war

By 1642 there was no way to avoid war between the King and Parliament. At the outbreak of war in August 1642, Cromwell was assigned a small army of men. He rapidly demonstrated not only his skill as a military leader but also his ability to develop an effective army from his force of raw recruits. Under the leadership of the Earl of Manchester, Cromwell's commander, regiments from other counties were brought together as one force, known as the Eastern Association. Cromwell's reputation as Parliament's most forceful general was made in 1644 at the battle of Marston Moor (July 2, 1644). Cromwell's Ironsides defeated the cavalry (troops) of Prince Rupert, the most successful general of the royalists who fought for the king.

The victories in eastern England, however, were not matched by success elsewhere. After two years of war, the king was still in the field, and relations between Parliament

and the army were growing sour. Many disliked the price paid for alliance with the Scots and most longed for peace. Cromwell, however, yearned for victory. He bitterly attacked the Earl of Manchester. He soon emerged as the effective leader of the parliamentary armies. He proved his exceptional abilities as a general on June 14, 1645, when he defeated the royalists' army at Naseby in Northamptonshire. Within a year the royalist armies had surrendered.

End of the war

In 1648 the royalists rose again, allied with the Scots, but in a lightning campaign Cromwell overtook both. The republicans were then determined to bring Charles I to trial, and Cromwell did nothing to stop them. At last agreeing that the king was "a man of blood" and should be executed, he signed Charles I's death warrant.

The execution of the king settled nothing. Legally the House of Commons ruled, but the army, Scotland, and Ireland were soon in rebellion. In Ireland Cromwell fought a tough, bloody campaign in which he butchered thousands of soldiers at Drogheda (September 11, 1649) and hundreds of civilians at Wexford (October 11). On June 26, 1650, Cromwell finally became commander of the parliamentary armies. At Dunbar in August 1650 he was pressed between the hills and the sea and was surrounded by an army of twenty thousand Scots. But mistakes by the Scottish commander, Leslie, enabled Cromwell to seize victory. Cromwell believed this victory was the work of God.

The next year Charles II and his Scottish army made a spirited dash into England, but Cromwell overtook them at Worcester on

September 3, 1651. At long last the war was over and Cromwell realized that God's humble instrument had been given, for better or worse, supreme power.

Cromwell's rule: 1653–58

For five years after the execution of the king, Parliament tried to formulate a new constitution. On April 20, 1653, Cromwell went with a handful of soldiers to the House of Commons, a part of Parliament. He shouted at the members, "The Lord be done with you," and ordered them out.

For a while Cromwell and his Council ruled most effectively, sweeping away ancient tribal rule in Scotland and Ireland. He then united those countries with England under one Parliament, which was itself reformed. When the Parliament met in 1654, however, it soon quarreled with Cromwell over the constitution. He once more took power into his own hands and dissolved Parliament on June 22, 1655.

From Cromwell's rule local government was brought under major generals, soldiers whom he could trust. This infuriated many. Under a new constitution and a reestablished Parliament, Cromwell took the title Lord Protector. This move also reestablished the House of Lords, another part of Parliament, and made Cromwell king in all but name. But Cromwell did not desire power as other great rulers had. He did not train his son Richard to be his successor, nor did he try to establish his family as a ruling dynasty. And at the height of his power he retained his deep religious belief that he was merely an instrument of God's purpose.

Cromwell pursued an effective foreign policy. His navy enjoyed substantial success

in the West Indies and he allied himself with France against Spain. These victories, combined with his effective handling of Scotland and brutal conquering of Ireland, made him a popular and powerful ruler. Shortly after his death on September 3, 1658, Cromwell's government collapsed, and the restoration of the monarchy (sole ruler) followed in 1660.

Cromwell's legacy

Cromwell's greatness will always be questioned. As a general, he was gifted yet lucky. As a statesman, he had some success but was unable to realize many goals. Britain emerged from the Commonwealth stronger, more efficient, and more secure. Perhaps the most remarkable of Cromwell's qualities were his seriousness and his self-control. Few men have enjoyed such supreme power and abused it less.

For More Information

Fraser, Antonia. *Cromwell, the Lord Protector*. New York: Grove Press, 2001.

Litton, Helen. *Oliver Cromwell: An Illustrated History*. Dublin: Wolfhound, 2000.

Sherwood, Roy. *Oliver Cromwell: King in All But Name, 1653–1658*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1997.

WALTER CRONKITE

Born: November 4, 1916

St. Joseph, Missouri

American broadcaster and journalist

Walter Cronkite is an American journalist and radio and television news broadcaster who became one of an outstanding group of correspondents and commentators that the Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS) News developed after World War II (1939–45; a war in which Germany, Italy, and Japan fought against Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States).

Early years

Walter Leland Cronkite was born on November 4, 1916. He was an only child. His father was a dentist and his mother, Helena Lena (Fritsch) managed the home. While he was still a youngster the family moved to Texas, where his father took a position at the University of Texas Dental School. During that time Walter read an article in *American Boy* magazine about the adventures of reporters working around the world. It inspired his interest in journalism and he decided when he was in junior high school that he wanted to be a reporter. His preparation for that career began with his work on his high school yearbook and newspaper. He was also active in student government and athletics, particularly track.

In 1933 Cronkite entered the University of Texas at Austin, where he studied political science, economics, and journalism. He took a part-time job with the *Houston Post* newspaper. This set him on a professional career which led him to leave college after two years to serve in several different journalism jobs, including general reporter for the *Post*, radio announcer in Kansas City, Missouri, and sportscaster in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma. After Cronkite's time at the *Post*, his principal employer for several years was United Press International

(UPI). He covered World War II in Europe. He also served as chief correspondent at the Nuremberg war crimes trials (1945–46), and as head of the Moscow (Russia) office from 1946 to 1948.

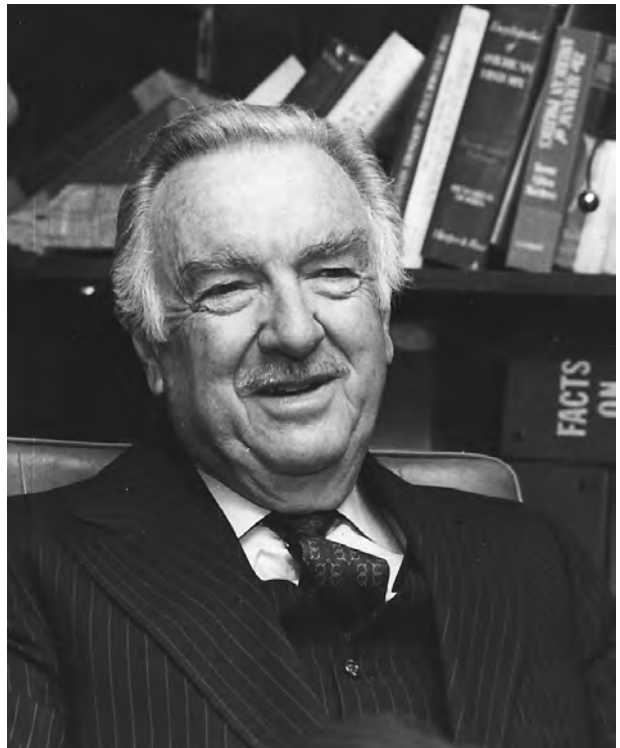
Years at CBS

In 1950 Cronkite joined CBS News. Up to this point he was largely unknown to the general public. Two years later he was narrator for *You Are There*, a television program in which major historical events were recreated as though they were current news events. In 1954 he became narrator of *The Twentieth Century*, an outstanding television documentary recounting the events of recent history. This job gave Cronkite recognition with the viewing public.

Starting in 1952 Cronkite also served as the anchor for the CBS coverage of the Democratic and Republican national presidential conventions. With the exception of the 1964 Democratic convention, he continued this role until his retirement in 1981.

Cronkite assumed the duties of anchor and editor for the *CBS Evening News* in 1962. At that time the National Broadcasting Company's (NBC) *Huntley-Brinkley Report*, hosted by Chet Huntley and David Brinkley, led viewer ratings. Gradually, the CBS broadcasts gained ground on the team at NBC, which broke up in 1970. From that time until his retirement, Cronkite's program was consistently the most popular television news broadcast.

Although the evening news was Cronkite's main responsibility, he maintained his leading role as narrator and correspondent on network specials. These included



Walter Cronkite.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

space shots, major documentaries, and interviews with world figures such as presidents Harry Truman (1884–1972), Dwight Eisenhower (1890–1969), and Lyndon Johnson (1908–1973). After his retirement he continued this role in addition to the periodic series, *Walter Cronkite's Universe*.

For a society that emphasized youthfulness, it was a paradox (contradiction) that Cronkite's reputation increased as he grew older. His white hair and mustache gave him a distinguished look. Cronkite's reputation did not rest on appearance, however. He earned recognition and praise through hard work, a passion for accuracy, and an insis-

tence on impartiality (being neutral). Underlying that was a lifelong competitive spirit, which was moderated in front of the microphone and camera but which came out in his leisure activities of sailing, tennis, and race car driving.

Strengths as a reporter

Cronkite was quite concerned with not becoming part of the story he was reporting. He stated, "I built my reputation on honest, straight-forward reporting. To do anything else would be phony. I'd be selling myself and not the news." Yet there were memorable instances when he failed to remain completely separated from a story, such as his obvious emotional reaction when announcing the death of President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963); his broadcast pronouncement in 1968, upon returning from Vietnam, that he doubted United States policy for that region could succeed; and his undeniable enthusiasm when Neil Armstrong (1930–) became the first person on the moon in 1969.

Despite Cronkite's philosophy of detachment, he sometimes influenced the news, as in his 1977 televised interview with Egyptian leader Anwar Sadat (1918–1981), which led Sadat to visit Israel and led Israeli Prime Minister Menachem Begin (1913–1992) to visit Egypt. Cronkite was an unintentional news topic in 1980, when John Anderson (1922–), running as an independent presidential candidate, mentioned Cronkite as his likely running mate. (Former Wisconsin governor Patrick Lucey wound up as Anderson's choice.)

The depth of respect for Cronkite's work is reflected in the numerous awards he has

received: the Peabody for Radio and Television, the William Allen White Award for Journalistic Merit, as well as the Emmy. In 1981, during his final three months on the *CBS Evening News*, Cronkite received eleven major awards, including the Presidential Medal of Freedom. In 1985 he became the second newsman, after Edward R. Murrow (1908–1965), to be selected for the Television Hall of Fame. At his retirement Cronkite was the most commonly mentioned person on the "dream list" for lecturers at conventions, clubs, and college campuses.

Post-CBS retirement

After retiring as anchor of the *CBS Evening News*, Cronkite served as CBS News special correspondent and on the network's board of directors from 1981 to 1991. He also anchored the CBS News science magazine series *Walter Cronkite's Universe*, (1980–82). From the late 1980s until 1992 he hosted *Walter Cronkite's 20th Century*, a daily, ninety-second account of same-day historical events.

In 1993 Cronkite formed his own production company and produced several award-winning documentaries for The Discovery Channel, the Public Broadcasting Service (PBS), and other networks. One of those, *Cronkite Remembers*, aired in early 1997 in conjunction with the late 1996 publication of his autobiography, *A Reporter's Life*. During the 1996 presidential campaign, Cronkite headed efforts to convince networks to offer free television time for presidential candidates.

In 2001 Cronkite published *Around America: A Tour of our Magnificent Coastline*. He also signed on to do the voice of Ben Franklin in a new PBS animated series, *Liberty Kids*.

Cronkite raised television news broadcasting to a level of professionalism that was praised around the world. His qualifications as a newspaperman and war correspondent, along with his unwillingness to stray from a hard news format that dealt only with important events and their facts, demonstrated that acceptance and popularity in television news need not rest on covering trivial topics. Walter Cronkite continues to be admired by both his colleagues and by his audience. For many people he is the example of what a broadcast journalist should be.

For More Information

Aaseng, Nathan. *Walter Cronkite*. Minneapolis: Lerner Publications, 1981.

Cronkite, Kathy. *On the Edge of the Spotlight*. New York: Morrow, 1981.

Cronkite, Walter. *A Reporter's Life*. New York: Random House, 1996.

Westman, Paul. *Walter Cronkite: The Most Trusted Man in America*. Minneapolis: Dillon Press, 1980.

E. E. CUMMINGS

Born: October 14, 1894

Cambridge, Massachusetts

Died: September 3, 1962

North Conway, New Hampshire

American poet

The American poet E. E. Cummings wrote verse that presented romantic attitudes in an experimental style. Cummings's poems are not only ideas but crafted physical objects that show a fresh way of looking at reality.

Youth and education

Edward Estlin Cummings was born to a well-known family in Cambridge, Massachusetts, on October 14, 1894. His father, Edward, was a professor at Harvard University and later the nationally known minister of Old South Church in Boston, Massachusetts. His mother, Rebecca, who loved to spend time with her children, played games with Cummings and his sister, Elizabeth. It was Cummings's mother who introduced him to the joys of writing. Cummings wrote poems and also drew as a child, and he often played outdoors with the many other children who lived in his neighborhood. He also grew up in the company of such family friends as the philosophers William James (1842–1910) and Josiah Royce (1855–1916). He graduated from Harvard University in 1915 and then received an advanced degree from Harvard in 1916.

Early career

After graduating, Cummings became an ambulance driver in France just before America entered World War I (1914–1918; a war involving most European countries and, later, the United States). He was imprisoned for three months on suspicion of holding views critical of the French war effort, and this experience provided the material for his first book, *The Enormous Room* (1922).



E. E. Cummings.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Cummings's romantic transcendentalism (which stressed the individual human being and his or her emotional experiences, the worship of nature, and the "spiritual"—or nonmaterial—basis of reality) resulted in the early rejection of his work, for it was not popular at the time. For several decades he had to pay for the publication of his work, and reviewers revealed very little understanding of his aims. His first volume of poems, *Tulips and Chimneys* (1923), was followed by a second volume two years later. Though Cummings received the Dial Award for poetry in 1925, he continued to have difficulty in finding a publisher.

In the ten years following 1925 only two volumes of Cummings's poems were published, both at his own expense: *is 5* (1926) and *W (ViVa; 1931)*. In that decade Cummings also arranged for the publication of an experimental play, *Him* (1927), and a diarylike account of a trip to the Soviet Union, *Eimi* (1933). With his characteristic harsh wit, Cummings named the fourteen publishers who had rejected the manuscript of *No Thanks* (1935) in the book itself and said "Thanks" to his mother, who had paid for its publication.

Poetic methods and achievement

Despite his dedication to growth and movement, and in contrast to his reputation as an experimenter in verse forms, Cummings actually tended to lack fresh invention. Especially in the 1930s, when he felt separated from his culture and his fellow poets, he repeated himself endlessly, writing many versions of essentially the same poem. Many of Cummings's devices, such as the visual "shaping" of poems, often seem like substitutes for original inspiration. However, Cummings's most characteristic devices—the unique, personal grammar and the breaking up and putting back together of words into different forms—were more than just another trick when they operated within the context of a poem's meaning.

The love poems and religious poems represent Cummings's greatest achievements. For example, "somewhere i have never travelled, gladly beyond" is one of the finest love poems in the English language, and Cummings's poem on the death of his beloved father, "my father moved through dooms of love," is a profoundly moving tribute. Cummings wrote some of the finest celebrations of sexual love and the religious experience of

awe produced in the twentieth century, precisely at a time when it was not at all popular to write such poems.

Early in his career Cummings had divided his time between New York City and Paris, France, where he studied painting. Later in his career he divided his time between New York City and the family home in North Conway, New Hampshire. He was always interested in the visual arts, and his paintings and drawings were exhibited in several one-man shows in the 1940s and 1950s.

Ripening into honor

After 1945 a new generation of poets in rebellion against the poets of the previous generation began to find in Cummings an echo of their own ideas about poetry, and Cummings began to receive the recognition that had escaped him for so long. In 1950 the Academy of American Poets awarded Cummings, a self-described “failure,” a fellowship for “great achievement,” and his collection *Poems, 1923–1954* (1954) won praise from people who had earlier tended to criticize Cummings for his romanticism.

Harvard University honored its distinguished graduate by asking Cummings to deliver the Charles Eliot Norton Lectures in 1952–1953, his only attempt at formal artistic autobiography (a person’s own telling of his or her life story). It was later published as *i: six nonlectures* (1953). In the lectures Cummings said that perhaps fifteen poems were faithful expressions of his thoughts as an artist and human. The total number of truly memorable short poems is certainly higher than this small figure, but is still only a fraction of the nearly one thousand poems published in his lifetime.

Late works

Cummings did not “develop” as a poet either in terms of ideas or of characteristic style. However, between the publication of his first volume and his final, called *73 Poems* (1963), his work does show a deepening awareness and mastery of his special gift as poet of the mysteries of “death and forever with each breathing.” His finest single volume is often said to be *95 Poems* (1958). Cummings’s *Collected Poems* was published in 1960.

In addition to the works mentioned, Cummings published several other experimental plays, a ballet, and some fifteen volumes of verse. Shortly before his death at North Conway, New Hampshire, on September 3, 1962, Cummings wrote the text to accompany photographs taken by his third wife, Marion Morehouse. Titled *Adventures in Value* (1962), this work is a good example of his lifelong effort to see intensely and deeply enough to confront the miracles of nature. If only a tenth of his poems should be thought worthwhile, Cummings will have been established as one of the more lasting poets America has produced.

For More Information

Friedman, Norman. *E. E. Cummings: The Growth of a Writer*. Carbondale: Southern Illinois University Press, 1964.

Kennedy, Richard S. *Dreams in the Mirror: A Biography of E. E. Cummings*. New York: Liveright, 1980.

Marks, Barry A. *E. E. Cummings*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1964.

Norman, Charles. *E. E. Cummings: The Magic-Maker*. New York: Duell, Sloan and Pearce, 1958.

MARIE CURIE

Born: November 7, 1867

Warsaw, Poland

Died: July 4, 1934

Sancellemoz, France

Polish-born French physicist

The Polish-born French physicist Marie Curie invented the term “radioactivity” and discovered two elements, radium and polonium. Curie was not only the first woman to win the Nobel Prize in Physics, but when she won the Nobel Prize in Chemistry, she became the first person ever to win the Nobel Prize twice.

Early life

Marie Sklodowska Curie was born in Warsaw, Poland, on November 7, 1867, the youngest of five children of Wladislaw and Bronislava Boguska Sklodowska. After her father lost his job, the family struggled and was forced to take borders (renters) into their small apartment. Religious as a child, Curie rejected her faith after her sister died of typhus (a severe fever) in 1876. Two years later she lost her mother to tuberculosis, a terrible disease that attacks the lungs and bones.

Marie was a brilliant student, gaining a gold medal upon completing her secondary education in 1883. As girls could not attend universities in Russian-dominated Poland, Marie spent a year in the country with friends at her father’s suggestion. Upon returning to her father’s house in Warsaw the next summer, she began to earn her living through pri-

vate tutoring. She also became associated with the “Floating University,” a group of young men and women who tried to quench their thirst for knowledge in secret sessions.

In early 1886 Marie accepted a job as governess (private educator) with a family living in Szczuki, Poland, but the intellectual loneliness she experienced there only solidified her determination to somehow achieve her dream of becoming a university student. One of her sisters, Bronya, was already in Paris, France, successfully passing the examinations in medicine. In September 1891 Marie moved in with her sister in Paris.

Work in Paris

When classes began at the Sorbonne in Paris in early November 1891, Marie enrolled as a student of physics. By 1894 she was desperately looking for a laboratory where she could work on her research project, the measurement of the magnetic properties of various steel alloys (metal mixtures). Acting upon a suggestion, she visited Pierre Curie at the School of Physics and Chemistry at the University of Paris. In 1895 Pierre and Marie were married, thus beginning a most extraordinary partnership in scientific work.

By mid-1897 Curie’s scientific achievements were two university degrees, a fellowship (a scholarship), and a monograph (published paper) on the magnetization of tempered steel. The couple’s first daughter, Irène, had just been born, and it was then that the Curies turned their attention to the mysterious radiation from uranium recently discovered by Antoine Henri Becquerel (1852–1908). It was Marie’s hunch that the radiation was an atomic property, and therefore had to be present in some other elements

as well. Her search soon established the fact of a similar radiation from thorium, and she invented the historic word “radioactivity” (the spontaneous release of radium).

While searching for other sources of radioactivity, the Curies had turned their attention to pitchblende, a mineral well known for its uranium content. To their immense surprise the radioactivity of pitchblende far exceeded the combined radioactivity of the uranium and thorium contained in it. From their laboratory two papers reached the Academy of Sciences within six months. The first, read at the meeting of July 18, 1898, announced the discovery of a new radioactive element, which the Curies named polonium after Marie’s native country. The other paper, announcing the discovery of radium, was read at the December 26 meeting.

From 1898 to 1902 the Curies converted several tons of pitchblende, but it was not only the extremely precious centigrams of radium that rewarded their superhuman efforts. The Curies also published, jointly or separately, during those years a total of thirty-two scientific papers. Among them, one announced that diseased, tumor-forming cells were destroyed faster than healthy cells when exposed to radium.

Recognition

In November 1903 the Royal Society of London gave the Curies one of its highest awards, the Davy Medal. A month later followed the announcement from the Nobel Foundation in Stockholm, Sweden, that three French scientists, A. H. Becquerel and the Curies, were the joint recipients of the Nobel Prize in Physics for 1903. Finally, even



*Marie Curie.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

the academics in Paris began to stir, and a few months later Marie was appointed director of research at the University of Paris.

In December 1904 their second daughter, Ève, was born. The next year brought the election of Pierre to the Academy of Sciences and their travel to Stockholm, where, on June 6, he delivered the Nobel Prize lecture, which was in fact their joint address. Pierre ended his speech with the double-edged impact on mankind of every major scientific advance. Pierre said that he believed “mankind will derive more good than harm from the new discoveries.”

End of an era

The joyful time for this husband-and-wife team would not last long. On the rainy mid-afternoon of April 19, 1906, Pierre was run down by a heavy carriage and killed instantly. Two weeks later the widow was asked to take over her late husband's post. Honors began to pour in from scientific societies all over the world on a woman left alone with two small children and with whom the gigantic task of leadership in radioactivity research was now left. In 1908 she edited the collected works of her late husband, and in 1910 she published her massive *Traité de radioactivité*. Shortly after this work Curie received her second Nobel Prize, this time in chemistry. Still, Curie was unable to win over the Academy of Sciences, who once again denied her membership.

Curie devoted much of her time during World War I (1914–18) to equipping automobiles in her own laboratory, the Radium Institute, with x-ray (Roentgen) apparatus to assist the sick. It was these cars that became known in the war zone as “little Curies.” By the end of the war Curie was past her fiftieth year, with much of her physical energy already spent—along with her savings, which she had patriotically invested in war bonds. But her dedication was inexhaustible. The year 1919 witnessed her installation at the Radium Institute, and two years later her book *La Radiologie et la guerre* was published. In it she gave a most informative account of the scientific and human experiences gained for radiology (the use of radiation) during the war. At the end of the war, her daughter Irène, a physicist, was appointed as an assistant in her mother's laboratory.

Shortly afterward, a momentous visit took place in the Radium Institute. The visitor was Mrs. William B. Meloney, editor of a leading magazine in New York and representative of the countless women who for years had found in Curie their ideal and inspiration. A year later Meloney returned to tell Curie that a nationwide subscription in America had produced the sum of one hundred thousand dollars, which was needed to purchase a gram of radium for her institute. She was also asked to visit the United States with her daughters and collect the precious gift in person. Her trip was an absolute triumph. In the White House, President Warren G. Harding (1865–1923) presented her with the golden key to the little metal box containing the radium.

Later years

On questions other than scientific, Curie rarely uttered public comment of any length. One of the exceptions was her statement at a conference in 1933 on “The Future of Culture.” There she rallied to the defense of science, which several panelists held responsible for the dehumanization of modern life. “I am among those,” she emphasized, “who think that science has great beauty. A scientist in his laboratory is not only a technician; he is also a child placed before natural phenomena which impress him like a fairy tale. We should not allow it to be believed that all scientific progress can be reduced to mechanism, machines, gearings, even though such machinery also has its own beauty.”

The most heartwarming experience of the last phase of Curie's life was probably the marriage of her daughter Irène in 1926 to Frédéric Joliot (later Joliot-Curie), the most

gifted assistant at the Radium Institute. Before long it was evident to her that their union would closely resemble her own marvelously creative partnership with Pierre Curie.

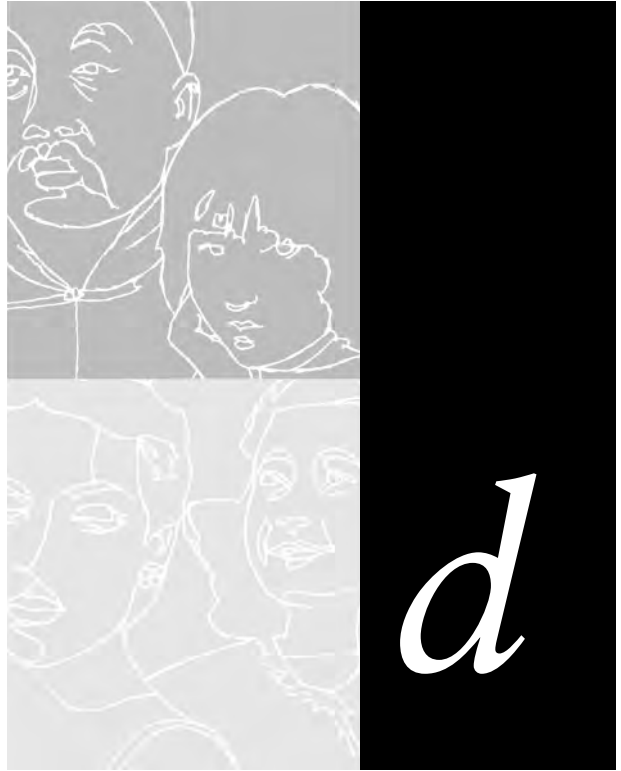
She worked almost to the very end and succeeded in completing the manuscript of her last book, *Radioactivité*. In the last years her younger daughter, Ève, was her great support. Ève was also her mother's faithful companion when, on July 4, 1934, Curie died in Sancellemoz, France. Albert Einstein

(1879–1955) once said, “Marie Curie is, of all celebrated beings, the only one whom fame has not corrupted.”

For More Information

Quinn, Susan. *Marie Curie: A Life*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1995.

Senior, John E. *Marie & Pierre Curie*. Gloucestershire, England: Sutton Pub., 1998.



ROALD DAHL

Born: September 13, 1916

Llandaff, South Wales

Died: November 23, 1990

Oxford, England

Welsh author

A writer of both children's fiction and short stories for adults, Roald Dahl is best known as the author of the 1964 children's book *Charlie and the Chocolate Factory* (he also wrote the script for the 1971 movie version). Dahl has been described as a master of story construction with a remarkable ability to weave a tale.

A young troublemaker

Roald Dahl was born September 13, 1916, in Llandaff, South Wales, United Kingdom, to Norwegian parents. He spent his childhood summers visiting his grandparents in Oslo, Norway. He was a mischievous child, full of energy, and from an early age he proved himself skilled at finding trouble. His earliest memory was of pedaling to school at a very fast speed on his tricycle, with his two sisters struggling to keep up as he whizzed around curves on two wheels.

After his father died when Dahl was four, his mother followed her late husband's wish that Dahl be sent to English schools. Dahl first attended Llandaff Cathedral School, where he began a series of unfortunate

adventures in school. After he and several other students were severely beaten by the principal for placing a dead mouse in a storekeeper's candy jar, Dahl's mother moved him to St. Peter's Boarding School and later to Repton, an excellent private school. Dahl would later describe his school years as "days of horrors" filled with "rules, rules and still more rules that had to be obeyed," which inspired much of his gruesome fiction. Though not a good student, his mother nevertheless offered him the option of attending Oxford or Cambridge University when he finished school. His reply, recorded in his

book about his childhood called *Boy: Tales of Childhood*, was, "No, thank you. I want to go straight from school to work for a company that will send me to wonderful faraway places like Africa or China."

The birth of a writer

After graduating from Repton, Dahl took a position with the Shell Oil Company in Tanganyika (now Tanzania), Africa. In 1939 he joined a Royal Air Force training squadron in Nairobi, Kenya, serving as a fighter pilot in the Mediterranean during World War II (1939–45). Dahl suffered severe head injuries in a plane crash near Alexandria, Egypt. Upon recovering he was sent to Washington, D.C., to be an assistant air attache (a technical expert who advises government representatives). There Dahl began his writing career, publishing a short story in the *Saturday Evening Post*. Soon his stories appeared in many other magazines. Dahl told Willa Petschek in a *New York Times Book Review* profile that "as I went on, the stories became less and less realistic and more fantastic. But becoming a writer was pure fluke. Without being asked to, I doubt if I'd ever have thought of it."

In 1943 Dahl wrote his first children's story, *The Gremlins*, and invented a new term in the process. Gremlins were small creatures that lived on fighter planes and bombers and were responsible for all crashes. Through the 1940s and into the 1950s Dahl continued as a short story writer for adults, establishing his reputation as a writer of deathly tales with unexpected twists. His stories earned him three Edgar Allan Poe Awards from the Mystery Writers of America.

Inspired by his children

In 1953 Dahl married Hollywood actress Patricia Neal, star of such movies as *The Fountainhead* and, later, *Hud*, for which she won an Academy Award. Although the marriage did not survive, it produced five children. As soon as the children were old enough, Dahl began making up stories for them each night before they went to bed. These stories became the basis for his career as a children's writer, which began seriously with the publication of *James and the Giant Peach* in 1961. It tells the fantastic tale of a young boy who travels thousands of miles in a house-sized peach with as strange a group of companions as can be found in a children's book. Dahl insisted that having to invent stories night after night was perfect practice for his trade, telling the *New York Times Book Review*: "Children are . . . highly critical. And they lose interest so quickly. You have to keep things ticking along. And if you think a child is getting bored, you must think up something that jolts it back. Something that tickles. You have to know what children like."

Controversy

One way that Dahl delighted his readers was to take often vicious revenge on cruel adults who had harmed children, as in *Matilda* (1988). But even some innocent adults received rough treatment, such as the parents killed in a car crash in *The Witches* (1983). Many critics have objected to the rough treatment of adults. However, Dahl explained in the *New York Times Book Review* that the children who wrote to him always "pick out the most gruesome events as the favorite parts of the books. . . . They don't relate it to life. They enjoy the fantasy." He

also said that his "nastiness" was payback. "Beastly people must be punished."

In *Trust Your Children: Voices Against Censorship in Children's Literature*, Dahl said that adults may be disturbed by his books "because they are not quite as aware as I am that children are different from adults. Children are much more vulgar than grownups. They have a coarser sense of humor. They are basically more cruel." Dahl often commented that the key to his success with children was that he joined with them against adults.

"The writer for children must be a jokey sort of a fellow," Dahl once told *Writer*. "He must like simple tricks and jokes and riddles and other childish things. He must be . . . inventive. He must have a really first-class plot."

Why a writer?

Dahl's children's fiction is known for its sudden turns into the fantastic, its fast-moving pace, and its decidedly harsh treatment of any adults foolish enough to cause trouble for the young heroes and heroines. Similarly, his adult fiction often relied on a sudden twist that threw light on what had been happening in the story.

Looking back on his years as a writer in *Boy: Tales of Childhood*, Dahl contended that "two hours of writing fiction leaves this particular writer absolutely drained. For those two hours he has been miles away, he has been somewhere else, in a different place with totally different people, and the effort of swimming back into normal surroundings is very great. It is almost a shock. . . . A person is a fool to become a writer. His only [reward] is absolute freedom. He has no master except

his own soul, and that, I am sure, is why he does it.”

Roald Dahl died in Oxford, England, on November 23, 1990.

For More Information

Dahl, Roald. *Boy: Tales of Childhood*. New York: Farrar, Straus, 1984.

Dahl, Roald. *Going Solo*. New York: Farrar, Straus, 1986.

Dahl, Roald. *The Wonderful Story of Henry Sugar and Six More*. New York: Knopf, 1977.

DALAI LAMA

Born: July 6, 1935

Taktser, Tibet

Tibetan religious and political leader

The Dalai Lama is the fourteenth leader in a line of Buddhist spiritual and political leaders of Tibet. Buddhists are followers of Gautama Buddha (c. 563–c. 483 B.C.E.), who believed the troubles of this life can be overcome through moral and mental discipline. The Dalai Lama fled his country and took safety in India in 1959 during the revolt against Chinese control of Tibet. Since that time, while still in exile (a forced or a voluntary absence from one's country), he has promoted Tibetan religious and cultural traditions.

Early family life

The name given the Dalai Lama when he was born on July 6, 1935, was Lhamo Thondup. He came from a very small village in northeast Tibet called Taktser. At that time there were only twenty families living in all of Taktser. “Dalai Lama” is a name of honor and respect that was given to him by the Buddhist monks of Tibet. “Lama” means “teacher” or “wise person.” “Dalai” means “ocean.” When put together Dalai Lama is translated as “Ocean of Wisdom.”

The young Dalai Lama's parents were farmers who raised sheep and grew barley, buckwheat, and potatoes. In addition to Lhamo there were six other children in the family, four boys and two girls.

The Dalai Lama

The current Dalai Lama is the fourteenth person to hold that title in straight succession. This means the role is passed from one person to another with no break in order. The people of Tibet believe that when one Dalai Lama dies he is reincarnated (reborn) in a young child. In other words, they believe that the soul of the current Dalai Lama is the same soul that was in the first Dalai Lama.

The Dalai Lamas have been the head of the order of Gelugpa Buddhism, which means “Yellow Hat,” since the fourteenth century. The Dalai Lama took on the additional role of political leader in the seventeenth century. All Dalai Lamas since that time have had that dual responsibility.

How he was discovered

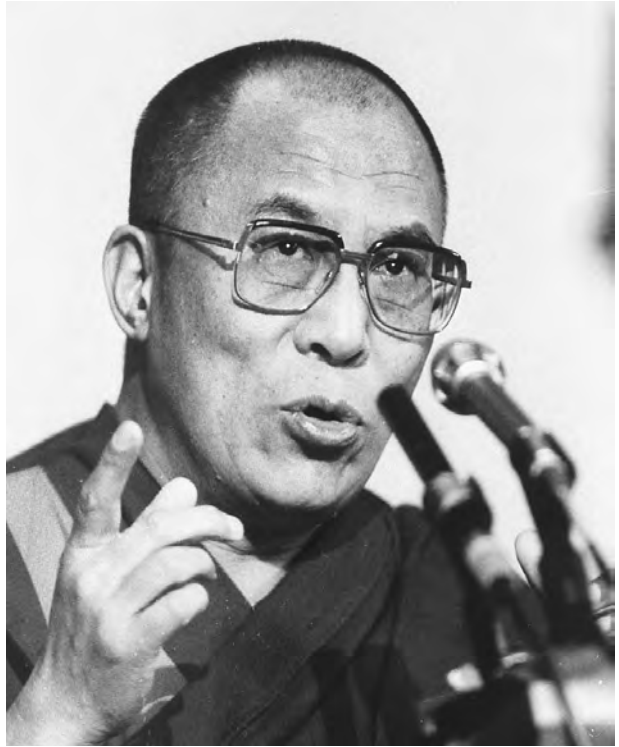
The thirteenth Dalai Lama died in December of 1933. When he died, the Bud-

dhist monks prayed for guidance to find the new Dalai Lama. They felt signs and oracles (divine answers or prophecies) would lead them to him. They finally received a vision that the new Dalai Lama would be found in the northeast part of Tibet. He would be living in a house that had strange gutters and that was near a monastery (a place where monks live and pray).

Many monks went out on the journey. After much searching, a group of them came to the village of Taktser, which has a monastery nearby. There they found Lhamo at his house, which had strangely shaped gutters. They spoke to him and to his parents and performed a test. The monks had brought several items with them from their home monastery. Some of the items had belonged to the thirteenth Dalai Lama and others were imitations or just common objects. Lhamo correctly identified the objects that had belonged to the thirteenth Dalai Lama. The monks knew they had found the reincarnation of their leader. Lhamo was two years old at the time.

His education

The monks took Lhamo to a monastery in Kumbum, Tibet. For two years he was given the basic education he would need to lead his country both spiritually and politically. After this he was brought to the Potala palace in Lhasa, the capital of the country. The Potala palace is a structure of over one thousand rooms built into a mountain. There he took his place on the Lion Throne, a richly carved, wooden throne covered with jewels. He was only four years old on February 22, 1940, when the monks declared that he was the new Dalai Lama. He took the name Jamphel Ngawang Lobsang Yeshe Tenzin Gyatso



Dalai Lama.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

in honor of lamas who had served before him. Since then, however, he has only used a shortened version of that name for himself—Tenzin Gyatso.

The monks at the Potala palace gave the Dalai Lama private instruction. His only classmate was one of his brothers. According to a long-standing tradition, when the young Dalai Lama misbehaved in class, it was his brother who was punished. Over the years the Dalai Lama learned penmanship, history, religion, philosophy, Tibetan medicine, art, music, and literature, among many other subjects. Throughout all of his study he attended meetings of the government.

The Dalai Lama loved working with mechanical things. He spent a great deal of time with his telescope. He enjoyed taking watches and small machines apart and putting them back together. There were only four cars in all of Tibet at that time and three belonged to the thirteenth Dalai Lama. Tenzin Gyatso loved working with the engines and trying to drive the cars.

The Dalai Lama took over the political leadership of Tibet in November 1950, not long after the Chinese Communist army invaded the country. (Communism is a political system based on the belief that property should not be owned by any individual but should belong to everyone in common. Communists also believe that all business should be under the control of the government.) The Dalai Lama was fifteen years old and leading a country on the brink of crisis.

His exile

Mainland China had become a communist nation in 1949 after World War II (1939–45; a war in which the Allies, including France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States, defeated the Axis forces of Germany, Italy, and Japan). Mao Zedong (1893–1976) led communist China. Eighty thousand members of the Chinese army invaded Tibet in early 1950. The Chinese said the people of Tibet invited the army to save them from the rule of a cruel government. The Chinese also claimed that Tibet was originally a part of China.

Neither of these statements were true. The Dalai Lama visited with the Chinese to ask them to leave Tibet. They would not. He visited neighboring countries to try to get help to push the invaders out. The other

countries, however, were afraid of what might happen to them if they opposed a nation as powerful as China, and they offered little support. After years of trying to negotiate with the Chinese and seeing his people suffer under Chinese rule, the Dalai Lama finally fled to India in April 1959. He has been away from his native Tibet since then.

His life after exile

The Dalai Lama learned Buddhist thought and practice as part of his monastic (done by monks or nuns) training. The people of Tibet still consider him to be their spiritual and political leader. Since his exile he has worked tirelessly to help Tibetans who have managed to flee their country. He has worked with many Westerners for the cause of returning Tibet to its own people.

The Dalai Lama's contact with Westerners has broadened his interest beyond Buddhism. He has given many speeches and written several books. In them he discusses how religions are similar in their development of love and compassion and in their pursuit of goodness and happiness for all beings. He is greatly admired, not just by Buddhists, but by people everywhere. He speaks not only of spiritual matters, but also of global peace and environmental concerns. His thoughts are received as popular and universal messages.

In 1987 the Dalai Lama was the recipient of the Albert Schweitzer Humanitarian Award, named after the famous Dr. Schweitzer (1875–1965), who worked in Africa. In 1989 the Dalai Lama was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize.

The Dalai Lama remains an active and revered humanitarian (someone who believes

in human welfare and social reform) throughout the world, even though an intestinal illness he suffered in January 2002 caused him to cut back on his schedule. He has spent much of his time traveling, speaking against communism, and working for peace. He has a devoted following that includes individuals from all over the world and from all walks of life. His struggles for peace and freedom have made him one of the most recognized and well-regarded political and spiritual leaders in the world.

For More Information

Dalai Lama XIV. *The Buddhism of Tibet*. London: Allen & Unwin, 1975.

Dalai Lama XIV. *The Dalai Lama at Harvard: Lectures on the Buddhist Path to Peace*. Ithaca, NY: Snow Lion Publications, 1988.

Dalai Lama XIV. *Freedom in Exile: The Autobiography of the Dalai Lama*. New York: Harper Collins, 1990.

SALVADOR DALI

Born: May 11, 1904

Barcelona, Spain

Died: January 23, 1989

Figueras, Spain

Spanish painter and artist

The Spanish painter Salvador Dali was one of the best-known surrealist artists (artists who seek to express

the contents of the unconscious mind). Blessed with an enormous talent for drawing, he painted his dreams and bizarre moods in a precise way.

Early life

Salvador Dali was born on May 11, 1904, near Barcelona, Spain. He was the son of Salvador and Felipa Dome (Domenech) Dali. His father was a notary (one who witnesses the signing of important documents). According to Dali's autobiography (the story of his own life), his childhood was filled with fits of anger against his parents and classmates and he received cruel treatment from them in response. He was an intelligent child, producing advanced drawings at an early age.

Dali attended the Colegio de los Hermanos Maristas and the Instituto in Figueras, Spain. By 1921 he convinced his father that he could make a living as an artist and was allowed to go to Madrid, Spain, to study painting. He was strongly influenced by the dreamlike works of the Italian painter Giorgio de Chirico (1888–1978). He also experimented with cubism (a type of art in which objects are viewed in terms of geometry—the science of points, lines, and surfaces). He was briefly imprisoned for political activities against the government and was finally thrown out of art school in 1925.

Association with surrealist movement

Dali's own style eventually began to show itself: he would draw, in an extremely precise manner, the strange subjects of his dream world. Each object, while carefully drawn, existed in strange contrast to other objects and was contained in a space that often appeared to tilt sharply upward. He applied bright col-



Salvador Dali.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

ors to small objects set off against large patches of dull color. His personal style showed a number of influences, strongest among which was his contact with surrealism. The surrealists believed in artistic and political freedom to help free the imagination. Dali's first contact with the movement was through seeing paintings; he then met other surrealist artists when he visited Paris, France, in 1928. Dali created some of his finest paintings in 1929.

In the early 1930s many of the surrealists began to break away from the movement, feeling that direct political action had to come before any artistic revolutions. Dali put forth his "Paranoic-Critical method" as a way to

avoid having to politically conquer the world. He felt that by using his own vision to color reality to his liking it would become unnecessary to actually change the world. The Paranoic-Critical method meant that Dali had trained himself to possess the power to look at one object and "see" another. This did not apply only to painting; it meant that Dali could take a myth that was interpreted a certain way and impose upon it his own personal ideas.

A key event in Dali's life during this time was meeting his wife, Gala, who was at that time married to another surrealist. She became his main influence, both in his personal life and in many of his paintings. Toward the end of the 1930s, Dali's exaggerated view of himself began to annoy others. André Breton (1896–1966), a French poet and critic who was a leading surrealist, angrily expelled Dali from the surrealist movement. Dali continued to be very successful in painting as well as in writing, stage design, and films, but his seriousness as an artist began to be questioned. He took a strong stand against abstract (unrealistic) art and began to paint Catholic subjects in the same tight style that had previously described his personal nightmares.

Later years

In 1974 Dali broke with English business manager Peter Moore and had the rights to his art sold out from under him by other business managers, leaving him with none of the profits. In 1980 a man named A. Reynolds Morse of Cleveland, Ohio, set up an organization called Friends to Save Dali. Dali was said to have been cheated out of much of his wealth, and the goal of the foundation was to put him back on solid financial (relating to money) ground.

In 1983 Dali exhibited many of his works at the Museum of Contemporary Art in Madrid. This show made him hugely famous in Spain and brought him further into favor with the Spanish royal family and major collectors around the world. After 1984 Dali was confined to a wheelchair after suffering injuries in a house fire.

Dali died on January 23, 1989, in Figueras, Spain. He was remembered as the subject of much controversy (dispute), although in his last years, the controversy had more to do with his associates and their dealings than with Dali himself.

For More Information

Carter, David A. *Salvador Dali*. New York: Chelsea House, 1995.

Dalí, Salvador. *Diary of a Genius*. New York: Doubleday, 1965.

Dali, Salvador. *The Secret Life of Salvador Dali*. New York: Dial Press, 1942. Reprint, New York: Dover, 1993.

Descharnes, Robert. *The World of Salvador Dali*. New York: Harper & Row, 1962.

Etherington-Smith, Meredith. *The Persistence of Memory: A Biography of Dali*. New York: Random House, 1992.

CLARENCE DARROW

Born: April 18, 1857
Farmdale, Ohio

Died: March 13, 1938

Chicago, Illinois

American lawyer

As an American labor lawyer and as a criminal lawyer, Clarence Darrow participated in debates about the path of American industrial growth and the treatment of individuals in conflict with the law.

Early life

Clarence Seward Darrow was born on April 18, 1857, in Farmdale, Ohio, the fifth of Amirus and Emily Darrow's eight children. His father, after completing studies at a seminary (institution for training members of the priesthood), had lost his faith and become a nonbeliever living within a strongly religious community. (The Darrows were also outsiders in a political sense; they were Democrats in a strongly Republican area.) The elder Darrow worked as a carpenter and coffin maker. His mother, who died when he was fifteen, was a strong supporter of women's rights. From his parents Darrow received a love of reading and a skeptical (doubting) attitude toward religion.

Darrow, after completing his secondary schooling near Farmdale, spent a year at Allegheny College in Meadville, Pennsylvania, and another year at the University of Michigan Law School. Like most lawyers of the time, he delayed his admission to the bar until after he had studied under a local lawyer. He finally became a member of the Ohio bar in 1878. For the next nine years he was a typical small-town lawyer, practicing in the cities of Kinsman, Andover, and Ashtabula, Ohio. He married Jessie Ohl, the daugh-



Clarence Darrow.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

ter of a mill owner, in 1880, and the couple had a son three years later.

Seeking more interesting opportunities, however, Darrow and his family moved to Chicago, Illinois, in 1887. In Ohio he had been impressed with the book *Our Penal Machinery and Its Victims* by Judge John Peter Altgeld. Darrow became a close friend of Altgeld, who was elected governor of Illinois in 1892. Altgeld not only raised questions about the process of criminal justice but, after pardoning several men who had been convicted for their part in the Haymarket riot of 1886 (a dispute between striking laborers and the Chicago police that led to

the bombing deaths of seven policemen), he also questioned the treatment of those who were trying to organize workers into unions. Both of these themes played great roles in Darrow's life.

Labor lawyer

Darrow had begun as a common civil lawyer. Even in Chicago his first jobs included appointment as the city's corporation counsel in 1890 and then as general attorney to the Chicago and North Western Railway. In 1894, however, he began what would be his main career for the next twenty years—labor law. During 1894 he defended labor leader Eugene V. Debs (1855–1926) against a court order trying to break the workers' strike Debs was leading against the Pullman Sleeping Car Company. Darrow was unsuccessful, though; the order against Debs was finally upheld by the Supreme Court.

In 1906 and 1907 Darrow successfully defended William D. "Big Bill" Haywood, the leader of the newly formed Industrial Workers of the World, against a charge of plotting to murder the former governor of Idaho. But in 1911 disaster struck, as Darrow, while defending two brothers against a charge of killing twenty-one people by blowing up the *Los Angeles Times* building, was suddenly faced with his clients' changing their previous plea of innocent to guilty. There were also rumors that Darrow had attempted to bribe one of the members of the jury. As a result, Darrow was charged with misconduct, although he was found not guilty on all charges. This event ended his career as a labor lawyer, however.

Criminal lawyer

Darrow had always been interested in criminal law, in part because of his acceptance of new theories involving the role of determinism in human behavior. He believed that criminals were people led by outside factors (such as personality and environment) into committing unlawful acts. For this reason he was a bitter opponent of capital punishment, viewing it as an inhuman practice. Now he began a new major career as a criminal lawyer.

Without a doubt Darrow's most famous criminal trial was the 1924 Leopold-Loeb case, in which two Chicago college students had murdered a youngster simply to see if they could get away with it. For the only time in his career, Darrow insisted that his clients plead guilty. He then turned his attention to saving them from the death penalty. He was successful in this, partly because he was able to introduce a great deal of testimony from psychiatrists (doctors who deal with mental or behavioral disorders) supporting his theories regarding the determining influences on individual acts. In another successful case he defended members of an African American family charged with murdering a member of the Ku Klux Klan (KKK; a secret society whose members believe that white people are superior and who frequently resort to violence against nonwhite citizens) who had attempted to drive them from their home.

Scopes trial

During this period Darrow was also involved in another great American case, the Scopes trial of 1925 in Dayton, Tennessee. The issue was the right of a state legislature to prohibit the teaching in public schools of Charles Darwin's (1809–1882) theories of

evolution (which suggested that the origins of humans and apes could be traced back to a common ancestor). Darrow, as a nonbeliever in religion and a believer in evolution, was annoyed with the religious tone of the law that had been passed. He sought to defend the young schoolteacher, John T. Scopes, who had raised the issue of evolution in his classroom. Technically, Darrow was unsuccessful, as Scopes was convicted and fined \$100 for what the court believed was a crime. But Darrow's defense, and particularly his cross-examination of William Jennings Bryan (1860–1925), the three-time Democratic candidate for president who spoke for the religious, antiscientific side, won national attention and led many to question the wisdom of strict interpretation of the Bible.

Two books among Darrow's many writings are evidence of his interests toward the end of his life. In 1922 he wrote *Crime: Its Cause and Treatment*; in 1929 appeared *Infidels and Heretics*, coedited with Wallace Rice, in which he presented the case for free thinking. To these two issue-oriented books he added *The Story of My Life* (1932), an autobiography (the story of his own life). Darrow's last important public service was as chairman of a commission appointed by President Franklin D. Roosevelt. The commission examined the operation of the National Recovery Administration, an agency set up during the early 1930s to regulate industry competition and workers' wages and hours. Darrow died on March 13, 1938.

For More Information

Darrow, Clarence. *Attorney for the Damned*. Edited by Arthur Weinberg. New York:

Simon and Schuster, 1957. Reprint, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1989.

Darrow, Clarence. *The Story of My Life*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1932. Reprint, New York: Da Capo Press, 1996.

Driemen, John E. *Clarence Darrow*. New York: Chelsea House, 1992.

Stone, Irving. *Clarence Darrow for the Defense*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1941.

CHARLES DARWIN

Born: February 12, 1809

Shrewsbury, England

Died: April 19, 1882

Kent, England

English naturalist

In *The Origin of Species* the English naturalist Charles Darwin outlined the theory of natural selection, or “survival of the fittest,” as the explanation for the changing of living beings over time.

Early life and education

Charles Robert Darwin was born on February 12, 1809, in Shrewsbury, England, the fifth child of Robert and Susannah Darwin. His father was a successful doctor, as was his grandfather, Erasmus Darwin, who had a great influence on Charles's later theories. His mother, who was the daughter of the famous pottery maker Josiah Wedgwood (1730–

1795), died when Charles was eight. His sisters then raised him. At the age of nine Charles entered Shrewsbury School. He was not a very good student.

In 1825 Darwin went to Edinburgh University in Scotland to study medicine, but he soon realized that he was unable to even watch an operation being performed. In 1828 he entered Christ's College, Cambridge, England, to become a minister. He soon gave up that idea also, but he continued to study. He attended John Stevens Henslow's course in botany (the study of plants), started a collection of beetles that became famous, and read widely. He received his bachelor's degree in 1831.

Voyage of the Beagle

On Henslow's recommendation Darwin was offered the position of naturalist for the second voyage of *H. M. S. Beagle* to survey the coast of South America. The *Beagle* left in December 1831 and returned in October 1836. During the voyage Darwin studied many different plants and animals and collected many specimens, concentrating on location and habits. Darwin was influenced in his *Beagle* studies by scientist Charles Lyell's *Principles of Geology* (1830–33), which stated that present conditions and processes were clues to the Earth's past history.

Darwin noticed on the trip that certain types of organisms existed only in certain areas and that many organisms had gone through changes that made it easier for them to survive in certain environments. For example, he studied a type of bird called a finch and realized that there were over a dozen different kinds. The size and shape of the beaks of these birds differed depending

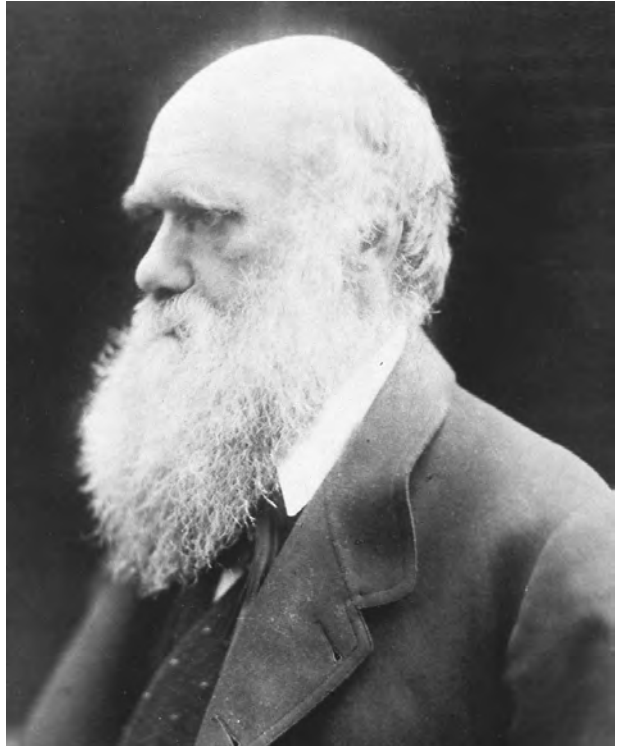
on what kind of food was available in the area each lived in.

Darwin's *Journal of Researches* was published in 1839. With the help of a government grant to cover the cost of the illustrations, the *Zoology of the Voyage of the Beagle* was published in five volumes from 1839 to 1843. A number of scientists wrote articles on fossils (the preserved remains of creatures from an earlier age), living mammals, birds, fish, and reptiles. Darwin edited the work. He contributed information on the habits and ranges of the animals and made notes on the fossils. He also published *The Structure and Distribution of Coral Reefs* (1842), for he had studied the coral reefs in the Cocos Islands during the *Beagle* voyage.

Development of ideas on evolution

In 1842 and 1844 Darwin wrote short accounts of his views on evolution (change and improvement over time). However, the publication of other related works around the same time caused great controversy (dispute) and criticism of the authors, and Darwin decided the time was not yet right for him to enter the argument. He decided to wait and do more research. Darwin studied the practices of pigeon breeders, he conducted experiments on differences in plants and animals over time, and he worried about the problem of plant and animal transport across land and water barriers—for he believed in the importance of isolation for the creation of new species.

In May 1856 Lyell heard of Darwin's ideas and urged him to write an account with full references. Darwin sent a chapter to Lyell and Sir Joseph Hooker, who were deeply impressed. In June 1858, when Darwin was



Charles Darwin.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

halfway through his writing, he received an essay from another naturalist, Alfred Russel Wallace (1823–1913), containing the theory of evolution by natural selection—the same theory Darwin was working on. Lyell and Hooker arranged for a reading of a combined paper by Wallace and Darwin, and it was presented at a meeting of the Linnaean Society in London, England, on July 1. The paper had little effect.

Origin of Species

In November 1859 Darwin published *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, or the Preservation of Favoured Races*

in the *Struggle for Life*. His basic idea was that in the struggle to survive, some organisms adapt better than others to their surroundings, and when these survivors give birth they pass their traits on to their offspring, causing species to evolve. An English philosopher (seeker of wisdom) named Herbert Spencer created the phrase “survival of the fittest” to describe this idea.

The publication of Darwin’s book brought worldwide attention to his theory and created heated dispute. Darwin was aware of all the criticism he received and tried to answer it in the additional five editions of *Origin* that were produced during his lifetime. In these editions he wanted to avoid trouble and wound up making several changes; this weakened his presentation and made him seem unsure of his views. The first edition is easily the best.

Later works

In *On the Various Contrivances by Which British and Foreign Orchids Are Fertilised by Insects* (1862), Darwin showed how the survival of an organism may be dependent on seemingly unimportant qualities. It became hard to say what is “useless” in nature. In *The Variation of Animals and Plants under Domestication* (1868), he expanded on a topic he had introduced in *Origin*. With *The Descent of Man and Selection in Relation to Sex* (1871) Darwin caused another uproar by suggesting that humans and apes both could be traced to a common ancestor.

Darwin became increasingly interested in plants, especially since he had his son Francis to help with the work. Papers Darwin had published in 1864 were collected into *The Movements and Habits of Climbing Plants*

(1875), and these ideas were further explained and published as *The Power of Movement in Plants* (1880). Darwin’s last work returned to observations he had made in 1837: *The Formation of Vegetable Mould through the Action of Worms, with Observations on Their Habits* (1881).

Darwin had married Emma Wedgwood, his first cousin, in 1839. Four of their sons became prominent scientists. He died on April 19, 1882, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

For More Information

Browne, Janet. *Charles Darwin: The Power of Place*. New York: Knopf, 2002.

Bowlby, John. *Charles Darwin: A New Life*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1991.

Darwin, Francis, ed. *The Life and Letters of Charles Darwin*. 3 vols. New York: D. Appleton, 1887. Reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1972.

Keynes, Randall. *Darwin, His Daughter, and Human Evolution*. New York: Riverhead Books, 2002.

**BETTE
DAVIS**

Born: April 5, 1908

Lowell, Massachusetts

Died: October 6, 1989

Neuilly-sur-Seine, France

American actress

Bette Davis was one of Hollywood's greatest actresses. In her sixty-year career in films she won two Best Actress Academy Awards and was a finalist for eight others.

Early years

Ruth Elizabeth Davis was born in Lowell, Massachusetts, on April 5, 1908, the eldest daughter of Harlow Morrell Davis, a lawyer, and Ruth Favor Davis. She was called Bette as a child and kept the name throughout her career. After her parents divorced in 1916, she and her sister, Barbara, moved frequently throughout New England with their mother, who was pursuing a photography career. Both girls attended boarding school in the Berkshires and went to high school in Newton, Massachusetts. Bette started acting in plays and taking drama classes while she was in school. She graduated from Cushing Academy, in Ashburnham, Massachusetts, with an idea that she might try acting. But she received little encouragement, as she was not considered very beautiful. She had made up her mind, though, and she headed for New York City.

Slow start to career

Davis enrolled in John Murray Anderson's drama school and found some work with George Cukor's acting company in Rochester, New York. She also worked at the Cape Playhouse in Dennis, Massachusetts, as an usherette (a female guide who escorts people to correct seats in theaters or in other events) and a bit-part player. Her first major role was in a stage production of *The Earth Between* (1928). After a brief tour in *The Wild Duck*, Davis reached Broadway. The comedy



Bette Davis.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Broken Dishes opened in November 1929 and ran for six months. That led to a 1930 production of *Solid South*, after which she failed a screen test in Hollywood.

Davis was also tested at Universal Studios and hired, even though studio executives were not very supportive. She appeared in two films in 1931, *Bad Sister* and *Seed*. The critics ignored her in both. Davis got a break when she was offered a part in *The Man Who Played God*. She received good reviews and a long-term contract from the Warner Brothers studio. This began a series of films with Warner, mostly unremarkable and insignificant, but critics began to notice Davis's talent and unique quality. Davis

began to claw her way to the top of the film world. She fought for and won the right to appear in another studio's production of *Of Human Bondage*. Suddenly, the world was introduced to a brilliant new actress.

Success arrives

Warner continued to cast Davis in poor-quality films, with two exceptions. Playing a failed actress who tries to murder her husband in *Dangerous*, she won her first Best Actress Academy Award in 1935. She also appeared with Humphrey Bogart (1899–1957) and Leslie Howard in *The Petrified Forest* in 1936. Growing disgusted with the studio's offerings, Davis refused any more roles. The studio suspended her. She sued, which shocked the movie world. Although Davis lost her battle in court, Warner Brothers apparently got the message—they paid her legal fees and began offering her better roles. Her performance in *Jezebel* (1938) won her a second Academy Award.

By the end of the 1940s, Davis's career seemed to be slowing down. But she came through with a great performance in *All About Eve* (1950), winning the New York Film Critics best actress of the year award. After a number of films in the 1950s, Davis's career seemed to slow down again. But in 1962, Davis appeared in the smash hit *Whatever Happened to Baby Jane?*, acting opposite Joan Crawford (1904–1977). This was followed by *Hush*, *Hush*, *Sweet Charlotte* in 1965.

Later years

During the 1970s and 1980s, Davis continued to appear in films, mainly on television. She also appeared on many talk shows, delighting her audiences by her refusal to give

in to old age. She was the fifth person to receive the American Film Institute's Life Achievement Award in 1977 and the first woman to be so honored. In 1979 she won an Emmy Award for *Strangers: The Story of a Mother and Daughter*.

Davis wrote two books about her own life, *The Lonely Life* (1962) and *This 'N That* (1987) (the second of which answered charges by her daughter that Davis was an alcoholic who had abused her children). She was also married four times. In the last five years of her life, Davis suffered from cancer and had several strokes. She died on October 6, 1989, in Neuilly-sur-Seine, France. She had just attended the San Sebastian Film Festival in Spain, where she had been honored for a lifetime of film achievement. In 1997 her son Michael created the Bette Davis Foundation. A year later he awarded American actress Meryl Streep (1949–) the first ever Bette Davis Lifetime Achievement Award.

For More Information

Davis, Bette, and Michael Herskowitz. *This 'N That*. New York: Putnam, 1987.

Hadleigh, Boze. *Bette Davis Speaks*. New York: Barricade Books, 1996.

Spada, James. *More than a Woman: An Intimate Biography of Bette Davis*. New York: Bantam Books, 1993.

MILES
DAVIS

Born: May 25, 1926
Alton, Illinois

Died: September 28, 1991

Santa Monica, California

*African American musician, composer,
and trumpeter*

A jazz trumpeter, composer, and small-band leader, Miles Davis was the leading jazz musician for more than two decades. His legend continued to grow even after poor health and diminished creativity removed him from jazz royalty.

Early life

Miles Dewey Davis III was born to Miles Davis Jr. and Cleota Henry in Alton, Illinois, on May 25, 1926. There were also two other children, an older sister and a younger brother. In 1928 the family moved to East St. Louis, Illinois, where Davis's father became a successful oral surgeon. Davis enjoyed a comfortable childhood and the family lived in a white neighborhood. At the age of thirteen his father gave him a trumpet and soon Davis joined his high school band. While still in high school he met and was coached by his earliest idol, the great St. Louis trumpeter Clark Terry (1920–).

After fathering two children by a woman friend, Davis moved to New York City in 1944. He worked for just two weeks in the talent-packed Billy Eckstine Band, then enrolled in the Juilliard School of Music. By day he studied classical music, and by night he gained experience in jazz's newest movement, bebop, with the leaders of the movement, notably Charlie Parker (1920–1955), Dizzy Gillespie (1917–1993), Fats Navarro, and Max Roach (1924–).



Miles Davis.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

“Cool” jazz

Davis's stint from 1947 to 1948 in a quintet (group of five musicians) led by bebop genius Charlie Parker brought him early fame. A fine bebop trumpeter, Davis soon felt a need to rid his music of bebop's style and to restore jazz's more melodic elements. The result was the influential recording *Birth of the Cool* (1949), which gave “birth” to the so-called “cool,” or West Coast, jazz school. This recording established Davis' musical identity, separate from Parker and the other beboppers.

In the early 1950s Davis became a heroin (dangerous drug made from morphine)

addict. His career came to a near halt for three years, but his ultimately successful fight against the drug habit in 1954 led to his greatest period: the mid-to-late 1950s. During that six-year span he made a series of small group recordings regarded as jazz classics. In 1954, with tenor saxophone titan Sonny Rollins (1930–), he made memorable recordings of three Rollins originals—“Airegin,” “Doxy,” and “Oleo”—as well as two brilliant versions of the Tin Pan Alley (a respected group of musicians and songwriters) standard “But Not for Me.”

In 1955 Davis formed his most celebrated group, a remarkably talented quintet that featured tenor saxophonist John Coltrane (1926–1967), pianist Red Garland, bassist Paul Chambers, and drummer Philly Joe Jones. Until Coltrane left in the 1960s, Davis’s band was the single most visible and dominant group in all of jazz. In 1964 he put together a new band, and Davis continued to be the greatest attraction (and biggest money-maker) in all of jazz. His new band, however, could not match the impossibly high standards of the original band.

Davis, the person

For the last two decades of Davis’s career he became more of a jazz curiosity than a musician to be taken seriously. A good part of his fame owed less to his considerable musicianship than to his strange personality. Davis gained a poor reputation in performance for turning his back on audiences, for expressing racial hostility toward whites, for dressing poorly early in his career and wildly later—all of which contributed to his mysterious image.

Davis was a complex man with strengths and weaknesses that would ulti-

mately destroy him. Himself the victim of a policeman’s clubbing (reportedly, racially inspired), he had the fairness and courage in the late 1950s to challenge black jazzmen’s expectations by filling a piano vacancy with a white player, Bill Evans (1929–1980); but then, by all accounts, Davis often racially taunted him. A physical fitness enthusiast (with his own private gym), he nevertheless took vast amounts of drugs (sometimes, but not always, for pain). Oftentimes unfriendly, he was also capable of acts of generosity toward struggling musicians, both black and white.

Davis was married three times—to dancer Frances Taylor, singer Betty Mabry, and actress Cicely Tyson. All three marriages ended in divorce. He had, in all, three sons, a daughter, and seven grandchildren. He died on September 28, 1991, in Santa Monica, California, of pneumonia, respiratory failure, and a stroke.

Davis remains one of the most influential musicians in the history of jazz. His music lives on in recordings like *Miles Ahead* (1957), *Porgy and Bess* (1958), and *Sketches of Spain* (1960), and the hauntingly “blue” sound of his trumpet.

For More Information

Carr, Ian. *Miles Davis: The Definitive Biography*. New York: Thunder’s Mouth Press, 1998.

Crouch, Stanley. “Play the Right Thing.” *New Republic* (February 12, 1990).

Davis, Miles. *Miles: The Autobiography*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1989.

Williams, Richard. *Miles Davis: The Man in the Green Shirt*. New York: H. Holt, 1993.

OSSIE DAVIS

Born: December 18, 1917

Cogdell, Georgia

African American actor, playwright, director, and activist

Ossie Davis is a leading African American playwright, actor, director, and television and movie star. He was a part of the civil rights movement and helped lead the way for a new generation of African American film directors.

Early life

Ossie Davis was born in Cogdell, Georgia, on December 18, 1917, the oldest of five children of Kincaid Charles Davis and Laura Cooper Davis. He grew up in Waycross, Georgia. His father was a railroad construction engineer who entertained his family by telling stories. While still attending Central High School in Waycross, Davis decided to become a writer after witnessing how badly prejudiced white people treated his father. At Howard University in Washington, D.C., Davis was encouraged to pursue an acting career. He left college after his junior year and joined an acting group in Harlem in New York City. He also took part in the American Negro Theater, founded there in 1940.

Stage and screen career

Davis made his debut in the play *Joy Exceeding Glory* (1941). In 1942 he was drafted into the U.S. Army to serve during World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis—Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the

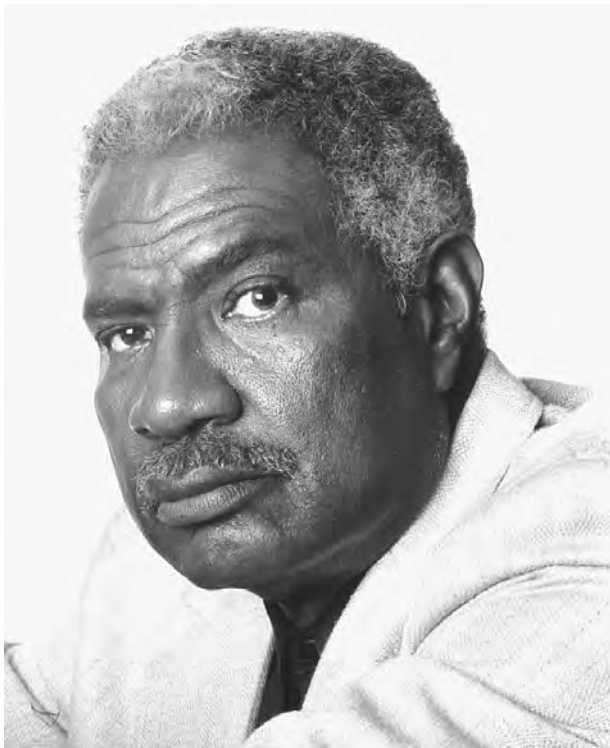
Allies—Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States). He worked in Liberia with the Medical Department and also wrote and produced shows. After the war he returned to the stage, playing his first Broadway role in *Jeb* (1946). While performing in this show he met actress Ruby Dee (1924–), and they were married two years later.

Davis's first movie role was in *No Way Out* (1950). This was followed by Broadway performances in *No Time for Sergeants*, *Raisin in the Sun*, and *Jamaica*. Other movie roles included *The Cardinal*, *Shock Treatment*, and *Slaves*. He was also one of the first African American actors to work regularly in television, appearing in dramas and on such regular series as *The Defenders* and *The Nurses*. Davis also wrote television scripts.

Davis and Ruby Dee acted together many times on the stage, in television, and in movies. They starred in Davis's own play *Purlie Victorious* (1961) and in the movie based on it, *Gone Are the Days*. *Purlie Victorious* was published and also reprinted in collections of plays. Davis went on to coauthor the musical version of the play, *Purlie* (1970), which enjoyed great success during its Broadway run.

Director and writer

In the late 1960s Davis became one of the few African American film directors when he worked on *Cotton Comes to Harlem* and other films. With Ruby Dee he appeared on stage and television, reading the poetry of famous African Americans, and he made recordings of African American literature. One of his most famous moments was his tribute to Malcolm X (1925–1965) in 1965, when he called the slain Muslim leader “Our Shining Black Prince.” Davis also frequently



Ossie Davis.

Reproduced by permission of the Artists Agency.

gave lectures and readings at universities and schools.

Davis's published essays include "The Wonderful World of Law and Order," "The Flight from Broadway," and "Plays of Insight Are Needed to Make the Stage Vital in Our Lives." He also wrote the play *Last Dance for Sybil* and a musical version of Mark Twain's *Pudd'nhead Wilson*.

Davis has a deep love for his people. He is an example of African American pride, and he devoted much time and talent to the civil rights movement (a mass movement starting from the mid-1900s that led to the end of seg-

regation [separation based on race] and equal rights for African Americans) in America. He received a number of awards, including the Mississippi Democratic Party Citation, the Howard University Alumni Achievement Award in dramatics, and the Frederick A. Douglass (c. 1817–1895) Award (with Ruby Dee) from the New York Urban League. The Davises have three children and make their home in New Rochelle, New York.

Later years

In his later years Davis has remained very active, mostly in television. He appeared on the Public Broadcasting System (PBS) program *With Ossie and Ruby*, as well as on the popular series *Evening Shade*. He also helped pave the way for a new generation of African American film directors, led by Spike Lee (1957–). Davis performed in three of Lee's films, including *Do the Right Thing* (1989). Davis even tried his hand at writing fiction. His novel *Just Like Martin*, a tribute to the civil rights movement, was published in 1992.

In January 1999 Davis and his wife Ruby Dee celebrated fifty years of marriage at a benefit for community theaters in New York City. Later that year they were among several people arrested while protesting the shooting of an unarmed West African immigrant by New York City police officers. In 2001 Davis and Dee were honored with a Screen Actors Guild Lifetime Achievement Award at ceremonies held in Los Angeles, California.

For More Information

Abramson, Doris E. *Negro Playwrights in the American Theatre, 1925–1959*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1969.

Davis, Ossie, and Ruby Dee. *With Ossie and Ruby: In This Life Together*. New York: W. Morrow, 1998.

Mitchell, Loftin. *Black Drama: The Story of the American Negro in the Theatre*. New York: Hawthorn Books, 1967.

SAMMY DAVIS JR.

Born: December 8, 1925

New York, New York

Died: May 16, 1990

Los Angeles, California

African American singer, dancer, and actor

American entertainer Sammy Davis Jr. had a career that spanned more than five decades. He started in vaudeville (short funny acts on stage, such as song-and-dance and singing) and progressed to Broadway theater, film, and performing in Las Vegas, Nevada.

Learned to tap dance like a master

Sammy Davis Jr., born on December 8, 1925, began performing almost as soon as he could walk. Both of his parents, Elvera Sanchez and Sammy Davis Sr., were vaudevillians who danced with the Will Mastin Troupe. Sammy Jr. became the Mastin Troupe's youngest member at age three. He became a regular at age five and traveled with his father on the shrinking vaudeville circuit. Sammy Jr. was able to dance very quickly in a style called "flash dancing." He danced so well that once, competing against older chil-

dren, he won a silver cup and ten dollars. By the time he was eight years old he had appeared in two movies.

Sammy Jr.'s demanding schedule of travel, practice, and performances left little time for formal education. When he could afford it, his father hired tutors. But Sammy Jr. could not read much more than comic books until he grew up and joined the army. His unconventional childhood did provide him with important lessons, however. Young Sammy learned how to please an audience, how to tap dance like a master, and how to move people with a smile and a song.

The growing movie industry

Few vaudeville acts in the 1930s survived the competition from the growing motion picture industry. The Mastin Troupe decreased gradually until it became a three-person act—Sammy Davis Sr., Will Mastin, and Sammy Davis Jr. By 1940 Sammy Jr. had become the star attraction. The act was popular enough to receive billings in larger clubs, and in that environment Davis met other performers such as Bill "Bojangles" Robinson (1878–1949), Frank Sinatra (1915–1998), and various big band leaders.

The army

Davis was drafted into the United States Army in 1943, when he turned eighteen. An African American sergeant, who taught him how to read, befriended him. He was constantly mistreated by white troops, however, with whom he shared living quarters. Transferred to an entertainment regiment, Davis eventually found himself performing in front of some of these same soldiers. He discovered that his energetic dancing and singing could



Sammy Davis Jr.
 Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

win over the bigots (people who are opposed to others because of their race or their beliefs).

Headliner in Las Vegas and New York

Davis went solo in 1950 after signing a recording contract with Decca Records. His first two albums, *Starring Sammy Davis, Jr.* and *Just for Lovers*, sold well. Soon Davis was a headliner (main performer) in Las Vegas and New York, as well as a guest star on numerous television shows.

On November 19, 1954, Davis nearly lost his life in an automobile accident in the California desert. The accident shattered his

face and caused him to lose his left eye. While recovering, he spent hours discussing philosophy (the study of humans and their place in the universe) with a rabbi (Jewish spiritual leader) on staff at the hospital. Shortly thereafter he converted to Judaism. Upon Davis's return to the stage he sold out every performance and received thunderous applause. Some critics suggested that he might have had hidden motives for converting to Judaism. Others, however, especially African Americans, applauded his thoughtful observations about Jews, African Americans, and oppression.

Davis began the 1960s as a certified superstar of stage and screen. He had turned "Mr. Wonderful" into a successful Broadway show, and he earned critical raves for his performance in the film *Porgy and Bess*. As a member of the high-profile "Rat Pack," he associated with Frank Sinatra, Dean Martin (1917–1995), Peter Lawford (1923–1984), and Joey Bishop (1918–) at fashionable nightclubs in Las Vegas and Los Angeles, California.

In 1965 Davis starred in another Broadway play, *Golden Boy*, and in two movies, *A Man Called Adam* and *Sweet Charity*. He also starred in two television shows during the same years, *The Sammy Davis, Jr. Show* and *The Swinging World of Sammy Davis, Jr.*

Pitfalls of the "swinging world"

Davis's "swinging world" had its dangers, however. Many people disapproved of his 1960 interracial marriage to Swedish actress Mai Britt. His "Rat Pack" habits of drinking and partying threatened his health. Further, heavy spending nearly bankrupted (lost all one's money) him, even though he earned more than a million dollars a year.

Throughout the 1960s Davis had been a vocal supporter of the Black Power movement and other left-wing (liberal) causes. In the early 1970s he lost support of some liberals and members of the African American community when he embraced President Richard M. Nixon (1913–1994) and performed in Vietnam, which was the site of the Vietnam War (1955–75; a war between the communist forces of North Vietnam and United States-backed South Vietnam). By that time Davis had developed liver and kidney trouble and spent some months in the hospital early in 1974.

Davis recorded albums throughout his career and performed a number of signature songs. Chief among these were his tribute to Bill Robinson, “Mr. Bojangles,” the ballads “What Kind of Fool Am I” and “I’ve Gotta Be Me,” and his biggest hit, the upbeat “Candy Man.” Davis’s singing was like everything else in his performance—energetic, spirited, and played to maximum effect.

The last fifteen years of Davis’s life were conducted at the performer’s usual hectic pace. In 1978 he appeared in another Broadway musical, *Stop the World—I Want To Get Off*. He occasionally served as a stand-in host for the popular “Tonight Show,” and he returned to the casino stages. Even hip surgery failed to stop Davis from performing. His best-known act in the 1980s was a musical review with his friends Sinatra and Liza Minnelli (1946–), which played to sold-out crowds in the United States and Europe just a year before Davis’s death.

Doctors discovered a tumor in Davis’s throat in August of 1989. The performer underwent painful cancer treatment that at first seemed successful. Within a few months the cancer returned, however. Davis died on May

16, 1990, only eight weeks after his friends honored him with a television special.

A mentor and a pioneer

Davis’s long career in show business was even more remarkable because he managed to break color barriers in an era of segregation (the separation of a race from the rest of society) and racism (the belief that some races are better than others). He was one of the very few stars, African American or white, to receive Emmy, Tony, and Grammy Award nominations. His many honors and awards, including a prestigious Kennedy Center medal for career achievement, serve as reflections of the affection his fans felt for him.

During his lifetime Sammy Davis Jr. was not universally adored. Some observers accused him of shamelessly flattering his audiences to win their admiration. Those sentiments were forgotten, however, when Davis died at the relatively young age of sixty-four. In eulogies (public speeches for a person who has recently died) across the country, entertainers and others cited Davis as a mentor and a pioneer who reached mainstream audiences even though he hailed from minority groups in both race and religion.

For More Information

Davis, Sammy, Burt Broyar, and Jane Broyar. *Sammy: An Autobiography*. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 2000.

Davis, Sammy, Burt Broyar, and Jane Broyar. *Why Me? The Sammy Davis, Jr. Story*. New York: Farrar, Straus, 1989.

Davis, Sammy, Burt Broyar, and Jane Broyar. *Yes I Can: The Story of Sammy Davis, Jr.* New York: Farrar, Straus & Giroux, 1965. Reprint, 1990.

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY



contents

Entries by Nationality xvii

Reader's Guide xxxi

Volume 1: A–Ba

Hank Aaron	1	Aeschylus	29
Ralph Abernathy	4	Spiro Agnew	31
Bella Abzug	7	Alvin Ailey	34
Chinua Achebe	10	Madeleine Albright	37
Abigail Adams	12	Louisa May Alcott	39
Ansel Adams	15	Alexander II	41
John Adams	17	Alexander the Great	43
Samuel Adams	20	Muhammad Ali	47
Joy Adamson	22	Woody Allen	49
Jane Addams	25	Isabel Allende	52
Alfred Adler	27	Julia Alvarez	54
		American Horse	57

Idi Amin	59	Lucille Ball	159
Hans Christian Andersen	62	David Baltimore	161
Carl David Anderson	64	Honoré de Balzac	164
Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	66	Benjamin Banneker	166
Marian Anderson	69	Frederick Banting	168
Fra Angelico	71	Klaus Barbie	170
Maya Angelou	73	Christiaan Barnard	173
Kofi Annan	76	Clara Barton	175
Susan B. Anthony	79	Count Basie	177
Virginia Apgar	81	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Benigno Aquino	84		
Yasir Arafat	86	<i>Volume 2: Be–Cap</i>	
Archimedes	89	Beatles	181
Hannah Arendt	91	William Beaumont	185
Jean-Bertrand Aristide	93	Simone de Beauvoir	187
Aristophanes	96	Samuel Beckett	189
Aristotle	98	Ludwig van Beethoven	192
Louis Armstrong	101	Menachem Begin	194
Neil Armstrong	102	Alexander Graham Bell	196
Benedict Arnold	105	Clyde Bellecourt	200
Mary Kay Ash	108	Saul Bellow	202
Arthur Ashe	110	William Bennett	204
Isaac Asimov	113	Ingmar Bergman	206
Fred Astaire	116	Irving Berlin	208
John Jacob Astor	118	Leonard Bernstein	210
Margaret Atwood	120	Chuck Berry	213
W. H. Auden	123	Mary McLeod Bethune	215
John James Audubon	125	Benazir Bhutto	218
Augustus	128	Owen Bieber	220
Aung San Suu Kyi	130	Billy the Kid	223
Jane Austen	132	Larry Bird	224
Baal Shem Tov	137	Shirley Temple Black	227
Charles Babbage	139	Elizabeth Blackwell	229
Johann Sebastian Bach	141	Tony Blair	232
Francis Bacon	143	William Blake	234
Roger Bacon	145	Konrad Bloch	237
Joan Baez	147	Judy Blume	239
F Lee Bailey	150	Humphrey Bogart	242
Josephine Baker	152	Julian Bond	244
George Balanchine	154	Daniel Boone	246
James Baldwin	156	John Wilkes Booth	248

William Booth	250	Al Capone	352
Lucrezia Borgia	252	Truman Capote	354
P. W. Botha	255	Frank Capra	357
Sandro Botticelli	257	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Margaret Bourke-White	259		
Boutros Boutros-Ghali	261	<i>Volume 3: Car–Da</i>	
Ray Bradbury	264	Lázaro Cárdenas	361
Ed Bradley	266	Stokely Carmichael	363
Mathew Brady	269	Andrew Carnegie	367
Johannes Brahms	271	Lewis Carroll	370
Louis Braille	273	Johnny Carson	372
Louis Brandeis	275	Kit Carson	374
Marlon Brando	278	Rachel Carson	377
Leonid Brezhnev	280	Jimmy Carter	379
Charlotte Brontë	283	George Washington Carver	383
Emily Brontë	284	Pablo Casals	386
Gwendolyn Brooks	286	Mary Cassatt	388
Helen Gurley Brown	289	Vernon and Irene Castle	390
James Brown	291	Fidel Castro	393
John Brown	294	Willa Cather	397
Rachel Fuller Brown	297	Catherine of Aragon	399
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	299	Catherine the Great	401
Robert Browning	302	Henry Cavendish	404
Pat Buchanan	305	Anders Celsius	407
Pearl S. Buck	308	Miguel de Cervantes	408
Buddha	310	Paul Cézanne	411
Ralph Bunche	312	Marc Chagall	414
Warren Burger	314	Wilt Chamberlain	416
Robert Burns	317	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	419
Aaron Burr	320	Charlie Chaplin	421
George Bush	323	Charlemagne	424
George W. Bush	326	Charles, Prince of Wales	427
Laura Bush	329	Ray Charles	430
Lord Byron	331	Geoffrey Chaucer	433
Julius Caesar	335	César Chávez	436
Caligula	338	Dennis Chavez	438
Maria Callas	340	Linda Chavez	440
Cab Calloway	342	Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	443
John Calvin	344	John Cheever	447
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	346	Anton Chekhov	449
Albert Camus	349	Dick Cheney	451

Mary Boykin Chesnut	454
Chiang Kai-shek	456
Julia Child	459
Shirley Chisholm	461
Frédéric Chopin	464
Jean Chrétien	467
Agatha Christie	469
Winston Churchill	472
Marcus Tullius Cicero	475
Liz Claiborne	478
Cleopatra VII	480
Bill Clinton	483
Hillary Rodham Clinton	487
Ty Cobb	490
Nat “King” Cole	492
Bessie Coleman	494
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	496
Marva Collins	499
Michael Collins	501
Confucius	503
Sean Connery	506
Joseph Conrad	508
Nicolaus Copernicus	510
Aaron Copland	513
Francis Ford Coppola	515
Bill Cosby	518
Jacques Cousteau	521
Noel Coward	523
Michael Crichton	525
Davy Crockett	527
Oliver Cromwell	529
Walter Cronkite	532
E. E. Cummings	535
Marie Curie	538
Roald Dahl	543
Dalai Lama	546
Salvador Dali	549
Clarence Darrow	551
Charles Darwin	554
Bette Davis	556
Miles Davis	558

Ossie Davis	561
Sammy Davis Jr.	563
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 4: De–Ga

James Dean	567
Claude Debussy	569
Ruby Dee	571
Daniel Defoe	574
Edgar Degas	576
Charles de Gaulle	579
F. W. de Klerk	581
Cecil B. DeMille	585
Deng Xiaoping	587
René Descartes	590
Hernando de Soto	592
John Dewey	594
Diana, Princess of Wales	597
Charles Dickens	600
Emily Dickinson	603
Denis Diderot	606
Joe DiMaggio	608
Walt Disney	611
Elizabeth Dole	613
Placido Domingo	616
Donatello	619
John Donne	621
Fyodor Dostoevsky	624
Frederick Douglass	626
Arthur Conan Doyle	629
Francis Drake	632
Alexandre Dumas	634
Paul Laurence Dunbar	636
Pierre du Pont	638
François Duvalier	640
Amelia Earhart	643
George Eastman	646
Clint Eastwood	648
Thomas Edison	650
Albert Einstein	654
Dwight D. Eisenhower	657

Mamie Eisenhower	661	Karl Friedrich Gauss	775
Joycelyn Elders	662	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
George Eliot	665		
T. S. Eliot	668	Volume 5: Ge–I	
Elizabeth I	672	Hans Geiger	779
Elizabeth II	675	Theodor Geisel	781
Duke Ellington	678	Genghis Khan	784
Ralph Waldo Emerson	680	J. Paul Getty	786
Desiderius Erasmus	683	Kahlil Gibran	788
Euclid	686	Althea Gibson	790
Euripides	688	Dizzy Gillespie	792
Medgar Evers	690	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	794
Gabriel Fahrenheit	695	Whoopi Goldberg	797
Fannie Farmer	696	William Golding	800
Louis Farrakhan	698	Samuel Gompers	801
William Faulkner	701	Jane Goodall	804
Dianne Feinstein	704	Benny Goodman	807
Enrico Fermi	707	Mikhail Gorbachev	809
Geraldine Ferraro	710	Berry Gordy Jr.	813
Bobby Fischer	713	Al Gore	816
Ella Fitzgerald	715	Jay Gould	818
F. Scott Fitzgerald	718	Stephen Jay Gould	821
Gustave Flaubert	721	Katharine Graham	824
Malcolm Forbes	723	Martha Graham	827
Henry Ford	725	Cary Grant	829
Francis of Assisi	729	Graham Greene	831
Benjamin Franklin	731	Wayne Gretzky	833
Sigmund Freud	735	Brothers Grimm	836
Betty Friedan	738	Woody Guthrie	838
Robert Frost	741	Alex Haley	843
John Kenneth Galbraith	745	Alexander Hamilton	846
Galen	748	Oscar Hammerstein	849
Galileo	750	John Hancock	852
George Gallup	753	George Frideric Handel	854
Indira Gandhi	754	Thomas Hardy	857
Mohandas Gandhi	758	Stephen Hawking	860
Gabriel García Márquez	762	Nathaniel Hawthorne	862
Judy Garland	764	William Randolph Hearst	865
Marcus Garvey	767	Werner Heisenberg	868
Bill Gates	769	Joseph Heller	870
Paul Gauguin	773	Lillian Hellman	872

Ernest Hemingway	875
Jimi Hendrix	878
Henry VIII	880
Patrick Henry	883
Audrey Hepburn	886
Katharine Hepburn	888
Herod the Great	891
William Herschel	893
Thor Heyerdahl	895
Edmund Hillary	898
S. E. Hinton	900
Hippocrates	902
Hirohito	904
Alfred Hitchcock	907
Adolf Hitler	909
Ho Chi Minh	912
Thomas Hobbes	915
Billie Holiday	918
Oliver Wendell Holmes	920
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	923
Homer	926
Soichiro Honda	929
bell hooks	931
Benjamin Hooks	933
Bob Hope	936
Anthony Hopkins	938
Lena Horne	940
Harry Houdini	943
Gordie Howe	946
Julia Ward Howe	949
Howard Hughes	951
Langston Hughes	954
Victor Hugo	957
Zora Neale Hurston	960
Saddam Hussein	962
Lee Iacocca	967
Henrik Ibsen	970
Imhotep	972
Washington Irving	975
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 6: J–L

Andrew Jackson	979
Jesse Jackson	983
Michael Jackson	986
Reggie Jackson	989
P. D. James	991
Thomas Jefferson	994
Mae Jemison	997
Jesus of Nazareth	1000
Jiang Zemin	1003
Joan of Arc	1005
Steve Jobs	1007
Elton John	1011
John Paul II	1013
Lyndon B. Johnson	1016
Magic Johnson	1020
Samuel Johnson	1023
Al Jolson	1025
James Earl Jones	1027
Quincy Jones	1029
Ben Jonson	1032
Michael Jordan	1034
James Joyce	1038
Benito Juárez	1040
Carl Jung	1043
Franz Kafka	1047
Wassily Kandinsky	1050
Immanuel Kant	1052
John Keats	1054
Helen Keller	1056
Gene Kelly	1058
Edward Kennedy	1061
John F. Kennedy	1064
John F. Kennedy Jr.	1069
Robert Kennedy	1071
Johannes Kepler	1074
Jack Kerouac	1076
Charles F. Kettering	1078
Ayatollah Khomeini	1081
Nikita Khrushchev	1083
B. B. King	1086

Billie Jean King	1089	Dolley Madison	1191
Coretta Scott King	1091	James Madison	1194
Martin Luther King Jr.	1094	Madonna	1197
Stephen King	1098	Ferdinand Magellan	1201
Rudyard Kipling	1101	Najib Mahfuz	1203
Henry Kissinger	1104	Norman Mailer	1205
Calvin Klein	1107	Bernard Malamud	1208
Kublai Khan	1109	Malcolm X	1210
Marquis de Lafayette	1113	David Mamet	1214
Lao Tzu	1115	Nelson Mandela	1216
Ralph Lauren	1117	Édouard Manet	1219
Emma Lazarus	1119	Wilma Mankiller	1221
Mary Leakey	1121	Mickey Mantle	1224
Bruce Lee	1124	Mao Zedong	1226
Spike Lee	1126	Rocky Marciano	1230
Tsung-Dao Lee	1129	Ferdinand Marcos	1233
Vladimir Lenin	1131	Marcus Aurelius	1236
Leonardo da Vinci	1136	Marie Antoinette	1238
C. S. Lewis	1139	Mark Antony	1240
Carl Lewis	1141	Thurgood Marshall	1243
Sinclair Lewis	1144	Karl Marx	1246
Roy Lichtenstein	1146	Mary, Queen of Scots	1249
Maya Lin	1148	Cotton Mather	1252
Abraham Lincoln	1150	Henri Matisse	1255
Charles Lindbergh	1154	Mayo Brothers	1258
Carl Linnaeus	1157	Willie Mays	1261
Joseph Lister	1159	Joseph McCarthy	1264
Andrew Lloyd Webber	1161	Hattie McDaniel	1267
Alain Locke	1163	John McEnroe	1270
John Locke	1166	Terry McMillan	1273
Jack London	1168	Aimee Semple McPherson	1275
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	1170	Margaret Mead	1277
Joe Louis	1173	Catherine de' Medici	1281
George Lucas	1175	Golda Meir	1284
Patrice Lumumba	1178	Rigoberta Menchú	1286
Martin Luther	1181	Felix Mendelssohn	1289
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Kweisi Mfume	1292
		Michelangelo	1295
		Harvey Milk	1298
Volume 7: M–Ne		John Stuart Mill	1301
Douglas MacArthur	1185	Edna St. Vincent Millay	1303
Niccolò Machiavelli	1188		

Arthur Miller	1305	Manuel Noriega	1401
Henry Miller	1308	Jessye Norman	1404
Slobodan Milosevic	1310	Nostradamus	1406
John Milton	1313	Rudolf Nureyev	1409
Joan Miró	1316	Joyce Carol Oates	1413
Molière	1318	Sandra Day O'Connor	1416
Claude Monet	1320	Georgia O'Keefe	1420
Thelonious Monk	1323	Laurence Olivier	1422
Marilyn Monroe	1325	Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	1425
Joe Montana	1327	Eugene O'Neill	1428
Montesquieu	1329	George Orwell	1430
Maria Montessori	1331	Ovid	1432
Thomas More	1334	Jesse Owens	1435
Jim Morrison	1336	Mohammad Reza Pahlavi	1439
Toni Morrison	1338	Arnold Palmer	1441
Samuel F. B. Morse	1341	Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus	1443
Moses	1343	Charlie Parker	1445
Grandma Moses	1345	Blaise Pascal	1447
Mother Teresa	1347	Louis Pasteur	1450
Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart	1350	Linus Pauling	1453
Hosni Mubarak	1353	Luciano Pavarotti	1456
Muhammad	1355	Ivan Pavlov	1459
Elijah Muhammad	1358	Anna Pavlova	1462
John Muir	1360	I. M. Pei	1464
Edvard Munch	1362	Pelé.	1467
Rupert Murdoch	1364	William Penn	1469
Benito Mussolini	1367	Pericles	1472
Vladimir Nabokov	1371	Eva Perón	1474
Ralph Nader	1373	Jean Piaget	1477
Napoleon Bonaparte	1376	Pablo Picasso	1479
Ogden Nash	1379	Sylvia Plath	1483
Nefertiti	1381	Plato	1485
Isaac Newton	1382	Pocahontas	1488
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Edgar Allan Poe	1490
		Sidney Poitier	1493
		Pol Pot	1495
		Marco Polo	1498
		Juan Ponce de León	1501
		Alexander Pope	1502
		Cole Porter	1505
		Katherine Anne Porter	1507
Volume 8: Ni–Re			
Friedrich Nietzsche	1387		
Florence Nightingale	1390		
Richard Nixon	1392		
Alfred Nobel	1397		
Isamu Noguchi	1398		

Emily Post	1509	Richard Rodgers	1610
Colin Powell	1511	Auguste Rodin	1613
Dith Pran	1514	Will Rogers	1615
Elvis Presley	1517	Rolling Stones	1618
André Previn	1520	Eleanor Roosevelt	1621
Leontyne Price	1522	Franklin D. Roosevelt	1624
E. Annie Proulx	1524	Theodore Roosevelt	1628
Marcel Proust	1526	Diana Ross	1631
Ptolemy I	1528	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	1634
Joseph Pulitzer	1531	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	1636
George Pullman	1533	Carl Rowan	1639
Aleksandr Pushkin	1535	J. K. Rowling	1641
Vladimir Putin	1537	Peter Paul Rubens	1643
Pythagoras	1540	Wilma Rudolph	1646
Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	1543	Salman Rushdie	1649
Walter Raleigh	1547	Babe Ruth	1651
Sri Ramakrishna	1550	Nolan Ryan	1653
A. Philip Randolph	1552	Albert Sabin	1657
Harun al-Rashid	1555	Carl Sagan	1659
Ronald Reagan	1557	Andrei Sakharov	1662
Christopher Reeve	1561	J. D. Salinger	1664
Erich Maria Remarque	1564	Jonas Salk	1667
Rembrandt	1566	George Sand	1669
Janet Reno	1568	Carl Sandburg	1671
Pierre Auguste Renoir	1571	Margaret Sanger	1673
Paul Revere	1574	Jean-Paul Sartre	1676
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Oskar Schindler	1678
		Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	1681
<i>Volume 9: Rh–S</i>		Franz Schubert	1684
Cecil Rhodes	1577	Charles M. Schulz	1687
Condoleezza Rice	1580	Martin Scorsese	1690
Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	1583	Walter Scott	1693
Sally Ride	1585	Haile Selassie	1696
Leni Riefenstahl	1588	Selena	1698
Cal Ripken Jr.	1591	Sequoyah	1701
Diego Rivera	1593	William Shakespeare	1702
Paul Robeson	1596	George Bernard Shaw	1706
Maximilien de Robespierre	1599	Mary Shelley	1708
Smokey Robinson	1601	Percy Shelley	1711
John D. Rockefeller	1604	Beverly Sills	1714
Norman Rockwell	1607	Neil Simon	1716

Frank Sinatra	1719	Marshal Tito	1821
Upton Sinclair	1722	J. R. R. Tolkien	1824
Isaac Bashevis Singer	1724	Leo Tolstoy	1827
Bessie Smith	1727	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	1830
Socrates	1729	Eiji Toyoda	1832
Stephen Sondheim	1732	Harry S. Truman	1834
Sophocles	1734	Donald Trump	1837
Steven Spielberg	1737	Sojourner Truth	1840
Benjamin Spock	1740	Tu Fu	1843
Joseph Stalin	1743	Tutankhamen	1845
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	1747	Desmond Tutu	1847
Edith Stein	1749	Mark Twain	1850
Gertrude Stein	1752	John Updike	1855
John Steinbeck	1755	Vincent Van Gogh	1859
Robert Louis Stevenson	1757	Jan Vermeer	1862
Bram Stoker	1759	Jules Verne	1864
Oliver Stone	1761	Amerigo Vespucci	1867
Tom Stoppard	1764	Victoria	1869
Harriet Beecher Stowe	1766	Gore Vidal	1872
Antonio Stradivari	1769	Virgil	1874
Johann Strauss	1771	Antonio Vivaldi	1877
Igor Stravinsky	1773	Voltaire	1879
Barbra Streisand	1776	Wernher von Braun	1882
Sun Yat-sen	1779	Kurt Vonnegut	1884
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Richard Wagner	1889
		Alice Walker	1891
		Madame C. J. Walker	1894
		Barbara Walters	1897
<i>Volume 10: T–Z</i>		An Wang	1900
Maria Tallchief	1785	Booker T. Washington	1903
Amy Tan	1787	George Washington	1906
Elizabeth Taylor	1790	James Watt	1910
Peter Ilych Tchaikovsky	1792	John Wayne	1913
Alfred, Lord Tennyson	1795	Daniel Webster	1916
Valentina Tereshkova	1798	Noah Webster	1919
William Makepeace Thackeray	1801	Orson Welles	1922
Twyla Tharp	1804	Eudora Welty	1925
Clarence Thomas	1807	Edith Wharton	1928
Dylan Thomas	1810	James Whistler	1929
Henry David Thoreau	1813	E. B. White	1932
Jim Thorpe	1816	Walt Whitman	1935
James Thurber	1819		

Elie Wiesel	1938	Virginia Woolf	1962
Oscar Wilde	1940	William Wordsworth	1965
Laura Ingalls Wilder	1943	Wright Brothers	1969
Thornton Wilder	1946	Frank Lloyd Wright	1972
Tennessee Williams	1948	Richard Wright	1975
Woodrow Wilson	1951	William Butler Yeats	1979
Oprah Winfrey	1954	Boris Yeltsin	1982
Anna May Wong	1958	Paul Zindel	1987
Tiger Woods	1960	<i>Index</i>	xxxv



*entries by
nationality*

African American

Hank Aaron 1: 1
 Ralph Abernathy 1: 4
 Alvin Ailey 1: 34
 Muhammad Ali 1: 47
 Marian Anderson 1: 69
 Maya Angelou 1: 73
 Louis Armstrong 1: 101
 Arthur Ashe 1: 110
 Josephine Baker 1: 152
 James Baldwin 1: 156
 Benjamin Banneker 1: 166
 Count Basie 1: 177
 Chuck Berry 2: 213
 Mary McLeod Bethune 2: 215
 Julian Bond 2: 244
 Gwendolyn Brooks 2: 286

James Brown 2: 291
 Ralph Bunche 2: 312
 Stokely Carmichael 3: 363
 George Washington Carver 3: 383
 Wilt Chamberlain 3: 416
 Ray Charles 3: 430
 Benjamin Chavis Muhammad 3: 443
 Shirley Chisholm 3: 461
 Nat “King” Cole 3: 492
 Bessie Coleman 3: 494
 Marva Collins 3: 499
 Bill Cosby 3: 518
 Miles Davis 3: 558
 Ossie Davis 3: 561
 Sammy Davis Jr. 3: 563
 Ruby Dee 4: 571
 Frederick Douglass 4: 626

Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Jessye Norman	8: 1404
Joycelyn Elders	4: 662	Jesse Owens	8: 1435
Duke Ellington	4: 678	Charlie Parker	8: 1445
Medgar Evers	4: 690	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Louis Farrakhan	4: 698	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Althea Gibson	5: 790	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Alex Haley	5: 843	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Bessie Smith	9: 1727
bell hooks	5: 931	Sojourner Truth	10: 1840
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Alice Walker	10: 1891
Lena Horne	5: 940	Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Reggie Jackson	6: 989		
Mae Jemison	6: 997	<i>Albanian</i>	
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Mother Teresa	7: 1347
James Earl Jones	6: 1027		
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	<i>American</i>	
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Hank Aaron	1: 1
B. B. King	6: 1086	Ralph Abernathy	1: 4
Coretta Scott King	6: 1091	Bella Abzug	1: 7
Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094	Abigail Adams	1: 12
Spike Lee	6: 1126	Ansel Adams	1: 15
Carl Lewis	6: 1141	John Adams	1: 17
Alain Locke	6: 1163	Samuel Adams	1: 20
Malcolm X	7: 1210	Jane Addams	1: 25
Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Spiro Agnew	1: 31
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Alvin Ailey	1: 34
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Madeleine Albright	1: 37
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Louisa May Alcott	1: 39
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	Muhammad Ali	1: 47
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Woody Allen	1: 49
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Julia Alvarez	1: 54
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	American Horse	1: 57

Carl David Anderson	1: 64	Daniel Boone	2: 246
Marian Anderson	1: 69	John Wilkes Booth	2: 248
Maya Angelou	1: 73	Margaret Bourke-White	2: 259
Susan B. Anthony	1: 79	Ray Bradbury	2: 264
Virginia Apgar	1: 81	Ed Bradley	2: 266
Louis Armstrong	1: 101	Mathew Brady	2: 269
Neil Armstrong	1: 102	Louis Brandeis	2: 275
Benedict Arnold	1: 105	Marlon Brando	2: 278
Mary Kay Ash	1: 108	Gwendolyn Brooks	2: 286
Arthur Ashe	1: 110	Helen Gurley Brown	2: 289
Isaac Asimov	1: 113	James Brown	2: 291
Fred Astaire	1: 116	John Brown	2: 294
John Jacob Astor	1: 118	Rachel Fuller Brown	2: 297
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Pat Buchanan	2: 305
John James Audubon	1: 125	Pearl S. Buck	2: 308
Joan Baez	1: 147	Ralph Bunche	2: 312
F. Lee Bailey	1: 150	Warren Burger	2: 314
Josephine Baker	1: 152	Aaron Burr	2: 320
George Balanchine	1: 154	George Bush	2: 323
James Baldwin	1: 156	George W. Bush	2: 326
Lucille Ball	1: 159	Laura Bush	2: 329
David Baltimore	1: 161	Maria Callas	2: 340
Benjamin Banneker	1: 166	Cab Calloway	2: 342
Clara Barton	1: 175	Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Count Basie	1: 177	Al Capone	2: 352
William Beaumont	2: 185	Truman Capote	2: 354
Alexander Graham Bell	2: 196	Frank Capra	2: 357
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200	Stokely Carmichael	3: 363
Saul Bellow	2: 202	Andrew Carnegie	3: 367
William Bennett	2: 204	Johnny Carson	3: 372
Irving Berlin	2: 208	Kit Carson	3: 374
Leonard Bernstein	2: 210	Rachel Carson	3: 377
Chuck Berry	2: 213	Jimmy Carter	3: 379
Mary McLeod Bethune	2: 215	George Washington Carver	3: 383
Owen Bieber	2: 220	Mary Cassatt	3: 388
Billy the Kid	2: 223	Irene Castle	3: 390
Larry Bird	2: 224	Willa Cather	3: 397
Shirley Temple Black	2: 227	Wilt Chamberlain	3: 416
Judy Blume	2: 239	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	3: 419
Humphrey Bogart	2: 242	Ray Charles	3: 430
Julian Bond	2: 244	César Chávez	3: 436

Dennis Chavez	3: 438	Thomas Edison	4: 650
Linda Chavez	3: 440	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	3: 443	Dwight D. Eisenhower	4: 657
John Cheever	3: 447	Mamie Eisenhower	4: 661
Dick Cheney	3: 451	Joycelyn Elders	4: 662
Mary Boykin Chesnut	3: 454	T. S. Eliot	4: 668
Julia Child	3: 459	Duke Ellington	4: 678
Shirley Chisholm	3: 461	Ralph Waldo Emerson	4: 680
Liz Claiborne	3: 478	Medgar Evers	4: 690
Bill Clinton	3: 483	Fannie Farmer	4: 696
Hillary Rodham Clinton	3: 487	Louis Farrakhan	4: 698
Ty Cobb	3: 490	William Faulkner	4: 701
Nat "King" Cole	3: 492	Dianne Feinstein	4: 704
Bessie Coleman	3: 494	Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Marva Collins	3: 499	Geraldine Ferraro	4: 710
Aaron Copland	3: 513	Bobby Fischer	4: 713
Francis Ford Coppola	3: 515	Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715
Bill Cosby	3: 518	F. Scott Fitzgerald	4: 718
Michael Crichton	3: 525	Malcolm Forbes	4: 723
Davy Crockett	3: 527	Henry Ford	4: 725
Walter Cronkite	3: 532	Benjamin Franklin	4: 731
E. E. Cummings	3: 535	Betty Friedan	4: 738
Clarence Darrow	3: 551	Robert Frost	4: 741
Bette Davis	3: 556	John Kenneth Galbraith	4: 745
Miles Davis	3: 558	George Gallup	4: 753
Ossie Davis	3: 561	Judy Garland	4: 764
Sammy Davis Jr.	3: 563	Bill Gates	4: 769
James Dean	4: 567	Theodor Geisel	5: 781
Ruby Dee	4: 571	J. Paul Getty	5: 786
Cecil B. DeMille	4: 585	Althea Gibson	5: 790
John Dewey	4: 594	Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792
Emily Dickinson	4: 603	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	5: 794
Joe DiMaggio	4: 608	Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797
Walt Disney	4: 611	Samuel Gompers	5: 801
Elizabeth Dole	4: 613	Benny Goodman	5: 807
Frederick Douglass	4: 626	Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813
Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Al Gore	5: 816
Pierre Du Pont	4: 638	Jay Gould	5: 818
Amelia Earhart	4: 643	Stephen Jay Gould	5: 821
George Eastman	4: 646	Katharine Graham	5: 824
Clint Eastwood	4: 648	Martha Graham	5: 827

Woody Guthrie	5: 838	Helen Keller	6: 1056
Alex Haley	5: 843	Gene Kelly	6: 1058
Alexander Hamilton	5: 846	Edward Kennedy	6: 1061
Oscar Hammerstein	5: 849	John F. Kennedy	6: 1064
John Hancock	5: 852	John F. Kennedy Jr.	6: 1069
Nathaniel Hawthorne	5: 862	Robert Kennedy	6: 1071
William Randolph Hearst	5: 865	Jack Kerouac	6: 1076
Joseph Heller	5: 870	Charles F. Kettering	6: 1078
Lillian Hellman	5: 872	B. B. King	6: 1086
Ernest Hemingway	5: 875	Billie Jean King	6: 1089
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Coretta Scott King	6: 1091
Patrick Henry	5: 883	Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094
Katharine Hepburn	5: 888	Stephen King	6: 1098
S. E. Hinton	5: 900	Henry Kissinger	6: 1104
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Calvin Klein	6: 1107
Oliver Wendell Holmes	5: 920	Ralph Lauren	6: 1117
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	5: 923	Emma Lazarus	6: 1119
bell hooks	5: 931	Bruce Lee	6: 1124
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Spike Lee	6: 1126
Bob Hope	5: 936	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Lena Horne	5: 940	Carl Lewis	6: 1141
Harry Houdini	5: 943	Sinclair Lewis	6: 1144
Julia Ward Howe	5: 949	Roy Lichtenstein	6: 1146
Howard Hughes	5: 951	Abraham Lincoln	6: 1150
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Charles Lindbergh	6: 1154
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Alain Locke	6: 1163
Lee Iacocca	5: 967	Jack London	6: 1168
Washington Irving	5: 975	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	6: 1170
Andrew Jackson	6: 979	Joe Louis	6: 1173
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	George Lucas	6: 1175
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Douglas MacArthur	7: 1185
Reggie Jackson	6: 989	Dolley Madison	7: 1191
Thomas Jefferson	6: 994	James Madison	7: 1194
Mae Jemison	6: 997	Madonna	7: 1197
Steve Jobs	6: 1007	Norman Mailer	7: 1205
Lyndon B. Johnson	6: 1016	Bernard Malamud	7: 1390
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Malcolm X	7: 1210
Al Jolson	6: 1025	David Mamet	7: 1214
James Earl Jones	6: 1027	Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	Mickey Mantle	7: 1224
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Rocky Marciano	7: 1230

Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Pocahontas	8: 1488
Cotton Mather	7: 1252	Edgar Allan Poe	8: 1490
Mayo Brothers	7: 1258	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Cole Porter	8: 1505
Joseph McCarthy	7: 1264	Katherine Anne Porter	8: 1507
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Emily Post	8: 1509
John McEnroe	7: 1270	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Elvis Presley	8: 1517
Aimee Semple McPherson	7: 1275	André Previn	8: 1520
Margaret Mead	7: 1277	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	E. Annie Proulx	8: 1524
Harvey Milk	7: 1298	Joseph Pulitzer	8: 1531
Edna St. Vincent Millay	7: 1303	George Pullman	8: 1533
Arthur Miller	7: 1305	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Henry Miller	7: 1308	Ronald Reagan	8: 1557
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Christopher Reeve	8: 1561
Marilyn Monroe	7: 1325	Erich Maria Remarque	8: 1564
Joe Montana	7: 1327	Janet Reno	8: 1568
Jim Morrison	7: 1336	Paul Revere	8: 1574
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Samuel F. B. Morse	7: 1341	Sally Ride	9: 1585
Grandma Moses	7: 1345	Cal Ripken, Jr.	9: 1591
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
John Muir	7: 1360	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Vladimir Nabokov	7: 1371	John D. Rockefeller	9: 1604
Ralph Nader	7: 1373	Norman Rockwell	9: 1607
Ogden Nash	7: 1379	Richard Rodgers	9: 1610
Richard Nixon	8: 1392	Will Rogers	9: 1615
Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398	Eleanor Roosevelt	9: 1621
Jessye Norman	8: 1404	Franklin D. Roosevelt	9: 1624
Joyce Carol Oates	8: 1413	Theodore Roosevelt	9: 1628
Sandra Day O'Connor	8: 1416	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Georgia O'Keeffe	8: 1420	Carl Rowan	9: 1639
Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	8: 1425	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Eugene O'Neill	8: 1428	Babe Ruth	9: 1651
Jesse Owens	8: 1435	Nolan Ryan	9: 1653
Arnold Palmer	8: 1441	Albert Sabin	9: 1657
Charlie Parker	8: 1445	Carl Sagan	9: 1659
Linus Pauling	8: 1453	J. D. Salinger	9: 1664
I. M. Pei	8: 1464	Jonas Salk	9: 1667
Sylvia Plath	8: 1483	Carl Sandburg	9: 1671

Margaret Sanger	9: 1673	An Wang	10: 1900
Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	9: 1681	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Charles M. Schulz	9: 1687	George Washington	10: 1906
Martin Scorsese	9: 1690	John Wayne	10: 1913
Selena	9: 1698	Daniel Webster	10: 1916
Sequoyah	9: 1701	Noah Webster	10: 1919
Beverly Sills	9: 1714	Orson Welles	10: 1922
Neil Simon	9: 1716	Eudora Welty	10: 1925
Frank Sinatra	9: 1719	Edith Wharton	10: 1928
Upton Sinclair	9: 1722	James Whistler	10: 1929
Isaac Bashevis Singer	9: 1724	E. B. White	10: 1932
Bessie Smith	9: 1727	Walt Whitman	10: 1935
Stephen Sondheim	9: 1732	Elie Wiesel	10: 1938
Steven Spielberg	9: 1737	Laura Ingalls Wilder	10: 1943
Benjamin Spock	9: 1740	Thornton Wilder	10: 1946
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	9: 1747	Tennessee Williams	10: 1948
Gertrude Stein	9: 1752	Woodrow Wilson	10: 1951
John Steinbeck	9: 1755	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Oliver Stone	9: 1761	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Harriet Beecher Stowe	9: 1766	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Igor Stravinsky	9: 1773	Wright Brothers	10: 1969
Barbra Streisand	9: 1776	Frank Lloyd Wright	10: 1972
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Amy Tan	10: 1787	Paul Zindel	10: 1987
Elizabeth Taylor	10: 1790		
Twyla Tharp	10: 1804	<i>Arabian</i>	
Clarence Thomas	10: 1807	Muhammad	7: 1355
Henry David Thoreau	10: 1813		
Jim Thorpe	10: 1816	<i>Argentine</i>	
James Thurber	10: 1819	Eva Perón	8: 1474
Harry S. Truman	10: 1834		
Donald Trump	10: 1837	<i>Asian American</i>	
Sojourner Truth	10: 1840	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Mark Twain	10: 1850	Maya Lin	6: 1148
John Updike	10: 1855	Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398
Gore Vidal	10: 1872	I. M. Pei	8: 1464
Wernher von Braun	10: 1882	Amy Tan	10: 1787
Kurt Vonnegut	10: 1884	An Wang	10: 1900
Alice Walker	10: 1891	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Barbara Walters	10: 1897		

Australian

Rupert Murdoch 7: 1364

Austrian

Joy Adamson 1: 22

Alfred Adler 1: 27

Sigmund Freud 4: 735

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart 7: 1350

Franz Schubert 9: 1684

Johann Strauss 9: 1771

Belgian

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886

Brazilian

Pelé 8: 1467

Burmese

Aung San Suu Kyi 1: 130

Cambodian

Pol Pot 8: 1495

Dith Pran 8: 1514

Canadian

Margaret Atwood 1: 120

Frederick Banting 1: 168

Jean Chrétien 3: 467

John Kenneth Galbraith 4: 745

Wayne Gretzky 5: 833

Gordie Howe 5: 946

Aimee Semple McPherson 7: 1275

Chilean

Isabel Allende 1: 52

Chinese

Chiang Kai-shek 3: 456

Confucius 3: 503

Deng Xiaoping 4: 587

Jiang Zemin 6: 1003

Lao Tzu 6: 1115

Tsung-Dao Lee 6: 1129

Mao Zedong 7: 1226

I. M. Pei 8: 1464

Sun Yat-sen 9: 1779

Tu Fu 10: 1843

An Wang 10: 1900

Colombian

Gabriel García Márquez 7: 762

Congolese

Patrice Lumumba 6: 1178

Cuban

Fidel Castro 3: 393

Czech

Madeleine Albright 1: 37

Franz Kafka 6: 1047

Tom Stoppard 9: 1764

Danish

Hans Christian Andersen 1: 62

Dutch

Desiderius Erasmus 4: 683

Rembrandt 8: 1566

Vincent Van Gogh 10: 1859

Egyptian

Boutros Boutros-Ghali 2: 261

Cleopatra VII 3: 480

Imhotep 5: 972

Najib Mahfuz 7: 1203

Moses 7: 1343

Hosni Mubarak 7: 1353

Nefertiti 7: 1381

Tutankhamen 10: 1845

English

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	1: 66	Cary Grant	5: 829
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Graham Greene	5: 831
Jane Austen	1: 132	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Charles Babbage	1: 139	Thomas Hardy	5: 857
Francis Bacon	1: 143	Stephen Hawking	5: 860
Roger Bacon	1: 145	Henry VIII	5: 880
Beatles	2: 181	Alfred Hitchcock	5: 907
Elizabeth Blackwell	2: 229	Thomas Hobbes	5: 915
William Blake	2: 234	P. D. James	6: 991
William Booth	2: 250	Elton John	6: 1011
Charlotte Brontë	2: 283	Samuel Johnson	6: 1023
Emily Brontë	2: 284	Ben Jonson	6: 1032
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	2: 299	John Keats	6: 1054
Robert Browning	2: 302	Rudyard Kipling	6: 1101
Lord Byron	2: 331	Mary Leakey	6: 1121
Lewis Carroll	3: 370	Joseph Lister	6: 1159
Vernon Castle	3: 390	Andrew Lloyd Webber	6: 1161
Henry Cavendish	3: 404	John Locke	6: 1166
Charlie Chaplin	3: 421	John Stuart Mill	7: 1301
Charles, Prince of Wales	3: 427	John Milton	7: 1313
Geoffrey Chaucer	3: 433	Thomas More	7: 1334
Agatha Christie	3: 469	Isaac Newton	7: 1382
Winston Churchill	3: 472	Florence Nightingale	8: 1390
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	3: 496	Laurence Olivier	8: 1422
Joseph Conrad	3: 508	George Orwell	8: 1430
Noel Coward	3: 523	William Penn	8: 1469
Oliver Cromwell	3: 529	Alexander Pope	8: 1502
Charles Darwin	3: 554	Walter Raleigh	8: 1547
Daniel Defoe	4: 574	Cecil Rhodes	9: 1577
Diana, Princess of Wales	4: 597	Rolling Stones	9: 1618
Charles Dickens	4: 600	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	9: 1634
John Donne	4: 621	J. K. Rowling	9: 1641
Arthur Conan Doyle	4: 629	William Shakespeare	9: 1702
Francis Drake	4: 632	Mary Shelley	9: 1708
George Eliot	4: 665	Percy Shelley	9: 1711
T. S. Eliot	4: 668	Tom Stoppard	9: 1764
Elizabeth I	4: 672	Alfred, Lord Tennyson	10: 1795
Elizabeth II	4: 675	William Makepeace Thackeray	10: 1801
William Golding	5: 800	J. R. R. Tolkien	10: 1824
Jane Goodall	5: 804	Victoria	10: 1869
		Oscar Wilde	10: 1940

Virginia Woolf	10: 1963	Molière	7: 1318
William Wordsworth	10: 1965	Claude Monet	7: 1320
<i>Ethiopian</i>		Montesquieu	7: 1329
Haile Selassie	9: 1697	Napoleon Bonaparte	7: 1376
<i>Filipino</i>		Nostradamus	8: 1406
Benigno Aquino	1: 84	Blaise Pascal	8: 1447
Ferdinand Marcos	7: 1233	Louis Pasteur	8: 1450
<i>Flemish</i>		Marcel Proust	8: 1526
Peter Paul Rubens	9: 1643	Pierre Auguste Renoir	8: 1571
<i>Frankish</i>		Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	9: 1583
Charlemagne	3: 424	Maximilien de Robespierre	9: 1599
<i>French</i>		Auguste Rodin	9: 1613
John James Audubon	1: 125	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	9: 1636
Honoré de Balzac	1: 164	George Sand	9: 1669
Simone de Beauvoir	2: 187	Jean-Paul Sartre	9: 1676
Louis Braille	2: 273	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	10: 1830
John Calvin	2: 344	Jan Vermeer	10: 1862
Albert Camus	2: 349	Jules Verne	10: 1864
Paul Cézanne	3: 411	Voltaire	10: 1879
Jacques Cousteau	3: 521	<i>German</i>	
Marie Curie	3: 538	Hannah Arendt	1: 91
Claude Debussy	4: 569	John Jacob Astor	1: 118
Edgar Degas	4: 576	Johann Sebastian Bach	1: 141
Charles de Gaulle	4: 579	Klaus Barbie	1: 170
René Descartes	4: 590	Ludwig van Beethoven	2: 192
Denis Diderot	4: 606	Konrad Bloch	2: 237
Alexandre Dumas	4: 634	Johannes Brahms	2: 271
Gustave Flaubert	4: 721	Catherine the Great	3: 401
Paul Gauguin	4: 773	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Victor Hugo	5: 957	Gabriel Fahrenheit	4: 695
Joan of Arc	6: 1005	Karl Friedrich Gauss	4: 775
Marquis de Lafayette	6: 1113	Hans Geiger	5: 779
Édouard Manet	7: 1219	Brothers Grimm	5: 836
Marie Antoinette	7: 1238	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Henri Matisse	7: 1255	Werner Heisenberg	5: 868
		William Herschel	5: 893
		Adolf Hitler	5: 909
		Franz Kafka	6: 1047
		Immanuel Kant	6: 1052

Johannes Kepler 6: 1074
 Henry Kissinger 6: 1104
 Martin Luther 6: 1181
 Karl Marx 7: 1246
 Felix Mendelssohn 7: 1289
 Friedrich Nietzsche 8: 1387
 André Previn 8: 1520
 Erich Maria Remarque 8: 1564
 Leni Riefenstahl 9: 1588
 Oskar Schindler 9: 1678
 Edith Stein 9: 1749
 Wernher von Braun 10: 1882
 Richard Wagner 10: 1889

Ghanian

Kofi Annan 1: 76

Greek

Aeschylus 1: 29
 Archimedes 1: 89
 Aristophanes 1: 96
 Aristotle 1: 98
 Euclid 4: 686
 Euripides 4: 688
 Galen 4: 748
 Hippocrates 5: 902
 Homer 5: 926
 Pericles 8: 1472
 Plato 8: 1485
 Pythagoras 8: 1540
 Socrates 9: 1729
 Sophocles 9: 1734

Guatemalan

Rigoberta Menchú 7: 1286

Haitian

Jean-Bertrand Aristide 1: 93
 François Duvalier 4: 640

Hispanic American

César Chávez 3: 436
 Dennis Chavez 3: 438
 Linda Chavez 3: 440
 Selena 9: 1698

Hungarian

Joseph Pulitzer 8: 1531

Indian

Buddha 2: 310
 Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar 3: 419
 Indira Gandhi 4: 754
 Mohandas Gandhi 4: 758
 Sri Ramakrishna 8: 1550
 Salman Rushdie 9: 1649

Iranian

Ayatollah Khomeini 6: 1081
 Mohammad Reza Pahlavi 8: 1439

Iraqi

Saddam Hussein 5: 962

Irish

Samuel Beckett 2: 189
 Michael Collins 3: 501
 James Joyce 6: 1038
 C. S. Lewis 6: 1139
 George Bernard Shaw 9: 1706
 Bram Stoker 9: 1759
 Oscar Wilde 10: 1940
 William Butler Yeats 10: 1979

Israeli

Menachem Begin 2: 194
 Golda Meir 7: 1284

Italian

Fra Angelico 1: 71

Lucrezia Borgia	2: 252
Sandro Botticelli	2: 257
Caligula	2: 338
Frank Capra	2: 357
Donatello	4: 619
Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Francis of Assisi	4: 729
Galileo	4: 750
Leonardo da Vinci	6: 1136
Niccolò Machiavelli	7: 1188
Catherine de' Medici	7: 1281
Michelangelo	7: 1295
Maria Montessori	7: 1331
Benito Mussolini	7: 1367
Luciano Pavarotti	8: 1456
Antonio Stradivari	9: 1769
Amerigo Vespucci	10: 1867
Antonio Vivaldi	10: 1877

Jamaican

Marcus Garvey	4: 767
-------------------------	--------

Japanese

Hirohito	5: 904
Soichiro Honda	5: 929
Eiji Toyoda	10: 1832

Judean

Herod the Great	5: 891
---------------------------	--------

Lebanese

Kahlil Gibran	5: 788
-------------------------	--------

Libyan

Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	8: 1543
-------------------------------	---------

Lithuanian

Al Jolson	6: 1025
---------------------	---------

Macedonian

Alexander the Great	1: 43
Ptolemy I	8: 1528

Mexican

Lázaro Cárdenas	3: 361
Benito Juárez	6: 1040
Diego Rivera	9: 1593

Mongolian

Genghis Khan	5: 784
Kublai Khan	6: 1109

Native American

American Horse	1: 57
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Pocahontas	8: 1488
Sequoyah	9: 1701
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785

New Zealander

Edmund Hillary	5: 898
--------------------------	--------

Nigerian

Chinua Achebe	1: 10
-------------------------	-------

Norwegian

Thor Heyerdahl	5: 895
Henrik Ibsen	5: 970
Edvard Munch	7: 1362

Pakistani

Benazir Bhutto	2: 218
--------------------------	--------

Palestinian

Yasir Arafat	1: 86
------------------------	-------

Panamanian

Manuel Noriega 8: 1401

Persian

Harun al-Rashid 8: 1555

Polish

Baal Shem Tov 1: 137

Menachem Begin 2: 194

Frédéric Chopin 3: 464

Joseph Conrad 3: 508

Nicolaus Copernicus 3: 510

Marie Curie 3: 538

John Paul II 6: 1013

Albert Sabin 9: 1657

Isaac Bashevis Singer 9: 1724

Portuguese

Ferdinand Magellan 7: 1201

Roman

Augustus 1: 128

Julius Caesar 2: 335

Marcus Tullius Cicero 3: 475

Jesus of Nazareth 6: 1000

Marcus Aurelius 7: 1236

Mark Antony 7: 1240

Ovid 8: 1432

Virgil 10: 1874

Romanian

Elie Wiesel 10: 1939

Russian

Alexander II 1: 41

Isaac Asimov 1: 113

George Balanchine 1: 154

Irving Berlin 2: 208

Leonid Brezhnev 2: 280

Catherine the Great 3: 401

Marc Chagall 3: 414

Anton Chekhov 3: 449

Fyodor Dostoevsky 4: 624

Mikhail Gorbachev 5: 809

Wassily Kandinsky 6: 1050

Nikita Khrushchev 6: 1083

Vladimir Lenin 6: 1131

Vladimir Nabokov 7: 1371

Rudolf Nureyev 8: 1409

Ivan Pavlov 8: 1459

Anna Pavlova 8: 1462

Aleksandr Pushkin 8: 1535

Vladimir Putin 8: 1537

Andrei Sakharov 9: 1662

Joseph Stalin 9: 1743

Igor Stravinsky 9: 1773

Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky 10: 1792

Valentina Tereshkova 10: 1798

Leo Tolstoy 10: 1827

Boris Yeltsin 10: 1982

Scottish

Alexander Graham Bell 2: 196

Tony Blair 2: 232

Robert Burns 2: 317

Andrew Carnegie 3: 367

Sean Connery 3: 506

Arthur Conan Doyle 4: 629

Mary, Queen of Scots 7: 1249

John Muir 7: 1360

Walter Scott 9: 1693

Robert Louis Stevenson 9: 1757

James Watt 10: 1910

Serbian

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310

South African

Christiaan Barnard 1: 173

P. W. Botha 2: 255

F. W. de Klerk 4: 581

Nelson Mandela 7: 1216
Desmond Tutu 10: 1847

Spanish

Pablo Casals 3: 386
Catherine of Aragon 3: 399
Miguel de Cervantes 3: 408
Salvador Dali 3: 549
Hernando de Soto 4: 592
Placido Domingo 4: 616
Joan Miró 7: 1316
Pablo Picasso 8: 1479
Juan Ponce de León 8: 1501

Swedish

Ingmar Bergman 2: 206
Anders Celsius 3: 407
Carl Linnaeus 6: 1157
Alfred Nobel 8: 1397

Swiss

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886
Carl Jung 6: 1043
Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus 8: 1443
Jean Piaget 8: 1477

Tibetan

Dalai Lama 3: 546

Trinidadian

Stokely Carmichael 3: 363

Ugandan

Idi Amin 1: 59

Venetian

Marco Polo 8: 1498

Vietnamese

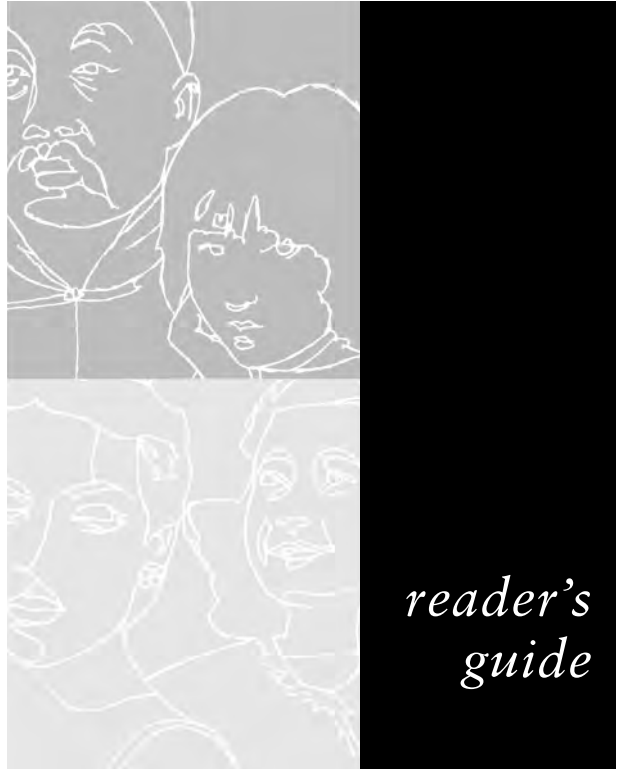
Ho Chi Minh 5: 913

Welsh

Roald Dahl 3: 543
Anthony Hopkins 5: 938
Dylan Thomas 10: 1810

Yugoslav

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310
Marshal Tito 10: 1821



reader's guide

U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography features 750 biographies of notable historic and contemporary figures from around the world. Chosen from American history, world history, literature, science and math, arts and entertainment, and the social sciences, the entries focus on the people studied most often in middle school and high school, as identified by teachers and media specialists.

The biographies are arranged alphabetically across ten volumes. The two- to four-page entries cover the early lives, influences, and careers of notable men and women of diverse fields and ethnic groups. Each essay includes birth and death information in the header and concludes with a list of sources

for further information. A contents section lists biographees by their nationality. Nearly 750 photographs and illustrations are featured, and a general index provides quick access to the people and subjects discussed throughout *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

Special thanks

Much appreciation goes to Mary Alice Anderson, media specialist at Winona Middle School in Winona, Minnesota, and Nina Levine, library media specialist at Blue Mountain Middle School in Cortlandt Manor, New York, for their assistance in developing the entry list. Many thanks also go to the following people for their important editorial contri-

butions: Taryn Benbow-Pfalzgraf (proofreading), Jodi Essey-Stapleton (copyediting and proofing), Margaret Haerens (proofreading), Courtney Mroch (copyediting), and Theresa Murray (copyediting and indexing). Special gratitude goes to Linda Mahoney at LM Design for her excellent typesetting work and her flexible attitude.

Comments and suggestions

We welcome your comments on the *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*. Please write: Editors, *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*, U•X•L, 27500 Drake Road, Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535; call toll-free: 1-800-877-4253; fax to 248-699-8097; or send e-mail via www.gale.com.



JAMES DEAN

Born: February 8, 1931

Marion, Indiana

Died: September 30, 1955

Paso Robles, California

American actor

American actor James Dean had a short-lived but intense acting career that began in 1952 and ended tragically with his death in September 1955. After his death he became a cult figure (a legendary person), and fans have marveled for decades at his ability to duplicate their adolescent (teenage) agony on screen.

Childhood

Born on February 8, 1931, in Marion, Indiana, James Byron Dean was the only child of Winton and Mildred (Wilson) Dean. Winton, a dental technician (a person who creates dental appliances), moved his family to Santa Monica, California, when Dean was six years old. Dean was particularly close to his mother, who had dreams of him being a performer. She enrolled him in tap dance lessons at the age of three, and taught him violin.

In July 1940 Dean's mother died of cancer. This was a loss he would feel strongly all of his life. His father sent him back to Fairmount, Indiana, to live with Marcus and Ortense Winslow, Winton Dean's sister and brother-in-law. In Fairmount Dean grew up in



James Dean.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

his aunt and uncle's rural Quaker home, helping with farm chores and enjoying a reasonably carefree existence. He enjoyed swimming and ice-skating, and was interested in cars. He played guard on the high school basketball team and excelled at debate and drama.

First acting roles

After graduating in 1949, Dean left for Los Angeles, California, and lived briefly with his father and stepmother. He entered Santa Monica City College, majoring in pre-law, but it was drama in which he shone. The following year he transferred to the University of California, Los Angeles. Befriended by

actor James Whitmore (1924–), Dean obtained a small part in a television drama, *Hill Number One*.

Soon Dean quit college and worked as a parking lot attendant, participating in auditions whenever they were available. In 1951, after landing only bit parts and a small role in *Fixed Bayonets*, a war picture, he left Hollywood for New York. There, in 1953, he landed a spot in the Actors Studio run by Lee Strasberg (1901–1982).

Dean obtained a small part in *See the Jaguar*, which opened at the Cort Theatre on Broadway in 1952. After this his career took off. He did television plays and several more Broadway productions. He also developed a reputation for being talented but hard to work with. Television required precise coordination of cameras and actors. However, Dean was either unable or unwilling to repeat a gesture, move, or speech the same way. Despite this he won the Daniel Blum Theatre World Award for “best newcomer” of the 1953 to 1954 season for his role in *The Immoralist*.

Three movies

In March 1954 director Elia Kazan (1909–), who knew Dean from Actors Studio days, offered him a role in the film *East of Eden*. Dean was picked for two more parts. He finished filming *Rebel Without a Cause*, with Sal Mineo (1939–1976) and Natalie Wood (1938–1981) in June 1955 and began work on *Giant*. He costarred in this movie with Elizabeth Taylor (1932–) and Rock Hudson (1925–1985). Filming of *Giant* was completed in September and Dean was to start rehearsing for a new play, *The Corn Is Green*. But Dean had a few days free time in which he decided to do some car racing.

Dean had bought a Porsche Spyder, which he planned to race in Salinas, California. On September 30, he and his mechanic, Rolf Wuetherich, were involved in a head-on collision at Paso Robles, California. Dean died in the crash. He was buried in Fairmount, Indiana, on October 8, 1955. Three thousand people attended his funeral.

Less than a month later, *Rebel Without a Cause* opened in New York City and the Dean legend began. Warner Brothers received mountains of mail. Young people all over the world considered Dean a symbol of their frustrations. In 1956 he was nominated for Best Actor Oscars for his roles in *East of Eden* and *Giant*. He also received numerous foreign awards, including the French Crystal Star award and the Japanese Million Pearl award. By June 1956 there were dozens of fan clubs, and rumors flourished that Dean was not dead, only severely injured.

Many who acted with Dean thought he had exceptional talent. Perhaps the most enduring part of James Dean's legend is the belief that beauty is ultimately destroyed by violence. That legend is kept alive by numerous books and a festival in Fairmount that more than fifty thousand people attend each year on the anniversary of his fatal accident.

For More Information

Alexander, Paul. *Boulevard of Broken Dreams: The Life, Times, and Legend of James Dean*. New York: Viking, 1994.

Bast, William. *James Dean*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1956.

Dalton, David. *James Dean: The Mutant King*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1974.

Herndon, Venable. *James Dean, A Short Life*. San Francisco, CA: Straight Arrow Books, 1974.

Howlett, John. *James Dean: A Biography*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1975.

CLAUDE DEBUSSY

Born: August 22, 1862

St-Germain-en-Laye, France

Died: March 25, 1918

Paris, France

French composer

The French composer (writer and arranger of music) Claude Debussy developed a strongly individual style and went against the methods of classical composing by using uncommon arrangements that created a new language of sound.

Early life

Achille Claude Debussy was born on August 22, 1862, in St-Germain-en-Laye, France. He was the oldest of five children. His father, Manuel-Achille Debussy, ran a china shop and had a hard time making ends meet. Debussy began taking piano lessons at age seven and entered the Paris Conservatory (school of fine arts) in Paris, France, at the age of ten. His instructors and fellow students recognized that he had talent, but they thought some of his attempts to create new sounds were odd. In 1880 Nadezhda von Meck, who had helped support Russian composer Peter Ilich Tchaikovsky (1840–1893),



Claude Debussy.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

hired Debussy to teach her children piano. He traveled to Italy and Austria with her and her family and spent parts of the next two years at her estate in Russia.

Different musical influences

In 1884 Debussy won the Prix de Rome, a competition for composers, for his cantata (a poem set to music) *The Prodigal Son*. While in Rome, Italy, the following year, he wrote that one of the few things that made him forget how much he missed Paris was the study of German composer Richard Wagner's (1813–1883) opera *Tristan und Isolde*. (Debussy returned to Paris in 1887.)

Not many years later Debussy strongly criticized Wagner, but this had more to do with Wagner's drama than his music. Although Debussy scorned the characters in Wagner's *Parsifal*, he openly praised the music. Throughout his life Debussy was fascinated by the richness of Wagner's style, although he generally preferred opera that was less flashy.

Debussy was also strongly affected by the Javanese gamelan, which he saw performed at the Paris World Exposition of 1889. This orchestra, with its variety of bells, gongs, and xylophones (instruments made up of a series of wooden bars that sound different notes when struck with two small hammers), produced a series of soft effects and rhythms that Debussy loved. The years between 1890 and 1900 brought the elements of the gamelan into play with others already present in Debussy's style and produced a new kind of sound. The completion of this process around 1900 can serve as a line dividing the masterpieces of the earlier years—*Ariettes oubliées* (1888), *Prélude à l'après-midi d'un faune* (1892; *Afternoon of a Faun*), and the *String Quartet* (1893)—from those composed during Debussy's mature period.

Mature period

Debussy's first large-scale piece of his mature period, the *Nocturnes* for orchestra (1893–99), was produced while he was working on his only completed opera, *Pelléas et Mélisande* (1894–1902), based on a play by Maurice Maeterlinck (1862–1949). The publicity surrounding the first performance of *Pelléas* in 1902 made Debussy the most controversial (causing disputes) musical figure in France; people either loved his music or

hated it. *Pelléas* is the key work of Debussy's creative life; the words and actions of the opera pass as if in a dream, but the dream is filled with a strong feeling of dread. Debussy adds to this feeling with music that is largely quiet, with outbursts thrown in that reveal the underlying terror.

In 1904 Debussy left his wife of five years, Rosalie Texier, to live with Emma Bardac, a woman who had a decent amount of money and whom he would eventually marry. Debussy became more productive after he no longer had to worry about how he was going to earn money. During these years he wrote some of his most lasting works: *La Mer* (1905) and *Ibéria* (1908), both for orchestra; *Images* (1905), *Children's Corner Suite* (1908), and two books of *Préludes* (1910–12), all for piano solo.

Later years

Debussy's pieces of the following years show certain changes in style. They have less immediate appeal and are more difficult to approach. The emergence of other composers also led to declining interest in his works. His ballet *Jeux*, his last and most complicated orchestral score, first performed on May 15, 1913, was all but forgotten after Igor Stravinsky's (1882–1971) ballet *Rite of Spring* came out on May 29. Debussy may have resented the younger composer's arrival on the scene, but he admired Stravinsky's work and even used certain Stravinsky-like elements in *En blanc et noir* (1915) and the *Études* (1915).

When Debussy composed these works, he was already suffering from terminal cancer. He completed only three of a planned group of six pieces "for various instruments" (1915–17) before dying in Paris on March 25, 1918.

For More Information

- Dietschy, Marcel. *A Portrait of Claude Debussy*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1990.
- Lockspeiser, Edward. *Debussy: His Life and Mind*. 2 vols. London: Cassell, 1962. Reprint, New York: Cambridge University Press, 1978.
- Nichols, Roger. *Debussy Remembered*. Portland, OR: Amadeus Press, 1992.
- Nichols, Roger. *The Life of Debussy*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1998.

RUBY DEE

Born: October 27, 1924

Cleveland, Ohio

African American actress

Ruby Dee's acting career has spanned more than fifty years and has included theater, radio, television, and movies. She has also been active in the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), the Southern Christian Leadership Conference (SCLC), and the Congress of Racial Equality (CORE).

The early years

Ruby Dee was born Ruby Ann Wallace on October 27, 1924, in Cleveland, Ohio. Her parents, Marshall and Emma Wallace, moved the family to Harlem in New York City when Dee was just a baby. In the evening Dee, her two sisters, and her brother



Ruby Dee.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

read aloud to each other from the poetry of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow (1807–1882), William Wordsworth (1770–1850), and Paul Laurence Dunbar (1872–1906). As a teenager Dee submitted poetry to the *New York Amsterdam News*, a black weekly newspaper. Later in life, Dee admitted that during those years she was a shy girl but that she always felt a burning desire to express herself.

Pursued education

Dee's love of English and poetry motivated her to study the arts. She attended Hunter High School, one of New York's first-rate schools that drew the brightest girls.

While in high school, Dee decided to pursue acting.

After graduation Dee entered Hunter College. There she joined the American Negro Theater (ANT) and adopted the stage name Ruby Dee. While still at Hunter College, Dee took a class in radio training offered through the American Theater Wing. This training led to a part in the radio serial *Nora Drake*. After college Dee worked as a French and Spanish translator. She knew, however, that the theater was to be her destiny.

First Broadway role

In 1946 Dee got her first Broadway role in *Jeb*, a drama about a returning African American war hero. There she met Ossie Davis, the actor in the title role. They became close friends and were married on December 9, 1948.

Dee's first movie was *Love in Syncopation*, released in 1946. In 1950 she appeared in *The Jackie Robinson Story* and in *No Way Out*. In 1957 Dee appeared in *Edge of the City*. Over the next decade, Dee appeared in several plays and movies including *A Raisin in the Sun* and Davis's play *Purlie Victorious*. In 1965 Ruby Dee became the first African American actress to appear in major roles at the American Shakespeare Festival in Stratford, Connecticut. Her musical satire *Take It from the Top* opened in New York in 1979.

Beginning in the early 1960s, Dee made numerous appearances on television including roles in the *Play of the Week* and in several series. In 1968 she became the first African American actress to be featured on *Peyton Place*. In 1970 she starred in the critically acclaimed play *Boesman and Lena*.

Promoting black heritage

Dee and Davis collaborated on several projects designed to promote black heritage in general and other black artists in particular. In 1974 they produced *The Ruby Dee/Ossie Davis Story Hour* for the National Black Network. In 1981 they produced the series *With Ossie and Ruby* for the Public Broadcasting System (PBS).

Dee found this work particularly satisfying because she got to travel the country talking to authors and others who could put the black experience in perspective. She believes that the series made black people look at themselves outside of the problems of racism (believing that one race is superior to another race).

Took up civil rights causes

Issues of equality and civil rights have long been a concern of Dee's. In 1953 she became well-known for denouncing (openly expressing strong disapproval) the U.S. government's decision to execute Julius and Ethel Rosenberg for wartime spying. This experience helped Dee realize that racism and discrimination (treating people differently based on race, gender, or nationality) were not exclusively black experiences.

Dee and Davis were involved in and supported several other civil rights protests and causes, including Martin Luther King Jr.'s 1963 March on Washington. In 1970 the National Urban League honored them with the Frederick Douglass Award for distinguished leadership toward equal opportunity.

In 1999 Dee and Davis were arrested for protesting the fatal shooting of an unarmed West African immigrant, Amadou Diallo, by

white police officers of the New York City Police Department.

Other achievements

Dee's remarkable acting talent has endured over the years. Director Spike Lee cast Dee in his 1989 film *Do the Right Thing*. In 1990 Dee appeared in the television movie *The Court Martial of Jackie Robinson*. In 1991 Dee won an Emmy for *Decoration Day*, and in 1994 she appeared in the television movie version of Stephen King's *The Stand*.

Dee also has established the Ruby Dee Scholarship in Dramatic Art. The scholarship is awarded to talented young black women who want to become established in the acting profession. In 1988 *Ebony* magazine featured Dee and Davis as one of "Three Great Love Stories." Both she and Davis donate money and countless hours of time to causes in which they believe.

On March 11, 2001, Dee and Davis received the Lifetime Achievement Award from the Screen Actors Guild. At that time, they had been married and worked together for fifty-two years.

For More Information

Bogle, Donald. *Blacks in American Film and Television*. New York: Garland, 1988.

Bogle, Donald. *Toms, Coons, Mulattoes, and Bucks*. New York: Viking, 1973.

Davis, Ossie, and Ruby Dee. *With Ossie and Ruby: In This Life Together*. New York: W. Morrow, 1998.

Dee, Ruby. *My One Good Nerve*. New York: J. Wiley & Sons, 1999.

DANIEL DEFOE

Born: 1660

London, England

Died: April 24, 1731

London, England

English writer, journalist, and poet

Daniel Defoe was the first of the great eighteenth-century English novelists. He wrote more than five hundred books, pamphlets, articles, and poems.

Education, marriage, and early career

Little is known about the birth and early childhood of Daniel Defoe, as no baptism record exists for him. It is likely that he was born in London, England, in 1660. James Foe, his father, was a butcher by trade and also a Protestant Presbyterian (considered to be a person who thought differently and did not believe in or belong to the Church of England). (Daniel Defoe added the De to his original last name Foe when he was forty.) He had a sister, Elizabeth, who was born a year earlier. When he was ten, his mother died. He had early thoughts of becoming a Presbyterian minister, and in the 1670s he attended the Reverend Charles Morton's famous academy near London.

In 1684 Defoe married Mary Tuffley, who brought him the handsome dowry of 3,700 pounds. They had seven children. Defoe participated briefly in the Monmouth Rebellion of 1685, a Protestant uprising, but escaped capture and punishment. From 1685 through 1692 he engaged in trade in London as a wholesale hosiery agent, an importer of

wine and tobacco, and part owner and insurer of ships.

Defoe evidently did business with King William III (1650–1702). He suffered losses from underwriting marine insurance for the king and was forced to declare bankruptcy in 1692. Although he settled with the people to whom he owed money in 1693, he faced the threat of bankruptcy throughout his life and faced imprisonment for debt and libel (the crime of writing or publishing untrue statements that harm other people) seven times.

Journalist and secret agent

Arrested in 1703 for having published *The Shortest Way with the Dissenters* in 1702, Defoe was tried and sentenced, put before public abuse, and taken to prison. Robert Walpole (1676–1745) released him five months later and offered him a post as a government agent. Defoe continued to serve the government as journalist, pamphleteer, and secret agent for the remainder of his life. The most long-lived of his twenty-seven periodicals, the *Review* (1704–1713), was especially influential in promoting the union between England and Scotland in 1706 and 1707 and in supporting the controversial Peace of Utrecht of 1713 (one of the greatest peace settlements in history that balanced power in Europe).

His nonfiction—essays, poems

Defoe published hundreds of political and social documents between 1704 and 1719. His interests and activities reflect the major social, political, economic, and literary trends of his age. He supported the policies of William III and Mary after the Glorious Revolution of 1688 and 1689, and analyzed England's growth as the major sea and mercantile

(having to do with merchandise and trade) power in the Western world. He pleaded for sympathy for debtors and defended the rights of Protestant dissenters (people who opposed the beliefs of the Church of England). He used newspapers and journals to make his points.

His first major work, *An Essay upon Projects* (1697), proposed ways of providing better roads, insurance, and education to be supported by “a Tax upon Learning, to be paid by the Authors of Books.” Many of these topics reappeared in his later works.

In 1701 Defoe published *The True-Born Englishman*, the most widely sold poem in English up to that time. He estimated that more than eighty thousand copies of this defense of William III against the attacks of John Tutchin were sold. Although Defoe’s *The Shortest Way with the Dissenters* (1702), which ridiculed the harshness of the Church of England, led to his arrest, the popularity of his *Hymn to the Pillory* (1703) indicated the favor that he had found with the London public.

Robinson Crusoe

At the age of fifty-nine, after a full career as businessman, government servant, political pamphleteer, and journalist, Defoe began a career as novelist. Within six years he produced six novels, all of which gave him his greatest fame.

In 1719 Defoe published his most lasting work, *The Life and Strange Surprising Adventures of Robinson Crusoe*. The success of the story inspired Defoe to write *The Farther Adventures of Robinson Crusoe* later in 1719 and *Serious Reflections during the Life and Surprising*



Daniel Defoe.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Adventures in 1720. That year he published another travel novel, *The Life, Adventures, and Pyracies of the Famous Captain Singleton*.

Other major fiction

Defoe published comparatively little in 1721, because he was hard at work on the three major books that were to appear the following year. In January 1722 he published *The Fortunes and Misfortunes of the Famous Moll Flanders*, probably the most successful of his novels. *A Journal of the Plague Year*, issued in March 1722, presented a picture of life in London during the Great Plague of 1665; it was thought to be history rather than fiction

for more than a hundred years. His third novel, *The History and Remarkable Life of the Truly Honourable Col. Jacques*, was published in December 1722.

In 1724 and 1725 Defoe published four successful books, each displaying his characteristically clear, strong English words. *The Fortunate Mistress; or, . . . Roxana* was the first of three in 1724. The second, *A Tour Thro' the Whole Island of Great Britain* was one of the most thorough guidebooks of the period, and the third, *The History of the Remarkable Life of John*, was one of his finest criminal biographies. *The True and Genuine Account of the Life and Actions of the Late Jonathan Wild* was the fourth book, published in 1725.

Last Works and death

Although he continued to write, only a few of Defoe's later works are worthy of note: *The Complete English Tradesman* (1725), *The Political History of the Devil* (1726), *A New Family Instructor* (1727), and *Augusta Triumphans* (1728), which was Defoe's plan to make "London the most flourishing City in the Universe."

Daniel Defoe died at age seventy-one on April 24, 1731, outside of London, England.

For More Information

Hunter, J. Paul. *The Reluctant Pilgrim*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Press, 1966.

Moore, John Robert. *A Checklist of the Writings of Daniel Defoe*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1960.

Secord, Arthur W. *Studies in the Narrative Method of Defoe*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1924.

Trent, William P. *Daniel Defoe, How to Know Him*. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1916. Reprint, New York, Phaeton Press, 1971.

EDGAR DEGAS

Born: July 19, 1834

Paris, France

Died: September 27, 1917

Paris, France

French artist, painter, and sculptor

The French painter and sculptor Edgar Degas is classed with the impressionists (a painter who tries to represent a scene using dabs and strokes of paint) because of his concentration on scenes of contemporary life and his desire to capture the transitory (lasting a short time) moment, but he surpassed other impressionists in compositional (arrangement) sense.

The early years

Hilaire German Edgar Degas was born on July 19, 1834, in Paris, France, the son of a well-to-do banker. From an early age Edgar loved books, especially the classics, and was a serious student in high school. He was very attached to his younger brother, René, and he would later paint his image repeatedly. He was also fond of his mother, and her death when he was thirteen years old caused him much heartache. His father hoped Edgar would study law, but Edgar enrolled at the École des Beaux-Arts (School of Fine Arts) in 1855. Degas always valued this early classical

training. He had a great and enduring admiration for Ingres (1780–1867), a painter with a decisively linear orientation (characterized by a reliance on simple lines and brushstrokes).

In 1856 Degas went to Italy and settled in Rome for three years. He admired the early Christian and medieval masterpieces of Italy, as well as the frescoes (paintings done on fresh plaster), panel paintings, and drawings of the Renaissance (a period in Italy from roughly the fourteenth century until the seventeenth century that was marked by a renewed interest in the arts) masters. He copied many of these. At that time this was a common way of studying art.

Back in Paris in 1861, Degas executed a few history paintings (a painting that depicts a historical event; then regarded as the highest branch of painting). Among these was the *Daughter of Jephthah* (1861), which is based on an episode from the Old Testament in the Bible. He copied the works of the old masters (the well-regarded painters of the Renaissance) in the Louvre (a famous art museum in Paris). His reputation as a painter had already been established prior to the 1870s.

From 1862 until 1870 Degas painted portraits of his friends and family. In 1870, during the Franco-Prussian War (a conflict between France and the German state of Prussia), he served in the artillery (the part of the army that deals with weaponry) of the national guard. Degas stopped exhibiting at the respected Salon in 1874 and instead displayed his works with those of the less well-established impressionists until 1886. Although he was associated with the impressionists, his preoccupation with drawing and composition was not characteristic of the group.



Edgar Degas.

Reproduced by permission of Art Resource.

Portraits

Portraiture (the creation of portraits) was more important for Degas than for any of the other impressionists. Some of his portraits are among the best produced in Western art since the Renaissance. Examples include *The Belleli Family* (1859), *Head of a Young Woman* (1867), *Diego Martelli* (1879), and *Estelle Musson* (1872–73).

Depiction of the modern scene

By 1870 Degas drew his characters from the contemporary Parisian scene, especially the ballet, theater, and racetrack. Usually he

depicted ballerinas off guard, showing them backstage at an awkward moment as they fastened a slipper or drooped, exhausted, after a difficult practice session. Degas fits easily within the impressionist movement in producing art of immediacy (directness) and spontaneity (being unprepared or unplanned). But the placement of each detail is calculated in terms of every other to establish balances that are remarkably clever and subtle.

Degas thought of the human figure as a prop to be manipulated to achieve more interesting paintings. He was inspired by Japanese prints to create unusual poses and cut off figures in unusual ways. In *A Carriage at the Races* (1873) the figure in the carriage to the left is cut nearly down the middle. Had Degas shown more of this figure, an obvious and uninteresting symmetry (arrangement that is similar on both sides) would have been set up with the larger carriage in the right foreground.

Degas's techniques

In copying the old masters, Degas sometimes attempted to uncover their techniques. For example, when he copied Andrea Mantegna (1431–1506), Degas tried to copy Mantegna's method of building up the canvas with layers of cool and warm tones by using a series of glazes (thin, smooth, shiny coats).

From the mid-1870s Degas worked increasingly in pastel (pale, light crayons). In his last years, when his sight was failing, he abandoned oil completely in favor of pastel, which he handled more broadly and with greater freedom than before. Pastel, for the most part an eighteenth-century medium, helped Degas produce qualities of airiness and lightness, as in the *Ballerina and Lady*

with Fan (1885). However, Degas experimented with unusual combinations of mediums in producing his colors and prints.

Bronze sculptures

After 1866 Degas created bronze statues of horses and dancers, up to three or four feet high. His bronze and painted wax figures of dancers, like the *Little Dancer of Fourteen Years* (1880–81), are often clothed in real costumes. Degas again catches the dancers as they are about to change position. As in the paintings, Degas strips the dancers of glamour and sometimes reveals them as scrawny adolescents.

Beginning in the mid-1870s Degas suffered from failing eyesight. From the 1890s on, he became more and more of a recluse (one who lives in isolation). In the last years of his life he was almost totally blind, and he wandered aimlessly through the Parisian streets. He died on September 27, 1917, in Paris.

Degas was interested in combining the discipline apparent in classical art with the direct expression of contemporary life that characterized the impressionists. However, he did not share the impressionists' focus on light and color. He emphasized composition, line, and form. He is regarded as one of the greatest French artists, influencing later artists such as Toulouse-Lautrec (1864–1901) and Pablo Picasso (1811–1973).

For More Information

Loumaye, Jacqueline. *Degas: The Painted Gesture*. New York: Chelsea House, 1994.

Loyrette, Henri. *Degas: The Man and His Art*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1993.

McMullen, Roy. *Degas: His Life, Times, and Work*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1984.

Vollard, Ambroise. *Degas: An Intimate Portrait*. New York: Greenberg, 1927. Reprint, New York: Dover, 1986.

CHARLES DE GAULLE

Born: November 23, 1890

Lille, France

Died: November 9, 1970

Colombey-les-Deux-Églises, France

French premier, general, and president

The French general and statesman Charles de Gaulle led the Free French forces in their resistance of Germany during World War II (1939–45). A talented writer and spirited public speaker, he served as president of France from 1958 to 1969.

Early life and inspirations

Charles André Joseph Marie de Gaulle was born on November 23, 1890, in the northern industrial city of Lille, France. His father, Henri, was a teacher of philosophy and mathematics and a veteran of the Franco-Prussian War (1870–71), in which Prussia (today known as Germany) humiliatingly defeated the French. This loss colored the life of de Gaulle's father, a patriot who vowed he would live to avenge the defeat and win back the provinces of Alsace and Lorraine. His attitude deeply influenced the lives of his sons, whom he groomed to aid in France's restoration to the greatest European power.

From his earliest years, both his father and mother immersed de Gaulle in French history. For many centuries de Gaulle's ancestors had played a role in French history, almost always as patriots defending France from invaders. In the fourteenth century, a Chevalier de Gaulle defeated an invading English army in defense of the city of Vire. Jean de Gaulle is cited in the Battle of Agincourt (1415).

Perhaps the major influence on de Gaulle's formation came from his uncle, also named Charles de Gaulle, who wrote a book about the Celts, the ancient people of western Europe. The book called for union of the Breton, Scots, Irish, and Welsh peoples. The young de Gaulle wrote in his copybook a sentence from his uncle's book, which proved to be a prediction of his future life: "In a camp, surprised by enemy attack under cover of night, where each man is fighting alone, in dark confusion, no one asks for the grade or rank of the man who lifts up the standard and makes the first call to rally for resistance."

Military career

De Gaulle's career as defender of France began in the summer of 1909, when he was admitted to the elite military academy of Saint-Cyr. Among his classmates was the future marshal of France, Alphonse Juin (1888–1967), who later recalled de Gaulle's nicknames in school—"The Grand Constable" and "The Big Asparagus" (because of his height).

After graduation, in October 1912, Second Lieutenant de Gaulle reported to Henri Philippe Pétain, who first became his idol and later his most hated enemy. (In World War I [1914–18] Pétain was the hero of Ver-



Charles de Gaulle.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

dun. During World War II [1941–45] he surrendered to German leader Adolf Hitler [1889–1945] and collaborated with the Germans while de Gaulle was leading the French forces of liberation.)

De Gaulle led a frontline company as captain in World War I and was cited three times for valor, or courage. Severely wounded, he was left for dead on the battlefield of Verdun and was later imprisoned by the Germans when he revived in a graveyard cart. After he had escaped and been recaptured several times, the Germans put him in a maximum security prison-fortress.

Between wars

After the war de Gaulle went to general-staff school, where he damaged his career by constantly criticizing his superiors. He criticized the concept of trench warfare and wrote a series of essays calling for a strategy of movement with armored tanks and planes. His superiors ignored his works. The Germans, however, did read him and adapted his theories to develop their triumphant strategy of *blitzkrieg*, or lightning war, with which they defeated the French in 1940.

When France fell, de Gaulle, then an unknown brigadier general (a military officer above a colonel), refused to surrender. He fled to London, convinced that the British would never surrender and that American power, once committed, would win the war. On June 18, 1940, on British Broadcasting Company (BBC), he insisted that France had only lost a battle, not the war, and called upon patriotic Frenchmen to resist the Germans. This inspiring broadcast won him worldwide honor.

Early political activity

When the Germans were driven back at Normandy in 1944, de Gaulle had no rivals for leadership in France. Therefore, in the fall of that year, all of the members of the French Parliament agreed in their vote and elected him premier. De Gaulle had fiercely opposed the German enemy, and now he vigorously defended France against the influence of his powerful allies Joseph Stalin (1879–1953) of Russia, Winston Churchill (1874–1965) of Great Britain, and Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945) of the United States. De Gaulle once stated that he never feared Hitler, who he knew was doomed to defeat. He did, however, fear that his allies would dominate France and Europe in the postwar period.

By the fall of 1945, only a year after assuming power, de Gaulle was at odds with all of the political leaders of France. He saw himself as the unique savior of France, the only champion of French honor, grandeur, and independence. He despised all politicians as corrupt and only out for their self-interests. The politicians then banded against him. In January 1946, disgusted by politics, he resigned and retreated into a silence to ponder the future of France.

In 1947 de Gaulle reemerged as leader of the opposition. He headed what he termed "The Rally of the French People," which he insisted was not a political party but a national movement. The Rally became the largest single political force in France but never achieved majority status. Although de Gaulle continued to disagree with the political system, he refused to lead a coup d'état, or a sudden overthrow of the government. He retired again in 1955.

Years as president

In May 1958, a combination of French colonials and militarists seized power in Algeria and threatened to invade France. The weakened Fourth Republic collapsed, and the victorious rebels called de Gaulle back to power as president of the Fifth Republic of France. From June 1958 to April 1969 he reigned as the dominant force in France.

As president de Gaulle fought every plan to involve France deeply in alliances. He opposed the formation of a United States of Europe and British entry into the Common Market. He stopped paying part of France's dues to the United Nations, forced the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO) headquarters to leave France, and pulled French forces out of the Atlantic Alliance integrated armies.

De Gaulle had an early success in stimulating (to make excitable) pride in Frenchmen and in increasing French gold reserves and strengthening the economy. By the end of his reign, however, France was almost friendless, and his economic gains had been all but wiped out by the student and workers protest movement in spring 1968.

De Gaulle ruled supreme for eleven years, but his firm hand began to anger many citizens. In April 1969 the French voted against his program for reorganizing the Senate and the regions of France. Immediately afterwards de Gaulle resigned and remained silent on political issues. Charles de Gaulle died at Colombey-les-Deux-Églises on November 9, 1970.

For More Information

Gaulle, Charles de. *The Complete War Memoirs of Charles de Gaulle*. New York: Da Capo Press, 1984. Reprint, New York: Carroll & Graf Publishers, 1998.

Whitelaw, Nancy. *A Biography of General Charles de Gaulle: "I Am France."* New York: Dillon Press, 1991.

Williams, Charles. *The Last Great Frenchman*. New York: J. Wiley & Sons, 1993.

F. W.
DE KLERK

Born: March 18, 1936

Johannesburg, South Africa

South African president and politician

F. W. de Klerk was state president of South Africa from 1989 to 1994. He pointed his country in a new direction and was awarded the 1993 Nobel Peace Prize for his work to end apartheid (an official policy that virtually eliminated black African participation in government in South Africa).

Brief overview of South African history

Fredrik Willem de Klerk's actions as president went against a long tradition in Africa of using force to keep people down, and where control by foreign countries offered limited freedoms to the native peoples. In the early nineteenth century, England seized control from the Dutch of the Cape Colony at the southern tip of Africa. The Dutch-speaking inhabitants were removed from power and influenced by English-speaking settlers. British rule angered many Dutch in its more liberal treatment of African people. Between 1836 and 1838, several thousand Dutch Boers (farmers) left the Cape Colony to establish new societies in the interior of South Africa, beyond the reach of British authority.

This mass emigration, known as the Great Trek, created two sorts of enemies for the Dutch, who began calling themselves Afrikaners. The first enemy was the British, from whose power they were attempting to escape. The second was a number of powerful black African states, the Zulu being the best known, whose lands they were invading. During the next 150 years, the Afrikaners struggled against both. By the 1960s the Afrikaners seemed to have triumphed with the election of a purely Afrikaner National Party government in 1948. As a result South Africa withdrew from the British Commonwealth in 1960.

National Party established apartheid

The National Party's policy of apartheid appeared to have ended the black African threat by the mid-1960s. But black protest revived in the 1970s and there were strikes by black workers, the uprising of school children in 1976, and intensified attacks by the African National Congress (ANC). Additionally there was a growing trend by people in other countries to isolate South Africa economically, which put intense pressure on the Nationalist government.

Largely because they had been denied any role in the new constitution, black Africans rose again in 1984. Demonstrations and riots were ruthlessly suppressed or ended. Killings increased, rising into the thousands by 1986. President Pieter W. Botha (1916–) eased some "petty apartheid" laws, but left the system's basic structure intact. He declared a state of emergency, which suspended what civil liberties were left and led to the detention, without trial, of perhaps thousands of black and white dissidents (those who publicly disagreed with the government's policies). South Africa's economy suffered enormously and the Rand, the basis of the currency, lost nearly two-thirds of its value. But Botha maintained his resistance to fundamental change. Into this situation stepped F. W. de Klerk.

De Klerk's early years

De Klerk was born on March 18, 1936, in Johannesburg, South Africa. His uncle, Johannes G. Strijdom, a prime minister of South Africa in the 1950s, had installed many apartheid laws. De Klerk attended Potchefstroom University, a center of Afrikaner

nationalist thought. In 1972, while teaching law, he was elected to Parliament, South Africa's governing body, and represented the town of Vereeniging. All this activity was in the province of Transvaal, a focal point of Afrikaner political power and the location of most of the mineral wealth that is the basis of the South African economy.

He joined the cabinet (close political advisors) of Prime Minister Balthazar Johannes Vorster (1915–1983) in 1978. During the next two decades, de Klerk served many offices, including minister of post and telecommunications and minister of sports and recreation. De Klerk eventually became the chief of the Transvaal branch of the party.

De Klerk as party leader

In January of 1989 Botha suffered a stroke that forced him to resign as head of the National Party. Though Botha remained state president, de Klerk replaced him as party leader. An extraordinary episode occurred in August when de Klerk, without Botha's knowledge, announced a meeting to talk about the South African situation with Zambia's president Kenneth Kaunda. Botha publicly criticized de Klerk and then suddenly resigned the presidency. De Klerk became state president, which set the stage for the extraordinary events of February 11, 1990.

At the outset of his presidency, de Klerk seemed to associate himself less with the security and military branches of the government and more with the economic and foreign policy offices, which are more interested in South Africa's standing overseas. Then there was de Klerk's undoubted loyalty to the National Party. As South Africa faced hard



F. W. de Klerk.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

times in the 1980s, so did the party. Even Botha believed that South Africa must “adapt or die.” His halting steps toward reform split the party between those who wanted to strengthen and those who wanted to reform apartheid. Having inherited this division, de Klerk may have believed that the way to save the party was to attract reformers, many of them English-speaking, who had previously supported other groups.

Freeing Mandela

Few were prepared for the dramatic news of February 11, 1990, when de Klerk announced the release of Nelson Mandela

(1918–), the South African resistance leader, from prison after spending twenty-seven years there. This was a major step in ending apartheid in South Africa.

On May 7, 1990, de Klerk and a government delegation had their first formal meeting with Mandela and representatives of the ANC, whom the government had once considered terrorists. Both leaders reported the meeting to have been friendly, and each stated his regard for the integrity of the other. Both leaders were well aware that years of repression had produced many dangerous forces that could at any time damage the results of that meeting and its hope for South Africa's future. De Klerk's role as the catalyst in changing the course of South Africa's history seemed secure. Additional evidence came on September 24, 1990, when at a meeting with President George Bush (1924–) he became the first South African head of state to visit the White House.

De Klerk became second vice president

De Klerk worked with Mandela to abolish apartheid and grant constitutional voting rights to all South Africans. In 1993 the two shared the Nobel Peace Prize. In April 1994 they saw their efforts pay off as they campaigned against each other in the first all-race election in South Africa. In this election, with black South Africans casting the majority vote, Mandela became the first black president of South Africa. De Klerk became the second vice president in Mandela's Government of National Unity.

In 1996 the government adopted a new constitution that guaranteed equal rights. De Klerk was concerned, however, that the constitution would not protect minority group

rights. The National Party, still led by him, broke away from Mandela, saying that South Africa needed a strong multi-party system.

In August 1997 de Klerk resigned as head of the National Party and stepped out of politics. At the news conference, he stated, "I am resigning because I am convinced it is in the best interest of the party and the country."

In October 1998 the South Africa Truth and Reconciliation Commission announced that it would release a report about crimes that were committed during apartheid and that this report would not include any mention of questionable activities that de Klerk may have been involved in. The commission works to bring south Africans together by investigating and reporting on events that occurred during apartheid.

In December 2001, de Klerk joined more than thirty other Nobel Prize winners in Oslo, Norway to celebrate the prize's one-hundredth anniversary and to discuss peace in the twenty-first century.

For More Information

De Klerk, F. W. *The Last Trek—A New Beginning: The Autobiography*. London: Macmillan, 1998.

De Klerk, Willem. *F. W. de Klerk: The Man in His Time*. Johannesburg: J. Ball, 1991.

Pakendorf, Harald. "New Personality, Old Policies?" *Africa Report* (May–June 1989).

Sparks, Allister. "The Secret Revolution" *New Yorker* (April 11, 1994).

Thompson, Leonard. *The Political Mythology of Apartheid*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1985.

CECIL B. DEMILLE

Born: August 12, 1881

Ashfield, Massachusetts

Died: January 21, 1959

Laughlin Park, California

American director and producer

Considered one of the founders of Hollywood, film producer and director Cecil B. DeMille became famous for large-scale religious films such as *The Ten Commandments* and *King of Kings*.

Theater background

Cecil Blount DeMille was born on August 12, 1881, in Ashfield, Massachusetts, the second of Henry Churchill de Mille and Beatrice Samuel DeMille's three children. His father wrote several successful plays with David Belasco (1853–1931), a famous writer of that time. Actors and actresses often came to the DeMille house to rehearse scenes. When DeMille was twelve, his father died; his mother made money by turning their home into a school for girls. Cecil attended Pennsylvania Military College and studied acting at the Academy of Dramatic Arts in New York, New York. After graduation he worked as an actor for ten years. He married Constance Adams, an actress, in 1902. They had one child and adopted three more.

The man who founded Hollywood

When DeMille was almost thirty, he met Jesse L. Lasky, who was trying to break into motion picture production. DeMille was thinking of leaving show business altogether,

but Lasky convinced him to try directing a film. After spending a day at Thomas Edison's (1847–1931) studios in New York City, DeMille left for Arizona to shoot *The Squaw Man*, a drama based on a Broadway play that was set in Wyoming. When things did not work out in Arizona, DeMille got back on the train and headed to Los Angeles, California.

When DeMille arrived in California in 1913, he decided to stay, realizing it was perfect for motion picture making. The sunny weather enabled crews to shoot without having to set up lights, saving time and money. DeMille created the popular image of the big-shot movie director by dressing in an open-necked shirt, riding pants, and boots and by carrying a large megaphone (a cone-shaped device to increase the loudness of the voice) and a whistle around his neck. With the success of *The Squaw Man*, DeMille had found the perfect location to make movies, he had developed the fashion style that would come to be associated with movie-making, and he had proved he could direct successfully. By 1914 Lasky had moved his entire operation to California and set up a huge studio.

Produced first epics

In 1917 DeMille made his first epic (a work that is larger than usual in size or scope), *Joan the Woman*, the story of Joan of Arc (1412–1431), a saint of the Catholic Church. It was one of the longest pictures made up until that time and was not successful. Over the next few years several of DeMille's films were flops, including *The Whispering Chorus*, a film that meant a lot to him. DeMille began to concentrate on pleasing audiences with comedies such as *We Can't Have Everything* and *Don't Change Your Hus-*



Cecil B. DeMille.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

band, which contained both sexual and moral messages. Critics scoffed at these films, but they made money. DeMille also helped to set up the Hays Office, which cracked down on films containing sexual or immoral (socially wrong) content. DeMille worried that if Hollywood did not police itself, Congress would.

In 1923 DeMille decided to make another epic. The first version of *The Ten Commandments* was the most expensive movie made up to that time. In the end, though, it was a blockbuster, making its huge budget back several times over. DeMille continued making expensive epics, including *King of Kings* (1927). His first sound movie

was *Dynamite*, which did well; a musical, *Madame Satan*, did not. *The Crusades*, another one of his epics, was the largest failure in Hollywood history up to that time.

End of his career

After World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis Powers—Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allied Powers—England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States), DeMille made *Samson and Delilah*, which was criticized for its poor special effects and scenes of heavy-breathing sexuality. In 1950 DeMille returned to acting, playing himself in *Sunset Boulevard*. In 1952 DeMille made *The Greatest Show on Earth*, a film often considered to be the closest thing to the story of his own life that he ever made. It was the first film he made that won an Oscar.

Cecil B. DeMille's final film, another version of *The Ten Commandments*, is his most widely seen work, thanks to Easter-time television programming, but it is not one of his most respected. Still, it was a huge success at the box office. DeMille suffered a heart attack while shooting *The Ten Commandments*, but he refused to slow down. Soon after, in 1959, he had another heart attack, which led to his death.

For More Information

Bogdanovich, Peter. "The Cowboy Hero and the American West as Directed by John Ford." *Fifty Who Made the Difference*. Edited by Lee Eisenberg. New York: Villard Books, 1984.

DeMille, Cecil B. *The Autobiography of Cecil B. DeMille*. Edited by Donald Hayne. New York: Garland, 1985.

Edwards, Anne. *The DeMilles: An American Family*. New York: Harry N. Abrams, 1990.

Higashi, Sumiko. *Cecil B. DeMille and American Culture: The Silent Era*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1994.

DENG XIAOPING

Born: August 22, 1904

Guangan, Sichuan Province, China

Died: February 19, 1997

Peking, China

Chinese politician and leader

Deng Xiaoping became the most powerful leader in the People's Republic of China (PRC) in the 1970s. He served as the chairman of the Communist Party's Military Commission and was the chief architect of China's economic improvements during the 1980s.

Early life

Deng Xiaoping was born Deng Xixian in Guangan, Sichuan Province, on August 22, 1904. His parents were Deng Wenming, a relatively well-to-do landowner, and the second of his four wives, Deng Danshi. Deng grew up with one sister, two brothers, and the children of his father's other wives. He joined the Chinese Communist Party (CCP) in 1924 while on a high school work-study program in France. (Communism is a political system where goods and services are controlled by the government.) Before returning to China in 1926 he went to Moscow, where he studied for several months.

During the fabled Long March of 1934 and 1935, when Communist Chinese traveled six thousand miles to set up a home in inland China, Deng served first as director of the political department. After the war with Japan began in 1937 Deng was appointed political commissar (party official) of the 129th Division. The force grew into a large military machine and became one of the four largest Communist army units during the war. It was renamed the Second Field Army in 1946 when the civil war began.

Deng rose quickly in the leadership hierarchy after his transfer to Peking, China, in 1952. He became CCP secretary-general in 1954 and a member of the Politburo (ruling party). During the Eighth CCP Congress in 1956 Deng was elevated to the six-man Politburo Standing Committee and appointed general secretary. By then, he had become one of the most powerful men in China.

Exile and return

By many accounts Deng was an able, talented, and intelligent man. He was nicknamed "a living encyclopedia" by his peers. Chairman Mao Zedong (1893–1976), the creator of the People's Republic of China (PRC), pointed out Deng's abilities to Nikita Khrushchev (1894–1971) of the Soviet Union, the former Communist country which consisted of Russia and other states. Deng visited the Soviet Union several times in the 1950s and the 1960s, as he was closely involved in Chinese-Soviet relations and their dispute over the international communist movement.

Mao and Deng parted ways in the 1960s as they disagreed over the strategy of eco-



Deng Xiaoping.

conomic development and other policies. Mao disapproved of Deng for making decisions without consulting him. In 1966 Mao launched the Great Proletarian Cultural Revolution (GPCR) and mobilized the youthful Red Guards (the Communist army) to rid the party of “capitalist powerholders,” such as Deng. From 1969 to 1973, Deng and his family were exiled (forced to leave) to rural Jiangxi to undergo reeducation, during which time he performed manual labor and studied the writings of Mao and Karl Marx (1818–1893).

In the spring of 1973 Deng was brought back to Peking and reinstated as a vice-premier after a major realignment of political

forces. Deng’s ability and expertise were highly valued in the Chinese leadership, and he quickly assumed important roles. In late 1973 he carried out a major reorganization of regional military leaders and was elevated to the Politburo.

As Premier Chou Enlai was hospitalized after May 1974, leadership increasingly fell on Deng’s shoulders. In January 1975 Deng was elevated to a party vice-chairman, the senior vice-premier, and the army chief of staff. However, Deng’s eagerness to carry out political reforms (improvements) pushed away Mao and other radicals, and Deng was soon forced from power.

After Mao’s death in July 1977, Deng began his political comeback. His first task was to destroy Mao’s followers and to downgrade Mao’s lasting authority. Another powerful measure of de-Maoization was to put the “Gang of Four” on public trial, which began in Peking on November 20, 1980. These four radical leaders, including Mao’s widow Chiang Ch’ing, were the late chairman’s most devoted supporters. The trial symbolized the triumph of veteran officials, led by Deng, who had fallen victim to Mao’s radical changes between 1966 and 1976.

Reform leader

Deng’s economic policies required opening China to the rest of the world in order to attract foreign investment and to educate students abroad in the latest technologies. Accordingly, the PRC in 1978 signed a Treaty of Peace and Friendship with Japan. In 1979, Deng obtained the nation’s official recognition from the United States. Chinese-Soviet relations were gradually improved over the next decade, and he achieved the long-cher-

ished goal of recovering the British colony of Hong Kong through an agreement implemented in 1997.

When the Chinese economy began to crumble, Deng reduced investment in heavy industry, increased prices paid by the state to farmers, and arranged a series of bonuses to raise workers' incomes. Farmers were encouraged to sell more produce privately, and a rapid growth of free markets for farm produce occurred.

Fought to maintain political stability

Throughout these reforms, Deng insisted upon maintaining China's socialist system (a social system where the government produces and distributes goods to the people). The reforms Deng installed generally improved the quality of life but produced inequalities throughout China. In the 1980s the economy began to slip; unemployment increased and produced growing difference in living standards between the classes.

In 1979 some of Deng's supporters had openly opposed his dictatorship (one ruler with absolute power) and called for a democratic political system. Deng himself shut down this democracy movement by imprisoning some of their leaders, and banning unofficial organizations and publications. In December of 1986, widespread student demonstrations (protests) were shut down by the government.

Deng's insistence through the 1980s on maintaining China's socialist system while putting his economic reforms into place had by 1989 forced him into a corner. Focusing on demands for greater democracy (a government by the people), a series of student

demonstrations at Tiananmen Square occurred during Soviet leader Mikhail Gorbachev's (1931–) official state visit to Beijing and proved a serious embarrassment to China's leaders—one made worse by worldwide television coverage. The violence that followed on June 4, 1989, is believed to have killed hundreds of demonstrators in Beijing alone.

Final years

Worldwide criticism of the massacre in Tiananmen Square and the uneasy domestic peace that followed brought a tightening of controls over the Chinese people, but did not shake Deng from his dedication to the Communist Party's dictatorship. Recognizing his advanced age, Deng sought to continue his "open door" policy and other political and economic reforms by putting CCP General Secretary Hu Yaobang, Premier Zhao Ziyang, and many other younger officials in positions of responsibility. In November of 1989, Deng resigned his last official position as head of the Central Military Commission.

In his last years Deng started debate within the Communist Party on the need to balance economic reform with political stability. As Deng's health declined, he became further removed from his duties of daily decision-making. His last public appearance was during lunar new year festivities in early 1994, and on February 19, 1997, he died in Peking, China, at age ninety-two.

For More Information

Chang, Parris H. "Chinese Politics: Deng's Turbulent Quest." *Problems of Communism* (January-February, 1981).

Evans, Richard. *Deng Xiaoping and the Making of Modern China*. New York: Viking, 1994.

Tyler, Patrick E. *The New York Times*. (February 16, 1997).

Yang, Benjamin. *Deng: A Political Biography*. Armonk, NY: M. E. Sharpe, 1997.

RENÉ DESCARTES

Born: March 31, 1596

La Haye, France

Died: February 11, 1650

Stockholm, Sweden

French philosopher and writer

The French thinker René Descartes is called the father of modern philosophy (the study of the universe and man's place in it). His *Discourse on Method and Meditations* defined the basic problems of philosophy for at least a century.

Early life

René Descartes was born on March 31, 1596, in La Haye, France. His father, Joachim, served in the Parliament of Brittany, France. Jeanne Brochard Descartes, his mother, died in 1597. His father remarried and René and his older brother and sister were raised by their maternal grandmother and by a nurse for whom he retained a deep affection. In 1606 Descartes entered La Flèche, a religious college established for the education of the sons of noblemen. As a child he was often ill and was allowed to spend a portion of each day study-

ing in bed. He used this time for meditation and thought. According to Descartes's description of his eight-year course of studies at La Flèche, he often felt embarrassed at the extent of his own ignorance.

Travel and study

After leaving college at age eighteen, Descartes earned a law degree in Poitiers, France. From 1618 to 1628 he traveled throughout Europe as a soldier. Living on income from inherited properties, Descartes served without pay and saw little action. He was present, however, at one of the major battles of the Thirty Years War (1618–48). Descartes sought out famous mathematicians, scientists, and philosophers (those who seek wisdom) wherever he traveled. The most significant of these friendships was with Isaac Beeckman, a Dutch mathematician, who encouraged Descartes to begin writing scientific theories on mathematics and music.

Descartes was deeply influenced by three dreams he had in 1619 in Ulm, Germany. He interpreted them to mean that all science is one and that its mastery is universal wisdom. This idea of the unity of all science was in opposition to the belief that the sciences were distinguished by their different objects of study. Descartes felt that if one could draw conclusions from a correct method of reasoning, then one could know everything. He began to devote his efforts to proving that he had discovered such a method. To focus better on his work, Descartes moved to Holland, where he lived peacefully for the next twenty years.

First works

Descartes's first major work, *Rules for the Direction of the Mind*, was written by 1629 but

was not published until 1701. The work begins by assuming that man's knowledge has been limited by the belief that science is determined by the various objects of experience. The first rule therefore states that all true judgment depends on reason alone. For example, mathematical truths are valid even without observation and experiment. The second rule argues that the standard for true knowledge should be the certainty demanded of mathematical demonstrations. The third rule states that the mind should be influenced only by what can clearly be observed. The remaining rules are devoted to the explanation of these ideas or to showing their use in mathematical problems.

By 1634 Descartes had written *The World*, in which he supported several theories, including the idea of Nicolaus Copernicus (1473–1543) that Earth is not the center of the universe but revolves around the sun. Only fragments of the book survive, because when Descartes heard that a book published by Galileo (1564–1642), which also supported Copernicus, had been condemned by the Catholic Church, his fear of similar treatment led him to withdraw his work. In 1634 he also wrote the brief *Treatise on Man*, which attempted to explain human physiology (a branch of biology dealing with organs, tissues, and cells).

Other works

In 1637 Descartes finished *Discourse on Method*, which uses a personal account of his education as an example of the need for a new method of study. Descartes also presents four rules for reducing any problem to its basics and then constructing solutions. In 1641 and 1642 *Meditations on First Philosophy*



René Descartes.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

appeared together with six sets of objections by other famous thinkers. The *Meditations* is one of the most famous books in the history of philosophy. While earlier Descartes works were concerned with explaining a method of thinking, this work applies that method to the problems of philosophy, including the convincing of doubters, the existence of the human soul, the nature of God, and the basis of truth.

The remainder of Descartes's career was spent defending his positions. In 1644 he published the *Principles of Philosophy*, which breaks down and expands the arguments of the earlier *Meditations*. In 1649 Descartes

accepted an invitation from Queen Christina of Sweden (1626–1689) to become her teacher. During this time he wrote *The Passions of the Soul*, which explains passion as a product of physical and chemical processes. The weather in Sweden caused Descartes's health to suffer, however, and after a brief illness he died in Stockholm in 1650.

For More Information

Balz, Albert G. A. *Descartes and the Modern Mind*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1952.

Descartes, René. *Descartes: Selected Philosophical Writings*. Edited by John Cottingham. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1988.

Gaukroger, Stephen. *Descartes: An Intellectual Biography*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1995.

Rodis-Lewis, Geneviève. *Descartes: His Life and Thought*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1998.

Strathern, Paul. *Descartes in 90 Minutes*. Chicago: Ivan R. Dee, Inc., 1996.

HERNANDO DE SOTO

Born: c. 1496

Jerez de los Caballeros, Spain

Died: May 21, 1542

Ferriday (now in Louisiana in the United States)

Spanish explorer

The Spanish explorer Hernando de Soto participated in the conquests of Nicaragua (in Middle America) and Peru (in South America). De Soto explored parts of nine states in the southeastern part of the United States, and he was the first white man to cross the Mississippi River.

Born to explore

Hernando de Soto was born sometime between 1496 and 1501 at Jerez de los Caballeros in the province of Estremadura, Spain. He was born into a family with minor nobility and little money as the second son of Francisco Mendez de Soto and Leonor Arias Tinoco. His education was limited; he was more interested in adventure and exploration. With little more than a sword and shield he sailed to Central America in 1514 with Pedro Arias de Ávila (c. 1440–1531), known as Pedrarias, who was about to become the governor of Panama.

As Pedrarias's lieutenant, de Soto was allowed to explore Central America in search of treasure and land. Among the areas he explored in the 1520s were modern Costa Rica and Honduras. De Soto conquered Nicaragua in 1524, and along with Hernan Ponce de Leon and Francisco Compañon, he became a leading citizen of that country. De Soto was ambitious and wanted the chance to rule a country, but Pedrarias blocked his attempts to achieve more power in Nicaragua.

Fame and reward

Sailing from Nicaragua in 1531, de Soto joined Francisco Pizarro (1471–1541) in the conquest of Peru, becoming an important figure in the fight. He was the first Spaniard to

meet the Inca leader Atahualpa (c. 1500–1533), who had led the victory of a recent civil war in Peru. Atahualpa had great wealth, and he gave many gifts to de Soto. Pizarro later had Atahualpa killed while de Soto was on a scouting mission. Although de Soto emerged from the conquest with a reputation as a skilled horseman and “one of the four bravest captains who had gone to the West Indies,” he was upset that Pizarro had killed Atahualpa. He also felt he would never be given the opportunity to provide leadership to a country.

With fame and a fortune of 100 thousand pesos in gold, de Soto returned to Spain in 1536, where he married Isabella de Bobadilla, one of Pedrarias’s daughters. De Soto was very interested in starting up a new expedition. He got his chance when Emperor Charles V of Spain (1500–1558) rewarded him for his efforts in Peru with a title as governor of Cuba and the authority to explore, conquer, and set up colonies (at his own expense) in the entire region that is now the southern part of the United States. De Soto returned to Cuba in 1538, where he assumed the governorship and prepared for his expedition to Florida.

An explorer until the end

Hoping to find another Peru, de Soto and 620 men landed south of modern Tampa Bay, Florida, on May 30, 1539. His party encountered a man named Juan Ortiz, a survivor of an earlier failed expedition to Florida, who had lived among the Indians for twelve years. With Ortiz acting as interpreter, de Soto began his search for treasure and an advanced Indian civilization. Marching up the west coast of Florida, he spent the winter near the



Hernando de Soto.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

present site of Tallahassee. In 1540 de Soto resumed the march through Georgia. At the Savannah River he met an Indian woman who offered him a long string of pearls and told him more could be found in nearby burial grounds. After collecting 350 pounds of pearls, the party continued northward into present-day South and North Carolina, across the Smoky Mountains into Tennessee, and southward into Georgia and Alabama. Their fiercest battle with Indians, which resulted in the loss of many men as well as the pearls, occurred in southeastern Alabama.

De Soto and his followers, anxious to find riches, set out once again to the north-

west into northern Mississippi. In May 1541 de Soto sighted the Mississippi River south of current-day Memphis, Tennessee. After crossing the Mississippi he explored Arkansas, and established his winter quarters near the present site of Fort Smith. Having made up his mind to return to the sea, he reached the mouth of the Arkansas River, where he died of fever on May 21, 1542. De Soto's men wrapped his body in cloaks packed with sand and cast it into the river. The 311 survivors of the expedition, under Luis de Moscoso, floated down the Mississippi and coasted along the Gulf shore until they reached Tampico, Mexico, in September 1543.

For More Information

Clayton, Lawrence A., Vernon James Knight Jr., and Edward C. Moore, eds. *The De Soto Chronicles*. Tuscaloosa: University of Alabama Press, 1993.

Duncan, David Ewing. *Hernando de Soto: A Savage Quest in the Americas*. New York: Crown Publishers, 1995.

Whitman, Sylvia. *Hernando De Soto and the Explorers of the American South*. New York: Chelsea House, 1991.

JOHN DEWEY

Born: October 20, 1859

Burlington, Vermont

Died: June 1, 1952

New York, New York

American philosopher, educator, and writer

During the first half of the twentieth century, John Dewey was one of America's most famous teachers of philosophy (the study of the universe and man's place in it). He also made some controversial suggestions for changes in the American educational system.

Early life

Born on October 20, 1859, in Burlington, Vermont, John Dewey was the third of Archibald Dewey and Lucina Artemisia Rich's four children. His father was a local merchant who loved literature. His mother possessed a stern moral sense based on her belief in Calvinism (a religion in which one's faith is expressed through moral behavior and good works). John Dewey learned about other cultures from nearby Irish and French-Canadian settlements. Boyhood jobs delivering newspapers and working at a lumberyard added to his knowledge. While visiting his father, who served in the Union Army in Virginia, he viewed the horror of the Civil War (1861–1865) firsthand.

Educational career

At the age of fifteen, Dewey, after receiving average grades in Vermont public schools, entered the University of Vermont. His best grades were in science, which he would later regard as the highest expression of human intellect. Dewey became aware of the world of ideas during his senior year. Courses on psychology (the science of mind and behavior), religion, ethics (the study of moral values), and logic (the science of reasoning) interested him more than his earlier training in languages and science. His teacher, H. A. P. Torrey, introduced him to the

works of different philosophers. The quality of his work improved, and at the age of nineteen, he graduated second in his class.

Unsure of what career to pursue, Dewey hoped to teach high school. After an unsuccessful summer of job hunting, his cousin, principal of a seminary (institute for the training of priests) in Pennsylvania, got him a teaching job, which he held for two years. Dewey continued to read philosophy in his spare time. When his cousin resigned, however, Dewey lost his job. He returned to Vermont to become the only teacher in a private school in Charlotte. He began to spend time with Torrey again, and the two discussed Dewey's readings in ancient and modern philosophy.

Intellectual development

At this time most American philosophy teachers were religious men, who placed more importance on religious ideas than on creative thought. Philosophy was taught by lay teachers (teachers not associated with any particular religion) in only a few schools. One such school was in St. Louis, where William T. Harris established the *Journal of Speculative Philosophy*. Here Dewey published his first essay. Dewey decided to pursue a career in philosophy and applied for admission to the newly founded Johns Hopkins University, which also attracted and employed lay philosophers. At Johns Hopkins, Dewey studied with George S. Morris, who was on leave as chairman of the philosophy department at the University of Michigan. In 1884 Dewey completed his doctorate and, at Morris's invitation, he went to teach at Michigan.

In Ann Arbor, Michigan, Dewey met and married Alice Chipman, with whom he would have seven children. He became inter-



John Dewey.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

ested in problems of education as he traveled around the state to monitor the quality of college preparation courses. In 1888 he accepted an appointment at the University of Minnesota, only to return to Michigan a year later to replace Morris, who had died. The next stage in Dewey's intellectual development came with his reading of William James's *Principles of Psychology*. Dewey became a believer in "instrumentalism," a belief that thinking is an activity which, at its best, is directed toward resolving problems.

In 1894 Dewey moved to Chicago, Illinois, after accepting a position as head of a new department of philosophy and psychol-

ogy at the University of Chicago. To test his theories of education, he started an experimental school with his wife as principal. The “Dewey school,” however, caused a struggle between its founder and the university’s president, William R. Harper. In 1904, when Harper tried to fire his wife, Dewey resigned in protest. One of Dewey’s friends then got him a job at Columbia University in New York, New York, where Dewey spent the rest of his teaching years.

Peak of his influence

Living in New York placed the Deweys at the center of America’s cultural and political life. In 1929 Dewey helped organize the League for Independent Political Action in hopes of creating a new political party. He also served as an editor of the *New Republic* magazine and helped found both the American Civil Liberties Union and the American Association of University Professors. After World War I (1914–18), he traveled the world, lecturing in Japan at the Imperial Institute and spending two years teaching at universities in China. In 1924 he went to study schools in Turkey, and two years later he visited the University of Mexico. His praise for the Russian educational system he inspected on a 1928 trip to the Soviet Union earned him much criticism. Dewey was a shy and quiet man, and as a teacher he sometimes put his students to sleep. Those who managed to stay awake, however, could watch a man fascinated with ideas actually creating ideas in his classroom.

In 1930 Dewey retired from teaching, but he continued to publish works clarifying his ideas. Although many are difficult to read, he published over three hundred books and

articles. In public affairs he was one of the first to warn of the dangers from Adolf Hitler’s (1889–1945) rise to power in Germany and of the Japanese threat in the Far East. At the age of eighty-seven, Dewey married a widow, Roberta Grant. (His first wife died in 1927.) In the early 1950s Dewey’s support of American intervention in Korea earned him criticism from the Soviet Union. He died on June 1, 1952.

Dewey’s philosophy

In his philosophy Dewey sought to rise above what he considered the inaccurate statements made by other philosophers. While he saw most of man’s behavior as shaped by habit, he believed that the processes of change often produced conditions that could not be explained. The resulting conflict led to creative thinking in which man tried to reestablish control of his changing environment. Thought, for Dewey, was part of a process by which man related to his surroundings. Dewey believed that universal education could train men to break through habit into creative thought.

Dewey saw American democracy, which he considered the best form of government, challenged by the effects of the industrial revolution, which had led to too much wealth in the hands of a few men. This threat, he believed, could be met by the right kind of education. The “progressive education” movement of the 1920s was based on Dewey’s ideas. Because he placed great importance on the classroom as a place for students to encounter the “present,” his interpreters sometimes neglected to study the past and to prepare students for the future. Dewey’s influence on American schools was

so strong that many critics attacked his ideas as the cause of all that they found wrong with American education.

For More Information

- Dewey, John. *The Essential Dewey: Ethics, Logic, Psychology*. Edited by Thomas M. Alexander and Larry A. Hickman. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1998.
- Hook, Sidney. *John Dewey: An Intellectual Portrait*. New York: The John Day Co., 1939. Reprint, Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books, 1995.
- Jackson, Philip W. *John Dewey and the Lessons of Art*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1998.
- Ryan, Alan. *John Dewey and the High Tide of American Liberalism*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1995.
- Westbrook, Robert B. *John Dewey and American Democracy*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1991.

DIANA, PRINCESS OF WALES

Born: July 1, 1961
Sandringham, England
Died: August 31, 1997
Paris, France
English princess

Lady Diana Frances Spencer married Prince Charles (1948–) in 1981 and became Princess of Wales. Retaining her title and her popularity after the royal couple divorced in 1996, Diana continued her charitable work. She died in a tragic car accident in 1997.

Quiet and reserved

Diana Frances Spencer was born on July 1, 1961, in Norfolk, England, the third of the Lord and Lady Althorp's four children. She grew up next door to the royal family's Sandringham estate. One of Diana's playmates was Prince Andrew, Charles's brother. Diana's mother, the Honorable Frances Shand-Kydd, was the daughter of a wealthy Anglo-Irish baron. Diana's father, the Viscount Althorp, who became an earl in 1975, was a direct descendant of King Charles II (1630–1685).

Diana, a quiet and reserved child, had a happy home life until she was eight years old, when her parents went through a bitter divorce. Her father won custody of the children. Diana's academic career was unremarkable. She was tutored at home until age nine, when she was sent to Riddlesworth Hall in Norfolk. At the age of twelve, Diana began attending the exclusive West Heath School in Sevenoaks, Kent, England. After failing to pass two exams she left West Heath at the age of sixteen. Her father then sent her to a Swiss school, but she quickly became homesick and returned to Norfolk. She hired herself out as a part-time cleaning woman for a while before finding work as a kindergarten teacher's assistant.



Diana, Princess of Wales.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

The girl next door

Although Prince Charles had known Diana almost all her life, he thought of her as a playmate for his younger brothers. He later dated Diana's older sister, Lady Sarah. Lady Sarah reintroduced Charles and Diana in 1977. "[Diana] taught him how to tap-dance on the terrace," a family friend once told *McCall's*. "He thought she was adorable . . . full of vitality (liveliness) and terribly sweet." Charles was struck by "what a very amusing and jolly and attractive 16-year-old she was," *Time* reported. Diana concluded that the prince was "pretty amazing."

However, Charles thought Diana was too young to consider as a marriage prospect and the romance didn't bloom for another three years. In July 1980 Diana visited the royal family's Balmoral Castle in Scotland to see her sister, Lady Jane, who was married to Robert Fellowes, the queen's assistant secretary. Once again Diana ran into Charles, and the two walked and fished together. Charles was quoted as saying in *Time*, "I began to realize what was going on in my mind and hers in particular." Diana was invited back in September. Soon afterward, reporters began to suspect the nature of her relationship with Charles and began to follow Diana constantly.

Royal wedding

Charles proposed to Diana during dinner in his Buckingham Palace apartment in February 1981. Diana was the first British citizen to marry the heir to the throne since 1659. Since Diana was an Anglican, there were no legal obstacles to marry the man who, as king, would head the Church of England. In addition, a well-known saying soon made the rounds in the press: Diana had a history, but no past. This was very important to the royal family. Diana resigned her teaching post and moved into the palace's Clarence House with the Queen Mother, where she was instructed in how to conduct herself as a member of the royal family.

The Archbishop of Canterbury and twenty-five other members of the clergy took part in the wedding of Prince Charles and Lady Diana on July 29, 1981. There were twenty-five hundred people in the church, and a worldwide TV audience of about 750 million watched the ceremony under the dome of St. Paul's Cathedral. Five mounted military police

officers led Diana in her glass coach from Clarence House to St. Paul's. Two million spectators—whose behavior was kept in check by 4,000 policemen and 2,228 soldiers—jammed the processional route.

Life as a princess

The public loved Diana, and after the wedding her life became an endless round of public appearances, with 170 official engagements during the first year alone. In their first seven years of marriage, the Prince and Princess of Wales made official visits to nineteen countries and held hundreds of handshaking sessions. Their first son, Prince William, nicknamed Wills, was born in June of 1982. Their second son, Harry, was born two years later in September of 1984. The boys were sometimes referred to as “the heir and the spare.” Diana was said to be a caring mother, trying to raise the children as normally as possible.

Over the years, Diana became involved in many charitable causes. She called attention to the problems of homelessness and drug abuse, shook hands with patients at an AIDS (acquired immune deficiency syndrome; a disease that affects the immune system) ward in a Middlesex hospital, and once visited victims of an Irish Republican Army (IRA) bombing in Northern Ireland. In 1990, *People* magazine noted, Diana was involved with forty-four charities, making more than 180 visits on their behalf the previous year. “I don't just want to be a name on a letterhead,” the princess was quoted as saying in the *Saturday Evening Post*.

Problems in the marriage

Rumors of problems between the royal couple surfaced just a few years after the

wedding. Many reports stated that Charles quickly lost interest in his bride and that he spent too much time gardening. Diana was said to be self-absorbed and too interested in clothes. Others noted problems such as the couple's age difference and their different interests. Charles enjoyed polo and horseback riding; Diana once fell off a horse and lost interest in riding afterward. He enjoyed opera; she preferred ballet and rock music. Charles's friendship with Camilla Parker Bowles, a woman he had once asked to marry him, was also seen as a problem. The media began tracking the number of days the two spent apart, noting Charles's long stays away from home.

In December 1992 it was formally announced that the royal couple was separating. In 1993 Diana announced that in an attempt to avoid the constant media coverage of her activities, she would be withdrawing from public life, though she would continue her charity work. In 1994, in an unusually honest interview, Prince Charles admitted his relationship with Camilla Parker Bowles, though he claimed it began only after his marriage had completely broken down. In November 1995, Diana responded with a television interview of her own. This raised eyebrows because Diana had informed Queen Elizabeth of the interview only after it had already taken place, and just days before it was scheduled to be broadcast.

Shortly thereafter, the Queen asked the couple to consider a divorce. On February 29, 1996, Diana gave her consent to a divorce—though again she went against tradition by not informing the Queen first. Terms of the divorce were announced in July 1996. Diana would be involved in all deci-

sions about the children and the couple would share access to them, she would remain at Kensington Palace, and she would be known as Diana, Princess of Wales. She would lose the prefix H.R.H. (Her Royal Highness) and any right to the British throne. However, she kept all her jewelry and received a settlement of almost \$23 million, and Charles agreed to pay the costs of maintaining her private office.

After the divorce

Diana continued her role as Princess of Wales after the divorce. She visited terminally ill people in hospitals, traveled to Bosnia to meet the victims of land mines, and met Mother Teresa in New York City's South Bronx in June 1997. Romantically, the press linked her with Dodi al Fayed, whose father owned Harrods Department Store in London. On August 31, 1997, photographers followed the couple after they had dined in Paris. The combination of pursuing reporters, driving at a high rate of speed, and a drunk driver led to an automobile accident. Some witnesses stated that photographers snapped pictures and interfered with police officers and rescue workers at the scene. The driver and Fayed died at the scene; Princess Diana died from her injuries a few hours later.

The world mourned for "the people's princess." People waited up to eight hours to sign books of sympathy at St. James Palace, and one-hundred thousand people a day passed through Kensington Palace, where Diana lived. Her mother stated, "I thank God for the gift of Diana and for all her loving and giving. I give her back to Him, with my love, pride and admiration to rest in peace." Queen

Elizabeth II went on live television and said of Diana, "She was an exceptional and gifted human being." It was estimated that 2.5 billion people watched Princess Diana's funeral on television, nearly half the population of the world.

For More Information

- Brennan, Kristine. *Diana, Princess of Wales*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House Publishers, 1999.
- Morton, Andrew. *Diana: Her True Story*. Rev. ed. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1997.
- Morton, Andrew. *Diana: Her New Life*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1994.
- Davies, Nicholas. *Diana: The Lonely Princess*. New York: Carol Pub., 1996.

CHARLES DICKENS

Born: February 7, 1812

Portsea (now Portsmouth), England

Died: June 9, 1870

Near Chatham, England

English author, novelist, and journalist

English author Charles Dickens continues to be one of the most widely read Victorian (nineteenth-century) novelists. Scrooge, David Copperfield, Oliver Twist, and Nicholas Nickelby remain familiar characters today. His novels describe the life and conditions of the poor and working class in the Victorian era of England, when people lived by strict rules.

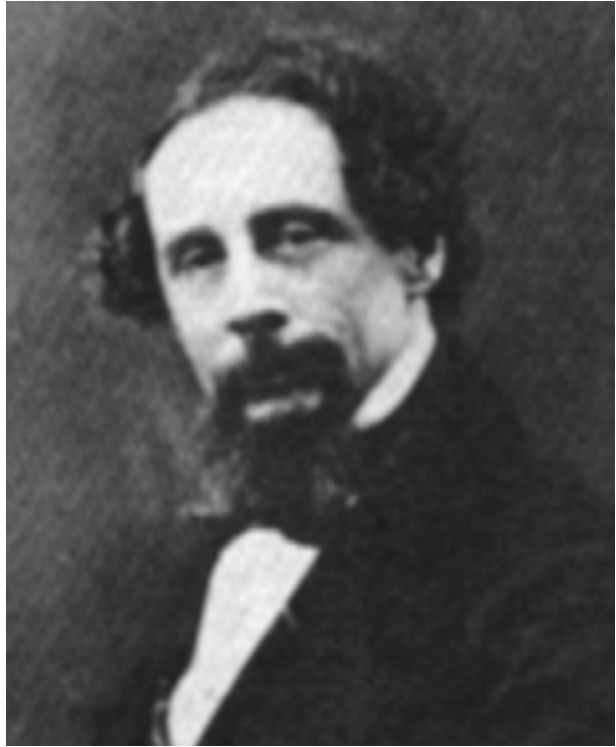
Childhood and schooling

Charles John Huffam Dickens was born on February 7, 1812, at Portsea (later part of Portsmouth) on the southern coast of England, to John and Elizabeth Dickens. Charles was the second born of eight children. His father was a pay clerk in the navy office. Because of financial difficulties, the family moved about until they settled in Camden Town, a poor neighborhood in London, England. At the age of twelve Charles worked with working-class men and boys in a factory that handled “blacking,” or shoe polish. While his father was in debtor’s prison, the rest of the family moved to live near the prison, leaving Charles to live alone. This experience of lonely hardship was the most significant event of his life. It colored his view of the world and would later be described in a number of his novels.

Charles returned to school when his father received an inheritance and was able to repay his debts. But in 1827, at age fifteen, he was again forced leave school and work as an office boy. In the following year he became a freelance reporter and stenographer (using shorthand to transcribe documents) at the law courts of London. By 1832 he had become a reporter for two London newspapers and, in the following year, began to contribute a series of impressions and sketches to other newspapers and magazines, signing some of them “Boz.” These scenes of London life went far to establish his reputation and were published in 1836 as *Sketches by Boz*, his first book. On the strength of this success Charles married Catherine Hogarth. Together they had ten children.

Early works

In 1836 Dickens also began to publish *The Posthumous Papers of the Pickwick Club* in



Charles Dickens.

monthly installments, a form of serial publication that became a standard method of writing and producing fiction in the Victorian period. So great was Dickens’s success with the procedure that *Pickwick* became one of the most popular works of the time, and continued to be so after it was published in book form in 1837.

After *Pickwick’s* success, Dickens began publishing his new novel, *Oliver Twist*. He was also now editor of *Bentley’s Miscellany*, a new monthly magazine. He continued publishing his novel in his later magazines, *Household Worlds* and *All the Year Round*. *Oliver Twist* expressed Dickens’s interest in the life of the slums to the fullest, as it traced

the fortunes of an innocent orphan through the London streets.

Though Dickens's career was successful, for the next decade his books did not achieve the standard of his early successes. These works include: *Nicholas Nickleby* (1838–1839), *The Old Curiosity Shop* (1840–1841), and *Barnaby Rudge* (1841).

In 1842 Dickens, who was as popular in America as he was in England, went on a five-month lecture tour of the United States, speaking out strongly against slavery and in support of other reforms. On his return he wrote *American Notes*, a book that criticizes American life as being culturally backward and materialistic (characterized by the desire for wealth and material goods). His next novel, *Martin Chuzzlewit* (1843–1844), describes the hero finding that survival on the American frontier is more difficult than making his way in England. During the years in which *Chuzzlewit* appeared, Dickens also published two Christmas stories, *A Christmas Carol* and *The Chimes*.

First major novels

After a year abroad in Italy and writing *Pictures from Italy* (1846), Dickens published installments of *Dombey and Son*, which continued till 1848. This completed novel established a new standard in the Dickensian novel and marked the turning point in his career. As its full title indicates, *Dealings with the Firm of Dombey and Son* is a study of the influence of the values of a business society on the personal fortunes of a family and those with whom the family meets. It takes a somber view of England at mid-century, and its tone becomes characteristic of Dickens's future novels.

Dickens's next novel, *David Copperfield* (1849–1850), is the first complete record of the typical course of a young man's life in Victorian England. This autobiographical novel fictionalized elements of Dickens's childhood, his pursuit of a journalism career, and his love life. Though *Copperfield* is not Dickens's greatest novel, it was his personal favorite.

In 1850 Dickens began a new magazine, *Household Words*. His editorials and articles touched upon English politics, social institutions, and family life. They also spoke to the fictional treatment of these subjects in Dickens's novels. The weekly magazine ran to 1859, when Dickens began to conduct a new weekly, *All the Year Round*. In both these periodicals he published some of his major novels.

“Dark” novels

The 1850s were a sad and dark time for Dickens. In 1851, within a two-week period, Dickens's father and one of his daughters died. In 1858, a year after he fell in love with an actress, he separated from his wife.

Partly in response to the deaths, Dickens's next series of works were called his “dark” novels, though they rank among the greatest triumphs of the art of fiction. In *Bleak House* (1852–1853), perhaps the most complicated plot of any English novel, the narrative served to create a sense of the interrelationship of all segments of English society. In *Hard Times* (1854), Dickens describes an English industrial town during the height of economic expansion, and details an up-close view of the limitations of both employers and reformers.

Little Dorrit (1855–1857) may be regarded as Dickens's greatest novel. In it he portrays the conditions of England as he saw

it, and the conflict between the world's harshness and human values in its most impressive artistic form.

Later works

In this period Dickens also began to give public readings from his novels, which became even more popular than his lectures. In 1859 Dickens published *A Tale of Two Cities*, a historical novel of the French Revolution. Besides publishing this novel in the newly founded *All the Year Round*, Dickens also published seventeen articles, which appeared as a book in 1860 entitled *The Uncommercial Traveller*.

Dickens's next novel, *Great Expectations* (1860–1861), is regarded by some as his most perfectly executed work of art. It is a story of a young man's moral development from childhood to adult life. Three years later he produced *Our Mutual Friend*, which provides an insight of how he viewed London.

For several years Dickens's health declined. He never fully recovered from a railroad accident in 1865. He tired himself out by continuing to travel throughout the British Isles and America to read before audiences. He gave a final series of readings in London that began in 1870.

Dickens died of a fatal stroke on June 9, 1870, leaving the novel, *The Mystery of Edwin Drood*, unfinished. The day of his burial was made a day of national mourning in England.

For More Information

Chesterton, G. K., and F. G. Kitton. *Charles Dickens*. London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1903. Reprint, London: Burns and Oates, 1975.

Epstein, Norrie. *The Friendly Dickens: Being a Good-Natured Guide to the Art and Adventures of the Man Who Invented Scrooge*. New York: Viking, 1998.

Marcus, Steven. *Dickens: From Pickwick to Dombey*. New York: Basic Books, 1965.

Sirabian, Robert. *Charles Dickens: Life, Work, and Criticism*. Toronto: York Press, 2002.

Smiley, Jane. *Charles Dickens*. New York: Viking, 2002.

EMILY DICKINSON

Born: December 10, 1830

Amherst, Massachusetts

Died: May 15, 1886

Cambridge, Massachusetts

American poet and author

One of the finest poets in the English language, the American poet Emily Dickinson was a keen observer of nature and a wise interpreter of human passion. In the privacy of her study, Dickinson developed her own forms of poetry and pursued her own visions, not paying attention to the fashions of literature of her day. Most of her work was published by her family and friends after her death.

Early life and education

Emily Dickinson was born on December 10, 1830, in Amherst, Massachusetts, the oldest daughter of Edward Dickinson, a successful lawyer, member of Congress, and for



Emily Dickinson.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

many years treasurer of Amherst College, and of Emily Norcross Dickinson, a timid woman. Dickinson was fun-loving as a child, very smart, and enjoyed the company of others. Her brother, Austin, became a lawyer like his father and was also treasurer of Amherst College. The youngest child of the family, Lavinia, became the chief housekeeper and, like her sister Emily, remained at home all her life and never married. The sixth member of this tightly knit group was Susan Gilbert, Emily's ambitious and witty schoolmate who married Austin in 1856 and who moved into the house next door to the Dickinsons. At first she was Emily's very close friend and a

valued critic of her poetry, but by 1879 Emily was speaking of her as a "pseudo-sister" (false sister) and had long since stopped exchanging notes and poems.

Amherst in the 1840s was a sleepy village dominated by religion and the college. Dickinson was not religious and probably did not like some elements of the town—concerts were rare, and card games, dancing, and theater were unheard of. For relaxation she walked the hills with her dog, visited friends, and read.

Dickinson graduated from Amherst Academy in 1847. The following year (the longest time she was ever to spend away from home) she attended Mount Holyoke Female Seminary, but because of her fragile health she did not return. At the age of seventeen she settled into the Dickinson home and turned herself into a housekeeper and a more than ordinary observer of Amherst life.

Early work

It is not known when Dickinson began to write poetry or what happened to the poems of her early youth. Only five poems can be dated before 1858, the year in which she began gathering her work into handwritten copies bound loosely with thread to make small packets. She sent these five early poems to friends in letters or as valentines. After 1858 she apparently convinced herself she had a genuine talent, for now her poems were carefully stored in a box for the possibility of inspection by future readers or even a publisher.

Publication, however, was not easily arranged. For four years Dickinson sent her friend Samuel Bowles, editor of the *Springfield Republican*, many poems and letters. He

published two poems, both without her name given as the author. And the first of these was edited, probably by Bowles, to make regular (and thus flatten) the rhymes and the punctuation. (Only seven poems were published during her lifetime, with editors altering all of them.)

Friendship with T. W. Higginson

In 1862 Dickinson turned to the literary critic Thomas Wentworth Higginson for advice about her poems. In time he became, in her words, her “safest friend.” She began her first letter to him by asking, “Are you too deeply occupied to say if my verse is alive?” Six years later she was bold enough to say, “You were not aware that you saved my life.” They did not meet until 1870—at her request, surprisingly—and only once more after that.

What Dickinson was seeking was assurance as well as advice, and Higginson apparently gave it without knowing it, through the letters they sent to each other the rest of her life. He helped her not at all with what mattered most to her—establishing her own private poetic method—but he was a friendly ear and mentor during the most troubled years of her life. Out of her inner troubles came rare poems in a form that Higginson never really understood.

Years of emotional crisis

Between 1858 and 1866 Dickinson wrote more than eleven hundred poems, full of off-rhymes and odd grammar. Few poems are more than sixteen lines long. The major subjects are love and separation, death, nature, and God—but especially love. When she writes “My life closed twice before its close,” one can only guess who her real or imagined

lovers might have been. Higginson was not one of them. It is more than likely that her first “dear friend” was Benjamin Newton, a young man too poor to marry who had worked for a few years in her father’s law office.

During a visit to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, in 1855, Dickinson met the Reverend Charles Wadsworth. Sixteen years older than her, a brilliant preacher, and already married, he was hardly more than a mental image of a lover. There is no doubt she made him this, but nothing more. He visited her once in 1860. When he moved to San Francisco, California, in May 1862, she was in despair. Only a month before, Samuel Bowles had sailed for Europe for health reasons. She needed love, but she had to satisfy this need through her poems, perhaps because she felt she could deal with it no other way.

When Bowles returned to Amherst in November, the emotion Dickinson felt was so great that she remained in her bedroom and sent down a note: “That you return to us alive is better than a summer, and more to hear your voice below than news of any bird.” By the time Wadsworth returned from California in 1870, the crisis was over. Higginson had not saved her life; her life was never in danger. What had been in danger was her emotional balance and her control over her intense talent.

Last years

In the last two decades of Dickinson’s life, she wrote fewer than fifty poems a year, perhaps because of continuing eye trouble, but more probably because she had to take more responsibility in running the household. Her father died in 1874, and a year later her mother suffered a stroke that left her disabled

until her death in 1882. Dickinson's health failed noticeably after a nervous collapse in 1884, and on May 15, 1886, she died.

It is clear that Dickinson could not have written to please publishers, who were not ready to risk her striking style and originality. Had she published during her lifetime, negative public criticism might have driven her to an even more solitary state of existence, even to silence. "If fame belonged to me," she told Higginson, "I could not escape her; if she did not, the longest day would pass me on the chase. . . . My barefoot rank is better." The twentieth century lifted her without doubt to the first rank among poets.

For More Information

Habegger, Alfred. *My Wars Are Laid Away in Books*. New York: Random House, 2001.

Olsen, Victoria. *Emily Dickinson*. New York: Chelsea House, 1990.

Sewall, Richard Benson. *The Life of Emily Dickinson*. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 1974.

Wolff, Cynthia Griffin. *Emily Dickinson*. New York: Knopf, 1986.

DENIS DIDEROT

Born: October 15, 1713

Langres, France

Died: July 30, 1784

Paris, France

French playwright, philosopher, and novelist

The French philosopher (seeker of wisdom), playwright, and novelist Denis Diderot is best known as the editor of the *Encyclopédie*, a summary of information on all subjects that also questioned the authority of the Catholic Church.

Early years

On October 15, 1713, Denis Diderot was born in Langres, Compagne, France, one of Didier and Angelique Diderot's seven children. His father was a cutler (a maker of cutting tools). As a child Denis was considered a brilliant student by his teachers, and it was decided that he should serve the church. In 1726 he enrolled in the Jesuit (Catholic order of priests devoted to educational work) college of Louis-le-Grand and probably later attended the Jansenist Collège d'Harcourt. In 1732 he earned a master's in philosophy (the study of the universe and man's place in it).

Diderot then abandoned religion as a career and decided to study law. The death of his sister, a nun, from being overworked in the convent may have affected Diderot's opinion of religion. In 1734 Diderot decided to seek his fortune by writing. Against his family's consent, he spent the next ten years earning his living by translating English books and tutoring the children of wealthy families. He spent his leisure time studying and chasing after women. In 1743 he further angered his father by marrying Anne Toinette Champion.

The Encyclopédie

In January 1746 André François le Breton and his partners were granted permission

to publish a ten-volume encyclopedia. On the advice of the mathematician Jean D'Alembert and with the consent of Chancellor D'Aguesseau, Diderot was named general editor of the project.

For more than twenty-six years Diderot devoted the bulk of his energies to the writing, editing, and publishing of the *Encyclopédie*. For Diderot the aim of the work was "to assemble the knowledge scattered over the face of the earth; to explain its general plan to the men with whom we live . . . so that we may not die without having deserved well of the human race." Such was the plan and the purpose of the *Encyclopédie*, and it was also the motto of the Enlightenment (the eighteenth-century awakening of political and social thought that laid the foundation for the French and American revolutions). But the project was more than just the gathering of all available knowledge; it was also a learning experience for all those connected with it. It introduced Diderot to crafts, fine arts, and many other areas of learning. It was an outlet for his curiosity, his scholarly interests, and his creativity.

In 1751 D'Alembert's *Preliminary Discourse* and the first volume of the *Encyclopédie* were published. In January 1752 the second volume appeared, but the opposition of Jesuits and other critics forced a temporary suspension. Publication was soon resumed and continued at the rate of one volume a year until 1759, when the Royal Council banned further operations. Diderot and Le Breton, however, continued to write and publish the *Encyclopédie* secretly until 1765, when official approval was regained. In 1772 the completed work was published



Denis Diderot.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

in seventeen volumes of text and eleven volumes of illustrations.

Other writings

Diderot continued to devote himself to other writings throughout the period of his association with the *Encyclopédie*. In 1746 he published *Philosophical Thoughts*, which discussed the relationship between nature and religion. He stated his belief that virtue (moral excellence) could be achieved without religious beliefs. In *Sceptics Walk* (1747) and *Letters on the Blind* (1749) Diderot slowly turned to atheism (a disbelief in the exist-

tence of God). Religion became a central theme in his writings, and he angered public officials, who considered him a dangerous leader of radicals (those holding extremely different views).

In 1749 Diderot was imprisoned for three months because of his opinions in *Philosophical Thoughts*. He had stated, "If you impose silence on me about religion and government, I shall have nothing to talk about." After his release he toned down his published works. Therefore, most of his antireligious works and several of his novels were not published during his lifetime.

Later years

Following the completion of the *Encyclopédie* in 1772, Diderot went into semiretirement; he wrote steadily but did not publish all of his works. His earnings as editor of the *Encyclopédie* guaranteed him a decent income, which he added to by writing literary criticism. In addition, he sold his library to Empress Catherine of Russia (1729–1796), who allowed him to keep it while he lived and paid him an annual salary as its librarian. On July 30, 1784, Diderot died in the home of his daughter.

For More Information

- Crocker, Lester G. *Diderot: The Embattled Philosopher*. New York: Free Press, 1966.
- Furbank, P. N. *Diderot: A Critical Biography*. New York: A. A. Knopf, 1992.
- Havens, George R. *The Age of Ideas*. New York: Holt, 1955.
- Simon, Julia. *Mass Enlightenment*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1995.

JOE DiMAGGIO

Born: November 24, 1914

Martinez, California

Died: March 8, 1999

Hollywood, Florida

American baseball player

Joe DiMaggio was named the "Greatest Living Player" in a 1969 poll of sports-writers. He took the great American pastime of baseball to new heights during his career, and he was the epitome (the perfect example) of the sports hero of the 1940s and 1950s.

Before the Yankees

Giuseppe Paolo (Joe) DiMaggio Jr. was born on November 24, 1914. He was the son of Italian immigrant parents. He grew up in the San Francisco, California, area with his four brothers and four sisters. All eleven DiMaggios lived in a small, four-room house. His father fished for crabs and his sons helped him when they were old enough. Joe did not like fishing, and he always found ways to avoid going out to sea with his father and brothers or to avoid cleaning the catch when the boat came home.

At the age of seventeen DiMaggio started to play minor league baseball with the San Francisco Seals. One of his older brothers was playing on that team and recommended Joe for a position. Joe started with a salary of \$250 a month. He became a Bay Area celebrity in 1933 when he got hits in sixty-one consecutive games, an all-time record for the league. His batting average (the percent-

age of time that a batter gets a hit) was .340 and he batted in 169 runs.

A year later DiMaggio hit .341, and the New York Yankees purchased his contract for twenty-five thousand dollars and five minor league players. DiMaggio's debut (start) in centerfield with the Yankees was delayed because of an injury. When he appeared on the field for the first time, on May 3, 1936, twenty-five thousand cheering, flag-waving, Italian residents of New York showed up to welcome him to the team.

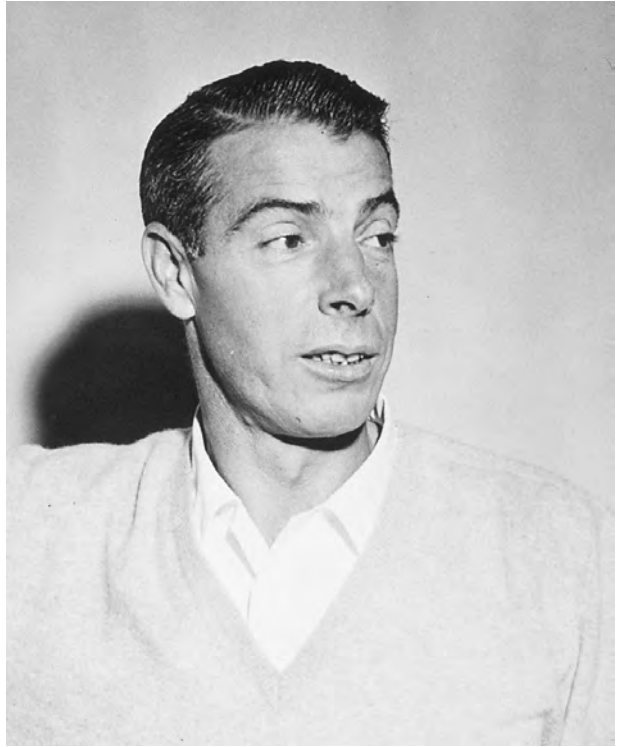
“Joltin’ Joe, the Yankee Clipper”

By 1936 DiMaggio was known as “Joltin’ Joe” for the power of his batting and “The Yankee Clipper” after the ships built for speed that crossed the Atlantic Ocean. He led the league with a career-high of 46 home runs. Over the term of his career DiMaggio hit 361 home runs. He placed fifth on the major league all-time home run list when he retired in 1951.

In 1937 DiMaggio batted an impressive .346, driving in 167 runs. The next season DiMaggio hit .324, followed in 1939 with a .381. This gave him his first batting championship and won him the league's Most Valuable Player award. Late in the 1939 season DiMaggio was hitting at a .412 pace, but eye trouble kept him from staying above the .400 mark.

The streak

During the 1940 season, DiMaggio captured his second consecutive batting title with a .352, but for the first time since he had joined the Yankees his team failed to win the pennant (the league championship). How-



Joe DiMaggio.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

ever, DiMaggio made baseball history in the 1941 season.

DiMaggio began a fifty-six-game hitting streak starting on May 15, 1941. He got a hit in every game he played until July 17, 1941. In between he hit .406, and fans all over the country anxiously checked each game day to see if the Yankee Clipper had kept his streak going. People crowded into the ballpark, radio programs were interrupted for “DiMag” bulletins, the U.S. Congress designated a page boy to rush DiMaggio bulletins to the floor, and newspaper switchboards lit up every afternoon with the question of the day,

“Did DiMaggio get his hit?” Two pitchers on the Cleveland Indians ended his hitting streak on July 17, but after that game he started another hitting streak that went on for seventeen games.

In 1941 DiMaggio won his second Most Valuable Player award. Like the rest of the people in the country, he also began to feel the pressure of a nation readying itself for war. World War II lasted from 1939 until 1945. During that time the Axis (Germany, Italy, and Japan) tried to gain control of the world, but the Allies (the United States, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and France) defeated them. During the 1942 season DiMaggio batted .305, but he was drafted into the army along with thousands of other young men.

DiMaggio spent three years in the army and returned to professional baseball in 1946. That season was a disappointment—he batted only .290—but by 1947 he was back in form, hitting .315. That year he won his third Most Valuable Player award and led his team to the pennant.

Baseball Hall of Fame

Aided by New York City newspapers, radio, and television, as well as his own powerful statistics, DiMaggio became a national hero after the war. Even people who did not like the Yankees liked Joe. In 1948 DiMaggio had returned to the height of this form, winning the home run title with 39, the RBI (runs batted in) crown with 155, and the batting title with a .320 average. DiMaggio sat out the first two months of the 1949 season with problems in his heel, but, as always, his return was memorable. In 1949 he became the American League’s first player to earn \$100,000.

DiMaggio played in pain during his first games for new manager Casey Stengel (1890–1975), but he hit four home runs in three games and helped the Yankees bring home another pennant. In 1951, with another soon-to-be Yankee superstar, young Mickey Mantle, on the scene, DiMaggio’s average slipped to .263 with only twelve home runs.

DiMaggio announced his retirement in 1952 when he was thirty-seven. He turned down another \$100,000 contract for that year. This would have been his fourth contract of this size in a row. DiMaggio said, “When baseball is no longer fun, it’s no longer a game.” The Yankees honored him by retiring his uniform number, number five. This means that no Yankee baseball player will ever wear that number again.

After DiMaggio retired he hosted television shows shown before baseball games, made television commercials, and was briefly married to the Hollywood actress Marilyn Monroe (1926–1962). He was elected to the Baseball Hall of Fame in 1955, named the “Greatest Living Player” in 1969 in a poll of sportswriters, and was named as a member of the All-Century Team in 1999.

Joe DiMaggio died at his home in Hollywood, Florida, on March 8, 1999. He was always a modest man and always worked to play his best game even when faced with health problems. Joe DiMaggio is remembered as an inspiration not only for sports fans, but for all people.

For More Information

Allen, Maury. *Where Have You Gone, Joe DiMaggio? The Story of America’s Last Hero*. New York: Dutton, 1975.

Cramer, Richard Ben. *Joe DiMaggio: The Hero's Life*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 2000.

Seidel, Michael. *Streak: DiMaggio and the Summer of '41*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1988.

Testa, Maria. *Becoming Joe DiMaggio*. Cambridge, MA: Candlewick Press, 2002.

WALT DISNEY

Born: December 5, 1901

Chicago, Illinois

Died: December 15, 1966

Los Angeles, California

American animator, filmmaker, and businessman

An American filmmaker and businessman, Walt Disney created a new kind of popular culture with feature-length animated cartoons and live-action “family” films.

Early life

Walter Elias Disney was born in Chicago, Illinois, on December 5, 1901, the fourth of five children born to Elias and Flora Call Disney. His father, a strict and religious man who often physically abused his children, was working as a building contractor when Walter was born. Soon afterward, his father took over a farm in Marceline, Missouri, where he moved the family. Walter was very happy on the farm and developed his love of animals while living there. After the farm failed, the family moved to Kansas City,

Missouri, where Walter helped his father deliver newspapers. He also worked selling candy and newspapers on the train that traveled between Kansas City and Chicago, Illinois. He began drawing and took some art lessons during this time.

Disney dropped out of high school at seventeen to serve in World War I (1914–18; a war between German-led Central powers and the Allies—England, the United States, and other nations). After a short stretch as an ambulance driver, he returned to Kansas City in 1919 to work as a commercial illustrator and later made crude animated cartoons (a series of drawings with slight changes in each that resemble movement when filmed in order). By 1922 he had set up his own shop as a partner with Ub Iwerks, whose drawing ability and technical skill were major factors in Disney's eventual success.

Off to Hollywood

Initial failure with Ub Iwerks sent Disney to Hollywood, California, in 1923. In partnership with his older brother, Roy, he began producing *Oswald the Rabbit* cartoons for Universal Studios. After a contract dispute led to the end of this work, Disney and his brother decided to come up with their own character. Their first success came in *Steamboat Willie*, which was the first all-sound cartoon. It also featured Disney as the voice of a character first called “Mortimer Mouse.” Disney's wife, Lillian (whom he had married in 1925) suggested that Mickey sounded better, and Disney agreed.

Disney reinvested all of his profits toward improving his pictures. He insisted on technical perfection, and his gifts as a story editor quickly pushed his firm ahead.



Walt Disney.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

The invention of such cartoon characters as Mickey Mouse, Donald Duck, Minnie, and Goofy, combined with the clever use of music, sound, and folk material (as in *The Three Little Pigs*), made the Disney shorts of the 1930s successful all over the world. This success led to the establishment of the hugely profitable, Disney-controlled sidelines in advertising, publishing, and merchandising.

Branching out

Disney rapidly expanded his studio operations to include a training school where a whole new generation of artists developed and made possible the production of the first

feature-length cartoon, *Snow White* (1937). Other costly animated features followed, including *Pinocchio*, *Bambi*, and the famous musical experiment *Fantasia*. With *Seal Island* (1948), wildlife films became an additional source of income. In 1950 *Treasure Island* led to what became the studio's major product, live-action films, which basically cornered the traditional "family" market. Disney's biggest hit, *Mary Poppins*, was one of his many films that used occasional animation to project wholesome, exciting stories containing sentiment and music.

In 1954 Disney successfully invaded television, and by the time of his death the Disney studio had produced 21 full-length animated films, 493 short subjects, 47 live-action films, 7 *True-Life Adventure* features, 330 hours of *Mickey Mouse Club* television programs, 78 half-hour *Zorro* television adventures, and 280 other television shows.

Construction of theme parks

On July 18, 1957, Disney opened Disneyland in Anaheim, California, the most successful amusement park in history, with 6.7 million people visiting it by 1966. The idea for the park came to him after taking his children to other amusement parks and watching them have fun on amusement rides. He decided to build a park where the entire family could have fun together. In 1971 Disney World in Orlando, Florida, opened. Since then, Disney theme parks have opened in Tokyo, Japan, and Paris, France.

Disney also dreamed of developing a city of the future, a dream that came true in 1982 with the opening of Experimental Prototype Community of Tomorrow (EPCOT). EPCOT, which cost an initial \$900 million,

was planned as a real-life community of the future with the very latest in technology (the use of science to achieve a practical purpose). The two principle areas of EPCOT are Future World and World Showcase, both of which were designed for adults rather than children.

Disney's business empire

Furthermore, Disney created and funded a new university, the California Institute of the Arts, known as Cal Arts. He thought of this as the peak of education for the arts, where people in many different forms could work together, dream and develop, and create the mixture of arts needed for the future. Disney once commented: "It's the principal thing I hope to leave when I move on to greener pastures. If I can help provide a place to develop the talent of the future, I think I will have accomplished something."

Disney's parks continue to grow with the creation of the Disney-MGM Studios, Animal Kingdom, and an extensive sports complex in Orlando. The Disney Corporation has also branched out into other types of films with the creation of Touchstone Films, into music with Hollywood Records, and even into vacations with its Disney Cruise Lines. In all, the Disney name now covers a multi-billion dollar enterprise, with business ventures all over the world.

In 1939 Disney received an honorary (received without meeting the usual requirements) Academy Award, and in 1954 he received four more Academy Awards. In 1965 President Lyndon B. Johnson (1908–1973) presented Disney with the Presidential Medal of Freedom, and in the same year Disney was awarded the Freedom Foundation Award.

Walt Disney, happily married for forty-one years, was moving ahead with his plans for huge, new outdoor recreational areas when he died on December 15, 1966, in Los Angeles, California. At the time of his death, his enterprises had brought him respect, admiration, and a business empire worth over \$100 million a year, but Disney was still mainly remembered as the man who had created Mickey Mouse almost forty years before.

For More Information

- Barrett, Katherine, and Richard Greene. *Inside the Dream: The Personal Story of Walt Disney*. New York: Disney Editions, 2001.
- Green, Amy Boothe. *Remembering Walt*. New York: Hyperion, 1999.
- Logue, Mary. *Imagination: The Story of Walt Disney*. Chanhassen, MN: Child's World, 1999.
- Thomas, Bob. *Walt Disney: An American Original*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1976.
- Watts, Steven. *The Magic Kingdom: Walt Disney and the American Way of Life*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1998.

ELIZABETH DOLE

Born: July 29, 1936

Salisbury, North Carolina

American lawyer, cabinet member, organization president, and politician

Elizabeth Dole's work as a lawyer, White House aide, cabinet officer, and president of the American Red Cross has made her one of the most recognizable faces in the American political landscape.

Early life and education

Elizabeth Hanford Dole was born on July 29, 1936, and grew up in Salisbury, North Carolina, the daughter of a well-to-do flower wholesaler. As a small child, she called herself Liddy, and the nickname stuck, although as an adult she prefers Elizabeth. She looked up to her grandmother as well as her brother, who was thirteen years older. Her childhood was privileged, and she received private ballet, piano, and horseback riding lessons.

Always an excellent student, she was also active in drama and student government. She was elected president of her freshman class in high school. She attended Duke University and majored in political science. Dole was often described as friendly, gracious, and "brainy," attributes that led to her election as college May Queen, as student body president, and to Phi Beta Kappa (an undergraduate honors society).

In 1960 Dole received a master's degree in education from Harvard, and graduated from Harvard Law School in 1965 as one of twenty-five female graduates in a class of five hundred. After law school Dole went to Washington, D.C. In Washington she earned a reputation as a supporter of consumer rights while working in various government agencies, including the Department of Health, Education and Welfare; the Presidential Committee for Consumer Interests; and the U.S. Office of Consumer Affairs. Although briefly employed in private law practice, her main

commitment soon became public service.

Career and marriage in Washington

In 1973 Dole was nominated to be one of five commissioners on the Federal Trade Commission (FTC). Once appointed, she became known for her enforcement of the Equal Credit Opportunity Act of 1975, which gives all people in the United States an equal chance to receive credit and loans, and for investigating nursing home abuses. A colleague at the FTC remembered her priorities as "the poor, the handicapped, minorities, and women."

Elizabeth Hanford married Robert Dole, the senior senator from Kansas, in 1975. They quickly became known as Washington's top "Power Couple" because of their important roles in national politics. However glamorous that title may seem, it referred strictly to their jobs and not their social life. Their lives revolved almost totally around their work. Marrying late in life (she was nearly forty and the senator was fifty-three), the Doles had no children.

Although Dole was a Democrat in her early years, she became a registered Independent, and then, after her marriage, she became a Republican. She campaigned vigorously when her husband ran for vice president in 1976. When he ran for president in 1979, she gave up her position as FTC commissioner to campaign for him full-time. Although that campaign was unsuccessful, by 1980 "Liddy" Dole was becoming well known as one of the Republican Party's most outstanding female leaders and recognized as a competitor for high political office.

Service in Reagan and Bush administrations

In 1983 President Ronald Reagan appointed Dole as secretary of transportation, the first woman in American history to hold that cabinet position. She headed an organization of 102,000 employees and administered a budget of \$28 billion. Since the secretary of transportation is also the director of the U.S. Coast Guard, she was the first woman to command an armed service in the United States.

Safety became Dole's focus. She supported putting a third brake light on cars and installing air bags to protect passengers. Her early victories as secretary included winning government funds for new passenger railway lines and for the renovation of Washington, D.C.'s Union Station, as well as for the passage of a maritime (involving transportation by sea) reform bill.

Despite her identification with liberal (in favor of individual rights) consumer issues and her former support for the Equal Rights Amendment (the ERA; a proposed amendment to the U.S. Constitution, which would have guaranteed equality under the law to all Americans regardless of sex), which Reagan opposed, Dole received strong backing from the conservative (in favor of preserving tradition and gradual change) Reagan administration. Critics, however, viewed her commitment to important issues as secondary to her ambition. *The Washington Monthly* summarized this feeling when it observed that Dole was a "role player, her positions defined by her job description rather than deeply felt beliefs."

Raised a devoted Methodist, Dole regularly attended church but usually kept her religious views private. A turning point came



Elizabeth Dole.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

in 1987 when she described her Christian beliefs at the National Prayer Breakfast in Washington, D.C. Afterwards Dole became a favorite of Christian conservatives and began to speak regularly to religious groups around the country.

Dole resigned as secretary of transportation in 1987 to campaign for her husband's second run for the presidency, which, like the first, was unsuccessful. Because of her previous cabinet-level experience under Reagan, and her immense popularity within the Republican Party, Dole was asked to be the new secretary of labor by President George Bush (1924–) in 1989. As secretary of labor,

Dole negotiated a raise in the minimum wage. She also oversaw efforts to break “glass ceiling” restrictions that prevented movement of women and minorities into high executive positions.

Headed the American Red Cross

In 1990 Dole resigned as secretary of labor to become the president of the American Red Cross, an organization for emergency relief. As head of the Red Cross she oversaw a \$1.8 billion annual budget, 32,000 employees, and 1.4 million volunteers. Priorities during her first term included improving the safety of the nation’s blood supply against acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; a disease that affects the immune system) and improving the charitable giving by Americans. In 1996 Dole took a one-year leave of absence to assist her husband’s third unsuccessful campaign for the presidency. She returned to the agency in 1997, but resigned in early 1999.

Played prominent role in 1996 campaign

According to the *New York Times*, Dole’s leave of absence from the Red Cross was an example of her belief in and commitment to her husband. It was the fourth time that she had left a job to help him. Her loyalty was apparent at the 1996 Republican National Convention in her talk-show style “Why I Love Bob” speech. During the speech, she walked into the audience and spoke in personal terms about her husband. She delivered a biographical speech describing the senator from his childhood days in Kansas to his bid for the White House. So successful was Dole’s speech that, after the convention, she acquired her own staff of thirty and cam-

paigned separately for her husband. Despite her efforts, the senator was defeated by then-president Bill Clinton.

Dole continued to be a popular guest speaker and delivered the 1997 commencement address at Duke University. In March 1999, she announced her unofficial bid for the 2000 presidential election, but withdrew from the race in October of that year because she did not have enough money. The following March she supported the presidential campaign of fellow Republican George W. Bush (1946–). Although Dole dropped out of the 2000 presidential race, she continues to be active in politics. In 2002, she was the Republican nominee for the open U.S. Senate seat from North Carolina.

For More Information

- Dole, Bob, and Elizabeth Dole. *Unlimited Partners: Our American Story*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1996.
- Kozar, Richard F. *Elizabeth Dole*. Philadelphia, PA: Chelsea House Publishers, 2000.
- Lucas, Eileen. *Elizabeth Dole: A Leader in Washington*. Brookfield, CT: Millbrook Press, 1998.
- Mulford, Carolyn. *Elizabeth Dole, Public Servant*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1992.

PLACIDO DOMINGO

Born: January 21, 1941

Madrid, Spain

Spanish singer, conductor, and pianist

Spanish-born tenor (the highest natural male voice) Plácido Domingo's performances are intelligent and dramatic. He is also a conductor and an accomplished pianist.

Early life

Plácido Domingo was born in Madrid, Spain, on January 21, 1941. His parents, Plácido Domingo Sr. and Pepita Embil Domingo, met while performing in a zarzuela. (Zarzuela is a form of Spanish theater combining musical numbers with spoken dialogue.) His father played the violin and sang baritone roles (the middle range of the male voice, between tenor and bass) until he damaged his voice while singing with a cold. His mother was a singer who had made her first performance in Spain's most important opera house, the Teatro Liceo in Barcelona, Spain. In 1946 Domingo's parents joined a zarzuela company that eventually traveled to Mexico. Attracted to the country, Domingo's parents stayed and established their own company in Mexico City, Mexico.

Domingo began studying the piano shortly after the family moved to Mexico City, first privately and later at the National Conservatory. He also studied conducting. Domingo played soccer at his high school, the Instituto Mexico, and he also tried his hand at bullfighting. At the age of sixteen he met and married a fellow piano student. A son was born within the year, and shortly thereafter the couple separated.

Professional career

In 1957 Domingo began singing baritone roles with his parents' zarzuela com-

pany. His early career also included a production of *My Fair Lady*, of which he gave 185 performances without interruption. In 1959 Domingo tried out for the National Opera (Mexico) as a baritone, but he was asked to sing something in the tenor range instead. He was hired as a tenor *comprimario* (singer of secondary roles) and as a coach for other singers. He also played piano for a ballet company to make extra money and appeared on a Mexican television program, playing the piano to accompany portions of zarzuelas, operas, and musical comedies.

The number of Domingo's opera appearances increased steadily, and in November 1961 he made his first American appearance with the Dallas Civic Orchestra. In 1962 he married Marta Ornelas, who had been voted the best Mexican singer of the year. Before their marriage, they, along with baritone Franco Iglesias, formed an opera company that toured Mexico. At the end of 1962 they signed a six-month contract with the Hebrew National Opera in Tel Aviv, Israel. The operas performed there featured an international cast. A performance of *La Traviata*, for instance, included a baritone singing in Hungarian, a soprano (the highest female voice) in German, a tenor in Italian, and the chorus in Hebrew. Domingo's company stayed in Tel Aviv for over two years.

After leaving Tel Aviv, Domingo was hired by the New York City Opera. His first show was scheduled for October 21, 1965, in *Carmen*, but four days before the show he was asked to fill in in *Madame Butterfly* for a tenor who was sick. Domingo's official Metropolitan Opera debut came in September 1968, when he substituted for Franco Corelli in *Adrianna Lecouveau* a week before his scheduled



Plácido Domingo.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

appearance. Domingo pursued conducting opportunities whenever possible, including a New York City Opera production of *La Traviata* during the 1973–74 season. He also appeared in film versions of several operas during the 1980s, and he organized benefit concerts that raised millions of dollars to help victims of a 1985 earthquake in Mexico.

Worldwide acclaim

During the 1990s Domingo achieved huge success with his Three Tenors performances with Jose Carreras (1946–) and Luciano Pavarotti (1935–). In 1994 1.3 billion people viewed their concert in Los Ange-

les, California, on television, and they sold more than ten million compact discs and videos. In 1996 Domingo became the artistic director of the Washington Opera while launching the Three Tenors World Tour, which brought opera to four continents and continued through 1997.

In 1998 Domingo agreed to take over as the artistic director of the Los Angeles Opera, beginning in 2000. In 1999 he set a record with his eighteenth opening night performance at the Metropolitan Opera House in New York City. In December 2000 Domingo received a Kennedy Center Honor for lifetime achievement from U.S. president Bill Clinton (1946–). Domingo was praised for his efforts to expand the audience for opera and to help those less fortunate around the world.

In September 2001 Domingo performed at a service in Yankee Stadium in New York City for victims of the September 11 terrorist attacks on the United States. In December of that year there was concern when Domingo, while performing in *Otello* in Milan, Italy, faltered and had to leave the stage briefly. He returned after a few moments, however, and completed the rest of the show.

For More Information

Domingo, Plácido. *My First Forty Years*. New York: Knopf, 1983.

Goodnough, David. *Plácido Domingo: Opera Superstar*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1997.

Steffoff, Rebecca. *Plácido Domingo*. New York : Chelsea House, 1992.

“What Makes Plácido Run?” *Opera News* (March 27, 1982).

DONATELLO

Born: c. 1386

Florence, Italy

Died: c. 1466

Florence, Italy

Italian artist and sculptor

The Italian sculptor Donatello was the greatest Florentine sculptor before Michelangelo (1475–1564), and was certainly the most influential individual artist of the fifteenth century in Italy.

Early life of a master

Donato di Niccolò Bardi, called Donatello, was born in 1386 in Florence, Italy. Little is known about his life, although many short stories about his life are recorded by Giorgio Vasari in his *Lives of the Artists* (1550). In Florence Donatello learned the basics of sculpting at the Stonemasons' Guild, where he learned other crafts as well. Donatello then became an apprentice (a person who works to learn a trade) to Lorenzo Ghiberti (c. 1378–1455). In 1403, at the age of seventeen, Donatello was working for the master on the bronze reliefs (sculpting from a flat surface) of the doors of the Florentine Baptistery. By 1407 he had left Ghiberti for the workshops of the Cathedral in Florence.

Early works

One of Donatello's earliest known works is the life-sized marble *David* (1408; reworked in 1416; now in the Bargello, Florence). Intended to decorate part of the Cathedral, in 1414 it was set up in the Palazzo Vecchio (a historic government building) as a symbol of

the Florentine republic, which was then engaged in a struggle with the king of Naples. The *David*, dramatic in posture and full of youthful energy, possesses something of the graceful late Gothic (an artistic movement between the twelfth and fifteenth centuries) feeling of a figure by Ghiberti.

Rapidly maturing, Donatello produced a strong and original style in two works: the large marble figure *St. Mark* on the outside of Orsanmichele, completed between 1411 and 1413; and the seated *St. John the Evangelist* for the facade (front) of the Cathedral (now in the Museo dell'Opera), finished in 1415. These powerful, over-life-sized figures established the sculptor's reputation. The *St. Mark* broke with tradition in its classical stance and became a stunning symbolic portrait of a noble Florentine hero in the republic of Donatello's day.

Donatello's new style was confirmed in the famous *St. George*, carved in marble around 1416 and 1417 for the exterior of Orsanmichele. Even more significant is the little marble relief *St. George and the Dragon*, that decorates the base. The marble was ordered in 1417, and the relief was completed shortly afterward. This is an important date, for the relief is the earliest example in art of the new science of perspective used to create a measurable space for the figures. Up to this time artists had conceived of a flat background in front of which, or in which, the figures were placed; now the low, pictorial forms seem to emerge from atmosphere and light.

Middle period

Donatello was requested to create many pieces or works, which he often executed with other artists. An unusual work is the *Marzocco*, the lion of the Florentines, carved in sand-



Donatello.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

stone. It was ordered in 1418 for the papal (of the pope) apartments in Saint Maria Novella (now in the Museo Nazionale). Donatello's style in relief sculpture reached its height in the bronze *Feast of Herod*, completed in 1427 for the font in the Baptistery, Siena. Ghiberti, Jacopo della Quercia (c. 1374–1438), and other sculptors also executed reliefs for the front of the Baptistery. In Donatello's very low relief composition he nearly, but purposefully, avoided the accurate construction of one-point architectural perspective.

Around 1425 Donatello entered into partnership with Michelozzo, a sculptor and architect, with whom he made a trip to Rome

after 1429. (Vasari states that Donatello went to Rome with architect Filippo Brunelleschi [1377–1446]. This would have been much earlier, perhaps in 1409; but there is no document to confirm such a trip.) With Michelozzo he produced a series of works, including the tomb of Pope John XXIII in the Baptistery, Florence, and the tomb of Cardinal Brancacci in Saint Angelo a Nilo, Naples, both of which were in progress in 1427. The first of these established a type of wall tomb (burial chamber) that would influence many later Florentine examples.

Probably just after the trip to Rome, Donatello created the well-known gilded limestone *Annunciation* tabernacle (place of worship) in Sta Croce, Florence, enclosing the pair of Gabriel and the Virgin Mary. He was also commissioned to carve a *Singing Gallery* for the Cathedral to match the one already begun by Luca della Robbia (both now in the Museo dell'Opera). Using marble and mosaic, Donatello presented a classically inspired frieze (a decorative band) of wildly dancing *putti*. It was begun in 1433, completed six years later, and installed in 1450.

Later works

Much of Donatello's later work demonstrates his understanding of classical art. For example, the bronze *David in the Bargello* is a young boy clothed only in boots and a pointed hat. This enigmatic figure is in all probability the earliest existing freestanding nude since antiquity (ancient times).

From 1443 to 1453 Donatello was in Padua, Italy, where in the Piazza del Santo he created the colossal bronze equestrian (with horse) monument to the Venetian condottiere called *Gattamelata*. It was the first

important sculptural repetition of the second-century equestrian statue of Marcus Aurelius in Rome. Donatello portrayed *Gattamelata* as the ideal man of the Renaissance, a period marked by artistic awakening between the fourteenth and sixteenth centuries. Another major commission in Padua was the high altar of Saint Antonio, and was decorated with four large narrative reliefs representing the life of Saint Anthony, smaller reliefs, and seven life-sized statues in bronze, including a seated *Madonna and Child* and a bronze *Crucifixion* (a representation of Christ on the cross). Donatello had earlier made remarkable experiments with illusions of space in his large stucco medallions for the Old Sacristy of Saint Lorenzo in Florence; now his major bronze Paduan reliefs present an explosive idea of space with sketchy figures and a very excited and busy surface. The influence of these scenes on painters in northern Italy was to prove enormous and long lasting.

Back in Florence, the aged Donatello carved a haunting, unhealthy *Mary Magdalen* from poplar wood for the Baptistery (1454–1455). Romantically distorted in extreme ugliness, the figure of the saint in the wilderness originally had sun-tanned skin and gilding (a thin coat of gold) on her monstrous hair. In 1456 Donatello made an equally disturbing group in bronze of Judith cutting off the head of Holofernes. Now in the Piazza della Signoria, Florence, it was originally commissioned, apparently as a fountain, for the courtyard of the Medici Palace.

On Donatello's death on December 13, 1466, two unfinished bronze pulpits (platforms for preaching) were left in Saint Lorenzo, Florence. On one are relief panels, showing the

torture and murder of Christ by means of distorted forms and wildly emotional actions. Finished by his pupil Bertoldo di Giovanni, the pulpit scenes reveal the great master's insight into human suffering and his exploration of the dark realms of man's experience.

For More Information

Bennett, Bonnie A., and David G. Wilkins. *Donatello*. Mt. Kisco, NY: Moyer Bell, 1984.

Greenhalgh, Michael. *Donatello and His Sources*. New York: Holmes & Meier, 1982.

Pope-Hennessy, John Wyndham. *Donatello: Sculptor*. New York: Abbeville Press, 1993.

JOHN DONNE

Born: 1572

London, England

Died: March 31, 1631

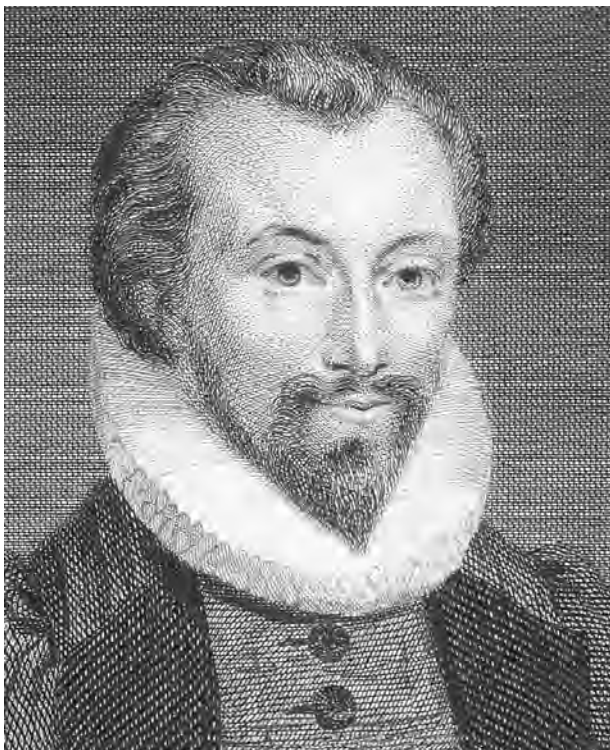
London, England

English poet and priest

John Donne—English poet, Anglican (Church of England) minister, and public speaker—is ranked with John Milton (1608–1674) as one of the greatest English poets. He was also a gifted artist in sermons and devotional writing.

Donne's youth

The son of a prosperous ironmonger (a person who sells iron or objects made from



John Donne.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

iron) of Welsh ancestry, John Donne was born in London, England, between January 4 and June 19 (the exact day is unknown), 1572, and was raised a Londoner and a Roman Catholic. His mother, Elizabeth, a great niece of Sir (later Saint) Thomas More (1477–1535), came from a cultured, devout family: her father, John Heywood, wrote interludes (short plays that are put on during breaks in other entertainment); her brother Jasper was a Jesuit (a person who belongs to a Roman Catholic religious group called the Society of Jesus whose members are concerned with spreading their religious message and teaching); and her son Henry, John's brother, died in 1593 of a fever caught in

Newgate Prison, where he was imprisoned for sheltering a Roman Catholic priest. Donne's father died when John was four, and his mother married a well-known physician. Donne was educated at home by Roman Catholic tutors until he was twelve years old. John and his brother Henry were then admitted to Oxford University, where he spent approximately three years.

Donne's poetry

After some years at Oxford (from 1584) and possibly Cambridge, Donne studied law at Lincoln's Inn from 1592 to 1594. It was also in the 1590s that he wrote many of his love poems. He also composed poetic letters, funeral songs, and witty remarks, which were published after his death as *Songs and Sonnets*.

Donne took part in the Earl of Essex's crusades against the Spanish in Cadiz, Spain, and the Azores in 1596 and 1597 and wrote about this military experience in his poems "The Storm" and "The Calm." By 1598, when he became secretary to Sir Thomas Egerton, he left the Roman Catholic Church. In 1601 he ruined the promise of a successful career by secretly marrying Lady Egerton's niece, Ann More, a union not approved by More's father. He was dismissed from his post and temporarily imprisoned, and for about a decade he and his growing family were largely dependent on relatives and patrons.

During this middle period Donne wrote *Biathanatos*, which was published after his death by his son in 1646. His *Pseudo-Martyr* (1610) accused Roman Catholics of promoting false martyrdom (when a person or a group of people suffer or are killed for the sake of their religion) for financial gain. *Ignatius His Conclave* (1611) was popular in

both English and Latin versions: it brilliantly mocks the Jesuits but is interesting today because it reflects the new astronomy of Galileo (1564–1642) and toys with the notion of colonizing the moon.

Donne continued to write worldly poems and, about 1609 or 1610, he produced a powerful series of “Holy Sonnets,” in which he reflected on sickness, death, sin, and the love of God. In 1611 he composed two companion poems, which honored the death of little Elizabeth Drury and won him the support of her father, with whom Donne traveled to France and Germany. He briefly served as a member of Parliament in 1601 and again in 1614.

Church career

In 1615 Donne was ordained (to be officially installed as a member of the clergy in the church) a priest. Selected a royal chaplain (a member of the clergy who is chosen to carry out religious duties and services for the royal court) in the same year, he also received a doctor of divinity (the study of religion) degree from Cambridge. From 1616 to 1622 he was reader in divinity at Lincoln’s Inn, where he preached regularly. He was widowed in 1617 by the death of his wife: she had borne him twelve children, five of whom died. He preached frequently at court and in 1619 was an embassy chaplain in Germany. In 1621, on James I’s (1566–1625) selection, he became dean of St. Paul’s Cathedral, attracting huge congregations with his brilliant public speaking. A serious illness in 1623 inspired his *Devotions*, which are moving meditations on sickness, death, and salvation.

On February 25, 1631, Donne left his sickbed to preach his last and most famous

sermon, “Death’s Duel.” On March 31, 1631, he died. A statue of him wrapped in funeral shrouds is preserved at St. Paul’s Cathedral. The figure is that of an old, seasoned man who has thought and suffered greatly but has achieved some peace of mind.

Donne’s character

Donne’s was a complex personality, an unusual blend of passion, zeal, and brilliance; God and women were his favorite themes, but his subject otherwise ranged over the pagan (people who do not worship the Christian God) and the religious, the familiar and the unclear, the sarcastic and the sincere, the wittily bright and the religiously wise.

Largely because of Izaak Walton’s (1593–1683) charming but somewhat unreliable *Life of Dr. John Donne* (1681) and because of the risqué elements in Donne’s worldly poetry, a myth grew up contrasting his younger days as an attractive conversationalist and socialite with his older, more religious and devout self. His works reveal that he was always a serious student and a seeker after truth; and there is no sound evidence to support the myth. Certainly after his ordination he dedicated his remarkable genius wholeheartedly to the service of God and thus became one of the most brilliant stars of the Anglican priests, whose exceptional literary genius was dedicated to the glory of God and the welfare of man.

For More Information

Bald, Robert C. *John Donne: A Life*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1970. Reprint, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1986.

Carey, John. *John Donne: Life, Mind, and Art*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1981, 1980.

Donne, John. *Selections From Divine Poems, Sermons, Devotions, and Prayers*. Edited by John Booty. New York: Paulist Press, 1990.

Kermode, Frank. *John Donne*. London; New York: Longmans, Green, 1957.

LeComte, Edward. *Grace to a Witty Sinner: A Life of Donne*. New York: Walker, 1965.

FYODOR DOSTOEVSKY

Born: November 11, 1821

Moscow, Russia

Died: January 28, 1881

St. Petersburg, Russia

Russian novelist and author

The Russian novelist Fyodor Dostoevsky was well known in his country during his life and has since been praised around the world as a writer. He is best known for writing novels that had a great understanding of psychology (the study of how the human mind works), especially the psychology of people who, losing their reason, would become insane or commit murder.

The young man

Fyodor Dostoevsky was born in Moscow, Russia, on November 11, 1821, the son of a doctor. His family was very religious, and Dostoevsky was deeply religious all his life. He began reading widely when he was a youth.

He was first educated by his mother, father, and tutors, but at thirteen years old he was sent to a private school. Two years later his mother died. His father, a cruel man, was murdered in 1839, when Dostoevsky was eighteen and attending school in St. Petersburg, Russia. Dostoevsky was trained to be a military engineer, but he disliked school and loved literature. When he finished school, he turned from the career he was trained for and devoted himself to writing. His earliest letters show him to be a young man of passion and energy, as well as somewhat mentally unstable.

Early writings

Dostoevsky began his career writing fiction about poor people in harsh situations. In 1843 he finished his first novel, *Poor Folk*, a social tale about a down-and-out government worker. The novel was praised by a respected critic. Dostoevsky's second novel, *The Double* (1846), was received less warmly; his later works in the 1840s were received coldly. *The Double*, however, has come to be known as his best early work, and in many ways it was ahead of its time.

The lack of success of *The Double* troubled Dostoevsky. From 1846 to 1849 his life and work were characterized by aimlessness and confusion. The short stories and novels he wrote during this period are for the most part experiments in different forms and different subject matters.

Dostoevsky's life showed some of the same pattern of uncertain experimenting. In 1847 he joined a somewhat subversive (antigovernment) group called the Petrashevsky Circle. In 1849 the members were arrested. After eight months in prison, Dostoevsky was "sentenced" to death. In reality,

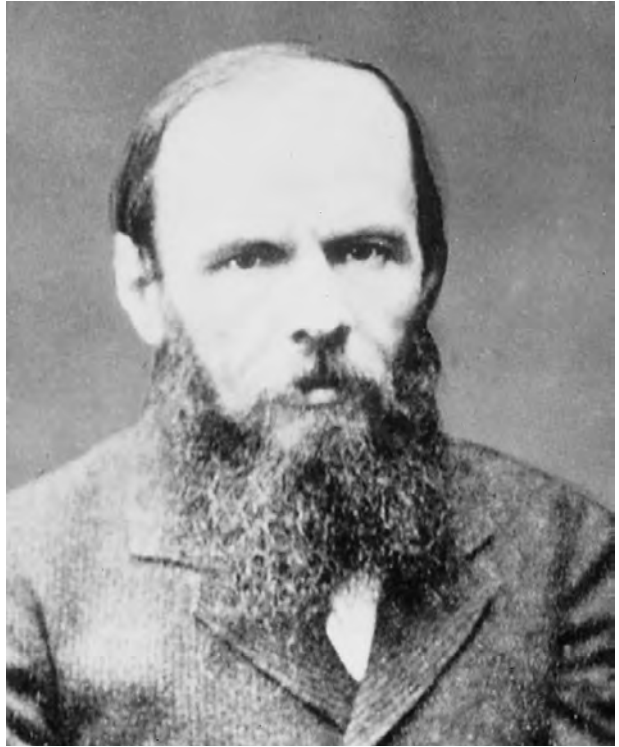
though, this sentence was only a joke. At one point, however, Dostoevsky believed he had only moments to live, and he never forgot the feelings of that experience. He was sentenced to four years in prison and four years of forced service in the army in Siberia, Russia.

Years of change

Dostoevsky returned to St. Petersburg in 1859 with an unhealthy wife, Maria Issaeva, whom he had married in Siberia. Their marriage was not happy. To support himself, Dostoevsky edited the journal *Time* with his brother Mikhail and wrote a number of fictional works. In 1861 he published *Memoirs from the House of the Dead*, a work of fiction based on his experiences in prison. By and large his writings during this period showed no great artistic advance over his early work and gave no hint of the greatness that came forth in 1864 with his *Notes from the Underground*.

Dostoevsky's life during this period was characterized by poor health, poverty, and complicated emotional situations. He fell in love with the young student Polina Suslova and carried on a frustrating affair with her for several years. He traveled outside the country in 1862 and 1863 to get away from the people to whom he owed money, to improve his health, and to gamble.

Notes from the Underground is a short novel. In this work Dostoevsky attempts to justify the existence of individual freedom as a necessary part of humankind. He argues against the view that man is a creature of reason and that society can be organized in a way that guarantees the happiness of humans. He insists that humans desire freedom more than happiness, but he also sees that unchecked freedom is a destructive force, since there is



Fyodor Dostoevsky.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

no guarantee that humans will use freedom in a constructive way. Indeed, the evidence of history suggests that humans seek the destruction of others and of themselves.

The great novels

Dostoevsky's first wife died in 1864, and in the following year he married Anna Grigorievna Snitkina. She was practical and even-tempered, and therefore she was the very opposite of his first wife and his lover. There is very little doubt that she was largely responsible for introducing better conditions for his work by taking over many of the practical tasks that he hated and handled badly.

In 1866 Dostoevsky published *Crime and Punishment*, which is the most popular of his great novels, perhaps because it is appealing on different levels. It can be read as a serious and complex work of art, but it can also be enjoyed as a gripping detective story. The novel is concerned with the murder of an old woman by a student, Raskolnikov, while he is committing robbery in an attempt to help his family and his own career. The murder occurs at the very beginning of the novel, and the rest of the book has to do with the pursuit of Raskolnikov by the detective Porfiry and by his own conscience. In the end he gives himself up and decides to accept the punishment for his act.

The Dostoevskys traveled in 1867 and remained away from Russia for more than four years. Their economic condition was very difficult, and Dostoevsky repeatedly lost what little money they had while gambling. *The Idiot* was written between 1867 and 1869, and Dostoevsky stated that in this work he intended to portray “the wholly beautiful man.” The hero of the novel is a good man who attempts to live in a society gone wrong, and it is uncertain whether he succeeds.

Dostoevsky began writing *The Possessed* (also translated as *The Devils*) in 1870 and published it in 1871–1872. The novel began as a political pamphlet and was based on a political murder that took place in Moscow on November 21, 1869. In *The Possessed* Dostoevsky raises a minor event to great importance. Many readers see *The Possessed* not only as an accurate account of the politics of the time, but also as a visionary statement on the future of politics in Russia and elsewhere.

The Brothers Karamazov (1879–1880) is the greatest of Dostoevsky’s novels. The psy-

chologist Sigmund Freud (1856–1939) ranked it as one of the greatest artistic achievements of all time. The novel is about four sons and their guilt in the murder of their father, Fyodor. Each of the sons may be characterized by a major trait: Dmitri by passion, Ivan by reason, Alyosha by spirit, and Smerdyakov by everything that is ugly in human nature. Smerdyakov kills his father, but to a degree the other three brothers are guilty in thought and desire.

Dostoevsky sent the last part of *The Brothers Karamazov* to his publisher on November 8, 1880, and he died soon afterward, on January 28, 1881. At the time of his death he was at the height of his career in Russia, and many Russians mourned his death. He had begun to win praise in Europe as well, and interest in him has continued to increase.

For More Information

- Frank, Joseph. *Dostoevsky: The Mantle of the Prophet*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 2002.
- Payne, Robert. *Dostoevsky: A Human Portrait*. New York: Knopf, 1961.
- Scanlon, James P. *Dostoevsky the Thinker*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 2002.

FREDERICK
DOUGLASS

Born: February 1817
Maryland

Died: February 20, 1895

Washington, D.C.

African American abolitionist and publisher

The most important African American abolitionist (opponent of slavery) in pre–Civil War America, Frederick Douglass was the first nationally known African American leader in U.S. history.

Growing up without freedom

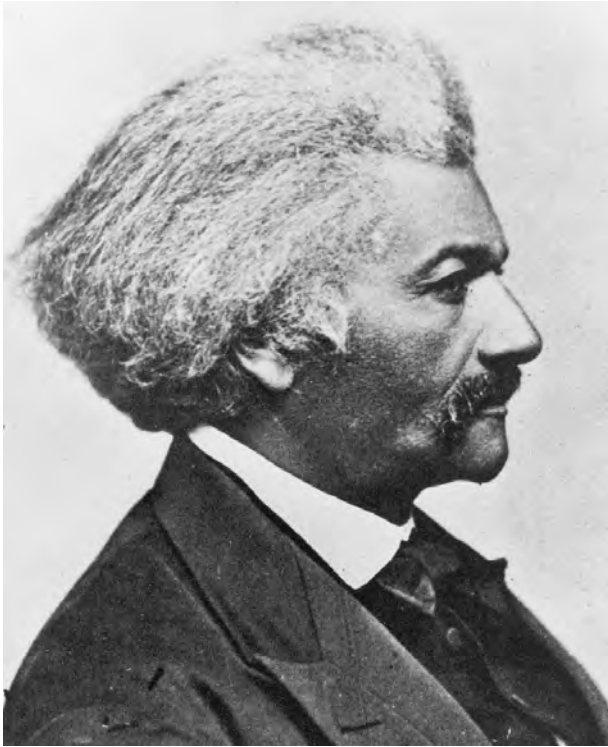
Frederick Douglass was born in February 1817 on the eastern shore of Maryland. His exact date of birth remains unknown. His mother, from whom he was separated at an early age, was a slave named Harriet Bailey. She named her son Frederick Augustus Washington Bailey. He never knew or saw his father. Frederick took the name Douglass much later. As a slave, Douglass was not allowed to have much of a childhood. He was separated from his parents, and he was forced to work hard and suffered cruel treatment while working on the property of Captain Aaron Anthony. In 1825 Anthony, who often hired his slaves out to others, decided to send Douglass to Baltimore, Maryland, to live with a man named Hugh Auld and his family.

Douglass's life improved somewhat while working for the Aulds. Mrs. Auld was a northerner, and northern slaveholders generally did not treat their slaves as badly as people in the South did. She even taught young Douglass the basics of reading and writing until her husband stopped her. Even though things were a little better than they had been, Douglass was still unhappy with his situation and began to think of ways to change it.

Escape from slavery

After the death of Captain Anthony, Douglass became the property of Anthony's son-in-law. He was then hired out to a professional slave breaker, a man who would beat and mistreat slaves until they gave up and did whatever they were told. After weeks of being whipped, Douglass finally fought back; after that the whippings stopped. The Aulds then brought him back to Baltimore and put him to work in the shipyards. There in 1838 he borrowed the identification papers of an African American sailor. By passing himself off as the sailor, he was able to escape to New York. He adopted the name Douglass and married a free African American woman from the South. They settled in New Bedford, Massachusetts, where several of their children were born.

Douglass tried to make a living doing manual labor, and he quickly became involved in the antislavery movement that was gaining strength in the North. In 1841, at an abolitionist meeting in Nantucket, Massachusetts, he delivered a moving speech about his experiences as a slave and was immediately hired by the Massachusetts Antislavery Society to give lectures. Douglass was an eloquent speaker; that is, his speeches were well thought out and forceful, and he was able to inspire those who heard him. Some Harvard students who had heard him speak were so impressed that they persuaded him to write an autobiography (the story of his life). *The Narrative of the Life of Frederick Douglass* was published in 1845. (Ten years later an enlarged autobiography, *My Bondage and My Freedom*, appeared. His third autobiography, *Life and Times of Frederick Douglass*, was published in 1881 and enlarged in 1892.) Pub-



Frederick Douglass.

Courtesy of the National Archives and Records Administration.

lishing the book was a dangerous move for Douglass, since it called attention to him and placed him in danger of being recaptured and returned to slavery.

Fearing capture, Douglass fled to Britain, staying from 1845 to 1847 to speak on behalf of abolition and to earn enough money to purchase his freedom once he returned to America. Upon his return Douglass settled in Rochester, New York, and started a newspaper, *North Star*, which called for an end to slavery. The paper would continue to be published under various names until 1863. In 1858, as a result of his fame and position as

the voice of African Americans, Douglass was sought out by abolitionist John Brown (1800–1859). Brown asked Douglass to help him in an attack on an arsenal in Harpers Ferry, Virginia, which he thought would help the antislavery cause. Douglass, however, could see no benefit from Brown's plan and refused to lend his support.

Civil War and Reconstruction

With the beginning of the Civil War (1861–1865), a war between Northern and Southern states in which the main issues were slavery and the Southern states' decision to leave the Union and form an independent nation, Douglass insisted that African Americans should be allowed to fight. After all, they would be fighting for their own freedom. In 1863, as a result of Douglass's continued urging, President Abraham Lincoln (1809–1865) asked him to recruit African American soldiers for the Union (Northern) army. As the war proceeded, Douglass had several meetings with Lincoln to discuss the use and treatment of African American soldiers by the Union forces. As a result, the role of African American soldiers was upgraded each time, making them a more effective force in the fight.

The end of the Civil War and the freeing of the slaves did not mean that Douglass was able to rest. The Reconstruction period, as the years after the Civil War came to be known, presented a new set of challenges for the country. While slavery had ended, the racism (unequal treatment based on race) that went along with slavery was still in place. Some Southerners even went to court to try to overturn the slaves' emancipation (freedom). In 1870 Douglass and his sons began

publishing the *New National Era* newspaper in Washington, D.C. He used the newspaper to make statements on these issues.

Later years

In 1877 Douglass was appointed by President Rutherford B. Hayes (1822–1893) to the post of U.S. marshal for the District of Columbia. From this time until approximately two years before his death Douglass held a succession of offices, including that of recorder of deeds for the District of Columbia and minister to the Republic of Haiti. He resigned his assignment in Haiti when he discovered that American businessmen were taking advantage of his position in their dealings with the Haitian government.

Frederick Douglass died in Washington, D.C., on February 20, 1895. He had played a major role in changing history. After reaching his goal of escaping slavery, he could have lived out his days as a free man. Instead he risked it all by speaking out in favor of freedom and improved treatment for all African Americans.

For More Information

Blight, David W. *Frederick Douglass' Civil War: Keeping Faith in Jubilee*. Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1989.

Douglass, Frederick. *Escape From Slavery*. Edited by Michael McCurdy. New York: Knopf, 1994.

Douglass, Frederick. *The Life and Times of Frederick Douglass*. Hartford, CT, Park Publishing, 1881. Reprint, Grand Rapids, MI: Candace Press, 1996.

Douglass, Frederick. *My Bondage and My Freedom*. New York: Miller, Orton and

Mulligan, 1855. Reprint, Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1987.

Douglass, Frederick. *Narrative of the Life of Frederick Douglass*. Boston: Anti-slavery Office, 1845. Reprint, New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers, 1997.

McFeeley, William S. *Frederick Douglass*. New York: Norton, 1991.

Russell, Sharman. *Frederick Douglass*. New York: Chelsea House, 1992.

ARTHUR CONAN DOYLE

Born: May 22, 1859

Edinburgh, Scotland

Died: July 6, 1930

Crowborough, Sussex, England

Scottish author, surgeon, and ophthalmologist

A renowned English author, Sir Arthur Conan Doyle is best remembered as the creator of the famous detective Sherlock Holmes.

Doyle's youth, education, and early career

Arthur Conan Doyle was born in Edinburgh, Scotland, on May 22, 1859, into an Irish Roman Catholic family of noted artistic achievement. His mother, Mary Doyle, was a major influence in his life. She taught him to be a gentleman in his youth and as his writing career progressed she would give him ideas for his stories. His father, Charles, was an architect in Edinburgh, as well as an amateur artist. Together they had eight children.



Arthur Conan Doyle.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

As a boy, Arthur was educated at a Catholic preparatory school. After attending Stonyhurst College, he entered Edinburgh University as a medical student in 1876 and received a doctor of medicine degree in 1885. In his spare time, however, he began to write stories, which were published anonymously (without a name) in various magazines from 1878 to 1880.

After two long sea voyages as a ship's doctor, Doyle practiced medicine at Southsea, England, from 1882 to 1890. In 1885 he married Louise Hawkins and in March 1891 moved his young family to London, where he began to specialize in ophthalmology (the area of medi-

cine involving the eye). His practice remained small, however, and since one of his anonymous stories, "Habakuk Jephson's Statement," had enjoyed considerable success when it appeared in the *Cornhill Magazine* in 1884, he began to dedicate himself seriously to writing.

Sherlock Holmes is introduced

Doyle's first novel, *A Study in Scarlet*, introduced Sherlock Holmes to the reading public. This was followed by two historical novels, *Micah Clarke* in 1889 and *The White Company* in 1891. The success of these works led Doyle to abandon medicine and launch his career as a writer.

The second Sherlock Holmes novel, *The Sign of the Four* (1890), was followed by the Holmes short story, "A Scandal in Bohemia" (1891). The popularity of these tales made others like them a regular monthly feature of the *Strand Magazine*, and the *Adventures of Sherlock Holmes* series was begun. Doyle eventually tired of these stories, and in "The Final Problem," published in December 1893, plunged Holmes and his enemy, Moriarty, to their apparent deaths in the falls of Reichenbach. Nine years later, however, he published a third Sherlock Holmes novel, *The Hound of the Baskervilles*, but dated the adventure before Holmes's "death." Then, in October 1903, Holmes achieved his mysterious comeback from death in "The Empty House" and thereafter appeared occasionally until 1927. All told, Doyle wrote fifty-six Sherlock Holmes stories and four novels. *The Valley of Fear* (1914) was the last.

Other early works

Among other works published early in Doyle's career were *Beyond the City* (1892), a

short novel of modern city life; *The Great Shadow* (1892), a historical novel of the Napoleonic period; *The Refugees* (1893), a historical novel about French Huguenots; and *The Stark Munro Letters* (1894), an autobiographical (having to do with one's life) novel. In 1896 he issued one of his best-known historical novels, *Rodney Stone*, which was followed by another historical novel, *Uncle Bernac* (1897); a collection of poems, *Songs of Action* (1898); and two less popular novels, *The Tragedy of Korosko* (1898) and *A Duet* (1899).

Nonfiction and later career

After the outbreak of the Boer War (1899–1902; a war between the British and the northern natives or Boers of South Africa for control of the area, which the British won), Doyle served as chief, or head, surgeon of a field hospital at Bloemfontein, South Africa, in 1900. His *The Great Boer War* (1900) was widely read and praised for its fairness to both sides. In 1902 he wrote a long booklet, *The War in South Africa: Its Cause and Conduct*, to defend the British action in South Africa against widespread criticism by peace-minded groups. In August 1902 Doyle was knighted for his service to England.

Doyle published *Sir Nigel* (1906), a popular historical novel of the Middle Ages. His wife died this same year of tuberculosis (an infectious disease that affects the lungs); and in 1907 Doyle married Jean Leckie. Doyle now took up a number of political and charitable causes. In 1909 he wrote *Divorce Law Reform*, supporting equal rights for women in British law, and *The Crime of the Congo*, attacking the mistreatment of that colony by

Belgium. In 1911 he published a second collection of poems, *Songs of the Road*, and in 1912 began a series of science fiction stories with the novel *The Lost World*, featuring another of his famous characters, Professor Challenger.

After the outbreak of World War I (1914–18; a war between the German-led Central Powers and the Allies: France, England, Italy, the United States, and other nations), Doyle organized the Civilian National Reserve against the threat of German invasion. In 1916 he published *A Visit to Three Fronts* and in 1918 again toured the front lines. These tours, plus extensive communication with a number of officers, enabled him to write his famous account *The British Campaigns in France and Flanders*, published in six volumes (1916–1919).

Later life and spiritualism

Doyle had been interested in spiritualism (the belief in the ability for the living to communicate with the dead) since he rejected his Roman Catholic faith in 1880. In 1915 he experienced a new belief in “psychic religion,” or spiritualism, so that after the war he devoted the rest of his life and career to spreading his new faith in a series of works: *The New Revelation* (1918), *The Vital Message* (1919), *The Wanderings of a Spiritualist* (1921), and *History of Spiritualism* (1926). After travelling for years to promote this cause, Sir Arthur Conan Doyle died on July 6, 1930, of a heart attack, at his home in Crowborough, Sussex.

For More Information

Booth, Martin. *The Doctor and the Detective*. New York: Thomas Dunne Books, 2000.

Hardwick, Mollie. *The Man Who Was Sherlock Holmes*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1964.

Pascal, Janet B. *Arthur Conan Doyle: Beyond Baker Street*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2000.

FRANCIS DRAKE

Born: c. 1541

Tavistock, England

Died: January 28, 1596

Puerto Bello, Honduras

English navigator and ship captain

The English navigator Sir Francis Drake was the first of his countrymen to sail around the world. His daring adventures at sea helped to establish England's naval supremacy over Spain and other European nations.

Forced from home

Francis Drake, the eldest son of a farmer, was born near Tavistock, Devonshire, England. His father, Robert Drake, later became a preacher and raised his twelve children as Protestants (followers of the Christian religion who are not part of the Roman Catholic Church). Raised in a poor environment, Drake's family, like many Protestants, was forced from their home after a Catholic uprising. Young Drake soon developed a hatred for Catholics, especially those from Spain, Europe's most powerful Catholic country.

Drake received some education, and he later learned the basics of navigation (getting a ship from one place to another by plotting position and direction) and seamanship and did some sailing near his home. The Drakes were related to the Hawkins family of Plymouth, England, who were well-to-do seamen and shipowners. The Hawkins connection got Drake a place on a 1566 slave-trading voyage to the Cape Verde Islands in Africa and the Spanish Main (South America's northern coast).

First command

In 1567 John Hawkins (1532–1595) made Drake an officer in a larger slave-trading voyage. Drake ultimately was given command of one of Hawkins's ships, the *Judith*, and accompanied his relative to Africa, Rio de la Hacha, and Santa Marta (a port on the coast of northern Colombia). The English were caught, however, in the harbor of San Juan de Ulúa (an island near Veracruz in eastern Mexico) by a Spanish fleet that opened fire without warning and destroyed most of their ships. Only Drake's *Judith* and Hawkins's small vessel escaped to England. Angered by this, Drake decided to devote his life to war against Spain.

By 1576 England's relations with Spain had worsened. Drake returned to England, where a new expedition (a voyage made for a specific reason, such as to discover a new route or area) was being planned and in which Queen Elizabeth (1533–1603) had a financial share. Drake's main instructions were to sail through the Strait of Magellan (a narrow waterway in the southern tip of Argentina) and probe the shores of Terra Australis Incognita, the great southern continent

that many thought began with Tierra del Fuego. Drake received five ships, the largest being the *Pelican* (later named the *Golden Hind*), and a crew of about 160.

Adventures on the Golden Hind

The fleet left Plymouth in December 1577 for the southern Atlantic, stopping at Port San Julián in southern Argentina for the southern hemisphere winter. Ferdinand Magellan (c.1480–1521) had once crushed a mutiny (rebellion) there, and Drake did the same.

When Drake passed through the strait and entered the Pacific Ocean, only the *Golden Hind* remained; the other ships had been lost or had parted company. Bad winds forced him southward, and he perhaps sighted Cape Horn (the very southern tip of South America). In any event, he realized that the two oceans came together and that Terra Australis would not be found there. He traveled along the coasts of Chile and Peru, capturing and destroying Spanish ships but sparing Spanish lives.

Drake's trip around the world continued through the Indian Ocean and the Cape of Good Hope (the southern tip of Africa). Drake arrived in Plymouth in 1580, praised by the public and the queen. In April 1581 he was knighted on the deck of the *Golden Hind*.

Spanish Armada

As relations between England and Spain grew even worse, Queen Elizabeth unleashed Drake on the Spaniards in 1585 and 1586. Drake captured several Spanish cities and inflicted great damage on Spanish morale. Now there was no avoiding formal war. Philip II (1527–1598) began assembling his



Francis Drake.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Armada (a fleet of warships) in Portugal, which had been in his possession since 1580.

Queen Elizabeth appointed Lord Charles Howard of Effingham commander of her fleet and gave Drake, Hawkins, and Martin Frobisher supporting posts. Drake called for a strong blow at Philip's unprepared Armada and received permission to strike. In April 1587 he recklessly sailed into Cadiz and destroyed or captured thirty-seven enemy ships. He then occupied the Portuguese town of Sagres for a time and finally, in the Azores (a group of islands in the North Atlantic), seized a large Portuguese carrack (ship) with a rich cargo bound homeward from Goa.

Drake met with his first major defeat in 1589, when he commanded the naval expedition sent to take Lisbon, Portugal. Drake did not go to sea again for five years. He concerned himself mainly with Plymouth matters. He sat in Parliament (England's governing body), but nothing of note marked his presence there.

Final voyage

In 1595 Queen Elizabeth thought she saw a chance of ending the war victoriously by cutting off the Spanish treasure supply from the Isthmus of Panama (a thin piece of land that connects North America to South America). For this she selected Hawkins, then sixty-three, and Drake, in his fifties. The queen ordered that they must be back in six months, which was barely enough time to capture Panama. Hawkins soon died, leaving Drake in sole command. The Spaniards had strengthened their defenses, and Drake failed to capture the city.

After failed expeditions to capture Nombre de Dios (a port on the northern coast of Panama) and then Panama, Drake cruised aimlessly to Honduras and back and then fell ill of fever and dysentery (infection of the intestines). He died off Puerto Bello on January 28, 1596, and was buried at sea.

For More Information

Cummins, John G. *Francis Drake: The Lives of a Hero*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1995.

Duncan, Alice Smith. *Sir Francis Drake and the Struggle for an Ocean Empire*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1993.

Kelsey, Harry. *Sir Francis Drake: The Queen's Pirate*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1998.

ALEXANDRE DUMAS

Born: July 24, 1802

Soissons, France

Died: December 5, 1870

Puys, France

French author, playwright, and novelist

Alexandre Dumas, the French author of many plays, popular romances, and historical novels, wrote *The Three Musketeers* and *The Count of Monte Cristo*.

Early life

Alexandre Dumas was born on July 24, 1802, near Soissons, France, the son of a Creole general of the French Revolutionary armies. His grandfather was from a noble family, and his grandmother had been a Dominican slave. Dumas's father died when he was four years old, leaving the family with very little money. Dumas was not a very good student, but his handwriting was noticeably beautiful, and he studied to work as a notary (a public officer who witnesses the signing of important documents and makes them official). He also began writing musical comedies and then historical plays in collaboration (working together with others) with a poet friend named Adolphe de Leuven. Historical subjects, as well as his ability to collaborate, were to be permanent elements of Dumas's work during his career.

Dumas then found work as a secretary to the Duke of Orléans (later King Louis Philippe, 1773–1850) in Paris, France. He read and attended the theater as much as he could during his time off. He was greatly

influenced by the works of William Shakespeare (1564–1616) and wrote his first plays in 1825 and 1826. Others followed, with *Henri III et sa cour* (1829) bringing him great success and popularity. The revolution of 1830 slowed down Dumas's writing, and he became a strong supporter of the Marquis de Lafayette. His political activities were viewed unfavorably by the new king, his former boss, and he was forced to leave France for a time. A series of amusing travel books resulted from this period of exile.

His fiction

When Dumas returned to Paris, he began writing a new series of historical plays. By 1851 he had written alone, or in collaboration with others, more than twenty plays. He also began writing fiction at this time, first short stories and then novels. In collaboration with Auguste Maquet he wrote *Les Trois Mousquetaires* (1844; *The Three Musketeers*), *Vingt Ans après* (1845; *Twenty Years After*), and *Le Vicomte de Bragelonne* (1850). *Le Comte de Monte-Cristo* (1846; *The Count of Monte Cristo*) was also a product of this period.

Dumas worked with many collaborators who helped him with the outlines of his romances. The scale of his “fiction factory” has often been exaggerated. Although at least a thousand works were published under his own name, most were due to his own hard work and amazing imagination. Dumas's works were received with enthusiasm by his loyal readers, and he earned a lot of money. He could never earn enough to keep up with his spending habits, however. Among his problems was his estate of Monte-Cristo in Saint-Germain-en-Laye, France, which

attracted many hangers-on and female admirers who Dumas ended up supporting.

Later life

Dumas, who had never changed his political opinions, was pleased by the Revolution of 1848 and even ran as a candidate for the Assembly. In 1850 the Théâtre-Historique, which he had founded to present his plays, failed. After Napoleon III (1808–1873) took power in 1852, Dumas went to Brussels, Belgium, where his secretary managed to straighten out his affairs to a degree. Here he continued to write constantly.

In 1853 Dumas returned to Paris and began the daily paper *Le Mousquetaire*, which was devoted to art and literature. The paper survived until 1857, and Dumas then published the weekly paper *Monte-Cristo*. This in turn folded after three years. In 1860 he was named keeper of museums in Naples, Italy. After remaining there for four years, he returned to Paris, where he found himself deep in debt and regularly chased by debt collectors. He also had many women friends who expected—and received—expensive gifts from him.

Working hard to pay his debts, Dumas produced a number of works of lower quality, among them *Madame de Chamblay* (1863) and *Les Mohicans de Paris* (1864), which were not very successful. His unhappy last years were softened by the presence of his son, Alexandre, and his daughter, Madame Petel. (The elder Alexandre Dumas is generally called Dumas *père* to distinguish him from his son, known as Dumas *fil*s, who was also a dramatist and novelist.) Dumas *père* died in poverty on December 5, 1870.

For More Information

Gallaher, John G. *General Alexandre Dumas: Soldier of the French Revolution*. Carbondale: Southern Illinois University Press, 1997.

Hemmings, F. W. J. *Alexandre Dumas: The King of Romance*. New York: Scribner, 1979.

Schopp, Claude. *Alexandre Dumas: Genius of Life*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1988.

PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Born: June 27, 1872

Dayton, Ohio

Died: February 9, 1906

Dayton, Ohio

African American poet and novelist

Paul Laurence Dunbar, a poet and novelist, was the first African American author to gain national recognition and a wide popular audience. His writings portray the African American life of his era. He especially focused on African American accomplishments and pride.

Youth and education

Paul Laurence Dunbar was born on June 27, 1872, in Dayton, Ohio, the son of two former slaves. Both of his parents enjoyed reading. His mother taught Dunbar to read when he was four years old. In 1886 Dunbar entered Central High School in Dayton as the only African American student in his class,

and he made many Caucasian (white) friends. He received a formal education in high school, graduating in 1891. He excelled as a student, serving as editor of the school newspaper and as class poet. In 1890 he attempted to start a newspaper for African American readers. Unable to go to college after graduating from high school and experiencing racial discrimination (or unfair treatment based solely on race), Dunbar began looking for work in a law office, but eventually took a job as an elevator operator. He never gave up his desire to become a writer, however, and he was able to publish some of his poems in newspapers.

His first books

Dunbar published his first book of poems, *Oak and Ivy*, in 1893 with his own money, and his second book, *Majors and Minors*, two years later. William Dean Howells, then one of America's most distinguished literary critics (a person who writes about and judges the writings of other people), read the second book and urged the young poet to concentrate on black dialect verse, or poems written using an African American style of English.

With the 1896 publication of *Lyrics of Lowly Life*, for which Howells wrote a very positive review, Dunbar's professional career got a fabulous start. His works began to sell well enough for him to earn his living as a writer. He took Howells's advice to study the "moods and traits of his own race in its own accents of our English," so that his art was best shown in those "pieces which . . . described the range between [desire] and emotion . . . which is the range of the race."

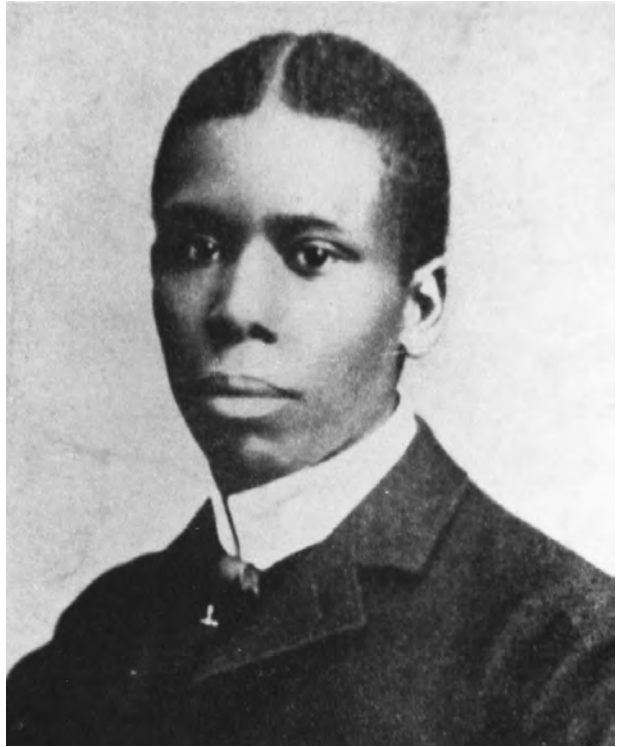
Dunbar wanted to satisfy the popular taste for the light, the romantic, the comic,

and the sentimental. His short stories, which began appearing in popular magazines in the 1890s, often depicted African American folk characters, Southern scenes, and humorous situations. His first novel, *The Uncalled* (1898), like two of the three that followed—*The Love of Landry* (1900) and *The Fanatics* (1901)—is a sentimental tale about white people. His last long work of fiction, *The Sport of the Gods* (1902), is notable only for his failure to realize the possibilities in the story of a rural African American family becoming city people.

Last years

In 1898 Dunbar married Alice Moore, but they had an unhappy marriage. The couple separated in 1901, when Dunbar went to Washington, D.C., to consult for the Library of Congress. He was also unhappy with his writings. At this time he confided to a friend, “I see now very clearly that Mr. Howells has done me [irreversible] harm in the [command] he laid down regarding my dialect verse.”

Dunbar was suffering from tuberculosis (a lung disease) and tried all the “cures.” Alcohol brought temporary relief, but he became addicted. Nonetheless he continued to produce short stories and poems. Sick and discouraged by the unimpressive reception of *The Heart of Happy Hollow* (1904), a collection of short stories, and of *Lyrics of Love and Sunshine* (1905), which contains some of his best verses in pure English, he returned to Dayton, where he died on February 9, 1906. The *Complete Poems of Paul Laurence Dunbar* (1913; still in print) shows how well he succeeded in capturing many elements of African American life.



Paul Laurence Dunbar.

Reproduced by permission of Fisk University Library.

For More Information

- Best, Felton O. *Crossing the Color Line: A Biography of Paul Laurence Dunbar*. Dubuque, IA: Kendall/Hunt Publishing Company, 1996.
- Dunbar, Paul Laurence. *In His Own Voice*. Edited by Herbert Woodward Martin, Ronald Primeau. Athens: Ohio University Press, 2002.
- Reef, Catherine. *Paul Laurence Dunbar: Portrait of a Poet*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 2000.

PIERRE DU PONT

Born: January 15, 1870

Wilmington, Delaware

Died: April 5, 1954

Wilmington, Delaware

American industrialist and businessman

The American industrialist (one who owns or manages an industry) Pierre du Pont, as chairman of the board of E. I. du Pont de Nemours and Company, was among those responsible for the company's huge success in the twentieth century.

Early life

Pierre Samuel du Pont was born in Wilmington, Delaware, on January 15, 1870. He was one of Lammot du Pont and Mary Belin's eleven children. His father, who had broken away from the family business of producing gunpowder for use in ammunition, was an important figure in the early production of dynamite. Pierre du Pont was fourteen years old when his father died in an explosion. Afterward he took over responsibility for the family, leading several of his brothers to refer to him as "Dad."

After receiving a bachelor's degree from the Massachusetts Institute of Technology in 1890, du Pont became a chemist in the family firm. In 1899 he took over as president of the Johnson Company in Lorain, Ohio, working with a cousin, Coleman du Pont, and finding a sharp assistant named John J. Raskob. The company was eventually sold, and in 1902 du Pont, his cousin Coleman, and another cousin, Alfred du

Pont, purchased and reorganized the family business to prevent it from being sold to a rival firm. Raskob came along as du Pont's assistant.

Management of the business

Du Pont and his cousins quickly expanded and improved the company. Competing explosive-making companies were bought out, factories were improved, and research laboratories were set up. Workers had to be able to do their jobs; members of the family were not guaranteed anything because of their names. The company made a successful change from a family operation to one run by professional managers. The new company structure divided authority between central management and the operating departments. Management concentrated on long-term policy decision making, while the operating departments handled day-to-day problems. Pierre du Pont, with Raskob's help, established new recordkeeping and monitoring methods that were copied by many other companies.

After Coleman du Pont became involved in other businesses, Pierre du Pont became president of the firm in 1915, an office he held until he became chairman of the board in 1919. (Alfred du Pont was removed from the corporation after opposing Pierre's purchase of Coleman's interest in the company.) Pierre remained as chairman until 1940. He guided the company through its enormous expansion during World War I (1914–18) and its later involvement in products outside the explosives industry such as coal, natural gas, and chemicals for industrial and farm use. He also acquired several newspapers in Delaware.

The Du Pont Company first invested in the General Motors Company in 1917 at the urging of Raskob. Three years later William C. Durant, president of General Motors, found himself in financial (money-related) difficulty. Because possible failure of General Motors might have hurt Du Pont's investment, the Du Pont Company bailed out Durant, but in the process the company took over all of his holdings in General Motors. As a result, although he was not thrilled with the position, Pierre du Pont became president of General Motors and occupied that office until 1923, when Alfred P. Sloan, Jr. replaced him.

Other activities

Du Pont was also active in public affairs. He held numerous offices in the state government of Delaware, including tax commissioner. Initially a supporter of Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882–1945), du Pont was a strong opponent of government involvement in business affairs, and as a result he opposed Roosevelt's reelection in 1936. He was one of the founders of the American Liberty League, which unsuccessfully appealed to voters to defeat Roosevelt's New Deal (his plan to expand the functions of the federal government in an attempt to provide jobs for the unemployed and carry out social reforms). Du Pont felt that many of the provisions of the plan represented a taking away of individual freedoms.

Du Pont died in Wilmington on April 5, 1954. He had shown great vision in helping make the Du Pont Company one of the most successful companies in the twentieth century. Through his public works and donations to various charities, he showed a concern for the greater good of society.

For More Information

- Carr, William H. A. *The Du Ponts of Delaware*. New York: Dodd, Mead, 1964.
- Chandler, Alfred D. and Stephen Salsbury. *Pierre S. du Pont and the Making of the Modern Corporation*. New York: Harper & Row, 1971. Reprint, Washington, DC: BeardBooks, 2000.
- Dutton, William S. *Du Pont: One Hundred and Forty Years*. New York: C. Scribner's Sons, 1942.

FRANÇOIS DUVALIER

Born: April 14, 1907

Port-au-Prince, Haiti

Died: April 21, 1971

Port-au-Prince, Haiti

Haitian president and physician

François Duvalier was the president of Haiti from 1957 until his death. Trained as a physician and known to his people as “Papa Doc,” Duvalier ruled his country as no other Haitian chief executive had, using violence and phony elections to hold down any opposition.

Early life

François Duvalier was born in Port-au-Prince, Haiti, on April 14, 1907. His family belonged to the middle class. His grandfather had been a tailor, and his father was a school-teacher and municipal court judge. Duvalier believed that his people’s African traditions should be preserved and protected from the influence of European countries. He was one of the founders of the Haitian intellectual Griot movement of the 1930s, whose members celebrated their African roots and even the practice of voodoo (a religion involving communication with spirits) as important elements of Haitian culture. Duvalier graduated in 1934 from the Haitian National University Medical School. In 1939 he married Simone Ovide, a nurse, and they had three daughters and a son.

Duvalier was active in sanitary programs initiated in Haiti by the U.S. army during World War II (1939–45) to prevent yaws, a

contagious tropical disease. In 1944–45 he studied at the University of Michigan. After returning to Haiti, he became minister of health and labor in the government of President Dumarsais Estimé, who had once taught Duvalier in high school. After opposing the takeover of the government by Paul Magloire in 1950, Duvalier returned to the practice of medicine, especially the campaigns to prevent yaws and other diseases. In 1954 he abandoned medicine and went into hiding in the Haitian countryside. In 1956 the Magloire government forgave all of its political opponents. Duvalier immediately emerged from hiding and declared his candidacy for the next elections.

Rise to power

Duvalier had a solid base of support in the countryside, and his campaign was similar to those of the other candidates in that they all promised to rebuild the country and give it a new start. Duvalier, however, made various deals with one or more of the other candidates, won the army over to his side, and finally defeated Louis Déjoie, his main opponent, in what turned out to be the quietest and most honest election in Haiti’s history.

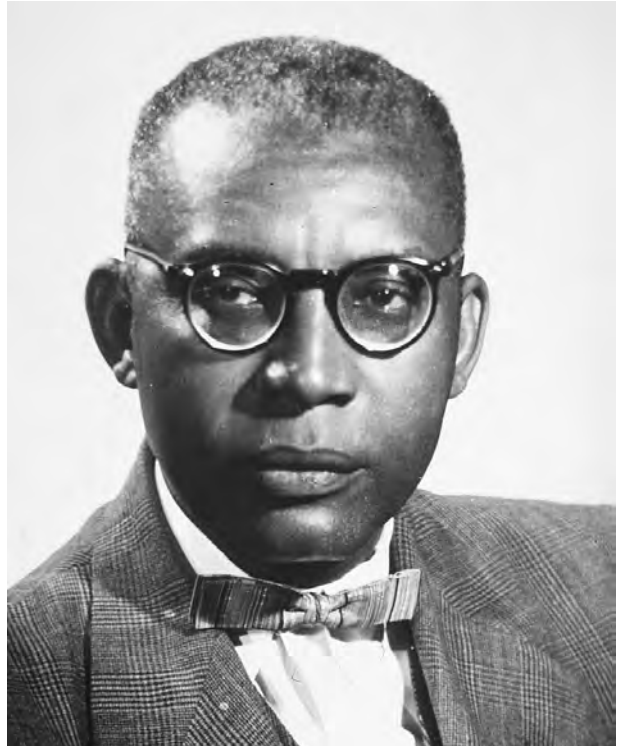
In spite of this favorable start, Duvalier’s government was burdened with many problems. The defeated candidates refused to cooperate with him and, from hiding, encouraged acts of violence and disobedience against the new president. After Fidel Castro (1927–) came to power in Cuba, that country began to harbor Haitian refugees who had escaped the increasingly harsh conditions of the Duvalier government. In addition, General Rafael Trujillo (1891–1961), dictator

(military ruler) of the Dominican Republic and enemy of Castro, feared a Cuban invasion through Haiti, and this concern led to Dominican interference in Haitian affairs.

Abuse of power

It was during this period that Duvalier created an organization directly responsible to him, the Tontons Macoutes (also known as “Bogeymen”), the Haitian version of a secret police. Through the late 1950s to the middle 1960s this force continued to grow and was responsible for terrorizing and assassinating anyone thought to be an opponent of Duvalier. In the 1961 elections Duvalier altered the ballots to have his name placed at the top. Afterward he announced that his victory gave him another six years in office. In the words of the *New York Times* of May 13, 1961, “Latin America has witnessed many fraudulent (fake) elections . . . but none will have been more outrageous than the one which has just taken place in Haiti.”

After the 1961 elections the American government made it clear that the United States disputed the truth of the results and that Duvalier’s legal term should end in 1963. During 1962 the American Agency for International Development (AID) mission was withdrawn from Haiti, and by April 1963 an American fleet moved into position close to Port-au-Prince. On May 15, to show its disapproval of Duvalier’s continued presence, the United States suspended diplomatic relations with Haiti, refusing to engage it in discussions of international matters. At the same time, relations between Haiti and the Dominican Republic were getting worse, and Duvalier’s main enemy, Dominican President Juan Bosch, was threatening to invade Haiti.



François Duvalier.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Even the Organization of the American States (OAS) became involved, sending a fact-finding mission to Haiti. However, Duvalier remained firmly in control, the Dominicans backed down, and Haiti went back to business as usual.

President for life

After the election of 1961 and the continuation of Duvalier’s rule in 1963, many observers felt it was only a matter of time before Duvalier moved to have himself installed as permanent Haitian president. On April 1, 1964, that was exactly what happened. The Legislative Chamber, which did

whatever Duvalier wanted, rewrote the 1957 constitution, making a point of changing Article 197 so that Duvalier could be declared president for life. A “vote” on the new constitution was held, and on June 22, 1964, Duvalier was officially named president for life.

After that time Haitian political life was a little calmer. Having taken over his country and holding off the United States, the OAS, and the Dominican Republic in the process, Duvalier was in complete control. During the 1960s he survived several damaging hurricanes and numerous attempts to overthrow him. A small, gray-haired man, Duvalier began suffering from heart disease and other health problems. In January 1971 he directed the National

Assembly to change the constitution to allow his son, Jean Claude Duvalier (1951–), to succeed him. Duvalier died on April 21, 1971, and his son immediately took over.

For More Information

- Abbott, Elizabeth. *Haiti: The Duvaliers and Their Legacy*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1988.
- Burt, Al, and Bernard Diedrich. *Papa Doc*. London: Bodley Head, 1970.
- Condit, Erin. *François & Jean-Claude Duvalier*. New York: Chelsea House, 1989.
- Ferguson, James. *Papa Doc, Baby Doc: Haiti and the Duvaliers*. New York: B. Blackwell, 1988.



AMELIA EARHART

Born: July 24, 1897

Atchison, Kansas

Died: c. 1937

American pilot and women's rights activist

The American aviator Amelia Earhart remains the world's best-known woman pilot even long after her mysterious disappearance during a round-the-world flight in 1937.

Childhood in the Midwest

Amelia Mary Earhart was born on July 24, 1897, the daughter of Edwin and Amy

Otis Earhart. Until she was twelve she lived with her wealthy maternal grandparents, Alfred and Amelia Harres Otis, in Atchison, Kansas, where she attended a private school. Her summers were spent in Kansas City, Missouri, where her lawyer-father worked for the Rock Island Railroad.

In 1909 Amelia and her younger sister, Muriel, went to live with their parents in Des Moines, Iowa, where the railroad had transferred her father. While in Des Moines, Earhart saw her first airplane while visiting a state fair. Because it had been only a few years since the Wright Brothers (Wilbur, 1867–1912; Orville, 1871–1948) made their first flight at Kitty Hawk, North Carolina, young Earhart was not overly impressed with what she saw at the fair.



Amelia Earhart.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Before she completed high school, Amelia also attended schools in St. Paul, Minnesota, and Springfield, Illinois. Meanwhile her father was fighting a losing battle against alcoholism. His failure and the humiliation it caused for her were the root of Amelia's lifelong dislike of alcohol and desire for financial security.

Amy Earhart left Edwin in Springfield in 1914, taking her daughters with her to live with friends in Chicago, Illinois, where Amelia graduated from the Hyde Park School in 1915. The yearbook described her as "A. E.—the girl in brown (her favorite color) who walks alone."

Inspired by war

A year later, after Amy Earhart received an inheritance from the estate of her mother, she sent Amelia to Ogontz School in Philadelphia, an exclusive high school and junior college. During Christmas vacation of her second year there, Amelia went to Toronto, Canada, where Muriel was attending a private school. In Toronto Amelia saw her first amputee (a person who had one or more limbs removed), returning wounded from World War I (1914–18; a war in which Germany and Austria fought European and American forces). She immediately refused to return to Ogontz and became a volunteer nurse in a hospital for veterans, where she worked until after the armistice (truce) of 1918. The experience made her an lifelong pacifist (person opposed to war).

From Toronto Earhart went to live with her mother and sister in Northampton, Massachusetts, where her sister was attending Smith College. In the fall of 1919 she entered Columbia University, but left after one year to join her parents, who had gotten back together and were living in Los Angeles, California.

First air shows

In the winter of 1920 Earhart saw her first air show and took her first airplane ride. "As soon as we left the ground," she said, "I knew I had to fly." She took lessons at Bert Kinner's airfield on Long Beach Boulevard in Los Angeles from a woman—Neta Snooks. On December 15, 1921, Amelia received her license from the National Aeronautics Association (NAA). By working part-time as a file clerk, office assistant, photographer, and truck driver, and with some help from her mother, Earhart eventually bought her own

plane. However, she was unable to earn enough to continue her expensive hobby.

In 1924 Earhart's parents separated again. Amelia sold her plane and bought a car in which she drove her mother to Boston, where her sister was teaching school. Soon after that Earhart reenrolled at Columbia University in New York City, but she lacked the money to continue for more than one year. She returned to Boston, where she became a social worker, joined the NAA, and continued to fly in her spare time.

Crosses the Atlantic

In 1928 Earhart accepted an offer to join the crew of a flight across the Atlantic. The flight was the scheme of George Palmer Putnam, editor of *WE*, Charles Lindbergh's (1902–1974) book about how he became the first person to fly alone across the Atlantic in 1927. Putnam chose her for his “Lady Lindy” because of her flying experience, her education, and her lady-like appearance. Along with pilot Wilmer Stultz and mechanic Louis Gordon, she crossed the Atlantic (from Newfoundland to Wales) on June 18–19, 1928. Although she never once touched the controls (she described herself afterward as little more than a “sack of potatoes”), Earhart became world-renowned as “the first woman to fly the Atlantic.”

From that time on Putnam became Earhart's manager and, in 1931, her husband. He arranged all of her flying engagements, many of which were followed by difficult cross-country lecture tours (at one point, twenty-nine lectures in thirty-one days) staged to gain maximum publicity.

Earhart became upset by reports that she was largely a puppet figure created by her

publicist husband and that she was something less than a competent aviator (pilot). To prove her skills as an aviator, she piloted a tiny, single-engine Lockheed Electra from Newfoundland, Canada, to Ireland. Then, on May 20–21, 1932, and five years after Lindbergh, Earhart became the first woman to fly solo across the Atlantic.

During the five years remaining in her life, Earhart acted as a tireless champion for commercial aviation and for women's rights. The numerous flying records she set include: an altitude record in an autogiro (an early aircraft, in 1931); the first person to fly an autogiro across the United States and back; the fastest nonstop transcontinental (continent to continent) flight by a woman (1932); breaking her own transcontinental speed record (1933); the first person to fly solo across the Pacific from Hawaii to California (1935); the first person to fly solo from Los Angeles to Mexico (1935); breaking the speed record for a nonstop flight from Los Angeles to Mexico City to Newark, New Jersey; and setting the speed record for the fastest east-west crossing from Oakland, California, to Honolulu, Hawaii (1937). She also collected numerous awards and honors from around the world.

Final flight

On July 2, 1937, twenty-two days before her fortieth birthday and having already completed 22,000 miles of an attempt to fly around the world, Earhart and her navigator, Fred Noonan, disappeared over the Pacific somewhere between Lae, New Guinea, and Howland Island (an island in the central Pacific Ocean). The largest search ever conducted by the U.S. Navy for a single missing plane sighted neither plane nor crew. Later

searches since that time have been equally unsuccessful. In 1992 an expedition found certain objects (a shoe and a metal plate) on the small atoll (island) of Nikumaroro south of Howland, which could have been left by Earhart and Noonan.

In 1997 another female pilot, Linda Finch, recreated Earhart's final flight in an around the world tribute entitled "World Flight 97." The event took place on what would have been Earhart's hundredth birthday. Finch successfully completed her voyage—the identical route that Earhart would have flown around the world.

For More Information

Laubar, Patricia. *Lost Star: The Story of Amelia Earhart*. New York: Scholastic, 1988.

King, Thomas F. *Amelia Earhart's Shoes: Is the Mystery Solved?* Walnut Creek, CA: AltaMira Press, 2001.

Lovell, Mary S. *The Sound of Wings*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1989.

Rich, Doris L. *Amelia Earhart: A Biography*. Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution, 1989.

GEORGE EASTMAN

Born: July 12, 1854

Waterville, New York

Died: March 14, 1932

Rochester, New York

American inventor, industrialist, and businessman

By mass-producing his inventions, the American inventor and industrialist (one who owns or manages an industry) George Eastman promoted photography as a popular hobby. He also donated large sums to educational institutions.

Early years

George Eastman was born in Waterville, New York, on July 12, 1854. His father, George W. Eastman, ran a business college in Rochester, New York; his mother, Maria Kilbourn, took care of young George and his two older sisters. His father died when he was seven, two years after the family moved to Rochester. His mother was forced to take in boarders to add to the family's small income. George was educated in Rochester public schools but dropped out at age thirteen to work and help his mother. He advanced from messenger to bookkeeper in the Rochester Savings Bank by 1877. He was always careful with money, spending it only on his hobby, amateur photography. When photographic chemicals among his cameras and supplies ruined his packed clothes on a trip to Mackinac Island, he became disgusted with the wet-plate process of producing photographs.

Hobby becomes a business

In the 1870s American photography was still time-consuming, difficult, and expensive. Equipment included a huge camera, strong tripod (a three-legged stand), large plateholder, dark tent, chemicals, water container, and heavy glass plates. Eastman experimented using dry plates. He was the first American to contribute to the improvement of photographic methods by coating glass plates with gelatin, a gummy substance, and

silver bromide, a chemical. In 1879 his coating machine was patented in England, and in 1880 he received an American patent for it. He sold his English patent and opened a shop to manufacture photographic plates in Rochester. To do away with glass plates, Eastman coated paper with gelatin and photographic chemicals. The developed film was stripped from the paper to make a negative. This film was rolled on spools. Eastman and William Walker created a lightweight roll holder that would fit any camera.

Amateurs could develop pictures after Eastman substituted transparent (see-through) film for the paper in 1884. Flexible film was created by Hannibal Goodwin of New York and a young Eastman chemist, Henry Reichenback. The long patent battle between Goodwin and Eastman was the most important legal dispute in photographic history. A federal court decision in August 1913 favored Goodwin. Goodwin's family and Ansco Company, owners of his patent, received five million dollars from Eastman in 1914.

In 1888 Eastman designed a simple camera, the Kodak (a word created by Eastman; it has no meaning), which was easy to carry and made focusing and adjusting the light unnecessary. With a hundred-exposure roll of film, it sold for twenty-five dollars. After taking the pictures and sending the camera and ten dollars to the Rochester factory, the photographer received his prints and reloaded camera. Eastman's slogan, "You press the button, we do the rest," became well known.

Growth and new developments

Eastman expected that photography would soon become more popular, and in 1892 he established the Eastman Kodak



*George Eastman.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

Company. This was one of the first American firms to mass-produce its goods and to maintain a chemical laboratory. By 1900 his factories at Rochester and at Harrow, England, employed over three thousand people, and by 1920 that number increased to more than fifteen thousand. Eastman, at first treasurer and general manager of the company, later became president and finally board chairman.

Daylight-loading film and cameras soon made it unnecessary to return the cameras to the factory. Eastman's old slogan changed to "You press the button, we do the rest, or you can do it yourself." A pocket Kodak was marketed in 1897, a folding Kodak in 1898, non-

curling film in 1903, and color film in 1928. Eastman film was used in Thomas Edison's (1847–1931) motion pictures; Edison's incandescent (glowing with intense heat) bulb was used by Eastman and by photographers specializing in “portraits (photographs of people) taken by electric light.”

Eastman's staff worked on other scientific problems as well as on photographic improvements. During World War I (1914–18) his laboratory helped build up America's chemical industry to the point where it no longer depended on Germany. Eventually America became the world leader.

Later years

Eastman cared about his employees; he was the first American businessman to grant workers shares in the profits made by the company. He also gave away large amounts of his huge fortune to the University of Rochester (especially the medical school and Eastman School of Music), Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Hampton Institute, Tuskegee Institute, Rochester Dental Dispensary, and several European dental clinics.

George Eastman remained a bachelor all of his life. After a long illness, he committed suicide on March 14, 1932, in Rochester. He had written to friends, “My work is done. Why wait?”

For More Information

Ackerman, Carl W. *George Eastman*. New York; Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1930.

Brayer, Elizabeth. *George Eastman: A Biography*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1996.

Holmes, Burnham. *George Eastman*. Morristown, NJ: Silver Burdett Press, 1992.

CLINT EASTWOOD

Born: May 31, 1930

San Francisco, California

American actor and director

With many roles including westerns and the *Dirty Harry* series, Clint Eastwood became one of the world's most popular and successful movie stars. He also established himself as a successful director.

Early life

Clinton Eastwood Jr. was born on May 31, 1930, in San Francisco, California. He was the first of Clinton and Ruth Eastwood's two children. Eastwood attended eight different grammar schools, as his parents moved frequently in search of work during the Great Depression (1929–39; a time when the U.S. economy was very weak and many people were without work). They finally settled in Oakland, California. He attended Oakland Technical High School and even appeared in a school play, an experience he did not enjoy. Eastwood swam competitively in high school and also played on the basketball team. After graduating in 1948, he held various low-paying jobs before being drafted into the army. He was discharged in 1953. Then he enrolled in Los Angeles City College as a business major, supporting himself with various odd jobs, including digging swimming pool foundations.

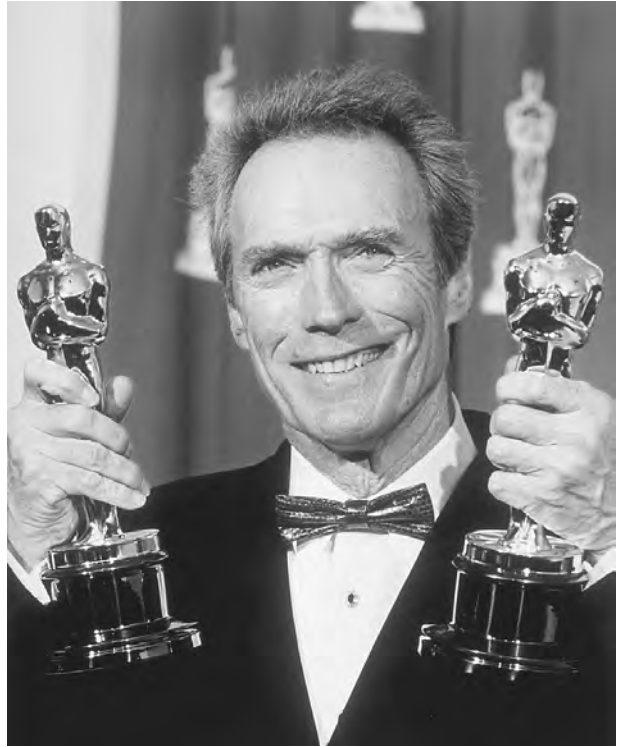
Early acting career

Army friends in the film business urged Eastwood to take a screen test at Universal Studios. His good looks landed him a job as a contract player in 1955. He earned seventy-five dollars a week playing small parts in bad movies. Universal dropped him in 1956, and by 1958 Eastwood was again digging swimming pools for a living. As the result of a chance meeting, he was chosen for the cast of the Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS) television series *Rawhide*, which lasted seven years (1959–66).

During a break from *Rawhide* in 1964, Eastwood filmed the western *A Fistful of Dollars* in Spain with Italian director Sergio Leone. The film made Eastwood an overnight star. He returned to Europe to film two more westerns, *For a Few Dollars More* (1965) and *The Good, The Bad, and The Ugly* (1966). Eastwood's character in these films was cold and tough, as were characters in his later westerns, such as *The Outlaw Josey Wales* (1976) and *Unforgiven* (1992). Another tough character he created was Harry Callahan, a detective who ignores police regulations and practices his own brand of justice. Callahan was introduced in *Dirty Harry* (1971), which viewers loved. Eastwood made four later films with the Callahan character.

Begins directing

Eastwood's first attempt at directing a film was successful with *Play Misty for Me* (1971), a thriller. It received good reviews and did well at the box office, as did many of the films he directed after it. He starred in most of them, but not in one of his finest efforts, *Bird* (1988), which dealt with the life of the jazz musician Charlie Parker



Clint Eastwood.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

(1920–1955). Jazz music has appeared frequently on the soundtracks of many of Eastwood's films.

In the early 1980s Eastwood began to receive more recognition for his contributions as producer and director, especially in his smaller films. In 1985 he flew to Paris, France, to accept the honor of Chevalier des Arts et Lettres, a national award. In 1992 Eastwood won his first Academy Award for *Unforgiven*. Three years later the Academy honored him with the Irving G. Thalberg Memorial Award, which is given to producers or directors with a body of high-quality motion picture work. Eastwood continues to

act and direct, his later films including *The Bridges of Madison County* (1995), *Absolute Power* (1997), and *Space Cowboys* (2000).

Private and political life

Eastwood lives in Carmel, California. Most of his friends are not involved in show business. He has been approached many times to run for political office but has refused, except for serving a two-year term (1986–88) as mayor of Carmel. Eastwood decided to run because he disapproved of zoning laws in the city. After changing the laws, he stepped down. Eastwood had two children with his first wife Maggie Johnson, whom he married in 1953. They divorced in 1984 after a long separation, with Johnson receiving a reported \$25 million settlement. Eastwood also lived for over ten years with actress Sandra Locke, who appeared in many of his films. The end of that relationship resulted in a lawsuit that required Eastwood to pay Locke more than \$7 million. In 1996 Eastwood married Dina Ruiz, a television reporter.

In 2000 a jury ruled that Eastwood did not have to pay damages to a disabled woman who claimed his Mission Ranch Inn did not comply with the Americans with Disabilities Act. However, Eastwood was ordered to improve handicapped access to the hotel office at his property near Carmel. Later that year Eastwood was given a Kennedy Center Honor by U.S. president Bill Clinton (1946–) and praised as a man who continues to take risks in his work. In 2001 Eastwood received the San Francisco International Film Festival's Akira Kurosawa Award for directing. Later that year, noting Eastwood's concern for the environment, the governor of California

appointed him to the state's Park and Recreation Commission.

For More Information

Clinch, Minty. *Clint Eastwood*. London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1994.

Schickel, Richard. *Clint Eastwood: A Biography*. New York: Knopf, 1996.

Smith, Paul. *Clint Eastwood*. Minneapolis, MN: University of Minnesota Press, 1993.

Zmijewsky, Boris, and Lee Pfeiffer. *The Films of Clint Eastwood*. New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1993.

THOMAS EDISON

Born: February 11, 1847

Milan, Ohio

Died: October 18, 1931

West Orange, New Jersey

American inventor

The American inventor Thomas Edison held hundreds of patents, mostly for electrical devices and electric light and power. Although the phonograph and the electric light bulb are best known, perhaps his greatest invention was organized research.

Early life

Thomas Alva Edison was born in Milan, Ohio, on February 11, 1847, the youngest of Samuel and Nancy Eliot Edison's seven chil-

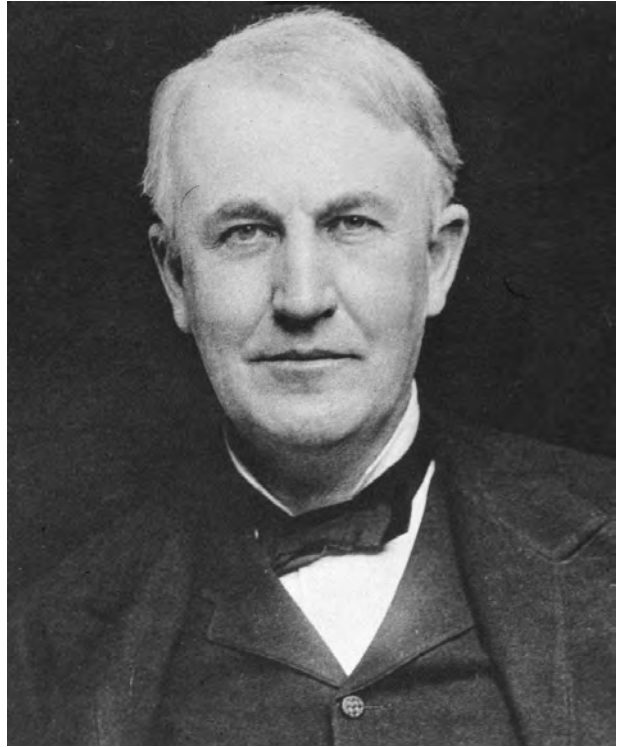
dren. His father worked at different jobs, including as a shopkeeper and shingle maker; his mother was a former teacher. Edison spent short periods of time in school but was mainly tutored by his mother. He also read books from his father's extensive library.

At the age of twelve Edison sold fruit, candy, and newspapers on the Grand Trunk Railroad between Port Huron and Detroit, Michigan. In 1862, using a small printing press in a baggage car, he wrote and printed the *Grand Trunk Herald*, which was circulated to four hundred railroad employees. That year he became a telegraph operator, taught by the father of a child whose life Edison had saved. Excused from military service because of deafness, he worked at different places before joining Western Union Telegraph Company in Boston in 1868. He also continued to read, becoming especially fond of the writings of British scientist Michael Faraday (1791–1867) on the subject of electricity.

First inventions

Edison's first invention was probably an automatic telegraph repeater (1864), which enabled telegraph signals to travel greater distances. His first patent was for an electric vote counter. In 1869, as a partner in a New York electrical firm, he perfected a machine for telegraphing stock market quotations and sold it. This money, in addition to that from his share of the partnership, provided funds for his own factory in Newark, New Jersey. Edison hired as many as eighty workers, including chemists and mathematicians, to help him with inventions; he wanted an "invention factory."

From 1870 to 1875 Edison invented many telegraphic improvements, including



Thomas Edison.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

transmitters, receivers, and automatic printers and tape. He worked with Christopher Sholes, "father of the typewriter," in 1871 to improve the typing machine. Edison claimed he made twelve typewriters at Newark about 1870. The Remington Company bought his interests. In 1876 Edison's carbon telegraph transmitter for Western Union marked a real advance toward making the Bell telephone successful. With the money Edison received from Western Union for his transmitter, he established a factory in Menlo Park, New Jersey. Within six years he had more than three hundred patents. The electric pen (1877) produced stencils to make copies. The A. B.

Dick Company licensed Edison's patent and manufactured the first copy machine.

Edison's most original and successful invention, the phonograph, was patented in 1877. From an instrument operated by hand that made impressions on metal foil and replayed sounds, it became a motor-driven machine playing soda can-shaped wax records by 1887. By 1890 he had more than eighty patents on it. The Victor Company developed from his patents. Edison's later dictating machine, the Ediphone, used disks.

Electric light

To research incandescent light (glowing with intense heat without burning), Edison and others organized the Edison Electric Light Company in 1878. (It later became the General Electric Company.) Edison made the first practical electric light bulb in 1879, and it was patented the following year. Edison and his staff examined six thousand organic fibers from around the world, searching for a material that would glow, but not burn, when electric current passed through it. He found that Japanese bamboo was best. Mass production soon made the lamps, while low-priced, profitable.

Prior to Edison's central power station, each user of electricity needed a generator, which was inconvenient and expensive. Edison opened the first commercial electric station in London in 1882. In September the Pearl Street Station in New York City marked the beginning of America's electrical age. Within four months the station was providing power to light more than five thousand lamps, and the demand for lamps exceeded supply. By 1890 it supplied current to twenty thousand lamps, mainly in office buildings,

and to motors, fans, printing presses, and heating appliances. Many towns and cities installed central stations based on this model. Increased use of electricity led to numerous improvements in the system.

In 1883 Edison made a significant discovery in pure science, the Edison effect—electrons (particles of an atom with a negative electrical charge) flowed from incandescent conducting threads. With a metal plate inserted next to the thread, the lamp could serve as a valve, admitting only negative electricity. Although “etheric force” had been recognized in 1875 and the Edison effect was patented in 1883, the discovery was little known outside the Edison laboratory. (At this time existence of electrons was not generally accepted.) This “force” underlies radio broadcasting, long-distance telephone systems, sound pictures, television, X rays, high-frequency surgery, and electronic musical instruments. In 1885 Edison patented a method to transmit telegraphic “aerial” signals, which worked over short distances. He later sold this “wireless” patent to Guglielmo Marconi (1874–1937).

Creating the modern research laboratory

In 1887 Edison moved his operations to West Orange, New Jersey. This factory, which Edison directed from 1887 to 1931, was the world's most complete research laboratory, with teams of workers investigating problems. Various inventions included a method to make plate glass, a magnetic ore separator, a cement process, an all-concrete house, an electric locomotive (patented in 1893), a nickel-iron battery, and motion pictures. Edison also developed the fluoroscope (an instrument used to study the inside of the liv-

ing body by X rays), but he refused to patent it, which allowed doctors to use it freely. The Edison battery was perfected in 1910. After eight thousand trials Edison remarked, "Well, at least we know eight thousand things that don't work."

Edison's motion picture camera, the kinetograph, could photograph action on fifty-foot strips of film, sixteen images per foot. In 1893 a young assistant, in order to make the first Edison movies, built a small laboratory called the "Black Maria"—a shed, painted black inside and out, that revolved on a base to follow the sun and keep the actors visible. The kinetoscope projector of 1893 showed the films. The first commercial movie theater, a peepshow, opened in New York in 1884. A coin put into a slot activated the kinetoscope inside the box. In 1895 Edison acquired and improved Thomas Armat's projector, marketing it as the Vitascope. The Edison Company produced over seventeen hundred movies. Combining movies with the phonograph in 1904, Edison laid the basis for talking pictures. In 1908 his cinemaphone appeared, adjusting film speed to phonograph speed. In 1913 his kinetophone projected talking pictures: the phonograph, behind the screen, ran in time with the projector through a series of ropes and pulleys. Edison produced several "talkies."

Work for the government

During World War I (1914–18) Edison headed the U.S. Navy Consulting Board and contributed forty-five inventions, including substitutes for previously imported chemicals, defensive instruments against U-boats, a ship telephone system, an underwater searchlight, smoke screen machines, antitorpedo nets,

navigating equipment, and methods of aiming and firing naval guns. After the war he established the Naval Research Laboratory, the only American organized weapons research institution until World War II (1939–45).

Synthetic rubber

With Henry Ford (1863–1947) and the Firestone Company, Edison organized the Edison Botanic Research Company in 1927 to discover or develop a domestic source of rubber. Some seventeen thousand different plant specimens were examined over four years—an indication of how thorough Edison's research was. He eventually was able to develop a strain yielding twelve percent latex, and in 1930 he received his last patent for this process.

The man himself

To help raise money, Edison called attention to himself by dressing carelessly, clowning for reporters, and making statements such as "Genius is one percent inspiration and ninety-nine percent perspiration," and "Discovery is not invention." He scoffed at formal education, thought four hours of sleep a night was enough, and often worked forty or fifty hours straight, sleeping on a laboratory floor. As a world symbol of American inventiveness, he looked and acted the part. Edison had thousands of books at home and masses of printed materials at the laboratory. When launching a new project, he wished to avoid others' mistakes and tried to learn everything about a subject. Some twenty-five thousand notebooks contained his research records, ideas, hunches, and mistakes.

Edison died in West Orange on October 18, 1931. The laboratory buildings and

equipment associated with his career are preserved in Greenfield Village, Detroit, Michigan, thanks to Henry Ford's interest and friendship.

For More Information

Baldwin, Neil. *Edison: Inventing the Century*. New York: Hyperion, 1995.

Cousins, Margaret. *The Story of Thomas Alva Edison*. New York: Random House, 1965.

Cramer, Carol, ed. *Thomas Edison*. San Diego: Greenhaven Press, 2001.

Israel, Paul. *Edison: A Life of Invention*. New York: John Wiley, 1998.

Josephson, Matthew. *Edison: A Biography*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1959.

ALBERT EINSTEIN

Born: March 14, 1879

Ulm, Germany

Died: April 18, 1955

Princeton, Massachusetts

German-born American physicist and scientist

The German-born American physicist (one who studies matter and energy and the relationships between them) Albert Einstein revolutionized the science of physics. He is best known for his theory of relativity, which holds that measurements of space and time vary according to conditions such as the state of motion of the observer.

Early years and education

Albert Einstein was born on March 14, 1879, in Ulm, Germany, but he grew up and obtained his early education in Munich, Germany. He was a poor student, and some of his teachers thought he might be retarded (mentally handicapped); he was unable to speak fluently (with ease and grace) at age nine. Still, he was fascinated by the laws of nature, experiencing a deep feeling of wonder when puzzling over the invisible, yet real, force directing the needle of a compass. He began playing the violin at age six and would continue to play throughout his life. At age twelve he discovered geometry (the study of points, lines, and surfaces) and was taken by its clear and certain proofs. Einstein mastered calculus (a form of higher mathematics used to solve problems in physics and engineering) by age sixteen.

Einstein's formal secondary education ended at age sixteen. He disliked school, and just as he was planning to find a way to leave without hurting his chances for entering the university, his teacher expelled him because his bad attitude was affecting his classmates. Einstein tried to enter the Federal Institute of Technology (FIT) in Zurich, Switzerland, but his knowledge of subjects other than mathematics was not up to par, and he failed the entrance examination. On the advice of the principal, he first obtained his diploma at the Cantonal School in Aarau, Switzerland, and in 1896 he was automatically admitted into the FIT. There he came to realize that he was more interested in and better suited for physics than mathematics.

Einstein passed his examination to graduate from the FIT in 1900, but due to the opposition of one of his professors he was

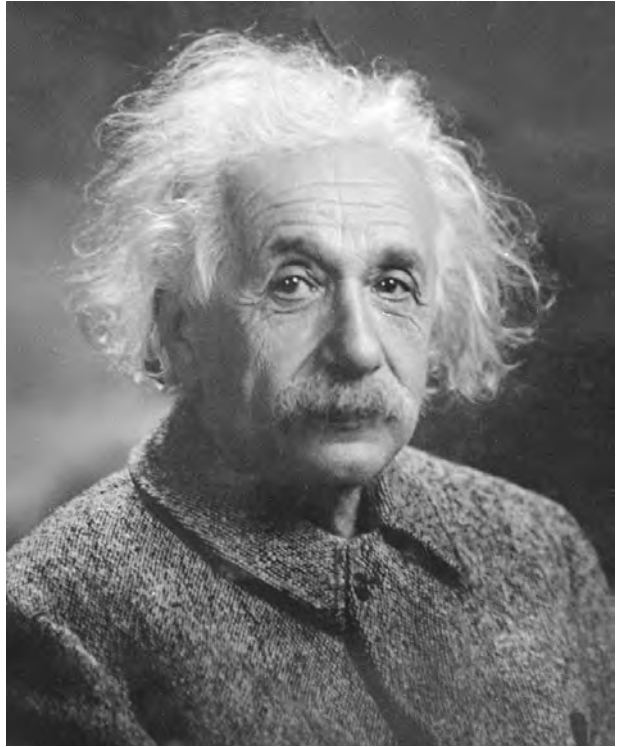
unable to go on to obtain the usual university assistantship. In 1902 he was hired as an inspector in the patent office in Bern, Switzerland. Six months later he married Mileva Maric, a former classmate in Zurich. They had two sons. It was in Bern, too, that Einstein, at twenty-six, completed the requirements for his doctoral degree and wrote the first of his revolutionary scientific papers.

Famous papers

Thermodynamics (the study of heat processes) made the deepest impression on Einstein. From 1902 until 1904 he reworked the foundations of thermodynamics and statistical mechanics (the study of forces and their effect on matter); this work formed the immediate background to his revolutionary papers of 1905, one of which was on Brownian motion.

In Brownian motion, first observed in 1827 by the Scottish botanist (scientist who studies plants) Robert Brown (1773–1858), small particles suspended in a liquid such as water undergo a rapid, irregular motion. Einstein, unaware of Brown's earlier observations, concluded from his studies that such a motion must exist. He was guided by the thought that if the liquid in which the particles are suspended is made up of atoms, they should collide with the particles and set them into motion. He found that the motion of the particles will in time experience a forward movement. Einstein proved that this forward movement is directly related to the number of atoms per gram of atomic weight. Brownian motion is to this day considered one of the most direct proofs of the existence of atoms.

Another of Einstein's ideas in 1905 was that under certain conditions radiant energy



Albert Einstein.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

(light) behaves as if it is made up not of waves but of particles of energy. He presented an equation for the photoelectric effect, in which electrons (particles in the outer portion of an atom that are said to have a “negative” electrical charge equal to that of protons, particles with a larger mass that are said to have a “positive” electrical charge) are ejected from a metal surface that has been exposed to light. Einstein proved that the electrons are not ejected in a constant stream but like bullets from a gun, in units, or “quanta.” Although Einstein's famous equation for the photoelectric effect—for which he won the Nobel Prize in physics in 1921—appears obvious today, it

was an extremely bold prediction in 1905. Not until years later did R. A. Millikan finally succeed in confirming it to everyone's everyone's satisfaction.

The theory of relativity came from Einstein's search for a general law of nature that would explain a problem that had occurred to him when he was sixteen: if one runs at, say, 4 4 miles per hour (6.4 kilometers per hour) alongside a train that is moving at 4 4 miles per hour, the train appears to be at rest; if, on the other hand, it were possible to run alongside a ray of light, neither experiment nor theory suggests that the ray of light would appear to be at rest. Einstein realized that no matter what speed the observer is moving at, he must always observe the same velocity of light, which is roughly 186,000 miles per second (299,274 kilometers per second). He also saw that this was in agreement with a second assumption: if an observer at rest and an observer moving at constant speed carry out the same kind of experiment, they must get the same result. These two assumptions make up Einstein's special theory of relativity. Also in 1905 Einstein proved that his theory predicted that energy (E) and mass (m) are entirely related according to his famous equation, $E=mc^2$. This means that the energy in any particle is equal to the particle's mass multiplied by the speed of light squared.

Academic career

These papers made Einstein famous, and universities soon began competing for his services. In 1909, after serving as a lecturer at the University of Bern, Einstein was called as an associate professor to the University of Zurich. Two years later he was appointed a

full professor at the German University in Prague, Czechoslovakia. Within another year-and-a-half Einstein became a full professor at the FIT. Finally, in 1913 the well-known scientists Max Planck (1858–1947) and Walther Nernst (1864–1941) traveled to Zurich to persuade Einstein to accept a lucrative (profitable) research professorship at the University of Berlin in Germany, as well as full membership in the Prussian Academy of Science. He accepted their offer in 1914, saying, "The Germans are gambling on me as they would on a prize hen. I do not really know myself whether I shall ever really lay another egg." When he went to Berlin, his wife remained behind in Zurich with their two sons; they divorced, and Einstein married his cousin Elsa in 1917.

In 1920 Einstein was appointed to a life-long honorary visiting professorship at the University of Leiden in Holland. In 1921 and 1922 Einstein, accompanied by Chaim Weizmann (1874–1952), the future president of the state of Israel, traveled all over the world to win support for the cause of Zionism (the establishing of an independent Jewish state). In Germany, where hatred of Jewish people was growing, the attacks on Einstein began. Philipp Lenard and Johannes Stark, both Nobel Prize-winning physicists, began referring to Einstein's theory of relativity as "Jewish physics." These kinds of attacks increased until Einstein resigned from the Prussian Academy of Science in 1933.

Career in America

On several occasions Einstein had visited the California Institute of Technology, and on his last trip to the United States he was offered a position in the newly established Institute for

Advanced Studies in Princeton, Massachusetts. He went there in 1933.

Einstein played a key role (1939) in the construction of the atomic bomb by signing a famous letter to President Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882–1945). It said that the Germans had made scientific advances and that it was possible that Adolf Hitler (1889–1945, the German leader whose actions led to World War II [1939–45]), might become the first to have atomic weapons. This led to an all-out U.S. effort to construct such a bomb. Einstein was deeply shocked and saddened when his famous equation $E=mc^2$ was finally demonstrated in the most awesome and terrifying way by using the bomb to destroy Hiroshima, Japan, in 1945. For a long time he could only utter “Horrible, horrible.”

It would be difficult to find a more suitable epitaph (a brief statement summing up a person's life) than the words Einstein himself used in describing his life: “God . . . gave me the stubbornness of a mule and nothing else; really . . . He also gave me a keen scent.” On April 18, 1955, Einstein died in Princeton.

For More Information

Cwiklik, Robert. *Albert Einstein and the Theory of Relativity*. New York: Barron's Educational Series, 1987.

Goldberg, Jake. *Albert Einstein*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1996.

Goldenstern, Joyce. *Albert Einstein: Physicist and Genius*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1995.

Hammontree, Marie. *Albert Einstein: Young Thinker*. New York: Aladdin, 1986.

Ireland, Karin. *Albert Einstein*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Silver Burdett Press, 1989.

McPherson, Stephanie Sammartino. *Ordinary Genius: The Story of Albert Einstein*. Minneapolis: Carolrhoda Books, 1995.

DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER

Born: October 14, 1890

Denison, Texas

Died: March 26, 1969

Washington, D.C.

American president, university president, and army officer

Dwight D. Eisenhower was leader of the Allied forces in Europe during World War II (1939–45), commander of NATO, and thirty-fourth president of the United States (1953–61).

Early life

Dwight D. Eisenhower was born in Denison, Texas, on October 14, 1890, the third of seven sons. Soon after his birth, the family moved to Abilene, Kansas. His family was poor, and Eisenhower early learned the value of hard work, earning money selling vegetables and working for a creamery, a place where milk products like butter and cheese are made or sold.

Although Eisenhower was an average student, he enjoyed studying history. His heroes included military figures like George Washington (1732–1799) and Hannibal (247–183 B.C.E.). He excelled in athletics, particularly football. Eisenhower graduated from Abilene High School in 1909 and then

went to work for a year to help pay for his brother's college education. In 1911 he attended West Point Military Academy, where he was more interested in sports, especially football, than in his studies. Eisenhower graduated from West Point in 1915 and married Mamie Doud (1896–1979) the next year.

Army career and command in Europe

Eisenhower's army career was marked by a slow rise to greatness. He graduated first in his class in 1926 from the army's Command and General Staff School. Following graduation, he served under General Douglas MacArthur (1880–1964), becoming MacArthur's aide in the Philippines. Returning to the United States in 1939, Eisenhower became chief of staff of the Third Army. In 1941 he attracted attention with his brilliance in commanding the training of 420,000 American soldiers in Louisiana.

When the United States joined World War II (1939–45) in 1941, Eisenhower became chief of the War Plans Division of the U.S. Army General Staff. He helped with preparations for the war in Europe. In May 1942 he was made supreme commander of the Allied Forces in Europe and traveled to London in June of the same year. (In World War II, the Allied forces—France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, China, and the United States—fought against the Axis forces—Germany, Italy, and Japan.)

Eisenhower's personal qualities were precisely right for his new position. He successfully dealt with British generals and with the strong prime minister of Great Britain, Winston Churchill (1874–1965). Eisenhower's post called for an ability to get along

with people and yet maintain his own position as leader of the Allied forces. In addition to his ability to gain respect, Eisenhower also showed skill in choosing qualified people to serve under him.

In June 1942 Eisenhower was made the leader of the November 1942 invasion of North Africa. The plan for the invasion of North Africa was to trap the Axis troops led by Erwin Rommel (1891–1944) between British and U.S. forces. By May 1943 the North African operation had succeeded and the Allies had taken control of Africa. Despite British reluctance, Eisenhower began preparing for the June 1944 invasion of Europe at Normandy, France. After the Allies successfully landed in Normandy, Eisenhower led the forces forward triumphantly to defeat the German armies. By spring 1945 the war in Europe was over. Eisenhower became one of the best-known men in the United States and some saw a career in politics in his future.

From Columbia University to the presidency

Eisenhower denied any desire to enter politics and in 1948 left the military to become president of Columbia University. In 1950 he accepted an offer made by President Harry Truman (1884–1972) to become the first commander of the newly formed North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO; an organization formed by many European countries and the United States, who all signed a treaty in 1949 agreeing to defend Western Europe against a possible attack by the Soviet Union). As the commander of NATO, Eisenhower's ability to deal with men of strong and differing opinions was valuable.

Although Eisenhower had not previously claimed any interest in politics, he remained popular with the American public. He became the Republican candidate in the 1952 presidential election and won by a tremendous margin. Throughout 1955 and 1956 he suffered health problems but was able to accept his party's renomination and easily won the 1956 election.

Eisenhower's strength as president was largely based upon his strong character. For most of his presidency, he was compelled to rely upon both Democrats and Republicans. As a leader, Eisenhower shared power with others and often took positions in the center. He was influenced by his secretary of the treasury, George Humphrey (1890–1970), and by his secretary of state, John Foster Dulles (1888–1959).

To classify Eisenhower as liberal (in favor of individual rights) or conservative (in favor of preserving tradition and gradual change) is difficult. He was sympathetic to business and was not in favor of enlarging the role of government in economic affairs. Yet he favored some liberal ideas, such as social security, minimum wage, and the establishment of the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare.

Civil rights for African Americans

The most significant development in domestic policy during Eisenhower's years as president came through the Supreme Court. First in 1953, the president appointed Earl Warren (1891–1974) to the post of chief justice. In 1954 the Warren Court declared segregation (separation according to race) in the schools unconstitutional, giving new support to the civil rights movement.



Dwight D. Eisenhower.
 Reproduced by permission of the
 Dwight D. Eisenhower Library.

Eisenhower was extremely cautious in carrying out the Supreme Court's decision. Nonetheless, he was forced to take action in 1957 when Arkansas governor Orval Faubus (1910–1994) acted against the court's decision by using national guardsmen to prevent African Americans from entering schools in Little Rock, Arkansas. After various efforts to enforce the law, the president sent federal troops to Little Rock. During his second term, Eisenhower signed laws to enforce desegregation (the process of ending separation according to race), and in 1960 he made resistance to desegregation a federal offense.

Foreign policies

Eisenhower encouraged the strengthening of NATO while also seeking to improve relations with the Soviet Union. During the years since World War II, France, Great Britain, the U.S.S.R., and the United States made little progress on the problem of a divided Germany. (After World War II, Germany had been divided into four different areas, each of which was controlled by a separate country—France, Great Britain, the United States, and the Soviet Union. The area occupied by the Soviet Union eventually became Communist East Germany, and the other three areas joined to form West Germany under a democratic government.) A new effort to work out the situation began in 1959, and an international conference was planned. The conference was cancelled when Soviets captured an American spy plane over the Soviet Union.

In Asia Eisenhower worked out a truce with the North Koreans to end the Korean War (1950–53; a war fought between South Korea, supported by the United Nations and the United States, and North Korea). The president's secretary of state negotiated the treaty that created the Southeast Asia Treaty Organization (SEATO). The United States pledged to consult with the members of SEATO and to help meet any threat to peace in Southeast Asia. This treaty was especially significant to Vietnam, which in 1954 was divided into North Vietnam and South Vietnam. North Vietnam came under Communist control, while the anti-Communist South was increasingly supported by the United States.

Meanwhile in Latin America, Cuba was ruled by an increasingly brutal and domineer-

ing president, Fulgencio Batista (1901–1973). In 1958, the American government withdrew military support from the Batista regime. A collapse of the government followed, and the Cuban leftist leader, Fidel Castro (1926–), took control of the government. Castro began to develop close ties with the Soviet Union, and relations between Cuba and the United States ended in January 1960.

Eisenhower's death in Washington, D.C., on March 26, 1969, was an occasion for national mourning and for worldwide recognition of his important role in the events of his time. Few presidents have enjoyed greater popularity than Eisenhower. He was widely admired for his strong character and his modesty.

For More Information

- Brandon, Piers. *Ike: His Life and Times*. New York: Harper & Row, 1986.
- Brown, D. Clayton. *Dwight D. Eisenhower*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1998.
- Burk, Robert F. *Dwight D. Eisenhower, Hero and Politician*. Boston: Twayne, 1986.
- D'Este, Carlo. *Eisenhower: A Soldier's Life*. New York: Henry Holt, 2002.
- Eisenhower, Dwight D. *Crusade in Europe*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1948. Reprint, Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997.
- Eisenhower, Dwight D. *The White House Years: Waging Peace*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1963–65.
- Jacobs, William Jay. *Dwight David Eisenhower: Soldier and Statesman*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1995.

MAMIE EISENHOWER

Born: November 14, 1896

Boone, Iowa

Died: November 1, 1979

Washington, D.C.

American first lady

Mamie Eisenhower, the wife of President Dwight D. “Ike” Eisenhower (1890–1969), represented what was to 1950s America the ideal American wife: She displayed quiet strength, found satisfaction in domestic duties, and supported her husband without hesitation. She also devoted time to various charities and helped preserve the history of the White House.

Early life

Mamie Geneva Doud was born in Boone, Iowa, on November 14, 1896. She was the second of four daughters born to John Sheldon Doud, a self-employed meat packer, and Elivera Mathilda Carlson Doud. Mamie was a happy, friendly, and charming girl. While she enjoyed school, she enjoyed after-school activities and social events even more. The Douds were a wealthy family and gave many parties and had visits from friends. Still, her father made sure that she learned practical lessons such as how to manage money, run a household, and shop for bargains.

When Mamie’s older sister Eleanor developed a heart condition, doctors suggested that spending the winter in a warmer place might help her recover. Mamie’s father

bought a winter home in San Antonio, Texas. In 1915, while in San Antonio with her family, Mamie met Dwight D. “Ike” Eisenhower, a young army officer and high school football coach. They were immediately attracted to each other and were married the next year.

For Mamie Eisenhower, being a military wife was hard at first. She was used to life with the close and well-respected Doud family; being Mrs. Eisenhower meant less money and a smaller circle of friends. Over the next several decades she loyally followed her husband from assignment to assignment when she could and raised their family herself when she could not. Ike’s pay was very low at first, and Mamie’s father’s advice on money matters came in handy during these times. Over the years, Ike became increasingly recognized as a military leader.

New pressures

At the end of World War II (1939–45) Dwight was a national hero, and for Mamie this meant an adjustment to dealing with newfound fame as well as the opportunity to meet important world leaders. Dwight became president of Columbia University in 1948. Throughout her husband’s years at Columbia, Mamie was a gracious hostess to many famous visitors.

When her husband decided to enter the presidential race in 1952, Mamie—a self-described homebody—realized that she would have to get used to being in the public eye. “There would be nothing he would ask during the campaign that I would not do,” she recalled. As a campaign wife she agreed to daily appearances and interviews and answered thousands of letters.



Mamie Eisenhower.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Life in the White House

After Dwight won the presidency and took office in 1953, Mamie spent a great deal of her time on domestic matters in the White House. By this time she was used to overseeing a staff, and it was her job to see that the executive mansion was run efficiently. She also supported charitable causes and showed her respect for the history of the White House by leading a drive to find and recover genuine presidential antiques. She and her husband agreed to a division of labor during his two terms (“Ike took care of the office—I ran the house”).

Public ideal

Mamie was the first lady of the United States at a time when home and family were considered the most important things in life. Dwight observed of his wife: “I personally think that Mamie’s biggest contribution was to make the White House livable, comfortable, and meaningful for the people who came in. She was always helpful and ready to do anything. . . . She saw that as one of her functions and performed it, no matter how tired she was.”

Dwight left office in 1961. Although he remained interested and willing to offer his opinions on national matters until his death in 1969, he and Mamie were at last able to enjoy something like a peaceful retirement. Mamie lived quietly after her husband’s death until she passed away on November 1, 1979, in Washington, D.C.

For More Information

- David, Lester, and Irene David. *Ike and Mamie: The Story of the General and His Lady*. New York: Putnam, 1981.
- Eisenhower, Susan. *Mrs. Ike: Memories and Reflections on the Life of Mamie Eisenhower*. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 1996.
- Sinnott, Susan. *Mamie Doud Eisenhower, 1896–1979*. New York: Children’s Press, 2000.

JOYCELYN
ELDERS

Born: August 13, 1933
Schaal, Arkansas

*African American federal government official
and surgeon general*

Confirmed as the sixteenth surgeon general of the United States on September 7, 1993, Joycelyn Elders is the first African American and the second female to head the U.S. Public Health Service. During her fifteen months as surgeon general, Elders added tobacco use, national health care, and drug and alcohol abuse to her list of major concerns.

Childhood and education

Jocelyn Elders was born Minnie Jones on August 13, 1933, in the farming community of Schaal, Arkansas. She took the name Jocelyn in college. Living in a poor, segregated (separated based on race) area, she and her seven siblings worked in the cotton fields and attended an all-black school thirteen miles from home. Home itself was a three-room cabin that lacked an indoor toilet and electricity.

One of Elders's earliest memories was of being taught to read by her mother, who had an eighth grade education, which was quite remarkable for an African American woman at that time. By the time Elders neared graduation from high school, she had earned a scholarship to the all-black Philander Smith College in Little Rock, Arkansas. Initially college looked doubtful for Elders because her father did not want to let her go. However, her grandmother persuaded Elders's father to let her attend. Elders's family picked extra cotton to earn the \$3.43 for her bus fare to Little Rock, and she became the first in her family to attend college.

Becoming a doctor

At school, Elders was especially interested in the study of biology and chemistry and wanted to become a lab technician. Her goal changed when she heard a speech by Edith Irby Jones (1927–), the first African American to study at the University of Arkansas School of Medicine. Elders, who had not even met a doctor until she was sixteen, realized that she wanted to be a physician. After graduating from college, she joined the U.S. Army's Women's Medical Specialist Corps. In 1956 she entered the Arkansas Medical School on the G.I. Bill, which provided financial aid for schooling to former members of the armed forces. During this time she met her second husband, Oliver Elders, and they married in 1960.

After studying pediatrics (an area of medicine involving the care of children) at the University of Minnesota, Elders returned to Little Rock in 1961 for her residency, or medical training period. Over the next twenty years, she combined a successful office practice with research in pediatric endocrinology, the study of glands. She became an expert in growth problems and juvenile diabetes (a disorder that causes the body to have difficulty maintaining a healthy blood sugar level).

It was this branch of science that led her to study sexual behavior. Recognizing that diabetic females face a health risk if they become pregnant too young, Elders saw the urgent need to talk about the dangers of pregnancy with her patients and to distribute contraceptives (items used to prevent pregnancy) in order to limit those dangers. The results of her actions were clear. Of the 520 juvenile diabetics Elders treated, approxi-



Joycelyn Elders.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

mately half were female, and only one became pregnant.

Combating teen pregnancy

In 1986, the year before then-governor Bill Clinton (1946–) named Elders director of the Arkansas Department of Health, twenty percent of Arkansas's total births were to teenage mothers. By comparison, the national teenage birth rate was thirteen percent. Arkansas taxpayers paid huge amounts for the care of young Arkansas parents and their children. Elders was equally concerned with the large number of emotionally immature young adults who were

becoming parents to unwanted children. She saw an urgent need for bolder government involvement and an intense public education campaign.

Elders glimpsed one of the approaches she would later support when she visited Arkansas's first school-based health clinic in Lincoln, where contraceptives were given to students on request and where senior-class pregnancies had fallen from thirteen to one. Under Elders, eighteen other school clinics opened, though only four of them distributed condoms (a specific type of contraceptive). As Elders campaigned for the clinics and expanded sex education throughout Arkansas, she battled with political conservatives who criticized her effort to increase the government's role in citizens' lives. She was also opposed by members of some religious groups who feared that the distribution of condoms would increase sexual activity and promote abortion (a woman's right to end a pregnancy).

Elders fought back by saying that she would gladly teach abstinence (the practice of not having sex) if she felt that such an approach would work. But in the real world, she argued, teens would continue to have sex, and it was the job of adults and of government to turn an irresponsible action into a responsible one. Such arguments proved convincing. In 1989 the Arkansas State Legislature ordered the creation of a kindergarten-through-twelfth-grade curriculum (courses that the students would study) including not only sex education but also instruction in hygiene (cleanliness that is important for health), substance-abuse prevention, self-esteem, and equal sexual responsibility among both males and females.

The surgeon general

President Clinton's nomination of Elders for the post of U.S. surgeon general made her the second African American and fifth woman to be chosen for a cabinet position. However, some people were strongly against the president's choice. Elders was criticized for favoring abortion on demand (abortion without restriction). Her critics also did not agree with her support for medicinal use of marijuana, U.S. legalization of the RU-486 pill (which may be taken by a woman to end a pregnancy), and her urging television networks to air condom ads. She was also involved in a scandal regarding the National Bank of Arkansas, for which she had served on the board of directors. Nevertheless, Elders gained the backing of the American Medical Association and former U.S. surgeon general C. Everett Koop (1916–). In September 1993 the Senate approved her nomination by a sixty-five to thirty-four vote.

As U.S. surgeon general, Elders continued her work regarding teen pregnancy. She was also concerned with tobacco use, national health care, acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; a disease of the immune system), gun control, and drug and alcohol abuse. However, Elders was forced to resign in December 1994 after she was surrounded by controversy over a statement she made at World AIDS Day at the United Nations. Asked if she would consider promoting masturbation (pleasuring oneself sexually without engaging in sexual intercourse) as a means of preventing young people from engaging in riskier forms of sexual activity, Elders had responded, as quoted in *US News & World Report*, that "masturbation . . . is something that is a part of human sexuality

and a part of something that should perhaps be taught." Elders's statement enraged both conservatives and moderates, and she was asked by the Clinton administration to give up her position as surgeon general.

In January 1995 Elders returned to the University of Arkansas as a faculty researcher and a professor of pediatric endocrinology at Arkansas Children's Hospital. She continues to promote discussion of health-care issues as a public speaker and through such projects as assisting in the development of SexHealth.com, a website on sexual health.

For More Information

Detroit Free Press (December 14, 1994).

Elders, M. Joycelyn, and David Chanoff.
Joycelyn Elders, M.D. New York: Morrow, 1996.

Jet (December 26–January 2, 1995).

**GEORGE
ELIOT**

Born: November 22, 1819

Warwickshire, England

Died: December 22, 1880

London, England

English author and novelist

George Eliot was the pen name (a writing name) used by the English novelist Mary Ann Evans, one of the most important writers of European fiction. Her masterpiece, *Middlemarch*, is not

only a major social record but also one of the greatest novels in the history of fiction.

Mary Ann's youth and early career

Mary Ann Evans was born November 22, 1819, in Warwickshire, England, to Robert Evans, an estate agent, or manager, and Christiana Pearson. She lived in a comfortable home, the youngest of three children. When she was five years old, she and her sister were sent to boarding school at Attleborough, Warwickshire, and when she was nine she was transferred to a boarding school at Nuneaton. It was during these years that Mary discovered her passion for reading. At thirteen years of age, Mary went to school at Coventry. Her education was conservative (one that held with the traditions of the day), dominated by Christian teachings.

Mary Ann completed her schooling when she was sixteen years old. In her twenties she came into contact with a circle of people whose thinking did not coincide with the opinions of most people and underwent an extreme change of her beliefs. Influenced by the so-called Higher Criticism—a largely German school that studied the Bible and that attempted to treat sacred writings as human and historical documents—she devoted herself to translating these works from the German language to English for the English public. She published her translation of David Strauss's *Life of Jesus* in 1846 and her translation of Ludwig Andreas Feuerbach's *Essence of Christianity* in 1854.

In 1851 Evans became an editor of the *Westminster Review*, a sensible and open-minded journal. Here, she came into contact with a group known as the positivists. They were followers of the doctrines of the French

philosopher (a seeker of knowledge) Auguste Comte (1798–1857), who were interested in applying scientific knowledge to the problems of society. One of these men was George Henry Lewes (1817–1878), a brilliant philosopher, psychologist (one who is educated in the science of the mind), and literary critic, with whom she formed a lasting relationship. As he was separated from his wife but unable to obtain a divorce, their relationship was a scandal in those times. Nevertheless, the obvious devotion and long length of their union came to be respected.

Becomes George Eliot

In the same period Evans turned her powerful mind from scholarly and critical writing to creative work. In 1857 she published a short story, "Amos Barton," and took the pen name "George Eliot" in order to prevent the discrimination (unfair treatment because of gender or race) that women of her era faced. After collecting her short stories in *Scenes of Clerical Life* (2 vols., 1858), Eliot published her first novel, *Adam Bede* (1859). The plot was drawn from a memory of Eliot's aunt, a Methodist preacher, whom she used as a model for a character in the novel.

Eliot's next novel, *The Mill on the Floss* (1860), shows even stronger traces of her childhood and youth in small-town and rural England. The final pages of the novel show the heroine reaching toward a "religion of humanity" (the belief in human beings and their individual moral and intellectual abilities to work toward a better society), which was Eliot's aim to instill in her readers.

In 1861 Eliot published a short novel, *Silas Marner*, which through use as a school textbook is her best-known work. This work

is about a man who has been alone for a long time and who has lost his faith in his fellow man. He learns to trust others again by learning to love a child who he meets through chance, but whom he eventually adopts as his own.

In 1860 and 1861 Eliot lived abroad in Florence, Italy, and studied Renaissance (a movement that began in fourteenth-century Italy, that spread throughout Europe until the seventeenth century, with an emphasis in arts and literature) history and culture. She wrote a historical novel, *Romola* (published 1862–1863), set in Renaissance Florence. This work has never won a place among the author's major achievements, yet it stands as a major example of historical fiction.

Eliot aimed at creating confidence in her readers by her honesty in describing human beings. In her next novel, *Felix Holt* (1866), she came as close as she ever did to setting up her fiction in order to convey her beliefs. In this work, however, it is not her moral but her political thought that is expressed as she addressed the social questions that were then disturbing England. The hero of the novel is a young reformer who carries Eliot's message to the working class. This message is that they could get themselves out of their miserable circumstances much more effectively by expecting more of themselves both morally and intellectually and not just through reform of the government or through union activities. In contrast to Holt, the conservative politician is shown to be part of the corrupt political process and a person who is dishonest with the working class people that he represents. The heroine of the novel supports this political lesson by choosing the genuine, but poor, reformer rather than the



George Eliot.

Courtesy of the National Portrait Gallery.

opportunist (a person who takes advantage of any situations for personal gain with no regard for right or wrong) of her own class.

Middlemarch

Eliot did not publish any novels for some years after *Felix Holt*, and it might have appeared that her creative thread was gone. After traveling in Spain in 1867, she produced a dramatic poem, *The Spanish Gipsy*, in the following year, but neither this poem nor the other poems of the period are as good as her nonpoetic writing.

Then in 1871 and 1872 Eliot published her masterpiece, *Middlemarch*, a broad understanding of human life. The main strand of its complex plot is the familiar Eliot tale of a girl's understanding of life. It tells of her awakening to the many complications involved in a person's life and that she has not used the true religion of God as a guide for how she should live her life. The social setting makes *Middlemarch* a major account of society at that time as well as a work of art. The title—drawn from the name of the fictional town in which most of the action occurs—and the subtitle, *A Study of Provincial Life*, suggest that the art of fiction here develops a grasp of the life of human communities, as well as that of individuals.

Eliot's last novel was *Daniel Deronda* (1874–1876). It is perhaps her least-read work, although recent critical attention has revealed its high value in at least one half of its plot, while raising still unanswered questions about its less successful half. The novel contrasts and interweaves two stories. One is a marriage for personal advantages by a young woman of sharp intelligence who discovers that she has given herself to a cheat. The other story is the discovery by a young British gentleman that he is of Jewish origin. This inspires in him to dedicate and commit his life to furthering the cause of the Jewish community to create a Zionist resettlement in Palestine. The moral relationship of these widely different situations and characters is one of the chief interests of the author, but although her intention is clear, her book and its message is not.

In 1880, after the death of Lewes, Eliot married a friend of long standing, John Walter Cross. She died in London on December

22, 1880, having gained the extreme respect and admiration from her peers and fellow novelists.

For More Information

Ashton, Rosemary. *George Eliot: A Life*. London: Penguin Books, 1997.

Hughes, Kathryn. *George Eliot: The Last Victorian*. New York: Farrar, Straus, Giroux, 1999.

Karl, Frederick R. *George Eliot, Voice of a Century: A Biography*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1995.

T. S. ELIOT

Born: September 26, 1888

St. Louis, Missouri

Died: January 4, 1965

London, England

American-born English author, poet, critic, playwright, editor, and publisher

T. S. Eliot, American-English author, was one of the most significant poets writing in English in the twentieth century, as well as one of the most influential critics, an interesting playwright, editor, and publisher.

Eliot's youth

On September 26, 1888, Thomas Stearns Eliot was born in St. Louis, Missouri, a member of the third generation of a New England family that had come to St. Louis in

1834. Eliot's grandfather, William Greenleaf Eliot, Unitarian minister and founder of schools, a university, and charities, was the family patriarch, or leader. While carrying on a tradition of public service, the Eliots never forgot their New England ties. T. S. Eliot claimed that he was a child of both the Southwest and New England. In Massachusetts he missed Missouri's dark river, cardinal birds, and lush vegetation. In Missouri he missed the fir trees, song sparrows, red granite shores, and blue sea of Massachusetts.

Eliot family

Henry Ware Eliot, the father of T. S. Eliot, became chairman of the board of a brick company and served the schools and charities his father had helped found, as well as others. He married a New Englander, Charlotte Champ. After having six children, she focused her energy on education and legal protection for the young. She also wrote a biography, some religious poems, and a dramatic poem (1926).

Eliot grew up within the family's tradition of service to religion, community, and education. Years later he declared, "Missouri and the Mississippi have made a deeper impression on me than any part of the world." The Eliots spent summers on Cape Ann, Massachusetts.

Education of a poet

In St. Louis young Eliot received a classical education privately and at Smith Academy, originally named Eliot Academy. He composed and read the valedictory (something that involves a farewell) poem for his graduation in 1905. After a year at Milton Academy in Massachusetts, he went to Har-



T. S. Eliot.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

vard University in 1906. Eliot was shy and independent and he made a good impression as a contributor and editor of the *Harvard Advocate*. He completed his bachelor of arts degree in three years.

Eliot's stay at Harvard to earn a master of arts in philosophy (the study of knowledge) was interrupted by a year at the Sorbonne (The University of Paris) in Paris, France. He returned to Harvard in 1911 but in 1914 he went overseas again on a Harvard scholarship to study in Germany. When World War I (1914–18; a war fought between the German-led Central powers and the Allies: England, the United States, and France, among

other nations) broke out, he transferred to Merton College, Oxford. Ezra Pound (1885–1972), the young American poet, discovered Eliot at Oxford. They shared a commitment to learning and poetry. After Oxford, Eliot decided to stay in England and in 1915 married Vivienne Haigh-Wood. He taught at Highgate Junior School for boys near London (1915–1916) and then worked for Lloyd's Bank. While teaching, he completed his dissertation (a writing on a subject that is required for a doctorate degree), *Knowledge and Experience in the Philosophy of F. H. Bradley*. The dissertation was accepted, but Eliot did not return to the United States to defend it and therefore did not receive his doctorate.

Early poetry

When the United States entered World War I in 1917, Eliot tried to join the U.S. Navy but was rejected for physical reasons. That year his first volume of poetry, *Prufrock and Other Observations*, appeared and almost immediately became the focus for discussion and debate. Eliot's writing style spoke to the confusion and bad feelings that World War I had created in European and American societies. This was most effective in the poem "The Love Song of J. Alfred Prufrock."

Critic and editor

Eliot served as literary editor of the *Egoist*, a feminist (in support of equality for women) magazine, from 1917 to 1919. The back pages of the *Egoist* were written by a series of young poet-editors, and here, with the aid of Ezra Pound, the new poetry and commentary was written. Eliot was also writing anonymous (a work where no name is

given to the creator) reviews for the *London Times* and publishing essays. In 1919 two of his most influential pieces appeared. "Tradition and the Individual Talent" and "Hamlet and His Problems." Some of his early critical essays were *The Sacred Wood* (1920), *Homage to John Dryden* (1924), *Selected Essays: 1917–1932* (1932), and *The Use of Poetry and the Use of Criticism* (1933).

The Waste Land

While recovering from exhaustion in 1921, Eliot wrote *The Waste Land*, one of the most influential and debated poems of the century. In *The Waste Land*, the weakening of society is compared with a shattered wasteland. The poem proposes solutions for recreating personal and caring communities through a variety of methods and with the joining of different religious beliefs.

Also in 1922 Eliot founded the *Criterion*, a small magazine that appeared until 1939. As author of *The Waste Land* and editor of the *Criterion*, Eliot assumed an important role in literature in America and in Great Britain. He left Lloyd's Bank in 1925 and joined Faber and Faber, Ltd., a publisher, eventually rising to a position of leadership there.

Religious and cultural views

In 1927 Eliot became an Anglo-Catholic and a British citizen. In *After Strange Gods* (1934) Eliot took the literary ideas of his "Tradition and the Individual Talent" and demonstrated how they could apply to society. He also declared that too many freethinking Jews would damage the kind of Christian culture he proposed. This work, along with *The Idea of a Christian Society* (1939) and *Notes toward a Definition of*

Culture (1948), indicated Eliot's stand against the pluralistic society (a society that allows freedom of religion) of most Western democracies.

Ash Wednesday (1930) is the title of this six-part poem that refers to the beginning of Lent. The poem focuses on a person who is isolated from God and who sets out to find Him. The poem shows the prayer and progress of this person. The tone of sincerity and passionate yearning, of anxiety and some joy, was new for Eliot.

In 1934 Eliot published *After Strange Gods* and also brought his religious and dramatic interests together in *The Rock*. This display combines narrative prose (a story that is told in common, nonpoetic, language) with poetic dialogue (poetry written as though the poet were speaking).

In 1935 *Murder in the Cathedral*, perhaps Eliot's best play, was produced at Canterbury Cathedral. It has to do with Archbishop Thomas Becket (1118–1170), who was assassinated (killed for political reasons) before the altar there in 1170. *The Family Reunion*, the first of Eliot's four professional plays, appeared in 1939. This was followed by *The Cocktail Party* (1940), *The Confidential Clerk* (1954), and *The Elder Statesman* (1959).

Four Quartets

In 1936 Eliot concluded his *Poems 1909–1935* with "Burnt Norton," the first of what became the *Four Quartets*. "Burnt Norton," in which Eliot makes use of his repeated rose-garden symbolism, grew out of a visit to a deserted Gloucestershire mansion. This poem brought about three others, each associated with a place. "East Coker" (1940) is set

in the village of Eliot's Massachusetts ancestors. The last two quartets appeared with the publication of *Four Quartets* (1943). The third, "The Dry Salvages," named for three small islands off the Massachusetts coast where Eliot vacationed in his youth; and the fourth, "Little Gidding," derives from a visit to the site of a religious community, where the British King Charles I (1600–1649) paused before he surrendered and went to his death. Each of the quartets is a separate whole that also is related to the others. The theme, developed differently, is the same in each: One may seek or wait in any place at any time, for God is in all places at all times.

Eliot, midway through his composition of *Four Quartets*, published *Old Possum's Book of Practical Cats* (1939). Here Eliot the fabulist (a writer of fables) appeared, and his humor and wit are demonstrated in this piece of work.

Honor and old age

In 1947 Eliot's first wife died. In 1948 he received the Nobel Prize and the British Order of Merit, and the list of his honors continued to grow. After the *Four Quartets*, he committed himself to the poetic drama with *On Poetry and Poets* (1957), and the editing of collections of his poetry and plays. In 1957 Eliot married his private secretary, Valerie Fischer, and remained married until his death on January 4, 1965, in London. His ashes were placed in St. Michael's Church, East Coker, his ancestral village, on April 17, 1965.

Many poets and artists paid final tribute to T. S. Eliot, including Ezra Pound: "A grand poet and brotherly friend." A committed Christian in an important age, Eliot tried to restore the religious roots of European and

American culture. His career recalls the flexible writer of the eighteenth century.

For More Information

Eliot, T. S. *The Letters of T. S. Eliot*. Edited by Valerie Eliot. San Diego, CA: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1988.

Gordon, Lyndall. *T. S. Eliot: An Imperfect Life*. New York: Norton, 1999.

Howarth, Herbert. *Notes on Some Figures behind T. S. Eliot*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1964.

Kenner, Hugh. *The Invisible Poet: T. S. Eliot*. New York: McDowell, Obolensky, 1959.

ELIZABETH I

Born: September 7, 1533

Greenwich, England

Died: March 24, 1603

Surrey, England

English queen

Elizabeth I was queen of England and Ireland from 1558 to 1603. She preserved stability in a nation torn by political and religious tension and led the country during a time of great exploration and achievement.

Ruled by her siblings

Born in Greenwich, England, on September 7, 1533, Elizabeth I was the daughter of Henry VIII and his second wife, Anne Boleyn. In May 1536, her mother was beheaded to clear the way for Henry to marry Jane Sey-

mour. Parliament declared that the throne would pass to any children born from this marriage, rather than to Elizabeth or her older sister Mary. Jane did produce a son, Edward, but Elizabeth continued to be brought up in the royal household. She received a good education and was an excellent student, especially in languages (she learned Latin, French, and Italian) and music.

Elizabeth barely survived the short reign of her brother, Edward VI (1537–1553). All of the people in her household were arrested, and she was a prisoner in her own home. In this period she also experienced ill health but pursued her studies under her tutor, Roger Ascham. In 1553, following the death of Edward VI, her sister Mary I (1516–1558) came to the throne with the intention of leading the country back to the Catholic faith. Under Edward, the Protestants had become the major religious group in the country. They opposed many decisions made by the pope (the leader of the Catholic Church) and placed less emphasis on ceremonies than Catholics did. After a Protestant attempt to overthrow Mary, Elizabeth was imprisoned, although she had played no part in the plan. She was held for two months before being released, but Mary continued to have her people keep an eye on Elizabeth.

The new queen

In November 1558, Mary died, and Elizabeth took over the throne. At the age of twenty-five, Elizabeth was a tall and well-poised woman. What she lacked in feminine warmth, she made up for in the wisdom she had gained from a difficult and unhappy youth. One of her first actions as queen was to appoint Sir William Cecil (1520–1598;

later Lord Burghley) as her chief secretary. Cecil was to remain her closest adviser; like Elizabeth, he was politically cautious. They both knew that the key to England's success lay in balancing the two great continental powers, France and Spain, against each other, so that neither could bring its full force against England.

When Elizabeth took the throne, conditions in England were very bad. The country was not strong enough, either in men or money, to oppose either France or Spain. By the Treaty of Edinburgh in 1560, though, Elizabeth was able to decrease French control of Scotland, which helped the English. She also worked to improve the country from within. Industry and trade were expanded, and there was an increase in the development of natural resources. This was the beginning of what came to be known as the Elizabethan Age, a time of great adventure and exploration and the creation of much famous literature.

Since Elizabeth was unmarried, many were interested in the question of the succession (who would be next in line for the throne). She had a large number of suitors, but as the years passed it became clear that she would not marry and take the chance of losing her power. Many praised Elizabeth for her skillful handling of her courtships. Her hand in marriage was an important tool in foreign relations. By refusing to marry, Elizabeth could further her general policy of balancing the continental powers. Yet, this was a very dangerous policy. Had Elizabeth died, as she nearly did early in her reign, or had any one of the many assassination plots against her succeeded, the country would have been plunged into chaos trying to decide who would take over for her.

Religious settlement

After the increase in Protestantism under Edward VI and the Catholic reaction under Mary, the question of the nature of the Church needed to be settled immediately. The Acts of Unity and Supremacy of 1559 provided an answer. Protestantism was established as the national faith, and Elizabeth enforced it as the supreme governor of the Church of England. A number of English people remained Catholic. The Church of England was attacked by both Catholics and Puritans (Protestants who wanted to make the church "pure" by throwing out Catholic policies).

Because of the fear that a Catholic, such as Elizabeth's cousin, Mary, Queen of Scots (1542–1587), would rise against the government, Parliament urged Elizabeth to use harsh measures to control the Catholic opposition. For the most part the queen resisted these pressures. While laws relating to the Catholics did become more strict over time, the queen preferred to promote a feeling of tolerance that would allow her to retain the patriotic loyalty of many of the English Catholics.

The Puritans continued to wage a long battle in the Church, in Parliament, and in the country at large to make the religious settlement more strict. Elizabeth found that she could control Parliament through the force of her own personality. It was, however, some time before she could control the Church and the countryside as effectively. It was only with the promotion of John Whitgift to the post of archbishop of Canterbury that she found her most effective weapon against the Puritans. With apparent royal support but some criticism from Burghley, Whitgift was able to use the Church courts to keep the Puritans in line. By the later years of Elizabeth's reign, the Puritan movement was much weaker than it had been, mainly because many of its prominent supporters had died.

Foreign relations

In the 1580s Spain emerged as the chief threat to England. Elizabeth found herself under increasing pressure from Protestants to take a firm stand against Catholic Spain. After waiting until England's naval power could be built up, she began to approve attacks on Spanish ships. Her decision in 1585 to send a force under the Earl of Leicester (c. 1532–1588) to intervene on behalf of the

Netherlands in its revolt against Spain meant the temporary end of her planned policy of balance and peace. The struggle against Spain ended with the defeat of the Spanish Armada in 1588. The victory, however, owed as much to luck and Spanish mistakes as it did to English skill.

Elizabeth's ability to speak many languages came in handy when dealing with representatives of foreign governments. She also showed a considerable ability to rally the people around her. At Tilbury, for instance, when the English army gathered in preparation for an attack on Spain, the queen appeared to deliver one of her most stirring speeches: "I am come amongst you . . . to live and die amongst you all. . . . I know I have the body but of a weak and feeble woman, but I have the heart and stomach of a king and of a King of England too."

Difficulties and decline

In some ways, the defeat of the Spanish Armada marked the high point of Elizabeth's reign; the time that followed has been referred to as "the darker years." The Spanish threat never really went away, and further English military operations suffered from poor leadership and low funds. Catholic plots to oust Elizabeth continued, and one such attempt led to the execution of Mary, Queen of Scots, in 1587. The latter years of Elizabeth's reign were also marked by increasing difficulties in Ireland. The English had never effectively controlled Ireland, and under Elizabeth the situation became worse.

The latter years of Elizabeth's reign were also a time when severe tensions emerged in domestic politics. The finances of the Crown, exhausted by war since the 1580s, were in bad

shape. The economic plight of the country as a whole was not much better. Moreover, problems in the court seemed to increase in the closing stages of her reign, as corruption (unlawful activity) and struggling for patronage (the power to make appointments to government jobs for political advantage) became common. For all the greatness of her reign—one that had witnessed the naval feats of Sir Francis Drake (c. 1541–1596) and Sir John Hawkins (1532–1595), and the literary accomplishments of Sir Philip Sidney (1554–1586), Edmund Spenser (c. 1552–1599), William Shakespeare (1564–1616), and Christopher Marlowe (1564–1593)—Elizabeth left behind quite a mess for her successor, James VI (1566–1625) of Scotland, the son of Mary, Queen of Scots. On March 24, 1603, Elizabeth died. According to one account, she “departed this life, mildly like a lamb, easily like a ripe apple from the tree.”

For More Information

Hibbert, Christopher. *The Virgin Queen: The Personal History of Elizabeth I*. New York: Viking Penguin, 1990.

Thomas, Jane Resh. *Behind the Mask: The Life of Elizabeth I*. New York: Clarion Books, 1998.

Weir, Alison. *The Life of Elizabeth I*. New York: Ballantine, 1997.

ELIZABETH II

Born: April 21, 1926

London, England

English queen

Elizabeth II became queen of the United Kingdom upon the death of her father, George VI (1895–1952), in 1952. A popular queen, she is respected for her knowledge of and participation in state affairs. In addition, Elizabeth II has started new trends toward modernization and openness in the royal family. Her efforts have not been unsuccessful.

Early life

Elizabeth II was born on April 21, 1926, in London, England, the oldest child of the Duke of York and his wife, Elizabeth. Her father became King George VI of Great Britain and Ireland in 1936 when his older brother Edward VIII (1894–1972) gave up the throne. Along with her younger sister, Margaret, Elizabeth was educated at home by private tutors. She particularly liked history, languages, and music. She later took an interest in national affairs. As a teenager Elizabeth began to make her first public appearances. She married Philip Mountbatten in November 1947, and they had four children—Prince Charles (1948–), Princess Anne (1950–), Prince Andrew (1960–), and Prince Edward (1964–).

The new queen

After Elizabeth became queen in 1952, she tried in her own way to make the British monarchy more modern and more sensitive to the public. She began hosting informal luncheons at Buckingham Palace (the London residence of the queen) to which a variety of people from fields such as industry, theater, and sports were invited. The attendees of her garden parties became increasingly diverse. She showed interest and skill in

use of the broadcast media, notably in her annual Christmas television messages, in royally approved documentaries, and in television broadcasts of events such as Prince Charles's naming ceremony as Prince of Wales and royal weddings.

Perhaps the most popular of Elizabeth's attempts was the "walkabout," in which she met, shook hands, and chatted with ordinary people in the crowds that gathered around her. These strolls revealed her belief that "I have to be seen to be believed."

A popular traveler

At least part of Elizabeth's popularity could be attributed to her worldwide travels. Her engaging and gracious attitude during these travels contributed to the warmth and enthusiasm of the receptions that greeted her. Between 1970 and 1985 she had an amazingly full schedule. She visited France in the spring of 1972, attended the Commonwealth Conference in Ottawa in 1973, and took part in the United States celebrations of the two-hundredth anniversary of American independence from England. She then headed north to Montreal to open the 1976 Summer Olympics. She also traveled some fifty-six thousand miles as part of her 1977 Silver Jubilee celebrations, which marked her twenty-fifth year as queen. In 1979 she traveled to Kuwait, Bahrain, Saudi Arabia, Qatar, the United Arab Emirates, and Oman.

In April 1982 Elizabeth made an important visit to Ottawa, Canada, where she proclaimed the New Canadian constitution, which cut the last legal links between the United Kingdom and Canada. In March 1984 she visited Jamaica, Grand Cayman Island, Mexico, California, and British Columbia,

Canada. While in California, her first trip to the west coast of North America, she made some twenty public appearances, including a visit with Prince Philip to President Ronald Reagan's (1911–) Santa Barbara ranch and to Yosemite National Park. She went to North America again in 1984, visiting Canada for the fourteenth time and afterward the United States.

Happy events

Amid all the travels, Elizabeth celebrated many joyous personal events. On November 20, 1972, the queen and Prince Philip celebrated their twenty-fifth wedding anniversary. One hundred couples from all over Britain who had the same anniversary date were invited to share in the occasion. On November 14, 1973, Princess Anne married Mark Philips and later had two children: Peter and Zara. Prince Charles married Lady Diana Spencer on July 29, 1981, and had two sons, Prince William and Prince Henry. Prince Andrew (made Duke of York) married Sarah Ferguson on July 23, 1986, and they had two daughters, Princess Beatrice and Princess Eugenie.

Perhaps the happiest event was Elizabeth's Silver Jubilee in 1977. Countless sports events, festivals, carnivals, races, concerts, commemorative stamps, and other activities marked an outpouring of devotion to the queen and to the royal family as an institution. On May 4, 1977, both Houses of Parliament presented loyal addresses to Elizabeth II in Westminster Hall. At St. Paul's Cathedral in June the queen and her family celebrated a Thanksgiving service. The queen indicated her concern for her subjects by voicing her desire that the Silver Jubilee year be a special

time “for people who find themselves the victims of human conflict.” She traveled widely to meet her subjects during the year, and established the Silver Jubilee Trust Fund, headed by the Prince of Wales, which was designed “to help the young to help others.”

Elizabeth Longford, one of Queen Elizabeth’s biographers, has suggested that it was only after the jubilee, when she was able to see the loyalty and respect her subjects demonstrated, that she realized her possibilities as a monarch. She became more confident, more open, and more ready to reveal her sense of humor, strong common sense, great energy, and personal character.

Troubles on the horizon

However, in the late 1980s, Elizabeth grew concerned over the state and the future of the royal family. The British press increasingly reported the problems in her children’s marriages. It appeared to many that Prince Charles was not interested in succeeding to the throne. There were rumors that Elizabeth II would hand over the throne to her grandson, Prince William.

Her troubles seemed to peak in 1992, and she herself called it a horrible year. The twenty-year marriage of Princess Anne ended in divorce. Prince Charles and Prince Andrew officially separated from their wives. On the night of November 20, fire badly damaged a good section of Windsor Castle (one of Queen Elizabeth’s official residences). A public outcry immediately arose when it was announced that the castle’s restoration would be paid for with taxpayers’ money. The British people felt that the queen, who enjoyed a tax-exempt (not taxed) income in the millions, should pay for the restoration. Two days later, Buck-



Elizabeth II.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

ingham Palace announced that the queen and her family would no longer be exempt from taxation. This announcement was seen as a gesture of political smarts and goodwill. The year ended on a happier note, as Princess Anne remarried on December 12.

In 1995 Elizabeth wrote a letter to Prince Charles and Princess Diana urging them to divorce, prompted by separate television interviews where they discussed their unhappy fourteen-year marriage. They were divorced in 1996, as were Prince Andrew and Sarah Ferguson. Despite these very public family problems, Elizabeth generally remained popular.

Her resolve was tested, however, after the August 1997 death of her former daughter-in-law, Princess Diana. Some Britons lashed out at the queen for “being too bound up by protocol [the expected conduct of a king or queen].” Surprised by the criticism, she broke tradition and addressed the nation in a live broadcast the day before the funeral, paying tribute to Diana. This gesture was seen as significant, as the queen usually addressed the nation only on Christmas Day. This was only the second exception to that rule in her forty-five-year reign.

An energetic queen

In spite of problems and public stresses, Elizabeth refuses to slow down. She continues to enjoy time with her family, country life, horse-breeding, and horse-racing.

Likewise, Elizabeth continues to practice her royal duties. The queen, as head of state, maintains close contact with the prime minister, with whom she meets weekly. She also receives important foreign office telegrams and a daily summary of events in Parliament. She hosts both British and foreign leaders and receives other notable visitors from overseas. Elizabeth also heads the navy, army, and air force of Great Britain. In addition, she succeeded her father as colonel in chief of all the Guards Regiments and the Corps of Royal Engineers, as well as captain-general of the Royal Regiment of Artillery and the Honorable Artillery Company. She is president or financial supporter of more than seven hundred organizations. In 1998 some of her many activities included officially opening the new British Library in London, unveiling a statue of former Prime Minister Winston Churchill (1874–1965) in Paris, meeting with former

Far East prisoners of war, and conducting state visits to Brunei and Malaysia.

The year 2002 marked the fiftieth anniversary of Elizabeth II’s rise to the throne. On February 6 in that year, she delivered her Golden Jubilee message to the United Kingdom. Elizabeth II is only the fifth monarch to celebrate a Golden Jubilee.

For More Information

Campbell, Judith. *Queen Elizabeth*. New York: Crown Publishers, 1979.

Lacey, Robert. *Monarch: The Life and Reign of Elizabeth II*. New York: Free Press, 2002.

Longford, Elizabeth. *The Queen: The Life of Elizabeth II*. New York: Knopf, 1983.

Shawcross, William. *Queen and Country: The Fifty-Year Reign of Elizabeth II*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 2002.

DUKE ELLINGTON

Born: April 29, 1899

Washington, D.C.

Died: May 24, 1974

New York, New York

*African American composer, band leader,
and pianist*

Duke Ellington is considered by many to be one of America’s most brilliant jazz composers (writers of music) of the twentieth century. Ellington’s

classics include “Don’t Get Around Much Anymore,” “Mood Indigo,” and “I Let a Song Get Out of My Head.”

Early life and career

On April 29, 1899, Edward Kennedy Ellington was born in Washington, D.C., to James Edward and Daisy Ellington. With his father, a Methodist, and his mother, a Baptist, Ellington’s upbringing had strong religious influences. An artistic child, Ellington passed up an art scholarship to study at the Pratt Institute in Brooklyn, New York, in order to devote his time to his first love: music, specifically the piano. By the age of fourteen, Ellington had written his first two pieces, “Soda Fountain Rag” and “What You Gonna Do When the Bed Breaks Down?” During this time Ellington gained his nickname, “Duke,” after a friend recommended that Ellington should have some sort of title.

He divided his studies between music and commercial art, and by 1918 established a reputation as a bandleader and agent. In 1923 he went to New York City and soon became a successful bandleader. In 1927 he secured an important engagement at the Cotton Club in Harlem, a section of New York City, and remained there (aside from occasional tours) until 1932.

Ellington’s band made its first European trip in 1932. After World War II (1939–45), the band toured Europe regularly, with short trips to South America, the Far East, and Australia. One peak period for the band was from 1939 to 1942, when many critics considered its performances superior to any other jazz ensemble (group).



Duke Ellington.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Duke’s music

As a composer Ellington was responsible for numerous works that achieved popular success, some written with his band members and with his co-arranger Billy Strayhorn. The Duke’s most significant music was written specifically for his own band and soloists. Always sensitive to the nuances (small variations) of tone of his soloists (single performers), Ellington wrote features for individual sidemen and used his knowledge of their characteristic sounds when composing other works. His arrangements achieved a remarkable blend of individual and ensemble contributions. However, because most of his works

were written for his own band, interpretations by others have rarely been satisfactory.

With *Creole Rhapsody* (1931) and *Reminiscing in Tempo* (1935) Ellington was the first jazz composer to break the three-minute time limitation of the 78-rpm record. After the 1940s he concentrated more on longer works, including several suites (arrangements of music) built around a central theme, frequently an aspect of African American life. Always a fine orchestral pianist, with a style influenced by the Harlem stylists of the 1920s, Ellington remained in the background on most of his early recordings. After the 1950s he emerged as a highly imaginative piano soloist.

Duke's legacy

Ellington was the recipient of numerous Grammy Awards throughout his career, and in 1959 he was awarded the Springarn Medal from the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP). He was nominated for the Pulitzer Prize in 1964. The city of New York gave him a prize and Yale University awarded him a doctor of music degree in 1967; Morgan State and Washington universities also gave him honorary degrees that year. On his seventieth birthday Ellington was honored by President Richard Nixon (1913–1994) at a White House ceremony and was given the Medal of Freedom. In 1970 he was elected to the National Institute of Arts and Letters.

Ellington continued to compose and perform until his death from lung cancer on May 24, 1974, in New York City. His band, headed by his son Mercer, survived him, but as Phyl Garland of *Ebony* magazine writes, the elder Ellington will always be remem-

bered for “the daring innovations that came to mark his music—the strange modulations (changing from one key to another) built upon lush melodies that ramble into unexpected places, the unorthodox (untraditional) construction of songs. . . .”

Ellington's legacy is that he remains one of the greatest talents in all of jazz, a remarkable feat considering the history of jazz is packed with legendary names. His influence over musicians is as important today as it was during Ellington's time.

For More Information

Ellington, Edward Kennedy. *Music is My Mistress*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1973, revised edition 1989.

Hasse, John Edward. *Beyond Category: The Life and Genius of Duke Ellington*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1993.

Lawrence, A. H. *Duke Ellington and His World: A Biography*. New York: Schirmer Books, 1999.

Nicholson, Stuart. *Reminiscing in Tempo: A Portrait of Duke Ellington*. Boston: Northeastern University Press, 1999.

RALPH WALDO EMERSON

Born: May 25, 1803

Boston, Massachusetts

Died: April 27, 1882

Concord, Massachusetts

American author, minister, and philosopher

Ralph Waldo Emerson was one of the most thought-provoking American cultural leaders of the mid-nineteenth century. He represented a minority of Americans with his unconventional ideas and actions, but by the end of his life many considered him to be a wise person.

Early life

Ralph Waldo Emerson was born in Boston, Massachusetts, on May 25, 1803, to a fairly well-known New England family. His father was an important Boston minister. Young Emerson was only eight, however, when his father died and left the family to face hard times. His mother ran a boarding-house to support the family, which consisted of six children. The poverty in which the Emerson family lived did not prevent his mother from sending the promising boy to the Boston Latin School, where he received the best education of his time. In 1817, at age fourteen, he entered Harvard College. As a student, he studied more and relaxed less than some of his classmates. He won several minor prizes for his writing. When he was seventeen, he started keeping a journal and continued it for over half a century.

Unitarian minister

Emerson was slow in finding himself. After graduation from Harvard in 1821, he took a job as a teacher. Gradually he moved toward the ministry. He studied at the Harvard Divinity School, meanwhile continuing his journal and other writings. In 1826 he began his career as a Unitarian minister. Emerson received several offers before an unusually attractive one presented itself: a position as the junior pastor at Boston's noted

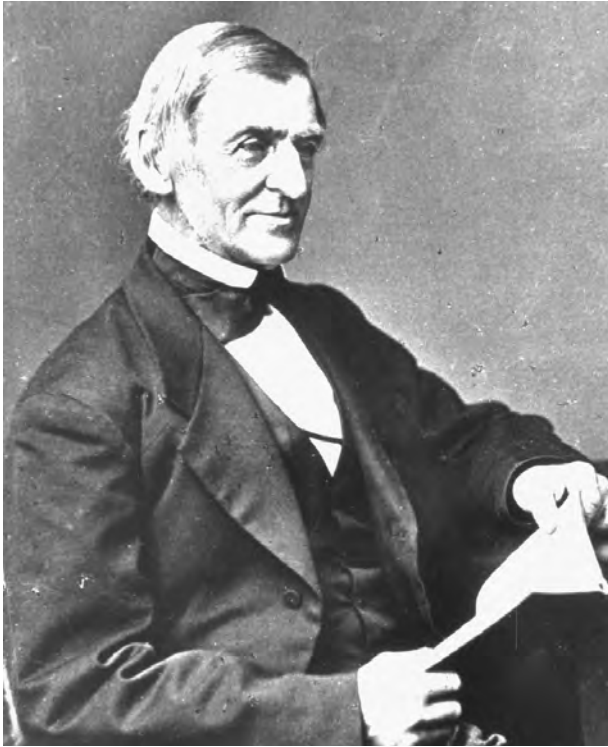
Second Church, with the promise that he would quickly become the senior pastor. His reputation spread swiftly. Soon he was chosen chaplain (a clergyman who carries out religious services for institutions) of the Massachusetts Senate, and he was elected to the Boston School Committee.

Emerson's personal life flowered even more than his professional one, as he fell deeply in love, for the only time in his life, with a charming New Hampshire girl named Ellen Tucker. Their wedding, in September 1829, marked the start of a wonderful marriage. But it was all too short, for she died a year and a half later, leaving Emerson alone. Though he tried to find comfort in his religion, he was unsuccessful. As a result he developed religious doubts. In September 1832 he resigned his pastorate. According to his farewell sermon, he could no longer believe in celebrating Holy Communion.

Emerson's decision to leave the ministry was more difficult than he thought, because it left him with no other work to do. After months of struggling and even sickness, he scraped together enough money to take a ten-month tour of Europe.

Professional lecturer

The times were on Emerson's side, for he found on his return to America that a new tradition was emerging that held a unique promise for him. This was the lyceum, a system of lecturing that started in the late 1820s, established itself in the 1830s, and rose to great popularity during the next two decades. The local lecture clubs that sprang up discovered that they had to pay for the best lecturers, and from this he earned a modest salary. After a few seasons Emerson organized his own lecture



Ralph Waldo Emerson.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

courses in addition to his lyceum lectures. His lectures developed into essays and books, and he began publishing these in the early 1840s.

Emerson's creed

Emerson spoke out against materialism (the belief that material or physical things—no spiritual—are the most important), formal religion, and slavery. Emerson spoke of slavery in the context of the Fugitive Slave Law (1850), saying, in one of his rare bursts of obscenity (foul language), “I will not obey it, by God.”

Emerson, however, was not merely against certain things; he both preached and

modeled a positive attitude. He became America's leading transcendentalist (a person who believes that reality is discovered through thought and not experience). That is, he believed in a reality and a knowledge that rose above the everyday reality to which Americans were accustomed. He believed in the honesty of the person. He believed in a spiritual universe ruled by a spiritual Oversoul (the basis of all spiritual existence), with which each individual soul should try to connect. Touchingly enough, he believed in America. Though he ranked as his country's most searching critic, he helped as much as anyone to establish the “American identity.” He not only called out for a genuinely American literature, but he also helped begin it through his own writings. In addition, he supported the cause of American music and American art. His grand purpose, as a matter of fact, was to assist in the creation of a native American national culture.

Publishing his ideas

Emerson's first two books were brilliant. He had published a pamphlet, *Nature*, in 1836. He later issued two volumes of essays for a broader public, however, *Essays, First Series*, in 1841 and *Essays, Second Series*, in 1844. Their subjects were man, nature, and God. In such pieces as “Self-reliance,” “Spiritual Laws,” “Nature,” “The Poet,” and “The Over-soul,” Emerson explained the inborn goodness of man, the joys of nature and their spiritual significance, and a universal god (a god that exists everywhere and belongs to all). The tone of the essays was positive, but Emerson did not neglect the realities of life. In such essays as “Compensation” and “Experience,” he tried to suggest how to deal with human losses and failings.

Emerson's next book, after the second series of essays, was a volume of his poems. After that came more than one remarkable volume of text. In *Representative Men: Seven Lectures* (1850) Emerson considered the similarities of great men, devoting individual essays to such figures as Plato (c. 427–c. 347 B.C.E.), William Shakespeare (1564–1616), and Johann Wolfgang von Goethe (1749–1832). *English Traits* (1856) resulted from an extended visit to Great Britain.

Emerson married his second wife, Lydia Jackson of Plymouth, in 1835. They had four children, one of whom, Waldo, died when he was a little boy; the others outlived their famous father. After leaving his pastorate in Boston, Massachusetts, he moved to nearby Concord, where he stayed for the rest of his life.

Emerson's public life also expanded. During the 1850s he was drawn deeply into the struggle against slavery. Though he found some of the abolitionists (people who worked to end slavery) almost as distasteful as the slaveholders, he knew where his place had to be. Emerson became a Republican, voting for Abraham Lincoln (1809–1965).

Last years

After the Civil War (1861–65; a war between the proslavery Southern states and the antislavery Northern states), Emerson continued to lecture and write. Though he had nothing really new to say anymore, audiences continued to crowd his lectures and many readers bought his books. The best of the final books were *Society and Solitude* (1870) and *Letters and Social Aims* (1876). He was losing his memory, however, and needed more and more help from others, especially

his daughter Ellen. He was nearly seventy-nine when he died on April 27, 1882.

America mourned Emerson's passing, as did much of the rest of the Western world (the United States and European countries). In the general judgment, he had been both a great writer and a great man. Certainly he had been America's leading essayist for half a century. And he had been not only one of the most wise but one of the most sincere of men. He had shown his countrymen the possibilities of the human spirit, and he had done so without a trace of arrogance.

For More Information

Emerson, Ralph Waldo. *The Selected Letters of Ralph Waldo Emerson*. Edited by Joel Myerson. New York: Columbia University Press, 1997.

Geldard, Richard G. *The Spiritual Teachings of Ralph Waldo Emerson*. Great Barrington, MA: Lindisfarne Books, 2001.

Richardson, Robert D. *Emerson: The Mind on Fire*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1995.

Rusk, Ralph L. *The Life of Ralph Waldo Emerson*. New York: C. Scribner's Sons, 1949.

DESIDERIUS ERASMUS

Born: October 27, 1466

Rotterdam, Netherlands

Died: July 12, 1536

Basel, Switzerland

Dutch scholar and priest

The Dutch scholar Erasmus was the dominant figure of the early sixteenth-century humanist movement (a movement during the Renaissance period devoted to human welfare). The intellectual middleman (one who negotiates) during the last years of Christian unity, he remains one of European culture's most controversial figures.

Early years

Desiderius Erasmus was born in Rotterdam, Netherlands, probably on October 27, 1466, the second son of a priest, Roger Gerard, and Margaret, a physician's daughter. His parents were unmarried at the time of his birth. School life shaped Erasmus from his fifth year onward. His parents enrolled him and his brother at a school in Deventer with the Brethren of the Common Life from 1475 to 1484. Around 1484 his parents died of the plague (a highly contagious disease that results in the deaths of large numbers of people) and their appointed guardians sent the boys to another, more conservative school also run by the Brethren for three more years. From this religious community, Erasmus was educated in classical Latin and developed an appreciation of Christianity beyond its traditional basis.

From Steyn to Cambridge

Erasmus entered the Augustinian monastery (a house of monks who have taken vows to dedicate their lives to religion) at Steyn in 1487 and took monastic vows in 1488; he was ordained (officially installed in a church position) a priest in 1492. Erasmus found Steyn crude and rustic. His intellectual abilities offered the first step out, when the bishop of Cambrai employed Erasmus as his

secretary in 1493 and rewarded his work with a salary for study in Paris, France, in 1495.

Paris provided a different environment for Erasmus. He moved in scholarly circles, writing poetry and experimenting with styles of educational writing that later became the publications *Adagia* and *Colloquia*. He sought students and patrons (people who give financial support to artists or writers) until 1499, when a student took him to England.

The visit to England was life changing for Erasmus. English humanists were studying Scripture (Biblical writings) and the early Church leaders, and working toward reform of the Catholic Church and the educational process that served it. Friendships with John Colet (c. 1467–1519), Sir Thomas More (c. 1477–1535), and others inspired Erasmus's interest in religious studies and turned him to the Greek language as the key for his research. *Enchiridion militis Christiani* (Handbook of the Militant Christian, published 1503, though begun a decade before) outlined conduct that would further man's spiritual growth and bring about the moral principles and godliness of what Erasmus's group called the "philosophy of Christ."

In 1506 Erasmus traveled to Italy. He anonymously (without giving a name or an identity) published *Julius exclusus* (he never admitted authorship), in which St. Peter bars Julius (then Pope Julius II [1443–1513] who was waging war with Bologna in Italy) from heaven and harshly speaks against his wars and treasure. Erasmus polished his Greek in Italy and formed a relationship with the printing house of Aldus Manutius in Venice, the first link to publishing his writings that secured his financial and professional independence.

Back in England by 1509, disappointed with the Church's wars and its clergy's weaknesses, Erasmus wrote *Encomium moriae* (The Praise of Folly), a commentary of the obstacles restricting the fulfillment of Christ's teaching. Though not formally released from monastic vows until 1517, Erasmus was now freed of Steyn by his mounting reputation. He worked as a professor at Cambridge (1511–1514) and settled into the occupation for which his study and travel had prepared him.

Major publications

Erasmus's *Novum instrumentum*, a heavily explained edition of the New Testament placing texts in Greek and revised Latin side by side, appeared in 1516. It was a turning point for scholars and reformers that brought educated Europeans closer to Erasmus's early works, and paved the way for the literary and educational classics of the Christian humanist society.

Erasmus then returned to Europe to continue his efforts and resume the circulation of his works. Froben published his nine-volume edition of St. Jerome in 1516 and in the next two decades issued Erasmus's extensive editions of early Christian authors, including St. Cyprian (1520), St. Ambrose (1527), and St. Augustine (1529); he also circulated critical writings and essays on immortality and revised editions of the literary works.

Another type of writing by Erasmus's appeared in 1516, while he briefly served the future emperor Charles V (1500–1558) as councilor (a person who gives advice). He prepared a guide for educating princes to rule justly, *Institutio principis Christiani*, and in 1517 composed *Querela pacis* (The Com-



Desiderius Erasmus.

plaint of Peace), speaking against war as an instrument of oppression (the act of keeping down, or suppressing, by forceful authority) and warning rulers to fulfill their obligation to preserve Christian harmony. Erasmus thus demonstrated his sensitivity to Europe's approaching split in the Christian Church.

Erasmus and Reformation Europe

Erasmus's influence could not accomplish the vision of Christian renovation expressed in his New Testament dedication and preface, which urged Pope Leo X (1457–1521) to make Rome the center of reform and to make Christ's words available to every commoner who wished to read it. Following Martin

Luther's (1483–1546) lead, many intellectuals, impatient for action, used publications and speaking platforms to move Europe's masses as Erasmus never had. The Erasmians's style of persuasion was replaced by simpler, informal commentaries on theology (the study of God and the Christian religion), the Sacraments, and Church structure, sometimes linked with social and political issues.

Erasmus's eventual response, after an important exchange with Luther in 1524 and 1525, about the role of human will in salvation to which he contributed *De libero arbitrio* (On the Freedom of the Will), was a gradual separation from the theologians who held a different opinion and their wealthy sponsors.

Erasmus died on July 12, 1536. The Catholic Church, which he never left, rejected some of Erasmus's work for its critical attitude and moderation against those who held different beliefs, while opinion based on Protestant, authoritative viewpoints has judged him harshly. But there is a rebirth of interest in, and sympathy for, Erasmus and his belief that patience and logical reasoning must be the controlling factor through conflicting times.

For More Information

Bainton, Roland H. *Erasmus of Christendom*. New York: Scribner, 1969.

Dolan, John P. *The Essential Erasmus*. New York: New American Library, 1964.

Erasmus, Desiderius. *The Adages of Erasmus*. Edited by William Barker. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 2001.

Popkin, Richard Henry. *The History of Skepticism From Erasmus to Spinoza*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1979.

Born: c. 335 B.C.E.

Greece

Died: c. 270 B.C.E.

Alexandria, Egypt

Greek mathematician

The Greek mathematician (math expert) Euclid wrote the *Elements*, a thirteen-volume set of textbooks of geometry (the study of points, lines, angles, and surfaces)—the oldest major mathematical work existing in the Western world.

Unknown background

Almost nothing is known of Euclid personally. It is not even known for certain whether he was really a creative mathematician or was simply good at collecting and editing the work of others. Most of the information about Euclid comes from Proclus (411–485 C.E.), a fifth-century Greek scholar. Some believed Euclid was the son of a Greek man who was born in Tyre and lived in Damascus. His mathematical education may have been obtained from students of Plato (c. 427 B.C.E.–347 B.C.E.) in Athens, Greece, since most of the earlier mathematicians upon whose work the *Elements* is based had studied and taught there.

The Elements

No earlier writings similar to the *Elements* have survived. One reason is that the *Elements* expanded on all previous writings of this type, so keeping any earlier texts around was thought to be unnecessary. For example, about 600 B.C.E. the Greek mathematician

Thales (c. 625–c. 546 B.C.E.) is said to have discovered a number of theorems (statements that can be demonstrated or proved) that appear in the *Elements*. Early mathematics dealt only with concrete problems, such as determining areas and volumes. By Euclid's time, mathematics had become more of an intellectual occupation for philosophers (thinkers, or seekers of wisdom) rather than for only scientists.

The *Elements* consists of thirteen books. Each book contains a number of theorems, from about ten to one hundred, which follow a series of definitions. The usual elementary course in Euclidean geometry is based on “Book I.” “Book V” is one of the finest works in Greek mathematics, a masterful description of the theory of proportions (the relation of one part to another part or the sum of all parts) originally discovered by Eudoxus. “Book VI” applies the statements of “Book V” to the figures of plane geometry (the study of flat surfaces and the relationships of figures lying within the surfaces). In “Book VII” a prime number is defined as that which is measured by a unit alone (a prime number can be divided only by itself and the number 1). “Book IX” contains Euclid's proof that there are infinitely many prime numbers, which is still used in current algebra textbooks.

The *Elements* were translated into Latin and Arabic, but it was not until the first printed edition, published in 1482, that they became important in European education. The first complete English version was printed in 1570. It was during the most active mathematical period in England, about 1700, that Greek mathematics was studied most closely. Euclid's writings were used by



Euclid.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

all major mathematicians, including Isaac Newton (1642–1727). The growing importance of the sciences and mathematics in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries helped Euclid's ideas keep their influence in schools and universities throughout the Western (having to do with nations of Europe and America) world.

Euclid's other works

Some of Euclid's other works are known only because other writers have mentioned them. The book *Data* discusses plane geometry and contains propositions (problems to be demonstrated) in which certain data are

given about a figure and from which other data can be figured out. Euclid's *On Division*, also dealing with plane geometry, is concerned with more general problems of division. A work by Euclid that has survived is *Phaenomena*. This is what today would be called applied mathematics, concerning the geometry of spheres for use in astronomy.

Another surviving work, the *Optics*, corrects the belief held at the time that the sun and other heavenly bodies are actually the size they appear to be to the eye. This work discusses the relationship between what the eye sees of an object and what the object actually is. For example, the eye always sees less than half of a sphere, and as the observer moves closer to the sphere, the part of it that is seen is decreased, although it appears larger.

Another lost work is the *Porisms*. A porism is somewhere between a theorem and a problem; that is, rather than something to be proved or something to be constructed, a porism is concerned with bringing out another feature of something that is already there. To find the center of a circle or to find the greatest common divisor of two numbers are examples of porisms. This work appears to have been more advanced than the *Elements*, and perhaps if it still existed it would give Euclid a higher place in the history of mathematics.

For More Information

- Artmann, Benno. *Euclid: The Creation of Mathematics*. New York: Springer, 1999.
- Burton, David M. *Burton's History of Mathematics*. Dubuque, IA: Wm. C. Brown Publishers, 1995.
- Mlodinow, Leonard. *Euclid's Window*. New York: Free Press, 2001.

Scott, Joseph Frederick. *A History of Mathematics: From Antiquity to the Beginning of the Nineteenth Century*. London: Taylor & Francis, 1958.

Simmons, George F. *Calculus Gems: Brief Lives and Memorable Mathematics*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1992.

EURIPIDES

Born: c. 480 B.C.E.

Salamis, Greece

Died: c. 406 B.C.E.

Pella, Greece

Greek playwright

Euripides was a Greek playwright (one who writes plays or dramas) whom Aristotle (384–322 B.C.E.) called the most tragic of the Greek poets. He is certainly the most revolutionary Greek tragedian (one who writes plays based on human tragedies and conflicts) known in modern times.

Euripides's life

Euripides was the son of Mnesarchus. The family owned property on the island of Salamis, and Euripides was twice married (Melito and Choirile) and had three sons (Mnesarchides, Mnesilochus, and Euripides). Euripides was raised in a cultured family, was witness to the rebuilding of the Athenian walls after the Persian Wars (wars fought between the Greek city-states and the Persian Empire during the first half of the fifth century B.C.E.), but above all belonged to the period of the Peloponnesian War

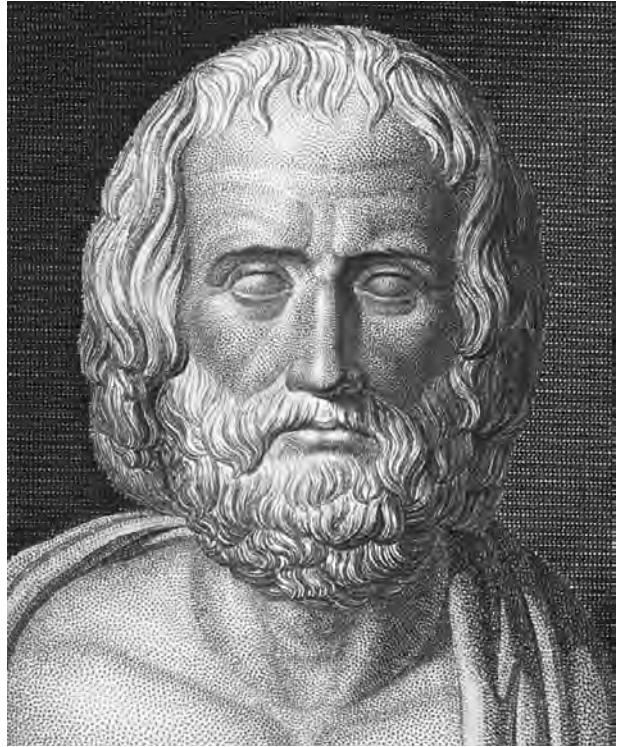
(431–404 B.C.E.; a war fought between two ancient Greek city-states—Athens and Sparta). Euripides has been described as the most intellectual poet of his time. He has been called the philosopher (a person who studies for and seeks knowledge and wisdom) of the theater. In addition to his literary talents, he is said to have been an excellent athlete and painter.

Euripides was well ahead of his times, and though popular, he irritated people in his own day by his sharp criticism (judgment) and won only five dramatic prizes during the course of his career. He is supposed to have owned a library and to have spent a great deal of his time in his cave by the sea in Salamis.

Nothing about Euripides's military or political career is known. Toward the end of his life he stayed briefly in Thessaly (at Magnesia) and at the court of King Archelaus in Macedonia, where he wrote his masterpiece, the *Bacchae*. He died in Macedonia and was buried at Arethusa. The Athenians built him a monument in Athens.

Euripides's style

Euripides completely refined and popularized Greek tragedy (plays with unhappy endings) and was responsible for making tragedy something experienced by ordinary citizens. At the time of Euripides, the upper classes were the only ones represented on stage as worthy of serious consideration. Though he used the traditional form of the drama, he had some very different things to say, and he said them in a language that was much easier to understand. He used many everyday expressions. He was the first to introduce heroes in rags and on crutches and in tears. He treated slaves, women, and children



Euripides.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

as human beings and insisted that nobility was not necessarily a quality of social status.

Euripides was a serious questioner of the values of his day. As a realistic person, he often placed modern ideas and opinions in the mouths of traditional characters. Euripides also wrote about religion, revenge, and all-consuming love. Euripides treated myths sensibly and expected men to use their logical powers. All of his existing plays are concerned with three basic themes: war, women, and religion. He investigated the social, political, religious, and philosophical issues of his day, and he truly loved Athens and sympathized genuinely with suffering humanity.

His plays

Euripides's existing plays (except the *Cyclops*) can be divided into three basic categories. The true tragedies include *Medea* (431 B.C.E.), *Andromache* (early in the Peloponnesian War), *Heraclidae* (c. 430 B.C.E.), *Hippolytus* (428 B.C.E.), *Hecuba* (c. 425 B.C.E.), *Suppliants* (c. 420–419 B.C.E.), *Heracles* (c. 420–418 B.C.E.), *Trojan Women* (415 B.C.E.), and *Bacchae* (c. 407 B.C.E.). The tragicomedies (plays that include tragedy as well as comedy) include *Alcestis* (438 B.C.E.), *Ion* (c. 418–413 B.C.E.), *Iphigenia at Tauris* (414–412 B.C.E.), and *Helen* (412 B.C.E.). The melodramas (dramas with strong emotion that usually end happily) are *Electra* (c. 415 B.C.E.), *Phoenician Women* (c. 409 B.C.E.), *Orestes* (408 B.C.E.), and *Iphigenia at Aulis* (c. 407 B.C.E.).

The *Alcestis* was presented in 438 B.C.E. and is the earliest of the Euripidean plays that was preserved. A tragicomedy, it has a happy ending and has fascinated critics for countless years.

Medea is perhaps Euripides's most famous and most influential play. In *Medea* Euripides demonstrates that “hell hath no fury like a woman scorned,” and he scolds his fellow men for mistreating women and particularly for treating foreign women as less than equal. But perhaps even more brilliantly, Euripides shows that man is both rational (sensible or reasonable) and irrational (without reason), and that the irrational can bring disaster when it gets out of control, and that a woman is defenseless to passions.

Hippolytus shows clearly Euripides's concern about claims of religion on the one hand and sexuality on the other. The *Trojan Women* is typical of Euripides's war plays. Euripides's *Electra* beautifully illustrates realism (the

thought based on the belief that reality exists outside of oneself) and rationalism (the belief that reason is the main authority in controlling one's actions and thoughts).

The *Bacchae*, Euripides's masterpiece, is well thought-out and is a very powerful play. In it he is again showing how the irrational, when not recognized and properly restrained, can get out of control and destroy all those around it.

Euripides managed to call his countrymen's attention to the many obvious abuses and wrongs in his own society. He subjected all to a harsh but reasonable examination; however, he was basically tolerant and understanding and fully sympathized with the troubles and suffering of humanity.

For More Information

- Denniston, John D. *Euripides' Electra*. Oxford, England: Clarendon Press, 1939.
- Goumaridou, Kiki. *Euripides and Alcestis*. Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 1998.
- Page, Denys L. *Euripides' Medea*. Oxford, England: Clarendon Press, 1938.
- Webster, Thomas Bertram Lonsdale. *The Tragedies of Euripides*. London: Methuen, 1967.

**MEDGAR
EVERS**

Born: July 19, 1925
Decatur, Mississippi

Died: June 12, 1963

Jackson, Mississippi

African American civil and human rights activist

Medgar Evers, field secretary for the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), was one of the most important figures of the African American civil rights movement. He paid for his beliefs with his life, becoming the first major civil rights leader to be assassinated in the 1960s. His death prompted President John F. Kennedy (1917–63) to ask Congress for a national civil rights bill, which President Lyndon Johnson (1908–73) signed into law in 1964.

A course in racism

Medgar Evers was born on July 19, 1925 in Decatur, Mississippi, the third of four children of a small farm owner. In *The Martyrs: Sixteen Who Gave Their Lives for Racial Justice*, Jack Mendelsohn quoted Evers on his childhood. “I was born in Decatur here in Mississippi, and when we were walking to school in the first grade white kids in their schoolbuses would throw things at us and yell filthy things,” the civil rights leader recollected. “This was a mild start. If you’re a kid in Mississippi this is the elementary course.”

By the time Evers reached adulthood he had, as he put it in Mendelsohn’s book, moved on from this “elementary course” in racism (a dislike or disrespect of someone based on the color of their skin) and “graduated pretty quickly.” In the Mississippi of Evers’s boyhood, African Americans were routinely terrorized by the violence of racist whites. Lynching (the killing of a person by a group of people outside of the law) was common, and discrimina-

tion (treating people differently based on their race) was an everyday fact. However, Evers was fortunate to have an example of strong independence and pride in his own father. James Evers, Medgar’s father, refused to get off the sidewalk to let a white man pass as was customary. Unlike many African Americans in the South, he also owned his own land.

The young Medgar Evers was determined not to cave in to hardship. He walked twelve miles each way to earn his high school diploma and then joined the U.S. Army during World War II (1939–45), a war that involved countries in many parts of the world. He was discharged from the army in 1946.

Joining the NAACP

After the war Evers returned to Decatur, where he was reunited with his brother Charlie. The young men decided they wanted to vote in the next election. Since the aim of discrimination was to keep power in the hands of the South’s white population, preventing and discouraging African Americans from voting was a major tactic of white racists. When election day came, the Evers brothers found their polling place blocked by an armed crowd of whites, estimated by Evers to be two hundred strong.

Evers and his brother did not vote that day. Instead they joined the NAACP and became active in its ranks. Evers was already busy with NAACP projects when he was a student at Alcorn A&M College in Lorman, Mississippi. He entered college in 1948, majored in business administration, and graduated in 1952. During his senior year he married Myrlie Beasley. After graduation the young couple lived on his earnings as an insurance salesman.



Medgar Evers.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Evers continued to witness the victims of hate and racism. He saw the terrible living conditions of the rural blacks he visited while working for his company. Then in 1954 he witnessed an attempted lynching during a time of great personal sorrow. His father was dying in the hospital, and while visiting him Evers went to get a breath of air outside. As he later related in *The Martyrs*, "On that very night a Negro had fought with a white man in Union [Mississippi] and a white mob had shot the Negro in the leg. The police brought the Negro to the hospital but the mob was outside . . . armed with pistols and rifles, yelling for the Negro. I walked out into the

middle of it. . . . It seemed that this would never change."

Campaigning for civil rights

Evers soon went to work for the NAACP full time. Within two years he was named to the important position of state field secretary for the organization. Still in his early thirties, he was one of the most well-known NAACP members in his state. With his wife and children, he moved to Jackson, Mississippi, where he worked closely with black church leaders and other civil rights activists. Evers spoke constantly of the need to overcome hatred and promote understanding and equality between the races. It was not a message that everyone in Mississippi wanted to hear.

Evers was featured on a nine-man death list in the deep South as early as 1955. He and his family endured many threats and other violent acts, making them well aware of the danger surrounding Evers because of his activities. Still he persisted in his efforts to end segregation (separating people based solely on their race) in public facilities, schools, and restaurants. He organized voter-registration drives and demonstrations. His days were filled with meetings, economic boycotts (to make a stand against a person or a business by refusing to buy their goods, products, or businesses), marches, prayer services, picket lines, and bailing other demonstrators out of jail.

A fallen leader

On June 12, 1963, President Kennedy made an address to the nation. Kennedy believed that whites standing in the way of civil rights for blacks represented "a moral cri-

sis” and pledged his support to federal action on integration, or ending segregation. That same night, Evers returned home just after midnight from a series of NAACP functions. As he left his car, he was shot in the back. Evers died shortly thereafter at the hospital.

When the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) looked into Evers’s murder, a suspect was uncovered, Byron de la Beckwith (1920–2001), who was an outspoken opponent of integration and a member of a group called the Mississippi’s White Citizens Council. A gun found 150 feet from the site of the shooting had Beckwith’s fingerprint on it. Several witnesses placed Beckwith in Evers’s neighborhood that night. However, he denied shooting Evers and claimed his gun had been stolen days before the incident. Beckwith, too, produced witnesses who swore that he was some sixty miles from Evers’s home on the night of the murder.

Beckwith was tried twice in Mississippi for Evers’s murder during the 1960s, once in 1964 and again the following year. Both trials ended in hung juries. After the second trial, Myrlie Evers took her children and moved to California. However, her strong belief that justice was never served in her husband’s case kept Mrs. Evers involved in the search for new evidence. In 1991, Byron de la Beckwith was arrested a third time on charges of mur-

dering Medgar Evers. He was finally convicted of the crime in 1994.

The Evers legacy

In some ways, the death of Medgar Evers was a milestone in the hard-fought civil rights war that rocked America in the 1950s and 1960s. While Evers’s assassination foreshadowed the violence to come, it also inspired civil rights leaders and their followers to work for their cause with still more dedication. Above all, it inspired them to work with the courage that Evers himself had shown.

For More Information

- Altman, Susan. *Extraordinary Black Americans from Colonial to Contemporary Times*. Chicago: Children’s Press, 1989.
- Brown, Jennie. *Medgar Evers*. Los Angeles: Melrose Square, 1994.
- DeLaughter, Bobby. *Never Too Late: A Prosecutor’s Story of Justice in the Medgar Evers Case*. New York: Scribner, 2001.
- Nossiter, Adam. *Of Long Memory: Mississippi and the Murder of Medgar Evers*. Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley, 1994.
- Ribeiro, Myra. *The Assassination of Medgar Evers*. New York: Rosen, 2002.



GABRIEL FAHRENHEIT

Born: May 14, 1686

Danzig, Germany

Died: September 16, 1736

The Hague, the Netherlands

German instrument maker and glassblower

The German instrument maker Gabriel Fahrenheit made the first reliable thermometers, and the temperature scale he created is named after him.

Early life

Born in Danzig, Germany, on May 14, 1686, Gabriel Daniel Fahrenheit was one of

Daniel and Concordia Schumann Fahrenheit's five children. His father was a wealthy merchant. Both his parents died on the same day, August 14, 1701, and he was then sent to Amsterdam, the Netherlands, to work for and learn from a shopkeeper. After completing a term of four years there, Fahrenheit became interested in making scientific instruments. Although he lived in Amsterdam most of his life, he traveled widely to observe the work of scientists and makers of instruments in other areas. He spent considerable time in England, where he became a member of the Royal Society (Great Britain's oldest organization of scientists).

Creation of thermometers

Fahrenheit completed his first two thermometers by 1714. They contained alcohol

and agreed exactly in their readings. The scale that was to bear Fahrenheit's name had not yet been made standard, and many different scales were tried before he settled on one. He soon decided to replace the alcohol with mercury and completed a series of investigations based on the work of Danish astronomer Olaus Roemer. In these investigations he determined the boiling point of water and other liquids and studied the expansion (increase in volume) properties of mercury. These experiments led to the discovery that the boiling point of water varies with changes in the pressure of the atmosphere. Fahrenheit also discovered the method of supercooling water—that is, cooling water to below its normal freezing point without it becoming ice.

Taking all of these factors into consideration, Fahrenheit began to doubt the reliability of the freezing and boiling points of water. He finally settled on a temperature scale ranging from 0 to 212. In 1724, announcing his method of making thermometers in the *Philosophical Transactions* of the Royal Society, he described how he used the temperatures of the human body and of a mixture of water, ice, and sea salt to be his high and low measuring points. He set 0 as the temperature of the mixture, 32 as the temperature of water and ice, and 212, a point selected by chance, as the approximate boiling point of water.

Success and new developments

Fahrenheit's thermometers were very popular. He used mercury successfully because of his method of cleaning it, and he introduced the use of cylinder-shaped bulbs instead of sphere-shaped ones. His detailed

process of making thermometers, however, was not made public for some eighteen years, since he wanted to keep his methods a secret. Among the other instruments he created were a constant-weight hydrometer (an instrument to measure the gravity and strength of a liquid), and a "thermobarometer" for estimating barometric pressure (the pressure of the atmosphere) by determining the boiling point of water.

On September 16, 1736, at fifty years old, Fahrenheit died in the Netherlands. He was buried in the city of The Hague. Fahrenheit never married and continued to be active up to his death. Just before he died, he applied for a patent on a machine that would pump water out of polders (drained land in the Netherlands that lies below sea level).

For More Information

- Cajori, Florian. *A History of Physics*. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1899.
- Fahrenheit, Gabriel Daniel. *Fahrenheit's Letters to Leibniz and Boerhaave*. Edited by Pieter van der Star. Amsterdam: Rodopi, 1983.
- King, Allen L. *Thermophysics*. San Francisco, CA: W. H. Freeman, 1962.
- Lipson, Henry. *The Great Experiments in Physics*. Edinburgh, Scotland: Oliver & Boyd, 1968.

FANNIE
FARMER

Born: March 23, 1857
Boston, Massachusetts

Died: January 15, 1915

Boston, Massachusetts

American cooking expert, author, and educator

Fannie Farmer was an American authority in the art of cooking and the author of six books about food preparation. She was a determined woman who overcame her physical limitations to achieve success in her field.

Early life

Fannie Merritt Farmer was born in Boston, Massachusetts, on March 23, 1857. She was the eldest of four daughters of J. Franklin Farmer, a master printer, and Mary Watson Merritt Farmer. The Farmers moved to Medford, Massachusetts, when Fannie was a child. Though they were not wealthy, the Farmers strongly believed that their daughter should receive a solid education. Fannie's parents had hopes of sending her to college, but after high school graduation she suffered a stroke that left her paralyzed. Her doctor discouraged all thoughts of further schooling. Fannie was unable to get out of bed for months and remained an invalid for years. She did, however, learn to use her legs again. She was eventually able to walk, but always retained a limp.

Education and career

While at home, Farmer helped around the house but she was not able to help her family financially until she was in her mid-twenties. By that time she was well enough to take a job with the Shaw family. It was here that she showed a strong interest in cooking. By the time Fannie had reached thirty-one years of age, her physical condition had

markedly improved. Her parents and the Shaw family advised her to seek schooling that would develop and refine her knowledge and abilities in cooking.

Farmer then enrolled in the Boston Cooking School, where her performance was outstanding. Because of the excellence of her work, upon graduation in 1889 she was invited to serve as assistant director of the school under Carrie M. Dearborn. Farmer began to understand the association between eating and good health. Her inquiring mind led her into further studies, including a summer course at the Harvard Medical School.

After Dearborn's death in 1891, Farmer was appointed director of the school. While there she published her impressive, highly significant Boston Cooking School Cookbook (1896), of which twenty-one editions were printed before her death. It has remained a standard work. She served as director of the school for eleven years. After her resignation in 1902, she established her own school and named it Miss Farmer's School of Cookery. It was decidedly creative and inventive, emphasizing the practice of cooking instead of theory. Its program was designed to educate housewives rather than to prepare teachers. The school also developed cooking equipment for the sick and the physically disabled. Farmer became a highly respected authority in her field, and she was invited to deliver lectures to nurses, women's clubs, and even the Harvard Medical School.

One of Farmer's major contributions was teaching cooks to carefully follow recipes. She pioneered the use of standard level measurement in cooking. Farmer, her school, and her cookbooks were extremely popular. She received favorable newspaper



Fannie Farmer.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

coverage in many American cities, and her influence was widespread. The well-attended weekly lectures at the school were tributes to the value of the work she and her assistants were doing. She also wrote a popular cooking column, which ran for nearly ten years in the *Woman's Home Companion*, a national magazine.

Farmer was a woman of unusual motivation, intelligence, and courage. Though she suffered another paralytic stroke later in her life, she continued lecturing. In fact, ten days before her death in 1915, she delivered a lecture from a wheelchair. Fannie Farmer died on January 15, 1915.

For More Information

Hopkinson, Deborah. *Fannie in the Kitchen*. New York: Atheneum Books for Young Readers, 2001.

Smallzried, Kathleen Ann. *The Everlasting Pleasure: Influences on America's Kitchens, Cooks, and Cookery from 1565 to the Year 2000*. New York: Appleton-Century-Crofts, 1956.

LOUIS FARRAKHAN

Born: May 11, 1933

New York, New York

African American civil rights activist, religious leader, and minister

Louis Farrakhan is a leader of the Nation of Islam, a religious group that is more popularly known as the Black Muslims. Beginning in the 1970s he emerged as a spokesman for Black Nationalism, arguing that African Americans should work to improve themselves rather than expect whites to help them. He was frequently criticized for mixing his positive messages with remarks that some felt showed prejudice (dislike of people based on their race or religion) toward white and Jewish people.

Early years

Louis Farrakhan was born Louis Eugene Walcott on May 11, 1933, the son of Percival Clark and Mae Manning Clark. His father was a Jamaican man who later deserted his

family, and his mother was a domestic worker who had come to the United States from the West Indies. Farrakhan's family moved to Boston, Massachusetts, when he was three. Farrakhan had a talent for music and began taking violin lessons at the age of five. In high school he was an honor student, a good track athlete, and a member of the choir in the local Episcopal church. After two years of college he began a career as a professional violinist and singer who used such stage names as "The Charmer."

In 1955 Farrakhan was taken by a friend to hear a speech by Elijah Muhammad (1897–1975), the leader of the Nation of Islam. Muhammad was the second head of the movement, having attained his position following the disappearance of founder W. D. Fard in 1934. Under Muhammad the movement had grown to include hundreds of thousands of members with a large network of farms, restaurants, stores, and schools. Muhammad spoke out against "white devils" and promised that one day God would restore African Americans, who were regarded by the Nation of Islam as the original humans, to their rightful position as leaders of the world. Muhammad forbid his followers to smoke, drink, fight, eat pork, and engage in destructive behavior. Followers were also commanded to say prayers, attend religious services regularly, improve their education, and serve the movement. Farrakhan joined soon after hearing Muhammad speak. He took the name Louis X (a common Nation of Islam practice indicating that one's identity had been stolen during slavery) and later Louis Farrakhan.



Louis Farrakhan.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Moving up and breaking away

Farrakhan's ability and dedication were noticed by Muhammad, who appointed him minister of the Boston mosque (a building used by Muslims for public worship). After the death of Malcolm X (1925–1965) he was appointed leader of the important Harlem Temple No. 7 and official spokesperson for Elijah Muhammad. He was also given the important task of introducing Muhammad at rallies on Savior's Day, a major Nation of Islam holiday celebrating Fard's birthday.

Elijah Muhammad died in 1975 and his son Wallace Muhammad (1933–), who was much quieter and more moderate than his

father, became leader of the Nation of Islam. At Wallace Muhammad's invitation Farrakhan moved to Chicago, Illinois, to work in the movement's headquarters. Soon Wallace Muhammad began to pursue a program of moderation for the movement. He abandoned its antiwhite stance—even letting whites join—and built bridges to the larger world from the Islamic community. Farrakhan became a major voice of a group within the movement made up of members who disagreed with the move toward moderation. He resigned from the movement in 1978 and organized a new Nation of Islam that closely resembled Elijah Muhammad's group, with dress and behavior codes and Muslim institutions and businesses. The racial theories and antiwhite sentiment of the Muhammad days were stressed once again. Farrakhan opened mosques in cities across America and reached out to the wider African American community through publications and a radio show.

Subject of criticism

Farrakhan's Nation of Islam, which in 1983 was estimated to have between five to ten thousand members, remained little known until March 1984, when controversy (a discussion marked by the expression of opposing views) suddenly erupted over his association with presidential candidate Jesse Jackson (1941–). Farrakhan, who had earlier advised his followers to avoid political involvements, had thrown his support behind Jackson, even providing bodyguards for the candidate. Farrakhan had registered to vote for the first time and urged his followers to do the same. Jackson had returned the favor by appearing as the featured speaker at the Muslim Savior's Day rally in February 1984.

In March, however, Farrakhan called Milton Coleman, an African American reporter for the *Washington Post*, a traitor after Coleman disclosed that Jackson had made offensive remarks about Jewish people while speaking with campaign assistants. In a speech, Farrakhan said of Coleman, "One day soon we will punish you with death." He later denied that he was threatening Coleman's life. Farrakhan's role in Jackson's campaign was greatly reduced after it became known that Farrakhan had referred to Judaism as a "gutter religion" and described Adolf Hitler (1889–1945), the German leader who caused the deaths of millions of Jewish people during World War II (1939–45), as "a very great man."

Criticism of Farrakhan increased when it was uncovered that during the 1980s he had visited Libya and received a \$5 million interest-free loan from Libyan head of state Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi (1942–) to help build Muslim institutions and businesses. Qadhafi was known to have provided training and money for terrorist acts. Farrakhan explained that he sought to raise hundreds of millions of dollars for African American self-improvement programs from all of the groups, including Arabs, that had been involved in the slave trade and the destruction of African culture.

Still a force

After the publicity he received during the 1984 presidential campaign, Farrakhan continued his busy public speaking schedule and continued to have an influence on African Americans far beyond the membership of his own movement. He and his wife, Betsy, have nine children and live in a mainly

white neighborhood in Chicago. In 1993, on his sixtieth birthday, Farrakhan performed a violin concert on Chicago's South Side in an attempt to better his image. The concert was held at a temple in hopes that tensions between Farrakhan and the Jewish community could be mended. Farrakhan also opened a \$5 million restaurant, the Salaam Restaurant and Bakery, in March 1995 with funds collected from followers and the sale of the *Final Call*, an Islamic newspaper.

The loyalty of Farrakhan's followers was most evident in October 1995 in Washington, D.C. Farrakhan had urged at least one million African American men to travel to the nation's capital as a show of strength for their community. The Million Man March, as it was called, was designed to create solidarity (a feeling of unity, or oneness) among members of the African American community and to help bridge a gap between whites and African Americans. The march surprised many, not only because of the large number of participants but because few thought that Farrakhan could promote and pull off a nonviolent protest. The Million Man March was followed up in 2000 by the Million Family March, celebrating family and unity and stressing the need for education and the importance of voting.

For More Information

Haskins, James. *Louis Farrakhan and the Nation of Islam*. New York: Walker and Co., 1996.

Levinsohn, Florence Hamlish. *Looking for Farrakhan*. Chicago: Ivan R. Dee, 1997.

Magida, Arthur J. *Prophet of Rage: A Life of Louis Farrakhan and His Nation*. New York: Basic Books, 1996.

Pooley, Eric. "Million Man March." *Time* (October 16, 1995).

White, Jack E. "No Innocent Abroad." *Time* (February 26, 1996).

WILLIAM FAULKNER

Born: September 25, 1897

New Albany, Mississippi

Died: July 6, 1962

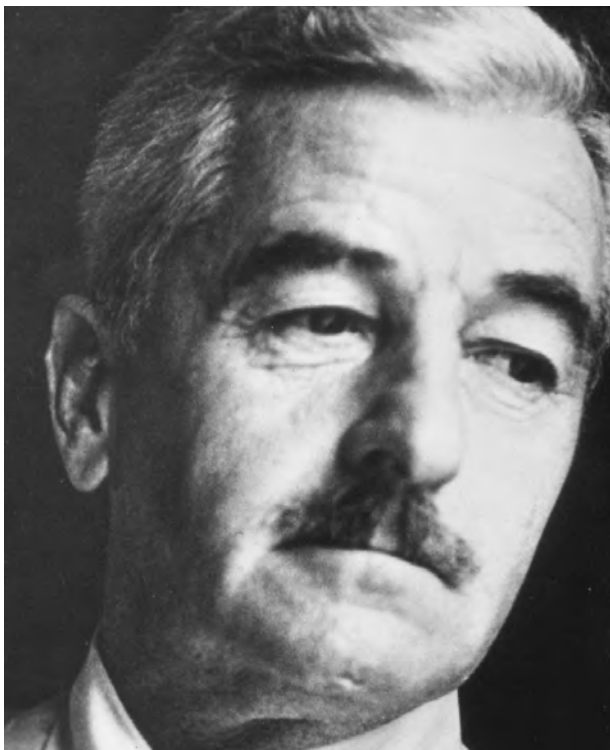
Byhalia, Mississippi

American author

William Faulkner, a major American twentieth-century author, wrote historical novels portraying the decline and decay of the upper crust of Southern society. The imaginative power and psychological depth of his work ranks him as one of America's greatest novelists. He also received the 1949 Nobel Prize for Literature.

Youth and experience

William Cuthbert Falkner (as the family spelled its name) was born on September 25, 1897, in New Albany, Mississippi. He grew up in Oxford, Mississippi, the oldest of four brothers. Both parents came from wealthy families reduced to poverty by the Civil War (1861–65; a war fought between the Northern and Southern states of the United States). A great-grandfather, Colonel William Falkner, had written *The White Rose of Memphis*, a popular novel of the 1880s. William was named in honor of his great-grandfather. William's father owned a hardware store and



William Faulkner.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

livery stable (a place where animals and vehicles are kept and rented) in Oxford and later became business manager of the state university. William did not attend public school consistently after the fifth grade; he left high school prior to graduation in order to work in his grandfather's bank. William never earned his high school diploma despite being an avid reader and a lover of poetry.

In 1918, after the U.S. Army rejected him for being underweight and too short (5 feet 5 inches), Faulkner enlisted in the Canadian Air Force. During his brief service in World War I (1914–18; a war that involved most countries in Europe as well as many other nations in the

world, and in which the United States participated from 1917–18), he suffered a leg injury in a plane accident. In 1918 he left the air force and returned home to Oxford.

In 1919 Faulkner enrolled at the University of Mississippi as a special student, but left the next year for New York City. After several odd jobs in New York he left and again returned to Mississippi, where he became postmaster at the Mississippi University Station. He was fired in 1924 for reading on the job. In 1925 he and a friend made a walking tour of Europe, returning home in 1926.

During the years 1926 to 1930 Faulkner published a series of novels, none commercially successful. But in 1931 the success of *Sanctuary* freed him of financial worries. He went to Hollywood for a year as a scriptwriter and an adviser.

It was not until after World War II (1939–45; a war in which France, Great Britain, the United States, the Soviet Union, and China fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan) that Faulkner received critical acclaim. The turning point for Faulkner's reputation came in 1946, when Malcolm Cowley published the influential *The Portable Faulkner* (at this time all of Faulkner's books were out of print). The rapid and widespread praise for Faulkner's work was recognized in a 1949 Nobel Prize for Literature.

Faulkner had married Estelle Oldham, his childhood sweetheart, in 1929, and they lived together in Oxford until his death. He was a quiet, dashing, courteous man, mustachioed and sharp-eyed. He constantly refused the role of celebrity: he permitted no prying into his private life and rarely granted interviews. William Faulkner died on July 6,

1962, in a hospital in Byhalia, Mississippi. He was sixty-four years of age.

Poetry and short stories

During the early 1920s Faulkner wrote poetry and fiction. In the volume of verse *The Marble Faun* (1922), a printer's error allegedly introduced the "u" into the author's name, which he decided to retain. His friend, Philip Stone, supplied money for another book of poems, *The Green Bough* (1933).

Faulkner is considered a fine writer of the short story, and some of his stories, such as "A Rose for Emily," are widely anthologized (put into a collection of literature). His collections—*These Thirteen* (1931), *Doctor Martino and Other Stories* (1934), *Go Down, Moses and Other Stories* (1942), and *Knight's Gambit* (1949)—deal with themes similar to those in his novels and include many of the same characters.

Early novels

Soldiers' Pay (1926) and *Mosquitoes* (1927) precede *Sartoris* (1927), Faulkner's first important work, in which he begins his Yoknapatawpha saga. This saga, Faulkner's imaginative re-creation of the tragedy of the American South, is written so that each novel works with the others to clarify and redefine the characters. The novel introduces families that reappear in many of Faulkner's novels and stories: the Sartoris and Compson families, representing the land-owning, aristocratic Old South; and the Snopes clan, representing the ruthless, commercial New South.

The Sound and the Fury

The book generally regarded as Faulkner's masterpiece, *The Sound and the Fury* (1929), is

written in a style that differs from most novels of the time. It uses a stream-of-consciousness method (where the author lets his thoughts flow freely), creating a different manner of thought in each of its four sections. The novel records the breakdown of the Compson family, which serves to suggest a breakdown of the southern ways of the past. Each section takes place in a single day; three sections are set in 1928 and one in 1910. The difficulties begin with the fact that the section set in 1910 is placed second in the book, while the other three set in 1928 are not in the order in which they occur during their three-day span.

The Benjy section (April 7, 1928) is the most difficult section to read. Because the mentally impaired Benjy lives in a state where things rarely change, his report is purely physical, and the reader must figure out his own order of time. Faulkner gives two aids, however: the device of signaling time shifts by alternating the typeface between bold and italic, and the different people attending Benjy.

Out of Benjy's jumbled report comes background information for the novel. He is thirty-three years old, and in the constant care of an African American youth named Luster. Benjy is troubled by the absence of his sister, Candace, though she has been out of the household for eighteen years. The oldest son, Quentin, was sent to Harvard, where he committed suicide. Mrs. Compson is a self-pitying woman; Mr. Compson is a drunkard; Uncle Maury is a womanizer; Candace is lacking in morals and, in turn, her daughter, confusingly called Quentin (after her dead uncle), is also morally loose.

Ironically, the most sensitive and intelligent Compson, Quentin (whose day in the novel is June 1, 1910), shares Benjy's obses-

sion about their sister. Candace and the past dominate Quentin's section, which is set in Boston on the day he commits suicide. He is oppressed by the knowledge that the pregnant Candace is to be married off to a northern banker. The upcoming marriage is the reason for his suicidal state.

Jason, the third Compson brother, whose day in the novel is April 6, 1928, is one of the great comic villains of literature. He has an irrational, jealous hatred of Candace. Now head of the family, he complains of his responsibilities as guardian of Candace's daughter, Quentin, while systematically stealing the money Candace sends for her care. Jason is greedy, cunning, and concerned only with money and possessions. What makes him humorous is his self-pity. Jason's lack of soul is evident in all of his habits. He leaves no mark on anything and lives totally in the present, which serves to represent the New South.

The novel's final section, the only one told in the third person, gives the point of view of the sensible old black servant, Dilsey (her day is April 8, 1928). As with other Faulkner African American characters, her presence is chiefly practical: her good sense and solidity point at the selfishness and self-absorption of the white characters. In this section Jason meets with an overwhelming defeat. The novel's chief assumption is that the Southern way of life is doomed.

Later works

As *I Lay Dying* (1930) is an absurd epic that uses the multiple stream-of-consciousness method to tell the ridiculous, humorous story of a family of poor whites intent on fulfilling the mother's deathbed request for burial. The story in *Light in August* (1932) takes

place in a single day. Although complicated by a subplot, *Light in August* generates enormous power and probably ranks second among Faulkner's books.

Faulkner's creativity declined after 1935. Though occasionally interesting and at times brilliant, his work tended to be increasingly repetitious.

For More Information

Blotner, Joseph. *Faulkner: A Biography*. New York: Random House, 1974.

Fargnoli, A. Nicholas, and Michael Golay. *William Faulkner A to Z: The Essential Reference to His Life and Work*. New York: Checkmark Books, 2001.

Gray, Richard. *The Life of William Faulkner: A Critical Biography*. Cambridge, MA: Blackwell, 1994.

Oates, Stephen B. *William Faulkner, the Man and the Artist: A Biography*. New York: Harper & Row, 1987.

Williamson, Joel. *William Faulkner and Southern History*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1993.

DIANNE FEINSTEIN

Born: June 22, 1933

San Francisco, California

American politician, mayor, and senator

Dianne Feinstein was elected San Francisco's first female mayor in 1979 and became one of the

nation's most visible and recognized leaders. In 1992, when she was elected to the Senate, she and Barbara Boxer became the first female senators from California.

Background and early career

Dianne Feinstein was born in San Francisco, California, on June 22, 1933, to a Jewish physician father, Leon Goldman, and a Catholic Russian-American mother, Betty Rosenberg Goldman. She attended a Roman Catholic school and a Jewish temple (a place for religious worship) during her youth, which resulted in her deep respect for different religions. Feinstein was introduced to politics by an uncle who began taking her to San Francisco Board of Supervisors (city council) meetings when she was sixteen. She recalled later that this was the main factor in her decision to pursue a career in public service. After graduating from San Francisco's Sacred Heart High School, she attended Stanford University. She studied history and political science and was also active in student government. She received her bachelor's degree in 1955.

In 1956 Feinstein married Jack Berman, a man who would eventually become a San Francisco superior court judge. The couple had one daughter. Combining marriage and family with a career, Feinstein was employed by a public affairs group that was interested in criminal justice. She went on to work for California's Industrial Welfare Commission and was appointed in 1962 to a four-year term on the state's Women's Board of Paroles. When her first marriage ended in divorce, she withdrew from public life for a time but came back as a member of San Francisco's Mayor's Commission on Crime. She then married Bertram Feinstein, a noted surgeon.



Dianne Feinstein.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Feinstein won election to San Francisco's Board of Supervisors in 1969 and served on the board through the 1970s. She also ran for mayor twice, losing to Joseph Alioto (c. 1917–1998) in 1971 and finishing a poor third to George Moscone (1929–1978) in the 1975 election. She was an early and firm supporter of presidential candidate Jimmy Carter (1924–). When he entered the White House, she tried without success to obtain a cabinet post in Washington, D.C. Turned down in her attempt for higher office, weakened by illness from foreign travel, and discouraged by the deaths of her father and her second husband, Feinstein told writer Jerome Brondfield: "I

decided I would not again be a candidate—for anything.”

Unexpected responsibility

Feinstein then decided to make the announcement that her political career was over. However, half an hour before the press conference on November 27, 1978, where she planned to make her decision public, a former supervisor, Dan White, fatally shot Mayor George Moscone (1929–1978) and Supervisor Harvey Milk (1930–1978). These murders forced Feinstein into the position of acting mayor. A month later she was selected to serve out the balance of Moscone’s term. As mayor, Feinstein attempted to calm the political unrest and violence, balance the demands of different groups, and help the city recover from the tragic events that had put her in office.

Feinstein was elected to a full four-year term as mayor beginning in 1979. During her early years on the job she tried to please all the different groups in the San Francisco community. She took an interest in police staffing and policies and succeeded in reducing crime rates. The biggest challenge that she faced was fiscal (involving money)—the problem of balancing the budget in the face of cutbacks in state and federal spending for cities. Making use of the knowledge of the high-powered business and labor leaders on her Fiscal Advisory Committee, she brought the city budget under control, introduced improved management policies, and promoted downtown development and expansion. Feinstein was a colorful and energetic mayor. She once appeared at a ribbon-cutting ceremony for a construction project dressed in an old-fashioned, black wool, knee-length

bathing suit—which she wore after losing a bet with the contractor. At a dinner at which she was guest of honor, she applied the Heimlich maneuver to save a guest from choking on a piece of meat.

Although her career as mayor was marked by many successes, Feinstein occasionally stumbled. When she pushed through a law banning handguns, some voters attempted a recall (a process in which people vote to remove an elected official from office). Many members of the community were also angered by her veto (rejection) of a measure that would have extended medical and welfare benefits to partners in same-sex couples and to live-in companions of unmarried city employees. Although the recall movement gathered many signatures, Mayor Feinstein survived the challenge by receiving an 83-percent-favorable vote in April 1983. She went on to win her second and last full term in the November 1983 election (according to a city rule, mayors were limited to two terms). In 1984 San Francisco hosted the Democratic National Convention, which many of the mayor’s backers hoped might lead to her nomination for the vice presidency, but she was not chosen.

New challenges

In 1990 Feinstein ran for governor of California against Republican candidate Pete Wilson (1933–). Although she ran a tough campaign that was well funded by her third husband, investment banker Richard Blum, she lost to Wilson by a narrow margin. She immediately changed her focus and in early 1991 announced her intention to run for Wilson’s former Senate seat in the 1992 election. Along with fellow Democrat Barbara

Boxer (1940–), Feinstein was elected to the Senate in 1992; the two became the first women senators ever elected in California. Their election was part of a new women's revolution, since prior to January 1993 only fifteen women had ever served in the Senate. There had never been more than two serving at any given time. After her reelection in 1996, Feinstein shared the floor with eight fellow women senators, all representing a wide range of viewpoints. Of the change, Senator Tom Harkin (1939–) said, "Just by being on the Senate floor, they've changed the male mindset."

In the Senate, Feinstein took a firm stand on a range of issues. She was outspoken against the decision of President Bill Clinton (1946–) to make Mexico a U.S. ally in the fight against illegal drugs. In foreign affairs, she argued that China should be granted "most favored nation" standing in trade (meaning that China would be guaranteed the best possible terms, including the lowest import taxes, when trading with the United States). She also disagreed with the leasing of a former Navy base to China's government-owned shipping company. Concerning the protection of privacy rights in the United States, she proposed a law in 1998 to limit the access of paparazzi (photographers who follow famous people around in attempt to take pictures of them for sale to publications) in California.

In 2000 Feinstein received a special recognition award from the Susan G. Komen Breast Cancer Foundation for her work in support of breast cancer research and education. At the time, she was a member of the Senate Cancer Coalition and the National Dialogue on Cancer. She also supported a

stamp to raise money specifically for breast cancer research.

Feinstein continues to be an active senator who supports the many issues that have become important to her during her decades-long career in public service. She has introduced bills to make the cloning (scientific copying) of another human being a crime, to allow local school districts to use Department of Education funding to build new and smaller schools, and to make it more difficult for terrorists to obtain weapons from the United States.

For More Information

- Brondfield, Jerome. "She Gives Her Heart to San Francisco." *Readers Digest* (July 1984).
- Mikulski, Barbara, and Catherine Whitney. *Nine and Counting: The Women of the Senate*. New York: Morrow, 2000.
- Morris, Celia. *Storming the Statehouse: Running for Governor with Ann Richards and Dianne Feinstein*. New York: Scribner's Sons, 1992.
- Roberts, Jerry. *Dianne Feinstein: Never Let Them See You Cry*. San Francisco: Harper-CollinsWest, 1994.

ENRICO FERMI

Born: September 29, 1901

Rome, Italy

Died: November 29, 1954

Chicago, Illinois

Italian-born American physicist and scientist

The Italian American physicist (specialist in the relationship between matter and energy) Enrico Fermi developed the first nuclear (using atomic energy) chain reaction, which helped lead to the creation of the atomic bomb.

Early years

Enrico Fermi was born on September 29, 1901, in Rome, Italy, the third child of Alberto and Ida de Gattis Fermi. His father was an inspector in the Ministry of Railroads, and his mother was a schoolteacher. At about the age of ten his interest in mathematics and physics awakened. A friend of his father's, the engineer Adolfo Amidei, recognized Fermi's intellectual abilities and guided his mathematical and physical studies by loaning him books during his teenage years.

By the time Fermi received his doctorate degree from the University of Pisa, in Italy, in 1922, he had already written several papers on electrodynamics (a branch of physics dealing with the relationships between electric currents and magnets). Fermi went on to study at the University of Göttingen in Germany for eight months. In 1924, Fermi went to study at the University of Leiden, in Holland.

Fermi statistics

Late in 1924, after leaving Leiden, Fermi went to the University of Florence, Italy, where he taught mathematical physics and theories of mechanics (the study of forces and their effect on matter). In 1926 he published his first major discovery, what became known as Fermi-Dirac statistics. He had come up with a way to determine the properties and

behavior of certain particles that obey (conform to) Wolfgang Pauli's exclusion principle. (Pauli's principle holds that no two particles have the same position and the same velocity, or speed.) These obeying particles are now known as fermions.

Fermi's discovery came directly from his own studies. These studies began in 1923 but ran into problems because Pauli's idea was not then known. Fermi saw immediately that all particles (fermions) obeying Pauli's not-yet-proposed exclusion principle would behave in a certain way. This discovery led to an understanding of certain features of gas theory and of how metals conduct electricity, among other things. It also became the foundation of Fermi's widely used 1927 model of the atom.

Theory of beta decay

The years between 1926 and 1938 are considered Fermi's "golden age." He accepted the chair of theoretical physics (existing in theory only) at the University of Rome in 1926 and three years later became one of the first thirty members (and only physicist) to be elected to the Royal Academy of Italy. In 1928 he married Laura Capon; they had two children.

Fermi's most famous work of this period was his 1933 theory of nuclear beta decay. In beta decay a particle (beta particle), known to be identical to an electron in that it is said to have a "negative" electric charge, is given off from the nucleus (core) of an atom. This increases the atomic number (the number of protons, or particles with "positive" electric charges, minus the number of electrons) of the nucleus by one unit. Fermi worked out a detailed theory of beta decay based on the idea that a neutron (a particle with no electric

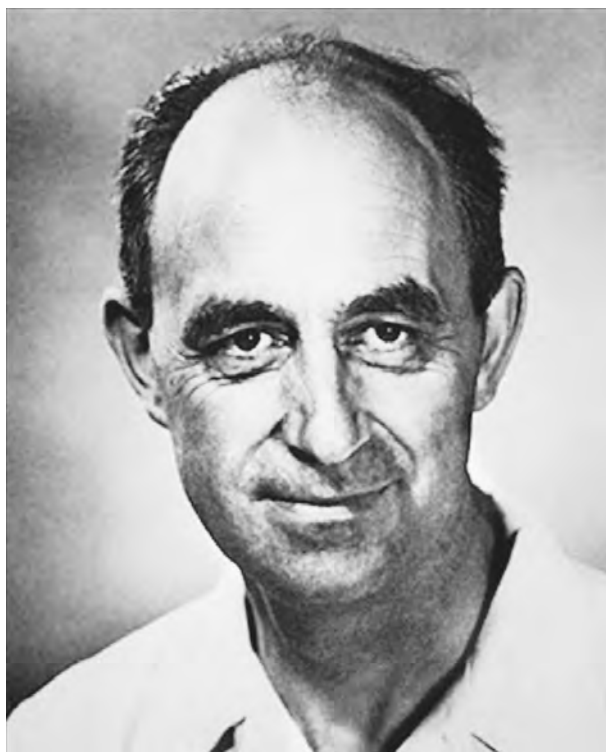
charge) in the nucleus “decays,” or changes, into three particles: a proton, an electron (beta particle), and a neutrino. Actually, the neutrino (a particle without mass or electric charge) was not found in experiments until the 1950s.

Slow neutrons

In the late 1920s Fermi came up with a source of neutrons with which to experiment and determine whether neutrons could cause radioactivity (a process by which the atoms of an element give off particles of matter and harmful rays of energy). Fermi constructed a machine similar to a Geiger counter (a device for measuring radioactivity) and started bombarding different elements with neutrons. He had no success until he detected a weak radioactivity while subjecting fluorium to the treatment. This key date was March 21, 1934. By summer 1934 Fermi and his coworkers had tested many substances and detected a slight radioactivity in some.

Fermi and his team then found that the level of radioactivity created in a substance was increased if a filter made of paraffin (a waxy substance) was placed in the path of the neutrons bombarding the substance. Fermi's idea was that in passing through the paraffin (a compound containing a large amount of hydrogen), the speed of the neutrons was reduced by contact with the hydrogen atoms, and these very slow neutrons caused a much higher radioactivity in substances than fast neutrons did. Slow neutrons produce one kind of reaction, fast neutrons another. The discovery of the properties of slow neutrons was the key discovery in neutron physics.

By 1937 Fermi's wife and their children became concerned by the changing political



Enrico Fermi.

atmosphere in Italy. In December 1938 the Fermi family went to Stockholm, Sweden, for the presentation of the Nobel Prize in physics to Fermi. He and his family then left for the United States, arriving in New York in January 1939, where Fermi accepted a position at Columbia University.

Atomic age

With the assistance of fellow physicist Herbert L. Anderson, Fermi produced a beam of neutrons at Columbia, with which he proved that the fission (the splitting of an atom into two roughly equal parts) of uranium was possible. By mid-1939 there was evidence that a man-made nuclear chain

reaction might be possible. (The goal was to get at least one of the neutrons released in a fission reaction to cause another fission, with the process repeating over and over. This would lead to the release of a large amount of energy very quickly.) The military became very interested, and Fermi was asked to direct the research on the idea. He and other physicists moved to the University of Chicago in early 1942; by October, Fermi was confident that he knew how to get the job done, and the project (the “Manhattan Project”) was under way. Construction began in November, and on December 2 Fermi directed the operation of the first self-sustaining chain reaction created by man. It lasted forty minutes and created power equal to one-half watt, enough to activate a penlight. It was the opening of the Atomic Age.

As a result of Fermi’s experiment, huge national laboratories were constructed, one of which, Los Alamos, had immediate responsibility for the construction of the nuclear bomb. In September 1944 Fermi was brought in from Chicago for the final important stages in the construction of the bomb. By early 1945 the project had proceeded to the point where it was time to explode the deadly weapon. The test, which had the code name “Project Trinity,” was successfully carried out in July 1945, in the desert in southern New Mexico.

Last years

In December 1945 Fermi became professor of physics and a member of the Institute for Nuclear Studies (now the Enrico Fermi Institute) at the University of Chicago. During this period his reading and range of interests decreased considerably. For a few years

he continued to work in nuclear physics. Around 1949 his interest shifted to high-energy (particle) physics. Enrico Fermi died in Chicago, Illinois, on November 29, 1954.

For More Information

- Fermi, Laura. *Atoms in the Family: My Life with Enrico Fermi*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1954.
- Fermi, Laura. *Illustrious Immigrants: The Intellectual Migration from Europe, 1930–41*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1968.
- Segrè, Emilio, ed. *The Collected Papers of Enrico Fermi*. 2 vols. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1962–1965.
- Segrè, Emilio. *Enrico Fermi: Physicist*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1970.

GERALDINE FERRARO

Born: August 26, 1935

Newburgh, New York

American politician and congresswoman

Sixty-four years after American women won the right to vote, Geraldine Ferraro became the first woman candidate for the vice presidency of a major political party. She had previously served three terms in the U.S. House of Representatives.

Early life and education

Geraldine Ferraro was born on August 26, 1935, the third child of Dominick and Antonetta Ferraro. Dominick Ferraro was an Italian immigrant who operated a nightclub in Newburgh, a small city north of New York City known to be wide open to organized crime. When Ferraro was eight years old, her father was arrested and charged with operating an illegal gambling operation. He died of a heart attack the day he was to appear for trial. After her father's death, the Ferraro family moved, first to the Bronx, and then to a working-class neighborhood in Queens. Here, Antonetta Ferraro worked in the garment industry to support herself and her children.

Ferraro was an excellent student, skipping from the sixth to the eighth grade and graduating from high school at age sixteen. She won a full scholarship to Marymount Manhattan College, where she became the editor of the school newspaper. While still attending Marymount, she also took education courses at Hunter College. In this way she prepared herself to teach English in the New York City public school system after she graduated from college. While teaching, Ferraro attended Fordham University's evening law classes. She received her law degree in 1960. The week she passed the bar exam she married John Zaccaro (1935–), but she kept her maiden name in honor of her mother.

Attorney, congresswoman, Democrat

From 1961 to 1974 Ferraro practiced law, had three children, and worked in her husband's real estate business. In 1974, with her youngest child in second grade, she agreed to serve as an assistant district attor-



Geraldine Ferraro.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

ney in Queens County. While in this post she created two special units, the Special Victims Bureau and the Confidential Unit. As chief of these units, Ferraro specialized in cases involving sex crimes, crimes against the elderly, family violence, and child abuse. From 1974 to 1978 she also served on the Advisory Council for the Housing Court of New York City and as president of the Queens County Women's Bar Association.

In 1978 Ferraro decided to run for Congress. She spent more money on her campaign than her opponents in the Democratic primary race and won. Ferraro's opponent in the general election was a conservative

Republican and she chose to wage a campaign stressing law and order. Her slogan, "Finally, a Tough Democrat," appealed to voters, and she won the election. Ferraro easily won reelection in 1980 and 1982. She kept conservatives (in favor of preserving tradition and gradual change) happy by supporting things such as tax breaks for parents of children attending private schools, but for the most part she followed a more liberal course. For example, she spent a great deal of time on issues affecting the rights of women.

In 1982 Ferraro was appointed to the House Budget Committee, which helps plan national spending. She also served as a member of the House Committee on Public Works and Transportation. Coming from a district with two major airports nearby, Ferraro spoke out in favor of improved air safety and noise control. As a member of the Select Committee on Aging she worked to fight crimes against the elderly and to improve health care and create senior citizen centers. As a member of the Congressional Caucus for Women's Issues (a group of congresspeople concerned with issues involving women), Ferraro helped lead the successful battle for passage of the Economic Equity Act, which ended discrimination (unequal treatment) against women in the awarding of salaries and pensions. She was the author of those sections of the Equity Act dealing with private pension reform and increasing retirement savings options for the elderly.

As Ferraro continued to be active in Democratic Party affairs, she also worked hard to achieve national recognition and to correct any impression that she lacked foreign policy experience and skill. In 1983 she

traveled to Central America and to the Middle East. As nomination time approached for the 1984 presidential election, she talked frequently about these trips and about her other international experience. After an exhausting series of interviews, Geraldine Ferraro was chosen by Democratic presidential nominee Walter F. Mondale (1928–) as his running mate.

The 1984 campaign

As a vice presidential candidate, it was thought that Ferraro would greatly benefit Mondale's presidential campaign. Democrats hoped that Ferraro would help take advantage of the gender gap—that is, the clear difference in voting patterns between men and women that occurred in the 1970s and 1980s, with women voting in greater numbers than men and voting for Democratic candidates and peace issues more than men. Ferraro was also appealing as a candidate from a strong working-class and ethnic background and district. Democratic Party leaders considered it very important for Mondale to win among such voters.

The popularity of President Ronald Reagan (1911–) with the voters, however, resulted in a solid reelection victory. Mondale and Ferraro received only 41 percent of the popular vote and thirteen electoral votes (from Minnesota and the District of Columbia). Mondale was hurt most by his plan to raise taxes and his unclearly defined economic program. Ferraro's main problem as a candidate was the investigation of her husband John Zaccaro's real estate business and tax records. The gender gap had not made the difference that the Democrats had hoped for.

Keeping the liberal faith

After Ferraro's term as a congresswoman ended in January 1985, she wrote a book about the vice presidential campaign. For some time, she chose to stay out of politics. In 1986, she passed up the opportunity to challenge Alphonse D'Amato (1937–), the Republican senator from New York. In 1990 Ferraro campaigned aggressively on behalf of female Democratic candidates in New York. She launched her own political comeback in 1992, when she entered the New York Democratic primary as a candidate for the United States Senate. Competing against three other candidates in the primary, Ferraro faced a tough battle and wound up finishing second, fewer than ten thousand votes behind Elizabeth Holtzman (1941–), who was defeated in the general election.

Geraldine Ferraro continues to speak out for liberal policies. In 1993 she published a book demanding more power for women. Beginning in 1996 she appeared every other week on "Crossfire," a political talk show on the Cable News Network (CNN). Occupying the chair opposite former chief of staff John Sununu (1939–), she continued to call for increased government spending and more federal programs on behalf of those she considers "underprivileged." Ferraro declared her political career at an end in 1998 when she lost the Democratic Senate primary race in New York.

Ferraro continues to support women's interests and other social issues. She has served as the copresident of G&L Strategies, a company that advises other businesses and organizations about issues involving race and gender. In 2001 Ferraro made an announcement that she had been diagnosed with an

often-fatal form of blood cancer in 1998. She then began to use her illness as a way to educate the public about cancer and increase funding for research to fight the disease. According to Ferraro, "I will help raise awareness. I will help raise money. I will nudge people I know who could make a difference as far as research is concerned. I will beg people to go out and get themselves checked."

For More Information

Ferraro, Geraldine. *Changing History: Women, Power, and Politics*. Wakefield, RI: Moyer Bell, 1993.

Ferraro, Geraldine, and Linda Bird Francke. *Ferraro: My Story*. New York: Bantam Books, 1985.

Ferraro, Geraldine, and Catherine Whitney. *Framing a Life: A Family Memoir*. New York: Scribner, 1998.

BOBBY FISCHER

Born: March 9, 1943

Chicago, Illinois

American chess player

An eight-time United States chess champion, Bobby Fischer helped win over a new generation of chess fans with his famous 1972 victory over Boris Spassky (1937–). Fischer, a known recluse (a person who prefers to live shut out from the rest of the world), often receives criticism for his anti-Semitic and anti-American views.

Early years

Bobby Fischer was born in Chicago, Illinois, on March 9, 1943. His father was a physicist (scientist who studies matter and energy), and his mother, Regina Fischer, worked as a teacher and a nurse. His parents divorced when he was two years old, and he moved to Brooklyn, New York, with his mother and older sister in 1948. Fischer began playing chess at age six, when his sister bought a set and they both learned how to play. By age eight Fischer was competing and receiving lessons at the Brooklyn Chess Club.

Chess success

Fischer rose quickly through the junior ranks of chess players, and at age thirteen he won the United States Junior Championship, the youngest player to date to have taken the title. Competing against adults, Fischer won the United States Open Championship at age fourteen. He dropped out of Erasmus High School in Brooklyn at age sixteen to concentrate on chess. By the next year he became a challenger for the world title and the youngest player ever to receive the title of international grand master. But Fischer was often uncooperative and badly behaved. He would cancel out of matches unexpectedly, and he held grudges that lasted for years. He withdrew from international competition for five years during the 1960s.

By 1970 Fischer had made a comeback and had built up enough tournament credits to take on the current world champion, the Russian Boris Spassky. In 1972 the arrangements were made for the match to be held at Reykjavik, Iceland, and chess fans were excited about this historic challenge. As the event drew near, though, Fischer continued to behave so oddly that many worried he might not show up for the match. Even after his last-minute arrival, Fischer complained constantly and insulted the country and its people. Still, Fischer beat Spassky and became world champion.

Oddball beliefs

Fischer's life after that historic match was marked by a period of nearly twenty years during which few heard from him. He lost the world title after refusing to accept the challenge of Anatoly Karpov in 1975. In 1981 he was arrested because he looked like

a bank robber the police were chasing. After spending a night in jail, Fischer wrote a rambling pamphlet titled *I Was Tortured in the Pasadena Jailhouse*.

Fischer also demonstrated many offbeat beliefs. For example, though his mother was Jewish, Fischer maintained strongly anti-Semitic (opposed to Jewish people) views. He also distrusted doctors, thought that the Russian government was out to kill him, and, according to an article in *Maclean's*, he had his dental fillings replaced "because he feared that Soviet (Russian) agents might be able to transmit damaging rays into his brain through the metal in his teeth."

Later years

In 1992 Fischer agreed to take on Spassky again for \$5 million in prize money. The match was planned for the town of Sveti Stefan, in a region of the Yugoslav republic near the former republic of Bosnia-Herzegovina, which had recently been at war. At that time U.S. president George H. W. Bush (1924–) had imposed sanctions (the refusal to do business with a group in order to get that group to change its policies) on Yugoslavia. This meant that by playing in the match Fischer would be breaking the law. At a press conference, Fischer spat on a letter from the U.S. Treasury Department that threatened him with fines and imprisonment if he played. The match, which ended in fifteen draws, showed that Fischer was still a skilled player. When the U.S. government brought charges against Fischer in December 1992, he chose to stay in eastern Europe.

By the mid-1990s Fischer, the author of several chess books and the inventor of a chess timing clock, was living in Budapest, Hungary,

with a nineteen-year-old girlfriend, Hungarian chess star Zita Rajcsanyi. In 1999 he gave an interview to a Hungarian radio station in which he complained about Jews. In 2001 there were reports that Fischer was playing chess on the Internet under a different name.

For More Information

Brady, Frank. *Bobby Fischer: Profile of a Prodigy*. New York: Dover Publications, 1989.

Collins, John. *My Seven Chess Prodigies*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1974.

Denker, Arnold, and Larry Parr. *The Bobby Fischer I Knew and Other Stories*. San Francisco: Hypermodern Press, 1995.

Waitzkin, Fred. *Searching for Bobby Fischer*. New York: Random House, 1988.

ELLA FITZGERALD

Born: April 25, 1918

Newport News, Virginia

Died: June 15, 1996

Beverly Hills, California

African American singer

ELLA Fitzgerald was one of the most exciting jazz singers of her time and, because of the naturalness of her style, had a popular appeal that extended far beyond the borders of jazz.

A rising star

Ella Fitzgerald was born on April 25, 1918, in Newport News, Virginia, but she spent her youth just outside New York City in Yonkers, New York, and received her musical education in public schools. During elementary school she began singing at her local church, the Bethany African Methodist Episcopal Church. At fifteen her mother died and she was cared for by her aunt in Harlem, a black neighborhood in New York that was rich with jazz music.

When only sixteen, she received her first big break at the Apollo Theater in Harlem, when she won an amateur-night contest and impressed saxophonist-bandleader Benny Carter (1907–). He recommended her to drummer-bandleader Chick Webb (c. 1900–1939), who hired her in 1935. She soon became a recording star with the band, and her own composition “A-tisket, A-tasket” (1938) was such a smash hit that the song became her trademark for many years thereafter. When Webb died in 1939, Fitzgerald assumed leadership of the band for the next year.

“The First Lady of Song”

By 1940 Fitzgerald was recognized throughout the music world as a vocal wonder—a singer with clarity of tone, flexibility of range, fluency of rhythm, and, above all, a talent for improvisation (to make up without practice) that was equally effective on ballads and faster tunes. Although for a long time she had a better reputation among fellow musicians than with the general public, this changed soon after she joined Norman Granz’s Jazz at the Philharmonic (JATP) in 1946. She made annual tours with the group

and was always the concert favorite. Three of her unflinching show-stoppers were “Oh, Lady Be Good,” “Stomping at the Savoy,” and “How High the Moon.” Each would begin at a medium tempo and then speed up as Fitzgerald moved up-tempo and “scatted” (that is, sang harmonic variations of the melody in nonsense syllables). The huge JATP crowds always responded well.

By the early 1950s Fitzgerald’s domination of fans’s and critics’s polls was absolute. In fact, she won the *Down Beat* readers’ poll every year from 1953 to 1970 and became known as “The First Lady of Song.” In 1955 she ended her twenty-year recording relationship with Decca in order to record for Norman Granz’s Verve label. She proceeded to produce a series of legendary “Songbook” albums, each devoted to the compositions of a great songwriter or songwriting team, such as the Gershwins (George, 1898–1937; Ira, 1896–1983), Cole Porter (1891–1964), Irving Berlin (1888–1989), and Duke Ellington (1899–1974). The lush orchestrations allowed Fitzgerald to display the classy pop-singer side of herself. In the two-volume Ellington set, her jazzier self moved aside for the melodist in her.

Touring the world

Under Granz’s personal management Fitzgerald also began to play choice hotel jobs and made her first feature film appearance in *Pete Kelly’s Blues* (1955). In 1957 she worked at the Copacabana in New York City and gave concerts at the Hollywood Bowl. In 1958, in the company of the Duke Ellington Orchestra, she gave a concert at Carnegie Hall as part of an extended European and United States tour with the band. In the early

1960s she continued to work the big hotel circuit—the Flamingo in Las Vegas, the Fairmont Hotel in San Francisco, and the Americana in New York City. She also continued to tour Europe, Latin America, and Japan with the Oscar Peterson (1925–) trio, which was three-fourths of Granz’s JATP house rhythm section. In 1965 and 1966 she was reunited with Ellington for another tour and record date.

Fitzgerald was always blessed with superb musicians accompanying her, from the full orchestral support of Chick Webb and Duke Ellington to the smaller JATP ensembles. In 1968 she teamed up with yet another, the magnificent pianist Tommy Flanagan, who headed a trio that served her into the mid-1970s. In 1971 Fitzgerald had serious eye surgery, but within a year she was performing again. Her singing, however, began to show evidence of decline: the voice that was once an instrument of natural beauty and effortless grace became a bit thin and strained. Nevertheless, so great was her talent that she continued to excite concert audiences and to record effectively. She appeared after the mid-1960s with over fifty symphonic orchestras in the United States.

A large, pleasant-looking woman with a surprisingly girlish speaking voice, Ella Fitzgerald sometimes forgot lyrics. But the audiences loved it and delighted in her ability to work her way out of these potentially embarrassing moments on stage. Unlike some other great jazz singers, like Billie Holiday (1915–1959) and Anita O’Day, Fitzgerald avoided falling into drug addiction. She was married twice. The first marriage, to Bernie Korngay in 1941, was annulled



Ella Fitzgerald.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

(made invalid) two years later. The second, to bassist Ray Brown (1926–) in 1948, ended in divorce in 1952 (they had one son).

The legacy of Ella

Was Ella Fitzgerald essentially a jazz singer or a pop singer? Jazz purists say that she was often glossy and predictable and that she lacked the emotional depth of Billie Holiday, the imagination of Sarah Vaughan (1924–1990) or Anita O’Day, and the blues-based power of Dinah Washington (1924–1963). The criticisms sprang partly from her “crossover” popularity and ignored her obvious strengths and contributions: Fitzgerald

was not only one of the pioneers of scat singing, but, beyond that, she was a down-to-earth singer whose harmonic variations were always unforced. Plus, she was a supreme melodist who never let herself get in the way of any song she sang.

Fitzgerald died on June 15, 1996, at the age of seventy-eight. She left a legacy that will not soon be forgotten. In her lifetime she was honored with fourteen Grammys, the Kennedy Center Award, as well as an honorary doctorate in music from Yale University. In 1992 President George Bush (1924–) honored her with the National Medal of Freedom. Fitzgerald's impressive financial estate was left in a trust, including the \$2.5 million in proceeds from the sale of her Beverly Hills home.

For More Information

- Fidelman, Geoffrey Mark. *First Lady of Song: Ella Fitzgerald for the Record*. New York: Citadel Press, 1996.
- Gourse, Leslie. *The Ella Fitzgerald Companion: Seven Decades of Commentary*. New York: Schirmer Books, 1998.
- Kliment, Bud. *Ella Fitzgerald (Black Americans of Achievement)*. Broomall, PA: Chelsea House, 1988.
- Krohn, Katherine E. *Ella Fitzgerald: First Lady of Song*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 2001.
- Nicholson, Stuart. *Ella Fitzgerald: A Biography of the First Lady of Jazz*. New York: Scribner, 1994.
- Wyman, Carolyn. *Ella Fitzgerald: Jazz Singer Supreme*. Danbury, CT: Franklin Watts, 1993.

F. SCOTT FITZGERALD

Born: September 24, 1896

St. Paul, Minnesota

Died: December 21, 1940

Hollywood, California

American author, novelist, and playwright

The American author F. Scott Fitzgerald, a legendary figure of the 1920s, was an extremely observant artist, a beautiful writer, and an exceptional craftsman. His tragic life was ironically similar to his romantic art.

Fitzgerald's younger years

On September 24, 1896, Francis Scott Key Fitzgerald was born into an Irish Catholic family in St. Paul, Minnesota. His mother was from a wealthy family, and his father, Edward, was a furniture manufacturer. After Edward's business failed, he was employed by Proctor and Gamble, and the family transferred to Buffalo, New York. The family lived for some years in Buffalo and Syracuse; but in 1908, when Fitzgerald's father lost his job, they returned to St. Paul. For the most part, Fitzgerald was privately educated; he attended Newman School in Hackensack, New Jersey, from 1911 to 1913 and worked on the school paper.

Fitzgerald enrolled at Princeton University in 1913. There, he worked on *The Princeton Tiger*, a magazine published by the university. He also wrote for Princeton's Triangle Club, which was a distinguished organization that put on musicals. Because of ill health and low grades, he left the university in 1915. He returned to Princeton in 1916 but left a year

later without a degree and joined the U.S. Army as a second lieutenant. Stationed in Alabama in 1918, he met Zelda Sayre, then eighteen years old; he would marry her a few years later. After he left the army he took an advertising job for a brief period. Back home in St. Paul, he finished his first novel, *This Side of Paradise*, which was published in 1919, and that same year he had remarkable success placing nine short stories in leading magazines.

First publications

Upon publication of *This Side of Paradise* (1920), Fitzgerald married Sayre in New York City. Of this period he later recalled riding up Fifth Avenue in a cab—young, rich, famous, and in love (he might easily have added handsome)—suddenly bursting into tears because he knew he would never be so happy again. He was right. Despite great earnings and fame, he and Zelda lived grandly and lavishly—but tragically.

A daughter was born in 1921 after the couple had spent some time in Europe. When Fitzgerald's second novel, *The Beautiful and the Damned* (1922), and a collection of short stories, *Tales of the Jazz Age* (1922), sold well, they rented a house on Long Island and ran into debt because of their reckless spending. Fitzgerald attempted to recover by writing a play, *The Vegetable* (1923), but it was unsuccessful. The Fitzgeralds went to Europe for over two years. The high points of this trip were publication of *The Great Gatsby* (1925) and the beginning of Scott's friendship with Ernest Hemingway (1899–1961). In 1927 Fitzgerald went to Hollywood on his first movie assignment. Afterward the Fitzgeralds again went overseas several times.



F. Scott Fitzgerald.

Zelda's first major nervous breakdown, in 1930, and her following treatment in a Swiss clinic became the basis for Fitzgerald's next novel, *Tender Is the Night* (1934). Zelda spent the rest of her life in and out of treatment centers, and Fitzgerald's own life ran a similar unfortunate course.

Analysis of the novels

This Side of Paradise (1920), an autobiographical (having to do with one's life story) novel, tells of the youth and early manhood of a Princeton undergraduate. The climax occurs when he shifts his devotion from football to literature, while at the same time he

grows in character. This work struck a nerve in the reading public, chiefly for its new type of heroine—the “flapper,” a young woman who goes against the idea that a woman must be stricter in her morals and behavior than a man. She smokes, drinks, dances, and is considered to be somewhat low in her character and conduct.

The Beautiful and the Damned (1922) deals with a couple who is concerned with only themselves. Tony Patch, grandson of a millionaire, and his beautiful wife live extravagantly on the expectations of Tony's inheritance, but the grandfather discovers Tony's alcoholism and wastefulness and disinherits him; however, after the grandfather dies, the will is broken. Ironically, the inheritance only worsens the destruction of Tony's morals. As with most of Fitzgerald's novels, the autobiographical elements are fairly obvious.

The Great Gatsby (1925) is an American classic, generally regarded as Fitzgerald's finest work. It contains the themes that pass through all of his fiction: the hardened indifference of wealth, the hollowness of the American success myth, and the sleaziness of the wealthy lifestyle. It is the story of Jay Gatz, a successful, vaguely disreputable man, who has a background of poverty and has altered his name to “Gatsby.” He emerges as morally superior to the people who take advantage of his parties and the reckless rich whom he so hopelessly imitates. Gatsby dies unrealistically attempting to reclaim his former love, Daisy. *The Great Gatsby* is a major contribution to the writing work of the twentieth century.

The theme of *Tender Is the Night* (1934; later restructured by Malcolm Cowley) is parasitism—the health of one person gained

through harm to the other—and the facts bear an unmistakable resemblance to Scott and Zelda's marriage.

The Last Tycoon (1941), published after Fitzgerald's death—after Edmund Wilson put it together from Fitzgerald's unfinished manuscript—is the story of a movie producer. Though Wilson calls it Fitzgerald's most mature work, it has received very little critical attention.

Short stories

Many regard Fitzgerald's short stories as his best work. The titles of his collections are a representation of the spirit of the times. *Flappers and Philosophers* (1921) contains “The Off-Shore Pirate” and “The Ice Palace.” *Tales of the Jazz Age* (1922) includes “May Day” and “The Diamond as Big as the Ritz.” The best-known pieces in *All the Sad Young Men* (1926) are “Winter Dreams,” a basic example of Fitzgerald's romantic vision, and “The Rich Boy.” Fitzgerald's final collection, *Taps at Reveille* (1935), includes “Babylon Revisited,” perhaps his most widely anthologized (stories written by different authors that are collected and published together) story.

Last years

Fitzgerald earned over four hundred thousand dollars between 1919 and 1934, but he and Zelda lived so expensively that they barely managed to cover their bills. When *Tender Is the Night* failed to excite interest, financial problems became critical; by 1937 Fitzgerald owed forty thousand dollars despite continued earnings from magazine stories. Zelda had been permanently returned to medical care in 1934; and the years from 1935 to 1937 saw Fitzgerald's

own decline—increasing alcoholism and physical illness—which he described with emotional openness in articles that appear in *Esquire* in the mid-1930s.

In 1937 Fitzgerald signed a movie contract at a weekly salary of one thousand dollars. His relationship with gossip columnist Sheilah Graham during the last three years of his life is described in her *Beloved Infidel* (1958). After two heart attacks Fitzgerald died on December 21, 1940. Zelda Fitzgerald died in a fire in 1947 at Highland Sanitarium, Asheville, North Carolina, leaving a novel, *Save Me the Waltz* (1932).

For More Information

Prigozy, Ruth. *F. Scott Fitzgerald*. Woodstock, NY: Overlook Press, 2001.

Ring, Frances Kroll. *Against the Current*. San Francisco, CA: D. S. Ellis, 1985.

Taylor, Kendall. *Sometimes Madness Is Wisdom*. New York: Ballantine Books, 2001.

Turnbull, Andrew. *Scott Fitzgerald*. New York: Scribner, 1962.

GUSTAVE FLAUBERT

Born: December 12, 1821

Rouen, France

Died: May 8, 1880

Croisset, France

French novelist and author

The French novelist Gustave Flaubert was one of the most important forces in creating the modern novel as a deliberate art form and in introducing this objective form of writing in France.

Flaubert's early years

Gustave Flaubert was born on December 12, 1821, in Rouen, France. His father, Achille-Cleophas Flaubert was a doctor and an important Rouen citizen, and his mother, Anne-Justine-Caroline Fleuriot, was a physician's daughter. He had an older brother, Achille, and a younger sister, Caroline, with whom he had a close relationship. Gustave began to develop his writing skills at an early age and wrote plays, which he put on for his family at the age of nine or ten. He loved to study history and was a wonderful reader. His sister died during childbirth when Flaubert was twenty-four. She left behind her daughter, Caroline Hamard, who was raised by Gustave and his mother. His mother would live with him until his fiftieth year.

As an adolescent of fifteen, Flaubert fell in love with an older married woman, Elisa Schlésinger, and remembered her ever after as a pure and innocent love. The young man was sent to Paris, France, to study law. He had easy access to prostitutes (people who receive money for performing sexual acts), and this led to venereal disease (a sexually transmitted disease) from which he never recovered.

Illness leads to writing career

In 1845 Flaubert had his first attack of temporal-lobe epilepsy (a brain disorder that causes seizures [a partial or complete loss of



Gustave Flaubert.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

consciousness that involves a loss of muscle control)). He was crippled by his seizures, which were terrifying for him and reappeared at intervals throughout his life. In 1846 he had to face the deaths of his father and his beloved sister. Flaubert decided to quit his legal studies, since any emotional excitement brought on an attack of his epilepsy. He felt he must become an observer of life and not a participant in it, so he devoted himself only to his writing.

Flaubert found peace in literature, for he had been slowly moving away from the idea of writing emotionally and moving toward the idea of writing as a detachment, which

easily balanced with his physical state. He began writing *The Temptation of Saint Anthony*. He completed the first version in 1849, but he was unable to get it published. This was a bitter blow, and during the next twenty-five years he would spend time revising the work.

After this failure Flaubert left immediately for a twenty-month journey through the eastern Mediterranean, accompanied by his lifelong friend Maxime Du Camp (1822–1894). He had studied Egypt and the Holy Land which he had described in his work *Saint Anthony*. He found that he was able to recognize places that he had only read about and described in his work. This proved to him that art could help to describe and envision reality. If a person has never viewed a particular location, they can see it through its description.

Madame Bovary

In 1851 Flaubert began writing *Madame Bovary*, on which he worked until 1856. It was published in 1857 and caused quite a disturbance; Flaubert in fact was unsuccessfully tried on the charge of contributing to public immorality (the state of doing wrong, and behaving in a way that is not socially acceptable). This novel analyzes the rural middle class, as well as tells of Emma Bovary, a girl that goes through life with romantic obsessions that she can not resolve. At the end of the novel, she finds her dream world in shreds around her, and she prefers death to accepting a world that does not meet with her fantasies, so she takes her own life.

Madame Bovary displayed a new technique for writing. Flaubert believed that writers must write from observed facts and events.

He wanted writers to be like scientists—objective, unprejudiced (fair), withdrawn, and impassive. Flaubert asked the writer to generalize his observations into an ideal, a type whose dynamic power becomes apparent through the artistry of its presentation.

Flaubert's next work, *Salammbô* (1862), recounted the revolt of the mercenaries (people who are hired to fight for a foreign ruler) against Carthage in the third century B.C.E. The novel is repetitious; however, Flaubert's accurate reconstruction of ancient times did influence later historical novels.

A Sentimental Education

In 1864 Flaubert started work on *A Sentimental Education*, which was published in 1869. His great Parisian novel, this work is considered the equal of *Madame Bovary* although less popular. Flaubert's *A Sentimental Education* suggests that unfulfilled dreams are always superior to reality, which destroys them.

The end of the 1860s and the start of the 1870s marked a period of disasters for Flaubert. He was stunned by the deaths of many of his closest friends. In 1872 he also lost his mother, the greatest of all his losses. Flaubert's depression shows in his next work, a revision (the third) of his earlier *Temptation of Saint Anthony* (1874). It summarizes his lifelong absorption with religion and proposes the beliefs that all religions are equally true and equally false, equally beautiful and equally a source of troubled emotion since they all must end.

Three Tales

Flaubert had brought up the orphaned niece of his beloved sister. His niece was

financially ruined in 1875, and he sacrificed his fortune in an attempt to help her. Bankrupt, unable to help her further yet worrying over both their situations, he turned to the writing of his *Three Tales* (1877): "A Simple Heart," "Legend of Saint Julian the Hospitaller," and "Hérodiad."

Flaubert began his uncompleted last work, *Bouvard and Pécuchet*, before the financial crisis of his niece; he continued it after he had finished the *Three Tales*. On May 8, 1880, Flaubert died from a brain hemorrhage (the bleeding from a broken blood vessel) after having spent his last years in anguish. He was sixty years old.

For More Information

Bart, Benjamin F. *Flaubert*. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press, 1967.

Lottman, Herbert R. *Flaubert: A Biography*. Boston, MA: Little, Brown, 1989.

Starkie, Enid. *Flaubert: The Making of the Master*. New York: Atheneum, 1967.

Wall, Geoffrey. *Flaubert, a Life*. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 2002.

MALCOLM FORBES

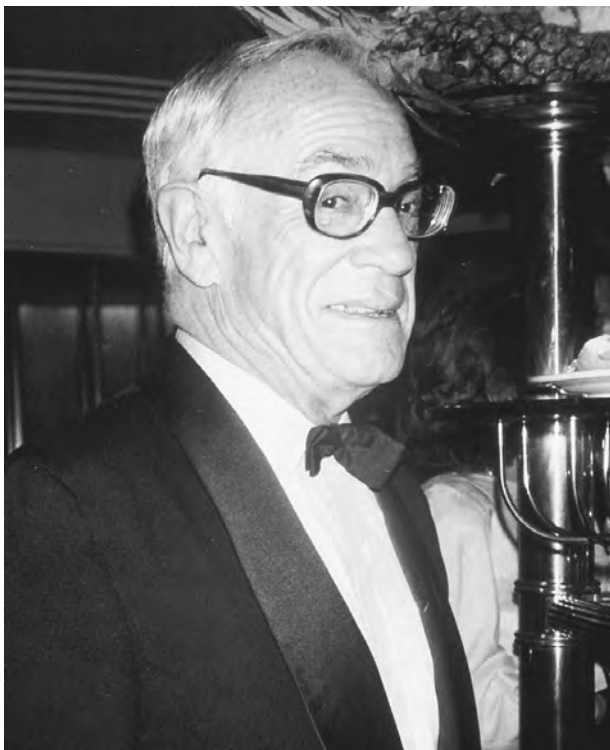
Born: August 19, 1919

New York, New York

Died: February 24, 1990

Far Hills, New Jersey

American publisher



Malcolm Forbes.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Millionaire Malcolm Forbes was the publisher of *Forbes* magazine from 1957 to 1990. He was a man known for his business sense and his lavish lifestyle.

The young Malcolm

Malcolm Stevenson Forbes was born on August 19, 1919, in Brooklyn, New York, to B. C. (Bertie) Forbes and Adelaide Stevenson Forbes. He was one of five children who grew up in an upper-middle-class family in Englewood, New Jersey. His interest in publications developed early as he wrote and printed a

household newspaper when he was eight years old. At the age of thirteen he obtained his first printing press and by the age of fifteen he had published papers for his household, the scouts, and school. He would spend time in the summers working at the *Forbes* magazine offices, which his father founded. He attended the private schools in Tarrytown, New York, and graduated with honors from Lawrenceville School, in New Jersey, in 1937. He continued his education at Princeton University, where he majored in political science.

Inherited wealth

A savvy businessman by all accounts, Forbes inherited his wealth from his father who established him at the *Fairfield Times* newspaper as owner and publisher only days after his graduation from Princeton. As he was fond of saying, he was loaded with “sheer ability, spelled i-n-h-e-r-i-t-a-n-c-e,” as quoted in *Forbes*. He went on to publish the *Lancaster Tribune* in 1942, and four years later, after a stint in the army on the European front of World War II (1939–45; a war in which England, China, the Soviet Union, and from 1941 the United States, fought against and defeated the forces of Germany, Italy, and Japan) he joined the staff at *Forbes* magazine. He was first an associate publisher, then publisher, editor, editor in chief, vice president, and, finally, president. As a politician, Forbes was less than successful; he said that he was “nosed out by a landslide” in a New Jersey race for governor in 1957.

Lavish lifestyle

Forbes did not like to put an actual figure on his income and holdings, though he published practically everybody else’s value.

Early in 1990, the *New York Post* estimated Forbes's holdings by totaling up his collections, houses, and publications, but as *Time* magazine reported it, the estimates were generous; "Malcolm is a billionaire, but only if you swallow an estimate of \$65 million for his flagship magazine's annual profits." *People* magazine listed eight houses, a palace in Tangier, Morocco, a chateau in Normandy, France, and the island of Lauthala in Fiji as his dwellings.

Forbes is characterized as a man who loved the spotlight, who shamelessly enjoyed the privileges his money afforded him, and who was always in pursuit of adventure. Forbes was a balloonist, a motorcyclist, and a sailor who took many trips on his huge yacht, the *Highlander*. He collected anything precious and beautiful—most famously, Faberge eggs.

Forbes was married for thirty-nine years to Roberta Remsen Laidlaw before their divorce in 1985. The couple had five children: Malcolm S. Jr., Robert Laidlaw, Christopher Charles, Timothy Carter, and Moira Hamilton. Malcolm S. Jr., known as Steve, ran for president in 1996.

Although not an obvious charitable contributor, Forbes did give millions of dollars each year to charities. He had been at a charity bridge tournament the day he died of a heart attack on February 24, 1990. "Malcolm Forbes was a giant of American business," said then-President George Bush (1924–), as quoted in *Forbes*: "His success in publishing reflected the tremendous vitality of our nation and served to inform and inspire a generation of successful business leaders. He was greatly admired and will be greatly missed." Former president Ronald Reagan offered a similar tribute: "Malcolm was truly a dear friend and

we will miss him sorely. We hold our memories of him close to our hearts and are thankful to have known him."

For More Information

Forbes, Malcolm S., and Jeff Bloch. *They Went That-A-Way*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1988.

Winans, Christopher. *Malcolm Forbes: The Man Who Had Everything*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1990.

HENRY FORD

Born: July 30, 1863

Dearborn, Michigan

Died: April 7, 1947

Dearborn, Michigan

American automobile pioneer and industrialist

After founding the Ford Motor Company, the American industrialist Henry Ford developed a system of mass production based on the assembly line and the conveyor belt which produced low-priced cars that were affordable to middle-class Americans.

Ford's early years

The oldest of six children, Henry Ford was born on July 30, 1863, on a prosperous farm near Dearborn, Michigan. He attended school until the age of fifteen, at which time he developed a dislike of farm life and a fascination for machinery. He had little interest in

school and was a poor student. He never learned to spell or to read well. Ford would write using only the simplest of sentences. He instead preferred to work with mechanical objects, particularly watches. He repaired his first watch when he was thirteen years old, and would continue to repair watches for enjoyment throughout his life. Although he did not like working on the farm, he did learn that there was great value in working hard and being responsible.

In 1879 Ford left for Detroit, Michigan, to become an apprentice (a person who works for another to learn a specific skill or trade) at a machine shop. He then moved to the Detroit Drydock Company. During his apprenticeship he received \$2.50 a week, but room and board cost \$3.50 so he labored nights repairing clocks and watches. He later worked for Westinghouse, locating and repairing road engines.

Ford's father wanted him to be a farmer and offered him forty acres of timberland, provided he give up machinery. Ford accepted the proposal, then built a first-class machinist's workshop on the property. His father was disappointed, but Ford did use the two years on the farm to win a bride, Clara Bryant.

Ford's first car

Ford began to spend more and more time in Detroit working for the Edison Illuminating Company, which later became the Detroit Edison Company. By 1891 he had left the farm permanently. Four years later he became chief engineer. While at the Edison Illuminating Company he met Thomas A. Edison (1847–1931), who eventually became one of his closest friends.

Ford devoted his spare time to building an automobile with an internal combustion engine, a type of engine in which a combination of fuel and air is burned inside of the engine to produce mechanical energy to perform useful work. His first car, finished in 1896, followed the attempts, some successful, of many other innovators. His was a small car driven by a two-cylinder, four-cycle motor and by far the lightest (500 pounds) of the early American vehicles. The car was mounted on bicycle wheels and had no reverse gear.

In 1899 the Detroit Edison Company forced Ford to choose between automobiles and his job. Ford chose cars and that year formed the Detroit Automobile Company, which collapsed after he disagreed with his financial backers. His next venture was the unsuccessful Henry Ford Automobile Company. Ford did gain some status through the building of racing cars, which resulted in the "999," driven by the famous Barney Oldfield (1878–1946).

Ford Motor Company

By this time Ford had conceived the idea of a low-priced car for the masses, but this notion flew in the face of popular thought, which considered cars as only for the rich. After the "999" victories, Alex Y. Malcomson, a Detroit coal dealer, offered to aid Ford in a new company. The result was the Ford Motor Company, founded in 1903, with its small, \$28,000 financing supplied mostly by Malcomson. However, exchanges of stock were made to obtain a small plant, motors, and transmissions. Ford's stock was in return for his services. Much of the firm's success can be credited to Ford's assis-

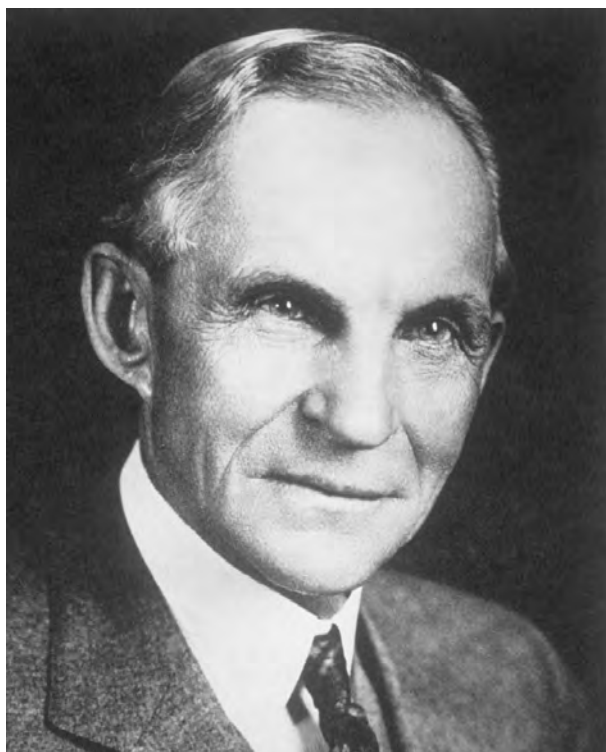
tants—James S. Couzens, C. H. Wills, and John and Horace Dodge.

By 1903 over fifteen hundred firms had attempted to enter the new and struggling automobile industry, but only a few, such as Ransom Eli Olds (1864–1950), had become firmly established. Ford began production of a Model A, which imitated the Oldsmobile, and followed with other models, to the letter S. The public responded, and the company flourished. By 1907 profits exceeded \$1,100,000, and the net worth of the company stood at \$1,038,822.

Ford also defeated the Selden patent (the legal rights given to a company or person for the sole use, sale, or production of an item for a limited period of time), which had been granted on a “road engine” in 1895. Rather than challenge the patent’s legal soundness, manufacturers secured a license to produce engines. When Ford was denied such a license, he fought back; after eight years of legal action, the courts decided the patent was valid but not violated. The case gave the Ford Company valuable publicity, with Ford cast as the underdog, but by the time the issue was settled, the situation had been reversed.

New principles

In 1909 Ford made the important decision to manufacture only one type of car—the Model T, or the “Tin Lizzie.” By now he firmly controlled the company, having bought out Malcomson. The Model T was durable, easy to operate, and economical; it sold for \$850 and came in one color—black. Within four years Ford was producing over forty thousand cars per year.



Henry Ford.

During this rapid expansion Ford held firmly to two principles: cutting costs by increasing productivity and paying high wages to his employees. In production methods Ford believed the work should be brought by a conveyor belt to the worker at waist-high level. This assembly-line technique required seven years to perfect. In 1914 he startled the industrial world by raising the minimum wage to five dollars a day, almost double the company’s average wage. In addition, the “Tin Lizzie” had dropped in price to \$600; it later went down to \$360.

World War I

Ford was now an internationally known figure, but his public activities were less suc-

cessful than his industrial ones. In 1915 his peace ship, the *Oskar II*, sailed to Europe to seek an end to World War I (1914–18; a war fought between the German-led Central powers and the Allies: England, the United States, Italy, and other nations). His suit against the *Chicago Tribune* for calling him an anarchist (a person who desires to change the existing government) received unfortunate publicity. In 1918 his race for the U.S. Senate as a Democrat met a narrow defeat. Ford's worst mistake was his approval of an anti-Semitic (anti-Jewish) campaign waged by the Ford-owned newspaper, the *Dearborn Independent*.

When the United States entered World War I, Ford's output of military equipment and his promise to give back all profits on war production (which he never did) silenced the critics. By the end of the conflict his giant River Rouge plant, the world's largest industrial facility, was near completion. Ford gained total control of the company by buying the outstanding stock.

In the early 1920s the company continued its rapid growth, at one point producing 60 percent of the total United States output. But problems began to arise. Ford was an inflexible man and continued to rely on the Model T, even as public tastes shifted. By the middle of the decade Ford had lost his dominant position to the General Motors (GM) company. He finally saw his error and in 1927 stopped production of the Model T. However, since the new Model A was not produced for eighteen months, there was a good deal of unemployment among Ford workers. The new car still did not permanently overtake the GM competition, Chevrolet, and Ford remained second.

Final years

Ford's last years were frustrating. He never accepted the changes brought about by the Great Depression (a period in the 1930s marked by severe economic hardship) and the 1930s New Deal, President Franklin D. Roosevelt's (1882–1945) plan to help the United States recover from the Great Depression. He fell under the spell of Harry Bennett, a notorious figure with connections to organized crime, who, as head of Ford's security department, influenced every phase of company operations and created friction between Ford and his son Edsel. For various reasons Ford, alone in his industry, refused to cooperate with the National Recovery Administration, a 1930s government agency that prepared and oversaw codes of fair competition for businesses and industries. He did not like labor unions, refused to recognize the United Automobile Workers (UAW), and brutally restricted their attempts to organize the workers of his company.

Ford engaged in some philanthropic or charitable activity, such as the Henry Ford Hospital in Detroit. The original purpose of the Ford Foundation, established in 1936 and now one of the world's largest foundations, was to avoid estate taxes. Ford's greatest philanthropic accomplishment was the Ford Museum and Greenfield Village in Dearborn, Michigan.

A stroke in 1938 slowed Ford, but he did not trust Edsel and so continued to exercise control of his company. During World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis: Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States), Ford at first made pacifist, or peace-minded, statements, but changed his

mind and contributed greatly to the war effort. Ford's grandson, Henry Ford II, took over the company after the war. Henry Ford died on April 7, 1947, in Dearborn.

For More Information

- Brough, James. *The Ford Dynasty: An American Story*. New York: Doubleday, 1977.
- Collier, Peter, and David Horowitz. *The Fords: An American Epic*. San Francisco: Summit, 2001.
- Kent, Zachary. *The Story of Henry Ford and the Automobile*. Chicago: Children's Press, 1990.
- McCarthy, Pat. *Henry Ford: Building Cars for Everyone*. Berkeley Hts., NJ: Enslow, 2002.
- Middleton, Haydn. *Henry Ford: The People's Carmaker*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1998.
- Weitzman, David L. *Model T: How Henry Ford Built a Legend*. New York: Crown, 2002.

FRANCIS OF ASSISI

Born: c. 1182

Assisi, Umbria, Italy

Died: October 1226

Assisi, Umbria, Italy

Italian religious leader

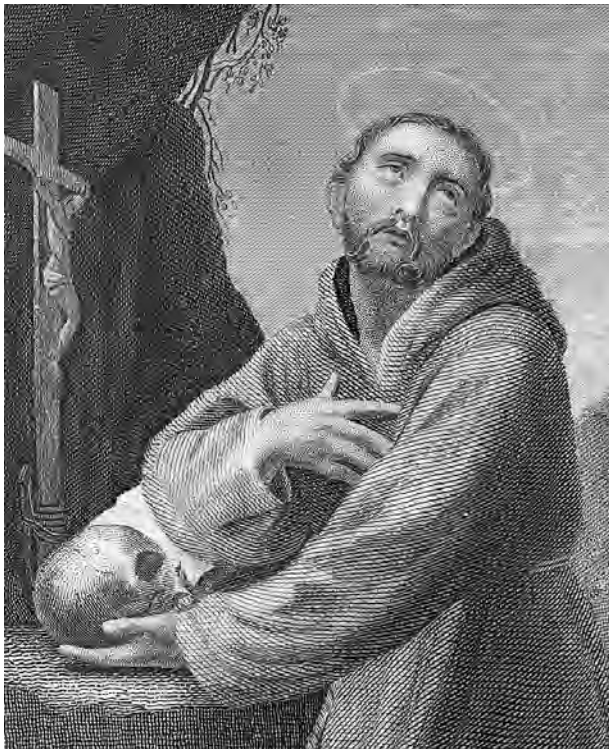
The Italian religious leader St. Francis of Assisi founded the religious order known as the Franciscans. He became renowned for his love, simplicity, and practice of poverty.

Early years

Francis was born Giovanni di Bernardore, but because his father called him Francis, so did everyone else. He was baptized shortly after his birth in the town of Assisi in central Italy in 1182. His father, Pietro di Bernardone, was a successful cloth merchant, and Francis grew up with a love of fine clothes and good times. He led the other young men of the town in enjoying good food and drink, singing, and dancing. He was educated in math, poetry, and music and learned to read and write while attending a school that was part of the Church of Saint Giorgio of Assisi. Francis was expected to become a cloth merchant like his father and did not plan to attend college.

Francis joined the forces from Assisi in their fight against Perugia, another town in Italy. When he was twenty, he was taken prisoner. A year later, sobered by jail and sickness, he underwent several religious experiences in quick succession. In one of these, while he was praying in the run-down chapel of Saint Damiano outside Assisi, he heard a voice from the crucifix telling him, "Francis, go repair my house, which is falling in ruins." Francis went quickly back to the city, sold his horse and some cloth from his father's shop, and came back to give the money to the priest at Saint Damiano.

Francis's father, furious that his son wasted his money on churches and beggars, took him before the bishop to bring him to his senses. When the hearing began, Francis calmly took off all of his clothes, gave them to his father (the astonished bishop quickly covered Francis with a cloak), and said that he was now recognizing only his Father in heaven, not his father on earth. He lived his life from this time on without money and without family ties.



Francis of Assisi.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

His spirit

The thirteenth century was a time of troubadours, or poet-musicians, and Francis had the best of their characteristics. He was happy, he sang, he loved nature; he spoke to the birds and the animals as though they were his friends. In his “Canticle of Creatures,” also called “Canticle of the Sun” (a canticle is a religious song), he wrote about Brother Sun and Sister Moon. Once he was heard to beg pardon of his own body for its sins. Francis referred to his way of life as his marriage to Lady Poverty.

The thirteenth century was also a time when the Christian religion was taken very

much for granted, and Francis felt the need to return to the original spirit of Christ. This meant living without materialistic attachments, and it also meant loving other people. A number of the young men of Assisi, attracted by Francis’s example, joined him in his new way of life. In 1209 Francis and his companions went to Rome, Italy, where they presented their ideas to Pope Innocent III (c. 1160–c. 1216; the pope is the head of the Catholic Church) and received his approval. They found themselves influencing more and more people, including a lady named Clare, whom Francis helped to enter a monastery of nuns and who later began the “second order” of Franciscans, the order for women.

In 1212 Francis left for the Holy Land, or Palestine (the land in the Middle East where Christ had lived). His ship ran into bad weather, and he had to return to Italy. Two years later his adventurous spirit and missionary zeal drove him to seek the Moors, who were Muslim, in Spain, but sickness prevented him from completing the trip. He tried once more, in 1219, going to Egypt with the Crusaders (religious warriors who attempted to take control of the Holy Land). At the siege of the city of Damietta in Egypt, Francis boldly walked through the battle lines into the enemy camp and met the king of Egypt, who, apparently impressed with Francis’s ideas about brotherly love, gave him permission to continue on to the Holy Land.

Franciscan order

When Francis heard that trouble had started in Italy among some of his followers, now numbering in the thousands, he returned home. The force of his own personality had held the group together, but now Francis saw

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN

the need for a more practical guide to his kind of Christian life. He insisted that the new rule stress the poverty he felt was so important: the order could not possess money; all its houses must be simply furnished; and each Franciscan could have only a tunic and cord (Francis himself wore an old sack tied at the waist), a pair of pants, and, if really necessary, a pair of shoes. Francis went to Rome in 1223 to present the new rule to Pope Honorius III, who approved it wholeheartedly. It was during this visit that, according to tradition, Francis met Dominic, who had founded his own religious order. The Franciscan and Dominican religious orders have always felt a close relationship that dates back to the friendship between their founders.

A religious vision

Francis returned to Assisi and began to spend more and more time alone in prayer, leaving the decisions about his organization to others. While he was praying on Mt. Alvernia in 1224, he had a vision of a figure that looked like an angel, and when the vision disappeared Francis felt the wounds of the crucified Christ in his hands, side, and feet. He was careful not to show them, but several close friends reported after his death that Francis had suffered in his body as Christ had suffered on the cross. His last two years were lived in almost constant pain and near-blindness. He died in 1226. Two years later he was made a saint.

For More Information

Homan, Helen. *Francis and Clare, Saints of Assisi*. New York: Farrar, Straus & Cudahy, 1956.

House, Adrian. *Francis of Assisi*. New York: HiddenSpring, 2001.

Martin, Valerie. *Salvation: Scenes From the Life of Saint Francis*. New York: Knopf, 2001.

Born: January 17, 1706

Boston, Massachusetts

Died: April 17, 1790

Philadelphia, Pennsylvania

American scholar, diplomat, author, scientist, and inventor

Benjamin Franklin was a leader of America's revolutionary generation. His character and thought were shaped by his religious upbringing, the philosophy of the historical era known as the Enlightenment, and the environment of colonial America.

Youthful character

Benjamin Franklin was born on January 17, 1706, in Boston, Massachusetts, into a devoted Puritan household. (The Puritans were a religious group that stood against the practices of the Church of England.) In 1683 his family had left England and moved to New England in search of religious freedom. Franklin's father was a candlemaker and a mechanic, but, his son said, his "great Excellence lay in a sound Understanding, and solid Judgment." Franklin also praised his mother, who raised a family of thirteen children.

Young Franklin was not content at home. He received little formal schooling and by age eleven went to work making candles and soap at his father's shop. However, he hated this trade—especially the smell. Franklin eventually left his father's shop and went to work for his brother James, who was the printer of a Boston newspaper. While

learning the business Franklin read every word that came into the shop and was soon writing clever pieces that criticized the Boston establishment. He loved to read and even became a vegetarian in order to save money to buy books. When authorities imprisoned James for his own critical articles, Benjamin continued the paper himself. In 1723 at age seventeen Franklin left home and moved to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania.

By this time Franklin had begun to embrace the ideas of such Enlightenment thinkers as the physicist Sir Isaac Newton (1642–1727) and the philosopher John Locke (1632–1727). The Enlightenment, which began in the sixteenth century and lasted until the late seventeenth century, was a movement that promoted the use of reason to learn truth. During this time period, many important scientific advances and discoveries were made through the use of observation and experimentation.

Civil and scientific interests

In Philadelphia, Franklin began working as a printer. In 1724 he went to England, where he quickly became a master printer and lived among the writers of London. He returned to Philadelphia and started his own press, publishing a newspaper called the *Pennsylvania Gazette* and a publication called *Poor Richard's Almanack*, which contained advice and sayings that are still popular in America today. He then became clerk of the Pennsylvania Assembly and postmaster of Philadelphia. At the same time he operated a bookshop and developed partnerships with other printers. Franklin also became involved in community improvement in 1727. He organized the Junto, a club of tradesmen

whose activities included sponsoring a library, a fire company, a college, an insurance company, and a hospital.

Next, Franklin turned to science. Having already invented what became known as the Franklin stove (a metal stove used for heating a room), he now became fascinated with electricity. In a famous experiment he used a kite to prove that lightning is a form of electricity. The mysterious and terrifying natural occurrence now had an explanation. Franklin's letters concerning his discoveries and theories about electricity brought him fame. His invention of the lightning rod (a metal rod that is set on top of a building to protect it from being damaged if it is struck by lightning) added to his reputation.

Political career

Franklin's 1751 election to the Pennsylvania Assembly began his nearly forty years as a public official. He became a leader in the long-dominant Quaker political party, which opposed the Proprietary party (a political party made up of people who sought to preserve the power of the Penn family, the founding family of Pennsylvania). In the Assembly, Franklin created lawmaking strategies and wrote powerful statements defending the right of the people's elected representatives to regulate the government of Pennsylvania.

As a representative in the Assembly, Franklin was initially loyal to the British empire. He was on the side of the empire during the French and Indian War (1754–63; a war fought between France and Great Britain, which resulted in British control of land in North America east of the Mississippi River). In order to defend the British empire, he persuaded the Assembly to pass Pennsyl-

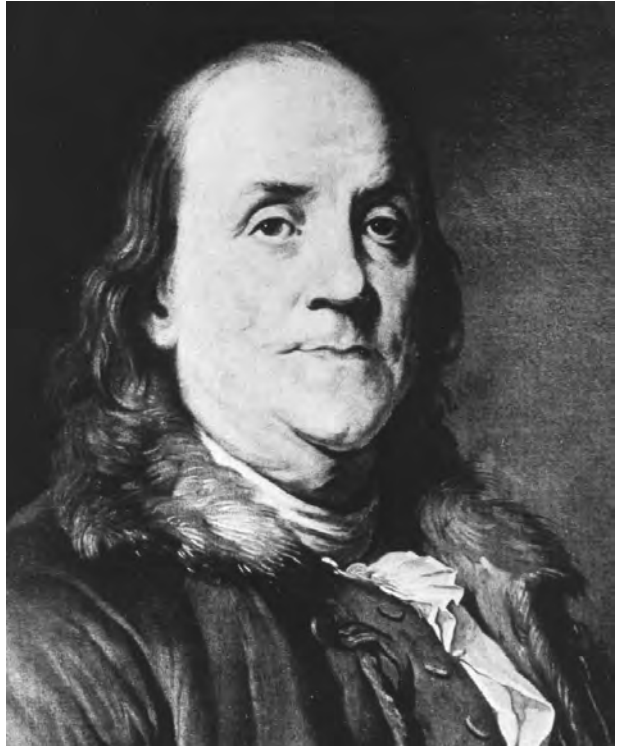
vania's first militia law, set aside budget money for defense, and appoint government representatives to carry on a full-scale war. For three decades or more Franklin had considered Britain a vital, freedom-extending country as dear and useful to its people in America as to those in England. Nevertheless, he was occasionally alarmed by British indifference toward the desires of people living in the colonies.

Franklin lived in England from 1757 to 1762, seeking aid in restraining the power of the Penn family in Pennsylvania. Returning to America for nearly two years, he traveled through the American colonies as deputy postmaster general for North America. In this position, which he held for twenty years, Franklin greatly improved the postal service. He also continued his aid to poorer members of his family and to the family of his wife, Deborah. They had two children, Frankie, who died at four, and Sally. Deborah Franklin also raised her husband's illegitimate son, William.

In 1764 Franklin lost his seat in the Pennsylvania Assembly. However, he returned to England as Pennsylvania's agent, with a special assignment to request that Pennsylvania be taken over as a royal colony. When the dangers of royal government began to increase, Franklin decided not to make the request.

More radical position

Franklin played a central role in the great crises that led to the Declaration of Independence in 1776. In 1765 the Stamp Act placed a tax on all business and law papers and printed materials in the American colonies. Many colonists opposed the tax as taxation without representation. After learning of the



*Benjamin Franklin.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

violent protest against the Stamp Act, Franklin stiffened his own stand against the measure. In a dramatic appearance before Parliament in 1766, he outlined American insistence on self-government. Nevertheless, when the tax was removed Franklin again expressed his faith in America's prospects within the British empire.

Franklin was the foremost American spokesman in Britain for the next nine years. However, in 1775 his service in England came to an unhappy end. Against his instructions, his friends in Massachusetts published letters by Massachusetts governor Thomas Hutchinson (1711–1780) that Franklin had obtained on a confidential basis. Exposed as a

dishonest schemer, Franklin was reprimanded (scolded) by the British in 1774 and removed from his position as postmaster general. Although he was in danger of being jailed as a traitor, Franklin continued to work for better relations. Radical protests in America and the buildup of British troops there doomed such efforts.

The revolutionary

Franklin left England in March 1775. The American Revolution (1775–83; a war in which American colonies fought for independence from Great Britain) had begun on April 19, 1775, with the battles of Lexington and Concord in Massachusetts. During the next several months in America, Franklin enjoyed the surge for independence. In 1776 he helped draft the Declaration of Independence and was among those who readily signed his name to it. At the age of seventy he had become a passionate revolutionary.

Franklin's skill was most in demand as a diplomat (someone who is skilled at handling difficult affairs) to secure desperately needed aid in the American war for independence. In 1776 he was appointed as a representative to France. There he gained astonishing personal success, winning the admiration of French intellectuals and the Parisian society. However, Franklin's diplomatic tasks proved more difficult. Though France was anxious for England to be defeated, it could not afford openly to aid the American rebels unless success seemed likely.

In 1777 Franklin worked behind the scenes to speed war supplies across the Atlantic and win support from French political leaders who might help the United States. In December 1777 his efforts were rewarded

when France's King Louis XVI (1754–1793) entered into an alliance with the United States. As the leading American representative in Europe, Franklin helped get French armies and navies on their way to North America, continued his efforts to supply American armies, and secured almost all of the outside aid that came to the American rebels.

Peace commissioner

After the British surrender at Yorktown, Virginia, in 1781, Franklin made the first contact with representatives of the British government. During the summer of 1782 as the other peace commissioners, John Adams (1735–1826) and John Jay (1745–1829), made their way toward peace negotiations in Paris, Franklin set the main terms of the final agreement. These included independence, guaranteed fishing rights, removal of all British forces, and a western boundary on the Mississippi River. Franklin, Adams, and Jay made an ideal team, winning for the United States a peace treaty of genuine national independence in 1783.

Franklin returned to Philadelphia from France in 1785. He accepted election for three years as president of the Supreme Executive Council of Pennsylvania and was active in various projects and causes. Although ill, he also finished his autobiography.

Framing a new government

Franklin's most notable service at this time was his attendance at the Constitutional Convention during the summer of 1787. At the convention's close he asked each member, who like himself might not entirely approve of the Constitution, to sign the document to give it a chance as the best frame of

government that could be produced at the time. His last public service was to urge ratification (approval) of the Constitution and to approve the inauguration (swearing into office) of the new government under his old friend George Washington (1732–1799). Franklin died peacefully in Philadelphia on April 17, 1790.

For More Information

Adler, David A. *Benjamin Franklin—Printer, Inventor, Statesman*. New York: Holiday House, 1992.

Clark, Ronald W. *Benjamin Franklin: A Biography*. New York: Random House, 1983.

Fish, Bruce, and Becky Durost Fish. *Benjamin Franklin*. Philadelphia, PA: Chelsea House Publishers, 2000.

Foster, Leila Merrell. *Benjamin Franklin, Founding Father and Inventor*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.

Fradin, Dennis B. *Who Was Ben Franklin?* New York: Grosset & Dunlap, 2002.

Franklin, Benjamin. *The Autobiography of Benjamin Franklin*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1964.

The work of Sigmund Freud, the Austrian founder of psychoanalysis, marked the beginning of a modern, dynamic psychology by providing the first well-organized explanation of the inner mental forces determining human behavior.

Freud's early life

Sigmund Freud was born on May 6, 1856, in Freiberg, Moravia (now Czech Republic). Sigmund was the first child of his twice-widowed father's third marriage. His mother, Amalia Nathanson, was nineteen years old when she married Jacob Freud, aged thirty-nine. Sigmund's two stepbrothers from his father's first marriage were approximately the same age as his mother, and his older stepbrother's son, Sigmund's nephew, was his earliest playmate. Thus, the boy grew up in an unusual family structure, his mother halfway in age between himself and his father. Though seven younger children were born, Sigmund always remained his mother's favorite. When he was four, the family moved to Vienna (now the capital of Austria), the capital city of the Austro-Hungarian monarchy (the complete rule of Central Europe by Hungary and Austria from 1867 to 1918). Freud would live in Vienna until the year before his death.

Youth in Vienna

Because the Freuds were Jewish, Sigmund's early experience was that of an outsider in an overwhelmingly Catholic community. However, Emperor Francis Joseph (1830–1916) had liberated the Jews of Austria, giving them equal rights and permitting them to settle anywhere in the empire. Many

SIGMUND FREUD

Born: May 6, 1856

Freiberg, Moravia (now Czech Republic)

Died: September 23, 1939

London, England

Austrian psychologist, author, and psychoanalyst

Jewish families came to Vienna, as did the Freuds in 1860, where the standard of living was higher and educational and professional opportunities were better than in the provinces. They lived in an area that had a high concentration of Jewish people, called the Leopoldstadt slum. The housing was cramped and they had to move often, sometimes living with his father's family. By his tenth year, Sigmund's family had grown and he had five sisters and one brother.

Freud went to the local elementary school, then attended the Sperl Gymnasium (a secondary school in Europe that students attend to prepare for college) in Leopoldstadt, from 1866 to 1873. He studied Greek and Latin, mathematics, history, and the natural sciences, and was a superior student. He passed his final examination with flying colors, qualifying to enter the University of Vienna at the age of seventeen. His family had recognized his special scholarly gifts from the beginning, and although they had only four bedrooms for eight people, Sigmund had his own room throughout his school days. He lived with his parents until he was twenty-seven, as was the custom at that time.

Pre-psychoanalytic work

Freud enrolled in medical school in 1873. Vienna had become the world capital of medicine, and the young student was initially attracted to the laboratory and the scientific side of medicine rather than clinical practice. He spent seven instead of the usual five years acquiring his doctorate.

Freud received his doctor of medicine degree at the age of twenty-four. He fell in love and wanted to marry, but the salaries available to a young scientist could not sup-

port a wife and family. He had met Martha Bernays, the daughter of a well-known Hamburg family, when he was twenty-six; they were engaged two months later. They were separated during most of the four years which preceded their marriage, and married in 1887. Of their six children, a daughter, Anna, would become one of her father's most famous followers.

Freud spent three years as a resident physician in the famous Allgemeine Krankenhaus, a general hospital and the medical center of Vienna. He spent five months in the psychiatry (the area of medicine involving emotional and mental health) department headed by Theodor Meynert. Psychiatry at this time was rigid and descriptive. The psychological meaning of behavior was not itself considered important; behavior was only a set of symptoms to be studied in order to understand the structures of the brain. Freud's later work changed this attitude.

Freud, during the last part of his residency, received some money to pursue his neurological (having to do with the nervous system) studies abroad. He spent four months at the Salpêtrière clinic in Paris, France, studying under the neurologist (a person who studies the nervous system and treats people with neurological problems) Jean Martin Charcot (1825–1893). Here, Freud first became interested in hysteria (an illness in which a person complains of physical symptoms without a medical cause) and Charcot's demonstration of its psychological origins.

Beginning of psychoanalysis

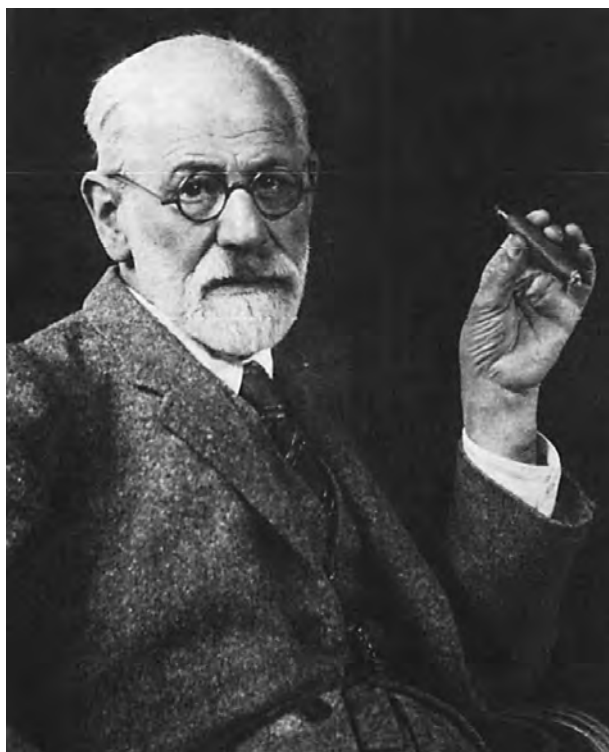
Freud returned to Vienna, established himself in the private practice of neurology,

and married. He soon devoted his efforts to the treatment of hysterical patients with the help of hypnosis (the act of bringing about a change in a person's attention which results in a change in their bodily experiences), a technique he had studied under Charcot. Joseph Breuer (1857–1939), an older colleague (a partner or an associate in the same area of interest), told Freud about a hysterical patient whom he had treated successfully by hypnotizing her and then tracing her symptoms back to traumatic (emotionally stressful) events she had experienced at her father's deathbed. Breuer called his treatment "catharsis" and traced its effectiveness to the release of "pent-up emotions." Freud's experiments with Breuer's technique were successful. Together with Breuer he published *Studies on Hysteria* (1895). At the age of thirty-nine Freud first used the term "psychoanalysis," (a way to treat certain mental illnesses by exposing and discussing a patient's unconscious thoughts and feelings) and his major lifework was well under way.

At about this time Freud began a unique project, his own self-analysis (the act of studying or examining oneself), which he pursued primarily by analyzing his dreams. A major scientific result was *The Interpretation of Dreams* (1901). By the turn of the century Freud had developed his therapeutic (having to do with treating a mental or physical disability) technique, dropping the use of hypnosis and shifting to the more effective and more widely applicable method of "free association."

Development of psychoanalysis

Following Freud's work on dreams, he wrote a series of papers in which he explored the influence of unconscious thought processes



Sigmund Freud.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

on various aspects of human behavior. He recognized that the most powerful among the unconscious forces, which lead to neuroses (mental disorders), are the sexual desires of early childhood that have been shut out from conscious awareness, yet have preserved their powerful force within the personality. He described his highly debatable views concerning the early experiences of sexuality in *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality* (1905), a work that first met violent protest, but was gradually accepted by practically all schools of psychology (the area of science involving the study of the mind).

After 1902 Freud gathered a small group of interested colleagues on Wednesday evenings for presentation of psychoanalytic papers and discussion. This was the beginning of the psychoanalytic movement. Swiss psychiatrists Eugen Bleuler and Carl Jung (1875–1961) formed a study group in Zurich in 1907, and the first International Psychoanalytic Congress was held in Salzburg in 1908.

Later years

In 1923 Freud developed a cancerous (having to do with cancer cells that attack the healthy tissues of the body) growth in his mouth, which eventually led to his death sixteen years and thirty-three operations later. In spite of this, these were years of great scientific productivity. He published findings on the importance of aggressive as well as sexual drives (*Beyond the Pleasure Principle*, 1920); developed a new theoretical framework in order to organize his new data concerning the structure of the mind (*The Ego and the Id*, 1923); and revised his theory of anxiety to show it as the signal of danger coming from unconscious fantasies, rather than the result of repressed sexual feelings (*Inhibitions, Symptoms and Anxiety*, 1926).

In March 1938 Austria was occupied by German troops, and that month Freud and his family were put under house arrest. Through the combined efforts of many influential friends who were well connected politically, the Freuds were permitted to leave Austria in June. Freud spent his last year in London, England, undergoing surgery. He died on September 23, 1939. The influence of his discoveries on the science and culture of the twentieth century is limitless.

Personal life

Freud was an intensely private man. He read extensively, loved to travel, and was an avid collector of archeological oddities. Devoted to his family, he always practiced in a consultation room attached to his home. He valued a small circle of close friends to whom he was intensely loyal, and inspired loyalty in a circle of disciples that persists to this day.

For More Information

Gay, Peter. *Freud: A Life for Our Time*. New York: Norton, 1988.

Jones, Ernest. *The Life and Work of Sigmund Freud*. 3 vols. New York: Basic Books, 1953–1957.

Wollheim, Richard. *Sigmund Freud*. New York: Viking, 1971.

BETTY FRIEDAN

Born: February 4, 1921

Peoria, Illinois

American women's rights activist, author, and organization founder

Betty Friedan is a leader of the feminist (women's rights) movement, author of *The Feminine Mystique*, and a founding member of the National Organization for Women (NOW), the National Abortion Rights Action League (an organization that supports a woman's right to end a pregnancy), and the National Women's Political Caucus. She helped spark the women's movement in the 1960s.

Following her mother's advice

Betty Naomi Goldstein was born on February 4, 1921 in Peoria, Illinois, the first of Harry and Miriam (Horwitz) Goldstein's three children. Her father worked his way up to become the owner of a jewelry store; her mother had to give up her job on a newspaper when she married. The loss of that career affected her mother deeply, and she urged young Betty to pursue the career in journalism that she herself was never able to achieve.

Betty went on to graduate from Smith College in 1942. She then studied psychology as a graduate student at the University of California at Berkeley. Like her mother, she did some work as a journalist, but unlike her mother she did not end her career to build a family. She married Carl Friedan in 1947, and during the years that she was raising their three children she continued to write articles. After her husband established his own advertising agency, the family moved to the suburbs. Although she continued to write, she felt unfulfilled by her role as wife and mother.

Others feel the same way

In 1957 Friedan put together a list of questions to send to her Smith College classmates fifteen years after graduation. She received detailed replies from two hundred women, many of which revealed that these women were also unhappy with their lives. Friedan wrote an article based on her findings, but the editors of the women's magazines with whom she had previously worked refused to publish it. Those refusals only made her more determined to share her findings with the world. She decided to investigate the problem on a much larger scale and publish a book.



Betty Friedan.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

The result of her effort was *The Feminine Mystique*, which became an instant success, selling over three million copies.

Friedan began her book by describing what she called "the problem that has no name." In words that touched a nerve in thousands of middle-class American women, she wrote, "the problem lay buried, unspoken, for many years in the minds of American women. It was a strange stirring, a sense of dissatisfaction, a yearning [that is, a longing] that women suffered in the middle of the 20th century in the United States. Each suburban wife struggled with it alone. As she made the beds, shopped for groceries . . . she

was afraid to ask even of herself the silent question—'Is this all?'" Attacking the notion that "biology is destiny," under which women were expected to devote their lives to being wives and mothers and give up all other pursuits, Friedan called upon women to do whatever it took to discover other meaningful activities.

Organizing for change

In 1966, three years after the book's publication, Friedan helped found the first major organization established since the 1920s devoted to women's rights. The organization was called the National Organization for Women (NOW), and Friedan became its first president. Under Friedan's leadership NOW worked for political reforms to secure legal equality for women. The organization was successful in achieving a number of important gains. It worked for the enforcement of Title VII of the 1964 Civil Rights Act, which prevented employers from discriminating (denying opportunities to or providing unequal treatment to) against workers on the basis of sex. As a result of the organization's efforts, the Equal Opportunities Commission ruled that airlines could not fire female flight attendants because they married or reached the age of thirty-five and that job opportunities could not be advertised as only for male or female applicants.

NOW also lobbied for passage of the Equal Rights Amendment (ERA), which had been introduced in Congress by Alice Paul (1885–1977) in 1923 but had never passed. In addition, the organization called for government-funded day-care centers to be established "on the same basis as parks, libraries and public schools." NOW also worked to

make abortion (a woman's right to end a pregnancy) legal and to preserve abortion rights. Friedan was among the founders of the National Abortion Rights Action League in 1969. Finally, in 1973, the Supreme Court legalized abortion.

In 1970 President Richard Nixon (1913–1994) chose G. Harrold Carswell (1919–) to sit on the Supreme Court. Friedan made a strong stand against the president's choice. She argued that Carswell had defied the Civil Rights Act by ruling that employers had the right to deny jobs to women who had children. Carswell's appointment did not go through. That same year, at the annual meeting of NOW, Friedan called for a Women's Strike for Equality, which was held on August 26—the fiftieth anniversary of the day women gained the right to vote. Women across the country marked the day with demonstrations, marches, and speeches in forty major cities. Friedan led a parade of over ten thousand down Fifth Avenue in New York City. The following year Friedan was among the leaders who formed the National Women's Political Caucus.

Still an important voice for women

As the women's movement grew and new leaders emerged with different concerns, Friedan's popularity decreased. Still, she remained an outspoken leader for many years. In 1974 she had an audience with Pope Paul VI in which she urged the Catholic Church to "come to terms with the full personhood of women." In 1977 she participated in the National Conference of Women in Houston, Texas, calling for an end to divisions in the movement and the creation of a new coalition (alliance) of women. Friedan

ROBERT FROST

continued writing, teaching, and speaking throughout these years. In 1976 she published *It Changed My Life: Writings on the Women's Movement*, which was followed by her 1981 book, *The Second Stage*. In that publication Friedan called for a shift in the feminist movement, one that would address the needs of families and would allow both men and women to break free of the roles they had been pressured to fill in the past.

Friedan remains an important voice in women's struggle for equality. Also, in 1993, she wrote *The Fountain of Age*, turning her attention to the rights of the elderly and aging. In the *New York Times* she said, "Once you break through the mystique [air of mystery] of age and that view of the aged as objects of care and as problems for society, you can look at the reality of the new years of human life open to us." Betty Friedan's genuine interest in helping others improve and enjoy their lives is as strong today as it was when she first began writing.

For More Information

Blau, Justine. *Betty Friedan*. New York: Chelsea House, 1990.

Friedan, Betty. *The Feminine Mystique*. New York: Norton, 1963.

Friedan, Betty. *It Changed My Life: Writings on the Women's Movement*. New York: Random House, 1976.

Friedan, Betty. *Life So Far*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 2000.

Friedan, Betty. *The Second Stage*. New York: Summit Books, 1981.

Hennessee, Judith Adler. *Betty Friedan: Her Life*. New York: Random House, 1999.

Born: March 26, 1874
San Francisco, California
Died: January 29, 1963
Boston, Massachusetts
American poet

Robert Frost was a traditional American poet in an age of experimental art. He used New England expressions, characters, and settings, recalling the roots of American culture, to get at the common experience of all.

The early years

Robert Lee Frost was born in San Francisco, California, on March 26, 1874. His father, William, came from Maine and New Hampshire ancestry and had graduated from Harvard in 1872. He left New England and went to Lewistown, Pennsylvania, to teach. He married another teacher, Isabelle Moodie, a Scotswoman, and they moved to San Francisco, where the elder Frost became an editor and politician. Robert, their first child, was named for the Southern hero General Robert E. Lee (1807–1870).

When Frost's father died in 1884, his will requested that he be buried in New England. His wife and two children, Robert and Jeanie, went east for the funeral. Lacking funds to return to California, they settled in Salem, Massachusetts, where his grandfather had offered them a home. Eventually Mrs. Frost found a job teaching at a school.



Robert Frost.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Transplanted New Englander

As a young boy, Robert loved his mother reading to him. Her influence introduced him to a large variety of literature, and from this he was inspired to become an excellent reader. He lacked enthusiasm for school in his elementary years, but became a serious student and graduated from Lawrence High School as valedictorian (top in his class) and class poet in 1892. He enrolled at Dartmouth College but soon left. He had become engaged to Elinor White, classmate and fellow valedictorian, who was completing her college education. Frost moved from job to job, working in mills, at newspaper reporting, and at teach-

ing, all the while writing poetry. In 1894 he sold his first poem, "My Butterfly," to the *New York Independent*. Overjoyed, he had two copies of a booklet of lyrics privately printed, one for his fiancée and one for himself. He delivered Elinor's copy in person but did not find her response to be enthusiastic. Thinking he had lost her, he tore up his copy and wandered south as far as the Dismal Swamp (from Virginia to North Carolina), even contemplating killing himself.

In 1895, however, Frost married Elinor and tried to make a career of teaching. He helped his mother run a small private school in Lawrence, Massachusetts, where his first son was born. He spent two years at Harvard, but undergraduate study proved difficult while raising a family. With a newborn daughter as well as a son to now raise, he decided to try chicken farming at Methuen, Massachusetts, on a farm purchased by his grandfather. In 1900, when his nervousness was diagnosed as a sign that he may possibly contract tuberculosis (a disease caused by bacteria that usually attacks the lungs but can also affect other organs in the body), he moved his poultry business to Derry, New Hampshire. There his first son soon died. In 1906 Frost was stricken with pneumonia (a disease that causes inflammation of the lungs) and almost died. A year later his fourth daughter died. This grief and suffering, as well as lesser frustrations in his personal and business life, turned Frost more and more to poetry. Once again he tried teaching, in Derry and then in Plymouth, New Hampshire.

Creation of the poet

In 1912, almost forty and with only a few poems published, Frost sold his farm and used

an allowance from his grandfather to go to England and gamble everything on poetry. The family settled on a farm in Buckinghamshire, and Frost began to write. Ezra Pound (1885–1972), another American poet, helped him get published in magazines, and he met many people in literature that helped to inspire and further expand his knowledge of poetry.

Frost published *A Boy's Will* (1913), and it was well received. Though it contains some nineteenth-century expressions, the words and rhythms are generally informal and subtly simple.

North of Boston (1914) is more objective, made up mainly of blank verse (poetry without rhyme) monologues (long speeches, plays, or entertainment given by a single person) and dramatic narratives (stories or descriptions of events). *North of Boston* added to the success of *A Boy's Will*, and the two volumes announced the two modes of Frost's best poetry, the lyric (a poem telling of love or other emotions) and the narrative. Although immediately established as a nature poet, he did not glorify nature. He addressed not only its loveliness but also the isolation, harshness, and pain its New England inhabitants had to endure.

A public figure

When the Frosts returned to the United States in 1915, *North of Boston* was a best-seller. Sudden fame embarrassed Frost, who had always avoided crowds. He withdrew to a small farm in Franconia, New Hampshire, but financial need soon saw him responding to demands for readings and lectures. In 1915 and 1916 he was a Phi Beta Kappa (an organization made up of college students and graduates who have achieved a high level of academic excellence in studies of liberal arts

and sciences) poet at Tufts College and at Harvard University. He conquered his shyness, developing a brief and simple speaking manner that made him one of the most popular performers in America and abroad.

In 1916 Frost published *Mountain Interval*, which brought together lyrics and narratives in his poetry. In 1917 Frost became one of the first poets-in-residence on an American campus. He taught at Amherst from 1917 to 1920, in 1918 receiving a master of arts, the first of many academic honors. The following year he moved his farm base to South Saftsbury, Vermont. In 1920 he cofounded the Bread Loaf School of English of Middlebury College, serving there each summer as lecturer and consultant. From 1921 to 1923 he was poet-in-residence at the University of Michigan.

Frost's *Selected Poems* and a new volume, *New Hampshire*, appeared in 1923. Frost received the first of four Pulitzer Prizes for the latter in 1924. Though the title poem does not present Frost at his best, the volume also contains such lyrics as "Fire and Ice," "Nothing Gold Can Stay," and "To Earthward."

Frost returned to Amherst for two years in 1923 and to the University of Michigan in 1925 and then settled at Amherst in 1926. In 1928 Frost published *West Running Brook*, in which he continued his use of tonal variations (changes in sound and rhythm) and a mixture of lyrics and narratives.

Frost visited England and Paris in 1928 and published his *Collected Poems* in 1930. In 1934 he suffered another painful loss with the death of his daughter Marjorie. He returned to Harvard in 1936 and in the same year published *A Further Range*.

Later work and personal tragedies

Because of Frost's weak lungs, his doctor ordered him south in 1936, and thereafter he spent his winters in Florida. Frost served on the Harvard staff from 1936 to 1937 and received an honorary doctorate. After his wife died of a heart attack in 1938, Frost resigned from the Amherst staff and sold his house. That same year he was elected to the Board of Overseers of Harvard College. In 1939 his second *Collected Poems* appeared, and he began a three-year stay at Harvard. In 1940 his only surviving son took his own life.

In 1945 Frost composed something new in *A Masque of Reason*, an updated version of the biblical story of Job. *A Masque of Mercy* (1947), was a companion verse drama (a dramatic poem) based on the biblical story of the prophet Jonah.

Frost's *Complete Poems* appeared in 1949, and in 1950 the U.S. Senate honored him on his seventy-fifth birthday. In 1957 he

returned to England to receive doctoral degrees from Oxford and Cambridge. On his eighty-fifth birthday the Senate again honored him. In 1961, at the inauguration of John F. Kennedy (1917–1963), Frost recited "The Gift Outright," the first time a poet had honored a presidential inauguration. A final volume, *In the Clearing*, appeared in 1962.

On January 29, 1963, Frost died in Boston, Massachusetts, of complications following an operation. He was buried in the family plot in Old Bennington, Vermont.

For More Information

Brodsky, Joseph, Seamus Heaney, and Derek Walcott. *Homage to Robert Frost*. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 1996.

Meyers, Jeffrey. *Robert Frost: A Biography*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1996.

Parini, Jay. *Robert Frost: A Life*. New York: Henry Holt, 1999.



JOHN KENNETH GALBRAITH

Born: October 15, 1908

Iona Station, Ontario, Canada

Canadian-born American scholar and economist

John Kenneth Galbraith became a leading scholar and arguably the most famous economist in the second half of the twentieth century. His views are a severe criticism of the modern society that upholds personal achievement and material well-being over public interest and needs.

Galbraith's early years and education

John Kenneth Galbraith was born on October 15, 1908, in Iona Station, Ontario, Canada, on the shores of Lake Erie, to a farming family of Scotch ancestry. His father, William, was involved in the politics of their community, supporting a liberal (open to change) view, and started bringing William to political rallies when he was about eight years old. His mother died before William, his brother, and his two sisters were in their teen years.

William attended school but his education was interrupted occasionally so he could work on the farm. He graduated from high school and then went on to study agricultural (having to do with land and farming) eco-



John Kenneth Galbraith.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

nomics at the Ontario Agricultural College (then part of the University of Toronto; now, the University of Guelph) and graduated with honors in 1931. He went on to study agricultural economics at the University of California, receiving his doctorate in 1934. That same year he also began his long, though frequently interrupted, teaching career at Harvard University, where he eventually became an emeritus (a person who is retired but retains their title) professor.

Public service

Galbraith's academic career frequently gave way to public service. He worked in the

Department of Agriculture during the New Deal (President Franklin D. Roosevelt's [1882–1945] plan to help the United States recover from the Great Depression, a time of severe economic hardship in the 1930s) and in the Office of Price Administration and Civilian Supply during World War II (1939–45; a war between the Axis: Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States). From his wartime work emerged *The Theory of Price Control* (1952), which, though not widely influential, contained some of the ideas of his major works.

After the end of the war in Europe, Galbraith worked with the Office of Strategic Services directing research on the effectiveness of the Allies' bombing of Germany. In 1947 he was one of the liberal founders of the Americans for Democratic Action.

After working prominently as a speechwriter in the presidential campaigns of Senator Adlai Stevenson (1900–1965), Galbraith went on to chair the Democratic Advisory Council during Dwight D. Eisenhower's (1890–1969) Republican administration. In 1956 he visited India, where his fascination with the country inspired his later works. He campaigned for President John F. Kennedy (1917–1962), and after Kennedy's victory he was named U.S. ambassador to India in the early 1960s. An outspoken critic of U.S. involvement in Vietnam, he campaigned on behalf of the presidential campaigns of Senators Eugene McCarthy (1916–) in 1968 and George McGovern (1922–) in 1972. Later he worked in the campaigns of Congressman Morris Udall (1922–1998) in 1976 and Senator Edward Kennedy (1932–) in 1980.

Published over twenty books

Galbraith's major intellectual contributions lie in the trilogy (a series of three works that are related to one another, yet can stand on their own): *The Affluent Society* (1958), *The New Industrial State* (1967), and *Economics and the Public Purpose* (1973). Other than his main trilogy, and perhaps *The Theory of Price Control*, Galbraith's *American Capitalism: The Concept of Countervailing Power* (1952) stands out in importance. This book solidified Galbraith's position as a continuing spokesperson for the New Deal perspective in economics.

Along the way Galbraith published over twenty other books, including two novels, a coauthored book on Indian painting, memoirs (writings about one's personal experiences), travelogues (writings about travel), political essays, and several books on economic and intellectual history (the study of how creative thinking has influenced human development). He also collaborated (worked together) on and narrated (was the voice for the commentary) a Public Broadcasting System (PBS) television series, "The Age of Uncertainty."

The trilogy

Galbraith's breakthrough as a best-selling author came with *The Affluent Society*. It examined the need of prosperous societies to use and produce more and more goods. The widespread attention guaranteed some hearing of his opposing ideas in the economics profession. Indeed, he was eventually honored with the American Economic Association's respected presidency.

In *The New Industrial State* Galbraith expanded his examination of the role of power in economic life. *The New Industrial*

State not only provided Galbraith with another best-selling book, it also extended once again the currency of Institutionalist (the effect that institutions have on the economy) economic thought. *The New Industrial State* gave a convincing explanation of the power structure involved in generating the problems in the 1960s of economic, social, and environmental cost of corporate monopoly powers, and thus found a very receptive audience among the rising Americans who opposed traditional standards and political activists.

Economics and the Public Purpose, the last work in Galbraith's major trilogy, continued the characteristic insistence on the role of power in economic life and the inability of conventional economic thought to deal adequately with this power.

Later years

After the years Galbraith served in both the American and Canadian governments, he returned to scholarly activity, extensive travel, and writing, using Harvard University as his home base.

On August 9, 2000, President Bill Clinton (1946–) awarded a Presidential Medal of Freedom to Galbraith. The medal is the highest civilian honor and may be awarded only by a U.S. president to individuals who have made contributions "especially meritorious [something that should be honored or praised] to the security or national interests of the United States, to world peace or to cultural or other significant public or private endeavors."

For More Information

Galbraith, John Kenneth. *A Life in Our Times*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1981.

Galbraith, John Kenneth. *The Essential Galbraith*. Edited by Andrea D. Williams. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 2001.

Gambs, John S. *John Kenneth Galbraith*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1975.

Sasson, Helen. *Between Friends: Perspectives on John Kenneth Galbraith*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1999.

GALEN

Born: c. 130

Pergamon, Asia Minor

Died: c. 200

Rome (now in Italy)

Greek physician, anatomist, and philosopher

The Greek physician Galen was one of the originators of the science of anatomy (the study of the structure of living things) and was probably the most important physician of all time. His surviving writings make up about half of all ancient writings on medicine.

Early life

Various birth dates for Galen, from 127 to 132, have been suggested, but 130 is generally accepted. He was born at Pergamon, Asia Minor, into a wealthy family that valued education. Galen's father, Nicon, was a mathematician, architect, astronomer, and lover of Greek literature. He was Galen's only teacher up to the age of fourteen and a strong role model. In his book *On the Passions and Errors of the Soul* Galen says he was "fortunate in having the most devoted of fathers," but of

his mother he says "she was so very much prone to anger that sometimes she bit her handmaids; she constantly shrieked at my father and fought with him."

Galen's education and training

In his fourteenth year Galen attended lectures given by many different philosophers (people who study and search for knowledge) in Pergamon. He learned something from all of them and thought it was wrong of people to blindly follow everything any one person might say. Later in life he urged physicians to take whatever is useful from wherever they find it and not to follow one school of thought, because that produces "an intellectual slave." Galen claimed to have studied day and night for four years. His first anatomy teacher was Satyrus, a pupil of Quintus, who through his students played a major role in the increase in activity in the field of anatomy that led to Galen's work.

Galen's father died in 150, and the following year Galen went to Smyrna (now Izmir, Turkey). While there he wrote his first treatise (argument containing facts and conclusions), *On the Movements of the Heart and Lung*. In 152 he went to Corinth and on to Alexandria, where he remained for four years studying with Numisianus, Quintus's most famous pupil. Although Galen admired Numisianus, he was not happy with the quality of the lectures or the abilities of his fellow students. During this time Galen produced a number of dictionaries of both literature and medicine. He also started a major work, *On Demonstration*. Unfortunately, no copy of this work survives.

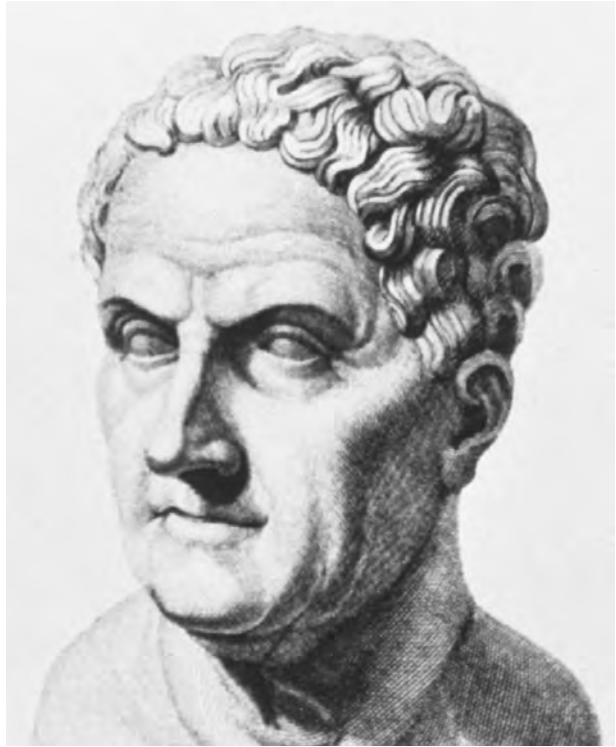
Medical practice

In 157 Galen returned to Pergamon, where the next year he went to work as a physician to the gladiators (people who engaged in fights for public entertainment in ancient times). The injuries the gladiators suffered provided Galen with excellent opportunities to extend his knowledge of anatomy, surgery (operations to correct a disease or condition), and methods of treatment. While working among the gladiators, whose daily lives are described in his writings, Galen produced some of his most original work. In 163 he went to Rome, where his public anatomical demonstrations and his success as a physician made other Roman physicians jealous. Galen was only interested in passing on knowledge as widely and as publicly as possible.

Galen returned to Pergamon in 166. However, a severe outbreak of plague (a bacteria-caused disease that spreads quickly and can cause death) among the Roman troops in Aquileia in 168 caused the emperors Marcus Aurelius (c. 121–180) and Lucius Verus to send for him. In 169 Marcus made Galen physician to his son, Commodus (161–192). During this time Galen completed his major works, *On the Usefulness of the Parts of the Body* (in seventeen books) and *On the Natural Faculties*, as well as many other treatises. In 176 Galen returned to Rome permanently. He continued his writing, lecturing, and public demonstrations.

Later years

In the winter of 191 and 192 a fire destroyed most of Galen's library. Yet in spite of this loss, information about his writings remains because he wrote two treatises on his own books and their order of production.



Galen.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Both works provide a wealth of information on his writings and are major sources of detail about his life. From 179 to his death around 200, Galen continued his medical research and writings, producing such major works as *The Method of Cure*. During his last years, however, he wrote more nonmedical works, such as *On the Equality of Sin and Punishment* and *The Slight Significance of Popular Honor and Glory*.

Galen's family name is unknown. Not wanting to cash in on the reputations of his ancestors, he used only his given name. Galen said of himself, "I have worked only for science and truth and for that reason I have

avoided placing my name at the beginning of my books.”

For More Information

Debru, Armelle. *Galen on Pharmacology*. New York: E. J. Brill, 1997.

Sarton, George. *Galen of Pergamon*. Lawrence, KS: University of Kansas Press, 1954.

Tieleman, Teun. *Galen and Chrysippus on the Soul*. New York: E. J. Brill, 1996.

Walzer, R., trans. *Galen on Medical Experiences*. London; New York: Oxford University Press, 1944.

GALILEO

Born: February 15, 1564

Pisa, Italy

Died: January 8, 1642

Arcetri, Florence, Italy

Italian scientist, author, and astronomer

The Italian scientist Galileo is famous for his contributions to astronomy, physics (the science that deals with matter and energy), and scientific thought.

Early life

Galileo Galilei was born in Pisa, Italy, on February 15, 1564, the first child of Vincenzo Galilei, a merchant and a musician, and Giulia Ammannati. The family moved to Florence, Italy, in 1574. That year Galileo started his formal education in the nearby monastery (house for people who have taken religious vows) of Vallombrosa. Seven

years later he studied medicine at the University of Pisa.

In 1583 Galileo developed new interests and began his studies in mathematics and physics, which ended his medical studies. In Pisa at that time there was only one notable science teacher, Francisco Buonamico, who taught the ideas of Aristotle (c. 384–c. 322 B.C.E.). Galileo seems to have been an eager follower of Buonamico, as shown by Galileo’s *Juvenilia*, dating from 1584, which mostly describes Aristotle’s scientific ideas. Because of financial difficulties, Galileo had to leave the University of Pisa in 1585 before earning his degree.

Early work

Back in Florence, Galileo searched for a teaching position and continued to study mathematics and physics. He published two works that made his name well known. One was *The Little Balance*, describing the hydrostatic (relating to the forces produced by fluids at rest) principles of balancing; the other was a study of the center of gravity of various solids. His rising reputation gained him a teaching post at the University of Pisa in 1589. Galileo had to support his mother, brothers, and sisters after his father’s death in 1591, so he found a better position in 1592 at the University of Padua, part of the Venetian Republic. In 1604 Galileo declared that he was a supporter of the theory of Nicolaus Copernicus (1473–1543), who stated that the earth and other planets revolved around the sun.

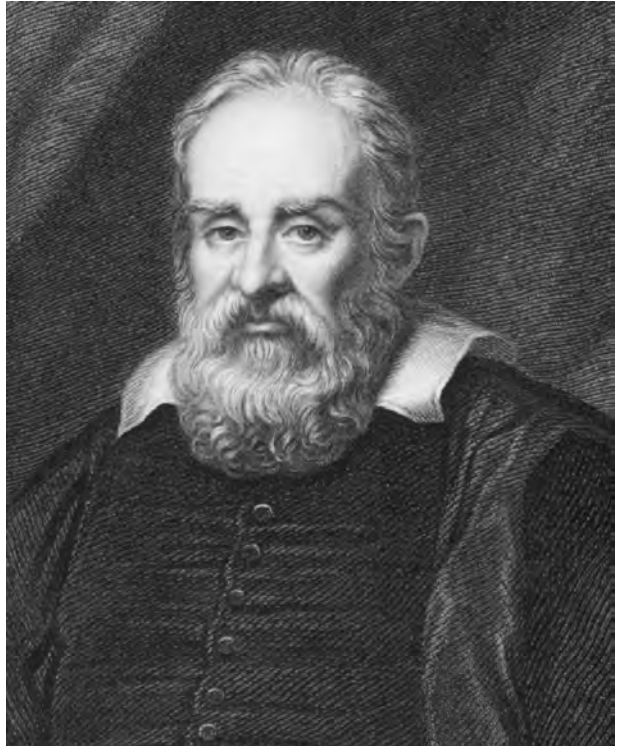
In 1606 the publication of *The Operations of the Geometrical and Military Compass*, revealed Galileo’s skill with experiments. In this booklet he also defended himself against

criticism from several sources. In mid-1609 Galileo learned about the success of some Dutch eyeglass makers when they combined several lenses into what later would be called a telescope (an instrument for viewing distant objects). He went right to work, and on August 25 he presented to the Venetian Senate a telescope as his own invention. This led the University of Padua to give him a lifetime contract, but resentment followed when it was learned that Galileo was not the original inventor.

Astronomical works

Galileo's telescope had a magnifying power of about forty. Sometime in the fall of 1609 he turned the telescope toward the sky. Within a few months Galileo had gathered astonishing evidence about mountains on the moon, about moons circling the planet Jupiter, and about an incredibly large number of stars. In March of 1610 all these sensational items were printed in Venice, Italy, under the title *The Starry Messenger*, a booklet that took the world of science by storm. The view of the heavens changed greatly, and so did Galileo's life.

Galileo was very ambitious and decided to secure a position for himself as a mathematics expert in Florence at the court of Cosimo II. In 1610 he left his wife, Marina Gamba, and his family behind in Padua. In 1612 his *Discourse on Bodies in Water* was published. In it he revealed his discovery of the phases of the planet Venus, but this work was also the source of heated disputes. In 1613 Galileo published his observations of sunspots (dark spots that appear on the sun's surface from time to time), which led to bitter arguments with Christopher Scheiner (1573–



Galileo.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

1650) of the University of Ingolstadt, Germany, whose observations of sunspots had already been published in 1612.

Condemned by the Church

Galileo's real aim was to publish a complete description of the universe and of the new physics it required. A major problem was that many people believed that, according to the Bible, the sun and other planets moved around a motionless earth. With the help of some religious experts, Galileo produced essays explaining and defending his point of view in the form of letters, which ranked among the best religious writings of those

times. As the letters circulated widely, a showdown with Church authorities seemed certain.

In 1616 the Church ordered Galileo not to “hold, teach, and defend in any manner whatsoever, in words or in print” the theory of Copernicus regarding the motion of the Earth. Galileo obeyed the order partly to make life easier for himself and partly because he remained a devoted Catholic. In 1624, though, after meeting with Pope Urban VIII (1568–1644) and sensing that anger over his writings had lessened, Galileo decided to pursue his work again.

Galileo spent six years writing his *Dialogue Concerning the Two Chief World Systems*. Published in 1632, it contains criticism of the supposed perfection of the universe as claimed by Aristotle. It discusses how the rotation of the earth helps explain different occurrences in space. The orbital motion of the earth around the sun is also debated. The *Dialogue* was a huge success. The fact that some of his ideas opposed each other did not take away from the popularity of the work.

Condemned again

The *Dialogue* proved that Galileo held, taught, and defended the theories of Copernicus, so he was called back to Rome to appear before Church leaders. The proceedings lasted from the fall of 1632 to the summer of 1633. During that time Galileo was allowed to stay at the home of the Florentine representative to Rome. He was never subjected to physical threats. However, he was finally ordered to publicly renounce (state that he did not believe) the idea that the Earth moved.

Galileo was then confined under house arrest to his home in Arcetri, Italy. He was not

allowed to have any visitors nor have any of his works printed outside of Italy. Both orders were ignored. In 1634 a French translation of one of his old papers on mechanics (the study of forces and their effect on matter) was published, and in Holland the *Dialogue* was published in Latin in 1635.

Later years

In 1638 Galileo's *Two New Sciences* was printed in Leiden, Holland. It gave a geometrical (relating to points, lines, angles, and surfaces) description of motion, partly because such an approach led to a close match with known data. Galileo believed that the universe was structured along the patterns of geometry, the product of a Creator who had planned everything according to weight, measure, and number.

This religious belief is possibly Galileo's greatest quality. It was best stated in the *Dialogue*, when he described the human mind as being the most excellent product of the Creator because it could recognize mathematical truths. Galileo spent his last years partially blind. He died on January 8, 1642.

For More Information

Drake, Stillman. *Galileo at Work: His Scientific Biography*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1978. Reprint, New York: Dover Publications, 1995.

Fisher, Leonard Everett. *Galileo*. New York: Atheneum, 1992.

Hightower, Paul W. *Galileo: Astronomer and Physicist*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.

Redondi, Pietro. *Galileo Heretic*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1987.

Reston, James. *Galileo: A Life*. New York: HarperCollins, 1994.

GEORGE GALLUP

Born: November 18, 1901

Jefferson, Iowa

Died: July 27, 1984

Tschingel, Switzerland

American professor, researcher, author, and organization founder

George Gallup was a pioneer in the field of public opinion polling. He developed methods for perfecting the selection of sample populations (a small group that resembles the population as a whole), interviewing techniques, and formulation of questions. He also was a teacher and a supporter of educational reform.

Life in Iowa

George Horace Gallup was born on November 18, 1901, in the small town of Jefferson, Iowa. He was the son of George Henry Gallup, a farmer as well as a real estate dealer in agricultural land, and Nettie Davenport. As a teenager, Gallup worked as the manager of a dairy farm and used his salary to start a newspaper at his high school. All of young Gallup's higher education took place at the University of Iowa, where he received a bachelor's degree in 1923, a master's in 1925, and a doctorate in 1928. On December 27, 1925, he married Ophelia Smith Miller. They had two sons, Alec Miller and

George Horace Jr., who carried on their father's polling organization; and a daughter, Julia Gallup Laughlin.

From teaching to polling

Gallup's career as a teacher began after he received a bachelor's degree and stayed to teach journalism and psychology from 1923 to 1929 at the University of Iowa. He then moved to Drake University at Des Moines, Iowa, where he served as head of the Department of Journalism until 1931. That year, he moved to Northwestern University in Evanston, Illinois, as a professor of journalism and advertising. The next year he moved to New York City to join the advertising agency of Young and Rubicam as director of research (later as vice president from 1937 to 1947). From 1933 to 1937 he was also professor of journalism at Columbia University, but he had to give up this position shortly after he formed his own polling company, the American Institute of Public Opinion (Gallup Poll), in 1935, where he concentrated on attitude research. He was also the founder (1939) and president of the Audience Research Institute.

Apart from these business positions Gallup was active in professional and public service groups. He was president of the International Association of Public Opinion Institutes, from 1947 to 1984, and of the National Municipal League, from 1953 to 1956, and chairman of the All-America Cities Award Committee, a jury which selects All-American cities on the basis of intelligent and effective citizen activity. He founded Quill and Scroll, an international honor society for high school journalists, and served as head of its board of trustees.



George Gallup.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

A pioneer in polling

By 1944 George Gallup was widely recognized as one of the major pioneers in public opinion polling and had participated in the creation of methods to achieve a high degree of accuracy in discovering the public's opinions on a wide variety of issues. Gallup had firm beliefs in the validity of polling. In fact, he believed that polls made a positive contribution to the democratic process.

Always an educator

George Gallup was best known for creating a business of discovering people's opinion

on issues. But he was also an educator—and this experience, plus his study of the attitudes of millions of people, led him to develop a set of basic principles of education which he described in *The Miracle Ahead* (1964). The collective views of people, he recognized, are usually sound and logical; people are not led by their emotions as some people claim. However, their thoughts about issues are not deep enough. To achieve greater and more rapid progress, a new education system must be created to enhance our mental powers. Gallup was particularly positive toward the case history method of teaching, which offers “perhaps the best method that mankind has yet found to transmit wisdom as opposed to knowledge.”

George Gallup was involved in his career right up until his death. He was traveling in Tschingel, Switzerland, when he suffered a massive heart attack on July 26, 1984, and died the next day. He was eighty-three years old.

For More Information

Cantril, A. H., and Charles W. Roll. *Polls: Their Use and Misuse in Politics*. New York: Basic Books, 1972.

INDIRA GANDHI

Born: November 19, 1917

Allahabad, India

Died: October 31, 1984

New Delhi, India

Indian politician and prime minister

Indira Gandhi, a prime minister of India, was the most effective and powerful politician of her day in that country. Considered a hero by her supporters and cursed by her enemies, who later assassinated her, Indira Gandhi paved the way for democracy in India during the twentieth century.

Early life

Indira Priyadarshini Gandhi was born in the northern Indian city of Allahabad on November 19, 1917. She was the only child of Jawaharlal Nehru, an important figure in the nationalist movement, a movement devoted to the improvement of culture within the nation. Later he became India's first prime minister. Because of many of his political beliefs, Jawaharlal, along with much of his family, was often jailed for supporting Mohandas Gandhi's (1869–1948) nationalist movement. Mohandas Gandhi (no relation to Indira) opposed the dominant rule of Great Britain over India. This association placed Indira at the center of India's struggle for freedom. Her family's fight for freedom made Indira's upbringing shaky. Her father was often absent from being jailed, and her mother was bed-ridden from tuberculosis, a terrible disease affecting the lungs and bones. Because of her father's stand against institutions run by the British government, Indira's early schooling was not consistent. For a while she was taught at home. Later she attended an academy run by a poet-philosopher.

Shortly after her mother's death in 1936, Indira enrolled at Santiniketan University and Somerville College, Oxford University, in England. She married Feroze Gandhi (also no relation to Mohandas Gandhi) in March 1942, despite both family's objections, as the

two were not part of the same social status or religions—he was a descendent of Iranian immigrants; she was Hindu. Feroze Gandhi became a lawyer and newspaper executive as well as an independent member of Parliament. Shortly after their marriage, they were both imprisoned for a period of thirteen months for their part in the nationalist political demonstrations against British rule. During her imprisonment Indira taught reading and writing to prisoners. Feroze Gandhi died in 1960. They had two sons, Rajiv and Sanjay.

Indian independence

On August 15, 1947, Great Britain released their control over India and the Indian Empire was quickly divided into two countries, today known as India and Pakistan. No longer under British control, India erupted into violence. Thousands of members of rival religious groups, the Hindus and the Moslems, were killed during riots. During this time Indira served as her father's hostess and housekeeper. Since her father had never remarried after his wife's death in 1936, Indira took charge of her father's large mansion and began helping him in political matters. Together they worked towards peace, arranging a meeting of Hindu and Moslem religious leaders in New Dehli, India.

Throughout the period of Indira Gandhi's political association with her father, she focused on social welfare work, particularly children's welfare. The Indian National Congress had led the country to freedom and had then become its major political party. She had joined the Congress in 1938, and later served as a member of its Youth Advisory Board and chairman of its Woman's Department. Prior to



Indira Gandhi.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

assuming the presidency of the organization in 1959, Gandhi was named to its twenty-one-member executive Working Committee. She was elected with more votes than any other candidate to the powerful eleven-member Central Election Board, which named candidates and planned electoral strategy.

As prime minister

In June 1964, following her father's death, Gandhi became minister for information and broadcasting under Prime Minister Lal Bahadur Shastri (1904–1966), where she helped start an Indian television system. In January 1966, when Shastri died, Gandhi

was elected leader of the Congress Party in Parliament (the governing body of India) and became the third prime minister of independent India.

Gandhi assumed office at a critical time in the history of the country. A truce had ended the 1965 war between India and Pakistan only a week earlier. The nation was in the midst of a two-year drought, resulting in severe food shortages and a deepening economic crisis with rising prices and rising unemployment. The political situation in India was equally as affected. In the fourth general elections of 1967 the Congress retained majority control (and reelected Gandhi as its leader), but lost control in half the state legislatures. After twenty years of political dominance, the Congress Party was experiencing serious difficulty.

A government divided

Gandhi immediately set about reorganizing the party to make it a more effective instrument of administration and national development. Her goal was to achieve a wider measure of social and economic justice for all Indians. As her left-of-center policies (slightly liberal, or supporting civil liberties and social progress) became clear, the Congress Party split, with the younger, more liberal elements rallying around Gandhi and the older, more conservative party leaders opposing her. This division came to a head in July 1969 when she nationalized (brought under the control of government) the country's fourteen leading banks in a highly popular move meant to make credit more available to agriculture and to small industry.

The split was formalized when Gandhi's candidate for the presidency of India, V. V.

Giri, won over the party's official nominee. Although Gandhi took 228 members of Parliament with her into the New Congress, this was not a majority in the 521-member house, and she held power only with support from more liberal parties. In December 1970, when Gandhi failed to get the necessary support to abolish, or end, the privileges of the former Indian princes, she called on the president to dissolve Parliament. Midterm elections were set for March 1971, one full year ahead of schedule.

A coalition, or alliance, of three parties of the right and an anti-Congress socialist party opposed Gandhi, who made alliances with liberal parties as well as some regional parties. Her platform was essentially one of achieving social and economic change more rapidly in an effort to improve the quality of life of India's people. Her party won a massive victory with over a two-thirds majority in Parliament.

End of her career

Gandhi faced major problems in the areas of food production, population control, land reform, regulation of prices, unemployment, and industrial production. The problems were increased by the arrival in India of almost ten million refugees, who were uprooted as a result of the civil unrest in East Pakistan. In November 1971 Indian troops crossed into East Pakistan to fight Pakistani forces. A month later Gandhi announced recognition of the Bangladesh government set up by East Pakistani rebel leaders. On December 16 Pakistan's commander in East Pakistan surrendered to India.

In the state elections held in India in March 1972, Gandhi's New Congress Party scored the most overwhelming victory in the

history of independent India. However, her opponent accused her of violating election laws, and a high court supported the charge in 1975. Because of this development, as well as domestic unrest, Gandhi declared a state of emergency and postponed elections. In the 1977 elections Gandhi and her party suffered major defeats and Gandhi eventually lost her seat and the post of prime minister.

The following year Gandhi headed the Congress Party as she returned to Parliament. In 1979 she again became prime minister. In efforts to prove India's nonalliance in the global community, she visited both the United States and the U.S.S.R., the former Soviet Union, which consisted of Russia and several smaller states. Internally, riots broke out among Muslim, Hindu, and Sikh religious sects, or groups. Sikhs, looking to separate themselves from India, secured weapons within their sacred Golden Temple in Amritsar, and assumed religious protection. Gandhi ordered government troops to storm the temple, leading to many Sikh deaths. This led to her assassination at her residence on October 31, 1984, by her own Sikh security guards. In death, Gandhi remains a symbol of courage and democracy in one of the world's most populated countries.

For More Information

Ali, Tariq. *An Indian Dynasty: The Story of the Nehru-Gandhi Family*. New York: Putnam, 1985.

Frank, Katherine. *Indira: The Life of Indira Nehru Gandhi*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 2002.

Greene, Carol. *Indira Nehru Gandhi, Ruler of India*. Chicago: Children's Press, 1985.

Jayakar, Pupu. *Indira Gandhi: An Intimate Biography*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1993.

MOHANDAS GANDHI

Born: October 2, 1869

Porbandar, India

Died: January 30, 1948

Delhi, India

Indian religious leader, reformer, and lawyer

Mohandas Gandhi was an Indian revolutionary and religious leader who used his religious power for political and social reform. Although he held no governmental office, he was the main force behind the second-largest nation in the world's struggle for independence.

Early years

Mohandas Karamchand Gandhi was born on October 2, 1869, in Porbandar, India, a seacoast town in the Kathiawar Peninsula north of Bombay, India. His wealthy family was from one of the higher castes (Indian social classes). He was the fourth child of Karamchand Gandhi, prime minister to the raja (ruler) of three small city-states, and Purlibai, his fourth wife. Gandhi described his mother as a deeply religious woman who attended temple (a place for religious worship) service daily. Mohandas was a small, quiet boy who disliked sports and was only an average student. At the age of thirteen he did not even know in advance that he

was to marry Kasturbai, a girl his own age. The childhood ambition of Mohandas was to study medicine, but as this was considered beneath his caste, his father persuaded him to study law instead. After his marriage Mohandas finished high school and tutored his wife.

In September 1888 Gandhi went to England to study. Before leaving India, he promised his mother he would try not to eat meat. He was an even stricter vegetarian while away than he had been at home. In England he studied law but never completely adjusted to the English way of life. He became a lawyer in 1891 and sailed for Bombay. He attempted unsuccessfully to practice law in Rajkot and Bombay, then for a brief period served as lawyer for the prince of Porbandar.

South Africa: the beginning

In 1893 Gandhi accepted an offer from a firm of Muslims to represent them legally in Pretoria, the capital of Transvaal in the Union of South Africa. While traveling in a first-class train compartment in Natal, South Africa, a white man asked Gandhi to leave. He got off the train and spent the night in a train station meditating. He decided then to work to end racial prejudice. He had planned to stay in South Africa for only one year, but this new cause kept him in the country until 1914. Shortly after the train incident he called his first meeting of Indians in Pretoria and attacked racial discrimination (treating a certain group of people differently) by whites. This launched his campaign for improved legal status for Indians in South Africa, who at that time suffered the same discrimination as black people.

In 1896 Gandhi returned to India to take his wife and sons to Africa and to inform his

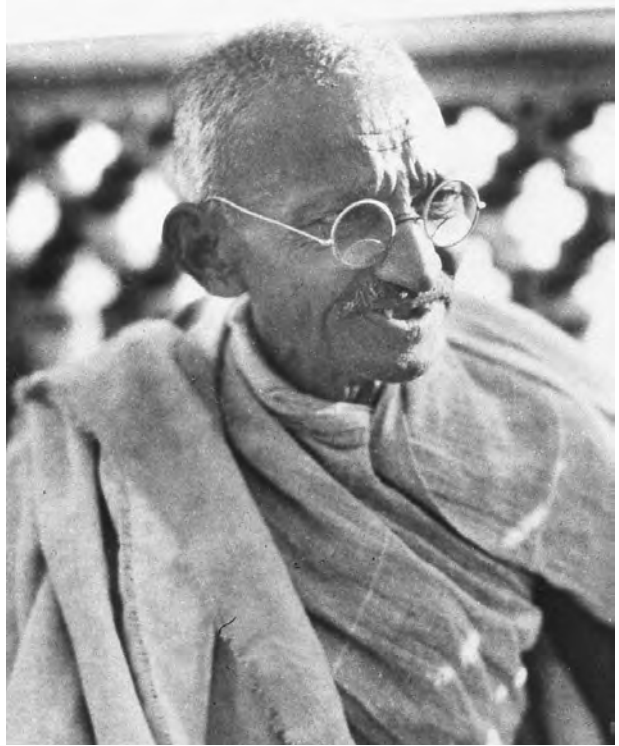
countrymen of the poor treatment of Indians there. News of his speeches filtered back to Africa, and when Gandhi returned, an angry mob threw stones and attempted to lynch (to murder by mob action and without lawful trial) him.

Spiritual development

Gandhi began to do day-to-day chores for unpaid boarders of the lowest castes and encouraged his wife to do the same. He decided to buy a farm in Natal and return to a simpler way of life. He began to fast (not eat). In 1906 he became celibate (not engaging in sexual intercourse) after having fathered four sons, and he preached Brahmacharya (vow of celibacy) as a means of birth control and spiritual purity. He also began to live a life of voluntary poverty.

During this period Gandhi developed the concept of Satyagraha, or soul force. He wrote: "Satyagraha is not predominantly civil disobedience, but a quiet and irresistible pursuit of truth." Truth was throughout his life Gandhi's chief concern, as reflected in the subtitle of his *Autobiography: The Story of My Experiments with Truth*. Gandhi also developed a basic concern for the means used to achieve a goal.

In 1907 Gandhi urged all Indians in South Africa to defy a law requiring registration and fingerprinting of all Indians. For this activity he was imprisoned for two months but released when he agreed to voluntary registration. During Gandhi's second stay in jail he read the American essayist Henry David Thoreau's (1817–1862) essay "Civil Disobedience," which left a deep impression on him. He was also influenced by his correspondence with Russian novelist Leo Tolstoy



Mohandas Gandhi.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

(1828–1910) in 1909–1910 and by John Ruskin's (1819–1900) *Unto This Last*.

Gandhi decided to create a place for civil resisters to live in a group environment. He called it the Tolstoy Farm. By this time he had abandoned Western dress for traditional Indian garb. Two of his final legal achievements in Africa were a law declaring Indian (rather than only Christian) marriages valid, and the end of a tax on former indentured (bound to work and unable to leave for a specific period of time) Indian labor. Gandhi regarded his work in South Africa as completed.

By the time Gandhi returned to India in January 1915, he had become known as “Mahatmaji,” a title given him by the poet Rabindranath Tagore (1861–1941). This title means “great soul.” Gandhi knew how to reach the masses and insisted on their resistance and spiritual growth. He spoke of a new, free Indian individual, telling Indians that India’s cages were self-made.

Disobedience and return to old values

The repressive Rowlatt Acts of 1919 (a set of laws that allowed the government to try people accused of political crimes without a jury) caused Gandhi to call a general hartal, or strike (when workers refuse to work in order to obtain rights from their employers), throughout the country. But he called it off when violence occurred against Englishmen. Following the Amritsar Massacre of some four hundred Indians, Gandhi responded by not cooperating with British courts, stores, and schools. The government agreed to make reforms.

Gandhi began urging Indians to make their own clothing rather than buy British goods. This would create employment for millions of Indian peasants during the many idle months of the year. He cherished the ideal of economic independence for each village. He identified industrialization (increased use of machines) with materialism (desire for wealth) and felt that it stunted man’s growth. Gandhi believed that the individual should be placed ahead of economic productivity.

In 1921 the Congress Party, a group of various nationalist (love of one’s own nation and cultural identity) groups, again voted for a nonviolent disobedience campaign. Gandhi had come to realize that India’s reliance on

Britain had made India more helpless than ever. In 1922 Gandhi was tried and sentenced to six years in prison, but he was released two years later for an emergency appendectomy (surgery to remove an inflamed appendix). This was the last time the British government tried Gandhi.

Fasting and the protest march

One technique Gandhi used frequently was the fast. He firmly believed that Hindu-Muslim unity was natural and he undertook a twenty-one-day fast to bring the two communities together. He also fasted during a strike of mill workers in Ahmedabad. Another technique he developed was the protest march. In response to a British tax on all salt used by Indians, a severe hardship on the peasants, Gandhi began his famous twenty-four-day “salt march” to the sea. Several thousand marchers walked 241 miles to the coast in protest of the unfair law.

Another cause Gandhi supported was improving the status of members of the lower castes, or Harijans. On September 20, 1932, Gandhi began a fast for the Harijans, opposing a British plan for a separate voting body for them. As a result of Gandhi’s fast, some temples were opened to exterior castes for the first time in history.

Gandhi devoted the years 1934 through 1939 to the promotion of making fabric, basic education, and making Hindi the national language. During these years he worked closely with Jawaharlal Nehru (1889–1964) in the Congress Working Committee. Despite differences of opinion, Gandhi designated Nehru his successor, saying, “I know this, that when I am gone he will speak my language.”

World War II and beyond

England's entry into World War II (1939–45; when the United States, France, Great Britain, and the Soviet Union fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan) brought India in without its consent. Because Britain had made no political compromises satisfactory to nationalist leaders, in August 1942 Gandhi proposed not to help in the war effort. Gandhi, Nehru, and other Congress Party leaders were imprisoned, touching off violence throughout India. When the British attempted to place the blame on Gandhi, he fasted for three weeks in jail. He contracted malaria (a potentially fatal disease spread by mosquitoes) in prison and was released on May 6, 1944.

When Gandhi emerged from prison, he sought to stop the creation of a separate Muslim state of Pakistan, which Muhammad Ali Jinnah (1876–1948) was demanding. Jinnah declared August 16, 1946, a "Direct Action Day." On that day, and for several days following, communal killings left five thousand dead and fifteen thousand wounded in Calcutta alone. Violence spread through the country.

Extremely upset, Gandhi went to Bengal, saying, "I am not going to leave Bengal until the last embers of trouble are stamped out." But while he was in Calcutta forty-five hundred more people were killed in Bihar. Gandhi, now seventy-seven, warned that he would fast to death unless Biharis reformed. Either Hindus and Muslims would learn to live together or he would die in the attempt. The situation there calmed, but rioting continued elsewhere.

Drive for independence

In March 1947 the last viceroy, Lord Mountbatten (1900–1979), arrived in India

with instructions to take Britain out of India by June 1948. The Congress Party by this time had agreed to separation, since the only alternative appeared to be continuation of British rule. Gandhi, despairing because his nation was not responding to his plea for peace and brotherhood, refused to participate in the independence celebrations on August 15, 1947. On September 1, 1947, after an angry Hindu mob broke into the home where he was staying in Calcutta, Gandhi began to fast, "to end only if and when sanity returns to Calcutta." Both Hindu and Muslim leaders promised that there would be no more killings, and Gandhi ended his fast.

On January 13, 1948, Gandhi began his last fast in Delhi, praying for Indian unity. On January 30, as he was attending prayers, he was shot and killed by Nathuram Godse, a thirty-five-year-old editor of a Hindu Mahasabha extremist newspaper in Poona.

For More Information

Barracrough, John. *Mohandas Gandhi*. Des Plaines, IL: Heinemann Interactive Library, 1998.

Clement, Catherine. *Gandhi: The Power of Pacifism*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1996.

Gandhi, Mohandas. *Autobiography: The Story of My Experiments with Truth*. 2 vols. 2d ed. Washington, DC: Public Affairs Press, 1954.

Gandhi, Mohandas. *The Essential Gandhi, an Anthology*. Edited by Louis Fischer. New York: Random House, 1962. Reprint, New York: Vintage Books, 1983.

Martin, Christopher. *Mohandas Gandhi*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 2001.

GABRIEL GARCÍA MÁRQUEZ

Born: March 6, 1928

Aracataca, Colombia

*Colombian novelist, short-story writer,
and journalist*

Gabriel García Márquez is a Colombian novelist, short-story writer, and journalist whose works have earned him the reputation of being one of the greatest living writers in Spain and Latin America.

Education and newspaper jobs

Born in Aracataca, Colombia, on March 6, 1928, Gabriel García Márquez was the oldest of Gabriel Eligio García and Luisa Santiaga Márquez Iguarán's twelve children. His father was a telegraph operator. The family was poor, and García Márquez spent the first eight years of his life with his maternal grandparents. They were the most important and influential people in his life, and he loved listening to them tell stories about Colombia's old days.

García Márquez received his early education from the Liceo Nacional of Zipaquirá, Colombia, from which he graduated in 1946. He then entered the University of Bogotá to study law. (He studied for several years but did not enjoy it and never finished.) He wrote his first story in 1947, and it was published in the newspaper *El Espectador*. Over the next few years he had several more stories published in newspapers. In 1948 civil war broke out in the country and García Márquez moved to Cartagena, Colombia, where he worked as a journalist for the newspaper *El Universal*. In 1950 he

moved to Barranquilla, Colombia, where he wrote for *El Herald*. In 1954 he returned to Bogotá and worked at *El Espectador* while writing short stories on the side.

Early works

Between 1955 and 1960 several published works had begun to establish García Márquez's fame in the Spanish-speaking world. *La hojarasca* (1955), a short novel, is set in the made-up town of Macondo in the swampy coastal area of northeastern Colombia known as the Ciénaga. The story reflects the changes the twentieth century brought to the life of this sleepy country town. Much of García Márquez's work centers around funerals. In *La hojarasca* mourners who knew the dead man in life think about the past, each from his own point of view. Three different people—an old colonel, his daughter, and her son—tell their story. The dead man, a doctor and former friend of the colonel, had committed suicide. The narrators do not entirely explain what happened, but in the course of each story much of the past history of the village of Macondo is revealed. A strong feeling of doom fills the novel.

Macondo and the Buendía family were further developed in *El coronel no tiene quien le escriba* (1961; *Nobody Writes to the Colonel and Other Stories*). The next collection of short stories, *Los funerales de la Mama Grande* (1962), strengthened García Márquez's growing reputation. The publication of *Cien años de soledad* (1967; *One Hundred Years of Solitude*) created a stir when it sold over one hundred thousand copies in fifteen editions in Buenos Aires, Argentina, in 1969.

The story of *Cien años de soledad* describes the rise and fall of a village as seen in

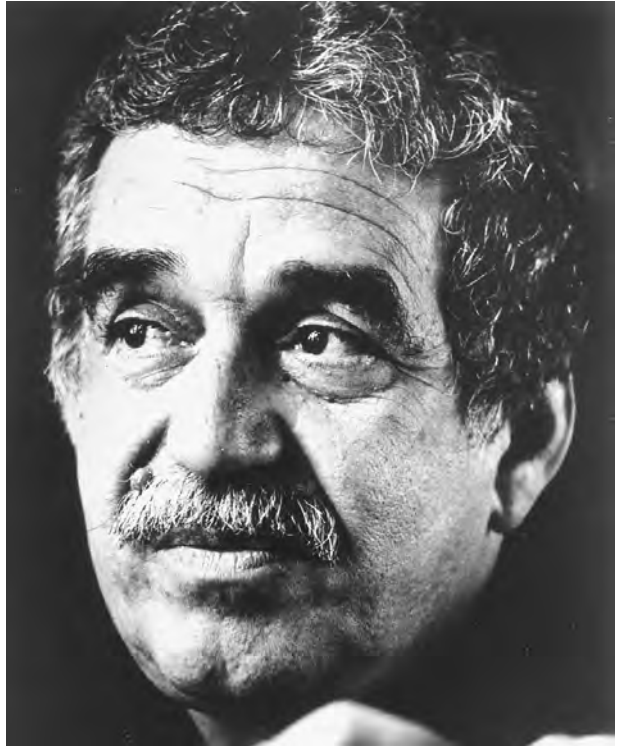
the lives of five generations of one family. It ends with flood and drought, which comes as the last living Buendía figures out the ancient predictions of doom and learns that “races condemned to 100 years of solitude did not have a second opportunity on earth.” The family is meant to represent Colombia, and through extension, both South America and the rest of the world. Pablo Neruda (1904–1973), the famous Chilean poet, praised *Cien años de soledad*, and it is generally considered García Márquez’s masterpiece.

Other works

García Márquez considered his next novel, *El otoño del patriarca* (1975; *The Autumn of the Patriarch*), “a perfect integration (combination) of journalism and literature.” García Márquez continued to write novels, short stories, essays, and film scripts. In 1982 he was awarded the Nobel Prize in Literature. In 1983 he wrote the film script *Erendira*, adapted from his 1972 novella (short novel) *La increíble y triste historia de la cándida Erendira y su abuela desalmada* (*Innocent Erendira and Her Heartless Grandmother*).

García Márquez’s other famous novel, *El amor en los tiempos del cólera* (*Love in the Time of Cholera*) was written in 1985 (with an English translation published in 1988). This novel is an exploration of love and the relationship between aging, death, and decay. After *Cholera* he published the novels *El general en su laberinto* (1989; *The General in His Labyrinth*, 1990), *Doce cuentos peregrinos* (1992; *Strange Pilgrims*, 1993), and *Of Love and Other Demons* (1994).

García Márquez’s fictional blend of history, politics, real social situations, and fantasy (something made up) has given rise to the term “magical realism.” The use of magi-



Gabriel García Márquez.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

cal realism was often imitated by other Latin American authors, especially Isabel Allende (1942–). García Márquez’s need to tell a story drives his writing. In the July 1997 issue of *Harper’s*, García Márquez writes, “The best story is not always the first one but rather the one that is told better.”

Later years

In 1999 García Márquez returned to journalism with the purchase of *Cambio*, a weekly newspaper in Colombia. He rolled up his sleeves and went to work trying to improve both the paper’s content and its sales. His duties ranged from interviewing

heads of state and business leaders to editing copy and photographs. García Márquez told the *New York Times* that he wanted his paper's young reporters "to tell a story, to go back to the time when a reader could know what happened as if he were there himself."

Later that year García Márquez was diagnosed with cancer and disappeared from public life. Rumors began to circulate that he was dying, aided by a poem appearing on the Internet supposedly written by him as a sort of farewell. In December 2000 García Márquez gave an interview in which he denied writing the poem and said that he had been keeping a low profile because he was busy writing his autobiography (the story of one's own life), which he decided to do after learning that he had cancer. In March 2001 García Márquez announced that he would never set foot in Spain again unless a new European Union rule requiring Colombian citizens to obtain visas (identification documents permitting travel into foreign countries) before entering Spain was withdrawn.

For More Information

Bell-Villada, Gene H. *García Márquez: The Man and His Work*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1990.

Dolan, Sean. *Gabriel García Márquez*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1994.

JUDY GARLAND

Born: June 10, 1922
Grand Rapids, Minnesota

Died: June 21, 1969

London, England

American actress and singer

Judy Garland starred in films, musicals, and on the concert stage. A superstar who never lost her appeal, she is best remembered for her performance in *The Wizard of Oz* and for the song "Over the Rainbow."

Becoming Judy Garland

Judy Garland was born Frances Ethel Gumm on June 10, 1922, in Grand Rapids, Minnesota. She was the last of three daughters of former vaudeville (traveling variety entertainment) actors Frank and Ethel Gumm. Judy began her show business career before she was three years old at her father's theater, the New Grand Theater. The family soon moved to Los Angeles, California, and to better climates than those found in remote northern Minnesota. By age six she was a veteran performer, appearing with her two older sisters in a vaudeville act. After her father's health declined, the sisters' act soon became the primary source of income for the family.

Mistakenly billed as "The Glum Sisters" in 1931, the sisters, at the suggestion of a fellow performer, changed their stage name to Garland (the name of a then-popular drama critic). Shortly thereafter, at her own insistence, Garland changed her first name from Frances to Judy (after a popular song of the day).

Blossoming career

In 1935 the head of MGM (Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer), a major Hollywood studio, heard Judy Garland sing and quickly signed her to a contract. There was some uncer-

tainty at the studio on how to use her talents. A year passed before she made her first MGM film, a two-reeler. Her first appearance in a feature did not come until 1937, when she was loaned to another major studio, Twentieth Century-Fox. That same year at an MGM party for its star Clark Gable (1901–1960), Garland was a hit singing a specialty number, “Dear Mr. Gable,” which was adapted from the well-known standard “You Made Me Love You.” As a result she and the song were used for the 1937 feature *Broadway Melody of 1938*. Again she earned praise within the industry.

MGM quickly put Garland into more films, each spotlighting her singing. In her next film, *Thoroughbreds Don't Cry* (1937), she was cast with another childhood star, Mickey Rooney (1920–), with whom she would later appear in eight films. MGM paired them in some of the Andy Hardy films, a series starring Rooney as an “average” American teenager. The duo performed in such movies as *Babes in Arms* (1939), *Strike Up The Band* (1940), *Babes on Broadway* (1941), and *Girl Crazy* (1943). Her most memorable film role, and the one that made her a household name, came in 1939 with *The Wizard of Oz*. She won a special Oscar as “best juvenile performer of the year” for her role as Dorothy. The film also provided her with the song with which she was identified for the rest of her life—“Over the Rainbow.”

During the 1940s Garland graced a number of outstanding musicals, including *Meet Me in St. Louis* (1944), *The Harvey Girls* (1946), and *Easter Parade* (1948). She was superb in a non-singing role in *The Clock*, a pleasant drama about a young girl and a serviceman on leave.



Judy Garland.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Fall from grace

Garland's personal life, however, was less successful. She married music arranger David Rose in 1941, but that marriage ended long before their 1945 divorce. That same year she married director Vincente Minnelli (1910–1986), who guided Garland in some of her most notable films, including *The Pirate* (1948). Daughter Liza Minnelli (later a star in her own right) was born in 1946. This second marriage also failed and was over well before the 1951 divorce. All during the 1940s Garland was hampered by a lack of self-confidence,

strained by constant work, and slowed by weight problems. She became heavily dependent on pills and in the end broke down, trying to kill herself in 1950.

Once a professional talent and hard worker, Garland became a problem artist during the 1940s. The filming of *In the Good Old Summertime* (1949) was repeatedly delayed, as was *Summer Stock* (1950). A pattern had been set that would increasingly set back her career. She was replaced in a number of films and finally was fired by MGM in 1950.

Ups and downs

Sidney Luft, a successful promoter who later became her third husband (1952), started Garland on a career on concert stages. She was a smashing success at the Palladium in London, England, at the Palace Theatre in New York City, and elsewhere. The magnificent film *A Star Is Born* (1954) capped her comeback, and she earned an Oscar nomination. But faltering health, increasing drug dependency, and alcohol abuse led to nervous breakdowns, suicide attempts, and recurrent breakups with Luft, by whom she had two children, Lorna (1952) and Joseph (1955). The Lufts finally divorced in 1965 after years of legal wrangling.

Notwithstanding her troubles, Garland undertook a highly successful concert tour in 1961, which was capped by an enthusiastically received concert at New York City's Carnegie Hall. The live recording of that event sold over two million copies. That same year she earned an Oscar nomination for best supporting actress for her dramatic performance in the film *Judgment at Nuremberg*. She had another non-singing role in the British

film *A Child Is Waiting* (1963). Her last film role was in another British film, *I Could Go On Singing* (1963). Garland had made a well-received television debut in 1955 on the *Ford Star Jubilee* and had done well in other guest appearances. Unfortunately, her long-awaited television weekly series did not fare well, and CBS cancelled the variety show after one season (1963–1964).

Garland's personal and professional life continued to be a series of ups and downs, marked by failing performances, comebacks, lawsuits, hospitalizations, and suicide attempts. After divorcing Luft she married Mark Herron, a young actor with whom she had traveled for some time. The marriage lasted only months. Mickey Deans, a discotheque manager twelve years her junior, whom she had married earlier that year, found her dead in their London flat on June 21, 1969. Death came from an "accidental" overdose of pills. She is buried in Hartsdale, New York.

Judy Garland was a superstar who, as one critic pointed out, "managed the considerable feat of converting herself into an underdog." Despite all the lows in her life she remained immensely popular and had an appeal that was never entirely lost.

For More Information

- Clarke, Gerald. *Get Happy: The Life of Judy Garland*. New York: Random House, 2000.
- Frank, Gerold. *Judy*. New York: Harper & Row, 1975.
- Schechter, Scott. *Judy Garland: The Day-by-Day Chronicle of a Legend*. New York: Cooper Square Press, 2002.

MARCUS GARVEY

Born: August 17, 1887

St. Ann's Bay, Jamaica

Died: June 10, 1940

London, England

Jamaican activist and African nationalist

Marcus Garvey, a black man from the West Indies, was the first to forcefully speak about the concept of African nationalism—of black people returning to Africa, the continent of their forefathers, in order to build a great nation of their own. His writings and ideas would inspire many leaders of the civil rights movement during the second half of the twentieth century.

Early life

Marcus Mosiah Garvey was born in St. Ann's Bay, Jamaica, on August 17, 1887, the youngest child of a stonemason (one who prepares stones for building). He went to the local elementary school, and at the age of fourteen became an apprentice (working to gain experience) in the printing trade. In 1903 he went to the capital, Kingston, to work as a printer. He soon became involved in public activities and helped form the Printers Union, the first trade union in Jamaica. In 1907 he took part in the unsuccessful printers strike, where organized workers refused to work unless certain demands were met. This experience influenced the young Garvey in both his political and journalistic passions. He soon began publishing a periodical called the *Watchman*.

In 1910 Garvey began a series of travels that transformed him from an average person concerned about the problems of those with less opportunity, to an African nationalist determined to lift an entire race from bondage. He visited Costa Rica, Panama, and Ecuador, and worked as an editor for several radical newspapers. After briefly returning home, he proceeded to England, where contacts with African nationalists stimulated in him a keen interest in Africa and in black history. In each country he visited, he noted that the black man was in an inferior position, subject to the ever-changing ideals of stronger races. His reading of Booker T. Washington's (1856–1915) "Up from Slavery" at this time had a great effect upon him. Also at this time Garvey met Duse Mohammed Ali, a Sudanese-Egyptian and strong supporter of African self-rule. Garvey began writing for Ali's small magazines and was introduced to other black activists.

On his return to Jamaica in 1914 from England, Garvey formed the Universal Negro Improvement Association and African Communities League (UNIA-ACL). These organizations were intended "to work for the general uplift of the Negro peoples of the world," and would become the centerpiece for his life's work.

Message in America

In 1916 Garvey went to the United States to raise funds to carry on the work of his Jamaican organizations. He was immediately caught up in the unrest of the times, and his voice thundered in the evenings on the streets of Harlem in New York City, New York. A New York branch of the UNIA was established, soon followed by branches in



Marcus Garvey.

other cities in the United States, in Central and South America, and in the Caribbean. The expansion of the UNIA was publicized by its official voice, *Negro World*, a newspaper published in English, Spanish, and French. Published in New York City from 1918 to 1933, the magazine was succeeded by the monthly *Black Man*, which ran through the 1930s, published after 1934 in London.

Negro World reached out to black communities all over the world. It even penetrated into the interior of Africa, even though the white rulers there had banned it. Garvey stressed the need for blacks to return to Africa for the building of a great nation, but he realized that until this was accomplished,

Africans needed to make themselves economically independent wherever they lived. He encouraged black people to start their own businesses—to take the business of their ghettos into their own hands.

Together with the American clergyman Archbishop George A. McGuire (1866–1934), Garvey formed the African Orthodox Church. This was in accordance with one of his basic principles, for he believed that each race must see God through its own racial eyes. The Black Christ and the Black Madonna were officially announced at the UNIA convention of 1924.

The movement stumbles

The Black Star Line shipping company and the Negro Factories Corporation were to be the commercial strengths of the Garvey movement. But it was the failure of the shipping venture that gave Garvey's enemies the opportunity to destroy him. Investments in the shipping line were lost, and in 1925 Garvey was imprisoned in the United States. After serving two years and ten months of a five-year sentence, he was deported, or forced out of the country, to Jamaica.

Previously, his plans for colonization in Liberia had been ruined by the colonial powers that brought pressure to bear on the Liberian government. As a result, the land that had been granted to the Garvey organization for the settlement of overseas Africans was given to the white American industrialist Harvey Firestone (1863–1938). And the expensive equipment shipped to Liberia for the use of Garvey's colonists was seized.

In Jamaica, Garvey attempted to enter local politics, but restrictions at the time did

not allow the vote to the black masses. He went to England and continued his work of social protest and his call for the liberation (freeing) of Africa. He died in London on June 10, 1940. Marcus Garvey was married twice. His second wife, Amy Jacques, whom he married in 1922, bore him two sons.

Garvey's legacy

The Garvey movement was the greatest international movement of African peoples in modern times. At its peak, from 1922 to 1924, the movement counted more than eight million followers. The youngest members of the movement were taken in at five years of age and, as they grew older, they graduated to the sections for older children.

Garvey emphasized the belief in the One God, the God of Africa, who should be visualized through black eyes. He preached to black people to become familiar with their ancient history and their rich cultural heritage. He called for pride in the black race—for example, he made black dolls for black children. His was the first voice to clearly demand black power. It was he who said, “A race without authority and power is a race without respect.”

In emphasizing the need to have separate black institutions under black leadership, Garvey anticipated the mood and thinking of the future black nationalists by nearly fifty years. He died, as he lived, an unbending leader of African nationalism. The symbols which he made famous, the black star of Africa and the red, black, and green flag of African liberation, continued to inspire younger generations of African nationalists.

For More Information

- Cronon, E. David. *Black Moses: The Story of Marcus Garvey and the Universal Negro Improvement Association*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1955.
- Lewis, Rupert, and Maureen Warner-Lewis. *Garvey: Africa, Europe, the Americas*. Kingston, Jamaica: Institute of Social and Economic Research, University of the West Indies, 1986.
- Lewis, Rupert. *Marcus Garvey: Anti-Colonial Champion*. Trenton, NJ: Africa World Press, 1988.
- Robinson, Wilhelmena S. *Historical Negro Biographies*. New York: Publishers Co., 1967.

BILL GATES

Born: October 28, 1955

Seattle, Washington

*American businessman, chief executive officer,
and software developer*

Microsoft cofounder and chief executive officer Bill Gates has become the wealthiest man in America and one of the most influential personalities in the ever-evolving computer industry.

Love of computer technology

William H. Gates III was born on October 28, 1955, in Seattle, Washington. He was the second child and only son of William Henry Gates Jr., a successful Seattle attorney,

and Mary Maxwell, a former schoolteacher. Kristi, his older sister, later became his tax accountant and Libby, his younger sister, lives in Seattle raising her two children. Gates enjoyed a normal, active childhood and participated in sports, joined the Cub Scouts, and spent summers with his family in Bremerton, Washington.

Although Gates's parents had a law career in mind for their son, he developed an early interest in computer science and began studying computers in the seventh grade at Seattle's Lakeside School. Lakeside was a private school chosen by Gates's parents in the hopes that it would be more challenging for their son's intellectual drive and curiosity. At Lakeside, Gates came to know Paul Allen, a classmate with similar interests in technology who would eventually become his business partner. Immediately, Gates and Allen realized the potential of the young computer industry.

Early experience

Gates's early experiences with computers included debugging (eliminating errors from) programs for the Computer Center Corporation's PDP-10, helping to computerize electric power grids for the Bonneville Power Administration, and founding with Allen a firm called Traf-O-Data while still in high school. Their small company earned them twenty thousand dollars in fees for analyzing local traffic patterns.

While working with the Computer Center's PDP-10, Gates was responsible for what was probably the first computer virus, a program that copies itself into other programs and ruins data. Discovering that the machine was connected to a national network of com-

puters called Cybernet, Gates invaded the network and installed a program on the main computer that sent itself to the rest of the network's computers, making it crash (became damaged). When Gates was found out, he was severely punished, and he kept away from computers for his entire junior year at Lakeside. Without the lure of computers, Gates made plans for college and law school in 1970. But by 1971 he was back helping Allen write a class scheduling program for their school's computer.

The article that started it all

Gates entered Harvard University in 1973 and pursued his studies for the next year and a half. His life changed in January of 1975, however, when *Popular Mechanics* carried a cover story on a \$350 microcomputer, the Altair, made by a firm called MITS in New Mexico. When Allen excitedly showed him the story, Gates knew where he wanted to be: at the forefront of computer software (a program of instructions for a computer) design.

Gates dropped out of Harvard in 1975, ending his academic life and beginning his career as a software designer. At this time, Gates and Allen cofounded Microsoft. They wrote programs for the early Apple and Commodore machines. One of Gates's most significant opportunities arrived in 1980, when IBM approached him to help with their personal computer project, code name Project Chess. Gates developed the Microsoft Disk Operating System, or MS-DOS. (An operating system is a type of software that controls the way a computer runs.) Not only did he sell IBM on the new operating system, but he also convinced the computer giant to allow others to write software for the machine. The

result was the rapid growth of licenses for MS-DOS, as software developers quickly moved to become compatible with (able to work with) IBM. By the early 1990s Microsoft had sold more than one hundred million copies of MS-DOS, making the operating system the all-time leader in software sales. For his achievements in science and technology, Gates received the Howard Vollum Award in 1984 from Reed College in Portland, Oregon.

Gates's competitive drive and fierce desire to win has made him a powerful force in business, but it has also consumed much of his personal life. In the six years between 1978 and 1984, he took a total of only two weeks vacation. But on New Year's Day 1994 Gates married Melinda French, a Microsoft manager, on the Hawaiian island of Lanai. The ceremony was held on the island's Challenge golf course, and Gates kept it private by buying out the unused rooms at the local hotel and by hiring all of the helicopters in the area to keep photographers from using them. His fortune at the time of his marriage was estimated at close to seven billion dollars. By 1997 his worth was estimated at approximately \$37 billion, earning him the title of "richest man in America."

The future for Microsoft

Many criticize Gates not just for his success, but because they feel he tries to unfairly—and maybe even illegally—dominate the market. As a result of Microsoft's market control, the U.S. Department of Justice brought an antitrust lawsuit (a lawsuit that is the result of a company being accused of using unfair business practices) against the company in 1998, saying the company had an illegal stronghold on the software industry.



Bill Gates.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Gates maintained Microsoft's success over rivals such as Oracle and IBM was simply the result of smart, strategic decision making. U.S. District Judge Thomas P. Jackson did not agree, and in November 1999, he found Microsoft to be a monopoly (a company with exclusive control) that used its market power to harm competing companies. Because of the ruling, Gates faced the prospect of breaking up Microsoft.

On January 13, 2000, Gates handed off day-to-day management of Microsoft to friend and right-hand man Steve Ballmer, adding chief executive officer to his existing title of president. Gates held on to his posi-

tion as chairman in the reshuffle, and added the title of chief software architect.

In the spring of 2002 Gates himself was scheduled to testify on behalf of Microsoft. The final ruling on the fate of Microsoft has the potential to be a landmark decision on the future of the computer industry.

Gates as philanthropist

Aside from being the most famous businessman of the late 1990s, Gates also has distinguished himself as a philanthropist (someone working for charity). He and wife Melinda established the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation, which focuses on helping to improve health care and education for children around the world. The foundation has donated \$4 billion since its start in 1996. Recent pledges include \$1 billion over twenty years to fund college scholarships for about one thousand minority students; \$750 million over five years to help launch the Global Fund for Children's Vaccines; \$50 million to help the World Health Organization's efforts to eradicate polio, a crippling disease that usually attacks children; and \$3 million to help prevent the spread of acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; an incurable disease that destroys the body's immune system) among young people in South Africa. In November 1998 Gates and his wife also gave the largest single gift to a U.S. public library, when they donated \$20 million to the Seattle Public Library. Another of Gates's charitable donations was \$20 million given to the Massachusetts Institute of Technology to build a new home for its Laboratory for Computer Science.

In July 2000 the foundation gave John Hopkins University a five-year, \$20 million grant to study whether or not inexpensive

vitamin and mineral pills can help save lives in poor countries. On November 13, 2000, Harvard University's School of Public Health announced it had received \$25 million from the foundation to study AIDS prevention in Nigeria. The grant was the largest single private grant in the school's history. It was announced on February 1, 2001, that the foundation would donate \$20 million to speed up the global eradication (to completely erase) of the disease commonly known as elephantiasis, a disease that causes disfigurement. In 2002 Gates, along with rock singer Bono, announced plans for DATA Agenda, a \$24 billion fund (partially supported by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation) that seeks to improve health care in Africa.

Although many describe Gates as cold and distant, his friends find him friendlier since his marriage and since the birth of his daughter, Jennifer, in April 1996. Further, he recognizes his overall contribution to both the world of technology and his efforts in philanthropy. In *Forbes* magazine's 2002 list of the two hundred richest people in the world, Gates was number one for the eighth straight year, coming in with a net worth of \$52.8 billion.

For More Information

Gates, Bill, with Nathan Myhevrold and Peter Rinearson. *The Road Ahead*. New York: Viking Press, 1995.

Ichbiah, Daniel, and Susan L. Knepper. *The Making of Microsoft*. Rocklin, CA: Prima, 1991.

Wallace, James. *Hard Drive: Bill Gates and the Making of the Microsoft Empire*. New York: Wiley, 1992.

PAUL GAUGUIN

Born: June 7, 1848

Paris, France

Died: May 8, 1903

Marquesas Islands, French Polynesia

French artist, painter, and sculptor

The French painter and sculptor Paul Gauguin sought exotic environments, first in France and later in Tahiti. He frequently combined the people and objects in his paintings in novel ways, bringing to mind a mysterious, personal world in the process.

Early life

Paul Gauguin was born in Paris, France, on June 7, 1848, to a French father, a journalist from Orléans, and a mother of Spanish Peruvian descent. When Paul was three his parents sailed for Lima, Peru, after the victory of Louis Napoleon (1769–1821). His father died during the trip. Gauguin and his mother remained in Lima for four years. There the young Gauguin lived a comfortable life. Gauguin then returned to Orléans, and eventually found his way back to Paris. Next he attended a seminary (a school for religious studies). At the age of seventeen he enlisted in the merchant marine (people who work on commercial ships). In 1870 Gauguin began a career as a stockbroker (a person who buys and sells shares of companies) and remained in this profession for twelve years. He married a Danish girl, Mette Sophia Gad, and seemed destined for a comfortable middle-class existence.

Beginnings as an artist

Gauguin's hobby was painting, which he pursued enthusiastically. The Salon of 1876 accepted one of his pictures, and he started a collection of works by impressionist painters. The impressionists were a group of painters who concentrated on the general impression produced by a scene or object. They used unmixed primary colors and small strokes to simulate actual reflected light. As time went on, Gauguin's desire to paint became ever stronger. In 1883 Gauguin, now thirty-five, decided to give up business and devote himself entirely to painting. His wife took their five children to live with her parents in Copenhagen, Denmark. Gauguin followed her, but he soon returned with his eldest son, Clovis, to Paris. There he supported himself by pasting advertisements on walls.

In 1886, with Clovis enrolled in a boarding school, Gauguin lived for a few months in the village of Pont-Aven in the Brittany region of northwestern France. He then left for the island of Martinique, first stopping to work as a laborer on the Panama Canal. He returned to Pont-Aven in February 1888 and gathered about him a group of painters. Gauguin preached and practiced a style he called synthetism, which involved pure color patterns, strong, expressive outlines, and flat planes. The painters admired the local people for their simple lives and deep religious faith. They felt these qualities reflected a truth about humanity's basic nature, which was not reflected in the sophisticated world of Paris.

Pre-Tahitian paintings

Among Gauguin's masterpieces of this period are *Vision after the Sermon/Jacob Wrestling with the Angel* (1888) and the *Yellow*



Paul Gauguin.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Christ (1889). In both paintings Breton (residents of Brittany) peasants (farm laborers) are strong elements. In both paintings one sees Gauguin's usual bright colors and simplified shapes, which he treated as flat silhouettes. These paintings also show his use of symbolism (using one thing to represent another). Objects and events are taken out of their normal historical contexts.

In *Vision after the Sermon*, Breton women observe Jacob wrestling with a stranger who turns out to be an angel. This is an episode described in the book of Genesis in the Bible. Gauguin is saying that the faith of these women enabled them to see miraculous

events of the past as vividly as if they were occurring before them. In the *Yellow Christ* Gauguin used a yellow, wooden statue from a church near Pont-Aven as his model. He depicts Breton women as if they were in the presence of the actual death of Jesus Christ.

In October 1888 Dutch painter Vincent van Gogh (1853–1890) invited Gauguin to join him at Arles, France. Gauguin was a proud, arrogant, sarcastic, and sophisticated person. Van Gogh was open and strongly needed human companionship. They did not get along and Gauguin returned to Paris. There he resumed his bohemian (nontraditional and artistic) existence until 1891, when he left France and the Western (characterized by European and American ideals) civilization he had come to dislike and went to Tahiti.

Tahiti

Gauguin embodied the dissatisfaction with bourgeois (middle-class) Parisian existence felt by several postimpressionist painters. He achieved what was perhaps the most extreme break with that society when he left Europe for a non-Western culture. When Gauguin arrived in Tahiti, he did not settle in the capital, Papeete, because Europeans lived there. Instead, he lived with the natives some twenty-five miles away. He perceived Tahiti as a land of beautiful and strong people, who were unspoiled by Western civilization. He enjoyed the bright, warm colors there.

Gauguin became ill and returned to France in August 1893. There he found that he had inherited a small sum of money from an uncle. In Paris he lived with flair. An exhibition of his Tahitian work in November was

not successful financially. In early 1894 he went to Denmark and then to Brittany.

Tahitian paintings

Gauguin's Tahitian paintings celebrate the lushness and mysterious splendor of his new environment. At the same time they are seldom pictures of actual Tahitian life. They contain combinations of objects and persons taken out of their normal settings, as did several of his paintings done in Brittany. In *La Orana Maria* (1891) a Tahitian woman, her young son, and two women standing nearby are shown in the obvious poses of the Virgin Mary and the Christ child with attendant saints or worshiping angels. In *Where Do We Come From? What Are We? Where Are We Going?* (1898) Tahitian natives are portrayed in unusual and probably preplanned meditative poses with a foreboding (giving a warning) primitive idol.

Second trip to Tahiti

In 1895 an unsuccessful auction of Gauguin's paintings was held. He sailed for Tahiti that spring. He once again settled among the natives. His health grew poorer. An ankle he had broken in Brittany did not heal properly, and he suffered from strokes. The government authorities, for whom he showed contempt, harassed him. However, he had to depend on them for menial jobs (work that is beneath a person's skills) in order to support himself. In 1901 he moved to the Marquesas Islands. He died there, alone, of a stroke on May 8, 1903.

Gauguin is regarded today as a highly influential founder of modern art. He focused on color and line, and often created a profound sense of mystery in his work. His unusual com-

binations of objects and people can be seen as forerunners of the surrealist (using fantastic imagery) art of the 1920s and later.

For More Information

Becker, Christoph. *Paul Gauguin: A Journey to Tahiti*. London: Prestel, 2001.

Cachin, François. *Gauguin: The Quest for Paradise*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1992.

Goldwater, Robert. *Paul Gauguin*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1957.

Sweetman, David. *Paul Gauguin: A Life*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1995.

KARL FRIEDRICH GAUSS

Born: April 30, 1777

Brunswick, Germany

Died: February 23, 1855

Göttingen, Germany

German mathematician

The German mathematician Karl Friedrich Gauss made outstanding contributions to both pure (studied for its own sake) and applied (studied in order to solve specific problems) mathematics.

Early life and education

Karl Friedrich Gauss was born in Brunswick, Germany, on April 30, 1777. He was the son of Gebhard Dietrich Gauss, a gardener and bricklayer, and Dorothea Gauss, the daughter of a stonecutter. Karl was an



Karl Friedrich Gauss.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

extremely bright child, correcting his father's arithmetic when he was three years old. His intellectual abilities attracted the attention of the Duke of Brunswick, who sent him first to the Collegium Carolinum (1792–95) in Brunswick and then to the University of Göttingen (1795–98).

Theory of numbers

In 1801 Gauss published *Disquisitiones arithmeticae*, which is often regarded as the work that marked the beginning of the modern theory of numbers. It combined the work of past scientists with his own, and was presented in such an elegant and complete way

that it rendered previous works on the subject obsolete (out of date and no longer needed).

Gauss made many outstanding contributions to the theory of numbers, including research on the division of a circle into equal parts. This solved a famous problem in Greek geometry (the study of points, lines, angles, and surfaces), namely, the inscription (drawing inside) of regular polygons (closed figures bounded by straight lines) in a circle. First, Gauss proved that a regular polygon with seventeen sides can be constructed with a ruler and compass; he then showed that any polygon with a prime number (able to be divided only by itself or the number 1) of sides can be constructed with these instruments.

Gauss also gave three proofs for the idea—conceived by others but never proved—that every equation in algebra has at least one root. Gauss was the first to adopt a strict approach to the treatment of infinite (never-ending) series of numbers. He also opened up a new line of research by updating the definition of a prime number.

Astronomical calculations

The discovery by Giuseppe Piazzi of the asteroid Ceres in 1801 increased Gauss's interest in astronomy, and upon the death of the Duke of Brunswick, Gauss was appointed director of the observatory (a building whose purpose is to observe stars and planets) in Göttingen, Germany, where he remained for the rest of his life. Gauss successfully determined the orbit of Ceres and was able to predict its correct position. Gauss's success in these calculations encouraged him to develop his methods further, and in 1809 his *Theoria motus corporum coelestium* appeared. In it

Gauss discussed how to determine orbits from observed data.

In his calculation of the orbits of planets, Gauss used the method of least squares. This method is used to determine the most likely value of something from a number of available observations. In defense of the method, Gauss created the Gaussian law of error, which became known in studies of probability (chance) and statistics (the collection, study, and presentation of data) as the normal distribution.

Non-Euclidean geometry

Although he published nothing on the subject, Gauss was almost certainly the first to develop the idea of non-Euclidean geometry (disputing one of Euclid's [335 –270 B.C.E.] theories that through a given point not on a given line, there exists only one line parallel to the given line). As adviser to the government of Hanover, Gauss had to consider the problem of surveying (measuring and determining exact position of) hilly country. This led him to develop the idea that the measurements of a curved surface could be developed in terms of Gaussian coordinates (points). Instead of considering the surface as part of a three-dimensional (displaying depth) space, Gauss set up a network of coordinates on the surface itself,

showing that the geometry of the surface can be described completely in terms of measurements in this network. Defining a straight line as the shortest distance between two points, measured along the surface, the geometry of a curved surface can be regarded as a two-dimensional (lacking depth) non-Euclidean geometry.

Apart from his books Gauss published a number of memoirs (reports of his experiences), mainly in the journal of the Royal Society of Göttingen. In general, however, he was unwilling to publish anything that could be regarded as controversial (causing a dispute), and as a result some of his most brilliant work was found only after his death. Gauss married twice, but both wives died young. Of his six children, his youngest daughter remained to take care of him until his death on February 23, 1855.

For More Information

- Buhler, W. K. *Gauss: A Biographical Study*. New York: Springer-Verlag, 1981.
- Dunnington, G. Waldo. *Carl Friedrich Gauss, Titan of Science: A Study of His Life and Work*. New York: Exposition Press, 1955.
- Schaaf, William L. *Carl Friedrich Gauss: Prince of Mathematicians*. New York: Watts, 1964.

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY



contents

Entries by Nationality xvii

Reader's Guide xxxi

Volume 1: A–Ba

Hank Aaron	1	Aeschylus	29
Ralph Abernathy	4	Spiro Agnew	31
Bella Abzug	7	Alvin Ailey	34
Chinua Achebe	10	Madeleine Albright	37
Abigail Adams	12	Louisa May Alcott	39
Ansel Adams	15	Alexander II	41
John Adams	17	Alexander the Great	43
Samuel Adams	20	Muhammad Ali	47
Joy Adamson	22	Woody Allen	49
Jane Addams	25	Isabel Allende	52
Alfred Adler	27	Julia Alvarez	54
		American Horse	57

Idi Amin	59	Lucille Ball	159
Hans Christian Andersen	62	David Baltimore	161
Carl David Anderson	64	Honoré de Balzac	164
Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	66	Benjamin Banneker	166
Marian Anderson	69	Frederick Banting	168
Fra Angelico	71	Klaus Barbie	170
Maya Angelou	73	Christiaan Barnard	173
Kofi Annan	76	Clara Barton	175
Susan B. Anthony	79	Count Basie	177
Virginia Apgar	81	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Benigno Aquino	84		
Yasir Arafat	86	Volume 2: <i>Be–Cap</i>	
Archimedes	89	Beatles	181
Hannah Arendt	91	William Beaumont	185
Jean-Bertrand Aristide	93	Simone de Beauvoir	187
Aristophanes	96	Samuel Beckett	189
Aristotle	98	Ludwig van Beethoven	192
Louis Armstrong	101	Menachem Begin	194
Neil Armstrong	102	Alexander Graham Bell	196
Benedict Arnold	105	Clyde Bellecourt	200
Mary Kay Ash	108	Saul Bellow	202
Arthur Ashe	110	William Bennett	204
Isaac Asimov	113	Ingmar Bergman	206
Fred Astaire	116	Irving Berlin	208
John Jacob Astor	118	Leonard Bernstein	210
Margaret Atwood	120	Chuck Berry	213
W. H. Auden	123	Mary McLeod Bethune	215
John James Audubon	125	Benazir Bhutto	218
Augustus	128	Owen Bieber	220
Aung San Suu Kyi	130	Billy the Kid	223
Jane Austen	132	Larry Bird	224
Baal Shem Tov	137	Shirley Temple Black	227
Charles Babbage	139	Elizabeth Blackwell	229
Johann Sebastian Bach	141	Tony Blair	232
Francis Bacon	143	William Blake	234
Roger Bacon	145	Konrad Bloch	237
Joan Baez	147	Judy Blume	239
F Lee Bailey	150	Humphrey Bogart	242
Josephine Baker	152	Julian Bond	244
George Balanchine	154	Daniel Boone	246
James Baldwin	156	John Wilkes Booth	248

William Booth	250	Al Capone	352
Lucrezia Borgia	252	Truman Capote	354
P. W. Botha	255	Frank Capra	357
Sandro Botticelli	257	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Margaret Bourke-White	259		
Boutros Boutros-Ghali	261	<i>Volume 3: Car–Da</i>	
Ray Bradbury	264	Lázaro Cárdenas	361
Ed Bradley	266	Stokely Carmichael	363
Mathew Brady	269	Andrew Carnegie	367
Johannes Brahms	271	Lewis Carroll	370
Louis Braille	273	Johnny Carson	372
Louis Brandeis	275	Kit Carson	374
Marlon Brando	278	Rachel Carson	377
Leonid Brezhnev	280	Jimmy Carter	379
Charlotte Brontë	283	George Washington Carver	383
Emily Brontë	284	Pablo Casals	386
Gwendolyn Brooks	286	Mary Cassatt	388
Helen Gurley Brown	289	Vernon and Irene Castle	390
James Brown	291	Fidel Castro	393
John Brown	294	Willa Cather	397
Rachel Fuller Brown	297	Catherine of Aragon	399
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	299	Catherine the Great	401
Robert Browning	302	Henry Cavendish	404
Pat Buchanan	305	Anders Celsius	407
Pearl S. Buck	308	Miguel de Cervantes	408
Buddha	310	Paul Cézanne	411
Ralph Bunche	312	Marc Chagall	414
Warren Burger	314	Wilt Chamberlain	416
Robert Burns	317	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	419
Aaron Burr	320	Charlie Chaplin	421
George Bush	323	Charlemagne	424
George W. Bush	326	Charles, Prince of Wales	427
Laura Bush	329	Ray Charles	430
Lord Byron	331	Geoffrey Chaucer	433
Julius Caesar	335	César Chávez	436
Caligula	338	Dennis Chavez	438
Maria Callas	340	Linda Chavez	440
Cab Calloway	342	Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	443
John Calvin	344	John Cheever	447
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	346	Anton Chekhov	449
Albert Camus	349	Dick Cheney	451

Mary Boykin Chesnut	454
Chiang Kai-shek	456
Julia Child	459
Shirley Chisholm	461
Frédéric Chopin	464
Jean Chrétien	467
Agatha Christie	469
Winston Churchill	472
Marcus Tullius Cicero	475
Liz Claiborne	478
Cleopatra VII	480
Bill Clinton	483
Hillary Rodham Clinton	487
Ty Cobb	490
Nat “King” Cole	492
Bessie Coleman	494
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	496
Marva Collins	499
Michael Collins	501
Confucius	503
Sean Connery	506
Joseph Conrad	508
Nicolaus Copernicus	510
Aaron Copland	513
Francis Ford Coppola	515
Bill Cosby	518
Jacques Cousteau	521
Noel Coward	523
Michael Crichton	525
Davy Crockett	527
Oliver Cromwell	529
Walter Cronkite	532
E. E. Cummings	535
Marie Curie	538
Roald Dahl	543
Dalai Lama	546
Salvador Dali	549
Clarence Darrow	551
Charles Darwin	554
Bette Davis	556
Miles Davis	558

Ossie Davis	561
Sammy Davis Jr.	563
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 4: De–Ga

James Dean	567
Claude Debussy	569
Ruby Dee	571
Daniel Defoe	574
Edgar Degas	576
Charles de Gaulle	579
F. W. de Klerk	581
Cecil B. DeMille	585
Deng Xiaoping	587
René Descartes	590
Hernando de Soto	592
John Dewey	594
Diana, Princess of Wales	597
Charles Dickens	600
Emily Dickinson	603
Denis Diderot	606
Joe DiMaggio	608
Walt Disney	611
Elizabeth Dole	613
Placido Domingo	616
Donatello	619
John Donne	621
Fyodor Dostoevsky	624
Frederick Douglass	626
Arthur Conan Doyle	629
Francis Drake	632
Alexandre Dumas	634
Paul Laurence Dunbar	636
Pierre du Pont	638
François Duvalier	640
Amelia Earhart	643
George Eastman	646
Clint Eastwood	648
Thomas Edison	650
Albert Einstein	654
Dwight D. Eisenhower	657

Mamie Eisenhower	661	Karl Friedrich Gauss	775
Joycelyn Elders	662	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
George Eliot	665		
T. S. Eliot	668	Volume 5: Ge–I	
Elizabeth I	672	Hans Geiger	779
Elizabeth II	675	Theodor Geisel	781
Duke Ellington	678	Genghis Khan	784
Ralph Waldo Emerson	680	J. Paul Getty	786
Desiderius Erasmus	683	Kahlil Gibran	788
Euclid	686	Althea Gibson	790
Euripides	688	Dizzy Gillespie	792
Medgar Evers	690	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	794
Gabriel Fahrenheit	695	Whoopi Goldberg	797
Fannie Farmer	696	William Golding	800
Louis Farrakhan	698	Samuel Gompers	801
William Faulkner	701	Jane Goodall	804
Dianne Feinstein	704	Benny Goodman	807
Enrico Fermi	707	Mikhail Gorbachev	809
Geraldine Ferraro	710	Berry Gordy Jr.	813
Bobby Fischer	713	Al Gore	816
Ella Fitzgerald	715	Jay Gould	818
F. Scott Fitzgerald	718	Stephen Jay Gould	821
Gustave Flaubert	721	Katharine Graham	824
Malcolm Forbes	723	Martha Graham	827
Henry Ford	725	Cary Grant	829
Francis of Assisi	729	Graham Greene	831
Benjamin Franklin	731	Wayne Gretzky	833
Sigmund Freud	735	Brothers Grimm	836
Betty Friedan	738	Woody Guthrie	838
Robert Frost	741	Alex Haley	843
John Kenneth Galbraith	745	Alexander Hamilton	846
Galen	748	Oscar Hammerstein	849
Galileo	750	John Hancock	852
George Gallup	753	George Frideric Handel	854
Indira Gandhi	754	Thomas Hardy	857
Mohandas Gandhi	758	Stephen Hawking	860
Gabriel García Márquez	762	Nathaniel Hawthorne	862
Judy Garland	764	William Randolph Hearst	865
Marcus Garvey	767	Werner Heisenberg	868
Bill Gates	769	Joseph Heller	870
Paul Gauguin	773	Lillian Hellman	872

Ernest Hemingway	875
Jimi Hendrix	878
Henry VIII	880
Patrick Henry	883
Audrey Hepburn	886
Katharine Hepburn	888
Herod the Great	891
William Herschel	893
Thor Heyerdahl	895
Edmund Hillary	898
S. E. Hinton	900
Hippocrates	902
Hirohito	904
Alfred Hitchcock	907
Adolf Hitler	909
Ho Chi Minh	912
Thomas Hobbes	915
Billie Holiday	918
Oliver Wendell Holmes	920
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	923
Homer	926
Soichiro Honda	929
bell hooks	931
Benjamin Hooks	933
Bob Hope	936
Anthony Hopkins	938
Lena Horne	940
Harry Houdini	943
Gordie Howe	946
Julia Ward Howe	949
Howard Hughes	951
Langston Hughes	954
Victor Hugo	957
Zora Neale Hurston	960
Saddam Hussein	962
Lee Iacocca	967
Henrik Ibsen	970
Imhotep	972
Washington Irving	975
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 6: J–L

Andrew Jackson	979
Jesse Jackson	983
Michael Jackson	986
Reggie Jackson	989
P. D. James	991
Thomas Jefferson	994
Mae Jemison	997
Jesus of Nazareth	1000
Jiang Zemin	1003
Joan of Arc	1005
Steve Jobs	1007
Elton John	1011
John Paul II	1013
Lyndon B. Johnson	1016
Magic Johnson	1020
Samuel Johnson	1023
Al Jolson	1025
James Earl Jones	1027
Quincy Jones	1029
Ben Jonson	1032
Michael Jordan	1034
James Joyce	1038
Benito Juárez	1040
Carl Jung	1043
Franz Kafka	1047
Wassily Kandinsky	1050
Immanuel Kant	1052
John Keats	1054
Helen Keller	1056
Gene Kelly	1058
Edward Kennedy	1061
John F. Kennedy	1064
John F. Kennedy Jr.	1069
Robert Kennedy	1071
Johannes Kepler	1074
Jack Kerouac	1076
Charles F. Kettering	1078
Ayatollah Khomeini	1081
Nikita Khrushchev	1083
B. B. King	1086

Billie Jean King	1089	Dolley Madison	1191
Coretta Scott King	1091	James Madison	1194
Martin Luther King Jr.	1094	Madonna	1197
Stephen King	1098	Ferdinand Magellan	1201
Rudyard Kipling	1101	Najib Mahfuz	1203
Henry Kissinger	1104	Norman Mailer	1205
Calvin Klein	1107	Bernard Malamud	1208
Kublai Khan	1109	Malcolm X	1210
Marquis de Lafayette	1113	David Mamet	1214
Lao Tzu	1115	Nelson Mandela	1216
Ralph Lauren	1117	Édouard Manet	1219
Emma Lazarus	1119	Wilma Mankiller	1221
Mary Leakey	1121	Mickey Mantle	1224
Bruce Lee	1124	Mao Zedong	1226
Spike Lee	1126	Rocky Marciano	1230
Tsung-Dao Lee	1129	Ferdinand Marcos	1233
Vladimir Lenin	1131	Marcus Aurelius	1236
Leonardo da Vinci	1136	Marie Antoinette	1238
C. S. Lewis	1139	Mark Antony	1240
Carl Lewis	1141	Thurgood Marshall	1243
Sinclair Lewis	1144	Karl Marx	1246
Roy Lichtenstein	1146	Mary, Queen of Scots	1249
Maya Lin	1148	Cotton Mather	1252
Abraham Lincoln	1150	Henri Matisse	1255
Charles Lindbergh	1154	Mayo Brothers	1258
Carl Linnaeus	1157	Willie Mays	1261
Joseph Lister	1159	Joseph McCarthy	1264
Andrew Lloyd Webber	1161	Hattie McDaniel	1267
Alain Locke	1163	John McEnroe	1270
John Locke	1166	Terry McMillan	1273
Jack London	1168	Aimee Semple McPherson	1275
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	1170	Margaret Mead	1277
Joe Louis	1173	Catherine de' Medici	1281
George Lucas	1175	Golda Meir	1284
Patrice Lumumba	1178	Rigoberta Menchú	1286
Martin Luther	1181	Felix Mendelssohn	1289
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Kweisi Mfume	1292
		Michelangelo	1295
Volume 7: M–Ne		Harvey Milk	1298
Douglas MacArthur	1185	John Stuart Mill	1301
Niccolò Machiavelli	1188	Edna St. Vincent Millay	1303

Arthur Miller	1305	Manuel Noriega	1401
Henry Miller	1308	Jessye Norman	1404
Slobodan Milosevic	1310	Nostradamus	1406
John Milton	1313	Rudolf Nureyev	1409
Joan Miró	1316	Joyce Carol Oates	1413
Molière	1318	Sandra Day O'Connor	1416
Claude Monet	1320	Georgia O'Keefe	1420
Thelonious Monk	1323	Laurence Olivier	1422
Marilyn Monroe	1325	Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	1425
Joe Montana	1327	Eugene O'Neill	1428
Montesquieu	1329	George Orwell	1430
Maria Montessori	1331	Ovid	1432
Thomas More	1334	Jesse Owens	1435
Jim Morrison	1336	Mohammad Reza Pahlavi	1439
Toni Morrison	1338	Arnold Palmer	1441
Samuel F. B. Morse	1341	Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus	1443
Moses	1343	Charlie Parker	1445
Grandma Moses	1345	Blaise Pascal	1447
Mother Teresa	1347	Louis Pasteur	1450
Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart	1350	Linus Pauling	1453
Hosni Mubarak	1353	Luciano Pavarotti	1456
Muhammad	1355	Ivan Pavlov	1459
Elijah Muhammad	1358	Anna Pavlova	1462
John Muir	1360	I. M. Pei	1464
Edvard Munch	1362	Pelé.	1467
Rupert Murdoch	1364	William Penn	1469
Benito Mussolini	1367	Pericles	1472
Vladimir Nabokov	1371	Eva Perón	1474
Ralph Nader	1373	Jean Piaget	1477
Napoleon Bonaparte	1376	Pablo Picasso	1479
Ogden Nash	1379	Sylvia Plath	1483
Nefertiti	1381	Plato	1485
Isaac Newton	1382	Pocahontas	1488
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Edgar Allan Poe	1490
		Sidney Poitier	1493
		Pol Pot	1495
		Marco Polo	1498
		Juan Ponce de León	1501
		Alexander Pope	1502
		Cole Porter	1505
		Katherine Anne Porter	1507
Volume 8: Ni–Re			
Friedrich Nietzsche	1387		
Florence Nightingale	1390		
Richard Nixon	1392		
Alfred Nobel	1397		
Isamu Noguchi	1398		

Emily Post	1509	Richard Rodgers	1610
Colin Powell	1511	Auguste Rodin	1613
Dith Pran	1514	Will Rogers	1615
Elvis Presley	1517	Rolling Stones	1618
André Previn	1520	Eleanor Roosevelt	1621
Leontyne Price	1522	Franklin D. Roosevelt	1624
E. Annie Proulx	1524	Theodore Roosevelt	1628
Marcel Proust	1526	Diana Ross	1631
Ptolemy I	1528	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	1634
Joseph Pulitzer	1531	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	1636
George Pullman	1533	Carl Rowan	1639
Aleksandr Pushkin	1535	J. K. Rowling	1641
Vladimir Putin	1537	Peter Paul Rubens	1643
Pythagoras	1540	Wilma Rudolph	1646
Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	1543	Salman Rushdie	1649
Walter Raleigh	1547	Babe Ruth	1651
Sri Ramakrishna	1550	Nolan Ryan	1653
A. Philip Randolph	1552	Albert Sabin	1657
Harun al-Rashid	1555	Carl Sagan	1659
Ronald Reagan	1557	Andrei Sakharov	1662
Christopher Reeve	1561	J. D. Salinger	1664
Erich Maria Remarque	1564	Jonas Salk	1667
Rembrandt	1566	George Sand	1669
Janet Reno	1568	Carl Sandburg	1671
Pierre Auguste Renoir	1571	Margaret Sanger	1673
Paul Revere	1574	Jean-Paul Sartre	1676
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Oskar Schindler	1678
 		Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	1681
Volume 9: Rh–S		Franz Schubert	1684
Cecil Rhodes	1577	Charles M. Schulz	1687
Condoleezza Rice	1580	Martin Scorsese	1690
Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	1583	Walter Scott	1693
Sally Ride	1585	Haile Selassie	1696
Leni Riefenstahl	1588	Selena	1698
Cal Ripken Jr.	1591	Sequoyah	1701
Diego Rivera	1593	William Shakespeare	1702
Paul Robeson	1596	George Bernard Shaw	1706
Maximilien de Robespierre	1599	Mary Shelley	1708
Smokey Robinson	1601	Percy Shelley	1711
John D. Rockefeller	1604	Beverly Sills	1714
Norman Rockwell	1607	Neil Simon	1716

Frank Sinatra	1719
Upton Sinclair	1722
Isaac Bashevis Singer	1724
Bessie Smith	1727
Socrates	1729
Stephen Sondheim	1732
Sophocles	1734
Steven Spielberg	1737
Benjamin Spock	1740
Joseph Stalin	1743
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	1747
Edith Stein	1749
Gertrude Stein	1752
John Steinbeck	1755
Robert Louis Stevenson	1757
Bram Stoker	1759
Oliver Stone	1761
Tom Stoppard	1764
Harriet Beecher Stowe	1766
Antonio Stradivari	1769
Johann Strauss	1771
Igor Stravinsky	1773
Barbra Streisand	1776
Sun Yat-sen	1779
<i>Index</i>	xxxv
 Volume 10: T–Z	
Maria Tallchief	1785
Amy Tan	1787
Elizabeth Taylor	1790
Peter Ilych Tchaikovsky	1792
Alfred, Lord Tennyson	1795
Valentina Tereshkova	1798
William Makepeace Thackeray	1801
Twyla Tharp	1804
Clarence Thomas	1807
Dylan Thomas	1810
Henry David Thoreau	1813
Jim Thorpe	1816
James Thurber	1819

Marshal Tito	1821
J. R. R. Tolkien	1824
Leo Tolstoy	1827
Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	1830
Eiji Toyoda	1832
Harry S. Truman	1834
Donald Trump	1837
Sojourner Truth	1840
Tu Fu	1843
Tutankhamen	1845
Desmond Tutu	1847
Mark Twain	1850
John Updike	1855
Vincent Van Gogh	1859
Jan Vermeer	1862
Jules Verne	1864
Amerigo Vespucci	1867
Victoria	1869
Gore Vidal	1872
Virgil	1874
Antonio Vivaldi	1877
Voltaire	1879
Wernher von Braun	1882
Kurt Vonnegut	1884
Richard Wagner	1889
Alice Walker	1891
Madame C. J. Walker	1894
Barbara Walters	1897
An Wang	1900
Booker T. Washington	1903
George Washington	1906
James Watt	1910
John Wayne	1913
Daniel Webster	1916
Noah Webster	1919
Orson Welles	1922
Eudora Welty	1925
Edith Wharton	1928
James Whistler	1929
E. B. White	1932
Walt Whitman	1935

Elie Wiesel	1938	Virginia Woolf	1962
Oscar Wilde	1940	William Wordsworth	1965
Laura Ingalls Wilder	1943	Wright Brothers	1969
Thornton Wilder	1946	Frank Lloyd Wright	1972
Tennessee Williams	1948	Richard Wright	1975
Woodrow Wilson	1951	William Butler Yeats	1979
Oprah Winfrey	1954	Boris Yeltsin	1982
Anna May Wong	1958	Paul Zindel	1987
Tiger Woods	1960	<i>Index</i>	xxxv



*entries by
nationality*

African American

Hank Aaron 1: 1
 Ralph Abernathy 1: 4
 Alvin Ailey 1: 34
 Muhammad Ali 1: 47
 Marian Anderson 1: 69
 Maya Angelou 1: 73
 Louis Armstrong 1: 101
 Arthur Ashe 1: 110
 Josephine Baker 1: 152
 James Baldwin 1: 156
 Benjamin Banneker 1: 166
 Count Basie 1: 177
 Chuck Berry 2: 213
 Mary McLeod Bethune 2: 215
 Julian Bond 2: 244
 Gwendolyn Brooks 2: 286

James Brown 2: 291
 Ralph Bunche 2: 312
 Stokely Carmichael 3: 363
 George Washington Carver 3: 383
 Wilt Chamberlain 3: 416
 Ray Charles 3: 430
 Benjamin Chavis Muhammad 3: 443
 Shirley Chisholm 3: 461
 Nat “King” Cole 3: 492
 Bessie Coleman 3: 494
 Marva Collins 3: 499
 Bill Cosby 3: 518
 Miles Davis 3: 558
 Ossie Davis 3: 561
 Sammy Davis Jr. 3: 563
 Ruby Dee 4: 571
 Frederick Douglass 4: 626

Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Jessye Norman	8: 1404
Joycelyn Elders	4: 662	Jesse Owens	8: 1435
Duke Ellington	4: 678	Charlie Parker	8: 1445
Medgar Evers	4: 690	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Louis Farrakhan	4: 698	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Althea Gibson	5: 790	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Alex Haley	5: 843	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Bessie Smith	9: 1727
bell hooks	5: 931	Sojourner Truth	10: 1840
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Alice Walker	10: 1891
Lena Horne	5: 940	Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Reggie Jackson	6: 989		
Mae Jemison	6: 997	<i>Albanian</i>	
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Mother Teresa	7: 1347
James Earl Jones	6: 1027		
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	<i>American</i>	
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Hank Aaron	1: 1
B. B. King	6: 1086	Ralph Abernathy	1: 4
Coretta Scott King	6: 1091	Bella Abzug	1: 7
Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094	Abigail Adams	1: 12
Spike Lee	6: 1126	Ansel Adams	1: 15
Carl Lewis	6: 1141	John Adams	1: 17
Alain Locke	6: 1163	Samuel Adams	1: 20
Malcolm X	7: 1210	Jane Addams	1: 25
Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Spiro Agnew	1: 31
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Alvin Ailey	1: 34
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Madeleine Albright	1: 37
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Louisa May Alcott	1: 39
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	Muhammad Ali	1: 47
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Woody Allen	1: 49
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Julia Alvarez	1: 54
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	American Horse	1: 57

Carl David Anderson	1: 64	Daniel Boone	2: 246
Marian Anderson	1: 69	John Wilkes Booth	2: 248
Maya Angelou	1: 73	Margaret Bourke-White	2: 259
Susan B. Anthony	1: 79	Ray Bradbury	2: 264
Virginia Apgar	1: 81	Ed Bradley	2: 266
Louis Armstrong	1: 101	Mathew Brady	2: 269
Neil Armstrong	1: 102	Louis Brandeis	2: 275
Benedict Arnold	1: 105	Marlon Brando	2: 278
Mary Kay Ash	1: 108	Gwendolyn Brooks	2: 286
Arthur Ashe	1: 110	Helen Gurley Brown	2: 289
Isaac Asimov	1: 113	James Brown	2: 291
Fred Astaire	1: 116	John Brown	2: 294
John Jacob Astor	1: 118	Rachel Fuller Brown	2: 297
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Pat Buchanan	2: 305
John James Audubon	1: 125	Pearl S. Buck	2: 308
Joan Baez	1: 147	Ralph Bunche	2: 312
F. Lee Bailey	1: 150	Warren Burger	2: 314
Josephine Baker	1: 152	Aaron Burr	2: 320
George Balanchine	1: 154	George Bush	2: 323
James Baldwin	1: 156	George W. Bush	2: 326
Lucille Ball	1: 159	Laura Bush	2: 329
David Baltimore	1: 161	Maria Callas	2: 340
Benjamin Banneker	1: 166	Cab Calloway	2: 342
Clara Barton	1: 175	Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Count Basie	1: 177	Al Capone	2: 352
William Beaumont	2: 185	Truman Capote	2: 354
Alexander Graham Bell	2: 196	Frank Capra	2: 357
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200	Stokely Carmichael	3: 363
Saul Bellow	2: 202	Andrew Carnegie	3: 367
William Bennett	2: 204	Johnny Carson	3: 372
Irving Berlin	2: 208	Kit Carson	3: 374
Leonard Bernstein	2: 210	Rachel Carson	3: 377
Chuck Berry	2: 213	Jimmy Carter	3: 379
Mary McLeod Bethune	2: 215	George Washington Carver	3: 383
Owen Bieber	2: 220	Mary Cassatt	3: 388
Billy the Kid	2: 223	Irene Castle	3: 390
Larry Bird	2: 224	Willa Cather	3: 397
Shirley Temple Black	2: 227	Wilt Chamberlain	3: 416
Judy Blume	2: 239	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	3: 419
Humphrey Bogart	2: 242	Ray Charles	3: 430
Julian Bond	2: 244	César Chávez	3: 436

Dennis Chavez	3: 438	Thomas Edison	4: 650
Linda Chavez	3: 440	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	3: 443	Dwight D. Eisenhower	4: 657
John Cheever	3: 447	Mamie Eisenhower	4: 661
Dick Cheney	3: 451	Joycelyn Elders	4: 662
Mary Boykin Chesnut	3: 454	T. S. Eliot	4: 668
Julia Child	3: 459	Duke Ellington	4: 678
Shirley Chisholm	3: 461	Ralph Waldo Emerson	4: 680
Liz Claiborne	3: 478	Medgar Evers	4: 690
Bill Clinton	3: 483	Fannie Farmer	4: 696
Hillary Rodham Clinton	3: 487	Louis Farrakhan	4: 698
Ty Cobb	3: 490	William Faulkner	4: 701
Nat “King” Cole	3: 492	Dianne Feinstein	4: 704
Bessie Coleman	3: 494	Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Marva Collins	3: 499	Geraldine Ferraro	4: 710
Aaron Copland	3: 513	Bobby Fischer	4: 713
Francis Ford Coppola	3: 515	Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715
Bill Cosby	3: 518	F. Scott Fitzgerald	4: 718
Michael Crichton	3: 525	Malcolm Forbes	4: 723
Davy Crockett	3: 527	Henry Ford	4: 725
Walter Cronkite	3: 532	Benjamin Franklin	4: 731
E. E. Cummings	3: 535	Betty Friedan	4: 738
Clarence Darrow	3: 551	Robert Frost	4: 741
Bette Davis	3: 556	John Kenneth Galbraith	4: 745
Miles Davis	3: 558	George Gallup	4: 753
Ossie Davis	3: 561	Judy Garland	4: 764
Sammy Davis Jr.	3: 563	Bill Gates	4: 769
James Dean	4: 567	Theodor Geisel	5: 781
Ruby Dee	4: 571	J. Paul Getty	5: 786
Cecil B. DeMille	4: 585	Althea Gibson	5: 790
John Dewey	4: 594	Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792
Emily Dickinson	4: 603	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	5: 794
Joe DiMaggio	4: 608	Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797
Walt Disney	4: 611	Samuel Gompers	5: 801
Elizabeth Dole	4: 613	Benny Goodman	5: 807
Frederick Douglass	4: 626	Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813
Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Al Gore	5: 816
Pierre Du Pont	4: 638	Jay Gould	5: 818
Amelia Earhart	4: 643	Stephen Jay Gould	5: 821
George Eastman	4: 646	Katharine Graham	5: 824
Clint Eastwood	4: 648	Martha Graham	5: 827

Woody Guthrie	5: 838	Helen Keller	6: 1056
Alex Haley	5: 843	Gene Kelly	6: 1058
Alexander Hamilton	5: 846	Edward Kennedy	6: 1061
Oscar Hammerstein	5: 849	John F. Kennedy	6: 1064
John Hancock	5: 852	John F. Kennedy Jr.	6: 1069
Nathaniel Hawthorne	5: 862	Robert Kennedy	6: 1071
William Randolph Hearst	5: 865	Jack Kerouac	6: 1076
Joseph Heller	5: 870	Charles F. Kettering	6: 1078
Lillian Hellman	5: 872	B. B. King	6: 1086
Ernest Hemingway	5: 875	Billie Jean King	6: 1089
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Coretta Scott King	6: 1091
Patrick Henry	5: 883	Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094
Katharine Hepburn	5: 888	Stephen King	6: 1098
S. E. Hinton	5: 900	Henry Kissinger	6: 1104
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Calvin Klein	6: 1107
Oliver Wendell Holmes	5: 920	Ralph Lauren	6: 1117
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	5: 923	Emma Lazarus	6: 1119
bell hooks	5: 931	Bruce Lee	6: 1124
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Spike Lee	6: 1126
Bob Hope	5: 936	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Lena Horne	5: 940	Carl Lewis	6: 1141
Harry Houdini	5: 943	Sinclair Lewis	6: 1144
Julia Ward Howe	5: 949	Roy Lichtenstein	6: 1146
Howard Hughes	5: 951	Abraham Lincoln	6: 1150
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Charles Lindbergh	6: 1154
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Alain Locke	6: 1163
Lee Iacocca	5: 967	Jack London	6: 1168
Washington Irving	5: 975	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	6: 1170
Andrew Jackson	6: 979	Joe Louis	6: 1173
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	George Lucas	6: 1175
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Douglas MacArthur	7: 1185
Reggie Jackson	6: 989	Dolley Madison	7: 1191
Thomas Jefferson	6: 994	James Madison	7: 1194
Mae Jemison	6: 997	Madonna	7: 1197
Steve Jobs	6: 1007	Norman Mailer	7: 1205
Lyndon B. Johnson	6: 1016	Bernard Malamud	7: 1390
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Malcolm X	7: 1210
Al Jolson	6: 1025	David Mamet	7: 1214
James Earl Jones	6: 1027	Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	Mickey Mantle	7: 1224
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Rocky Marciano	7: 1230

Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Pocahontas	8: 1488
Cotton Mather	7: 1252	Edgar Allan Poe	8: 1490
Mayo Brothers	7: 1258	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Cole Porter	8: 1505
Joseph McCarthy	7: 1264	Katherine Anne Porter	8: 1507
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Emily Post	8: 1509
John McEnroe	7: 1270	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Elvis Presley	8: 1517
Aimee Semple McPherson	7: 1275	André Previn	8: 1520
Margaret Mead	7: 1277	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	E. Annie Proulx	8: 1524
Harvey Milk	7: 1298	Joseph Pulitzer	8: 1531
Edna St. Vincent Millay	7: 1303	George Pullman	8: 1533
Arthur Miller	7: 1305	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Henry Miller	7: 1308	Ronald Reagan	8: 1557
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Christopher Reeve	8: 1561
Marilyn Monroe	7: 1325	Erich Maria Remarque	8: 1564
Joe Montana	7: 1327	Janet Reno	8: 1568
Jim Morrison	7: 1336	Paul Revere	8: 1574
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Samuel F. B. Morse	7: 1341	Sally Ride	9: 1585
Grandma Moses	7: 1345	Cal Ripken, Jr.	9: 1591
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
John Muir	7: 1360	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Vladimir Nabokov	7: 1371	John D. Rockefeller	9: 1604
Ralph Nader	7: 1373	Norman Rockwell	9: 1607
Ogden Nash	7: 1379	Richard Rodgers	9: 1610
Richard Nixon	8: 1392	Will Rogers	9: 1615
Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398	Eleanor Roosevelt	9: 1621
Jessye Norman	8: 1404	Franklin D. Roosevelt	9: 1624
Joyce Carol Oates	8: 1413	Theodore Roosevelt	9: 1628
Sandra Day O'Connor	8: 1416	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Georgia O'Keeffe	8: 1420	Carl Rowan	9: 1639
Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	8: 1425	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Eugene O'Neill	8: 1428	Babe Ruth	9: 1651
Jesse Owens	8: 1435	Nolan Ryan	9: 1653
Arnold Palmer	8: 1441	Albert Sabin	9: 1657
Charlie Parker	8: 1445	Carl Sagan	9: 1659
Linus Pauling	8: 1453	J. D. Salinger	9: 1664
I. M. Pei	8: 1464	Jonas Salk	9: 1667
Sylvia Plath	8: 1483	Carl Sandburg	9: 1671

Margaret Sanger	9: 1673	An Wang	10: 1900
Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	9: 1681	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Charles M. Schulz	9: 1687	George Washington	10: 1906
Martin Scorsese	9: 1690	John Wayne	10: 1913
Selena	9: 1698	Daniel Webster	10: 1916
Sequoyah	9: 1701	Noah Webster	10: 1919
Beverly Sills	9: 1714	Orson Welles	10: 1922
Neil Simon	9: 1716	Eudora Welty	10: 1925
Frank Sinatra	9: 1719	Edith Wharton	10: 1928
Upton Sinclair	9: 1722	James Whistler	10: 1929
Isaac Bashevis Singer	9: 1724	E. B. White	10: 1932
Bessie Smith	9: 1727	Walt Whitman	10: 1935
Stephen Sondheim	9: 1732	Elie Wiesel	10: 1938
Steven Spielberg	9: 1737	Laura Ingalls Wilder	10: 1943
Benjamin Spock	9: 1740	Thornton Wilder	10: 1946
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	9: 1747	Tennessee Williams	10: 1948
Gertrude Stein	9: 1752	Woodrow Wilson	10: 1951
John Steinbeck	9: 1755	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Oliver Stone	9: 1761	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Harriet Beecher Stowe	9: 1766	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Igor Stravinsky	9: 1773	Wright Brothers	10: 1969
Barbra Streisand	9: 1776	Frank Lloyd Wright	10: 1972
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Amy Tan	10: 1787	Paul Zindel	10: 1987
Elizabeth Taylor	10: 1790		
Twyla Tharp	10: 1804	<i>Arabian</i>	
Clarence Thomas	10: 1807	Muhammad	7: 1355
Henry David Thoreau	10: 1813		
Jim Thorpe	10: 1816	<i>Argentine</i>	
James Thurber	10: 1819	Eva Perón	8: 1474
Harry S. Truman	10: 1834		
Donald Trump	10: 1837	<i>Asian American</i>	
Sojourner Truth	10: 1840	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Mark Twain	10: 1850	Maya Lin	6: 1148
John Updike	10: 1855	Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398
Gore Vidal	10: 1872	I. M. Pei	8: 1464
Wernher von Braun	10: 1882	Amy Tan	10: 1787
Kurt Vonnegut	10: 1884	An Wang	10: 1900
Alice Walker	10: 1891	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Barbara Walters	10: 1897		

Australian

Rupert Murdoch 7: 1364

Austrian

Joy Adamson 1: 22

Alfred Adler 1: 27

Sigmund Freud 4: 735

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart 7: 1350

Franz Schubert 9: 1684

Johann Strauss 9: 1771

Belgian

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886

Brazilian

Pelé 8: 1467

Burmese

Aung San Suu Kyi 1: 130

Cambodian

Pol Pot 8: 1495

Dith Pran 8: 1514

Canadian

Margaret Atwood 1: 120

Frederick Banting 1: 168

Jean Chrétien 3: 467

John Kenneth Galbraith 4: 745

Wayne Gretzky 5: 833

Gordie Howe 5: 946

Aimee Semple McPherson 7: 1275

Chilean

Isabel Allende 1: 52

Chinese

Chiang Kai-shek 3: 456

Confucius 3: 503

Deng Xiaoping 4: 587

Jiang Zemin 6: 1003

Lao Tzu 6: 1115

Tsung-Dao Lee 6: 1129

Mao Zedong 7: 1226

I. M. Pei 8: 1464

Sun Yat-sen 9: 1779

Tu Fu 10: 1843

An Wang 10: 1900

Colombian

Gabriel García Márquez 7: 762

Congolese

Patrice Lumumba 6: 1178

Cuban

Fidel Castro 3: 393

Czech

Madeleine Albright 1: 37

Franz Kafka 6: 1047

Tom Stoppard 9: 1764

Danish

Hans Christian Andersen 1: 62

Dutch

Desiderius Erasmus 4: 683

Rembrandt 8: 1566

Vincent Van Gogh 10: 1859

Egyptian

Boutros Boutros-Ghali 2: 261

Cleopatra VII 3: 480

Imhotep 5: 972

Najib Mahfuz 7: 1203

Moses 7: 1343

Hosni Mubarak 7: 1353

Nefertiti 7: 1381

Tutankhamen 10: 1845

English

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	1: 66	Cary Grant	5: 829
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Graham Greene	5: 831
Jane Austen	1: 132	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Charles Babbage	1: 139	Thomas Hardy	5: 857
Francis Bacon	1: 143	Stephen Hawking	5: 860
Roger Bacon	1: 145	Henry VIII	5: 880
Beatles	2: 181	Alfred Hitchcock	5: 907
Elizabeth Blackwell	2: 229	Thomas Hobbes	5: 915
William Blake	2: 234	P. D. James	6: 991
William Booth	2: 250	Elton John	6: 1011
Charlotte Brontë	2: 283	Samuel Johnson	6: 1023
Emily Brontë	2: 284	Ben Jonson	6: 1032
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	2: 299	John Keats	6: 1054
Robert Browning	2: 302	Rudyard Kipling	6: 1101
Lord Byron	2: 331	Mary Leakey	6: 1121
Lewis Carroll	3: 370	Joseph Lister	6: 1159
Vernon Castle	3: 390	Andrew Lloyd Webber	6: 1161
Henry Cavendish	3: 404	John Locke	6: 1166
Charlie Chaplin	3: 421	John Stuart Mill	7: 1301
Charles, Prince of Wales	3: 427	John Milton	7: 1313
Geoffrey Chaucer	3: 433	Thomas More	7: 1334
Agatha Christie	3: 469	Isaac Newton	7: 1382
Winston Churchill	3: 472	Florence Nightingale	8: 1390
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	3: 496	Laurence Olivier	8: 1422
Joseph Conrad	3: 508	George Orwell	8: 1430
Noel Coward	3: 523	William Penn	8: 1469
Oliver Cromwell	3: 529	Alexander Pope	8: 1502
Charles Darwin	3: 554	Walter Raleigh	8: 1547
Daniel Defoe	4: 574	Cecil Rhodes	9: 1577
Diana, Princess of Wales	4: 597	Rolling Stones	9: 1618
Charles Dickens	4: 600	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	9: 1634
John Donne	4: 621	J. K. Rowling	9: 1641
Arthur Conan Doyle	4: 629	William Shakespeare	9: 1702
Francis Drake	4: 632	Mary Shelley	9: 1708
George Eliot	4: 665	Percy Shelley	9: 1711
T. S. Eliot	4: 668	Tom Stoppard	9: 1764
Elizabeth I	4: 672	Alfred, Lord Tennyson	10: 1795
Elizabeth II	4: 675	William Makepeace Thackeray	10: 1801
William Golding	5: 800	J. R. R. Tolkien	10: 1824
Jane Goodall	5: 804	Victoria	10: 1869
		Oscar Wilde	10: 1940

Virginia Woolf 10: 1963
William Wordsworth 10: 1965

Ethiopian

Haile Selassie 9: 1697

Filipino

Benigno Aquino 1: 84
Ferdinand Marcos 7: 1233

Flemish

Peter Paul Rubens 9: 1643

Frankish

Charlemagne 3: 424

French

John James Audubon 1: 125
Honoré de Balzac 1: 164
Simone de Beauvoir 2: 187
Louis Braille 2: 273
John Calvin 2: 344
Albert Camus 2: 349
Paul Cézanne 3: 411
Jacques Cousteau 3: 521
Marie Curie 3: 538
Claude Debussy 4: 569
Edgar Degas 4: 576
Charles de Gaulle 4: 579
René Descartes 4: 590
Denis Diderot 4: 606
Alexandre Dumas 4: 634
Gustave Flaubert 4: 721
Paul Gauguin 4: 773
Victor Hugo 5: 957
Joan of Arc 6: 1005
Marquis de Lafayette 6: 1113
Édouard Manet 7: 1219
Marie Antoinette 7: 1238
Henri Matisse 7: 1255

Molière 7: 1318
Claude Monet 7: 1320
Montesquieu 7: 1329
Napoleon Bonaparte 7: 1376
Nostradamus 8: 1406
Blaise Pascal 8: 1447
Louis Pasteur 8: 1450
Marcel Proust 8: 1526
Pierre Auguste Renoir 8: 1571
Armand-Jean du Plessis
 de Richelieu 9: 1583
Maximilien de Robespierre 9: 1599
Auguste Rodin 9: 1613
Jean-Jacques Rousseau 9: 1636
George Sand 9: 1669
Jean-Paul Sartre 9: 1676
Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec 10: 1830
Jan Vermeer 10: 1862
Jules Verne 10: 1864
Voltaire 10: 1879

German

Hannah Arendt 1: 91
John Jacob Astor 1: 118
Johann Sebastian Bach 1: 141
Klaus Barbie 1: 170
Ludwig van Beethoven 2: 192
Konrad Bloch 2: 237
Johannes Brahms 2: 271
Catherine the Great 3: 401
Albert Einstein 4: 654
Gabriel Fahrenheit 4: 695
Karl Friedrich Gauss 4: 775
Hans Geiger 5: 779
Brothers Grimm 5: 836
George Frideric Handel 5: 854
Werner Heisenberg 5: 868
William Herschel 5: 893
Adolf Hitler 5: 909
Franz Kafka 6: 1047
Immanuel Kant 6: 1052

Johannes Kepler 6: 1074
 Henry Kissinger 6: 1104
 Martin Luther 6: 1181
 Karl Marx 7: 1246
 Felix Mendelssohn 7: 1289
 Friedrich Nietzsche 8: 1387
 André Previn 8: 1520
 Erich Maria Remarque 8: 1564
 Leni Riefenstahl 9: 1588
 Oskar Schindler 9: 1678
 Edith Stein 9: 1749
 Wernher von Braun 10: 1882
 Richard Wagner 10: 1889

Ghanian

Kofi Annan 1: 76

Greek

Aeschylus 1: 29
 Archimedes 1: 89
 Aristophanes 1: 96
 Aristotle 1: 98
 Euclid 4: 686
 Euripides 4: 688
 Galen 4: 748
 Hippocrates 5: 902
 Homer 5: 926
 Pericles 8: 1472
 Plato 8: 1485
 Pythagoras 8: 1540
 Socrates 9: 1729
 Sophocles 9: 1734

Guatemalan

Rigoberta Menchú 7: 1286

Haitian

Jean-Bertrand Aristide 1: 93
 François Duvalier 4: 640

Hispanic American

César Chávez 3: 436
 Dennis Chavez 3: 438
 Linda Chavez 3: 440
 Selena 9: 1698

Hungarian

Joseph Pulitzer 8: 1531

Indian

Buddha 2: 310
 Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar 3: 419
 Indira Gandhi 4: 754
 Mohandas Gandhi 4: 758
 Sri Ramakrishna 8: 1550
 Salman Rushdie 9: 1649

Iranian

Ayatollah Khomeini 6: 1081
 Mohammad Reza Pahlavi 8: 1439

Iraqi

Saddam Hussein 5: 962

Irish

Samuel Beckett 2: 189
 Michael Collins 3: 501
 James Joyce 6: 1038
 C. S. Lewis 6: 1139
 George Bernard Shaw 9: 1706
 Bram Stoker 9: 1759
 Oscar Wilde 10: 1940
 William Butler Yeats 10: 1979

Israeli

Menachem Begin 2: 194
 Golda Meir 7: 1284

Italian

Fra Angelico 1: 71

Lucrezia Borgia	2: 252
Sandro Botticelli	2: 257
Caligula	2: 338
Frank Capra	2: 357
Donatello	4: 619
Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Francis of Assisi	4: 729
Galileo	4: 750
Leonardo da Vinci	6: 1136
Niccolò Machiavelli	7: 1188
Catherine de' Medici	7: 1281
Michelangelo	7: 1295
Maria Montessori	7: 1331
Benito Mussolini	7: 1367
Luciano Pavarotti	8: 1456
Antonio Stradivari	9: 1769
Amerigo Vespucci	10: 1867
Antonio Vivaldi	10: 1877

Jamaican

Marcus Garvey	4: 767
-------------------------	--------

Japanese

Hirohito	5: 904
Soichiro Honda	5: 929
Eiji Toyoda	10: 1832

Judean

Herod the Great	5: 891
---------------------------	--------

Lebanese

Kahlil Gibran	5: 788
-------------------------	--------

Libyan

Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	8: 1543
-------------------------------	---------

Lithuanian

Al Jolson	6: 1025
---------------------	---------

Macedonian

Alexander the Great	1: 43
Ptolemy I	8: 1528

Mexican

Lázaro Cárdenas	3: 361
Benito Juárez	6: 1040
Diego Rivera	9: 1593

Mongolian

Genghis Khan	5: 784
Kublai Khan	6: 1109

Native American

American Horse	1: 57
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Pocahontas	8: 1488
Sequoyah	9: 1701
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785

New Zealander

Edmund Hillary	5: 898
--------------------------	--------

Nigerian

Chinua Achebe	1: 10
-------------------------	-------

Norwegian

Thor Heyerdahl	5: 895
Henrik Ibsen	5: 970
Edvard Munch	7: 1362

Pakistani

Benazir Bhutto	2: 218
--------------------------	--------

Palestinian

Yasir Arafat	1: 86
------------------------	-------

Panamanian

Manuel Noriega 8: 1401

Persian

Harun al-Rashid 8: 1555

Polish

Baal Shem Tov 1: 137

Menachem Begin 2: 194

Frédéric Chopin 3: 464

Joseph Conrad 3: 508

Nicolaus Copernicus 3: 510

Marie Curie 3: 538

John Paul II 6: 1013

Albert Sabin 9: 1657

Isaac Bashevis Singer 9: 1724

Portuguese

Ferdinand Magellan 7: 1201

Roman

Augustus 1: 128

Julius Caesar 2: 335

Marcus Tullius Cicero 3: 475

Jesus of Nazareth 6: 1000

Marcus Aurelius 7: 1236

Mark Antony 7: 1240

Ovid 8: 1432

Virgil 10: 1874

Romanian

Elie Wiesel 10: 1939

Russian

Alexander II 1: 41

Isaac Asimov 1: 113

George Balanchine 1: 154

Irving Berlin 2: 208

Leonid Brezhnev 2: 280

Catherine the Great 3: 401

Marc Chagall 3: 414

Anton Chekhov 3: 449

Fyodor Dostoevsky 4: 624

Mikhail Gorbachev 5: 809

Wassily Kandinsky 6: 1050

Nikita Khrushchev 6: 1083

Vladimir Lenin 6: 1131

Vladimir Nabokov 7: 1371

Rudolf Nureyev 8: 1409

Ivan Pavlov 8: 1459

Anna Pavlova 8: 1462

Aleksandr Pushkin 8: 1535

Vladimir Putin 8: 1537

Andrei Sakharov 9: 1662

Joseph Stalin 9: 1743

Igor Stravinsky 9: 1773

Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky 10: 1792

Valentina Tereshkova 10: 1798

Leo Tolstoy 10: 1827

Boris Yeltsin 10: 1982

Scottish

Alexander Graham Bell 2: 196

Tony Blair 2: 232

Robert Burns 2: 317

Andrew Carnegie 3: 367

Sean Connery 3: 506

Arthur Conan Doyle 4: 629

Mary, Queen of Scots 7: 1249

John Muir 7: 1360

Walter Scott 9: 1693

Robert Louis Stevenson 9: 1757

James Watt 10: 1910

Serbian

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310

South African

Christiaan Barnard 1: 173

P. W. Botha 2: 255

F. W. de Klerk 4: 581

Nelson Mandela 7: 1216
Desmond Tutu 10: 1847

Spanish

Pablo Casals 3: 386
Catherine of Aragon 3: 399
Miguel de Cervantes 3: 408
Salvador Dali 3: 549
Hernando de Soto 4: 592
Placido Domingo 4: 616
Joan Miró 7: 1316
Pablo Picasso 8: 1479
Juan Ponce de León 8: 1501

Swedish

Ingmar Bergman 2: 206
Anders Celsius 3: 407
Carl Linnaeus 6: 1157
Alfred Nobel 8: 1397

Swiss

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886
Carl Jung 6: 1043
Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus 8: 1443
Jean Piaget 8: 1477

Tibetan

Dalai Lama 3: 546

Trinidadian

Stokely Carmichael 3: 363

Ugandan

Idi Amin 1: 59

Venetian

Marco Polo 8: 1498

Vietnamese

Ho Chi Minh 5: 913

Welsh

Roald Dahl 3: 543
Anthony Hopkins 5: 938
Dylan Thomas 10: 1810

Yugoslav

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310
Marshal Tito 10: 1821



reader's guide

U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography features 750 biographies of notable historic and contemporary figures from around the world. Chosen from American history, world history, literature, science and math, arts and entertainment, and the social sciences, the entries focus on the people studied most often in middle school and high school, as identified by teachers and media specialists.

The biographies are arranged alphabetically across ten volumes. The two- to four-page entries cover the early lives, influences, and careers of notable men and women of diverse fields and ethnic groups. Each essay includes birth and death information in the header and concludes with a list of sources

for further information. A contents section lists biographees by their nationality. Nearly 750 photographs and illustrations are featured, and a general index provides quick access to the people and subjects discussed throughout *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

Special thanks

Much appreciation goes to Mary Alice Anderson, media specialist at Winona Middle School in Winona, Minnesota, and Nina Levine, library media specialist at Blue Mountain Middle School in Cortlandt Manor, New York, for their assistance in developing the entry list. Many thanks also go to the following people for their important editorial contri-

butions: Taryn Benbow-Pfalzgraf (proofreading), Jodi Essey-Stapleton (copyediting and proofing), Margaret Haerens (proofreading), Courtney Mroch (copyediting), and Theresa Murray (copyediting and indexing). Special gratitude goes to Linda Mahoney at LM Design for her excellent typesetting work and her flexible attitude.

Comments and suggestions

We welcome your comments on the *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*. Please write: Editors, *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*, U•X•L, 27500 Drake Road, Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535; call toll-free: 1-800-877-4253; fax to 248-699-8097; or send e-mail via www.gale.com.



HANS GEIGER

Born: September 30, 1882

Neustadt an-der-Haardt, Germany

Died: September 24, 1945

Potsdam, Germany

German experimental physicist

Hans Geiger was a German nuclear physicist (a person who studies the inner core of the atom) best known for his invention of the Geiger counter, a device used for detecting and counting atomic particles, and for his work in nuclear physics with Ernest Rutherford (1871–1937).

Early life

Johannes Wilhelm Geiger was born in Neustadt an-der-Haardt (now Neustadt an-der-Weinstrasse), Germany, on September 30, 1882. His father, Wilhelm Ludwig Geiger, was a professor at the University of Erlangen from 1891 to 1920. The eldest of five children, Geiger was educated first at Erlangen Gymnasium, from which he graduated in 1901. After completing his required military service, he studied physics (the study of the relationship between matter and energy) at the University of Munich and at the University of Erlangen, receiving a doctorate from Erlangen in 1906 for his study of electrical releases through gases.



Hans Geiger.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

Partners with Rutherford

Geiger moved to Manchester University in England, where he met Ernest Rutherford, head of the physics department. Rutherford and Geiger began a lifelong personal and professional friendship. They began experiments based on Rutherford's detection of the release of alpha particles (particles with "positive" electric charges) from radioactive substances (substances whose atoms give off particles of matter and harmful rays of energy).

Since alpha particles can penetrate thin walls of solids, Rutherford and Geiger presumed that they could also move through

atoms. Geiger designed a machine that would shoot alpha particles through gold foil onto a screen, where they were observed as tiny flashes of light. Counting the thousands of flashes per minute was a long, hard task. Geiger decided to try to invent an easier, more accurate way to count them. His solution was an early version of the "Geiger counter," an electrical machine designed to count released alpha particles.

In 1912 Geiger returned to Germany as director of the new Laboratory for Radioactivity at the Physikalisch-Technische Reichsanstalt in Berlin, Germany, where he invented an instrument for measuring not only alpha particles but other types of radiation (the giving off of energy and particles from atoms) as well. Geiger's research was interrupted by the start of World War I (1914–18; a war fought between the German-led Central Powers and the Allies—England, the United States, Italy, and other nations), during which he fought with the German troops. Crouching in trenches on the front lines left Geiger with painful rheumatism (stiffness and pain in the joints). With the war over, Geiger returned to the Reichsanstalt. In 1920 he married Elisabeth Heffter, with whom he had three sons.

Perfects the Geiger-Mueller counter

In 1925 Geiger became professor of physics at the University of Kiel, Germany. While there he developed, with Walther Mueller, the Geiger-Mueller counter, commonly referred to as the Geiger counter. The counter can locate a speeding alpha particle within about one centimeter in space and to within a hundred-millionth second in time. In 1925 Geiger used his counter to confirm

the existence of light quantum, or packets of energy.

Geiger left Kiel for the University of Tübingen in October of 1929 to serve as professor of physics and director of research at its physics institute. Installed at the Institute, Geiger worked constantly to increase the Geiger counter's speed and ability to detect. As a result of his efforts, he was able to discover bursts of radiation called cosmic-ray showers, and he concentrated on their study for the rest of his career.

Stands up to Hitler

Geiger returned to Berlin in 1936 upon being offered the chair of physics at the Technische Hochschule. He continued experimenting and improving the counter. He also became involved with politics after Adolf Hitler's (1889–1945) rise to power in Germany's National Socialist Party. Geiger and many other scientists did not want the government to interfere with or influence their work. He helped compose a position paper that was signed by seventy-five of Germany's most notable physicists. The paper was presented to Hitler's Education Ministry in late 1936. The document urged the government to keep its hands off science, complaining that there were too few new physicists and that students were avoiding the subject in Germany because of newspaper attacks on physics by National Socialists.

Geiger continued working at the Technische Hochschule through World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers—Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allied powers—Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States), although he was often confined to bed with

rheumatism. He had just started to show signs of improvement in his health when his home near Babelsberg, Germany, was occupied in June 1945. Geiger was forced to flee to Potsdam, Germany, where he died on September 24, 1945.

For More Information

Beyerchen, Alan D. *Scientists under Hitler: Politics and the Physics Community in the Third Reich*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1979.

Dictionary of Scientific Biography. vol. 5. New York: Scribner, 1972, pp. 330–333.

Williams, Trevor I. *A Biographical Dictionary of Scientists*. New York: John Wiley & Sons, 1982, p. 211.

THEODOR GEISEL

Born: March 2, 1904

Springfield, Massachusetts

Died: September 24, 1991

La Jolla, California

American children's book author and illustrator

Theodor Geisel, better known as Dr. Seuss, wrote the popular children's books *The Cat in the Hat*, *Green Eggs and Ham*, *Horton Hatches the Egg*, and many more. As Dr. Seuss, Geisel brought a whimsical touch and a colorful imagination to the world of children's books.



Theodor Geisel.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Childhood and early career

Theodor Geisel was born on March 2, 1904, in Springfield, Massachusetts. His father owned a brewery until the onset of Prohibition, a time in the 1920s when buying and selling alcohol was made illegal. Geisel's father then took a job as superintendent of city parks, which included the local zoo. There, young Theodor spent many days drawing the animals and eventually developing his own unique style. Though Geisel would later gain fame because of his unique artistic style, he never once had an art lesson.

After graduating high school, Geisel went on to graduate from Dartmouth College

in 1925, and later studied at the Lincoln College of Oxford University in England. After dropping out of Oxford, he traveled throughout Europe, mingling with émigrés (those living abroad) in Paris, including writer Ernest Hemingway (1899–1961). Eventually returning to New York, he spent fifteen years in advertising before joining the army and making two Oscar-winning documentaries, “Hitler Lives” and “Design for Death,” which he made with his wife, Helen Parker Geisel. He would also win an Oscar for his animated cartoon “Gerald McBoing Boing”(1951). Also at this time Geisel began drawing and selling his cartoons to national magazines, including *Vanity Fair* and the *Saturday Evening Post*. Later he worked as an editorial cartoonist for *PM* newspaper in New York.

First books

Geisel began writing the verses of his first book, *And to Think That I Saw It on Mulberry Street*, in 1936 during a rough sea passage. But success did not come easy for the young author, as *Mulberry Street* was rejected by twenty-nine different publishers before it was finally accepted. Published in 1937, the book won much praise, largely because of its unique drawings.

All of Geisel's books, in fact, feature crazy-looking creatures that are sometimes based on real animals, but which usually consist of such bizarre combinations of objects as a centipede and a horse and a camel with a feather duster on its head. Unlike many puppeteers and cartoonists who have capitalized on their creations by selling their most familiar images to big-time toy-makers, Dr. Seuss concentrated his efforts on creating interesting books.

In May 1954, after a string of successful books, Geisel published what would become his most famous book, *The Cat in the Hat*. Legend has it that *The Cat in the Hat* was created, in part, because of a bet Geisel made with a publisher who said he could not write a complete children's book with less than 250 words. *The Cat in the Hat* came in at 223 words. In 1960 Geisel published his second-most successful book, *Green Eggs and Ham*, which used only fifty words. In 1958, from the success of his children's books, Geisel founded Beginner Books, which eventually became part of Random House.

“Basically an educator”

Admired among fellow authors and editors for his honesty and hard work, the Pulitzer Prize-winning author, according to Ruth MacDonald in the *Chicago Tribune*, “perfected the art of telling great stories with a vocabulary as small as sometimes fifty-two or fifty-three words.”

“[Geisel] was not only a master of word and rhyme and an original and eccentric artist,” Gerald Harrison, president of Random House's merchandise division, declared in *Publisher's Weekly*, “but down deep, I think he was basically an educator. He helped teach kids that reading was a joy and not a chore. . . . For those of us who worked with him, he taught us to strive for excellence in all the books we published.”

Wrote for adults as well as children

Geisel's last two books spent several months on the bestseller lists and include themes that appealed to adults as well as children. “Finally I can say that I write not for kids but for people,” he commented in the

Los Angeles Times. Many of his readers were surprised to learn that Geisel had no children of his own, though he had stepchildren from his second marriage to Audrey Stone Dimond. To this fact he once said, “You make 'em, I amuse 'em,” as quoted in the *Chicago Tribune*. According to the *Los Angeles Times*, the author also remarked, “I don't think spending your days surrounded by kids is necessary to write the kind of books I write. . . . Once a writer starts talking down to kids, he's lost. Kids can pick up on that kind of thing.”

Before Geisel, juvenile books were largely pastel, predictable, and dominated by a didactic tone (a sense that the books were intended to instruct). Though Dr. Seuss books sometimes included morals, they sounded less like behavioral guidelines and more like, “listen to your feelings” and “take care of the environment,” universal ideas that would win over the hearts of youngsters from around the world. Geisel's 47 books were translated into 20 languages and have sold more than 200 million copies. Of the ten bestselling hardcover children's books of all time, four were written by Geisel: *The Cat in the Hat*, *Green Eggs and Ham*, *One Fish, Two Fish, Red Fish, Blue Fish*, and *Hop on Pop*.

Theodor Geisel died September 24, 1991, in La Jolla, California. To children of all ages, Dr. Seuss remains the most famous and influential name in children's literature.

For More Information

Dean, Tanya. *Theodor Geisel*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House Publishers, 2002.

Levine, Stuart P. *Dr. Seuss*. San Diego: Lucent Books, 2001.

Morgan, Judith, and Neil Morgan. *Dr. Seuss & Mr. Geisel: A Biography*. New York: Da Capo Press, 1996.

Weidt, Maryann N. *Oh, the Places He Went: A Story about Dr. Seuss—Theodor Seuss Geisel*. Minneapolis: Carolrhoda Books, 1994.

GENGHIS KHAN

Born: c. 1155

Mongolia

Died: August 25, 1227

Kansu, China

Mongolian conqueror and ruler

Genghis Khan was the creator of the Mongol nation and the founder of one of the greatest empires the world has ever seen.

Early life

Genghis Khan, whose original name was Temüjin, was born near the river Onon in the northeast corner of present-day Mongolia. When he was nine years old his father Yesugei took him to another tribe to find him a wife. On the way back Yesugei was killed by the Tatars, who in the second half of the twelfth century had displaced the Mongols as the strongest tribe in eastern Mongolia. Yesugei's followers deserted his widow and children, who were then forced to live in conditions of great hardship. Temüjin survived by hunting and fishing.

Rise to power

Temüjin began to attract followers who liked how he handled himself in battle. He became a follower of Toghrlil, the ruler of a Christian tribe in central Mongolia. Toghrlil and a young Mongol chief named Jamuka helped Temüjin rescue his wife, who had been captured by the Merkits, a tribe in present-day Russia. Some of the Mongol princes named Temüjin as their ruler, giving him the title of Chingiz-Khan (Genghis Khan), or "Supreme Ruler of the Ocean." Genghis Khan and Toghrlil later helped North China in a successful battle against the Tatars.

Relations between Genghis Khan and Toghrlil worsened and eventually led to open warfare. Genghis Khan was defeated in the first battle and withdrew into a remote area of northeastern Mongolia. In 1203, however, he gained a complete victory over Toghrlil, who fled and was killed by the Naimans. Toghrlil's people were absorbed by the Mongols. Genghis Khan now turned against his enemies in western Mongolia, including the Naimans allied with Jamuka and the rest of the Merkits. The Naimans were defeated in 1204. Jamuka was soon given up by his followers and put to death by his former friend. In 1206 a group of Mongol princes proclaimed Genghis Khan supreme ruler of the Mongol peoples.

Conquest of China

Genghis Khan did more than just invade and conquer. He established a code of laws for the empire and a standard written language for his people, and he set up a kind of postal system to help different parts of the empire communicate with each other. His greatest skill, though, was as a military

leader. In 1211 the Mongols began a full assault on China by invading the entire region north of the Great Wall. In the summer of 1215 Peking, China, was captured. Leaving one of his generals in charge of further operations in North China, Genghis Khan returned to Mongolia to devote his attention to events in central Asia.

Küchlüg the Naiman, who had taken refuge among the Kara-Khitai, had overthrown the ruler of that people and taken over that kingdom. An army sent by Genghis Khan chased him into Afghanistan, where he was captured and put to death; the takeover of his territory gave the Mongols a common frontier with Sultan Muhammad, the ruler of Khiva, who after recent conquests had claimed all of central Asia as well as Afghanistan and the greater part of Persia.

Campaign in the West

It was only a matter of time before the two empires went to war; it began with the execution of some of Genghis Khan's supporters and merchants accompanying them at the town of Otrar. Genghis Khan set out for revenge in the spring of 1219. By April 1220 he had captured Otrar as well as the cities of Bukhara and Samarkand. Genghis Khan sent his two best generals in pursuit of Sultan Muhammad, who fled across Persia and was killed on an island in the Caspian Sea. Continuing westward, the generals defeated an army of Russians and Turks before rejoining their master on his journey homeward. Genghis Khan, in the meantime, had attacked and captured Termez in the autumn of 1220 and spent the winter in what is now Tajikistan.

Early in 1221 Genghis Khan destroyed the city of Balkh, in the Persian province of



Genghis Khan.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Khurasan. He sent his son Tolui (Tulé) to complete the takeover of that province, which has not fully recovered from the damage to this day. Genghis Khan advanced through Afghanistan to attack Sultan Jalal al-Din, the son of Sultan Muhammad, who had defeated a Mongol army near Kabul. He fought with Jalal al-Din on the banks of the Indus; the sultan escaped capture only by swimming across the river. Jalal al-Din's defeat concluded the campaign in the west, and Genghis Khan returned to Mongolia. In 1226 he resumed war with the Tanguts, a Tibetan people. He died, with the war still in progress, in the Liupan Mountains in Kansu on August 25, 1227.

For More Information

Greenblatt, Miriam. *Genghis Khan and the Mongol Empire*. New York: Marshall Cavendish, 2000.

Grousset, René. *The Conqueror of the World*. New York: Orion Press, 1967.

Lister, R. P. *Genghis Khan*. New York: Stein and Day, 1969. Reprint, Lanham, MD: Cooper Square Press, 2000.

Taylor, Robert. *Life in Genghis Khan's Mongolia*. San Diego, CA: Lucent Books, 2001.

J. PAUL GETTY

Born: December 15, 1892

Minneapolis, Minnesota

Died: June 6, 1976

London, England

American businessman

J. Paul Getty was a billionaire independent oil producer who founded and controlled the Getty Oil Company and over two hundred other related companies.

Childhood

Jean Paul Getty was born on December 15, 1892, in Minneapolis, Minnesota. His father, George Franklin Getty, was a lawyer, but in 1904 he moved his wife, Sarah Risher Getty, and his son to the Oklahoma territory to begin a successful career in the oil business. Two years later the family moved to Los Angeles, California, where young Getty attended private school before graduating

from Polytechnic High School in 1909.

After graduation Getty attended the University of Southern California and the University of California at Berkeley where he studied political science and economics. During the summers he worked on his father's oil rigs as a "roustabout," or unskilled laborer. In 1912 Getty enrolled in Oxford University in England, from which he received a degree in economics and political science in 1914. Afterwards he traveled around Europe before returning to the United States.

Striking oil

In 1914 Getty arrived in Tulsa, Oklahoma, determined to strike it rich as an oil producer. Although he operated independently of his father's Minnehoma Oil Company, his father's loans and financial backing enabled him to begin buying and selling oil leases in the red-bed area of Oklahoma. In 1916 Getty's own first successful well came in, and by the fall of that year he had made his first million dollars as an oil producer.

For the next two years Getty "retired" to the life of a wealthy bachelor in Los Angeles, but he returned to the oil business in 1919. During the 1920s he and his father continued to be enormously successful both in drilling their own wells and in buying and selling oil leases (renting out oil rigs), and Getty became more active in California than in Oklahoma. He amassed a personal fortune of over three million dollars and acquired a third interest in what was to become the Getty Oil Company.

Paul Getty became the president of the George Getty Oil Company after his father's death in 1930. During the 1930s his wells continued to produce, and profits poured in.

He also bought a controlling interest in the Pacific Western Oil Corporation, one of the ten largest oil companies in California. After a series of agreements with his mother, he obtained the controlling interest in the George Getty Oil Company. He also began real estate dealings, including the purchase of the Hotel Pierre in New York City.

The Getty Oil Company

After World War II (1939–45), Getty took a gamble on oil rights in the Middle East. In 1949 he secured the oil rights in Saudi Arabia's half of the Neutral Zone, a barren area between Saudi Arabia and Kuwait. He made major deals with King Saud (c. 1880–1953), which shocked the large oil companies. After three years and a \$30 million investment, however, Getty found the huge oil deposits that helped make him a billionaire. In 1957 *Fortune* magazine published a list of the richest men in America. Getty's name headed the list, and the publicity turned Getty into an object of public fascination and legend.

After 1959 Getty stopped living out of hotel rooms and established his home and offices at Sutton Place, a sixteenth-century, seven-hundred-acre manor outside London, England. The huge estate, with its gardens, pools, trout stream, and priceless furnishings, was also a near fortress with elaborate security arrangements. Giant Alsatian dogs had the run of the estate, and there were also two caged lions, Nero and Teresa.

Getty was a celebrity, and public interest, fueled by envy and admiration, focused on Getty's tragedies as well as his billions. The public seemed to like to read into Getty's life the lesson that money does not buy happiness. Getty was married five times and each



J. Paul Getty.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

marriage ended in divorce. He had five sons, two of whom died before him, and his relationship with each of them was difficult. His grandson, J. Paul Getty III, was kidnapped in Italy in 1973. Although he was returned for a ransom (exchanged for money), part of his ear had been cut off.

Jean Paul Getty died at Sutton Place on June 6, 1976. He is buried on his Malibu, California, estate.

For More Information

De Chair, Somerset Strubin. *Getty on Getty: A Man in a Billion*. New York: Sterling, 1989.

Glassman, Bruce. *J. Paul Getty: Billionaire Oilman*. Woodbridge, CT: Blackbirch Press, 2001.

Miller, Russell. *The House of Getty*. South Yarmouth, MA: J. Curley, 1987.

Sampson, Anthony. *The Seven Sisters: The Great Oil Companies and the World They Shaped*. New York: Viking Press, 1975.

KAHLIL GIBRAN

Born: January 6, 1883

Besharri, Lebanon

Died: April 10, 1931

New York, New York

Lebanese poet, author, and artist

Lebanese writer and artist Kahlil Gibran influenced modern Arabic literature and composed inspirational pieces in English, including *The Prophet*.

Childhood and early career

Kahlil Gibran, baptized Gibran Khalil Gibran, the oldest child of Khalil Gibran and his wife Kamila Rahme, was born January 6, 1883, in Besharri, Lebanon, then part of Syria and the Ottoman Turkish Empire. His childhood in a village beneath Mt. Lebanon included few comforts, and he had no formal early education. However, he received a strong spiritual influence from legends and biblical stories handed down through generations.

Seeking a better future, the family, except for his father, moved to the United States in

1895. There they joined relatives and shared an apartment in South Boston, Massachusetts. While registering for public school, Gibran's name was shortened and changed. His life changed when a local art teacher noticed his artistic skill and arranged for Gibran's introduction to photographer Fred Holland Day in December 1896. After discovering Gibran's talent for literature and art, Day declared him to be a "natural genius" and became his mentor, or teacher. Gibran soon designed book illustrations, sketched portraits, and met Day's friends. He then went to Beirut, Lebanon, in 1898 to attend Madrasat-al-Hikmah, a college where he studied Arabic literature and started a literary magazine.

An inspired career

Upon returning to Boston, Gibran resumed his art work and renewed his friendship with Day. In 1904 Gibran and another artist exhibited their work at Day's studio in Boston. Here Gibran met Mary Elizabeth Haskell, who became his patron (supporter) as well as his tutor in English for two decades. She aided several talented, needy people and was a major factor in Gibran's success as an English writer and artist.

From 1908 to 1910 Haskell provided funds for Gibran to study painting and drawing in Paris, France. Before going to France, he studied English literature with her and had an essay, "al-Musiqa" (1905), published by the Arabic immigrant press in New York City. Diverse influences, including Boston's literary world, the English Romantic poets, mystic William Blake (1757–1827), and philosopher Nietzsche (1844–1900), combined with his experience in Lebanon, shaped Gibran's artistic and literary career.

Gains fame

After “Spirits Rebellious,” an Arabic poem, was published in 1908, Gibran was called a reformer (one who seeks social improvements) and quickly became influential in the Arabic world. He soon became the best known of the “Mahjar poets,” or immigrant Arabic writers. His most respected Arabic poem is the “The Procession” (1919).

Gibran soon made his mark on the New York artistic and literary world as well. His first work in English appeared in 1918 when *The Madman* was published. The parables (stories that illustrate a moral or religious lesson) and poems on justice, freedom, and God are illustrated by three of Gibran’s own drawings.

In October 1923 *The Prophet* was published, and it sold over one thousand copies in three months. The slim volume of parables, illustrated with Gibran’s drawings, is one of America’s all-time best selling books, with its fame spreading by word of mouth. By 1931 *The Prophet* had been translated into twenty languages. In the 1960s it reached new heights of popularity with American college students.

Later career and legacy

Although in failing health, Gibran completed two more books in English—*Sand and Foam* (1926) and *Jesus, The Son of Man* (1928). After his death, earlier essays were compiled and published, and his Arabic work was translated into many languages.

Gibran was forty-eight when he died in New York City on April 10, 1931, of cancer of the liver. The Arabic world praised him after his death as a genius and patriot. A



Kahlil Gibran.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

large group greeted his body upon its return to Besharri for burial in September 1931. Today Arabic scholars praise Gibran for introducing Western romanticism and a freer style to strict Arabic poetry. “Gibranism,” the term used for his approach, attracted many followers.

The young emigrant from Lebanon who came through Ellis Island in 1895 never became an American citizen; he loved his birthplace too much. But he was able to combine two heritages and achieved lasting fame in widely different cultures. The following passage from *Sand and Foam* illustrates Gibran’s message:

Faith is an oasis in the heart which will never be reached by the caravan of thinking. How can you sing if your mouth be filled with food? How shall your hand be raised in blessing if it is filled with gold?

For More Information

Gibran, Jean, and Kahlil Gibran. *Kahlil Gibran, His Life and World*. New York: Interlink Books, 1991.

Hilu, Virginia. *Beloved Prophet, The Love Letters of Kahlil Gibran and Mary Haskell and Her Private Journal*. New York: Knopf, 1972.

Young, Barbara. *This Man from Lebanon*. New York: Knopf, 1945.

ALTHEA GIBSON

Born: August 25, 1927

Silver, South Carolina

African American tennis player

Althea Gibson is noted not only for her exceptional abilities as a tennis player, but for breaking the color barrier in the 1950s as the first African American to compete in national and international tennis.

Childhood in Harlem

Althea Gibson was born in Silver, South Carolina, on August 25, 1927. She was the first of Daniel and Anna Washington Gib-

son's five children. Her parents worked on a cotton farm, but when she was three years old the family moved north to the Harlem area of New York City. Gibson caused a lot of problems as a child and often missed school. Her father was very strict with her on these occasions, but he also taught her to box, a skill that he figured would come in handy in the rough neighborhood the Gibson family lived in.

Tennis success

When Gibson was ten years old, she became involved with the Police Athletic League (PAL) movement known as "play streets." PAL was an attempt to help troubled children establish work habits they would need later in life. In 1940 PAL promoted paddle ball (a game similar to handball except that it is played using a wooden racket) competitions in Harlem. After three summers of playing the game Gibson was so good that the Cosmopolitan Tennis Club sponsored her to learn the game of tennis and proper social behavior.

In 1942 Gibson began winning tournaments sponsored by the American Tennis Association (ATA), the African American version of the United States Lawn Tennis Association (USLTA). In 1944 and 1945 Gibson won the ATA National Junior Championships. In 1946 several politically minded African Americans identified Gibson as having the talent to help break down organized racism (unequal treatment based on race) in the United States. Sponsored by Hubert Eaton and Walter Johnson (1887–1946) and inspired by boxer Sugar Ray Robinson (1921–1989), Gibson was soon winning every event on the ATA schedule. In 1949 she

entered A&M University in Tallahassee, Florida, on a tennis scholarship and prepared for the difficult task of breaking the color barrier in tournament tennis.

Breaking the color barrier

The USLTA finally allowed Gibson to play in the 1950 Nationals when four-time U.S. singles and doubles (a two-person team) champion Alice Marble (1913–) spoke out on her behalf. Gibson lost her first match of the tournament, but the breakthrough had been made. Over the next several years Gibson worked as a physical education teacher at Lincoln University in Jefferson City, Missouri. She also continued playing tennis and rose up the USLTA rankings (ninth in 1952, seventh in 1953). After a year of touring the world and playing special events for the U.S. State Department, Gibson staged a full-scale assault on the tennis world in 1956. That year she won the French Open in both singles and doubles.

Over the next two years Gibson was the leading women's tennis player in the world. In 1957 and 1958 she won both the Wimbledon and U.S. National singles titles, becoming the first African American to win a Wimbledon singles title. In 1958 she wrote a book about her life called *I Always Wanted to Be Somebody*. After her 1958 victory at the U.S. Nationals, Gibson retired from tennis and played professional golf. She was elected to the International Tennis Hall of Fame in 1971.

Later years

In 1994 Gibson suffered a stroke that left her confined to her home. In February 2001 her picture was featured on a Wheaties



Althea Gibson.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

cereal box as part of a special Black History Month package. Later that year tennis stars Venus (1980–) and Serena Williams (1981–) were honored at an Althea Gibson Foundation dinner that raised \$100,000 for scholarships and youth development programs. Through a spokeswoman, Gibson congratulated the Williams sisters for having grown into two of the best tennis players in the world.

For More Information

Biracree, Tom. *Althea Gibson*. New York: Chelsea House, 1989.

Davidson, Sue. *Changing the Game*. Seattle, WA: Seal Press, 1997.

Gibson, Althea. *I Always Wanted to Be Somebody*. Edited by Ed Fitzgerald. New York: Harper, 1958.

Jones, Betty Millsaps. *Wonder Women of Sports*. New York: Random House, 1981.

DIZZY GILLESPIE

Born: October 21, 1917

Cheraw, South Carolina

Died: October 6, 1993

Englewood, New Jersey

African American musician and bandleader

Fifty years after helping found a new style of revolutionary jazz that came to be known as bebop, Dizzy Gillespie's music is still a major contributing factor in the development of modern jazz.

Difficult childhood

John Birks Gillespie was born October 21, 1917, in Cheraw, South Carolina, to John and Lottie Gillespie. The last of nine children, Gillespie's father was abusive and unusually strict and the youngest Gillespie grew up hard and strong.

When Gillespie was ten, his father died and left the family in terrible financial trouble. Around this time Gillespie's English teacher introduced him to music, and he soon joined the school band. At first he played the trombone, but switched to the

trumpet after borrowing a neighbor's and immediately falling in love with the instrument. Over the next several years Gillespie played with local bands—to both black and white audiences—until his family moved to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania.

In Philly and New York

Gillespie played with bands in Philadelphia from 1935 to 1937 before moving to New York City. In Philadelphia Gillespie earned his nickname for his unpredictable and funny behavior. When Gillespie was in the Frankie Fairfax band in Philadelphia he carried his new trumpet in a paper bag, an act that inspired fellow musicians like Bill Doggett to call him “Dizzy.”

In New York City the Teddy Hill Orchestra hired Gillespie for a European tour. By 1937—when he was only nineteen—Gillespie had already made a name for himself among New York musicians, who could not help but notice his radically fresh take on solo (single) trumpet playing. Gillespie made his first recordings with the Teddy Hill Orchestra just prior to leaving for Europe with “The Cotton Club Show.”

Gillespie joined the Cab Calloway (1907–1994) Orchestra in 1939 and stayed until 1941. Calloway played the Cotton Club and toured extensively. During this period Gillespie continued to play all-night jam sessions at Minton's and Monroe's Uptown House to develop his musical knowledge and style.

Gillespie joined the Earl “Fatha” Hines band in 1942, about the same time Charlie Parker (1920–1955) did. Although Parker became famous as an alto saxophonist, he was

playing tenor sax at that time. Gillespie first met Parker in Kansas City, Missouri, in 1940 when he was on tour with Cab Calloway. The two of them jammed together at the Booker T. Washington Hotel for several hours.

Bebop born on 52nd Street

A large part of the Earl Hines band departed in 1943 to form a new group headed by Billy Eckstine. Former Hines members who joined Eckstine included Sarah Vaughan (1924–1990), Gillespie, Parker, and others. Gillespie became musical director for Eckstine, whose backers got him a job on 52nd Street.

After leaving Eckstine, Gillespie substituted in the Duke Ellington (1899–1974) Orchestra for about four weeks, then formed his own group to play at the newly opened Onyx Club on 52nd Street. Gillespie had been playing bebop (a new, radically different form of jazz) whenever he could since 1940, the year he married Lorraine Willis. Now he was able to play it full time. 52nd Street became the proving ground for a new jazz style that had previously been played primarily at late night jam sessions. “The opening of the Onyx Club represented the birth of the bebop era,” Gillespie recalled in his book, *To Be or Not to Bop*.

Also in 1944 Gillespie received the New Star Award from *Esquire* magazine, the first of many awards he would receive in his career. Describing the new style his quintet played, Gillespie wrote, “We’d take the chord structures of various standard and pop tunes and create new chords, melodies, and songs from them.”

Gillespie’s quintet and the presentation of modern jazz reached its peak in 1953—

with a concert at Massey Hall in Toronto that featured Gillespie, Parker, Bud Powell (1924–1966), Max Roach (1924–), and legendary jazz bassist Charles Mingus (1922–1979). Billed by jazz critics as “the greatest jazz concert ever,” it was recorded by Mingus and later released on Debut Records.

Gillespie’s legacy

In 1989, the year he turned seventy-two, Dizzy Gillespie received a Lifetime Achievement Award at the National Association of Recording Arts and Sciences’ Grammy Award ceremonies. The honor—one of many awarded to the trumpet virtuoso—recog-

nized nearly fifty years of pioneering jazz performances. That same year he received the National Medal of Arts from President George Bush (1924–).

Not letting age slow him down, in 1989 Gillespie gave three hundred performances in twenty-seven countries, appeared in one hundred U.S. cities in thirty-one states and the District of Columbia, headlined three television specials, performed with two symphonies, and recorded four albums. The next year, at the Kennedy Center for the Performing Arts ceremonies celebrating the centennial of American jazz, Gillespie received the American Society of Composers, Authors, and Publishers' Duke Award for fifty years of achievement.

Although Gillespie's failing health was due to pancreatic (having to do with the organ that helps digestion) cancer, Gillespie continued to play the music that he loved late into his life. His last public appearance was in Seattle in February of 1992. Gillespie passed away quietly in his sleep on October 6, 1993, at the age of seventy-five.

For More Information

Horricks, Raymond. *Dizzy Gillespie and the Bebop Revolution*. New York: Hippocrene, 1984.

Lees, Gene. *You Can't Steal a Gift: Dizzy, Clark, Milt, and Nat*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2001.

McRae, Barry. *Dizzy Gillespie*. New York: Universe Books, 1988.

Shipton, Alyn. *Groovin' High: The Life of Dizzy Gillespie*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1999.

RUTH BADER GINSBURG

Born: March 15, 1933

Brooklyn, New York

American Supreme Court justice and lawyer

Ruth Bader Ginsburg is the second woman ever to sit on the United States Supreme Court and is known as the legal architect of the modern women's movement. She, more than any other person, pointed out that many laws encouraged gender discrimination; that is, they led to better treatment of men than women instead of guaranteeing equal rights and opportunities to all as was intended by the United States Constitution.

The search for equality in the law begins

Ruth Joan Bader was born March 15, 1933, to Nathan and Cecelia (Amster) Bader in Brooklyn, New York. Her mother was a role model in Ruth's life at a time when women had to fight for the privileges and rights that men took for granted. "I pray that I may be all that she would have been had she lived in an age when women could aspire [seek to reach a goal] and achieve and daughters are cherished as much as sons," the *New York Times* quoted Ginsburg as saying of her mother after she was named to the Supreme Court. Cecelia Bader had once hoped to attend college but instead went to work in a garment factory to help pay for her brother's education. This was a sacrifice many women made in the early decades of the 1900s.

Ruth Bader loved to read and learn. Her interest in the law started in grade school,

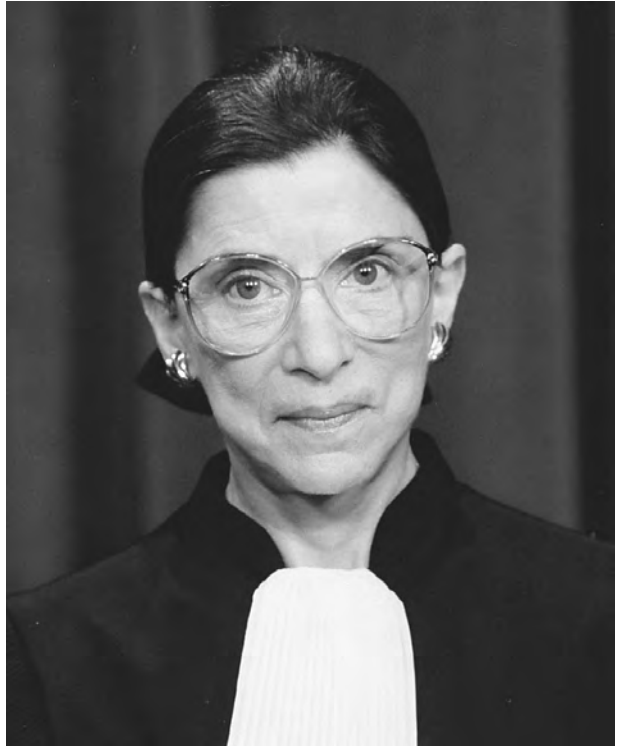
when she wrote articles for her school newspaper about the Magna Carta, a document that represented the first step toward freedom in English-speaking lands. She attended Cornell University, where she graduated with high honors in government. She then married Martin Ginsburg, a law student. She went on to Harvard Law School, where she served on the Law Review.

In the male-dominated world of law, Ruth Bader Ginsburg was told that she and her eight female classmates—out of a class of five-hundred—were taking the places of qualified males. She transferred to Columbia University after two years when her husband, who would become one of the country's top tax lawyers, took a job in New York. Here she continued to encounter gender discrimination; although she graduated at the top of her class, law firms, which normally welcome talented graduates, refused to hire her.

Teaching and practicing law

After working for District Judge Edmund L. Palmieri in New York, Ginsburg joined the faculty of Rutgers University, where, in order to keep her job, she wore overly large clothes to hide the fact that she was carrying her second child. She was only the second female professor at Rutgers and one of only twenty women law professors in the country. In 1972, after teaching a course on women and the law at Harvard University, she was appointed the first female faculty member in the law school's history.

Ginsburg also served as a lawyer for the American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU), an organization that works to protect and ensure the constitutional rights of all persons and groups. She devoted most of her attention to



Ruth Bader Ginsburg.

Reproduced by permission of the Supreme Court Historical Society.

women's rights. A former ACLU colleague was quoted as telling the *Legal Times*, "We were young and very green. She had it all so carefully thought through. She knew exactly what she needed to do." In a 1973 case before the Supreme Court, Ginsburg successfully argued against a federal law that gave more housing and medical benefits to male members of the armed services than to females. However, she did not argue only cases in which women were the victims of discrimination. She believed that the law must give equal rights to all groups. For instance, she convinced the court that a portion of the Social Security Act (a law that provides pro-

tection for people against loss of income due to old age, disability, or death) favored women over men because it gave certain benefits to widows but not to widowers.

After winning five of the six cases she argued before the Supreme Court, Ginsburg was named a judge on the United States Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia by President Jimmy Carter (1974–). She brought a cautious, thoughtful style to the court, and most people were pleased with her performance. Conservatives, who for the most part like things to stay as they are, agreed with her view that courts should only interpret laws and leave their creation to politicians. On the other hand, liberals, or people who are usually more open to change and reform, were pleased with her votes supporting broadcasting access to the courts.

Supreme Court justice

With the retirement of U.S. Supreme Court Justice Byron White (1917–) in 1993, President Bill Clinton (1946–) wanted a replacement with the intellect and the political skills to deal with the Supreme Court's top conservatives. He chose Ruth Bader Ginsburg. Court observers praised her commitment to the details of the law, her intelligent questioning of lawyers arguing before her, and her talent for using calm and sensible arguments to win over her fellow judges.

The Senate Judiciary Committee hearings to approve the choice of Ginsburg were unusually friendly. Committee Chairman Joseph Biden (1942–) said, according to the *Boston Globe*, that Ginsburg had “already helped to change the meaning of equality in our nation.” Ginsburg was confirmed by the Senate in a vote of ninety-six to three, becom-

ing the 107th Supreme Court Justice and its second female jurist after Sandra Day O'Connor (1930–). She was also the first justice to be named by a Democratic president since 1967. President Clinton said in a statement quoted by the *Detroit Free Press*, “I am confident that she will be an outstanding addition to the court and will serve with distinction for many years.”

Women in the judiciary

Since taking office, Ruth Bader Ginsburg has written thirty-five significant opinions (formal statements written by a judge), two important concurring (agreeing) opinions, and three selected dissenting (opposing) opinions. Ginsburg was seen as a stronger voice in favor of gender equality, the rights of workers, and the separation of church and state (the belief that neither the church nor the government should have any influence over the other) than many of the other judges on the Supreme Court. In 1999, she won the American Bar Association's Thurgood Marshall Award for her contributions to gender equality and civil rights.

As more and more women became judges throughout the country, Justice Ginsburg gave former president Carter credit for changing the judicial landscape for women forever. Appearing at a program entitled *Woman and the Bench* at the University of Pennsylvania Law School, she said, “He appointed women in numbers such as there would be no going back.” Ruth Bader Ginsburg deserves equal credit for surviving and fighting through the discrimination of the past to help bring about change.

For More Information

Ayer, Eleanor H. *Ruth Bader Ginsburg: Fire and Steel on the Supreme Court*. New York: Dillon Press, 1994.

Bayer, Linda N. *Ruth Bader Ginsburg*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2000

Bredeson, Carmen. *Ruth Bader Ginsburg: Supreme Court Justice*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1995.

Italia, Bob, and Paul Deegan. *Ruth Bader Ginsburg*. Minneapolis: Abdo & Daughters, 1994.

WHOOPI GOLDBERG

Born: November 13, 1955

New York, New York

African American actress and comedian

The high-energy actress Whoopi Goldberg has appeared in such films as *The Color Purple*, *Ghost*, and *Sister Act*. She became the first African American woman to host the Academy Awards and only the second African American woman to actually win one.

Early years

Whoopi Goldberg was born Caryn E. Johnson in New York City around 1955 (some reports say 1949 or 1950), the first of Emma Johnson's two children. Her father abandoned the family, and Goldberg's mother worked at several different jobs, including as a nurse and teacher. Goldberg began acting in

children's plays with the Hudson Guild Theater at the age of eight and spent much of her free time watching movies, sometimes three or four a day. "I liked the idea that you could pretend to be somebody else and nobody would cart you off to the hospital," Goldberg explained to *Cosmopolitan's* Stephen Farber.

During the 1960s Goldberg dropped out of high school and became addicted to drugs. Finally she sought help, cleaned herself up, and, in the process, married her drug counselor. A year later Goldberg gave birth to a daughter, Alexandra. Less than a year after that, she was divorced. During this time she worked as a summer camp counselor and as a member of the choruses of Broadway shows such as *Hair* and *Jesus Christ Superstar*.

New start in California

In 1974 Goldberg headed west to San Diego, California, pursuing her childhood dream of acting. She performed in plays with the San Diego Repertory Theater and worked with a comedy group called Spontaneous Combustion. To care for her daughter, she had to work as a bank teller, a bricklayer, and a funeral home assistant. She was also on welfare for a few years. During this period she went by the name "Whoopi Cushion," sometimes pronouncing her name "ku-SHON" as if it were French. After her mother pointed out how ridiculous the name sounded, Goldberg changed it.

Goldberg moved north to Berkeley, California, in the late 1970s and joined the Blake Street Hawkeyes Theater, a comedy troupe. This helped her develop powerful acting and comedic abilities and led to the creation of seventeen different characters for a one-woman show that she called *The Spook*



Whoopi Goldberg.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Show. She performed the show first on the West Coast, then toured the rest of the country and Europe in the early 1980s before ending up in New York City. These performances caught the attention of film director Mike Nichols (1931–), who offered to produce her show on Broadway in September 1984. In 1985 director Steven Spielberg (1946–) offered Goldberg the lead role in *The Color Purple*, her first film appearance. Goldberg received a Golden Globe Award and was nominated (her name was put forward for consideration) for an Academy Award for her performance.

Social work

Goldberg's fortunes continued to rise. In addition to her film awards, she won a Grammy Award in 1985 for her comedy album *Whoopi Goldberg* and received an Emmy nomination the following year for her guest appearance on the television show *Moonlighting*. The increased exposure, recognition, and acceptance allowed Goldberg to pursue social activities, focusing on issues that affected her when she required public assistance, which she has tried to call attention to since her early days in show business.

Beginning in 1986, along with Billy Crystal (1947–) and Robin Williams (1952–), Goldberg hosted the annual *Comic Relief* benefit that raises money for the homeless through the Health Care for the Homeless project. Goldberg also appeared before Congress to oppose proposed cuts in federal welfare, in addition to speaking out on behalf of environmental causes, the nation's hungry, acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; a disease that attacks the immune system), drug abuse awareness, and women's right to free choice. She has been recognized with several awards for her efforts.

This increased exposure, though, did not lead to increased success for Goldberg, as she went on to star in a series of poorly received movies, including *Jumpin' Jack Flash*, *Burglar*, *Fatal Beauty*, *The Telephone*, *Clara's Heart*, and *Homer and Eddie*. It seemed that as quickly as she had risen, she had fallen. Goldberg became the subject of gossip and rumors that Hollywood was ready to write her off. She remained steady, though, ignoring bad reviews and criticism. "I've just stopped listening to them," she told Paul Chutkow in

Vogue. "I've taken crazy movies that appeal to me. I don't care what other people think about it. If it was pretty decent when I did it, I did my job."

Ghost revives career

Goldberg needed to find the right film to highlight her comic approach in combination with social and humanitarian (promoting human welfare) elements. Her chance came with the 1990 film *Ghost*. Although not all critics liked the film, most critical and popular response was positive, especially regarding Goldberg's performance as the flashy but heroic psychic, Oda Mae. She had spent six months persuading studio executives that she was perfect for the part, and her hard work paid off: *Ghost* made more money than any other film released in 1990. In addition, Goldberg won an Oscar for her performance, becoming only the second black female in the history of the Academy Awards to win such an honor.

Goldberg's next role was in a drama, *The Long Walk Home*. She also continued her television work. Beginning in the 1988 and 1989 season, she appeared off and on as a crew member on *Star Trek: The Next Generation*, and in 1992 she hosted her own talk show. In 1992 alone Goldberg appeared in three films: director Robert Altman's (1925–) *The Player*; the comedy *Sister Act*, one of the biggest box-office hits of the summer; and *Sarafina: The Movie*, a film version of the musical about black South African teenagers' struggle against apartheid (South Africa's policy of keeping the races separate). Goldberg also appeared in *Made in America*, *Sister Act II* (for which she was paid eight million dollars), *Corrina, Corrina*, and *Boys on the Side*.

Academy Awards

Goldberg took a break from acting to host the Academy Awards in 1994 and 1996, becoming the first African American and first female to host the event solo. More than one billion people worldwide saw the awards show and critics praised her performance. In 1996 the academy faced public protest by the Reverend Jesse Jackson (1941–) regarding the lack of African American voters and award nominees. Goldberg joked that she would have worn Jackson's ribbon of protest, but she knew he was not watching.

In 1997, after appearing in a comedy called *The Associate*, Goldberg left Hollywood and returned to theater, starring on Broadway in a production of *A Funny Thing Happened on the Way to the Forum*. She continued to appear in films, including *The Deep End of the Ocean* and *Girl, Interrupted*, both in 1999, and on television on the game show *Hollywood Squares*. She hosted the Academy Awards again in 1999 and 2002. In 2001 she received the Mark Twain Prize for American Humor from the Kennedy Center for the Performing Arts in Washington, D.C.

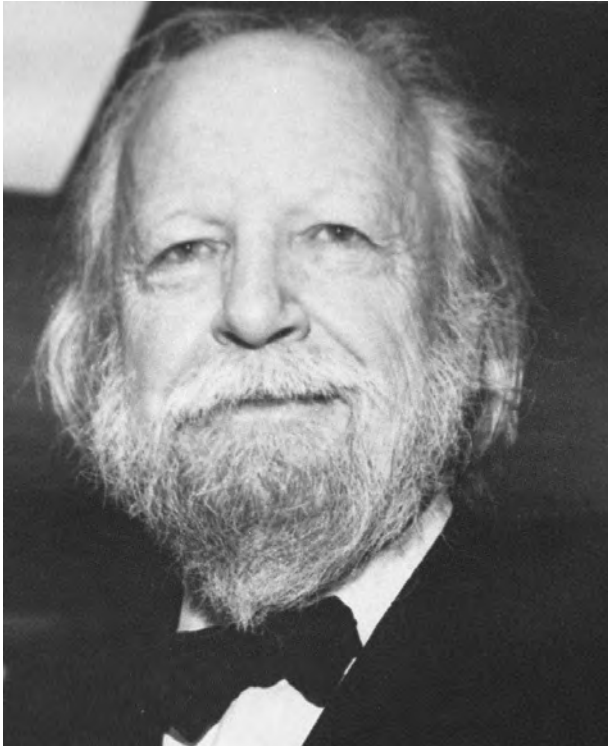
For More Information

Caper, William. *Whoopi Goldberg: Comedian and Movie Star*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1999.

Gaines, Ann Graham. *Whoopi Goldberg*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1999.

Katz, Sandy. *Whoopi Goldberg*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1997.

Parish, James Robert. *Whoopi Goldberg: Her Journey from Poverty to Megastardom*. Secaucus, NJ: Carol Pub. Group, 1997.



William Golding.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

WILLIAM GOLDING

Born: September 19, 1911

Saint Columb, Cornwall, England

Died: June 19, 1993

Perranarworthal, Cornwall, England

English author

The winner of the 1983 Nobel Prize in Literature, William Golding is among the most popular and influential British authors to have emerged in the second half of the twentieth century. Gold-

ing's reputation rests primarily upon his first novel, *Lord of the Flies* (1954), which is consistently regarded as an effective and disturbing portrayal of the fragility of civilization.

Childhood and college years

Golding was born in Saint Columb Minor in Cornwall, England, in 1911. His father, Alex, was a schoolmaster, while his mother, Mildred, was active in the Women's Suffrage Movement (the movement for women's right to vote). As a boy, his favorite authors included H. G. Wells (1866–1946), Jules Verne (1828–1905), and Edgar Rice Burroughs (1875–1950). Since the age of seven, Golding had been writing stories, and at the age of twelve he attempted to write a novel.

Golding remained an enthusiastic writer and, upon entering Brasenose College of Oxford University, abandoned his plans to study science, preferring to read English literature. At twenty-two, a year before taking his degree in English, Golding saw his first literary work published—a poetry collection simply titled *Poems*.

After graduating from Oxford in 1935, Golding continued the family tradition by becoming a schoolmaster in Salisbury, Wiltshire. His teaching career was interrupted in 1940, however, with the outbreak of World War II (1939–45). Lieutenant Golding served five years in the British Royal Navy and saw active duty in the North Atlantic, commanding a rocket launching craft.

Lord of the Flies

Golding had enhanced his knowledge of Greek history and mythology by reading while at sea, and when he returned to his

post at Bishop Wordsworth's School in 1945, he began furthering his writing career. He wrote three novels, all of which went unpublished. But his frustration would not last long, when, in 1954, Golding created *The Lord of the Flies*. The novel was rejected by twenty-one publishers before Faber & Faber accepted the forty-three-year-old schoolmaster's book.

Initially, the tale of a group of schoolboys stranded on an island during their escape from war received mixed reviews and sold only modestly in its hardcover edition. But when the paperback edition was published in 1959, thus making the book more accessible to students, the novel began to sell briskly. Teachers, aware of the student interest and impressed by the strong theme and symbolism of the work, began assigning *Lord of the Flies* to their literature classes. As the novel's reputation grew, critics reacted by drawing scholarly reviews out of what was previously dismissed as just another adventure story.

The author's extremely productive output—five novels in ten years — and the high quality of his work established him as one of the late twentieth-century's most distinguished writers. This view of Golding was cemented in 1965, when the author was named a Commander of the British Empire.

Later works

After the success of *Lord of the Flies*, Golding enjoyed success with other novels, including *Pincher Martin* (1957), *Free Fall* (1959), and *The Pyramid* (1967). The author's creative output then dropped drastically. He produced no novels and only a handful of novellas (short novels), short stories, and other occasional pieces.

In 1979 Golding returned with the publication of *Darkness Visible* which received mixed reviews. The author faced his harshest criticism to date with the publication of his 1984 novel *The Paper Men*, a drama about an aging, successful novelist's conflicts with his pushy, overbearing biographer. Departing briefly from fiction, Golding wrote a book containing essays, reviews, and lectures. *A Moving Target* appeared in 1982, one year prior to the author's receipt of the Nobel Prize in Literature.

William Golding died in England in 1993. A year after his death, *The Double Tongue* was released, published from a manuscript Golding completed before he died.

For More Information

- Carey, John, ed. *William Golding: The Man and His Books; a Tribute on His 75th Birthday*. New York: Farrar, Straus, Giroux, 1987.
- Friedman, Lawrence S. *William Golding*. New York: Continuum, 1993.
- Gindin, James. *William Golding*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1988.

SAMUEL GOMPERS

Born: January 27, 1850

London, England

Died: December 13, 1924

San Antonio, Texas

English-born American union leader and union organizer

The American labor leader Samuel Gompers was the most significant person in the history of the American labor movement (the effort of working people to improve their lives by forming organizations called unions). He founded and served as the first president of the American Federation of Labor.

Youth and education

Samuel Gompers was born on January 27, 1850, in east London, England, to Solomon and Sarah Gompers. His family was Dutch-Jewish in origin and had lived in England for only a few years. The family was extremely poor, but at the age of six Gompers was sent to a free Jewish school, where he received the beginnings of an education practically unknown to poor people in his day. The education was brief, however, as Gompers began to work, first making shoes and then in his father's cigar-making trade. In 1863, when Gompers was thirteen, the family immigrated to the United States and settled in the slums of New York City. The family soon numbered eleven members, and Gompers again went to work as a cigar maker.

Cigar-makers' union

Full of energy and naturally drawn to other people, Gompers joined many organizations in the immigrant world of New York. But from the start nothing was as important to him as the small Cigar-makers' Local Union No. 15, which he joined with his father in 1864. Gompers immediately rose to leadership of the group. At the age of sixteen he regularly represented his fellow workers when confronting their employers, and he discussed politics and economics with well-spoken workingmen many years older than himself.

This was a time of technological change in cigar making (as it was in practically every branch of American industry). Machines were being introduced that replaced many highly skilled workers. The cigar makers were distinguished, however, by the intelligence with which they studied their problems. The nature of their work—the quietness of the process of making cigars, for example—permitted and even encouraged discussion of economic questions, and this environment provided Gompers with an excellent kind of schooling. The most important influence upon his life was Ferdinand Laurel, a once prominent Scandinavian socialist (someone who thinks goods and services should be owned and controlled by the government), who taught Gompers that workingmen should avoid both politics and unrealistic dreaming in favor of winning immediate “bread and butter” gains in their wages, hours of work, and working conditions.

In fact, Gompers had many contacts with socialists, though from his earliest days he had little time for their ideas. Basing his own thinking about unions on a “pure and simple” concrete approach, he built the Cigar-makers' International Union into a functioning organization despite modern technology and unsuccessful strikes (an event in which a group of workers stop working in an attempt to gain rights from their employer).

American Federation of Labor

In 1881, with several other union leaders, Gompers helped to set up a loose organization of unions that, in 1886, became the American Federation of Labor (AFL). Founded during the height of the Knights of Labor, the AFL was different from the older

labor organization in nearly every way. Most importantly, the Knights wished for a society in which cooperation would govern the economy, whereas the AFL unions were interested only in improving the day-to-day material life of their members. The socialists' attempt to take control of the AFL in 1894 did succeed in removing Gompers from power for a year, but he was firmly back in control by 1895 and, if anything, more opposed to socialism in the unions than ever.

“Socialism holds nothing but unhappiness for the human race,” Gompers said in 1918. “Socialism has no place in the hearts of those who would secure the fight for freedom and preserve democracy.” Throughout his career he argued against the thriving Socialist Party. Although there were many reasons that socialist thought did not take root in American unions, Gompers's influence as the head of the labor movement for forty years was important.

Even if Gompers was hostile to the socialists, however, he was as devoted to the cause of unions as any other American labor leader before or since. He was the first national union leader to recognize and encourage the strike as labor's most effective weapon. In 1906 he defied a court order concerning a union activity and was sentenced to a year in jail, though he ended up spending only one night behind bars. The way in which Gompers spoke against greedy businessmen matched anything of his time. (Gompers first became known as a speaker and always delivered a speech well. He spoke widely for the cause of the AFL and, thanks to a quick mind, rarely lost in debate. However, none of his books was distinguished



Samuel Gompers.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

except his autobiography, *Seventy Years of Life and Labor* [1925].)

A national figure

Although the leader of a movement that lacked social respect, Gompers had good relations with several presidents and became something of an adviser to President Woodrow Wilson. In 1901 he was one of the founders of the National Civic Federation (an alliance of businessmen willing to put up with unions and moderate union leaders), and Wilson found it politically useful and worthwhile to have the support of the AFL during World War I (1914–1918; a war that

involved many nations in Europe and that the United States entered in 1917). Gompers supported the war energetically, attempting to stop AFL strikes while the war was being fought and speaking out against socialists and pacifists (people opposed to war as a way of solving disagreements). He served as president of the International Commission on Labor Legislation at the Versailles Peace Conference and on various other committees.

During the 1920s, though in failing health, Gompers served as a spokesman in Washington for the new Mexican government that had overthrown the old one, considering himself key in gaining American recognition of the new government. Mexican President Plutarco Elias Calles (1877–1945) received Gompers with high honors in 1924. Realizing that the end was near for him, however, Gompers returned early from the trip to Mexico and died in San Antonio, Texas, on December 13. True to his character, his last words were: “Nurse, this is the end. God bless our American institutions. May they grow better day by day.”

What had begun as useful for Gompers—acceptance of the capitalist system (in which goods and services are owned and controlled by private individuals) and working within it—had become his guiding principle. Indeed, he was one of the creators of the modern institutions that he referred to in his last words—for capitalism he won the loyalty of labor, and for labor he won a part in business decision making.

For More Information

Buhle, Paul. *Taking Care of Business*. New York: Monthly Review Press, 1999.

Gompers, Samuel. *Seventy Years of Life and Labor*. 2 vols. New York: E. P. Dutton & Company, 1925. Reprint, Ithaca, NY: ILR Press, New York State School of Industrial and Labor Relations, Cornell University, 1984.

Livesay, Harold C. *Samuel Gompers and Organized Labor in America*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1978.

Stearn, Gerald Emanuel. *Gompers*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1971.

JANE GOODALL

Born: April 3, 1934

London, England

English primatologist and scientist

Jane Goodall was a pioneering English primatologist (a person who studies primates, which is a group of animals that includes human beings, apes, monkeys, and others). Her methods of studying animals in the wild, which emphasized patient observation over long periods of time of both social groups and individual animals, changed not only how chimpanzees (a kind of ape) as a species are understood, but also how studies of many different kinds of animals are carried out.

Childhood

The older of two sisters, Jane Goodall was born on April 3, 1934, in London, England, into a middle-class British family. Her

father, Mortimer Herbert Morris-Goodall, was an engineer. Her mother, Vanna (Joseph) Morris-Goodall, was a successful novelist. When Goodall was about two years old her mother gave her a stuffed toy chimpanzee, which Goodall still possesses to this day. She was a good student, but she had more interest in being outdoors and learning about animals. Once she spent five hours in a henhouse so she could see how a hen lays an egg. She loved animals so much that by the time she was ten or eleven she dreamed of living with animals in Africa. Her mother encouraged Goodall's dream, which eventually became a reality.

When Goodall was eighteen she completed secondary school and began working. She worked as a secretary, as an assistant editor in a film studio, and as a waitress, trying to save enough money to make her first trip to Africa.

An African adventure begins

Jane Goodall finally went to Africa when she was twenty-three years old. In 1957 she sailed to Mombasa on the east African coast, where she met anthropologist Louis Leakey (1903–1972), who would become her mentor, or teacher. In Africa, Leakey and his wife, Mary, had discovered what were then the oldest known human remains. These discoveries supported Leakey's claim that the origins of the human species were in Africa, not in Asia or Europe as many had believed.

Leakey hoped that studies of the primate species most closely related to human beings—chimpanzees, gorillas, and orangutans—would shed light on the behavior of the human animal's ancestors. He chose Goodall for this work because he believed



Jane Goodall.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

that as a woman she would be more patient and careful than a male observer, and that as someone with little formal training she would be more likely to describe what she saw rather than what she thought she should be seeing.

Living among chimps

In July 1960, twenty-six-year-old Jane Goodall set out for the first time for Gombe National Park in southeastern Africa to begin a study of the chimpanzees that lived in the forests along the shores of Lake Tanganyika. She had little formal training; still, she brought to her work her love of animals, a strong sense of determination, and a desire

for adventure. She thought at the time that the study might take three years. She ended up staying for more than two decades.

In her earliest days at Gombe, Goodall worked alone or with native guides. She spent long hours working to gain the trust of the chimpanzees, tracking them through the dense forests and gradually moving closer and closer to the chimps until she could sit among them—a feat that had not been achieved by other scientists. Her patience produced an amazing set of discoveries about the behaviors and social relations of chimpanzees.

Chimpanzees had been thought to be violent, aggressive animals with crude social arrangements. Researchers had given chimps numbers rather than names and had ignored the differences in personality, intelligence, and social skills that Goodall's studies revealed. Chimpanzees, Goodall showed, organized themselves in groups that had complex social structures. They were often loving and careful parents and also formed attachments to their peers. They hunted and ate meat. And they used simple tools—twigs or grasses that they stripped of leaves and used to get termites out of termite mounds. This discovery helped force scientists to give up their definition of human beings as the only animals that use tools.

In 1962 Leakey arranged for Goodall to work on a doctorate degree at Cambridge University, in England, which would give scientific weight to her discoveries. In 1965 she became the eighth person ever to receive a doctorate from Cambridge without having earned an undergraduate degree.

By 1964 the Gombe Stream Research Center had become the destination of choice

for graduate students and other scientists wishing to study chimpanzees or to learn Goodall's methods. The general public was also learning about Goodall's work through a series of articles in *National Geographic* magazine and later through *National Geographic* television specials. In 1964 Goodall married Hugo Van Lawick, a Dutch wildlife photographer who had come to Gombe at the invitation of Leakey to take pictures for the magazine. Goodall's son by that marriage, Hugo (more often referred to as Grub), was her only child.

New discoveries

The 1970s saw changes in Goodall's understanding of the chimpanzees and in the way in which research was carried out at Gombe. In 1974 what Goodall referred to as a "war" broke out between two groups of chimpanzees. One group eventually killed many members of the other group. Goodall also witnessed a series of acts of infanticide (the killing of an infant) on the part of one of the older female chimps. These appearances of the darker side of chimpanzee behavior forced her to adjust her interpretation of these animals as being basically gentle and peace loving.

In May 1975 rebels from Zaire, Africa, kidnapped four research assistants from the research center. After months of talks, the assistants were returned. Because of the continued risk of kidnappings, almost all of the European and American researchers left Gombe. Goodall continued to carry out her work with the help of local people who had been trained to conduct research.

A chimp's true friend

Later Goodall turned her attention to the problem of captive chimpanzees. Because

they closely resemble humans, chimpanzees have been widely used as laboratory animals to study human diseases. Goodall used her knowledge and fame to work to set limits on the number of animals used in such experiments and to convince researchers to improve the conditions under which the animals were kept. She also worked to improve conditions for zoo animals and for conservation of chimpanzee habitats (the places in the wild where chimps live). In 1986 she helped found the Committee for the Conservation and Care of Chimpanzees, an organization dedicated to these issues. She has even written children's books, *The Chimpanzee Family Book* and *With Love*, on the subject of treating animals kindly.

For her efforts Goodall has received many awards and honors, among them the Gold Medal of Conservation from the San Diego Zoological Society, the J. Paul Getty Wildlife Conservation Prize, and the National Geographic Society Centennial Award. In 2000 she accepted the third Gandhi/King Award for Non Violence at the United Nations. Much of Goodall's current work is carried on by the Jane Goodall Institute for Wildlife Research, Education, and Conservation, in Ridgefield, Connecticut. She does not spend much time in Africa anymore; rather, she gives speeches throughout the world and spends as many as three hundred days a year traveling.

For More Information

Goodall, Jane. *The Chimpanzees I Love: Saving Their World and Ours*. New York: Scholastic Press, 2001.

Goodall, Jane. *My Life with the Wild Chimpanzees*. New York: Pocket Books, 1988.

Haraway, Donna. *Primate Visions*. New York: Routledge, 1989.

Meachum, Virginia. *Jane Goodall, Protector of Chimpanzees*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1997.

Pratt, Paula Bryant. *Jane Goodall*. San Diego, CA: Lucent Books, 1997.

BENNY GOODMAN

Born: May 30, 1909

Chicago, Illinois

Died: 1986

New York, New York

American musician, bandleader, and clarinetist

Benny Goodman was a great jazz clarinet player and the leader of one of the most popular big bands of the Swing Era (1935–1945). In fact, *Time* magazine dubbed him “the King of Swing.”

Early life

Benjamin David Goodman was born in Chicago, Illinois, on May 30, 1909, into a large, poor Jewish family. His parents, who had moved to the United States from Eastern Europe, were Dora and David Goodman. Benny formally studied music at the famed Hull House (a settlement house that was originally opened by Jane Addams [1860–1935] to provide services to poor members of the community), and at the age of ten he was already a skilled clarinetist. At age twelve, appearing onstage in a talent contest, he did



Benny Goodman.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

an imitation of the popular Ted Lewis. So impressed was bandleader Ben Pollack that five years later he sent for Goodman to join his band in Los Angeles, California. After three years with Pollack, Goodman left the band in New York City in 1929 to make it on his own. In 1934 he led his first band on a radio series called "Let's Dance" (which became the title of Goodman's theme song). The band also played at dance halls and made a handful of records.

The turning point

In 1935, armed with songs developed by some of the great African American

arrangers, Goodman's band traveled the country to play their music. Not especially successful in most of its performances, the band arrived at the Palomar Ballroom in Los Angeles in a discouraged mood. The evening of August 21, 1935, began coolly. Then, desperate to wow the unimpressed audience, Goodman called for the band to launch into a couple of fast-paced crowd pleasers, and the reaction ultimately sent shock waves through the entire popular music world. Hundreds of people stopped dancing and massed around the bandstand, responding with enthusiasm.

That performance turned out to be not only a personal triumph for the band, but for swing music in general. Goodman's popularity soared; the band topped almost all the magazine and theater polls, their record sales were huge, they were given a weekly radio show, and they were featured in two big-budget movies. But an even greater triumph awaited—a concert at Carnegie Hall in New York that was to win respect for Goodman's music. The night of January 16, 1938, is now famous; the band outdid itself, improving on recorded favorites such as "King Porter Stomp" and "Don't Be That Way." The band finished the evening with a lengthy, classic version of "Sing, Sing, Sing."

Goodman the person

Two of the finest musicians ever to work with Goodman were pianist Teddy Wilson (1912–1986) and vibraphonist-drummer Lionel Hampton (1909–2002). However, they played only in small-group arrangements because of the unwritten rule that did not allow white musicians and African American musicians to play together. Goodman was the first white bandleader to challenge segrega-

tion (keeping people of different races separate) in the music business, and as the rules eased he hired other African American greats.

Many top-notch musicians joined and left Goodman's band over the years, more so than in other bands. Most musicians found Goodman an unfriendly employer. He was said to be stern and stingy with money. Moreover, Goodman was referred to in music circles as "the Ray," because of his habit of glaring at any player guilty of a "clam" or "clinker" (a wrong note), even in rehearsal. An outstanding clarinetist who was equally at home performing difficult classical music, Goodman was not very patient with anything that was not technically perfect.

Later years

After 1945 the clarinet was pushed into a minor role in bebop music, the new style of jazz that was becoming popular. Goodman struggled for a while to accept the new music, but in 1950 he decided to dissolve his band. From that time forward his public appearances were rare. They were mostly with small groups and almost always for television specials, recordings, or European tours. His most celebrated tour, however, was part of the first-ever cultural exchange with the Soviet Union. In 1962, at the request of the U.S. State Department, he went to the Soviet Union with a band. The trip was a smashing success and greatly helped American jazz become popular in Eastern Europe.

After his marriage in 1941, Goodman's home was New York City. His wife, Alice, with whom he had two daughters, died in 1978. Goodman maintained his habit of performing on occasion. In 1985 he made a surprise and, by all accounts, spectacular

appearance at the Kool Jazz Festival in New York. He died the following year of an apparent heart attack.

Goodman's ultimate contribution to jazz is still being debated. Much post-1940s jazz criticism has judged him to have been overrated compared to other jazz greats. Nonetheless, Goodman's technical mastery, polished tone, highly individual (and influential) solo style, and undeniable *swing* certainly have earned him a permanent place in jazz history.

For More Information

Collier, James Lincoln. *Benny Goodman and the Swing Era*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1989.

Connor, D. Russell. *Benny Goodman: Wrappin' It Up*. Lanham, MD: Scarecrow Press, 1996.

Firestone, Ross. *Swing, Swing, Swing: The Life and Times of Benny Goodman*. New York: Norton, 1993.

Goodman, Benny. *Benny, King of Swing*. New York: W. Morrow, 1979.

MIKHAIL GORBACHEV

Born: March 2, 1931

Privolnoe, Russia

Russian politician and president

Mikhail Gorbachev achieved national recognition as member of the Communist Party, the dominant political party of the former Soviet



Mikhail Gorbachev.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Union that believes in the common ownership of goods and services. In March 1985 the Soviet Communist Party elected him general secretary of the party and leader of the Soviet Union. He resigned in 1991 shortly after the fall of communism.

Early life

Mikhail Sergeevich Gorbachev was born into a peasant family in the village of Privolnoe, near Stavropol, Soviet Union, on March 2, 1931. As a teenager, he worked driving farm machinery at a local machine-tractor station. Gorbachev's experience here undoubtedly educated him well about the

serious problems of food production and political administration in the countryside. He also became familiar with the control of the KGB (the Soviet secret police), knowledge which would serve him well in his future career.

In 1952 Gorbachev joined the Communist Party and began studies at the Moscow State University, where he graduated from the law division in 1955. He also met and married fellow student Raisa Titorenko, in 1953.

With Soviet Premier Joseph Stalin's (1879–1953) death, the Soviet Union began a period of political and intellectual unrest which paved the way for a major restructuring of the Soviet Union's political system and economic administration. For young party activists like Gorbachev this was a period of exciting changes and challenges.

After his graduation Gorbachev returned to Stavropol as an organizer for the Komsomol (Young Communist League) and began a successful career as a party administrator and regional leader. In 1962 he was promoted to the post of party organizer for collective and state farms in the Stavropol region and soon took on major responsibilities for the Stavropol city committee as well. Party leader Leonid Brezhnev (1906–1982) rewarded his ability by appointing him Stavropol first secretary in 1966, roughly equivalent to mayor.

Climbing the party ladder

After gaining additional political training Gorbachev moved quickly to assume direction of the party in the entire Stavropol region. In 1970 he assumed the important post of first secretary for the Stavropol Territorial Party Committee. This position, which

is similar to a governor in the United States, proved a stepping stone to Central Committee membership and national recognition.

Gorbachev was assisted in his rise to national power by close associations with Yuri Andropov (1914–1984), who was also from the Stavropol region, and Mikhail Suslov, the party's principal ideologist. In 1978, at the request of Brezhnev, Gorbachev went to Moscow as a party secretary responsible for agricultural administration. Despite problems with agriculture in the Soviet Union at this time, Gorbachev gained a solid reputation as an energetic and informed politician. His activist style was just the thing to oppose most of the aging leaders in the Kremlin, a building in Moscow which houses the government.

The political rise of Yuri Andropov after the death of Leonid Brezhnev in January 1980 greatly strengthened the position of the up-and-coming Gorbachev as both men showed impatience with outdated practices and inefficiencies of the Soviet Union's economy. In October 1980, Gorbachev became a member of the ruling Politburo, the small group at the top of the Communist Party.

A new type of Soviet leader?

As he took power in March 1985, Gorbachev brought a fresh new spirit to the Kremlin. Young, energetic and married to an attractive, stylish, and educated woman, he represented a new generation of Soviet leaders, free from the direct experiences of Stalin's terror which so hardened and corrupted many of his elders.

Gorbachev's first steps as head of the party were designed to improve economic productivity. He began an energetic campaign

against inefficiency and waste and indicated his intention to "shake up" lazy and ineffective workers in every area of Soviet life, including the party. He also revealed an unusual friendliness. Shortly after taking power Gorbachev also moved to develop greater rapport with ordinary citizens, taking to the streets on several occasions to discuss his views and making a number of well-publicized appearances at factories and other industrial institutions.

U.S. relations

As Prime Minister Gorbachev also sought to establish better relations with the United States, which might allow some reduction in Soviet defense spending in favor of consumer goods. In November 1985 he met with President Reagan (1911–) in Geneva to discuss national and international problems. Little progress was made but both leaders agreed to hold another "summit" meeting in the United States in 1986.

When new tensions developed between the two powerful countries, the leaders agreed to hold a preliminary meeting at Reykjavik, Iceland, on October 11–12, 1986. But the clearest signs of improving Soviet-American relations came in 1988 when Gorbachev made a positive impression when he entered a crowd of spectators in New York City to shake hands with people. In May and June of the same year, President Reagan visited Moscow.

Internal conflicts

Within the Soviet Union, Gorbachev promoted great political changes. His most important measure came in 1989 when he set up elections in which members of the Communist Party had to compete against oppo-

nents who were not party members. Later that same year, he called for an end to the special status of the Communist Party guaranteed by the Soviet Constitution. He also ended the Soviet military occupation of Afghanistan.

Two issues, however, caused growing difficulty for Gorbachev. First, there was the problem of nationalities, as the Soviet Union consisted of nearly one hundred different ethnic groups. Many of these groups began to engage in open warfare against each other and even more serious, some ethnic groups, like the Lithuanians and the Ukrainians began to call for outright independence. Second, the country's economy was sinking deeper into crisis. Both industrial and agricultural production were declining, and the old system, in which the economy ran under centralized control of the government, no longer seemed to work.

While Gorbachev wrestled with these problems, a powerful rival began to emerge. Once considered an ally, Boris Yeltsin (1931–) became the country's leading supporter of radical economic reform (improvement). Yeltsin formally left the Communist Party in 1990, something Gorbachev refused to do, and was elected president of the Russian Republic in June 1991. Gorbachev, on the other hand, had been made president of the Soviet Union without having to win a national election. Thus, Yeltsin could claim a greater degree of popular support.

Fall from power

In August 1991 a group of Communist Party conservatives captured Gorbachev while he was on vacation in the Crimea and moved to seize power. Some of these men, like Prime Minister Valentin Pavlov, were individuals Gorbachev had put in power to balance

opposing political forces. But Yeltsin, not Gorbachev, led the successful resistance to the coup (takeover of the government), which collapsed within a few days. When Gorbachev returned to Moscow, he was overshadowed by Yeltsin, and there were rumors that Gorbachev himself had been involved in the coup.

By the end of 1991, the Soviet Union had fallen apart. The Ukraine and the Baltic states declared themselves as independent, and real power began to shift towards the leaders of those regions, among them Yeltsin, hero of the attempted coup and president of the Russian Republic. Gorbachev formally resigned his remaining political office on Christmas Day 1991.

In the spring of 1995, Gorbachev began touring factories in Russia, spoke to university students, and criticized President Yeltsin. He stopped just short of formally announcing his candidacy for the presidency in 1996. He wrote an autobiography, which was released in 1995 in Germany and in 1997 in the United States. Gorbachev's wife, Raisa, died of cancer in September of 1999.

On May 25, 2000, Gorbachev registered his Russian Social Democratic Party, saying he wanted to support liberal ideas. The party's registration by the Justice Ministry paved the way for it to contest future polls.

Like many historical figures, Gorbachev's role will be interpreted in varying ways. While a Russian factory worker stated in *Newsweek*, "He destroyed a great state . . . the collapse of the Soviet Union started with Gorbachev," some critics in the West saw the fall of Communism as "altogether a victory for common sense, reason, democracy and common human values."

For More Information

Brown, Archie. *The Gorbachev Factor*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1996.

Butson, Thomas G. *Gorbachev: A Biography*. New York: Stein and Day, 1985.

Doder, Dusko. *Shadows and Whispers: Power Politics Inside the Kremlin from Brezhnev to Gorbachev*. New York: Random House, 1986.

Gorbachev, Mikhail S. *Memoirs*. New York: Doubleday, 1996.

BERRY GORDY JR.

Born: November 28, 1929

Detroit, Michigan

African American businessman, songwriter, and entrepreneur

Berry Gordy Jr. founded Motown Records in 1959. The record company grew into the most successful African American enterprise in the United States and was responsible for creating a new sound that changed popular music.

Early life

Berry Gordy Jr. was born on November 28, 1929, and was raised in Detroit, Michigan. He was not the first businessperson in the family; both parents worked for themselves, his father as a plastering contractor, his mother as an insurance agent. As a child Gordy was interested in music, and his song “Berry’s Boogie” won a talent contest. However, he did not

receive much formal training in music—only a little on the piano and merely a week on the clarinet. Gordy dropped out of Northeastern High School during his junior year to pursue a career as a boxer. Between 1948 and 1951 he fought fifteen matches, twelve of which he won, but his boxing career was cut short when he was drafted to serve in the U.S. Army during the Korean War (1950–53; a war between North Korea and South Korea during which the United Nations and the United States helped defend South Korea).

Enters the music business

When Gordy’s service in the army ended in 1953, he returned to Detroit and used the money he had saved from his military pay to open a record store called the Three-D Record Mart. His love for the jazz of Stan Kenton (1912–1979), Charlie Parker (1920–1955), and Thelonius Monk (1917–1982) influenced the records he tried to sell more than his customers’ requests and his business soon failed.

Gordy worked for his father for a short period and then on an assembly line at the Ford Motor Company. He did not find the work interesting, and as he worked he wrote songs in his head, some of which were recorded by local singers. The record company Decca Records bought several of his songs, including “Reet Petite” and “Lonely Teardrops,” and when Gordy compared the money he made for writing the songs to what Decca made from the minor hits, he realized that writing the songs was not enough. He needed to own them.

Hits the big time

At the suggestion of a friend, teenage singer William “Smokey” Robinson (1940–),

Gordy borrowed seven hundred dollars from his father and formed his own company to make and sell records. Motown Records was headquartered in a house on Detroit's West Grand Boulevard, where Gordy slept on the second floor and made records on the first. In time the company grew, with nine buildings on the same street housing its various branches, such as Jobete, music publishers; Hitsville, USA, a recording studio; International Talent Management, Inc.; the Motown Artist's Development Department (which showed Gordy's personal interest in his performers, as this was where they were taught to eat, dress, and act like professionals); and the Motown Record Corporation.

In 1960 Motown released the song "Shop Around," written by Smokey Robinson and performed by him and the Miracles. The song sold more than a million copies, and with that record Gordy's company launched the most successful and influential era in the history of popular music. What came to be called the Motown Sound was a musical form that combined classic African American gospel singing with the new rock-and-roll sound that was being shaped by Elvis Presley (1935–1977) and the British band the Beatles.

Motown Records made more than 110 number-one hit songs and countless top-ten records, including "Please Mr. Postman," "Reach Out, I'll Be There," "My Girl," "Stop! In the Name of Love," "For Once in My Life," "How Sweet It Is to Be Loved by You," "Heard It Through the Grapevine," "My Guy," "Dancing in the Streets," "Your Precious Love," "Where Did Our Love Go," "Baby Love," "I Hear a Symphony," "I Want You Back," and "I'll Be There." Just as good is the list of artists Gordy brought into the spotlight: Diana Ross (1944–) and the Supremes, the Jackson Five, Stevie Wonder (1950–), Smokey Robinson and the Miracles, the Four Tops, the Temptations, Gladys Knight (1944–) and the Pips, Tammi Terrell (1945–1970) and Marvin Gaye (1939–1984), the Marvelettes, Mary Wells (1943–1992), and Martha Reeves (1941–) and the Vandellas.

Troubles arise

By the mid-1970s, though, some of the Motown artists had begun to resist Gordy's tight control and began to break up Gordy's "family" of stars. The first to leave was Gladys Knight and the Pips. In 1975 the Jackson Five announced that they would be moving to Epic Records when their Motown contract

expired. Although Gordy kept Stevie Wonder at Motown by promising him \$13 million over seven years in the famous "Wonderdeal" of 1975, Gordy's public statements usually expressed disappointment that his superstars came to value money over loyalty. This was heard often from Gordy when, in 1981, Diana Ross announced her move to RCA Records.

Ross's move was especially surprising and bitter for Gordy because in 1972 he had moved his headquarters to Los Angeles, California, to begin a career in film, not only for himself, but so he could turn Ross into a movie star. His first film was the 1972 Paramount release *Lady Sings the Blues*, the story of jazz singer Billie Holiday (1915–1959) starring Ross. The picture was nominated for five Academy Awards and took in more than \$8.5 million at the box office. In 1975 Gordy directed Ross in *Mahogany*, the story of an African American fashion model's rise to fame. Although the film did well at the box office, it was not nearly the critical success of *Lady Sings the Blues*. Other Gordy films were *The Bingo Long Traveling All Stars and Motor Kings* (1976), *Almost Summer* (1978), *The Wiz* (1978) starring Michael Jackson (1958–) and Diana Ross, and *The Last Dragon* (1985).

Gives up his company

In June 1988 Gordy sold his company to MCA, Inc. He kept control of Jobete, the music publishing operation, and Motown's film division, but he sold the record company for \$61 million. He told the newspaper *Daily Variety* that he wanted to make sure that the history of Motown remained alive.

Esther Edwards, Berry Gordy's sister, was also interested in preserving Motown's history. The brick house in Detroit once

named Hitsville, USA, became the site of the Motown Museum thanks in large part to Edwards. She had saved hundreds of boxes of Motown items, including original music scores, posters, and photographs, and until 1988 most of them were stuck to the walls with thumbtacks. In an effort to have the collection preserved, Michael Jackson, whose ties to Berry were still strong in 1990, donated \$125,000 to the Motown Museum.

In late 1994 a plan was announced to make a tribute album to Gordy. Even though Gordy was oftentimes recognized as an entrepreneur, he was first and foremost a songwriter. Singers who signed on to sing some of Gordy's songs on the tribute album included Diana Ross, the Four Tops, the Temptations, and Smokey Robinson. In 2000, Gordy gave \$750,000 to the Rhythm and Blues Foundation in order to help those pioneers of rhythm and blues in need. Gordy's talents as a songwriter and entrepreneur and his huge contribution to popular music were recognized in 2001, when he was inducted into the Independent Music Hall of Fame.

For More Information

Davis, Sharon. *Motown: The History*. Middlesex, England: Guinness Publishers, 1988.

Gordy, Berry. *Movin' Up: Pop Gordy Tells His Story*. New York: Harper & Row, 1979.

Gordy, Berry. *To Be Loved*. New York: Warner Books, 1994.

Taraborreli, J. Randy. *Motown: Hot Wax: City Cool and Solid Gold*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1986.

Waller, Don. *The Motown Story*. New York: C. Scribner, 1985.

**AL
GORE**

Born: March 31, 1948

Washington, D.C.

American vice president, senator, and congressman

Al Gore, U.S. representative, senator, and forty-fifth vice president of the United States, lost one of the closest presidential elections in history, in 2000, to George W. Bush (1946–). Gore is known for his strong interest in conservation and has spent much of his time in public office working to preserve and protect the environment.

A lot to live up to

Albert Gore, Jr., was born in Washington, D.C., on March 31, 1948. His father, Albert Gore, Sr. (1907–1998), served in the House and the Senate for nearly three decades. His mother, Pauline (LaFon) Gore, was one of the first women to graduate from the law school at Vanderbilt University. As the son of a senator, Gore learned at an early age what it was like to live in the public eye. This gave him a sense of caution that made him seem mature beyond his years.

Gore received a bachelor's degree, with honors, in government from Harvard University in 1969. He then served as an army reporter during the Vietnam War (1955–75; a civil war in which South Vietnam, with the help of the United States, was fighting against Communist forces in North Vietnam). During the war, on May 19, 1970, Al Gore married his college sweetheart, Mary Elizabeth "Tipper" Aitcheson. The couple eventually had four children.

After returning from Vietnam, Gore went on to work as a reporter in Nashville, Tennessee. He was also a home builder, a land developer, and a livestock and tobacco farmer. He went back to school, studying philosophy (the search for an understanding of the world and a human being's place in it) and law at Vanderbilt University.

Politics calls

In 1976 Gore decided to run for a seat in the U.S. House of Representatives. With his famous name, as well as running in the district that had sent his father to Congress for many terms, he beat eight other candidates in the primary election and went on to win in the general election. He ran successfully in the three following elections. Gore received some early attention in 1980 when he was assigned to the House Intelligence Committee studying nuclear weapons. He researched and wrote out a detailed plan to reduce the number of nuclear weapons, which was published in the February 1982 issue of *Congressional Quarterly*. He also focused on health- and environment-related matters. He stressed the future usefulness of new technologies and computer development. In 1984 Gore campaigned for a seat in the U.S. Senate and won by a wide margin.

In 1988 Gore decided to enter the race for the presidency. He was only thirty-nine years old. He was criticized for failing to develop a national theme for his campaign and for changing positions on issues. He had some early success in primary elections in the spring, winning more votes than any other candidate in southern states. However, he obtained only small percentages of votes in other states and withdrew from the race in mid-April. Two years later he won election to

a second term in the U.S. Senate. He chose not to run for the presidency in 1992 because of family matters. His son had been hit by a car and was seriously injured.

It was during this time that Gore wrote the book *Earth in the Balance: Ecology and the Human Spirit*, which expressed his concerns, ideas, and recommendations on conservation and the global environment. In the book he wrote about his own personal and political experiences and legislative actions on environmental issues. His feelings about the environment are best expressed in this statement from the book: “We must make the rescue of the environment the central organizing principle for civilization.”

Surprising turn of events

In the summer of 1992, Bill Clinton (1946–) selected Gore as his running mate (vice presidential candidate). The choice surprised many people because it ended a long-standing pattern of candidates choosing running mates to “balance the ticket,” that is, by choosing running mates of different ages or from different areas of the country. Both men were about the same age, came from the same region, and had similar reputations and political viewpoints. Clinton’s idea was to project a new generation of leadership as a campaign theme. Gore provided balance for Clinton with his experience in foreign and defense policy, his knowledge of environmental and new technology issues, and his image as an honest family man.

The highlight for many who followed the campaigns of 1992 was a series of debates, one of which involved Gore and his opponents, Republican Dan Quayle (1947–)



Al Gore.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

and Independent James B. Stockdale (1923–). The debates were marked by moments of comedy, as Quayle and Gore argued over the wording of Gore’s book *Earth in the Balance*. Stockdale admitted that he had turned off his hearing aid. Quayle attacked Gore’s record of environmental concerns, claiming Gore was placing endangered species (animals that are in danger of disappearing from the earth) over people’s jobs. Gore argued that a well-run environmental program would create jobs while preserving nature.

Clinton and Gore won the election, and Gore was inaugurated (sworn in) as the

forty-fifth vice president on January 20, 1993. At the age of forty-four, he became one of the youngest U.S. vice presidents in history. Clinton and Gore were reelected in 1996. During his time as vice president, Gore continued to focus on environmental concerns. In 1997 the White House launched an effort, initiated by Gore, to start producing a “report card” on the health of the nation’s ecosystems. (An ecosystem is made up of a community of plants and animals that share a certain area, and the non-living elements in that area, such as oxygen, soil, water, and sunlight.)

In 1997 Gore’s reputation was damaged when he admitted to making fund-raising telephone calls from the White House during the 1996 presidential campaign. Gore held a press conference to defend his actions, saying he had done nothing illegal. Gore was also criticized when, during a trip to China, he raised his glass and proposed a toast to an official named Li Peng (1928–). Li Peng had been involved with the Tiananmen Square Massacre of 1989, when soldiers killed thousands of students and workers who were demonstrating for democracy in Beijing, China.

Failed bid

Still, as Clinton’s second term was winding down in August 2000, the Democratic Party formally named Gore as its choice to run for president. Gore revealed a long-range economic plan that he claimed would balance the budget, reduce the national debt and keep interest rates low while creating new opportunities for the middle class. However, after a long campaign and legal challenges to the Florida

vote count that delayed the official result, Gore lost to Texas governor George W. Bush (1946–) in one of the closest presidential contests in American history.

Despite Gore’s loss in the 2000 presidential election, he continues to be an active and well-respected political figure. Many believe that the 2000 election was not Gore’s last attempt at the presidency.

For More Information

Clinton, William, and Albert Gore. *Putting People First*. New York: New York Times Books, 1992.

Gore, Albert. *Earth in the Balance: Ecology and the Human Spirit*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1992.

Jeffrey, Laura S. *Al Gore: Leader for the New Millennium*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1999.

Kaufman, Joseph, compiler. *The World According to Al Gore: An A-to-Z Compilation of His Opinions, Positions, and Public Statements*. Los Angeles: Renaissance Books, 1999.

Turque, Bill. *Inventing Al Gore*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 2000.

**JAY
GOULD**

Born: May 27, 1836

Roxbury, New York

Died: December 2, 1892

New York, New York

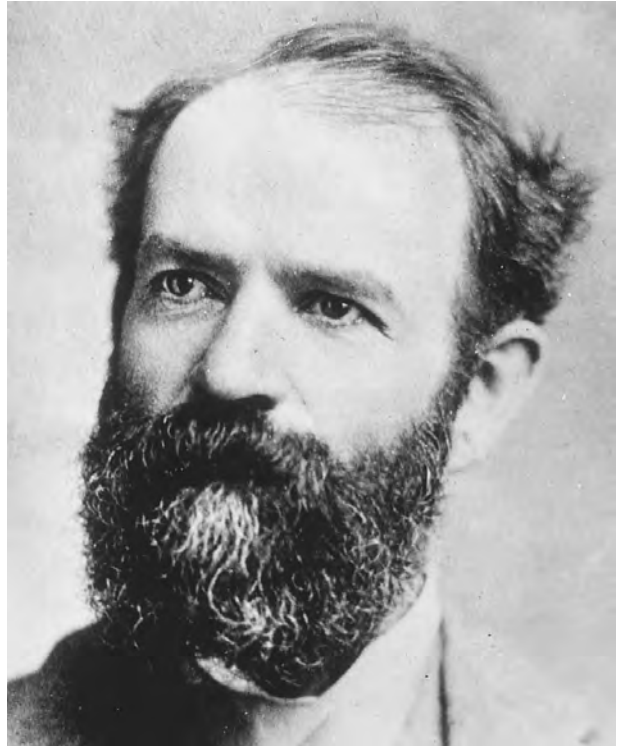
American financier and businessman

American financier and railroad builder Jay Gould made a fortune by controlling the price of the stocks he bought as well as the stock market itself. He later became one of the shrewdest businessmen in American industry.

Early life

Jayson Gould was born in Roxbury, New York, on May 27, 1836, the son of John Gould and Mary More. His father was a farmer and a storekeeper, and Jay, as a small boy, grew up on a farm. He realized at a young age, however, that farm work was not to his liking. He received some education in a local school. Later, while working in his father's store, he taught himself surveying (mapping land) and mathematics at night. When he was just sixteen he started a survey business. Between the ages of eighteen and twenty-one he helped prepare maps of New York's southern counties. At twenty-one Gould invested five thousand dollars, and he and a partner opened a business tanning leather in northern Pennsylvania.

Gould then moved to New York City, where he became a leather merchant in 1860. Before long, however, he found his place on Wall Street, the financial center of the United States. In name he was a stockbroker (a person who buys and sells stocks for others), but really he was a speculator (a person who buys and sells stocks in hopes of profiting by correctly guessing their future prices). Gould quickly mastered the art of managing a business, of stock trading, and of manipulation (causing the price of a stock to change for personal gain). He traded in the stocks of his own companies, using banks he was associated with to finance his speculations, all the



Jay Gould.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

while bribing legislators and judges. From 1867 to 1872 he was a power and a terror on Wall Street.

Erie war

In 1867 Gould was already on the board of directors (the controlling committee of a company) of the Erie Railroad, which was having financial difficulties. He set out to control the railroad and to push its lines westward as far as Chicago, Illinois, and to defeat industrialist Cornelius Vanderbilt's (1794–1877) effort to acquire this potential competitor. In the "Erie war" with Vanderbilt in 1868, Gould issued one hundred thousand shares of new

Erie stock, using illegal means. He then went to Albany, New York, to bribe legislators to “legalize” the action. Vanderbilt discovered he had met his match and settled, receiving \$1 million and leaving the Erie Railroad to Gould.

Gould then began to expand the Erie, which vastly increased its debt. Meanwhile, he traded in Erie stock and skillfully made a lot of money before the railroad had to go out of business because of financial problems in 1875.

Buying gold to sell wheat

As part of the Erie’s move westward, Gould obtained control of the Wabash, a railroad that carried wheat. To improve the fortunes of the Wabash, Gould hit on the scheme of pushing up the price of gold, thus weakening the value of the U.S. dollar, and thereby encouraging foreign merchants to buy more wheat.

In the summer of 1869 Gould secretly began buying gold on the free market—hoping the U.S. Treasury (the main financial institution of the federal government) would not sell its gold. He ran the price up to where it was on September 24, 1869, now known as Black Friday because it was a day that saw a serious financial emergency. Then the U.S. Treasury, realizing that Gould had tricked it, started selling gold, and the price dropped significantly. A panic hit Wall Street, sending the price of all stocks down. Gould had speculated not only in gold but also in stocks and he lost a fortune. In 1871 and 1872, however, he made another.

Once again a man of money, Gould moved his operations westward into the Wabash, the Texas and Pacific, the Missouri

Pacific, and the Union Pacific Railroads. His operations in the last two railroads demonstrate his methods well. He bought their stocks when their prices were low during the depression (a time when a country’s economy is unhealthy) of 1873, obtaining control of both railroads. He also acquired the stocks of other, smaller railroads he wanted to add to the two main systems. Then he forced up the prices of the two main railroads. When the stock market recovered from 1879 to 1884, he sold the railroad stocks at prices far greater than what he had paid for them, making yet another large fortune.

Manipulator turned businessman

Gould was forced out of the Wabash and the Union Pacific Railroads in the early 1880s. He then turned his complete attention to the Missouri Pacific Railroad (of which he had gained control in 1879) and built it into a great power. He acquired new railroad lines and independent companies, used stock-market profits for financing, and waged a relentless war on competitors. His biographer, Julius Grodinsky, wrote that Gould was changed “from a trader into a business leader of national proportions.” From 1879 to 1882 Gould added twenty-five hundred miles to the railroad at a cost of about \$50 million. Between 1885 and 1889 he again gained control of the Wabash and the Texas and Pacific Railroads, changed how they were organized, and tied them into his Missouri Pacific system.

At the same time Gould strengthened the other two elements that made up his wealth. One was the Manhattan Elevated Railroad of New York, which he created as a monopoly of New York City’s rapid transit system. The second was the Western Union Telegraph Com-

pany. Gould had bought the insignificant American Union Telegraph Company in 1879, joined it with Western Union in 1881, and seven years later added the telegraph network of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad. By the end of the 1880s Western Union had no real competitor in the two important businesses of railroad telegraphy and sending Associated Press stories to member newspapers. Western Union was one of the most profitable companies in the country. Gould died in New York on December 2, 1892, leaving the management of his properties to his son George Jay Gould.

For More Information

Geisst, Charles R. *Monopolies in America: Empire Builders and Their Enemies, from Jay Gould to Bill Gates*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2000.

Grodinsky, Julius. *Jay Gould: His Business Career, 1867–1892*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1957. Reprint, New York: Arno Press, 1981.

Hoyt, Edwin P. *The Goulds: A Social History*. New York: Weybright and Talley, 1969.

Klein, Maury. *The Life and Legend of Jay Gould*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1986.

STEPHEN JAY GOULD

Born: September 10, 1941

New York, New York

Died: May 20, 2002

New York, New York

American paleontologist, scientist, and author

The American paleontologist (a scientist who studies fossil remains of life from long ago) Stephen Jay Gould was awarded the 1975 Schuchert Award by the Paleontological Society for his work in evolutionary (study of the process of change in the growth of a life group) theory. His work gave answers to the missing pieces in Charles Darwin's (1809–1882) transitional questions. He was also the author of several books popularizing current scientific issues.

Early life

Stephen Jay Gould was born on September 10, 1941, in New York City, the son of Leonard and Eleanor (Rosenberg) Gould. His father was a court reporter and part-time, unpaid naturalist (student of nature). Leonard Gould was a self-taught man who took his son to the American Museum of Natural History when the boy was five years old. It was here that the young Gould saw his first dinosaur, a *Tyrannosaurus rex*, and decided that he was going to devote his life to the study of geologic (the history of the earth based on the record of rocks) periods. With the support of his mother, an artist, and three well-remembered elementary school teachers, Gould was reading about evolution by age eleven. In high school he encountered the ongoing battle between creationism (a Biblical explanation of how life forms developed) and evolution as Darwin explained it. Darwin remained one of Gould's personal heroes.

After a summer at the University of Colorado in Boulder, Gould received his education at Antioch College in Yellow Springs, Ohio, graduating in 1963. He then moved on to graduate school in evolutionary biology and paleontology at Columbia University,



Stephen Jay Gould.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

where he remained for two years. He married Deborah Lee, an artist, on October 3, 1965, then left to take a job in 1966 at Antioch College as professor of geology. The following year he moved to Cambridge, Massachusetts, to take an assistant professorship at Harvard University. In that same year he finished his doctoral work, completing his degree program from Columbia. In 1971 he was promoted to associate professor, and in 1973 to full professor of geology. He also became curator (a person who oversees an exhibit or show) of invertebrate (species without a backbone) paleontology at Harvard's Museum of Comparative Zoology. At Harvard he widened

his study of the speciation (the development of a new species) and evolution of land snails in the West Indies.

Scientific contributions

Gould was one of the founders of the school of evolution called "punctuated equilibrium." He argued that evolution proceeds quite rapidly at crucial points, with speciation occurring almost immediately. This could be due to quite sudden genetic changes. His favorite example was the panda's "thumb," a modification (adjustment) of the wrist bone that allows pandas to strip leaves from bamboo shoots. Such a transformation must have occurred all at once, he reasoned, or it would not have been preserved by natural selection (Darwin's explanation of how a species changes to meet its needs over centuries) since it had no useful function in a basic stage. This process would account for the lack of transitional (middle) forms throughout the fossil record, a problem Darwin grieved over but expected to be corrected by future paleontologists. Gould's scientific research and conclusions offer that solution.

Second career

In addition to Gould's work as a serious professional paleontologist, he spent much time trying to make science understandable to untrained readers as well as to scholars (trained students). As a popular writer and amateur historian of science, Gould concentrated upon the issues of science and culture.

In *The Mismeasure of Man* Gould gave an explanation of the misuse of intelligence testing. Gould admitted that human intelligence has a specific location in the brain and that it

can be measured by a standard number score. He argued, however, that any efforts to label groups as having inferior or superior intelligence based upon these measurements mark a misuse of scientific data and an abuse of the scientific process.

In 1981 Gould served as an expert witness at a trial in Little Rock, Arkansas, which challenged a state law ordering the teaching of creation science as well as evolution. Gould's testimony argued that the theories of creationism are contradicted by all available scientific evidence and therefore should not be considered scientific. Due to this testimony, creationism was recognized as a religion and not a science. During that same year, Gould was awarded a prose fellows award from the MacArthur Foundation.

Personal triumphs

In July 1982 Gould was told he had mesothelioma, a particularly deadly form of cancer. He recovered from his illness and the treatment, but found that he had to continue his work with a new sense of urgency.

Gould used his earned place in biology to argue against one of its central ideas—biological determinism (the belief that individual differences are biologically caused and therefore unchangeable)—and he used his literary skills to make the debate popular. He received important recognition for his work in both areas. In 1975 he was given the Schuchert Award by the Paleontological Society for his original work in evolutionary theory. For his book, *The Panda's Thumb*, he received two awards: the Notable Book citation from the American Library Association in 1980 and the American Book Award in Science for 1981. Likewise, he received two

awards for his other major work, *The Mismeasure of Man*: the National Book Critics Circle Award for general nonfiction in 1981 and the American Book Award nomination in science for 1982.

Gould was also a National Science Foundation grantee. He was a member of several scientific societies—American Association for the Advancement of Science, American Society of Naturalists, Paleontological Society, Society for the Study of Evolution, Society of Systematic Zoology, and Sigma Xi. In 1999 he assumed the presidency of the American Association of the Advancement of Science. His essay collection, *The Lying Stones of Marrakech*, was published by Harmony Books in April 2000.

As the author of more than two hundred evolutionary essays collected in eight volumes Gould was a publishing phenomenon, with topics such as evolution, his battle with cancer, Edgar Allan Poe, shells, why there are no .400 hitters in baseball, and the millennium (period of a thousand years). In an easy-to-read way Gould explained complex ideas in simple, understandable language that bridged the gap between scholars and nonscholars alike. After thirty years of writing for *Natural History* Gould said he was closing his writing career with his essay collection, *I Have Landed: The End of Beginning in Natural History*.

Gould lived in Cambridge, Massachusetts, with his wife and two children, Jesse and Ethan. He was a talented singer, with a love for Gilbert and Sullivan operettas (romantic, comic operas). His love of life was evident in *The Flamingo's Smile*: "I could not dent the richness in a hundred lifetimes, but I simply must have a look at a few more of

those pretty pebbles.” Stephen Jay Gould died of cancer in New York City on May 20, 2002.

For More Information

Gould, Stephen Jay. *Ever Since Darwin*. New York: Norton, 1977.

Gould, Stephen, Jay. *Ontogeny and Phylogeny*. Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, 1977.

KATHARINE GRAHAM

Born: June 16, 1917

New York, New York

Died: July 17, 2001

Boise, Idaho

American publisher

The renowned publisher Katharine Graham took over the management of the *Washington Post* after the death of her husband. She quickly guided the *Post* to national prominence while expanding her publishing empire.

Early life

Katharine Meyer Graham was born in New York City on June 16, 1917, the fourth of five children born to Eugene Meyer, a banker, and Agnes Elizabeth (Ernst) Meyer, an author and generous contributor to charity. In 1933, when Katharine was still a student at the Madeira School in Greenway, Virginia, her father bought the dying *Washington Post* for \$875,000. Already retired, Meyer

purchased the paper because he had grown restless and wanted a voice in the nation's affairs. His hobby turned into the capitol's leading paper.

From an early age Katharine Meyer showed an interest in publishing. At the Madeira School she worked on the student newspaper. In 1935 she entered Vassar College, but the following year transferred to the University of Chicago (Illinois), which she regarded as a more exciting campus. Her father mailed her the daily *Post* to keep her connected. The *Washington Post* was her summer job throughout college. Graduating with a bachelor's degree in 1938, she went to San Francisco, California, to take a job as a waterfront reporter for the *San Francisco News*. She returned to Washington a year later and joined the editorial staff of the *Post*, where she also worked in the circulation department (department in charge of keeping track of the number of papers needed for subscribers and routes).

Adulthood

On June 5, 1940, she married Philip L. Graham, a Harvard Law School graduate and clerk for Supreme Court Justice Felix Frankfurter. Her husband entered the army during World War II (1939–45; a war fought between Germany, Japan, and Italy—the Axis Powers—and Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States—the Allies) and she gave up reporting to move with him from base to base. When he was sent overseas, Katharine returned to her job at the *Post*.

After his discharge in 1945, Eugene Meyer persuaded Philip Graham to join the *Washington Post* as associate publisher. Meyer,

who had a warm relationship with his son-in-law, turned the business over to the Grahams in 1948 for one dollar. Philip Graham helped his father-in-law build the business, acquiring the *Post's* competitor, the *Washington Times Herald*, in 1954. In 1961 he purchased *Newsweek* magazine for a sum estimated to be between eight and fifteen million dollars. He also expanded the radio and television operations of the company, and in 1962 he helped to set up an international news service despite his growing mental shakiness.

Tragedy to triumphs

In 1963 Philip Graham's mental illness led to his suicide. His public success had done little to help his mental illness. Katharine took over the presidency of the company. A recognized Washington woman who had devoted her time to raising her daughter and three sons, she had never lost her interest in the affairs of the family business. She studied the operations, asked questions, consulted with old friends such as James Reston (1909–1995) and Walter Lippmann (1889–1974), and made key decisions to bring in skilled journalists to improve the quality of the paper. She selected Benjamin C. Bradlee (1921–), the Washington bureau chief for *Newsweek*, as managing editor in 1965. (He later became executive editor.)

During the 1970s, Graham backed Bradlee when the *Post* began making news as well as reporting it. Graham was sincere in her commitment to provide accurate reporting. An example of this is her many visits to army bases during the Vietnam War (1954–75; a war in which the United States aided South Vietnam in a failed attempt to try and stop a Communist North Vietnam takeover). Her



Katharine Graham.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

commitment led to a controversy over constitutional rights in June 1971. The *Post*, along with the *New York Times*, struggled with the government over the right to publish sections of a classified Pentagon study of U.S. military involvement in Vietnam, which was compiled during President Lyndon Johnson's (1908–1973) administration. A court order to stop the publication of the documents led to a U.S. Supreme Court call for a decision. In a decision judged a major victory for freedom of the press, the Court upheld the papers' right to publish the "Pentagon Papers."

Further controversy followed in June 1972, when an investigative reporting team,

Carl Bernstein (1944–) and Bob Woodward (1943–), began to probe the break-in at the Democratic National Headquarters in the Watergate apartment complex. Their articles in the *Post* linked the break-in to a larger pattern of illegal activities, which led to the blame of over forty members of the Nixon administration and to the resignation of President Richard Nixon (1913–1994) in August 1974.

It was newsbreaks like these that granted Graham status as the most powerful woman in publishing. As chairman and principal owner of the Washington Post Company, she controlled the fifth largest publishing empire in the nation. In the period from 1975 to 1985 profits grew better than 20 percent annually.

Final years

In 1979 Graham turned the title of publisher over to her son Donald. But she remained active in all areas of the business, from advising on editorial policy (opinions the paper would stand behind) to making plans for not only the *Post* and *Newsweek*, but also the *Trenton Times*, four television stations, and 49 percent interest in a paper company. In Washington she was an impressive presence. Heads of state, politicians, and leaders in journalism and the arts gathered at her Georgetown home and for weekends at her farm in northern Virginia.

Under Graham's leadership the *Washington Post* grew in influence until it was judged as one of the two best newspapers in the country. It was read and consulted by presidents and prime ministers in this country and abroad and had a powerful influence on political life. At the same time the *Post*, which boasts a circulation (the number of copies sold or delivered) of 725,000, serves as a

hometown paper for a general audience who enjoyed the features, cartoons, and advice columns.

Graham also became an award-winning author in her later years. In 1997 she published her memoirs, *Personal History*, which earned her a Pulitzer Prize for Biography in 1998.

Katharine Graham was described as a "working publisher." Determined to preserve the family character of the business, she took up the reins after the death of her husband and worked hard not only to build but to improve her publishing empire. A forceful and courageous publisher, she knew when to rely on the expert advice of professionals and allowed her editors maximum responsibility. At the same time she strengthened her publications through her willingness to spend money to attract top talent in journalism and management.

On July 17, 2001, Katharine Graham died in Boise, Idaho, leaving the nation grieving for one of its best-loved female publishers. Katharine's impact on America was evident in the televised National Cathedral funeral watched by American citizens far and wide. She was eulogized (remembered after death) by a large array of public figures, ranging from former first lady Nancy Reagan (1921–) and former secretary of state Henry Kissinger (1923–) to Noor Al Hussein (1951–), queen of Jordan. The one quality that each highlighted in Katharine's life was her ability to maintain friendships despite holding a different viewpoint. Katharine Graham had a personal style that is rare in political circles.

For More Information

Davis, Deborah. *Katharine the Great: Katharine Graham and the Washington*

Post. New York: Harcourt, Brace, Jovanovich, 1979.

Felsenthal, Carol. *Power, Privilege, and the Post: The Katharine Graham Story*. New York: Putnam's, 1993.

Graham, Katharine. *Personal History*. New York: A. A. Knopf, 1997.

MARTHA GRAHAM

Born: May 11, 1894

Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania

Died: April 1, 1991

New York, New York

American dancer, choreographer, and teacher

Martha Graham, American dancer, choreographer (one who creates and arranges dance performances), and teacher, is considered one of the major figures of modern dance.

Early life

Martha Graham was born in a suburb of Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, on May 11, 1894, one of George and Jane Beers Graham's three daughters. Her father was a doctor who treated people with nervous disorders. When she was ten years old, and after one of her sisters developed asthma (a breathing problem), the family moved to California because the weather was better. Graham became interested in studying dance after she saw Ruth St. Denis (c. 1880–1968) perform in Los Angeles, California, in 1914. Her parents did not

approve of her becoming a dancer, so she enrolled in the Cumnock School, a junior college.

Graham's father died in 1914, after which she felt free to pursue her dream. After graduating from Cumnock, she enrolled in the Denishawn Studio, a dancing school operated by Ruth St. Denis and Ted Shawn (1891–1972). Graham had never had a dance lesson up to that point, but the small, quiet, shy, but hardworking girl impressed Shawn and toured with his troupe in a production of *Xochitl*, based on an Indian legend. In 1923 Graham left this company to do two years of solo dancing for the Greenwich Village Follies.

Becomes dance instructor

In 1925 Graham became dance instructor at the Eastman School of Music and Theater in Rochester, New York. She began experimenting with modern dance forms. "I wanted to begin," she said, "not with characters or ideas but with movement." She rejected the traditional steps of classical ballet; she wanted the dancing body to be related to natural motion and to the music. She experimented with what the body could do based on its own structure, developing what was known as "percussive movements."

Graham's first dances were performed on a bare stage with only costumes and lights. The dancers' faces were tight, their hands stiff, and their costumes short. Later she added more scenery and different costumes for effect. The music was modern and usually composed just for the dance. Isadora Duncan (1878–1927), the first modern dancer, had used music to inspire her works, but Graham used music to make her works more dramatic.



Martha Graham.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Graham's process of creation usually began with what she called a "certain stirring." Inspiration might come from a classical myth, an event in American history, a story from the Bible, historical figures, current social problems, writings, poems, or paintings. She would then develop a dramatic situation or character to express the feeling or idea. She then found music, or asked for new music from her longtime collaborator (cocreator), Louis Horst, to maintain the inspiration while she created movements to express it. The purpose of Graham's dance was to bring about an increased awareness of life and a greater understanding of the nature of man. Dance was to her an "inner emotional experience."

Graham introduced a number of other new features to modern dance. She established the use of moving scenery, used props as symbols, and combined speech with dancing. She was also the first to integrate her group, using African Americans and Asians in her regular company. She replaced the traditional ballet folk dress with either a straight, dark, long shirt or the common leotard (a tight, one-piece garment worn by dancers). Using the stage, the floor, and the props as part of the dance itself, she produced a whole new language of dance. In 1926 Graham introduced this new language in her first solo recital in New York City. Her first large group piece, *Vision of the Apocalypse*, was performed in 1929. Her most important early work was a piece called *Heretic*.

Popular success

After Graham's performance as the lead role in composer Igor Stravinsky's (1882–1971) American premiere of *Rite of Spring* (1930), Graham toured the United States for four years (1931–35) in the production *Electra*. During this trip she became interested in the American Indians of the Southwest. One of the first products of this interest was *Primitive Mysteries*. Her increasing interest in the American past was seen in her dance based on the lives of American pioneer women, *Frontier* (1935), and in her famous *Appalachian Spring* (1944). In 1932 she became the first dancer to receive a Guggenheim fellowship (an award to promote artistic research and creation), and she danced for President Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945) at the White House in 1937.

Graham founded the Dance Repertory Theater in New York City in 1930. She also

helped establish the Bennington School of Arts at Bennington College in Vermont, where her teaching made Bennington the center of experimental dance in America. With the later establishment of the Martha Graham School of Contemporary Dance in New York City, she taught a large number of modern dancers who went on to spread her ideas and style to the rest of the world.

Later years

Graham danced her last role in 1969, but she continued to choreograph. In 1976 she received the Presidential Medal of Freedom. A year before her death, in 1990, she choreographed *Maple Leaf Rag*, a show that featured music by Scott Joplin (1868–1917) and costumes by Calvin Klein (1942–). Her name is still linked with modern dance in many people's minds. Martha Graham died on April 1, 1991, known as one of the twentieth century's revolutionary artists.

For More Information

DeMille, Agnes. *Martha: The Life and Work of Martha Graham*. New York: Random House, 1991.

Freedman, Russell. *Martha Graham: A Dancer's Life*. New York: Clarion Books, 1998.

Graham, Martha. *Blood Memory*. New York: Doubleday, 1991.

CARY GRANT

Born: January 18, 1904
Bristol, England

Died: November 29, 1986

Davenport, Iowa

English-born American actor

Hollywood legend Cary Grant won audiences the world over with his charm and sophistication as an actor. Grant created a light, comic style that many have tried to imitate but none have surpassed. In seventy-two films made over four decades, Grant served as both a romantic ideal for women and a dashing role model for men.

Early life as Archie Leach

Cary Grant was born Archibald Alexander Leach on January 18, 1904, in Bristol, England. His parents, Elias and Elsie Leach, were poor, and they quarreled often as they struggled to raise their only child. Grant found escape from the family tension in the newly emerging "picture palaces." He recalled in a *Ladies Home Journal* (1963) interview that "those Saturday matinees free from parental supervision were the high point of my week."

At the age of ten Grant was told that his mother had left for a seaside resort. In reality she had been sent to a nearby mental institution for a nervous breakdown. She remained there for twenty years. Grant was an adult before he learned of his mother's true whereabouts. "There was a void in my life," Grant said of the lost time with mother, "a sadness of spirit that affected each daily activity with which I occupied myself in order to overcome it."

Decision to act

Through a scholarship Grant attended a secondary school called Fairfield Academy



Cary Grant.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

in Somerset, England. While at the school he became interested in the theater and in theatrical lighting. It was at the Bristol (England) Hippodrome vaudeville (traveling variety entertainment) theater that Grant realized just how he would escape his worry-filled working-class environment. After being allowed backstage during a Saturday matinee, Grant decided to become an actor. "I suddenly found my inarticulate self in a land of smiling, jostling people wearing all sorts of costumes and doing all sorts of clever things," Grant remembered. "And that's when I knew! What other life could there be but that of an actor?"

Grant ran away from home and joined the Bob Pender Troupe of comedians and acrobats. He was soon forced to return home, when it was discovered that he had lied about his age and about having his father's permission to work. At thirteen Grant was a year too young to obtain a work permit to work legally. Undeterred, he waited until he turned fourteen and then got expelled from school so that his father might let him rejoin the group.

Grant learned comedy, gymnastics, and pantomime from Pender's group. His later skill at physical comedy and timing owed much to this early training. His travels with the troupe led him to New York, where he decided to stay and seek success. Using his vaudeville skills he worked Coney Island as a stilt-walker and eventually won roles in light musicals and plays. In 1932 Grant took the advice of a friend and went to Hollywood for a screen test. Paramount offered him a contract but insisted he change his name from Archie Leach. So the more glamorous Cary Grant was chosen—and a great film career began.

Trademark sophistication

Even in his earliest film roles, Grant demonstrated the elegant sophistication that is the very opposite of his working-class background. His credentials as a traditional leading man were established with his appearance opposite Marlene Dietrich in *Blond Venus*.

The perfect format for displaying Grant's verbal and physical agility was in the screwball comedies of the 1930s. In *The Awful Truth*, *His Girl Friday*, *Holiday* and *Bringing Up Baby*, Grant's deft comic touch is preva-

lent. His Oscar-nominated performances in *Penny Serenade* and *None But the Lonely Heart* show that Grant was a capable dramatic actor as well. Throughout his career Grant continued to successfully play the charming leading man, even as late as 1964, with the film *Charade*.

Drama with Hitchcock

Although Grant's comedies represent the majority of his best-remembered roles, his work with the director Alfred Hitchcock in several classic films offers a departure from his usual image. Hitchcock deliberately played against Grant's familiar persona by introducing psychological twists that are in startling contrast to the actor's smooth surface elegance.

Troubled marriages

Although Grant achieved tremendous success as an actor, his first four marriages ended in divorce. Grant speculated that this poor record was tied to the disappearance of his mother. His fifth wife, Barbara Harris, was at his side when he died of a massive stroke in 1986.

Today Grant's name remains a symbol of the stylish sophistication that was his trademark, and repeated viewings of his films reveal an actor whose ability to delight an audience is timeless.

For More Information

Harris, Warren G. *Cary Grant: A Touch of Elegance*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1987.

McCann, Graham. *Cary Grant: A Class Apart*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1996.

Nelson, Nancy. *Evenings with Cary Grant: Recollections in His Own Words and by Those Who Knew Him Best*. New York, NY: W. Morrow, 1991.

Wansell, Geoffrey. *Cary Grant: Dark Angel*. New York: Arcade Pub., 1996.

GRAHAM GREENE

Born: October 2, 1904

Berkhamsted, Hertfordshire, England

Died: April 3, 1991

Vevey, Switzerland

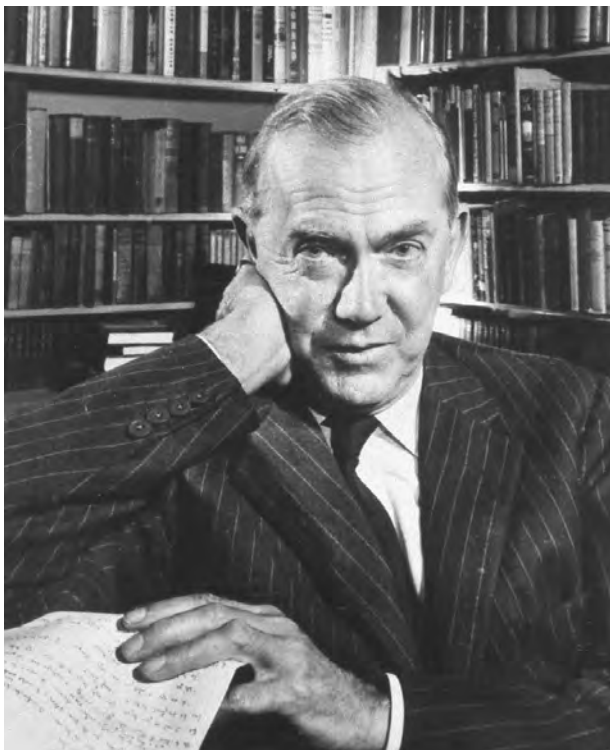
English author, novelist, and dramatist

The works of the English writer Graham Greene explore issues of right and wrong in modern society, and often feature exotic settings in different parts of the world.

Childhood

Graham Greene was born on October 2, 1904, in Berkhamsted, Hertfordshire, in England. He was one of six children born to Charles Henry Greene, headmaster of Berkhamsted School, and Marion R. Greene, whose first cousin was the famed writer Robert Louis Stevenson (1850–1894). He did not enjoy his childhood, and often skipped classes in order to avoid the constant bullying by his fellow classmates. At one point Greene even ran away from home.

When Greene began suffering from mental and emotional problems, his parents sent



Graham Greene.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

him to London for psychotherapy (the treatment of a mentally or emotionally disturbed person through verbal communication) by a student of the famous Sigmund Freud (1856–1939). While he was living there, Greene developed his love for literature and began to write poetry. Writers Ezra Pound (1885–1972) and Gertrude Stein (1874–1946) became life-long mentors (teachers) to him before he returned to high school.

After graduating in 1922, Greene went on to Oxford University's Balliol College. There, Greene amused himself with travel as well as spending six weeks as a member of the Communist Party, a political party that

supports communism, a system of government in which the goods and services of a country are owned and distributed by the government. Though he quickly abandoned his Communist beliefs, Greene later wrote sympathetic profiles of Communist leaders Fidel Castro (1926–) and Ho Chi Minh (1890–1969). Despite all these efforts to distract himself from his studies, he graduated from Oxford in 1925 with a second-class pass in history, and a poorly received volume of poetry with the title *Babbling April*.

Writing career

In 1926 he began his professional writing career as an unpaid apprentice (working in order to learn a trade) for the *Nottingham Journal*, moving on later to the *London Times*. The experience was a positive one for him, and he held his position as an assistant editor until the publication of his first novel, *The Man Within* (1929). Here he began to develop the characteristic themes he later pursued so effectively: betrayal, pursuit, and death.

His next works, *Name of Action* (1931) and *Rumour at Nightfall* (1931), were not well received by critics, but Greene regained their respect with the first book he classed as an entertainment piece. Called *Stamboul Train* in England, it was published in 1932 in the United States as *Orient Express*. The story revolves around a group of travellers on a train, the *Orient Express*, a mysterious setting that allowed the author to develop his strange characters with drama and suspense.

Twelve years after Greene converted from Anglicanism to Roman Catholicism, he published *Brighton Rock* (1938), a novel with a highly dramatic and suspenseful plot full of sexual and violent imagery that explored the

interplay between abnormal behavior and morality, the quality of good conduct. *The Confidential Agent* was published in 1939, as was the work *The Lawless Roads*, a journal of Greene's travels in Mexico in 1938. Here he had seen widespread persecution (poor treatment) of Catholic priests, which he documented in his journal along with a description of a drunken priest's execution (public killing). The incident made such an impression upon him that this victim became the hero of *The Power and the Glory*, the novel Greene considers to be his best.

Later life

During the years of World War II (1939–45: when Germany, Italy, and Japan fought against France, the United Kingdom, the Soviet Union, and the United States [from 1941 until the end of the war]) Greene slipped out of England and went to West Africa as a secret intelligence (gathering secret information) officer for the British government. The result, a novel called *The Heart of the Matter*, appeared in 1948, and was well received by American readers.

Steadily, Greene produced a series of works that received both praise and criticism. He was considered for the Nobel Prize for Literature but never won the award. Still, many other honors were given to him, including the Companion of Honor award by Queen Elizabeth in 1966, and the Order of Merit, a much higher honor, in 1986.

In 1990 Greene was stricken with an unspecified blood disease, which weakened him so much that he moved from his home in Antibes, the South of France, to Vevey, Switzerland, to be closer to his daughter. He lingered until the beginning of spring, then

died on April 3, 1991, in La Povidence Hospital in Vevey, Switzerland.

For More Information

Greene, Graham. *Graham Greene: Man of Paradox*. Edited by A. F. Cassis. Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1994.

Shelden, Michael. *Graham Greene: The Enemy Within*. New York: Random House, 1994.

Sherry, Norman. *The Life of Graham Greene*. New York: Viking, 1989.

WAYNE GRETZKY

Born: January 26, 1961

Brantford, Ontario, Canada

Canadian hockey player

Wayne Gretzky, known by hockey fans simply as "The Great One," became the first player to win the Hart Trophy for eight years in a row and beat hockey legend Gordie Howe's (1928–) all-time point record of 1,850.

Showed early talent

Wayne Gretzky was born on January 26, 1961, in Brantford, Ontario, Canada, of Russian and Polish descent. He was the first of five children born to Walter and Phyllis Gretzky. His father had hoped himself to become a hockey player but was discouraged because of his size. Gretzky received his first pair of skates when he was three years old



Wayne Gretzky.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

and displayed an early interest in skating. He learned to skate on the Ninth River near his grandfather's farm in Canning, Ontario, Canada, and at public rinks on weekends. But it was the rink his father built for him behind the little house on Varadi Avenue in Brantford that became known as the birthplace of his skating skills.

Gretzky was only six years old when he saw his first year in organized hockey. He scored one goal, the lowest yearly total of his career. Already Gretzky had mastered a unique skating stride. His dad's advice to "skate to where the puck's going to be" helped him score 196 goals in seventy-six

games at the age of nine. Gretzky's father pushed his son to succeed and told him that the years of hard work would pay off when he became a successful hockey player.

As a sixteen-year-old in the Junior "A" league, Gretzky continued his high scoring and packed the arenas with fans eager to witness his skills. He wore number 99, because number 9 was still being worn by his idol, Gordie Howe. His slight build led one junior coach to suggest he pick an offensive position, where he could avoid body contact. This was the beginning of Gretzky's trademark spot: behind the opponent's net.

In 1975 Gretzky moved to Toronto to play for the Young Nats, where he won the league's rookie of the year award. Two years later the Sault Ste. Marie Greyhounds drafted him, and he again won rookie of the year honors. Gretzky had gone to school in Brantford and continued high school classes in Sault Ste. Marie but left before graduating.

Turning pro

In 1978 Gretzky turned pro with the Indianapolis Racers of the World Hockey Association (WHA). Less than two months later the Edmonton Oilers of the same league purchased his contract, signing Gretzky to a twenty-one-year contract. In the 1979–80 season the Edmonton Oilers were admitted to the National Hockey League (NHL). In his first year in the NHL Gretzky scored fifty-one goals, eight more than he had scored in the WHA, and he made the second All-Star team. He won his first Hart Trophy for most valuable player, and he won the Lady Byng Trophy for his sportsmanship and skating ability. Taking the public by storm, Gretzky's polite charm was the perfect foil to the traditional

rough-edged hockey player. He went on to become the first player to win the Hart Trophy for eight years in a row, from the 1979–80 season through the 1986–87 season.

Despite Gretzky's talents, the struggling Oilers remained at the bottom of the league. In his second year he led the league in assists and points, made the first All-Star team, and won his second most valuable player trophy award, but the Oilers lost in the quarter-finals to the New York Islanders. During the 1981–82 season he continued to break records, including some of his own. He scored fifty goals in thirty-eight games, breaking Maurice Richard's (1921–2000) record. And on February 24, 1982, he broke Phil Esposito's (1942–) single season scoring record. But the Oilers had not yet made it past the first round of the playoffs. In the 1983–84 season, however, the Oilers won their first Stanley Cup. The two subsequent seasons ended with the Oilers taking the Stanley. In the summer of 1988 Gretzky was traded to the Los Angeles Kings. He quickly turned that weak team into one of the best.

Broke Howe's record

Gretzky, a left-handed shooting center, developed a style that was as distinctive as it was exciting to watch. Listed in the program as 6 feet and 170 pounds, he always stayed away from fights, preferring to drift and glide around the ice. Some fans believed that he viewed the rink as a chessboard and that he had the ability to sense where the puck was going to end up, thus skating to that position. Others believed that his greatest asset was his ability to move sideways across the ice at full speed. But it was his assists that made him especially valuable to his team. In becoming the leading scorer in

NHL history he set a new record for assists (more than thirteen hundred) in just twelve seasons. In 1989 he passed his idol Gordie Howe's all-time point record of 1,850.

Such achievement brought Gretzky numerous commercial endorsements for companies as different from one another as General Mills and Nike. Consumers found his personality appealing, and he only endorsed products he used. Advertising Age Magazine called him "an ideal athlete to endorse products."

Traded to the Blues

Gretzky continued breaking records and winning awards in the 1990s. Late in the 1993–94 season he broke another Howe record of 801 career goals, accomplishing this in 650 fewer games than Howe played. Gretzky began to get frustrated with the unsuccessful attempts of the Kings, and he wanted to be traded. Gretzky was traded to the St. Louis Blues in the 1995–96 season.

New York Ranger

Gretzky's career with the Blues was brief. He had not yet officially signed with the team when they lost the first two games in the play-off series. The coach and general manager of the Blues blamed Gretzky for the losses, but Gretzky had already decided not to sign with St. Louis. Instead, he signed with the New York Rangers for the 1996–97 season.

Gretzky retired from hockey in New York in April 1999. He left the game after twenty years as a professional in the sport, with sixty-one NHL records held or shared. His number 99 jersey was permanently retired at ceremonies during Gretzky's final game with the

Rangers. Gretzky was inducted into the Hockey Hall of Fame in November 1999.

The crowning achievement in Gretzky's hockey career came at the Winter Olympics of 2002 as executive director of Canada's hockey team. A Canadian ice worker embedded a lucky "loony," Canada's one-dollar coin, in the hockey arena's ice. Perhaps that's why the Canadian team won over the United States, 5 to 2. It was the most watched game in the history of hockey, with thirty-eight million homes tuned in. The final goal was scored with the sound of "O Canada," Canada's national anthem, in the background. Currently Gretzky is part owner of the Phoenix Coyotes. He lives with his wife and four children in the United States.

For More Information

Gretzky, Walter, and Jim Taylor. *Gretzky*. Toronto, Canada: Random House Canada, 2001.

Podnieks, Andrew. *The Great One: The Life and Times of Wayne Gretzky*. Toronto, Ontario: Doubleday Canada, 1999.

Rosenthal, Bert. *Wayne Gretzky: The Great Gretzky*. Chicago: Children's Press, 1982.

Wilker, Josh. *Wayne Gretzky*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1997.

BROTHERS GRIMM

JAKOB GRIMM

Born: January 4, 1785
Hanau, Germany

Died: September 20, 1863

Berlin, Germany

German scholar and author

WILHELM GRIMM

Born: February 24, 1786

Hanau, Germany

Died: December 16, 1859

Berlin, Germany

German scholar and author

The brothers Jakob and Wilhelm Grimm were German scholars known for their fairy tales and for their work in the study of different languages, which included the creation of "Grimm's law."

Together from the beginning

Jakob Karl Grimm was born on January 4, 1785, in Hanau, Germany. His brother, Wilhelm Karl Grimm, was born on February 24 of the following year. They were the oldest surviving sons of Philipp Grimm, a lawyer who served as Hanau's town clerk. As small children they spent most of their time together; aside from a brief period of living apart, they were to remain together for the rest of their lives. Their even-tempered personalities made it easy for them to work together on projects. The main difference in their personalities seems to have been that Jakob, the healthier of the two, had more taste for research work, and it was he who worked out most of their theories of language and grammar. Wilhelm was physically weaker but was a somewhat warmer person

and more interested in music and literature. He was responsible for the pleasant style of their collection of fairy tales.

The brothers first attended school in Kassel, Germany, and then they began legal studies at the University of Marburg. While there, however, the inspiration of a professor named Friedrich von Savigny awakened in them an interest in past cultures. In 1808 Jakob was named court librarian to the King of Westphalia in Wilhelmshöhe, Germany. In 1816 he became librarian in Kassel, where Wilhelm had been employed since 1814. They were to remain there until 1830, when they obtained positions at the University of Göttingen.

“Grimm’s Fairy Tales”

The romantic movement in Germany (a movement in the arts that favored a return to nature and a greater focus on national culture, especially folk tales) awakened the Germans’ interest in the past of their own country. Although some work in the rediscovery and editing of medieval (from the Middle Ages, 500–1500) German literature had already been started in the eighteenth century, it was the poets and theorists of the next century who first focused national attention on the origins of German culture and literature. While most of the poets viewed medieval literature mainly as an inspiration for new writing, others turned their attention to the investigation of the past. The Grimm brothers were the most important of these early language and folklore romantic historians.

For some years the brothers had been in contact with the romantic poets Clemens Brentano (1778–1842) and Achim von Arnim (1781–1831), who were preparing a



*The Brothers Grimm.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

collection of German folk songs. Following their own interests in folklore and legends, the brothers brought out their first collection of tales, *Kinder-und Hausmärchen* (Tales of Children and the Home), in 1812. These tales were collected by recording stories told by peasants and villagers. Wilhelm put them into written form and gave them a pleasant, childlike style. The brothers added many scholarly footnotes on the tales’ sources and different versions.

In addition, the Grimms worked on editing existing pieces of other folklore and early literature. Between 1816 and 1818 they published two volumes of *Deutsche Sagen* (Ger-

man Legends). At about the same time they published a volume of studies in the history of early literature, *Altdeutsche Wälder* (Old German Forests).

Language research

In later years their interest in older literature led the Grimm brothers to a study of older languages and their relationship to modern German. Jakob especially began to specialize in the history and structure of the German language. The first edition of his *Deutsche Grammatik* (German Grammar) was published in 1819.

The brothers, especially Jakob, were also working to document the relationship between similar words of related languages, such as the English *apple* and the German *Apfel*. Their creation of the rules for such relationships became known as "Grimm's law." It was later expanded to account for all word relationships in the Indo-European group of languages. The Grimm brothers were not the first to take note of such similarities, but they can be credited with gathering the bulk of linguistic (related to language) data and working out the details of the rules.

Later years

In 1830 the brothers moved to the University of Göttingen, where Jakob was named professor and head librarian and Wilhelm was appointed assistant librarian. As professor, Jakob held lectures on linguistics and cultural history. Wilhelm also attained the rank of professor in 1835. Both were dismissed in 1835 for political reasons. (They had joined in signing a protest against the King's decision to abolish the Hanover constitution.) They first moved back to Kassel but later obtained pro-

fessorships at Berlin, Germany, where they were to remain until their deaths.

The Grimm brothers' last years were spent in preparing a complete dictionary of the German language, tracing the origin of every word. The first volume, published in 1854, has 1,824 pages but gets only as far as the word *Biermolke*. Four pages are devoted to the letter A alone, which is termed "the most noble and primeval [ancient] of all sounds." The Grimms' dictionary was carried on by generations of scholars after the brothers' deaths, and it was finally finished in 1960. Its completed form consists of sixteen large volumes.

Wilhelm died in Berlin on December 16, 1859. Jakob continued to work on the dictionary and related projects until his death in Berlin on September 20, 1863.

For More Information

- Peppard, Murray B. *Paths through the Forest: A Biography of the Brothers Grimm*. New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston, 1971.
- Zipes, Jack David. *The Brothers Grimm: From Enchanted Forests to the Modern World*. New York: Routledge, 1988.
- Zipes, Jack. *The Great Fairy Tale Tradition*. New York: W. W. Norton, 2001.

WOODY GUTHRIE

Born: July 14, 1912

Okemah, Oklahoma

Died: October 3, 1967

New York, New York

American musician, songwriter, and singer

Writer and performer of folk songs, Woody Guthrie composed “This Land Is Your Land,” a song many call an unofficial national anthem. His music, which celebrates the good in people, includes messages of unity and brotherly love and remains the anthem of the poor and broken.

Early life

Woodrow Wilson Guthrie was born on July 14, 1912, in Okemah, Oklahoma, the third of Charles and Nora Guthrie’s five children. Guthrie’s grandmother was one of the first schoolteachers in the county. His father was a professional guitarist and prizefighter who regularly encouraged physical fitness and wrestling. Guthrie’s mother taught social awareness and folk music. His father’s message was to never be bullied, while his mother’s message was to try to see the world from the other person’s perspective. Despite a shortened high school education and no formal musical training, Guthrie’s eager reading and focus on music supported him throughout his life. All of the Guthrie children were brought up on blues and Native American songs, favored by their father, and folk songs, favored by their mother.

Guthrie led one of the most tragic lives of any famous American. A series of family tragedies overlapped with the nation’s slide into the Great Depression (a time of severe economic hardship in the 1930s). Two homes burned to the ground and another was destroyed. Guthrie’s mother became ill with Huntington’s chorea (a gradual, fatal disease of the nervous system), which she passed on to Guthrie. His father lost all of his businesses as the country struggled with the Stock Mar-

ket Crash (October 29, 1929; a day when investors sold over sixteen million shares of stocks because they feared the possible effects of a recently signed tax bill—many people lost everything, suicides were common, banks failed, and stores closed). Virtually orphaned at the age of fourteen, with his family falling apart, Guthrie developed a roaming way of life that he never entirely abandoned.

Traveling man

In the course of Guthrie’s travels he learned to perform folk songs, first those of others but later his own. He survived with odd jobs in settings as varied as hobo camps and barbershops. With a harmonica and the music of his parents he traveled the southwest, witnessing the devastation of both the Great Depression and the Dust Bowl (a time during the 1930s when thousands of people left their farms in a region of the Great Plains after overuse of land and a long period without rain caused massive dust storms and made farming in the area impossible).

In Texas Woody was given his first and only guitar. With a few chords under his belt he began writing songs, some to old tunes and some to new ones. In 1937 he got a hold of, through a cousin, the first of many radio jobs, singing and playing on a Los Angeles station. He also acquired permanent ties to the Communist Party (a political party that promotes a society in which all goods and services are divided equally between the people). In 1940 he arrived in New York City and was discovered by Alan Lomax, assistant director of the Archive of Folk Songs of the Library of Congress. Lomax recorded many of Guthrie’s songs for the library. He also promoted Guthrie’s career in other ways, such as



Woody Guthrie.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

by getting Victor Records to produce a two album, twelve record set of Guthrie's "Dust Bowl Ballads." (A ballad is a song that tells a story.) Though they did not sell, the ballads were to have a lasting influence.

Political connections

A witness to Hoovervilles (clusters of homeless people living in cardboard box villages named after President Herbert Hoover [1874–1964] who had promised better times) and migrant camps (temporary housing for families who get paid to harvest crops and move frequently to follow the harvest), Woody was drawn to people with a social

conscience (an awareness of less fortunate members of society). Actor Will Geer teamed up with him and toured both labor camps and farm worker strikes.

At the brink of America's entry into World War II (1939–45; a war in which the Allies—Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, the United States [from 1941], and others—fought against the German-led Axis forces), Guthrie joined the Almanac Singers, a left-wing folk music group that included Pete Seeger (1919–), who eventually became a well-known member along with Guthrie. On February 14, 1942, the Almanacs gained their greatest exposure when they performed on a program called "This Is War," which was aired by four major networks. Except, newspaper stories about the group's Communist affiliations prevented the Almanacs from achieving commercial success. They dissolved within a year. Most of the members of the Almanacs were very anti-Nazi (German political party in rule during World War II that believed in the superiority of the white Aryan [German] race), and they enrolled in the U.S. military.

Guthrie supported the war too. "This Machine Kills Fascists" (people who support a centralized government ruled by a dictator with absolute power) was inscribed on his guitar. But he hoped to accomplish his goal at a distance. He tried in vain to avoid the draft (government selection for military service). To stay out of the U.S. military he served in the merchant marine, but it was a dangerous strategy—two of the three ships he served on were lost. In addition, he was drafted into service anyway. Upon his discharge from the army in 1946 he joined People's Songs, another radical (extreme) musical associa-

tion. It also failed because of the Communist connection, which was even more offensive during the Cold War (1945–89; a struggle for world power between the United States and the Soviet Union).

Pete Seeger organized a folk-singing group called The Weavers in 1948, and for several years it produced one hit record after another. Though Guthrie was not a Weaver, their success helped his music. His “So Long, It’s Been Good to Know You” became one of their most popular numbers. But The Weavers were soon blacklisted (labeled as Communists and therefore not given any financial or professional support), and the fashion for popularized folk music disappeared with them.

By this time Guthrie’s health was visibly failing. In 1952 he was diagnosed with Huntington’s chorea. He died of the disease on October 3, 1967, in New York City.

Legendary status

Though a poor musician and an inconsistent performer, Guthrie wrote an estimated one thousand songs, which have earned him a secure place in musical history. When he was discovered, folk music had few fans except radicals (extremists) and a handful of admirers and musicologists (music researchers). Guthrie and The Weavers were responsible for folk music’s brief popularity in the late 1940s and early 1950s, and they influenced the greater following it developed ten years later. Though

folk music became less popular, it continued to exist, and Guthrie’s legacy was very much a part of it. The year 2001 brought a revival of folk music mania after the release of *O Brother, Where Art Thou?*, a movie set in the 1930s that was rich with folk and hill music.

Guthrie’s legendary influence on folk music is hard to assess. He was famous among leftists (those wishing for change and reform) in the 1940s, and by the 1960s, though hospitalized and unable to speak, he had become a heroic figure. Bob Dylan (1941–), before he himself became famous as the leading composer of political songs, made a pilgrimage (a journey to show respect) to Guthrie’s bedside. Guthrie’s reputation was based on his authentic folk origins and hobo inclinations, his remarkable talents as a writer and composer, and a romantic appreciation of his politics.

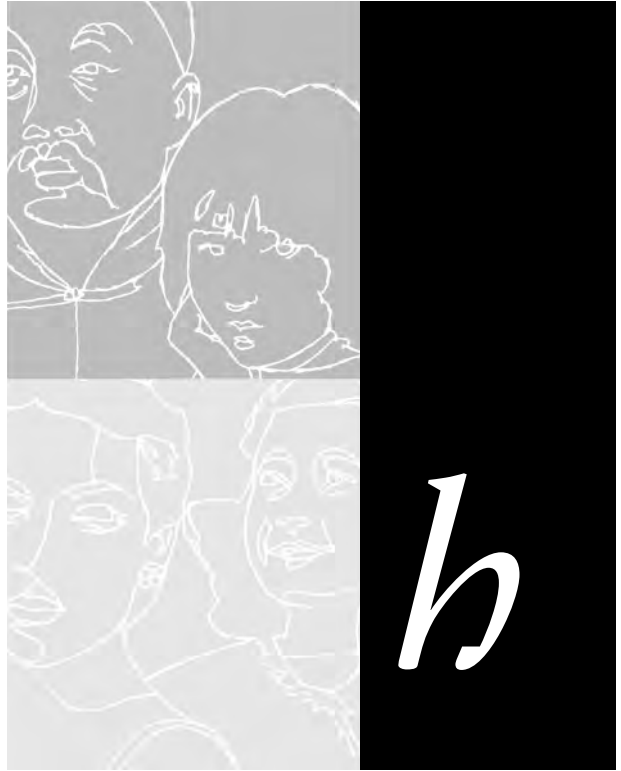
For More Information

Christenson, Bonnie. *Woody Guthrie: Poet of the People*. New York: Knopf, 2001.

Klein, Joe. *Woody Guthrie: A Life*. New York: A. A. Knopf, 1980.

Santelli, Robert, and Emily Davidson, eds. *Hard Travelin’: The Life and Legacy of Woody Guthrie*. Hanover, NH: University Press of New England, 1999.

Yates, Janelle. *Woody Guthrie: American Balladeer*. New York: Ward Hill Press, 1995.



ALEX HALEY

Born: August 11, 1921

Ithaca, New York

Died: February 10, 1992

Seattle, Washington

African American author

Alex Haley is the celebrated author of *Roots: The Saga of an American Family* (1976). By April 1977 almost two million hardcover copies of the book had been sold and 130 million people had seen all or part of the eight-episode television series. *Roots* is considered by many

critics a classic in African American literature and culture.

Early years

Alex Haley was born in Ithaca, New York, and raised in the small town of Henning, Tennessee. His father managed the family lumber business while his mother was a schoolteacher. Growing up, Haley became interested in his ancestry while listening to colorful stories told by his family. These stories, which traced seven generations, would become the source and inspiration for Haley's later work.

School records indicate that Haley was not an exceptional student, and at the age of



Alex Haley.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

eighteen he joined the U.S. Coast Guard and began a twenty-year career in the service. He practiced his writing, at first only to cure boredom on the ship, and soon found himself writing love letters for his shipmates to send home to their wives and girlfriends. He wrote serious pieces as well and submitted them to various magazines.

A literary career

Upon retiring from the Coast Guard, Haley decided to become a full-time writer and journalist. His first book, *The Autobiography of Malcolm X* (1965), which he cowrote with Malcolm X (1925–1965), was well-

received by both critics and the public. The work sold more than five million copies and launched Haley's writing career.

Two weeks after the book was completed, Haley began work on his next project, *Roots*. The tale follows the life of Kunta Kinte, a proud African who was kidnapped from his village in West Africa. After surviving the middle passage (the brutal shipment of Africans to be sold in the Americas), he was made a slave on a plantation in the United States. Haley visited archives, libraries, and research repositories on three continents to make the book as authentic (real) as possible. He even reenacted Kunta's experience during the middle passage by spending a night in the hold of a ship (the storage room below deck) stripped to his underwear.

The impact of Roots

Haley himself described *Roots* as a "faction," a mixture of fact and fiction. Most critics agreed and evaluated *Roots* as a blend of history and entertainment. However, some voiced concerns—especially at the time of the television series—that racial tension in America would be aggravated by *Roots*.

Many activists viewed *Roots* to be an important part of the civil rights movement, where African Americans and other minorities fought for equality. Vernon E. Jordan (1935–), the executive director of the National Urban League, called the television series "the single most spectacular educational experience in race relations in America." Speaking of the appeal of *Roots* among blacks, Haley added: "The blacks who are buying books are not buying them to go out and fight someone, but because they want to know who they are. . . . [The] book has touched a strong, subliminal chord."

Barely two years after the book was published, *Roots* had already won 271 awards, and its television adaptation had been nominated for a record-breaking thirty-seven Emmys, the top awards for television programming. Over eight million copies of the book were in print, and the text was translated into twenty-six languages.

Backlash

In addition to fame and fortune, *Roots* also brought Haley controversy. In 1977 two published authors, Margaret Walker and Harold Courlander, accused Haley of plagiarizing (to steal and use as one's own) their work. Charges brought by Walker were later dropped, but Haley admitted that he unknowingly lifted three paragraphs from Courlander's *The African* (1968). A settlement was reached whereby Haley paid Courlander \$500,000.

Regardless of the controversies, the popularity of *Roots* is very clear. It is still widely read in schools, and many college and university history and literature programs consider it an essential part of their assigned reading.

Stardom took its toll on Haley, though. *The New Times* reported that on a trip to his ancestral village in Africa, Haley complained: "You'll find that people who celebrate you will kill you. They forget you are blood and flesh and bone. I have had days and weeks and months of schedules where everything from my breakfast to my last waking moment was planned for me."

Beyond Roots

Roots was so successful that the American Broadcasting Company (ABC) produced

a sequel, *Roots: The Next Generations*, a \$16.6-million production that ran for fourteen hours. The story line of *Roots II*, as it was called, begins in 1882, twelve years after the end of the *Roots I*, and it concludes in 1967.

In 1985 Haley was working on a novel set in the Appalachian culture that he had researched extensively. The novel was centered around the relationships among a mountain father, son, and grandson. Because this book was not about blacks but primarily about whites, Haley said of the project, "I think one of the most fascinating things you can do after you learn about your own people is to study something about the history and culture of other people."

Haley also researched his paternal heritage (his father's ancestry), which became the book *Queen*. But before he could finish the book, Haley died on February 10, 1992. (David Stevens would complete the work on *Queen*.) In 1993 *Queen* became a three-episode miniseries which aired on the Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS). Accusations surfaced about the historical accuracy of *Queen*, and critics questioned whether a romance had actually existed between Queen and her slave-owning master. According to Melinda Henneberger in the *The New York Times*, the tapes left by Haley did not mention a romance between his paternal great-grandparents. Producer Mark Wolper indicated "Haley had become convinced by his later inquiries . . . that his great-grandparents had actually been in love."

Haley also planned to write a book detailing the life of millionaire Madame C. J. Walker (1867–1919) and her daughter A'Lelia. Haley had signed a three-book contract with Ballantine for its new multicultural

publishing program, for which his first title was to be a history of his hometown—Henning. Those who knew Haley well say his research on Henning predated the writing of *Roots*. Haley was buried on the grounds of his Henning homestead.

For More Information

Gonzales, Doreen. *Alex Haley: Author of Roots*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow, 1994.

Shirley, David. *Alex Haley*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1994.

ALEXANDER HAMILTON

Born: January 11, 1755

Nevis, British West Indies

Died: July 12, 1804

Weehawken, New Jersey

American statesman

The first U.S. secretary of the treasury, Alexander Hamilton was one of the leaders of the nation's first political party, the Federalists (a group who supported a strong central government). Hamilton remains a well-known figure in U.S. history. He is known not only for the great contributions that he made to the early United States but also for his famous duel with Aaron Burr (1756–1836) in 1804, which resulted in his death.

Birth and early life

Alexander Hamilton's birth date is disputed, but it is often listed as January 11,

1755. He was born on the island of Nevis, in the British West Indies, the illegitimate son (his parents were not married to each other) of James Hamilton, a Scotsman, and Rachel Fawcett Lavien, the daughter of a French physician.

Hamilton's education was brief. He began working between the ages of eleven and thirteen for a trading company in St. Croix, an island in the U.S. Virgin Islands. In 1772 he left to attend school in the American colonies. After a few months at an academy in New Jersey, he enrolled in King's College in New York City. Intelligent enough to master most subjects without formal instruction and eager to win success and fame early in life, he left college in 1776 without graduating.

American Revolution

The outbreak of the American Revolution (1775–83), when the thirteen British colonies in North America fought for their freedom, offered Hamilton the opportunity he craved. In 1777 he became a lieutenant colonel (an army officer who is above a colonel) in the Continental Army (the national army fighting for American independence) and assistant to commanding general George Washington (1732–1799). Hamilton became one of Washington's most trusted advisers. Although he played no role in major military decisions, Hamilton's position was one of great responsibility. He drafted many of Washington's important letters, he was sent on important military missions, and he wrote several reports on the reorganization and reform of the army. In December 1780 he married Elizabeth, the daughter of Philip Schuyler (1733–1804), a member of one of New York's most distin-

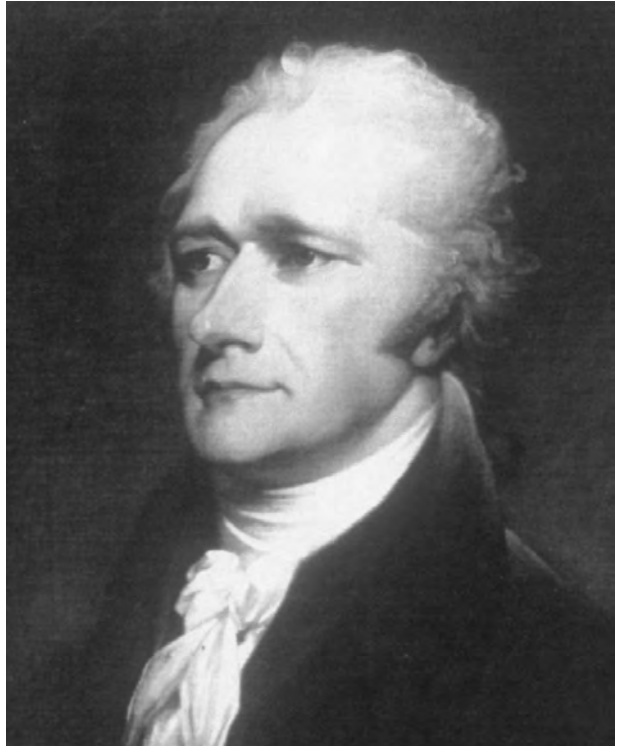
guished families. Hamilton eventually returned to New York. In 1782 he became a lawyer following a short period of apprenticeship (studying and learning a job from someone already in that position).

Hamilton's ideas on government and society had changed during the Revolution. Having been born in a foreign country gave him a different viewpoint from most people. Working for Washington had allowed him to observe how the weakness of Congress and how state and local jealousies were hurting the war effort. From this point on Hamilton believed in, and tried to work to bring about, a strong central government.

Confederation era

Attending the Continental Congress as a representative from New York from November 1782 through July 1783, Hamilton tried to make sure that the new government would have the powers it needed to deal with the problems it faced after it won independence from Britain. As one of the twelve delegates to the Annapolis Convention of 1786, he drafted its resolution (final decision or opinion) calling for a constitutional convention to make sure that interests of the union as a whole were placed over individual state and local concerns.

Hamilton was one of the representatives from New York to the Constitutional Convention, which was held in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, from May to September 1787. In October 1787 he wrote a series of essays on behalf of the planned Constitution. First published in New York City newspapers as having been written by "Publius" and collectively titled *The Federalist*, these essays were designed to persuade the people of New York



Alexander Hamilton.
Courtesy of the Smithsonian Institution.

to ratify, or approve, the Constitution. Although others wrote for *The Federalist*, Hamilton wrote fifty-one of the eighty-five essays. They contain some of America's most original and important writing on politics and help explain some of the wording of the Constitution. At the New York convention in 1788, as a result of Hamilton's efforts, the Constitution was ratified.

Secretary of the treasury

In September 1789, some six months after the new government was established, Hamilton was named the nation's first secretary of the treasury. This was the most impor-

tant of the executive departments because the new government's most urgent problem was to find ways to pay the national debt—domestic and foreign—that had grown during the Revolution. Hamilton wrote many reports on the American economy, and many of his suggestions became law. Hamilton's ideas were not exactly original (they were similar to British policies), but they were sensible and took into account the needs of the new country.

Hamilton's importance during this period was not confined to his work as treasury secretary. As the “prime minister” of Washington's administration, he was consulted on a wide range of problems, foreign and domestic. In addition, he is considered the leader of the country's first political party. Hamilton himself disliked the idea of political parties. However, when the debate over his policies revealed disagreement among the members of Congress, Hamilton assumed leadership of the pro-administration group, known as the Federalists.

Well-known lawyer and army general

Hamilton retired from office in January 1795. He returned to his law practice to make money to support his growing family and soon became the most distinguished lawyer in New York City. His interest in public affairs continued, however, and he served as President Washington's adviser. He helped Washington write his famous “Farewell Address” (1796), in which Washington turned down a third term as president. Hamilton remained active in politics as well, speaking out in favor of candidates he liked and criticizing those he opposed.

While many held Hamilton in high regard, others neither liked nor trusted him.

During the presidency of John Adams (1735–1826), however, Hamilton continued to have considerable national influence; members of Adams's cabinet often sought and followed his advice. In 1798 they cooperated with George Washington to secure Hamilton's appointment—over Adams's strong opposition—as inspector general and second in command of the U.S. Army, which was preparing for a possible war against France. Since Washington chose not to assume active command, organizing and recruiting these troops fell to Hamilton. His military career came to an abrupt end in 1800 after President Adams sent a peace mission to France that achieved a settlement of the major issues.

Retirement and the fatal duel

Although his interest in national policies and politics was still strong, Hamilton's role in national affairs after 1801 became smaller. He continued to publish his opinions on public affairs in the *New York Evening Post*. In 1804 he took a stand against a rumored plot by New England and New York Federalists to break up the Union by forming a northern confederacy (a separate union). Hamilton believed that Vice President Aaron Burr (1756–1836), whom he referred to as “the most unfit and dangerous man of the community,” was involved with this plan. Hamilton also actively stood against Burr's bid for the New York governorship. After Burr lost the race, he angrily challenged Hamilton to a duel. Hamilton believed that his “ability to be in [the] future useful” demanded that he meet the challenge.

After putting his personal affairs in order, Alexander Hamilton met Burr at dawn on July 11, 1804, on the New Jersey side of the Hud-

son River. The two men exchanged gunshots, and Hamilton fell, mortally wounded. Many believe that he missed Burr on purpose, leaving himself an open target for Burr's bullet. Hamilton was carried back to New York City, where he died the next afternoon.

For More Information

Brookhiser, Richard. *Alexander Hamilton, American*. New York: Free Press, 1999.

Flexer, James Thomas. *The Young Hamilton: A Biography*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1978. Reprint, New York: Fordham University Press, 1997.

Knott, Stephen F. *Alexander Hamilton and the Persistence of Myth*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 2002.

McDonald, Forrest. *Alexander Hamilton: A Biography*. New York: Norton, 1979.

include *Showboat*, *South Pacific*, *The King and I*, and *The Sound of Music*.

Theatrical roots

Oscar Greeley Clendenning Hammerstein II was born into a great theatrical family on July 12, 1895, in New York City. He was named after both famous grandfathers, Horace Greeley (1811–1872; famous anti-slavery newspaper publisher), and Oscar I, an opera promoter, as well as after the minister who wed his parents. His father, William, was the manager of *Victoria*, one of the most famous vaudeville theaters (involving a variety of acts) of its day. His uncle, Arthur, was a well-known producer. All were famous in their own right, but all of their success would be overshadowed by this new family member, Oscar II.

Oscar, or “Ockie” (his lifelong nickname), dabbled in theatrical activities as a youth, debuting in a Christmas pageant at his public school. At age nine he began his piano lessons. A happy childhood was marred by the death of his mother when he was just fifteen. When it came time for a career choice, Oscar's father pushed him away from the theater and toward law, through courses at Columbia University. His father's death in 1914 left him dependent on the more theatrically inclined family members. It was at Columbia that Oscar's career in theater began, when, at age nineteen, he joined the Columbia University Players as a performer in the 1915 Varsity review *On Your Way*. He participated heavily in the Varsity shows for several years, first as a performer and later as a writer. It was at Columbia that Oscar first met Richard Rodgers, who would later collaborate with him and with Lorenz Hart.

OSCAR HAMMERSTEIN

Born: July 12, 1895

New York, New York

Died: August 23, 1960

Doylestown, Pennsylvania

American songwriter

Oscar Hammerstein was perhaps the most influential lyricist and librettist (writer of opera lyrics) of the American theater. It was Hammerstein who reversed the process of musical writing, writing the lyrics first and then the score. Major musicals for which he wrote the lyrics



Oscar Hammerstein.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Stage manager to librettist

After his first year of law school, the young Hammerstein convinced his uncle, Arthur, to hire him as an assistant stage manager on one of his upcoming shows. His uncle's one condition was that Oscar "not write one line" during this theater apprenticeship. Hammerstein complied, working his way up from scenery to production stage manager for all of Arthur's shows in 1919. In this position Hammerstein was able to do some writing and rewriting on scripts in development. Eventually he was writing musical comedies of his own. His first success as a librettist came in 1922 with *Wildflower*, written

with Otto Harbach. A more major success in 1924, *Rose Marie*, led to his collaboration with composer Jerome Kern. Kern and Hammerstein had both been concerned with the "integrated musical," a musical in which the book, lyrics, and score all grow from a central idea and all contribute to the story line.

Hammerstein and Kern developed what was later called musical plays. The musical play was distinguished from the libretto or musical comedy in its more natural, less poetic language. Their first example was an adaptation of Edna Ferber's sprawling novel about life on a Mississippi River boat. This became the landmark 1925 musical *Showboat*, with Kern composing the score and Hammerstein writing the book and lyrics. *Showboat* firmly established Hammerstein's success and reputation as a writer and lyricist.

Partnering with Rodgers

In 1929 Hammerstein divorced his wife of twelve years, Myra Finn, and married Dorothy Blanchard Jacobson. The next decade turned out to be a happy one for Hammerstein personally, but unhappy professionally. He spent much of his time in Hollywood, working on contract to various studios. He discovered that he did not work well under the rigorous time demands of the movie industry, having achieved his greatest success with *Showboat's* one year writing period. In 1942 he returned to New York with Dorothy and began leisurely work on an adaptation of Bizet's *Carmen*. Hammerstein adapted the lyrics and story to create the Americanized, all-black *Carmen Jones*. The opera received great acclaim.

When he had finished the libretto for *Carmen Jones*, Hammerstein was contacted by

an old Columbia acquaintance, Richard Rodgers, whose partnership with Lorenz Hart had recently dissolved. Rodgers had read Lynn Riggs's *Green Grow the Lilacs* and wanted to collaborate with Hammerstein on a musical adaptation for the Theatre Guild. Hammerstein had also read the play, and the two began work on the musical, tentatively titled *Away We Go*. Rodgers and Hammerstein worked toward the concept of the integrated musical, with Hammerstein writing most of the lyrics before Rodgers wrote the score, the reverse of the normal process. Robert Mamoulian was signed on as director, Agnes deMille as choreographer, and Terry Helburn as producer for the Theatre Guild.

When the musical, retitled *Oklahoma*, opened on Broadway on March 31, 1943, it was an enormous success, both critically and popularly. *Oklahoma* ran for 2,243 performances in its initial Broadway engagement, and in 1944 it received a special Pulitzer Prize. The team of Rodgers and Hammerstein was a success. They produced their own work and promising works by other artists and at one time had five of the highest grossing shows running at the same time on Broadway. They followed up their success with collaborations on *Carousel* (1945), *Allegro* (1947), *South Pacific* (1949), *The King and I* (1951), *Me and Juliet* (1953), *Pipe Dream* (1955), *Flower Drum Song* (1958), and *The Sound of Music* (1960), for which Howard Lindsay and Russell Crouse wrote the book, Rodgers composed the score, and Hammerstein wrote the lyrics. *South Pacific* won the Pulitzer Prize in 1950. *South Pacific*, *The King and I*, and *The Sound of Music* all won Tony awards for best musical. Most of the Rodgers and Hammerstein musicals have been adapted for the screen, with the greatest success going to *Oklahoma* and *The Sound of Music*.

Continued influence

Hammerstein's talents as a lyricist and librettist are undeniable. Countless productions of his musicals on Broadway, on tour, and in professional, amateur, and academic theaters around the world testify to the remarkable quality of his work. Hammerstein's influence on the next generation of lyricists and librettists was also direct and observable. Most notable was his influence on Stephen Sondheim, lyricist for such shows as *West Side Story*, *Sweeney Todd*, and *Sunday in the Park with George*. Sondheim was a close friend of the Hammerstein family from childhood and attributed his success in theater directly to Hammerstein's influence and guidance.

Oscar Glendenning Hammerstein II died in his home in Doylestown, Pennsylvania, on August 23, 1960, a victim of stomach cancer. He left behind three children, William and Alice by Myra Finn, and James by Dorothy Blanchard Jacobson. On September 1, 1960, at 9 P.M., the lights were extinguished on Broadway in memory of Oscar Hammerstein II, the "man who owned Broadway."

For More Information

- Citron, Stephen. *The Wordsmiths: Oscar Hammerstein 2nd and Alan Jay Lerner*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1995.
- Ewen, David. *All the Years of American Popular Music*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1977.
- Fordin, Hugh. *Getting to Know Him*. New York: Random House, 1977.
- Mordden, Ethan. *Rodgers & Hammerstein*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1992.

Nolan, Frederick. *The Sound of Their Music: The Story of Rodgers and Hammerstein*. London: Dent, 1978.

JOHN HANCOCK

Born: January 23, 1737

Braintree, Massachusetts

Died: October 8, 1793

Boston, Massachusetts

American statesman, politician, and governor

John Hancock signed the Declaration of Independence and was a leader of the movement toward revolution in the American colonies. He later served as a president of the Continental Congress, and he was elected governor of Massachusetts for nine terms.

Early life

John Hancock was born in Braintree, Massachusetts, on January 23, 1737. His parents were John Hancock, a Harvard graduate and minister, and Mary Hawke. After the death of his father when Hancock was seven, he was adopted by his uncle, a wealthy Boston merchant. Hancock graduated from Harvard in 1754, served for a time in his uncle's office as a clerk, and went to London in 1760 as the firm's representative. He spent a year there. In 1763 Hancock became a partner in his uncle's thriving business.

When his uncle died in 1764, Hancock inherited the business. He was one of many who was opposed to Great Britain's passing of the Stamp Act in 1765, since the act taxed the

kinds of transactions, or business dealings, his company was involved with. As a result, to avoid having to pay these taxes, Hancock ignored the law and began smuggling (bringing in secretly) goods into the colonies.

Hancock was elected to the Massachusetts General Court in 1766 at the suggestion of other colonists who were against British interference in the colonies. Hancock had attracted attention as something of a hero after one of his smuggling ships, *the Liberty*, was seized by the British. He received more votes than Samuel Adams (1722–1803), one of the most famous American Revolutionary leaders, in the next General Court election. Meanwhile, Hancock was threatened with large fines by Britain for the *Liberty* affair. Though the fines were never collected, Hancock never got his ship back.

Growing anti-British sentiment

Every time the British made a move that affected the American colonies, especially anything involving taxes, Samuel Adams and other anti-British agitators (people who stir up public feeling on political issues) spoke out against it. The Boston Massacre of 1770 (when British soldiers fired into a crowd of people who had been throwing snowballs and sticks at them, killing five) increased colonial anger toward Britain and established a tension that continued to grow. Hancock wavered for a time, but when the strength of public opinion became clear, he made the courageous announcement that he was totally committed to making a stand against the actions of the British government—even if it cost him his life and his fortune.

During the Boston Tea Party of 1773, Boston colonists disguised as Native Ameri-

cans dumped three shiploads of British tea into the harbor as a protest against the British government. After the Boston Tea Party, the British passed the Boston Port Bill of 1774. The bill ordered the closing of the port of Boston until the cost of the tea was repaid. Hancock's reputation grew during this time to the point where he became one of the main symbols of anti-British radicalism (extreme actions trying to force change). How much of this was planned by him, and how far he had been pushed by Samuel Adams, is uncertain. What is known is that when British General Thomas Gage finally decided to try to achieve peaceful relations with the colonies, Hancock and Adams were the only two Americans to whom he refused to even consider giving amnesty (a pardon).

Continental Congress

Hancock was elected president of the Continental Congress in May 1775 and married Dorothy Quincy in August of the same year. He hoped to be named to command the army around Boston and was disappointed when George Washington (1732–1799) was selected instead. Hancock voted for, and was the first representative to sign, the Declaration of Independence. Although Hancock resigned as president of the Continental Congress in October 1777, saying that he was in poor health, he stayed on as a member.

Hancock still wanted to prove himself as a military leader. However, when given the opportunity to command an expedition into Rhode Island in 1778, he did nothing to distinguish himself. Hancock was also embarrassed in 1777 when Harvard College, which he had served as treasurer since 1773, accused him of mismanaging university funds



John Hancock.

Courtesy of the National Archives and Records Association.

and demanded repayment. Hancock was forced to pay £16,000 (approximately \$22,000). In 1785 Hancock admitted that he still owed £1,054 (approximately \$1,500) to Harvard. This sum was eventually paid out of his estate after his death.

Elected to office

Like most public figures, Hancock had enemies. His opponents spread the word that he was a shallow man who lacked strong beliefs and was only interested in helping himself. Nevertheless, they could not prevent his election as the first governor of Massa-

chusetts, in 1780. He was reelected several times until retiring in 1785 just before Massachusetts went through a financial crisis. Although he claimed that his retirement was based on illness, Hancock's enemies claimed that he had seen the coming storm, which was caused in part by mistakes he had made in handling the state's money. After Shays's Rebellion (a 1786–87 uprising by farmers and small property owners in Massachusetts who demanded lower taxes, court reforms, and a revision of the state constitution), Hancock was reelected governor.

In 1788, Hancock was elected president of the Massachusetts State Convention to ratify, or approve, the new Constitution. He was approached by members of the Federalist Party (an early political group that supported a strong central government) who wanted a set of amendments added to the document. They supposedly hinted that if Hancock presented the amendments, they would help him to be named president if Washington declined the job. The truth of this story has never been confirmed. In the end, Hancock did offer the amendments, and Massachusetts ratified the Constitution. Washington accepted the presidency, and Hancock remained as Massachusetts governor, his popularity unchallenged. He died in office on October 8, 1793.

For More Information

Gaines, Ann. *John Hancock: President of the Continental Congress*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House Publishers, 2001.

Koslow, Philip. *John Hancock: A Signature Life*. New York: Watts, 1998.

Unger, Harlow G. *John Hancock: Merchant King and American Patriot*. New York: John Wiley & Sons, 2000.

GEORGE FRIDERIC HANDEL

Born: February 23, 1685

Halle, Germany

Died: April 14, 1759

London, England

German-born English composer and organist

The dramatic English oratorios (lengthy choral works of a religious nature) of the German-born English composer (writer of music) and organist George Frideric Handel were the high point of the entire baroque (seventeenth-century ornate period) oratorio tradition. His Italian operas show a nobility of style and wealth of dramatic insight.

The young musician

George Frideric Handel was born on February 23, 1685, to Georg and Dorothea Händel in Halle, Germany. To study music he had to overcome his father's objections, and at the same time follow his father's insistence that he study law. But even before Handel had finished his law courses, he was devoted to pursuing a musical career. Although his father would not even allow him to have a musical instrument of his own, he managed to find ways to practice secretly. At about the age of seven he performed at the keyboard before the duke and his court at Weissenfels, Germany. As a result he became the pupil of Friedrich Wilhelm Zacchow, a composer and organist. Zacchow taught him composition as well as the organ, the violin, and the oboe, and by 1695 Handel was composing for these and other instruments. From 1696 until

1701 Handel composed many works. Unfortunately, the church cantatas (music that is written for one or more singers) and all but a few pieces of chamber music (music that is meant to be performed in a small space) that he composed at the time have disappeared.

Contact with German composer Georg Philipp Telemann, and a meeting shortly afterward with the composer Agostino Steffani, spurred Handel's operatic ambitions. In 1703 he resigned his post as organist at the Halle Domkirche and left the university, moving to Hamburg, where he joined the Goosemarket Theater as a violinist. But it was Handel's exceptional skill at the keyboard that brought him employment in the performance of operas.

First operas

Handel began his own operatic career with *Almira* (1704), which ran for some twenty performances—a very successful run. After several more successes, he sought richer operatic experience and left for Italy in 1706. He visited Florence, Venice, Rome, and Naples during the next three seasons, meeting almost all of the notable Italian musicians. His Italian journey resulted in two fine operas, *Rodrigo* (1707) and *Agrippina* (1709), several dramatic chamber works, and equally dramatic sacred compositions.

During a second visit to Venice, Handel met several persons interested in England who no doubt influenced his decision to try his luck as a freelance musician in London. A meeting with the manager of the King's Theatre furnished Handel with a chance to compose an opera. Within two weeks he produced the opera *Rinaldo*, which marked the high point of the London season in 1710 and 1711. Handel's course was set for the rest of his life.



George Frideric Handel.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

Settling in England

As London became Handel's permanent home, he proceeded to compose a large amount of music for harpsichord, chamber ensembles, and orchestra, as well as various works for royal occasions. Handel's compositions so impressed England's Queen Anne (1665–1714) that she awarded him an annual salary of two hundred pounds. After Anne's death, George I (1660–1727) became king of England. In 1715 Handel provided music for a royal pleasure cruise for the King, his mistresses, and several barge-loads of courtiers (members of the royal court)—the famous *Water Music*. In 1719 Handel accepted an invi-

tation to join forces with the newly founded Royal Academy of Music. Handel's operas were numerous and well-received, but despite their success the academy did not prosper.

In 1726 Handel became a citizen of England and was appointed composer of music to the Chapel Royal. The season of 1727 saw the production of Handel's *Alessandro*. This marked the beginning of an intense rivalry between Faustina Bordoni and Francesca Cuzzoni, two prima donnas (leading female opera singers) whose hostility greatly harmed the cause of Italian opera in London. Other factors no doubt lent weight to the growing public disappointment, but this single event seemed to have caused opposition to Italian opera in London and introduced a succession of developments that led to its fall.

Apparently undismayed, Handel immediately formed the New Royal Academy of Music in partnership with a Swiss entrepreneur. After a whirlwind trip to Germany to audition new singers and to visit his mother, now blind and alone, Handel returned to London in time to open the new season. Thereafter his operas flowed forth on the average of two per year. In spite of the quality of these operas, Italian opera grew ever less popular in London. In April 1737 Handel suffered a stroke. He recuperated during the summer at Aix-la-Chapelle, returning to London in time to start the next season. Finally, with the miserable failure of *Imeneo* (1740) and *Deidamia* (1741), he at last gave up and wrote no more new operas.

The oratorios

Handel's ultimate failure with operas was offset by ever-increasing success with his oratorios. These provided a new vehicle, the

possibilities of which he had begun to explore and experiment with nearly a decade earlier. Indeed these established a new vogue (fashion), in which Handel fared better with London audiences than he ever had with Italian opera. As if to test a possible market for dramatic compositions in English, Handel revived past operas with revisions to the oratorio style, meeting with much success. Producing oratorios was a profitable business. As a direct consequence, the oratorio became a regular feature of each season, with Handel leading the field, as he had done previously with Italian opera.

It was obvious that the new form was on its way to becoming an established feature of English concert life. During the Lenten (the period of religious fasting for Christians) season in 1735, Handel gave no less than fourteen concerts, consisting mainly of oratorios.

Handel's personal health, however, continued to falter. In 1751 total blindness set in. From that time on he was limited to revising earlier works with outside assistance, and to improvising on organ and harpsichord in public performances. Handel's accomplishment during the last creative decade of his life seems almost miraculous when the Italian cantatas, several concertos, and a variety of other works are added to his twenty major works. He died in London on April 14, 1759.

Handel's creative genius

Surveying Handel's entire creative life, one gains a sense of spontaneous (instinctive) and incredibly abundant creative flow. This is confirmed by the marvelous collections of his work preserved at the Fitzwilliam and British museums in England, which reveal not only the enormous bulk of his creative achieve-

ment but also something of his uncompromising critical judgment. There is scarcely a page without deletions; frequently, he struck out whole passages. He obviously knew the art of heavy pruning, and his works profited greatly from it.

Handel's propensity to "write like the very devil" proved invaluable, in view of the demands imposed upon his time and energies in operatic composition throughout most of his career. Time after time he found it necessary to meet crises without much time for creative gestation (generation). Handel was at heart a dramatic composer for whom setting the scene and atmosphere and depiction of character thrust all other considerations into the background.

For More Information

Anderson, M. T. *Handel, Who Knew What He Liked*. Cambridge, MA: Candlewick Press, 2001.

Keates, Jonathan. *Handel, The Man and His Music*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1985.

Lang, Paul Henry. *George Frideric Handel*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1966. Reprint, Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 1996.

THOMAS HARDY

Born: June 2, 1840

Higher Bockhampton, Dorset, England

Died: January 11, 1928

Dorchester, England

English author, novelist, poet, and dramatist

The works of the English novelist, poet, and dramatist Thomas Hardy unite the Victorian (c. 1840–1900) and modern eras. They reveal him to be a kind and gentle man, terribly aware of the pain human beings suffer in their struggle for life.

Childhood

Thomas Hardy was born on June 2, 1840, in Higher Bockhampton in Dorset, England, which formed part of the "Wessex" of his novels and poems. The first of four children, Hardy was born small and thought at birth to be dead. He grew to be a small man only a little over five feet tall. Hardy learned to love books through his mother, Jemina, and was able to read before starting school. He was taught by his father, also named Thomas, to play the violin, and he often journeyed about the countryside playing for dances and storing up the impressions of rural life that make up so large a part of his work.

Hardy attended a private school in Dorchester, England, where he learned Latin, French, and German. In 1856 at the age of sixteen, Hardy became an apprentice (a person who works for someone in order to gain experience in a trade) to John Hicks, an architect in Dorchester. At this time he thought seriously of attending university and entering the Church, but he did not do so. In 1862 he went to London, England, to work. Also at this time, Hardy began writing poetry after being impressed by Reverend William Barnes, a local poet.

Early writings

In London Hardy continued to write poetry and began sending his poems to publishers, who quickly returned them. He kept



Thomas Hardy.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

many of the poems and published them in 1898 and afterward. Back in Dorchester in 1867 while working for Hicks, he wrote a novel, *The Poor Man and the Lady*, which he was advised not to publish because it was too critical of Victorian society. Told to write a novel with a plot, he turned out *Desperate Remedies* (1871), which was unsuccessful.

Meanwhile Hardy had begun to work for Gerald Crickmay, who had taken over Hicks's business. Crickmay sent Hardy to Cornwall, England, where on March 7, 1870, he met Emma Lavinia Gifford, with whom he fell in love. Hardy could have kept on with architecture, but he was a "born bookworm," as he

said, and in spite of his lack of success with literature he decided to continue writing, hoping eventually to make enough money so he could marry Gifford. Their courtship is recorded in *A Pair of Blue Eyes* and in some of Hardy's most beautiful poems, among them "When I Set Out for Lyonesse" and "Beeny Cliff."

For *Under the Greenwood Tree* (1872) he earned 30 pounds and the book was well received. At the same time he was asked to write a novel for serialization (published in parts) in a magazine. In September 1872 *A Pair of Blue Eyes* began to appear, even though only a few chapters had been completed. *Far from the Madding Crowd* (1874), was published in magazines and was a success both financially and critically. Finally making a living from literature, Hardy married Gifford in September of 1874.

Later novels

Hardy preferred his poetry to his prose (nonpoetry writings) and thought his novels merely a way to earn a living. But his best novels—*The Return of the Native* (1878), *The Mayor of Casterbridge* (1886), and *Tess of the D'Urbervilles* (1891)—were much more than magazine fiction. The people were dominated by the countryside of "Wessex," Hardy's name for the area in southwest England where he set most of his novels, and the area is as memorable as the people.

Good or bad, Hardy's novels brought him money, fame, and acquaintance with greatness. With his wife he travelled in Germany, France, and Italy; he built Max Gate near Dorchester, where he lived from 1886 until his death; he frequently dined out, meeting poets Matthew Arnold (1822–1888), Robert Browning (1812–1889), Alfred, Lord Ten-

nyson (1809–1892), and others. Writer Robert Louis Stevenson (1850–1894) sought him out and visited him at Max Gate. It was a successful life and seemed happy enough, but he had a strained relationship with his wife.

Though Hardy's novels seldom end happily, he was not, he stated, a pessimist (taking the least hopeful view of a situation). He called himself a "meliorist," one who believed that man can live with some happiness if he understands his place in the universe and accepts it. He ceased to be a Christian, and he read the works of naturalist Charles Darwin (1809–1892) and accepted the idea of evolution, the theory that animals, including man, developed from earlier species. Later he took to reading philosopher Arthur Schopenhauer (1788–1860) and developed the notion of the Immanent Will, the blind force that drives the universe and in the distant future may see and understand itself.

Poetry and drama

Collecting new and old poems, Hardy published *Wessex Poems* (1898) and *Poems of the Past and Present* (1902). Then he began to publish *The Dynasts*, an immense drama of the Napoleonic Wars (a series of wars from 1792 to 1815 between France and different European powers) which depicts all the characters, even French emperor Napoleon Bonaparte (1769–1821), as a puppet whose actions are determined by the Immanent Will. The "epic-drama" evolved into nineteen acts and 130 scenes and was published in three parts in 1903, 1905, and 1908. Meant to be read, not acted, it is frequently called Hardy's masterwork.

Meanwhile Hardy continued to publish his shorter verse in *Time's Laughingstocks*

(1909). His most famous single volume of poems, *Satires of Circumstance*, appeared in 1914. It revealed the extremes of Hardy's emotional range in the short, bitter poems referred to in the title and the longer poems about his first wife, who died in 1912. *Selected Poems* (1916), *Moments of Vision* (1917), *Late Lyrics and Earlier* (1922), and *Human Shows* (1925) were published during the remainder of his life. *Winter Words* (1928) was published after his death.

Because in most cases Hardy published his poems years after he wrote them, the dates of when he wrote these pieces can be determined only by his references to them in *The Early Life of Thomas Hardy* or *The Later Years*. Because of this it is difficult to show Hardy's growth as a poet. In fact, he hardly grew at all. In almost all his poems Hardy uses Victorian diction (choice of words), regular meters (rhythm), and neat stanzas (divisions within a poem). These cause him to be called a Victorian poet, but he also uses everyday words. These, with his dark view of the human condition and his blending of humor and pity, rank him with modern poets.

In 1914 Hardy married Florence Emily Dugdale, who had been his secretary for several years. He continued to receive famous visitors at Max Gate and continued to visit London for special occasions. He died on January 11, 1928. His heart was buried in the churchyard at Stinsford, England, his ashes in Westminster Abbey.

For More Information

Gibson, James. *Thomas Hardy: A Literary Life*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1996.

Halliday, F. E. *Thomas Hardy: His Life and Work*. Bath: Adams and Dart, 1972.

Howe, Irving. *Thomas Hardy*. New York: Macmillan, 1967.

Millgate, Michael. *Thomas Hardy, a Biography*. New York: Random House, 1982.

STEPHEN HAWKING

Born: January 8, 1942

Oxford, England

English scientist, physicist, and mathematician

British physicist and mathematician Stephen Hawking has made fundamental contributions to the science of cosmology—the study of the origins, structure, and space-time relationships of the universe.

Early life

Stephen William Hawking was born on January 8, 1942, in Oxford, England. His father, a well-known researcher in tropical medicine, urged his son to seek a career in medicine, but Stephen found biology and medicine were not exact enough. Therefore, he turned to the study of mathematics and physics.

Hawking was not an outstanding student at St. Alban's School, nor later at Oxford University, which he entered in 1959. He was a social young man who did little schoolwork because he was able to grasp the essentials of a mathematics or physics problem quickly. At home he reports, "I would take things apart

to see how they worked, but they didn't often go back together." His early school years were marked by unhappiness at school, with his peers and on the playing field. While at Oxford he became increasingly interested in physics (study of matter and energy), eventually graduating with a first class honors in physics (1962). He immediately began post-graduate studies at Cambridge University.

Graduate school

The onset of Hawking's graduate education at Cambridge marked a turning point in his life. It was then that he embarked upon the formal study of cosmology, which focused his study. And it was then that he was first stricken with Lou Gehrig's disease, a weakening disease of the nervous and muscular system that eventually led to his total confinement in a wheelchair. At Cambridge his talents were recognized, and he was encouraged to carry on his studies despite his growing physical disabilities. His marriage in 1965 was an important step in his emotional life. Marriage gave him, he recalled, the determination to live and make professional progress in the world of science. Hawking received his doctorate degree in 1966. He then began his lifelong research and teaching association with Cambridge University.

Theory of singularity

Hawking made his first major contribution to science with his idea of singularity, a work that grew out of his collaboration (working relationship) with Roger Penrose. A singularity is a place in either space or time at which some quantity becomes infinite (without an end). Such a place is found in a black hole, the final stage of a collapsed star, where

the gravitational field has infinite strength. Penrose proved that a singularity could exist in the space-time of a real universe.

Drawing upon the work of both Penrose and Albert Einstein (1879–1955), Hawking demonstrated that our universe had its origins in a singularity. In the beginning all of the matter in the universe was concentrated in a single point, making a very small but tremendously dense body. Ten to twenty billion years ago that body exploded in a big bang that initiated time and the universe. Hawking was able to produce current astrophysical (having to do with the study of stars and the events that occur around them) research to support the big bang theory of the origin of the universe and oppose the competing steady-state theory.

Hawking's research led him to study the characteristics of the best-known singularity: the black hole. A black hole's edges, called the event horizon, can be detected. Hawking proved that the surface area (measurement of the surface) of the event horizon could only increase, not decrease, and that when two black holes merged the surface area of the new hole was larger than the sum of the two original.

Hawking's continuing examination of the nature of black holes led to two important discoveries. The first, that black holes can give off heat, opposed the claim that nothing could escape from a black hole. The second concerned the size of black holes. As originally conceived, black holes were immense in size because they were the end result of the collapse of gigantic stars. Hawking suggested the existence of millions of mini-black holes formed by the force of the original big bang explosion.



Stephen Hawking.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Unified field theory

In the 1980s Hawking answered one of Einstein's unanswered theories, the famous unified field theory. A complete unified theory includes the four main interactions known to modern physics. The unified theory explains the conditions that were present at the beginning of the universe as well as the features of the physical laws of nature. When humans develop the unified field theory, said Hawking, they will "know the mind of God."

Publications

As Hawking's physical condition grew worse his intellectual achievements increased.

He wrote down his ideas in *A Brief History of Time: From the Big Bang to Black Holes*. It sold over a million copies and was listed as the best-selling nonfiction book for over a year.

In 1993 Hawking wrote *Black Holes and Baby Universes and Other Essays*, which, in addition to his scientific thoughts, contains chapters about Hawking's personal life. He coauthored a book in 1996 with Sir Roger Penrose titled *The Nature of Space and Time*. Issues discussed in this book include whether the universe has boundaries and if it will continue to expand forever. Hawking says yes to the first question and no to the second, while Penrose argues the opposite. Hawking joined Penrose again the following year in the creation of another book, *The Large, the Small, and the Human Mind* (1997). In 2002 he was likewise celebrating the publication of *The Universe in a Nutshell*. Despite decreasing health, Hawking traveled on the traditional book release circuit. People with disabilities look to him as a hero.

Honors and commitments

Hawking's work in modern cosmology and in theoretical astronomy and physics is widely recognized. He became a fellow of the Royal Society of London in 1974 and five years later was named to a professorial chair at Cambridge University that was once held by Sir Isaac Newton (1642–1727). Beyond these honors he has earned a host of honorary degrees, awards, prizes, and lectureships from the major universities and scientific societies of Europe and America. By the end of the twentieth century Stephen Hawking had become one of the best-known scientists in the world. His popularity includes endorsing a wireless Internet connection and speaking to

wheelchair-bound youth. He also had a special appearance on the television series *Star Trek*.

Though very private, it is generally known that Stephen's first marriage ended in 1991. He has three children from that marriage.

When asked about his objectives, Hawking told Zygon in a 1995 interview, "My goal is a complete understanding of the universe, why it is as it is and why it exists at all."

For More Information

- Ferguson, Kitty. *Stephen Hawking: A Quest for a Theory of the Universe*. New York: F. Watts, 1991.
- Henderson, Harry. *Stephen Hawking*. San Diego, CA: Lucent Books, 1995.
- McDaniel, Melissa. *Stephen Hawking: Revolutionary Physicist*. New York: Chelsea House, 1994.
- White, Michael, and John Gribbin. *Stephen Hawking: A Life in Science*. New York: Viking, 1992.

NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE

Born: July 4, 1804
Salem, Massachusetts
Died: May 19, 1864
Plymouth, New Hampshire
American writer

The work of American fiction writer Nathaniel Hawthorne was based on the history of his Puritan ancestors

and the New England of his own day. Hawthorne's *The Scarlet Letter* and *The House of the Seven Gables* are classics of American literature.

Childhood

Nathaniel Hawthorne was born in Salem, Massachusetts, on July 4, 1804, into the sixth generation of his Salem family. His ancestors included businessmen, judges, and seamen—all Puritans, a strict religious discipline. Two aspects of his background especially affected his imagination and writing career. The Hathornes (Nathaniel added the “w” to the name) had been involved in religious persecution (intense harassment) with their first American ancestor, William. Another ancestor, John Hathorne, was one of the three judges at the seventeenth-century Salem witchcraft trials, where dozens of people were accused of, and later executed for, being “witches.”

Nathaniel's father, a sea captain, died in 1808, leaving his wife and three children dependent on relatives. Nathaniel, the only son, spent his early years in Salem and in Maine. A leg injury forced Hawthorne to remain immobile for a considerable period, during which he developed an exceptional taste for reading and thinking. His childhood was calm, a little isolated but far from unhappy, especially since as a handsome and attractive only son he was idolized by his mother and his two sisters.

With the aid of his wealthy uncles, Hawthorne attended Bowdoin College from 1821 to 1825. Among his classmates were poet Henry Wadsworth Longfellow (1807–1882), and future U.S. president Franklin Pierce (1804–1869). At Bowdoin, Hawthorne read widely and received solid



Nathaniel Hawthorne.

instruction in English composition and the classics, particularly in Latin. His refusal to participate in public speaking prevented his achievement of an outstanding academic record, but he was in good standing. On one occasion he was fined 50 cents for gambling at cards, but his behavior was not otherwise singled out for official disapproval. Though small and isolated, the Bowdoin of the 1820s was an unusually good college, and Hawthorne undoubtedly profited from his formal education. He also made loyal friends.

Years in seclusion

Returning from Bowdoin, Hawthorne spent the years 1825 to 1837 in his mother's

Salem household. Later he looked back upon these years as a period of dreamlike isolation and solitude, spent in a haunted room. During these “solitary years” he learned to write tales and sketches that are still unique.

Recent biographers have shown that this period of Hawthorne’s life was less lonely than he remembered it to be. In truth, he did have social engagements, played cards, and went to the theatre. Nevertheless, he consistently remembered these twelve years as a strange, dark dream, though his view of the influence of these years varied.

Writing short stories

Most of Hawthorne’s early stories were published anonymously (without an author’s name) in magazines and giftbooks. In 1837 the publication of *Twice-Told Tales* somewhat lifted this spell of darkness. After *Twice-Told Tales* he added two later collections, *Mosses from an Old Manse* (1846) and *The Snow-Image* (1851), along with *Grandfather’s Chair* (1841), a history of New England for children. Hawthorne’s short stories came slowly but steadily into critical favor, and the best of them have become American classics.

By his own account it was Hawthorne’s love of his Salem neighbor Sophia Peabody that brought him from his “haunted chamber” out into the world. His books were far from profitable enough to support a wife and family, so in 1838 he went to work in the Boston Custom House and then spent part of 1841 in the famous Brook Farm community in hopes of finding a pleasant and economical home for Sophia and himself.

Hawthorne and Sophia, whom he finally married in 1842, resorted not to Brook Farm

but to the Old Manse in Concord, Massachusetts, where they spent several years of happiness in as much quiet living as they could achieve. Concord was home to Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882), Henry David Thoreau (1817–1862), and Ellery Channing (1780–1842), and Hawthorne was in frequent contact with these important thinkers, though he did not take to their philosophical lifestyles.

Writing the novels

Facing the world once more, Hawthorne obtained in 1846 the position of surveyor (one who maps out new lands) in the Salem Custom House, but was relieved of this position in 1848 because of his political ties. His dismissal, however, turned out to be a blessing, since it gave him time in which to write his greatest success, *The Scarlet Letter*.

The period 1850 to 1853 was Hawthorne’s most productive, as he wrote *The House of the Seven Gables* and *The Blithedale Romance*, along with *A Wonder Book* (1852) and *Tanglewood Tales* (1853). During 1850 the Hawthornes lived at the Red House in Lenox in the Berkshire Hills, and Hawthorne formed a memorable friendship with novelist Herman Melville (1819–1912). The association was more important to Melville than to Hawthorne, since Melville was fifteen years younger and the much more impressionable (easily influenced) of the two men. It left its mark in dedication of his *Moby-Dick*, and in some wonderful letters.

Years abroad

In 1852 Franklin Pierce was elected president of the United States, and Hawthorne, who wrote his campaign biography, was appointed to the important overseas

post of American consul (advisor) at Liverpool, England. He served in this post from 1853 to 1857. These English years resulted in *Our Old Home* (1863), a volume drawn from the since-published “English Note-Books.”

In 1857 the Hawthornes left England for Italy, where they spent their time primarily in Rome and Florence. They returned to England, where Hawthorne finished his last and longest complete novel, *The Marble Faun* (1860). They finally returned to the United States, after an absence of seven years, and took up residence in their first permanent home, The Wayside, at Concord.

Last years

Although he had always been an exceptionally active man, Hawthorne’s health began to fail him. Since he refused to submit to any thorough medical examination, the details of his declining health remain mysterious. Hawthorne died on May 19, 1864. He had set off for the New Hampshire hills with Franklin Pierce, an activity he had always enjoyed, hoping to regain his health. But he died the second night in Plymouth, New Hampshire, presumably in his sleep.

Hawthorne once said that New England was enough to fill his heart, yet he sought the broader experience of Europe. Modest in expectations, he had nonetheless desired to live fully. Hawthorne’s life and writings present a complex puzzle. A born writer, he suffered the difficulties of his profession in early-nineteenth-century America, an environment unfriendly to artists.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Nathaniel Hawthorne*. New York: Chelsea House, 1986.

Mellow, James R. *Nathaniel Hawthorne in His Times*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1980. Reprint, Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1998.

Miller, Edward Haviland. *Salem Is My Dwelling Place*. Iowa City: University of Iowa Press, 1991.

WILLIAM RANDOLPH HEARST

Born: April 29, 1863

San Francisco, California

Died: August 14, 1951

Beverly Hills, California

American publisher and editor

For almost half a century William Randolph Hearst was the American publisher, editor, and proprietor (business owner) of the most extensive journalistic empire ever assembled by one man. His personality and use of wealth permanently left a mark on American media.

Early years

On April 29, 1863, William Randolph Hearst was born in San Francisco, California. He received the best education that his multimillionaire father and his sophisticated schoolteacher mother (more than twenty years her husband’s junior) could buy—private tutors, private schools, grand tours of Europe, and Harvard College. Hearst’s father had been a keen geologist (student of the earth’s history as recorded in rocks) and lucky gold miner during the 1849 Gold Rush. As



William Randolph Hearst.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

partner in some of the largest mines in America, George Hearst easily entered politics as a California Senator. To help him politically, he purchased the then failing *San Francisco Examiner*. Meanwhile, his son, William Randolph, was routinely being expelled from school due to pranks. He was even expelled from Harvard after sending engraved silver chamber pots (prior to indoor plumbing, people kept pots under their beds to use for relieving themselves at night) to his professors. But Hearst inherited his father's ambition and energy. William's mother, the cultured parent, took William on two art tours in Europe before he was sixteen years old.

Young Hearst's journalistic career began in 1887, two years after his Harvard expulsion. "I want the *San Francisco Examiner*," he wrote to his father, who owned the newspaper and granted the request.

When William's father died, he left his millions in mining properties, not to his son, but to his wife—who compensated by giving her son ten thousand dollars a month until her death. In turn the gray-eyed, soft-spoken William Randolph Hearst invested frantically and heavily.

Building a journalistic empire

The *Daily Examiner* became young Hearst's laboratory, where he gained a talent for making fake news and faking real news in such a way as to create maximum public shock. From the outset he obtained top talent by paying top prices.

To get an all-star cast and an audience of millions, however, Hearst had to move his headquarters to New York City, where he immediately purchased the old and dying *New York Morning Journal*. Within a year Hearst ran up the circulation from seventy-seven thousand to over a million by spending enough money to beat the aging Joseph Pulitzer's *World* at its own sensationalist (scandalous) game. Sometimes Hearst hired away the *World's* more aggressive executives and reporters; sometimes he outbid all competitors in the open market. One of Hearst's editors was paid twice as much in salary as the sale price of the *New York World*.

Hearst attracted readers by adding heated reporting of sports, crime, sex, scandal, and human-interest stories. "A Hearst newspaper is like a screaming woman running down the street with her throat cut,"

said Hearst writer Arthur James Pegler. Hearst's slam-bang showmanship attracted new readers and nonreaders.

During the last five years of the nineteenth century, Hearst set his pattern for the first half of the twentieth century. The *Journal* supported the Democratic Party, yet Hearst opposed the campaign of Democratic presidential candidate William Jennings Bryan (1860–1925) in 1896. In 1898 Hearst backed the Spanish-American War (1898; a war in which the United States aided Cuba in its fight for freedom from Spanish rule), which Bryan and the Democrats opposed. Further, Hearst's wealth cut him off from the troubled masses to whom his newspapers appealed. He could not grasp the basic problems the issue of the war with Spain raised.

Entering politics

Having shaken up San Francisco with the *Examiner* and New York City with the *Journal*, Hearst established two newspapers in Chicago, Illinois, the *Chicago American* in 1900 and the *Chicago Examiner* in 1902; a newspaper in Boston, Massachusetts, the *Boston American*; and a newspaper in Los Angeles, California, the *Los Angeles Examiner* in 1904. These added newspapers marked more than an extension of Hearst's journalistic empire, they reflected his sweeping decision to seek the U.S. presidency. Perhaps his ambition came from a desire to follow in his father's footsteps. His personality and fortune were not suited to a political career however.

In 1902 and 1904 Hearst won election to the House of Representatives as a New York Democrat. Except, his journalistic activities and his \$2 million presidential campaign left him little time to speak, vote, or answer

roll calls in Congress. His nonattendance angered his colleagues and the voters who had elected him. Nevertheless, he found time to run as an independent candidate for mayor of New York City in 1905, and as a Democratic candidate for governor in 1906. His loss in both elections ended Hearst's political career.

Personal life

In 1903, the day before his fortieth birthday, he married twenty-one-year-old Millicent Willson, a showgirl, thus giving up Tessie Powers, a waitress he had supported since his Harvard days. The Hearsts had five boys, but in 1917 Hearst fell in love with another showgirl, twenty-year-old Marion Davies of the *Ziegfeld Follies*. He maintained a relationship with her that ended only at his death.

When Hearst's mother died, he came into his inheritance and took up permanent residence on his father's 168,000-acre ranch in southern California. There he spent \$37 million on a private castle, put \$50 million into New York City real estate, and put another \$50 million into his art collection—the largest ever assembled by a single individual.

Hearst publications

During the 1920s one American in every four read a Hearst newspaper. Hearst owned twenty daily and eleven Sunday papers in thirteen cities, the King Features syndication service (organization that places featured articles or comics in multiple papers at once), the International News Service, the *American Weekly* (a syndicated Sunday supplement), International Newsreel, and six magazines,

including *Cosmopolitan*, *Good Housekeeping*, and *Harper's Bazaar*.

Despite Hearst's wealth, expansion, and spending, his popularity with the public as well as with the government was low. Originally a progressive Democrat, he had no bargaining power with Republican Theodore Roosevelt (1859–1919). Hearst fought every Democratic reform leader from Bryan to Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945), and he opposed American participation in both world wars.

In 1927 the Hearst newspapers printed forged (faked) documents, which supported an accusation that the Mexican government had paid several U.S. senators more than \$1 million to support a Central American plot to wage war against the United States. From this scandal the Hearst press suffered not at all.

In the next ten years, however, Hearst's funds and the empire suddenly ran out. In 1937 the two corporations that controlled the empire found themselves \$126 million in debt. Hearst had to turn them over to a seven-member committee whose purpose was to save what they could. They managed to hold off economic failure only by selling off much of Hearst's private fortune and all of his public powers as a newspaper owner.

William Randolph Hearst died on August 14, 1951, in Beverly Hills, California.

For More Information

Davies, Marion. *The Times We Had: Life with William Randolph Hearst*. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1975.

Nasaw, David. *The Chief: The Life of William Randolph Hearst*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 2000.

Pizzitola, Louis. *Hearst over Hollywood: Power, Passion, and Propaganda in the Movies*. New York: Columbia University Press, 2002.

Swanberg, W. A. *Citizen Hearst, a Biography of William Randolph Hearst*. New York: Scribner, 1961. Reprint, New York: Galahad Books, 1996.

WERNER HEISENBERG

Born: December 5, 1901

Würzburg, Germany

Died: February 1, 1976

Munich, Germany

German physicist

German physicist Werner Heisenberg was a leader in physics, winning the 1932 Nobel Prize in Physics for his discovery of the uncertainty principle, which states that it is impossible to specify the exact position and momentum of a particle (tiny piece of matter) at the same time.

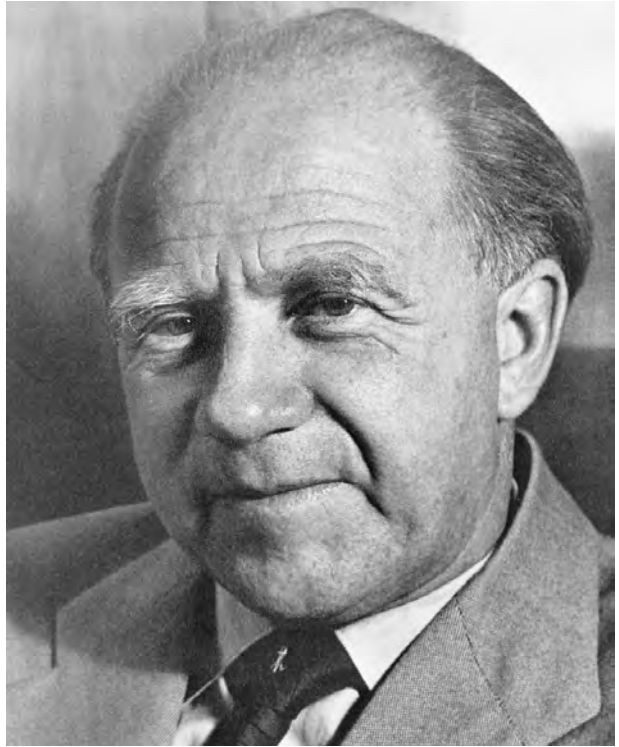
Early life

Werner Karl Heisenberg was born on December 5, 1901, in Würzburg, Germany, the son of August and Annie Wecklein Heisenberg. As a boy Heisenberg began playing the piano early and was playing master compositions by the age of thirteen. It was his father's commitment to academic learning, however, that led him to pursue the science he loved. He graduated from the University of Munich, where his father was professor of Greek language and literature.

Heisenberg was also a regular hiker and an eager student of classical literature and philosophy. He amazed family and friends when he taught himself calculus (a method of computing in a special notation) and tried to publish a scientific paper as a teen. Even though his strongest interest in life was science, music was a lifetime companion for him. A hard worker, Heisenberg worked on a farm for three summers in order to pay for his tuition to the University of Munich. At the university, where he enrolled in 1920, Heisenberg soon established close contact with Arthur Sommerfeld, a chief figure in early modern physics. After more hard work he received his doctorate in Munich in 1923. From there Heisenberg, on a Rockefeller grant, went to the Niels Bohr Institute in Copenhagen, Denmark, where he eagerly studied the most creative and up-to-date thoughts on atomic (related to the smallest particles of mass) theory.

His landmark papers

The Bohr's institute was the perfect setting for young Heisenberg to have his knowledge and interests grow. No sooner had Heisenberg completed his stay in Copenhagen than he worked out a complete method of calculating the energy levels of "atomic oscillators" (devices for producing alternating [back and forth] current). The method brought about very good results. A fellow physicist had it sent to the *Physikalische Zeitschrift*, where it was immediately printed under the title, "On Quantum Mechanical Interpretation of Kinematic and Mechanical Relations." Heisenberg's paper earned him immediate fame and recognition. In 1926 he was appointed lecturer in theoret-



Werner Heisenberg.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

ical physics (physics that exists only in theory) at the University of Copenhagen.

It was at Copenhagen that Heisenberg formulated the famous uncertainty principle, which states that it is impossible to specify the exact position and momentum of a particle at the same time. This was published in an article entitled, "On the Visualizable Content of Quantum Theoretical Kinematics and Mechanics." Heisenberg's "The Physical Principles of the Quantum Theory" is also considered a classic in this field. In 1927, at the age of twenty-six, he became professor of theoretical physics at the University of Leipzig. He received the Nobel Prize for physics in

1932. During this outbreak of academic activity, he married Elisabeth Schumacher. They eventually had seven children.

Questionable role in war

As a theoretical scientist, Heisenberg was initially held in low regard and was even considered suspect by the Nazi (German party in control from 1933–45 under the leadership of Adolf Hitler [1889–1945]) government. However, when World War II (1939–45; a war that pitted Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States against Germany, Italy, and Japan) began, the government appointed him as director of the German uranium (a dangerous element) project, and he worked on developing an atomic bomb for Germany. Heisenberg was arrested and placed in captivity in England from April 1945 until the summer of 1946. His role during the war continues to be a source of great debate.

Later career

After World War II Heisenberg did much to reorganize scientific research. In the early 1950s he worked toward the formulation of a “unified [all-encompassing] theory of fundamental [basic] particles,” stressing the role of symmetry (having balanced size and features) principles. This theory was discussed at length at an international conference in 1958. He presented his thought on this subject in the introduction to the *Unified Field Theory of Elementary Particles* (1966).

In 1955 and 1956 Heisenberg wrote and published *Physics and Philosophy: The Revolution in Modern Science*. He also published the autobiographical (about oneself) *Physics and Beyond* (1971), as well as several books deal-

ing with the philosophical and cultural significance of atomic and nuclear physics.

Heisenberg retired in 1970. His health began to fail in 1973, and shortly thereafter he became seriously ill, dying on February 1, 1976, in Munich, Germany.

For More Information

Cassidy, David C. *Uncertainty: The Life and Science of Werner Heisenberg*. New York: W. H. Freeman, 1992.

Finkelstein, David. *Quantum Relativity: A Synthesis of the Ideas of Einstein and Heisenberg*. New York: Springer-Verlag, 1996.

Heisenberg, Elisabeth. *Inner Exile: Recollections of a Life with Werner Heisenberg*. Boston: Birkhäuser, 1984.

Rose, Paul Lawrence. *Heisenberg and the Nazi Atomic Bomb Project*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1998.

JOSEPH HELLER

Born: May 1, 1923

Brooklyn, New York

Died: December 12, 1999

East Hampton, New York

American author

Joseph Heller was a popular and respected writer whose first and best-known novel, *Catch-22* (1961), was considered a classic piece of literature in the second half of the twentieth century.

Childhood in Brooklyn

Joseph Heller was born in Brooklyn, New York, to first generation Russian-Jewish immigrants. His father, a bakery-truck driver, died after a surgical operation when Heller was only five years old. Many critics believe that Heller developed the dark, wisecracking humor that marked his writing style while growing up near Coney Island, a famous amusement park in Brooklyn. Heller recalled little childhood influence in the literary world except for *The Illiad* by Homer, an eighth-century B.C.E. poet.

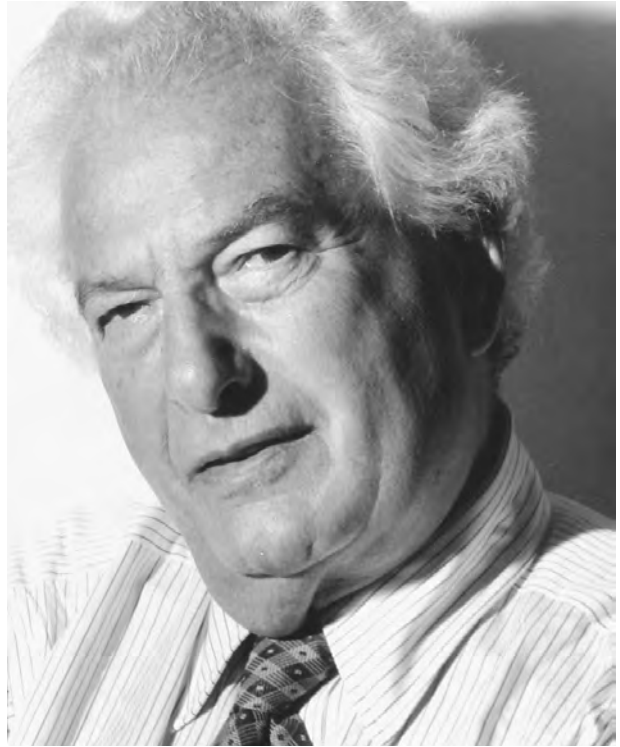
Education and the military

After graduating from high school in 1941, Heller worked briefly in an insurance office, and in 1942 he enlisted in the Army Air Corps after America entered World War II (1939–45; a war in which France, Great Britain, the United States, and the Soviet Union fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan). Two years later he was sent to Corsica, an island in the Mediterranean Sea, where he flew sixty combat missions as a fighter pilot, earning an Air Medal and a Presidential Unit Citation. It is generally agreed that Heller's war years in the Mediterranean had only a minimal impact on the creation of *Catch-22*.

After Heller left the military in 1945, he married Shirley Held and began his college education. He obtained a bachelor's degree in English from New York University, a master's degree from Columbia University, and attended Oxford University as a Fulbright Scholar for a year before becoming an English instructor at Pennsylvania State University.

Catch-22

Two years later Heller began working as an advertising copywriter, securing positions



Joseph Heller.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

at such magazines as *Time*, *Look*, and *McCall's* from 1952 to 1961. During this time Heller was also writing short stories and scripts for film and television, as well as working on *Catch-22*. After the success of *Catch-22*, Heller quit his job at *McCall's* and concentrated exclusively on writing fiction and plays.

Catch-22 concerns a World War II fighter pilot named Yossarian who believes his foolish, ambitious, mean-spirited commanding officers are more dangerous than the enemy. In order to avoid flying more missions, Yossarian retreats to a hospital with a mysterious liver complaint, wrecks his plane, and tries to get himself declared insane. Various

defined throughout the novel, “Catch-22” refers to the ways in which officials in command control the people who work for them.

“I never thought of *Catch-22* as a comic novel,” Heller says in the *New York Times*. “[But] . . . I wanted the reader to be amused, and . . . I wanted him to be ashamed that he was amused. My literary bent . . . is more toward the morbid [gruesome] and the tragic. Great carnage [death] is taking place and my idea was to use humor to make ridiculous the things that are irrational and very terrible.”

Later works

While Heller’s place in twentieth-century letters is secured with *Catch-22*, he is also highly regarded for his other works, which present a comic vision of modern society with serious moral connections. A major theme throughout his writing is the conflict that occurs when individuals interact with such powerful institutions as corporations, the military, and the government.

Heller’s second novel, *Something Happened*, centers on Bob Slocum, a middle-aged businessman who has a large, successful company but feels emotionally empty. While initial reviews of *Something Happened* were mixed, more recent criticism has often deemed this novel superior to and more sophisticated than *Catch-22*.

Good as Gold (1979) marks Heller’s first fictional use of his Jewish heritage and childhood experiences in Coney Island. In *Picture This* (1988), Heller utilizes Rembrandt’s painting “Aristotle Contemplating the Bust of Homer” to draw parallels between ancient Greece, seventeenth-century Holland, and contemporary America.

Declining health

In the early 1980s Heller was stricken with a nerve disease, Guillain-Barre syndrome, that left him paralyzed for several months. Though the author became too weak to move and almost too weak to breathe on his own, he eventually regained his strength and recovered from the often fatal disorder. After completing *God Knows*, Heller began writing his first nonfiction book, *No Laughing Matter*, with Speed Vogel, a friend who helped him considerably during his illness.

Heller died of a heart attack on December 12, 1999, at his East Hampton, New York, home. After Heller’s death, Simon & Schuster published Heller’s final work, *A Portrait of an Artist, as an Old Man*, a collection of memoirs and essays by one of the world’s most influential writers of the twentieth century.

For More Information

Heller, Joseph. *Now and Then: From Coney Island to Here*. Franklin Center, PA: Franklin Library, 1998.

Heller, Joseph, and Speed Vogel. *No Laughing Matter*. New York: Putnam, 1986.

Ruderman, Judith. *Joseph Heller*. New York: Continuum, 1991.

LILLIAN
HELLMAN

Born: June 20, 1906

New Orleans, Louisiana

Died: June 30, 1984

Vineyard Haven, Massachusetts

American playwright

Lillian Hellman, American playwright, wrote a series of powerful, realistic plays that made her one of America's major dramatists. She explored highly controversial themes, with many of her plays reflecting her outspoken political and social views.

Early life

Lillian Florence Hellman was born in New Orleans, Louisiana, on June 20, 1906, of Jewish parents, Max Hellman, a shoe salesman, and Julia Newshouse, whose family had made a small fortune in the banking industry. In 1910 her family moved to New York City, where she attended public schools. Her schooling was constantly interrupted by her father's frequent business trips to New Orleans, which would sometimes last up to six months.

Hellman went on to study at New York University (1923–1924) and Columbia University (1924). Her marriage to Arthur Kober in 1925, who was a writer for the *New Yorker*, helped Hellman get various jobs around New York City, including reading scripts for studios and working as a book reviewer for the *New York Herald Tribune*. The marriage ended in 1932.

Hellman worked as a manuscript reader for Liveright Publishers before becoming main play reader for producer Herman Shumlin. In 1930, ready to drop her idea of being a writer, she was talked out of quitting by Dashiell Hammett, who became her life-long mentor (teacher) and partner.

Major works invited controversy

After a “year and a half of stumbling stubbornness,” Hellman finished “The Chil-

dren's Hour” (1934), based on an actual incident in Scotland. The action of the play is triggered by a child's accusation of sexual relations against two female teachers, which leads to one woman's suicide (where a person takes his or her own life). The play reveals Hellman's sharp characterizations and clear, moral comment on a theme considered dramatically untouchable at the time.

“In Days to Come” (1936), a play of a crumbling family as well as of the struggle between union (an organization that fights for workers' rights) and management, Hellman's dramatic touch faltered. However, her next play, “The Little Foxes” (1939), ranks as one of the most powerful in American drama. Set in the South, it depicts a family almost completely engulfed by greed and hate.

During World War II (1939–45; a war in which France, Great Britain, the United States, and the Soviet Union fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan), Hellman wrote two plays. “Watch on the Rhine” (1941), which received the New York City Critics Circle Award, was a drama about an underground hero, and spoke out harshly against the Nazis (a radical political party that controlled Germany leading up to, and during, World War II). “The Searching Wind” (1944) championed the movement against fascism (a form of government characterized by leadership by one all-powerful ruler), criticizing the failure of influential Americans to halt the rise of Germany's Adolph Hitler (1889–1945) and Italy's Benito Mussolini (1883–1945).

In “Another Part of the Forest” (1946), Hellman again portrayed the Hubbard family of “The Little Foxes”; she also directed the play. “Autumn Garden” (1951) lacked the usual passion of her dramas but was a touch-



Lillian Hellman.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

ing and revealing insight into a southern boardinghouse. The style of the play is sometimes compared to the Russian writer Anton Chekhov's (1860–1904) work. "Toys in the Attic" (1960), a devastating portrait of possessive love set in New Orleans, won her another New York Critics Circle Award.

Work outside of the theatre

Hellman demonstrated her versatility as an author with a witty book for the musical "Candide" (1956); adaptations of two plays, "Montserrat" (1949) and Jean Anouilh's "The Lark" (1956); and her departure from realism (realistic pieces) in the humorous play of

Jewish family life, "My Mother, My Father and Me" (1963). She also edited *The Letters of Anton Chekhov* in 1955.

Hellman published three memoirs (personal writings) dealing with her career, personal relationships, and political activities: *An Unfinished Woman* (1969), *Pentimento: A Book of Portraits* (1973), and *Scoundrel Time* (1976). These works included her sharp criticism of the House Unamerican Activities Committee headed by Senator Joseph McCarthy (1908–1957), which accused hundreds of politicians, artists, and other Americans of being communists, the political design where goods and services are owned and distributed by the government. There was much discussion at the time about whether the content of these memoirs was greatly enhanced by Hellman.

Hellman received honorary degrees from several colleges and universities. Her theatrical awards included the New York Drama Critics Circle Award (1941 and 1960); a Gold Medal from the Academy of Arts and Letters for Distinguished Achievement in the Theatre (1964); and election to the Theatre Hall of Fame (1973). She also received the National Book Award in 1969 for *An Unfinished Woman* and a nomination in 1974 for *Pentimento: A Book of Portraits*. Hellman died June 30, 1984, in Vineyard Haven, Massachusetts.

For More Information

Hellman, Lillian. *An Unfinished Woman: A Memoir*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1969.

Hellman, Lillian. *Pentimento: A Book of Portraits*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1973.

Hellman, Lillian. *Scoundrel Time*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1976.

Rollyson, Carl. *Lillian Hellman: Her Legend and Her Legacy*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1988.

ERNEST HEMINGWAY

Born: July 21, 1898

Oak Park, Illinois

Died: July 2, 1961

Ketchum, Idaho

American author

Ernest Hemingway, American Nobel Prize-winning author, was one of the most celebrated and influential literary stylists of the twentieth century. His critical reputation rests solidly upon a small body of exceptional writing, set apart by its style, emotional content, and dramatic intensity of vision.

Childhood in the Midwest

Ernest Miller Hemingway was born in Oak Park, Illinois, on July 21, 1898. His father was a country physician who taught his son hunting and fishing; his mother was a religious woman, active in church affairs, who led her son to play the cello and sing in the choir. Hemingway's early years were spent largely in fighting the feminine influence of his mother while feeding off the influence of his father. He spent the summers with his family in the woods of northern Michigan, where he often accompanied his father on professional calls. The discovery of his father's apparent lack of courage, later

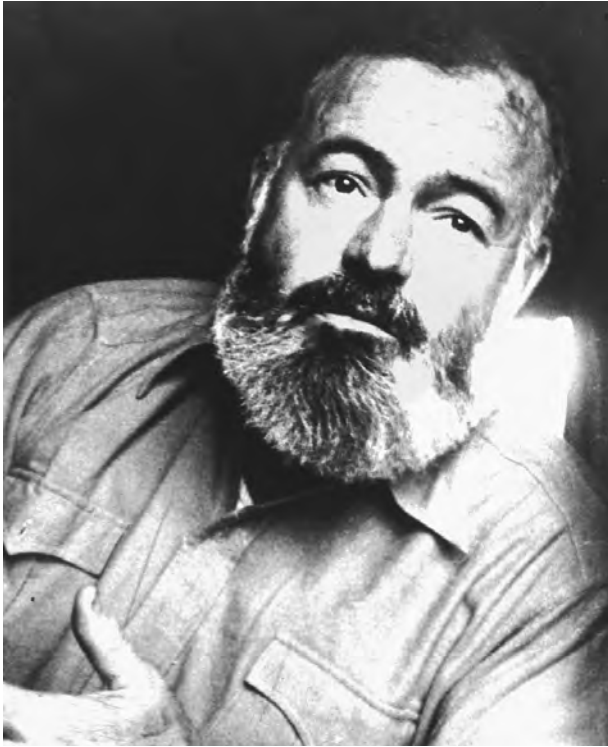
depicted in the short story "The Doctor and the Doctor's Wife," and his suicide several years later left the boy with an emotional scar.

Despite the intense pleasure Hemingway took from outdoor life and his popularity in high school—where he distinguished himself as a scholar and athlete—he ran away from home twice. However, his first real chance for escape came in 1917, when the United States entered World War I (1914–18; a war in which forces clashed for European control). Eager to serve his country in the war, he volunteered for active service in the infantry (foot soldiers) but was rejected because of eye trouble.

Hemingway then enlisted in the Red Cross medical service, driving an ambulance on the Italian front. He was badly wounded in the knee yet carried a wounded man on his back a considerable distance to the aid station. After having over two hundred shell fragments (parts of bullets) removed from his legs and body, Hemingway next enlisted in the Italian infantry, served on the Austrian front until the armistice (truce), and was decorated for bravery by the Italian government. Hemingway soon returned home where he was hailed as a hero.

Learning his trade

Shortly after the war Hemingway worked as a foreign correspondent in the Near East for the *Toronto Star*. When he returned to Michigan he had already decided to commit himself to fiction writing. His excellent journalism and the publication in magazines of several experimental short stories had impressed the well-known author Sherwood Anderson (1876–1941), who, when Hemingway decided to return to



Ernest Hemingway.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Europe, gave him letters of introduction to Gertrude Stein (1846–1946) and Ezra Pound (1885–1972)—two American writers living in Europe. Hemingway and his bride, Hadley Richardson, journeyed to Paris, where he learned much from these two well-known authors. Despite his lack of money and poor living conditions, these were the happiest years of Hemingway's life, as well as the most artistically productive.

In 1923 Hemingway published his first book, *Three Stories and Ten Poems*. The poems are insignificant, but the stories give strong indication of his emerging genius. With *In Our Time* (1925) Hemingway drew on his

experiences while summering in Michigan to depict the initiation into the world of pain and violence of young Nick Adams, a model for later Hemingway heroes.

Major novels

Hemingway returned to the United States in 1926 with the manuscripts of two novels and several short stories. That May, Scribner's issued Hemingway's second novel, *The Sun Also Rises*. This novel, the major statement of the "lost generation," describes a group of Americans and Englishmen, all of whom have suffered physically and emotionally during the war.

In December 1929 *A Farewell to Arms* was published. This novel tells the story of a tragic love affair between an American soldier and an English nurse set against the backdrop of war and collapsing world order. It contains a philosophical expression of the Hemingway code that man is basically helpless in a violent age: "The world breaks everyone," reflects the main character, "and afterward many are strong in the broken places. But those that it will not break it kills. It kills the very good and the very gentle and the very brave impartially. If you are none of those you can be sure that it will kill you too, but there will be no special hurry."

Hemingway revealed his passionate interest in bull-fighting in *Death in the Afternoon* (1932), a humorous and unique nonfiction study. Hemingway's African safari in 1934 provided the material for another nonfiction work, *The Green Hills of Africa* (1935), as well as two of his finest short stories, "The Short Happy Life of Francis Macomber" and "The Snows of Kilimanjaro."

In 1940 Hemingway published *For Whom the Bell Tolls*, his most ambitious novel. A wonderfully clear narrative, it is written in less lyrical and more dramatic prose (non-poetry writing) than his earlier work.

World War II

Following the critical and popular success of *For Whom the Bell Tolls*, Hemingway lapsed into a literary silence that lasted a full decade and was largely the result of his strenuous, frequently reckless, activities during World War II (1939–45; a war in which France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan). In 1942, as a *Collier's* correspondent with the Third Army, he witnessed some of the bloodiest battles in Europe. At this time he received the nickname of “Papa” from his admirers, both military and literary.

In 1944 while in London, Hemingway met and soon married Mary Welsh, a *Time* reporter. His three previous marriages—to Hadley Richardson, mother of one son; to Pauline Pfeiffer, mother of his second and third sons; and to Martha Gelhorn—had all ended in divorce. Following the war, Hemingway and his wife purchased a home, Finca Vigia, near Havana, Cuba.

Last Works

In 1952 *The Old Man and the Sea* was published. A novella (short novel) about an extraordinary battle between a tired old Cuban fisherman and a giant marlin, it was immediately hailed as a masterpiece and was awarded the Pulitzer Prize in 1953. A year later, Hemingway won the Nobel Prize for Literature.

Hemingway's declining physical condition and increasingly severe mental problems

drastically reduced his literary output in the last years of his life. A journey to Africa planned by the author and his wife in 1954 ended in their plane crash over the Belgian Congo. Hemingway suffered severe burns and internal injuries from which he never fully recovered. Additional strain occurred when the revolutionary Cuban government of Fidel Castro (1926–) forced the Hemingways to leave Finca Vigia.

After only a few months in their new home in Ketchum, Idaho, Hemingway was admitted to the Mayo Clinic to be treated for hypertension (high blood pressure) and depression, and was later treated with electroshock therapy, a radical therapy where an electric current is sent through the body. Made bitter by an illness that humiliated him physically and impaired his writing, he killed himself with a shotgun on July 2, 1961.

Many of Hemingway's unpublished and unfinished works were published after his death. Because of his amazing body of work, and his intense approach to life, Hemingway was arguably one of the most influential American writers of the twentieth century.

For More Information

- Baker, Carlos. *Ernest Hemingway: A Life Story*. New York: Scribner, 1969.
- Hotchner, A. E. *Papa Hemingway: A Personal Memoir*. New York: Random House, 1966.
- Meyers, Jeffrey. *Hemingway: A Biography*. New York: Harper & Row, 1985.
- Plath, James. *Remembering Ernest Hemingway*. Key West, FL: Ketch & Yawl Press, 1999.
- Reynolds, Michael. *Hemingway: The Paris Years*. New York: Blackwell, 1989.

Voss, Frederick. *Picturing Hemingway: A Writer in His Time*. Washington, DC: New Haven: Yale University Press, 1999.

JIMI HENDRIX

Born: November 27, 1942

Seattle, Washington

Died: September 18, 1970

London, England

*African American musician, songwriter,
and guitarist*

Jimi Hendrix was one of the most original electric guitarists of all time, combining blues, hard rock, modern jazz, and soul into his own unmistakable sound. He was also a gifted songwriter.

Raised by his father

Jimi Hendrix was born Johnny Allen Hendrix in Seattle, Washington, on November 27, 1942, the son of Al Hendrix and Lucille Jeter. His father—a gifted jazz dancer who worked at a number of jobs, including landscape gardening—bore much of the responsibility of raising the boy and his brother, Leon, as did their grandmother and various family friends. This was due to the unreliability of Lucille, who drank excessively and who would disappear for extended periods. Al Hendrix changed his son's name to James Marshall Hendrix in 1946. Al and Lucille divorced in 1951; Al Hendrix won custody of his sons and exercised as much discipline as he could, but the boys—young Jimi especially—worshipped their absentee mother.

Jimi Hendrix wanted a guitar early on. Before acquiring his first real instrument, he “played” guitar on a broom and on a one-stringed ukulele. At last Al got his son a guitar, and the twelve-year-old Jimi began to teach himself to play. Jimi restrung the guitar upside down—as a left-hander, he was forced to turn the instrument in the opposite direction from how it is usually played, which left the strings at the bottom unless he rearranged them. He learned blues songs from records by greats like B. B. King (1925–) and Muddy Waters (1915–1983). The guitar rarely left Jimi's side, even as he slept. By his mid-teens, Hendrix had formed a band called the Rocking Kings. He played behind his back, between his legs, and over his head—as had many blues guitarists before him. Thus he became a favorite to audiences, if not to all musicians.

Reputation grows

After dropping out of Garfield High School in Seattle, Hendrix joined the army at age seventeen to avoid a jail sentence for riding in a stolen car. He volunteered as a paratrooper (a person who jumps from planes using a parachute) and was soon jumping out of airplanes. Eventually he sent for his guitar and continued playing whenever he could. He met another soldier, bass player Billy Cox, with whom he formed a band that entertained troops all over the region. After leaving the army, the two friends formed the King Kasuals and began playing regularly at a club in Nashville, Tennessee. Hendrix became known as the hottest guitarist in town. At the time he lacked confidence in his singing and was content to back other artists.

Over the next few years Hendrix toured with several different bands, often stealing

attention away from bandleaders who expected him to stay in the background. Hendrix's looks and on-stage behavior were influenced by the early rocker Little Richard (1932–). Hendrix played with the Isley Brothers, with saxophonist King Curtis, and later with friend Curtis Knight. In 1965 he signed a contract with Knight's manager, Ed Chalpin, receiving an advance of one dollar. He then formed his own group, Jimmy James & the Blue Flames, and moved to New York.

Jimi Hendrix Experience

In September 1966 Hendrix was brought to London, England, by Chas Chandler, a member of the rock group the Animals who wanted to be a manager. Chandler suggested changing the spelling of Hendrix's first name to Jimi and helped him form the Jimi Hendrix Experience with bass player Noel Redding and drummer John "Mitch" Mitchell. Recording began the following month. By December the Experience had released its first hit single, "Hey Joe." Hendrix amazed even London's biggest rock stars with his electrifying stage show. He once said, "I sacrifice part of my soul every time I play."

The Experience's first album, *Are You Experienced?*, was a huge success. Back in the United States, crowds were stunned by Hendrix's performances, which included the burning of his guitar. The band's next album, *Axis: Bold as Love*, showed Hendrix's growth as a songwriter, but he was unhappy with the way it sounded. He was also becoming tired of audiences who expected a "wild man" act. Hendrix tried to expand his musical range on *Electric Ladyland*, an album he had complete control over, and that was the greatest achievement of his brief recording career.



Jimi Hendrix.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Management problems

At this point Ed Chalpin sued Hendrix over his contract with the guitarist, causing problems for several years. Hendrix's managers decided to build Electric Ladyland Studios, hoping to save money on recording costs. To help pay for the studio, Hendrix was forced into endless touring, which caused the Experience to break up. Hendrix then formed Band of Gypsies with his old friend Cox and drummer Buddy Miles. In 1969 Hendrix's famous performance of the "Star-Spangled Banner" at the Woodstock festival in New York captured the anguish of the Vietnam War era (1957–75; a war in which

the United States aided South Vietnam in their ultimately unsuccessful efforts to stop a takeover by Communist North Vietnam).

Band of Gypsies recorded only a live album before drummer Miles left. Mitchell returned, and Hendrix began recording tracks for a new album, to be titled *First Rays of the New Rising Sun*. Before it was finished, Hendrix died of an overdose of sleeping pills on September 18, 1970.

Jimi Hendrix was elected to the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame in 1992. The following year he received the Grammy Awards Lifetime Achievement Award. Many rock, rap, and blues artists contributed versions of his songs to the 1993 tribute album *Stone Free*. In 1999 Al Hendrix published *My Son Jimi*, a biography of his son's family life.

For More Information

Black, Johnny. *Jimi Hendrix: The Ultimate Experience*. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1999.

Hendrix, James A. *My Son Jimi*. Edited by Jas Obrecht. Seattle: AlJas Enterprises, 1999.

Murray, Charles Shaar. *Crosstown Traffic: Jimi Hendrix and the Rock 'n' Roll Revolution*. New York: St. Martin's, 1989.

Shapiro, Harry, and Caesar Glebbeek. *Jimi Hendrix: Electric Gypsy*. New York: St. Martin's, 1991.

HENRY VIII

Born: June 28, 1491
Greenwich, England

Died: January 28, 1547

Westminster, England

King of England

Henry VIII was king of England from 1509 to 1547. He established the Church of England and strengthened the position of king. But much of Henry VIII's legacy lies in his string of marriages during a quest for a son who would one day take his throne.

From boy to king

The second son of Henry VII (1457–1509), Henry VIII was born on June 28, 1491, at England's Greenwich Palace. As a child he studied Latin, Spanish, French, and Italian. He also studied mathematics, music, and theology (study of religion). Henry became an accomplished musician and played the lute, the organ, and the harpsichord. He also liked to hunt, wrestle, and joust (to fight on horseback). He also mastered the craft of archery.

Upon his father's death on April 21, 1509, Henry succeeded to a peaceful kingdom. He married Catherine of Aragon (1485–1536), widow of his brother Arthur, on June 11. Thirteen days later they were crowned at Westminster Abbey.

Foreign policy

As king of England, Henry moved quickly on a pro-Spanish and anti-French policy. In 1511, together with Spain, Pope Julius II, and others, Henry formed an alliance called the Holy League, in an attempt to drive French king Louis XII out of Italy. Henry claimed the French crown and sent troops to invade France. The bulk of the work in preparing for the invasion fell to Thomas Wolsey

(c.1475–1530), who became Henry's trusted war minister. Henry's army won a great victory in France at Guinegate, and the capture of Tournai and Thérouanne.

Peace was made in 1514 with France as well as with the Scots, who invaded England and were defeated at Flodden (September 9, 1513). The marriage of Henry's sister, Mary, to Louis XII (1462–1515) sealed the French treaty. The marriage would secure a worthy alliance (partnership), but Henry longed for greater power. But not even the work of Wolsey, however, could win Henry the precious crown of the Holy Roman Empire. With deep disappointment he saw it bestowed in 1519 on Charles, the Spanish king. He tried to secure Wolsey's election as pope in 1523 but failed.

The search for a son

In 1525 Catherine turned forty, fairly old for someone in the sixteenth century. Her seven pregnancies produced only one healthy child, Mary, born May 18, 1516. Afraid of not having a legitimate (legal) male heir, Henry believed Catherine's inability to give birth to a boy was a judgment from God. Soon, Henry began an affair with Anne Boleyn (c.1507–1536), a servant to Catherine.

A period of great social improvements known as the Reformation (1500s religious movement that affected the society, politics, and the economy) was stalled by Henry's negotiations to nullify (to make void) his marriage. While Catherine would not retire to a nunnery, Anne Boleyn demanded marriage—and the throne. A court sitting in June 1529 heard the case to nullify the marriage. It didn't work. He tried to secure Wolsey's election as pope in 1523 in hopes of using the



Henry VIII.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

papacy (office of the pope) to nullify his marriage. This too failed and Henry removed Wolsey from office in 1527.

Henry's strategy to rid himself of his wife matured when Thomas Cromwell (c. 1455–1540) became a councilor and his chief minister. Cromwell forced the clergy (Church officials) to meet in 1531 and accept Henry's headship of the Church. This position would allow Henry to finally annul his marriage. Anne's pregnancy in January 1533 brought matters to a head. In a fever of activity Henry married her on January 25, 1533; secured papal approval in March; had a court declare his marriage to Catherine invalid in May; and waited for the

birth of a son. On September 7, 1533, Elizabeth was born. Henry was so disappointed that he did not attend her christening.

A third marriage

Anne's attitude and moody temperament did not suit Henry, and her failure to produce a male heir worsened their relationship. She miscarried (a premature birth which results in the baby's death) a baby boy on January 27, 1536. It was a costly miscarriage, for Henry was already interested in another woman, Jane Seymour. Now determined on a second divorce, Henry brought charges of treason (high crimes against one's country) against Anne for alleged adultery (having affairs outside the marriage). Henry had her executed on May 19 and married Jane ten days later.

Jane brought a measure of comfort to Henry's personal life. She also produced a son and heir, Edward, on October 12, 1537. But Jane died twelve days later. Henry was deeply grieved, and he did not remarry for three years. He was not in good health and suffered from headaches, a painful leg problem, and blockage in his lungs which made him temporarily speechless.

War and marriage

The course of diplomatic (political) events, particularly the fear that Spanish king Charles V (1500–1548) might attempt an invasion of England, led Henry to seek an alliance with the Protestant powers of Europe. To solidify this alliance, Henry married the Protestant princess Anne of Cleves on January 12, 1540. His realization that Charles did not intend to attack, coupled with his distaste for Anne, led to the annulment of his marriage to Anne on July 9, 1540.

Henry was soon introduced to the nineteen-year-old Catherine Howard. He married Catherine within three weeks of his annulment to Anne of Cleves and entered into the later years of his life. In 1542, Catherine was beheaded on charges of adultery. The same year, the Scottish war began as did plans for renewed hostilities with France. War with France began in 1543 and dragged on for three years, achieving a solitary triumph before Boulogne (1545).

Henry then married the twice-widowed Catherine Parr on July 12, 1543. Though she bore him no children, she made him happy. Her religious views were somewhat more radical than those of Henry, who had revised the conservative Six Articles (1539) with his own hand. During his last years he attempted to slow the radical religious tendencies which resulted from the formal break with Rome.

The king was unwell in late 1546 and early 1547, suffering from terrible fevers. Before he died on January 28, 1547, Henry reflected that "the mercy of Christ [is] able to pardon me all my sins, though they were greater than they be."

The legacy of Henry VIII

Henry came to the throne with great gifts and high hopes. His relentless search for an heir led him into an accidental reformation of the Church not entirely to his liking. His desire to cut a figure on the European battlefields led him into costly wars.

Though personally interested in education, Henry sponsored no far-reaching educational policies. However, his interest in naval matters resulted in a larger navy and a well-developed naval administration. He brought

Wales more fully into union with the English by the Statute of Wales (1536) and made Ireland a kingdom (1542). The great innovations came out of the Reformation Statutes, not the least of which was the Act in Restraint of Appeals, in which England was declared an empire, and the Act of Supremacy, in which Henry became supreme head of the Anglican Church.

Henry ruled ruthlessly in a ruthless age. He was a king who wished to be succeeded by a son, and for this cause he bravely and rashly risked the anger of the other rulers in Europe. That he did what he did is a testament to his will, personal gifts, and good fortune.

For More Information

Lacey, Robert. *The Life and Times of Henry VIII*. New York: Praeger, 1974.

Scarisbrick, J. J. *Henry VIII*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1968.

Smith, Lacey Baldwin. *Henry VIII: The Mask of Royalty*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1971.

Weir, Alison. *Henry VIII: The King and His Court*. New York: Ballantine Books, 2001.

Weir, Alison. *The Six Wives of Henry VIII*. London: Bodley Head, 1991.

PATRICK HENRY

Born: May 25, 1736

Studley, Virginia

Died: June 6, 1799

Red Hill, Virginia

American revolutionary, orator, and lawyer

Patrick Henry, American orator (public speaker) and lawyer, was a leader in Virginia politics for thirty years. He became famous for the forceful and intelligent way he spoke that persuaded people to believe in, and act upon, his beliefs. He used this gift to help bring about the American Revolution (1775–83).

A slow start

Patrick Henry was born in Hanover County, Virginia. He was the second son of John Henry, a successful Scottish-born planter, and Sarah Wynston Syme. He received most of his education from his father and his uncle. After his failed attempt as a storekeeper, he married Sarah Shelton and began a career as a farmer on land provided by his father-in-law.

Henry's farm days were cut short by a fire that destroyed his home. He and his growing family were forced to live above a tavern owned by his father-in-law. He earned money by working in the tavern. By 1760 Henry had decided to become a lawyer. He educated himself for about a year and then was admitted to the bar, an association for lawyers.

Eloquent patriot

By 1763 Henry had realized two things: he wanted to help the common people, and he had a gift for public speaking. While defending the members of a church from a lawsuit filed against them by church officials, Henry criticized the church for pushing its members around. He also criticized the British government, claiming that it encouraged the church in its disrespectful behavior. These arguments made Henry very popular,



Patrick Henry.
Courtesy of the National Portrait Gallery.

and his supporters carried him victoriously out of the courtroom.

Two years later, as a member of the House of Burgesses (the elective lawmaking body in the British colony of Virginia), he made a powerful speech against the Stamp Act. This law, passed by Britain in 1765, placed a tax on printed materials and business transactions in the American colonies. Henry also supported statements against the Stamp Act that were published throughout the Colonies and made him even more popular. For ten years Henry used his voice and wide support to lead the anti-British movement in the Virginia legislature.

The Revolution

During the crisis caused by the Boston Tea Party (a 1773 protest against Britain in which Boston colonists disguised as Native Americans dumped three shiploads of British tea into the harbor), Henry was at the peak of his career. He traveled with George Washington (1732–1799) and others to Philadelphia as representatives from Virginia to the First Continental Congress. The First Continental Congress was a group of colonial representatives that met in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, in 1774 to discuss their dissatisfaction with British rule. Henry urged the colonists to write in firm resistance toward Britain. “The distinctions between Virginians, Pennsylvanians, New Yorkers, and New Englanders are no more,” Henry said. “I am not a Virginian, but an American.”

Elected to the first Virginia Revolutionary Convention in March 1775, Henry made one of the most famous speeches in American history. Trying to gain support for measures to arm the colony, Henry declared that Britain, by passing dozens of overly strict measures, had proved that it was hostile toward the colonies. “We must fight!” Henry proclaimed. “Is life so dear, or peace so sweet, as to be purchased at the price of chains and slavery? Forbid it almighty God! I know not what course others may take; but as for me, give me liberty or give me death!” The representatives were greatly affected by Henry’s powerful speech and Virginia rushed down the road to independence.

In 1775 Henry led a group of soldiers that forced the British to pay for gunpowder taken by British marines from an arsenal (a place where military weapons and equipment are made or stored) in Williamsburg, Vir-

ginia. He commanded the state's regular forces in Virginia for six months, but he eventually decided that he was not suited for a military role. At the Virginia Convention of May–July 1776, Henry supported the call for independence that led to the signing of the Declaration of Independence by Congress on July 4, 1776. In that same year, Henry was elected as the first governor of Virginia.

Devoted to Virginia

In three terms as wartime governor (1776–79), Henry worked effectively to use Virginia's resources to support Congress and George Washington's army. He also promoted the expedition of George Rogers Clark (1752–1818); the expedition drove the British from the Northwest Territory. During the years Henry served as governor, the legislature passed reforms that changed Virginia from a royal colony into a self-governing republic.

Henry left his post as governor in 1778 after serving two one-year terms to focus on family matters. His first wife had died in 1775, leaving him six children. Two years later he married Dorothea Dandridge, who was half his age and came from a well-known family of Tidewater, Virginia. Beginning in 1778, Henry had eleven children by his second wife, and family life kept him distracted from public life.

Still, Henry continued to serve in the Virginia assembly, engaging in verbal battles with other public speakers and focusing on efforts to expand Virginia's trade, boundaries, and power. Henry also served two more terms as governor of Virginia (1784–86). He grew more and more opposed to a stronger central government and refused to be a repre-

sentative to the Constitutional Convention of 1787. He did not trust men like James Madison (1751–1836) from Virginia and Alexander Hamilton (1755–1804) from New York, fearing that they were too ambitious and too focused on the nation as a whole, overlooking the needs of individual states.

Peaceable citizen

At the Virginia Convention of 1788, Henry began a dramatic debate with Madison and his supporters. He called upon all his powers of speech to warn the representatives of the dangers that he felt would be created by the new Constitution. He feared that federal tax collectors would threaten men working peacefully on their own farms and that the president would prove to be a worse tyrant (a ruler who has absolute control) than even King George III (1738–1820) of Britain. Henry also insisted that the new federal government would favor British creditors (persons to whom money or goods are owed) and bargain away American rights to use the Mississippi River. Despite Henry's arguments, the Federalists (a political party that believed in a strong central government) managed to win a narrow victory. Henry accepted their victory by announcing that he would be "a peaceable citizen." He had enough power in the legislature, however, to make sure that Virginia sent anti-Federalist senators to the first Congress.

Once Henry's influence over Virginia politics began to weaken, he retired from public life. He returned to his profitable law practice, earning huge fees from winning case after case before juries that were impressed by his powerful pleas. He also increased his real estate holdings, which made him one of the largest landowners in Virginia. Although

he was offered many appointments—as senator, as minister to Spain and to France, as chief justice of the Supreme Court, and as secretary of state—he refused them all. He was in poor health and preferred to stay home with his family. On June 6, 1799, Patrick Henry died of cancer at his plantation in Red Hill, Virginia.

For More Information

Mayer, Henry. *A Son of Thunder: Patrick Henry and the American Republic*. New York: F. Watts, 1986.

Meade, Robert D. *Patrick Henry*. Philadelphia, PA: Lippincott, 1957–1969.

Sabin, Louis. *Patrick Henry: Voice of the American Revolution*. Mahwah, NJ: Troll Associates, 1982.

Tyler, Moses Coit. *Patrick Henry*. New York: Houghton, Mifflin, 1887. Reprint, New York: Chelsea House, 1980.

Vaughan, David J. *Give Me Liberty: The Uncompromising Statesmanship of Patrick Henry*. Nashville, TN: Cumberland House Pub., 1997.

AUDREY HEPBURN

Born: May 4, 1929

Brussels, Belgium

Died: January 20, 1993

Tolochenaz, Switzerland

*Belgian-born British/Swiss actress
and humanitarian*

Audrey Hepburn was a popular movie actress who won an Academy Award in 1954 for her work in *Roman Holiday*. She also worked with the United Nations to improve the lives of the poor, especially children.

Her background

Audrey Hepburn was born in Brussels, Belgium, on May 4, 1929, the daughter of J. A. Hepburn-Ruston and Baroness Ella van Heemstra. Her father, a banker, deserted the family when she was only eight years old. Hepburn was attending school in England when the Germans invaded Poland at the start of World War II (1939–45; a war fought mostly in Europe, with Germany, Italy, and Japan on one side and the United States, Great Britain, France, and the Soviet Union on the other). England had promised to help Poland, which they did by declaring war on Germany. Hepburn's mother took her to live with relatives in Holland, thinking they would be safer there. The Germans soon invaded Holland, though, leading to the deaths of many of Hepburn's relatives and forcing her and her mother to struggle just to stay alive. Sometimes she had nothing to eat except flour. Still, as a young ballet dancer, she performed in shows to help raise money for the Dutch war effort.

Discovery and fame

Hepburn and her mother moved to England after the war, and she continued to pursue her dance career. She was cast in bit parts on stage and in films in both Holland and England before being discovered in 1952 by the French novelist Colette (1873–1954) in Monte Carlo, Monaco. Colette insisted that

Hepburn play the lead role in the Broadway production of her novel *Gigi*. Although Hepburn's lack of experience was a problem at first, she improved steadily, and reviews of the show praised her performance. She also won a Theatre World Award for her work.

Hepburn's nationwide exposure in *Gigi* also brought her to Hollywood's attention. She was given a starring role in Paramount Studios' *Roman Holiday*. Costarring Gregory Peck (1916–), the 1953 film tells the tale of a runaway princess who is shown around Rome, Italy, by a reporter who falls in love with her. He then convinces her to resume her royal duties. The role landed Hepburn an Academy Award for best actress at the age of twenty-four.

Hepburn was now highly sought after. Director Billy Wilder (1906–2002) signed her up in 1954 for his new film, *Sabrina*. The movie was about a chauffeur's (someone who is paid to drive a wealthy person's car) daughter whose education in France makes her the toast of Long Island, New York, society. Hepburn costarred with William Holden (1918–1981) and Humphrey Bogart (1899–1957), who was her love interests in the film.

Hepburn went on to share the screen with all of the top leading men of her time: Cary Grant (1904–1986), Fred Astaire (1899–1987), Rex Harrison (1908–1990), Mel Ferrer (1917–) (whom she married in 1954 and divorced in 1968), and Sean Connery (1930–). In 1959 she made her first serious film, *The Nun's Story*. Hepburn and Albert Finney (1936–) were applauded for their strong acting. Of Hepburn's twenty-seven films, quite a few have become classics. She was nominated (her name was put forward for consideration) for three other Academy



Audrey Hepburn.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Awards in addition to the one she won for *Roman Holiday*.

Works on behalf of children

After 1967's spooky *Wait Until Dark*, in which she plays a blind woman being pursued by a killer, Hepburn stopped working for a while. Acting became secondary in her life, as she bore a child at age forty during her thirteen-year marriage to Italian physician Andrea Dotti. Hepburn chose to spend her time with her two sons and work for the international children's relief organization UNICEF. "If there was a cross between the salt of the earth and a regal queen," actress

Shirley MacLaine (1934–) told *People* magazine, “then she was it.”

Hepburn made only four more movies between 1976 and 1989. The last, *Always*, featured her in a brief role as an angel. Money was not an issue; besides her own income, Hepburn lived in Switzerland with Robert Wolders, the wealthy widower of actress Merle Oberon (1911–1979), for the last twelve years of her life. Hepburn continued her work for UNICEF and was named the organization’s goodwill ambassador (representative) in 1988. Hepburn worked in the field, nursing sick children and reporting on the suffering she witnessed. Hepburn traveled to Somalia in 1992, and her sad but hopeful account focused worldwide attention on the famine and warfare that would eventually kill thousands in that West African country.

Shortly before her death in January 1993, Audrey Hepburn was given the Screen Actors Guild award for lifetime achievement. Unable to accept in person, she asked actress Julia Roberts (1967–) to accept the honor in her place. While Hepburn’s acting was highly appreciated in her lifetime, she would probably rather be remembered as UNICEF’s hard-working fairy godmother.

For More Information

Keough, Pamela Clark. *Audrey Style*. New York: HarperCollins, 1999.

Paris, Barry. *Audrey Hepburn*. New York: Putnam, 1996.

Walker, Alexander. *Audrey: Her Real Story*. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1995.

Woodward, Ian. *Audrey Hepburn*. London: W. H. Allen, 1984.

KATHARINE HEPBURN

Born: May 12, 1907

Hartford, Connecticut

American actress

For over fifty years Katharine Hepburn was a successful actress on the stage and on the screen, delighting audiences with her energy, her grace, and her determination.

Hepburn’s youth

Katharine Hepburn was born on May 12, 1907, in Hartford, Connecticut. Reports of the year of her birth date differ, but the years most frequently cited are 1907 and 1909. In her autobiography (1991) Hepburn stated her birth date as 1907. She was one of six children (three of each gender) born to a socially prominent, well-to-do, activist family. Her mother was a well-known and passionate suffragette (supporter of women’s right to vote); her physician father was a creative pioneer in the field of sexual hygiene. Her youth was filled with physical activity. Her social conscience was developed early in her life—she and her siblings formed a neighborhood performing group, sending the proceeds from one production to benefit Navajo children in New Mexico.

Educated by private tutors and at exclusive schools, Hepburn entered Bryn Mawr College in Pennsylvania in 1924. Upon graduating four years later, she immediately embarked on a successful career in the theater. Her critical success as an Amazon queen in the satire *The Warrior’s Husband* led to a

contract with the film studio RKO. In 1932 she made her film debut in that company's *A Bill of Divorcement*, playing opposite John Barrymore (1882–1942). She received rave reviews for her performance and achieved stardom overnight.

Screen career

Hepburn's screen career lasted for over fifty years and was based on a persona whose essentials included energy, grace, determination, trim athletic good looks, and obvious upper-class breeding (as indicated, among other things, by a clipped manner of speaking). This persona, when intelligently put to use by producers and directors, led her to four Academy Awards as "Best Actress" in the films: *Morning Glory* (1933); *Guess Who's Coming to Dinner* (1967); *The Lion in Winter* (1968); and *On Golden Pond* (1981). Hepburn also received an additional eight Oscar nominations over the years for the films: *Alice Adams* (1935); *The Philadelphia Story* (1940); *Woman of the Year* (1942); *The African Queen* (1951); *Summertime* (1955); *The Rainmaker* (1956); *Suddenly Last Summer* (1959); and *Long Day's Journey Into Night* (1962). Her role in the 1975 made-for-television film *Love Among the Ruins* won her an Emmy award.

Hepburn's career, however, was not without its setbacks, most notable of which occurred in the 1930s. A return to the Broadway stage in 1934 led to a role in a flop play, *The Lake*. In 1937 an important exhibitor placed an advertisement in a trade paper and described Hepburn, along with various other female stars, as "box office poison." RKO's indifferent response led Hepburn—at a cost to her of over \$200,000—to buy out her contract from the company. Shortly thereafter



Katharine Hepburn.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

she was rejected for the role of Scarlett O'Hara in the film version of *Gone with the Wind*. (1939).

Hepburn, determined to re-establish herself, returned to the Broadway stage, playing the lead in a successful production of *The Philadelphia Story*. Having invested in the production, she controlled the screen rights, which she ultimately sold to Metro Goldwyn Mayer (MGM) in return for a tidy profit and the studio's guarantee that she would play the lead in the film version. She did, and the film was a critical and a commercial success. Her Oscar nomination was but one demonstra-

tion of the dramatic way she had re-established herself in Hollywood, California.

Hepburn and Tracy and other romantic interests

Hepburn's next MGM film brought Spencer Tracy (1900–1967) into her life, with whom she began a relationship that lasted over two decades, until his death in 1967. Although separated from his wife, Tracy never divorced her. His romance with Hepburn was a quiet, tender, and private affair. In the 1960s Hepburn interrupted her career to care for the ailing Tracy. They were a team professionally as well as personally. They made nine films together over a period of twenty-five years, including: *Woman of the Year* (1942); *Keeper of the Flame* (1942); *Without Love* (1945); *Sea of Grass* (1947); *State of the Union* (1948); *Adam's Rib* (1949); *Pat and Mike* (1952); *The Desk Set* (1957); and *Guess Who's Coming to Dinner* (1967). Not all of these films were commercially or critically successful, but whether comedies or dramas, they were provocative and interesting, especially for their emphasis on the personal interaction between the sexes. Both Tracy and Hepburn played strong characters in these films, but neither was forced to give in to the other.

Hepburn had been married in 1928 to the social and well-to-do Ludlow Ogden Smith, who had changed his name to Ogden Ludlow because she did not want to be Kate Smith. The marriage actually lasted about three weeks before the couple separated, but they were not divorced until 1934. They remained friendly afterwards. Among her other romantic attachments in the 1930s was the well-known businessman and millionaire Howard Hughes (1905–1976).

Later career

Hepburn was not particularly lucky in her choice of work after the beginning of the 1970s. Except for a few notable exceptions, such as *On Golden Pond* (1981), the roles did not make good use of her considerable talents. Her television debut in 1972 as the mother in a version of Tennessee Williams' (1911–1983) moving *The Glass Menagerie* was not favorable. While apparently a great deal of fun for the stars on location, a pairing with the rugged action star John Wayne (1907–1979) in *Rooster Cogburn* (1975) proved to be lifeless. She had some success playing the noted French designer Coco Chanel (1883–1971) in a Broadway musical that opened in 1969; *Coco* had a long run but did not make impressive use of her capabilities. Several later Broadway undertakings proved to be failures.

Although Hepburn suffered some significant injuries in a 1985 automobile accident, and illnesses usual to one of her years, she golfed, cycled, and swam in the sea into her nineties. Katharine Hepburn provided some new perspectives on her personality and the roles she played on stage and screen in her autobiography, published after she retired from performance. In it she stressed the important influence of her intellectual family, and her continued closeness with her siblings and their children.

Katharine Hepburn never conformed to the traditional star image, but there is no doubt that she was a super star as an actress in movies, on stage, and on television. A strong-minded, independent woman, she has lived her life and her career to suit herself. In the process she has entertained, delighted, and aroused millions, and she has done so without compromising her beliefs.

For More Information

Bryson, John. *The Private World of Katharine Hepburn*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1990.

Hepburn, Katharine. *Me: Stories of My Life*. New York: Knopf, 1971.

Kanin, Garson. *Tracy and Hepburn: An Intimate Memoir*. New York: Viking Press, 1971.

Leaming, Barbara. *Katharine Hepburn*. New York: Crown Publishers, 1995.

HEROD THE GREAT

Born: 73 B.C.E.

Died: 4 B.C.E.

Jericho, Judea

King of Judea

Herod the Great, king of Judea, was an example of a class of princes who kept their thrones by balancing the delicate relations with the Roman Empire. Herod's much-criticized relationship with Rome would keep Judea safe and establish a Jewish state.

Herod's rise to power

Judea was ruled by high priests of the Hasmonean dynasty, descendants of the leaders who had freed the country from Seleucid rule. The Seleucid dynasty (312–64 B.C.E.) began with Seleucus I, who created an empire from part of the area of southwest Asia that had been controlled by Alexander the Great (356–323 B.C.E.). Herod's grandfather and father held prominent political

offices in Judea and established close relations with the Romans, the unquestioned world power during that time.

In 47 B.C.E., when Roman Emperor Julius Caesar (100–44 B.C.E.) momentarily settled Palestinian affairs, he seems to have entrusted Herod's father, Antipater, with the effective civil government. Antipater named his eldest son, Phasael, governor of Jerusalem and his second son, Herod, governor of Galilee, where he won favor with the Romans by his success in dealing with hostile military groups.

In 46 B.C.E. Herod was appointed governor of Coele-Syria and Samaria by Caesar's representative. But with the death of Caesar and the arrival of the new emperor, Cassius (d. 42 B.C.E.), Herod quickly dismissed his loyalty to Caesar and won Cassius's favor. He also married Mariamne, a Hasmonean princess and granddaughter of the high priest Hyrcanus II.

A Parthian invasion in 40 B.C.E. brought another change: Antigonus, a rival Hasmonean, became king of Judea, and Herod had to flee. He left his family in the fortress of Masada and went to Rome. There, Roman leaders Antony (c. 81–30 B.C.E.) and Octavian (64 B.C.E.—14 C.E.), the future Augustus, accepted him, and the Senate named him king of Judea.

Herod as king

The Jews, of course, did not accept Rome's right to choose their king for them. Herod, with Roman help, had to conquer his own kingdom, which did not occur until 37 B.C.E. Antigonus and his chief followers were soon put to death, and Herod turned to the problem of the high priesthood, the most powerful religious office in Judea. Herod did



Herod the Great.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

not have the correct ancestry to claim the office, and he needed a priest who could not rival him in power. But the Hasmoneans, even those connected to Herod by marriage, would not let go of their claims to the priesthood. By the end of this struggle, which raged for most of his reign, the priesthood had become only a temporary office held at the king's pleasure.

When Antony was killed, Herod found it relatively easy to shift his loyalty to Octavian. At the same time, Octavian saw no reason to look for another puppet to control in Judea and therefore stayed with Herod. Antony and

then Augustus supported Herod for a long time because he pursued a policy they thoroughly favored—bringing Judea into the Roman Empire. Herod consciously undertook to Hellenize (to copy the great culture of Greece) every aspect of life in his kingdom. Officials were given the titles and functions of royal ministers elsewhere, and non-Jews were given many of the highest posts.

Herod also brought his kingdom considerable prosperity. He stabilized the economy and reduced taxes. He encouraged trade and built the splendid port city of Caesarea. His city building had the further purpose of increasing Hellenization, for many of his cities, like Caesarea and Samaria (rebuilt and renamed Sebaste), were intentionally Hellenistic rather than Jewish, even to the extent of having a mostly non-Jewish population.

The end of power

During nearly his whole reign, Herod faced trouble within his own family. As early as 29 B.C.E. he had killed his wife, Mariamne, out of jealousy. As the years went by, the whole matter was further complicated by the question of who would replace him on the throne. Like many people with a strong will to power, Herod could not face the idea of losing it. Three of Herod's sons were put to death, and his brother "escaped death only by dying." When Herod finally did die in 4 B.C.E., two other sons had some claim to the throne. Augustus finally settled the matter by splitting the inheritance between these two sons and a third one, and not allowing the title of king to any of them.

In an age when the existence of the smaller states depended not on their own

strength but on the will of Rome, Herod kept Judea safe, secure, and prosperous. And yet, throughout his career Herod suffered from being caught somewhere between Jew and Gentile (non-Jew). He began the rebuilding of the Temple and acted as protector and spokesman for various Jewish communities scattered about the world. But despite his wish to strengthen the Jewish state, he still sought the favor of Rome, and this conflict would prove his ultimate failure.

For More Information

- Grant, Michael. *Herod the Great*. New York: American Heritage Press, 1971.
- Green, Robert. *Herod the Great*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1996.
- Perowne, Stewart. *The Life and Times of Herod the Great*. New York: Abingdon Press, 1959.
- Roller, Duane W. *The Building Program of Herod the Great*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1998.
- Sandmel, Samuel. *Herod: Profile of a Tyrant*. Philadelphia, PA: Lippincott, 1967.

WILLIAM HERSCHEL

Born: November 15, 1738

Hanover, Germany

Died: August 25, 1822

Slough, England

German-born English astronomer

The German-born English astronomer (scientist who studies stars and planets) Sir William Herschel discovered the planet Uranus, the motion of the sun in space, and the form of the Milky Way.

Early life

William (originally Friedrich Wilhelm) Herschel was born in Hanover, Germany, on November 15, 1738. His father, Isaac Herschel, was a musician in the Hanoverian guard, which William joined as an oboist (one who plays the oboe) at the age of fourteen.

After Herschel relocated with his brother to England in 1757, he conducted, copied, performed, and taught music to make his living. In Yorkshire he conducted a small military band, and from 1762 to 1766 he was a concert manager in Leeds, England. His notebook of 1766 has these entries: “Feb. 19. Wheatly. Observation of Venus” and “Feb. 24. Eclipse of the moon at 7 o’clock a.m. Kirby.” These are the first signs of Herschel’s future interests. By the end of 1766 he became organist at the fashionable spa town of Bath, England. In 1772 his sister, Caroline Lucretia Herschel, came to live with him at Bath. She worked with her brother on his studies of astronomy.

In 1773 there is a scientific entry of note in Herschel’s notebooks: “April 19. Bought a quadrant [an instrument for measuring the height of an object in the sky] and Emerson’s Trigonometry [the study of the properties of triangles].” That this entry marked the start of a new phase in his life is shown by the fact that it is followed by others of a similar nature: “Bought a book of astronomy . . . bought an object glass . . . bought many eye glasses . . . hire [rent] of a 2 feet reflecting tel-



William Herschel.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

escape.” These entries show that he was proposing to make his first (metal) telescope mirror. Joined by his sister, Caroline, Herschel began constructing reflecting telescopes.

Herschel’s career in astronomy

Obsessed with astronomy, Herschel progressed through cardboard and tin-tubed telescopes. When he tried to buy a much larger reflecting telescope in London, he could find nothing suitable or affordable. For this reason he began to build his own. By September 1774 he was observing the heavens with a Newtonian reflecting telescope with a 6-foot focal length of his own construction.

Meanwhile Herschel began to keep a record of what he saw in his observations from March 1, 1774. He observed the rings of Saturn, the moons of Jupiter, and the markings of the moon. In 1777 he began observations of a well-known but neglected star, Mira Ceti, which varies in brightness periodically. Soon he had the idea of determining the annual parallax of stars (the shift in what appears to be the positions of the stars as the earth goes around the sun). Whether the stars were so far away as to make this apparent movement unobservable was not then known. Herschel observed the compared positions of pairs of stars close together (called double stars). He measured hundreds of double stars, but in March 1778 he recorded his disappointment at finding “the stars in the tail of Ursa Major [the Big Dipper] just as I saw them three months ago, at least not visibly different.”

In recording double stars scientifically, on March 13, 1781, Herschel charted a pair of which “the lowest of the two is a curious either nebulous [body of space gas] star or perhaps a comet.” Four days later he looked for the object and found that it had moved. What he had discovered was the planet Uranus, as it is now known—the first planet to be discovered in historical times. Herschel was given the Copley Medal of the Royal Society and elected a fellow (member).

Herschel began writing, announcing his second great discovery, “Motion of the Solar System in Space”(1783). He carefully noted the proper motions of seven bright stars and showed that the movement in the intervening (time in between) time seemed to converge on a fixed point, which he interpreted correctly as the point from which the sun is retreating. Other discoveries followed,

including the first known map of the milky way's placement in the sky.

Later years

In 1788 Herschel married Mary Pitt, a wealthy widow, by whom he had his only son. Herschel was able to make a useful additional income by selling telescopes, and he invested money in building machines to help grind mirrors.

Herschel was knighted (honored by the king for his value) in 1816 and received honors from countries and academies the world over. He died in Slough on August 25, 1822.

For More Information

Armitage, A. *William Herschel*. London, New York: Nelson 1962.

Crawford, Deborah. *The King's Astronomer, William Herschel*. New York: J. Messner, 1968.

Hoskin, Michael A. *William Herschel and the Construction of the Heavens*. New York: Norton, 1963.

THOR HEYERDAHL

Born: October 6, 1914

Larvik, Norway

Died: April 18, 2002

Colla Michari, Italy

Norwegian anthropologist, author, and explorer

Norwegian anthropologist (scientist of human beings—their culture, numbers, characteristics, and rela-

tionships) Thor Heyerdahl popularized ideas about common links among ancient cultures worldwide. He was well known for his ocean journeys on primitive rafts and boats that were recorded in books, films, and television programs.

Early love of nature

Thor Heyerdahl was born into an upper-class family in the coastal village of Larvik, Norway, in 1914. His father, Thor, was president of a brewery and a mineral water plant, and his mother, Alison Lyng Heyerdahl, was chairman of the Larvik Museum. His mother studied zoology (the branch of biology that studies animals), folk art, and primitive cultures. She influenced her son greatly. His father was an enthusiastic outdoorsman. By age seven young Thor had started his own animal museum, filled with specimens of seashells, butterflies, bats, lemmings, and hedgehogs. The collection was housed in an old outhouse at his father's brewery.

Heyerdahl and his parents spent summer holidays at a log cabin in the wilderness, where Thor made friends with a hermit (person choosing to live alone and away from society) and learned much about nature. By sled and ski he also went on many winter camping trips to remote locations with his schoolmates. Throughout his early life Heyerdahl was determined to live in a more primitive setting.

In 1933 Heyerdahl entered the University of Oslo, in Oslo, Norway, and specialized in zoology and geography. In Oslo he spent a lot of time at the home of a family friend, who had a huge library of Polynesian artifacts. With his girlfriend, Heyerdahl decided to



Thor Heyerdahl.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

quit college and make an expedition (a trip made for a specific reason) to the South Seas. His father agreed to finance the trip. Heyerdahl was married on Christmas Eve in 1936, and the next day the couple set out for the Marquesas Islands. Here Heyerdahl discovered evidence that Peruvian (from Peru) aboriginal (the original citizens of an area) voyagers had visited the islands. The inhabitants told him stories of Kon-tiki, a bearded, white sun king who arrived over the sea.

Daring raft voyage

In 1938 the Heyerdahls returned to Norway and settled in a mountain wilderness

near Lillehammer. Then Heyerdahl did research among American Indian tribes in British Columbia (Canada) in 1939 and 1940, trying to support his theory that two waves of migration (moving from one area to another) from the Americas—one from the northern hemisphere (half of the earth divided by the equator) and one from the south—had settled Polynesia.

Heyerdahl found little acceptance of his ideas in academic circles. He planned a dramatic experiment to convince his critics that a voyage by ancient peoples from Peru to Polynesia was possible. In 1947 he and a crew traveled to Peru on a balsa raft, which they named the Kon-Tiki. Heyerdahl detailed the journey in *The Kon-Tiki Expedition*. The book was translated into dozens of languages and sold more than twenty million copies. Heyerdahl's documentary (having to do with recording real events as they happen) movie of the voyage won him an Academy Award in 1951. But while the Kon-Tiki voyage captured public attention, it was not met with any scientific respect.

Heyerdahl was among a group of scientists who believed that ancient cultures had come from a common source through land and sea migrations. The opposing scientists thought that civilizations had cropped up around the world independently of one another. The second theory has remained the popular one. Still, as writer Thomas Morrow noted in *U.S. News & World Report*, Heyerdahl "has turned up a surprising amount of convincing evidence suggesting sea contacts among remote [distant] ancient cultures, for which he gets little credit."

Explorations worldwide

In 1953 Heyerdahl went to the Galapagos Islands, off the South American coast.

There he and his companions found evidence that original people of South America had visited the islands long before the Incan Empire. In 1955 Heyerdahl led an expedition to Easter Island, the remote Polynesian island where enormous stone statues of unknown origin had been discovered in 1722. His team found a carving of a reed ship at the base of one of the statues and much other evidence that at least three migrations from South America had populated the island, the earliest in the fourth century.

In 1969 Heyerdahl organized a new expedition. In Egypt he and his crew built a papyrus (a tall grass that grows near the Nile River) reed boat that they named *Ra*, after the Egyptian sun god. They sailed across the Atlantic, a voyage of 2,700 miles, but the boat broke apart 600 miles short of Barbados. The next year Heyerdahl sailed the *Ra II* all the way from Morocco to Barbados in fifty-seven days. His account of these expeditions is found in his book *The Ra Expeditions*. To Heyerdahl the voyages were evidence that Egyptians or other sailors could have crossed to the Americas several thousand years before Christopher Columbus (1451–1506).

Later challenges

In 1977, at the age of sixty-two, Heyerdahl took up another challenge. He went to Iraq with a crew of eleven men and built a reed ship, the *Tigris*. They sailed it down the Tigris River, through the Persian Gulf, and across the Indian Ocean to the mouth of the Indus River in Pakistan, then westward to Djibouti at the mouth of the Red Sea on the eastern African coast. This 4,200-mile, five-month-long voyage was an attempt to show that the ancient civilizations of Egypt, the

Indus Valley, and Mesopotamia could have sprung from a single source. Political instability in the region brought an early end to this expedition.

In 1982 Heyerdahl and several archaeologists undertook an expedition to the remote Maldivian islands off the coast of India. There Heyerdahl was fascinated by stone statues that bore a striking resemblance to the monoliths (huge stone structures) of Easter Island. His discoveries led him to conclude that the Maldives also had been involved in prehistoric ocean trading and migration. Heyerdahl's 1986 book, *The Maldivian Mystery*, was hailed by some as a great detective story. It, too, was made into a film, as had his expeditions to the Galapagos and Easter Island.

Heyerdahl's voyages led him to become active internationally in fighting pollution of the oceans. In *Green Was the Earth on the Seventh Day*, Heyerdahl wrote about how his voyage on the Kon-Tiki had increased his awareness of threats to the environment.

Thor Heyerdahl died in Colla Michari, Italy, on April 18, 2002. He is remembered as one of the best-known explorer-adventurers of modern times.

For More Information

Blassingame, Wyatt. *Thor Heyerdahl, Viking Scientist*. New York: Elsevier/Nelson Books, 1979.

Heyerdahl, Thor. *Green Was the Earth on the Seventh Day*. New York: Random House, 1996.

Heyerdahl, Thor, and Christopher Ralling. *Kon-Tiki Man*. San Francisco: Chronicle Books, 1991.

EDMUND HILLARY

Born: July 20, 1919

Auckland, New Zealand

New Zealander explorer and mountaineer

Edmund Hillary was one of the greatest explorers and mountaineers of the twentieth century. His conquest of Mount Everest and the South Pole inspired generations of adventurers and dreamers.

Early years in New Zealand

Edmund Hillary was born in Auckland, New Zealand, on July 20, 1919. He spent his childhood in Tuakau, a rural area just south of Auckland where he went to the local primary school. Hillary was gifted with an active imagination and had a passion for reading adventure stories. Later he traveled daily to the city for secondary schooling, where he was a shy and awkward boy. As a child he helped in his father's beekeeping business and eventually quit school to work with his father full-time.

In 1935, during a ski weekend on a school trip to Mount Ruapehu, Hillary discovered his joy in the mountains and it never left him. He would often escape to the mountains to enjoy skiing and hiking, and he developed a love of climbing. A few years later he climbed his first mountain, the 7,500-foot Mount Oliver in New Zealand.

Hillary enlisted with the Royal New Zealand Air Force in World War II (1939–45), where New Zealand aided the Allied powers of America, England, and Russia in their war against the Axis powers of

Germany, Italy, and Japan. While serving as a navigator in the South Pacific, he was wounded in battle. Despite the physical setback, Hillary was determined to make a full recovery and resume mountain climbing.

Conquering Everest

During the 1940s, Hillary made many climbs in New Zealand, particularly in the Southern Alps. He quickly became recognized for his daring, strength, and reliability. Then came climbs in Europe that brought the invitation to join Sir John Hunt's expedition to Mount Everest, in the Himalaya Mountains in Nepal. For two years, Hillary joined Hunt in the Scottish Highlands to prepare themselves for Everest. The highest point on Earth, Mount Everest measures 29,028 feet high, roughly six miles. No one in history had successfully completed the climb, and many lives were lost during attempts. Famed climbers George Malloy and Andrew Irvine came close before they disappeared somewhere near the mountain's peak.

In March 1953, Hillary and Hunt, along with twenty other of the best climbers in the world, gathered at Everest. Their company also included 350 Nepalese workers carrying 10,000 pounds of food and equipment, as well as thirty-six Sherpas, people who are familiar with the rugged terrain and are invaluable guides for climbers.

With the party's base camp just 1,100 feet from the summit, Hunt sent a two-man team the rest of the way. They failed but returned to camp with valuable information about how to attack the summit. Next, Hunt chose Hillary and Sherpa guide Tenzing Norgay (1914–1986) to make an attempt. After a heroic and death-defying climb, the two

reached the summit on May 29, 1953, becoming the first two people to reach the top of the world.

The South Pole and beyond

After the Everest expedition, Hillary gained worldwide fame and a reputation as an adventurer. Vivian Fuchs, who later would be knighted, asked Hillary to become part of the Trans-Antarctic expedition in 1957 and 1958 that would cross the southern Atlantic Ocean to the South Pole. Hillary's job was to set up supply dumps from base camp towards the South Pole so that Fuchs's party could complete the crossing of Antarctica.

Hillary wanted to use the sophisticated Snow-Cats available to Fuchs, but he had to settle for Ferguson farm tractors for transport and hauling. When the last dump was established, Hillary made his own decision to head for the Pole, which he reached with his three tractors on January 4, 1958. He was the first person to travel there by land in forty-six years.

Through the 1960s and 1970s, Hillary continued to explore the Himalayas. He also led a renowned expedition by jet boat and on foot from the mouth of the Ganges River to its source. Like his other adventures, it was animated by his zest, good humor, and joy.

Adventurer to activist

Although Hillary had achieved world-wide fame for his adventures, he never lost touch with the Nepalese people and devoted much of his time to their environmental and social causes. Hillary built hospitals and schools in the mountains of Nepal by raising the money, buying the materials, and working on many of the buildings.



Edmund Hillary.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Hillary also expressed social concerns in New Zealand by commenting on public issues. His observations were noted for their simplicity and good sense. He was president of Volunteer Service Abroad and patron of an Outdoor Pursuit Centre and of the Race Relations Council. He was also active in the Family Planning Association and in conservation campaigns. He was strongly opposed to nuclear tests and to ocean dumping in the South Pacific or elsewhere.

Hillary's achievements were recognized internationally with the award of numerous decorations and honorary degrees, beginning with his knighthood in 1953. They

reflect the rare warmth and respect in which he was held. In 1985 he was appointed New Zealand high commissioner to India. He was also honorary president for New York's Explorers Club.

In 1975 Hillary's wife and teenage daughter were killed in an airplane crash. He later remarried, and after leading one last expedition in 1977, he retired to his bee farm outside of Auckland.

In retirement

Hillary remains an important voice in the sport of mountain climbing, even in retirement. He wrote the forward for a book by Helen Thayer titled *Polar Dream* (1993). In 1996 he reacted to the death of eight mountain climbers in a storm on Mount Everest with the comment to *Time's* David Van Biema, "I have a feeling that people have been getting just a little too casual about Mount Everest. This incident will bring them to regard it rather more seriously."

Hillary has also remained active in the region where he made his famous climb. The Sir Edmund Hillary Himalayan Trust provides funds and expertise to support reforestation, build schools and hospitals, and use technology such as solar power. He personally raised funds for the Nepalese people throughout the 1990s through public speaking engagements and lectures in the United States. In a 1995 interview with James Clash, Hillary said, "I think the most worthwhile things I've done have not been on the mountains or in the Antarctic, but doing projects with my friends, the Sherpa people. The twenty-seven schools we've now established, the hospitals—those are the things I would like to be remembered for."

For More Information

- Gaffney, Timothy R. *Edmund Hillary*. Chicago: Children's Press, 1990.
- Hillary, Edmund. *Nothing Venture, Nothing Win*. New York: Coward, McCann & Geoghegan, 1975.
- Hillary, Edmund. *View from the Summit*. London: Doubleday, 1999.
- Kamler, Kenneth. *Doctor on Everest*. New York: Lyons Press, 2000.
- Moon, Kenneth. *Man of Everest: The Story of Sir Edmund Hillary*. London: Lutterworth Press, 1962.
- Sufrin, Mark. *To the Top of the World: Sir Edmund Hillary and the Conquest of Everest*. New York: Platt & Munk, 1966.

S. E. HINTON

Born: 1950

Tulsa, Oklahoma

American author

Often considered the most successful novelist for the junior high and high school audience, S. E. Hinton is credited with creating realistic young adult literature. Her career began with the publication of her first book, *The Outsiders* (1967), at the age of seventeen.

Childhood and teenage novelist

Susan Eloise Hinton was born on July 22, 1950, in Tulsa, Oklahoma. Remarking that

there was little to do for a child growing up in Tulsa, Hinton turned to reading and writing at a very early age. The shy girl also had dreams of becoming a cattle rancher, until she abandoned this desire for a writing career.

As a teenager in Tulsa, Oklahoma, Hinton developed her love of literature but often found her options limited and boring. While she was a junior in high school, Hinton's father was diagnosed with cancer, a terrible and often fatal disease. To help her deal with her father's condition, Hinton turned to writing. During this time, Hinton completed a book she called *The Outsiders*.

Popularity of *The Outsiders*

Based on events that occurred in her high school in Tulsa, *The Outsiders* describes the rivalry between two gangs, the lower-middle-class "greasers" and the upper-class "socs" (for Socials), a conflict that leads to the deaths of members of both gangs. Narrated by fourteen-year-old Ponyboy, a sensitive, orphaned greaser who tells the story in retrospect (after the events occurred), *The Outsiders* explores the friendship, loyalty, and affection that lie behind the gang mystique while pointing out both the similarities in the feelings of the opposing groups and the uselessness of gang violence. Through his encounters with death, Ponyboy learns that he does not have to remain an outsider.

Initially regarded as controversial for its portrayal of rebellious youth, the novel is now recognized as a classic of juvenile literature as well as a unique accomplishment for so young a writer. *The Outsiders* was a major success among teenagers, selling more than four million copies in the United States alone. The book's popularity enabled Hinton to

attend the University of Tulsa, where in 1970 she earned an education degree and met her future husband, David Inhofe. However, gaining fame and fortune at eighteen was not without problems—Hinton had writer's block for several years.

Further novels

Eventually, however, Hinton produced a second novel, *That Was Then, This Is Now* (1971), a tale of two foster brothers, Bryon and Mark, who are drifting apart. One becomes more involved in school and girlfriends, the other moves deeper into a career of crime and drugs. In *Rumble Fish* (1975),

Hinton continued to explore the themes of gang violence and growing up. In this story a bitter young man, in a struggle to acquire a tough reputation, gradually loses everything meaningful to him. Hinton's next book, *Tex* (1979), which follows two brothers left in each other's care by their rambling father, likewise investigates how delinquent youths try to make it in a world shaped by protest, drugs, violence, and family disruption.

Movies

Hinton spent the ten-year interval between *Tex* and her next novel, *Taming the Star Runner* (1986), advising on the sets of several film adaptations of her books and starting a family. She also wrote the screenplay for the feature film version of *Rumble Fish* with director Francis Ford Coppola. In 1988 Hinton received the first Young Adult Services Division/School Library Journal Author Award from the American Library Association.

Hinton has not produced as much work as other young adult novelists, but that has not prevented her from becoming a consistent favorite with her audience. Two of the movies adapted from her books, *Tex* and *The Outsiders*, were filmed in response to suggestions from young readers.

Even though she is no longer a teenager involved in the world about which she writes, Hinton believes that she is suited to writing adolescent fiction: "I don't think I have a masterpiece in me, but I do know I'm writing well in the area I choose to write in," she commented to Dave Smith of the *Los Angeles Times*. "I understand kids and I really like them. And I have a very good memory. I remember exactly what it was like to be a teenager that nobody listened to or paid

attention to or wanted around. I mean, it wasn't like that with my own family, but I knew a lot of kids like that and hung around with them. . . . Somehow I always understood them. They were my type."

In 1995 Hinton published two books for younger readers, *Puppy Sister* and *Big David, Little David*, her first picture book. The intensely private Hinton lives in northern California with her husband and son, Nicholas David.

For More Information

Daly, Jay. *Presenting S. E. Hinton*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1987.

Wilson, Antoine. *S. E. Hinton*. New York: Rosen Pub. Group, 2002.

HIPPOCRATES

Born: c. 460 B.C.E.

Cos, Greece

Died: c. 377 B.C.E.

Larissa, Greece

Greek physician

The ancient Greek physician Hippocrates is called the father of medicine. He changed the course of Greek medicine with his certainty that disease was not caused by gods or spirits but was the result of natural action.

Early life

Hippocrates was born on the Aegean island of Cos, just off the Ionian coast near

Halicarnassus (island of Greece) during the end of the fifth century B.C.E. He is called Hippocrates Asclepiades, “descendant of (the doctor-god) Asclepius,” but it is uncertain whether this descent was by family or merely by his becoming attached to the medical profession. Legend likewise places him in the family line of the hero Hercules.

Son of Heracleides and Praxithea, Hippocrates’s family’s wealth permitted him to have a good educational beginning as a child. After nine years of physical education, reading, writing, spelling, music, singing, and poetry, he went to a secondary school, where he spent two years and had very thorough athletic training. It is likely that he went on to study medicine under his father in a form of apprenticeship (arrangement to learn a trade through work experience). This involved following his father and another doctor, Herodicos, from patient to patient and observing their treatment. It is believed that his training included traveling to the Greek mainland and possibly to Egypt and Libya to study medical practices.

Adult talents

Hippocrates is credited with healing many, including the king of Macedonia whom he examined and helped to recover from tuberculosis (disease of the lungs). His commitment to healing was put to the test when he battled the plague (a bacteria-caused disease that spreads quickly and can cause death) for three years in Athens (430–427 B.C.E.). It is also clear that the height of his career was during the Peloponnesian War (431–404 B.C.E.).

His teaching was as well-remembered as his healing. A symbol of the many students he encouraged is the “Tree of Hippocrates,”

which shows students sitting under a tree listening to him. In time he apprenticed his own sons, Thessalus and Draco, in the practice of medicine. The teacher and doctor role combined well in 400 B.C.E., when he founded a school of medicine in Cos.

Hippocratic Corpus

The body of writing attributed to Hippocrates, the *Hippocratic Corpus*, is a collection of roughly seventy works—the oldest surviving complete medical books. In ancient times some works in the *Hippocratic Corpus*, the first known edition of which are from the time of the emperor Hadrian (reigned C.E. 117–138), were recognized as having been written by persons other than Hippocrates. Modern scholars have no knowledge of his writing style to prove which of the works Hippocrates wrote. Nowhere in the *Hippocratic Corpus* is the entire Hippocratic set of guidelines found. Each subject was written with a particular reader in mind. Some books are directed toward the physician, some for the pharmacist, some for the professional physician, and some are directed more at the layman (person who is not an expert in the field).

In Hippocrates’s time doctors wrote treatises (written arguments) for the educated public, who in turn discussed medical problems with their doctors. The aim of these books was to teach the layman how to judge a physician—not to advise on self-treatment or even first aid in order to avoid seeing a doctor.

These medical treatises made up the *Hippocratic Corpus*. Modern readers can see that experimentation played its role in the Hippocratic view of medicine, because the individual approach to disease is nothing more than experimentation. It is obvious, too, that first-

hand experience played a part, since throughout the Corpus the plant ingredients of remedies are described by taste and odor. There are also instances of very basic laboratory-type experiments. *The Sacred Disease*, one treatise of the Hippocratic Corpus, describes dissections (the act of being separated into pieces) of animals, the results of which permitted comparisons to the human body to be drawn. Further, in their attempts to describe the body, the Hippocratics made use of external (outside) observation only. In *On Ancient Medicine* the internal organs are described as they can be seen or felt externally. It is most unlikely that dissection of the human body was practiced in the fifth century B.C.E.

Hippocrates favored the use of diet and exercise as cures but realized that some people, unable to follow such directions, would need medicine. His writings teach that physical handling could cure some physical troubles, like a dislocated hip, by the doctor moving it back into place. In *A Short History of Medicine* E. A. Ackerknecht summed it up: "For better or worse Hippocrates observed sick people, not diseases." This attitude is a timely solution to those who formerly insisted on the coldly scientific approach of the Hippocratic physician, who seemed to be so callous toward his patient.

Little is known of Hippocrates's death other than a range of date possibilities. Different sources give dates of either 374 B.C.E., the earliest date, or 350 B.C.E., the latest date. What lives on in modern medicine is his commitment to the treatment of disease.

For More Information

Cantor, David, ed. *Reinventing Hippocrates*. Burlington, VT: Ashgate, 2002.

Jouanna, Jacques. *Hippocrates*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1999.

Levine, Edwin Burton. *Hippocrates*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1971.

Lloyd, G. E. R. *Early Greek Science: Thales to Aristotle*. New York: Norton, 1971.

HIROHITO

Born: April 29, 1901

Tokyo, Japan

Died: January 7, 1989

Tokyo, Japan

Japanese emperor

Hirohito was the 124th emperor of Japan. He reigned during a period of internal unrest, foreign expansion, international war, and national defeat. As the occupant of Japan's throne for sixty-three years, he was the longest living ruler in modern history.

Childhood and education

Hirohito was born on April 29, 1901. He was the first son of Crown Prince Yoshihito, who later became the Taisho emperor, and the grandson of Mutsuhito, the Meiji emperor. Following long-established custom, Hirohito was separated from his parents shortly after birth. He was cared for by a vice admiral in the imperial (of the empire) navy until November 1904, when he returned to the Akasaka Palace, his parents' official residence. Even after his return to the palace, he was only allowed to see his mother once a week and hardly ever spent time with his father.

From early on, Hirohito was trained to act with the dignity, reserve, and sense of responsibility his future role would require and he grew into a shy and serious young boy. In April 1908 he was enrolled at the Gakushuin (Peers School) in a special class of twelve boys. The head of the school was General Maresuke Nogi, a celebrated soldier of the Russo-Japanese War (1904–05; a conflict with Russia over Manchuria and Korea). He took a personal interest in the education of the young prince and attempted to introduce him to respect the virtues of hard work, the importance of devotion to the nation, and the practice of stoicism (the ability to ignore pleasure or pain).

In 1912 Mutsushito died and paved the way for Hirohito's father Yoshihito to take the throne. Hirohito then began an intense study of natural history. Under the guidance of his natural history tutor, he developed an interest in marine biology, a field in which he became an acknowledged expert.

Crown prince

On February 4, 1918, Hirohito became engaged to Princess Nagako, daughter of Prince Kuniyoshi Kuninomiya. The imperial wedding finally took place on January 26, 1924. The imperial couple later had five daughters, the first born in December 1926, and two sons, the first born in December 1933.

In March 1921 Hirohito, accompanied by a large group of attendants, set off for a tour of Europe. Never before had a crown prince of Japan visited countries abroad. Although Hirohito traveled in France, the Netherlands, and Italy, his visit to England made the deepest impression on him. He was attracted by the freedom and informality (without ceremony) of the English royal family.



Hirohito.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

On November 25, 1921, shortly after his return to Japan, Hirohito was appointed to serve as regent (acting ruler) for his father, who had begun to show increasing signs of mental instability. In December 1923 Hirohito escaped an attempt on his life by a young radical.

Emperor of a restless nation

Hirohito took the throne on December 25, 1926. He took as his reign name Showa ("Enlightened Peace"), and he was formally known as Showa Tenno. However, the choice of reign name would not hold true. Shortly after Hirohito became emperor, Japan's relations with the outside world began to fall apart.

In 1927 Japanese army officers, without the agreement of Emperor Hirohito, sparked conflict with Manchuria and later occupied parts of that country. Hirohito soon found his military deeply involved on the Asian mainland.

The Manchurian incident ushered in a period of serious unrest within Japan. Young military officers plotted a series of unsuccessful takeovers as well as a number of successful assassinations (secretly planned murders). They hoped to overthrow parts of the government in order to establish a military regime that could govern in the name of "direct imperial rule." In other words, Hirohito would still be called emperor and would be the head of the government, but the military would actually be in control. Hirohito, however, saw himself as part of the state rather than a sole ruler and believed that the leaders of government should be men of moderation and nonmilitaristic in outlook.

During the military revolt of February 26, 1936, elements of the First Division occupied large areas of downtown Tokyo, and assassination bands murdered many leading public officials. Emperor Hirohito urged swift end to the revolt and punished those involved. The uprising was crushed, and a number of ranking generals who were thought to have encouraged the rebels were forced into retirement.

Road to war

Nevertheless the country continued to drift toward war. In July 1937 hostilities with China broke out. During the late 1930s Hirohito's advisers in the palace urged him to stay away from direct involvement in politics or be forced to compromise the position of the imperial family. The emperor followed this

advice, and agreed to whatever policies the governments decided upon.

There is every evidence that the emperor felt uneasy about the unfolding of events, particularly after 1940. He did not favor the alliance with Germany and Italy in World War II (1939–45), but he made no effort to oppose it. Similarly, he had grown distrustful of the judgments of the military leaders who kept assuring him of a quick end to the war in China. But when the final decision on war with the United States was made on September 6, 1941, he barely opposed it.

During the war Hirohito refused to leave the imperial palace at Tokyo, even after air raids began to demolish the city and fires destroyed many buildings on the palace grounds. He wished to share the hardships of his subjects.

Japan defeated

By the summer of 1945 it was clear that defeat was at hand. But the decision to surrender did not come until after atomic bombs were dropped on the Japanese towns of Hiroshima and Nagasaki. At a historic imperial conference on August 9, 1945, the emperor made clear his opinion in favor of surrendering to the allied powers led by the United States.

Following Japan's formal surrender in September 1945, there was much discussion about whether Emperor Hirohito should be punished as a war criminal. Hirohito himself frequently expressed his willingness to step down as a token of his responsibility for the war. But the U.S. authorities, including General Douglas MacArthur (1880–1964), decided that it would better serve the goals of Japanese stability to let him remain as ruler. On January 1,

1946, however, the emperor once and for all gave up any claims to being a sacred ruler by issuing a law that denied his god-like status as a descendant of the sun goddess.

Emperor's life as a mortal

During the years of the occupation and afterward, every effort was made to “democratize” the throne by having the emperor mingle with the people. Even though he was personally distant and somewhat awkward in public, the emperor nevertheless became a popular figure. Pictures of the imperial family and stories of their activities became a steady part of weekly magazine and newspaper copy.

A respected marine biologist with a number of books on that subject to his credit, Emperor Hirohito lived a modest, sober, and retired life when not involved in official functions. In 1972 he traveled to Europe and was met with hostile demonstrations. A 1975 trip to the United States resulted in a more friendly reception. Hirohito died on January 7, 1989, at the age of eighty-seven. Symbolic of his interest in science and in modernizing his country, Hirohito reportedly was buried with his microscope and a Mickey Mouse watch.

For More Information

Bix, Herbert P. *Hirohito and the Making of Modern Japan*. New York: HarperCollins, 2000.

Hoyt, Edwin Palmer. *Hirohito: The Emperor and the Man*. New York: Praeger, 1992.

Large, Stephen S. *Emperors of the Rising Sun: Three Biographies*. New York: Kodansha International, 1997.

Mosley, Leonard. *Hirohito, Emperor of Japan*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1966.

Severns, Karen. *Hirohito*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.

ALFRED HITCHCOCK

Born: August 13, 1899

London, England

Died: April 29, 1980

Los Angeles, California

English film director

Alfred Hitchcock was a film director famous for well-made suspense thrillers such as *Strangers on a Train*, *Rear Window*, and *Psycho*. He was interested in showing the terror in everyday situations.

Early life and education

Alfred Hitchcock was born in London, England, on August 13, 1899, the youngest of William and Emma Whalen Hitchcock's three children. His father was a poultry salesman and an importer of fruit. Hitchcock was generally a quiet child; however, at five years old his father arranged to have him locked in a cell at the local police station for five minutes after he misbehaved. Hitchcock developed a lifelong interest in the subject of guilt, which was further developed during his time at the strict St. Ignatius College. He also attended the University of London, planning to pursue a career in electrical engineering. After leaving the university he worked with a telegraph company and in advertising.

Hitchcock soon became interested in motion picture production and found a job



Alfred Hitchcock.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

as a title card writer with the British division of the Famous Players-Lasky Company, which later became Paramount Pictures. In 1923 he began writing scenes for the Gainsborough Film Studios. Hitchcock's first film as a director was *The Pleasure Garden*, which was filmed in Germany. His other early films included *The Lodger* (1925), an exciting treatment of the Jack the Ripper story, and *Blackmail* (1930), the first British picture with sound. Some think that Hitchcock's next films, *The Man Who Knew Too Much* (1934) and *The Thirty-Nine Steps* (1935), were responsible for the revival in British movie making during the early 1930s.

Goes Hollywood

In 1939 Hitchcock left England with his wife and daughter to settle in Hollywood, California. For the most part his American films of the 1940s were expensively produced and entertaining. These included *Rebecca* (1940), based on a best-selling suspense novel; *Suspicion* (1941), about a woman who believes her husband is a murderer; *Lifeboat* (1944), a study of survival on the open seas; and *Spellbound* (1945), a murder mystery. Less ambitious but more accomplished was *Notorious* (1946). Hitchcock's first ten years in Hollywood ended with two interesting failures: *The Paradine Case* (1947) and *Rope* (1948).

Beginning with the unusual *Strangers on a Train* (1951), Hitchcock directed a series of films that placed him among the great artists of modern film. His most important films during that time were *I Confess* (1953), *Rear Window* (1954), *To Catch a Thief* (1955), *The Trouble with Harry* (1956), *The Man Who Knew Too Much* (1956), *Vertigo* (1958), and *North by Northwest* (1959). Many of Hitchcock's films deal with the theme of an ordinary person caught up in situations beyond his or her control. Hitchcock himself also made a brief appearance (or "cameo") in one scene in each of his films.

Later years

Psycho (1960) was Hitchcock's most terrifying and controversial (causing dispute) film, and its most famous scene made an entire generation of moviegoers nervous about taking a shower. *The Birds* (1963), *Marnie* (1964), and *Family Plot* (1976) were Hitchcock's final and less brilliant films. Hitchcock also expanded his directing career into American television, with a series that featured mini-thrillers (1955–65). Because of failing

health, he retired from directing after *Family Plot*. He was knighted in 1979 and died soon afterward in Los Angeles on April 29, 1980.

Hitchcock's films enjoyed new popularity in the 1990s. After a restored version of *Vertigo* was released in 1996 and was surprisingly successful, plans were made to re-release other films, such as *Strangers on a Train*. According to *Entertainment Weekly*, as of 1997 plans were underway to remake as many as half a dozen Hitchcock films with new casts, an idea that met with mixed responses from Hitchcock fans.

For More Information

Mogg, Ken. *The Alfred Hitchcock Story*. Dallas: Taylor, 1999.

Perry, George. *Hitchcock*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1975.

Spoto, Donald. *The Art of Alfred Hitchcock*. New York: Hopkinson and Blake, 1976.

Spoto, Donald. *The Dark Side of Genius: The Life of Alfred Hitchcock*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1983.

Taylor, John Russell. *Hitch: The Life and Times of Alfred Hitchcock*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1978.

ADOLF HITLER

Born: April 20, 1889

Braunau, Austria

Died: April 30, 1945

Berlin, Germany

German dictator and nationalist

The German dictator Adolf Hitler led the extreme nationalist and racist Nazi party and served as chancellor-president of Germany from 1933 to 1945. Arguably one of the most effective and powerful leaders of the twentieth century, his leadership led to the deaths of nearly six million Jews.

Early life

Adolf Hitler was born on April 20, 1889, in the small Austrian town of Braunau on the Inn River along the Bavarian-German border. The son of an extremely strong-willed Austrian customs official, his early youth seems to have been controlled by his father until his death in 1903. Adolf soon became rebellious and began failing at school. He finally left formal education altogether in 1905 and began his long years of aimless existence, reading, painting, wandering in the woods, and dreaming of becoming a famous artist. In 1907, when his mother died, he moved to Vienna in an attempt to enroll in the famed Academy of Fine Arts. His failure to gain admission that year and the next led him into a period of deep depression as he drifted away from his friends.

It was during this time of feeling rootless that Hitler first became fascinated by the immense potential of mass political manipulation (control). He was particularly impressed by the successes of the anti-Semitic, or anti-Jewish, nationalist Christian-Socialist party of Vienna Mayor Karl Lueger (1844–1910). Lueger's party efficiently used propaganda (spreading a message through literature and the media) and mass organization. Hitler began to develop the extreme anti-Semitism and racial mythology that were

to remain central to his own “ideology” and that of the Nazi party.

In May 1913, Hitler returned to Munich, and after the outbreak of World War I (1914–18) a year later, he volunteered for action in the German army in their war against other European powers and America. During the war he fought on Germany’s Western front with distinction but gained no promotion (advancement) beyond the rank of corporal (a low-ranking military officer). Injured twice, he won several awards for bravery, among them the highly respected Iron Cross First Class.

Early Nazi years

The end of the war left Hitler without a place or goal and drove him to join the many veterans who continued to fight in the streets of Germany. In the spring of 1919, he found employment as a political officer in the army in Munich with the help of an adventurer-soldier by the name of Ernst Röhm (1887–1934)—later head of Hitler’s elite soldiers, the storm troopers (SA). In this capacity Hitler attended a meeting of the so-called German Workers’ party, a nationalist, anti-Semitic, and socialist group, in September 1919. He quickly distinguished himself as this party’s most popular and impressive speaker and propagandist, and he helped to increase its membership dramatically to some six thousand by 1921. In April of that year he became Führer (leader) of the renamed National Socialist German Workers’ party (NSDAP), the official name of the Nazi party.

The poor economic conditions of the following years contributed to the rapid growth of the party. By the end of 1923, Hitler could count on a following of some fifty-six thousand

members and many more sympathizers, and regarded himself as a strong force in Bavarian and German politics. Hitler hoped to use the crisis conditions to stage his own overthrow of the Berlin government. For this purpose he staged the Nazi Beer Hall Putsch of November 8–9, 1923, by which he hoped to force the conservative-nationalist Bavarian government to cooperate with him in a “March on Berlin.” The attempt failed, however. Hitler was tried for treason (high crimes against one’s country) and given the rather mild sentence of a year’s imprisonment in the old fort of Landsberg.

It was during this prison term that many of Hitler’s basic ideas of political strategy and tactics matured. Here he outlined his major plans and beliefs in *Mein Kampf*, which he dictated to his loyal confidant Rudolf Hess (1894–1987). He planned the reorganization of his party, which had been outlawed and had lost much of its appeal. After his release, Hitler reconstituted the party around a group of loyal followers who were to remain the center of the Nazi movement and state.

Rise to power

With the outbreak of world depression in the 1930s, the fortunes of Hitler’s movement rose rapidly. In the elections of September 1930, the Nazis polled almost 6.5 million votes, and the party had gained undeniable popularity in Germany. In November 1932, President Hindenburg (1847–1934) reluctantly called Hitler to the chancellorship to head a coalition government of Nazis, conservative German nationalists, and several prominent independents.

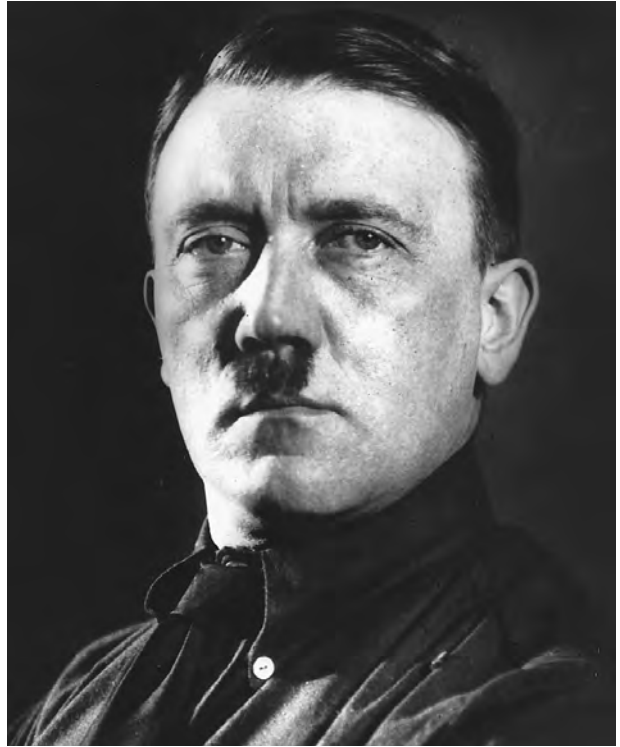
The first two years in office were almost wholly dedicated to balancing power. With several important Nazis in key positions and

Hitler's military ally Werner von Blomberg in the Defense Ministry, he quickly gained practical control. Hitler rapidly eliminated his political rivals and brought all levels of government and major political institutions under his control. The death of President Hindenburg in August 1934 cleared the way for Hitler to remove the title of president. By doing this, Hitler officially became Führer (all-powerful ruler) of Germany and thereby head of state, as well as commander in chief of the armed forces. Joseph Goebbels's (1897–1945) extensive propaganda machine and Heinrich Himmler's (1900–1945) police system perfected the complete control of Germany. Likewise, Hitler's rule was demonstrated most impressively in the great Nazi mass rally of 1934 in Nuremberg, Germany, where millions marched in unison and saluted Hitler's theatrical appeals.

Preparation for war

Once internal control was assured, Hitler began mobilizing Germany's resources for military conquest and racial domination of central and eastern Europe. He put Germany's six million unemployed to work to prepare the nation for war. Hitler's propaganda mercilessly attacked the Jews, whom Hitler associated with all internal and external problems in Germany. Most horrifying was Hitler's installment of the "final solution" of imprisoning and eventually destroying all Jewish men, women, and children in Himmler's concentration camps.

Foreign relations were similarly directed toward preparation for war. The improvement of Germany's military position and the acquisition of strong allies set the stage for world war. To Germany he annexed, or



Adolf Hitler.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

added, Austria and the German-speaking Sudetenland of Czechoslovakia, only to occupy all of Czechoslovakia early in 1939. Finally, through threats and promises of territory, Hitler was able to gain the neutrality of the Soviet Union, the former nation that was made up of Russia and other smaller states. Alliances with Italy and Japan followed.

The war

On September 1, 1939, Hitler began World War II with his quest to control Europe. The sudden invasion of Poland was immediately followed by the destroying of Jews and the Polish elite, and the beginnings

of German colonization. Following the declaration of war by France and England, Hitler temporarily turned his military machine west, where the light, mobile attacks of the German forces quickly triumphed. In April 1940, Denmark surrendered, soon followed by Norway. In May and June the rapidly advancing tank forces defeated France and the Low Countries. In the Air Battle of Britain, England sustained heavy damage, but held out after German naval operations collapsed.

The major goal of Hitler's conquest lay in the East. On June 22, 1941, the German army advanced on Russia in the so-called Operation Barbarossa, which Hitler regarded as Germany's final struggle for existence and "living space" (*Lebensraum*) and for the creation of the "new order" of German racial domination. However, after initial rapid advances, the German troops were stopped by the severe Russian winter and failed to reach any of their three major goals: Leningrad, Moscow, and Stalingrad. The following year's advances were again slower than expected, and with the first major setback at Stalingrad (1943), the long retreat from Russia began. A year later, the Western Allied forces of America, England, and Russia started advancing on Germany.

German defeat

With the German war effort collapsing, Hitler withdrew almost entirely from the public. His orders became increasingly erratic (different from what is normal or expected), and he refused to listen to advice from his military counselors. He dreamed of miracle bombs and suspected betrayal everywhere. Under the slogan of "total victory or total ruin," the entire German nation from young boys to old men, often barely

equipped or trained, was mobilized and sent to the front. After an unsuccessful assassination attempt on July 20, 1944, by a group of former leading politicians and military men, Hitler's reign of terror further tightened.

In the last days of the Nazi rule, with the Russian troops in the suburbs of Berlin, Hitler entered into a last stage of desperation in his underground bunker in Berlin. He ordered Germany destroyed, believing it was not worthy of him. He expelled his trusted lieutenants Heinrich Himmler and Hermann Göring (1893–1946) from the party and made a last, theatrical appeal to the German nation. Adolf Hitler committed suicide on April 30, 1945, leaving behind a legacy of evil and terror unequaled by any leader in the modern world.

For More Information

- Giblin, James Cross. *The Life and Death of Adolf Hitler*. New York: Clarion Books, 2002.
- Marrin, Albert. *Hitler*. New York: Viking Kestrel, 1987.
- Toland, John. *Adolf Hitler*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1976.
- Zitellmann, Rainier. *Hitler: The Policies of Seduction*. London: London House, 1999.

HO
CHI MINH

Born: May 19, 1890
Nghe An, Vietnam

Died: September 3, 1969

Hanoi, Vietnam

Vietnamese revolutionary and president

Ho Chi Minh was the founder and first leader of the Vietnamese Communist Party. He led the movement for Vietnamese independence and unity through struggles with France and the United States. He also served as president of the Democratic Republic of Vietnam from 1945 until his death in 1969.

Early life

Ho Chi Minh was born Nguyen Sinh Cung on May 19, 1890, in Nghe An province in central Vietnam. Nghe An had been the center of resistance to the thousand-year Chinese control of Vietnam from 111 B.C.E. to 939 C.E. and the Ming Dynasty in the fifteenth century. Many of the leaders of the opposition to French control in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries also came from the province. Ho's father, Nguyen Sinh Huy, educated himself to pass the civil service exam and worked for the government. He eventually resigned in protest against French involvement in Vietnamese affairs. When Ho was ten years old, his mother died while giving birth. Ho had two older siblings, a sister named Thanh and a brother named Khiem.

Ho's opposition to colonialism (the rule of an area and its people by another country) began at the age of nine, when he worked as a messenger for an anticolonial organization. His father also introduced him to several revolutionaries. Ho went on to attend the National Academy in Hué, Vietnam. Dismissed from the academy after taking part in

protests against the French in 1908, he traveled to southern Vietnam in 1909 and worked briefly as a schoolteacher. Ho signed on as a cook with a French steamship company in 1911. At sea for two years, he visited ports in Europe, Africa, and the United States and began to develop his language skills, eventually learning Chinese, French, Russian, English, and Thai in addition to his native Vietnamese.

Committed to communism

During World War I (1914–18), Ho worked in London, England, and Paris, France. This is when his lifelong commitment to communism and Vietnamese independence began. Communism refers to a system in which the means of production (such as land, factories, and mines) are owned by the people as a whole rather than by individuals. Communists believe that such a system can be achieved only by revolution and government by a single party. In Paris, Ho adopted the name Nguyen Ai Quoc (Nguyen the Patriot) and attracted attention when he presented a written request to the Versailles Peace Conference demanding independence for Vietnam. Ho became a founding member of the French Communist Party in 1920. From 1920 to 1923, he was an outspoken leader of the Vietnamese community in Paris, participating in the Intercolonial Union formed under Communist sponsorship and publishing two anticolonial journals.

Ho was invited to Moscow, Russia, in 1923, where he studied at the University of Oriental Workers. In 1925 he was sent to China to organize a communist movement. He formed the Thanh Nien (Vietnamese Revolutionary Youth League), whose members

HO CHI MINH



Ho Chi Minh.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

were mostly Vietnamese students in the southern Chinese port city of Canton. The league called for independence, redistribution of land, fair taxation, and equal rights for men and women. In 1927 Ho was forced to leave Canton after a Chinese government crackdown on local communists. During his absence, the league began to split into different factions, or groups. Ho returned to South China in early 1930 to unite the factions as a formal Communist Party, drawing its members from Vietnam, Cambodia, and Laos. He continued his organizing in Hong Kong and Shanghai but was arrested by the British in 1931 and imprisoned for two years. Released

in 1933, he spent the next several years in the Soviet Union.

Return to Vietnam

In 1940 Ho returned to South China and met with members of the Indochinese Communist Party (ICP). The following May, with most of Vietnam under Japanese occupation, he chaired a meeting of the party's Central Committee inside the Vietnamese border, marking his first return to Vietnam in thirty years. Ho and the ICP then announced the formation of the Viet Minh (League for Vietnamese Independence), an organization demanding independence from French rule and Japanese military occupation. From 1941 to 1945, although imprisoned again in China for more than a year, Ho led the ICP in seeking support for the Viet Minh, forming alliances with American diplomats and intelligence officers in South China, helping victims of a famine that killed over two million people in north and central Vietnam from 1943 to 1944, and building up the party's military forces.

In August 1945 Viet Minh forces attempted to seize power in Vietnam. On September 2, 1945, Ho Chi Minh, as president of the Democratic Republic of Vietnam, stood before thousands of supporters in the city of Hanoi. He proclaimed "that Vietnam has the right to be a free and independent country—and in fact is so already." At the end of World War II (1939–45), the French tried to regain control of Vietnam. Although Ho reached a settlement agreement with the French in March 1946, calling for the creation of a Vietnamese "free state" within the French Union, the French changed their minds. In December, war broke out between

Vietnamese and French forces. By 1954 the French had tired of war and sought a settlement at the Geneva Conference. In July an agreement was reached calling for a truce and division of Vietnam into a Communist north and a non-Communist south.

Later years

After 1954 Ho Chi Minh remained president of the Democratic Republic of Vietnam and chairman of the Communist Party but slowly turned over day-to-day responsibilities to others. Ho was active internationally, where he promoted Vietnamese interests within other countries and attempted to prevent a split between the Soviet Union and China. A land reform campaign from 1954 to 1956 was a major failure. Modeled on land redistribution plans developed by Chinese Communists, the reforms were very unpopular among Vietnamese peasants, some five thousand of whom were killed by Ho's government in its determination to make the plan work.

Ho also oversaw the formation of the National Liberation Front (NLF) in 1960, a movement of resistance against the non-Communist government in southern Vietnam. Clashes between that government and the NLF led the United States military to step in on the side of the South Vietnamese. As the American military commitment increased, with the arrival of American ground troops and the beginning of a heavy bombing campaign against northern Vietnam in 1965, Ho sought to maintain good relations with the Soviet Union and China in order to obtain military assistance and supplies from both Communist powers.

Beginning in the mid-1960s, Ho Chi Minh's health declined, and he made only

occasional public appearances. He never married, but he was widely viewed in North Vietnam as the father of his country and often referred to in his later years as Bac (Uncle) Ho. He died of a heart attack on September 3, 1969, almost six years before the U.S.-backed South Vietnamese government was defeated and Vietnam was unified. The city of Saigon was renamed Ho Chi Minh City in his honor.

For More Information

Duiker, William J. *The Communist Road to Power*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 1981.

Duiker, William J. *Ho Chi Minh*. New York: Hyperion, 2000.

Halberstam, David. *Ho*. New York, Random House, 1971.

Kahin, George. *Intervention*. New York: Knopf, 1986.

Lloyd, Dana Ohlmeyer. *Ho Chi Minh*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1986.

THOMAS HOBBS

Born: April 5, 1588

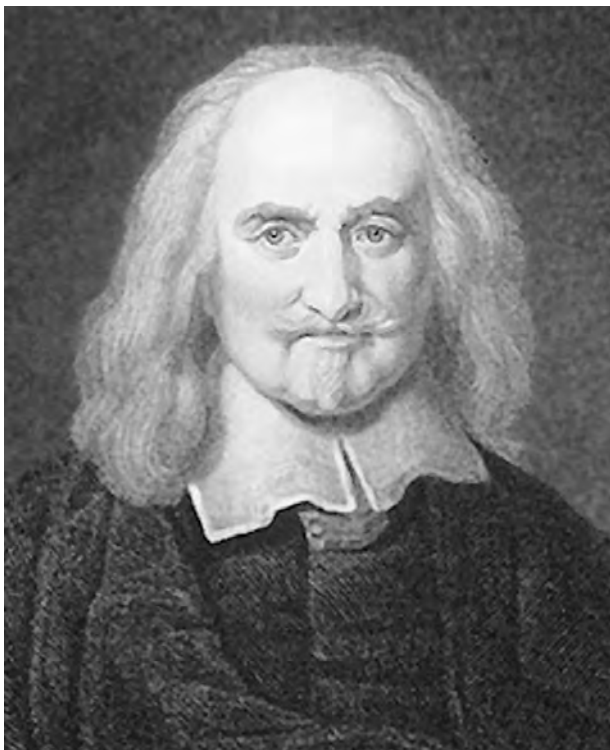
Westport, England

Died: December 4, 1679

Hardwick Hall, England

English philosopher and political theorist

The English philosopher and political theorist Thomas Hobbes was one of the central figures of political thought behind the British Empire. His major



Thomas Hobbes.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

work, “Leviathan,” published in 1651, expressed his idea that basic human motives are selfish.

Childhood

Born prematurely on April 5, 1588, when his mother heard of the coming invasion of the Spanish Armada (a fleet of Spanish warships), Thomas Hobbes later reported that “my mother gave birth to twins: myself and fear.” His father, also named Thomas Hobbes, was the vicar (a clergyman in charge of a church) of Westport near Malmesbury in Gloucestershire, England. After being involved in a fight with another clergyman outside his own church,

the elder Thomas Hobbes was forced to flee to London, England, leaving his wife, two boys and a girl behind.

Thomas was then raised and educated by an uncle and studied at the local schools. By the age of six he was studying Latin and Greek. Also at this time, Hobbes became absorbed in the classic literature of ancient Greece. From 1603 to 1608 he studied at Magdalen College, Oxford, where he was bored by the philosophy of Aristotelianism (studying the works of Aristotle, a fourth-century B.C.E. Greek philosopher).

Scholarly work

The twenty-year-old future philosopher became a tutor to the Cavendish family, a well-known English family. This association provided him with a private library, foreign travel, and introductions to influential people. Hobbes learned to speak Italian and German and soon decided to devote his life to scholarly pursuits.

Hobbes, however, was slow in developing his thought—his first work, a translation of Greek historian Thucydides’s (died c. 401 B.C.E.) *History of the Peloponnesian Wars*, did not appear until 1629. Thucydides held that knowledge of the past was useful for determining correct action, and Hobbes said that he offered the translation during a period of civil unrest as a reminder that the ancients believed democracy (rule by the people) to be the least effective form of government.

In Hobbes’s own estimation the most important intellectual event of his life occurred when he was forty. While waiting for a friend he wandered into a library and came across a copy of Euclid’s (third century

B.C.E.) geometry. His interest in mathematics is reflected in his second work, *A Short Treatise on First Principles*, which presents a mechanical interpretation of sensation, as well as in his brief stint as mathematics tutor to Charles II (1630–1685).

For the rest of his long life Hobbes travelled and published many works. In France he met mathematicians René Descartes (1596–1650) and the Pierre Gassendi (1592–1655). In 1640 he wrote one of the sets of arguments to Descartes's *Meditations*.

Although born into the Elizabethan Age (c. 1550–1600; a time of great change in England), Hobbes outlived all of the major seventeenth-century thinkers. He became a sort of English icon and continued writing, offering new translations of Homer (an eighth-century B.C.E. Greek poet) in his eighties because he had “nothing else to do.” When he was past ninety, he became involved in controversies with the Royal Society, an organization of scientists. He invited friends to suggest appropriate epitaphs (an inscription on a tombstone) and favored one that read “this is the true philosopher's stone.” He died on December 4, 1679, at the age of ninety-one.

His philosophy

The questions Hobbes posed to the world in the seventeenth century are still relevant today, and Hobbes still maintains a strong influence in the world of philosophy. He challenged the relationship between science and religion, and the natural limitations of political power.

The diverse intellectual paths of the seventeenth century, which are generically called

modern classical philosophy, began by rejecting authorities of the past—especially Aristotle and his peers. Descartes, who founded the rationalist tradition, and Sir Francis Bacon (1561–1626), who is considered the originator of modern empiricism (political theory regarding the British Empire), both sought new methods for achieving scientific knowledge and a clear conception of reality.

Hobbes was fascinated by the problem of sense perception, and he extended Galileo's (1564–1642) mechanical physics into an explanation of human cognition (process of learning). He believed the origin of all thought is sensation, which consists of mental images produced by the pressure of motion of external objects. Thus Hobbes anticipated later thought by explaining differences between the external object and the internal image. These sense images are extended by the power of memory and imagination. Understanding and reason, which distinguish men from other animals, are a product of our ability to use speech.

Political thought

Hobbes explains the connection between nature, man, and society through the law of inertia (“bodies at rest tend to stay at rest; bodies in motion tend to stay in motion”). Thus man's desire to do what he wants is checked only by an equal and opposite need for security. Society “is but an artificial man” invented by man, so to understand politics one should merely consider himself as part of nature.

Such a reading is cold comfort as life before society is characterized by Hobbes, in a famous quotation, as “solitary, poor, nasty, brutish and short.” The equality of human desire is matched by an economy of natural

satisfactions. Men are addicted to power because gaining power is the only guarantee of living well. Such men live in a state of constant war, driven by competition and desire for the same goods. The important result of this view is man's natural right to seek self-preservation (protection of one's self) by any means. In this state of nature there is no value above self-interest because the absence of common power results in the absence of law and justice. But there is a second law of nature that men may surrender their individual will to the state. This "social contract" binds the individual to treat others as he expects to be treated by them.

In Hobbes's view the sovereign power of a commonwealth (England's power over its colonies) is absolute and not subject to the laws of its citizens. Obedience will remain as long as the sovereign (England) fulfills the social contract by protecting the rights of the individual. According to these laws Hobbes believed that rebellion is, by definition, unjust. However, should a revolution prove victorious, a new absolute sovereignty would rise up to take the place of the old one.

For More Information

Condren, Conal. *Thomas Hobbes*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 2000.

Green, Arnold W. *Hobbes and Human Nature*. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Publishers, 1993.

Martinich, Aloysius. *Hobbes: A Biography*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1999.

Taylor, A. E. *Thomas Hobbes*. Port Washington, NY: Kennikat Press, 1970

BILLIE HOLIDAY

Born: April 7, 1915

Baltimore, Maryland

Died: July 17, 1959

New York, New York

African American jazz singer

Billie Holiday was an African American jazz vocalist who perhaps showed the most expression of feeling of any singer in jazz history.

Early life

Billie Holiday was born Eleanora Fagan on April 7, 1915, in Baltimore, Maryland. (She borrowed the name "Billie" from one of her favorite movie actresses, Billie Dove.) Born to an unwed teenage mother, Sadie Fagan, Holiday's childhood was one of poverty. Her father, Clarence Holiday (later a jazz guitarist) married Sadie three years later. He never lived with the family, choosing his musical career over them. As a child Billie started working very young, running errands and cleaning a house of prostitution's (a place where sexual acts are traded for money) marble stoop. It was here that she first heard Louis Armstrong (1900–1971) and Bessie Smith (1894–1937) records through the open windows.

New York City

In 1928 Holiday moved to New York City with her mother, who began work as a housemaid, but the 1929 depression (time of low economic conditions with high rates of unemployment) soon left her mother without work. In 1932 Holiday auditioned for a singing job and was hired. For the next few

years she sang in Harlem clubs, then her career took off when Benny Goodman (1901–1986) used her on a record. But it was through a series of recordings made between 1935 and 1939 that her international reputation was established. During the late 1930s she was also a big band vocalist, first with Count Basie (1904–1984) in 1937 and then with Artie Shaw (1910–) in 1938.

Holiday's relationship with Basie's star tenor saxophonist Lester Young (1909–1959) is the stuff of legend. They were great musical coworkers and great friends for life. Young named her "Lady Day" (or simply "Lady"), and that title became her jazz world name from the mid-1930s on. She in turn labeled him "Pres" (the "President of Tenor Saxophonists").

Many successful tunes were recorded, interweaving Young's tenor saxophone with Holiday's voice. After the late 1930s they rarely recorded together, but to the end they remained soul mates. Holiday's career reached its peak in the late 1930s. In 1938 she worked a long engagement at Cafe Society. The following year she joined Benny Goodman on a radio broadcast.

Two songs of the period are noteworthy. The first, "Strange Fruit," is a detailed description of a lynching (an unjust killing because of race). Columbia record company considered it too inflammatory (exciting to the senses) and refused to issue it. A small record company, Commodore, finally released it in 1939. It became a big money-maker because of the tune on the record's other side, "Fine and Mellow," a blues song written by Holiday. Another tune always associated with her is "Gloomy Sunday," which spoke of such deep despair (misery) that it was kept off the airwaves for a time.



Billie Holiday.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Personal tragedies

By the mid-1940s Holiday had been arrested many times for illegal drug use. After one arrest, at her own request, she was placed in a federal rehabilitation (having to do with recovery from drug or alcohol abuse) center at Alderson, West Virginia, for a year and a day. Just ten days after being released she gave a concert at Carnegie Hall in New York City.

Neither Holiday's first husband, Joe Guy, a jazz guitarist who she divorced, or Louis McKay, who survived her, seemed able to save Holiday from herself. By the 1950s alcohol and marijuana had strained her voice, so that it was unnaturally deep and grainy and

occasionally cracked during performances. Nevertheless, her singing was sustained by her highly individual style, the familiarity she projected, and her special way with the words of a song.

Holiday made her final public appearance in a concert at the Phoenix Theatre in New York City on May 25, 1959. She died in Metropolitan Hospital in New York City on July 17, 1959, of “congestion of the lungs complicated by heart failure.” At the time of her death she had been under arrest in her hospital bed for illegal possession of drugs.

Holiday’s early small-group recordings have been rereleased in several boxed sets under the general title *Billie Holiday: The Golden Years*. Her best later work is to be found in *The First Verve Sessions*, recorded in 1952 and 1954.

On March 6, 2000, Holiday was inducted into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame in the Early Influences category. That category includes artists whose music predates rock and roll, but who inspired and had a strong effect on rock and roll music.

For More Information

Chilton, John. *Billie’s Blues*. New York: Stein and Day, 1975.

Clarke, Donald. *Wishing on the Moon*. New York: Viking, 1994.

Holiday, Billie, and William Dufty. *Lady Sings the Blues*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1956.

Nicholson, Stuart. *Billie Holiday*. Boston: Northeastern University Press, 1995.

O’Meally, Robert G. *Lady Day: The Many Faces of Billie Holiday*. New York: Arcade Publishers, 1991.

OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES

Born: August 29, 1809

Cambridge, Massachusetts

Died: October 7, 1894

Boston, Massachusetts

American physician, author, professor

American physician, teacher, and author Oliver Wendell Holmes contributed to the advancement of medicine and literature. He is also known for writing the famous poem “Old Ironsides.”

Early life

Oliver Wendell Holmes was born in Cambridge, Massachusetts, on August 29, 1809, to a well-established New England family. His father, Abiel Holmes, was a reverend in the First Congregational Church. His mother, Sarah Wendell, daughter of a Boston merchant, came from a long line of Dutch ancestors who settled in New England. Although his father was a Calvinist (follower of John Calvin’s study of religious faith, which strongly emphasized the supreme power of God and His foreknowledge of a believer’s future) by training, he was very open to Christians of all faiths. He was a fair-minded man and a well-educated father, having a library of two-thousand books for his children to read. Oliver was the fourth of five Holmes’ children, with three older sisters and one younger brother. Paul Bunyan’s classic allegory (symbolic story) had a big impact on Oliver’s lifetime religious views. He rejected many of the Calvinist ideas he was surrounded with in childhood, and this independence often leaned toward rebellion.

At age fifteen Oliver attended Phillips Andover Academy. He was instantly popular with his teachers his first year, when he translated Virgil's (70–19 B.C.E.) *Aeneid* from Latin into English. It is possible that Oliver's father thought the Calvinist focus at Andover would make a minister out of Oliver, but Oliver later wrote in *Life and Letters*, "I might have been a minister myself, if a [certain] clergyman had not looked and talked so like an undertaker."

Harvard man

Holmes continued his studies at Harvard University in 1825, graduating in 1829. Harvard's strong Unitarian (church stressing individual freedom of belief) influences only strengthened Oliver's rejection of Calvinism. This first time at Harvard was when he began to enjoy writing. Publishing poems in Harvard's *The Collegian* and later in the *New England Galaxy* and *Amateur* gave him quite a bit of pleasure. His writing did not keep him from being social, as he had many friends and joined Phi Beta Kappa (an honor society made up of American college students and graduates who have excelled in liberal arts and sciences). Holmes's joy in life was evident with his possession of a fast horse and buggy and several rowboats at the ready. Holmes was also a fan of the racetrack and boxing rings.

After Holmes graduated from Harvard in 1829, he studied at the law school for a year, during which time he wrote the popular poem "Old Ironsides". His pencil-written poem was about the destruction of a once useful warship, the *USS Constitution*.

Prose begins

A year after the publication of "Old Ironsides," Holmes started writing prose (literature



Oliver Wendell Holmes.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

different from poetry because of its irregular patterns and lack of rhyme) in the *New England Magazine*. This was a new publication and Holmes was an early contributor (one who writes for the magazine or newspaper), publishing "The Autocrat at the Breakfast Table" in the fifth month's copy. A year later he published another by the same title, and then five years later, in November 1857, he published an even longer version in the brand new *Atlantic Monthly*. He found the perfect place to express his very definite ideas in the pages of the *Atlantic Monthly*. In addition to these articles and his volumes of verse, he also wrote biographies: John L. Motley's (1814–1877) in

1879, and Ralph Waldo Emerson's (1803–1882) in 1885. Among his best-known poems are “The Deacon’s Masterpiece,” “The Last Leaf,” “The Chambered Nautilus,” “My Aunt,” “The Moral Bully,” and “Brother Jonathan’s Lament for Sister Caroline.”

In the same year of Holmes’s writing success, he decided to give up law in favor of a career in medicine. He started at the Boston Medical College and finished up at Harvard Medical School. He rounded out his training with two years of study in Paris from 1833 to 1835. France was considered the medical center of the world. Holmes was honored to work under the surgeon Larrey, reported to be Napoleon’s (1769–1821) favorite. Here he learned new techniques and approaches in medicine, reflected in two important early papers: “Homeopathy, and Its Kindred Delusions” in 1842, and “The Contagiousness of Puerperal Fever” (an unpredictable and often deadly difficulty of childbirth) in 1843. This was to be the medical work for which he is most remembered.

Holmes took his medical degree at Harvard in 1836. Although he began a general practice (active medical office) in Boston, it was his medical writings and teaching of anatomy that set Oliver Wendell Holmes apart. Nevertheless, Ralph Waldo Emerson encouraged his poetry. Due to the encouragement, Holmes published *Poetry*.

Lecturer

Continuing to balance both writing and medicine, in 1836 Holmes received the Boylston Prize from Harvard for a medical essay, as well as two more in 1837. From 1838 to 1840 he served as professor of anatomy at Dartmouth College. Despite his inability to

travel widely in the United States due to his asthma, Holmes delivered many lectures on the topics of both science and literature. His medical writing often became lecture material that only added to his popularity as a scholar and a public figure. Of his lecturing style students said, “He enters, and is greeted by a mighty shout and stamp of applause.” The other professors requested that Holmes teach the last of the five morning lectures, because they knew he could hold the students’ attention even though they were tired.

Both Holmes’s writings and his lectures showed an open-minded understanding that his readers and listeners were educated people and should be spoken to as such.

In 1840 Holmes married Amelia Lee Jackson, daughter of the Massachusetts Supreme Court justice, and returned to general practice. They had three children: Oliver Wendell Holmes, Jr., a future justice of the United States Supreme Court; a daughter, Amelia (the future Mrs. Turner Sargent); and Edward Jackson Holmes, a future Boston lawyer. In 1847 Oliver was appointed Parkman professor of anatomy and physiology at Harvard Medical School, where he served as dean from 1847 to 1853. Holmes remained at Harvard until 1882.

Life joys

Holmes’s hobbies included interest in photography and the study of the microscope. He is credited with the invention of the stereoscope (an instrument with two eyeglasses for helping the observer combine the images of two pictures to get the effect of depth). His writing showed just as much variety as his training and his hobbies. He even wrote several well-remembered hymns. He died at his

house in Boston on October 7, 1894, just two months after his eighty-fifth birthday.

Even though he was rebellious against some of his childhood religious training, he maintained a healthy relationship with his God. He once wrote in a letter to a friend, "There is a little plant called Reverence in the corner of my soul's garden." As a scientist, teacher, lecturer, author, and poet, Holmes left his mark on his time period, and many honors came to him both at home and abroad.

For More Information

Howe, Mark A. De Wolfe. *Holmes of the Breakfast-Table*. London; New York: Oxford University Press, 1939.

Hoyt, Edwin Palmer. *The Improper Bostonian: Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes*. New York : Morrow, 1979.

Tilton, Eleanor M. *Amiable Autocrat: A Biography of Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes*. New York: Henry Schuman, 1947. Reprint, New York: Octagon Books, 1978.

OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES JR.

Born: March 8, 1841

Boston, Massachusetts

Died: March 6, 1935

Washington, D.C.

American Supreme Court justice and legal writer

As a Supreme Court justice and a legal writer, Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr. was a key figure in the debate

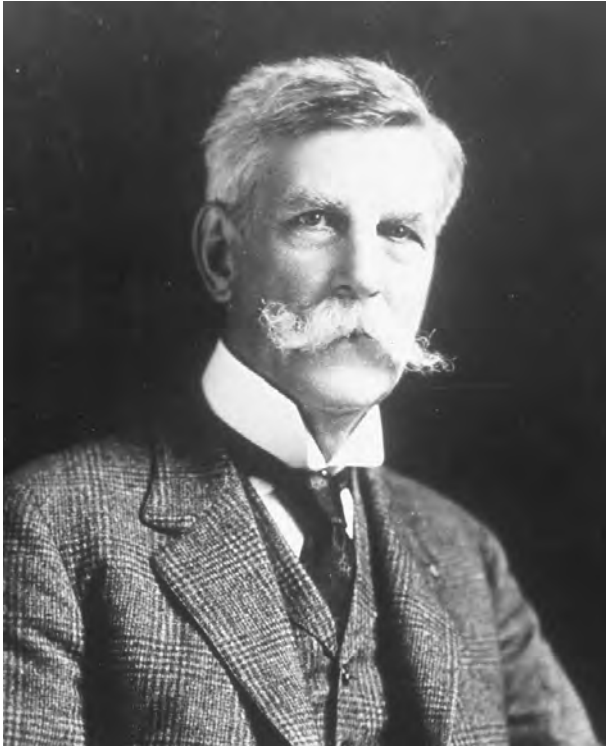
concerning the role of law in a rapidly changing America during the early twentieth century. Not only did he personally contribute to the debate, but he also served as a symbol to a generation of legal and political thinkers.

Born into a celebrated Boston family

Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr. was born in Boston, Massachusetts, on March 8, 1841, into one of the city's most celebrated families. His father, Oliver Wendell Holmes, was a leader in the medical profession as well as a famous writer for the *Atlantic Monthly*, a popular political magazine in its time. His family life brought young Oliver into contact with many of Boston's leading intellectuals, including Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882), America's most famous essay writer and lecturer during this period.

Harvard and the impact of the Civil War

Holmes entered Harvard College in 1857. There is little evidence that his college education was of great importance to him. Instead, Holmes's greatest learning experience was his part in the American Civil War (1861–65). The Civil War began as an attempt by the federal government of the United States to preserve the Union after eleven Southern states chose to leave and form an independent nation. The war also involved the issue of whether or not slavery would remain legal in parts of the country. After the federal government and the Northern states won the war, the Union was preserved and slavery was no longer allowed in any part of the United States. Holmes's participation in many battles resulted in three wounds, of which he was very proud. He left the military in July 1864.



Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

The impact of the war on Holmes had less to do with the political issues over which it had been fought than with its demonstration of the importance of commitment to a higher cause. America was changing rapidly, and Holmes grew up in a world where many accepted beliefs were being challenged. Holmes responded by developing a belief in the importance of devoting oneself to a cause even if it was incomprehensible, or unable to be understood by everyone.

Furthermore, the war supported Holmes's belief that all of life is a battle, with victory going to the strongest. In this way he fully accepted the emphasis of his age on

“survival of the fittest.” Unlike many of his peers, however, he pointed out that the strongest force in a society was its majority, a belief he would stand by during his later career as a judge.

Legal career

After the war Holmes attended Harvard Law School and graduated in 1866. The following year he was admitted to the Massachusetts bar, an association for lawyers. After his first trip to England, he threw himself into his legal career. He eventually helped found the firm of Shattuck, Holmes and Munroe. The time that remained after law practice he used for law study. In 1872 Holmes married Fanny Bowditch Dixwell, the daughter of his former schoolmaster.

Between 1870 and 1873 Holmes edited the *American Law Review*, a distinguished law publication. Holmes also updated the publication of the classic work *Commentaries on American Law* (1873), written by Chancellor James Kent (1863–1847).

Throughout the 1870s Holmes was also researching the questions he would discuss in a set of lectures at the Lowell Institute in 1880. These, published the following year as *The Common Law*, brought him worldwide fame. The first paragraph of *The Common Law* contains what is probably Holmes's most famous sentence: “The life of the law has not been logic: it has been experience.” He goes on to argue that law is a series of responses to social problems, not simply a set of theories that are difficult to understand. His book contributed to the awakening interest in the United States in “sociological jurisprudence,” or the relationship between law and other social institutions.

Career as a judge

Holmes then became a professor of law at Harvard Law School. He had worked in this position for less than a year when he became an associate justice of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts on January 3, 1883. He was promoted to chief justice on August 5, 1899, and his reputation as a daring thinker began to grow. Many of Holmes's groundbreaking opinions upheld the right of the state to regulate the economy and other social issues.

Theodore Roosevelt (1858–1919) became president in 1901. The new president was eager to appoint men to the Supreme Court who would help change the role of government and would uphold the new laws he himself wanted to pass. Viewing Holmes as such a man, Roosevelt appointed him to the U.S. Supreme Court. Holmes took his seat on December 8, 1902, at the age of sixty-one.

Holmes's most important early opinions dealt with regulation of the national economy. His most famous opinion of the economy is probably *Lochner v. New York*. In this case, Holmes strongly disagreed when the Court struck down a New York law limiting the hours a baker could be made to work. He rejected the Court's social thinking. For him the key question was not whether or not this was right or wrong but rather "the right of a majority to embody their opinions in law."

Freedom of speech

Holmes became even more famous after World War I (1914–18) because of his opinions regarding the regulation of freedom of speech. Although his reasoning was not

always faultless, he used his superb writing skills to raise a powerful sense of the importance of civil liberties, or freedoms.

In *Schenck v. United States* (1919) Holmes upheld the conviction of a man who had encouraged people to resist the draft. (The draft was a federal law that ordered men to register with the military in case they would be needed in times of war.) Holmes's support of this conviction was not because the man ignored federal law, rather that he was a "clear and present danger" to the peace and order of society.

In *Abrams v. United States* (1919) Holmes wrote his most passionate defense of free speech. He argued that only a "free trade in ideas" could guarantee the truth and that defense of freedom of speech is essential.

The admired justice leaves the court

Tall, erect, and handsome in his youth, Holmes had grown into an even more imposing man, with a splendid handlebar moustache and white hair. As an elderly judge, he was surrounded often by admiring younger men and was, by all accounts, a lively figure. In his old age he was increasingly admired by many of those who would lead the next political generation. He left the Supreme Court on January 12, 1932, before it accepted his theories concerning its role in regulating the economy. (The Court would later accept them in the 1940s.)

Holmes died on March 6, 1935, in Washington, D.C. Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr. was a legal trailblazer who helped define the role of law in the twentieth century. His theories and ideas are as relevant today as they were when he wrote them.

For More Information

Alschuler, Albert W. *Law without Values: The Life, Work, and Legacy of Justice Holmes*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2000.

Holmes, Oliver Wendell. *The Essential Holmes*. Edited by Richard A. Posner. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1992.

White, G. Edward. *Justice Oliver Wendell Holmes: Law and the Inner Self*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1993.

White, G. Edward. *Oliver Wendell Holmes: Sage of the Supreme Court*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2000.

HOMER

Born: Ninth century B.C.E.

Died: Ninth century B.C.E.

Greek poet

Homer, the major figure in ancient Greek literature, has been considered the greatest poet of classical antiquity (ancient times). He wrote both the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*, two epic poems (long narrative poems) surviving in a surprisingly large number of manuscripts.

Portrait of Homer

It is not possible to supply a biography for Homer in the accepted sense of a life history. Since he lived before cultures began recording history, there is no authentic record of who he was, when and where he was born,

how long he lived, or even if he was actually responsible for the two epic poems for which he is known.

It is arguable that in one incident of the *Odyssey* the poet may be giving a glimpse of himself in the disguise of a bard (singing poet), whom he calls Demodokos and whom he introduces to the court of the Phaeacian king, where the shipwrecked Odysseus is generously entertained. This Demodokos is described as a “divine singer to whom the god gave delight of singing whatever his soul prompted him.” He is also described as being blind, which also supports the argument that Homer was portraying himself, because there was a belief that Homer was blind.

Evidence from the epics

This lack of any historical record of Homer’s life leaves only what can be taken from the poems themselves. On this task many scholars have attempted to draw conclusions about Homer, often without acceptable results.

The setting of the *Iliad* is the plain of Troy (an ancient Greek city) and its immediate surroundings. Details of the land are so precise that it is not feasible to suppose that their author created them out of his imagination. To be sure, there is the objection that not all of the poem’s action can be made to fit the present-day lands.

In the *Odyssey* the situation is in many respects quite different. The poet demonstrates that he knew the western Greek island of Ithaca (where the second half of the epic takes place) as well as the poet of the *Iliad* knew the plain of Troy. The *Odyssey*, however, also extends over many strange, distant

lands, as Odysseus's homeward voyage from Troy to his native Ithaca is transformed into a bizarre sea-wandering adventure.

Perhaps misled by the accuracy with which the Trojan plain is described in the *Iliad* and the island of Ithaca is pictured in the *Odyssey*, various modern commentators have tried to impose the same realism on Odysseus's astonishing voyage, selecting actual sites in the western Mediterranean Sea for his adventures. The true situation must be that the Homer of the *Odyssey* had never visited that part of the ancient world, but he had instead listened to the stories of returning Ionian sailors who explored the western seas during the seventh century B.C.E.

Theory of two authors

That the author of the *Iliad* was not the same as the author of these fantastic tales in the *Odyssey* is arguable on several levels. The two epics belong to different literary types: the *Iliad* is essentially dramatic in its confrontation of opposing warriors who converse like the actors in a tragedy (a play with struggle and disappointment), while the *Odyssey* is cast as a novel narrated in more everyday human speech. In their physical structure, also, the two epics display an equally obvious difference: the *Odyssey* is composed in six distinct parts of four chapters ("books") each, whereas the *Iliad* moves unbrokenly forward in its tightly woven plot.

Readers who examine psychological qualities see in the two works some distinctly different human responses and behavioral attitudes. For example, the *Iliad* voices admiration for the beauty and speed of horses, while the *Odyssey* shows no interest in these animals. The *Iliad* dismisses dogs as mere



Homer.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

scavengers, while the poet of the *Odyssey* reveals a modern sympathy for Odysseus's faithful old hound, Argos.

The strongest argument for separating the two poems is the chronology, or dating, of some of the facts in the pieces. In the *Iliad* the Phoenicians are praised as skilled craftsmen working in metal, and as weavers of elaborate, much-prized garments. In contrast, Greek feelings toward the Phoenicians have undergone a drastic change in the *Odyssey*. Although they are still regarded as clever craftsmen, the Phoenicians are also described as "tricksters," reflecting the invasion of Phoenician commerce into Greek markets in the seventh century B.C.E.

Oral composition

One thing, however, is certain: both epics were created without writing sources. Between the decline of Mycenaean and the emergence of classical Greek civilizations—which is to say, from the late twelfth to the mid-eighth century B.C.E.—the inhabitants of the Greek lands had not yet acquired from the eastern-most shore of the Mediterranean the familiarity with Phoenician alphabetic writing that would lead to classical Greek literacy (and in turn, Etruscan, Roman, and modern European literacy). Therefore it could be concluded that the epics must have been created either before the end of the eighth century B.C.E. or so shortly afterwards that the use of alphabetic writing had not yet been developed sufficiently to record long pieces of writing. It is this illiterate (unable to read or write) environment that explains the absence of all historical record of the author's two great epics.

It is probable that Homer's name was applied to two individuals differing in style and artistic accomplishment, born perhaps as much as a century apart, but practicing the same traditional craft of oral composition and recitation (to read out loud). Although each became known as "Homer," it may be (as one ancient source says) that "homros" was a word for a blind man and so came to be used generically to refer to the old and often sightless wandering reciters of heroic legends. Thus there could have been many Homers.

The two epics Homer is generally regarded as writing, however, have been as highly prized in modern as in ancient times for their vividness of expression, their keenness of personal characterization, and their lasting interest, whether in narration of action or in animated dramatic dialogue.

Other works

Later Greek times credited Homer with the composition of a group of comparatively short "hymns" (songs of praise) addressed to various gods, of which twenty-three have survived. With a closer look, however, only one or two of these, at most, can be the work of the poet of the two great epics. The epic "The Battle of the Frogs and Mice" has been preserved but adds nothing to Homer's reputation. Several other epic poems of considerable length—*The Cypria*, *The Little Iliad*, *The Phocais*, *The Thebais*, and *The Capture of Oichalia*—were also credited to Homer in classical times.

The simple truth seems to be that the name Homer was not so much that of a single individual but an entire school of poets flourishing on the west coast of Asia Minor (today, the area of Turkey). Unfortunately, we will probably never know for sure, since during this period the art of writing had not been sufficiently developed by the Greeks to permit historical records to be compiled or literary compositions to be written down.

For More Information

- Colum, Pádraic. *The Children's Homer*. New York: Macmillan, 1962. Reprint, New York: Collier Books, 1982.
- Lorimer, Hilda Lockhart. *Homer and the Monuments*. London: Macmillan, 1950.
- Myres, John L. *Homer and His Critics*. Edited by Dorothea Gray. London: Routledge & Paul, 1958.
- Scott, John Adams. *The Unity of Homer*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1921.

SOICHIRO HONDA

Born: November 17, 1906

Iwata-gun, Japan

Died: August 5, 1991

Tokyo, Japan

Japanese businessman

An independent person in a country not known for its willingness to accept nonconformists (those that do not cooperate with customs), Soichiro Honda created an automobile giant despite the opposition of the Japanese government. One of his company's cars, the Accord, was a best-selling model in the American market.

Early life

The first son of blacksmith Gihei Honda and his wife Mika, Soichiro Honda was born on November 17, 1906, in rural Iwata-gun, Japan. In 1922 he graduated from the Futamata Senior Elementary School. Honda had little tolerance for formal education and jumped at every opportunity he had to work with his true love: motors. Throughout his life Honda never forgot the impression that was made on him when he sighted his first automobile.

After leaving school Honda began his career as an apprentice (a person who works to gain experience in a trade) auto repairman for Arto Shokai in Tokyo. In 1928 he returned to his hometown as a master mechanic and soon established a branch shop for the firm in Hamamatsu, Japan.

Building an empire

During this time Honda also participated in auto races and became interested in cars

and motorcycles. Soon he was experimenting with engines, and in 1928 he organized the Tohai Seiki Company to manufacture piston rings, some of which were sold to Toyota, a major Japanese car manufacturer.

Honda's first attempts at the personal motor business came in the mid-1940s when he designed and manufactured a small engine that could be attached to a bicycle to create a motorbike. The venture proved a great success.

Encouraged by his early success, in 1948 he organized the Honda Motor Company. The following year Honda manufactured a small motorcycle called the "Dream D" and prepared to enter the highly competitive Japanese market, which he did through effective advertising. Within a decade Honda was the leading motorcycle manufacturer in the world and had a larger share of the American motorcycle market than Toyota and Nissan (with its Datsun cars) had in automobiles.

Now Soichiro Honda attracted press attention, and, unlike most Japanese businessmen, he loved it. A small but talkative man, he was the opposite of what westerners imagined Japanese businessmen to be. For example, he promoted executives on the basis of performance rather than age, an unusual practice at large Japanese firms. Honda continued racing autos and motorcycles, dressed casually, and took pride in maintaining his independence from the Japanese business establishment. In addition, Honda openly voiced his admiration of American business practices and way of life.

Automobiles

This was at a time when the powerful Ministry of Trade and Industry (MITI) was



Soichiro Honda.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

trying to unite several small companies into a third large one to compete with Toyota and Nissan. MITI and the Department of Transportation tried to discourage Honda from adding to the number of companies, but he persisted. He won MITI's permission by coming out with a low-priced small sportscar, the S 500, which was different from anything produced by the other companies. He followed it up with other sports models. His company was still very small, producing only three thousand cars in 1966—half of what Toyota was turning out in a week.

Honda introduced the Civic to the American market in 1972. It got thirty-nine

miles per gallon (mpg) on the road and twenty-seven mpg in city driving, remarkably efficient for an automobile. The popularity of the Civic rose throughout the 1970s, and in 1980 Honda sold 375,000 cars in the American market—almost three times as many as Subaru and twice as many as Mazda, but still behind Toyota and Nissan. The reasons for this success were obvious: Honda combined high quality with efficiency and economy. But his small cars still appealed to a limited market.

Transforming Honda

In the late 1970s and early 1980s Honda expanded his car company overseas. In 1979 he opened a motorcycle plant near Columbus, Ohio, and an auto plant followed soon after, prompting other Japanese companies to follow his lead. In the late 1970s Toyota and Nissan sold one-third of their cars to the United States, while Honda sold half of his in that market.

Soichiro Honda did not directly supervise these introductions or the development of overseas plants in the United States and Europe. He resigned in 1973, but stayed at the company as “supreme adviser.” In 1988 he became the first Japanese carmaker to be inducted into the Automobile Hall of Fame. Honda died of liver failure August 5, 1991, in a Tokyo hospital. Honda's rise from humble beginnings to a powerful and influential businessman is one of twentieth century's most inspirational stories.

For More Information

Kotkin, Joel. “Mr. Iacocca, Meet Mr. Honda.” *Inc.* (November 1986).

Sakiya, Tetsuo. *Honda Motor: The Man, the Management, and the Machines*. New York: Kodansha International, 1982.

Sanders, Sol. *Honda: The Man and His Machine*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1975.

BELL HOOKS

Born: September 25, 1952

Hopkinsville, Kentucky

African American activist, educator, and writer

Writer, professor, and social critic, bell hooks is undeniably one of the most successful “cross-over” academics of the late twentieth century. Her books look at the function of race and gender in today’s culture.

Childhood

Born Gloria Jean Watkins on September 25, 1952, bell hooks was raised in Hopkinsville, Kentucky, a small, segregated (separated by race) town in rural Kentucky. She recalled her neighborhood as a “world where folks were content to get by on a little, where Baba, mama’s mother, made soap, dug fishing worms, set traps for rabbits, made butter and wine, sewed quilts, and wrung the necks of chickens.” She later explained how this community turned the hardships created by racism (the idea that one race is superior to another) into a source of strength. The neighborhood where she grew up provided young Gloria with her resistance to racism, but it also provided her

with the negative and positive experiences that would shape her feminism (support of equal rights for women).

Gloria was one of six siblings: five sisters and a baby brother. Her father worked as a janitor, and her mother, Rosa Bell Oldham Watkins, worked as a maid in the homes of white families. As a student at segregated public schools, hooks was taught by a dedicated group of teachers, mostly single black women, who helped to shape the self-esteem (satisfaction with oneself) of children of color. But the late 1960s Kentucky schools became desegregated. By the time she was ten, hooks had begun writing her own poetry and soon developed a reputation for her ability to recite poetry.

Learned to “talk back”

Although hooks was supposed to become a quiet, well-behaved young woman, she became instead a woman who “talked back.” This action, for which hooks eventually named a volume of essays, actually refers to the development of a strong sense of self that allows black women to speak out against racism and sexism.

Although young hooks continued to write poetry—some of which was published—she gained a reputation as a writer of critical essays on systems of domination. In order to do this work, she found that she needed to develop a different voice, a different name. She first used her pseudonym (assumed name)—her maternal great-grandmother’s name—for a small book of poems. She decided not to capitalize her first and last names in an attempt to place the focus on her work, rather than her name.



bell hooks.

Reproduced by permission of Pinderhughes Photography, Inc.

Wrote first book at nineteen

After high school, hooks accepted a scholarship to Stanford University, in California. Despite her full-time studies she began *Ain't I a Woman* at the age of nineteen. She also took a job as a telephone operator. Finding time for her writing was a challenge, but hooks found that the job offered her something she did not have in school at the time—a community of working-class, black women.

The author went through several drafts of the manuscript over the next six years before she had one that satisfied her. It was at this moment that the persona of bell hooks truly rescued Gloria Watkins. At first hooks

had considerable trouble publishing her work, and eventually she was directed to her future publisher, South End Press, while giving a talk at a feminist bookstore in San Francisco. Once published in 1981, *Ain't I a Woman* became a central book in discussions of racism and sexism. Eleven years later, *Publishers Weekly* ranked it among the “twenty most influential women’s books of the previous twenty years.”

A career in higher education

While *Ain't I a Woman* made bell hooks an important name in feminist debate, she continued her work. After obtaining a doctorate degree in English literature, she began her teaching career. It was in her role as a teacher that hooks felt she was doing her most important work. She knew that for a people historically and legally denied the right to education, teaching was one of the most substantial forms of political resistance she could choose.

After holding various positions at the University of California in Santa Cruz, California, in the early 1980s, hooks left for Yale University in New Haven, Connecticut, when she had the opportunity to teach in African American Studies. In 1988 she joined the faculty at Oberlin College, in Ohio, where she would teach in Women’s Studies, a program that now offered the critique of racism that was absent during her undergraduate years.

Taking a post with the City College of New York in 1995, hooks moved to the Henry Holt publishing company and came out with *Killing Rage: Ending Racism*, a book that calls for a more proactive approach (initiative) to solving the problem of racism in America.

Hooks lives in New York City and remains an important figure in the fight against racism and sexism in America. With the release of *Communion: The Female Search for Love* in 2002, hooks has more than twenty books to her name with more to come.

For More Information

Hooks, bell. *Remembered Rapture: The Writer at Work*. New York: Henry Holt, 1999.

Hooks, bell. *Talking Back: Thinking Feminist, Thinking Black*. Boston: South End Press, 1989.

Hooks, bell. *Yearning: Race, Gender and Cultural Politics*. Boston: South End Press, 1990.

Hooks, bell, and Cornel West. *Breaking Bread: Insurgent Black Intellectual Life*. Boston: South End Press, 1991.

Talking about a Revolution: Interviews with Michael Albert, Noam Chomsky, Barbara Ehrenreich, Bell Hooks, Peter Kwong, Winona LaDuke, Manning Marable, Urvashi Vaid, and Howard Zinn. Cambridge, MA: South End Press, 1998.

can board member of the Federal Communications Commission.

Many role models

Benjamin Lawson Hooks, the fifth of seven children, was born in Memphis, Tennessee, in 1925 to Robert B. and Bessie Hooks. Hooks's father and uncle ran a successful photography business. His grandmother, a musician who graduated from Berea College in Kentucky, was the second African American female college graduate in the nation. With such evidence of success and hard work as his personal examples, Hooks was encouraged to do well in his studies and to prepare for higher education.

Following the Depression of 1929, an economic slump in which millions of workers lost their jobs and homes, many banks failed, and many factories closed, the Hooks family's standard of living declined. With money so scarce during those years, African American clients could rarely afford wedding pictures or family portraits, therefore, business slowed down. Still, the family always had food, clothing, and shelter. Hooks's parents were careful to see that all of their children kept up their appearance, attitude, and academic performance.

Law student to civil rights worker

After high school, Hooks studied pre-law at LeMoyne College in Memphis. He successfully completed that program and then served in the army during World War II (1939–45) guarding Italian prisoners. He realized that in Memphis, these prisoners would have more rights than he did. When he left the army he continued his studies at Howard University and at DePaul University

BENJAMIN HOOKS

Born: January 31, 1925

Memphis, Tennessee

African American activist, executive director, and lawyer

Benjamin Hooks was an executive director of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) and is the first African Ameri-



Benjamin Hooks.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Law School in Chicago, Illinois—no law school in the South would admit him. He returned to the South to aid in the civil rights movement rather than establish a practice in Chicago. From 1949 to 1965 he was one of the few African Americans practicing law in Memphis. He recalled in *Jet* magazine, “At that time you were insulted by law clerks, excluded from white bar associations and when I was in court, I was lucky to be called ‘Ben.’ Usually it was just ‘boy.’” In 1949, Hooks met a teacher named Frances Dancy. In 1952 the couple were married.

In 1956 Hooks became a Baptist minister, and he joined the Southern Christian

Leadership Conference (SCLC; an organization that worked to gain equality for African Americans) of Reverend Martin Luther King (1929–1968). He also became a bank director and the cofounder of a life insurance company. After several attempts to be elected to public office, he was appointed to serve as a criminal judge in Shelby County, Memphis, in 1965. He thus became the first African American criminal court judge in the state of Tennessee. The following year he was elected to the same position.

Hooks took part in many civil rights protests. He served on the board of the SCLC and became a life member of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP). He was a leader of many NAACP-sponsored boycotts (protests in which organizers refuse to have dealings with a person, store, or organization in an attempt to get the object of the protest to change its policies or positions) and sit-ins in restaurants that refused to serve African Americans. In spite of his shyness Hooks became a skilled orator (public speaker) whose quick wit and sense of humor delighted audiences. He also served as the moderator (a person who presides over a meeting) of several television shows discussing issues of importance to African Americans.

Federal Communications Commissioner

Hooks was so often in the public eye that Tennessee senator Howard Baker (1925–) submitted his name to President Richard Nixon (1913–1994) for political appointment. Nixon had promised African American voters that they would be treated fairly by the broadcast media. Thus, in 1972 he named Hooks to fill an opening on the board of the

Federal Communications Commission (FCC). Benjamin and Frances Hooks soon moved to Washington, D.C. Frances Hooks served as her husband's assistant, advisor, and traveling companion, giving up her own career as a teacher and guidance counselor. She told *Ebony* magazine, "He said he needed me to help him. Few husbands tell their wives that they need them after thirty years of marriage, so I gave it up and here I am. Right by his side."

The FCC regulated television and radio stations as well as long-distance telephone, telegraph, and satellite communications systems. Hooks felt that his primary role was to bring a minority point of view to the commission. After noticing that only 3 percent of FCC employees were African Americans, and they were generally in low-paying positions, he encouraged the commission to hire more African American workers at all levels. By the time he left the agency, African Americans made up about 11 percent of the employee population. Hooks also urged public television stations to be more responsive to the needs of African American viewers by treating them fairly in news coverage and including programming directed toward them.

NAACP

In 1977 Roy Wilkins, who had been the executive director of the NAACP since 1955, retired. The NAACP board of directors wanted an able leader to take his place. They all agreed that Benjamin Hooks was the man. Hooks resigned from the FCC after five years and officially began his directorship on August 1, 1977.

When Hooks took over the organization, its membership had decreased from half a

million to just over two hundred thousand. Hooks immediately directed his attention toward rebuilding the base of the association through a membership drive. He also spoke out on behalf of increased employment opportunities for minorities and the complete removal of U.S. businesses from South Africa. He told *Ebony* magazine, "Black Americans are not defeated. . . . The civil rights movement is not dead. If anyone thinks we are going to stop agitating, they had better think again." Hooks's leadership of the NAACP was marked by internal disputes. He was suspended by the chair of the NAACP's board, Margaret Bush Wilson (1919–), after she accused him of mismanagement. These charges were never proved. In fact, he was backed by a majority of the sixty-four-member board and continued in the job until retiring in 1993.

Later years

Throughout his career, Benjamin Hooks has stressed the idea of self-help among African Americans. He urges wealthy and middle-class African Americans to give time and resources to those who are less fortunate. "It's time today . . . to bring it out of the closet. No longer can we provide polite, explicable [easily explained] reasons why black America cannot do more for itself," he told the 1990 NAACP convention as quoted by the *Chicago Tribune*. "I challenge black America today—all of us—to set aside our alibis."

After his retirement, Hooks served as pastor of Middle Baptist Church and president of the National Civil Rights Museum, both in Memphis. He also taught at Memphis University. In July 1998, nearly fifty years after Hooks first began practicing law in Memphis, Ten-

nessee governor Don Sundquist (1936–) asked Hooks, along with four others, to serve on a special state Supreme Court to oversee Tennessee's election and retention of appellate court judges. (Appellate courts consider appeals, or hearings to decide whether an error has been made and the decision of a lesser court should be reversed.)

For More Information

Editors of *Ebony*. *1,000 Successful Blacks*. Chicago: Johnson Pub. Co., 1973.

Pickens, William. *Bursting Bonds*. Edited by William L. Andrews. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1991.

BOB HOPE

Born: May 29, 1903

Eltham, England

American comedian and actor

In addition to his successes on radio, in movies, on television, and in live shows, Bob Hope entertained members of the American military all over the world and made many appearances to benefit different charities.

“Hopeless” childhood

Born in Eltham, England, on May 29, 1903, Leslie Townes Hope was one of Harry and Agnes Townes Hope's seven surviving boys. His father was a stonemason (a construction worker), and his mother had been a concert singer in Wales. By the age of four

Hope was a skilled mimic and loved to sing and dance. In 1908 the family left England and settled in Cleveland, Ohio. For Hope, who looked and sounded British, the adjustment was difficult. Neighborhood kids turned his name around to create the nickname “Hopelessly.” When he shortened his name to Les, they began to refer to him as “Hopeless.” As a result of all this teasing, Hope often got in fights. He developed into a boxer of some skill.

As a youth Hope sold two-cent newspapers on the streets of Cleveland to help his family out. On one occasion a man in a long, black limousine waited while Hope rushed into a nearby store to get change for a dime. When he returned he received a lecture about the importance of keeping change in order to take advantage of all business opportunities. The man in the limousine was John D. Rockefeller (1839–1937), founder of Standard Oil Company and one of the richest men in the world.

Enters show business

As a teenager Hope once said that he would rather be an actor than hold an honest job. He performed whenever possible, mainly dancing and telling the one-line jokes for which he later became famous. He gained experience in an act he formed with a comedian from Columbus, Ohio, named George Byrne. Using the name Lester, Hope went with Byrne to New York City in 1926. They performed in cities and towns throughout the state. They finally appeared in a New York City vaudeville (traveling stage entertainment featuring several different performers) production called “Sidewalks.” They were fired within a month, however.

Hope got his first chance to work as a solo act at the Stratford Theatre in Chicago, Illinois, in 1928. He changed his name to Bob because he felt that would be “chummier” and would look better on a theater sign. Hope always made his audience feel at ease and comfortable by making himself the subject of his humor. He worked hard and succeeded but soon left the Stratford to tour Midwestern cities. From 1920 to 1937 Hope performed in all kinds of shows both on and off Broadway, earning a reputation as a master of the one-liner (a short joke). By 1932 Hope was earning a thousand dollars a week during a time when millions of people were out of work. Still, he was not satisfied. He always wanted to improve and to become an outstanding comic in the business.

Hope and Crosby

Hope met actor and singer Bing Crosby (1904–1977) in 1932, and they started performing together in song and dance routines. Hope met actress Delores Reade in 1933 and later married her. In 1935 Hope joined the “Ziegfeld Follies” and performed in cities outside New York. In January 1936 he opened in the “Follies” at New York City’s Winter Garden Theatre. The “Ziegfeld Follies” was the musical highlight of Broadway, consisting of beautiful girls and costumes, witty dialogue between the actors and actresses, and music by such great composers as Vernon Duke (1903–1969) and Ira Gershwin (1896–1983).

Although Hope had acted in some short motion picture comedies as early as 1934, he began his feature-length movie career in Hollywood in 1938 with *The Big Broadcast of 1938*, which also starred comedian W. C. Fields (1880–1947). This was the beginning of an active film career for Hope. He went on to



Bob Hope.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

appear in fifty-two movies, including six films in the *Road* series (including *The Road to Zanzibar* and *The Road to Rio*), which also featured Crosby and Dorothy Lamour (1914–1996).

Performed for the troops

Hope has always been strongly patriotic. On December 7, 1941, when Japanese attack planes bombed Hawaii’s Pearl Harbor, causing the United States to enter World War II (1939–45; a war in which Germany, Japan, and Italy fought against Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States), Hope spoke out against the attack. During a radio broadcast on December 16, Hope declared his

love for his country: "There is no need to tell a nation to keep smiling when it's never stopped. It is that ability to laugh that makes us the great people that we are . . . Americans!"

In 1942 Hope was asked to make an entertainment tour of Alaskan army bases. Hope brought other performers along and put together a variety show for the troops stationed there. That was the beginning of a commitment on Hope's part that has never ended. Every year, especially during the Christmas season, he has led a drive to present shows to American men and women in the armed forces. At the Academy Awards in February 1941, Hope was given a special award for his many benefit performances. He also won honorary (awarded without meeting the usual requirements) Oscars in 1940, 1944, 1952, and 1965.

Later years

Some of Hope's charitable activities involve golf. Hope has played the game all of his life, including with several U.S. presidents. In 1964 he agreed to have the Palm Springs Classic golf tournament renamed The Bob Hope Desert Classic, which he has hosted ever since. Since the administration of Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945), Hope has appeared many times at the White House. Hope's seventy-fifth birthday party, held in the Washington Kennedy Center, was attended by members of Congress and by many of Hope's acting friends. Another celebration was held at the Kennedy Center in 1983, when Hope turned eighty years old. This time President Ronald Reagan (1911–) and his wife, Nancy (1921–), hosted the celebration. At the celebration Hope showed no signs of slowing down.

In May 1993 NBC celebrated Hope's ninetieth birthday with the three-hour spe-

cial "Bob Hope: The First Ninety Years." The show featured tributes from every living U.S. president at that time. By then, according to *TV Guide*, Hope had made more than five hundred TV shows and seventy movies. Hope concluded his sixty-year contract with NBC in November 1996, when his final special, "Laughing with the Presidents," aired.

The Guinness Book of World Records called Hope the most honored entertainer in the world. By mid-1995 he had received more than two thousand awards, including fifty-four honorary doctorate degrees, *The Saturday Evening Post* reported. In 1998 Hope and his wife Delores announced that they would donate his personal papers and collection of almost 90,000 jokes to the Library of Congress. In June 2000 Hope spent six days in the hospital because of internal bleeding.

For More Information

- Curtis, Jenny. *Bob Hope*. New York: Metro Books, 1999.
- Faith, William Robert. *Bob Hope: A Life in Comedy*. New York: Putnam, 1982.
- Grudens, Richard. *The Spirit of Bob Hope*. Stony Brook, NY: Celebrity Profiles Publishing, 2002.
- Quirk, Lawrence J. *Bob Hope: The Road Well-Traveled*. New York: Applause, 1998.

**ANTHONY
HOPKINS**

Born: December 31, 1937

Port Talbot, Wales

Welsh actor

Actor Anthony Hopkins worked on stage and in film for over thirty years before receiving his first Academy Award for his performance in *The Silence of the Lambs*.

Humble beginnings

Anthony Hopkins was born in Port Talbot, Wales, on December 31, 1937, the only child of Richard Hopkins, a baker, and his wife Muriel. Hopkins had a difficult childhood; he often felt isolated and lonely. Although he studied piano and could draw well, Hopkins did not excel at Cowbridge Grammar School. The famous actor and fellow Port Talbot native Richard Burton (1925–1984) inspired Hopkins. At the age of fifteen, after getting Burton's autograph, Hopkins decided he wanted to be famous.

Hopkins dropped out of school at age seventeen and enrolled in a drama class at a local YMCA. Skilled at the piano, he earned a scholarship to the Cardiff College of Music and Drama, where he studied for two years. After two years of military service, Hopkins worked in theater. In 1961 he received a scholarship to the Royal Academy of Dramatic Art in London, England. After graduating in 1963, Hopkins worked at several different theaters before applying to the famous National Theatre in 1965. He was invited to join the company and remained a member until 1973.

Personal troubles

As Hopkins's stage and film career began to take off in the 1960s, he became known for his temper—he walked out in the middle of a National Theatre performance of *Macbeth*—and his excessive drinking. Hopkins married actress

Petronella Barker in 1967, but by the time their daughter Abigail was eighteen months old, the couple had split. In 1973 Hopkins married Jennifer Lynton, a film production assistant. In 1974 they moved to New York City, where Hopkins appeared in the Broadway production of *Equus*, once stopping a performance to yell at late-arriving audience members. Hopkins, who continued to drink heavily, then moved to Hollywood, California. After waking up one day in a hotel room in Arizona with no idea how he got there, he quit drinking in 1975.

Hopkins began to accept whatever acting jobs he was offered. From 1975 to 1985 he appeared in over twenty-five movies made for either television or theatrical release. Although he earned two Emmy Awards (in 1976 and 1981), most of the movies he made during this time period, including *Audrey Rose* (1977), *International Velvet* (1978), and *A Change of Seasons* (1980), were less than memorable. In 1985 Hopkins moved back to London and returned to the stage. Over a seventeen-month period he appeared in two hundred performances of two different William Shakespeare (1564–1616) plays. In 1988 he received an honorary (achieved without meeting the usual requirements) degree of Doctor of Letters from the University of Wales. In 1993 he was knighted.

Fame and fortune

In 1991 Hopkins earned an Academy Award for best actor in *The Silence of the Lambs*. He played Dr. Hannibal “The Cannibal” Lecter, a killer known for eating his victims. Although he appeared in only twenty-seven minutes of the movie, this role finally made Hopkins a superstar. After *The Silence of the Lambs*, he acted in four films released in



Anthony Hopkins.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

1992 and five in 1993. His most noticed film was *The Remains of the Day* (1993), for which he was nominated (put forward for consideration) for another Academy Award for his role as Stevens, the reserved butler.

Hopkins also earned Academy Award nominations for his performances as two U.S. presidents: Richard Nixon (1913–1994) in *Nixon* (1995), and John Quincy Adams (1767–1848) in *Amistad* (1997). Hopkins was now earning over five million dollars per movie. After filming *Titus* (1999), he took a year off. In April 2000 he became an American citizen. In 2001 he returned to the role of Hannibal Lecter in *Hannibal*. He then

resumed his usual work pace, appearing in several films including *Hearts in Atlantis* (2001) and *Bad Company* (2002). He also volunteered to teach a class at the Ruskin School of Acting in Santa Monica, California.

Hopkins has changed little since his time in Port Talbot. He is still a loner, taking long trips in his car by himself to relax. He has continued to push himself, but he has also learned not to push too hard. He told *Vanity Fair* magazine, "It can't get better than this. Years ago I wanted to be rich and famous, and it all happened to me. . . . They pay me a lot of money, more money than I ever dreamed of. It just cannot get better than this."

For More Information

Callan, Michael Feeney. *Anthony Hopkins: The Unauthorized Biography*. Charles Scribner's Sons, 1994.

Falk, Quentin. *Anthony Hopkins: The Authorized Biography*. Interlink Books, 1993.

LENA HORNE

Born: June 30, 1917

Brooklyn, New York

African American singer

Lena Horne is known as one of the most popular African American entertainers of the twentieth century. A woman of great beauty and commanding stage presence, she performed in nightclubs, concert halls, movies, and on radio and television.

Lena's early years

Lena Horne was born in Brooklyn, New York, on June 30, 1917. Her father, Edwin "Teddy" Horne, who worked in the gambling trade, left the family when Lena was three. Her mother, Edna, was an actress with an African American theater troupe and traveled extensively. Horne was mainly raised by her grandparents, Cora Calhoun and Edwin Horne. Yet, she still moved a great deal in her early years because her mother often took her with her on the road. They lived in various parts of the South before Horne was returned to her grandparents' home in 1931. After they died, Horne lived with a friend of her mother's, Laura Rollock. Shortly thereafter Edna remarried and Horne moved in with her mother and her mother's new husband. The constant moving resulted in Lena having an education that was often interrupted. She attended various small-town, segregated (separated by race) schools when in the South with her mother. In Brooklyn she attended the Ethical Cultural School, the Girls High School, and a secretarial school.

From an early age Horne had ambitions of becoming a performer—much against the wishes of her family, who felt she should have higher goals. The Hornes were an established middle class family, with several members holding college degrees and distinguished positions in organizations such as the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) and the Urban League (a group that worked to increase the economic and political power of minorities and to end discrimination based on race). Nonetheless, Horne pursued her own course and at age sixteen was hired to dance in the chorus at Harlem's famed Cotton Club. In



Lena Horne.

Reproduced by permission of Schomburg Center for Research.

1934 Lena took voice lessons, and she also landed a small role in an all-black Broadway show *Dance with Your Gods*. In 1935 she became the featured singer with the Noble Sissle Society Orchestra, which performed at many first-rate hotel ballrooms and night-clubs. She left Sissle in 1936 to perform as a "single" in a variety of New York City clubs.

Experiences unequal treatment because of race

In 1937 Horne married minor politician Louis Jones, by whom she had a daughter, Gail, and a son, Edwin (they separated in

1940 and divorced in 1944). She gained some early stage experience in Lew Leslie's revues, *Blackbirds of 1939* and *Blackbirds of 1940*, and in 1940 she joined one of the great white swing bands, the Charlie Barnet Orchestra. But as the group's only black member she suffered many humiliations of racial prejudice, especially from hotels and restaurants that catered exclusively to whites.

Horne left Barnet in 1941. Her career received an immediate boost from entertainment manager John Hammond, who got her a long engagement at the famous Cafe Society Downtown, a club in New York City. It was at the Cafe Society that Horne learned about African American history, politics, and culture and developed a new appreciation of her heritage. She rekindled her acquaintance with Paul Robeson (1898–1976), whom she had known as a child. Horne's conversations with Robeson made her realize that the African American people were going to unify and make their situations in life better. She felt she needed to be a part of that movement. From that point onward, Horne became a significant voice in the struggle for equality and justice for African Americans in the United States.

Film career begins

In 1943 a long booking at the Savoy-Plaza Hotel, which brought Horne national coverage and a number of movie appearances, established her as the highest-paid African American entertainer in the United States. She was signed to a seven-year contract with the movie studio Metro Goldwyn Mayer (MGM)—the first African American woman since 1915 to sign a term contract with a film studio. She was not dark enough in color to star with many of the African American actors

of the day and her roles in white films were limited, since Hollywood was not ready to portray interracial relationships on screen.

Given these harsh limitations imposed on African Americans in 1930s and 1940s Hollywood movies, Horne's film career is impressive. After singing roles in *Panama Hattie* (1942), *Harlem on Parade* (1942), *I Dood It* (1943), *Swing Fever* (1943), and *As Thousands Cheer* (1943), she was given a starring role in an all-black story, *Cabin in the Sky* (1943), which also starred her idol, Ethel Waters (1900–1977). Another major role followed in *Stormy Weather* (1943) and then some nonspeaking roles in *Broadway Rhythm* (1944), *Two Girls and a Sailor* (1944), and a musical biography of Rodgers and Hart, *Words and Music* (1948). She refused to take on any roles that were disrespectful to her as a woman of color.

Works for civil rights

Horne, despite her great fame, continued to experience humiliating racial discrimination (wrongful treatment because of race), and in the late 1940s she sued a number of restaurants and theaters for race discrimination and also began working with Paul Robeson in the Progressive Citizens of America, a political group opposing racism. During World War II (1939–45; a war in which Germany, Italy, and Japan fought against France, Great Britain, China, the Soviet Union, and the United States), she used her own money to travel and entertain the troops. She also assisted Eleanor Roosevelt (1884–1962) in her mission for antilynching legislation (laws making it illegal to hang a person accused of a crime without a trial). After the war Horne worked on behalf of Japanese Americans who faced discrimination.

In 1947 she married a white bandleader, Lennie Hayton, a marriage that was kept secret for three years because of racial pressures. Until his death in 1971, Hayton was also her pianist, arranger, conductor, and manager.

In the mid-1950s Horne made a movie appearance in *Meet Me in Las Vegas* (1956) and recorded for the first time in five years. In 1957 she drew record crowds to the Empire Room of the Waldorf-Astoria, and in 1958 and 1959 she starred in a Broadway musical, *Jamaica*.

During the 1960s Horne was involved in the American Civil Rights Movement. She participated in the March on Washington in 1963, performed at rallies in the South and elsewhere, and worked on behalf of the National Council for Negro Women. During the same period, she was also very visible on television, appearing on popular variety shows and in her own special, *Lena in Concert*, in 1969. In 1969 Horne starred in the movie *Death of a Gunfighter*.

Personal tragedy and continuing success

Lennie Hayton's death in 1971, which followed the deaths of Horne's father and her son, plunged her into a state of depression from which she emerged seemingly more determined than ever. In 1973 and 1974 she toured England and the United States with Tony Bennett (1926–), and in 1979 she was billed with composer Marvin Hamlisch at the Westbury (New York) Music Fair.

In 1981 Horne had her greatest triumph, a Broadway show called *Lena Horne: The Lady and Her Music*, which was the talk of show business for fourteen months. It won a special Tony award, and the soundtrack won two Grammy awards.

In the 1990s Horne cut back on performing. She was drawn back from semiretirement to do a tribute concert for a long-time friend, composer Billy Strayhorn, at the JVC Jazz Festival. At age seventy-six she released her first album in a decade, *We'll Be Together Again*. In 1997, on the occasion of her eightieth birthday, Horne was honored at the JVC Jazz Festival with a tribute concert and the Ella Award for Lifetime Achievement in Vocal Artistry. In 1999 she was honored at the New York City's Avery Fisher Hall with an all-star salute.

Lena Horne is an amazing woman. Her pride in her heritage, her refusal to compromise herself, and her innate elegance, grace, and dignity has made her a legendary figure. Her role as a person who has helped to improve the status of African Americans in the performing arts has provided a permanent legacy.

For More Information

Buckley, Gail Lumet. *The Hornes: An American Family*. New York: Knopf, 1986.

Haskins, James, and Kathleen Benson. *Lena: A Biography of Lena Horne*. Chelsea, MI: Scarborough House, 1991.

Palmer, Leslie. *Lena Horne: Entertainer*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1989.

HARRY HOUDINI

Born: March 24, 1874

Budapest, Hungary

Died: October 31, 1926

Detroit, Michigan

Hungarian-born American magician

Magician, actor, and stage personality Harry Houdini—The Great Houdini—was the greatest escape artist of all time. He often said, “No prison can hold me; no hand or leg irons or steel locks can shackle me. No ropes or chains can keep me from my freedom.”

Early life

Although Harry Houdini claimed to be born on April 6, 1874, in Appleton, Wisconsin, the fact was that Erich Weiss, born March 24, 1874, in Budapest, Hungary, was the youngest of three sons of Rabbi Samuel and Cecilia (Steiner) Weiss (who also had a daughter, Gladys). To find a better life, the Weiss family left Hungary and settled in Appleton. “Perhaps April 6 was the date Samuel Weiss arrived in Wisconsin,” remarked Ruth Brandon in her *The Life and Many Deaths of Harry Houdini*. Other moves took the Weisses to Milwaukee, Wisconsin, and New York.

Erich was devoted to his mother and sought ways to ease her hard life. At one point he took to begging for coins in the street. He hid the coins in his hair and clothing, then presented himself to his mother and said, “Shake me, I’m magic.” She did, and a flood of coins spilled out. The family remained poor, however. Erich began selling newspapers and shining shoes at the age of eight to help out.

Erich was also very interested in magic. After serving as a young circus acrobat (“Erich,

Prince of the Air”), he began to study locks and how to “pick” them, or open them using a tool other than a key. He worked as a necktie cutter in a garment factory to earn money to support his hobby. At age seventeen Erich entered show business, taking the stage name Houdini after the nineteenth-century French magician Robert-Houdin. (“Harry” was an Americanized version of Erich.) By age twenty Houdini had married Wilhelmina Beatrice Rahner (known as Bess), who became his partner onstage as well.

Show business success

As “Mysterious Harry and La Petit Bessie,” the Houdinis played amusement parks and music halls, and they even toured with a circus for a time. When response to their escape tricks and magic was poor, they performed a comedy act, stealing old jokes from magazines. During these early years, Harry would often perform his “Hindoo Needle Trick,” in which he appeared to swallow forty needles before drawing them from his mouth, all threaded together. Bess performed as a mind reader, using a code of numbers and letters known to her and Harry. In 1895, in Massachusetts, Houdini first thought up the idea of escaping not from his own handcuffs, but from those of the local police. These stunts brought free publicity, which increased Houdini’s popularity.

Houdini’s American tours were followed by successful appearances in Europe. With success came imitators, as anyone could buy a version of the Hindoo Needle Trick. (Houdini himself had purchased it.) Houdini worked hard to stay ahead of the pack. He began performing escapes from straitjackets, jails, coffins, handcuffs, and shackles (something

that confines the arms or legs). At each performance he invited police officials onstage to examine him and his props to make sure they were real. Except, with his skill as a magician, he was still able to hide things. As Brandon wrote, “When he had to strip naked, he sometimes hid a small pick in the thick skin on the sole of a foot—not a spot that would ordinarily be searched.” In 1908 Houdini began performing a trick in which he was locked inside a large iron milk can filled with water. He could escape within three minutes.

In June 1918 Houdini made his move into film, playing a character called the Master Detective. In this series of stories the detective, named Quentin Locke, saved women from danger through great stunts, and of course, great escapes. Both the stories and the performances were weak, but the films showed Houdini the way his public wanted to see him. Each magic routine or stunt was shown as “real,” with no camera tricks helping out the Master Detective.

The spirit world calls

Steve and Patricia Hanson related in a *Los Angeles* magazine article that Houdini became interested in “making contact with those who had gone beyond” after his mother’s death in 1913. His attempts in this area brought him into contact with writer Sir Arthur Conan Doyle (1859–1930), the creator of the Sherlock Holmes character. In 1908, as a publicity stunt, Houdini had written a letter to “Holmes,” asking for help in catching crooks who were stealing his tricks. By 1920 the two men had formed a friendship based on their talent and their grief—just as Houdini had lost his beloved mother, Doyle had lost his son, Kingsley, who had been killed in World



Harry Houdini.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

War I (1914–18; a war in which Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Japan fought against Great Britain, France, Russia, and the United States). Each man sought ways to make contact with the spirit world.

After a while the friendship began to weaken. Houdini was not as strong a believer as Doyle. Part of Houdini’s career was devoted to exposing fakes who pretended to be able to contact spirits. As the Hansons noted in *Los Angeles*, Houdini felt that Doyle was too blinded by grief to see clearly, and Doyle thought that Houdini was not open-minded enough and was too anxious to expose fraud. The two men’s friendship ended.

The passing of a legend

No evidence of real contact with Houdini's mother was ever recorded, but her death haunted Houdini until the occasion of his own passing. Even that event has since been clouded by the myths that always seemed to accompany him. For instance, a feature film of Houdini's life released in 1953 showed him dying in one of his own watery coffins during a performance. There were many other incorrect stories describing his death.

What really happened was that Houdini, while on tour in Montreal, Canada, was relaxing backstage where some college students came to see him. Houdini often challenged people to punch him in the stomach with all their strength, and he agreed to let one of the students take a swing. But the punch came while Houdini was lying on a couch, before he had prepared for the impact. An injury to the appendix resulted. Left untreated for several days, it turned into an infection that struck Houdini down during a performance in Detroit, Michigan. Rushed to a hospital, he held on for a few days before dying in his wife's arms on October 31, 1926—Halloween day.

Even in death Houdini knew how to create publicity. His widow made headlines by announcing that every year on the anniversary of his death she was going to try to make contact with his spirit. This went on for some ten years, and though Bess once claimed that contact was made, she later changed her story. Houdini continues to live on in the public's imagination. After a lifetime of pretending to have mythic talents, Houdini became a myth himself.

For More Information

- Borland, Kathryn Kilby, and Helen Ross Speicher. *Harry Houdini, Young Magician*. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1969. Reprint, New York: Macmillan, 1991.
- Brandon, Ruth. *The Life and Many Deaths of Harry Houdini*. Random House, 1993.
- Houdini, Harry. *Magician Among the Spirits*. New York: Harper, 1924. Reprint, Washington, DC: Kaufman and Greenberg, 1996.
- Lalicki, Tom. *Spellbinder: The Life of Harry Houdini*. New York: Holiday House, 2000.
- Silverman, Kenneth. *Houdini!: The Career of Ehrich Weiss*. New York: HarperCollins Publishers, 1996.

GORDIE HOWE

Born: March 31, 1928

Floral, Saskatchewan, Canada

Canadian hockey player

Former professional hockey player Gordie Howe earned the fame of being the most durable player of all time, playing twenty-six seasons for five decades in the National Hockey League. During that time, he was one of the game's most productive scorers.

Howe's youth in Canada

Gordie Howe was born in Floral, Saskatchewan, Canada, on March 31, 1928.

He was the fifth of nine children. At three months of age his family moved to nearby Saskatoon, where his father worked as a mechanic, a laborer, and a construction worker to support his family. The family was poor, as were many of their neighbors during the Great Depression (a period in the 1930s where economic hardship led to a lack of jobs, and the majority of the people in the United States and Canada were living in poverty). As a result Gordie was often sick as a child because of poor nutrition. He was also painfully shy and awkward—a problem that he would face throughout his adulthood. Gordie's significant moment came when a neighbor sold a sack of used belongings to his mother for cash. When they opened the bag, the first thing that he saw was a pair of skates. Five-year-old Gordie had received his first pair of skates.

Devoted to hockey

Howe immersed himself in hockey, playing day in and day out throughout the year, using a puck, a tennis ball, or even clumps of dirt. He was a big boy but was clumsy in his youth. He did not make it the first time he tried out for a local youth hockey team. By the time he was twelve years old, however, Howe had developed into an excellent skater.

During the summers, Howe worked with his father at construction sites. He described it as “throwing concrete.” The heavy work helped him develop the exceptional strength that he would one day use to make himself one of the fastest shots in hockey. At the age of fifteen Howe was a 6-foot, two-hundred-pounder, very big at that time for a hockey player.

Pro tryouts

Howe had already caught the eye of the professional scouts (people who gather information about players not yet in professional sports). When he was fifteen, the New York Rangers invited him to a tryout camp. The camp director, though, was unimpressed. He felt Howe was too awkward and would not make it in the major leagues. Despite this rejection, Howe landed a tryout with the Detroit Red Wings the next year. Jack Adams, coach and general manager of the team, was definitely impressed by young Howe and signed him to a contract.

Howe, then seventeen years old, was assigned to the Red Wings' minor league farm team in Omaha, Nebraska. He had an excellent season, and the next year he was given a shot at making the major-league club. He made the Red Wings, and in his first game gave a sample of what was to come. He scored a goal, skated tirelessly, and had perfect control. His goal came in the second period, and he literally powered his way through the players from the blue line to make the goal.

It took Howe three seasons to “mature” as a professional. He scored a total of thirty-five goals those first three years. From that point on, Howe was a consistent scorer. Starting in 1949 and 1950, Howe was one of the NHL's top scorers, which he continued to be for two decades.

A serious accident

In 1950, though, Howe's career almost came to an abrupt end. In the first playoff game against the Toronto Maple Leafs, Howe collided with Toronto's Ted Kennedy and flew



Gordie Howe.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

head first into the sideboards. His skull was fractured and he suffered a concussion (a brain injury caused by a hard blow). He also had his cheekbone and nose broken. In the hospital, surgeons had to operate to relieve the pressure on his brain. He was in critical condition for days.

The next season Howe came back. The question was, would he still have the same fire and aggressiveness that he had before? Howe responded by playing in every game and by leading the NHL in goals, assists, and total points that season.

League leader

Leading the league in scoring became a regular occurrence for Howe. He won the scoring title six times. He was selected the NHL's Most Valuable Player six times. Howe's development as a star also led to his team's development as consistent winners. From 1949 to 1955 the Detroit Red Wings won the league title seven straight times, and they were Stanley Cup playoff champions four times.

In 1951 Howe met Colleen Joffa, and in 1953 the two were married. They would eventually have four children: Martin, Mark, Cathy, and Murray. The boys soon became involved in youth hockey.

Throughout his career Howe was a supporter of self-defense on the ice to avoid getting hurt. He was a feared figure on the ice. He had sharp elbows and a quick stick. Some thought him to be sneaky and players kept out of his way. Howe was everything one would expect the ideal athlete to be: he was intelligent, demanding, and hardworking. He was not a person to take any abuse from other players. If they tried to intimidate him, they ended up on the "short end of the stick." His number one goal was to play good, hard hockey.

With the flying elbows and flying pucks that come with hockey, and no helmets at the time, facial cuts and stitches were common in the game. Howe estimated that he had received three hundred stitches in his face.

Joined his sons

Howe surpassed Maurice "Rocket" Richard's (1921–2000) scoring record in 1963. By the time he retired from the Red

Wings in 1971 at the age of forty-three, he held the records for goals, assists, and total points. He also had the record for most games played. He accepted a job in the team's front office. But in 1973, when the Houston Aeros of the new World Hockey Association (WHA) signed his sons Marty and Mark, Howe asked about joining them. Playing on the same professional team as his sons had been a dream. He got himself back into shape and returned triumphantly, scoring one hundred points, winning the league's Most Valuable Player award, and leading his team to the WHA championship.

Howe continued to play in the WHA through 1977. He moved to the Hartford Whalers and when that team was combined into the NHL in 1978, he was back for a second tour of duty in his old league. Howe's autobiography, *And . . . Howe!: An Authorized Autobiography* was published in 1995. He continued to make special appearances playing in charity games well into the 1990s.

In September of 1997, at the age of sixty-nine, Howe announced he would play one game, the October 3 season opener, with the International Hockey League's Detroit Vipers. His one-shift stint made him the only professional hockey player to play in six different decades.

The Howes continue to be involved in charitable activities and live an active lifestyle. In 2001 the couple was honored when a school in Abbotsford, Canada, was named the Colleen and Gordie Howe Middle School. In January 2002 they carried the Olympic torch through Detroit, Michigan, for the 2002 Winter Olympics.

Best hockey player of all time?

When Gordie Howe broke Maurice "Rocket" Richard's National Hockey League (NHL) scoring record, the debate was whether Richard or Howe was the best player of all time. Years later when Wayne Gretzky (1961–) broke Howe's record, the debate was renewed—this time Gretzky versus Howe. The debate still continues.

For More Information

Cotsonika, Nick. *Hockey Gods*. Chicago: Triumph Books, 2002.

Howe, Gordie. *My Hockey Memories*. Buffalo, NY: Firefly Books, 1999.

Howe, Gordie, and Colleen Howe. *And—Howe!: An Authorized Autobiography*. Traverse City, MI: Power Play Publications, 1995.

MacSkimming, Roy. *Gordie: A Hockey Legend*. Vancouver, BC: Greystone Books, 1994.

JULIA WARD HOWE

Born: May 27, 1819

New York, New York

Died: October 17, 1910

Newport, Rhode Island

American author and reformer

Julia Ward Howe, American author and reformer, wrote the words for "The Battle Hymn of the Republic." She was also a ground-breaking activist in the pursuit of women's right to vote.



Julia Ward Howe.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Growing up in New York

Julia Ward Howe was born Julia Ward in New York City on May 27, 1819. She was the fourth of seven children of a successful Wall Street banker. When Howe was five years old, her mother died. Because of her father's conservative nature, she was limited in her socializing. Eventually Howe was introduced to New York society, and her charm made her an instant favorite.

Shortly after Howe turned twenty, her father also died. She then moved to Boston in hopes of recovering from her loss. In 1843 she married Samuel Gridley Howe (1801–1876), a physician, pioneer teacher of the

blind, and reformer. Although some of her Boston friends included poet Henry Wadsworth Longfellow (1807–1882) and essayist Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882), she found Boston society cold and uninviting. About the same time, Howe's views of a woman's role in society began to change. She became outspoken and oftentimes voiced her opinion, although it was not common for women to do so at the time.

A literary career

While in Boston the Howes edited the *Commonwealth*, an antislavery paper. Howe's first book, a collection of poems, was published in 1854. Afterwards she wrote many volumes of verse, travel descriptions, and essays. None was so popular as her patriotic song, "The Battle Hymn of the Republic," which she composed in a tent one night after visiting military camps during the American Civil War (1861–65; a war fought in the United States between the northern states and the southern states that resulted in the end of slavery in the country). During the war Howe was a strong supporter of the northern states and their antislavery stand. Because of the song she wrote based on her wartime beliefs, she became one of the best-known and most widely honored women in America.

Meanwhile other conflicts drove her to take action in support of peace. As a Francophile, or supporter of France, she was horrified by the Franco-Prussian War (1870–71; a war between France and Prussia, or states that made up what is today Germany). This antiwar view led Howe to become president of the American Branch of the Woman's International Peace Association in 1871.

The women's movement

After the American branch of the peace association failed, Howe began working to concern the nation's women on issues concerning the homefront. She helped found the New England Woman's Club in 1868. That same year she organized the New England Woman Suffrage Association and later the American Woman Suffrage Association. (Suffrage is the right to vote.) These two groundbreaking associations pushed for a woman's right to vote in America.

New York feminists (fighters for women's rights), led by Susan B. Anthony (1820–1906) and Elizabeth Cady Stanton (1815–1902), wanted the cause to embrace many social and political issues, from marriage questions to labor unions. More conservative Boston feminists, including Howe and Lucy Stone (1818–1893), focused on women's rights alone. The conservative Boston feminists encouraged men to join the movement, whereas the New Yorkers believed that men limited the organization's efforts. For more than twenty years these differences divided the movement into two organizations: the American Woman Suffrage Association and the Stanton-Anthony National Woman Suffrage Association.

Eventually the National came around to the American's point of view, and the two associations united in 1890 as the National American Woman Suffrage Association. Although Howe's careful strategy was adopted, it was another thirty years before women were given the right to vote under the Nineteenth Amendment to the Constitution, in 1920.

In 1908 Howe was the first woman elected to the American Academy of the Arts and Letters, an organization for famed artists and writers. She died on Oct. 17, 1910, in

Newport, Rhode Island. She is remembered chiefly for "The Battle Hymn," in some ways the least of her accomplishments. Yet there is justice in this. She wrote it to help free the slaves, and later it became the anthem of the women's suffrage movement. Even later it was used by civil rights workers. In 1968, when the funeral train for Senator Robert Kennedy (1925–1968) carried his body from New York City to Washington, D.C., "The Battle Hymn" was sung by mourners.

For More Information

Clifford, Deborah Pickman. *Mine Eyes Have Seen the Glory: A Biography of Julia Ward Howe*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1979.

Howe, Julia Ward. *Reminiscences, 1819–1899*. Boston; New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1899. Reprint, New York: Negro Universities Press, 1969.

Richards, Laura E., and Maud Howe Elliott. *Julia Ward Howe, 1819–1910*. Boston; New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1915. Reprint, Atlanta: Cherokee, 1990.

Williams, Gary. *Hungry Heart: The Literary Emergence of Julia Ward Howe*. Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press, 1999.

HOWARD HUGHES

Born: December 24, 1905

Houston, Texas

Died: April 5, 1976

Houston, Texas

American entrepreneur and inventor

Howard Hughes was a colorful and flashy businessman and inventor who used an inherited fortune to achieve a national reputation in the motion picture and aviation industries.

Childhood

Howard Robard Hughes was born in Houston, Texas, on December 24, 1905, the only child of Howard Robard Hughes and Alene Gano Hughes. His father earned millions by inventing special machinery for the oil industry. He attended private schools in California and Massachusetts and was very inventive as a child. At the age of twelve he made a radio transmitter out of an electric doorbell, and later he made a self-starting motor for his bicycle. At the age of fourteen he made his first airplane flight.

Hughes then attended the Rice Institute in Houston, and the California Institute of Technology. His mother died when Hughes was sixteen and his father just two years later, leaving him an orphan with an estate worth \$871,000 and a patent (right to ownership) for a drill bit used in most oil and gas drilling that brought large revenues to the family's Hughes Tool Company, manufacturers of the bit.

The movie business

Hughes left school to take control of the company, using its profits to finance a variety of projects, which he hoped would make him a legend in his own time. In 1925, at age twenty, Hughes married Ella Rice and moved to Los Angeles, California, (they separated in 1928). In 1927 Hughes entered the motion picture business and produced such films as

Scarface (1932), and *The Outlaw* (1941), and the box-office smash *Hell's Angels* (1930). He discovered actors Jean Harlow (1911–1937) and Paul Muni and made Jane Russell (1921–) a well-known star.

While living in Hollywood, California, the multimillionaire movie producer led a relatively quiet lifestyle. He lived in small apartments or rented homes and rarely participated in Hollywood's social world of the rich and famous.

Aviation

In 1928 Hughes obtained a pilot's license. His interest in aviation (flying) led him to found the Hughes Aircraft Company in Glendale, California, in 1932 and to design, build, and fly record-breaking airplanes. He set a world speed record in 1935, transcontinental (crossing a continent) speed records in 1936 and 1937, and a world flight record in 1938. Hughes was honored with the Harmon Trophy and a New York City ticker-tape parade after his world flight. He was awarded the Collier Trophy in 1939, the Octave Chanute Award in 1940, and a Congressional Medal in 1941.

In 1939 Hughes began work on an experimental military aircraft, and in 1942 he received a contract to design and build the world's largest plane, a wooden seaplane, later nicknamed the "Spruce Goose." It was supposed to serve as a troop carrier in World War II (1939–45).

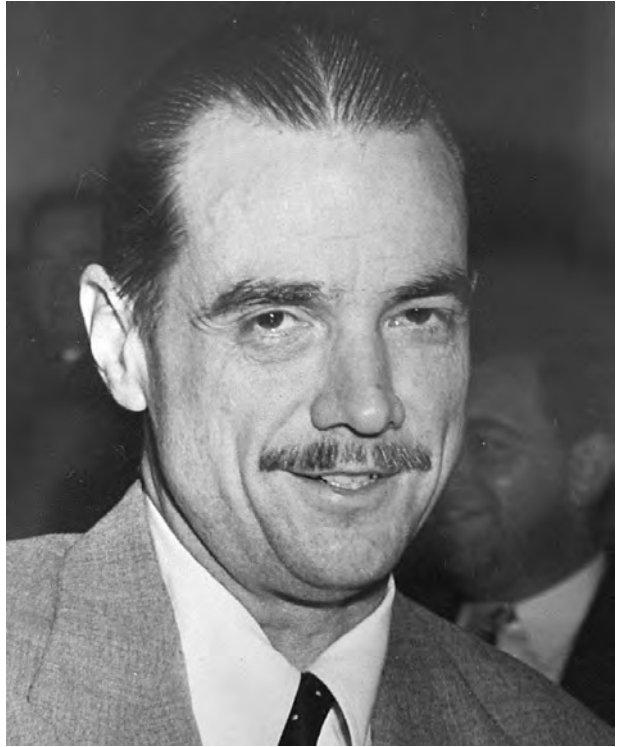
Hughes suffered a nervous breakdown in 1944 and was critically injured in the crash of his experimental military plane in 1946, but he recovered and flew the huge seaplane the next year. As a result of these aviation activi-

ties, Hughes became a popular public figure because his image represented the traditional American qualities of individuality, daring, and imagination. He was named to the Aviation Hall of Fame in 1973.

The Hughes Aircraft Company became a major defense contractor after World War II. As the profits of the company increased, Hughes became obsessed with avoiding taxes and in 1953 created the Howard Hughes Medical Institute as a sophisticated tax shelter to which he transferred the profits of the aircraft company. In 1956 Hughes loaned \$205,000 to future President Richard Nixon's (1913–1994) brother Donald in a successful effort to influence an Internal Revenue Service (IRS) ruling on the medical institute. Hughes made secret contributions of \$100,000 to the successful Nixon presidential campaign in 1970 and was able to prevent enforcement of the Tax Reform Act against the medical institute. Hughes continued to use profits from the tool company for other ventures, including the creation of Trans World Airlines (TWA), in which he had begun investing in 1939.

Life in seclusion

In 1950 Hughes began a strange life of isolation, beginning a lifestyle which would ultimately turn him into a recluse (one who retreats from the world), although he did marry actress Jean Peters in 1957, divorcing her in 1971. Hughes refused to appear in court or even give a statement, and in a 1963 antitrust case over his ownership of 78 percent of TWA, his failure to appear resulted in a ruling that led him to sell his holdings in 1966. The \$566 million received from this sale was invested by Hughes in hotels, gambling casi-



*Howard Hughes.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

nos, golf courses, a television station, an airport, and land in Las Vegas, Nevada. In 1972 the Hughes Tool Division, the basis of the Hughes fortune, was sold. The holding company was renamed Summa Corporation and its headquarters relocated to Las Vegas, where Hughes had moved his residence.

From this point on Hughes's career accomplishments were minimal. His obsession to control every aspect of his environment turned him into a recluse. He was seen only by a few associates and remained isolated from the operations of his company. In 1970 he left the United States, and moved from place to place—the Bahamas, Nicaragua, Canada, Eng-

land, and Mexico. He always arrived unannounced in luxury hotels and took extreme precautions to ensure privacy. Hughes saw only a few male aides, worked for days without sleep in a black-curtained room, and became emaciated (thin from starvation) from the effects of his diet and the excessive use of drugs.

Hughes's concern for privacy ultimately caused controversy, resulting in a scandal over his supposed memoirs (writings of personal experiences) by author Clifford Irving that sold for \$1 million before being proven to be fake. The Hughes conglomerate (a group of diverse businesses) became involved with the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), and in 1975, built an undersea exploratory drilling ship which was actually used by the CIA to attempt to recover a sunken Soviet (Russian) submarine. The company retained a Washington, D.C., public relations firm that was also involved with the CIA, which led the Hughes corporation to become involved in the "Watergate" affair, a scandal that ultimately led to the resignation of President Nixon in 1973.

Hughes died on April 5, 1976, on an airplane that was taking him from Acapulco, Mexico, to a hospital in Houston for medical attention. Hughes was controversial even after his death. Several wills appeared, one of which was found in the Mormon church in Salt Lake City, Utah, but all were later declared to be forgeries.

For More Information

Bartlett, Donald L., and James B. Steele. *The Life, Legend, and Madness of Howard Hughes*. 1979.

Drosnin, Michael. *Citizen Hughes*. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1985.

Hack, Richard. *Hughes, the Private Diaries, Memos, and Letters*. Beverly Hills, CA: New Millennium Press, 2001.

Keats, John. *Howard Hughes*. New York: Random House, 1972.

Phelan, James. *Howard Hughes: The Hidden Years*. New York: Random House, 1976.

LANGSTON HUGHES

Born: February 1, 1902

Joplin, Missouri

Died: May 22, 1967

New York, New York

African American poet and playwright

American author Langston Hughes, a moving spirit in the artistic movement of the 1920s often called the Harlem Renaissance, expressed the mind and spirit of most African Americans for nearly half a century.

Early life

Langston Hughes was born in Joplin, Missouri, on February 1, 1902, to Carrie M. Langston and James N. Hughes. His parents separated soon after his birth, and Hughes was raised mainly by his mother, his grandmother, and a childless couple, the Reeds. He attended public schools in Kansas and Illinois and upon graduating elementary school, Hughes was named class poet, although he had never even written a poem. That title sparked an interest in writing poetry.

Hughes graduated from high school in Cleveland, Ohio, in 1920. His high school companions, most of whom were white, remembered him as a handsome “Indian-looking” youth whom everyone liked and respected for his quiet, natural ways and his abilities. He won an athletic letter in track and held offices in the student council and the American Civic Association.

In high school Hughes was introduced to the works of poet Carl Sandburg (1878–1967), another poet from the Midwest. Also at this time, Hughes himself began writing poetry and developing his unique style. He began submitting his work to magazines, but all were rejected.

A career begins

Hughes spent the year after high school in Mexico with his father, who tried to discourage him from writing. But Hughes’s poetry and prose (writings) were beginning to appear in the *Brownie’s Book*, a publication for children edited by W. E. B. Du Bois (1868–1963), and he was starting work on more ambitious material for adult readers. The poem “A Negro Speaks of River,” which marked this development, appeared in the *Crisis* magazine in 1921.

Hughes returned to America and enrolled at Columbia University in New York City. Meanwhile, the *Crisis* printed several more of his poems. Finding the atmosphere at Columbia unfriendly, Hughes left after a year. He took on odd jobs in New York, and in 1923 he signed on to work on a freighter (a large ship). His first voyage took him down the west coast of Africa; his second took him to Spain. In 1924 he spent six months in Paris, France. He was relatively happy, pro-



Langston Hughes.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

duced some prose, and experimented with what he called “racial rhythms” in poetry. Most of this verse (poetry) appeared in African American publications, but *Vanity Fair*, a magazine popular among middle- and upper-class women, published three poems.

Later in 1924 Hughes went to live with his mother in Washington, D.C. He hoped to earn enough money to return to college, but work as a hotel busboy paid very little, and life in the nation’s capital, where racial tensions were fierce, made him unhappy. But he was able to write many poems. “The Weary Blues” won first prize in 1925 in a literary competition sponsored by *Opportunity*, a magazine

published by the National Urban League. That summer one of his essays and another poem won prizes in the *Crisis* literary contest. Meanwhile, Hughes had come to the attention of Carl Van Vechten, a novelist and critic, who arranged publication of Hughes's first volume of poetry, *The Weary Blues* (1926).

This book projected Hughes's lasting themes, established his style, and suggested the wide range of his poetic talent. It showed him committed to racial themes—pride in blackness and in his African heritage, and the everyday life of African Americans—and democracy (government ruled by the people) and patriotism (the support of one's country). Hughes transformed the bitterness which such themes generated in many African Americans of the day into sharp irony and humor. His casual, folklike style was strengthened in his second book, *Fine Clothes to the Jew* (1927).

A literary success

Hughes had resumed his education in 1925 and graduated from Lincoln University in 1929. *Not without Laughter* (1930) was his first novel. The story portrays an African American boy, Sandy, caught between two worlds and two attitudes. The boy's hard-working and respectable mother provides a counterpoint to his energetic, easygoing, footloose father. The mother is oriented to the middle-class values of the white world; the father believes that fun and laughter are the only things worth pursuing. Though the boy's character is blurred, Hughes's attention to the details of African American culture in America gives the novel insight and power.

The relative commercial success of *Not without Laughter* inspired Hughes to make his living as an author. In 1931 he made the first

of what became annual lecture tours. The following year he took a trip to the Soviet Union, the former country that today consists of Russia and other smaller nations. Meanwhile, he turned out poems, essays, book reviews, song lyrics, plays, and short stories. He edited five books of African American writing and worked with Arna Bontemps on another and on a book for children. He wrote some twenty plays, including "Mulatto," "Simply Heavenly," and "Tambourines to Glory." He translated Federico Garcia Lorca, the Spanish poet, and Gabriela Mistral (1889–1957), the Latin American Nobel laureate poet, and wrote two long autobiographical works (a biography about oneself).

As a newspaper columnist for the *Chicago Defender*, Hughes created "Simple." This enduring character brought his style to perfection and solidified his reputation as the "most eloquent [fluent and persuasive] spokesman" for African Americans. The sketches of Simple, collected in five volumes, are presented as conversations between an uneducated, African American city dweller, Jesse B. Semple (Simple), and an educated but less sensitive African American friend. The sketches that ran in the *Defender* for twenty-five years are varied in subject and remarkable in their relevance to the universal human condition. That Simple is a universal man, even though his language, habits, and personality are the result of his particular experiences as an African American man, is a measure of Hughes's genius.

Hughes received numerous fellowships (scholarships), awards, and honorary degrees, including the Anisfield-Wolf Award (1953) for a book on improving race relations. He taught creative writing at two universities;

had his plays produced on four continents; and made recordings of African American history, music commentary, and his own poetry. He was elected to the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and to the National Institute of Arts and Letters. His work, some of which was translated into a dozen languages, earned him an international reputation. Forty-seven volumes bear Hughes's name. He died in New York City on May 22, 1967.

For More Information

Cooper, Floyd. *Coming Home: From the Life of Langston Hughes*. New York: Philomel Books, 1994.

Hughes, Langston. *The Big Sea: An Autobiography*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1940. Reprint, New York: Hill and Wang, 1993.

Hughes, Langston. *I Wonder as I Wander: An Autobiographical Journey*. New York: Rinehart, 1956. Reprint, New York: Hill and Wang, 1993.

Meltzer, Milton. *Langston Hughes: A Biography*. New York: Crowell, 1968.

Rampersad, Arnold. *The Life of Langston Hughes*. 2nd ed. New York: Oxford University Press, 2002.

Walker, Alice. *Langston Hughes, American Poet*. New York: HarperCollins, 1998.

VICTOR HUGO

Born: February 26, 1802
Besançon, France

Died: May 22, 1885

Paris, France

French author

The French author Victor Hugo, is regarded by many as the supreme poet of French romanticism (a style in the 1800s that emphasized a free form of writing and expressed strong emotions, experiences of common people, and imaginative expressions and passion). He is known for producing large amounts of work, the ability to easily write poetry or novels, and his incredible vision.

Hugo's early years

Victor Marie Vicomte Hugo was born in Besançon, France, on February 26, 1802, to Joseph Leopold Sigisbert Hugo and Sophie Trebuchet. He and his two older brothers, Abel and Eugène, lived with their mother in Paris, France, while their father, a general and the governor of the Italian province of Avelino, lived in Italy. Hugo's mother had a special friendship with General Victor Fanneau Lahorie, who became an enemy of the French government. She let him hide in their house, and it was during this time he became a teacher for the Hugo boys. The boys frequently traveled to see their father and these trips caused breaks in their education. As a young boy, Hugo showed an interest in writing poetry. When he was twelve years old, Victor and his brothers were sent to school at the Pension Cordier. There they studied the sciences and spent their leisure time writing poetry and plays. When Victor was fifteen, he won the poetry contest held by the Académie Française and the next year placed first in the Académie des Jeux Floraux's contest. Victor's

reputation as a poet developed early in his life, and he received a royal salary in 1822.

In 1822 Hugo married his childhood sweetheart, Adèle Foucher, one and a half years after the death of his mother, who had opposed their marriage. The couple later had four children. Their apartment in Paris became the meeting place for the ambitious writers of the Romantic Movement. In 1822 Hugo also published his first signed book, *Odes et poésies diverses*.

Development of romanticism

In 1824 a few of Hugo's friends began a group called Muse française. All were young writers who were beginning to break with neoclassicism (a style of writing that was based on the styles of ancient Greece and Rome in which logical, clear, and well-ordered writing was valued). After his visit to Alphonse de Lamartine (1790–1869) and his discovery of German balladry (putting stories to music in an artistic way), in 1826 Hugo published *Odes et ballades*, in which his rejection of neoclassicism was clear.

The years 1826 and 1827 were successful ones for the Cénacle, the name given to a group of young romantics who were supporters of Hugo and his poetry. They called him the “prince of poets.” Hugo stopped writing flattering odes (poems that express positive emotions and feelings about people or events) to King Charles X (1757–1836) and instead began praising Napoleon I (1769–1821). With the support and advice of friends, Hugo created the attitude of romanticism. This belief was expressed in the preface to his unproduced play, *Cromwell*, published in October 1827. He felt that poetry should follow nature, mixing the beautiful and the good

with the ugly and the displeasing. The Bible, Homer (c. ninth century B.C.E.), and William Shakespeare (1564–1616) were the inspirational sources of his new literature.

Convinced that romanticism must prove itself in the theater, Hugo followed *Cromwell* with a number of other plays. On February 25, 1830, the famous “battle of Hernani” took place, with Hugo's supporters out shouting the neoclassicists and antiromantics (people who opposed the romantic movement) who had come to show their disapproval for the play. *Hernani* was performed forty-five times (an unusual success for those days).

In 1831 Hugo published his novel *Notre Dame de Paris*, the work for which he is best known in the United States. In this he wished to convey the true spirit of the late Middle Ages through his creation of the Cathedral of Notre Dame and his characters: Frollo the archdeacon, Quasimodo the hunchback, and Esmeralda the gypsy girl. Although some readers were shocked that Frollo (who had taken holy orders) should fall in love with Esmeralda, the tale was a huge success.

Melancholy period

Also in 1831 Hugo published one of his most beautiful collections of poetry, *Les Feuilles d'automne*. Once again, Hugo wrote about private topics. This volume expressed the sadness he felt about events in his past as the poet approached his important thirtieth birthday. It was not only the fact that he was aging that made Hugo depressed; his wife, tired of bearing children and frustrated by the poet's immense selfishness, turned for comfort to the poet's friend, the critic Sainte-Beuve. The sadness of this double betrayal is felt in *Feuilles d'automne*.

Due to Hugo's loneliness from his wife's rejection, he fell in love with the young actress and prostitute (a person who receives money for performing sexual acts) Juliette Drouet. He took it upon himself to save her. He paid her debts and forced her to live in poverty, with her whole life focused entirely upon him. From this time on she lived solely for the poet and spent her time writing him letters, of which many thousands are in existence.

With the arrival of the July Monarchy, Hugo became wealthy and famous, and for fifteen years he was the official poet of France. During this period a large variety of new works appeared, including three plays: *Le Roi s'amuse* (1832), *Lucrezia Borgia* (1833), and the triumph *Ruy Blas* (1838).

In 1835 came *Chants du crépuscule*, which included many love lyrics (poems telling of emotion or love) to Juliette. In 1837 came *Les Voix intérieures*, a memorial of his father, who had been a Napoleonic general. *Les Rayons et les ombres* (1840) was another of his written works that was a statement of his personal emotions.

Political involvement

Hugo was now seized with a new ambition: he wished to become a statesman. When Louis Philippe was defeated in the Revolution of 1848, he allowed himself to be elected a deputy to the Assembly.

When Louis Napoleon began to achieve fame, Hugo supported him. But his enthusiasm for the new president was short-lived. He made a stirring plea for freedom of the press. At last, in 1849, he broke with Napoleon III (1808–1873).



Victor Hugo.

Louis Napoleon seized power on the night of December 2, 1850, and declared himself emperor. Hugo called for the people to fight back, and many were killed in this process. Hugo's involvement in the events put his life in danger. Juliette saved the poet, found him shelter, and organized his escape to Brussels, Belgium. From there he went to the British Channel islands of Jersey and Guernsey.

In November 1853 Hugo's anti-Napoleonic volume, *Les Châtiments*, was published in Belgium. Though banned in France, the books were smuggled in and widely distributed. The final edition of *Les Châtiments*, with numerous additions, was published in

1870, when Hugo returned to Paris after the fall of Napoleon III.

Hugo's mysticism

During Hugo's long absence from France, he explored the dark side of his personality. There were many séances (meetings of people attempting to contact the dead) in his home. He believed that he was communicating with famous spirits. The "visit" that touched him most was that of his favorite daughter, Léopoldine, who had tragically drowned in the Seine with her young husband in 1843.

Indeed, Hugo's family was doomed with many tragedies. While his life in England energized his poetry, his wife and children became depressed. They longed for their friends and the familiar surroundings of Paris. His daughter, Adèle, withdrew into a fantasy world until at last she ran away from home. Hugo continued his experiments with the supernatural until stopped by the fragile mental state of his son, Charles. Hugo's wife left him to live in Brussels, where she died in 1868. Only Juliette remained loyal during the seventeen years the poet spent in England.

In 1856 Hugo published *Les Contemplations*, a work described as the progression of life from infancy to its end, complete with all of the emotional experiences that happen to a person during this process. Many of these poems predict Hugo's next major work *La Légende des siècles* (1859), conceived as part of an enormous uncompleted work whose mission was to "express humanity." Hugo dreamed of an all-inclusive vast poem. It would show that man and his soul were basically good and that the human spirit would come out and away from its concern with material things.

In 1862 Hugo published *Les Misérables*, a major novel, the work of many years. His guiding interest was a social and humanitarian concern for the disadvantaged. The book was not just an adventure story but a love story and a mystery as well. It solidified Hugo's concern for people who were treated unfairly in society and once again amazed the reading public with the range of his literary powers.

When Victor Hugo died in Paris on May 22, 1885, he was a time-honored man, crowned with worldwide glory, still enthusiastic and emotionally devoted to the last.

For More Information

Maurois, André. *Olympio: The Life of Victor Hugo*. New York: Harper, 1956.

Robb, Graham. *Victor Hugo: A Biography*. New York: Norton, 1997.

Smith Dow, Leslie. *Adèle Hugo: La Misérable*. Fredericton, NB: Goose Lane, 1993.

ZORA NEALE HURSTON

Born: January 7, 1903

Eatonville, Florida

Died: January 28, 1960

Fort Pierce, Florida

African American author and folklorist

Folklorist and novelist Zora Neale Hurston was best known for her collection of African American folklore *Mules and Men* (1935) and her novel *Their Eyes Were Watching God* (1937), in which she

charted a young African American woman's personal journey.

Childhood

Zora Neale Hurston was born on January 7, 1903, in Eatonville, Florida, to Reverend John and Lucy Hurston. Zora's mother died when she was nine years old, and her father soon remarried. After her relationship with her stepmother rapidly declined, her father sent her to school in Jacksonville, Florida. Hurston greatly missed her mother and the warm, loving family atmosphere that she had grown up in. Hurston found herself being passed from relative to relative, while working as a nanny and a housekeeper.

When Zora was in her early teens she became a wardrobe girl in a Gilbert and Sullivan repertory company (a theatre company) touring the South. Eighteen months later, with the help of a former employer, she enrolled in Morgan Academy in Baltimore, Maryland, in 1917. She graduated a year later and went to Howard University, where she completed a year and a half of course work between 1919 and 1924. She secured a scholarship which allowed her to transfer to Barnard College, where she earned her degree in 1928. From 1928 to 1932 she studied anthropology (the study of human culture) and folklore at Columbia University under Franz Boas, a well-known anthropologist. In 1936 she was awarded a Guggenheim Fellowship for travelling and collecting folklore in Haiti and the British West Indies.

Early career

Hurston had a variety of jobs in addition to the writing recognition that brought her

fame. She worked as a secretary for writer Fannie Hurst (1889–1968), a writer for Paramount and Warner Brothers Studios, a librarian at the Library of Congress, and a drama coach at North Carolina College for Negroes. Hurston began her writing career while at Howard when she wrote her first short story for *Stylus*, a college literary magazine. She continued to write stories, and in 1925 won first prize in the Opportunity literary contest for "Spunk." In 1939 Morgan College awarded her an honorary doctorate degree. In 1943 she received the Annisfield Award for the autobiographical *Dust Tracks on the Road*, a book about her life, which she wrote.

Also in 1943 she was given an alumni award from Howard University.

Hurston's writings

Hurston's most famous work is her novel *Their Eyes Were Watching God* (1937), in which she created the portrait of an African American female, Janie, growing into adulthood searching for her identity. Through a series of marriages Janie comes to know and define herself in terms of her relationship with whites. For several years after the novel's publication critics saw this work as a sentimental love story. However, if the novel is read with the understanding that love was the traditional way in which a woman was supposed to find self-fulfillment (completing oneself), then love can be seen as the vehicle for emotional, spiritual, and intellectual development. The novel also portrays the awakening of a woman's sexuality. With the women's movement of the 1970s and the growth of female awareness that followed, many critics cited this novel as the central text in the canon (list of the best) of literature by African American women writers, specifically, and by women writers in general.

Hurston was also a famous folklorist who applied her academic training to collecting African American folklore around her hometown in Florida. This work produced two collections of folklore, *Mules and Men* (1935) and *Tell My Horse* (1939). All of her work is characterized by her use of African American folk idioms (regional speech), which are important to her character portrayals.

Hurston wrote three other novels: *Jonah's Gourd Vine* (1934), an autobiographical novel about her father's rise from an illiterate (unable to read or write) laborer to a respected Baptist

minister; *Moses, Man of the Mountain* (1939), which recreated Mosaic biblical myth in an African context; and *Seraph on the Suwanee* (1948), which is about a woman's search for selfhood within the confines of marriage to a man who sees all women as inferior.

Although Hurston worked all of her life at many jobs and was an extremely productive writer, money was always a serious problem. In the late 1940s she returned to Florida and worked as a maid in Riva Alto. After several efforts to restart her writing career, she died in poverty in Fort Pierce, Florida, on January 28, 1960.

For More Information

- Hurston, Zora Neale. *Dust Tracks on the Road*. Philadelphia, PA: J. B. Lippincott, 1942. Reprint, New York: HarperPerennial, 1991.
- Hurston, Zora Neale. *Zora Neale Hurston: A Life in Letters*. Compiled by Carla Kaplan. New York: Doubleday, 2001.
- Lyons, Mary E. *Sorrow's Kitchen*. New York: Scribner's, 1990.
- MacKissak, Patricia, and Frederick MacKissak. *Zora Neale Hurston, Writer and Storyteller*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow, 1992.
- Witcover, Paul. *Zora Neale Hurston*. New York: Chelsea House, 1991.

SADDAM HUSSEIN

Born: April 28, 1937

Tikrit, Iraq

Iraqi president

Saddam Hussein, the socialist president of the Iraqi Republic beginning in 1979, is known for his political sharpness and ability to survive conflicts. He led Iraq in its long, indecisive war with Iran beginning in 1980. He was defeated in the six-week Persian Gulf War in 1990 at the hands of the United States after his invasion of Kuwait.

Early life

Saddam Hussein al-Tikriti was born in 1937 to a peasant family in a village near Tikrit, Iraq. His father died before his birth and his mother died in childbirth. He was raised by his uncles, particularly Khairallah Talfah, a retired army officer who served as a role model for Hussein. (In 1963 Saddam married Talfah's daughter Sajida.) In 1956 he moved into his uncle's house in Baghdad, where he became involved in the strong Arab nationalist movement sweeping Iraq in the wake of the Suez war that year. In 1957 he joined the Arab Ba'th Socialist Party, founded in Syria in 1947 and dedicated to Arab unity and socialism (a social system where goods and services are distributed by the government). From 1957 on Saddam's life and career were tied to the Ba'th Party.

In 1959 Saddam Hussein was one of the party members who attempted to carry out the unsuccessful assassination of the Iraqi dictator, Major General Abdul Karim Qasim (1914–1963). Although wounded, he was able to escape to Syria and then Egypt, where he remained until 1963. In Egypt he continued his political activities, closely observing the tactics, movements, and politics of Gamal Abdel Nasser (1918–1970).

In February 1963 a group of Nasserite and Ba'thist officers in Iraq brought down the

government of Qasim, and Hussein returned to his country. However, this Ba'th party did not remain in power for long. In 1966 Hussein became a member of the Iraqi branch's regional command and played a major role in reorganizing the Ba'th Party in preparation for a second attempt at power. It was in this period that Hussein acquired his reputation as a tough and daring member of the Ba'th Party.

The dual rule: al-Bakr and Hussein

In July 1968, after two attempts to overthrow the government, the Ba'th came back to power in Iraq, temporarily governing through the Revolutionary Command Council (RCC). Ahmad Hasan al-Bakr was elected president of the republic by the RCC and Hussein was elected vice president of the RCC in 1969. Between 1969 and 1979 Iraq was ruled outwardly by al-Bakr and behind the scenes by Hussein, who was a good manipulator and survivor.

In domestic affairs the Ba'th regime applied its socialist policy by bringing almost all economic activity under the control of the government. In 1972 Iraq nationalized (brought under government control) the foreign-owned oil company IBC, the first Middle Eastern government to do so. Hussein oversaw the rapid economic and social development of Iraq which followed the oil price increases of the 1970s. The country began to prosper, especially schools and medical facilities. A major campaign to wipe out illiteracy (the inability to write or read) was started in 1978 requiring children to attend schools. Women's social status was also greatly improved.

In international affairs, Iraq improved relations with the Soviet Union, a former country made up of Russia and other smaller

states that are now nations, and signed a treaty of alliance in 1972. At the same time Iraq distanced itself from the West, except for France. Iraq took a hard line on Israel and attempted to isolate Egypt after Anwar Sadat (1918–1981) signed the Camp David agreements with Israel's prime minister, Menachem Begin (1913–1992).

Saddam Hussein as president

On July 16, 1979, al-Bakr resigned and Hussein was elected president of the Iraqi Republic. One of the first things he ordered were posters of himself scattered throughout Iraq, some as tall as twenty feet, depicting

himself in various roles: a military man, a desert horseman, a young graduate. He carefully created an image of himself as a devoted family man, all in order to win the trust and love of the Iraqi people. He held the titles of secretary general of the Ba'ath party and commander in chief of the armed forces.

Throughout 1979 and 1980 relations with Iran had fallen apart, as Iranian leader Ayatollah Khomeini (1902–1989) called on Iraq's Shi'ites, a large branch of Islam, to revolt against Hussein and the Ba'athist regime. Secret pro-Iranian organizations committed acts of destruction in Iraq, while Iranians began shelling Iraqi border towns in 1980. In September 1980 the Iraqi army crossed the Iranian border and seized Iranian territory thus beginning a long, costly, and bitter war that continued into the late 1980s.

With the continuation of the war, Hussein adopted a more practical stance in international affairs. Relations with conservative countries such as Kuwait, Saudi Arabia, and Egypt improved since they provided Iraq with either financial or military aid. Relations with the United States, cut in 1967 in protest against U.S. support for Israel in the Arab-Israeli conflict, known as the Six-Day War (June 1967), were restored in November 1984. However, Iraq did not change its friendly relations with the Soviet Union which, together with France, was the main source of its arms.

Tightening his grip

Saddam Hussein is a man with the reputation for ruthless crushing of his opposition. When he assumed power, he rid his party of officials and military officers due to an alleged Syrian plot to overthrow his government. He executed another three hundred

officers in 1982 for rebelling against his tactics in the war with Iran. In order to protect himself, Saddam surrounded himself with family and friends in positions of trust and responsibility in the government. After a family dispute, his brother-in-law “mysteriously” died in a helicopter accident. He ordered the murders of his sons-in-law after they fled to Jordan in 1996. His image of a devoted family man was shattered with these acts. On at least seven occasions unsuccessful assassination attempts were made against Hussein.

In 1990 Hussein brought the wrath and combined power of the West and the Arab world down upon Iraq by his invasion of Kuwait. The Persian Gulf War, which Iraq fought against U.S. military forces, lasted for six weeks and caused Iraq’s leader worldwide criticism. However, there are still a great many supporters of Hussein scattered throughout the world.

Since the Persian Gulf War, the United Nations (UN; a multinational body aimed at world peace) lowered many sanctions (laws) upon Iraq, including letting UN weapons inspectors into certain areas of Iraq to check for illegal possession of chemical warfare items. Despite the pressure by the UN (and Saddam’s reluctant acceptance of the sanctions), he has maintained absolute power over his country. In 1997 citizens of Baghdad feared to criticize Hussein, and rumors circulated that he had put his wife under house arrest after his son Uday was shot.

In autumn 1997 Hussein accused UN inspectors of being spies and forced them to leave the country. The situation improved in early 1998, but then after Iraq once again refused to let the inspectors do their jobs, the United States and Great Britain began four

days of air strikes against the country. Hussein then stated that Iraq would no longer cooperate with UN inspectors. The air strikes continued throughout 1999 because Iraq continued to fire on planes that were patrolling no-fly zones that had been put in place by the UN.

In September 2001, after terrorist attacks on the United States, which resulted in the deaths of thousands of people in America, Hussein stated that he refused to offer his sympathy to U.S. president George W. Bush (1946–) because he did not agree with U.S. policy toward Iraq. Early in 2002 Hussein made an offer to openly discuss the sanctions with the UN. He later claimed that Iraq was no longer producing weapons that were made for the purpose of mass destruction. Many people believed that Hussein’s comments were made in an effort to gain support from countries as President Bush indicated that Iraq could become one of the enemies in the U.S.-led war against terrorism.

Saddam Hussein remains a powerful strongman, in spite of an ongoing embargo (stoppage of trade) of his country’s oil, goods, and services.

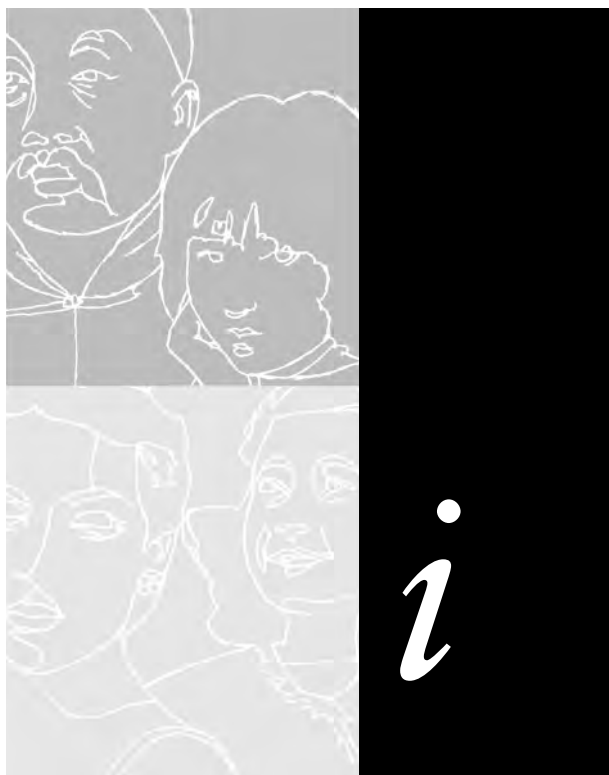
For More Information

Aburish, Saïd K. *Saddam Hussein: The Politics of Revenge*. New York: Bloomsbury, 2000.

Karsh, Efraim, and Inari Rautsi. *Saddam Hussein: A Political Biography*. New York: Free Press, 1991.

Munthe, Turi, ed. *The Saddam Hussein Reader*. New York: Thunder’s Mouth Press, 2002.

Shields, Charles J. *Saddam Hussein*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.



LEE IACOCCA

Born: October 15, 1924

Allentown, Pennsylvania

American businessman and auto industry executive

After a thirty-two year career with Ford Motor Company, including eight years as president, Lee Iacocca engineered one of business history's greatest comebacks at Chrysler Corporation. His success, coupled with appearances in television commercials and his best-selling book, made him one of the nation's most known and admired businessmen.

Early life

Lido Anthony Iacocca was born October 15, 1924, in Allentown, Pennsylvania, the son of Italian immigrants Nicola and Antoinette. Iacocca grew up in comfortable surroundings learning the nuts and bolts of business from his father who worked as a cobbler, hot dog restaurant owner and a theater owner. Nicola was a businessman who taught his son about the responsibilities of money and the need for a strong drive and a great vision in order to build a thriving business. Nicola also ran one of the first car rental agencies in the country and passed on his love of the automobile to his son.

Iacocca's enlistment in the military during World War II (19139–45) was denied

because of his childhood battle with rheumatic fever, a terrible disease that can cause permanent damage to the heart. He earned an undergraduate degree in engineering from Lehigh University and later earned a master's degree from Princeton University. Even as a teenager, Iacocca decided that he was going to be an automobile company executive and focused his studies in that direction. He secured a much sought-after engineering trainee job at Ford Motor Company in 1946, but put off his start until he completed his master's degree at Princeton.

At Ford Motor Company

Joining Ford as an engineering trainee in 1946, Iacocca soon entered the fast pace of sales. In 1960, at age thirty-six, he sped into the vice presidency and general managership of the company's most important unit, Ford Division. In 1964, with others on his staff, he launched the Ford Mustang, which, thanks to brilliant styling and marketing, introduced a new wave of sports cars, set a first-year sales record for any model, gave its name to a generation, and landed its creator's picture on the covers of *Time* and *Newsweek*.

In 1960 Iacocca was named Ford's vice president of the car and truck group; in 1967, executive vice president; and in 1970, president. Pocketing an annual salary and bonus of \$977,000, the flashy executive also earned a reputation as one of the greatest salesmen in U.S. history. Of Iacocca, it has been said that he was always selling, whether products, ideas—or himself.

From Ford to Chrysler

Iacocca was let go from Ford Motor Company in June 1978 by Chairman Henry

Ford II for reasons Ford never revealed. Though bitter at being dismissed from Ford, Iacocca was not out of the car business for long. Five months after his dismissal, Iacocca was named president of Chrysler (becoming chairman in 1979) and began transforming the number three automaker from a sluggish moneymaker into a highly profitable business.

How was Chrysler turned around? By downsizing (to make smaller) expenses to a much lower break-even point; by winning approval of \$1.5 billion in federal loan guarantees; by selling off profitable units such as the tank division; and by introducing timely products. In addition, Chrysler welcomed, for the first time in U.S. corporate history, a union president to a board of directors. In 1984 the company posted profits of \$2.4 billion (higher than in the previous sixty years combined), and in 1985 it bought Gulfstream Aerospace Corporation for \$637 million and E. F. Hutton Credit Corporation for \$125 million.

In the early 1980s Chrysler issued the K-car and what would later become its best seller—the minivan. Just as the Mustang reestablished the sports car for Ford, the minivan would be loved by the young family in need of room and efficiency and revitalize Chrysler. In 1983 Chrysler paid the government back its loans and Iacocca became a star, a symbol of success and the achievement of the American dream.

Along with spearheading Chrysler's rise, Iacocca took leadership roles in many noteworthy causes, most notably the chairmanship of the President's Statue of Liberty-Ellis Island Centennial Commission, which was set up to raise funds for and to oversee

restoration of the two monuments in New York City. While Iacocca gained a worldwide reputation through business leadership, television commercials, and association with the Statue of Liberty, he gained much additional exposure through his 1984 autobiography (a book written by someone about their life). *Iacocca: An Autobiography*, the best-selling nonfiction hardcover book in history, had two million copies in print by July 1985.

Folk hero

By the mid-1980s Iacocca had achieved folk-hero status. The *Saturday Evening Post* described him as “the sex symbol of America” and *Reader’s Digest* as “the living embodiment of the American dream.” Talk of Iacocca-for-president became increasingly widespread, and a 1985 poll of 1988 presidential preferences showed that the cocky industrialist trailed Vice President George Bush (1924–) by only three percentage points (41 to 38 points).

The late 1980s and early 1990s were not as kind to Iacocca. His public image, like Chrysler’s earnings, began to fall. At a time when the American people, in the grip of a recession (a temporary slowing of the economy), criticized the huge paychecks of executives whose companies were hurting, Iacocca who had once achieved a publicity coup (takeover) when, for a time, he only accepted one dollar a year from Chrysler, was paid a 1987 salary of \$18 million. In addition, Iacocca, criticized Japanese trading practices, blaming them for the ills that American car manufacturers had suffered. Critics stated that the American public believed that Japanese cars were superior



Lee Iacocca.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

and instead of criticizing the Japanese, Iacocca’s car company should have competed with them. At the end of 1992, Iacocca retired. He remained a consultant to Chrysler, with a \$500,000 thousand a year salary and use of the company jet, until the end of 1994.

In 1995 Iacocca announced that he was taking Chrysler to court, claiming that it unlawfully blocked him from exercising \$42 million in share options that he had earned while he was the chairman. Chrysler claimed that Iacocca’s role as an adviser to Kirk Kerkorian, the investor who wanted to purchase the company, violated the share option

plan agreement. Although Kerkorian's bid failed to materialize because he was unable to raise the financial backing, Chrysler agreed to pay Iacocca \$21 million to settle the lawsuit. Iacocca continued to work as Kerkorian's consultant.

Iacocca and Mary McCleary were married in 1956 and had two daughters, Kathi and Lia. Mary died of diabetes (a blood disorder) in 1983, and in her memory, Iacocca donated his book earnings to diabetes research. Two later marriages, to advertising executive Peggy Johnson (1986) and restaurateur Darrien Earle (1990), ended in divorce. In 1999 Iacocca announced his latest venture, E-bikes. Iacocca believes these electronically motorized bikes will take the place of mopeds and other loud and polluting vehicles in crowded urban areas. Only time will tell if Iacocca's latest work will be as popular as his previous successes.

For More Information

- Abodaher, David. *Iacocca*. New York: Macmillan, 1982.
- Haddock, Patricia. *Standing Up for America: A Biography of Lee Iacocca*. Minneapolis: Dillon Press, 1987.
- Iacocca, Lee. *Iacocca: An Autobiography*. New York: Bantam Books, 1984.
- Iacocca, Lee A. *Talking Straight*. New York: Bantam, 1988.
- Levin, Doron P. *Behind the Wheel at Chrysler: The Iacocca Legacy*. New York: Harcourt Brace, 1995.
- Wyden, Peter. *The Unknown Iacocca*. New York: Morrow, 1987.

HENRIK IBSEN

Born: March 20, 1828

Skien, Norway

Died: May 23, 1906

Christiania, Norway

Norwegian playwright

The Norwegian playwright Henrik Ibsen made a tremendous impact on the course of Western drama. The best of his plays portray the real-life problems of individuals, with a skillful use of dialogue (conversation between individuals in a play) and symbols.

Early life

Henrik Ibsen was born on March 20, 1828, in Skien, Norway. His father was a successful merchant. When Ibsen was eight, his father's business failed, which was a shattering blow to the family. Ibsen left home at age fifteen and spent six years as a pharmacist's (one who prepares and sells drugs that are ordered by doctors) assistant in Grimstad, Norway, where he wrote his first play. In 1850 he moved to Christiania (Oslo), Norway, to study. In 1851 he became assistant stage manager of a new theater in Bergen, Norway, where part of his job was to write one new play a year. Although these plays were mostly unsuccessful, Ibsen gained valuable theater experience.

Ibsen returned to Christiania in 1857, where he spent the worst period of his life. His plays either failed or were rejected, and he went into debt. He left Norway in 1864, spending the next twenty-seven years in Italy

and Germany. He changed his appearance, his habits, and even his handwriting. He became distant, secretive, and desperate to protect himself from the real and imagined hostility of others.

Early plays

The main character in *Catiline* (1850), Ibsen's first play, is torn between two women who represent conflicting forces in himself. Ibsen's other early plays show him struggling to find his voice. The two plays he wrote during his second stay in Christiania were more successful: *Love's Comedy* (1862), which pokes fun at romantic love, and *The Pretenders* (1864), a historical and psychological (relating to the mind) tragedy (a serious drama that usually ends with the hero's death).

In the first ten years after leaving Norway Ibsen wrote four plays, including the immensely successful *Brand* (1866), about a man's attempt to understand himself. His next play, *Peer Gynt* (1867), made Ibsen Scandinavia's most discussed dramatist. *Peer Gynt* is *Brand*'s opposite, a man who ignores his problems until he loses everything, including himself. Ibsen called *Emperor and Galilean* (1873), a ten-act play, "a world-historical drama."

Plays about current issues

Inspired by the demands of critics that literature should address current problems of the day, Ibsen set out to develop a dramatic form in which serious matters could be dealt with using stories about everyday life. Ibsen did not invent the realistic (based on real life) or social reform play, but he perfected the form. In doing so he became the most famous dramatist of the nineteenth century. Still, Ibsen



Henrik Ibsen.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

remained what he had always been, a man who disliked society and concerned himself only with the individual and his problems.

As used by George Bernard Shaw (1856–1950), a great supporter of Ibsen's work, the term "Ibsenite" describes a play that exposes individual and social hypocrisy (pretending to be what one is not). Examples are *Pillars of Society* (1877) and *A Doll's House* (1879), which point out how the conventions of society hinder personal development. In *Ghosts* (1881), however, the character of Mrs. Alving discovers that there are forces within the individual more destructive than the "dollhouse" of marriage and society. The last of the "Ibsen-

ite" plays, *An Enemy of the People* (1882), is one of Ibsen's finest comedies.

Later works

After 1882 Ibsen concentrated more on the problems of the individual. *The Wild Duck* (1884) shows how the average man needs illusions (unreal and misleading thoughts or ideas) to survive and what happens to a family when it is forced to face the truth. In *Rosmersholm* (1886) a man raised in a tradition of Christian duty and sacrifice tries to break with his past. *Hedda Gabler* (1890) is the story of an unhappy woman who attempts to interfere with the lives of others. There is much of Ibsen, as he saw himself at the time, in Hedda Gabler.

Many of Ibsen's last plays represent confessions of his sins. *The Master Builder* (1892), one of Ibsen's most beautiful dramas, is the story of an artist consumed by guilt over the wife and children he has "murdered" to further his ambition. *John Gabriel Borkman* (1896) is a study of a man who sacrifices everything to his vision and is killed by the forces in nature he has sought to control. Ibsen's last play, *When We Dead Awaken* (1899), is an artist's confession of his failure as a man and of his doubts about his achievement. Soon after this play Ibsen suffered a stroke that ended his career. He died on May 23, 1906, in Christiania.

For More Information

Ferguson, Robert. *Henrik Ibsen: A New Biography*. London: R. Cohen, 1996.

Gosse, Edmund. *Henrik Ibsen*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1911. Reprint, Norwood, PA: Norwood Editions, 1978.

Ibsen, Henrik. *The Correspondence of Henrik Ibsen*. Edited by Mary Morrison. New York: Haskell House, 1970.

Jorgenson, Theodore. *Henrik Ibsen: A Study in Art and Personality*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1978.

IMHOTEP

Born: c. 3000 B.C.E.

Ankhtowe, Egypt

Died: c. 2950 B.C.E.

Memphis, Egypt

Egyptian magician, physician, scribe, sage, architect, astronomer, vizier, and priest

Imhotep was an ancient Egyptian genius who achieved great success in a wide variety of fields. Inventor of the pyramid, author of ancient wisdom, architect, high priest, physician, astronomer, and writer, Imhotep's many talents and vast acquired knowledge had such an effect on the Egyptian people that he became one of only a handful of individuals of nonroyal birth to be deified, or promoted to the status of a god.

Second in a long line of architects

Imhotep, or "he who cometh in peace," was born in Ankhtowe, a suburb of Memphis, Egypt. The month and day of his birth are noted precisely as the sixteenth day of Epiphi, third month of the Egyptian harvest (corresponding to May 31) but the year is not definitely recorded. It is known that Imhotep was a contemporary (living in the same time

period) of the Pharaoh, or king of Egypt, Zoser (also known as Neterikhet) of the Third Dynasty. But estimates of the era of his reign vary by as much as three hundred years, falling between 2980 and 2600 B.C.E.

Imhotep's father, Kanofer, a celebrated architect, was later known to be the first of a long line of master builders who contributed to Egyptian works through the reign of King Darius the First (522–486 B.C.E.). His mother, Khreduonkh, who probably came from the province of Mendes, is known today for having been deified alongside her son, an Egyptian custom.

Vizier under King Zoser

The office of the vizier in politics was literally described as “supervisor of everything in this entire land.” Only the best educated citizen could handle the range of duties of this position that worked closely with the Pharaoh, or king of Egypt. As vizier, Imhotep was chief advisor to Zoser in both religious and practical matters, and he controlled the departments of the Judiciary (court system), Treasury, War, Agriculture, and the General Executive.

There are no historical records of Imhotep's acts as a political figure, but his wisdom as a religious advisor was widely recognized after he ended a terrible famine (a severe shortage of food) that dominated Egypt during seven years of Zoser's reign. It is said that the king was failing in his responsibility to please the god Khnum, and his neglect was causing the Nile to fall short of a flood level which would support Egyptian farms. Imhotep, having a vast knowledge of the proper traditions and methods of worship, was able to counsel Zoser on pleasing



Imhotep.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

the god of the cataract (heavy rain), allowing the Nile to return to its usual flood level.

Architect of the famous pyramid at Sakkara

The Step Pyramid at Sakkara is the only of Imhotep's achievements that can still be seen and appreciated today. Its reputation is largely based on Imhotep's accomplishments as the pyramid's inventor and builder. This pyramid was the first structure ever built of cut stone, and is by far the oldest of the Seven Wonders of the World, the seven structures of the ancient world that were astonishing accomplishments for their time. It took twenty years to complete—not very long,

given the newness of the idea and the state of structural science in the Bronze Age (between 3000 B.C.E. and 1100 C.E.), the period of development where metals, particularly bronze, were used for the first time.

Imhotep wanted the tomb to accommodate the Pharaoh's rise into the heavens. To do this, he planned to improve upon the flat, rectangular mastabas, or built-in benches, which were the traditional tombal structures. The pyramid was raised on top of the base mastabas in five smaller steps, one on top of the other. He added a passageway on the north side issuing upward within the structure from a sarcophagus chamber (where the stone coffin holding the mummy is kept) seventy-five feet below ground. The total height of the pyramid and base is just under two hundred feet, unimaginably large for a single structure before Imhotep's design.

The project at Sakkara was designed in its entirety as a way for the deceased to perform the rituals of the jubilee festival, or Hebsed. The complex consisted of many other buildings, as well as ornamental posts some thirty-seven feet high. The protection of the king and his burial gifts—about thirty-six thousand vessels (containers) of alabaster, dolomite, aragonite, and other precious materials—was the other primary function of the burial site. The entire complex, about one-quarter by one-half mile in area, was enclosed within a stone wall about thirty-five feet high. Imhotep added several false entrances to throw off possible tomb raiders. As a final measure, the king's treasure was lowered through vertical shafts around the tomb into a long corridor one hundred feet below ground. The digging of just this corridor without machines of any kind is an amazing accomplishment by modern standards.

It is likely that Imhotep was the architect and master builder of many other projects completed during a forty-year period of the Third Dynasty, though none of them compare in size or stylistic influence to the burial site at Sakkara. Imhotep was also the author of an encyclopedia of architecture that was used as a reference tool by Egyptian builders for thousands of years.

Physician-magician, god of medicine

As a god of medicine, Imhotep was beloved as a curer of everyday problems who could "provide remedies for all diseases," and "give sons to the childless." Members of the cult of Imhotep in the Twenty-sixth and Twenty-seventh Dynasties (between 525 B.C.E. and 550 C.E.) would pay tribute to the God at his temple just outside Memphis. The temple also contained halls devoted to the teaching of medical methods, and to the preservation of the materia medica, which details the entirety of Egyptian medical knowledge which may actually have originated with Imhotep.

Imhotep's name was often grouped with such powerful deities as Thoth, God of Wisdom, Isis, the wonder-worker, and Ptah, a healer and the ancient God of Memphis. Although other humans were deified by the Egyptians, Imhotep is unique for being known by his own name as a god inferior in power only to Re (chief Sun-God). Imhotep was also a member of the great triad of Memphis, with Ptah, Imhotep's father among the gods, and Sekhmet, a goddess associated with childbirth.

It is a matter of debate today how much of Imhotep's reputation as a curer of disease stems from medical skill and how much comes from his command of magic and healing rituals.

For More Information

Asante, Molefe K. *The Egyptian Philosophers*.
Chicago: African American Images, 2000.

Cormack, Maribelle. *Imhotep, Builder in Stone*.
New York: Franklin Watts, 1965.

Hurry, Jamieson Boyd. *Imhotep, the Vizier and
Physician of King Zoser, and Afterwards the
Egyptian God of Medicine*. 2nd ed. New
York: AMS Press, 1978.

WASHINGTON IRVING

Born: April 3, 1783

New York, New York

Died: November 28, 1859

Irvington, New York

American author

Considered the first professional distinguished writer in the United States with short stories like “Rip Van Winkle” and “The Legend of Sleepy Hollow,” Washington Irving was influential in the development of the short story form and helped to gain international respect for American literature.

Childhood

Washington Irving was born and raised in New York City, the youngest of eleven children of a prosperous merchant family. Named after President George Washington (1732–1799), Irving was fascinated by the upper class of New York City and would often sneak out of family prayer meetings to attend the local theatre.



*Washington Irving.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

A dreamy and uninspired student, Irving apprenticed (worked to gain experience in a trade) himself in a law office rather than follow his elder brothers to nearby Columbia College. In his free time, he read avidly and wandered when he could around the misty, rolling Hudson River Valley. This area just north of New York City was steeped in local folklore and legend and served as an inspiration for his later writings.

Begins writing career

As a nineteen-year-old, Irving began contributing letters under the pseudonym (assumed name) Jonathan Oldstyle to a news-

paper owned by his brother Peter. His first book, *Salmagundi* (1807–08), was a collaboration with another brother, William, and their friend James Kirke Paulding. This highly popular collection of short pieces poked fun at the political, social, and cultural life of the city.

Irving enjoyed a second success in 1809 with *A History of New York, from the Beginning of the World to the End of the Dutch Dynasty*, a comical and purposefully inaccurate account of New York's Dutch colonization (settlement by a foreign nation) narrated by another pseudonym Diedrich Knickerbocker, a Dutch American.

Irving's carefree social life and literary successes were shadowed at this time, however, by the death of his fiancée, Matilda Hoffmann. For the next several years he floundered, wavering between a legal and writing career.

Life in England

In 1815 Irving moved to England to work in the failing Liverpool branch of the family import-export business. Within three years the company was bankrupt, and, finding himself at age thirty-five without means of support, Irving decided that he would earn his living by writing. He began recording the impressions, thoughts, and descriptions, which he reworked several times. These became the pieces that make up *The Sketch Book*. The volume was introduced under the pseudonym of Geoffrey Crayon.

The Sketch Book comprises some thirty parts: about half English sketches, four general travel pieces, six literary essays, two descriptions of the American Indian, three essentially unclassifiable pieces, and three short stories: "Rip Van Winkle," "The Legend of Sleepy Hollow," and "The Spectre Bridegroom." The varied material in *The Sketch Book* appealed to a

broad range of readers; the work received a great deal of attention and sold quickly. Irving found himself America's first international literary celebrity. In addition, the book's considerable profits allowed Irving to devote himself full time to writing.

Remaining in Europe for more than a decade after the appearance of *The Sketch Book*, Irving wrote steadily, and soon published *Bracebridge Hall; or, the Humorists: A Medley* (1822), which centers loosely around a fictitious English clan that Irving had introduced in *The Sketch Book*.

After 1824 Irving increasingly turned his attention from fiction and descriptive writing toward history and biography. He lived for several years in Spain, serving as a diplomatic attaché (a person who works for their government in a foreign country) to the American embassy in Spain while writing a life of Christopher Columbus (1451–1506) and a history of Granada, Spain. Irving served as secretary to the American embassy in London from 1829 until 1832, when he returned to the United States.

An American celebrity

After receiving warm praise from the literary and academic communities, Irving set out on a tour of the rugged western part of the country, which took him as far as Oklahoma. The expedition resulted in three books about the region, notably *A Tour on the Prairies* (1835), which provided easterners with their first description of life out west by a well-known author. Irving eventually settled near Tarrytown, New York, at a small estate on the Hudson River, which he named Sunnyside.

Among the notable works of Irving's later years is an extensive biography of George Washington (1732–1799), which he worked on determinedly, despite ill health, from the early 1850s until a few months before his death in 1859. As America's first literary star with stories like "Rip Van Winkle" and "The Legend of Sleepy Hollow," Irving established an artistic standard and model for later generations of American short story writers.

For More Information

Bowden, Mary Weatherspoon. *Washington Irving*. New York: Twayne, 1981.

Curtis, George William. *Washington Irving: A Sketch*. New York: The Grolier Club, 1891. Reprint, Philadelphia: R. West, 1978.

Irving, Pierre M. *The Life and Letters of Washington Irving*. New York: Putnam, 1862–64. Reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1973.

Leary, Lewis. *Washington Irving*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1963.

Williams, Stanley T. *The Life of Washington Irving*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1935. Reprint, New York: Octagon Books, 1971.

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY



contents

Entries by Nationality xvii

Reader's Guide xxxi

Volume 1: A–Ba

Hank Aaron	1	Aeschylus	29
Ralph Abernathy	4	Spiro Agnew	31
Bella Abzug	7	Alvin Ailey	34
Chinua Achebe	10	Madeleine Albright	37
Abigail Adams	12	Louisa May Alcott	39
Ansel Adams	15	Alexander II	41
John Adams	17	Alexander the Great	43
Samuel Adams	20	Muhammad Ali	47
Joy Adamson	22	Woody Allen	49
Jane Addams	25	Isabel Allende	52
Alfred Adler	27	Julia Alvarez	54
		American Horse	57

Idi Amin	59	Lucille Ball	159
Hans Christian Andersen	62	David Baltimore	161
Carl David Anderson	64	Honoré de Balzac	164
Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	66	Benjamin Banneker	166
Marian Anderson	69	Frederick Banting	168
Fra Angelico	71	Klaus Barbie	170
Maya Angelou	73	Christiaan Barnard	173
Kofi Annan	76	Clara Barton	175
Susan B. Anthony	79	Count Basie	177
Virginia Apgar	81	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Benigno Aquino	84		
Yasir Arafat	86	Volume 2: <i>Be–Cap</i>	
Archimedes	89	Beatles	181
Hannah Arendt	91	William Beaumont	185
Jean-Bertrand Aristide	93	Simone de Beauvoir	187
Aristophanes	96	Samuel Beckett	189
Aristotle	98	Ludwig van Beethoven	192
Louis Armstrong	101	Menachem Begin	194
Neil Armstrong	102	Alexander Graham Bell	196
Benedict Arnold	105	Clyde Bellecourt	200
Mary Kay Ash	108	Saul Bellow	202
Arthur Ashe	110	William Bennett	204
Isaac Asimov	113	Ingmar Bergman	206
Fred Astaire	116	Irving Berlin	208
John Jacob Astor	118	Leonard Bernstein	210
Margaret Atwood	120	Chuck Berry	213
W. H. Auden	123	Mary McLeod Bethune	215
John James Audubon	125	Benazir Bhutto	218
Augustus	128	Owen Bieber	220
Aung San Suu Kyi	130	Billy the Kid	223
Jane Austen	132	Larry Bird	224
Baal Shem Tov	137	Shirley Temple Black	227
Charles Babbage	139	Elizabeth Blackwell	229
Johann Sebastian Bach	141	Tony Blair	232
Francis Bacon	143	William Blake	234
Roger Bacon	145	Konrad Bloch	237
Joan Baez	147	Judy Blume	239
F Lee Bailey	150	Humphrey Bogart	242
Josephine Baker	152	Julian Bond	244
George Balanchine	154	Daniel Boone	246
James Baldwin	156	John Wilkes Booth	248

William Booth	250	Al Capone	352
Lucrezia Borgia	252	Truman Capote	354
P. W. Botha	255	Frank Capra	357
Sandro Botticelli	257	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Margaret Bourke-White	259		
Boutros Boutros-Ghali	261	<i>Volume 3: Car–Da</i>	
Ray Bradbury	264	Lázaro Cárdenas	361
Ed Bradley	266	Stokely Carmichael	363
Mathew Brady	269	Andrew Carnegie	367
Johannes Brahms	271	Lewis Carroll	370
Louis Braille	273	Johnny Carson	372
Louis Brandeis	275	Kit Carson	374
Marlon Brando	278	Rachel Carson	377
Leonid Brezhnev	280	Jimmy Carter	379
Charlotte Brontë	283	George Washington Carver	383
Emily Brontë	284	Pablo Casals	386
Gwendolyn Brooks	286	Mary Cassatt	388
Helen Gurley Brown	289	Vernon and Irene Castle	390
James Brown	291	Fidel Castro	393
John Brown	294	Willa Cather	397
Rachel Fuller Brown	297	Catherine of Aragon	399
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	299	Catherine the Great	401
Robert Browning	302	Henry Cavendish	404
Pat Buchanan	305	Anders Celsius	407
Pearl S. Buck	308	Miguel de Cervantes	408
Buddha	310	Paul Cézanne	411
Ralph Bunche	312	Marc Chagall	414
Warren Burger	314	Wilt Chamberlain	416
Robert Burns	317	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	419
Aaron Burr	320	Charlie Chaplin	421
George Bush	323	Charlemagne	424
George W. Bush	326	Charles, Prince of Wales	427
Laura Bush	329	Ray Charles	430
Lord Byron	331	Geoffrey Chaucer	433
Julius Caesar	335	César Chávez	436
Caligula	338	Dennis Chavez	438
Maria Callas	340	Linda Chavez	440
Cab Calloway	342	Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	443
John Calvin	344	John Cheever	447
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	346	Anton Chekhov	449
Albert Camus	349	Dick Cheney	451

Mary Boykin Chesnut	454
Chiang Kai-shek	456
Julia Child	459
Shirley Chisholm	461
Frédéric Chopin	464
Jean Chrétien	467
Agatha Christie	469
Winston Churchill	472
Marcus Tullius Cicero	475
Liz Claiborne	478
Cleopatra VII	480
Bill Clinton	483
Hillary Rodham Clinton	487
Ty Cobb	490
Nat “King” Cole	492
Bessie Coleman	494
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	496
Marva Collins	499
Michael Collins	501
Confucius	503
Sean Connery	506
Joseph Conrad	508
Nicolaus Copernicus	510
Aaron Copland	513
Francis Ford Coppola	515
Bill Cosby	518
Jacques Cousteau	521
Noel Coward	523
Michael Crichton	525
Davy Crockett	527
Oliver Cromwell	529
Walter Cronkite	532
E. E. Cummings	535
Marie Curie	538
Roald Dahl	543
Dalai Lama	546
Salvador Dali	549
Clarence Darrow	551
Charles Darwin	554
Bette Davis	556
Miles Davis	558

Ossie Davis	561
Sammy Davis Jr.	563
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 4: De–Ga

James Dean	567
Claude Debussy	569
Ruby Dee	571
Daniel Defoe	574
Edgar Degas	576
Charles de Gaulle	579
F. W. de Klerk	581
Cecil B. DeMille	585
Deng Xiaoping	587
René Descartes	590
Hernando de Soto	592
John Dewey	594
Diana, Princess of Wales	597
Charles Dickens	600
Emily Dickinson	603
Denis Diderot	606
Joe DiMaggio	608
Walt Disney	611
Elizabeth Dole	613
Placido Domingo	616
Donatello	619
John Donne	621
Fyodor Dostoevsky	624
Frederick Douglass	626
Arthur Conan Doyle	629
Francis Drake	632
Alexandre Dumas	634
Paul Laurence Dunbar	636
Pierre du Pont	638
François Duvalier	640
Amelia Earhart	643
George Eastman	646
Clint Eastwood	648
Thomas Edison	650
Albert Einstein	654
Dwight D. Eisenhower	657

Mamie Eisenhower	661	Karl Friedrich Gauss	775
Joycelyn Elders	662	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
George Eliot	665		
T. S. Eliot	668	Volume 5: Ge–I	
Elizabeth I	672	Hans Geiger	779
Elizabeth II	675	Theodor Geisel	781
Duke Ellington	678	Genghis Khan	784
Ralph Waldo Emerson	680	J. Paul Getty	786
Desiderius Erasmus	683	Kahlil Gibran	788
Euclid	686	Althea Gibson	790
Euripides	688	Dizzy Gillespie	792
Medgar Evers	690	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	794
Gabriel Fahrenheit	695	Whoopi Goldberg	797
Fannie Farmer	696	William Golding	800
Louis Farrakhan	698	Samuel Gompers	801
William Faulkner	701	Jane Goodall	804
Dianne Feinstein	704	Benny Goodman	807
Enrico Fermi	707	Mikhail Gorbachev	809
Geraldine Ferraro	710	Berry Gordy Jr.	813
Bobby Fischer	713	Al Gore	816
Ella Fitzgerald	715	Jay Gould	818
F. Scott Fitzgerald	718	Stephen Jay Gould	821
Gustave Flaubert	721	Katharine Graham	824
Malcolm Forbes	723	Martha Graham	827
Henry Ford	725	Cary Grant	829
Francis of Assisi	729	Graham Greene	831
Benjamin Franklin	731	Wayne Gretzky	833
Sigmund Freud	735	Brothers Grimm	836
Betty Friedan	738	Woody Guthrie	838
Robert Frost	741	Alex Haley	843
John Kenneth Galbraith	745	Alexander Hamilton	846
Galen	748	Oscar Hammerstein	849
Galileo	750	John Hancock	852
George Gallup	753	George Frideric Handel	854
Indira Gandhi	754	Thomas Hardy	857
Mohandas Gandhi	758	Stephen Hawking	860
Gabriel García Márquez	762	Nathaniel Hawthorne	862
Judy Garland	764	William Randolph Hearst	865
Marcus Garvey	767	Werner Heisenberg	868
Bill Gates	769	Joseph Heller	870
Paul Gauguin	773	Lillian Hellman	872

Ernest Hemingway	875
Jimi Hendrix	878
Henry VIII	880
Patrick Henry	883
Audrey Hepburn	886
Katharine Hepburn	888
Herod the Great	891
William Herschel	893
Thor Heyerdahl	895
Edmund Hillary	898
S. E. Hinton	900
Hippocrates	902
Hirohito	904
Alfred Hitchcock	907
Adolf Hitler	909
Ho Chi Minh	912
Thomas Hobbes	915
Billie Holiday	918
Oliver Wendell Holmes	920
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	923
Homer	926
Soichiro Honda	929
bell hooks	931
Benjamin Hooks	933
Bob Hope	936
Anthony Hopkins	938
Lena Horne	940
Harry Houdini	943
Gordie Howe	946
Julia Ward Howe	949
Howard Hughes	951
Langston Hughes	954
Victor Hugo	957
Zora Neale Hurston	960
Saddam Hussein	962
Lee Iacocca	967
Henrik Ibsen	970
Imhotep	972
Washington Irving	975
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 6: J–L

Andrew Jackson	979
Jesse Jackson	983
Michael Jackson	986
Reggie Jackson	989
P. D. James	991
Thomas Jefferson	994
Mae Jemison	997
Jesus of Nazareth	1000
Jiang Zemin	1003
Joan of Arc	1005
Steve Jobs	1007
Elton John	1011
John Paul II	1013
Lyndon B. Johnson	1016
Magic Johnson	1020
Samuel Johnson	1023
Al Jolson	1025
James Earl Jones	1027
Quincy Jones	1029
Ben Jonson	1032
Michael Jordan	1034
James Joyce	1038
Benito Juárez	1040
Carl Jung	1043
Franz Kafka	1047
Wassily Kandinsky	1050
Immanuel Kant	1052
John Keats	1054
Helen Keller	1056
Gene Kelly	1058
Edward Kennedy	1061
John F. Kennedy	1064
John F. Kennedy Jr.	1069
Robert Kennedy	1071
Johannes Kepler	1074
Jack Kerouac	1076
Charles F. Kettering	1078
Ayatollah Khomeini	1081
Nikita Khrushchev	1083
B. B. King	1086

Billie Jean King	1089	Dolley Madison	1191
Coretta Scott King	1091	James Madison	1194
Martin Luther King Jr.	1094	Madonna	1197
Stephen King	1098	Ferdinand Magellan	1201
Rudyard Kipling	1101	Najib Mahfuz	1203
Henry Kissinger	1104	Norman Mailer	1205
Calvin Klein	1107	Bernard Malamud	1208
Kublai Khan	1109	Malcolm X	1210
Marquis de Lafayette	1113	David Mamet	1214
Lao Tzu	1115	Nelson Mandela	1216
Ralph Lauren	1117	Édouard Manet	1219
Emma Lazarus	1119	Wilma Mankiller	1221
Mary Leakey	1121	Mickey Mantle	1224
Bruce Lee	1124	Mao Zedong	1226
Spike Lee	1126	Rocky Marciano	1230
Tsung-Dao Lee	1129	Ferdinand Marcos	1233
Vladimir Lenin	1131	Marcus Aurelius	1236
Leonardo da Vinci	1136	Marie Antoinette	1238
C. S. Lewis	1139	Mark Antony	1240
Carl Lewis	1141	Thurgood Marshall	1243
Sinclair Lewis	1144	Karl Marx	1246
Roy Lichtenstein	1146	Mary, Queen of Scots	1249
Maya Lin	1148	Cotton Mather	1252
Abraham Lincoln	1150	Henri Matisse	1255
Charles Lindbergh	1154	Mayo Brothers	1258
Carl Linnaeus	1157	Willie Mays	1261
Joseph Lister	1159	Joseph McCarthy	1264
Andrew Lloyd Webber	1161	Hattie McDaniel	1267
Alain Locke	1163	John McEnroe	1270
John Locke	1166	Terry McMillan	1273
Jack London	1168	Aimee Semple McPherson	1275
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	1170	Margaret Mead	1277
Joe Louis	1173	Catherine de' Medici	1281
George Lucas	1175	Golda Meir	1284
Patrice Lumumba	1178	Rigoberta Menchú	1286
Martin Luther	1181	Felix Mendelssohn	1289
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Kweisi Mfume	1292
		Michelangelo	1295
Volume 7: M–Ne		Harvey Milk	1298
Douglas MacArthur	1185	John Stuart Mill	1301
Niccolò Machiavelli	1188	Edna St. Vincent Millay	1303

Arthur Miller	1305	Manuel Noriega	1401
Henry Miller	1308	Jessye Norman	1404
Slobodan Milosevic	1310	Nostradamus	1406
John Milton	1313	Rudolf Nureyev	1409
Joan Miró	1316	Joyce Carol Oates	1413
Molière	1318	Sandra Day O'Connor	1416
Claude Monet	1320	Georgia O'Keefe	1420
Thelonious Monk	1323	Laurence Olivier	1422
Marilyn Monroe	1325	Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	1425
Joe Montana	1327	Eugene O'Neill	1428
Montesquieu	1329	George Orwell	1430
Maria Montessori	1331	Ovid	1432
Thomas More	1334	Jesse Owens	1435
Jim Morrison	1336	Mohammad Reza Pahlavi	1439
Toni Morrison	1338	Arnold Palmer	1441
Samuel F. B. Morse	1341	Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus	1443
Moses	1343	Charlie Parker	1445
Grandma Moses	1345	Blaise Pascal	1447
Mother Teresa	1347	Louis Pasteur	1450
Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart	1350	Linus Pauling	1453
Hosni Mubarak	1353	Luciano Pavarotti	1456
Muhammad	1355	Ivan Pavlov	1459
Elijah Muhammad	1358	Anna Pavlova	1462
John Muir	1360	I. M. Pei	1464
Edvard Munch	1362	Pelé.	1467
Rupert Murdoch	1364	William Penn	1469
Benito Mussolini	1367	Pericles	1472
Vladimir Nabokov	1371	Eva Perón	1474
Ralph Nader	1373	Jean Piaget	1477
Napoleon Bonaparte	1376	Pablo Picasso	1479
Ogden Nash	1379	Sylvia Plath	1483
Nefertiti	1381	Plato	1485
Isaac Newton	1382	Pocahontas	1488
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Edgar Allan Poe	1490
		Sidney Poitier	1493
		Pol Pot	1495
		Marco Polo	1498
		Juan Ponce de León	1501
		Alexander Pope	1502
		Cole Porter	1505
		Katherine Anne Porter	1507
Volume 8: Ni–Re			
Friedrich Nietzsche	1387		
Florence Nightingale	1390		
Richard Nixon	1392		
Alfred Nobel	1397		
Isamu Noguchi	1398		

Emily Post	1509	Richard Rodgers	1610
Colin Powell	1511	Auguste Rodin	1613
Dith Pran	1514	Will Rogers	1615
Elvis Presley	1517	Rolling Stones	1618
André Previn	1520	Eleanor Roosevelt	1621
Leontyne Price	1522	Franklin D. Roosevelt	1624
E. Annie Proulx	1524	Theodore Roosevelt	1628
Marcel Proust	1526	Diana Ross	1631
Ptolemy I	1528	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	1634
Joseph Pulitzer	1531	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	1636
George Pullman	1533	Carl Rowan	1639
Aleksandr Pushkin	1535	J. K. Rowling	1641
Vladimir Putin	1537	Peter Paul Rubens	1643
Pythagoras	1540	Wilma Rudolph	1646
Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	1543	Salman Rushdie	1649
Walter Raleigh	1547	Babe Ruth	1651
Sri Ramakrishna	1550	Nolan Ryan	1653
A. Philip Randolph	1552	Albert Sabin	1657
Harun al-Rashid	1555	Carl Sagan	1659
Ronald Reagan	1557	Andrei Sakharov	1662
Christopher Reeve	1561	J. D. Salinger	1664
Erich Maria Remarque	1564	Jonas Salk	1667
Rembrandt	1566	George Sand	1669
Janet Reno	1568	Carl Sandburg	1671
Pierre Auguste Renoir	1571	Margaret Sanger	1673
Paul Revere	1574	Jean-Paul Sartre	1676
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Oskar Schindler	1678
		Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	1681
		Franz Schubert	1684
Volume 9: Rh–S		Charles M. Schulz	1687
Cecil Rhodes	1577	Martin Scorsese	1690
Condoleezza Rice	1580	Walter Scott	1693
Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	1583	Haile Selassie	1696
Sally Ride	1585	Selena	1698
Leni Riefenstahl	1588	Sequoyah	1701
Cal Ripken Jr.	1591	William Shakespeare	1702
Diego Rivera	1593	George Bernard Shaw	1706
Paul Robeson	1596	Mary Shelley	1708
Maximilien de Robespierre	1599	Percy Shelley	1711
Smokey Robinson	1601	Beverly Sills	1714
John D. Rockefeller	1604	Neil Simon	1716
Norman Rockwell	1607		

Frank Sinatra	1719	Marshal Tito	1821
Upton Sinclair	1722	J. R. R. Tolkien	1824
Isaac Bashevis Singer	1724	Leo Tolstoy	1827
Bessie Smith	1727	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	1830
Socrates	1729	Eiji Toyoda	1832
Stephen Sondheim	1732	Harry S. Truman	1834
Sophocles	1734	Donald Trump	1837
Steven Spielberg	1737	Sojourner Truth	1840
Benjamin Spock	1740	Tu Fu	1843
Joseph Stalin	1743	Tutankhamen	1845
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	1747	Desmond Tutu	1847
Edith Stein	1749	Mark Twain	1850
Gertrude Stein	1752	John Updike	1855
John Steinbeck	1755	Vincent Van Gogh	1859
Robert Louis Stevenson	1757	Jan Vermeer	1862
Bram Stoker	1759	Jules Verne	1864
Oliver Stone	1761	Amerigo Vespucci	1867
Tom Stoppard	1764	Victoria	1869
Harriet Beecher Stowe	1766	Gore Vidal	1872
Antonio Stradivari	1769	Virgil	1874
Johann Strauss	1771	Antonio Vivaldi	1877
Igor Stravinsky	1773	Voltaire	1879
Barbra Streisand	1776	Wernher von Braun	1882
Sun Yat-sen	1779	Kurt Vonnegut	1884
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Richard Wagner	1889
		Alice Walker	1891
		Madame C. J. Walker	1894
		Barbara Walters	1897
		An Wang	1900
		Booker T. Washington	1903
		George Washington	1906
		James Watt	1910
		John Wayne	1913
		Daniel Webster	1916
		Noah Webster	1919
		Orson Welles	1922
		Eudora Welty	1925
		Edith Wharton	1928
		James Whistler	1929
		E. B. White	1932
		Walt Whitman	1935
<i>Volume 10: T–Z</i>			
Maria Tallchief	1785		
Amy Tan	1787		
Elizabeth Taylor	1790		
Peter Ilych Tchaikovsky	1792		
Alfred, Lord Tennyson	1795		
Valentina Tereshkova	1798		
William Makepeace Thackeray	1801		
Twyla Tharp	1804		
Clarence Thomas	1807		
Dylan Thomas	1810		
Henry David Thoreau	1813		
Jim Thorpe	1816		
James Thurber	1819		

Elie Wiesel	1938	Virginia Woolf	1962
Oscar Wilde	1940	William Wordsworth	1965
Laura Ingalls Wilder	1943	Wright Brothers	1969
Thornton Wilder	1946	Frank Lloyd Wright	1972
Tennessee Williams	1948	Richard Wright	1975
Woodrow Wilson	1951	William Butler Yeats	1979
Oprah Winfrey	1954	Boris Yeltsin	1982
Anna May Wong	1958	Paul Zindel	1987
Tiger Woods	1960	<i>Index</i>	xxxv



*entries by
nationality*

African American

Hank Aaron 1: 1
 Ralph Abernathy 1: 4
 Alvin Ailey 1: 34
 Muhammad Ali 1: 47
 Marian Anderson 1: 69
 Maya Angelou 1: 73
 Louis Armstrong 1: 101
 Arthur Ashe 1: 110
 Josephine Baker 1: 152
 James Baldwin 1: 156
 Benjamin Banneker 1: 166
 Count Basie 1: 177
 Chuck Berry 2: 213
 Mary McLeod Bethune 2: 215
 Julian Bond 2: 244
 Gwendolyn Brooks 2: 286

James Brown 2: 291
 Ralph Bunche 2: 312
 Stokely Carmichael 3: 363
 George Washington Carver 3: 383
 Wilt Chamberlain 3: 416
 Ray Charles 3: 430
 Benjamin Chavis Muhammad 3: 443
 Shirley Chisholm 3: 461
 Nat “King” Cole 3: 492
 Bessie Coleman 3: 494
 Marva Collins 3: 499
 Bill Cosby 3: 518
 Miles Davis 3: 558
 Ossie Davis 3: 561
 Sammy Davis Jr. 3: 563
 Ruby Dee 4: 571
 Frederick Douglass 4: 626

Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Jessye Norman	8: 1404
Joycelyn Elders	4: 662	Jesse Owens	8: 1435
Duke Ellington	4: 678	Charlie Parker	8: 1445
Medgar Evers	4: 690	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Louis Farrakhan	4: 698	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Althea Gibson	5: 790	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Alex Haley	5: 843	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Bessie Smith	9: 1727
bell hooks	5: 931	Sojourner Truth	10: 1840
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Alice Walker	10: 1891
Lena Horne	5: 940	Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Reggie Jackson	6: 989		
Mae Jemison	6: 997	<i>Albanian</i>	
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Mother Teresa	7: 1347
James Earl Jones	6: 1027		
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	<i>American</i>	
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Hank Aaron	1: 1
B. B. King	6: 1086	Ralph Abernathy	1: 4
Coretta Scott King	6: 1091	Bella Abzug	1: 7
Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094	Abigail Adams	1: 12
Spike Lee	6: 1126	Ansel Adams	1: 15
Carl Lewis	6: 1141	John Adams	1: 17
Alain Locke	6: 1163	Samuel Adams	1: 20
Malcolm X	7: 1210	Jane Addams	1: 25
Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Spiro Agnew	1: 31
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Alvin Ailey	1: 34
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Madeleine Albright	1: 37
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Louisa May Alcott	1: 39
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	Muhammad Ali	1: 47
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Woody Allen	1: 49
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Julia Alvarez	1: 54
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	American Horse	1: 57

Carl David Anderson	1: 64	Daniel Boone	2: 246
Marian Anderson	1: 69	John Wilkes Booth	2: 248
Maya Angelou	1: 73	Margaret Bourke-White	2: 259
Susan B. Anthony	1: 79	Ray Bradbury	2: 264
Virginia Apgar	1: 81	Ed Bradley	2: 266
Louis Armstrong	1: 101	Mathew Brady	2: 269
Neil Armstrong	1: 102	Louis Brandeis	2: 275
Benedict Arnold	1: 105	Marlon Brando	2: 278
Mary Kay Ash	1: 108	Gwendolyn Brooks	2: 286
Arthur Ashe	1: 110	Helen Gurley Brown	2: 289
Isaac Asimov	1: 113	James Brown	2: 291
Fred Astaire	1: 116	John Brown	2: 294
John Jacob Astor	1: 118	Rachel Fuller Brown	2: 297
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Pat Buchanan	2: 305
John James Audubon	1: 125	Pearl S. Buck	2: 308
Joan Baez	1: 147	Ralph Bunche	2: 312
F. Lee Bailey	1: 150	Warren Burger	2: 314
Josephine Baker	1: 152	Aaron Burr	2: 320
George Balanchine	1: 154	George Bush	2: 323
James Baldwin	1: 156	George W. Bush	2: 326
Lucille Ball	1: 159	Laura Bush	2: 329
David Baltimore	1: 161	Maria Callas	2: 340
Benjamin Banneker	1: 166	Cab Calloway	2: 342
Clara Barton	1: 175	Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Count Basie	1: 177	Al Capone	2: 352
William Beaumont	2: 185	Truman Capote	2: 354
Alexander Graham Bell	2: 196	Frank Capra	2: 357
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200	Stokely Carmichael	3: 363
Saul Bellow	2: 202	Andrew Carnegie	3: 367
William Bennett	2: 204	Johnny Carson	3: 372
Irving Berlin	2: 208	Kit Carson	3: 374
Leonard Bernstein	2: 210	Rachel Carson	3: 377
Chuck Berry	2: 213	Jimmy Carter	3: 379
Mary McLeod Bethune	2: 215	George Washington Carver	3: 383
Owen Bieber	2: 220	Mary Cassatt	3: 388
Billy the Kid	2: 223	Irene Castle	3: 390
Larry Bird	2: 224	Willa Cather	3: 397
Shirley Temple Black	2: 227	Wilt Chamberlain	3: 416
Judy Blume	2: 239	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	3: 419
Humphrey Bogart	2: 242	Ray Charles	3: 430
Julian Bond	2: 244	César Chávez	3: 436

Dennis Chavez	3: 438	Thomas Edison	4: 650
Linda Chavez	3: 440	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	3: 443	Dwight D. Eisenhower	4: 657
John Cheever	3: 447	Mamie Eisenhower	4: 661
Dick Cheney	3: 451	Joycelyn Elders	4: 662
Mary Boykin Chesnut	3: 454	T. S. Eliot	4: 668
Julia Child	3: 459	Duke Ellington	4: 678
Shirley Chisholm	3: 461	Ralph Waldo Emerson	4: 680
Liz Claiborne	3: 478	Medgar Evers	4: 690
Bill Clinton	3: 483	Fannie Farmer	4: 696
Hillary Rodham Clinton	3: 487	Louis Farrakhan	4: 698
Ty Cobb	3: 490	William Faulkner	4: 701
Nat "King" Cole	3: 492	Dianne Feinstein	4: 704
Bessie Coleman	3: 494	Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Marva Collins	3: 499	Geraldine Ferraro	4: 710
Aaron Copland	3: 513	Bobby Fischer	4: 713
Francis Ford Coppola	3: 515	Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715
Bill Cosby	3: 518	F. Scott Fitzgerald	4: 718
Michael Crichton	3: 525	Malcolm Forbes	4: 723
Davy Crockett	3: 527	Henry Ford	4: 725
Walter Cronkite	3: 532	Benjamin Franklin	4: 731
E. E. Cummings	3: 535	Betty Friedan	4: 738
Clarence Darrow	3: 551	Robert Frost	4: 741
Bette Davis	3: 556	John Kenneth Galbraith	4: 745
Miles Davis	3: 558	George Gallup	4: 753
Ossie Davis	3: 561	Judy Garland	4: 764
Sammy Davis Jr.	3: 563	Bill Gates	4: 769
James Dean	4: 567	Theodor Geisel	5: 781
Ruby Dee	4: 571	J. Paul Getty	5: 786
Cecil B. DeMille	4: 585	Althea Gibson	5: 790
John Dewey	4: 594	Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792
Emily Dickinson	4: 603	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	5: 794
Joe DiMaggio	4: 608	Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797
Walt Disney	4: 611	Samuel Gompers	5: 801
Elizabeth Dole	4: 613	Benny Goodman	5: 807
Frederick Douglass	4: 626	Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813
Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Al Gore	5: 816
Pierre Du Pont	4: 638	Jay Gould	5: 818
Amelia Earhart	4: 643	Stephen Jay Gould	5: 821
George Eastman	4: 646	Katharine Graham	5: 824
Clint Eastwood	4: 648	Martha Graham	5: 827

Woody Guthrie	5: 838	Helen Keller	6: 1056
Alex Haley	5: 843	Gene Kelly	6: 1058
Alexander Hamilton	5: 846	Edward Kennedy	6: 1061
Oscar Hammerstein	5: 849	John F. Kennedy	6: 1064
John Hancock	5: 852	John F. Kennedy Jr.	6: 1069
Nathaniel Hawthorne	5: 862	Robert Kennedy	6: 1071
William Randolph Hearst	5: 865	Jack Kerouac	6: 1076
Joseph Heller	5: 870	Charles F. Kettering	6: 1078
Lillian Hellman	5: 872	B. B. King	6: 1086
Ernest Hemingway	5: 875	Billie Jean King	6: 1089
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Coretta Scott King	6: 1091
Patrick Henry	5: 883	Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094
Katharine Hepburn	5: 888	Stephen King	6: 1098
S. E. Hinton	5: 900	Henry Kissinger	6: 1104
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Calvin Klein	6: 1107
Oliver Wendell Holmes	5: 920	Ralph Lauren	6: 1117
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	5: 923	Emma Lazarus	6: 1119
bell hooks	5: 931	Bruce Lee	6: 1124
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Spike Lee	6: 1126
Bob Hope	5: 936	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Lena Horne	5: 940	Carl Lewis	6: 1141
Harry Houdini	5: 943	Sinclair Lewis	6: 1144
Julia Ward Howe	5: 949	Roy Lichtenstein	6: 1146
Howard Hughes	5: 951	Abraham Lincoln	6: 1150
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Charles Lindbergh	6: 1154
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Alain Locke	6: 1163
Lee Iacocca	5: 967	Jack London	6: 1168
Washington Irving	5: 975	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	6: 1170
Andrew Jackson	6: 979	Joe Louis	6: 1173
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	George Lucas	6: 1175
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Douglas MacArthur	7: 1185
Reggie Jackson	6: 989	Dolley Madison	7: 1191
Thomas Jefferson	6: 994	James Madison	7: 1194
Mae Jemison	6: 997	Madonna	7: 1197
Steve Jobs	6: 1007	Norman Mailer	7: 1205
Lyndon B. Johnson	6: 1016	Bernard Malamud	7: 1390
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Malcolm X	7: 1210
Al Jolson	6: 1025	David Mamet	7: 1214
James Earl Jones	6: 1027	Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	Mickey Mantle	7: 1224
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Rocky Marciano	7: 1230

Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Pocahontas	8: 1488
Cotton Mather	7: 1252	Edgar Allan Poe	8: 1490
Mayo Brothers	7: 1258	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Cole Porter	8: 1505
Joseph McCarthy	7: 1264	Katherine Anne Porter	8: 1507
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Emily Post	8: 1509
John McEnroe	7: 1270	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Elvis Presley	8: 1517
Aimee Semple McPherson	7: 1275	André Previn	8: 1520
Margaret Mead	7: 1277	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	E. Annie Proulx	8: 1524
Harvey Milk	7: 1298	Joseph Pulitzer	8: 1531
Edna St. Vincent Millay	7: 1303	George Pullman	8: 1533
Arthur Miller	7: 1305	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Henry Miller	7: 1308	Ronald Reagan	8: 1557
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Christopher Reeve	8: 1561
Marilyn Monroe	7: 1325	Erich Maria Remarque	8: 1564
Joe Montana	7: 1327	Janet Reno	8: 1568
Jim Morrison	7: 1336	Paul Revere	8: 1574
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Samuel F. B. Morse	7: 1341	Sally Ride	9: 1585
Grandma Moses	7: 1345	Cal Ripken, Jr.	9: 1591
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
John Muir	7: 1360	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Vladimir Nabokov	7: 1371	John D. Rockefeller	9: 1604
Ralph Nader	7: 1373	Norman Rockwell	9: 1607
Ogden Nash	7: 1379	Richard Rodgers	9: 1610
Richard Nixon	8: 1392	Will Rogers	9: 1615
Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398	Eleanor Roosevelt	9: 1621
Jessye Norman	8: 1404	Franklin D. Roosevelt	9: 1624
Joyce Carol Oates	8: 1413	Theodore Roosevelt	9: 1628
Sandra Day O'Connor	8: 1416	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Georgia O'Keeffe	8: 1420	Carl Rowan	9: 1639
Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	8: 1425	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Eugene O'Neill	8: 1428	Babe Ruth	9: 1651
Jesse Owens	8: 1435	Nolan Ryan	9: 1653
Arnold Palmer	8: 1441	Albert Sabin	9: 1657
Charlie Parker	8: 1445	Carl Sagan	9: 1659
Linus Pauling	8: 1453	J. D. Salinger	9: 1664
I. M. Pei	8: 1464	Jonas Salk	9: 1667
Sylvia Plath	8: 1483	Carl Sandburg	9: 1671

Margaret Sanger	9: 1673	An Wang	10: 1900
Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	9: 1681	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Charles M. Schulz	9: 1687	George Washington	10: 1906
Martin Scorsese	9: 1690	John Wayne	10: 1913
Selena	9: 1698	Daniel Webster	10: 1916
Sequoyah	9: 1701	Noah Webster	10: 1919
Beverly Sills	9: 1714	Orson Welles	10: 1922
Neil Simon	9: 1716	Eudora Welty	10: 1925
Frank Sinatra	9: 1719	Edith Wharton	10: 1928
Upton Sinclair	9: 1722	James Whistler	10: 1929
Isaac Bashevis Singer	9: 1724	E. B. White	10: 1932
Bessie Smith	9: 1727	Walt Whitman	10: 1935
Stephen Sondheim	9: 1732	Elie Wiesel	10: 1938
Steven Spielberg	9: 1737	Laura Ingalls Wilder	10: 1943
Benjamin Spock	9: 1740	Thornton Wilder	10: 1946
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	9: 1747	Tennessee Williams	10: 1948
Gertrude Stein	9: 1752	Woodrow Wilson	10: 1951
John Steinbeck	9: 1755	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Oliver Stone	9: 1761	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Harriet Beecher Stowe	9: 1766	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Igor Stravinsky	9: 1773	Wright Brothers	10: 1969
Barbra Streisand	9: 1776	Frank Lloyd Wright	10: 1972
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Amy Tan	10: 1787	Paul Zindel	10: 1987
Elizabeth Taylor	10: 1790		
Twyla Tharp	10: 1804	<i>Arabian</i>	
Clarence Thomas	10: 1807	Muhammad	7: 1355
Henry David Thoreau	10: 1813		
Jim Thorpe	10: 1816	<i>Argentine</i>	
James Thurber	10: 1819	Eva Perón	8: 1474
Harry S. Truman	10: 1834		
Donald Trump	10: 1837	<i>Asian American</i>	
Sojourner Truth	10: 1840	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Mark Twain	10: 1850	Maya Lin	6: 1148
John Updike	10: 1855	Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398
Gore Vidal	10: 1872	I. M. Pei	8: 1464
Wernher von Braun	10: 1882	Amy Tan	10: 1787
Kurt Vonnegut	10: 1884	An Wang	10: 1900
Alice Walker	10: 1891	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Barbara Walters	10: 1897		

Australian

Rupert Murdoch 7: 1364

Austrian

Joy Adamson 1: 22

Alfred Adler 1: 27

Sigmund Freud 4: 735

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart 7: 1350

Franz Schubert 9: 1684

Johann Strauss 9: 1771

Belgian

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886

Brazilian

Pelé 8: 1467

Burmese

Aung San Suu Kyi 1: 130

Cambodian

Pol Pot 8: 1495

Dith Pran 8: 1514

Canadian

Margaret Atwood 1: 120

Frederick Banting 1: 168

Jean Chrétien 3: 467

John Kenneth Galbraith 4: 745

Wayne Gretzky 5: 833

Gordie Howe 5: 946

Aimee Semple McPherson 7: 1275

Chilean

Isabel Allende 1: 52

Chinese

Chiang Kai-shek 3: 456

Confucius 3: 503

Deng Xiaoping 4: 587

Jiang Zemin 6: 1003

Lao Tzu 6: 1115

Tsung-Dao Lee 6: 1129

Mao Zedong 7: 1226

I. M. Pei 8: 1464

Sun Yat-sen 9: 1779

Tu Fu 10: 1843

An Wang 10: 1900

Colombian

Gabriel García Márquez 7: 762

Congolese

Patrice Lumumba 6: 1178

Cuban

Fidel Castro 3: 393

Czech

Madeleine Albright 1: 37

Franz Kafka 6: 1047

Tom Stoppard 9: 1764

Danish

Hans Christian Andersen 1: 62

Dutch

Desiderius Erasmus 4: 683

Rembrandt 8: 1566

Vincent Van Gogh 10: 1859

Egyptian

Boutros Boutros-Ghali 2: 261

Cleopatra VII 3: 480

Imhotep 5: 972

Najib Mahfuz 7: 1203

Moses 7: 1343

Hosni Mubarak 7: 1353

Nefertiti 7: 1381

Tutankhamen 10: 1845

English

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	1: 66	Cary Grant	5: 829
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Graham Greene	5: 831
Jane Austen	1: 132	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Charles Babbage	1: 139	Thomas Hardy	5: 857
Francis Bacon	1: 143	Stephen Hawking	5: 860
Roger Bacon	1: 145	Henry VIII	5: 880
Beatles	2: 181	Alfred Hitchcock	5: 907
Elizabeth Blackwell	2: 229	Thomas Hobbes	5: 915
William Blake	2: 234	P. D. James	6: 991
William Booth	2: 250	Elton John	6: 1011
Charlotte Brontë	2: 283	Samuel Johnson	6: 1023
Emily Brontë	2: 284	Ben Jonson	6: 1032
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	2: 299	John Keats	6: 1054
Robert Browning	2: 302	Rudyard Kipling	6: 1101
Lord Byron	2: 331	Mary Leakey	6: 1121
Lewis Carroll	3: 370	Joseph Lister	6: 1159
Vernon Castle	3: 390	Andrew Lloyd Webber	6: 1161
Henry Cavendish	3: 404	John Locke	6: 1166
Charlie Chaplin	3: 421	John Stuart Mill	7: 1301
Charles, Prince of Wales	3: 427	John Milton	7: 1313
Geoffrey Chaucer	3: 433	Thomas More	7: 1334
Agatha Christie	3: 469	Isaac Newton	7: 1382
Winston Churchill	3: 472	Florence Nightingale	8: 1390
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	3: 496	Laurence Olivier	8: 1422
Joseph Conrad	3: 508	George Orwell	8: 1430
Noel Coward	3: 523	William Penn	8: 1469
Oliver Cromwell	3: 529	Alexander Pope	8: 1502
Charles Darwin	3: 554	Walter Raleigh	8: 1547
Daniel Defoe	4: 574	Cecil Rhodes	9: 1577
Diana, Princess of Wales	4: 597	Rolling Stones	9: 1618
Charles Dickens	4: 600	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	9: 1634
John Donne	4: 621	J. K. Rowling	9: 1641
Arthur Conan Doyle	4: 629	William Shakespeare	9: 1702
Francis Drake	4: 632	Mary Shelley	9: 1708
George Eliot	4: 665	Percy Shelley	9: 1711
T. S. Eliot	4: 668	Tom Stoppard	9: 1764
Elizabeth I	4: 672	Alfred, Lord Tennyson	10: 1795
Elizabeth II	4: 675	William Makepeace Thackeray	10: 1801
William Golding	5: 800	J. R. R. Tolkien	10: 1824
Jane Goodall	5: 804	Victoria	10: 1869
		Oscar Wilde	10: 1940

Virginia Woolf 10: 1963
William Wordsworth 10: 1965

Ethiopian

Haile Selassie 9: 1697

Filipino

Benigno Aquino 1: 84
Ferdinand Marcos 7: 1233

Flemish

Peter Paul Rubens 9: 1643

Frankish

Charlemagne 3: 424

French

John James Audubon 1: 125
Honoré de Balzac 1: 164
Simone de Beauvoir 2: 187
Louis Braille 2: 273
John Calvin 2: 344
Albert Camus 2: 349
Paul Cézanne 3: 411
Jacques Cousteau 3: 521
Marie Curie 3: 538
Claude Debussy 4: 569
Edgar Degas 4: 576
Charles de Gaulle 4: 579
René Descartes 4: 590
Denis Diderot 4: 606
Alexandre Dumas 4: 634
Gustave Flaubert 4: 721
Paul Gauguin 4: 773
Victor Hugo 5: 957
Joan of Arc 6: 1005
Marquis de Lafayette 6: 1113
Édouard Manet 7: 1219
Marie Antoinette 7: 1238
Henri Matisse 7: 1255

Molière 7: 1318
Claude Monet 7: 1320
Montesquieu 7: 1329
Napoleon Bonaparte 7: 1376
Nostradamus 8: 1406
Blaise Pascal 8: 1447
Louis Pasteur 8: 1450
Marcel Proust 8: 1526
Pierre Auguste Renoir 8: 1571
Armand-Jean du Plessis
 de Richelieu 9: 1583
Maximilien de Robespierre 9: 1599
Auguste Rodin 9: 1613
Jean-Jacques Rousseau 9: 1636
George Sand 9: 1669
Jean-Paul Sartre 9: 1676
Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec 10: 1830
Jan Vermeer 10: 1862
Jules Verne 10: 1864
Voltaire 10: 1879

German

Hannah Arendt 1: 91
John Jacob Astor 1: 118
Johann Sebastian Bach 1: 141
Klaus Barbie 1: 170
Ludwig van Beethoven 2: 192
Konrad Bloch 2: 237
Johannes Brahms 2: 271
Catherine the Great 3: 401
Albert Einstein 4: 654
Gabriel Fahrenheit 4: 695
Karl Friedrich Gauss 4: 775
Hans Geiger 5: 779
Brothers Grimm 5: 836
George Frideric Handel 5: 854
Werner Heisenberg 5: 868
William Herschel 5: 893
Adolf Hitler 5: 909
Franz Kafka 6: 1047
Immanuel Kant 6: 1052

Johannes Kepler 6: 1074
 Henry Kissinger 6: 1104
 Martin Luther 6: 1181
 Karl Marx 7: 1246
 Felix Mendelssohn 7: 1289
 Friedrich Nietzsche 8: 1387
 André Previn 8: 1520
 Erich Maria Remarque 8: 1564
 Leni Riefenstahl 9: 1588
 Oskar Schindler 9: 1678
 Edith Stein 9: 1749
 Wernher von Braun 10: 1882
 Richard Wagner 10: 1889

Ghanian

Kofi Annan 1: 76

Greek

Aeschylus 1: 29
 Archimedes 1: 89
 Aristophanes 1: 96
 Aristotle 1: 98
 Euclid 4: 686
 Euripides 4: 688
 Galen 4: 748
 Hippocrates 5: 902
 Homer 5: 926
 Pericles 8: 1472
 Plato 8: 1485
 Pythagoras 8: 1540
 Socrates 9: 1729
 Sophocles 9: 1734

Guatemalan

Rigoberta Menchú 7: 1286

Haitian

Jean-Bertrand Aristide 1: 93
 François Duvalier 4: 640

Hispanic American

César Chávez 3: 436
 Dennis Chavez 3: 438
 Linda Chavez 3: 440
 Selena 9: 1698

Hungarian

Joseph Pulitzer 8: 1531

Indian

Buddha 2: 310
 Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar 3: 419
 Indira Gandhi 4: 754
 Mohandas Gandhi 4: 758
 Sri Ramakrishna 8: 1550
 Salman Rushdie 9: 1649

Iranian

Ayatollah Khomeini 6: 1081
 Mohammad Reza Pahlavi 8: 1439

Iraqi

Saddam Hussein 5: 962

Irish

Samuel Beckett 2: 189
 Michael Collins 3: 501
 James Joyce 6: 1038
 C. S. Lewis 6: 1139
 George Bernard Shaw 9: 1706
 Bram Stoker 9: 1759
 Oscar Wilde 10: 1940
 William Butler Yeats 10: 1979

Israeli

Menachem Begin 2: 194
 Golda Meir 7: 1284

Italian

Fra Angelico 1: 71

Lucrezia Borgia	2: 252
Sandro Botticelli	2: 257
Caligula	2: 338
Frank Capra	2: 357
Donatello	4: 619
Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Francis of Assisi	4: 729
Galileo	4: 750
Leonardo da Vinci	6: 1136
Niccolò Machiavelli	7: 1188
Catherine de' Medici	7: 1281
Michelangelo	7: 1295
Maria Montessori	7: 1331
Benito Mussolini	7: 1367
Luciano Pavarotti	8: 1456
Antonio Stradivari	9: 1769
Amerigo Vespucci	10: 1867
Antonio Vivaldi	10: 1877

Jamaican

Marcus Garvey	4: 767
-------------------------	--------

Japanese

Hirohito	5: 904
Soichiro Honda	5: 929
Eiji Toyoda	10: 1832

Judean

Herod the Great	5: 891
---------------------------	--------

Lebanese

Kahlil Gibran	5: 788
-------------------------	--------

Libyan

Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	8: 1543
-------------------------------	---------

Lithuanian

Al Jolson	6: 1025
---------------------	---------

Macedonian

Alexander the Great	1: 43
Ptolemy I	8: 1528

Mexican

Lázaro Cárdenas	3: 361
Benito Juárez	6: 1040
Diego Rivera	9: 1593

Mongolian

Genghis Khan	5: 784
Kublai Khan	6: 1109

Native American

American Horse	1: 57
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Pocahontas	8: 1488
Sequoyah	9: 1701
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785

New Zealander

Edmund Hillary	5: 898
--------------------------	--------

Nigerian

Chinua Achebe	1: 10
-------------------------	-------

Norwegian

Thor Heyerdahl	5: 895
Henrik Ibsen	5: 970
Edvard Munch	7: 1362

Pakistani

Benazir Bhutto	2: 218
--------------------------	--------

Palestinian

Yasir Arafat	1: 86
------------------------	-------

Panamanian

Manuel Noriega 8: 1401

Persian

Harun al-Rashid 8: 1555

Polish

Baal Shem Tov 1: 137

Menachem Begin 2: 194

Frédéric Chopin 3: 464

Joseph Conrad 3: 508

Nicolaus Copernicus 3: 510

Marie Curie 3: 538

John Paul II 6: 1013

Albert Sabin 9: 1657

Isaac Bashevis Singer 9: 1724

Portuguese

Ferdinand Magellan 7: 1201

Roman

Augustus 1: 128

Julius Caesar 2: 335

Marcus Tullius Cicero 3: 475

Jesus of Nazareth 6: 1000

Marcus Aurelius 7: 1236

Mark Antony 7: 1240

Ovid 8: 1432

Virgil 10: 1874

Romanian

Elie Wiesel 10: 1939

Russian

Alexander II 1: 41

Isaac Asimov 1: 113

George Balanchine 1: 154

Irving Berlin 2: 208

Leonid Brezhnev 2: 280

Catherine the Great 3: 401

Marc Chagall 3: 414

Anton Chekhov 3: 449

Fyodor Dostoevsky 4: 624

Mikhail Gorbachev 5: 809

Wassily Kandinsky 6: 1050

Nikita Khrushchev 6: 1083

Vladimir Lenin 6: 1131

Vladimir Nabokov 7: 1371

Rudolf Nureyev 8: 1409

Ivan Pavlov 8: 1459

Anna Pavlova 8: 1462

Aleksandr Pushkin 8: 1535

Vladimir Putin 8: 1537

Andrei Sakharov 9: 1662

Joseph Stalin 9: 1743

Igor Stravinsky 9: 1773

Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky 10: 1792

Valentina Tereshkova 10: 1798

Leo Tolstoy 10: 1827

Boris Yeltsin 10: 1982

Scottish

Alexander Graham Bell 2: 196

Tony Blair 2: 232

Robert Burns 2: 317

Andrew Carnegie 3: 367

Sean Connery 3: 506

Arthur Conan Doyle 4: 629

Mary, Queen of Scots 7: 1249

John Muir 7: 1360

Walter Scott 9: 1693

Robert Louis Stevenson 9: 1757

James Watt 10: 1910

Serbian

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310

South African

Christiaan Barnard 1: 173

P. W. Botha 2: 255

F. W. de Klerk 4: 581

Nelson Mandela 7: 1216
Desmond Tutu 10: 1847

Spanish

Pablo Casals 3: 386
Catherine of Aragon 3: 399
Miguel de Cervantes 3: 408
Salvador Dali 3: 549
Hernando de Soto 4: 592
Placido Domingo 4: 616
Joan Miró 7: 1316
Pablo Picasso 8: 1479
Juan Ponce de León 8: 1501

Swedish

Ingmar Bergman 2: 206
Anders Celsius 3: 407
Carl Linnaeus 6: 1157
Alfred Nobel 8: 1397

Swiss

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886
Carl Jung 6: 1043
Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus 8: 1443
Jean Piaget 8: 1477

Tibetan

Dalai Lama 3: 546

Trinidadian

Stokely Carmichael 3: 363

Ugandan

Idi Amin 1: 59

Venetian

Marco Polo 8: 1498

Vietnamese

Ho Chi Minh 5: 913

Welsh

Roald Dahl 3: 543
Anthony Hopkins 5: 938
Dylan Thomas 10: 1810

Yugoslav

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310
Marshal Tito 10: 1821



reader's guide

U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography features 750 biographies of notable historic and contemporary figures from around the world. Chosen from American history, world history, literature, science and math, arts and entertainment, and the social sciences, the entries focus on the people studied most often in middle school and high school, as identified by teachers and media specialists.

The biographies are arranged alphabetically across ten volumes. The two- to four-page entries cover the early lives, influences, and careers of notable men and women of diverse fields and ethnic groups. Each essay includes birth and death information in the header and concludes with a list of sources

for further information. A contents section lists biographees by their nationality. Nearly 750 photographs and illustrations are featured, and a general index provides quick access to the people and subjects discussed throughout *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

Special thanks

Much appreciation goes to Mary Alice Anderson, media specialist at Winona Middle School in Winona, Minnesota, and Nina Levine, library media specialist at Blue Mountain Middle School in Cortlandt Manor, New York, for their assistance in developing the entry list. Many thanks also go to the following people for their important editorial contri-

butions: Taryn Benbow-Pfalzgraf (proofreading), Jodi Essey-Stapleton (copyediting and proofing), Margaret Haerens (proofreading), Courtney Mroch (copyediting), and Theresa Murray (copyediting and indexing). Special gratitude goes to Linda Mahoney at LM Design for her excellent typesetting work and her flexible attitude.

Comments and suggestions

We welcome your comments on the *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*. Please write: Editors, *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*, U•X•L, 27500 Drake Road, Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535; call toll-free: 1-800-877-4253; fax to 248-699-8097; or send e-mail via www.gale.com.



ANDREW JACKSON

Born: March 15, 1767

Waxhaw, South Carolina

Died: June 8, 1845

Nashville, Tennessee

American president and lawyer

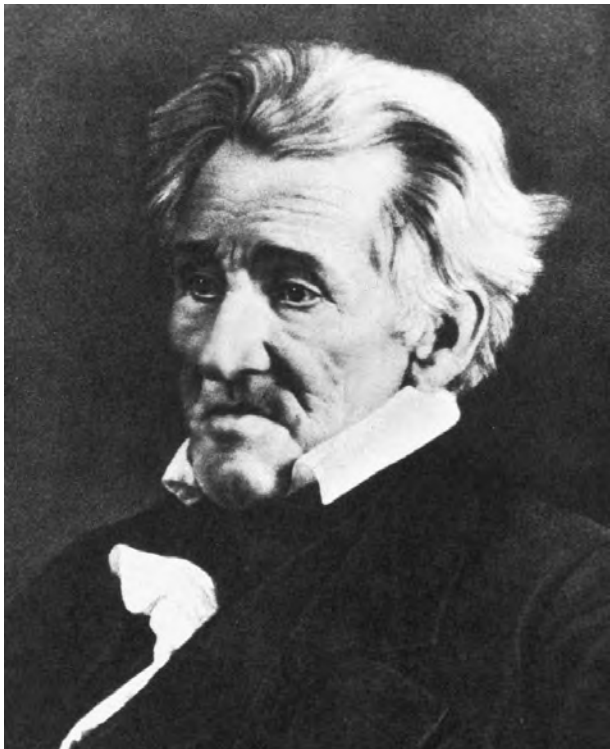
Andrew Jackson (1767–1845) was the seventh president of the United States. He symbolized the democratic advances of his time, while strengthening the power of the presidential office in American government.

A young soldier

Andrew Jackson was born on March 15, 1767, in Waxhaw country, which is now part of North and South Carolina. His father, who died shortly before Andrew's birth, had come with his wife to America from Ireland in 1765. Andrew attended several academies in the Waxhaw settlement, but his education was incomplete and he never developed a taste for learning.

After the outbreak of the American Revolution (1775–83), where the American colonies fought to break away from British rule, Jackson, barely thirteen years old, served as an orderly (an attendant). Following a battle, Jackson and his brother were captured by the British and taken to a prison

JACKSON, ANDREW



Andrew Jackson.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

camp. When Jackson refused to clean an officer's boots, the officer slashed him with a sword, leaving a permanent scar on his forehead and left hand. Jackson was the only member of his family to survive the war. Many believe that his harsh, adventuresome, early life developed his strong, aggressive qualities of leadership, his violent temper, and his need for intense loyalty from friends.

Lawyer and politician

After the war Jackson drifted from one job to another and from one relative to another. He wasted a small inheritance and for a time lived a wild and undisciplined life. Then, in 1784 Jackson left for Salisbury, North Car-

olina, where he studied law in a local office. Three years later, after earning his law license, he moved to the western district that eventually became Tennessee. Living in Nashville, Tennessee, Jackson soon became a distinguished lawyer. Within ten years he became one of the most important landowners in the state. He also achieved social status by marrying Rachel Donelson (1767–1828), the daughter of one of the region's original settlers.

In 1796 Jackson represented his county when the Southwest Territory (areas west of the Mississippi River) petitioned Congress for admission as a state to the Union, as the United States was known. Although he played a modest, or small, part in the proceedings, one tradition does credit him with suggesting the name of the new state: Tennessee, taken from the name of a Cherokee Indian chief.

After Tennessee was admitted as the sixteenth state of the Union, Jackson was elected to its only seat in Congress. The following year he became judge of the Superior Court of Tennessee. He resigned from the bench in 1804 to devote himself to his plantation, where he later built a graceful mansion called the "Hermitage."

Military career

Jackson's life would change when, once again, war erupted between America and Great Britain in the War of 1812 (1812–15). Jackson had achieved the rank of major general (an officer in the military who is above a brigadier general) of the Tennessee militia (a small military force that is not part of the regular army). He and his militia were ordered to overpower the Creek Indians in Alabama, who had massacred white settlers at Fort Mims. At the Battle of Horseshoe Bend

(1814) Jackson dealt the Creek a crushing defeat. During this battle Jackson's men recognized his toughness and strong will by nicknaming him "Old Hickory."

When the U.S. government heard rumors of a British attack of the South through one of the ports on the Gulf of Mexico, Jackson was ordered to block the invasion. The British attacked on January 8, 1815, and were easily defeated. More than two thousand British soldiers were killed, while only thirteen Americans were lost in battle. Jackson became a national hero overnight, for he had given Americans confidence in their ability to defend their new freedom.

When the war ended, Jackson returned to his plantation. However, he soon resumed military duty to successfully overpower Indian forces along the southern frontier of Spanish Florida. After President James Monroe (1758–1831) purchased Florida from Spain for \$5 million, Jackson served as governor of the Florida Territory. He quit after serving only a few months.

Running for president

His accomplishments served to increase Jackson's popularity throughout the country. Meanwhile his friends in Tennessee began talking about the possibility of making him a presidential candidate. First, he was elected to the U.S. Senate in October 1823.

The following year, four candidates sought the presidency, each representing a different section of the country: Jackson of Tennessee, William H. Crawford (1772–1834) of Georgia, John Quincy Adams (1767–1848) of Massachusetts, and Henry Clay (1777–1852) of Kentucky. It was a close election, and the House of Repre-

sentatives had to decide the winner. When John Quincy Adams was chosen president, Jackson was convinced the election was fixed and that there was a "bargain" between Adams and Clay. For the next four years Jackson's supporters attacked the Adams administration with the accusation of a "corrupt bargain."

"Old Hickory" as president

In the election of 1828 Jackson won an overwhelming victory. During the campaign, Martin Van Buren (1782–1862) of New York and John C. Calhoun (1782–1850) of South Carolina joined forces behind Jackson. Jackson and his supporters soon became known as the Democratic Party. Supporters of Adams and Clay were now called National Republicans.

Relations between President Jackson and Vice President Calhoun soon turned sour. The two argued over the important constitutional question of the nature of the Union. Calhoun strongly believed in a state's doctrine (official statement) of nullification, or the right of a state to undo any federal law that disagreed with the state's views. Jackson strongly believed nullification was wrong and could weaken the Union. Calhoun wound up resigning before the end of his term.

Reelection and the bank war

The presidential contest of 1832 revolved around the important political issue of the national bank, or the bank controlled by the national government. Jackson believed the Second Bank of the United States (established in 1816) was unconstitutional, or that it disagreed with the nation's rules. Also, Jackson maintained that the Bank had failed to establish a sound and uniform currency, or money that could be used across the country.

When the Bank applied to Congress to continue its work, Jackson vetoed (rejected) the bill. Although the bill would pass in the end, Jackson sent a strong message by saying how “the rich and powerful too often bend the acts of government to their selfish purposes.” With this message Jackson broadened presidential power by giving social, political, and economic reasons for vetoing the bill.

A second term

In the 1832 presidential election Jackson and vice presidential candidate Van Buren defeated Henry Clay. Jackson then informed Congress of his intention to pay off the national debt. This goal was achieved on January 1, 1835, thanks to income the federal government received from land sales and tariffs (import taxes).

Jackson supported a policy of “rotation” with respect to Federal offices. He declared that no one man has more right to office than any other man. Jackson also supported moving Native Americans west of the Mississippi River as the most humane, or fair, policy the government could pursue in dealing with the Native Americans. Jackson signed more than ninety treaties with various tribes, in which lands owned by Native Americans within the existing states, were exchanged for new lands in the open West.

Nullification ordinance

Another issue in Jackson’s second term was that of tariffs. The North called for high rates, but the South considered them a way of financially supporting northern manufacturers at the expense of southern businesses. With the passage of the Tariff of 1832, which reduced the import taxes but not enough to

satisfy southern states, South Carolina reacted violently. The state called on Calhoun’s doctrine of nullification and soon declared the tariffs of 1828 and 1832 null and void. The state then warned the federal government that if force were used to execute the law, the state would secede, or withdraw membership, from the Union. Jackson would not back down, and threatened the state with treason, or a high crime against one’s country.

A compromise tariff was soon hurried through Congress. Jackson had avoided a national crisis, and his actions during the controversy were masterful. Through the careful use of presidential powers and compromise, he preserved the Union and upheld the power of federal law.

At the end of his two terms in office, having participated in the inauguration of his successor, Martin Van Buren, Jackson retired to his plantation. He continued to keep his hand in national politics until his death on June 8, 1845.

For More Information

- Booraem, Hendrik. *Young Hickory: The Making of Andrew Jackson*. Dallas: Taylor, 2001.
- Collier, Christopher, and James Lincoln Collier. *Andrew Jackson’s America, 1824–1850*. New York: Benchmark Books, 1999.
- Judson, Karen. *Andrew Jackson*. Hillsdale, NJ: Enslow, 1997.
- Meltzer, Milton. *Andrew Jackson: And His America*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1993.
- Remini, Robert V. *The Life of Andrew Jackson*. New York: Harper, 1988.
- Whitelaw, Nancy. *Andrew Jackson: Frontier President*. Greensboro, NC: Morgan Reynolds, 2001.

JESSE JACKSON

Born: October 18, 1941

Greenville, South Carolina

African American political leader, religious minister, and orator

Civil rights leader Reverend Jesse Jackson has spent decades in the public eye in support of ending racial and class divisions in America. He is the founder of the Rainbow/PUSH Coalition, a group that works to improve the lives of people throughout the United States and the world.

Early life and education

Jesse Louis Jackson was born on October 18, 1941, in Greenville, South Carolina. He was the son of Helen Burns and her married next-door neighbor, Noah Robinson. Jackson was teased by his neighbors and classmates for being “a nobody who had no daddy.” Jackson developed a strong desire to succeed and an understanding of the oppressed (those who are treated unjustly). With advice from his grandmother, Jackson overcame his childhood problems, finishing tenth in his high-school class. He earned a football scholarship to attend the University of Illinois in Chicago. Jackson, eager to get away from the prejudice (dislike of people based on their race) and segregation (separation based on race) of the South, traveled north only to find both open and hidden discrimination (unequal treatment) at the university and in other parts of the city.

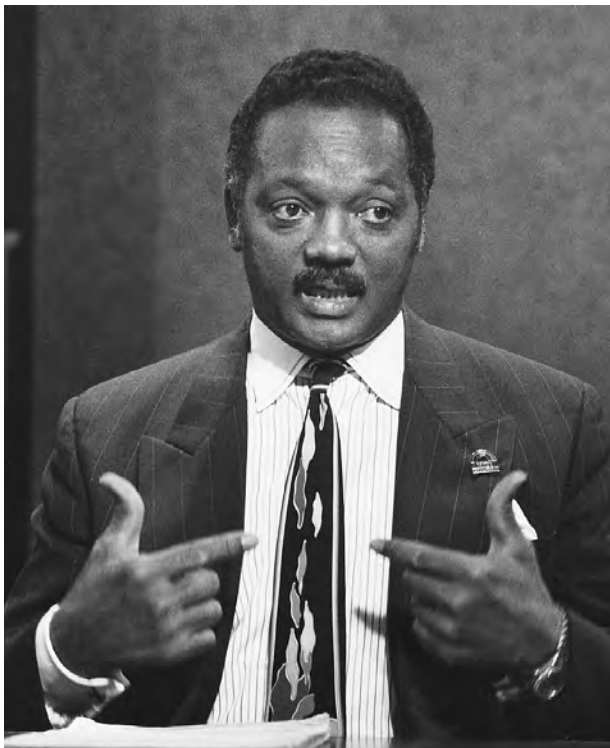
After several semesters Jackson decided to leave the University of Illinois. He

returned to the South and enrolled at North Carolina Agricultural and Technical College (A&T) in Greensboro, North Carolina, an institution for African American students, where he was elected student body president. As a college senior he became a leader in the civil rights movement. Jackson actively encouraged his fellow students to protest against racial injustice by staging repeated demonstrations and boycotts (protests in which, for example, organizers refuse to shop at a certain store in an attempt to get the store to change an unjust policy or position). Jackson graduated in 1964 with a degree in sociology and economics.

Civil rights movement

After graduation Jackson decided to attend the Chicago Theological Seminary. After two and a half years at the school, Jackson left the seminary (a place for religious education) in 1966 before completing his divinity degree (a degree in the study of religion). He also joined the Southern Christian Leadership Conference (SCLC), a civil rights organization led by Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968) that held nonviolent protests against segregation in the South. In April 1968 many of SCLC’s officers—including Jackson—were drawn away from other civil rights protests by a garbage collectors’ strike in Memphis, Tennessee. Tragically, King, in his attempt to prevent racial violence in that city, was killed by an assassin’s bullet while standing on the balcony of his hotel room.

Jackson later claimed on national television that he had been the last person to talk to King and that he had held the dying leader in his arms, getting blood all over his shirt. The other men present agreed that this was not



Jesse Jackson.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

true—that Jackson had been in the parking lot facing King when the shooting occurred and had neither climbed the steps to the balcony afterward nor gone to the hospital with King. Whatever the truth of the matter may be, Jackson's appearance on national television the next day with his bloodied shirt brought the horror of the assassination into American homes, making him a well-known national figure. This publicity caused the media to refer to him as the new leader of the civil rights movement. In 1971 Jackson was suspended from the SCLC after its leaders claimed that he was using the organization to further his own personal goals.

After his suspension, Jackson founded Operation PUSH (People United to Save Humanity). Standing in front of a picture of Dr. King, Jackson promised to begin “a rainbow coalition of blacks and whites gathered together to push for a greater share of economic and political power for all poor people in America.” Jackson spoke out against racial prejudice and discrimination, military action, and class divisions in America. In 1976 Jackson created PUSH-Excel, a program aimed at encouraging children and teens to succeed. A fiery orator (public speaker), Jackson traveled from city to city delivering his message of personal responsibility and self-worth to students: “You're not a man because you can kill somebody. You are not a man because you can make a baby . . . You're a man only if you can raise a baby, protect a baby and provide for a baby.”

The rainbow coalition and bids for the presidency

Jackson became involved in international politics when President Jimmy Carter (1924–) approved his visit to South Africa. Jackson attracted huge crowds at rallies, where he denounced (criticized) apartheid, South Africa's political system that prevented the black majority of the population from enjoying the rights and privileges of the white minority. Later in 1979 he toured the Middle East, where he was criticized for embracing Yasir Arafat (1929–), the Palestinian leader who was considered a terrorist (a person who uses terror to force others to act in a certain way) by the American government. These international trips caused Jackson's fame and popularity to grow within the African American community.

As the 1980s began, Jackson was no longer a young man with long hair and gold chains but was instead a more mature figure seeking ways to change the Democratic Party from within. He continued to promote his "rainbow coalition" as a way for all Americans to improve the country. Jackson's support in the African American community also allowed him to influence both local and national elections. Possibly the most important campaign in which he was involved was the election victory of Harold Washington, the first African American mayor of Chicago, Illinois, in 1983. Jackson's ability to convince over one hundred thousand African Americans, many of them youths, to register to vote played a large part in Washington's victory.

Jackson decided to campaign in the 1984 presidential election as a Democrat. His campaign focused on social programs for the poor and disabled, reduced taxes for the poor, increased voting rights, effective programs to improve the job opportunities of women and minorities, and improved civil rights. He called for increased aid to African nations and more consideration of the rights of Arabs. Many senior African American politicians refused to support Jackson, believing that his candidacy would disrupt the Democratic Party and benefit the Republicans. However, many poor African Americans supported him. He received 3.5 million votes, and possibly 2 million of those voters were newly registered. Although his campaign was unsuccessful, Jackson had broken new ground while involving more African Americans in the political process.

After the 1984 election Jackson split his time between working for Operation PUSH in Chicago and his new National Rainbow Coali-

tion, which he began in 1985, in Washington, D.C. (The two organizations later joined together to form the Rainbow/PUSH Coalition.) He ran again for the Democratic presidential nomination in the 1988 election. Although his second campaign received much wider support, Jackson finished second to Massachusetts Governor Michael Dukakis (1933–), who went on to lose the presidential election. In 1992 he backed Democratic candidate Bill Clinton (1946–) during the presidential campaign. He used his influence to urge African American voters to support Clinton. These efforts helped Clinton win the election and return a Democrat to the White House for the first time in twelve years.

More recent activities

Despite criticism that he was simply a cheerleader for causes and represented style more than substance, Jackson continued to speak out for civil rights and to challenge others to improve themselves. In 1995 Jackson wrote in *Essence* magazine, "People who are victimized may not be responsible for being down, but they must be responsible for getting up. Slave masters don't retire; people who are enslaved change their minds and choose to join the abolitionist [antislavery] struggle. . . . Change has always been led by those whose spirits were bigger than their circumstances. . . . I do have hope. We have seen significant victories during the last 25 years."

In November 1999 Jackson came to the defense of six high-school students expelled for fighting in Decatur, Illinois. The Decatur school board expelled the students for two years for their involvement in a brawl during a football game in September 1999. Jackson met with the board to try to reach a compro-

mise that would allow the students to return to regular classes, but the board would only agree to reduce the punishment to one year and to allow the students to attend a different school. As a result, Jackson led a protest march at the school, where he was arrested for criminal trespassing.

Jackson received his master of divinity degree from the Chicago Theological Seminary on June 3, 2000. He had been only three courses short of earning his degree when he left the school more than three decades earlier. On August 9, 2000, President Bill Clinton awarded a Presidential Medal of Freedom to Jackson. The medal is the highest honor for civilians (nonmembers of military, police or fire-fighting units) in the United States. Jackson disappointed many of his followers when it became known in 2001 that he had fathered a daughter—who was twenty months old at the time of his announcement—with a woman other than his wife. “I fully accept responsibility, and I am truly sorry for my actions,” he said in a written statement. Despite this setback in his personal life, Jackson continues to be a successful advocate for human rights and social change.

For More Information

Haskins, James. *Jesse Jackson: Civil Rights Activist*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2000.

Jackson, Jesse. *Straight from the Heart*. Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1987.

Landess, Thomas, and Richard Quinn. *Jesse Jackson and the Politics of Race*. Ottawa, IL: Jameson Books, 1985.

Reynolds, Barbara A. *Jesse Jackson: America's David*. Washington, DC: JFJ Associates, 1985.

MICHAEL JACKSON

Born: August 29, 1958

Gary, Indiana

*African American entertainer, singer,
and songwriter*

A performer since the age of five, Michael Jackson is one of the most popular singers in history. His 1983 album, *Thriller*, sold forty million copies, making it the biggest seller of all time. Through his record albums and music videos he created an image imitated by his millions of fans.

Career planned in advance

Michael Joe Jackson was born in Gary, Indiana, on August 29, 1958, the fifth of Joe and Katherine Jackson's nine children. The house was always filled with music. Jackson's mother taught the children folk and religious songs, to which they sang along. Jackson's father, who worked at a steel plant, had always dreamed of becoming a successful musician. When this failed to happen, he decided to do whatever it took to make successes of his children. He tried to control his children's careers even after they were adults. The struggle for the control of the musical fortunes of the Jackson family was a constant source of conflict.

The Jackson boys soon formed a family band that became a success at amateur shows and talent contests throughout the Midwest. From the age of five Michael's amazing talent showed itself. His dancing and stage presence caused him to become the focus of the group.

His older brother, Jackie, told Gerri Hershey in *Rolling Stone*, “It was sort of frightening. He was so young. I don’t know where he got it. He just *knew*.”

Discovered by Motown

The Jacksons’ fame and popularity soon began to spread. While performing at the Apollo Theater in New York City’s Harlem neighborhood in 1968, Motown recording artist Gladys Knight (1944–) and pianist Billy Taylor discovered them. Later that year singer Diana Ross (1944–) became associated with the boys during a “Soul Weekend” in Gary. With Ross’s support, the Jacksons signed a contract with Motown Records. Berry Gordy (1929–), the famous head of Motown, took control of the Jacksons’ careers.

By 1970 the group, known as the Jackson Five, was topping the charts and riding a wave of popularity with such hits as “ABC,” “The Love You Save,” and “I’ll Be There,” each of which sold over one million copies. The group also appeared on several televised specials, and a *Jackson Five* cartoon series was created. Gordy quickly recognized Michael’s appeal and released albums featuring him alone. These solo albums sold as well as those of the Jackson Five. The group managed to survive Michael’s voice change and a bitter break with Motown Records in 1976, but as the Jackson family they continued to fight with each other and with their own father.

In 1978 Michael Jackson appeared in *The Wiz*, an African American version of *The Wizard of Oz*. He sang the only hit from the film’s soundtrack album (“Ease On Down the Road”) in a duet with the star, Diana Ross. His success as the Scarecrow was a preview of what was to come in his videos, for Jackson seemed to care



Michael Jackson.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

most about dancing. (He later dedicated his autobiography [the story of his one’s own life] to dance legend Fred Astaire [1899–1987], and the autobiography’s title, *Moonwalk*, refers to a dance that Jackson made popular.)

Unbelievable success

While working on *The Wiz*, Jackson met producer Quincy Jones (1933–). They worked together on Jackson’s 1979 album *Off the Wall*, which sold ten million copies and earned critical praise. In 1982 Jackson and Jones again joined forces on the *Thriller* album. *Thriller* fully established Jackson as a solo performer, and his hit songs from the album—“Beat It,”

“Billie Jean,” and “Thriller”—made him the major pop star of the early 1980s. The success of *Thriller* (with forty million copies sold, it remains one of the best-selling albums of all time) and the videos of its songs also helped Jackson break the color barrier imposed by radio stations and the powerful music video channel MTV. By 1983 Jackson was the single most popular entertainer in America.

In 1985 Jackson reunited with Quincy Jones for USA for Africa’s “We Are the World,” which raised funds for the poor in Africa. Jackson’s next two albums, *Bad* (1987) and *Dangerous* (1991), were not as hugely successful as *Thriller*, but Jackson remained in the spotlight throughout the 1980s and into the 1990s. In 1992 he founded “Heal the World” to aid children and the environment. In 1993 he was presented with the “Living Legend Award” at the Grammy Awards ceremony and with the Humanitarian (one who promotes human welfare) of the Year trophy at the *Soul Train* awards.

Rocked by scandal

Despite Jackson’s popularity and good works, he became the subject of a major scandal (action that damages one’s reputation). In 1993 a thirteen-year-old boy accused Jackson of sexually abusing him at the star’s home. Jackson settled the case out of court while insisting he was innocent. The scandal cost Jackson his endorsement (paid public support of a company’s products) contract with Pepsi and a film deal. His sexual preference was called into question, and his public image was severely damaged.

In 1995 Jackson was criticized following the release of his new album *HIStory: Past, Present, and Future, Book I*. One of the songs on the album, “They Don’t Care About Us,”

seemed to contain anti-Semitic (showing hatred toward Jewish people) lyrics (words). To avoid further criticism, Jackson changed the lyrics. He also wrote a letter of apology to Rabbi Marvin Hier, head of the Simon Wiesenthal Center for Holocaust Studies, who had protested the lyrics.

Marriage and fatherhood

In 1994 Jackson shocked the world when he married Lisa Marie Presley, daughter of the late (deceased) rock legend Elvis Presley (1935–1977). Many felt that the marriage was an attempt to improve his public image. In August 1996 Jackson and Presley divorced. In November 1996 Jackson announced that he was to be a father. The child’s mother was Debbie Rowe, a long-time friend of Jackson. They married later that month in Sydney, Australia. On February 13, 1997, their son, Prince Michael Jackson, Jr., was born in Los Angeles, California. The couple’s second child, daughter Paris Michael Katherine Jackson, was born in 1998. Rowe filed for divorce from Jackson in October 1999.

Jackson and his brothers were elected to the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame in Cleveland, Ohio, in 1997. Later that year another album, *Blood on the Dance Floor: HIStory in the Mix*, containing new versions of songs from *HIStory* along with five new songs, was released. The album received good reviews, and the world continued to be fascinated by the talent and career of Michael Jackson.

In 2000 Jackson’s promoter sued him for \$21.2 million for backing out of two planned concerts the previous New Year’s Eve. In 2001 Jackson, while delivering a lecture at Oxford University in England to promote his Heal the Kids charity, described his unhappy child-

hood and proposed a “bill of rights” for children that would provide for the right to an education “without having to dodge bullets.” Later that year Jackson was again elected to the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame, this time as a solo performer. Jackson also released a new album, *Invincible*, in October 2001.

For More Information

- Grant, Adrian. *Michael Jackson: The Visual Documentary*. New York: Omnibus Press, 1994.
- Graves, Karen Marie. *Michael Jackson*. San Diego, CA: Lucent Books, 2001.
- Jackson, Michael. *Moonwalk*. New York: Doubleday, 1988.
- Marsh, Dave. *Trapped: Michael Jackson and the Crossover Dream*. New York: Bantam, 1985.
- Nicholson, Lois. *Michael Jackson*. New York: Chelsea House, 1994.
- Wallner, Rosemary. *Michael Jackson: Music's Living Legend*. Edina, MN: Abdo & Daughters, 1991.

REGGIE JACKSON

Born: May 18, 1946

Wyncote, Pennsylvania

African American baseball player

Baseball great Reggie Jackson was inducted into the Baseball Hall of Fame in 1993. Jackson's hard-hitting, fast-footed style helped him lead two teams to five World Championships in only seven

years. Jackson made headlines with his self-centered remarks, hot temper, and colorful manner.

The beginnings

Reginald Martinez Jackson was born on May 18, 1946, in Wyncote, Pennsylvania, to Martinez and Clara Jackson. Jackson was one of six children of African American and Spanish descent. When his parents divorced, young Jackson moved with two of his siblings to live with his father in Cheltenham, Pennsylvania. Although his father always provided food for the family, Jackson recalls that they often “felt poverty.” His father, a tailor and a dry cleaner, was once a semi-pro baseball player in the Negro leagues, and he was largely responsible for inspiring and encouraging his talented son to pursue a career in baseball.

Education and a career with the Athletics

Jackson was an all-star athlete in track, on the football team, in basketball, and in baseball by the time he entered his senior year at Cheltenham High School. Reggie accepted a scholarship from Arizona State University. In his sophomore year he was chosen to the All-American first team in baseball. His performance caught the attention of Charles O. Finley, owner of the Kansas City Athletics, who offered Jackson a \$95,000 bonus. He left college after his sophomore year and entered the world of professional baseball.

In 1968 Jackson moved with the Athletics to their new home in Oakland, California. In his first full season in the majors he hit 29 home runs and drove in another 74 runs. But he also made a dozen outfield errors and struck out a near record-breaking 171 times.

JACKSON, REGGIE



Reggie Jackson.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

The following season, in 1969, he again held a record number of strikeouts with 142, but he hit a fantastic 47 home runs and led the American League in scoring with 123 runs.

Trouble at home and on the field

After the end of that season Jackson's performance declined. The increasing pressures of trying to keep up with his own home-run pace, as well as troubles in his marriage to wife Jenni, contributed to his temporary decline. Further, he failed to bargain successfully with Finley for a high increase in pay. His average and his homers dropped and his continued poor perform-

ance caused him to be benched for a portion of that season.

In the winter of 1970 and 1971 Jackson went to Santurce, Puerto Rico, to work with Frank Robinson. Robinson, a veteran player-manager, helped Jackson to improve his play. Robinson's tutoring helped him to work on his aggressive playing style while keeping his temper under control.

Jackson bounces back

The following season Jackson bounced back. He helped lead the Athletics to the American League Western Division title in 1971 with 32 home runs. In 1972 the Athletics won the title again. In the playoffs the Athletics beat the Detroit Tigers, with Jackson sliding into home plate to score the winning run in the final game. But he tore a muscle in one of his legs, which forced him to sit out of the World Series. Jackson watched as the Athletics defeated the Cincinnati Reds.

Voted the American League's Most Valuable Player (MVP) in 1973, Jackson batted .293 and led the league with 32 home runs. That year the team went on to win the World Series over the New York Mets. Leading the league in runs, he was chosen MVP in the World Series.

Leaves the Oakland Athletics

The Athletics won the World Series in 1974, defeating the Los Angeles Dodgers, with Jackson hitting 29 homers for the season. Finally, in 1975, after winning the American League Western Division title, Jackson ended his nine-year career with the Athletics. Finley traded Jackson to the Baltimore Orioles and he stayed with them for one season.

In 1977 Jackson signed a five-year contract as a free agent with the New York Yankees for \$300,000 a year. Once again he led his team to a World Series championship. The night of October 18, 1977, was one of Jackson's greatest triumphs. In that game, he became only the second player in history to hit three home runs in one game. In the entire series, he hit five home runs, a World Series record. Jackson was named MVP of the World Series that fall. He followed that spectacular season with a second World Series win against the Dodgers in 1978. His walloping World Series hitting earned him the title "Mr. October," as he could always be counted on to pull his team to victory in the Fall Classic.

The Yankees won the American League pennant in 1981. Jackson hit his tenth and final World Series home run that year. The California Angels signed Jackson in 1982, and he reached the 500-homer mark in 1984. Jackson returned to the Athletics in 1987 and retired at the end of the season. He placed sixth on the all-time major league career home run list, with 563 home runs during his twenty-one-year baseball career.

Retirement

After retiring Jackson worked briefly as a sports broadcaster for the Angels before moving on to coach for the Athletics. He then took a job with the Upper Deck Company, handling sales of trading cards and sports collectibles. On August 1, 1993, Reggie Jackson became the 216th inductee into the Baseball Hall of Fame. His achievements run to both extremes: ten World Series home runs; five World Championships; eleven American League Championships with three different

teams; along with holding the major league record for lifetime strikeouts at 2,597.

The Yankees retired Jackson's number "44" baseball uniform. During the summer of 1993, Jackson returned to the Yankees as a special assistant and advisor to the general partners. Jackson continued his work in California for the trading card company, and he was made director of new business at a California-based computer company for which he was already a spokesman. He is also an avid car collector and runs a charity called the Mr. October Foundation for Kids. He has one daughter, Kimberly.

For More Information

Allen, Maury. *Mr. October: The Reggie Jackson Story*. New York: Times Books, 1981.

Jackson, Reggie. *Reggie: The Autobiography*. New York: Villard Books, 1984.

Libby, Bill. *The Reggie Jackson Story*. New York: Lothrop, Lee & Shepard, 1979.

Macht, Norman L. *Reggie Jackson*. New York: Chelsea House, 1994.

P. D.
JAMES

Born: August 3, 1920

Oxford, England

English author

Although British author P. D. James writes in the tradition of the British crime storyteller, because her stories also explore relationships, motivations



P. D. James.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

(reasons for behavior), and meanings of justice, some people think of her more as novelist than a mystery writer.

Early years

P. D. James was born Phyllis Dorothy James on August 3, 1920, in Oxford, England, the oldest of three children. Her parents, Sidney Victor, a tax official, and Dorothy May (Hone) James, moved to Cambridge, England, where Phyllis attended the Cambridge High School for Girls. Phyllis liked Cambridge and even used the city as the location for one of her books, *An Unsuitable Job for a Woman*.

Phyllis had to leave school at age sixteen to work. The family did not have much money and her father did not believe in higher education for girls. Dorothy worked in a tax office for three years. Later she found a job as an assistant stage manager for a theater group. In 1941 she married Ernest Connor Bantry White, an army doctor, and had two daughters, Claire and Jane.

When White returned from World War II (1939–45; a war fought mostly in Europe that pitted the Soviet Union, Great Britain, and the United States against Germany, Italy, and Japan), he suffered from a mental illness and was not able to get a job. James was forced to provide for the whole family until her husband's death in 1964. James studied hospital administration (management), and from 1949 to 1968 she worked for a hospital board in London, England.

Early novels

James was in her early forties when her first novel, *Cover Her Face*, was published in 1962. Her personal and professional experience helped to develop her powers of observation and thought. These aided her in both her description of police detective work and her portrayal of characters.

In 1968 James passed an examination that qualified her for a government job. She eventually worked in the Crime Department (1972–79) in London.

James's work served as a basis for her novels, giving them backgrounds for both medical and police procedures (official ways of working). The settings of several of her mysteries, including *A Mind to Murder* (1962), *Shroud for a Nightingale* (1971), and *Death of an Expert*

Witness (1977), are in medicine-related locations. In all of these novels she is just as interested in examining the relationships among people as she is in telling a mystery story.

James wrote some of her works in the tradition of the British crime storyteller as represented by such authors as Dorothy L. Sayers (1893–1957) and Agatha Christie (1891–1976). These are stories that have sometimes been referred to as “polite mysteries.” However, James also wrote about motivations, explored relationships between people, examined ideas about guilt and innocence, and questioned both the legal system and religion.

Experimentation with the mystery form

James’s work is distinguished (special) not only for its quality of plot, setting, and character, but also for its experimentation with the mystery form. Her first novel, *Cover Her Face* (1962), is similar to the stories written by Agatha Christie and Dorothy L. Sayers, but James began to experiment with new plots and new types of characters. She has written about questions of social privilege (special rights), politics, aesthetics (the theory of beauty and art), and theology (the study of religion). In her novel *The Children of Men* (1993) she experimented with science fiction.

Because James brought such new ideas to the mystery story, many people have chosen to classify James not as a crime author, but as a novelist. James herself says that she uses the detective story to comment on men, women, and society. In an interview published in the *New York Times* in 1986, she said that she would “sacrifice . . . the detective element” in her work if it would make a better novel.

Some critics are unhappy with James’s concern with the psychology (the science of

how the mind works) of her characters. These people would rather have a book that simply tells a basic detective story and gives the solution.

Even so, the qualities condemned by one group are prized by another. James is well respected and she has received many awards for her literary achievements.

Main characters

Most of James’s books involve one of two characters: Adam Dalgliesh, a police inspector in Scotland Yard (London’s police headquarters) and a published poet; and Cordelia Gray, a young private detective introduced in *An Unsuitable Job for a Woman* (1972). In addition to their own individual mysteries, Dalgliesh and Gray appear together in some of the books.

James today

To date P. D. James has published fourteen books and many short stories. She was awarded the Order of the British Empire (OBE) in 1983 and was made a baroness in 1991. She also served on the governor’s board of the British Broadcasting Company (BBC). She continues to have loyal fans who enjoy both a good mystery and a well-written novel.

For More Information

Gidez, Richard B. *P. D. James*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1986.

James, P. D. *Time to Be in Earnest: A Fragment of Autobiography*. New York: Knopf, 2000.

Siebenheller, Norma. *P. D. James*. New York: Ungar, 1981.

THOMAS JEFFERSON

Born: April 13, 1743

Shadwell, Virginia

Died: July 4, 1826

Monticello, Virginia

American president, philosopher, and statesman

The American philosopher and statesman Thomas Jefferson was the first secretary of state, the second vice president, and the third president of the United States. As president, Jefferson successfully negotiated, or bargained for the terms of, the Louisiana Purchase, which nearly doubled the country's size. A man of broad interests and activity, Jefferson remains an inspiration, for both his political accomplishments and his vision for America.

Young Jefferson

Thomas Jefferson was born in Shadwell, Virginia, on April 13, 1743. His father had been among the earliest settlers in this wilderness country, and his position of leadership transferred to his oldest son, along with five thousand acres of land. Jefferson became one of the best-educated Americans of his time. At the age of seventeen he entered the College of William and Mary, where he got exciting first glimpses of "the expansion of science, and of the system of things in which we are placed." He read widely in the law, in the sciences, and in both ancient and modern history, philosophy, and literature.

Jefferson was admitted to the bar, or an association for lawyers, in 1767 and established a successful practice. When the Amer-

ican Revolution (1795–83) forced him to abandon his practice in 1774, he turned these legal skills to the rebel cause. Jefferson's public career began in 1769, when he served as a representative in the Virginia House of Burgesses, the nation's first elected body of government. About this time, he began building Monticello. Perched on a wooded summit, the lovely home would become a lifelong occupation. Monticello, like the many other buildings Jefferson designed over the years, was an original, personal creation.

His philosophy

Jefferson rose to fame as an effective spokesman during the American Revolution, and his political thought would become the centerpiece of liberalism, or a movement to develop freedoms, in America. In challenging the British Empire, Americans like Jefferson came to recognize their claims to an independent nation.

Jefferson's most important contribution to the revolutionary debate was "A Summary View of the Rights of British America" (1774). He argued that Americans possessed the same natural rights to govern themselves as their ancestors had exercised when they moved to England from Germany. Writings like Jefferson's, began to stir support for a revolution. Soon there would be no way of avoiding war with Great Britain.

The Declaration of Independence

The Revolutionary War (1775–83) had begun by the time Jefferson took his seat in the Second Continental Congress in Philadelphia in June 1775. The Congress brought together many of America's prominent political figures of the time. It was chiefly as a legislative drafts-

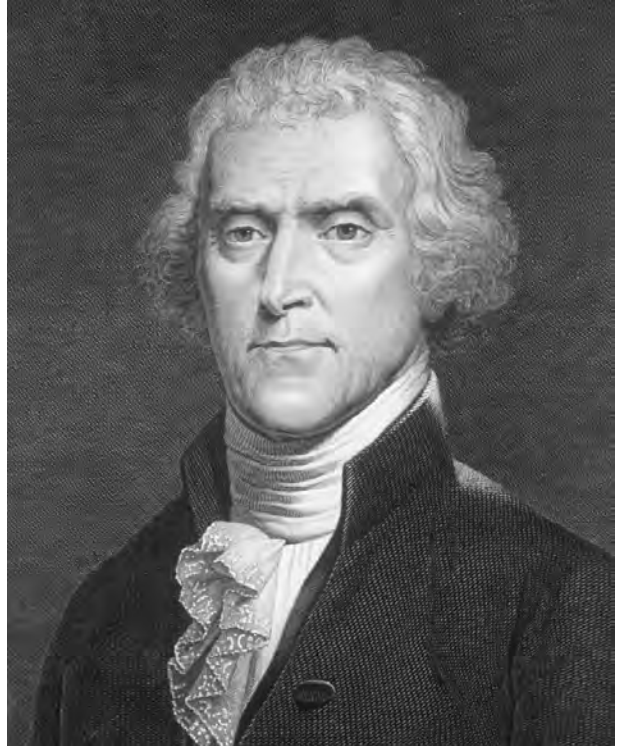
man, or legal writer, that Jefferson would make his mark, with his great work being the Declaration of Independence. Signed by most parties on July 4, 1776, the Declaration of Independence formally announced that the American colonies were separating from Great Britain. In June 1776 Jefferson was surprised to find himself at the head of the committee to prepare this paper. He submitted a draft to John Adams (1735–1826) and Benjamin Franklin (1706–1790), who suggested only minor changes.

Although many changes were made in the end, the declaration that emerged on July 4 bore the unmistakable stamp of Thomas Jefferson. The Declaration of Independence clearly set forth the problems with British rule and expressed a political philosophy and a national faith in only one paragraph. Here, for the first time in history, ideas were laid as the foundation of a nation. Natural equality, the inalienable (or not able to be taken away) rights of man, the freedom of the people, the right of revolution—these ideas gave the American Revolution high purpose.

In Virginia

Jefferson became Virginia's governor in June 1779 as the Revolutionary War had entered a new phase. The British decision to attack in the South would, if successful, have made Virginia the critical battleground. Jefferson struggled against huge odds to aid the southern army in defending its territory from the invading British.

Early in 1781 the British invaded Virginia from the coast, slashed through to Richmond, and put the government to flight. In May, General Charles Cornwallis (1738–1805) marched his army of British



Thomas Jefferson.
Courtesy of the National Portrait Gallery.

soldiers into Virginia, and the government moved to the safer city of Charlottesville, Virginia. The Redcoats, or British soldiers, followed, and Jefferson was chased from Monticello.

Wounded by the criticism of his retreat, Jefferson decided to quit public service. A series of personal setbacks, including his wife's death in September 1782, plunged him into gloom. It appeared the life he had sought in his family, farms, and books was suddenly out of reach. That November he eagerly accepted congressional appointment to the peace commission in Paris. He never sailed, however, and wound up in Congress instead.

Service in Congress

In Congress, from November 1783 to the following May, Jefferson laid the foundations of national policy in several areas. He drafted the first regulation of government for the western territory, where free and equal states would be created out of the wilderness. Jefferson also took a leading part in creating foreign policy. The American economy rested on foreign commerce, but only France was open to trade with America. In 1784 he was appointed to a three-man commission (with Adams and Franklin) to negotiate treaties of commerce with the other European powers. He then replaced Franklin as the representative to France and spent the next five years in Europe.

On Jefferson's return to America in 1789, President George Washington (1732–1799) appointed him secretary of state. For the next three years he was chiefly engaged in fruitless negotiations with the European powers. With Spain he sought to secure free navigation of the Mississippi River through Spanish territory to the Gulf of Mexico. With Britain he sought the removal of English troops from the Northwest and settlement of issues left over from the peace treaty.

Developing political parties

By 1793, relations between the Federalist and Republican parties worsened. When war erupted between France and Britain in 1793, the opposing views of the parties toward these nations threatened American peace. Jefferson attempted to use American neutrality. As a neutral country, the nation would support neither side during the war. By doing this he hoped to force cooperation from Britain and to improve relations between the nations of the Western world.

Soon relations with France grew poor and severely damaged Jefferson's political system.

Jefferson gave up his post at the end of 1793, again determined to quit public life. But in 1796 the Republicans made him their presidential candidate against John Adams. Losing by only a slim margin, Jefferson became vice president.

President of the United States

Republicans doubled their efforts to elect the "man of the people" in the unusually bitter campaign of 1800. Jefferson topped Adams in the election and became president on March 4, 1801, in the new national capital, Washington, D.C. In his inaugural address, or speech after being sworn in as president, Jefferson brilliantly summed up the Republican ideas and appealed for harmony among all political parties.

Reform, or improving American society, was the order of the day. Working effectively with Congress, Jefferson restored freedom of the press, scaled down the army and the navy, ended all internal taxes, and began paying off the national debt. The Jeffersonian reformation was based on the economic plans of the government by reducing the means and powers of government. The reformation sought to further peace, equality, and individual freedoms, and to help solidify the American way of life.

The president's greatest triumph came in foreign affairs. When Spain turned over Louisiana and the port of New Orleans to France in 1800, this action posed a serious threat to American security. Jefferson skillfully managed this crisis with the Louisiana Purchase (1803), in which America gained an uncharted region of some 800,000 square

miles, doubling the nation's size, for \$11.25 million. Even before the treaty was signed, Jefferson planned an expedition to explore this country. The legendary Lewis and Clark expedition (led by Meriwether Lewis [1774–1809] and William Clark [1770–1838]) explored the rugged land gained in the Louisiana Purchase, and the expedition became a spectacular product of Jefferson's vision of westward expansion.

The second term

Easily reelected in 1804, Jefferson soon encountered troubles at home and overseas. His relations with Congress weakened as Republicans quarreled among themselves. Especially damaging was when former Republican leader John Randolph (1773–1833) and former vice president Aaron Burr (1756–1836) mounted a revolt in the west. But Jefferson crushed this and, with difficulty, maintained control of Congress.

With tension between America and France reaching a boiling point, Jefferson avoided war by installing an embargo, or a suspension of trade, in December 1807. On the whole, the embargo was effectively enforced and reasonably successful, but the mounting costs at home led to its reversal by Congress near the end of Jefferson's presidency.

Active retirement

In retirement Jefferson became the "Sage of Monticello." He maintained a large correspondence (wrote letters) and remained interested in a broad variety of intellectual pursuits. Unfinished business from the Revolution drew his attention, such as revision of the Virginia constitution and the gradual emancipation, or freedom, of slaves. Jef-

erson was the master planner of the University of Virginia in all its parts, from the grounds and buildings to the university rules, teachers, and subjects taught. He died at Monticello on the fiftieth anniversary of American independence, July 4, 1826.

Jefferson remains a major figure in the development of the United States. His accomplishments, both large and small, and his beliefs, both political and personal, remain inspiring to Americans, especially through his masterpiece, the Declaration of Independence.

For More Information

Bober, Natalie. *Thomas Jefferson: Man on a Mountain*. New York: Atheneum, 1988. Reprint, New York: Aladdin Paperbacks, 1997.

Bruns, Roger, ed. *Thomas Jefferson*. New York: Chelsea House, 1986.

Ferris, Jeri. *Thomas Jefferson: Father of Liberty*. Minneapolis, MN: Carolrhoda Books, 1998.

Malone, Dumas. *Jefferson and His Time*. 4 vols. Boston: Little, Brown, 1948–1970.

Nardo, Don. *Thomas Jefferson*. San Diego: Lucent Books, 1993.

Old, Wendie C. *Thomas Jefferson*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.

MAE
JEMISON

Born: October 17, 1956

Decatur, Alabama

African American physician and astronaut

Mae Jemison, a doctor, was the first African American woman to be selected for the National Aeronautic and Space Administration's (NASA's) astronaut training program and was the first African American woman to travel in space.

Early life and education

Mae Carol Jemison was born on October 17, 1956, in Decatur, Alabama, the youngest child of Charlie Jemison, a roofer and carpenter, and Dorothy (Green) Jemison, an elementary school teacher. Her parents were supportive and encouraging of all of their children's talents and abilities; Jemison's sister, Ada Jemison Bullock, became a child psychiatrist, and her brother, Charles Jemison, became a real estate broker. The family moved to Chicago, Illinois, when Jemison was three to take advantage of better educational opportunities there.

Throughout her early school years, Jemison spent many hours in her school library reading about all subjects related to science, especially astronomy. From a young age she was interested in space travel. During her time at Morgan Park High School, however, she became interested in pursuing a career in engineering. When she graduated in 1973 as an honor student, she entered Stanford University on a National Achievement Scholarship.

Jemison pursued a double major at Stanford, and in 1977 she received a bachelor's degree in chemical engineering and in African and Afro-American Studies. Just as she had been in high school, Jemison was very involved in outside activities, including dance and theater productions, and she served as head of the Black Student Union. Upon graduation she entered Cornell Univer-

sity Medical College to work toward a medical degree.

During her years at Cornell, Jemison found time to expand her horizons by visiting and studying in Cuba and Kenya and working at a Cambodian refugee camp in Thailand. When she obtained her degree in medicine in 1981, she received her on-the-job training at Los Angeles County/University of Southern California Medical Center and later established a general practice. For the next two and a half years, she was the area Peace Corps medical officer for Sierra Leone and Liberia, where she also taught and did medical research.

Following a dream

After her return to the United States in 1985, Jemison made a career change and decided to follow a dream she had had for a long time. In October of that year she applied for admission to NASA's astronaut training program. The selection process was delayed after the explosion of the space shuttle *Challenger* in January 1986, but when she reapplied a year later, Jemison was one of fifteen candidates chosen from a field of about two thousand. She became the first African American woman ever admitted into the astronaut training program.

After more than a year of training, Jemison became an astronaut with the title of science-mission specialist, a job that would make her responsible for conducting crew-related scientific experiments on the space shuttle. On September 12, 1992, with six other astronauts, Jemison flew into space aboard the *Endeavour* on mission STS-47. During her eight days in space, she conducted weightlessness and motion sickness experiments on the

crew and on herself before returning to Earth on September 20. Following her historic flight, Jemison noted that society should recognize how much both women and members of other minority groups can contribute if given the opportunity.

Honors and new challenges

In recognition of her accomplishments, Jemison received the 1988 Essence Science and Technology Award, was named Gamma Sigma Gamma Woman of the Year in 1990, received the Ebony Black Achievement Award in 1992, and received a Montgomery Fellowship from Dartmouth College in 1993. Also in 1992 a public school in Detroit, Michigan—the Mae C. Jemison Academy—was named after her. Jemison is a member of the American Medical Association, the American Chemical Society, and the American Association for the Advancement of Science, and she served on the Board of Directors of the World Sickle Cell Foundation from 1990 to 1992. She is also a committee member of the American Express Geography Competition and a board member of the Center for the Prevention of Childhood Malnutrition.

After leaving the astronaut corps in March 1993, Jemison established the Jemison Group, a company that seeks to research, develop, and market advanced technologies (scientific ways of achieving a practical purpose). She is also a professor at Dartmouth College, where she started the Jemison Institute for Advancing Technology in Developing Countries. Jemison also created The Earth We Share, a science camp for twelve- to sixteen-year-olds that helps improve students' problem-solving skills. She remains a popu-



Mae Jemison.

Courtesy of U.S. National Aeronautics and Space Administration.

lar public speaker, and in 2001 her autobiography, *Find Where the Wind Goes: Moments from My Life*, was published.

For More Information

Gelletly, LeeAnne. *Mae Jemison*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

Jemison, Mae. *Find Where the Wind Goes: Moments from My Life*. New York: Scholastic, 2001.

Yannuzzi, Della A. *Mae Jemison: A Space Biography*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1998.

JESUS OF NAZARETH

Born: 4 B.C.E.

Bethlehem, Judea

Died: c. 29 C.E.

Jerusalem, Judea

Judean religious leader

Jesus of Nazareth, also known as Jesus Christ, was the central personality and founder of the Christian faith.

Early years

Jesus first came to general attention at the time of his baptism (religious ritual performed shortly after a child's birth), just prior to his public ministry. He was known to those around him as a carpenter of Nazareth, a town in Galilee, and as the son of Joseph (John 6:42). Matthew and Luke report that Jesus was born in Bethlehem, famous in Jewish history as the city of David. They further report that he was miraculously (something that occurs that cannot be explained by nature's laws) born to the Virgin Mary, although they both curiously trace his kinship to David through Joseph, to whom Mary was engaged. It is likely that Jesus was born not later than 4 B.C.E., the year of King Herod's death. (The term Christ is actually a title, not a proper name; it comes from the Greek *Christos*, meaning the anointed, or the one chosen by God; in the Bible it is the Greek equivalent for the Hebrew word *Messiah*.)

Little is known of Jesus' childhood and youth. The letters of Paul are the earliest biblical records that tell about Jesus. But the four biblical Gospels by Matthew, Mark, Luke,

and John, although written later, used sources that in some cases go back very close to the time of Jesus. But about the year 28 or 29 C.E. his life interacted with the career of John the Baptist. Jesus heard John's preaching and joined the crowds for baptism in the Jordan River. Following his baptism Jesus went into the desert for prayer and reflection.

Galilean ministry

Returning from the desert, Jesus began preaching and teaching in Galilee. His initial declaration was both frightening and hopeful. It told people not to cling to the past, that God would overthrow old institutions and ways of life for a wonderful new future. This future would be especially welcomed by the poor, the powerless, and the peacemakers.

Jesus attracted twelve disciples to follow him. They were mainly fishermen and common workers. Of the twelve it seems that Peter, James, and John were closest to Jesus. Peter's home in Capernaum, a city on the Sea of Galilee, became a headquarters from which Jesus and the disciples moved out into the countryside. Sometimes he talked to large crowds, with the twelve to teach only them, or he might go off by himself for long periods of prayer.

The miracles

The records concerning Jesus report many miracles (an event that goes against the laws of nature and has suggested divine influence). For centuries most people in civilizations influenced by the Bible not only believed literally in the miracles but took them as proof that Jesus had supernatural (something that is not normal, possibly with a spiritual influence) power. Then, in an age

of reason and distrust, men often doubted the miracles and exposed the reports as dishonest. However, usually the Gospels report the healings as signs of the power of God and His coming kingdom.

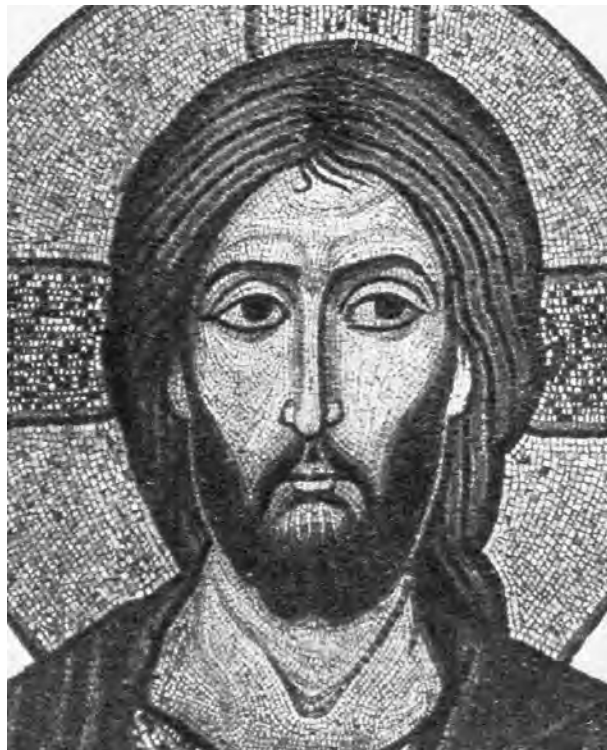
Teachings of Jesus

Jesus taught people in small groups or large gatherings; his lessons are reported in friendly conversations or in arguments with those who challenged him. At times he made a particularly vivid comment in the midst of a dramatic incident.

The starting point of Jesus' message, as already noted, was the announcement of the coming of the kingdom of God. Since this kingdom was neither a geographical area nor a system of government, a better translation may be "God's reign" (God being in existence everywhere).

The rest of Jesus' teaching followed from this message about the reign of God. At times he taught in stories or parables that described the kingdom or the behavior of people who acknowledged God's reign. At times he pronounced moral commandments detailing the demands upon men of a loving and righteous God. At times Jesus taught his disciples to pray: the words that he gave them in the Lord's Prayer are often used today.

To some people Jesus was a teacher, or rabbi. The healing ministry did not necessarily change that impression of him because other rabbis were known as healers. But Jesus was a teacher of peculiar power, and he was sometimes thought to be a prophet (a person who tells of things that have been made known to him or her by a divine power).



Jesus of Nazareth.

Passion week

On the day now known as Palm Sunday, Jesus entered Jerusalem, while his disciples and the crowds hailed him as the Son of David, who came in the name of the Lord. The next day Jesus went to the Temple and drove out the money-changers and those who sold pigeons for sacrifices, accusing them of turning "a house of prayer" into a "den of robbers." This act was a direct challenge to the small group of priests who were in charge of the Temple, and they clearly took offense to it. During the following days he entered into disagreements with the priests and teachers of religion. Their anger led them to plot to get rid of him, but they hesitated to

do anything in the daytime, since many people were gathered for the feast of Passover (a Jewish religious holiday).

On Thursday night Jesus had a meal with his disciples. This meal is now re-enacted by Christians in the Lord's Supper, the Mass, or the Holy Communion. After the meal Jesus went to the Garden of Gethsemane, where he prayed alone. His prayer shows that he expected a conflict, that he still hoped he might avoid suffering, but he expected to do God's will. There into the garden one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, led the priests and the temple soldiers, who seized Jesus.

That same night Jesus' captors took him to a trial before the temple court, the Sanhedrin. Much evidence indicates that this was an illegal trial, but the Sanhedrin declared that Jesus was a blasphemer (a person who claims to be God or godlike) deserving death. Since at that time only the Roman overlords (supreme lords) could carry out a death sentence, the priests took Jesus to Pilate, the Roman governor of Judea.

Pilate apparently was reluctant to convict Jesus, since it was doubtful Jesus had disobeyed any Roman laws. Jesus, however, represented a threat to both the Sanhedrin and the Romans. Pilate thus ordered the crucifixion of Jesus. Roman soldiers beat him, put a crown of thorns on his head, and mocked him as a false king. Then they took him to the hill Golgotha ("the Skull"), or Calvary, and killed him. Pilate ordered a sign placed above his head: "King of the Jews." Jesus died and that same day (now known as Good Friday) was buried in a cave-like tomb.

The Resurrection

On Sunday morning (now celebrated as Easter), the Gospels report, Jesus rose from the

dead and met his disciples. Others immediately rejected the claim of the resurrection, and the debate has continued through the centuries.

The New Testament states very clearly that the risen Christ did not appear to everybody. Among those who saw Jesus were Cephas (Peter), the twelve disciples, "more than five hundred brethren at one time," James, and finally Paul. Other records tell of appearances to Mary Magdalene and other women and of a variety of meetings with the disciples. The four Gospels all say that the tomb of Jesus was empty on Easter morning. None of the records ever tells of an appearance of the risen Christ to anyone who had not been a follower of Jesus or (like Paul) had not been deeply disturbed by him.

The evidence is very clear that the followers of Jesus were absolutely convinced of his resurrection. The experience of the risen Jesus was so overwhelming that it turned their despair into courage. The disciples spread the conviction that he had risen, and they continued to tell their story at the cost of persecution and death. The faith in the resurrection (and later the rising up to the kingdom of God) of Jesus, despite differences in interpretation and detail, is a major reason for the rise and spread of the Christian faith.

For More Information

Crossan, John Dominic. *Jesus: A Revolutionary Biography*. San Francisco: HarperSan Francisco, 1994.

Grimbol, William R. *The Complete Idiot's Guide to the Life of Christ*. Indianapolis: Alpha Books, 2001.

Guardini, Romano. *The Lord*. Chicago: Regnery, 1954. Reprint, Washington, DC: Regnery, 1996.

Harik, Ramsay M. *Jesus of Nazareth: Teacher and Prophet*. New York: Franklin Watts, 2001.

Oursler, Fulton. *The Greatest Story Ever Told; a Tale of the Greatest Life Ever Lived*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1949. Reprint, Boston: G. K. Hall, 1979.

Pastva, Loretta. *Jesus of Nazareth: The Mystery Revealed*. Mission Hills, CA: Benziger, 1992.

JIANG ZEMIN

Born: August 17, 1926

Yangzhou City, Jiangsu Province, China

Chinese political leader

Hand picked by Deng Xiaoping (1904–1997) to be built up as China's future leader, Jiang Zemin became general secretary of the Chinese Communist Party in 1989.

Early years

Jiang Zemin was born on August 17, 1926, in Yangzhou city, Jiangsu Province, a small town on the banks of the Chang River west of Shanghai, China. Jiang's father and uncle were educated men and his grandfather was a well-known painter who also practiced Chinese medicine. His father was a Communist (a person who supports a political system in which goods and services are owned and distributed by the government) and was most likely killed by Chinese

Nationalists during the civil war that tore apart China for nearly twenty years. Jiang joined the Chinese Communist Party (CCP) in 1946 and graduated from the electrical machinery department of Jiaotong University in Shanghai the following year.

After the Communists took power in China in 1949, Jiang assumed several positions in Shanghai including the CCP committee secretary. In 1955 Jiang was sent to work as a trainee at the Stalin Automobile Factory in Moscow. After returning to China the following year, his career advanced steadily as an engineer and under the First Ministry of the Machine-Building Industry. From 1971 to 1979 he was appointed deputy director, later director, of the Foreign Affairs Bureau under the same ministry.

In 1982 Jiang was elected a member of the CCP Central Committee at the twelfth party congress. After 1985, Jiang's career improved greatly as he returned to Shanghai as its deputy party secretary, later secretary and mayor. In 1987 he entered the Politburo (top part of the Communist party) at the thirteenth CCP congress.

Positions under Deng Xiaoping

In June 1989, in the aftermath of the Tiananmen Square massacre, where hundreds of pro-democracy student protesters were killed by police forces, Jiang was appointed by Deng Xiaoping to the position of general secretary of the CCP. In November 1989 Jiang also took over the chairmanship of the Central Military Commission when Deng stepped down. Like Deng Xiaoping, Jiang supported economic reform (improvements), but did little where political reform was concerned.

After Jiang became party general secretary, he faithfully followed the new party line. For example, he blamed hostile outside forces for China's domestic political problems in the late 1980s. Likewise, he put a renewed emphasis on Communist loyalty over selecting and promoting party officials. He was prominently quoted in a *People's Daily* front-page commentary on June 24, 1990, as saying, "In choosing people, in assigning people, in educating people, we must take a revolutionary outlook as the prerequisite [required experience] to insure that party and government leaders at every level are loyal to Marxism." (Marxism, based on the ideas of Karl Marx [1818–1893] is the basis for communism.)

After Deng Xiaoping

Xiaoping officially retired in 1989, the same year of the Tiananmen Square massacre. Jiang did not have a base of support within the party or the army, and in 1990 still lacked leadership stature. But through his work as chairman of the CCP's Central Military Commission, Jiang eventually gained support and was named president of China in 1993.

Business ventures in China widened the class gap and only worsened the Chinese economy. In the 1990s, urban areas began experiencing increased crime and revolutionary groups sprang up. In the autumn of 1994, a militant group placed explosives on train tracks, derailing a train carrying troops from China's 13th Army. The explosion killed 170 and injured 190 people. Moreover, China's relationship with the rest of the world grew increasingly strained with widespread reports of human rights abuses, including prison labor and political imprisoning.

In April 1996, in an attempt to reestablish law and order, Jiang launched an anticrime drive, known as "Strike Hard" (Yanda in Chinese). Within six months Strike Hard had resulted in more than 160 thousand arrests and more than one thousand executions. Though many were critical of these actions, the government claimed it was well received by the Chinese citizens who were alarmed by the rising crime statistics. Jiang is also known for reclaiming the British colony of Hong Kong and attempting to convince Taiwan to follow.

In the spring of 2001, China-U.S. relations reached a fevered pitch, when a U.S. spy plane collided with a Chinese fighter jet. The U.S. plane was forced to land in China where the aircraft (loaded with highly secretive spy technology) and its crew were detained for eleven days. On July 18, 2001, Jiang met with Russian leader Vladimir Putin (1952–) in a summit (meeting) aimed at improving Russo-Chinese relations and slowing the United States' global influence. The two sides signed a statement to reduce missile defense, and improve trade between the two countries.

For More Information

- Chang, Parris H. "The Power Game in Beijing." *The World & I* (October 1989).
- Feigon, Lee. *China Rising: The Meaning of Tiananmen*. 1990.
- Gilley, Bruce. *Tiger on the Brink: Jiang Zemin and China's New Elite*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1998.
- Lam, Willy Wo-Lap. *The Era of Jiang Zemin*. New York: Prentice Hall, 1999.
- Mu, Yi, and Mark V. Thompson. *Crises at Tiananmen: Reform and Reality in Modern China*. 1990.

JOAN OF ARC

Born: c. 1412

Domrémy, France

Died: May 30, 1431

Rouen, England

French heroine

The French national heroine Joan of Arc led a troop of French soldiers and served as a temporary focus of French resistance to English occupation in the last phase of the Hundred Years War (1339–1453), a war with England which caused severe hardship in France. Joan of Arc's place in history was finally solidified in the twentieth century when she was declared a saint.

A restless France

In 1392 the insanity of the French king, Charles VI (1368–1422), had begun the struggle between two factions (rival groups) to control the kingdom, the Burgundians and the Armagnacs. The leader of the Armagnacs, John the Fearless (1371–1419), Duke of Burgundy, finally assumed control, as both sides appealed for help to England. Henry V (1387–1422) of England invaded France in 1415 and delivered a shattering defeat upon the French. The English and Burgundians entered Paris in 1418, and the murder of John the Fearless in 1419 strengthened Burgundian hatred for the Armagnac faction.

In 1420 Charles VI, Henry V, and Philip the Good (1396–1467) of Burgundy agreed to the Treaty of Troyes. The treaty said that Henry was to act as regent, or acting ruler, for the mad Charles VI, marry Charles's daughter, then

inherit the throne of France upon Charles's death. The treaty thus disinherited Charles VI's son, Charles VII (1403–1461). In 1422 both Henry V and Charles VI died, leaving Henry VI, the infant son of Henry, as king of both kingdoms. Henry VI, through his regent, the Duke of Bedford, ruled unchallenged in Normandy and the Île-de France. In the autumn of 1428 the English attacked Orléans, the key city to Charles's land. Charles, lacking in men and money, could do nothing. By the spring of 1429 the city appeared about to fall and with it the hopes of Charles VII.

Early life

Joan was born to a peasant family in Domrémy, France, a small town near Vaucouleurs, the last town in the east still loyal to Charles VII. "As long as I lived at home," she said at her trial in 1431, "I worked at common tasks about the house, going but seldom afield with our sheep and other cattle. I learned to sew and spin: I fear no woman in Rouen at sewing and spinning."

Some time in 1425 Joan began to have visions—"When I was thirteen, I had a voice from God to help me govern myself." The voice was that of St. Michael, who, with St. Catherine and St. Margaret, "told me of the pitiful state of France, and told me that I must go to succor [assist] the King of France." Joan twice went to Robert de Baudricourt, the captain of Vaucouleurs, asking for armor, a horse, and an escort to Charles VII at Chinon, but her request was denied both times. However, Joan was both persistent and persuasive, and when she went to de Baudricourt a third time he granted her request. She set out in February 1429, arriving eleven days later at Chinon.

JOAN OF ARC



Joan of Arc.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Joan of Arc was once described: “This Maid . . . has a virile [man-like] bearing, speaks little, shows an admirable prudence [carefulness] in all her words. She has a pretty, woman’s voice, eats little, drinks very little wine; she enjoys riding a horse and takes pleasure in fine arms, greatly likes the company of noble fighting men, detests [dislikes] numerous assemblies and meetings, readily sheds copious [many] tears, has a cheerful face. . . .” Joan appears to have been robust, with dark brown hair, and, as one historian remarked, “in the excitement which raised her up from earth to heaven, she retained her solid common sense and a clear sense of reality.”

In April 1429 Charles VII sent her to Orléans as captain of a troop of men—not as leader of all his forces. With the Duke d’Alençon and Jean, the Bastard of Orléans (later Count of Dunois), Joan relieved the city, thus removing the greatest immediate threat to Charles and for the first time in his reign allowing him a military triumph.

Her mission

Although Charles VII appears to have accepted Joan’s mission, his attitude toward her, on the whole, is unclear. He followed her pressing advice to use the relief provided by the success of Orléans to proceed to his coronation (crowning ceremony) at Reims, thereby becoming king in the eyes of all men. Charles VII was crowned at Reims on July 18, 1429. Joan was at his side and occupied a visible place in the ceremonies following the coronation.

From the spring of 1429 to the spring of 1430, Charles and his advisers were undecided on the course of the war. Joan favored taking the military offensive against English positions, particularly Paris. An attack upon Paris in September 1429 failed, and Charles VII entered into a treaty with Burgundy that committed him to virtual inaction.

From September 1429 to the early months of 1430, Joan appears to have been kept inactive by the royal court, finally moving to the defense of the town of Compiègne in May 1430. During a small battle outside the town’s walls against the Burgundians, Joan was cut off and captured. She was a valuable prize. The Burgundians turned Joan over to the English, who prepared to try her for heresy, or having opinions that conflict with the beliefs of the church. Charles VII could do nothing.

The trial

Joan's trial was held in three parts. Technically it was an ecclesiastical (involving the church) trial for heresy (having religious beliefs that are against those held by the church), and Joan's judges were Pierre Cauchon (1371–1442), the bishop of Beauvais, and Jean Lemaitre, vicar of the inquisitor of France, or the religious assistant to the top judge in France. Both were aided by a large number of theologians (those that study religion) and lawyers who sat as a kind of consulting and advising jury.

From January to the end of March, the court investigated Joan's "case" and questioned witnesses. The trial itself lasted from April to nearly the end of May and ended with Joan's abjuration, or renouncing her faith. The trial was both an ecclesiastical one and a political one. Joan was charged with witchcraft and fraud, or a willful cheating. She was tested by being asked complicated theological (involving religious teachings) questions, and finally condemned (found guilty) on the grounds of persisting in wearing male clothing, a technical offense against the authority of the Church.

Joan's answers throughout the trial reveal her presence of mind, humility, wit, and good sense. Apparently Joan and her accusers differed about the nature of her abjuration, and two days after she signed it, she recanted, or withdrew her previous belief.

The third phase of her trial began on May 28. This time she was tried as a relapsed heretic, conviction of which meant "release" to the "secular arm," that is, she would be turned over to the English to be burned. Joan was convicted and she was burned at the stake in the marketplace of Rouen on May 30, 1431.

Rehabilitation and later legend

From 1450 to 1456 a reinvestigation of Joan's trial and condemnation was undertaken by ecclesiastical lawyers. On July 7, 1456, the commission declared Joan's trial null and void, thereby freeing Joan from the taint of heresy. The Joan of Arc legend, however, did not gather momentum until the seventeenth century. In spite of her legend, Joan was not canonized (declared a saint) until May 16, 1920.

For More Information

- Brooks, Polly Schoyer. *Beyond the Myth: The Story of Joan of Arc*. New York: Lippincott, 1990.
- Nash-Marshall, Siobhan. *Joan of Arc: A Spiritual Biography*. New York: Crossroad Pub., 1999.
- Pernoud, Régine. *Joan of Arc: Her Story*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1999.
- Sackville-West, Victoria Mary. *Saint Joan of Arc*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday Doran & Co., 1936. Reprint, New York: Grove Press, 2001.

STEVE JOBS

Born: February 24, 1955

San Francisco, California

American business executive, computer programmer, and entrepreneur

Computer designer and corporate executive Steve Jobs is cofounder of Apple Computers. With his vision of



Steve Jobs.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

affordable personal computers, he launched one of the largest industries of the past decades while still in his early twenties. He remains one of the most inventive and energetic minds in American technology.

Early life

Steven Jobs was born February 24, 1955, in San Francisco, California, and was adopted by Paul and Clara Jobs. He grew up with one sister, Patty. Paul Jobs was a machinist and fixed cars as a hobby. Jobs remembers his father as being very skilled at working with his hands.

In 1961 the family moved to Mountain View, California. This area, just south of Palo Alto, California, was becoming a center for electronics. Electronics form the basic elements of devices such as radios, televisions, stereos, and computers. At that time people started to refer to the area as “Silicon Valley.” This is because a substance called silicon is used in the manufacturing of electronic parts.

As a child, Jobs preferred doing things by himself. He swam competitively, but was not interested in team sports or other group activities. He showed an early interest in electronics and gadgetry. He spent a lot of time working in the garage workshop of a neighbor who worked at Hewlett-Packard, an electronics manufacturer.

Jobs also enrolled in the Hewlett-Packard Explorer Club. There he saw engineers demonstrate new products, and he saw his first computer at the age of twelve. He was very impressed, and knew right away that he wanted to work with computers.

While in high school Jobs attended lectures at the Hewlett-Packard plant. On one occasion he boldly asked William Hewlett (1931–2001), the president, for some parts he needed to complete a class project. Hewlett was so impressed he gave Jobs the parts, and offered him a summer internship at Hewlett-Packard.

College and travel

After graduating from high school in 1972, Jobs attended Reed College in Portland, Oregon, for two years. He dropped out after one semester to visit India and study eastern religions in the summer of 1974. In 1975 Jobs joined a group known as the

Homebrew Computer Club. One member, a technical whiz named Steve Wozniak (1950–), was trying to build a small computer. Jobs became fascinated with the marketing potential of such a computer. In 1976 he and Wozniak formed their own company. They called it Apple Computer Company, in memory of a happy summer Jobs had spent picking apples. They raised \$1,300 in start-up money by selling Jobs's microbus and Wozniak's calculator. At first they sold circuit boards (the boards that hold the internal components of a computer) while they worked on the computer prototype (sample).

Apple and the personal computer era

Jobs had realized there was a huge gap in the computer market. At that time almost all computers were mainframes. They were so large that one could fill a room, and so costly that individuals could not afford to buy them. Advances in electronics, however, meant that computer components were getting smaller and the power of the computer was increasing.

Jobs and Wozniak redesigned their computer, with the idea of selling it to individual users. The Apple II went to market in 1977, with impressive first year sales of \$2.7 million. The company's sales grew to \$200 million within three years. This was one of the most phenomenal cases of corporate growth in U.S. history. Jobs and Wozniak had opened an entirely new market—personal computers. Personal computers began an entirely new way of processing information.

By 1980 the personal computer era was well underway. Apple was continually forced to improve its products to remain ahead, as more competitors entered the marketplace. Apple introduced the Apple III, but the new

model suffered technical and marketing problems. It was withdrawn from the market, and was later reworked and reintroduced.

Jobs continued to be the marketing force behind Apple. Early in 1983 he unveiled the Lisa. It was designed for people possessing minimal computer experience. It did not sell well, however, because it was more expensive than personal computers sold by competitors. Apple's biggest competitor was International Business Machines (IBM). By 1983 it was estimated that Apple had lost half of its market share (part of an industry's sales that a specific company has) to IBM.

The Macintosh

In 1984 Apple introduced a revolutionary new model, the Macintosh. The on-screen display had small pictures called icons. To use the computer, the user pointed at an icon and clicked a button using a new device called a mouse. This process made the Macintosh very easy to use. The Macintosh did not sell well to businesses, however. It lacked features other personal computers had, such as a corresponding high quality printer. The failure of the Macintosh signaled the beginning of Jobs's downfall at Apple. Jobs resigned in 1985 from the company he had helped found, though he retained his title as chairman of its board of directors.

NeXT

Jobs soon hired some of his former employees to begin a new computer company called NeXT. Late in 1988 the NeXT computer was introduced at a large gala event in San Francisco, aimed at the educational market. Initial reactions were generally good. The product was very user-friendly, and had a

fast processing speed, excellent graphics displays, and an outstanding sound system. Despite the warm reception, however, the NeXT machine never caught on. It was too costly, had a black-and-white screen, and could not be linked to other computers or run common software.

Toy Story

NeXT was not, however, the end of Steve Jobs. In 1986 Jobs purchased a small company called Pixar from filmmaker George Lucas (1944–). Pixar specialized in computer animation. Nine years later Pixar released *Toy Story*, a huge box office hit. Pixar later went on to make *Toy Story 2* and *A Bug's Life*, which Disney distributed, and *Monsters, Inc.* All these films have been extremely successful. *Monsters, Inc.* had the largest opening weekend ticket sales of any animated film in history.

NeXT and Apple

In December of 1996 Apple purchased NeXT Software for over \$400 million. Jobs returned to Apple as a part-time consultant to the chief executive officer (CEO). The following year, in a surprising event, Apple entered into a partnership with its competitor Microsoft. The two companies, according to the *New York Times*, “agreed to cooperate on several sales and technology fronts.” Over the next six years Apple introduced several new products and marketing strategies.

In November 1997 Jobs announced Apple would sell computers directly to users over the Internet and by telephone. The Apple Store became a runaway success. Within a week it was the third-largest e-commerce site on the Internet. In September of 1997 Jobs was named interim CEO of Apple.

In 1998 Jobs announced the release of the iMac, which featured powerful computing at an affordable price. The iBook was unveiled in July 1999. This is a clam-shaped laptop that is available in bright colors. It includes Apple's AirPort, a computer version of the cordless phone that would allow the user to surf the Internet wirelessly. In January 2000 Jobs unveiled Apple's new Internet strategy. It included a group of Macintosh-only Internet-based applications. Jobs also announced that he was becoming the permanent CEO of Apple.

In a February 1996 *Time* magazine article, Jobs said, “The thing that drives me and my colleagues . . . is that you see something very compelling to you, and you don't quite know how to get it, but you know, sometimes intuitively, it's within your grasp. And it's worth putting in years of your life to make it come into existence.” Jobs has worked hard to translate his ideas into exciting and innovative products for businesses and consumers. He was instrumental in launching the age of the personal computer. Steve Jobs is truly a computer industry visionary.

For More Information

- Brashares, Ann. *Steve Jobs: Think Different*. Brookfield, CT: Twenty-first Century Books, 2001.
- Butcher, Lee. *Accidental Millionaire: The Rise and Fall of Steven Jobs at Apple Computer*. New York: Paragon House, 1987.
- Wilson, Suzan. *Steve Jobs: Wizard of Apple Computer*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2001.
- Young, Jeffrey S. *Steve Jobs: The Journey is the Reward*. Glenview, IL: Scott, Foresman, 1988.

ELTON JOHN

Born: March 25, 1947

Pinner, Middlesex, England

English singer, songwriter, and humanitarian

Once famous for his flashy clothes and string of hit records, English rock musician Elton John has more recently become a humanitarian (one who works to promote human welfare) with a particular interest in supporting acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; a disease that destroys the body's ability to fight infection) charities.

Early life

Elton John was born Reginald Kenneth Dwight on March 25, 1947, in the town of Pinner in Middlesex, England. An only child who was overweight and wore glasses, he was afraid of his father, a squadron leader (a ranking officer) with the Royal Air Force, whom he described as "very snobbish and sort of stiff." His mother Sheila, on the other hand, brought home records that introduced him to rock music. John taught himself to play the piano at the age of four. He studied at the London Academy of Music but quit two weeks before graduation to pursue a musical career. He worked for a music publishing company and also played the piano in bars, later joining a band called Bluesology. He created his stage name as a combination of the middle name of Bluesology's singer, Long John Baldry, and the first name of the saxophone player, Elton Dean. Later in his life, John added the middle name Hercules.

Recording career begins

In 1968 John met Bernie Taupin (1950–), who became his long-term songwriting partner. John's first album, *Empty Sky* (1969), was a commercial failure. His second album contained "Your Song," a hit in both the United States and England. In 1972 "Rocket Man" became his first number-one single in America. Other hits followed, including "Daniel" and "Crocodile Rock" from the album *Don't Shoot Me, I'm Only the Piano Player*. The album *Goodbye Yellow Brick Road* (1973) contained "Candle in the Wind," written about actress Marilyn Monroe (1926–1962). That same year, John launched his own record label, Rocket Records.

John became famous for his oversize glasses and outrageous outfits. He was called the "Queen Mum of Pop." He also enjoyed many expensive cars, large homes, and shopping sprees. In 1975 he starred as the Pinball Wizard in the film version of the rock opera *Tommy*. In 1976 a duet with Kiki Dee, "Don't Go Breaking My Heart," became his first British number-one single. His popularity then began to decline after a series of less successful albums. Admitting that he was attracted to both men and women further damaged his popularity, and he began abusing alcohol and drugs.

Although John continued performing during the 1980s, his drug and drinking problems had caused him to lose his magic touch. While recording *Too Low for Zero* in 1983, John met Renate Blauel, a German-born, recording-studio worker. They were married on Valentine's Day (February 14) 1984. The British press attacked both the marriage and John, focusing on his sexual history. After less than five years, the couple agreed to divorce.



Elton John.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Decides to help others

In the early 1990s John received treatment for alcoholism, drug abuse, and bulimia (an eating disorder). He admitted he was a homosexual (a man attracted to other men) and began to devote his energies toward helping others. Starting in 1990 he donated all of the profits from the sales of his singles to charity, mostly those associated with AIDS. In 1992 he established the Elton John AIDS Foundation. In 1994 he was elected to the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame, and in 1995 he won an Academy Award.

In 1997 John was shaken by the death of his friend, Diana, Princess of Wales (1961–

1997), in a car accident. John performed a new version of “Candle in the Wind” at her funeral. It sold more than thirty million copies after being released as a single. John donated all of the profits (more than \$47 million) to the charity established in Diana’s name. He was knighted by Queen Elizabeth II (1926–) for his achievements in music and contributions to charity.

Honors and awards

In 2000 the National Academy of Recording Arts and Sciences honored John as Person of the Year for his charity work. Later that year, John and lyric writer Tim Rice wrote songs for the Broadway musical *Aida* (which won a Tony award) and the film *The Road to El Dorado*. John also sued the accounting firm (a company paid to verify and calculate business dealings) PriceWaterhouseCoopers and his former manager for \$29 million, claiming they had stolen money from him.

John won a Grammy Award for best musical show album for *Elton John and Tim Rice’s Aida* in February 2001. At the award show he performed with rap artist Eminem (1972–), angering homosexual rights leaders who had criticized Eminem for his antigay lyrics. Later that year John released *Songs from the West Coast*, which many praised as a return to his “1970s sound.”

For More Information

Bernardin, Claude, and Tom Stanton. *Rocket Man: Elton John from A-Z*. Westport, CT: Praeger, 1996.

Cassata, Mary Anne. *The Elton John Scrapbook*. New York: Citadel Press, 2002.

Norman, Philip. *Elton John*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1993.

Rosenthal, Elizabeth J. *His Song: The Musical Journey of Elton John*. New York: Billboard Books, 2001.

JOHN PAUL II

Born: May 18, 1920

Wadowice, Poland

Polish pope

Karol Wojtyla, cardinal of Krakow, Poland, was elected the 263rd pope in 1978, the first ever of Slavic blood. He took the name John Paul II.

Childhood, education, and the priesthood

Karol Wojtyla was born May 18, 1920, in Wadowice, Poland, the second child of Karol Wojtyla Sr., an army sergeant, and Emilia (Kaczorowska) Wojtyla. His mother died when he was nine. After his mother died, Wojtyla became closer to his father, whom he credits as the source of his religious faith. His only sibling, a much older brother, Edmund (a physician), died four years later; and Karol Sr. died in 1942. These sorrows of early family life, along with the hard times that Poland experienced both prior to World War II (1939–45; a war fought in Europe, Asia, and elsewhere with Great Britain, the Soviet Union, France, the United States in 1941, and their allies on one side; Germany, Italy, and Japan on the other side) and throughout it, were bound to give an intelligent young man reason for serious thinking. Nonethe-

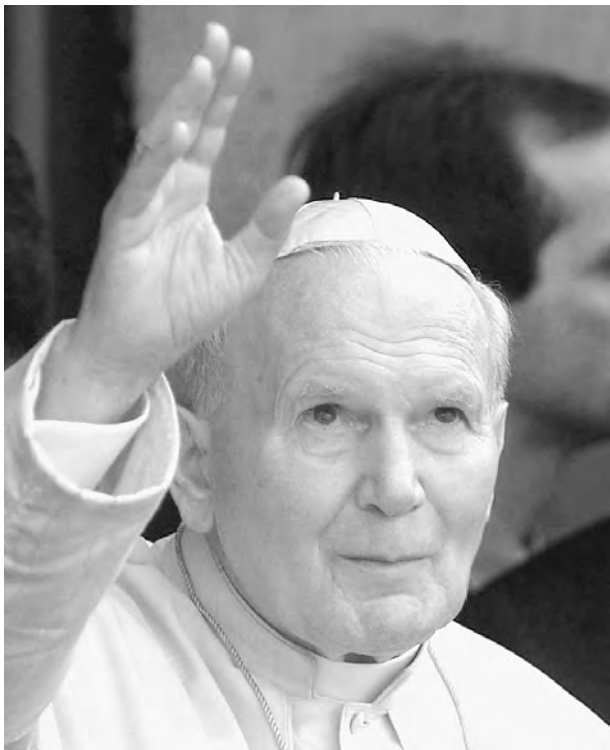
less, he has been remembered by his peers as a positive-thinking young man who was involved in sports such as soccer and skiing. In 1939 under Nazi (Adolf Hitler's [1889–1945] political party, which was in power in Germany from 1933 until 1945) occupation, he enrolled at Jagiellonian University in Krakow, and shortly thereafter he began secret studies for the priesthood. Publicly, however, he worked as a laborer in a quarry and a chemical factory.

After World War II, upon ordination to the priesthood on November 1, 1946, Wojtyla did pastoral work with Polish refugees in France and then did graduate studies at the Angelicum University in Rome. When he returned from these studies to his native Poland, Wojtyla was assigned to parish work and soon became well known for his successes in youth ministry. He was then assigned to teach ethics (the study of right and wrong) at the Catholic University of Lublin, and in 1958 he was officially named auxiliary bishop (member of the clergy who assists the bishop) of Krakow. In 1962, upon the death of Archbishop Baziak, Wojtyla became the vicar capitular, or administrative head, and in 1964 he became archbishop of Krakow. Paul VI made him a cardinal on May 29, 1967, in good part because of the fine impression he had made during the Second Vatican Council (1962–65).

Dealing with Communist Poland

In Poland Bishop Wojtyla was a rallying point for anti-Communist religious people. The bishop tended to show himself to be flexible, and his constant patriotism kept him from supporting any movements against the government that would cause the people or

JOHN PAUL II



Pope John Paul II.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

the land more harm than good. The Communist government came to look upon him as an enemy. First as bishop and then as archbishop and cardinal, Wojtyla fought for the Church's right to full religious practice and expression of opinion.

During the Second Vatican Council Wojtyla had contributed to the Catholic Church's increased appreciation of religious freedom, and he impressed many of the Church's leaders as a strong leader with first-hand experience of the possible effects of Communist rule.

When Pope Paul VI died in August 1978, and then scarcely a month later his successor, Pope John Paul I, died unexpectedly, the stage was set for a more dramatic occurrence. On October 16, 1978, on their eighth ballot, the cardinals assembled in Rome for the papal election chose Wojtyla as the first non-Italian pope in 455 years and the first Slavic pope ever. The new pope, who chose the name John Paul II in honor of his immediate predecessors (John XXIII, Paul VI, and John Paul I), quickly became a powerful figure.

Early years as pope

Pope John Paul II began a papal life of activity. In January 1979 he made his first trip abroad to Latin America. For nine days in June of 1979 he walked in the midst of Eastern Europe. At the end of September 1979 the pope flew first to Ireland and then to the United States, bringing his message of justice, peace, and the righteousness of traditional Catholic morality.

After these early trips Pope John Paul II became the most travelled pope in history. The personal danger of these trips became apparent to the world on May 13, 1981, when the pope was shot in Rome by a Muslim fanatic presumed to be employed by the Bulgarian Communist government. Not long after his return to health he began planning for future trips, telling his aides that his life belonged to God and the people.

The pope as teacher

Pope John Paul II's first encyclical (a letter that is written by the pope and addressed to the bishops of the church), *Redemptor Hominis* (Redeemer of Man), came in March

of 1979, only five months after his election. It was a piece that clearly expressed the pope's belief that the redemption (act of being saved) offered in Christ is the center of human history. The second encyclical, *Dives in Misericordia* (Rich in Mercy), appeared in December of 1980. Its theme was the mercy of God and the need for human beings to treat one another mercifully, going beyond strict justice to the love and compassion that human suffering ought to create.

The third encyclical, *Laborem Exercens* (Performing Work), appeared in September of 1981. This encyclical made it clear that the pope, for all his anti-Communism, is no friend of traditional capitalism. Moreover, the pope echoed the traditional Christian teaching that the goods of the earth come from the Creator God and are for all the Earth's people.

The pope's 1988 encyclical, *Sollicitudo Rei Socialis*, on social justice is thought to be one of his most substantial documents. It threaded a middle ground between capitalist and socialist positions, arguing for both proper economic development and placing the needs of the poor over the wants of the wealthy.

No compromise on moral issues

In 1992 the pope approved a new catechism. This was a detailed statement of belief meant to unite the Catholic Church. In October, John Paul published a large encyclical on moral issues somewhat inspired by the pedophilia (the sexual attraction of adults to children) crisis in the United States: *Veritatis Splendor* (The Resplendence of Truth), the burden of which was that the Christian moral life demanded heroism; certain traditional teachings never change; some acts (genocide, abuse of the innocent) are evil; and recent technical

developments in moral theology casting doubt on such traditional positions are unacceptable.

Pope embraced the people

John Paul departed from his customary encyclical, or papal letter, in 1994 to publish a book, *Crossing the Threshold of Hope*, which became an international bestseller. John Paul II reached out to the masses, the public responded, and *Time* magazine named him "Man of the Year." The book received wide critical acclaim for addressing today's major theological concerns and further established John Paul as a great intellect and teacher of our time.

John Paul issued a strong message in his 1995 encyclical, entitled *Evangelism Vitae* (Gospel of Life). He confronted the issues of abortion, assisted suicide, and the death penalty, making a plea to Roman Catholics to "resist crimes which no human law can claim to legitimize." A second encyclical, entitled *Ut Unum Sint* (That They May Be One), was released in 1995. In this letter, for the first time in Church history, he acknowledged and apologized for past sins and errors committed in the name of the Church. Admitting that painful things have been done that harmed Christian unity, he accepted responsibility and asked for forgiveness in the hope that Christians could have "patient dialogue."

Church business claimed John Paul's attention in 1996. Several major changes were instituted at his urging; for instance, he ruled that the next pope will be elected by an absolute majority (more than 50 percent).

In March 1998 John Paul issued "We Remember: A Reflection on the Shoah," or Holocaust—a papal apology for the Catholic

JOHNSON, LYNDON B.

Church's failure to act against Nazi atrocities during World War II. He also continued his travels despite the increased effects of Parkinson's disease. He was the first modern pope to enter a synagogue or to visit an Islamic country.

On March 12, 2000, John Paul asked for forgiveness for many of his church's past sins, including its treatment of Jews, heretics (those who deny fundamental beliefs of the church), women, and native peoples. This was believed to be the first time in the history of the Catholic Church that one of its leaders sought such a sweeping pardon.

For More Information

Durkin, Mary G. *Feast of Love*. Chicago: Loyola University Press, 1983.

Frossard, Andre. *Be Not Afraid*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1984.

Garcia-Cobb, Jo. *Pope John Paul II*. New York: MetroBooks, 1999.

Gronowicz, Antoni. *God's Broker*. New York: Richardson & Snyder, 1984.

Legrand, Catherine. *John Paul II: Chronicle of a Remarkable Life*. New York: Dorling Kindersley, 2000.

Weigel, George. *Witness to Hope: The Biography of Pope John Paul II*. New York: Cliff Street Books, 1999.

LYNDON B. JOHNSON

Born: August 27, 1908
Stonewall, Texas

Died: January 22, 1973

Austin, Texas

American president

As the thirty-sixth president of the United States, Lyndon B. Johnson created new programs in health, education, human rights, and conservation. He was also aggressive in the fight against poverty, beginning what he called the "War on Poverty."

Early life

Lyndon Baines Johnson was born on August 27, 1908, in Stonewall, Texas. Johnson's father, Sam Ealy Johnson, Jr., had served in the Texas legislature. After he lost a large sum of money trading cotton, he struggled to raise his two sons and three daughters. Johnson's mother was a gentle woman who encouraged her children to love books and gave them a sense of duty and responsibility. Johnson graduated from Southwest State Teachers College in San Marcos, Texas, with a bachelor's degree. While in college, he had combined his studies with a job teaching Mexican American children.

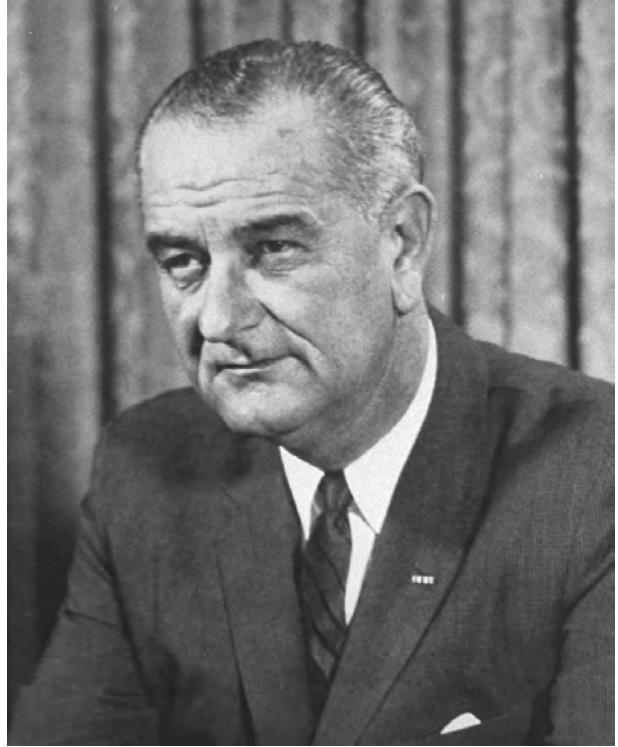
In 1931 Johnson went to Washington, D.C., and worked as secretary to Texas congressman Richard Kleberg (1887–1955). Almost immediately Johnson's talent for attracting affection and respect became visible. He was elected speaker of the "Little Congress," an assembly of congressional secretaries on Capitol Hill. On November 17, 1934, he married Claudia (Lady Bird) Taylor (1912–) of Karnak, Texas. With her, Johnson found constant strength, love, and support. At age twenty-seven Johnson returned to Texas to become the state director of the National Youth Administration.

Rising through Congress

In 1937 the congressman from Texas's Tenth District died suddenly. When a special election was called to select a replacement, Johnson joined a race crowded with seven other candidates. To the amazement of many long-standing politicians, the twenty-eight-year-old Johnson won the race. In 1941 he ran for a Senate seat but lost by a small margin. That December he became the first member of Congress to enter active military duty in World War II (1939–45; a war in which the Allies—France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, China, and from 1941 the United States—fought against the Axis powers—Germany, Italy, and Japan). He joined the navy and in 1942 received the Silver Star for his contribution to a bombing mission over New Guinea. When President Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882–1945) ordered all congressmen in the military back to the capital in 1942, Johnson reentered the House.

In 1948 Johnson finally won election to the Senate. The other senators soon recognized that he was not an ordinary first-term senator. He was knowledgeable about every item that was brought before the Senate. In January 1951 Johnson was named Democratic “whip” (assistant minority leader). In 1953, when the post of minority leader in the Senate opened up, Democratic senators chose Johnson to take charge. After the Democrats won a majority of seats in both houses in the congressional elections of 1954, Johnson became the youngest man ever to serve as majority leader.

At that time, Johnson's leadership became visible to the nation. He led the first civil rights bill in eighty-two years through



Lyndon B. Johnson.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

the Senate. Then in 1958, while representing the United States at the United Nations, he called for the peaceful exploration of outer space. He uncovered waste in defense spending and began an investigation. In 1960 Johnson briefly ran against John F. Kennedy (1917–1963) for the Democratic presidential nomination. Kennedy later chose Johnson as his vice presidential running mate. While some Kennedy supporters complained, experts later agreed that Johnson's tireless campaigning in Texas and the South led Kennedy to victory in the 1960 election.

JOHNSON, LYNDON B.

Serving as vice president

Johnson had many important assignments as vice president. One of his tasks was to improve the growing U.S. space program, which had been overshadowed by explorations and new discoveries that had been made by the Soviet Union. Regarding civil rights, as chairman of the President's Committee on Equal Employment Opportunity forces, he surprised many critics by putting constant pressure on American businesses. The committee had been created by President Kennedy in 1961 to enforce an executive order prohibiting discrimination (unequal treatment) based on race in government employment.

Then on November 22, 1963, President Kennedy was assassinated in Dallas, Texas. The next day, aboard the plane *Air Force One* at Love Field in Dallas, Johnson took the presidential oath of office. Giving orders to take off seconds later, the new president flew back to Washington to take command of the government while the nation grieved for its fallen leader.

Filling the presidency

Five days after taking office, President Johnson appeared before a joint session of Congress. Speaking firmly, he pledged, "We shall continue." The new president, meeting around the clock with staff, cabinet members, and congressmen, helped pass important legislation that had been put before Congress by President Kennedy but had been held up in various committees of both houses. Johnson especially pushed the passage of a civil rights bill that was much stronger than any that had come before, which had been of great importance to Kennedy. On July 2, 1964, Johnson

signed the Civil Rights Act, which prohibits discrimination (unequal treatment based on race) and segregation (separation based on race) in public places, employment, and voting, into law.

Six months after becoming president, Johnson announced his plan called the "Great Society." The areas he emphasized were health and education; urban problems such as pollution, housing, and transportation; civil rights; and preservation of natural resources. Johnson took his programs to the nation during his campaign for the 1964 election. Meanwhile, American involvement in the Vietnam War (1955–75; a war in Vietnam in which South Vietnam was fighting against a takeover by Communist North Vietnam) became an issue. Johnson's opponent, Senator Barry Goldwater (1909–1998), spoke against Johnson's approach to domestic problems and also suggested that the use of force against North Vietnam should be increased. Johnson traveled the nation and convinced voters that they could not afford to drive him from office. He won by the widest margin in any presidential election in American history.

Administration achievements

After his huge victory President Johnson began a massive legislative program. Between 1965 and 1968 more than 207 bills were passed by Congress. During Johnson's presidency education and health spending were increased. Within three years of the passage of the Voting Rights Act in 1965, which made discrimination in voting illegal, nearly one million African Americans registered to vote in the South. Most importantly, the Johnson presidency was the strongest era of national

prosperity (economic success), marked by more than eighty-five months of economic growth. The wages of factory workers increased, millions of workers were brought under minimum-wage protection, total employment increased, and the unemployment rate (the number of people who are unemployed) dropped to its lowest point in more than a decade.

The president also made important gains in foreign affairs. U.S. involvement in Cyprus and the Congo prevented the outbreak of wars in those countries. In the Dominican Republic, the threat of a Communist takeover was ended by an overwhelming show of force by the United States and Latin American countries. As a result, a democratic government and free elections were put back into place in the Dominican Republic, and U.S. troops left the country soon after. Talks on an outer space treaty with the Soviet Union were held, and in June 1967 the president met with Soviet leader Alexei Kosygin (1904–1980).

Vietnam problem

Johnson devoted the bulk of his time and effort to dealing with the Vietnam War. All three presidents that served before Johnson had declared that the security of the United States was involved in protecting South Vietnam from a communist takeover by North Vietnam. However, there was much disagreement in the United States over the way this problem should be solved. Some critics claimed the situation in Vietnam was a civil war, not an invasion, and they opposed U.S. involvement. In 1965 the United States increased its military support of South Vietnam and sent over more American troops. By 1968 many people who were against U.S.

involvement in the war were calling on the Johnson administration to remove U.S. troops from Vietnam.

Bothered by increasing criticism, yet determined to end the war and begin serious peace talks, President Johnson startled the nation and the world on March 31, 1968, by stating that he would not run for election to another term as president. Johnson said that it was so important to resolve the Vietnam situation peacefully that even his own political future should not stand in the way of this goal. He said that he would not seek reelection so he could spend the rest of his days in office working on a settlement. On May 11, 1968, it was announced that peace talks would begin in Paris, France. Then in November 1968 the president declared that all bombing of North Vietnam would end.

At the end of Johnson's presidency, he retired to his ranch near San Antonio, Texas, where he became interested in the care and sale of his cattle. On January 22, 1973, Johnson suffered a heart attack while lying down to take a nap, and he died later that afternoon.

Lyndon Johnson was one of America's most experienced and politically skilled presidents. He tried to improve the quality of life for people living in the United States and to help new and small nations develop their own forms of government without fear of invasion from their more powerful neighbors.

For More Information

Califano, Joseph A., Jr. *The Triumph and Tragedy of Lyndon Johnson*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1991. Reprint, College Station: Texas A&M University Press, 2000.

Dallek, Robert. *Flawed Giant: Lyndon Johnson and His Times, 1961-1973*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1998.

Eskow, Dennis. *Lyndon Baines Johnson*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1993.

Johnson, Lyndon Baines. *The Vantage Point: Perspectives of the Presidency, 1963-1969*. New York: Holt, Rinehart, 1971.

Kaye, Tony. *Lyndon B. Johnson*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.

Unger, Irwin, and Debi Unger. *LBJ: A Life*. New York: Wiley, 1999.

MAGIC JOHNSON

Born: August 14, 1959

Lansing, Michigan

African American basketball player

Magic Johnson was one of professional basketball's most popular stars. He won five championships with the Los Angeles Lakers in the 1980s before he was forced to retire after contracting the human immunodeficiency virus (HIV), the virus that causes acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS), a disease that destroys the body's ability to fight off infection.

Early years

Earvin Johnson Jr. was born on August 14, 1959, in Lansing, Michigan, the fourth of Earvin and Christine Johnson's seven chil-

dren. His father worked at an auto factory during the day and hauled trash at night to make extra money. Earvin Jr. worked at several jobs, including helping his father, but his first love was basketball. In 1977 Johnson and his Everett High School team won the state championship. His passing and ball-handling skills won him the nickname "Magic." He then attended Michigan State University. In his second year, Michigan State won the national college basketball championship by defeating Indiana State University, a team led by future Boston Celtics star Larry Bird (1956-). Johnson scored twenty-four points and was chosen Most Valuable Player (MVP).

Immediate success

Johnson was selected first in the 1979 National Basketball Association (NBA) draft by the Los Angeles Lakers. He became the first rookie to start in an NBA All-Star game. The Lakers went on to defeat the Philadelphia 76ers for the NBA championship, and Johnson became the youngest player ever to be named playoff MVP. At six feet nine inches, Johnson became the first big man to excel at point guard, a position usually reserved for smaller players. He became one of the most popular players in the league.

During the 1981-82 season Laker head coach Paul Westhead designed an offense that featured center Kareem Abdul-Jabbar (1947-). The change upset Johnson, who asked to be traded. Westhead was soon replaced by Pat Riley, under whom Johnson became one of the league's best all-around players. In Johnson's first season with Riley, the Lakers won another championship, with Johnson again winning the playoff MVP award. In 1985 the Lakers won their third

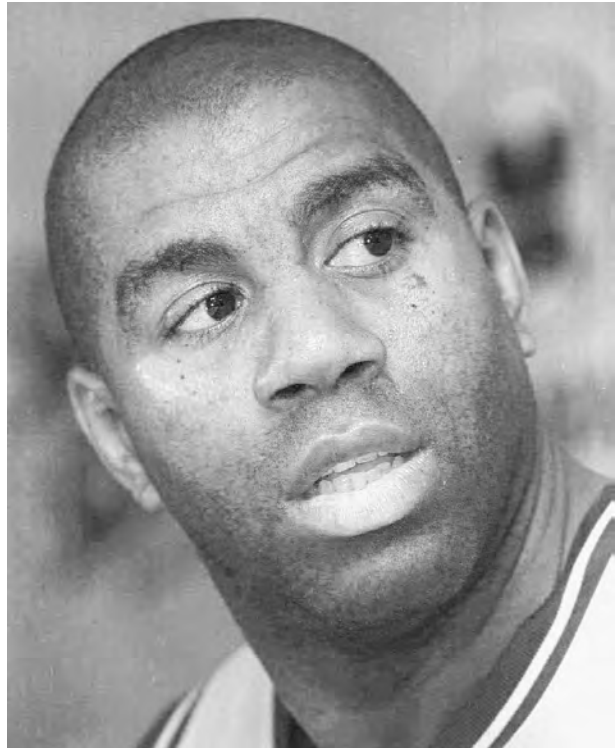
NBA title, defeating Bird and the Boston Celtics. The Lakers also won championships in 1987 and 1988.

During Johnson's twelve years with the Lakers, the team won five championships. He was chosen playoff MVP three times. He was a twelve-time All-Star and the 1990 All-Star game MVP. He averaged 19.7 points per game in 874 games, pulled down 6,376 rebounds, and had 1,698 steals. During the 1990–91 season he broke Oscar Robertson's (1938–) assist record, finishing the season with a total of 9,921. In October 1996 he was named one of the fifty greatest players in the history of the NBA.

Tragic discovery

In November 1991, during a physical examination, Johnson found out that he was a carrier of the HIV virus, which causes AIDS. Johnson admitted that his lifestyle as a sports celebrity included many sexual encounters. However, he never suspected that he might contract HIV, which he thought was limited to gay, or homosexual, men (men who are attracted to other men). Doctors advised Johnson to quit basketball immediately in order to protect his health.

Johnson immediately became a voice for AIDS awareness. "I want [kids] to understand that safe sex is the way to go," Johnson told *People* magazine. "Sometimes we think only gay people can get it [HIV], or that it's not going to happen to me. Here I am. And I'm saying it can happen to anybody, even Magic Johnson." Johnson was appointed to the National Commission on AIDS by President George H. W. Bush (1924–) but resigned to protest what he considered to be the president's lack of support for AIDS research.



Magic Johnson.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Johnson also coauthored *What You Can Do to Prevent AIDS*.

Unable to let go

In January 1992 Johnson came out of retirement to play in the 1992 NBA All-Star game, scoring 25 points and being named the game's MVP. That summer Johnson went to Barcelona, Spain, as a member of the United States basketball team in the Summer Olympics. Referred to as the "Dream Team" by writers, the U.S. team, packed with NBA stars including Bird and Michael Jordan (1964–), easily won the gold medal. Fans were saddened, however, because they

believed the careers of both Johnson and Bird were over.

Johnson could not let go of basketball. He announced his return to the NBA shortly before the 1992 season; after five preseason games he retired again, saying he wanted to stay healthy for his family. Johnson remained active in basketball, purchasing an ownership share in the Lakers and forming a team that played games around the world to benefit charities. He became a vice-president of the Lakers and took over as head coach of the team for the end of the 1992–93 season. In early 1996 Johnson again returned to play for the Lakers. By May, however, he announced his retirement—this time for good.

Successful businesses

Johnson enjoyed all-star success as a businessman. He started paying attention to his money early in his career, after watching fellow teammate Abdul-Jabbar lose millions to crooked business advisers. By 1996 he had a net worth of more than one hundred million dollars. Like other star athletes, Johnson endorsed (appeared in ads giving support for) products and gave speeches for big fees. He led his Magic Johnson All-Stars around the world, playing exhibition games against foreign basketball teams for large profits. He also briefly hosted a television talk show.

One of Johnson's major investments was in large-scale property development. Among his successes were movie theaters and shopping centers in inner-city areas where no one else wanted to invest. In June 1995 Johnson opened the twelve-screen Magic Theatres in a mostly black section of Los Angeles. In 1997 Johnson opened another movie complex in Atlanta, Georgia. Magic movie houses were

under construction in other cities, including Brooklyn, New York, where the historic Loews Kings Theater was restored at a cost of \$30 million.

Living with HIV

In September 1991, just before Johnson learned he had HIV, he married longtime friend Earletha “Cookie” Kelly. They had a son in 1993 and adopted a daughter in 1995. Johnson also had a son from another relationship who spent the summers with him. Johnson continued to take medicine, eat right, and exercise. As recently as September 2002, his doctors said he is free of AIDS symptoms. Doctors credit Johnson's exercise habits and his use of powerful drugs; Johnson's wife Cookie has credited God, stating, “The Lord has definitely healed Earvin. Doctors think it's the medicine. We claim it in the name of Jesus.”

Johnson showed no signs of slowing down. He became the owner of several Starbucks coffee shops, started his own record company (Magic Johnson Records), and purchased Fatburgers, the popular Los Angeles hamburger chain. He also continued to speak out on AIDS and raise money for research. In 2002 he was elected to the Pro Basketball Hall of Fame.

For More Information

Blatt, Howard. *Magic! Against the Odds*. New York: Pocket Books, 1996.

Frank, Steven. *Magic Johnson*. New York: Chelsea House, 1995.

Levin, Richard. *Magic*. New York: Viking Press, 1983.

Johnson, Earvin. *My Life*. New York: Random House, 1992.

Johnson, Roy S. *Magic's Touch*. Reading, Mass.: Addison-Wesley, 1989.

SAMUEL JOHNSON

Born: September 18, 1709

Litchfield, Staffordshire, England

Died: December 13, 1784

London, England

English author and lexicographer

The writings of the English author and lexicographer (an author or editor of a dictionary) Samuel Johnson express a deep respect for the past combined with an energetic independence of mind. The mid-eighteenth century in England is often called the “Age of Johnson.”

Early life

Samuel Johnson was born in Litchfield, Staffordshire, England, on September 18, 1709, the son of Michael Johnson and Sarah Ford. His father was a bookseller, and Johnson owed much of his education to the fact that he grew up in a bookstore. Johnson was plagued by illness all his life. As a child he suffered from scrofula (an infection of the face that causes scars), smallpox, and partial deafness and blindness. One of his first memories was of being taken to London, England, where he was touched by Queen Anne (1665–1714) (the touch of the ruler was then thought to be a cure for scrofula).

Johnson was educated at the Litchfield Grammar School, where he learned Latin and Greek. He later studied with a minister in a nearby village from whom he learned a valuable lesson—that if one is to master any subject, one must first discover its general principles, or, as Johnson put it, “but grasp the Trunk hard only, and you will shake all the Branches.” In 1728 and 1729 Johnson spent fourteen months at Pembroke College, Oxford. Too poor and embarrassed by his poverty, Johnson could not complete the work for a degree. Johnson supported himself with teaching jobs after his father died in 1731. In 1735 he married Elizabeth Porter, a widow some twenty years older than him. Still trying to find a way to make a living, Johnson opened a boarding school, which had only three pupils. One of them was David Garrick (1717–1779), who would eventually become a famous actor.

Making his name

In 1737 Johnson went to London to work for Edward Cave, the editor of the *Gentleman's Magazine*. Parliament did not then permit reports of its debates, and Cave published a column called “Debates in the Senate of Lilliput”—the name is taken from the first book of Jonathan Swift's *Gulliver's Travels*—for which Johnson, among others, wrote re-creations of actual parliamentary speeches. Johnson also published *London, a Poem* (1738) and *The Vanity of Human Wishes* (1749), two “imitations” of the Roman writer Juvenal (c. 60–c. 140). In 1749 Johnson completed *Irene*, a play in verse, which was produced by Garrick and earned Johnson £300 (about \$436).

In the early 1750s Johnson, writing at the rate of two essays a week, published two

JOHNSON, SAMUEL



Samuel Johnson.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

collections, *The Rambler* (1750–52) and *The Adventurer* (1753–54). He also continued work on a dictionary of the English language, a project he had begun in 1746 with the help of six assistants. The project was finally completed in 1755. Although he received help from others, Johnson's *Dictionary* is probably the most personal work of its kind that will ever be put together. His own definition of *lexicographer* was a "writer of dictionaries; a harmless drudge," yet the work bears his personal stamp: it is notable for its precise definitions and for its examples, which draw on Johnson's reading of two hundred years of English literature.

Years of success and fame

Johnson's *Rasselas, Prince of Abissinia*, a moral fable (a mythical story that usually teaches a lesson about life) concerned with an innocent young man's search for the secret of happiness, appeared in 1759. The work was immediately successful; six editions and a number of translations appeared during Johnson's lifetime. In 1762 Johnson accepted a yearly pension of £300 from King George III (1738–1820). A year later he met James Boswell (1740–1795), the son of a Scottish judge. Boswell became Johnson's devoted companion and eventually wrote the great biography of his hero.

In 1765 Johnson met Henry Thrale, a well-to-do brewer, and in the Thrales' home Johnson found an escape from the solitude he had experienced since his wife's death in 1752. In 1765 Johnson published an eight-volume edition of the works of William Shakespeare (1564–1616). In 1773 James Boswell persuaded Johnson to join him in a tour of Scotland, and both men recorded their trip—Johnson's *A Journey to the Western Islands of Scotland* (1775) and Boswell's journal.

Johnson's last great work, the ten-volume *Prefaces, Biographical and Critical, to the Works of the English Poets* (better known as the *Lives of the Poets*), was completed when he was seventy-two. It is a series of biographical and critical studies of fifty-two English poets. Johnson was saddened in his last years by the death of his old friend Dr. Robert Levett, by the death of Thrale, and by a quarrel with Thrale's widow, who had remarried with what seemed to Johnson, inappropriate haste. Johnson died on December 13, 1784, in his house in London, and he was buried in Westminster Abbey.

For More Information

- Bate, W. Jackson. *Samuel Johnson*. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1977. Reprint, Washington, DC: Counterpoint, 1998.
- Clark, Jonathan, and Howard Erskine-Hill, eds. *Samuel Johnson in Historical Context*. New York: Palgrave, 2001.
- Clifford, James Lowry. *Young Sam Johnson*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1955.
- Krutch, Joseph Wood. *Samuel Johnson*. New York: H. Holt and Company, 1944.
- Lipking, Lawrence I. *Samuel Johnson: The Life of an Author*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1998.

AL JOLSON

Born: May 26, 1886

Srednike, Lithuania

Died: October 23, 1950

San Francisco, California

Lithuanian-born American entertainer, vaudeville performer, actor, and singer

Al Jolson was a famous singer and film actor. He starred in the first all-sound movie, *The Jazz Singer*.

Early life

Al Jolson (Asa Yoelson) was born on May 26, 1886, in Srednike, Lithuania. Jolson's family came to the United States in 1894, settling in Washington, D.C. Several factors in

Jolson's youth influenced his career, including his religious Jewish upbringing, the death of his mother when he was ten, and his father's work as a cantor (a singer of religious music in a synagogue). Jolson acquired a love of singing from his father, but he did not want to use his voice in the synagogue. Instead, he and his brother Harry sang on street corners to earn money. Jolson also attended the theater whenever possible and discovered he loved to perform.

Develops his own style

In 1900 Jolson left Washington, D.C., for New York. His first theater job was in a show called *Children of the Ghetto*. He also sang in a circus before teaming up with his brother to play vaudeville (traveling stage entertainment consisting of various acts). They toured as Jolson/Palmer/Jolson (Palmer was the third member of the team) with an act called *The Hebrew and the Cadet*, in which Harry Jolson and Palmer did a comedy routine and Al Jolson sang. Jolson was best when he was alone on stage, where he could more easily relate to the audience.

Jolson then left his brother's act and spent several years playing small clubs in San Francisco, California. One day, to liven up his act, he went on stage in blackface (with his face made up to resemble an African American) and sang "Rosey My Posey" in a Southern accent. In 1909 he was given a job in producer Lew Dockstader's *Minstrel Show*, and in 1911 he was hired for Broadway producer Lee Shubert's new show, *La Belle Paree* (1911), in which he sang "I Want a Girl Just Like the Girl That Married Dear Old Dad." Jolson's singing and stage manner were different from anything the audience had seen. He took a song



Al Jolson.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

and applied to it a loose jazz rhythm, rolling his eyes with a sly grin on his blackened face. He also appealed to the feelings of the audience with his sentimental song deliveries.

Star power

Although Jolson did not receive star billing until 1914 in *Dancing Around*, the audiences clearly came to see *him*. The Shuberts knew this and signed Jolson for a seven-year contract at the Winter Garden Theatre on Broadway. He played to overflowing houses in such shows as *Robinson Crusoe, Jr.* (1916), *Sinbad* (1918), and *Bombo* (1921). Most of these shows had no script and no scheduled list of

songs. Jolson would come out on stage after the final act to talk to the audience and sing what pleased him. After each song he told the audiences, “You ain’t heard nothing yet.”

Jolson became known for songs like “Sonny Boy,” composer George Gershwin’s (1898–1937) “Swanee,” and especially “My Mammy.” In “Mammy” he would go down on one knee, and with tears in his eyes he would speak to “mother,” telling her he’d “walk a million miles” just to see her. At the end he would get up and sing the last chorus with his hands spread wide and his face tilted upward.

Goes to Hollywood

Jolson worked constantly, doing a tour of his one-man show, then a vaudeville tour, and then a Sunday theater series. Finally he went to Hollywood to make movies. In October 1927 Warner Brothers presented the world’s first talking-picture feature, *The Jazz Singer*. The film, the story of a rabbi’s son who becomes an actor against his father’s wishes, was a great success. People assumed the movie was based on Jolson’s own life, a myth that he encouraged.

Despite the popularity of the film and its follow-up, *The Singing Fool* (1928), Jolson did not succeed in film. He made several more films, but his personal appeal to an audience never really came through on the screen. His career declined in the 1930s, but he continued to perform on radio and entertained soldiers during World War II (1939–45; a war fought mostly in Europe between the United States, Great Britain, France, and the Soviet Union on one side, and Germany, Italy, and Japan on the other). He also campaigned for several presidents by singing at rallies. In 1946 *The Al Jolson Story*, a fictional version of his life, was released

and was an immediate success. In 1949 *Jolson Sings Again*, another smash hit, was released.

Jolson was married four times, and he had three children. He died of heart failure on October 23, 1950, the night before a planned radio taping with actor/singer Bing Crosby (1904–1977).

For More Information

Freedland, Michael. *Jolson*. New York: Stein and Day, 1972.

Goldman, Herbert G. *Jolson: The Legend Comes to Life*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1988.

Oberfirst, Robert. *Al Jolson: You Ain't Heard Nothin' Yet!* San Diego: A. S. Barnes, 1980.

JAMES EARL JONES

Born: January 17, 1931

Arkabutla, Mississippi

African American actor

Award-winning actor James Earl Jones has acted on television, stage, and screen. He is best known for his deep bass voice.

Unhappy childhood

The only child of Robert Earl and Ruth Connolly Jones, James Earl Jones was born on January 17, 1931, in Arkabutla, Mississippi. Before his son's birth, James's father left the family to pursue a career as a boxer and later as an actor. Ruth Jones left soon after to

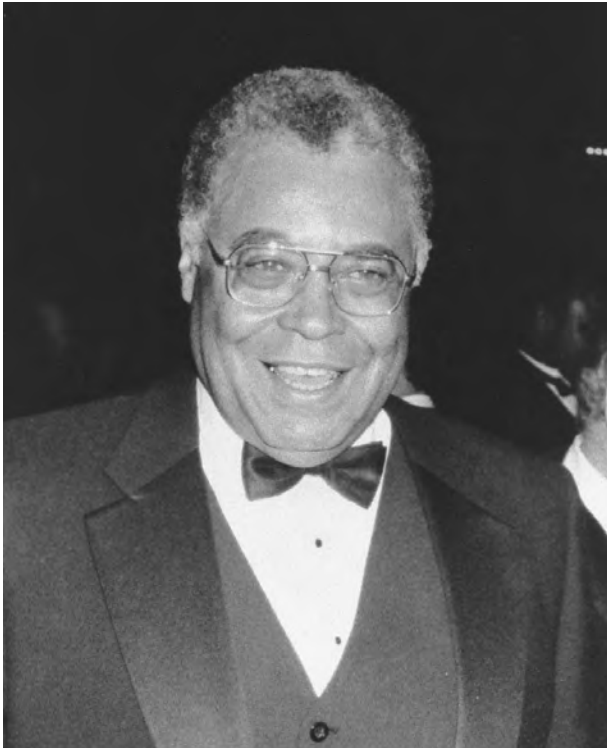
find work, leaving her separated from her son for long periods of time. This was during the Great Depression, a slowdown in the United States's system of producing, distributing, and using goods and services that caused millions of Americans to lose their jobs. Jones told *Newsweek* that being abandoned hurt him deeply. "No matter how old the character I play," he said, "those deep childhood memories, those furies, will come out. I understand this."

Jones lived at his grandparents' farm and hunted, fished, and performed various chores. He also attended church, where he watched his grandmother's dramatic displays of religious feeling. Eventually Jones's grandparents formally adopted him and took him north to Michigan. Jones struggled in his new surroundings. He developed a stutter and soon found communication so difficult that at certain periods during grammar school he could talk only to himself or his immediate family. The problem continued in high school, where an English teacher suggested he memorize speeches and enter speaking contests. This cured Jones of his problem.

Discovers acting

Jones attended the University of Michigan on a full scholarship (money given to a student to attend college), intending to study medicine. At first he took acting classes as a hobby, but he soon switched his major to theater. When he was twenty-one years old and a junior at Michigan, he traveled to New York City to meet his father for the first time. The relationship was strained by the many years they had been apart, but Jones's father encouraged him to pursue a career in theater. James graduated from Michigan in 1953 with a bachelor's degree in drama.

JONES, JAMES EARL



James Earl Jones.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

In 1953 Jones joined the army, serving in a ranger (a soldier who confronts the enemy at close range) training program in the Colorado mountains. He was set to reenlist in 1955 when his commanding officer suggested that he take a break before making a long-term commitment. Jones moved to New York City and enrolled in more acting classes. He lived with his father for a time, and the two earned extra money by polishing theater floors. In 1957 the younger Jones earned his first professional role in a production of *Wedding in Japan*. Although he was rarely out of work after that, his salary during the late 1950s averaged only forty-five dollars a week.

In 1959 Jones began a long stretch with the New York Shakespeare Festival, carrying a spear in *Henry V*. Before long he was given bigger roles, and in 1963 he played the lead in *Othello*, one of thirteen plays he appeared in that year. *Othello* ran for a year with Jones in the lead. He also found time to make one film appearance, in director Kubrick's (1928–1999) *Dr. Strangelove*. In the mid-1960s Jones became the first African American man to take a continuing role on a daytime soap opera when he played a doctor on *As The World Turns*.

Critical success

In 1967, while Jones was touring Europe in Eugene O'Neill's (1888–1953) *The Emperor Jones*, he was given a copy of a play titled *The Great White Hope*. The story of the life of boxing champion Jack Johnson (1878–1946), *The Great White Hope*, was scheduled for a possible Broadway run. Jones wanted the part badly. He began working out to build his muscles, working with boxing managers, and watching old footage of Johnson's fights. He won the part, and the show opened on Broadway in October 1968.

The Great White Hope was a success. Jones won a Tony Award for his performance, and he was nominated (put forward for consideration) for an Academy Award in 1970 when the play was made into a motion picture. Still, Jones told *TV Guide* that his work in *The Great White Hope* did not prove to be the career boost he thought it would. He blamed racism (unequal treatment based on race) for the inability of several of his projects, including a life story of civil rights leader Malcolm X (1925–1965), to be approved for production.

Many different roles

Jones returned to the stage, appearing in *Hamlet* (1972), *King Lear* (1973), and *Of Mice and Men* (1974). He also performed in a series of minor films, including *The Man* and *The Bingo Long Traveling All-Stars and Motor Kings*. Jones's most popular movie role of the 1970s and early 1980s was one in which only his voice was used. He gave a memorable level of evil to the villain Darth Vader in all three *Star Wars* films.

In 1982 Jones appeared in the film *Conan, the Barbarian*. To critics who questioned why he took roles in second-rate films, Jones had a simple reply: movies and television pay well, theater does not. "I can't afford to take a vacation unless I do some commercials when I'm in New York," he pointed out in the *Saturday Review*. "Money goes fast, and you can't get along doing only stage work." In 1991 Jones appeared in a series of television ads for the Bell Atlantic Yellow Pages.

Jones's work in the late 1980s and early 1990s was as varied as his early career. He played a writer in *Field of Dreams* (1990), a Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) chief in *Patriot Games* (1992), and a judge in *Sommersby* (1994). On television he starred as a private investigator in *Gabriel's Fire* and as a police officer in *Under One Roof*. He earned another Tony Award in 1988 for his portrayal of a Negro League baseball player in the play *Fences*.

Later years

In 1990 Jones announced that his age and health were forcing him to cut back his work in live theater. Jones stressed that he did not plan to retire from the theater completely; he

simply wanted to spend more time on other projects. In 1993 *Voices and Silences*, his autobiography (the story of his one's own life), was published. Jones and his second wife, actress Cecilia Hart, have one son. Looking toward the future, Jones sees no lack of opportunities in show business. "There are lots of wonderful cameos (roles in which only a brief appearance is made) and a lot of good lead roles out there," he concluded in the *Los Angeles Times*. "There are a lot of things I can do."

In September 2001 Jones was the first speaker at a service in York's Yankee Stadium to honor the victims of the terrorist attacks on the United States twelve days earlier. In January 2002 city officials in Lauderhill, Florida, invited Jones to speak at their annual Martin Luther King, Jr. (1929–1968) Day Celebration. A plaque was unveiled that mistakenly paid tribute to James Earl Ray, the man convicted of shooting and killing King, rather than James Earl Jones.

For More Information

Hasday, Judy L. *James Earl Jones*. Philadelphia, PA: Chelsea House, 1998.

Jones, James Earl, and Penelope Niven. *James Earl Jones: Voices and Silences*. New York: Scribner, 1993.

QUINCY JONES

Born: March 14, 1933

Chicago, Illinois

African American musician, composer, producer, arranger, and film and television executive

Quincy Jones has worked as a musician, composer, arranger, producer, and film and television executive. He also helped Michael Jackson (1958–), Oprah Winfrey (1954–), and many others become stars.

Early life

Quincy Delight Jones, Jr., was born in Chicago, Illinois, on March 14, 1933. His parents divorced soon after his younger brother, Lloyd, was born, and the Jones boys were raised by their father, a carpenter, and his new wife. She had three children of her own and three more with Quincy Jones, Sr. His birth mother, Sarah Jones, was in and out of mental hospitals, and it was not until his adult life that Quincy was able to enjoy a close relationship with her. When Jones was ten years old his family moved to Bremerton, Washington, a suburb of Seattle, Washington. He began taking trumpet lessons at school, and three years later he met a fifteen-year-old musician named Ray Charles (1932–). The two formed a band and played in local clubs and weddings, and soon Jones was composing and arranging music for the group.

Music career

After high school and a scholarship at Boston's Berklee College of Music, Jones was introduced to the life of a musician on the road. He toured with Dizzy Gillespie (1917–1993) in 1956 and Lionel Hampton (1909–2002) in 1957, and then he made his base in Paris, France. He studied with composer Nadia Boulanger (1887–1979), wrote for Harry Arnold's Swedish All-Stars in Stockholm, Sweden, and directed the music for Harold Arlen's production *Free and Easy*,

which toured Europe for three months, ending in early 1960.

After an unsuccessful tour of the United States with a band made up of eighteen musicians from *Free and Easy*, Jones worked as musical director at Mercury Records in New York. He became the first African American executive in a white-owned record company in 1964 when he was promoted to vice president at Mercury. He produced albums, sat in on recording sessions, and wrote arrangements for artists at Mercury as well as other labels. Jones wrote for Andy Williams (1928–), Peggy Lee (1920–2002), and Aretha Franklin (1942–), as well as arranging and conducting *It Might As Well Be Swing*, an album featuring Frank Sinatra (1915–1998) and the Count Basie (1904–1984) Band.

Film and television music

Jones's first venture into Hollywood came when he composed the score (the music that accompanies a movie) for the 1965 film *The Pawnbroker*. Jones won an Academy Award for his score for *In Cold Blood* (1967) and went on to write the music for over fifty films. In 1969 Jones signed a contract as a recording artist with A&M Records, and his first album with that label, *Walking in Space*, won a Grammy for best jazz instrumental (without vocals) album of 1969.

Television has also featured Jones's music, starting in 1971 with musical scores and theme songs for such shows as *Ironsides* and *Sanford and Son*. In 1973 Jones co-produced "Duke Ellington, We Love You Madly," a special for the Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS), featuring a forty-eight-piece orchestra conducted by Jones. The special was a project of the Institute for Black American Music, a foundation

formed by Jones and other musicians with the goal of increasing awareness of the African American contribution to American music and Duke Ellington (1899–1974) in particular. Jones also wrote the score for the successful 1977 television mini-series *Roots*.

Recording and producing

Burned out from producing film soundtracks, Jones stopped working for Hollywood in 1973 to explore his own music career as a vocalist. His singing debut was with Valerie Simpson on an album called *You've Got It Bad, Girl*. The title song from the album stayed at the top of the charts for most of the summer of 1973. Jones's next album, 1974's *Body Heat*, was an even bigger hit. Containing the hit songs "Everything Must Change" and "If I Ever Lose This Heaven," the album sold over a million copies. In 1974 Jones nearly died after suffering two aneurysms (irregular stretching of blood vessels) two months apart. After a six-month recovery he was back at work, touring and recording with a fifteen-member band, with which he released the album *Mellow Madness*.

After Jones's 1980 album *The Dude* won five Grammy awards, he signed a deal with Warner Brothers Records to create his own label, Qwest. It took Jones almost ten years to make his next album, *Back on the Block*. During that time he produced hit albums for other artists, including Michael Jackson's *Thriller* (1983), which is still one of the best-selling albums of all time with forty million copies sold. Jones also has one of the best-selling singles of all time, "We Are the World," to his credit. Another triumph for Jones in the mid-1980s was his production of *The Color Purple*, the film version of Alice



Quincy Jones.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Walker's (1944–) novel, which featured the first film performance of Oprah Winfrey.

Later years

In the early 1990s Jones worked on a huge, ongoing project, "The Evolution of Black Music," for which he had been gathering material for years. He was back in television as well; the Quincy Jones Entertainment Company produced the National Broadcasting Company (NBC) comedy *Fresh Prince of Bel-Air* and as a weekly talk show hosted by Jones's friend the Reverend Jesse Jackson (1941–). Jones also worked on a film biography of the black Russian poet Alexander Pushkin (1799–1837). Quincy Jones Broad-

casting and Time Warner bought a New Orleans, Louisiana, television station, WNOL, which Jones was to oversee.

Quincy Jones has been married and divorced three times, and his six children have only recently been able to spend time with and come to know their father. The 1990 documentary *Listen Up: The Lives of Quincy Jones* contains scenes in which Quincy discusses his difficult childhood, his mentally ill mother, and his strained past with his children. The film also contains interviews with Frank Sinatra, Michael Jackson, and others who describe Jones as a hard worker with a creative brilliance that has influenced popular entertainment since 1950. In 1993 Jones started *Vibe* magazine, a well-received African American music journal. In 1995 he released Q's *Jook Joint*, featuring the talents of many of his friends such as Ray Charles and Stevie Wonder (1950–). The album was a celebration of his fifty years in the music industry.

In May 2000 the Quincy Jones Professorship of African American Music was established at Harvard University in Massachusetts. In January 2001 Jones received the first Ted Arison Award from the National Foundation for Advancement in the Arts, named for the man who created the organization. Later that year Jones contributed a song to the *Ocean's Eleven* soundtrack, published *Q: The Autobiography of Quincy Jones*, the story of his life, and received a Kennedy Center Honor in Washington, D.C. In February 2002 *Q: The Autobiography of Quincy Jones* won a Grammy in the best spoken word album category.

For More Information

Bayer, Linda N. *Quincy Jones*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House Publishers, 2001.

Jones, Quincy. *Q: The Autobiography of Quincy Jones*. New York: Doubleday, 2001.

Kavanaugh, Lee Hill. *Quincy Jones: Musician, Composer, Producer*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1998.

Ross, Courtney Sale. *Listen Up: The Lives of Quincy Jones*. New York: Warner Books, 1990.

BEN JONSON

Born: 1572

London, England

Died: August 6, 1637

London, England

English writer, playwright, and poet

Ben Jonson was an English playwright and poet best known for his satiric comedies (types of comedies that poke fun at human weaknesses). In many peoples opinion he was, next to William Shakespeare (1564–1616), the greatest dramatic genius of the English Renaissance (roughly the fourteenth through sixteenth centuries).

Early career

Ben Jonson was probably born in or near London, England, about a month after the death of his father, a clergyman (someone who works for the church). His father gained his position when King Henry VIII (1491–1547) ruled England, but lost it after Queen Mary (1516–1558) took the throne.

Jonson's mother then married a bricklayer. This may be why he did not continue his schooling. His stepfather made him work in the more practical business of bricklaying. Jonson also spent some time as a soldier and a traveling actor. He married sometime between 1592 and 1595.

Many people thought that English literature, and particularly drama, had already reached as high as it could when Ben Jonson began his career. But Jonson helped it gain even higher goals. Jonson's special gift was his strong sense of artistic form and control. Although an accomplished scholar, he could also write in the way everyday people spoke. It was because of this skill that he was liked by both people who were well read and by people who did not have an advanced education.

Major works

Jonson's first major play was *Every Man in His Humour*. It was performed by a theater group called the Lord Chamberlain's Men. William Shakespeare performed the lead role. This play is a model of what is called the "comedy of humors," in which each character's action is ruled by a whim (impulse) or affectation (artificial behavior meant to impress others). After this play Jonson wrote *Every Man out of His Humour* in 1599 or early 1600, followed closely by *Cynthia's Revels* (1601) and *Poetaster* (1601).

Jonson gained fame when he wrote *Volpone, or the Fox* in 1606. It was loved not only by the people in London but also by the scholars at the universities of Oxford and Cambridge. This was a major success for Jonson. After *Volpone*, Jonson wrote *Epicoene, or the Silent Woman* (1609), *The Alchemist* (1610), and *Bartholomew Fair* (1614).



Ben Jonson.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Later years

After *Bartholomew Fair*, Jonson did not write very well. However, many young poets and playwrights considered him a hero and called themselves "sons of Ben" or the "tribe of Ben." He was always considered an impressive and respected figure.

Much of the information about Jonson's personal life comes to us after this last period of playwriting. He spent a lot of time with the Scottish poet William Drummond of Hawthornden (1585–1649) in 1618. Drummond wrote down all the conversations he had with Jonson. Drummond said that Jonson was "a great lover and praiser of himself, a contemner

[despiser] and scorner of others, given rather to lose a friend than a jest.” In other words, Jonson made many jokes about other people and considered himself superior to others.

Jonson also wrote many other nondramatic writings, including a grammar of English, a miscellaneous (made of many different parts) collection of notes, and reflections on various authors entitled *Timber, or Discoveries* (also printed in 1640). He also wrote a large number of poems, almost all of them written in response to particular events in the poet's experience. Most of his poetry was written in short lyric (songlike) forms, which he handled with great skill. Jonson's poetic style also tends to be simple and unadorned yet highly polished, as in the epigram (a short witty poem) on the death of his first daughter, which begins “Here lies to each her parents ruth [sorrow],/Mary, the daughter of their youth.”

After the death of King James I of England (1603–1625) in 1625, Jonson suffered a number of setbacks. His talents were not fully appreciated by the new king, and as a result Jonson was frequently short of money. He was paralyzed in 1628 due to illness and confined for the remainder of his life to his home in Westminster. He continued his scholarly study of the classics, which had occupied him throughout his active life.

Jonson died on August 6, 1637. Because he was considered one of the most accomplished writers of the time, he was given the special honor of being buried in Westminster Abbey, in England.

For More Information

Barish, Jonas A. *Ben Jonson and the Language of Prose Comedy*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1960.

Cave, Richard Allen. *Ben Jonson*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Kay, W. David. *Ben Jonson: A Literary Life*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1995.

Partridge, Edward B. *The Broken Compass: A Study of the Major Comedies of Ben Jonson*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1958.

Riggs, David. *Ben Jonson: A Life*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1989.

MICHAEL JORDAN

Born: February 17, 1963

Brooklyn, New York

African American basketball player

Basketball superstar Michael Jordan is one of the most successful, popular, and wealthy athletes in college, Olympic, and professional sports history.

Early life

Michael Jordan was born on February 17, 1963, in Brooklyn, New York, one of James and Deloris Jordan's five children. The family moved to Wilmington, North Carolina, when Michael was very young. His father worked as a General Electric plant supervisor, and his mother worked at a bank. His father taught him to work hard and not to be tempted by street life. His mother taught him to sew, clean, and do laundry. Jordan loved sports but failed to make his high school basketball team as a sophomore. He

continued to practice and made the team the next year. After high school he accepted a basketball scholarship to the University of North Carolina, where he played under head coach Dean Smith.

In Jordan's first season at North Carolina he was named Atlantic Coast Conference (ACC) Rookie of the Year for 1982. The team won the ACC championship, and Jordan made the clutch jump shot that beat Georgetown University for the championship of the National Collegiate Athletic Association (NCAA). Jordan led the ACC in scoring as a sophomore and as a junior. The *Sporting News* named him college player of the year for both years. He left North Carolina after his junior year and was selected by the Chicago Bulls of the National Basketball Association (NBA) as the third pick of the 1984 draft. Before joining the Bulls, Jordan was a member of the Summer 1984 United States Olympic basketball team that won the gold medal in Los Angeles, California.

Early pro years

When Jordan was drafted by the Chicago Bulls they were a losing team, drawing only around six thousand fans to home games. Jordan quickly turned that around. His style of play and fierce spirit of competition reminded sportswriters and fans of Julius Erving (1950–), who had been a superstar player during the 1970s. Jordan's incredible leaping ability and hang time thrilled fans in arenas around the league. In his first season he was named to the All-Star team and was later honored as the league's Rookie of the Year.

A broken foot sidelined Jordan for 64 games during the 1985–86 season, but he



Michael Jordan.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

returned to score 49 points against the Boston Celtics in the first game of the playoffs and 63 in the second game—an NBA playoff record. The 1986–87 season was again one of individual successes, and Jordan started in the All-Star game after receiving a record 1.5 million votes. He became the first player since Wilt Chamberlain (1936–1999) to score 3,000 points in a single season. Jordan enjoyed personal success, but Chicago did not advance beyond the first round of the playoffs until 1988. Jordan concentrated on improving his other basketball skills, and in 1988 he was named Defensive Player of the Year. He was also named the league's Most

Valuable Player (MVP) and became the first player to lead the league in both scoring and steals. He was again named MVP in that year's All-Star game.

By adding such players as Scottie Pippen, Bill Cartwright, Horace Grant, and John Paxson around Jordan, the Bulls' management created a strong team that won the 1991 NBA title by defeating the Los Angeles Lakers. The next year, the Bulls repeated as NBA champions by beating the Portland Trail Blazers. In 1992 Jordan also played on the "Dream Team," which participated in the Summer Olympic Games in Barcelona, Spain. The Olympic Committee had voted to lift the ban on professional athletes participating in the games. The team easily won the gold medal, winning their eight games by an average margin of 43.7 points.

Unexpected retirement

In 1993, after a tough playoff series with the New York Knicks, the Bulls met the Phoenix Suns for the NBA championship. When it was over, Jordan was again playoff MVP, and Chicago had won a third straight title. That summer Jordan's father, James, was murdered by two men during a robbery attempt. Jordan was grief stricken, and his father's death, combined with media reports about his gambling, led him to announce his retirement from professional basketball in October. Jordan had won three straight NBA titles, three regular season MVP awards, three playoff MVP titles, seven consecutive scoring titles, and he was a member of the All-Star team every year that he was in the league. In just nine seasons he had become the Bulls all-time leading scorer.

In 1994–95 Jordan played for the Birmingham Barons, a minor league baseball team in the Chicago White Sox system. Although the seventeen-month experiment showed that he was not a major league baseball player, the experience and time away from basketball provided a much-needed rest and opportunity to regain his love of basketball.

Return to glory

When Jordan returned to the Chicago Bulls during the 1994–95 regular season, people wondered, "Could he do it again?" He played well, but he was obviously rusty. The Bulls were defeated in the playoffs by the Orlando Magic. After a summer of playing basketball during breaks from filming the live-action cartoon movie *Space Jam*, Jordan returned with a fierce determination to prove that he had the ability to get back on top. The 1995–96 Bulls finished the regular season 72–10, an NBA record for most wins in a season, and Jordan, with his shooting rhythm back, earned his eighth scoring title. He also became the tenth NBA player to score 25,000 career points and second fastest after Chamberlain to reach that mark. The Bulls went on to win their fourth NBA championship, overpowering the Seattle SuperSonics in six games. Few who watched will ever forget how Jordan sank to his knees, head bent over the winning ball, in a moment of bittersweet victory and deep sadness. The game had been played on Father's Day, three years after his father's murder.

The defending champions had a tougher time during the 1996–97 season but entered the playoffs as expected. Sheer determination took the Bulls to their fifth NBA championship. Illness, injury, and at

times a lack of concentration hurt the team. In the fifth game of the finals Jordan carried the team to victory despite suffering from a stomach virus. In the 1997–98 season the Bulls were again in the playoffs, and again they faced tough competition. As before, they were able to clinch the NBA championship, and Jordan claimed his sixth NBA finals MVP award.

Jordan's other professional life as a businessman was never off track. Profitable endorsements (ads in which he voiced his support for certain products) for companies such as Nike and Wheaties, as well as his own golf company and products such as Michael Jordan cologne (which reportedly sold 1.5 million bottles in its first two months), made Jordan a multimillionaire. In 1997 he was ranked the world's highest paid athlete, with a \$30 million contract—the largest one-year salary in sports history—and approximately \$40 million a year in endorsement fees.

Retired again

Jordan retired for a second time in 1999, ending his career on a high note just after the official end of a labor dispute between NBA players and team owners. Many people saw him as the greatest basketball player ever, and his retirement was called the end of an era. In 2000 Jordan became part-owner and president of basketball operations of the Washington Wizards. This made him only the third African American owner in the NBA. He also gained an ownership stake in the Washington Capitals hockey team. Also in 2000, Jordan celebrated the first year of his \$1 million grant program to help teachers make a difference in their schools.

In September 2001, after months of rumors, Jordan announced that he was ending his three-year retirement to play for the Wizards at age thirty-eight. At a news conference to discuss his comeback, he said, "Physically, I know I'm not twenty-five years old, but I feel I can play the game of basketball on the highest level." The Wizards, who had won only nineteen games the season before, improved with the addition of Jordan. After being voted to play in his thirteenth All-Star game (during which he missed a slam dunk), Jordan had the Wizards in the race for the playoffs until suffering a knee injury and missing the last part of the season. He was also distracted in January 2002 when his wife Juanita, whom he married in 1989, filed for divorce. (They have three children.) The next month the divorce was called off. Jordan said he planned to play one more season for the Wizards.

For More Information

- Greene, Bob. *Hang Time*. New York: Doubleday, 1992.
- Gutman, Bill. *Michael Jordan: A Biography*. New York: Pocket Books, 1991.
- Halberstam, David. *Playing for Keeps: Michael Jordan and the World He Made*. New York: Random House, 1999.
- Jordan, Michael. *For the Love of the Game: My Story*. New York: Crown Publishers, 1998.
- Naughton, Jim. *Taking to the Air: The Rise of Michael Jordan*. New York: Warner Books, 1992.
- Smith, Sam. *The Jordan Rules*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1992.



James Joyce.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

JAMES JOYCE

Born: February 2, 1882

Rathgar, Ireland

Died: January 13, 1941

Zurich, Switzerland

Irish author

James Joyce was an Irish author who experimented with ways to use language, symbolism (having one thing to stand for another), interior monologue (characters talking to themselves), and stream of

consciousness (the uninterrupted, continuous flow of a character's thoughts).

Early years

James Joyce was born on February 2, 1882, in Rathgar, Ireland, a suburb of Dublin, Ireland. His father had several jobs including a position as tax collector for the city of Dublin. His mother, Mary Jane Murray Joyce, was a gifted piano player. James's father was not very successful, and the family had to move fourteen times from the time James was born until he left Ireland.

Joyce was educated entirely in Jesuit (a Catholic religious order) schools in Ireland. He did very well in the study of philosophy (the study of humans and their relationship to the universe) and languages. After his graduation in 1902, he left Ireland for the rest of his life. After that he lived in Trieste, Italy; Zurich, Switzerland; and Paris, France, with his wife and two children.

Early fiction

Most of Joyce's fiction is autobiographical, that is, it is based on his own life experiences. Even though he left his native country, his work is based mainly on Ireland, family, and Roman Catholicism.

Joyce's *Dubliners* is a collection of fifteen short stories. He finished writing the work in 1904, but it could not be published until ten years later because the British government thought it contained things that offended the king. *A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man*, published in 1916, is a semi-autobiographical (based on the author's own life) novel of adolescence (the teenage years). It is the story of Stephen Dedalus, a young writer who

rebels against the surroundings of his youth. He rejects his father, family, and religion, and, like Joyce, decides at the novel's close to leave Ireland. His name comes from Greek mythology (stories that tell of gods or explain natural occurrences). In the myth Dedalus made a maze to hold the Minotaur (a monster that was half man and half bull). He was jailed in the labyrinth with his son, Icarus. In order to escape, he made wings of feathers and wax, but Icarus flew too near the sun, which melted the wax causing him to die when he plunged into the sea. For Joyce and others after him, Stephen Dedalus became a symbol for all artists. Stephen appears again in *Ulysses*, perhaps Joyce's most respected novel.

Ulysses

Joyce published *Ulysses* in 1922. Many consider it Joyce's most mature work. It is patterned after Homer's *Odyssey*. Homer was a Greek poet who produced his works around 850 B.C.E. Each of the eighteen chapters is related to a part of the original Greek epic (long poem that tells a heroic story), but there are other sources, too. The action takes place in a single day, June 16, 1904. It tells the story of Leopold Bloom, his wife Molly, and Stephen Dedalus, and how the actions of each person touches the others during that day. *Ulysses* is considered one of the most important books in the development of the modern novel. To tell this story, Joyce used what he called the stream of consciousness. Using this technique Joyce permits the reader to enter the consciousness (thoughts) of his characters, listen to parts of conversations, experience what the characters feel, and relive their memories.

Finnegans Wake

Finnegans Wake is the most difficult of all of Joyce's works to understand. It was published in 1939. The novel has no real plot. Instead, it relies upon sound, rhythm of language, and puns (word jokes). These parts create a surface and the meanings are under that surface. Most people consider *Finnegans Wake* to be a novel, but others have called it a poem. The novel was not well-received, and Joyce relied on the help of friends for financial assistance after it was published.

Late life

Joyce knew his family was not safe in France when it was taken over by the Germans during World War II (1939–45; a war in which Germany, Japan, and Italy fought against France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States). He borrowed money and fled to Switzerland with his family. Joyce died in Zurich, Switzerland, on January 13, 1941. He is considered one of the most important novelists of the twentieth century.

The modern novel owes much to James Joyce. His understanding of philosophy, theology (religious studies), and foreign languages enabled him to use the English language in exciting new ways. His novel *Ulysses* was brought to trial on charges of obscenity (being offensive) in the United States, but Joyce was found innocent. This marked a breakthrough on how subject matter and language could be used in the modern English novel.

For More Information

Anderson, Chester G. *James Joyce and His World*. London: Thames & Hudson, 1967.

Beja, Morris. *James Joyce: A Literary Life*. Columbus: Ohio State University Press, 1992.

Burgess, Anthony. *Re Joyce*. New York: Norton, 1965.

Ellmann, Richard. *James Joyce*. Rev. ed. New York: Oxford University Press, 1982.

O'Brien, Edna. *James Joyce*. New York: Viking Penguin, 1999.

BENITO JUÁREZ

Born: March 21, 1806

San Pablo Guelatao, Oaxaca, Mexico

Died: July 18, 1872

Mexico City, Mexico

Mexican statesman and president

Benito Juárez was a Mexican statesman and four-time president of Mexico. After resisting takeover by European powers, Juárez installed numerous social changes that would improve the lives of the Mexican people.

Early life

Benito Juárez was born in the small Zapotec Indian village of San Pablo Guelatao, Oaxaca, Mexico, on March 21, 1806. His parents, who were poor peasants, died when he was three years old. Juárez then lived with his grandparents and later with an uncle. He worked with his uncle until he was thirteen. Then he walked forty miles to the city of Oaxaca, Mexico, to move in with his sister. At the

time he could not yet speak Spanish (he spoke the language used in the Oaxaca tribe).

In Oaxaca, Juárez worked with Don Antonio Salanueva, a bookbinder, who basically adopted him. Helped by Salanueva and a local teacher, Juárez eventually learned to read and write. In 1827 he graduated from the Seminary of Santa Cruz, but later changed career paths and decided to study law. In 1831 he qualified to enter a local law office, but as the legal profession was already overcrowded, he began a second career as an antiestablishment Liberal politician with goals to change the Mexican government.

Early career

In 1831 Juárez entered politics as an official on the Oaxacan town council. In 1835 the city elected him as a Liberal deputy to the federal legislature. He carried forward his legal career, often serving as a representative of the severely poor Indian communities in their struggles to protect their landholdings. Honest and intelligent, he became one of Oaxaca's leading lawyers.

By this time, Mexico seemed on the verge of total collapse. Thirty years of violence had left the treasury bankrupt, communications disrupted, and the population unconfident. Two factions (rival groups creating conflict), defining themselves as Conservatives and Liberals, constantly fought to control Mexico. The Conservatives, represented large landholders, the Church, the army, and the large cities. The Liberals, who represented small merchants, some intellectuals, political leaders in rural areas, and the small ranchers of the west and south, wanted to modernize Mexico.

During the Conservative domination of Mexico between 1836 and 1846, Juárez largely avoided elective office but often accepted professional and political appointments from the Conservative state authorities. In 1841 the state government appointed him a federal court judge, a post in which he served with excellence. His local standing had increased through his marriage to Margarita Mazza, the daughter of one of Oaxaca's wealthiest families.

Governor of Oaxaca

In 1846 the Liberal party, led by former president Valentín Gómez Farías, took power throughout Mexico and Juárez returned to the Liberal faction. In 1847 and 1848, during Mexico's war with the United States over land in America's Southwest, he became Oaxaca's acting governor and then elected governor.

Juárez reduced corruption and built roads, public buildings, and schools. He reorganized the state national guard, and when he left office in 1852, the economy of Oaxaca was in good standing. His state government became renowned throughout Mexico for its honesty, public spirit, and constructiveness. He also served as a lawyer, often helping the poor.

In 1853 the Conservative party, led by the brilliant Lucas Alamán (1792–1853), seized power by a barracks coup, or hostile takeover. One of the revolt's leaders was Antonio López de Santa Ana (1794–1876), the corrupt general who had frequently dominated Mexico during the previous twenty years. Seeking to strengthen his power, Santa Ana immediately exiled (forced to leave) the leaders of the Liberal party, including Juárez.



Benito Juárez.

Return to Mexico

In Mexico, Santa Ana had run the country into further bankruptcy (complete financial ruin). Liberals launched a revolt and Santa Ana's government collapsed with little fighting. The Liberals again assumed power with Juan Álvarez as president. But the voluntary retirement of Álvarez in 1857 ended the Liberal hopes for a peaceful transformation of Mexico. The following period, known as the Three Year War (1857–60), proved to be one of the most bloody and wasteful in Mexican history.

The only positive result of these years was the emergence of Juárez as the undisputed leader of the Liberal party. At the same

time, the Conservatives had named one of their own the president of Mexico and sent their troops northward to crush Liberal resistance. Through the conflict, Juárez fled to Veracruz, Mexico. Three years later, the reorganized Liberal armies under Santos Degollado, Porfirio Díaz, and Jesús González Ortega took Mexico City. The Conservative armies fell apart, and their leaders went into exile. In 1860 the Mexican people elected Juárez president.

Verge of collapse

Juárez was determined to carry out national reconstruction, but he had staggering problems. The government, seeking to develop a large agrarian middle class, or a class of farm workers, tried to distribute the lands to those working them. However, the Liberals needed money to pay the army and the national debt. Pressed for funds, public officials allowed these lands to go to those who could pay for them immediately, mostly rich land developers and foreign investors.

On the verge of economic collapse, Mexico was at the mercy of foreign nations, in particular England, France, and Spain. The English and Spanish soon withdrew, but the French emperor, Louis Napoleon (1808–1873), attempted to establish a Mexican empire under the Austrian archduke Maximilian (1832–1867). Aided by small Conservative forces, the French took Mexico City in 1863. Once again, Juárez was forced to flee.

End of his career

The years between 1864 and 1867 determined the future of Mexico and the Liberal reforms. Juárez refused to serve in an imperial cabinet, a body of advisors under control

of a foreign empire. The imperialists controlled the cities, but the countryside remained in a state of revolt. Faced with mounting costs in men and money and the rise of Prussia, which was part of the German empire, the French withdrew from Mexico.

Juárez accomplished much in the remaining four years of his life. The government began to build railroads and schools, the military budget was cut, and the Church was stripped of its large landholdings. Most important, Mexico had its first effective government, based upon the Constitution of 1857, which guaranteed free speech, free press, right of assembly (right to organize), and the abolishment of special legal privileges.

On the negative side, Juárez refused to distribute authority and insisted, despite much opposition, upon his own reelection in 1871. He sincerely believed that he alone could govern Mexico, but many now saw him as a dictator, or an absolute ruler. Furthermore, he had failed to rid the country of internal tariffs (taxes) or to reduce large independent landholdings. In 1871 his army crushed the revolt of Porfirio Díaz, but the Liberal party had split into factions. On July 18, 1872, the president suffered from a stroke and died at his desk.

Juárez had many failings, but he was one of the greatest Mexican executives. He fought for and established a liberal constitution and stubbornly saved the country from foreign domination, although he did little to help the rural proletariat, or working class.

For More Information

Bains, Rae. *Benito Juárez: Hero of Modern Mexico*. Mahwah, NJ: Troll Associates, 1993.

De Varona, Frank. *Benito Juárez, President of Mexico*. Brookfield, CT: Millbrook Press, 1993.

Palacios, Argentina. *Viva Mexico!: The Story of Benito Juárez and Cinco de Mayo*. Austin, TX: Raintree Steck-Vaughn, 1993.

Scholes, Walter V. *Mexican Politics during the Juárez Regime, 1855–1872*. Columbia: University of Missouri Press, 1957.

Wepman, Dennis. *Benito Juárez*. New Haven, CT: Chelsea House, 1986.

CARL JUNG

Born: July 26, 1875

Kesswil, Switzerland

Died: June 26, 1961

Küsnacht, Switzerland

Swiss psychologist and psychiatrist

The Swiss psychologist and psychiatrist Carl Jung was one of the major forces responsible for bringing psychological (having to do with the mind and its processes) thought and its theories into the twentieth century.

Jung's youth and personal life

Carl Gustav Jung was born on July 26, 1875, in Kesswil, Switzerland, the son of a Protestant minister. At the age of four, the family moved to Basel. When he was six years old, Carl went to the village school in Klein-Huningen. His father also started teaching him Latin at this time. During his childhood,

Jung preferred to be left alone to play by himself. He was happiest when he was in isolation with his thoughts.

As Jung grew older, his keen interest in a large variety of sciences, and the history of religion made the choice of a career quite difficult. However, he finally decided on medicine, which he studied at the University of Basel (1895–1900). He received his medical degree from the University of Zurich in 1902. Later he studied psychology (the scientific study of the mind and its processes) in Paris, France.

In 1903 Jung married Emma Rauschenbach. She was his loyal companion and scientific coworker until her death in 1955. The couple had five children, and lived in Küsnacht on the Lake of Zurich.

Career begins

Jung began his professional career in 1900 as an assistant to Eugen Bleuler (1857–1939) at the psychiatric clinic of the University of Zurich. During these years of his internship, Jung, with a few associates, worked out the so-called association experiment. This is a method of testing used to reveal affectively significant groups of ideas in the unconscious area of the psyche (the mind). These groups or “complexes” as Jung called them, would have a control over the affected person, and would encourage anxieties and inappropriate emotions.

When Jung read Sigmund Freud's (1856–1939) *Interpretation of Dreams*, he found his own ideas and observations to be basically confirmed and furthered. He sent his publication *Studies in Word Association* (1904) to Freud, and this was the beginning of their



Carl Jung.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

work together, as well as their friendship, which lasted from 1907 to 1913. Jung was eager to explore the secrets of the unconscious psyche expressed by dreaming, fantasies, myths, fairy tales, superstition, and occultism (belief in supernatural powers or forces). But Freud had already worked out his theories about the basic cause of every psycho-neurosis (an emotional problem that becomes known through physical symptoms or through feelings of anxiety, depression, or fear) and also his belief that all the expressions of the unconscious (the part of the mind that is not a usual part of a person's awareness) are hidden wish fulfillments. Jung felt more and

more that these theories were scientific presumptions (beliefs that are based on expected outcomes), which did not do full justice to the expressions of unconscious psychic life. For him the unconscious not only is a disturbing factor causing psychic illnesses but also is basically the source of man's creativeness and the roots of a person's consciousness. With such ideas Jung came increasingly into conflict with Freud, who regarded Jung's ideas as unscientific. Jung accused Freud of narrow-mindedness; Freud and his followers disapproved of Jung for his emphasis of the spiritual aspects of the psyche.

Jung's work after Freud

Jung was bothered by his break with Freud. He began a deepened self-analysis (an examination of oneself) in order to gain all the honesty and firmness for his own journey into discovering the mysteries of the unconscious psyche. During the years from 1913 to 1921 Jung published only three important papers: "Two Essays on Analytical Psychology" (1916, 1917) and "Psychological Types" (1921). The "Two Essays" provided the basic ideas from which his later work was developed. He described his research on psychological typology (the classification of personalities by studying their similarities and differences)—that there are two basic classifications, or "two types of personalities," in the way they relate to the world: introversion and extroversion. Introversion, in which one has the characteristic of being self-involved, withdrawn, occupied with one's "inner world." Extroversion, in which one relates to the world through social involvement and has interests outside of oneself and is "outgoing." He expressed the idea that it is the

“personal equation” which, often unconsciously but in agreement with one’s own typology, influences how an individual observes and interacts with their world.

Next to Jung’s typology, his main contribution was his discovery that man’s fantasy life has a certain structure. There must be subtle active centers in the unconscious which control natural behavior and free imagination. These combine to form Jung’s concept of archetypes. An individual will dream on impulse, and these dreams will have a theme or story similar to a fairy tale, or a myth, from a time long past, that are unknown to the person dreaming. To Jung this meant that archetypal symptoms (memories of experiences of people from the past that are present in every person’s unconscious mind) belong to human beings of all ages and from all times; they are the expression of a collective body of man’s basic psychic nature. Many neurotic sufferings have happened due to a feeling of self-estrangement (the alienation of oneself from oneself) because of man’s creation of a logical framework and control of his dependence on these “memories” of experiences that exist in the unconscious.

In order to study archetypal patterns and processes, Jung visited so-called primitive tribes. He lived among the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico and Arizona in 1924 and 1925 and among the inhabitants of Mt. Elgon in Kenya during 1925 and 1926. He later visited Egypt and India. To Jung, the religious symbols and phenomenology (a system of beliefs developed by studying peoples understanding and awareness of themselves) of Buddhism and Hinduism and the teachings of Zen Buddhism and Confucianism all

expressed differentiated experiences on the way to man’s inner world, a world which was badly neglected by Western civilization. Jung also searched for traditions in Western culture, which made up for its one-sided outgoing development toward reason and technology. He found these traditions in Gnosticism (belief that personal freedom comes through spiritual knowledge and understanding), Christian mysticism (the belief that instinct and spiritual feeling are the ways to find God), and, above all, occultism (knowledge or use of supernatural powers). Some of his major works are deep and clear psychological interpretations of alchemical (the ability and power to make common things special) writings, showing their living significance for understanding dreams and the hidden theme of neurotic and mental disorders.

Inner development and growth of personality

Of prime importance to Jung was the detailing of the stages of inner development and of the growth of the personality, which he termed the “process of individuation.” He described a strong impulse from the unconscious to guide the individual toward its most complete uniqueness. This achievement is a lifelong task of trial and error and identifying and uniting contents of the unconscious. It consists in an ever-increasing self-knowledge and in “becoming what you are.”

Jung lived for his explorations, his writings, and his psychological practice, which he had to give up in 1944 due to a severe heart attack. His career included the professorship of medical psychology at the University of Basel and the titular (title without the actual position) professorship of philosophy

from 1933 until 1942 on the faculty of philosophical and political sciences of the Federal Institute of Technology in Zurich. In 1948 he founded the C. G. Jung Institute in Zurich. Honorary doctorates were given to him by many important universities all over the world. Carl Gustav Jung died in Küssnacht on June 6, 1961.

For More Information

- Brockway, Robert W. *Young Carl Jung*. Wilmette, IL: Chiron Publications, 1996.
- Casement, Ann. *Carl Gustav Jung*. Thousand Oaks, CA: SAGE Publications, 2001.
- Dunne, Clare. *Carl Jung: Wounded Healer of the Soul*. New York: Parabola Books, 2000.
- Hayman, Ronald. *A Life of Jung*. New York: W. W. Norton, 2001.
- Jung, C. G. *Memories, Dreams, Reflections*. Rev. ed. Edited by Aniela Jaffé. New York: Vintage Books, 1989.
- McLynn, Frank. *Carl Gustav Jung: A Biography*. London: Bantam Press, 1996.



FRANZ KAFKA

Born: July 3, 1883

Prague, Czechoslovakia

Died: June 3, 1924

Prague, Czechoslovakia

*Czech-born German novelist and
short-story writer*

The Czech-born German novelist and short-story writer Franz Kafka presented man's experience of total isolation or separation from the environment around him. In his works man finds himself in a maze that he will never understand.

Early life

Franz Kafka was born on July 3, 1883, the eldest of six children of a middle-class merchant. He grew up as a member of a minority (the Jewish community) within a minority (the German-speaking population) at a time when there was little or no communication between the two groups or with the mainly Czech-speaking citizens of Prague. Even though Kafka acquired a thorough knowledge of Czech and a deep understanding of its literature early in his life, he was not accepted. This alienation (the state of being rejected or turned away) was reflected in his writing, most notably in the protagonists (main characters) of his stories, who were for the most part outcasts constantly asking,



Franz Kafka.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

“Where do I belong?” or “Where does man belong?”

An even greater source of frustration for Kafka was his domineering father, a successful businessman who was a powerful, imposing (impressive) man. Conflict with his father overshadowed Kafka’s childhood and youth. It was from his mother that he inherited his sensitive and dreamy qualities. In his literary works, Kafka transformed this total lack of communication into the relationship between authority figures and man.

Even as a youngster Kafka must have wanted to write. For his parents’ birthdays he

would compose little plays, which were performed at home by his three younger sisters, while he himself acted as stage manager. He was also an avid reader. Kafka attended a German grammar school from 1893 to 1901, and the Karl Ferdinand University of Prague from 1901 to 1906. He started out studying German literature but changed to the study of law in his second semester. In June 1906 he graduated with a degree of doctor of jurisprudence (the science of law).

Early works

In October 1906 Kafka began his practice of law. In early 1908 he joined the staff of the Workmen’s Compensation Division of the Austrian government, a post he held until his retirement for reasons of ill health in July 1922. Here he came to know the suffering of the underprivileged workmen and wrote his first published works, “Conversation with a Beggar” and “Conversation with a Drunkard,” which were published in 1909. Kafka’s first collection of stories was published in 1913 under the title *Contemplation*. These sketches are polished, light impressions based on observations of life in and around Prague.

In September 1912 Kafka composed the story “The Verdict” in a single night. The story contains all the elements normally associated with Kafka’s world, the most disorderly universe ever presented by a major artist. In “The Verdict” a bedridden authoritarian (domineering) father passes judgment on his conscientious (highly principled) but guilt-haunted son. His next work, completed in May 1913, was the story “The Stoker,” later incorporated in his novel *Amerika* and awarded the Fontane Prize in 1915, his first public recognition.

His stories

The year 1913 saw the publication of Kafka's best-known story, *The Metamorphosis*. For the reader Kafka creates a world of psychotic delusion (absurd and extreme mental perception not based on reality) by means of an outrageous event: "When Gregor Samsa woke one morning from restless dreams, he found himself transformed in his bed into a monstrous insect." In spite of Gregor's gallant efforts to master his new situation, he dies.

In 1914 Kafka published a novella (short novel), *In the Penal Colony*. Several stories were published in 1919 in a collection dedicated to his father and entitled *The Country Doctor*. His story "The Hunger Artist" was published the following year, and a collection of four stories was published in 1923. Again, as in *The Metamorphosis*, it is the outsiders (outcasts of society), however sensitive and gifted, who fall into psychotic delusions—not the healthy realists, who always seem to survive the struggle for existence.

One of Kafka's most important writings is the one-hundred-page letter to his father. Written in November 1919, it is an attempt to explain his conscience (one's own ideals and sense of wrong or right) to his father and to declare his final independence from his father's authority.

His novels

Kafka's three great novel fragments, *Amerika*, *The Trial*, and *The Castle*, might have been lost to the world altogether had it not been for the courage of his friend Max Brod (1884–1968). Editing them after Kafka's death, Brod ignored his friend's request to destroy all of his unpublished manuscripts.

In *The Trial*, published in 1925, a man is arrested and convicted by a mysterious court. He tries to learn the nature of the guilt he feels, and the nature of the court, but he fails. He dies in ignorance. *The Castle*, published in 1926, presents a newcomer's futile (having no useful result) struggle to win acceptance and enter a castle in which an unknown supreme authority resides. *Amerika* is about the adventures of a teenage European immigrant in America.

During the years 1920 to 1922, Kafka's health was badly threatened, and he was forced to take sick leave. Kafka left Prague at the end of July 1923 and moved to Berlin-Steglitz, where he wrote his last, comparatively happy story, "The Little Woman." He returned to Prague three months before his death on June 3, 1924.

Franz Kafka is regarded as one of the major literary figures of the twentieth century. His works present a world that is both realistic and dreamlike. Individuals in it struggle with guilt, isolation, and fear. Kafka once said that all of his stories were intended to convey the message that "the incomprehensible [that which cannot be understood by the intellect] cannot be comprehended."

For More Information

Adler, Jeremy D. *Franz Kafka*. Woodstock, NY: Overlook Press, 2002.

Hayman, Ronald. *K: A Biography of Kafka*. London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1981.

Pawel, Ernst. *The Nightmare of Reason: A Life of Franz Kafka*. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 1984.

WASSILY KANDINSKY

Born: December 4, 1866

Moscow, Russia

Died: December 13, 1944

Neuilly-sur-Seine, France

Russian painter and graphic artist

The Russian painter and graphic artist Wassily Kandinsky was one of the great masters of modern art, as well as the outstanding representative of pure abstract painting (using only colors and forms) that dominated the first half of the twentieth century.

Early years in Russia

Wassily Kandinsky was born on December 4, 1866, in Moscow, Russia. His father was a tea merchant. When he was five years old the family moved to Odessa, Russia. The young Kandinsky drew, wrote poems, and played the piano and the cello. Because his family was fond of traveling, Kandinsky got to see the Italian cities of Venice, Rome, and Florence as a young boy. He was also influenced by the imposing Muscovite (from Moscow) buildings such as the Kremlin.

Between 1886 and 1892 Kandinsky studied law and economics at the University of Moscow. In 1889 he was a member of a team formed to study the life of the people in the Vologda district in northwestern Russia. He was highly impressed by their folk art and the interior decorations of the village houses. The use of forms and colors became an influence in his art. In 1893 he accepted a position on the university's law faculty.

Beginnings as an artist

It was not until 1896, when Kandinsky was thirty years old, that he decided to become an artist. His artistic development was shaped greatly by an exhibition of French impressionist painters that was shown in Moscow in 1895. The impressionists used values of color and light to show their subjects rather than painting in fine detail. The works of Claude Monet (1840–1926) attracted Kandinsky's attention. In Monet's paintings the subject matter played a secondary role to color. It was as though reality and fairy tale were intermixed. That was the secret of Kandinsky's early work, which was based on folk art, and it remained so even as his work became more complex.

The year 1910 was crucial for Kandinsky and for the art world. Kandinsky produced his first abstract watercolor. In that work all elements of representation (the actual look of a subject) seem to have disappeared. In continuing his early abstract works he used strong straight-line strokes combined with powerful patches of color.

Return to Russia

When World War I (1914–18; a war in which Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Japan fought against Great Britain, France, Russia, and the United States) broke out, Kandinsky returned to Russia. In 1917 he married Nina Andreewsky. During the Russian Revolution (1917), which overthrew the czar, the ruler of Russia, the artist held an important post at the Commissariat (government bureau) of Popular Culture and at the Academy in Moscow. He organized twenty-two museums and became the director of the Museum of

Pictorial Culture. In 1920 he was appointed professor at the University of Moscow. The following year he founded the Academy of Arts and Sciences and became its vice president. At the end of that year, the Soviet attitude toward art changed, and Kandinsky left Russia.

Years in Germany and France

In 1922 Kandinsky became a professor at the Bauhaus (a school of art, architecture, and design) in Weimar, Germany. His art from about 1920 to 1924 has been called his architectural period because the shapes he used were more precise than before. There are points, straight or broken lines, single or in bunches, and snakelike, radiating segments of circles. The color is cooler, and more subdued (softer, quieter).

Kandinsky became a German citizen in 1928. In 1929 Kandinsky held his first one-man show in Paris, France, and traveled to Belgium and the French Riviera. In 1930 he had another exhibition in Paris. In 1931 he produced wall decorations for a large architectural exhibition that was held in Berlin, Germany. When the Bauhaus closed in 1932, Kandinsky moved to Berlin. A year after that he moved to Paris.

From 1927 to 1933, Kandinsky's paintings were characterized by abundant use of pictorial (like real pictures) signs and softer color. This is called his romantic or concrete period. It led to the last phase of his art, spent in France, which was a synthesis (blending) of his previous periods. The paintings of his Paris period have splendid color, rich invention, and delightful humor. In 1939 Kandinsky became a French citizen. He died on December 13, 1944, in Neuilly-sur-Seine, France.



Wassily Kandinsky.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Kandinsky is still greatly admired today for his own paintings and for being the originator of abstract art. He invented a language of abstract forms with which he replaced the forms of nature. He wanted to mirror the universe in his own visionary world. He felt that painting possessed the same power as music and that sign, line, and color ought to correspond to the vibrations of the human soul.

For More Information

Bill, Max. *Wassily Kandinsky*. Paris: Maeght, 1951.

Grohmann, Will. *Wassily Kandinsky: Life and Work*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1958.

Messer, Thomas M. *Vasily Kandinsky*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1997.

Overy, Paul. *Kandinsky: The Language of the Eye*. New York: Praeger, 1969.

Weiss, Peg. *Kandinsky and Old Russia*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1995.

IMMANUEL KANT

Born: April 22, 1724

Königsberg, East Prussia
(now Kaliningrad, Russia)

Died: February 12, 1804

Königsberg, East Prussia

German philosopher

The major works of the German philosopher Immanuel Kant offer an analysis of theoretical and moral reason and the ability of human judgment. He had a great influence on the intellectual movements of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries.

Childhood and education

The fourth of nine children of Johann Georg and Anna Regina Kant, Immanuel Kant was born in the town of Königsberg, East Prussia, on April 22, 1724. Johann Kant was a harness maker, and the large family lived a humble life. The family belonged to a Protestant religious group of Pietists (a German religious movement whose members strongly believed in religious experience and

biblical study), and a concern for religion touched every aspect of their lives. Although Kant became critical of formal religion, he continued to admire the “praiseworthy conduct” of Pietists. Kant’s elementary education was at Saint George’s Hospital School and then at the Collegium Fredericianum, a Pietist school, where he remained from 1732 until 1740. Here he gained a deep appreciation for the classics of Latin literature, especially the poet Lucretius.

In 1740 Kant entered the University of Königsberg. He became interested in philosophy, mathematics, and the natural sciences. The death of Kant’s father in 1746 left him without income. He became a private tutor for seven years in order to have enough time and money to continue his education. During this period Kant published several papers dealing with scientific questions. The most important was the “General Natural History and Theory of the Heavens” in 1755. In this work Kant concluded the origin of the solar system was a result of the gravitational (having to do with the force exerted between bodies of matter) connection of atoms (the smallest pieces of matter). In the same year Kant presented a Latin treatise, “On Fire,” to qualify for the doctoral degree.

Kant spent the next fifteen years (1755–1770) as a lecturer. In order to live he lectured between twenty-six and twenty-eight hours a week. Despite this enormous teaching burden, Kant continued to publish papers on various topics. He finally achieved a professorship at Königsberg in 1770.

Critique of Pure Reason

At the age of fifty-seven Kant published the first edition of the *Critique of Pure Reason*

(1781; 2d ed. 1787). This enormous work is one of the most important and difficult books in Western thought. The aim of the critique is to explain how experience and reason interact in thought and understanding. The *Critique of Pure Reason* is a methodology (a collection of methods and rules) of how “understanding and reason [the power of understanding] can know apart from experience.” This revolutionary proposal means that the mind organizes our experiences into the way the world appears and the way that we think about the world. Any experience is placed into one of these categories so that it can be understood. Kant also wrote that the mind can have knowledge of things that have or have not been experienced, but these are only possibilities. Kant does not say that the mind creates objects—only the conditions under which objects are noticed and understood. We can never know noumenal reality (theoretical objects or ideas that are understood by thought alone) with any certainty.

Kant suggests that the theories of God, freedom, and immortality (something that goes against ideas of right and wrong) are not proved or disproved through the use of reason, nor can the use of scientific methods prove or disprove their existence. The idea of them is beyond the realm of human experience. Kant expressed that faith in God, freedom, and immortality are rational beliefs because their existence makes an orderly and moral world a possibility.

Later works

In 1783 Kant restated the main outlines of his first critique in a brief, analytic form in the *Prolegomena to Any Future Metaphysics*. In



Immanuel Kant.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

1785 he presented an early view of the practical aspects of reason in *Fundamental Principles of the Metaphysics of Morals*. In 1788 he published the *Critique of Practical Reason*.

While theoretical reason is concerned with knowledge, practical reason is concerned with will, or self-determination. There is only one human reason, but after it decides what it can know, it must determine how it shall act. Thus the freedom of the will determines how one shall lead his life. And the basic, reasonable principle of a free morality (a morality that one is free to choose) is some universal and necessary law

which follows. This principle is called by Kant the “Categorical Imperative,” which states that a man should act in a way that is acceptable and applicable to all people. In questioning the outcome of man’s freedom, Kant insists that practical reason assumes the immortality of the soul and the existence of God as the conditions for true freedom.

In 1790 Kant completed his third critique, which attempts to draw these conflicting ideas together. The *Critique of Judgment* attempts to connect the concepts of nature with the concepts of freedom.

Although Kant continued to write until shortly before his death, the “critical works” are the source of his influence. Only a life of extraordinary self-discipline enabled him to accomplish his task. He was barely five feet tall and extremely thin, and his health was fragile. Toward the end of his life he became increasingly antisocial and bitter over the growing loss of his memory and capacity for work. Kant became totally blind and finally died on February 12, 1804, in Krönigsberg.

For More Information

- Kuehn, Manfred. *Kant: A Biography*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 2001.
- Scruton, Roger. *Kant: A Very Short Introduction*. Rev. ed. New York: Oxford University Press, 2001.
- Sedgwick, Sally, ed. *The Reception of Kant’s Critical Philosophy: Fichte, Schelling, and Hegel*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Stuckenberg, J. H. W. *The Life of Immanuel Kant*. London: Macmillan, 1882. Reprint, Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 1986.

JOHN KEATS

Born: October 31, 1795

London, England

Died: February 23, 1821

Rome, Italy

English poet

The English Romantic poet John Keats stressed that man’s quest for happiness and fulfillment is thwarted (prevented from taking place) by the sorrow and corruption inherent (existing as an essential characteristic) in human nature. His works are marked with rich imagery and melodic beauty.

Early life

John Keats was born in London, England, on October 31, 1795, the first of Thomas and Frances Keats’s five children. Thomas was working as a stable manager for John Jennings when he met Jennings’s daughter, Francis. Thomas, known for his charm, energy, and respectability, crossed the social barrier and won Francis’s heart and the two were married. Both of John’s parents were affectionate and loving toward their children. John especially shared a close relationship with his mother. His father died in an accident in 1804. His mother, after a second marriage and divorce, died from a lung disease in 1810.

In 1811 Keats became an apprentice (worked for someone to learn a trade with little or no pay) to an apothecary (druggist) in Edmonton, England. There Keats first tried his hand at writing and produced four stanzas (short poems) entitled “Imitation of Spenser.”

These were inspired by the poem “Fairie Queene” by Edmund Spenser (c. 1552–1599).

On October 2, 1815, Keats started medical studies at Guy’s Hospital. He was a conscientious (careful) student, but poetry gained an increasing hold on his imagination. It is thought that Keats was influenced at this time by the boldness evident in a translation by George Chapman (c. 1559–1634) of the *Odyssey* by the Greek poet Homer (c. 850 B.C.E.). His first volume of poems was published in March 1817.

Publication of *Endymion*

Keats’s next work, *Endymion: A Poetic Romance*, was published in May 1818. Keats turned the story of Endymion, a mythical shepherd, into an allegory (a narrative in which abstract ideas are represented by people) of the romantic longing to overcome the boundaries of ordinary human experience. Endymion realizes that ultimate identification with transcendence (rising above the universe) is to be achieved through humble acceptance of human limitations and of the misery built into man’s condition. Keats’s letters reveal that at this time several of his friends were ill. His brother was very unwell, and he himself, after a bad cold, prophetically (foretelling) feared in October 1817 that “I shall never be again secure in Robustness (health and strength).”

In early 1818 Keats turned to straightforward narrative in *Isabella*, which is based on a story by Boccaccio (1313–1375). Its theme was connected with Keats’s more philosophical (pertaining to inquiry concerning the source and nature of human knowledge) pre-occupations—the beauty and greatness of tragic love.



John Keats.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Later works

Keats started work on *Hyperion* in September 1818. An essential part of its purpose was to describe the growth of the Greek god Apollo into a true poet through ever deeper acceptance and understanding of change and sorrow. But Keats was unable to get ahead with it for a number of reasons, including impaired health, negative reception of *Endymion* by an influential critic, and the death of his brother, Tom.

In spring 1819 Keats turned once more to verse narrative. He first produced the opulent “Eve of St. Agnes” in deliberate revulsion (extreme displeasure) against what he now

saw as the “mawkish” (sickly sentimental) sentimentality of *Isabella*. This was followed by “La Belle Dame Sans Merci,” a simple narrative poem that tells of the mysterious seduction of a medieval knight by another of Keats’s elusive, enigmatic (mysterious), half-divine ladies. Each poem embodies an important trend in Keats’s poetry, a longing mixed with fear and diffidence (lack of self-confidence) for some experience beyond human mortality.

These were followed in the spring and summer of 1819 by the first of his great odes: “Ode to Psyche,” “Ode on a Grecian Urn,” and “Ode to a Nightingale.” These, together with the later “Ode on Indolence” and “Ode on Melancholy,” are acutely imaginative explorations of the intricate (complex) relation between sorrow and bliss, life and dream.

During the latter half of 1819 Keats wrote his only drama, *Otho the Great*. He also made his last attempt to define the function of the poet in *The Fall of Hyperion*. However, like the earlier *Hyperion*, it was never completed and remains a tantalizing (fascinating) fragment of cryptic (mysterious) beauty.

His last years

Significantly, the last long poem that Keats wrote was *Lamia*. This is a brilliantly ambiguous (likely to be interpreted in more than one way) piece which leads to the conclusion that both the artist and the lover live on deceptive illusions (a world of the imagination not based on reality and likely to mislead). His third and last volume, *Lamia, Isabella, The Eve of St. Agnes and Other Poems*, was printed in July 1820.

In September 1820, although his health had been declining for some time, Keats left for

Italy on an invitation from the poet Percy Bysshe Shelley (1792–1822). He died in Rome on February 23, 1821, at the age of twenty-five.

All of Keats’s poetry is filled with a mysterious yet uplifting sense of beauty and joy. His works explore many possibilities but do not insist on any one answer to the enduring problems of life. The experience of life, not its perfect understanding, was Keats’s major concern.

For More Information

Hebron, Stephen. *John Keats*. London: British Library, 2002.

Keats, John. *Keats: Truth & Imagination*. Edited by K. E. Sullivan. New York: Gramercy Books, 1999.

Motion, Andrew. *Keats*. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 1998.

Walsh, John Evangelist. *Darkling I Listen: The Last Days and Death of John Keats*. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1999.

Ward, Aileen. *John Keats: The Making of a Poet*. Rev. ed. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 1986.

HELEN KELLER

Born: June 27, 1880

Tuscumbia, Alabama

Died: June 1, 1968

Westport, Connecticut

American activist for the physically disabled

Though both blind and deaf, American lecturer and author Helen Keller (1880–1968) traveled the world

over, fighting for improvement in the education and life of the physically handicapped.

Helen becomes deaf and blind

Helen Adams Keller was born in Tusculumbia, Alabama, on June 27, 1880. Her parents were Captain Arthur H. Keller and Katherine Adams Keller. Her father was a veteran of the confederate army (army that fought to separate from the United States during the Civil War, which lasted from 1861 to 1865). He also was the editor of the local newspaper, the *North Alabamian*. Helen was born a normal child. She started speaking when she was six months old. By the time she was a year old, she was able to communicate with her parents and she had also learned to walk. When Helen was eighteen months old an illness developed that the doctor described as brain congestion. She ran a high fever for many days, and then the fever was gone. Helen was left deaf and blind from the illness. Helen became a very wild, unruly child. She would scream and kick when she was angry and giggle and laugh when happy. She developed many of her own signals to communicate her needs with her parents.

Her early learning

When Helen was six, her mother contacted Dr. Alexander Graham Bell (1847–1922), whom she had heard was working on devices to help the deaf. Bell met with Helen and her parents and suggested that they contact the Perkins Institute for the Blind in Boston, Massachusetts. In March 1887 Anne Sullivan (1866–1936), a teacher at the institute, came to serve as Helen's teacher. Anne was twenty-one years old and had sight limitations of her own. One month after her arrival,

Sullivan had taught Keller the word "water." She did this by using her fingers to spell letters into Helen's hand. From this she understood that objects had names, and that her teacher spelled these names into her hand. This unlocked a whole new world of learning for Helen.

Anne Sullivan was with Helen day and night, constantly spelling into her hand the words and ideas of things going on around them. Helen was a quick learner. In only three years she learned the manual alphabet (sign language), the Braille alphabet (an alphabet created by Louis Braille [1809–1852] for the blind that relies on raised dots to communicate), and she could read and write.

Schools and education

Helen wanted to learn to speak, and in 1890 she began taking speech classes at the Horace Mann School for the Deaf in Boston. She worked diligently at learning to speak. After twenty-five years of hard work and practice, Helen was able to speak in a voice that others could understand.

From 1894 to 1896 Helen attended the Wright-Humason School for the Deaf. Here she continued to work on improving her communication, as well as her math, French, German, and geography. In this way Helen prepared herself for college and went on to Cambridge School for Young Ladies. Anne Sullivan attended every class with Helen and interpreted the lectures and books for her, as they were not in Braille. By the time she was sixteen, Keller had passed the admissions examinations for Radcliffe College; in 1904 she graduated cum laude (with honors). This was all done with the assistance of Anne Sullivan interpreting the lectures and texts.



Helen Keller.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Devotes life to helping others

As a young woman Keller became determined to learn about the world and to improve the lives of others. With insight, energy, and deep devotion to humanity, she lectured throughout the world, worked to forward her ideas in Congress, and wrote thousands of letters asking for contributions to finance efforts to improve the welfare of the blind. She visited hospitals and helped blind soldiers. She taught the blind to be courageous and to make their lives rich, productive, and beautiful for others and for themselves.

Keller associated with some of the greatest people of her time, including Alexander

Graham Bell, Mark Twain (1835–1910), Andrew Carnegie (1835–1919), John D. Rockefeller Sr. (1839–1937), and Presidents Grover Cleveland (1838–1908), Calvin Coolidge (1872–1933), and Woodrow Wilson (1856–1924). She authored such books as *Helen Keller's Journal*, *Out of the Dark*, *Midstream: My Later Life, My Religion*, *The Song of the Stone Wall*, *The World I Live In*, and *The Story of My Life*.

Sullivan served as Keller's counselor and companion. When Keller died in 1968 her name had become a worldwide symbol of what the human spirit can accomplish despite severe physical limitations.

For More Information

Ford, Carin T. *Helen Keller: Lighting the Way for the Blind and Deaf*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2001.

Herrmann, Dorothy. *Helen Keller: A Life*. New York: A. Knopf, 1998.

Keller, Helen. *Light in My Darkness*. 2nd ed. West Chester, PA: Chrysalis Books, 2000.

Keller, Helen. *The Story of My Life*. New York: Doubleday, Page, & Co., 1903, revised edition 1991.

Lash, Joseph P. *Helen and Teacher: The Story of Helen Keller and Anne Sullivan Macy*. New York: Delacorte Press, 1980.

GENE
KELLY

Born: August 23, 1912
Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania

Died: February 2, 1996

Beverly Hills, California

American dancer, actor, and choreographer

Although Gene Kelly established his reputation as an actor and a dancer, his contribution to the Hollywood, California, musical also includes choreography (creating dances) and movie direction.

Athletic childhood

Eugene Curran Kelly was born in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, on August 23, 1912, the middle son of five children. His father was Canadian-born and loved sports, especially hockey. Every winter Kelly Sr. would flood the family backyard and make an ice rink for hockey.

Kelly Jr. later credited hockey for some of his dance steps, which he described as “wide open and close to the ground.” At fifteen Kelly played with a semiprofessional ice hockey team. He also played football, baseball, and participated in gymnastics.

Turns to dancing

Kelly's other major influence was his mother, who loved the theater. She was the one who sent him to dancing lessons. At first Kelly did not want to continue with his dance lessons because the other students made fun of him. But then he discovered that the girls liked a boy who could dance, so he decided to stick with the lessons.

In 1929 Kelly left for Pennsylvania State College, but because of the Great Depression, his family lost their money. The Great Depression (1929–39) was a time of worldwide economic trouble that led to global

unemployment and poverty. Kelly had to move back home and attend the University of Pittsburgh in order to save the cost of room and board. While at the university, Kelly worked at a variety of odd jobs to pay his tuition: he dug ditches, worked at a soda fountain, and pumped gas. Kelly's mother began to work as a receptionist at a local dance school. She came up with the idea of the family running its own dance studio. They did and the studio was a big success.

After Kelly graduated from the University of Pittsburgh he taught dance for another six years. In 1937 he left for New York City. He believed that he was talented enough to find work and he was right. He got a job in theater his first week in New York. Kelly's big break came in 1940, when he was cast as the lead in the Rodgers and Hart musical *Pal Joey*.

Goes to Hollywood

Producers from Hollywood saw the show in New York and offered Kelly a contract with Metro Goldwyn Mayer (MGM). He worked for MGM for the next sixteen years. His first Hollywood film was *For Me and My Gal* (1942), in which he starred opposite Judy Garland (1922–1969). Garland was only twenty, but already a major star. She had seen Kelly's work and insisted that Kelly have the role. She tutored (taught) him how to act for the movies.

Kelly made a breakthrough with *Cover Girl* (1944). At one point in the film, his character dances with a mirror image of himself. It caught all the critics' attention. Kelly told *Interview* magazine, “[That is] when I began to see that you could make dances for cinema that weren't just photographed stage dancing. That was my big insight into Hollywood, and Hollywood's big insight into me.”



Gene Kelly.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Experiments with film

Kelly's experiments with dance and with film technique included combining the two, as demonstrated in such films as *Anchors Aweigh* (1945), where he danced with a cartoon mouse, *An American in Paris* (1951), and *Invitation to the Dance* (1956). His first attempts at film choreography relied on the established formulas of the film musical. Later he developed a system of choreography made for the camera that took into account camera setups, movement, and editing. Many people believe that he was the major influence in creating a new form of American dance, one that was different from

the more formal and ballet styles of European dance. Kelly danced in a more energetic, athletic way.

Kelly often played a guy who felt that the best way to get what he wanted was to impress people. However, he learns that his brashness (self-confidence without politeness) offends people. In the end he succeeds by being himself. Kelly's characters had much of the "average guy" in them and this quality appealed to audiences. His characters seemed so natural that people who saw his films did not always realize how very sophisticated (complex) his dancing and choreography were.

Singin' in the Rain

Nowhere was Kelly more engaging than in 1952's *Singin' in the Rain*. One of the all-time great movie musicals, and perhaps the film most associated with Kelly, this comedy is about late-1920s Hollywood and the change from silent pictures to "talkies" (movies with sound). *Singin' in the Rain* showcased the considerable acting, singing, and dancing gifts of Debbie Reynolds (1932–) and Donald O'Connor (1925–), but it was Kelly who danced away with the movie. His dance to the title song has become an icon (something that is regarded as the ideal) of American entertainment. Kelly made a drenching rainstorm and umbrella his partners, and communicated the joy in movement at the heart of all of his performances.

Gene Kelly died on February 2, 1996, in Beverly Hills, California. He will always be remembered for his incredible contribution to the movie musical through dance performance, choreography, and photography.

For More Information

- Hirschhorn, Clive. *Gene Kelly: A Biography*. Chicago: Regnery, 1975. Reprint, New York: St. Martin's Press, 1984.
- Kobal, John. *Gotta Sing, Gotta Dance*. Feltham, New York: Hamlin, 1970.
- Springer, John. *All Talking, All Singing, All Dancing*. New York: Citadel Press, 1966.
- Yudkoff, Alvin. *Gene Kelly: A Life of Dance and Dreams*. New York: Back Stage Books, 1999.

EDWARD KENNEDY

Born: February 22, 1932
Brookline, Massachusetts
American senator

Edward (Ted) Kennedy, brother of President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963) and Robert F. Kennedy (1925–1968), entered the U.S. Senate at age thirty and has steadily gained political influence as he continues to win reelection.

Preparing for public service

Edward Moore Kennedy was born in Brookline, Massachusetts, on February 22, 1932, fourth son and last of nine children of Joseph P. (1888–1969) and Rose Fitzgerald (1890–1995) Kennedy. His father was a multimillionaire businessman. Because his family moved frequently, Kennedy attended several different private schools before enrolling in Milton Academy, near Boston, Massachusetts,

in 1946. Upon graduation from Milton in 1950 he enrolled at Harvard University. At the end of his freshman year, however, he was expelled for having another student take a Spanish exam in his place. Kennedy then enlisted for a two-year term in the army. His father's influence won him an assignment as a guard to Supreme Headquarters Allied Powers, Europe (SHAPE) in Paris.

After completing his time in the army, Kennedy returned to Harvard and graduated in 1956. He then enrolled in the University of Virginia Law School, where his natural talent for debate was sharpened. He received his law degree in 1959 and was admitted to practice in Massachusetts in the same year. In November 1958 Kennedy married Virginia Joan Bennett; they had three children.

While still a law student Edward Kennedy managed the successful Senate reelection campaign in Massachusetts of his brother John Kennedy. In 1960 he served as Western states coordinator for John's campaign for the Democratic presidential nomination. After his brother's victory in the 1960 election, Edward took a position as assistant to the district attorney of Suffolk County, Massachusetts. As preparation for running in 1962 for the remainder of John's unfinished Senate term, Edward traveled widely and made many speeches.

Becoming a national figure

At the age of thirty, Kennedy easily won election to the Senate in 1962 over Republican George Cabot Lodge (1927–). Kennedy's slogan was: "I can do more for Massachusetts." As a junior legislator, Kennedy spent most of his time watching and learning from his Senate seniors, surprising some

KENNEDY, EDWARD



Edward Kennedy.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

observers who expected him to be more aggressive. A year after John Kennedy's 1963 assassination, Edward won election to his first full Senate term.

By 1967 Kennedy began to speak out against the Vietnam War (1955–75), a civil war in which U.S. forces helped South Vietnam fight against a takeover by Communist forces from North Vietnam. Kennedy focused mainly on the need for draft reform and the U.S. failure to provide for the Vietnamese war victims. After visiting South Vietnam in early 1968 he became even more critical, yet he managed to stay on good terms with the administration of President Lyndon Johnson

(1908–1973). Kennedy's life was strongly affected by the assassination of his brother Robert (1925–1968) in June 1968. After a period of withdrawal, he became more vocal in criticizing the Vietnam War and in pressing for selected social reforms. Though he denied interest in seeking the 1968 Democratic nomination, his actions clearly established him as heir to the "Kennedy legacy," and many expected that he would one day run for the presidency.

Presidential possibilities

The year 1969 began well for Kennedy, with his election as Senate majority whip (assistant leader) in January. Six months later, however, his career and reputation suffered a huge blow when, following a party, he drove his car off a narrow bridge on Chappaquiddick Island, near Massachusetts, resulting in the drowning of his companion, Mary Jo Kopechne (1940–1969). Kennedy's failure to report the accident for nearly nine hours was harshly condemned by press and public alike. In a televised speech a week later he asked the voters to advise him as to whether he should remain in office. The response was positive, as was the local court's verdict: Kennedy's sentence—for leaving the scene of an accident—was suspended.

Rumors about what really happened at Chappaquiddick did not burden him in the Senate. He was an outspoken critic of the administration of President Richard Nixon (1913–1994), opposing Nixon's antiballistic missile (ABM; a free-falling nuclear missile) installment proposal, backing various measures to end the Vietnam War, and leading the fight to lower the voting age to eighteen. Kennedy won an easy reelection in 1970,

however, he lost his majority whip post by a close vote in 1971. Freed from the responsibilities of his formal leadership post, he resumed his outspoken opposition to the Nixon administration with more energy than ever.

Many suspected that Kennedy would run for president in 1972, but he again denied any such ambitions. He refused the vice presidential nomination offered by Democratic nominee George McGovern (1922–). He turned his attention to other issues, such as handgun control and national health insurance. His 1972 book, *In Critical Condition*, was a sweeping criticism of the U.S. health care industry. In 1976 Kennedy announced again that he would not run for president even though polls showed that many people supported him. He continued to win reelection to the Senate and became chairman of its Judiciary Committee. He also loyally backed the Democratic foreign-policy programs of President Jimmy Carter (1924–).

Kennedy again emerged as the favorite in public opinion polls regarding the 1980 presidential nomination although he denied interest in the position. Finally yielding to temptation, he announced in November 1979 that he would challenge Carter for the nomination. However, his candidacy began miserably when he performed poorly in a televised interview (which revived the “Chappaquiddick issue”). The Iranian hostage crisis (an incident in which fifty-two Americans were held captive at the U.S. embassy in Iran by student protesters) and the Russian invasion of Afghanistan increased public support for Carter, at least temporarily. Carter locked up the Democratic nomination well before the party convention had even begun.

Kennedy, however, dominated the convention itself with one of his most stirring speeches.

A leader on national issues

When the Republicans gained control of the Senate in 1981, Kennedy lost his Judiciary Committee chairmanship and once again focused his energies mainly on social programs and labor issues. Kennedy emerged as an influential and constant critic of the domestic and foreign policies of President Ronald Reagan (1911–). In late 1982 Kennedy removed himself from competition for his party’s presidential nomination. He remained committed to an expanded federal role in pursuit of social and economic justice, yet he showed that he was clearly capable of sensible cost cutting when necessary.

Kennedy continues to work in the Senate to benefit the people of Massachusetts and the nation. He was an author of the 1996 Health Insurance and Portability Act, which allowed those who change or lose their job to maintain health insurance, and the 1997 Children’s Health Act, which increased access to health care for children age eighteen and under. To mark his contribution toward helping to fulfill the four essential freedoms for the world outlined by President Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945) in 1941, Kennedy was given the 1999 Four Freedoms Award by the Franklin and Eleanor Roosevelt Institute.

For More Information

Burner, David, and Thomas R. West. *The Torch Is Passed: The Kennedy Brothers and American Liberalism*. New York: Atheneum, 1984.

KENNEDY, JOHN F.

Burns, James McGregor. *Edward Kennedy and the Camelot Legacy*. New York: Norton, 1976.

Clymer, Adam. *Edward M. Kennedy: A Biography*. New York: Morrow, 1999.

David, Lester. *Good Ted, Bad Ted: The Two Faces of Edward M. Kennedy*. Secaucus, NJ: Carol Pub. Group, 1993.

Hersh, Burton. *The Shadow President: Ted Kennedy in Opposition*. South Royalton, VT: Steerforth Press, 1997.

JOHN F. KENNEDY

Born: May 29, 1917

Brookline, Massachusetts

Died: November 22, 1963

Dallas, Texas

American president

John F. Kennedy was the thirty-fifth president of the United States. He was the first president to reach for the moon, through the nation's space programs. He also was the first president since Theodore Roosevelt (1858–1919) with whom youth could identify. He made the nation see itself with new eyes. His assassination shocked the world.

Early life and family

John Fitzgerald Kennedy was born in Brookline, Massachusetts, on May 29, 1917. He was the second son of nine children born to the multimillionaire business executive

and financier Joseph P. Kennedy (1888–1969) and his wife, Rose Fitzgerald Kennedy (1890–1995). Joseph's father had served in the Massachusetts Legislature and in elective offices in Boston, Massachusetts. Rose's father, John Francis Fitzgerald (1863–1950), had been a state legislator, the mayor of Boston, and a U.S. congressman. Joseph himself had served as chairman of the Securities and Exchange Commission, chairman of the U.S. Maritime Commission, and ambassador to Great Britain (1937–40). Thus, the Kennedys were a wealthy family with a history of political and public service.

Education and the military

Kennedy attended the Canterbury parochial school (1930–31) and the Choate School (1931–35). One of his teachers later said that people in school liked him more for his personality than for his accomplishments. He was often ill during his childhood and spent much of this time reading. Kennedy enrolled at Princeton University in 1935 but illness soon forced him to withdraw. Upon recovery he went to Harvard University, where he majored in government and international relations. During his junior year at Harvard, he traveled in Europe and observed the events that were leading to World War II (1939–45; a war in which the Allies—France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, China, and from 1941 the United States—fought against the Axis powers—Germany, Italy, and Japan). He used his observations for his senior paper, which later became the best-selling book *Why England Slept* (1940).

After graduating from Harvard with honors in 1940, Kennedy went to Stanford University for graduate studies. In April 1941 he

tried to enlist in the U.S. Army but was rejected for physical reasons (a back injury received while playing football). Months later, after his back strengthened through a regimen of exercises, the U.S. Navy accepted him. He then became an intelligence officer in Washington, D.C. After the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor, a U.S. Navy base in Hawaii, on December 7, 1941, the United States entered World War II. Kennedy requested active duty at sea and was given this assignment in late 1942.

War hero

Following Kennedy's training with the Motor Torpedo Boat Squadron, he was shipped to the South Pacific to fight in the war against Japan. In March 1943 he was given command of a patrol torpedo (PT) boat, a small, fast boat armed with weapons, including torpedoes. In August his boat was sliced in two by a Japanese destroyer and two of his crew were killed. Kennedy and four others clung to the half of the PT boat that remained afloat. Six other men survived in the nearby water, two wounded. In a three-hour struggle Kennedy got the wounded crewmen to the floating wreck. When it capsized, he ordered his men to swim to a small island about three miles away. He towed one man to shore in a heroic five-hour struggle. Several days later, having displayed great courage, leadership, and endurance, Kennedy succeeded in having his men rescued.

House of Representatives

Returning to civilian life, Kennedy did newspaper work for several months, covering a United Nations conference, the Potsdam Conference, and the British elections of 1945. However, coming from a family devoted to



John F. Kennedy.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

public service, Kennedy desired a career in politics. In 1946 he became a candidate for the U.S. House of Representatives from the Massachusetts eleventh congressional district. Kennedy built a large personal organization for his campaign. On whirlwind tours he met as many voters as possible. He talked to the people in a direct, informal style about the topics that they were concerned with. In this campaign and in all the others, his brothers, sisters, and mother supported him. His brothers, Robert (1925–1968) and Edward (also called Ted; 1932–), acted as his managers, while his sisters and mother held social events to raise money for his campaigns.

Kennedy won the primary, the fall election, and reelection to the House in 1948 and again in 1950. He worked for better social welfare programs, particularly in the area of low-cost public housing (or affordable places for people to live). In 1949 he became a member of the Joint Committee on Labor-Management Relations. In this capacity, Kennedy was a strong supporter of labor, working for higher wages and better working conditions.

Kennedy supported the domestic programs of President Harry Truman (1884–1972), including social welfare programs, progressive taxation, and regulation of business. However, he did not follow Truman's policies in foreign relations. For example, he was against the fighting in Korea "or any other place in Asia where [the United States] cannot hold our defenses."

The Senate

In April 1952 Kennedy ran for a seat in the U.S. Senate against Henry Cabot Lodge, Jr. (1902–1985), a Republican liberal. Kennedy won by over seventy thousand votes. Lodge reeled under the impact. He had not run against a man, but a whole family. The Kennedy women alone had acted as hostesses to at least seventy thousand Massachusetts housewives. In 1958 Kennedy was reelected to the Senate.

Kennedy's political success was soon followed by high points in his personal life. On September 12, 1953, Kennedy married Jacqueline Lee Bouvier (1929–1994), daughter of a New York City financier, at Newport, Rhode Island. Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr. (1917–) noted that "under a veil of lovely inconsequence" Mrs. Kennedy possessed "an

all-seeing eye and ruthless judgement." John and Jacqueline Kennedy had three children: Caroline Bouvier (1957–), John Fitzgerald (1960–1999), Patrick Bouvier (who lived only a few days after his birth in 1963); another child was stillborn in 1956.

Taking his Senate seat in January 1953, Kennedy continued to support key labor, economic, and foreign relations issues. He served on the Labor and Public Welfare Committee, the Government Operations Committee, the Select Committee on Labor-Management Relations, the Foreign Relations Committee, and the Joint Economic Committee. He also worked to pass several bills to aid the Massachusetts fishing and textile industries and to improve New England's economy.

A recurrence of his old back injuries forced Kennedy to use crutches during 1954. An operation in October 1954 was followed by another in February 1955. He spent his months of illness and recovery writing biographies of Americans who had shown moral courage at difficult points in their lives. These biographies became the best-selling book *Profiles in Courage* (1956), which won the Pulitzer Prize for biography in 1957.

Kennedy's back operations were not completely successful, and he was never again entirely free from pain. After recovering from his operations, he returned to his Senate seat in May 1955. He became a strong supporter of civil rights and social welfare legislation. The Kennedy-Douglas-Ives Bill (1957) required an accounting of all employee pension and welfare funds. Kennedy also sponsored bills for providing federal financial aid to education and for relaxing U.S. immigration laws.

Kennedy becomes president

Kennedy's record in elected office and the books and articles that he had written attracted national attention. After he lost the vice presidential nomination at the Democratic National Convention in Chicago in 1956, he decided to run for president. Formally announcing his candidacy in January 1960, Kennedy made whirlwind tours and won the Democratic primaries in New Hampshire, Wisconsin, Indiana, Ohio, Oregon, Maryland, Nebraska, and West Virginia. On July 13, 1960, Kennedy was nominated for president, with Lyndon B. Johnson (1908–1973) as his running mate.

“Jack in Walk” shouted the Boston Globe after Kennedy's nomination. But it would be no easy walk to win the White House against the Republican candidate, Vice President Richard Nixon (1913–1994). At that time, Kennedy was a controversial candidate because he was a Roman Catholic. Religious prejudice, or dislike of a person based solely upon his or her religion, probably cost him over a million votes in Illinois alone. Kennedy responded to the issue of religion in his “Houston speech” on September 11, 1960. He believed in the absolute separation of church and state (the belief that one body—church or government—would have no influence over the other). To him, this meant that no priest could tell a president what to do and no Protestant clergyman could tell his parishioners how to vote. In other words, Kennedy's religion would not affect the decisions he made as president.

A series of televised debates with Nixon was crucial to Kennedy's campaign. Many viewers believed Kennedy defeated Nixon with his style. Kennedy showed the American

people that he had a sense of humor, a love of language, and a sense of the past. On November 9, 1960, John F. Kennedy became the youngest man and the first Roman Catholic in American history to win the presidency. The 1960 presidential election was one of the closest in the nation's history. Kennedy won the popular vote by only 119,450 votes. On December 19, 1960, the electoral college cast 303 votes for Kennedy and 219 for Nixon.

At the inauguration on January 20, 1960, the first U.S. president born in the twentieth century was sworn into office. Kennedy's inaugural address included the challenge: “Ask not what your country can do for you, ask what you can do for your country.”

Bay of Pigs

In his short time in office, Kennedy faced many crises. The first of which involved Cuba, a country about ninety miles south of Florida. On April 17, 1961, fourteen hundred Cuban exiles, supported by the United States, invaded Cuba at the Bay of Pigs. On April 18 the Soviet leader Nikita Khrushchev (1894–1971) sent a note to Kennedy stating that his government would help the Cuban government resist an attack. By April 20 the invasion had failed. Although the plan for training Cuban exiles had actually begun during the presidency of Dwight D. Eisenhower (1890–1969), Kennedy took responsibility for it. He had first supported the plan but later refused to commit the necessary American troops. He was aware that if the Cuban people did not rise up and back the invaders, the United States could not force them to accept a new system of government. Although the Bay of Pigs invasion was a failure, it did prove Kennedy's ability to face a disaster.

Protecting civil rights

Kennedy continued to show skill and passion for issues at home, particularly civil rights. In 1961 the Congress of Racial Equality, a civil rights group, organized people to protest segregation, or the practice of separating people based solely on their race, on buses and trains. When the showdown came, “the Kennedys,” as the president and his brother Robert, the attorney general, were known, sent six hundred Federal marshals to Alabama to protect these “Freedom Riders.” In 1962 they sent hundreds of Federal marshals to protect the rights of the first African American student to attend the University of Mississippi.

Cuban missile crisis

On October 22, 1962, Kennedy announced to the nation that the Soviet Union had sent nuclear missiles to Cuba. In response the United States had blocked all shipments of military equipment into Cuba. The United States would not allow Cuba to become a Soviet missile base, and it would regard any missile launched from Cuba “as an attack by the Soviet Union on the United States, requiring a full [military] response.”

For a week the details of the situation had been “the best kept secret in government history.” Throughout the seven days, the Kennedy administration had maintained an outward appearance of normal social and political activity. Meanwhile, American military units throughout the world were alerted.

Messages were sent back and forth between Kennedy, Khrushchev, and Pope John XXIII (1881–1963), who was volunteering as a peacemaker. During this time

Soviet ships were moving toward the area of the blockade in the Atlantic Ocean. They slowed, then stopped. On October 28, 1962, the Soviet Union said it would remove its missiles from Cuba.

One result of the crisis was the nuclear test ban treaty with the Soviet Union, which Kennedy called “the first step down the path of peace.” The treaty was signed on July 25, 1963. A “hot line” for emergency messages was also set up between Washington, D.C., and Moscow, the capital of the Soviet Union.

Vietnam

Vietnam, a country in Southeast Asia, took up more of Kennedy’s time than any other problem. The Vietnam War (1955–1975) was a civil war in which anti-Communist forces in South Vietnam, supported by the United States, were fighting against a takeover by Communist forces in North Vietnam. In 1954 President Eisenhower had offered military aid to South Vietnam and funding, and advisors were sent to the country throughout the 1950s. Although Kennedy believed that a “full-scale war in Vietnam . . . was unthinkable,” he tripled American forces in the country. Senator William Fulbright (1905–1995) suggested that Kennedy put troops in Vietnam to prove to Khrushchev that “he couldn’t be intimidated.”

The President’s last day

Kennedy was well aware of the dangers of the presidency. “Who can tell who will be president a year from now?” he would ask. On the day of his arrival in Dallas, Texas, he said that if anyone wanted to kill a president he needed only a high building and a rifle with a telescopic lens.

That day—November 22, 1963—the president was assassinated. It is generally believed that Lee Harvey Oswald (1939–1963), using a rifle equipped with a telescopic lens, was the person who fired on the president's car. Others, however, believe more than one person was responsible. All of the United States—indeed, the world—was in mourning. In Indonesia, flags were lowered to half-mast. In New Delhi, India, crowds wept in the streets.

Kennedy's legacy

Kennedy once summed up his time as “very dangerous, untidy.” He lived through two world wars, the Great Depression (a period from 1929 to 1939 during which nearly half the industrial workers in the country lost their jobs), and the nuclear age. “Life is unfair,” he remarked. And so it was to Kennedy, heaping him with both glory and tragedy. Yet, he never lost his grace, his sense of balance, or his optimism.

What Kennedy accomplished was not as important as what he stood for. As the African magazine *Transition* expressed it, “murdered with Kennedy was the first real chance for an intelligent and new leadership in the world. His death [left] us unprepared and in darkness.”

For More Information

Burner, David. *John F. Kennedy and a New Generation*. Boston: Little Brown, 1988.

Cole, Michael D. *John F. Kennedy: President of the New Frontier*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1996.

Frisbee, Lucy Post. *John F. Kennedy: America's Youngest President*. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1984.

Manchester, William. *Death of a President: November 20–November 25, 1963*. New York: Harper & Row, 1967. Reprint, New York: Arbor House, 1985.

O'Donnell, Kenneth P., David F. Powers, and Joe McCarthy. “Johnny, We Hardly Knew Ye”: *Memories of John Fitzgerald Kennedy*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1972.

Randall, Marta. *John F. Kennedy*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.

Schlesinger, Arthur M., Jr. *A Thousand Days: John F. Kennedy in the White House*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1965. Reprint, New York: Greenwich House, 1983.

JOHN F. KENNEDY JR.

Born: November 25, 1960

Washington, D.C.

Died: July 16, 1999

Martha's Vineyard, Massachusetts

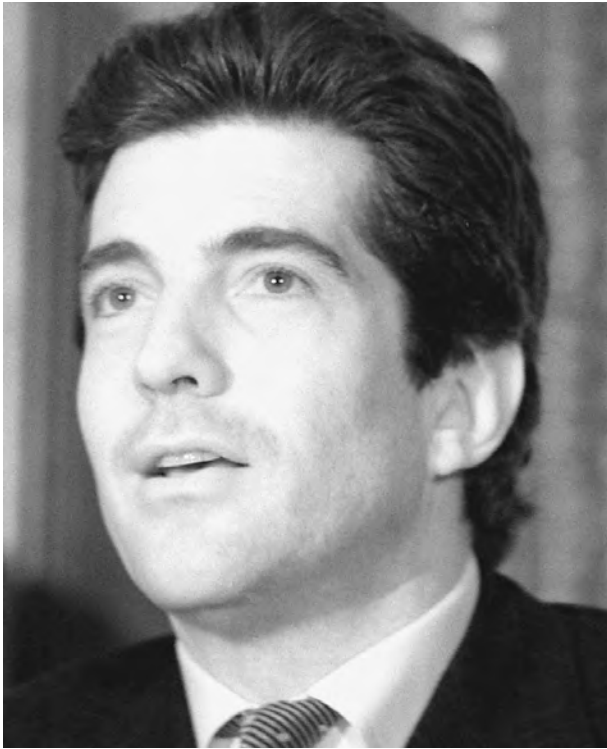
American magazine publisher and lawyer

John F. Kennedy Jr., son of the late president John F. Kennedy (1917–1963), avoided politics and followed his own path as a magazine publisher. After attending his own father's funeral as a child, Kennedy, Jr., saw a series of early deaths in his family. He himself was claimed by a tragic accident in the prime of his life.

President's son

John Fitzgerald Kennedy Jr., was born on November 25, 1960, the son of John F.

KENNEDY, JOHN F., JR.



John F. Kennedy Jr.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Kennedy (1917–1963), who had just won election as the thirty-fifth president of the United States, and Jacqueline (“Jackie”) Kennedy (1929–1994). He was the first child ever born to a president-elect. The Kennedys gave the nation the closest model they had ever had to a royal family. John-John, as he became known, and his sister Caroline regularly made the news and helped to create an image of the Kennedys as an ideal American family.

While campaigning in Dallas, Texas, on November 22, 1963, the president was shot and killed. Just three months earlier, the family had grieved when new baby Patrick died two days after his birth. The death of John F.

Kennedy shocked the nation, and the image of the president’s three-year-old son at the funeral, wearing a short coat that revealed his bare knees, saluting his father’s coffin as it passed, was heartbreaking.

Always in the public eye

In 1964 Jackie Kennedy moved with her children to an apartment in New York City, where she hoped they might be able to avoid the media. The family would soon suffer another difficult loss. On June 6, 1968, the late president’s brother, Robert Kennedy (1925–1968), who had become a father figure to his nephew and niece, was assassinated in California while campaigning for the Democratic presidential nomination. Four months later, Jackie Kennedy married the wealthy businessman Aristotle Onassis (1906–1975).

The young Kennedy would sometimes get into fights with reporters and photographers who followed him and his sister around. The media criticized him for being self-centered and for his less than outstanding record at school. After high school he became more serious about his education. First, he studied environmental issues at a school in Africa. He would later return to Africa following his freshman year at Brown University in Providence, Rhode Island. While in Africa he worked with a mining firm in Johannesburg, South Africa, and met student and government leaders in Zimbabwe. During his college years he also worked with the Peace Corps in Guatemala to help earthquake victims.

After graduating with a bachelor’s degree in American history in 1982, Kennedy studied at the University of Delhi in India. When

he returned to the United States he went to work for the New York City Office of Business Development in 1984. In 1986 he entered New York University Law School, mainly to please his mother. At the 1988 Democratic National Convention he gave a speech to introduce his uncle, Senator Edward Kennedy (1932–), that earned him a two-minute standing ovation and led many to wonder if he was preparing to run for office. He passed his bar exam (a test that a person must pass before he or she is allowed to practice law) on the third try and was hired in August 1989 as an assistant prosecutor in the Manhattan office of New York district attorney Robert Morgenthau (1919–). He won all six of the cases that he prosecuted in court before leaving the position in 1993.

New ventures

In September 1995 Kennedy cofounded *George* magazine, which had the slogan “Not politics as usual.” He wrote essays and interviewed people for the publication. Some observers suggested that his magazine venture was a way for him to gain the public-affairs knowledge that he would need in order to run for office, but he denied that he was planning to enter politics. On September 21, 1996, he married Carolyn Bessette (1966–1999) in a private ceremony on Cumberland Island off the coast of Georgia. It was one of the few major events in his life during which he managed to avoid publicity. He and his wife appeared to be a happy couple as they made their home in New York.

On July 16, 1999, Kennedy, his wife, and her sister Lauren Bessette (1964–1999) were declared missing at sea after their plane crashed into the water near the coast of

Martha's Vineyard, Massachusetts. Kennedy was an amateur pilot who had earned his license in April 1998. All three bodies were eventually recovered from the wreckage and buried at sea on July 22, 1999.

For More Information

- Blow, Richard. *American Son: A Portrait of John F. Kennedy Jr.* New York: Henry Holt & Co., 2002.
- Hinman, Bonnie. *John F. Kennedy, Jr.* Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2001.
- Landau, Elaine. *John F. Kennedy, Jr.* Brookfield, CT: Twenty-First Century Books, 2000.
- Leigh, Wendy. *Prince Charming: The John F. Kennedy Jr. Story.* New York: Dutton, 1993.
- Reed, J. D., Kyle Smith, and Jill Smolowe. *John F. Kennedy Jr.: A Biography.* Chicago: Time, 1999.

ROBERT KENNEDY

Born: November 20, 1925

Brookline, Massachusetts

Died: June 6, 1968

Los Angeles, California

American statesman, senator, and attorney general

Robert Kennedy was a U.S. senator and the attorney general in the presidential administration of his brother John F. Kennedy (1917–1963). Like his brother, Robert was extremely charming and a popular political figure during the

KENNEDY, ROBERT



Robert Kennedy.

Courtesy of the National Archives and Records Administration.

1960s. Tragically, much like his brother before him, Robert's assassination would leave behind many questions as to what could have been.

Early life as a Kennedy

Robert Francis Kennedy was born on November 20, 1925, in Brookline, Massachusetts, to Joseph (1888–1969) and Rose (1890–1995) Kennedy. Robert enjoyed a privileged childhood and was surrounded by a loving and powerful family. Rose's father was the mayor of Boston. Joseph was a wealthy businessman and would later

become U.S. ambassador, or official representative, to Great Britain.

Kennedy's childhood was greatly shaped by his father's values. Joseph Sr. always wanted his children to try their hardest, no matter what they were doing. The Kennedys raised their children as Roman Catholics, and Robert was very religious throughout his young life and served as an altar boy. The seventh of nine children born to the Kennedys, Robert constantly sought the attention of his two older brothers, Joseph P. Kennedy Jr. (1915–1944) and John F. Kennedy. Although slightly smaller than his brothers, Robert would develop the good looks and charm that would help the Kennedys win over the American public.

The Kennedys lived in England during his father's ambassadorship and the family quickly became a favorite with the English press. In 1939, with the threat of war hanging over Europe, Joseph Kennedy sent his family back to America, fearing for their safety.

Student and soldier

Robert graduated from Milton Academy before entering Harvard. His college career was interrupted by the outbreak of World War II (1939–45), in which the United States led the Allied forces against Germany, Japan, and Italy. After his oldest brother, Joseph, was killed in combat, Robert joined the navy and was assigned as a lieutenant. Later, he was assigned to the destroyer *Joseph P. Kennedy Jr.*, which was named in honor of his brother.

In 1946 he returned to Harvard, where he played football, and he graduated in 1948. He then earned his law degree from the University of Virginia Law School and was admit-

ted to the Massachusetts bar (an association for lawyers) in 1951. While at school he met Ethel Skakel (1928–), his sister's college roommate. Robert and Ethel were married in June 1950. They would have eleven children together (the last one was born six months after Kennedy's death).

A political career begins

In 1951 Kennedy joined the Criminal Division of the U.S. Department of Justice. He resigned the following year to run John F. Kennedy's successful campaign for U.S. senator. In 1953 Robert was appointed one of fifteen assistant counsels, or advisors, to the Senate Subcommittee on Investigations under Senator Joseph McCarthy (1908–1957). At the time, McCarthy was leading a nationwide "witch-hunt" for Communists, or people who believe in a political system in which property and goods are owned by the government. McCarthy's movement gained momentum through America's fear of Communists living in the country. But later that year, Kennedy resigned when Democratic members of this subcommittee walked out in protest against McCarthy's forceful methods of investigation.

Kennedy rejoined the Senate's permanent Subcommittee on Investigations as chief counsel for the Democratic minority in 1954. The following year, when the Democrats reorganized this committee under Senator George McClellan, Kennedy became chief counsel and staff director. That year the U.S. Junior Chamber of Commerce elected him one of "ten outstanding young men." In 1955, at his own expense, Kennedy joined Supreme Court Justice William O. Douglas (1898–1980) on a tour of several Soviet

republics. (The republics were Communist states that made up the Soviet Union.)

Kennedy became chief counsel to the Senate Select Committee on Improper Activities in the Labor or Management Field organized under McClellan in 1957. His major accomplishment was the investigation of corruption, or dishonest activity, in the International Brotherhood of Teamsters, a powerful labor union. The hearings became front-page news, especially Kennedy's prosecution of the union's president, James Hoffa (1913–c.1975). Some union leaders believed these hearings were more like persecution, or a public harassment, of Hoffa. Later, Kennedy was also responsible for several additional investigations of labor and management abuses.

A Kennedy in the White House

In 1960 Kennedy managed his brother's successful presidential campaign. When John appointed Robert U.S. attorney general, many cried nepotism, the act of favoring family members. But Robert's role in his brother's cabinet was unique, and he was virtually the president's other self. Shoulder to shoulder, the brothers stood together. The Kennedy administration carefully waded through civil rights cases, the growing Vietnam War (1955–75; a civil war in which U.S. forces helped South Vietnam fight against a takeover by Communist forces from North Vietnam), and the Cuban missile crisis, when the nation held its breath as the president narrowly avoided conflict with Communist Cuba and the Soviet Union.

Tragically, the partnership would not last. John F. Kennedy was killed by an assassin's bullet in Dallas, Texas, in 1963. Distressed by the loss of his brother, Robert

soon resigned from the administration of President Lyndon Johnson (1908–1973). Kennedy ran successfully for New York State senator in 1964. Many wondered why Kennedy chose to run in New York instead of his native Virginia. Kennedy was thinking of the presidency by now, and Virginia was no power base. As a senator Kennedy achieved a splendid record, and his popularity began to grow and rival that of his brother's.

Presidential candidate and a tragic ending

Kennedy leaped into the presidential race in 1968. He was the perfect candidate to oppose Eugene McCarthy (1916–). Kennedy's entrance bitterly divided liberal Democrats (those in favor of change). Kennedy won the support of activists as he had come to sympathize with the African Americans' drive for "black power." He could reach and unite young people, activists, African Americans, and blue-collar Roman Catholics. Meanwhile, the white South hated him, big business distrusted him, and middle-class, reform Democrats were generally suspicious of him. Just after midnight on June 5, 1968, Kennedy was gunned down by an assassin. He died a day later.

Robert Kennedy's tragic death robbed the nation of one of its most dedicated and popular politicians. For most of his life, Kennedy fought for equal rights, improving education, housing the poor, and many other issues of the day. Robert had been no copy of his brother John. In some ways he was more intense and more committed than his brother had been. Yet he shared John's personal philosophy that one man could make a difference.

For More Information

Kennedy, Robert F. *Make Gentle the Life of This World: The Vision of Robert F. Kennedy*. New York: Harcourt Brace, 1998.

Palermo, Joseph A. *In His Own Right: The Political Odyssey of Senator Robert F. Kennedy*. New York: Columbia University Press, 2001.

Thomas, Evan. *Robert Kennedy: His Life*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 2000.

JOHANNES KEPLER

Born: December 27, 1571

Weil, Swabia, Germany

Died: November 15, 1630

Regensburg, Bavaria, Germany

German astronomer

The German astronomer Johannes Kepler's discovery of three basic laws governing the motion of planets made him one of the chief founders of modern astronomy (the study of the universe and its stars and planets).

Early life

Johannes Kepler was born on December 27, 1571, in Weil, Germany. He was the son of Heinrich and Katharina Guldenmann Kepler. His father was a mercenary (a soldier serving only for money). Although a member of the Protestant faith, his father helped put down a Protestant uprising in the Low Countries (Belgium, Holland, and Luxembourg).

Kepler's parents allowed him to watch the great comet of 1577 and an eclipse (passing into shadow) of the Moon. Kepler was a sickly child but an excellent student. At thirteen he entered a religious training school at Adelberg, Germany.

Following Kepler's graduation from the University of Tübingen in 1591, he became interested in astronomy, particularly the theories of Nicolaus Copernicus (1473–1543), who stated that the Earth moved around the Sun in a circle. The University of Tübingen recommended Kepler for the post of the "mathematician of the province" in Graz, Austria. He arrived there in 1594 and began composition of the almanac, in which the major events of the coming year were predicted. His first almanac was a success. The occurrence of two events that he had predicted, an invasion by the Turks and a severe winter, established his reputation. In 1597 Kepler married Barbara Muehleck. Of their five children only one boy and one girl reached adulthood.

Work in astronomy

Kepler sought the job of assistant to Tycho Brahe (1546–1601), astrologer (one who interprets the positions of stars and planets and their effect on human affairs) and mathematician to Rudolph II (1552–1612), in Prague, Czechoslovakia. Kepler took his new position in 1600. When Brahe died the following year, Kepler was appointed to replace him. His first job was to prepare Brahe's collection of studies in astronomy for publication, which came out between 1601 and 1602.

Kepler was also left in charge of Brahe's records, which forced him to make an



Johannes Kepler.

assumption that led to a new theory about the orbits of all the planets. A difference between his theory and Brahe's data could be explained only if the orbit of Mars was not circular but elliptical (oval-shaped). This meant that the orbits of all planets were elliptical (Kepler's first law). This helped prove another of his statements. It is known as Kepler's second law, according to which the line joining a planet to the sun sweeps over equal areas in equal times in its elliptical orbit.

Kepler published these laws in his discussion of the orbit of the planet Mars, the *Astronomia nova* (1609). The two laws were clearly spelled out in the book's table of con-

tents. They must have been seen by any careful reader alert enough to recognize a new idea of such importance. Still, the Italian astronomer Galileo Galilei (1564–1642) failed to use the laws in his printed works—although they would have helped his defense of Copernicus’s ideas.

New jobs and the third law

In 1611 Rudolph II stepped down from the throne, and Kepler immediately looked for a new job. He obtained the post of province mathematician of Linz, Austria. By the time he moved there in 1612 with his two children, his wife and his favorite son, Friedrich, were dead. Kepler’s fourteen years in Linz were marked by his second marriage to Susan Reuttinger, and by his repeated efforts to save his mother from being tried as a witch.

Kepler also published two important works while in Linz. In the *Harmonice mundi* (1618) his third law was announced. It stated that the average distance of a planet from the sun, raised to the third power, divided by the square of the time it takes for the planet to complete one orbit, is the same for all planets. Kepler believed that nature followed numeric relationships since God created it according to “weight, measure and number.” Kepler used the same idea in describing geometry (the study of points, lines, angles, and surfaces). Kepler’s second work, the *Epitome astronomiae Copernicanae* (published 1618–21), proposed a physical explanation of the motions of planets, namely, “magnetic arms” extending from the sun.

Kepler wandered over Europe in the last three years of his life. He was in Ulm, Germany, when his *Tabulae Rudolphinae* (1628)

was published. It not only added the positions of over two hundred stars to those contained in Brahe’s published works, but it also provided planetary tables that became the standard for the next century. Kepler died on November 15, 1630. He was a unique symbol of the change over from the old to the new spirit of science.

For More Information

Caspar, Max. *Kepler*. Edited and translated by C. Doris Hellmann. New York: Abeland-Schuman, 1959. Reprint, Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 1993.

Tiner, John Hudson. *Johannes Kepler: Giant of Faith and Science*. Milford, MI: Mott Media, 1977.

Voelkel, James R. *Johannes Kepler and the New Astronomy*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1999.

JACK KEROUAC

Born: March 12, 1922

Lowell, Massachusetts

Died: October 21, 1969

St. Petersburg, Florida

American writer

Jack Kerouac, an American writer, is best known for *On the Road*, (1957) which describes his travels into the American West. He is known as the father of the Beat Generation, younger intellectuals who rejected traditional values of society.

Early years

Born March 12, 1922, in Lowell, Massachusetts, Jean-Louis Lebris de Kerouac was the son of Leo Kerouac, a printer, and Gabrielle Levesque, a factory worker. Kerouac loved to read and wanted to be a writer from his earliest childhood. He did not speak English until he was five years old, using instead a combination of French and English used by the many French-Canadians who settled in New England. Kerouac's older brother Gerard died at age nine; he also had an older sister. At age eleven Kerouac began writing novels and made-up accounts of horse races, football games, and baseball games.

Kerouac received a football scholarship to Columbia University in New York City. At age seventeen he went to Horace Mann High School in New York City to improve his grades and increase his weight. In 1940 Kerouac arrived at Columbia but broke his leg in the second game of the season. After the injury he began to pursue his true passion—literature. Kerouac began to cut class regularly; he studied the style of writer Thomas Wolfe (1900–1938) and hung out on the New York City streets. In 1941 Kerouac had an argument with Columbia's football coach and left school.

Outside influences

Kerouac worked briefly at a gas station and as a sports reporter for a newspaper in Lowell. He then signed on to work aboard the *S. S. Dorchester* bound for Greenland. After that trip Kerouac returned to Columbia for a short stay. In 1943 he joined the Navy, but he was honorably discharged after six months. Kerouac spent the war years working as a merchant seaman and hanging



Jack Kerouac.

Reproduced by permission of Mr. Jerry Bauer.

around Columbia with intellectuals such as writers William Burroughs (1914–1997) and Allen Ginsburg (1926–1997). He wrote two novels during this time, *The Sea Is My Brother* and *And The Hippos Were Boiled In Their Tanks*, with Burroughs.

Kerouac married Edie Parker in 1944, but the marriage lasted only two months. In 1947 Neal Cassady, a car thief and ladies' man who was considered something of a genius, visited New York and asked Kerouac to give him writing lessons. When Cassady returned to Denver, Colorado, Kerouac followed. After a few weeks in Denver, Kerouac wandered into California, beginning a four-

year period of travel throughout the West. When not on the road, he was in New York working on his novel *The Town and The City*, which was published in 1950.

Most famous work

Now married to Joan Haverty, whom Kerouac proposed to after knowing her for only a few days, Kerouac began to experiment with a more natural writing style. He wanted to write the way he lived: once and with no editing. In April 1951 Kerouac threaded a huge roll of paper into his typewriter and wrote the single 175,000-word paragraph that became *On The Road*. The more than 100-foot scroll was written in three weeks but was not published for seven years. Sal and Neal, the main characters, scoff at established values and live by a romantic code born out off the West. They are described as “performing our one noble function of the time, *move*.” And to Kerouac, with movement comes wisdom and meaning.

In the time between writing *On The Road* and its publication, Kerouac took many road trips, ended his second marriage, became depressed and addicted to drugs and alcohol, and did his most ambitious writing. Kerouac often wrote complete works through all-night, week-long sessions. His other works include *Visions of Cody* (1952), *Dr. Sax* (1952), *Maggie Cassidy* (1953) (a romantic tale of his teenage days), *Mexico City Blues* and *Tristessa* (both 1955), and *Visions of Gerard*, *The Scripture of the Golden Eternity*, and *Old Angel Midnight* (all 1956).

Spokesman for a generation

When *On The Road* was published in 1957, Kerouac became instantly famous and

a spokesman for the Beat Generation, young people in the 1950s and 1960s who scorned middle-class values. Kerouac frequently appeared drunk, and interviews with him usually turned into arguments. In 1958 he wrote *The Dharma Bums*, a follow-up to *On The Road*. He then stopped writing for four years. By 1960 he was an alcoholic and had suffered a nervous breakdown. Kerouac died of massive stomach bleeding on October 21, 1969, with a pad in his lap and pen in his hand. He was buried with the rest of his family near Lowell.

For More Information

- Amburn, Ellis. *Subterranean Kerouac: The Hidden Life of Jack Kerouac*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1998.
- Clark, Tom. *Jack Kerouac*. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1984.
- Kerouac, Jack. *On the Road*. New York: Viking, 1957. Multiple reprints.
- Miles, Barry. *Jack Kerouac—King of the Beats*. New York: H. Holt, 1998.
- Nicosia, Gerald. *Memory Babe: A Critical Biography of Jack Kerouac*. New York: Grove Press, 1983.

CHARLES F. K E T T E R I N G

Born: August 29, 1876
Loudonville, Ohio
Died: November 25, 1958
Dayton, Ohio
American engineer

Charles F. Kettering, first as an independent inventor and later as head of research for General Motors Corporation, conducted research that established him as one of the most creative Americans of his generation.

Early years

Charles Francis Kettering was born on August 29, 1876, on a farm near Loudonville, Ohio, to Jacob and Martha Hunter Kettering. He was the fourth of five children. He was an excellent student who loved to read, and he also showed an early interest in trying to find better ways of doing things. His brother Adam, in Stuart W. Leslie's *Boss Kettering*, describes how young Charles tried "half the tools on the farm" to find the best way to pick potatoes. After high school graduation Kettering taught three years in country and small-town schools to make money to pay for college. Entering Ohio State University at age twenty-two, he dropped out in his sophomore year because of poor eyesight. Kettering worked for two years as a telephone lineman and then returned to Ohio State, graduating at age twenty-eight.

The NCR and Delco era

After Kettering received his degree he took a job as an experimental engineer with National Cash Register Company (NCR) in Dayton, Ohio. During his five years there he created a low-cost printing cash register; created an electric cash register, doing away with the hand crank; developed a system that tied charge phones to cash registers; and developed an accounting machine for banks. In 1905 he married Olive Williams of Ashland, Ohio. The couple had one son.

Having developed a better ignition (starting) system for autos while working "on the side" for NCR, Kettering, with the help of NCR's general manager Colonel Edward A. Deeds and others who put up money, organized Dayton Engineering Laboratories Company (Delco) in 1909. That year an order from Cadillac for eight thousand ignition systems led to the creation of an electric starter, first offered on Cadillac cars in 1912 and on many other makes the following year. Kettering and Delco also improved auto lighting systems and developed a dependable way to generate electricity on farms. Delco grew into a large manufacturing firm as well as a research site.

The General Motors years

In 1915 Colonel Deeds, a good man with business details, joined Delco, teaming up with Kettering, who preferred to devote himself to research. In 1916 Delco, in exchange for \$9 million, became a branch of United Motors Corporation, an automotive parts and accessories (objects adding to the appearance or performance of something) company. In turn, General Motors (GM) acquired United Motors in 1918. Kettering was invited to organize and direct the new General Motors Research Corporation, based in Dayton at the inventor's request. By 1925 the research labs had been transferred to Detroit, Michigan; Kettering and his wife lived in a hotel in the city until Kettering's retirement.

As head of GM research for 27 years, Kettering helped bring about the improvement of many products, acquiring 140 patents in his name. His most notable achievements included the development of "Ethyl" leaded gasoline to correct engine

KETTERING



Charles F. Kettering.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

knock; the refrigerant (cooling agent) “Freon”; and faster-drying and longer-lasting finishes for automobiles. He also created the lightweight diesel engine, which helped improve the moving power of railroads.

Helped the public good

Kettering, in addition to his success as a scientist and engineer, was highly regarded as a public speaker and social philosopher (seeker of wisdom). “I am for the double-profit system,” he said, “a reasonable profit for the manufacturer and a much greater

profit for the customer.” “I object to people running down the future,” he also remarked. “I am going to live all the rest of my life there, and I would like it to be a nice place, polished, bright, glistening, and glorious.” Kettering always regarded himself as a professional amateur. “We are amateurs,” he observed, “because we are doing things for the first time.”

Kettering retired from GM in 1947 but continued to serve as a director and research adviser until his death in Dayton on November 25, 1958. He received more than three dozen honorary (achieved without meeting the usual requirements) doctor’s degrees and dozens of awards, honors, and medals. His name lives on in the Charles F. Kettering Foundation, which he organized for medical research in 1927, and the Sloan-Kettering Institute for Cancer Research, founded by GM chairman Alfred P. Sloan Jr. in 1945.

For More Information

Boyd, T. A. *Professional Amateur: The Biography of Charles Franklin Kettering*. New York: Dutton, 1957. Reprint, New York: Arno Press, 1972.

Kettering, Charles F., and Allan Orth. *American Battle for Abundance: A Story of Mass Production*. Detroit: General Motors, 1947.

Leslie, Stuart W. *Boss Kettering*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1993.

Pound, Arthur. *The Turning Wheel: The Story of General Motors Through Twenty-five Years 1908–33*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1934.

AYATOLLAH KHOMEINI

Born: September 24, 1902

Khomein, Persia

Died: June 3, 1989

Tehran, Iran

Iranian head of state and religious leader

Ayatollah Khomeini was the founder and supreme leader of the Islamic Republic of Iran. The only leader in the Muslim world who combined political and religious authority as a head of state, he took office in 1979.

Early life and education

Ayatollah Ruhollah Musavi Khomeini was born on September 24, 1902, according to most sources. The title Ayatollah (the Sign of God) reflected his scholarly religious standing in the Shia Islamic tradition. His first name, Ruhollah (the Spirit of God), is a common name in spite of its religious meaning, and his last name is taken from his birthplace, the town of Khomein, which is about 200 miles south of Tehran, Iran's capital city. His father, Mustapha Musavi, was the chief cleric (those with religious authority) of the town and was murdered only five months after the birth of Ruhollah. The child was raised by his mother (Hajar) and aunt (Sahebeh), both of whom died when Ruhollah was about fifteen years old.

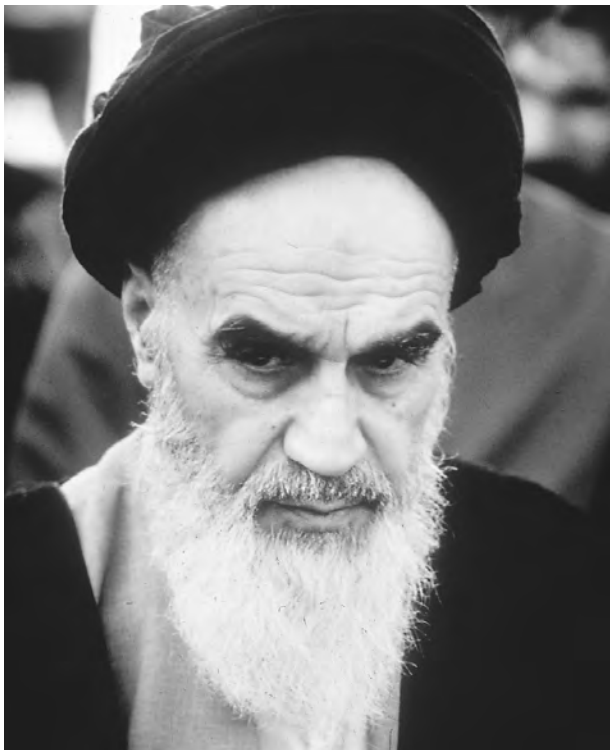
Ayatollah Khomeini's life after childhood went through three different phases. The first phase, from 1908 to 1962, was marked mainly by training, teaching, and writing in the field of Islamic studies. At the age of six

he began to study the Koran, Islam's holy book, and also elementary Persian, an ancient language of Iran. Later, he completed his studies in Islamic law, ethics, and spiritual philosophy under the supervision of Ayatollah Abdul Karim Haeri-ye Yazdi, in Qom, where he also got married and had two sons and three daughters. Although during this scholarly phase of his life Khomeini was not politically active, the nature of his studies, teachings, and writings revealed that he firmly believed in political activism by clerics (religious leaders).

Preparation for political leadership

The second phase of Khomeini's life, from 1962 to 1979, was marked by political activism which was greatly influenced by his strict, religious interpretation of Shia Islam. He practically launched his fight against the shah's regime (the king's rule) in 1962, which led to the eruption of a religious and political rebellion on June 5, 1963. This date (fifteenth of Khurdad in the Iranian solar calendar) is regarded by the revolutionists as the turning point in the history of the Islamic movement in Iran. The shah's bloody crushing of the uprising was followed by the exile (forced removal) of Khomeini in 1964, first to Iraq then to France.

Khomeini's religious and political ideas became more extreme and his entry into active political opposition reflected a combination of events in his life. First, the deaths of the two leading Iranian religious leaders left leadership open to Khomeini. Second, although ever since the rise of Reza Shah Pahlavi (1878–1944) to power in the 1920s, the clerical class had been on the defensive because of his movements away from certain



Ayatollah Khomeini.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

religious policies. And third, the shah's granting of diplomatic privileges to the American military personnel in 1964 was viewed as insulting to the Iranian sense of national independence.

Founding the Islamic Republic of Iran

The third phase of Khomeini's life began with his return to Iran from exile on February 1, 1979, after Muhammad Reza Shah had been forced to step down two weeks earlier. On February 11 revolutionary forces loyal to Khomeini seized power in Iran, and Khomeini emerged as the founder and the supreme leader of the Islamic Republic of Iran.

From the perspective of Khomeini and his followers, the Iranian Revolution went through several "revolutionary" phases. The first phase began with Khomeini's appointment of Mehdi Bazargan as the head of the "provisional government" on February 5, 1979, and ended with his fall on November 6, two days after the capture of the U.S. embassy (the U.S. headquarters in Iran).

The second revolution was marked by the elimination of mainly nationalist forces, or forces devoted to the interests of a culture. As early as August 20, 1979, twenty-two newspapers that clashed with Khomeini's views were ordered closed. In terms of foreign policy, the landmarks of the second revolution were the destruction of U.S.-Iran relations and the admission of the shah to the United States on October 22, 1979. Two weeks later, Khomeini instructed Iranian students to "expand with all their might their attacks against the United States" in order to force the extradition (legal surrender) of the shah. The seizure of the American embassy on November 4 led to 444 days of agonizing dispute between the United States and Iran until the release of the hostages on January 21, 1981.

The so-called third revolution began with Khomeini's dismissal of President Abul Hassan Bani-Sadr on June 22, 1981. Bani-Sadr's fate was a result of Khomeini's determination to eliminate from power any individual or group that could stand in the way of the ideal Islamic Republic of Iran. This government, however, had yet to be molded thoroughly according to his interpretation of Islam. In terms of foreign policy, the main characteristics of the third revolution were the continuation of the Iraq-Iran war, expanded efforts to export the "Islamic revo-

lution,” and increasing relations with the Soviet Union, a once-powerful nation that was made up of Russia and several other smaller nations.

The revolution began going through yet a fourth phase in late 1982. Domestically, the clerical class had combined its control, prevented land distribution, and promoted the role of the private citizens. Internationally, Iran sought a means of ending its status as an outcast and tried to distance itself from terrorist groups. It expanded commercial relations with Western Europe, China, Japan, and Turkey and reduced interaction with the Soviet Union. Iran also claimed that the door was open for re-establishing relations with the United States.

After the revolution

In November of 1986 President Ronald Reagan (1911–) admitted that the United States had secretly supplied some arms to Iran for their war against Iraq. This controversy led to a lengthy governmental investigation to see if federal laws had been violated in what would become known as the Iran-Contra affair.

In 1988 Khomeini and Iran accepted a cease-fire with Iraq after being pressured by the United Nations, a multi-national, peace-keeping organization. On February 14, 1989, Khomeini sentenced writer Salman Rushdie (1947–) to death, without a trial, in a legal ruling called a fatwa. Khomeini deemed Rushdie’s novel “The Satanic Verses” to be blasphemous, or insulting to God, because of its unflattering portrait of Islam.

Before his death from cancer in Iran on June 3, 1989, Khomeini designated President

Ali Khamenei to succeed him. Khomeini is still a popular figure to Iranians. Each year on the anniversary of his death, hundreds of thousands of people attend a ceremony at his shrine at the Behesht-e-Zahra cemetery.

For More Information

Bakhash, Shaul. *The Region of the Ayatollahs: Iran and the Islamic Revolution*. New York: Basic Books, 1984.

Hiro, Dilip. *Iran Under the Ayatollahs*. London: Routledge & K. Paul, 1985.

Moin, Baqer. *Khomeini: Life of the Ayatollah*. New York: Thomas Dunne Books, 2000.

Rajaei, Farhang. *Islamic Values and World View: Khomeyni on Man, the State and International Politics*. Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 1983.

NIKITA KHRUSHCHEV

Born: April 17, 1894

Kalinovka, Russia

Died: September 11, 1971

Moscow, Russia

Russian Communist leader and Soviet premier

The Soviet political leader Nikita Khrushchev was a major force in world politics in the second half of the twentieth century. His leadership played a key role in the 1960s during the height of the Cold War, a four-decade standoff between the United States and the Soviet Union.



Nikita Khrushchev.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Childhood and revolution

Nikita Sergeyevich Khrushchev was born in Kalinovka in southern Russia on April 17, 1894. As a child, Khrushchev attended a religious school where he learned to read and write. He also took a job taking care of cattle and continued until he was in his early teens. At the age of fifteen he became an apprentice (a student learning the trade) mechanic in Yuzovka, a growing town in the Ukraine, where his father was working as a miner. When his apprenticeship ended, he was employed as a machine repairman in coal mines of the region, where he worked for nearly a decade.

In 1918, at the age of twenty-four, Khrushchev joined the Communist Party, a political party that believes goods and services should be owned and distributed by the government. As a Communist, he enrolled in the Red Army to fight in the civil war then in progress. At the time, the Russian Revolution was storming the country. The Bolsheviks, led by Vladimir Lenin (1870–1924), were Communists that overthrew the czarist rule (rule by a czar, or king) of Russia. Communism took control of Russia in 1917. But not all of Russia agreed with the new government and soon civil war broke out between the Red Guards, who supported the Bolsheviks and the Whites, who opposed the new rule.

After nearly three years of service in the civil war, Khrushchev returned to Yuzovka and was appointed assistant manager of a mine. Soon thereafter, he entered the Donets Industrial Institute, a worker's school run by the Soviets, the new Communist ruling party. There he received additional instruction in the Communist Party. He became a political leader at school and was named the secretary of the school's Communist Party Committee. He graduated in 1925 and soon became a full-time party official as secretary of the Petrovsko-Mariinsk district of Yuzovka. There, he came to know Lazar M. Kaganovich, the secretary general of the Ukrainian Party's Central Committee and a close associate of future Soviet leader Joseph Stalin (1879–1953).

Khrushchev married in 1915, but his wife died during the famine (a severe shortage of food) which resulted from the civil war. In 1924 he remarried, this time to Nina Petrovna, a schoolteacher. The couple eventually had two children.

Entering politics

In 1929 Khrushchev attended the Industrial Academy in Moscow for training in industrial administration, leaving in 1931 to become secretary of a district party committee in Moscow. Within four years he became head of the party organization of Moscow, thus joining the highest ranks of party officials. There he used his industrial training as he helped to supervise the construction of the city's subway system.

When Stalin began eliminating those he mistrusted from the Communist Party's leadership, Khrushchev was fortunate to be one of the trusted. In 1938, when most of the chief party leaders in the Ukraine were gone, he was made first secretary of the Ukrainian Communist Party and at the same time was named to the Politburo, the ruling body of the Soviet Communist Party. As first secretary, he was in fact, though not in name, the chief executive of the Ukraine. Except for a short interval in 1947, he held on to his authority in that area until 1949.

During World War II (1939–45), where the Allies of Russia, America, and Great Britain fought the Axis of Germany, Japan, and Italy, Khrushchev served in the Red Army both in the Ukraine and in other southern parts of the former Soviet Union, and advanced to the rank of lieutenant general. He achieved all of this while still first secretary of the Ukrainian Communist Party.

In 1949 Khrushchev was summoned to Moscow to serve in the party's Secretariat, directed by Stalin. Then, after Stalin's death in 1953, Khrushchev was among the eight men in whose hands power became concentrated. In the distribution of the various spheres of power, the party was recognized as his sphere.

Within a few months he became first secretary of the Central Committee of the Soviet Communist Party—that is, its chief official.

Gaining power

By installing his supporters in important party positions and making some critical political alliances, Khrushchev gained power over the seven who shared power with him and by 1955 he was clearly the foremost political figure in the Soviet Union. Even that important status was enhanced three years later, when he became chairman of the Council of Ministers, succeeding Nikolai Bulganin (1895–1975). With that, he became the most powerful man in the country—as chairman of the Council of Ministers, he was head of the government and, as first secretary of the Soviet Communist Party's Central Committee, he was head of the party.

Instead of looking to equal Stalin by becoming a dictator, or someone who possesses supreme power, Khrushchev encouraged the policy of de-Stalinization, which the government had been following since 1953, for the purpose of ending the worst practices of the Stalin dictatorship. Although the Soviet Union under Khrushchev continued to be a one-party totalitarian state, where one party had complete political power, its citizens enjoyed conditions more favorable than had been possible under Stalin. The standard of living rose, intellectual and artistic life became somewhat more free, and the authority of the political police was reduced. In addition, relations with the outside world were generally improved, and the Soviet reputation began to gain favor.

Meanwhile, the onset of the Cold War (1945–91) began to escalate in 1960, when Khrushchev broke off talks with President

KING, B. B.

Dwight Eisenhower (1890–1969) after announcing an American spy plane had been shot down in the Soviet Union. Two years later, the United States and Soviet Union stood at the doorstep of nuclear war during the Cuban Missile Crisis in 1962, when America waited for Khrushchev to withdraw Soviet-owned nuclear arms from Cuba, the Soviet's Communist ally.

However, Khrushchev's fortunes in the Soviet Union eventually began to take a downward turn. Some of his ambitious economic projects failed and his handling of foreign affairs resulted in a number of setbacks. The de-Stalinization produced unrest in the Communist ranks of other countries. These developments caused concern among party leaders in the Soviet Union, many of them already fearful that Khrushchev might be planning to extend his power. In October 1964, Khrushchev was forced into retirement by other party leaders.

As a citizen, he lived a quiet life until his death on September 11, 1971, in Moscow. Although Khrushchev's legacy is still very much open to debate, no one can deny his attempts to de-Stalinize his nation that led to the improvement of everyday life in the Soviet Union.

For More Information

Khrushchev, Nikita Sergeevich. *Khrushchev Remembers: The Glasnost Tapes*. Translated and edited by Jerrold L. Schecter with Vyacheslav V. Luchkov. Boston: Little, Brown, 1990.

Khrushchev, Sergei. *Nikita Khrushchev: Creation of a Superpower*. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 2000.

Taubman, William, Sergei Khrushchev, and Abbott Gleason. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2000.

Tompson, William J. *Khrushchev—A Political Life*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1995.

B. B. KING

Born: September 16, 1925

Itta Bena, Mississippi

African American singer, musician, and songwriter

B. B. King is one of the most successful artists in the history of blues music. Today his ability as a blues guitarist remains unmatched.

Early years

Riley B. King was born on September 16, 1925, between Itta Bena and Indianola, Mississippi. His parents split up when he was a small child, and he lived for a few years with his mother in the Mississippi hills. She died when he was nine, and he was alone until his father, Albert King, found him a few years later. Working on a cotton plantation in Indianola, he earned \$22.50 a week. "I guess the earliest sound of blues that I can remember was in the fields while people would be pickin' cotton or choppin' or somethin'." King noted in a 1988 *Living Blues* interview cited in *Contemporary Musicians*. "When I sing and play now I can hear those same sounds that I used to hear then as a kid."

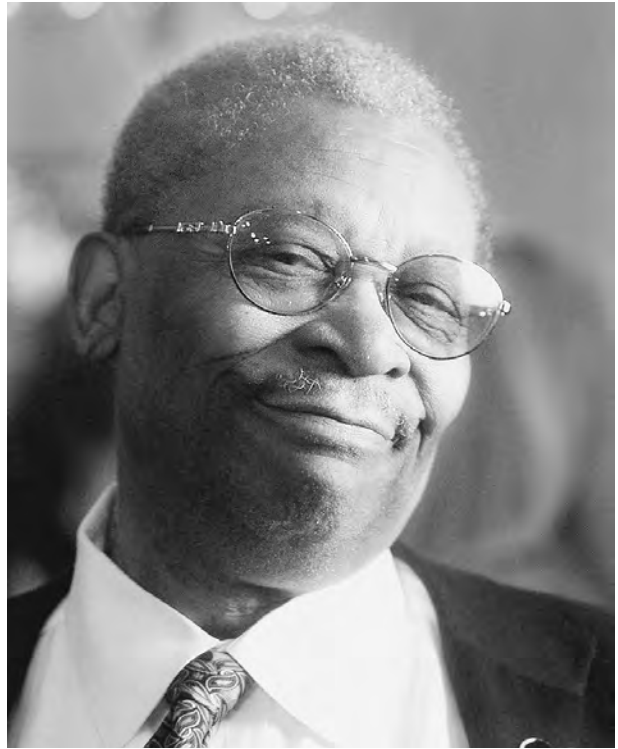
King sang gospel music in church and even performed professionally with the

Famous St. John Gospel Singers, but he was not allowed to sing the blues, which was considered “the devil’s music.” Still, he listened to recordings by early blues masters, especially Sonny Boy Williamson, on his aunt’s record player. King’s farm boss loaned him money to buy a guitar and sign up for music lessons, and King quickly developed as a blues player. Soon he was earning more singing and playing guitar on street corners on Saturday than he made all week on the plantation. King left Mississippi for Memphis, Tennessee, which promised the excitement and musical atmosphere he dreamed of. He settled there for good in 1948.

“Beale Street Blues Boy”

After serving briefly in the army, King moved in with his cousin Booker (Bukka) White, also a blues guitarist. King’s attempts to copy Bukka’s playing helped him develop his own style. He sought out Sonny Boy Williamson, who had a radio show on WDIA in West Memphis, and asked to play a song for him. Williamson was so impressed with King that he offered King his own radio show and a chance to play regularly at Miss Annie’s 16th Street Grill. King was able to advertise his upcoming concerts on the radio, and soon he and his trio had become popular. Known on the radio as the “Beale Street Blues Boy,” which was shortened to “Bee-Bee,” and then to his famous initials, King decided he wanted to make records.

King was signed to Bullet Records and in 1949 recorded four songs at the radio station, including “Miss Martha King” and “I’ve Got the Blues.” He also continued to perform in the area. Musician and talent scout Ike Turner (1931–) connected King with the Kent/Mod-



B. B. King.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

ern/RPM record label, and King’s King’s 1951 single for his new label, “Three O’Clock Blues,” became a hit. He scored several other hits during these years, and by the mid-1950s he was playing about three hundred shows a year. He would maintain this schedule for over twenty years.

Once when King was playing at a dance in Twist, Arkansas, two men got into a fight and knocked over a heater, starting a fire that spread through the dancehall. King escaped the burning building, then remembered his sixty-dollar guitar and ran back in, nearly dying in an attempt to rescue it. When he discovered that the men who had started the blaze

were fighting over a woman named Lucille, he gave the name to his guitar—"to remind myself never to do anything that foolish."

Appreciated by rock audiences

Although King distanced himself from rock and roll when the new style emerged in the 1950s, he soon began to add some of the traits of early rockers like Little Richard (1932–) and Fats Domino (1928–) to his act. In 1962 he moved to the ABC label, and in 1965 he put out his first album, *Live at the Regal*. In 1968, after the assassination of civil rights leader Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968), King played an all-night blues benefit with fellow guitarists Jimi Hendrix (1942–1970) and Buddy Guy (1936–) to raise money for King's Southern Christian Leadership Conference.

During the late 1960s, praise for King from English rock musicians such as Eric Clapton (1945–) and Jimmy Page (1944–) led to renewed interest in the blues among U.S. audiences. King found himself playing concerts with bands such as Led Zeppelin, Black Sabbath, and Santana. As African American audiences moved away from the blues, King began to attract young white listeners. In 1969 "The Thrill Is Gone" was released; the song won a Grammy in 1971 and became King's biggest hit. In 1971, with attorney F. Lee Bailey (1933–), King founded FAIRR (the Foundation for the Advancement of Inmate Rehabilitation and Recreation), an organization dedicated to the improvement of prison conditions. King often gave concerts in prisons, one of which was recorded and released as *Live at San Quentin*.

A blues legend

By the 1980s King was recognized as a blues legend. He won a 1984 Grammy for best traditional blues recording for *Blues n' Jazz*; he appeared on the album *Rattle and Hum* with the Irish rock band U2; and he received a Lifetime Achievement Award at the 1988 Grammy awards ceremony. In the early 1990s King was inducted into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame, received a Presidential Medal of Freedom from George Bush (1924–), and even earned a star on Hollywood's Walk of Fame. *Live at San Quentin*, released in 1990, earned him another Grammy. He was also the owner of B. B. King's Blues Club and Restaurant on Beale Street in Memphis.

King has been married and divorced twice. He has fifteen children and has often expressed regret that his heavy touring schedule prevented him from being around to see them grow up. He was faced with a heartbreaking situation in 1992 when he played at a jail in Gainesville, Florida; among the inmates there was his daughter Patty, who was serving time on drug charges. By the time he reached his late sixties, King had slowed down his performance schedule somewhat, though he still toured regularly. In 1994 he played a concert at the Hard Rock Café in Beijing, China. He was by now playing Lucille the Fifteenth. "We've spent 40 years together," he said to *Ebony*. "She likes younger men but puts up with me."

In December 1995 King received the 18th annual Kennedy Center Honors presented by President Bill Clinton (1946–). King said of the event, "Anytime the most powerful man in the world takes 10 to 15 minutes to sit and talk with me, an old guy from Indianola, Mis-

issippi, that's a memory imprinted in my head which forever will be there." In 2000 King was elected to the Mississippi Musicians Hall of Fame. The same year he received a Heroes Award from the National Academy of Recording Arts & Sciences. In February 2001 he won another Grammy in the traditional blues album category for *Riding with the King*, which he recorded with Eric Clapton.

For More Information

Danchin, Sebastian. *Blues Boy: The Life and Music of B. B. King*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 1998.

King, B. B. *Blues All Around Me: The Autobiography of B.B. King*. New York: Avon Books, 1996.

Rees, Dafydd, and Luke Crampton, eds. *Rock Movers and Shakers*. New York: Billboard Books, 1991.

nia city of Long Beach. She was the first of Willard and Betty Moffitt's two children. Her father was an engineer for the fire department, and her mother was a receptionist at a medical center. Both she and her brother, Randy, who would become a professional baseball player, excelled in athletics as children and were encouraged by their parents. At fire department picnics, her father's coworkers always wanted Billie Jean to play on their softball team.

Billie Jean developed an interest in tennis at age eleven and saved money to buy her first racket. When she was fourteen years old she won her first championship in a southern California tournament. She began receiving coaching at age fifteen from Alice Marble, a famous player from the 1930s. The product of a working-class family, Billie Jean soon found herself caught up in a country club sport. Despite her success on the court, the fact that tennis was mainly geared toward men would prove a personal challenge to her in later years.

BILLIE JEAN KING

Born: November 22, 1943

Long Beach, California

American tennis player

International tennis star Billie Jean King won a record twenty Wimbledon championships and helped win equal treatment for women in sports.

Encouraged by her parents

Billie Jean (Moffitt) King was born on November 22, 1943, in the southern Califor-

Tournament successes

In 1961 Billie Jean competed in her first Wimbledon tournament in England. Although she was defeated in the women's singles, she teamed with Karen Hautze to win the doubles (two-person team) title. She married attorney Larry King in 1965. In 1966 she won her first Wimbledon singles championship and repeated in 1967. That same year she also won the U.S. Open singles title at Forest Hills, New York.

In 1968 King won both the women's singles and doubles titles at Wimbledon. In 1971 she became the first woman athlete to win more than one hundred thousand dollars

KING, BILLIE JEAN



Billie Jean King.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

in a single year. It was 1972, however, that would be King's banner year. She won the women's singles title at Wimbledon, the U.S. Open, and the French Open. (These three tournaments plus the Australian Open now make up the "Grand Slam" of tennis.) For this feat, *Sports Illustrated* magazine named her "Sportswoman of the Year," and *Sports* magazine deemed her "Tennis Player of the Year."

In 1973 King again won Wimbledon's singles and doubles championships. It was then that she began to openly criticize the low prize money offered to women competitors. She noted that women were receiving far less than men for what she considered

equal ability and effort. Her statements on this issue led to the offer from a major U.S. drug manufacturer of a large sum of money to make the prize money at the U.S. Open equal for both men and women.

A victory for women's liberation

King's career coincided with the women's liberation (feminist) movement of the 1970s. Her working-class upbringing in southern California and the second-class treatment she received as a professional athlete made her a natural spokesperson for the movement. Her role as a leader in the feminist cause reached its peak in September 1973, when she faced the 1939 men's tennis champion Bobby Riggs (1918–1995) in a nationally televised match at the Astrodome in Houston, Texas. King easily beat the aging Riggs and emerged as the winner of what had been billed as the "Battle of the Sexes."

In 1975 King won her sixth Wimbledon singles championship, but she announced that she would no longer compete in major events because of injuries to her knees. In all she won a record twenty Wimbledon championships (including singles, doubles, and mixed doubles). Today, women competing in professional athletic contests owe much to Billie Jean King. With her outstanding play and forceful attitude, she earned them the right to compete for the same money as men.

Later years

King helped to found the Women's Tennis Association and served as its president from 1973 to 1975 and again from 1980 to 1981. After retiring from professional tennis in 1984, King and her husband have promoted coed (open to both men and women)

team tennis. King has also been active in charitable events. In 1995 she joined the Virginia Slims legends tour along with Chris Evert (1954–) and Martina Navratilova (1956–) to raise money for the fight against acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; a disease that destroys the body's ability to fight off infection). King is also an investor in Discovery Zone, a chain of children's "play lands" that promotes the equal athletic abilities of boys and girls.

King continues to be associated with the sport as a broadcaster, teacher, and coach. In 1999 and 2000 she coached the U.S. women's team, whose members included Venus Williams, Serena Williams, Lindsay Davenport, and Jennifer Capriati, to victories in the international Federation Cup tournament.

For More Information

King, Billie Jean. *Billie Jean*. New York: Viking Press, 1982.

King, Billie Jean. *Secrets of Winning Tennis*. New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1974.

Marble, Alice, and Dale Leatherman. *Courting Danger*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Rappoport, Ken. *Girls Rule!: The Glory and Spirit of Women in Sports*. Kansas City, MO: Andrews McMeel Publishers, 2000.

CORETTA SCOTT KING

Born: April 27, 1927

Perry County, Alabama

African American civil rights advocate

Coretta Scott King was the wife of civil rights leader Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968). She has gained an international reputation as an advocate (someone that supports a cause) for civil rights, nonviolence, international peace, and equal rights for women.

Early life and school

Coretta Scott was born on April 27, 1927, in Perry County, Alabama. Her parents, Obadiah and Bernice Scott, were farmers. The Scott family had owned land in the area since the American Civil War (1861–65). Even though the Scotts were more successful than most African Americans in the area, life for them and their three children was difficult. Coretta, along with her mother and sister, tended the family garden and crops, fed the chickens and hogs, and milked the cows.

Scott's early schooling was affected by the system of segregation, which kept people of different races apart. She walked six miles a day to and from school while white students traveled by bus to schools with better facilities and teachers. After completing six grades at the elementary school that "did not do much to prepare" her, Scott enrolled in Lincoln High School in Marion, Alabama. Lincoln "was as good as any school, white or black, in the area," said Scott. She developed an interest in music at Lincoln and, with encouragement from her teachers, decided to pursue a career in it.

Obstacles to overcome

In 1945 Scott graduated as valedictorian (the student having the highest grades) of her

KING, CORETTA SCOTT



Coretta Scott King.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

high school class and won a scholarship to Antioch College in Yellow Springs, Ohio. Eager to leave the South, Scott enrolled at Antioch only to discover that racism (a dislike or disrespect of someone solely based on his or her race) was very much alive there also. Being the first African American to major in elementary education at Antioch created problems for her. Such a major required a two-year internship, or training period—one year teaching in the Antioch private elementary school and the other in the Ohio public schools. The year at the Antioch school, where Scott taught music, went well. The Yellow Springs school board, how-

ever, refused to allow Scott to teach in its school system because of her race. The student body was integrated, meaning that it contained both black and white students, but the faculty (teachers and members of the administrative staff) was all white. Scott was given the option of going to Xenia, Ohio, and teaching in an all-black school or remaining at the Antioch private school for a second year. She chose to stay at the Antioch school.

Discrimination (unequal treatment based on race) made Scott more determined than ever. She joined the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) as well as a race-relations committee and a civil liberties committee. She later said, “I was active on all of them. From the first, I had been determined to get ahead, not just for myself, but to do something for my people and for all people. I took to my heart the words of Horace Mann [1796–1859], ‘Be ashamed to die until you have won some victory for humanity.’”

Scott’s years at Antioch were rewarding despite her unfortunate teaching experience. Her time there renewed and strengthened the values of giving and sharing that she had learned at home and at Lincoln High School. She learned to work toward excellence, crediting the school with helping lead her to believe “that individuals as well as society could move toward the democratic ideal of brotherhood.” At Antioch, Scott developed confidence that she could compete with “all people of all racial, ethnic and cultural backgrounds” on their terms or on her own. She claimed that “the total experience of Antioch” was an important element in preparing her for the role as wife of Martin Luther King Jr. and for her part in the civil rights move-

ment (the organized effort to gain full equality for African Americans in the United States) he led.

Marriage to Martin Luther King Jr.

While Coretta Scott was at Antioch she realized that she wanted to continue in music and to develop her voice to its fullest potential. She enrolled in the New England Conservatory in Boston, Massachusetts, graduating in 1954 with a bachelor's degree in music. It was in Boston that she met Martin Luther King Jr. They were married on June 18, 1953. Her decision to marry the young minister meant giving up her career as a performing concert musician.

In 1954 the Kings moved to Montgomery, Alabama, where they led the Dexter Avenue Baptist Church. It was in Montgomery that they were pushed into the leadership of the civil rights movement. Martin Luther King Jr. was recognized as the movement's leader, but Coretta Scott King was very much a part of it as well. She was actively involved in organizing and participating in the marches and boycotts (a form of protest in which organizers refuse to have dealings with a person, a store, or an organization until policies or positions are changed). She also gave "freedom concerts," in which she sang, read poetry, and gave lectures on the history of civil rights, to raise funds for the Southern Christian Leadership Conference (SCLC; an organization that was founded by Martin Luther King Jr. in 1957 to help local groups in their efforts to gain equality for African Americans) and for the civil rights movement. She also gave speeches all over the country, often standing in for her husband.

A worthy successor

After the assassination of Martin Luther King Jr. in Memphis, Tennessee, on April 4, 1968, Coretta Scott King continued to work for the civil rights movement. Four days after the violent murder of her husband, the grieving widow and three of her four children returned to Memphis to lead the march Martin had organized. In June 1968 she spoke at the Poor People's Campaign in Washington, D.C., a rally her husband had been planning before his death. Then, in May 1969 she led a demonstration of striking hospital workers in Charleston, South Carolina.

In addition to her role in the civil rights movement, King was active in the peace movement. She called the Vietnam War (1955–75; a civil war in which U.S.-backed forces in South Vietnam fought against a takeover by forces from North Vietnam), "the most cruel and evil war in the history of mankind." In 1961 as a representative for the Women's Strike for Peace, she attended a seventeen-nation arms-reduction conference in Geneva, Switzerland. Later, King was concerned with full employment (or providing access to jobs for all people who are able to work). She testified in Washington in favor of the Humphrey-Hawkins Full Employment and Balanced Growth Act of 1978, which was aimed at reducing both unemployment and rates of price increases. She also supported equal rights and justice for women.

King also led and worked on several national committees and continued to serve on the board of directors of the SCLC. She was president of the Martin Luther King Jr. Center for Social Change, located in Atlanta, Georgia. The Kings' youngest son, Dexter Scott King (1961–), took over as leader of the King Center in 1995.

KING, MARTIN LUTHER, JR.

Coretta Scott King continues to work in support of world peace, full employment, and social justice. Furthermore, her commitment to nonviolence is as strong as ever.

For More Information

Klingel, Cynthia Fitterer. *Coretta Scott King*. Chanhassen, MN: Child's World, 1999.

Press, Petra. *Coretta Scott King: An Unauthorized Biography*. Chicago: Heinemann Library, 2000.

Rhodes, Lisa Renee. *Coretta Scott King*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1998.

Schraff, Anne E. *Coretta Scott King: Striving for Civil Rights*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.

Turk, Ruth. *Coretta Scott King: Fighter for Justice*. Boston: Branden, 1997.

MARTIN LUTHER KING JR.

Born: January 15, 1929

Atlanta, Georgia

Died: April 4, 1968

Memphis, Tennessee

African American civil rights activist and minister

The minister and Nobel Peace Prize winner Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968) originated the use of nonviolent methods within the civil rights movement. He was one of the most important African American leaders of his time.

Early life

Martin Luther King Jr. was born on January 15, 1929, in Atlanta, Georgia. He attended Atlanta public schools and then went on to Morehouse College. After graduation from Morehouse in 1948, King entered Crozer Theological Seminary and graduated in 1951. He then received his doctorate (an advanced degree) in theology (the study of religion) from Boston University in 1955.

In Boston King met Coretta Scott, whom he married on June 18, 1953. Four children were born to the couple. In 1954, King became minister of Dexter Avenue Baptist Church in Montgomery, Alabama. In Montgomery, he became active with the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) and the Alabama Council on Human Relations.

Nonviolence: the bus boycott

In December 1955, Rosa Parks (1913–), a black woman, was arrested for violating a segregated seating ordinance (a law enforcing separation between African American and white people) on a public bus in Montgomery. Black citizens were outraged. At the time, many public places, including buses, were segregated. King, along with fellow activists, urged African Americans to boycott the segregated city buses. (In a boycott people refuse to use products and services provided by people, businesses, or organizations until policies and procedures are changed.) From this boycott, the Montgomery Improvement Association (MIA) was formed. The bus boycott lasted more than a year. Finally, the bus company agreed to the protesters demands and ended segregated seating. The U.S. Supreme Court later stated that

the bus segregation laws of Montgomery were unconstitutional, or went against the laws of the Constitution.

Overnight, Martin Luther King had become a national hero as a leader in the civil rights struggle. The victory had not been easy. As an elected president of the MIA, King's life was in constant danger. His home was bombed, and he and other MIA leaders were constantly threatened, arrested, and jailed.

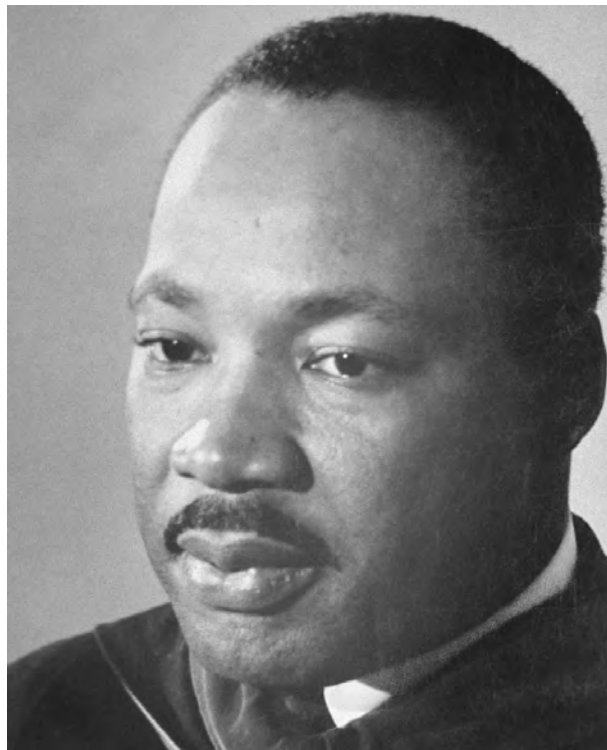
Southern Christian Leadership Conference

In January 1957 approximately sixty black ministers assembled in Atlanta to form the Southern Christian Leadership Conference (SCLC) to continue the civil rights fight. King was elected president. In February 1958 the SCLC sponsored twenty-one mass meetings in southern cities as part of a "Crusade for Citizenship." The goal was to double the number of black voters in the South. King was now traveling constantly, speaking for "justice" throughout the country.

A year later the Kings visited India at the invitation of Prime Minister Jawaharlal Nehru (1889–1964). King had long been interested in nonviolence as practiced by Mahatma Gandhi (1869–1948). Yet, when they returned to the United States, the civil rights struggle had become much more intense. Violent resistance by whites to the nonviolent efforts of black demonstrators filled the newspapers with stories of bloody fights.

"Sit-in" movement

In February 1960 the "sit-in" movement started in Greensboro, North Carolina. African American students began this nonviolent form of protest by sitting at "white only"



*Martin Luther King Jr.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

lunch counters in city stores. The movement quickly spread throughout much of the South. On April 15, 1960, the SCLC called a meeting of sit-in leaders to organize the movement. King urged the young people to continue using nonviolent means. Out of this meeting the Student Nonviolent Coordinating Committee (SNCC) emerged.

By August 1960 the sit-ins had succeeded in ending segregation at lunch counters in twenty-seven southern cities. In October 1960 the SCLC decided to increase their efforts to get African Americans registered to vote, use boycotts to gain fair employment, and work to end segregation in public places.

KING, MARTIN LUTHER, JR.

A popular department store in Atlanta, widely known for its policy of segregation, was the first goal in this renewed effort. When King and seventy-five students entered the store and requested lunch-counter service, he and thirty-six others were arrested. However, Atlanta's mayor worked out a truce and charges were dropped. But King was imprisoned for breaking the terms of his court supervision that resulted from a traffic offense conviction. John F. Kennedy (1917–1963), who at the time was campaigning for the presidency, made a telephone call to Mrs. King, and then worked to get King released.

Freedom riders

Soon the Congress of Racial Equality (CORE), SCLC, and SNCC joined together to form the Freedom Ride Coordinating Committee with King as chairman. The idea was to “put the sit-ins on the road” by having pairs of black and white volunteers board interstate buses traveling through the South. This would test a new federal law forbidding segregated bus stations. A great deal of violence resulted as resisting whites overturned and burned buses, assaulted the Freedom Riders, and attacked newsmen. Many of the arrested riders chose prison rather than pay fines. However, the protest worked, forcing the Interstate Commerce Commission to enforce laws against segregation.

The movement heats up

On May 2, 1963, some six thousand school children marched to demonstrate against school segregation. The next day, as volunteers gathered in a church, police blocked the exits, and turned fire hoses and police dogs on the teenage demonstrators.

Finally, there was a truce between the civil rights groups and the police. Then, the Ku Klux Klan (KKK; a group that believes the white race is better than all other races) bombed the home of King's brother and the motel where SCLC members were headquartered. Enraged black citizens rioted and Alabama state troopers moved in and set up undeclared martial law, or temporary rule by the military. King and SCLC personnel continued to urge nonviolence but more violence erupted when white racists refused to obey federal school integration laws. The worst came when a bomb thrown into an African American church killed four little girls.

“Let Freedom Ring”

The year 1963 continued to be eventful in the struggle for civil rights. In June King led 125,000 people on a “Freedom Walk” in Detroit, Michigan. On August 27, more than 250,000 black and white citizens gathered in Washington, D.C. for a mass civil rights rally. There, King delivered his famous “Let Freedom Ring” address. That same year he was featured as *Time* magazine's “Man of the Year.”

In 1964 King and his followers moved on to St. Augustine, Florida, one of America's most segregated cities. After weeks of nonviolent demonstrations and violent counterattacks by whites, a committee was set up to move St. Augustine toward desegregation. A few weeks later, the 1964 Civil Rights Bill, which made discrimination (unequal treatment) based on race illegal, was signed into law by President Lyndon Johnson (1908–1973). In December 1964, King received the Nobel Peace Prize.

Target: Alabama

In 1965 the SCLC concentrated its efforts in Alabama. The first target was Selma, where

only a handful of black citizens had been allowed to vote. King urged President Johnson to rush the Voting Rights Act and announced a march from Selma to Montgomery to demonstrate the black people's determination to vote. (The Voting Rights Act, which was passed on August 10, 1965, made it illegal for Southern states to prevent African Americans from voting and registering to vote.) Alabama Governor George Wallace (1919–1998) refused to permit the march, and the five hundred people who gathered to march were beaten by state troopers.

Nonetheless, the march continued, and Selma's black citizens were joined by hundreds of black and white protesters from other states. On March 21, 1965, more than ten thousand people followed King from Selma toward Montgomery. Only three hundred were allowed to make the full four-day march, but they were joined by another twenty-five thousand in Montgomery for the final leg to the Capitol to present a petition (a written demand) to Governor Wallace.

New issues: Vietnam War

In 1965 King made a "people-to-people" tour of northern cities. A growing number of black people were becoming aggressive in the struggle for their rights. Their position caused King to take another look at the non-violent civil rights movement that he had fathered. Although committed to nonviolence and civil rights, he was also troubled about the American involvement in the Vietnam War (1965–73; a war in Vietnam in which American forces supported South Vietnam in their fight against Communist North Vietnam). He soon found himself pushed toward leadership in antiwar groups.

In 1967 King began speaking directly against U.S. involvement in the Vietnam War, although many civil rights advocates criticized this position. Around this time, while serving a four-day sentence in Birmingham, which was a result of the 1963 demonstrations, that King and other activists began planning a "Poor People's March." The march was to be held in Washington, D.C. on April 22, 1968, to bring together the interests of the poor of all races.

Death to a dream

In February 1968 King led an antiwar rally in Washington, D.C. In March, King went to Memphis, Tennessee, to lead demonstrations against a wide range of complaints, including police brutality and poor school conditions. The march ended in a riot when some frustrated young African Americans began breaking windows, looting, and burning stores. The police reacted quickly and violently.

In Memphis on April 3, 1968, King addressed a rally. Speaking of threats on his life, he urged followers to continue the non-violent struggle no matter what happened to him. The next evening, as King stood on an outside balcony at the Lorraine Motel, he was struck by a rifle bullet. He died a few hours later.

A monument to King

In December 1999, a four-acre site near the Lincoln Memorial in Washington, D.C., was approved as the location for a monument to King. The site is near the place where King delivered his "I have a dream" speech in 1963. In September 2000, a design was selected. The monument will be the first to honor an individual African American in the National Mall area.

For More Information

Fairclough, Adam. *Martin Luther King, Jr.* Athens: University of Georgia Press, 1995.

Frady, Marshall. *Martin Luther King, Jr.* New York: Penguin Group, 2002.

King, Coretta Scott. *My Life with Martin Luther King, Jr.* New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1969.

King, Coretta Scott, ed. *The Words of Martin Luther King Jr.* New York: Newmarket Press, 1983.

King, Martin Luther, Jr. *The Autobiography of Martin Luther King Jr.* Edited by Clayborne Carson. New York: Intellectual Properties Management, 1998.

Millender, Dharathula H. *Martin Luther King, Jr.: Young Man with a Dream.* Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1983.

STEPHEN KING

Born: September 21, 1947

Portland, Maine

American author

Stephen King is a very popular author of horror fiction. In his works he blends elements of the traditional gothic (bleak and threatening) tale with those of the modern psychological (how the mind works) thriller, detective, and science fiction stories.

His early years

Stephen Edwin King was born on September 21, 1947, in Portland, Maine. When

he was two years old, his father left the family, leaving his mother to care for Stephen and his older brother, David. She took a series of low-paying jobs to support her children, and as a result the boys saw little of their mother.

As a boy King found a box of fantasy-horror fiction books and stories that had belonged to his father, and he read them all. By the time King was seven he had begun writing his own stories. He enjoyed watching science fiction and monster movies.

“Writing has always been it for me,” King indicated in a panel discussion at the 1984 World Fantasy Convention in Ottawa, Canada. Science fiction and adventure stories comprised his first literary efforts. King began submitting short fiction to magazines when he was twelve. He had no success at that time selling his stories, but he did win first prize in an essay competition sponsored by a scholastic magazine. In high school King authored a small, satiric (poking fun at human weakness) newspaper entitled *The Village Vomit*. He published his first story at eighteen in a magazine called *Comics Review*.

King graduated from high school in 1966. He received a Bachelor of Arts degree in English from the University of Maine in 1970. He married Tabitha Spruce, also a writer, the following year. They have three children.

After college

After graduating from college, King taught English at a high school in Maine and added to his income by holding a number of part-time jobs and by writing short stories for several popular magazines. He did not receive much money from the sale of his stories. Sometimes he was not paid at all but was

given extra copies of the magazine to show or sell to other people.

King's first novel was *Carrie*, published in 1974. It was a huge success, which allowed King to quit his other jobs and write full-time. With this book, King became one of the top writers of horror stories.

Popularity

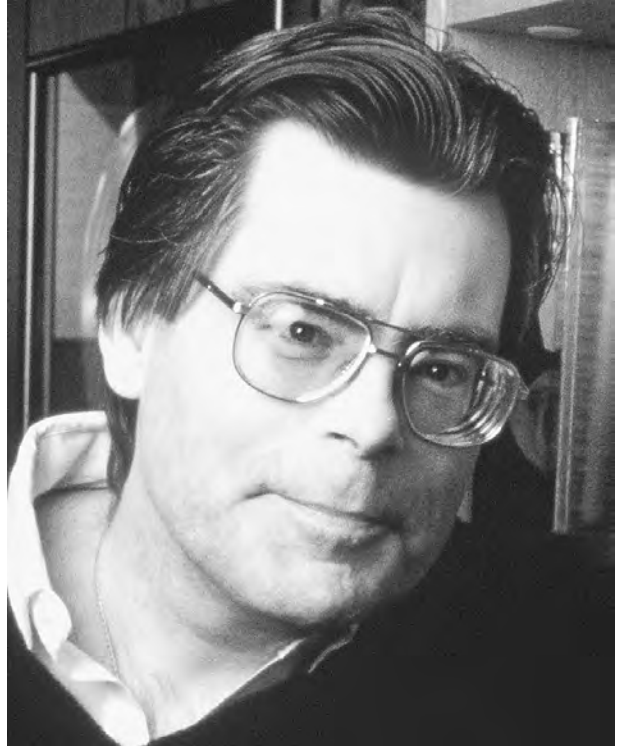
King's fiction features everyday language, attention to the details of the story's surroundings, the emotional feelings of his characters, realistic settings, and an emphasis on modern problems. King's popularity comes from his ability to create stories in which evil occurs in ordinary situations.

Many of King's stories are semiautobiographical, meaning that they are taken in part from some of his own experiences. Many of the locations he writes about are based on the places he grew up in when he lived in Maine and other locations. Many of his stories deal with ordinary people who are faced with frightening events they have to try to understand and overcome.

A publishing marvel, King has nearly one hundred million copies of his works in print worldwide. He is the first writer to have had three, four, and finally five titles appear simultaneously (at the same time) on the *New York Times* bestseller list.

How King approaches writing

Some of King's works are variations (different ways of telling) on classic stories of fantasy and horror. *Salem's Lot*, for example, is a contemporary (modern) version of Bram Stoker's (1847–1912) novel *Dracula*, set in an isolated New England town. King's epic (long



Stephen King.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

and large in scope) *The Stand* is close in structure to J. R. R. Tolkien's (1892–1973) *Lord of The Rings*. It tells of a battle between the forces of good and evil.

King used to write every day except for Christmas day, the Fourth of July, and his own birthday. Very often he would work on two or three stories at a time, switching from one to another as ideas came to him.

King has also admitted that during the period between 1977 and 1984 he wrote five novels under the pseudonym (a false name used to hide the identity of the writer) Richard Bachman. He did this to disguise the

true extent of his prolific (abundant, in great quantity) work. Also, his publisher believed that he had already saturated (filled to capacity) the market.

Scary

In his stories King also likes to write about how people relate to one another in scary situations. His characters are taken from both young and older people who come from many different backgrounds. King has said that he just wants to scare people. He likes to frighten his readers after he has made them love his characters. While stressing the importance of characterization (describing the qualities of characters), he regards the story itself as the most essential part of crafting fiction.

Even though he is very successful, King is modest. In an interview with *Yankee* magazine he said, "I'm leery [cautious] of thinking I'm somebody. Because nobody really is. Everybody is able to do something well, but in this country there's a premium [special value] put on stardom." He also said there is an "occupational hazard" (a danger based on a job) in being a successful writer, because of all the attention a writer can receive.

The accident

King had his own personal experience with horror on the afternoon of June 19, 1999. As he was walking near his summer home in Bangor, Maine, he was struck by a van. King had many operations to repair a collapsed lung and multiple fractures (small breaks) to his leg and hip. He then spent many months recovering in the hospital. King did get well but did not regain the same state of health he had before the accident.

The driver who hit King claimed the dog in his van distracted him. It was found he had several driving violations (acts of breaking the law). He was fined, but he did not go to jail, nor was his driver's license taken away.

Movies, television, and the World

Wide Web

Many of Stephen King's books and stories have been made into movies for both Hollywood and for television. These include *Carrie*, *Salem's Lot*, *The Shining*, *Christine*, *The Shawshank Redemption*, and *The Green Mile*.

In 2000 King's publisher, Simon & Schuster, published his novella (short novel) *Riding the Bullet* in electronic form. After that King became the first well-known author to self-publish on the Internet when he published several segments of a new book, *The Plant*, on the Web. In 2000 he also wrote *On Writing: A Memoir of the Craft*. In this book he tried to give advice to people who want to become writers based on his own experiences.

In early 2002 King announced his retirement from writing, saying that he has said everything that he set out to say.

Stephen King is regarded as a master of the horror story, developing this type of tale to a new level. The ideal format for horror tales used to be the short story, but King is one of the first to challenge that idea. He has written not just successful horror novels, but successful, long horror novels. His fans may take comfort in the fact that retirement is not always permanent.

For More Information

Beahm, George W. *Stephen King: America's Best-Loved Boogeyman*. Kansas City, MO: Andrews McMeel, 1998.

- Collings, Michael R. *The Many Facets of Stephen King*. Mercer Island, WA: Star-mont House, 1985.
- Keyishian, Amy, and Marjorie Keyishian. *Stephen King*. New York: Chelsea House, 1996.
- King, Stephen. *On Writing: A Memoir of the Craft*. New York: Scribner, 2000.
- Wilson, Suzan. *Stephen King: King of Thrillers and Horror*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2000.

RUDYARD KIPLING

Born: December 30, 1865

Bombay, India

Died: January 18, 1936

Burwash, England

English writer and poet

The English poet and story writer Rudyard Kipling was one of the first masters of the short story in English, and he was the first to use Cockney dialect (the manner in which natives of London, England's, East End speak) in serious poetry.

Early life

Joseph Rudyard Kipling was born on December 30, 1865, in Bombay, India. His father was professor of architectural sculpture at the Bombay School of Art. In 1871 Kipling was sent to England for his education. In 1878 Rudyard entered the United Services College at Westward Ho!, a boarding

school in Devon. There young "Gigger," as he was called, endured bullying and harsh discipline, but he also enjoyed the close friendships, practical jokes, and merry pranks he later recorded in *Stalky & Co.* (1899).

Kipling's closest friend at Westward Ho!, George Beresford, described him as a short, but "cheery, capering, podgy, little fellow" with a thick pair of spectacles over "a broad smile." His eyes were brilliant blue, and over them his heavy black eyebrows moved up and down as he talked. Another close friend was the headmaster, (the principal of a private school) "Crom" Price, who encouraged Kipling's literary ambitions by having him edit the school paper and praising the poems which he wrote for it. When Kipling sent some of these to India, his father had them privately printed as *Schoolboy Lyrics* (1881), Kipling's first published work.

Young journalist

In 1882 Kipling rejoined his parents in Lahore, India, where he became a copy editor (one who edits newspaper articles) for the *Civil and Military Gazette*. In 1887 he moved to the *Allahabad Pioneer*, a better paper, which gave him greater liberty in his writing. He published satiric (sharply or bitterly witty) verses, *Departmental Ditties* in 1886, and over seventy short stories in 1888 in seven paperback volumes. In style, these stories showed the influence of the writers Edgar Allan Poe (1809–1849), Bret Harte (1836–1902), and Guy de Maupassant (1850–1893). The subjects, however, were Kipling's own. He wrote about Anglo-Indian society, which he readily criticized with an acid pen, and the life of the common British soldier and the Indian native, which he portrayed accurately and sympathetically.



Rudyard Kipling.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Fame in England

In 1889 Kipling took a long voyage through China, Japan, and the United States. When he reached London, he found that his stories had preceded him and established him as a brilliant new author. He was readily accepted into the circle of leading writers. While there he wrote a number of stories and some of his best-remembered poems: "A Ballad of East and West," "Mandalay," and "The English Flag." He also introduced English readers to a "new genre [type]" of serious poems in Cockney dialect: "Danny Deever," "Tommy," "Fuzzy-Wuzzy," and "Gunga Din."

Kipling's first novel, *The Light That Failed* (1891), was unsuccessful. But when his stories were collected as *Life's Handicap* (1891) and poems as *Barrackroom Ballads* (1892), Kipling replaced Alfred, Lord Tennyson (1809–1892) as the most popular English author.

The American years

In 1892 Kipling married Caroline Balestier. They settled on the Balestier estate near Brattleboro, Vermont, in the United States, and began four of the happiest years of Kipling's life. During this time he wrote some of his best work—*Many Inventions* (1893), perhaps his best volume of short stories; *The Jungle Book* (1894) and *The Second Jungle Book* (1895), two books of animal fables that attracted readers of all ages by illustrating the larger truths of life; *The Seven Seas* (1896), a collection of poems in experimental rhythms; and *Captains Courageous* (1897), a novel-length, sea story. These works not only assured Kipling's lasting fame as a serious writer but also made him a rich man.

His imperialism

In 1897 the Kiplings settled in Rottingdean, a village on the British coast near Brighton. The outbreak of the Spanish-American War (1898; a short war between Spain and the United States over lands including Cuba and the Philippines) and the Boer War (1899–1902; a war between Great Britain and South Africa) turned Kipling's attention to colonial affairs. He began to publish a number of solemn poems in standard English in the *London Times*. The most famous of these, "Recessional" (July 17, 1897), issued a warning to Englishmen to regard their accomplishments in the Diamond Jubilee

(fiftieth) year of Queen Victoria's (1819–1901) reign with humility and awe rather than pride and arrogance. The equally well-known “White Man’s Burden” (February 4, 1899) clearly expressed the attitudes toward the empire that are implied in the stories in *The Day’s Work* (1898) and *A Fleet in Being* (1898).

Kipling referred to less highly developed peoples as “lesser breeds” and considered order, discipline, sacrifice, and humility to be the essential qualities of colonial rulers. These views have been denounced as racist (believing that one race is better than others), elitist (believing oneself to be a part of a superior group), and jingoistic (pertaining to a patriot who speaks in favor of an aggressive and warlike foreign policy). But for Kipling, the term “white man” indicated citizens of the more highly developed nations. He felt it was their duty to spread law, literacy, and morality throughout the world.

During the Boer War, Kipling spent several months in South Africa, where he raised funds for soldiers’ relief and worked on an army newspaper, the *Friend*. In 1901 Kipling published *Kim*, the last and most charming of his portrayals of Indian life. But anti-imperialist reaction following the end of the Boer War caused a decline in Kipling’s popularity.

When Kipling published *The Five Nations*, a book of South African verse, in 1903, he was attacked in parodies (satirical imitations), caricatures (exaggerations for comic effect), and serious protests as the opponent of a growing spirit of peace and democratic equality. Kipling retired to “Batemans,” a house near Burwash, a secluded village in Essex.

Later works

Kipling now turned from the wide empire as his subject to simply England itself. In 1902 he published *Just So Stories for Little Children*. He also issued two books of stories of England’s past—*Puck of Pook’s Hill* (1906) and *Rewards and Fairies* (1910). Like the *Jungle Books* they were intended for young readers but were suitable for adults as well. His most significant work at this time was a number of volumes of short stories written in a different style—“Traffics and Discoveries” (1904), “Actions and Reactions” (1904), “A Diversity of Creatures” (1917), “Debits and Credits” (1926), and “Limits and Renewals” (1932).

Kipling’s later stories treat more complex, subtle, and somber (serious) subjects. They reflect Kipling’s darkened worldview following the death of his daughter, Josephine, in 1899, and the death of his son, John, in 1915. Consequently, these stories have never been as popular as his earlier works. But modern critics, in reevaluating Kipling, have found a greater power and depth that make them among his best work.

In 1907 Kipling became the first English writer to receive the Nobel Prize in Literature. He died on January 18, 1936, and is buried in Westminster Abbey in London, England. His autobiography, *Something of Myself*, was published in 1937.

Rudyard Kipling’s early stories and poems about life in colonial India made him a great favorite with English readers. His support of English imperialism (the policy of extending the rule of a nation over foreign countries) at first contributed to this popularity but caused a reaction against him in the twentieth century. Today he is best known for his *Jungle Books* and *Kim, a Story of India*.

For More Information

Carrington, Charles Edmund. *Rudyard Kipling: His Life and Work*. London: Macmillan, 1955.

Gilmour, David. *The Long Recessional: The Imperial Life of Rudyard Kipling*. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 2002.

Ricketts, Harry. *Rudyard Kipling: A Life*. New York: Carroll & Graf, 2001.

Wilson, Angus. *The Strange Ride of Rudyard Kipling: His Life and Works*. New York: Viking Press, 1978.

HENRY KISSINGER

Born: May 27, 1923

Furth, Germany

German-born American government official

A leading expert on international relations since the 1950s, Henry Kissinger was secretary of state under Presidents Richard Nixon (1913–1994) and Gerald Ford (1913–). His impressive career also includes becoming the cowinner of the Nobel Peace Prize in 1973.

Early life and education

Henry Kissinger was born Heinz Alfred Kissinger on May 27, 1923, in Furth, Germany. He was the first of the two sons of Paula Stern Kissinger and Louis Kissinger. His father was a teacher who lost his job and career when the Nazis, carrying out the orders of Adolf Hitler (1889–1945), began

persecuting (causing people to suffer for their beliefs) Jewish people in Germany. (The Nazi party was in control of the government of Germany from 1933 to 1945.) As a boy Kissinger loved sports but was a better student than athlete. When German anti-Semitism (hatred of Jewish people) increased, the family decided to leave Germany in 1938, moving first to England and then several months later to the United States. The family settled in New York City, where Kissinger completed high school and began taking night classes at City College with the intention of becoming an accountant. While attending college he worked at a factory during the day.

During World War II (1939–45; a war involving the United States and many other countries in the world in which millions of people lost their lives) Kissinger joined the military and served in Germany, working in Army Intelligence. He also became an American citizen during the war. Following the war Kissinger remained in Europe as an instructor at the European Command Intelligence School in Germany. In 1947 he returned to the United States and enrolled at Harvard University. He graduated in the class of 1950 with a degree in government. He continued his studies as a graduate student, earning his master's degree in 1952 and his Ph.D. in 1954, while also teaching at the university.

An expert on international affairs

Between 1952 and 1969 Kissinger directed the Harvard International Seminar, a type of study in which advanced students, led by a professor, conduct research, share their findings, and contribute to discussions. The seminar was held during the summer months.

In this position, he was visited by many international figures with whom he would later deal as a foreign-affairs official. As part of the Council on Foreign Relations he published *Nuclear Weapons and Foreign Policy*, which added to his reputation as a leading expert on international relations and national defense policy. For eighteen months beginning in 1956 he was director of a Rockefeller Brothers Fund special studies project—a program developed to investigate possible domestic and international problems. In 1957 he became a lecturer (public speaker) at Harvard. He was promoted to professor in 1962.

Kissinger served as a consultant (one who gives professional advice) to the National Security Council, to the Arms Control Disarmament Agency, and to the Rand Corporation. From 1962 to 1965 he worked full time at Harvard. In 1965 he became a consultant to the State Department on Vietnam. He visited Vietnam several times between 1965 and 1967. Most of 1968 he spent working on the unsuccessful bid of New York Governor Nelson Rockefeller (1908–1979) for the Republican nomination for the presidency. In spite of Rockefeller's defeat by Richard Nixon, at Rockefeller's urging Nixon considered and appointed Kissinger to head the National Security Council.

Kissinger did not agree with the U.S. foreign policy toward the Soviet Union that had been developed under former presidents. He thought their positions had been inconsistent and too friendly. Kissinger viewed the Soviet Union as the main opponent of the United States in international affairs, but he had respect for the role of the Soviet Union as one of the superpowers. His attempts to ease tensions, known as *détente* (day-TAHNT),



Henry Kissinger.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

improved relations between the Soviet Union and the United States. As a result, one of Kissinger's early successes during this period of *détente* was the completion of talks on the Strategic Arms Limitations Treaty (SALT). SALT was an agreement between the Soviet Union and the United States to limit the number of nuclear weapons in each country. The discussions lasted for nearly three years and ended with the signing of an agreement in Moscow, Russia, by President Nixon and Soviet Communist Party Chief Leonid Brezhnev (1906–1982).

Kissinger also played an important part in the settlement of the Quadripartite Agree-

ment on Berlin, Germany, in September 1971. Berlin had been the source of problems between the East and West for many years, particularly after the creation of the Berlin Wall by the East German government in 1961 to prevent people from leaving the country. Through official negotiations (give-and-take discussions to settle an issue) handled by Ambassador Kenneth Rush (1910–1994), and secret negotiations directly involving Kissinger, an agreement was made to make it easier to travel between East and West Berlin. This agreement also improved relations between the United States and the former Soviet Union.

China, Vietnam, Middle East

Another of Kissinger's successes (and one that caught the media by surprise) was the organization of Richard Nixon's approach to China. The United States had refused to recognize the People's Republic of China following the civil war that left Communists under Mao Zedong (1893–1976). Communists believe in revolution to establish a system in which the means of production—land, factories, mines, and so on—are owned by all people in common. Early in Nixon's first term as president, efforts were made to allow interaction between China and the United States. Taking advantage of international conditions and moving secretly with the help of Pakistani President Yahya Khan (1917–1980), Kissinger flew to China and arranged for an invitation for Nixon to make an official state visit. Nixon's visit to China in 1972 provided guidelines for the establishment of U.S.-China relations. During his eight years in the National Security Council and State Department, Kissinger flew to China a total of nine times.

Kissinger was criticized most and forgiven least for his handling of the fighting in Southeast Asia. The U.S. involvement in the Vietnam War (1955–75) had driven President Lyndon Johnson (1908–1973) from office, and it had been the desire of the Nixon administration to seek "peace with honor." The Vietnam War was a war in which the government of South Vietnam, with U.S. assistance, fought against a Communist takeover by North Vietnam. Kissinger's approach was to negotiate from a position of strength. The direct U.S. involvement in Vietnam reflected this position, but the secret bombing of Cambodia—referred to as the "secret war"—was criticized as an excessive use of military strength to force U.S. opponents to agree to end the war. All U.S. involvement in Southeast Asia was an attempt to keep Vietnam, Cambodia, and Laos from becoming controlled by Communist groups. The secret bombing of Cambodia was eventually stopped by actions of Congress. Kissinger successfully negotiated a truce with his North Vietnamese counterpart Le Duc Tho (1911–1990) in Paris and shared the Nobel Peace Prize in 1973 with him.

Kissinger had gone along with the wishes of Secretary of State William Rogers (1913–2001) while on the National Security Council. Following his appointment as secretary of state in 1973, he changed his hands-off policy toward the Middle East. During the three years he was secretary of state, Kissinger conducted what became known as "shuttle" diplomacy (negotiations between nations). He served as the middleman in negotiations to restore peace among Middle Eastern nations. Kissinger would often fly from Egypt to Israel to Syria or elsewhere and back again as he worked to help develop

agreements to secure peace. In all, Kissinger made eleven “shuttle” missions, the longest lasting nearly a month.

Out of office

After leaving office following Ford’s loss to Jimmy Carter (1924–) in the 1976 presidential election, Kissinger was self-employed as the director of a consulting firm dealing with international politics. He received the Presidential Medal of Freedom, the nation’s highest award given to a civilian (nonmember of a military, police, or fire-fighting unit), in 1977. He also received the Medal of Liberty, an award that was given only once, in 1986, to ten foreign-born American leaders.

Kissinger produced two books of memoirs (accounts of his experiences) to explain events that had happened while he was in office. These explanations did not change the views of many critics, who believed that Kissinger had made major mistakes in developing U.S. foreign policy. In 1997 former Secretaries of State Kissinger and Alexander Haig (1924–) came under fire for their roles in helping U.S.-China trade. Some said that they stood to profit from contracts with the Chinese and that some of their dealings put the United States in a vulnerable (open to attack or damage) position. In 2001 Kissinger was named chancellor (president) of the College of William and Mary in Williamsburg, Virginia.

For More Information

Hersh, Seymour M. *The Price of Power: Kissinger in the Nixon White House*. New York: Summit Books, 1983.

Isaacson, Walter. *Kissinger: A Biography*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1992.

Kalb, Marvin, and Bernard Kalb. *Kissinger*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1974.

Kissinger, Henry. *The White House Years*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1979.

Kissinger, Henry. *Years of Upheaval*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1982.

Kissinger, Henry. *Years of Renewal*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1999.

CALVIN KLEIN

Born: November 19, 1942

Bronx, New York

American fashion designer

One of America’s top fashion designers, Calvin Klein first made a name for himself by designing clean, uncomplicated sportswear. He kept his name popular with the public by creating sometimes shocking and always news-making advertising campaigns.

His early years

Calvin Richard Klein was born on November 19, 1942, in the Bronx, New York, where he spent all of his childhood. Klein was the second of three children born to Flo and Leo Stern. The family lived relatively comfortably. His grandmother was a seamstress and he acquired his love of sewing from her. His mother encouraged his love of art and fashion.

Klein attended the High School of Art and Design, which prepared students for



Calvin Klein.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

careers in advertising and drafting. As a youth, while others his age were playing sports, Klein was busy studying, sketching fashion designs, and sewing. Later he moved on to the esteemed Fashion Institute of Technology, graduating in 1962. He spent five years as an apprentice (a student working toward learning a skill) in a coat and suit house on Seventh Avenue in New York City, working long nights and weekends to perfect his own designs.

In 1968 Klein and close childhood friend Barry Schwartz created a Calvin Klein coat business. The first order was actually obtained by accident. A coat buyer from Bonwit Teller

(a large New York City clothing store) got off on the wrong floor of a hotel and wandered into Klein's workroom. She placed an order for \$50 thousand, which was a huge amount at that time. Encouraged by favorable reviews from the fashion press and the support of store executives, Klein expanded his line to include women's sportswear.

Klein's world soon included his couture (fashionable custom-made women's clothing) line, Calvin Klein Collection for men and women, CK sportswear for men and women, and CK jeans. He also licensed arrangements for his menswear, coats, accessories, intimate apparel, hosiery, swimwear, eyewear, furs, socks, and fragrances, all under his careful control and management.

Of the many categories licensed, denim jeans, along with fragrances, built a large following among consumers, who sought an affordable way to attain the Calvin Klein look. By 1997 sales of Calvin Klein Jeans approached half a billion dollars.

Marketing approach was never subtle

Advertising was the key to Klein's success. He kept the media talking about him by creating controversy (open to dispute). He was the first to design women's underwear that looked like men's jockey shorts. His television ads for jeans starred Brooke Shields (1965–), who proclaimed: "Nothing comes between me and my Calvins."

Klein developed a reputation for pushing the boundaries of acceptability in his campaigns. Ads of the mid-1990s featured young teenagers in provocative poses that many regarded as socially irresponsible. Klein eventually cancelled these ads, but not

before the accompanying publicity had made the Calvin Klein brand name a part of everyday conversation.

Klein's three major fragrances, Obsession, Eternity, and Escape, were huge successes, also due in part to sexually-suggestive advertising. Advertising for his fragrances, CK One and CK Be, continued to challenge the public. Some ads showed teens taking part in what some regarded as an idealized drug culture. At this time, President Bill Clinton (1946–) admonished the fashion industry not to glamorize addiction. Klein replied that these ads represented a departure from phony airbrushed images that were not connected to the reality of today's world.

Design philosophy affirmed

Klein's design philosophy is rooted in minimalism (extreme simplicity). He typically uses neutral colors or earth tones (browns), and designs separates (articles of clothing designed to be worn interchangeably with others to form various combinations) that work in many different ensembles, from day to night and season to season. At the same time his advertising for jeans and fragrances was being criticized, Calvin Klein clothing was receiving critical acclaim for its clean, modern lines.

Time magazine named Klein one of the twenty-five most influential Americans in 1996. Klein won the prestigious Coty Award three times in a row (1973–1975), becoming the youngest designer to ever have that honor. In 1982, 1983, and 1986 he also captured the Council of Fashion Designers of America Award. In addition Klein built a financially strong company with the continued advice and help of partner Barry

Schwartz, who guided the company through tough financial times in the late 1980s. Few designers have rivaled his worldwide empire.

Klein's personal life also weathered the times. He married Jayne Centre in 1964, but they divorced in 1974. They had one child, Marci. He married one of his design assistants, Kelly Rector, in 1986.

Klein is known for his "casual chic" clothing, stylish but casual designs created for active women. He is undoubtedly one of the most successful American clothing designers today.

For More Information

Fortune (January 13, 1997).

Gaines, Steven, and Sharon Churcher. *Obsession: The Lives and Times of Calvin Klein*. New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1994.

Milbank, Caroline R. *NY Fashion: The Evolution of American Style*. New York: Abrams, 1989.

KUBLAI KHAN

Born: 1215

Mongolia

Died: February 1294

Ta-tu (Peking), China

Mongolian emperor

Kublai Khan was the greatest of the Mongol emperors after Genghis Khan and founder of the Yuan Dynasty in

China. He was a wise ruler and was able to lead a vast empire of nations by adapting different traditions to his own government.

Early life

Kublai Khan was the fourth son of Tūlē and the grandson of Genghis Khan (c. 1165–1227), the founder of the Mongol Empire. Strong, brave, and intelligent, Kublai was Genghis's favorite grandson; he had accompanied his father, Tūlē, in battles as a child. By the age of twelve he was a skilled horseman, and his reputation as a warrior grew as he became older. Kublai was seventeen when his father died.

In 1251 Kublai was given control over Chinese territories in the eastern part of the empire after his brother, Mōngkē, became Great Khan of the Mongol Empire. Kublai organized a group of Chinese advisers to introduce reforms in his territories. Kublai was also put in charge of expeditions with the goal of unifying China under the Mongol emperor. In 1257, unhappy with the progress of the war against the Chinese Sung Dynasty, Mōngkē led an expedition into western China but was killed by the Chinese defense in August 1259. In 1260, supported by pro-Chinese groups, Kublai was elected as Mōngkē's successor, but his younger brother, Ariq Böge, disputed the election and proclaimed himself khan at Karakorum, Mongolia. In the following years Kublai fought his brother, defeating him in 1264.

Kublai Khan's administration

Under Kublai, the Mongols adopted divide-and-rule tactics. The Mongols and central Asians remained separate from Chinese life; in many ways life for the Chinese

was left basically unchanged. Kublai was also well known for his acceptance of different religions. The rule of the Mongol minority was assured by dividing the population of China into four social classes: the Mongols; the central Asians; the northern Chinese and Koreans; and the southern Chinese. The first two classes enjoyed extensive privileges; the third class held an intermediate position; and the southern Chinese, the most numerous of all, were practically barred from state offices. Separate systems of law were maintained for Chinese and for Mongols. Kublai also reorganized the government, establishing three separate branches to deal with civilian (non-military) affairs, to supervise the military, and to keep an eye on major officials.

Following this reorganization, a new capital city was constructed at present-day Peking, China, in 1267. First called Chung-tu, the city was renamed Ta-tu (or Daidu, "great capital") in 1272. In the eyes of Kublai, leaving some Chinese institutions and customs in place was a political decision. Outside the administration, much of the Mongol way of life still prevailed. The Mongols, especially the military, preserved their tradition as nomads (wanderers). Even within the administration, Chinese influence was controlled by the large numbers of Mongols and central Asians. Kublai Khan named his rule the Yüan Dynasty in 1271. By February 1278 he had destroyed the Sung dynasty and was the unquestioned leader of an empire that stretched across two continents.

Kublai was a great supporter of trade, science, and the arts. He introduced the use of paper money for the entire empire and ordered the creation of a new alphabet for the Mongol language that closely resembled Chi-

nese writing. Kublai also established a system of sea transport and developed inland river and canal routes to move grain from the fertile rice-growing Yangtze River basin to provide food for the growing population. The Grand Canal system was finally extended north to Peking from the Yellow River.

As emperor of China, Kublai demanded loyalty and gifts from other states within the empire. Some of these, such as Annam and Korea, cooperated. To others, Kublai sent messengers asking for payment and attacked if his demands were ignored. Many of these expeditions, however, ended in failure. Twice between 1274 and 1281 Kublai's armies against Japan were either destroyed by storm or crushed by the Japanese because of the Mongols' inability to fight sea battles and the poor quality of their naval forces. Kublai suffered a setback when he failed to conquer the Malay kingdom of Champa in Indochina after a long war (1283–87). Three expeditions to conquer Burma in 1277, 1283, and 1287 also failed. In 1293 near the end of his reign, Kublai launched a naval expedition against the Javanese kingdom of Majapahit, but the Mongol forces had to withdraw after considerable losses.

Contact with the West

Under Kublai, the opening of direct contact between China and the West was made possible by Mongol control of central Asian trade routes and aided by the presence of efficient postal services. In the early thirteenth century, large numbers of Europeans and central Asians made their way to China. The presence of the Mongol power also enabled many Chinese to travel freely within the Mongol Empire, all the way to Russia, Persia, and Meso-



Kublai Khan.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

potamia. There were several direct exchanges of missions between the pope and the Great Khan. In 1266 Kublai entrusted the Polo brothers, two Venetian merchants, to carry a request to the pope for one hundred Christian scholars and technicians. The Polos met with Pope Gregory X (c. 1210–1276) in 1269 and received his blessing but no scholars.

Marco Polo (c. 1254–1324), who accompanied his father on this trip, was probably the best-known foreign visitor ever to set foot in China. It is said that he spent the next seventeen years under Kublai Khan, including official service in the administration and trips through the provinces of Yunnan and Fukien.

The accuracy of his descriptions of China was questioned, but the popularity of his journal generated great interest among Europeans for going east. Rabban Sauma, a monk born in Peking, crossed central Asia to the Il-Khan's court in Mesopotamia in 1278 and was one of those whom the Mongols sent to Europe to seek Christian help against Islam. Under Kublai, the first direct contact and cultural exchange between China and the West had occurred.

Kublai Khan's legacy

After a glorious reign of thirty-four years, Kublai Khan died in Ta-tu in February 1294. He is regarded as one of the great rulers in history. He was a shrewd and thoughtful ruler of a huge state. He was popular among the Chinese, and his achievements ranked him second to Genghis among the Mongol rulers. He showed great intelligence in using partial adoption of Chinese political traditions and divide-and-rule tactics to help in

the administration of a large empire. The main problem with his reign was that as he and his successors became more involved in Chinese traditions, there was a growing conflict between the Mongol rulers of China and those of the other khanates within the Mongol confederacy. They preferred to maintain their own character instead of looking toward China for leadership.

For More Information

- Dramer, Kim. *Kublai Khan*. New York: Chelsea House, 1990.
- Rachewiltz, Igor de. *Papal Envoys to the Great Khans*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 1970.
- Rossabi, Morris. *Khubilai Khan: His Life and Times*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1988.
- Silverberg, Robert. *Kublai Khan, Lord of Xanadu*. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1966.



MARQUIS DE LAFAYETTE

Born: September 6, 1757

Auvergne, France

Died: May 20, 1834

Paris, France

French general

The Marquis de Lafayette was a French general who played important roles in two revolutions in France and volunteered his time and money to help the American cause during the Revolutionary War (1775–83).

Early life

Marie Joseph Paul Yves Roch Gilbert du Motier, Marquis de Lafayette was born on September 6, 1757, in the province of Auvergne, France. His father was killed while fighting against the British in the Seven Years' War (1756–63). His mother and grandfather died when he was thirteen, leaving him a wealthy orphan. After studying in the Collège du Plessis in Paris, France, Lafayette joined the French army in 1771. In 1773 he married Adrienne de Noailles. However, he was not ready to settle down to the life of a wealthy man. After the outbreak of the American Revolution, he volunteered to help the new country in its fight against France's historic enemy, England.



Marquis de Lafayette.

Courtesy of the National Portrait Gallery.

American Revolution

King Louis XVI (1754–1793) refused to allow Lafayette to go to America, but Lafayette sailed anyway, after buying a ship with his own money. In June 1777 he landed in North Carolina. The Continental Congress had given him a commission as a major general, but his actual duties were as assistant to General George Washington (1732–1799). He assisted in battles against the British in Pennsylvania and New Jersey and eventually was sent back to France in an attempt to obtain greater French support for the Americans.

Upon returning to his homeland in 1779, Lafayette was arrested for having dis-

obeyed the king, but all was soon forgiven. Although not all his proposals for aid to the Americans were approved, Lafayette returned to America in 1780 in command of French forces that were sent to help. In 1781 he was given command of the defense of Virginia with the rank of major general. He drew English commander Charles Cornwallis (1738–1805) into a trap at Yorktown, Virginia; Cornwallis was blockaded by the American forces and by French troops under Admiral de Grasse. Cornwallis's surrender was the high point of Lafayette's military career.

Return to France

When Lafayette returned to the French army in 1782, he was considered a hero. He became a leader in the movement against the French monarchy (absolute rule by a single person). In 1789 he took a seat in the Estates General, the French legislature. The adoption of the Declaration of the Rights of Man and the Citizen (loosely based on the Declaration of Independence) was his idea, and he was given the command of the Parisian National Guard, a force of citizen-soldiers created to defend the new constitutional monarchy. Lafayette favored a moderate course (a gradual rate of change) for the Revolution but found that many others were not so willing to wait. His popularity declined, and his command to his troops to fire on a mob in 1791 led to his dismissal as command of the guard.

However, the beginning of war against Austria and Prussia in 1792 returned Lafayette to military life as commander of the army of the Ardennes. In August he crossed over into Austria with a few fellow officers. He was captured and held as a prisoner of war until 1797, when Napoleon Bonaparte

(1769–1821) obtained his release from jail but did not permit him to return to France. Lafayette had become so politically powerless that when he did return in 1799 without permission, he was given a military pension and allowed to live quietly in Lagrange, France.

Last years

When Napoleon stepped down as emperor in 1814, Lafayette was elected to the Legislative Chamber and demanded that Napoleon be kept out permanently. The return to power of the monarchy in 1815 after the Hundred Days (Napoleon's brief second reign) returned Lafayette to a position as a leader of the opposition to Kings Louis XVIII and Charles X. In 1824 Lafayette visited America as a guest of the government on a tour that lasted fifteen months. Congress rewarded him for his efforts during the American Revolution with money and land. When he returned to France in 1825, he was known as the "hero of two worlds."

Lafayette did not regain political prominence until revolution broke out again in 1830. Named to command the reestablished National Guard, he supported the naming of Louis Philippe as a constitutional monarch. He was dismissed from the guard the following year and became a critic of the new king. When Lafayette died in Paris on May 20, 1834, he had few followers left. His biggest influence was as a living symbol—of friendship between France and America, and of the men who wanted a better world but could not accept terror and cruelty as the ways to bring it into being.

For More Information

Gottschalk, Louis R. *Lafayette Comes to America*. Chicago.: University of Chicago Press, 1935.

Grote, JoAnn A. *Lafayette: French Freedom Fighter*. Philadelphia, PA: Chelsea House Publishers, 2001.

Kramer, Lloyd S. *Lafayette in Two Worlds*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1996.

Maddox, Margaret. *Lafayette in the French Revolution through the October Days*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1969.

Woodward, W. E. *Lafayette*. New York; Toronto: Farrar and Rinehart, Inc., 1938.

LAO TZU

Born: Sixth century B.C.E.

China

Died: Sixth century B.C.E.

China

Chinese philosopher

Lao Tzu is believed to have been a Chinese philosopher (a person who seeks to answer questions about humans and their place in the universe) and the accepted author of the *Tao te ching*, the main text of Taoist thought. He is considered the father of Chinese Taoism (a philosophy that advocates living a simple life).

Three Lao Tzus

The main source of information on Lao Tzu's life is a biography written by the historian Ssu-ma Ch'ien (145–86 B.C.E.) in his *Records of the Historian*. By this time a number of traditions or beliefs about the founder of Chinese

LAO TZU



Lao Tzu.

Taoism were going around, and Ssu-ma Ch'ien himself was unsure of their authenticity. The biography in fact contains an account of not one but three men called Lao Tzu.

The first Lao Tzu was a man named Li Erh or Li Tan, who came from the village of Ch'ü-jen in the southern Chinese state of Ch'u. Li Erh served as historian in charge of the official records in the Chinese imperial capital of Loyang. He was a peer of the famous Chinese philosopher Confucius (551–479 B.C.E.), and he is reported to have given an interview to Confucius when he came to Loyang seeking information on the Chou ritual.

Another man identified as the founder of Taoism was Lao Lai Tzu, who also came from

Ch'u. He is said to be a person of the same age as Confucius and is credited with a fifteen-chapter book explaining the teachings of the Taoist school. Nothing more is known about the second Lao Tzu.

According to a third account, the original Lao Tzu lived 129 years after the death of Confucius. This man went by the name of Tan, the historian of Chou. Actually, it is impossible to prove the historical accuracy of any of these accounts. Lao Tzu is not really a person's name and is only a complimentary name meaning "old man." It was common in this period to refer to respected philosophers and teachers with words meaning "old" or "mature." It is possible that a man who assumed the pseudonym (assumed name) Lao Tzu was a historical person, but the term Lao Tzu also was used as a substitute title to the supreme Taoist classic, *Tao te ching* (Classic of the Way and the Power).

According to Ssu-ma Ch'ien, Lao Tzu had been serving in the Chou capital for a long time. He became unhappy with the dishonest political situation and decided to go into retirement. As he was passing through the Hanku Pass west of Loyang, the gatekeeper stopped him and asked him to write down a book of his teachings. Lao Tzu then composed a book of five thousand sayings in two sections that described the theory of the *tao* and *te*. This book was then known as the *Tao te ching*.

Lao Tzu is frequently associated with the other famous early Chinese thinker, Confucius. There are numerous stories about debates that supposedly took place between these two great philosophers in which Lao Tzu was always the winner. These stories are undoubtedly anti-Confucian publicity circu-

lated by members of the Taoist school, perhaps as early as the fourth century B.C.E.

Tao te ching

Lao Tzu's *Tao te ching* itself is a collection of sayings describing the principal Taoist teachings. Most scholars now agree that Lao Tzu did not write this book, mainly because no one knows whether he was a historical person. The most convincing theory is that there were a large number of proverbs (wise sayings) that were part of the Taoist teaching. They were memorized and passed on from teacher to pupil. Eventually the best of these sayings were collected and edited into the book, which was then given the title *Tao te ching*. A study of the style and grammar of the work reveals that it must have been put together around the fourth century B.C.E.

Lao Tzu's *Tao te ching* has confused its readers for centuries. Its language is extremely short and unclear. Much of the text is rhymed. Although the work is divided into chapters, the passages in a chapter do not always refer to the same subject. Thus, it hardly qualifies as a well-organized book of philosophical teachings.

The most important concept developed in Lao Tzu's *Tao te ching* is *tao*. *Tao* literally means "road" or "way." In the *Tao te ching* it is portrayed as something that cannot be expressed, a concept beyond definition. "The way (*tao*) that can be told of is not the constant way." *Tao* is so indescribable that the term itself is often not used and is referred to only indirectly. *Tao* stands as the force behind the universe. There is even an indication that it is the universe itself.

An important quality of the *tao* is its "weakness," or "submissiveness." Because the *tao* itself is basically weak and submissive, it

is best for man to put himself in harmony with the *tao*. Thus, the *Tao te ching* places strong emphasis on nonaction (*wu wei*), which means the absence of aggressive action. Man should not strive for wealth or fame, and violence is to be avoided. This peaceful approach to life was extremely influential in later periods and led to the development of a particular Taoist way of living that involved special breathing exercises and special eating habits that were designed to maintain calmness and harmony with the *tao*.

For More Information

Heider, John. *The Tao of Leadership: Lao Tzu's Tao Te Ching Adapted for a New Age*. Atlanta: Humanics New Age, 1985.

Kohn, Livia, and Michael LaFargue, eds. *Lao Tzu and the Tao-Te-Ching*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1998.

Lau, D. C. *Lao Tzu: Tao Te Ching*. Baltimore: Penguin Books, 1963.

Lao Tzu. *Tao Te Ching*. Edited by James Legge. Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 1997.

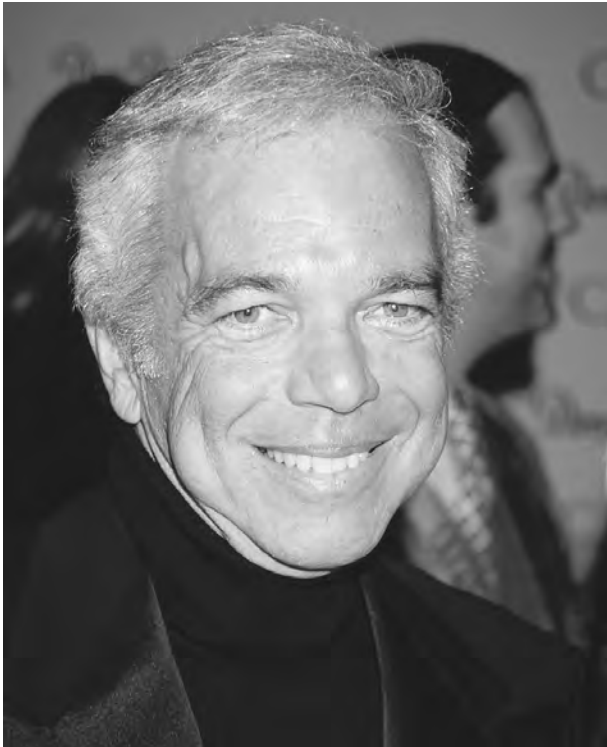
RALPH LAUREN

Born: October 14, 1939

New York, New York

American designer

The name of American clothing designer Ralph Lauren has become associated with class and taste. In addition to clothing, he designs home deco-



Ralph Lauren.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

rating products such as furniture, bedding, drapes, towels, rugs, china, and silverware.

Early life

The youngest of four children, Ralph Lifshitz was born in the Bronx, New York, on October 14, 1939. His father was a housepainter. Ralph became interested in clothes when he was in seventh grade. While attending DeWitt Clinton High School in New York, he worked part-time for New York department stores, saving his money to buy clothes. He changed his name to Lauren in the mid-1950s. After graduating from high school he worked as a salesman and began

studying business at night. He quit school after a few months, spent time in the army, and then looked for a job in fashion.

Creates popular fashions

In 1967 Lauren was hired by Beau Brummell Ties as a designer. His wide, colorful ties were the opposite of the narrow dark neckties common at the time; they sold well and started a new trend. Lauren started his own company and the next year launched a line of men's clothing, Polo, offering styles that were a mix of English and American styles and that expressed an image of class. Lauren's menswear was a success, and in 1971 he introduced his women's line. As the years went by he continued to branch out into children's clothes, colognes, footwear, home products, and other merchandise.

Lauren designed costumes for the films *The Great Gatsby* (1973) and *Annie Hall* (1978) that influenced the way millions dressed. Modestly describing his work, Lauren stated, "I believe in clothes that last, that are not dated in a season. The people who wear my clothes don't think of them as fashion.' Lauren's vision was to represent American style with a dash of British elegance and the comfort of natural fibers.

Lauren lived the image he projected, and he was often featured with his family in magazines devoted to lives of the rich and famous. He was also the first designer to appear in his own advertising. One of the secrets of Lauren's success lay in his attention to detail, always checking product quality and maintaining tight control over the brand image he crafted so carefully. Lauren's fashion formula earned many honors from his peers. He had seven Coty design awards and was

inducted into the Coty Hall of Fame in 1986. In 1992 he received the Lifetime Achievement Award from the Council of American Fashion Designers and a tribute for twenty-five years of impact on American style from the Woolmark Awards. The Council of Fashion Designers later elected him Designer of the Year in 1996.

Smart businessman

In 1971 Lauren opened his first retail store in Beverly Hills, California, building toward a total of 116 Polo-Ralph Lauren stores in the United States as well as 1,300 boutiques (small shops within department stores). In 1986 he made fashion retailing history with a large megastore housed in the elegant former Rhinelander Mansion in New York. John Fairchild, chairman of *Women's Wear Daily*, called it "The best boutique in America, probably the world." Consumers responded, spending over \$5 billion a year by 1997 to have the Lauren look and making him the best-selling designer in the world.

Two major new ventures begun in 1995 took Lauren into the highly competitive blue jean and mass-market women's clothing categories. Both took the Lauren name to a new customer at lower prices and were instant hits. In 1996 Lauren's Home Collection contributed about \$535 million in sales worldwide—more than any other designer. Paints were launched the same year, along with instruction videos and all the tools needed to create the living environment of one's choice. By 1997 investment bankers were fighting for the opportunity to help Lauren put his company on the stock market.

In 1998 Lauren announced that his company would donate \$13 million to the Smithsonian Institution in Washington, D.C., mainly to preserve the original American flag that inspired the writing of "The Star-Spangled Banner" in 1812. That same year he was honored for his efforts to raise money for research into a cure for breast cancer. In 2000 the company's Web site, Polo.com, was introduced, allowing online access to all Ralph Lauren products. Lauren's charitable contributions continued with the creation of the Polo Volunteer Program and the contribution of \$5 million to establish the Ralph Lauren Center for Cancer Prevention and Care at North General Hospital in Harlem, New York.

For More Information

Canadeo, Anne. *Ralph Lauren: Master of Fashion*. Ada, OK: Garrett Educational Corporation, 1992.

Milbank, Caroline Rennolds. *NY Fashion: The Evolution of American Style*. New York: Abrams, 1989.

Trachtenberg, Jeffrey. *Ralph Lauren: The Man Behind the Mystique*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1992.

EMMA LAZARUS

Born: July 22, 1849

New York, New York

Died: November 19, 1887

New York, New York

American poet



Emma Lazarus.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Emma Lazarus, an American poet, is best known as a spokesperson for the Jewish people. Her faith in America as a safe place for all the suffering people of the world is expressed in her poem inscribed on the Statue of Liberty in New York, New York.

Early life and writings

Emma Lazarus was born in New York City on July 22, 1849. She was the daughter of Moses and Esther Nathan Lazarus. Her father was a wealthy sugar merchant. Emma and her sisters were educated by private tutors and spent their summers at the

seashore in Rhode Island. Emma read many of the books in her father's library and quickly learned other languages, including Italian, French, and German. At the age of eleven she began writing poems with traditional romantic themes and translating the works of German and French poets.

When Emma was seventeen her father paid to have her first collection of poems printed. *Poems and Translations* (public edition 1867) was followed by *Admetus and Other Poems* (1871). These poems so pleased the writer Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882) that he invited Lazarus to visit him, beginning a correspondence that lasted throughout her life. Lazarus also received support and advice from other male writers throughout her life, including the novelist Henry James (1843–1916).

Lazarus's work began appearing regularly in *Lippincott's Magazine* and *Scribner's Monthly*. In 1874 she published her first prose (a style of writing closer to normal speech than poetry), *Alide: An Episode of Goethe's Life*. Her five-act drama, *The Spagnoletto* (1876), which focuses on Italy in 1655, was not as well received as her poetry. Her translation of the German poet Heinrich Heine's (1797–1856) *Poems and Ballads* (1881) was considered the best version of Heine in English at the time.

Supporter of Jewish people

The turning point in Lazarus's life was the outbreak of violent anti-Semitism (hatred of Jewish people) in Russia and Germany during the early 1880s. When a writer defended these activities in the *Century Magazine*, Lazarus wrote the angry reply "Russian Christianity versus Modern Judaism" in the next

issue. From this moment on she began a private crusade for her people. Her verse took on a new tone of urgency, a call for Zionism (the movement for the creation of an independent Jewish state), particularly in *Songs of a Semite* (1882) and in her play of twelfth-century Jewish life, *The Dance to Death*. More importantly, she began to organize relief efforts for the thousands of Jewish immigrants crowding into the United States and to write a series of articles for the magazine *American Hebrew*.

Later years

In 1883 Lazarus sailed for England, where she was received with great enthusiasm for her work on behalf of Jewish immigrants. She made so many friends among the Zionists that she returned in 1885, spending the next two years traveling in England, France, and Italy. Cancer cut her career short. She returned to New York City shortly before her death from cancer on November 19, 1887. Lazarus's poem "The New Colossus" was engraved on the base of the Statue of Liberty in New York harbor before its dedication in 1886. The poem was a fitting tribute to her faith in American ideals.

For More Information

- Lefer, Diane. *Emma Lazarus*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.
- Levinson, Nancy Smiler. *I Lift My Lamp: Emma Lazarus and the Statue of Liberty*. New York: Dutton, 1986.
- Merriam, Eve. *Emma Lazarus Rediscovered*. New York: Biblio Press, 1998.
- Young, Bette Roth. *Emma Lazarus in Her World: Life and Letters*. Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 1995.

MARY LEAKEY

Born: February 6, 1913

London, England

Died: December 9, 1996

Nairobi, Kenya

English archaeologist

Mary Leakey was a major figure in the uncovering of East African prehistory, best known for her excavations (digging for fossils) of some of the earliest members of the human family, their footprints, and their artifacts (any tools, weapons, or other items made by humans).

Early life

Mary Douglas Leakey was born Mary Douglas Nicol in London, England, on February 6, 1913. She was the only child of Erskine Nicol, a landscape painter, and Cecilia Frere Nicol. Much of her childhood was spent traveling abroad with her parents, except during World War I (1914–18; a war that involved many countries in the world including France, Great Britain, Russia, the United States, and their allies fighting against Austria-Hungary, Germany, and their allies) when her family spent the time in England. At the house of her mother's aunts and grandmother in London she was first introduced to dogs, marking the beginning of her strong affection for animals, an important part of her life. After the war, Mary's family resumed its annual cycle of European travel, followed by a return to London in summer to sell the paintings that her father produced on their travels.



Mary Leakey.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Education and early career

Mary's early education was largely informal, although she did attend school in France for a short time. Her father taught her to read and some mathematics, and he also inspired her interest in the natural world and in archaeology (the study of ancient human life based on the things that were left behind). While living in the Dordogne region in France, near many prehistoric caves, Mary was exposed to Paleolithic (over 2.5 million years ago; the first period of the Stone Age, a time when stone tools were used by humans) archaeology which, combined with her artistic talents, formed the basis of her career. Her father died

in France in 1926. Mary and her mother returned to England, where she unhappily attended several convent schools in Kensington and Wimbledon. Mary was an independent person and was expelled twice from school for her spirited behavior.

Between 1930 and 1934 Mary took part in excavations at Hembury, Devon, and attended lectures in geology (the branch of science involving the study of the Earth) and archaeology at London University and the London Museum. She also began drawing stone tools for publication. She was introduced to Louis Leakey (1903–1972) as a possible artist for his book *Adam's Ancestors* and was hired. They were married in 1936 and had three children, Jonathan, Richard, and Philip.

Archaeological discoveries in Kenya

Mary moved to Kenya with Louis and worked with him in East Africa for much of her career. She introduced modern archaeological techniques to East Africa. Her initial East African excavations were the Late Stone Age sites at Hyrax Hill and Njoro River Cave, and she was the first person to describe the important dimple-based pottery from East Africa. She also worked at a number of other sites, including Olorgesailie, which was famous for its great number of middle Pleistocene (commonly known as the Ice Age) hand axes. She also worked with Louis on several East African ape sites, and she was instrumental in the recovery of many fossil ape remains. In 1951 Leakey studied and recorded the beautiful Late Pleistocene Tanzanian rock paintings that years later formed the basis of her book *Africa's Vanishing Art*. Although she is best known for her association with human fossil sites, she considered

her work on the rock paintings one of the highlights of her career.

In spite of Mary Leakey's primary interest in art and artifacts, Mary Leakey was best known for her amazing ability to find fossils and for her excavations at two of the most famous hominid (dealing with any of the primate families) fossil sites in East Africa—Olduvai Gorge and Laetoli, both in Tanzania. Beginning in 1960 she established a permanent base camp at Olduvai Gorge from which she directed excavations. The previous year Leakey had discovered the first hominid example from that site, “Zinjanthropus boisei,” whom she and Louis nicknamed the “nutcracker man” because of its huge jaws and molar teeth. “Zinj” is now recognized as the type specimen of *Australopithecus boisei*, an extinct (no longer in existence) side branch of the genus *Homo*. She soon found another hominid more closely related to modern humans, *Homo habilis* or “Handy Man,” providing evidence of coexisting hominid groups one to two million years ago in East Africa. Leakey's research at Olduvai lasted more than twenty years and in spite of many fossil finds focused mainly on the specific descriptions of the archaeology. She initially detailed the archaeology of Beds 1 and 2 and later, more recent levels, contributing greatly to the understanding of Pliocene-Pleistocene (an ancient time period) lifeways.

In 1974 Leakey began well-organized excavations at Laetoli, which produced australopithecine (relating to an extinct form of hominid) skeletal remains the same year. Two years later the first of several sets of bipedal (having two feet) hominid footprints were discovered at the site, proving skeletal evidence for bipedalism (the walking on two

feet) at a very early date. The footprints were made as australopithecines walked, in at least one case together, through an ash fall from a nearby volcano. These finds caught the attention of the world, as they “humanized” the discoveries of our distant relatives. Like many East African early hominid sites, Laetoli was well dated and provided evidence that full bipedal movement, a major human milestone, was achieved by 3.75 million years. While she never accepted the contribution of the Laetoli hominids to *Australopithecus afarensis*, she recognized them as the earliest definite hominid sample known at the time. Laetoli produced a number of skeletal elements of *Pliocene australopithecines*, but ironically, given Leakey's primary interest, no stone artifacts were ever found in these early beds.

Later life

Mary Leakey, in addition to her research, found herself assuming many of Louis's more public roles after she was widowed in 1972. She spent considerable time traveling to give lectures, raise funds, and receive many honors from institutions around the world. Although she always considered herself primarily an archaeologist, and her professional life was of greatest importance to her, she remained involved with her family and was very close to her children and grandchildren. In 1983 she retired to Nairobi, Kenya, to be nearer to her family. There, she continued to work on her manuscripts until her death in December of 1996.

For More Information

Heiligman, Deborah. *Mary Leakey: In Search of Human Beginnings*. New York: W. H. Freeman and Co., 1995.

Leakey, Mary. *Disclosing the Past: An Autobiography*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1984.

Leakey, Mary. *Olduvai Gorge: My Search for Early Man*. London: Collins, 1979.

Morell, Virginia. *Ancestral Passions: The Leakey Family and the Quest for Humankind's Beginnings*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1995.

BRUCE LEE

Born: November 27, 1940

San Francisco, California

Died: July 20, 1973

Hong Kong

American actor and martial arts master

Actor and martial arts expert Bruce Lee combined the Chinese fighting art of kung fu with the grace of a ballet dancer. He helped make kung fu films a new art form before his sudden and mysterious death in 1973.

The “strong one”

In 1939 Lee Hoi Chuen, a Chinese opera singer, brought his wife Grace and three children from Hong Kong to San Francisco, California, while he performed in the United States. On November 27, 1940, the Lees had another son. His mother called the boy Bruce because the name meant “strong one” in Gaelic. His first film appearance, at the age of three months, was in *Golden Gate Girl* (1941). Although Hong Kong was occupied

by Japanese troops, the Lees then decided to return home, where Lee’s film appearances continued, numbering around twenty by the time he graduated from high school.

As a teenager Lee was both a dancer, winning a cha-cha championship, and a gang member, risking death on the Hong Kong streets. To improve his fighting skills, he studied the Chinese martial arts of kung fu. He absorbed the style called wing chun, which was developed by a woman named Yim Wing Chun, and he began adding his own improvements. Lee’s film career continued, and he was offered a large contract. But when he got into trouble with the police for fighting, his mother sent him to the United States to live with friends of the family.

Teacher and actor

After finishing high school in Edison, Washington, Lee enrolled at the University of Washington, supporting himself by giving dance lessons and waiting tables. While teaching kung fu to fellow students, he met Linda Emery, whom he married in 1964. Lee developed a new fighting style called jeet kune do and opened three schools on the West Coast to teach it. He also landed a part in the television series *The Green Hornet* as Kato, the Hornet’s assistant. Kato used a dramatic fighting style quite unlike that which Lee taught in his schools. The show was cancelled after one season, but fans would long remember Lee’s role.

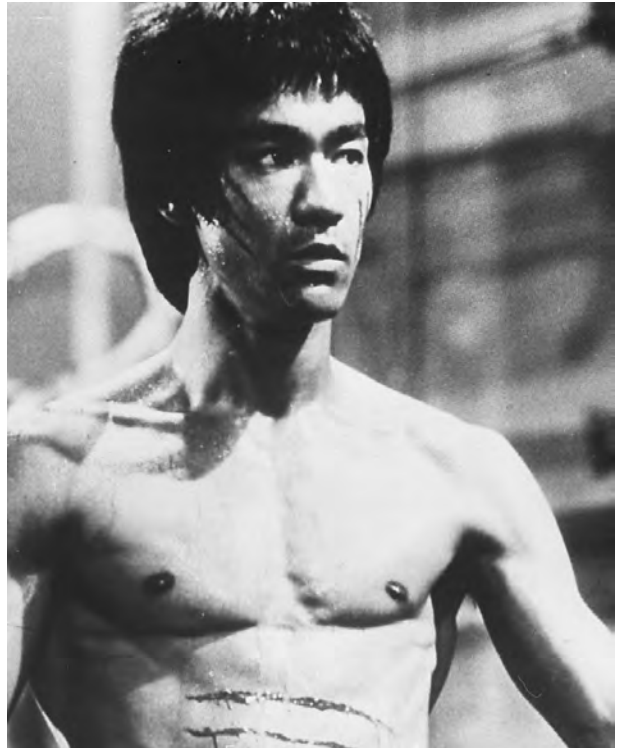
Lee went on to appear on shows such as *Longstreet* and *Ironside* and in the film *Marlowe* (1969), playing a high-kicking villain. Unhappy with the number and quality of roles available to Asian Americans in Hollywood, Lee and his family, including son Brandon and daughter Shannon, moved back to Hong Kong

in 1971. Lee soon released the movie known to U.S. audiences as *Fists of Fury*. The story, featuring Lee as a fighter seeking revenge on those who had killed his kung fu master, was not very original, but with his graceful movements, his good looks and charm, and his acting ability, Lee was a star in the making.

Sudden death

Fists of Fury set box-office records in Hong Kong that were broken only by Lee's next film, *The Chinese Connection* (1972). Lee established his own film company, Concord Pictures, and began directing movies. The first of these would appear in the United States as *Way of the Dragon*. Lee was excited about his future. He told a journalist, "I hope to make . . . the kind of movie where you can just watch the surface story, if you like, or can look deeper into it." Unfortunately, on July 20, 1973, three weeks before his fourth film, *Enter the Dragon*, was released in the United States, Lee died suddenly.

The official cause of Lee's death was brain swelling as a reaction to aspirin he had taken for a back injury. But there were rumors that he had been poisoned by either the Chinese mafia or powerful members of the Hong Kong film industry. Others said that Lee's purchase of a house in Hong Kong had angered neighborhood demons, who then placed a curse on him to last for three generations. This theory was revived on June 18, 1993, when Lee's son Brandon also died under strange circumstances. While filming the movie *The Crow*, he was shot by a gun that was supposed to contain only blanks (which produce the appearance of a gunshot but cause no bullet to be fired) but in fact had a live round in its chamber.



Bruce Lee.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Bruce Lee's movies, though few in number, created a new art form. By the 1990s *Enter the Dragon* alone had earned more than \$100 million, and Lee's influence could be found in the work of many Hollywood action heroes such as Jean-Claude Van Damme, Steven Seagal, and Jackie Chan. In 1993 Jason Scott Lee (no relation) appeared in *Dragon: The Bruce Lee Story*.

For More Information

Blecker, Tom. *Unsettled Matters: The Life and Death of Bruce Lee*. Lompoc, CA: Gilderoy Publications, 1996.

- Clouse, Robert. *Bruce Lee: The Biography*. Burbank, CA: Unique Publications, 1988.
- Hoffman, Charles. *Bruce Lee, Brandon Lee, and the Dragon's Curse*. New York: Random House, 1995.
- Jahn, Michael. *Dragon: The Bruce Lee Story*. New York: Jove Books, 1993.
- Lee, Bruce. *Bruce Lee: Artist of Life*. Compiled and edited by John Little. Boston: Tuttle, 1999.
- Roensch, Greg. *Bruce Lee*. New York: Rosen Pub. Group, 2002.

SPIKE LEE

Born: March 20, 1957

Atlanta, Georgia

*African American filmmaker, actor,
and author/poet*

Controversial (arousing opposing viewpoints) filmmaker Spike Lee is known for powerful films such as *She's Gotta Have It* (1986), *School Daze* (1988), *Do the Right Thing* (1989), *Mo' Better Blues* (1990), *Malcolm X* (1992), and many others.

Lee's youth

Shelton Jackson Lee was born in Atlanta, Georgia, on March 20, 1957. He grew up in Brooklyn, New York. Lee's awareness of his African American identity was established at an early age. His mother, Jacquelyn, encouraged her children's enthusiasm for African American art and literature. She took her

children to galleries, plays, and museums. Her position as a teacher at a private school was often the only income the family had. His father, Bill, was an accomplished jazz musician. Spike would sometimes go with his father to the clubs where he played.

By the time Lee was old enough to attend school, the already independent child had earned the nickname his mother had given him as an infant, Spike—an indirect reference to his toughness. When he, his two younger brothers, and one younger sister were offered the option of attending the chiefly white private school where his mother taught, Lee chose instead to go to public school, where he would be assured the companionship of black peers. He graduated from John Dewey High School in Brooklyn. For college, Lee chose to go to the all-black college his father and grandfather had attended, Morehouse College, where he majored in mass communication.

Pursued film career

It was at Morehouse that Lee found his calling. Following his mother's unexpected death in 1977, Lee's friends tried to cheer him with frequent trips to the movies. He quickly became a fan of directors and movies of that time and discovered that he wanted to make films that would capture the black experience, and he was willing to do so by whatever means necessary.

Lee pursued his passion at New York University (NYU), where he enrolled in the Tisch School of Arts graduate film program. He was one of only a handful of African American students. Lee went on to produce a forty-five-minute film that won him the 1983 Motion Picture Arts and Sciences' Student

Academy Award, *Joe's Bed-Stuy Barbershop: We Cut Heads*. Although the honor improved his credibility as a director, it did not pay the bills. Lee worked for a movie distribution house cleaning and shipping film.

Scored a surprise hit with *She's Gotta Have It*

When Lee filmed *She's Gotta Have It* a year later, his determination to be a director paid off. After Island Pictures agreed to distribute the movie, it finally opened in 1986. A light comedy, *She's Gotta Have It* pokes fun at gender relations and offers an insightful spin on stereotypical macho male roles. It packed houses with African American audiences and with a crossover, art-house crowd. With the success of *She's Gotta Have It*, Lee became known in cinematic circles not only as a director, but also as a comic actor. He played a supporting role in the film and was tremendously popular as this character.

School Daze: a microcosm of black life

Lee next made a musical called *School Daze*. A film about color discrimination (treating people differently based on race, gender, or nationality) within the African American community, *School Daze* draws on Lee's years at Morehouse. He saw the lighter skinned African Americans as having the material possessions and polish that the southern, rural students did not have. This black caste (division of society) system, Lee explained to *Newsweek*, was not limited to just this collegiate set. Lee used it as a small sample of black life in general. *School Daze* created a commotion in the black community: while many applauded Lee's efforts to explore a complex social problem, others were offended by his



Spike Lee.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

willingness to “air dirty laundry.” Everyone agreed that the film was controversial.

Explored racial tensions in *Do the Right Thing*

Do the Right Thing, released in 1989, confirmed Lee's reputation as someone willing to seize controversial issues by the horns. A story of simmering racial tension between Italian Americans and African Americans in the Bedford-Stuyvesant section of Brooklyn, the film becomes a call to arms when violence erupts in response to the killing of an African American man by white police officers. Critical response to the film was both enthusiastic and wary.

Striking a balance: Mo' Better Blues

Lee chose a lighter topic for his next film—a romance. The saga is about a self-centered jazz trumpeter, Bleek Gilliam, whose personal life plays second fiddle to his music. The movie explores the different relationships this man has with friends, family, and women. Bleek's character was inspired by Lee's jazz-musician father, Bill Lee, who wrote the film's score. Although recognized for its technical mastery and snappy score, *Mo' Better Blues* received unenthusiastic reviews.

In *Jungle Fever*, Lee's next film, he looks at issues of race, class, and gender by focusing on community response to the office affair of a married, black architect and his Italian American secretary. Lee concludes that interracial relationships are often fueled by culturally based, stereotypical expectations.

Malcolm X

Sparking controversy from the beginning, the making of *Malcolm X* (1925–1965) became a personal mission for Lee, who had long been an admirer of the legendary African American leader. The film traces Malcolm X's development from his poor, rural roots to his final years as an activist. Lee worked hard to overcome many obstacles that threatened the creation of his masterpiece. His creative problem solving and dedication to the film were the forces behind its completion.

Although *Malcolm X* received no Oscars, the film played a significant role in the elevation of the black leader to legendary status; it also spawned a cultural phenomenon often referred to as "Malcolm-mania." Promotional merchandise for the film was marketed by Lee himself through Spike's Joint, a chain of

stores that comprise a portion of the director's growing business empire.

Lee is married

In mid-1993 Lee began shooting his seventh feature film, *Crooklyn*, a comic tribute to his childhood memories of life in Brooklyn in the 1970s. He managed to take a break from filming, however, to marry Linette Lewis. Lewis, a lawyer, had been romantically linked to Lee for a year prior to their wedding. *Crooklyn* was released in 1994 to mixed reviews and a mild reception at the box office.

Lee fared far better in 1995 with his next film, *Clockers*. It tells the story of two brothers who fall under suspicion of murder. One, a drug dealer, had been ordered by his supplier to kill the victim. The other, an upstanding family man, confesses to the crime, saying that he was attacked in the parking lot. The film won outstanding reviews, with some critics citing it as Lee's best work.

In 1996 Lee released *Get on the Bus*, which focuses on a diverse group of African American men riding a bus on their way to the Million Man March (a rally organized in 1995 to celebrate the strength of the African American community) in Washington, D.C. They learn to overcome their differences as they unite for the march. Lee followed that film with *4 Little Girls*, a documentary about the bombing of a Birmingham, Alabama, church in 1963, where four African American girls lost their lives.

Lee as a teacher

Lee works as an educator as well. He has taught at New York University and also at Harvard. In March of 2002 Lee became the

artistic director of NYU's Kanbar Institute of Film and Television. He works with students on their thesis projects and helps them to make contacts in the entertainment field. Lee enjoys working with the students and challenges them to work hard.

"Fight the power," the theme song to his 1989 film *Do the Right Thing*, could easily be Spike Lee's personal motto. From his earliest days as a student filmmaker to his \$33-million epic *Malcolm X*, Lee has shown a willingness to tackle prickly issues of significance to the African American community—and has enjoyed the controversy his films produce.

For More Information

Bernotas, Bob. *Spike Lee: Filmmaker*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow, 1993.

Hardy, James Earl. *Spike Lee*. New York: Chelsea House, 1996.

Haskins, James. *Spike Lee: By Any Means Necessary*. New York: Walker, 1997.

McDaniel, Melissa. *Spike Lee: On His Own Terms*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1998.

Patterson, Alex. *Spike Lee*. New York: Avon Books, 1992.

Shields, Charles J. *Spike Lee*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

TSUNG-DAO LEE

Born: November 24, 1926

Shanghai, China

Chinese-born American physicist

Chinese-born physicist (specialist in the relationship between matter and energy) Tsung-Dao Lee was a co-winner of the 1957 Nobel Prize in physics. Lee and his colleague physicist Chen Ning Yang (1922–) developed a theory about behavior of the K-meson (a particle that is smaller than an atom), which resulted in major changes in the science of particle physics.

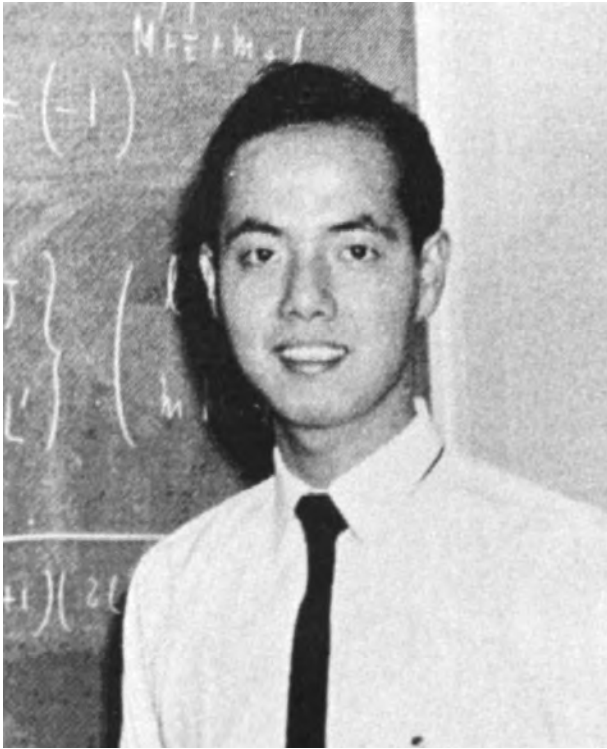
Early life

Tsung-Dao Lee was born in Shanghai, China, on November 24, 1926. He was the third child of businessman Tsing-Kong Lee and his wife Ming-Chang Chang. Lee attended the Kiangsi Middle School in Kanchow, China. After graduation he entered the National Chekian University in Kweichow, China. When Japanese troops invaded the area in 1945, Lee fled to the south, where he continued his studies at the National Southwest Associated University in Kunming, China.

Leaves for the United States

In 1946 Lee was presented with an unusual opportunity. When one of his teachers at Kunming, a physicist named Ta-You Wu, decided to return to the United States (where he had worked toward his doctorate degree), he invited Lee to accompany him. Lee accepted the offer but found himself in a somewhat peculiar position. He had only completed two years of college and found that only one American university, the University of Chicago, would accept him for graduate study without a degree. He decided to enroll there. Lee married Hui-Chung Chin (also known as Jeanette) in 1950, while they were both students at Chicago. The couple eventually had two sons.

LEE, TSUNG-DAO



Tsung-Dao Lee.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

In Chicago, after working under physicist Enrico Fermi (1901–1954), Lee was awarded his doctorate in 1950 for his study of the amount of hydrogen in white dwarf stars (stars of low brightness with a mass similar to that of the sun). Lee also renewed his friendship with physicist Chen Ning Yang, whom he had known in Kunming. The two began working together. In 1950 Lee went to the Yerkes Astronomical Observatory at Lake Geneva, Wisconsin, and Yang went to the Institute for Advanced Studies at Princeton University in Princeton, New Jersey. Lee then spent the next year as a research assistant at the University of California at Berkeley before

accepting an appointment at Princeton in 1951, again reuniting with Yang.

Revolutionary theory

Even after Lee left Princeton in 1953 for a post as assistant professor of physics at Columbia University, he continued to work with Yang. The two worked out a schedule that allowed them to continue meeting once a week, either in New York City or in Princeton. These meetings had begun to focus on a subatomic (smaller than an atom) particle known as the K-meson. Discovered only a few years earlier, the K-meson puzzled physicists, because it appeared to be a single particle that decayed in two different ways. The decay patterns were so different that physicists had become convinced that two different forms of the K-meson existed, forms they called the tau-meson and theta-meson.

The single difference between these two particles was that one form was conserving parity and the other form was not. Following a concept long held by physicists, if the properties of a particle and its mirror image are the same, it is said to be “conserving parity.” The problem that Lee and Yang attacked was that all other evidence suggested that the theta- and tau-mesons were one and the same particle. During a three-week period of work in 1956, Lee and Yang solved the puzzle by suggesting that, in some types of reactions, parity is not conserved. The decay of the (one and only) K-meson was such a reaction. They then created a series of experiments by which their theory could be tested.

The basic elements in the Lee-Yang theory were announced in a paper sent to the *Physical Review* in June 1956. Six months later another physicist, Chien-Shiung Wu, carried

out their suggested experiments, first at Columbia and then at the National Bureau of Standards. The Lee-Yang prediction was found to be correct in every respect. Less than a year later, the two friends were awarded the 1957 Nobel Prize in physics for their work.

Career after the Nobel Prize

After a promotion to professor (1956) at Columbia, Lee returned to the Institute for Advanced Studies in 1960. He then was appointed Enrico Fermi Professor of Physics at Columbia in 1963. In 1984 he was made University Professor at Columbia. In 1980 Lee created a program to give talented Chinese physics students the opportunity to earn graduate degrees in American schools, as he had. In 1989 he helped create the China Center of Advanced Science and Technology World Laboratory, and he continues to travel to China every year to encourage scientists there. In 1994 Lee became a member of the Chinese Academy of Sciences. In 2000 the *World Journal* (a Chinese newspaper in North America) included Lee in its list of the “Most Notable 100 North American Chinese of the Century.” The Nobel Prize winner continues to work as a professor at Columbia and is involved in a variety of physics research projects.

For More Information

Bernstein, Jeremy. “A Question of Parity.” *New Yorker* (May 12, 1962): p. 49.

Crease, Robert P., and Charles C. Mann. *The Second Creation*. New York: Macmillan, 1986, pp. 205–7.

McGraw-Hill Modern Scientists and Engineers. vol. 2. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1980, pp. 215–16.

VLADIMIR LENIN

Born: April 10, 1870

Ulianovsk, Russia

Died: January 21, 1924

Moscow, Russia

Russian statesman

The Russian statesman Vladimir Lenin was a profoundly influential figure in world history. As the founder of the Bolshevik political party, he was a successful revolutionary leader who presided over Russia's transformation from a country ruled by czars (emperors) to the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics (U.S.S.R.), the name of the communist Russian state from 1922 to 1991.

Early years

Vladimir Ilich Lenin was born in Simbirsk (today Ulianovsk), Russia, on April 10, 1870. His real family name was Ulianov, and his father, Ilia Nikolaevich Ulianov, was a high official in the area's educational system. Because Lenin's father had risen into the ranks of the Russian nobility, Lenin grew up in fairly privileged circumstances. Although he would fight as an adult for a revolution by the working lower classes, he did not come from such a hard-working background himself.

Lenin received the typical education given to the sons of the Russian upper class. Nevertheless, as a young man he began to develop radical (extreme) political views in disagreement with the existing Russian form of government. Russia at this time was ruled by emperors known as czars who inherited their positions, and Lenin's shift to radical

views was probably fueled by the execution by hanging of his older brother Alexander in 1887 after Alexander and others had plotted to kill the czar. Lenin graduated from secondary school with high honors and enrolled at Kazan University, but he was expelled after participating in a demonstration. He retired to the family estate but was permitted to continue his studies away from the university. He obtained a law degree in 1891.

In 1893 Lenin moved to St. Petersburg, Russia. By this time he was already a Marxist—an admirer of the German writer Karl Marx (1818–1883). Marx (and his associate Friedrich Engels [1820–1895]) had believed in an international revolution (overthrow of the government) of the poor and lower-class workers (called the proletariat) who would lead the way to a new system of power. Under this new system, Marx argued, property would be owned communally (as a group) and work would be distributed equally. By 1893 Lenin had also become a revolutionary by profession. He wrote controversial papers and articles and tried to organize workers. The St. Petersburg Union for the Struggle for the Liberation of Labor, which Lenin helped create, was one of the seeds that started the Russian Marxist movement.

In 1897 Lenin was arrested, spent some months in jail, and was finally sentenced to three years of exile (forced absence from one's native country or region) in the remote area of Siberia. He was joined there by a fellow Marxist, Nadezhda Konstantinovna Krupskaya (1869–1939), whom he married in 1898. During his Siberian exile he produced a major study of the Russian economy, *The Development of Capitalism in Russia*.

Emigration to Europe

Not long after Lenin was released from Siberia in the summer of 1900, he moved to Europe. He spent most of the next seventeen years there, moving from one country to another frequently. His first step was to join the editorial board of *Iskra* (The Spark), the central newspaper of Russian Marxism at the time. After parting from *Iskra*, he edited a series of papers of his own and contributed to other journals promoting socialism (a version of Marxism). His journalistic activity was closely linked with efforts to organize revolutionary groups, partly because the illegal organizational network within Russia was partly based on the distribution of illegal literature.

Organizational activity, in turn, was linked with the selection and training of people who would work for the cause. For some time Lenin conducted a training school for Russian revolutionaries at Longjumeau, a suburb of Paris, France. Finding funds for the movement and its leaders' activities in Europe was also a problem. Lenin could usually depend on financial support from his mother for personal use, but she could not pay for his political activities.

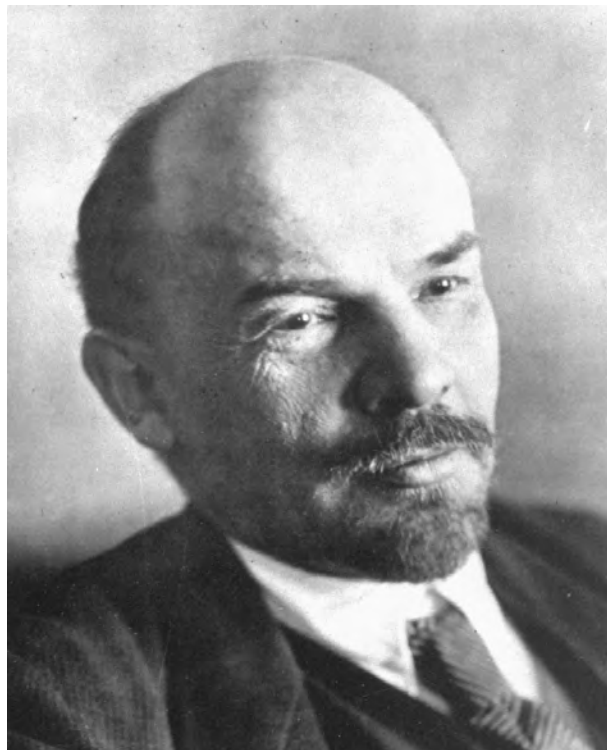
Lenin's ideas

A Marxist movement had developed in Russia during the last decade of the nineteenth century. It was a response to the rapid growth of industry, cities, and the proletariat (a group of lower-class workers, especially in industry). Its first intellectual spokesmen were people who had turned away from relying on the peasants (rural poor people) of the Russian villages and countryside, and they placed their hopes on the proletariat.

They aimed for a revolution that would transform Russia into a democratic republic. Lenin's writings and work focused on the role of the proletariat as promoters of this revolution. However, he also stressed the role of intellectuals (people engaged in thinking) who would provide the movement with the theories that would guide the revolution's progress.

Lenin expressed these ideas in his important book *What's to Be Done?* in 1902. When the leaders of Russian Marxism gathered for the first important party meeting in 1903, these ideas clashed with the idea of a looser, more democratic workers' party that was promoted by Lenin's old friend Iuli Martov (1873–1923). This disagreement over the nature and organization of the party was complicated by many other conflicts, and from its first important gathering Russian Marxism split into two factions (opposing groups). The one led by Lenin called itself the majority faction (bolsheviki, or the Bolsheviks), while the other took the name of minority faction (mensheviki, or the Mensheviks). The Bolsheviks and Mensheviks disagreed not only over how to organize the movement but also over most other political problems.

In 1905 an uprising now known as the Revolution of 1905 occurred in Russia. Widespread revolt against the Russian czar's government spread throughout the country, but was eventually put to an end by the government. This revolt among the Russian people surprised all Russian revolutionary leaders, including the Bolsheviks. Lenin managed to return to Russia only in November, when the defeat of the revolution was practically certain. But he was among the last to give up.



Vladimir Lenin.

For many more months he urged his followers to renew their revolutionary enthusiasm and activities and to prepare for an armed uprising.

Bolshevism and Marxism

Over the next twelve years bolshevism, which had begun as a faction within the Russian Social-Democratic Workers party, gradually emerged as an independent party that had cut its ties with all other Russian Marxists. The process involved long and bitter arguments against Mensheviks as well as against all those who worked to reunite the factions. It involved fights over funds,

struggles for control of newspapers, the development of rival organizations, and meetings of rival groups. Disputes concerned many questions about the goals and strategies of Marxism and the role of national (rather than international) struggles within Marxism.

Since about 1905 the international socialist movement had begun also to discuss the possibility of a major war breaking out among European nations. In 1907 and 1912, members met and condemned such wars in advance, pledging not to support them. Lenin had wanted to go further than that. He had urged active opposition to the war effort and a transformation of any war into a proletarian revolution. When World War I (1914–1918; a conflict involving most European nations, as well as Russia, the United States, and Japan) broke out, most socialist leaders in the countries involved supported the war effort. For Lenin, this was proof that he and the other leaders shared no common aims or views. The break between the two schools of Marxism could not be fixed.

During World War I (1914–18) Lenin lived in Switzerland. He attended several conferences of radical socialists opposed to the war. He read a large amount of literature on the Marxist idea of state government and wrote a first draft for a book on the subject, *The State and Revolution*. He also studied literature dealing with world politics of the time and wrote an important book, *Imperialism: The Highest Stage of Capitalism*, in 1916. By the beginning of 1917 he had fits of depression and wrote to a close friend that he thought he would never see another revolution. This was about a month before the over-

throw of the Russian czar in the winter of 1917, which marked the beginning of the 1917 Russian Revolution.

Lenin in 1917

It took a good deal of negotiation and courage for Lenin and a group of like-minded Russian revolutionaries to travel from Switzerland back to Russia through the enemy country of Germany. The man who returned to Russia in the spring of 1917 was of medium height, quite bald, except for the back of his head, with a reddish beard. The features of his face were striking—slanted eyes that looked piercingly at others, and high cheek-bones under a towering forehead. The rest of his appearance was deceptively ordinary.

Fluent in many languages, Lenin spoke Russian with a slight speech defect but was a powerful public speaker in small groups as well as before large audiences. A tireless worker, he made others work tirelessly. He tried to push those who worked with him to devote every ounce of their energy to the revolutionary task at hand. He was impatient with any other activities, including small talk and discussions of political theories. Indeed, he was suspicious of intellectuals and felt most at home in the company of simple folk. Having been brought up in the tradition of the Russian nobility, Lenin loved hunting, hiking, horseback riding, boating, mushroom hunting, and the outdoor life in general.

Once he had returned to Russia, Lenin worked constantly to use the revolutionary situation that had been created by the fall of the czar and convert it into a proletarian revolution that would bring his own party into power. As a result of his activities, opinions in Russia quickly became more and more

sharply at odds. Moderate forces found themselves less and less able to maintain any control. In the end, by October 1917 power fell into the hands of the Bolsheviks. As a result of the so-called October Revolution, Lenin found himself not only the leader of his party but also the chairman of the Council of People's Commissars (equivalent to prime minister) of the newly proclaimed Russian Socialist Federative Soviet Republic (the basis for the future Union of Soviet Socialist Republics).

Ruler of Russia

During the next few years Lenin was essentially dictator (a ruler with unquestionable authority) of Russia. The major task he faced was establishing this authority for himself and his party in the country. Most of his policies can be understood in this light, even though he angered some elements in the population while satisfying others. Examples of such policies include the government's seizing of land from its owners and redistributing it to the peasants, forming a peace treaty with Germany, and the nationalization (putting under central governmental control) of banks and industry.

From 1918 to 1921 a fierce civil war raged, which the Bolsheviks finally won against seemingly overwhelming odds. During the civil war Lenin tightened his party's dictatorship and eventually eliminated all rival political parties. Lenin had to create an entirely new political system with the help of inexperienced people. He was also heading a failing economy and had to create desperate means for putting people to work. He also created the Third (Communist) International, an association of parties that promoted the spread of the revolution to other

countries and that enforced the Soviet system as a model for this movement. Meanwhile he had to cope with conflict and criticism from his own party colleagues.

When the civil war had been won and the regime firmly established, the economy was ruined, and much of the population was bitterly opposed to the regime. At this point Lenin reversed many of his policies and instituted a reform called the New Economic Policy. It was a temporary retreat from the goal of establishing socialism at once. Instead, the stress of the party's policies would be on economic rebuilding and on the education of a peasant population for life in the twentieth century. In the long run, Lenin hoped both these policies would make the benefits of socialism obvious to all, so the country would gradually grow into socialism.

On May 26, 1922, Lenin suffered a serious stroke (a loss of consciousness due to the rupture or blockage of an artery in the brain). After recovering from this first stroke, he suffered a second on December 16. He was so seriously ill that he could participate in political matters only occasionally. He moved to a country home at Gorki, Russia, near Moscow, where he died on January 21, 1924.

For More Information

Carrère d'Encausse, Hélène. *Lenin*. New York: Holmes & Meier, 2001.

Cliff, Tony. *Lenin*. London: Pluto Press, 1979.

Service, Robert. *Lenin—A Biography*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2000.

Volkogonov, Dmitri. *Lenin: A New Biography*. New York: Free Press, 1994.

LEONARDO DA VINCI

Born: April 15, 1452

Vinci, Italy

Died: May 2, 1519

Amboise, France

Italian artist, painter, sculptor, architect, engineer, and scientist

Leonardo da Vinci was an Italian painter, sculptor, architect, engineer, and scientist. He was one of the greatest minds of the Italian Renaissance, and his influence on painting was enormous to the following generations.

Early years

Leonardo da Vinci was born on April 15, 1452, near the village of Vinci about 25 miles west of Florence. He was the illegitimate (born to unmarried parents) son of Ser Piero da Vinci, a prominent notary (a public official who certifies legal documents) of Florence, and a local woman, Caterina. Not much is known about Leonardo's childhood except that when he was fifteen, his father apprenticed him to Andrea del Verrocchio (1435–1488), the leading artist of Florence and the early Renaissance.

Verrocchio, a sculptor, painter, and goldsmith, was a remarkable craftsman. He had great concern for the quality of execution in expressing the vitality of the human figure. These elements were important in the formation of Leonardo's artistic style. It should be noted that much in Leonardo's approach to art originated from using tradition, rather than rebelling against it.

Assistant in Verrocchio's workshop

Leonardo, after completing his apprenticeship, stayed on as an assistant in Verrocchio's shop. His earliest known painting is in Verrocchio's *Baptism of Christ* (c. 1475). Leonardo executed one of the two angels as well as the distant landscape, and he added the final touches to the figure of Christ, determining the texture of the flesh.

Collaboration on a major project by a master and his assistant was standard procedure in the Italian Renaissance. What is special is that Leonardo's work is not a slightly less skilled version of Verrocchio's manner of painting, but an original approach which changed the surface effects from hard to soft, making the edges less cutting, and increasing the slight changes of light and shade.

Independent master in Florence

About 1478 Leonardo set up his own studio. In 1481 he received a major church commission for an altarpiece, the *Adoration of the Magi*. In this unfinished painting, Leonardo's new approach is far more developed. A crowd of spectators, with varied faces, looks at the main group of the Virgin and Child. There is a strong sense of continuing movement. Leonardo placed the Virgin and Child in the center. Traditionally in paintings of this theme they had appeared at one side of the picture, approached by the kings from the other side.

Earlier Renaissance artists had applied the rules of linear perspective, by which objects appear smaller in proportion as they are farther away from the eye of the spectator. Leonardo joined this principle to two others: perspective of clarity (distant objects are less distinct) and

perspective of color (distant objects are more muted in color). He wrote about both of these principles in his notebooks.

The *Magi* altarpiece was left unfinished because Leonardo left Florence in 1482 to accept the post of court artist to the Duke of Milan. In leaving, Leonardo followed a trend set by masters of the older generation who went to Venice and Rome to execute commissions larger than any available in their native Florence.

Milan (1482–1499)

Leonardo presented himself to the Duke of Milan as skilled in many crafts, but particularly in military engineering. He also produced remarkable machinery for stage set-ups. Both activities point to his intense interest in the laws of motion and propulsion (the movement or push forward), a further aspect of his interest in things and their workings.

Leonardo's first Milanese painting is the altarpiece *Virgin of the Rocks*. It makes use of a respected tradition in which the Holy Family is shown in a cave. This setting becomes a vehicle for Leonardo's interests in representing nature in dimmed light, which blends together the outlines of separate objects. He once commented that artists should practice drawing at dusk in courtyards with walls painted black.

The other surviving painting of Leonardo's Milanese years is the *Last Supper* (1495–1497). Instead of using fresco (painting on fresh plaster with special water color paints), the traditional medium for this theme, Leonardo experimented with an oil-based medium, because painting in true fresco makes areas of color appear quite distinct. Unfortunately, his experiment was



Leonardo da Vinci.

unsuccessful. The paint did not stick well to the wall, and within fifty years the scene was reduced to a confused series of spots. What exists today is largely a later reconstruction.

When the Duke of Milan was overthrown by the French invasion in 1499, Leonardo left Milan. He visited Venice briefly, where the Senate consulted him on military projects, and traveled to Mantua.

Florence (1500–1506)

In 1500 Leonardo returned to Florence, where he was received as a great man. Florentine painters of the generation immediately following Leonardo were excited by his

modern methods, with which they were familiar through the unfinished *Adoration of the Magi*. Leonardo had a powerful effect on the younger group of artists.

Leonardo even served a term as military engineer for Cesare Borgia in 1502, and he completed more projects during his time in Florence than in any other period of his life. In his works of these years, the concentration is mostly on portraying human vitality, as in the *Mona Lisa*. It is a portrait of a Florentine citizen's young third wife, whose smile is called mysterious because it is in the process of either appearing or disappearing.

Leonardo's great project (begun 1503) was a cavalry battle scene that the city commissioned to adorn the newly built Council Hall of the Palazzo Vecchio. The work is only known today through some rapid rough sketches of the groups of horsemen, careful drawings of single heads of men, and copies of the entire composition. Leonardo began to paint the scene but was called back to Milan before the work was completed. A short time thereafter, the room was remodeled and the fragment was destroyed.

Milan (1506–1513)

Leonardo was called to Milan in 1506 by the French governor in charge to work on an equestrian statue (a sculpture of a leader riding a horse) project, but he produced no new paintings. Instead he turned more and more to scientific observation. Most of Leonardo's scientific concerns were fairly direct extensions of his interests as a painter, and his research in anatomy (the structure of a living organism) was the most fully developed. Early Renaissance painters had attempted to render the human anatomy with accuracy. Leonardo

went far beyond any of them, producing the earliest anatomical drawings still followed today.

Leonardo filled notebooks with data and drawings that reveal his other scientific interests: firearms, the action of water, the flight of birds (leading to designs for human flight), the growth of plants, and geology (the study of earth and its history). Leonardo's interests were not universal, however. Theology (the study of religion), history, and literature did not appeal to him. All his interests were concerned with the processes of action, movement, pressure, and growth. It has been said that his drawings of the human body are less about how bodies are and more about how they work.

Last years

In 1513 Leonardo went to Rome, where he remained until 1516. He was much honored, but he was relatively inactive and remarkably aloof (apart) from its rich social and artistic life. He continued to fill his notebooks with scientific entries.

The French king, Francis I (1494–1547), invited Leonardo to his court at Fontainebleau, gave him the title of first painter, architect, and mechanic to the king, and provided him with a country house at Cloux. Leonardo was revered for his knowledge more than for any work he produced in France. He died on May 2, 1519, at Cloux.

Influence

Leonardo's influence on younger artists of Milan and Florence was enormous. Among these were Filippino Lippi (1457–1504) and Andrea del Sarto (1486–1531) who were able to absorb and transmit his message rather

than merely copy the unimportant aspects of his style.

On a more significant level, Leonardo influenced the two greatest young artists to come in contact with him. Raphael (1483–1520) came to Florence in 1504 at the age of twenty-one, and quickly revealed Leonardo's influence in his portraits and Madonnas. Also, about 1503, Michelangelo (1475–1564) changed from a sculptor of merely grand scale to one whose figures are charged with energy. This may be seen in the contrast between Michelangelo's early *David* and his later *St. Matthew*.

From this time on Leonardo influenced, directly or indirectly, all painting. However, most of Leonardo's scientific observations remained unproven until the same questions were again investigated in later centuries.

For More Information

Clark, Kenneth. *Leonardo da Vinci*. Rev. ed. New York: Viking, 1988.

Kemp, Martin. *Leonardo da Vinci, the Marvelous Works of Nature and Man*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1981.

Turner, A. Richard. *Inventing Leonardo*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1993.

C. S. LEWIS

Born: November 29, 1898

Belfast, Ireland

Died: November 24, 1963

Oxford, England

Irish writer, novelist, and essayist

The Irish novelist and essayist C. S. Lewis was best known for his essays on literature and his explanations of Christian teachings.

Early life and education

On November 29, 1898, Clive Staples Lewis was born in Belfast, Ireland. He was the son of A. J. Lewis, a lawyer, and Flora August Hamilton Lewis, a mathematician (expert in mathematics), whose father was a minister. At four years old he told his parents that he wanted to be called "Jack" Lewis, and his family and friends referred to him that way for the rest of his life. Jack's best friend as a boy was his older brother Warren. They did everything together and even created their own made-up country, Boxen, going so far as to create many individual characters and a four-hundred-year history of the country.

Lewis's mother, who had tutored him in French and Latin, died when he was ten years old. After spending a year in studies at Malvern College, a boarding school in England, he continued his education privately under a tutor named W. T. Kirkpatrick, former headmaster (principal) of Lurgan College. During World War I (1914–18), which began as a conflict between Austria-Hungary and Serbia but eventually involved much of Europe, Lewis served as a second lieutenant in the English army, interrupting his career as a scholar that he had begun in 1918 at University College, Oxford. Wounded in the war, he returned to Oxford, where he was appointed lecturer at University College in 1924. In 1925 he was appointed fellow (performing advanced study or research) and tutor at Magdalen College, England, where he gave lectures on English literature.



C. S. Lewis.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Published works

In 1926 Lewis's first publication, *Dymer*, appeared under the pseudonym (fake writing name) Clive Hamilton. *Dymer* revealed Lewis's gift for satire (a work of literature that makes fun of human vice or foolishness). *The Pilgrims' Regress*, an allegory (an expression of truths about human existence using symbols) published in 1933, presented an apology for Christianity. It was not until the appearance of his second allegorical work, *The Allegory of Love* (1936), however, that Lewis was honored with the coveted Hawthornden prize.

The Screwtape Letters (1942), for which Lewis is perhaps best known, is a satire in

which the devil, here known as Screwtape, writes letters teaching his young nephew, Wormwood, how to tempt humans to sin. Lewis published seven religious allegories for children titled *Chronicles of Narnia* (1955). He also published several scholarly works on literature, including *English Literature in the 16th Century* (1954) and *Experiment in Criticism* (1961).

Although Lewis went on to publish several works involving religion, he had lost interest in it early in life and only later "converted" to Christianity, joining the Anglican Church. His autobiography (the story of his own life), *Surprised by Joy: The Shape of My Early Life*, fails to explain what happened in his childhood. His headmaster in boarding school, a minister who urged him to "think" by hitting him, may have contributed to this change.

Later years

Lewis went on to become a professor of English at Cambridge University, England, in 1954. Widely read as an adult, his knowledge of literature made him much sought after for his company and conversation. Lewis thoroughly enjoyed sitting up into the late hours in college rooms talking about literature, poetry, and religion.

In 1956, rather late in life, Lewis married Joy Davidman Gresham, the daughter of a New York Jewish couple. She was a graduate of Hunter College and had previously been married twice. When her first husband suffered a heart attack, she turned to prayer. Reading the writings of Lewis, she began attending church. Later, led by his writings to Lewis himself, she divorced her second husband, Williams Gresham, and married Lewis.

She died some three years before her husband. C. S. Lewis died at his home in Headington, Oxford, England, on November 24, 1963. A major collection of his works is held by Wheaton College in Illinois.

For More Information

- Adey, Lionel. *C. S. Lewis: Writer, Dreamer, and Mentor*. Grand Rapids, MI: William B. Eerdmans Pub., 1998.
- Como, James T., ed. *C. S. Lewis at the Breakfast Table and Other Reminiscences*. New York: Macmillan, 1979.
- Glaspey, Terry W. *Not a Tame Lion: The Spiritual Legacy of C. S. Lewis*. Nashville: Cumberland House, 1996.
- Lewis, C. S. *Surprised by Joy; the Shape of My Early Life*. London: G. Bles, 1955.
- Walsh, Chad. *The Literary Legacy of C. S. Lewis*. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1979.

CARL LEWIS

Born: July 1, 1961

Birmingham, Alabama

African American track and field athlete

One of track and field's greatest performers, Carl Lewis in 1984 became the first African American athlete since Jesse Owens (1913–1980) in 1936 to win four gold medals in Olympic competition. He won nine gold medals in four straight Olympics.

A lifetime of dedication

Born on July 1, 1961, in Birmingham, Alabama, Frederick Carlton Lewis is the son of two star athletes who attended Tuskegee Institute. His father, Bill, ran track and played football; his mother, Evelyn, was a world-class hurdler (a runner who jumps over a series of hurdles) who represented the United States at the 1951 Pan-American Games. By the time Carl, the third of four children, was born, his parents were coaching young athletes in track and field events.

When Carl was still young, his family moved to Willingboro, New Jersey. There his parents worked as high school teachers and founded the Willingboro Track Club. Lewis was not as talented as his brothers and sister, and his parents encouraged him to pursue music lessons instead. He kept working and practicing the long jump in his back yard, determined to improve. Small and skinny, Lewis competed in track meets, losing far more than he won. Still, his dedication and confidence caught the eye of Jesse Owens himself at a meet in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania; Owens urged other children to follow the example of the “spunky little guy.” When he graduated from Willingboro High School in 1979, Lewis was the top-ranked high school track athlete in the country.

Continues to improve

In 1979 Lewis entered the University of Houston (Texas) on an athletic scholarship. He worked with coach Tom Tellez, who suggested improvements in Lewis's style of jumping. After just one year of college Lewis qualified for the 1980 Olympic team, only to see opportunity pass him by when former President Jimmy Carter (1924–) cancelled

LEWIS, CARL



Carl Lewis.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

the United States' participation in the Games in protest of the Soviet Union's invasion of Afghanistan. Lewis kept his top national ranking in the long jump and the 100-meter dash at the 1981 National Collegiate Athletic Association (NCAA) indoor championships. He was the first athlete to win two events at an NCAA championship.

In 1982 Lewis left the University of Houston to work at the Santa Monica Track Club in California. Coach Tellez continued to work closely with him. By 1983 Lewis had become a winner in four categories: long jump, 100-meter run, 200-meter run, and 400-meter relay. He won three gold medals at

the track and field world championships in Helsinki, Finland, in 1983. During the early months of 1984 he set an indoor world record in the long jump. It appeared Lewis would return from the twenty-third Olympics covered with gold medals.

Backs up predictions

Lewis's announcement that he would win four events in Los Angeles, California, in the 1984 Summer Olympics was viewed by many as arrogant, but he backed up his talk. He won the 100-meter sprint with a time of 9.99 seconds. His long jump effort of twenty-eight feet earned him a second gold. For his third, Lewis set an Olympic record with a 19.8-second run in the 200-meter race. Finally, he led the 400-meter relay team to an Olympic record victory at 37.83 seconds. Rather than being praised, Lewis was mocked by writers as "King Carl" for his brash predictions and for showing up late to press conferences. An endorsement contract (agreement to promote a company's products in return for money) with Nike was cancelled, and Lewis received no others in the United States, although in Europe and Japan he became a hero. Lewis continued to participate in indoor and outdoor track meets.

In 1985 Canadian sprinter Ben Johnson (1961–) arrived on the scene, and he began to beat Lewis regularly in the 100-meter sprint. At the 1988 Olympic Games in Seoul, South Korea, Lewis ran second to Johnson, who won the 100-meter event in record time. Lewis was awarded the gold medal soon afterward when Johnson was found to have used steroids (illegal substances that improve athletic performance). Lewis earned a second gold in Seoul for the long jump, but his continued success did

little to improve his popularity. Worse, Lewis himself was charged with steroid use by a former opponent. Lewis denied the charges and sued the magazine in which they were published; he also agreed to submit to drug tests after races. Lewis has never been linked to drug use by anything but rumor.

Finally accepted

By 1992 Lewis had won eight world championship gold medals and had owned the long jump for ten years. Age began to take its toll on him, however. He watched Mike Powell break Bob Beamon's outdoor long jump world record at the 1991 world championships in Tokyo, Japan. Lewis made four personal best jumps at the same meet but still could not beat Powell. At the 1992 Olympic trials, Lewis failed to make the cut for the 100-meter and 200-meter sprints. He did qualify for the long jump and the 400-meter relay, and a week later he discovered that he had been suffering from a sinus (a cavity in the skull connected to the nostrils) infection.

Lewis experienced something at the 1992 Olympic trials that he had never received—total acceptance from an American crowd. He was given a standing ovation in New Orleans, Louisiana, as his second-place finish in the long jump qualified him for an Olympic berth. The admiration of fans came showering down in Barcelona, Spain, in 1992, when Lewis beat Powell in the long jump to earn his seventh gold medal and then anchored the 400-meter relay for his eighth.

One more time

Following the 1992 Olympics, Lewis's performance began to decline, and by 1995 he was being beaten regularly by younger

athletes. Still, Lewis participated in the 1996 Olympic trials and won a chance to compete in the long jump at the games in Atlanta, Georgia. He easily won his fourth straight gold in the event. With endorsement contracts from Panasonic, among others, and large personal appearance fees, he became a wealthy man and considered running for political office in Houston, Texas.

In 1999 Lewis was named one of the century's greatest athletes at the *Sports Illustrated* 20th Century Sports Awards ceremony. In 2000 he said he still felt he could compete at the Olympic trials but would not do so until the problem of athletes using drugs was addressed. He still attended the games in Sydney, Australia, participating in a ceremony to honor the McDonald's Olympic Achievers, young people from around the world chosen for their success in schoolwork, athletics, and community service. In December 2001 Lewis was elected to the National Track and Field Hall of Fame. He also tried acting, appearing in the 2002 television movie *Atomic Twister*.

Eight of Lewis's Olympic gold medals are still in his possession. The ninth—his first, for the 100-meter sprint—was buried with his father Bill in May of 1988. "My father was most proud of the 100," Lewis revealed in the *Philadelphia Daily News*. "More than anything, he wanted me to win that medal. . . . Now he has it and he'll always have it."

For More Information

Coffey, Wayne. *Carl Lewis*. Woodbridge, CT: Blackbirch Press, 1993.

Klots, Steve. *Carl Lewis*. New York: Chelsea House, 1995.

Lewis, Carl, and Jeffrey Marx. *Inside Track: My Professional Life in Amateur Track and Field*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1990.

SINCLAIR LEWIS

Born: February 7, 1885

Sauk Centre, Minnesota

Died: January 10, 1951

Rome, Italy

American writer

Although Sinclair Lewis was one of the most famous American writers of the 1920s, today his popular, mildly satirical (poking fun at human folly) novels are valued mainly for their descriptions of social institutions and relationships of that time.

Early life

Harry Sinclair Lewis was born in Sauk Centre, Minnesota, on February 7, 1885, the third son of Edwin J. Lewis and Emma Kermott Lewis. His father, grandfather, and older brother were all small-town doctors. Lewis was a lonely, awkward boy who liked to read. He began writing while in high school, and some of his articles appeared in Sauk Centre newspapers. After high school Lewis left Minnesota to study at Yale University in Connecticut, interrupting his education in 1907 to work briefly at Helicon Hall, a New Jersey socialist colony (a group of people living and working together as equals for the benefit of all) set up by the writer Upton Sinclair

(1878–1968). After his graduation in 1908, Lewis spent several years doing newspaper and editorial work in various parts of the United States. His first four novels were all unsuccessful.

In 1920 Lewis achieved instant worldwide recognition with the publication of *Main Street*, the story of a gifted young girl married to a dull, considerably older village doctor who tries to bring culture and imagination to empty, small-town life. Next Lewis focused on the American businessman in *Babbitt* (1922), perhaps his major work. Lewis purposely wrote in a fantastic style, ignoring formal plot development or structure. The creation of George F. Babbitt, an intellectually empty, immature man of weak morals who nevertheless remains a lovable comic figure, is Lewis's greatest accomplishment. One critic remarked, "If Babbitt could write, he would write like Sinclair Lewis."

Later novels and the Nobel Prize

Lewis's next popular novel, *Arrowsmith* (1925), returned to the form of *Main Street* to portray a young doctor's battle to maintain his dignity in a petty, dishonest world. Despite its often simplistic look at science as a means of saving one's soul, *Arrowsmith* was offered the Pulitzer Prize. Lewis, however, immediately refused the honor because the terms of the award required that it be given not for a work of value, but for a work that presents "the wholesome atmosphere of American Life."

Elmer Gantry (1927), an extreme assault on religious hypocrisy (the false expression of the appearance of goodness), seems more concerned with the main character's morals than with the failings of organized religion.

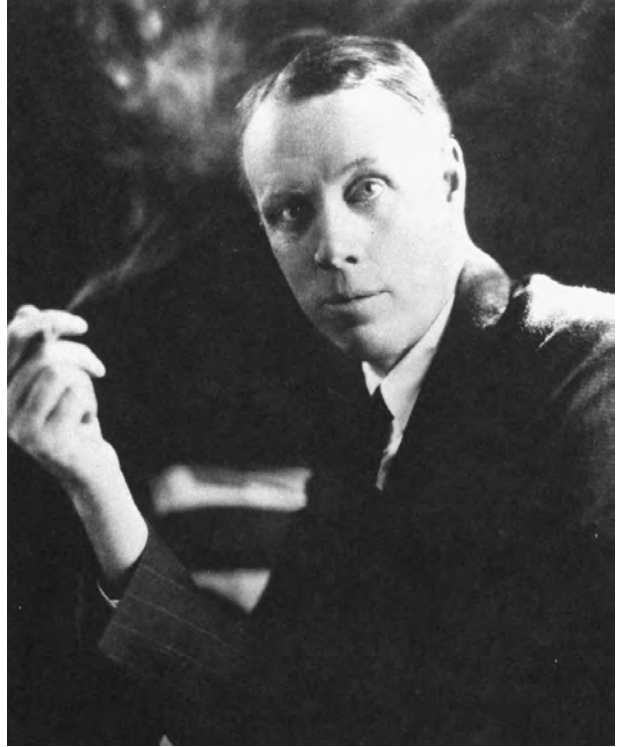
Dodsworth (1929), a sympathetic description of a wealthy, retired manufacturer seeking happiness in Europe, is more successful. Here Lewis makes little effort to hide his liking of, and even admiration for, the values described earlier in *Babbitt*. In 1930 Sinclair Lewis became the first American to win the Nobel Prize for Literature, but this honor brought him little personal happiness.

Lewis produced a great deal of writing in the following years, but none of these works were as successful as his earlier efforts. *Ann Vickers* (1933) traces the career of an unstable woman who starts as a social worker and ends as the mistress of a politician; *Cass Timberlane* (1945) deals with an unhappy marriage between a middle-aged judge and his loving wife; *Kingsblood Royal* (1947) takes on the subject of racial prejudice; and *The God-Seeker* (1949) tells the story of a New England missionary's attempts to convert the Native American Indians of Minnesota in the 1840s.

Final years

Lewis spent his last years traveling throughout Europe, unable to find publishers for his work and aware that his impact on American literature was far less than his early admirers had led him to believe. Lewis was overshadowed by other American writers, including Ernest Hemingway (1899–1961) and William Faulkner (1897–1962), who had yet to appear when Lewis first attracted attention. Later critics also felt that the Nobel Prize Lewis had won in 1930 should have gone to the stronger novelist Theodore Dreiser (1871–1945) instead.

Married and divorced twice, in Lewis's last years he retreated almost completely from other people. Increasingly self-con-



Sinclair Lewis.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

scious about his physical decline, he refused to be seen even by his few friends. He died on January 10, 1951, of a heart attack in a small-town clinic just outside of Rome, Italy. Although Lewis is not considered to have been a great writer, his place in the history of American literature is secure.

For More Information

Hutchisson, James M. *The Rise of Sinclair Lewis, 1920–1930*. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1996.

Lewis, Sinclair. *Minnesota Diary, 1942–46*. Edited by George Killough. Moscow: University of Idaho Press, 2000.

Lingeman, Richard. *Sinclair Lewis: Rebel from Main Street*. New York: Random House, 2002.

Lingeman, Richard R. *Sinclair Lewis: America's Angry Man*. New York: Random House, 2002.

ROY LICHTENSTEIN

Born: October 27, 1923

New York, New York

Died: September 29, 1997

New York, New York

American artist, painter, sculptor, and printmaker

Roy Lichtenstein, American painter, sculptor, and printmaker, startled the art world in 1962 by exhibiting paintings based on comic book cartoons.

Early life

Roy Lichtenstein was born in New York City on October 27, 1923, the son of Milton and Beatrice Werner Lichtenstein. His father owned a real estate firm. Lichtenstein studied with artist Reginald Marsh (1898–1954) at the Art Students League in 1939. After graduating from Benjamin Franklin High School in New York City, he entered Ohio State University. However, in 1943 his education was interrupted by three years of army service, during which he drew up maps for planned troop movements across Germany during World War II (1939–45; a war in which Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States fought against Germany, Japan,

and Italy). Lichtenstein received his bachelor of fine arts degree from Ohio State University in 1946 and a master of fine arts degree in 1949. He taught at Ohio State until 1951, then went to Cleveland, Ohio, to work. In 1957 he started teaching at Oswego State College in New York; in 1960 he moved to Rutgers University in New Jersey. Three years later he gave up teaching to paint full-time.

Early works

From 1951 to about 1957 Lichtenstein's paintings dealt with themes of the American West—cowboys, Native Americans, and the like—in a style similar to that of modern European painters. Next he began hiding images of comic strip figures (such as Mickey Mouse, Donald Duck, and Bugs Bunny) in his paintings. By 1961 he had created the images for which he became known. These included advertisement illustrations—common objects such as string, golf balls, kitchen curtains, slices of pie, or a hot dogs. He also used other artists' works to create new pieces, such as *Woman with Flowered Hat* (1963), based on a reproduction of a work by Pablo Picasso (1881–1973). He also created versions of paintings by Piet Mondrian (1872–1944), Gilbert Stuart's (1755–1828) portrait of George Washington (1732–1799), and Claude Monet's (1840–1926) haystacks.

Lichtenstein was best known for his paintings based on comic strips, with their themes of passion, romance, science fiction, violence, and war. In these paintings, Lichtenstein uses the commercial art methods: projectors magnify spray-gun stencils, creating dots to make the pictures look like newspaper cartoons seen through a magnifying glass. In the late 1960s he turned to design

elements and the commercial art of the 1930s, as if to explore the history of pop art (a twentieth-century art movement that uses everyday items). In 1966 his work was included in the Venice (Italy) Biennale art show. In 1969 New York's Guggenheim Museum gave a large exhibition of his work.

Tries different styles

The 1970s saw Lichtenstein continuing to experiment with new styles. His “mirror” paintings consist of sphere-shaped canvases with areas of color and dots. One of these, *Self-Portrait* (1978), is similar to the work of artist René Magritte (1898–1967) in its playful placement of a mirror where a human head should be. Lichtenstein also created a series of still lifes (paintings that show inanimate objects) in different styles during the 1970s. In the 1980s and 1990s, Lichtenstein began to mix and match styles. Often his works relied on optical (relating to vision) tricks, drawing his viewers into a debate over the nature of “reality.” The works were always marked by Lichtenstein’s trademark sense of humor and the absurd.

Lichtenstein’s long career and large body of work brought him appreciation as one of America’s greatest living artists. In 1994 he designed a painting for the hull of the United States entry in the America’s Cup yacht race. A series of sea-themed works followed. In 1995 the Los Angeles County Museum of Art launched a traveling exhibition, “The Prints of Roy Lichtenstein,” which covered more than twenty years of his work in this medium.

In a 1996 exhibition at New York City’s Leo Castelli gallery, Lichtenstein unveiled a series of paintings, “Landscapes in the Chi-



Roy Lichtenstein.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

nese Style,” which consisted of delicate “impressions” of traditional Chinese landscape paintings. The series was praised for its restraint (control), as common Lichtenstein elements, such as the use of dots to represent mass, were used to support the compositions rather than to declare an individual style. Lichtenstein died on September 29, 1997, in New York City, at the age of seventy-three.

For More Information

Alloway, Lawrence. *Roy Lichtenstein*. New York: Abbeville Press, 1983.

Waldman, Diane. *Roy Lichtenstein*. New York: Rizzoli Publications, 1993.

Walker, Lou Ann. *Roy Lichtenstein: The Artist at Work*. New York: Lodestar Books, 1994.

MAYA LIN

Born: October 5, 1959

Athens, Ohio

Asian American architect and sculptor

Maya Lin is an American architect whose two most important works in the 1980s were the Vietnam Veterans' Memorial in Washington, D.C., and the Civil Rights Memorial in Montgomery, Alabama.

Family and childhood

Maya Ying Lin was born on October 5, 1959, in Athens, Ohio, a manufacturing and agricultural town seventy-five miles southeast of Columbus. Athens is also the home of Ohio University, where Lin's mother, Julia Chang Lin, a poet, was a literature professor. Her late father, Henry Huan Lin, was a ceramicist (a person with expertise in ceramics). The couple came to America from China in the 1940s, leaving behind a prominent family that had included a well-known lawyer and an architect. Lin's family in America includes her mother and an older brother, Tan, who, is a poet like his mother.

During her childhood, Maya Lin found it easy to keep herself entertained, whether by reading or by building miniature towns. Maya loved to hike and bird watch as a child.

She also enjoyed reading and working in her father's ceramics studio. From an early age she excelled in mathematics, which led her toward a career in architecture. While in high school Lin took college level courses and worked at McDonalds. She considered herself a typical mid-westerner, in that she grew up with little sense of ethnic identity. She admits, however, to having been somewhat "nerdy," since she never dated nor wore make-up and found it enjoyable to be constantly thinking and solving problems.

Vietnam Veterans' Memorial

After graduating from high school, Lin enrolled at Yale University in New Haven, Connecticut, to study architecture. Her best-known work, the design for the Vietnam Veterans' Memorial in Washington, D.C., grew out of a class project during her senior year. In 1981 her entry was chosen out of a field of 1,421 unlabelled submissions in a design competition that was open to all Americans, not just professional architects. Lin was just twenty-one years old at the time.

In keeping with the competition criteria of sensitivity to the nearby Lincoln Memorial and Washington Monument, the inclusion of the names of all the dead and missing of the war, and the avoidance of political statements about the war, Lin's design was simple. She proposed two two-hundred-foot-long polished black granite walls, which dipped ten feet below grade to meet at an obtuse (greater than 90 degrees) angle of 130 degrees. The two arms were to point towards the Lincoln Memorial and Washington Monument, and they were to be inscribed with the names of the approximately fifty-eight thousand men and women killed or missing in Vietnam.

These names were to be listed chronologically, according to the dates killed or reported missing, instead of alphabetically, so that they would read, in Lin's words, "like an epic Greek poem." The memorial was dedicated in November of 1982.

After the Vietnam Memorial project, Lin returned to Yale for a master's degree. Her later projects included designs for a Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, stage set; a corporate logo; an outdoor gathering place at Juniata College in Huntington, Pennsylvania; a park near the Charlotte, North Carolina, coliseum; and a ceiling for the Long Island Railroad section of Pennsylvania Station. In addition, her lead and glass sculptures have been exhibited at New York's Sidney Janis Gallery.

Civil Rights Memorial

Maya Lin's second nationally recognized project was the design of the Civil Rights Memorial in Montgomery, Alabama, commissioned by the Southern Poverty Law Center. Lin's conception of the memorial grew out of her admiration of a line in Martin Luther King's (1929–1968) "I have a dream" speech, which proclaims that the struggle for civil rights (the basic rights given to U.S. citizens of all races) will not be complete "until justice rolls down like water and righteousness like a mighty stream." Water, along with this key phrase from the King years, became her theme. King's words stand out boldly on a convex (curved or bowed out), water-covered wall, which overlooks an inverted cone-shaped table with an off-center base. The surface of this table is inscribed with the names of forty people who died in the struggle for civil rights between 1955 and 1968, as well as with landmark events of the period. This element is



Maya Lin.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

also bathed in a film of moving water, which serves to involve the viewer sensually through sound, touch, and the sight of his or her reflection, while the words engage the intellect.

The two geometric elements of the Civil Rights Memorial are not completely without symbolic meaning. Lin has noted that the asymmetrical, or uneven, cone-shaped table looks different from every angle, a quality which implies equality without sameness—an appropriate view in a memorial to civil rights. Lin says this memorial will be her last, and notes that she began and ended the 1980s with memorial projects. She feels fortunate and satisfied to have had the opportunity.

In 1993 Lin created a sculptural landscape work called Groundswell at Ohio State University—a three level garden of crushed green glass. The glass used in the effort reveal Lin's environmentalist nature. Lin remains an active sculptor and architect. In 1997 she began work on a twenty-thousand-square-foot recycling plant. Lin currently lives in Vermont. She stays out of the public eye as much as possible. Still, so much of her work is so public and so creative that publicity is hard to avoid. Maya Lin has published several books and is currently working on different architectural and sculptural projects.

For More Information

Coleman, Jonathan. "First She Looked Inward." *Time* (November 6, 1989).

Hess, Elizabeth. "A Tale of Two Memorials." *Art in America* (April 1983).

Danto, Arthur. "The Vietnam Veterans' Memorial." *The Nation*, (August 31, 1985).

Lin, Maya. *Boundaries*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 2000.

Yokoe, Lynn. *Maya Lin, Architect*. Parsippany, NJ: Modern Curriculum Press, 1994.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN

Born: February 12, 1809

Hodgenville, Kentucky

Died: April 14, 1865

Washington, D.C.

American president

The sixteenth president of the United States and president during the Civil War (1861–1865), Abraham Lincoln will forever be remembered by his inspirational rise to fame, his efforts to rid the country of slavery, and his ability to hold together a divided nation. Lincoln's Emancipation Proclamation, Gettysburg Address, and two outstanding inaugural addresses are widely regarded as some of the greatest speeches ever delivered by an American politician.

Starting life in a log cabin

Abraham Lincoln was born to Thomas and Nancy Lincoln on February 12, 1809, in a log cabin on a farm in Hardin County, Kentucky. Two years later the family moved to a farm on Knob Creek. There, when there was no immediate work to be done, Abraham walked two miles to the schoolhouse, where he learned the basics of reading, writing, and arithmetic.

When Abraham was seven, his father sold his lands and moved the family into the rugged wilderness of Indiana across the Ohio River. After spending a winter in a crude shack, the Lincolns began building a better home and clearing the land for planting. They were making progress when, in the summer of 1818, a terrible disease known as milk sickness struck the region. First it took the lives of Mrs. Lincoln's uncle and aunt, and then Nancy Hanks Lincoln herself died. Without Mrs. Lincoln the household began to fall apart, and much of the workload fell to Abraham and his sister.

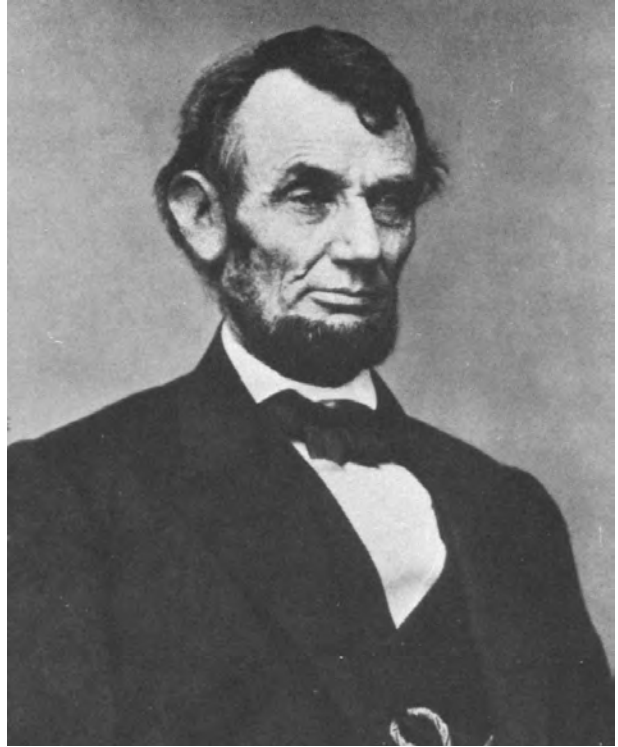
The next winter Abraham's father returned to Kentucky and brought back a second wife, Sarah Bush Johnson, a widow

with three children. As time passed, the region where the Lincolns lived grew in population. Lincoln himself grew tall and strong, and his father often hired him out to work for neighbors. Meanwhile, Lincoln's father had again moved his family to a new home in Illinois, where he built a cabin on the Sangamon River. At the end of the first summer in Illinois, disease swept through the region and put the Lincolns on the move once again. This time it was to Coles County. Abraham, who was now a grown man, did not go along. Instead he moved to the growing town of New Salem, where he was placed in charge of a mill and store.

Entering public life

Life in New Salem was a turning point for Lincoln, and the great man of history began to emerge. To the store came people of all kinds to talk and trade and to enjoy the stories told by this unique and popular man. The members of the New Salem Debating Society welcomed him, and Lincoln began to develop his skills as a passionate and persuasive speaker. When the Black Hawk War (1832) erupted between the United States and hostile Native Americans, the volunteers of the region quickly elected Lincoln to be their captain.

After the war he announced himself as a candidate for the Illinois legislature. He was not elected, but he did receive 277 of the 300 votes cast in the New Salem precinct. In 1834, after another attempt, Lincoln was finally elected to the state legislature. Lincoln's campaign skills greatly impressed John Todd Stuart (1807–1885), a leader of the Whigs, one of two major political parties in the country at the time. Stuart was also an



*Abraham Lincoln.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

outstanding lawyer in Springfield, Illinois, and soon took Lincoln under his care and inspired him to begin the study of law.

Lincoln served four straight terms in the legislature and soon emerged as a party leader. Meanwhile, he mastered the law books he could buy or borrow. In September 1836 Lincoln began practicing law and played an important part in having the Illinois state capital moved from Vandalia to Springfield. In 1837 Lincoln himself moved to Springfield to become Stuart's law partner. He did not, however, forget politics. In 1846 Lincoln was elected to the U.S. Congress. During these years Lincoln had become

engaged to Mary Todd (1818–1882), a cultured and well-educated Kentucky woman. They were married on November 2, 1842.

First failure

When Congress met in December 1847, Lincoln expressed his disapproval with the Mexican War (1846–48), in which American and Mexican forces clashed over land in the Southwest. These views, together with his wish to abolish, or end, slavery in the District of Columbia, brought sharp criticism from the people back in Illinois. They believed Lincoln was “not a patriot” and had not correctly represented his state in Congress.

Although the Whigs won the presidency in 1848, Lincoln could not even control the support in his own district. His political career seemed to be coming to a close just as it was beginning. His only reward for party service was an offer of the governorship of far-off Oregon, which he refused. Lincoln then returned to Illinois and resumed practicing law.

War on the horizon

During the next twelve years, while Lincoln rebuilt his legal career, the nation was becoming divided. While victory in the Mexican War added vast western territory to the United States, then came the issue of slavery in those new territories. To Southerners, the issue involved the security and rights of slavery everywhere. To Northerners, it was a matter of morals and justice. A national crisis soon developed. Only the efforts of Senators Henry Clay (1777–1852) and Daniel Webster (1782–1852) brought about the Compromise of 1850. With the compromise, a temporary truce was reached between the states favoring slavery and those opposed to it. The

basic issues, however, were not eliminated. Four years later the struggle was reopened.

Lincoln’s passionate opposition to slavery was enough to draw him back into the world of politics. He had always viewed slavery as a “moral, social and political wrong” and looked forward to its eventual abolition. Although willing to let it alone for the present in the states where it existed, he would not see it extended one inch.

At the same time, Illinois Senator Stephen A. Douglas (1813–1861) drafted the Kansas-Nebraska Act, which would leave the decision of slavery up to the new territories. Lincoln thought the bill ignored the growing Northern determination to rid the nation of slavery. Soon, in opposition to the expansion of slavery, the Republican party was born. When Douglas returned to Illinois to defend his position, Lincoln seized every opportunity to point out the weakness in it.

Republican leader

Lincoln’s failure to receive the nomination as senator in 1855 convinced him that the Whig party was dead. By summer 1856 he became a member of the new Republicans. Lincoln quickly emerged as the outstanding leader of the new party. At the party’s first national convention in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, he received 110 votes for vice president on the first ballot. Although he was not chosen, he had been recognized as an important national figure.

National attention began turning toward the violence in Kansas and the Supreme Court decision in the Dred Scott case, which debated the issue of slavery in the new territories. Meanwhile, Douglas had returned to

Illinois to wage his fight for reelection to the Senate. But unlike in earlier elections, Illinois had grown rapidly and the population majority had shifted from the southern part of the state to the central and northern areas. In these growing areas the Republican party had gained a growing popularity—as had Abraham Lincoln.

As Lincoln challenged Douglas for his seat in the Senate, the two engaged in legendary debates. During the Lincoln-Douglas debates, Lincoln delivered his famous “house divided” speech, stating “A house divided against itself cannot stand. I believe the government cannot endure permanently half slave and half free.” Lincoln proved his ability to hold his own against the man known as the “Little Giant.” In the end Douglas was reelected as senator, but Lincoln had gained national attention and his name was soon mentioned for the presidency.

The sixteenth president

In 1860 the Republican National Convention met and chose Lincoln as their candidate for president of the United States. With a divided Democratic party and the recent formation of the Constitutional Union party, Lincoln’s election was certain. After Lincoln’s election victory, parts of the country reacted harshly against the new president’s stand on slavery. Seven Southern states then seceded, or withdrew, from the Union and formed the Confederate States of America.

In his inaugural address he clarified his position on the national situation. Secession, he said, was wrong, and the Union could not legally be broken apart. He would not interfere with slavery in the states, but he would “hold, occupy, and possess” all property and

places owned by the federal government. By now there was no avoiding the outbreak of the Civil War.

The Civil War

From this time on, Lincoln’s life was shaped by the problems and fortunes of civil war. As president, he was the head of all agencies in government and also acted as commander in chief, or supreme commander, of the armies. Lincoln was heavily criticized for early failures. Radicals in Congress were soon demanding a reorganization of his cabinet, or official advisors, and a new set of generals to lead his armies. To combat this, Lincoln himself studied military books. He correctly evaluated General Ulysses S. Grant (1822–1885) and General William T. Sherman (1820–1891) and the importance of the western campaign. Thanks, in part, to Lincoln’s reshuffling of his military leaders, the Union forces would soon capture victory over the Confederates.

Afterward, Lincoln issued his Emancipation Proclamation. The proclamation called for the freeing of all slaves in territories still at war with the Union. Later, during his Gettysburg Address, he gave the war its universal meaning as a struggle to preserve a nation based on freedoms and dedicated to the idea “that all men are created equal.”

Lincoln was reelected in 1864. As the end of the Civil War appeared close, Lincoln urged his people “to bind up the nation’s wounds” and create a just and lasting peace. But Lincoln would never be able to enjoy the nation he had reunited. Five days after the Confederate army surrendered and ended the Civil War, Lincoln was shot by John Wilkes Booth at Ford’s Theater in Washington, D.C., on April 14, 1865. The president died the next day.

Although the reasons for Lincoln's assassination would be debated, his prominent place in American history has never been in doubt. His work to free the slaves earned him the honorable reputation as the Great Emancipator. His ability to hold together a country torn apart by civil war would forever secure his place as one of America's greatest presidents.

For More Information

Bruns, Roger. *Abraham Lincoln*. New York: Chelsea House, 1986.

Jacobs, William Jay. *Lincoln*. New York: Scribner's, 1991.

Judson, Karen. *Abraham Lincoln*. New York: Enslow, 1998.

Miller, William Lee. *Lincoln's Virtues: An Ethical Biography*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2002.

Oates, Stephen B. *With Malice Toward None: A Life of Abraham Lincoln*. New York: HarperPerennial, 1994.

Sandburg, Carl. *Abraham Lincoln: The Prairie Years and the War Years*. New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1954. Reprint, San Diego: Harcourt, Brace Jovanovich, 1982.

CHARLES LINDBERGH

Born: February 4, 1902

Detroit, Michigan

Died: August 26, 1974

Maui, Hawaii

American aviator

American aviator Charles Lindbergh became famous after making the first solo nonstop flight across the Atlantic Ocean. He was criticized for insisting that the United States should not become involved in World War II.

Early years

Charles Augustus Lindbergh was born on February 4, 1902, in Detroit, Michigan, the only child of Charles August Lindbergh and Evangeline Lodge Land Lindbergh. His father was a congressman from Minnesota from 1907 to 1917, and his grandfather had been secretary to the King of Sweden. Lindbergh spent a great deal of time alone while young, with animals and then machines to keep him company. After attending schools in Little Falls, Minnesota, and Washington, D.C., Lindbergh enrolled in a mechanical engineering program at the University of Wisconsin.

Lindbergh became bored with studying; he was more interested in cars and motorcycles at this point. He left Wisconsin to study airplane flying in Lincoln, Nebraska, from 1920 to 1922. He made his first solo flight in 1923 and thereafter made exhibition flights and short trips in the Midwest. He enrolled in the U.S. Air Service Reserve as a cadet in 1924 and graduated the next year. In 1926 he made his first flight as an airmail pilot between Chicago, Illinois, and St. Louis, Missouri.

Famous flight

Lindbergh wanted to compete for the \$25 thousand prize that a man named Raymond Orteig had posted for the first person to make a nonstop flight between New York and Paris, France. With money put up by several St. Louis businessmen, Lindbergh

had a plane called the *Spirit of St. Louis* built. On the first lap of his flight to New York, he traveled nonstop to St. Louis in fourteen hours and twenty-five minutes—record-breaking time from the West Coast.

On May 20, 1927, Lindbergh took off in his silver-winged monoplane (a plane with only one supporting surface) from Roosevelt Field in Long Island, New York, bound for an airport outside Paris. Better-equipped and better-known aviators had failed; some had even crashed to their death. But Lindbergh succeeded. He arrived on May 21, having traveled 2,610 miles in thirty-three and one-half hours. He immediately became a hero and received many honors and decorations, including the Congressional Medal of Honor, the French Chevalier Legion of Honor, the Royal Air Cross (British), and the Order of Leopold (Belgium). During a tour of seventy-five American cities sponsored by the Daniel Guggenheim Foundation for the Promotion of Aeronautics, he was greeted by wild demonstrations of praise.

In December 1927 Lindbergh flew nonstop between Washington and Mexico City, Mexico, and went on a goodwill trip to the Caribbean and Central America. During one tour he met Anne Spencer Morrow, the daughter of the U.S. ambassador (representative) to Mexico. They were married in 1929. The Lindberghs made many flights together. In 1931 they flew to Asia, mapping air routes to China. Two years later, in a 30,000-mile flight, they explored possible air routes across oceans.

Son murdered

In March 1932 the Lindberghs were shaken when their infant son was kidnapped. A \$50,000 ransom was paid, but the baby was found dead. The nation's concern and horror



Charles Lindbergh.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

resulted in laws that expanded the role of federal law-enforcement agencies in dealing with such crimes, including allowing the government to demand the death penalty for kidnapers who take victims across state lines.

The Lindberghs moved to Europe after the execution of their son's murderer in 1935. While in France Lindbergh worked with Alexis Carrel (1873–1944), an American surgeon (medical specialist who performs operations) and experimental biologist who had won the Nobel Prize in medicine in 1912. The two men perfected an "artificial heart and lungs," a pump that could keep organs alive outside the body by supplying blood and air to them.

Criticized for political opinions

In the late 1930s Lindbergh conducted various studies of air power in Europe. He toured German aviation centers at the invitation of Nazi (a political party that controlled Germany from 1933–45 and that attempted to rid the country of Jewish people) leader Hermann Göring (1893–1946), becoming convinced that the Nazi military was unbeatable. Also in the 1930s Lindbergh was on the Board of Directors of Pan-American World Airways. In 1939 he studied American airplane production as special adviser on technical matters. He also performed promotional work for aviation during this period.

Just prior to World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers of Germany, Italy, and Japan and the Allies of England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States), as a member of the America First Organization, Lindbergh warned that United States involvement could not prevent a German victory. He was criticized by President Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882–1945) for radio broadcasts urging America not to fight in “other people’s wars.” As a result, Lindbergh resigned his commission in the U.S. Air Force. After Japan attacked the United States in 1941, Lindbergh supported the American effort, serving as a technician for aircraft companies. After the war he once again became a technical adviser for the U.S. Air Force, and eventually he was again commissioned a brigadier general in the Air Force Reserve.

Later years

Lindbergh’s association with the Nazis had severely damaged his reputation, but the popularity of the books he and his wife wrote helped restore some of what he had lost. Lind-

bergh wrote several accounts of his famous 1927 flight. *We* (1927) and *The Spirit of St. Louis* (1953), for which he received the Pulitzer Prize for biography, are descriptions of his early life and accomplishments. With Carrel he coauthored *Culture of Organs* (1938), and in 1948 he wrote *Of Flight and Life*.

Lindbergh’s later works included *The Wartime Journals of Charles A. Lindbergh* (1970) and *Boyhood on the Upper Mississippi: A Reminiscent Letter* (1972). *An Autobiography of Values* (1977) was published after his death. Toward the end of his life Lindbergh grew increasingly interested in the spiritual world and spoke out on environmental issues. He spent his final years with his wife in a house they had built on a remote portion of the island of Maui. He died there on August 26, 1974.

After her husband’s death, Anne Morrow Lindbergh continued to publish books of her diaries and letters. She retired to Darien, Connecticut, where a series of strokes weakened her. In 1992 she discovered that a woman whom her children had hired to manage her affairs was stealing money from her. The state of Connecticut joined with the Lindbergh children in pressing charges against the woman.

For more information

- Bak, Richard. *Lindbergh: Triumph and Tragedy*. Dallas: Taylor, 2000.
- Giblin, James. *Charles A. Lindbergh: A Human Hero*. New York: Clarion Books, 1997.
- Kent, Zachary. *Charles Lindbergh and the Spirit of St. Louis*. Parsippany, NJ: New Discovery Books, 1998.
- Lindbergh, Charles A. *The Spirit of St. Louis*. New York: Scribner, 1953. Reprint, 1998.

Mosley, Leonard. *Lindbergh: A Biography*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1976.

CARL LINNAEUS

Born: May 23, 1707

Råshult, Sweden

Died: January 10, 1778

Uppsala, Sweden

Swedish naturalist

The Swedish naturalist (student of natural history) Carl Linnaeus established the binomial (two-name) system of describing living things and gave the first organization to ecology (the relationships between living things and their environments).

Early years and education

Carl Linnaeus was born on May 23, 1707, in Råshult, Sweden, the eldest of Nils and Christina Linnaeus's five children. Two years after his birth his father became the minister at Stenbrohult, Sweden. It was there that his father, who was a lover of flowers, introduced botany (the study of plants) to Carl at a young age. And at the age of five Carl had his own garden, which he later said, "inflamed my soul with an unquenchable love of plants." Carl was more interested in plants than in his studies while in grammar school. His mother hoped he would become a minister, but he showed no interest in that career. Johan Rothman, a master at the high school, encouraged Carl's interests in science

and suggested that he study medicine. Nils Linnaeus agreed, and Rothman tutored Carl for a year.

In 1727 Linnaeus entered the University of Lund. The science and medical instruction was very weak there, and after a year he transferred to Uppsala University, where things were not much better. Fortunately he attracted the interest of Olof Celsius, a religion professor who was interested in the plants of Sweden. Celsius gave Linnaeus free room and board and encouraged his study. The most important development in botany at the time was the study of the sexuality of plants. Linnaeus wrote an essay on the subject, which Celsius showed to one of the professors of medicine, Olof Rudbeck. Rudbeck was so impressed with Linnaeus that he appointed him lecturer in botany and tutor of his sons.

Linnaeus's travels

From 1732 to 1735 Linnaeus traveled throughout Sweden on behalf of the government to study the country's natural resources. Linnaeus then went to Holland to obtain a medical degree. In 1735, after a week at the University of Harderwijk, Linnaeus took the examinations, defended his thesis (a written statement containing original research and supporting a specific idea) on the cause of intermittent (not continuous) fever, and received his degree. He spent most of the next three years in Holland but also traveled in Germany, France, and England. He had many of his scientific papers published with the support of other naturalists and the wealthy banker George Clifford. Linnaeus concluded that in three years he had "written more, discovered more, and made a greater



Carl Linnaeus.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

reform in botany than anybody before had done in an entire lifetime.”

Linnaeus returned to practice medicine in Stockholm, Sweden, and he was very successful. In 1739 he married Sara Lisa Moraea, with whom he would have six children. Linnaeus became professor of botany at Uppsala University in 1741. He taught botany, zoology (the study of animals), natural history, and other subjects, and he was very popular with his students. The love of his students and the value of his work ensured his widespread influence and brought him many honors. He was appointed chief royal physician in 1747 and was knighted in 1758; he then

took the name Carl von Linnæus. He retired in 1776 and died in Uppsala, Sweden, on January 10, 1778.

Binomial system and classification

Linnaeus is most widely known for creating systems for naming and classifying plants and animals. Realizing that new plants were being discovered faster than their relationships could be established, he first came up with a simple classification based upon the number of floral parts of each plant. This system remained popular into the nineteenth century. Gradually Linnaeus also developed a system of names in which each species of plant and animal had a genus (class or group) name followed by a specific name. For example, *Plantago virginica* and *Plantago lanceolata* were the names of two species of *plantain* (an herb). Botanists agreed in 1905 to accept his *Species plantarum* (1753) and zoologists (scientists who study animals) agreed to accept his *Systema naturae* (1758) as the official starting points for scientific names of plants and animals.

Pioneer in ecology

Linnaeus first discussed the subject of ecology as an area of investigation in a thesis in 1749. He discussed the importance of relationships among beings in nature, and he was one of the first naturalists to describe food chains. He also studied the different habitat (living space) requirements among species and the feeding habits of insects and animals with hoofs. He urged the use of biological knowledge not only in medicine but also in agriculture, believing that the effective control of agricultural pests must be based on a thorough knowledge of their life histories.

For More Information

- Anderson, Margaret Jean. *Carl Linnaeus: Father of Classification*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.
- Blunt, Wilfred. *A Life of Linnaeus*. New York: Viking Press, 1971.
- Blunt, Wilfrid. *Linnaeus: The Compleat Naturalist*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 2002.
- Koerner, Lisbet. *Linnaeus: Nature and Nation*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1999.

JOSEPH LISTER

Born: April 5, 1827

Essex, England

Died: February 10, 1912

Walmer, England

English surgeon

The English surgeon (doctor who performs operations) Joseph Lister discovered the antiseptic method, in which a germ-killing substance is applied to wounds during an operation. This represented the beginning of modern surgery (an operation to correct a disease or condition).

Early years

Joseph Lister was born in Upton, Essex, England, on April 5, 1827, the fourth of Joseph Jackson Lister and Isabella Harris Lister's seven children. His father was a wealthy wine merchant and student of Latin and

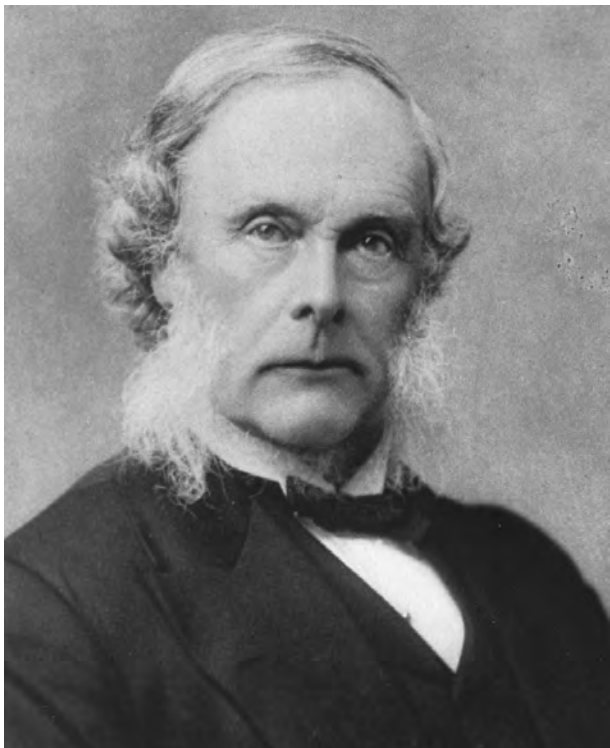
mathematics who also developed an achromatic (possessing no color) lens for the microscope. As a child Lister studied fish and small animals. He also did microscopic research, and his later acceptance of Louis Pasteur's (1822–1895) work may be related to his understanding of the process of fermentation (the chemical breakdown of a compound) in relation to the making of wine.

Lister knew at a young age that he wanted to be a surgeon, but his father made sure he completed his formal education first, just in case. As a teenager Lister attended schools at Hitchin and Tottenham, England, studying mathematics, natural science, and languages. In 1844 he entered University College in London, England, to study medicine. After graduating in 1852, he began a surgical career in Edinburgh, Scotland. In 1860 he became professor of surgery at the Royal Infirmary in Glasgow, Scotland.

Making surgery safer

With the introduction of anesthesia (something that causes a patient to lose sensation in a certain area of the body or the entire body) in the 1840s, operations had become more common. Except, many patients died from infection following surgery. Inflammation (swelling) and suppuration (pus formation) occurred in almost all accidental wounds after surgery, and more so when patients were treated at the hospital rather than at home by a visiting surgeon. The reason was unknown, but it was believed to be something in the air. As a result wounds were heavily dressed or washed with water to keep the air out; operations were a last resort. The head, chest, and stomach were almost never opened, and injured limbs were usually amputated (cut off).

LISTER



Joseph Lister.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Lister's research centered on the microscopic changes in tissue that result in inflammation. When he read Pasteur's work on germs in 1864, Lister immediately applied Pasteur's thinking to the problem he was investigating. He concluded that inflammation was the result of germs entering and developing in the wound. Since Pasteur's solution of killing germs with heat could not be applied to the living body, Lister decided to try a chemical to destroy the germs.

That same year Lister read in the newspaper that the treatment of sewage (liquid waste matter from sewers) with a chemical

called carbolic acid had led to a reduction of diseases among the people of Carlisle, England, and among the cattle grazing on sewage-treated fields. In 1865 he developed a successful method of applying carbolic acid to wounds. The technique of spraying the air in the operating room with carbolic acid was used only briefly, as it was recognized that germs in the air were not the main problem. Lister perfected the details of the antiseptic method and continued his research. He developed the surgical use of a sterile (germ-free) thread for closing wounds and introduced gauze dressings. Antisepsis became a basic principle for the development of surgery. Amputations became less frequent, as did death from infections. Now new operations could be planned and executed safely.

Later years

In 1869 Lister returned to Edinburgh, and in 1877 he was appointed professor of surgery at King's College in London, England. He won worldwide acclaim, honors, and honorary (received without fulfilling the usual requirements) doctorates and was made a baron in 1897. After he retired from medicine in 1893 he became foreign secretary of the Royal Society (Great Britain's oldest organization of scientists), and he was its president from 1895 to 1900. He died at Walmer, Kent, England, on February 10, 1912. Although Lister's antiseptic method was soon replaced by the use of asepsis (keeping the site of the operation and the instruments used free from germs), his work represented the first successful application of Pasteur's theory to surgery and marked the beginning of a new era.

For More Information

The Collected Papers of Joseph Baron Lister. 2 vols. Birmingham, AL: Classics of Medicine Library, 1979.

Cartwright, Frederick F. *Joseph Lister: The Man Who Made Surgery Safe*. London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1963.

Fisher, Richard B. *Joseph Lister, 1827–1912*. New York: Stein and Day, 1977.

McTavish, Douglas. *Joseph Lister*. New York: Bookwright Press, 1992.

ANDREW LLOYD WEBBER

Born: March 22, 1948

London, England

English composer and musician

The English musician Andrew Lloyd Webber is the composer of such musical theater hits as *Joseph and the Amazing Technicolor Dreamcoat*, *Jesus Christ Superstar*, *Evita*, *Cats*, *Starlight Express*, *The Phantom of the Opera*, and *Aspects of Love*. His early successes brought him four Tony awards, four Drama Desk awards, and three Grammys.

Childhood inspirations

Andrew Lloyd Webber was born on March 22, 1948, in London, England. His father, William, was the director of the London College of Music, his mother, Joan Hermione, was a piano teacher, and his younger brother, Julian, is a cellist. Thus,

Lloyd Webber came by his musical ability naturally. Young Lloyd played the piano, the violin, and the French horn. Excerpts from his first musical composition, *The Toy Theatre*, were published in a British music magazine.

As a child, Lloyd Webber dreamed of becoming Britain's chief inspector of ancient monuments. He won a Challenge Scholarship to Westminster and in 1965 entered Oxford University as a history major. In the 1980s, after a long and successful career in music, he exercised his love for history through Sydmonton Court, his country estate, whose oldest section dates from the sixteenth century and where his compositions were tried out at yearly festivals.

Other childhood pastimes of Lloyd Webber's surface in his works and his approach to their staging. His keen ability to envision fully-mounted productions of even his most spectacular pieces may have stemmed, at least in part, from his experience as an eleven year old working with his elaborate toy theater, built to scale. Lloyd Webber's lifelong fascination with trains was exhibited in *Starlight Express* (1984). Some consider this his childhood fantasy gone wrong, a warped interpretation of the famous story of the little engine that could.

Lloyd Webber's formal education ended after only one term at Oxford. He left to begin work on the never-to-be-produced musical *The Likes of Us*, which is based on the life of British Dr. Bernardo, a well-known philanthropist, or one who raises money for charities. Lloyd Webber's career was closely linked with that of lyricist (writer of songs) Tim Rice, and their partnership began with this musical.



Andrew Lloyd Webber.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Lloyd Webber and Rice

The duo's next effort was *Joseph and the Amazing Technicolor Dreamcoat* (1968, extended 1972), at first a concert piece, then expanded into a two-act production. The score demonstrates what were to become the Lloyd Webber trademarks of shifting time signatures and styles, ranging from French cafe music to calypso (a musical style originating from the West Indies), country, jazz, and rock.

In *Jesus Christ Superstar* (1971), popular music was presented in classical operatic form. Developed first as a demonstration disc for Decca Records, it began the Lloyd Web-

ber-Rice tradition of recording first, then producing. The score boasts the hit single "I Don't Know How To Love Him." Tom O'Horgan, who gained fame by directing *Hair*, directed the 1971 version at Broadway.

When Rice became irritated with a proposed musical based on the works of writer P. G. Wodehouse (1881–1975), Lloyd Webber teamed up with British playwright Alan Ayckbourn on the unsuccessful *Jeeves* (1974). During this period, Lloyd Webber also composed the film scores for *Gumshoe* (1971) and *The Odessa File* (1973).

Again, Lloyd Webber and Rice were paired for *Evita* (1976), the story of the actress who married Argentinean dictator Juan Peron (1895–1975). Veteran Broadway producer Harold Prince was hired to direct the 1978 and 1979 productions on both sides of the Atlantic. *Evita* faced the criticisms that have consistently plagued Lloyd Webber's compositions. He was accused of "borrowing" songs and his work was called "derivative," "synthetic," and a "pastiche," or imitation of others.

Success in the 1980s

Lloyd Webber's next production, *Song and Dance* (1982), was the result of combining two of his earlier pieces: *Variations* (1978) and *Tell Me on a Sunday* (1979). *Variations* (1978) is a set of cello variations written for his brother, Julian, and *Tell Me on a Sunday* (1979) is the story of an English working girl who moves to New York City and goes through a series of relationships.

Cats (1981) marked the composer's personal and professional breakthrough. Based on T. S. Eliot's (1888–1965) volume of children's

verses, *Old Possum's Book of Practical Cats*, the production was staged by Royal Shakespeare director Trevor Nunn and its extravagant scenery was created by John Napier. Rice was called in to provide assistance on the lyrics for the now-famous "Memory," but his words were abandoned in favor of Nunn's.

Lloyd Webber found himself attracted at first vocally, then romantically, to performer Sarah Brightman. She was a castmember in *Cats*, and in 1983 he abandoned his first wife, Sarah Hugill, for her. He later married Brightman and she was cast as the female lead, Christine Daae, in *The Phantom of the Opera*.

With *Cats*, putting on an enormous display became the key to success both in London and on Broadway. It was only natural that a production like *Starlight Express* would follow on its heels. Lloyd Webber and Prince were paired again for the romantic 1986 production of *Phantom of the Opera*. Lloyd Webber's production *Aspects of Love* (1989) was in many ways a "retread." The score is filled with tunes retrieved from Lloyd Webber's past, reworked for the occasion.

Production

In the 1980s Lloyd Webber turned his attention toward his production company, Really Useful Theatre Group, Inc. In April 1990 he announced his intention to take a leave from writing musicals and to turn to moviemaking, perhaps even a film version of *Cats* with Stephen Spielberg (1947–).

In July 1990 Lloyd Webber announced his impending divorce from Sarah Brightman while she was completing her summer concert tour of *The Music of Andrew Lloyd Webber*. However, the couple planned to continue working together after their divorce, despite

Lloyd Webber's early marriage in London to Madeleine Gurdon.

Lloyd Webber went on to produce *Sunset Boulevard*, in London, 1993, and in Los Angeles and on Broadway, both in 1994. Besides *The Likes of Us* (lyrics by Rice), his other unproduced plays include *Come Back Richard*, *Your Country Needs You* (with Rice), and *Cricket*.

In 2000 Lloyd Webber bought Stoll Moss, one of Britain's top theater companies, for about 85 million pounds (\$139.4 million), which made him one of London's biggest theater owners.

For More Information

Citron, Stephen. *Sondheim and Lloyd-Webber: The New Musical*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2001.

McKnight, Gerald. *Andrew Lloyd Webber*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1984.

Walsh, Michael. *Andrew Lloyd Webber: His Life and Works: A Critical Biography*. New York: Abrams, 1997.

ALAIN LOCKE

Born: September 13, 1886

Philadelphia, Pennsylvania

Died: June 9, 1954

New York, New York

African American educator and editor

Alain Locke, the distinguished African American intellectual of his generation, was the leading promoter and

LOCKE, ALAIN



Alain Locke.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

interpreter of the artistic and cultural contributions of African Americans to American life. As a professor of philosophy (the study of knowledge), his theory of “cultural pluralism” valued the uniqueness of different styles and values available within a democratic society.

Locke’s childhood

Alain LeRoy Locke was born on September 13, 1886, in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, into a well-known family. Alain’s father, Pliny Locke, had obtained a degree in law from Howard University, and then became a mail clerk in Philadelphia. Mary Hawkins, Alain’s mother, was a teacher.

Pliny Locke and Mary Hawkins were engaged for sixteen years, not marrying until they were middle aged. Alain, their only child, was brought up in a cultured home environment. When Alain was just six years old his father died, and his mother supported her son through teaching. Alain attended the Ethical Culture School, which was a school with modern ideas about education, teaching moral principles and human values. Young Alain became ill with rheumatic fever early in his childhood. The disease permanently damaged his heart and restricted his physical activities. He dealt with his weak physical condition by spending time reading books and learning to play the piano and violin.

Locke attended Central High School, graduating second in the class of 1902, and then studied at the Philadelphia School of Pedagogy, where he was first in his class. He attended Harvard University and completed Harvard’s four-year program in three years, graduating magna cum laude (second in his class) in 1907, being elected to Phi Beta Kappa (an honor society made up of high-ranking American college and graduate students in the subject of liberal arts and sciences), and winning the school’s most distinguished award, the Bowdoin Prize, for an essay in English. It was a remarkable achievement for anyone, especially an African American during this highly segregated (separated because of race) era.

Locke was named a Rhodes Scholar (a person who receives a scholarship to Oxford University for two to three years), the first African American chosen for this award, and sailed to England in 1907 to attend Oxford University. In 1910 he received a bachelor’s degree in literature. From Oxford he moved

to Germany for advanced work in philosophy at the University of Berlin from 1910 to 1911. This time in Europe helped to intensify his interest in modern art, music and literature.

Became an educator

In September 1912, Locke was appointed assistant professor of English at Howard University, an African American college, in Washington, D.C. Frustrated, because Howard's Board of Trustees would not approve courses on comparative race relations, Locke turned his attention back to philosophy. In 1916, he received a one-year appointment as an Austin Teaching Fellow at Harvard. Two years later he received his doctorate degree and returned to Howard as a full professor of philosophy. He would head this department until his retirement in 1953.

During these years Locke was a major contributor to *Opportunity: Journal of Negro Life and Survey Graphic*. He edited a special issue of the latter publication devoted to the Harlem Renaissance, the flourishing of African American art, literature, and music in New York City during the 1920s and 1930s. Expanding it into a book and shifting the focus from Harlem to overall African American cultural life, Locke authored *The New Negro: An Interpretation* in 1925. It was an outstanding collection of the leading African American fiction, poetry, drama, and essays written by himself and others describing the changing state of race relations in the United States.

Locke became the leading authority on modern African American culture and used his position to promote the careers of young artists. He encouraged them to seek out sub-

jects in African American life and to set high artistic standards for themselves.

Locke's cultural influence

Locke served as secretary and editor of the newly established *Associates in Negro Folk Education*. Between 1936 and 1942 this organization published nine "Bronze Booklets" written by leading African American scholars. Locke wrote two of these, *Negro Art: Past and Present* and *The Negro and His Music*, and edited a third, *The Negro in Art: A Pictorial Record of the Negro Artist and of the Negro Theme in Art*. The latter reemphasized his belief that African American artists should look to the works of their African ancestors for subject matter and styles to apply to modern painting and sculpture.

Locke continued his work in philosophy, actively promoting his theory of cultural pluralism (a society made up of several different cultures and their beliefs). This interest led to his pioneering 1942 social science anthology, coedited with Bernhard Stern, *When Peoples Meet: A Study in Race and Culture Contacts*, an examination of dominant and minority populations in various countries around the world.

In demand as a visiting scholar

By the middle of the twentieth century, Locke was a member of the editorial board of the *American Scholar* and, in 1945, the first African American elected president of the American Association for Adult Education, a mainly white national organization.

During the 1945 and 1946 academic year he served as visiting professor of philosophy at the University of Wisconsin. The following

year he was a visiting professor at the New School for Social Research in what had become his second home for many years, New York City, and held a similar appointment the next year at the City College of New York (CCNY).

After 1948 Locke began teaching at both CCNY and Howard. His final achievement was to secure a Phi Beta Kappa chapter at Howard in 1953, a major milestone in the history of African American education.

Locke retired later that year and was awarded an honorary doctorate (a degree given without the usual proceedings) by Howard. He moved permanently to New York City and continued working on his magnum opus (highest achievement), *The Negro in American Culture*, a definitive study of the contribution of African Americans to American society. Unfortunately his recurrent heart problems returned in the spring of 1954, causing his death on June 9, 1954, in New York City. His unfinished manuscript was completed by Margaret Just Butcher.

For More Information

"Alain Locke: Scholar and Educator." In *Black Americans of Achievement Series 2*. New York: Chelsea House, 2002.

Butcher, Margaret J. *The Negro in American Culture: Based on Materials Left by Alain Locke*. New York: Knopf, 1956.

Linnemann, Russell J. *Alain Locke: Reflections on a Modern Renaissance Man*. Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1982.

Stewart, Jeffrey C, ed. *The Critical Temper of Alain Locke*. New York: Garland, 1983.

Washington, Johnny. *Alain Locke and Philosophy: A Quest for Cultural Pluralism*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1986.

JOHN LOCKE

Born: August 29, 1632

Wrighton, England

Died: October 28, 1704

Oates, England

English philosopher and political theorist

The English philosopher and political theorist (a person who forms an explanation based upon studying and observing politics and politicians) John Locke began the empiricist tradition (the source of knowledge comes from experience and the senses) and thus started the greatest age of British philosophy (the study of knowledge). He attempted to center philosophy based on the study of importance and capabilities of the human mind.

Early years and school

John Locke was born on August 29, 1632, in Wrington, in Somerset, England, to Agnes Keene and John Locke, the elder. His mother died during his infancy, and Locke and his only brother, Thomas, were raised by their father, who was an attorney in the small town of Pensford near Bristol, England. John was tutored at home because of his delicate health and the outbreak of civil war in 1642. When he was fourteen, he entered Westminster School, where he remained for six years. He then went to Christ Church, Oxford. In 1658 he was elected a senior student at his college. As such he taught Greek and moral philosophy. In order to continue his work at the school he would have to have been ordained (officially consecrated) a minister. Instead he

changed to another study, medicine, and eventually received a license to practice. During the same period Locke met Robert Boyle (1627–1691), the distinguished scientist and one of the founders of the Royal Society, and, under Boyle's direction, took up study of natural science. Finally, in 1668, Locke was made a member of the Royal Society.

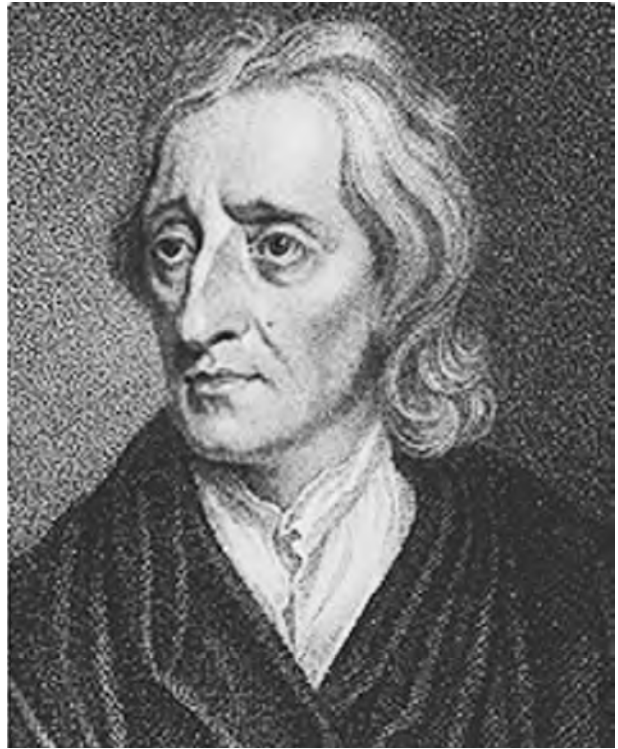
Political affairs

In 1665 Locke traveled to Europe as secretary to the English ambassador to the Brandenburg court. Upon his return to England he happened to medically treat Lord Ashley, Earl of Shaftesbury, and later lord chancellor of England. Their friendship and lifelong association drew Locke into political affairs. He attended Shaftesbury as physician and adviser, and Locke drafted *The Fundamental Constitutions of Carolina* and served as secretary to the Board of Trade. In 1676 Locke went to France for his health. An inheritance from his father made him financially independent, and he remained in Montpellier for three years.

Locke rejoined Shaftesbury's service, and when Lord Ashley fled to Holland, he followed. He remained in exile from 1683 to 1689. Most of his important writings were composed during this period. After the Glorious Revolution of 1688 (a revolution that overthrew King James II [1633–1701]) Locke returned to England and later served as a commissioner of trade until 1700. He spent his retirement at Oates, in Essex, and died there on October 28, 1704.

Major works

None of Locke's major writings were published until he was nearly sixty. In 1690



John Locke.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

he brought out his major works: *Two Treatises* and the *Essay Concerning Human Understanding*. The four books of the *Essay* were the result of twenty years of intellectual work. The aim of this work was “to inquire into the origin, certainty, and extent of human knowledge, together with the grounds of belief, opinion, and assent.”

The procedure used was what Locke called the “historical, plain method,” which consists of observations of external (outside of a person's body) sensations and the internal (within a person's mind) processes of thinking. This psychological definition of experience as sensation and reflection shifted

the focus of philosophy from an analysis of reality to an exploration of the mind. The new perspective was Locke's major contribution, and it dominated European thought for at least two centuries.

Theory of knowledge

Locke devoted the first two books of the *Essay* to developing a seemingly simple empirical theory of knowledge. Knowledge begins in the external and internal sources of sensation (use of the five senses) and careful thinking. The conclusion drawn in the *Essay* was that knowledge is relational; that is, it consists in the understanding "of the agreement or disagreement among ideas."

The third book of the *Essay* deals with words, and it was a pioneering contribution to the philosophy of language. Locke was a consistent nominalist in that for him language was a custom that was subject to judgement and words were things which "stand for nothing but the ideas in the mind of the man that has them."

The final section of the *Essay* deals with the sections of knowledge. In this view, with the exception of the self and God, all knowledge of existing things is dependent upon sensation. The shortage of real knowledge is fulfilled to some extent by human judgment, which assumes things to be true without actually being aware of the connections. And, according to Locke's commonsense attitude, the major limitations placed upon knowledge reflect that man's mental capacity is appropriate for his character and situation.

For More Information

Cope, Kevin Lee. *John Locke Revisited*. New York: Twayne, 1999.

Cranston, Maurice. *John Locke: A Biography*. London: Longmans, 1957.

Romanell, Patrick. *John Locke and Medicine: A New Key to Locke*. Buffalo, NY: Prometheus Books, 1984.

JACK LONDON

Born: January 12, 1876

San Francisco, California

Died: November 22, 1916

Glen Ellen, California

American author

American author and supporter of socialism (a system of social organization in which the government owns and manages the distribution and production of goods) Jack London wrote popular adventure stories and social tracts (pamphlets) based on unusual personal experiences. At their best, his works are powerful and moving stories.

Early life

Jack London was born John Griffith Chaney in San Francisco, California, in 1876, the son of Flora Wellman and Henry Chaney. Jack's parents were not married at the time of his birth. Flora married a widower, John London, the same year that her son was born. John was a loving stepfather, but undertook several business and agricultural enterprises that turned out to be unsuccessful. The family, which included Eliza and Ida, daughters of John London's first marriage, moved often.

Because the economic circumstances of Jack's family steadily declined, he held several jobs at the early age of ten. He delivered papers, worked on an ice wagon, and set up pins in a bowling alley, all while going to school. Almost all of the money he earned was turned over to his parents. At the age of thirteen he left school and continued to do odd jobs. He managed to buy a fourteen-foot skiff (small, flat-bottomed open boat) and frequently sailed out into the Oakland, California, bay, often bringing library books with him.

When Jack was fifteen, John was injured in an accident. Jack went to work in a cannery full time to support his family. The work involved bending over machines that had no safety guards. Jack worked the longest hours he could, often eighteen or twenty hours at a stretch. The pay was ten cents an hour.

Jack escaped from that job by becoming an oyster bed pirate in the San Francisco Bay oyster beds. At sixteen he joined the California Fish Patrol at Benecia. Just after he turned seventeen he signed aboard a ship, the *Sophia Sutherland*, as an able-bodied seaman and headed to the Pacific Northwest for a seal-hunting expedition. After returning from his sea voyage, Jack worked in a jute (fiber from certain tropical plants used to make rope) mill, and then a power plant.

Jack completed his high school education in a year and went to the University of California for a semester. He traveled to the Alaskan Klondike with the gold prospectors and, after returning to California, launched his writing career.

Survival of the fittest

London won national acclaim for his short stories about the brutal and vigorous



Jack London.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

life of the Alaskan Yukon, published as *The Son of the Wolf* (1900). Other writings in the same genre (type) followed. The best known is *The Call of the Wild* (1903), which describes how an Alaskan dog leaves civilization to join a wolf pack. *The Sea-Wolf* (1904) tells of the conversion of a civilized man to a simple way of living.

These books stress the primitive survival of the fittest. This stems from London's belief in the theories of evolution that Charles Darwin (1809–1892) wrote about. (Evolution is the theory that groups of organisms may change or develop over a long period of time.) Other tales that developed similar

themes are *White Fang* (1906), *The Strength of the Strong* (1911), *Smoke Bellew* (1912), and *The Abysmal Brute* (1913).

Influence of socialism

London was also influenced by the socialistic theories of Karl Marx (1818–1883). An early book, *The People of the Abyss* (1903), described slum conditions in London, England. Other books of the same type included *The War of the Classes* (1905), *The Iron Heel* (1907), *The Valley of the Moon* (1913), and *The Human Drift* (1917).

Two of London's best books are semi-autobiographical (based on his own experiences)—*Martin Eden* (1909) and *John Barleycorn* (1913). The former recounts his struggles as a writer; the latter tells about his long-lasting fight against alcoholism.

London's life and work hold many contradictions. He believed in socialism, and he believed in Darwin's idea of survival of the fittest. He felt his own success illustrated the concept of the superman who stands above the ordinary person and triumphs by force of will. Although his work is often regarded as adventure stories for young people, it also deals with the adult theme of environmental determinism, or the idea that the world shapes us in ways we are powerless to resist.

For More Information

Bains, Rae. *Jack London—A Life of Adventure*. Mahwah, NJ: Troll Associates, 1992.

Dyer, Daniel. *Jack London: A Biography*. New York: Scholastic Press, 1997.

Kershaw, Alex. *Jack London: A Life*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1998.

London, Jack. *John Barleycorn*. New York: Century, 1913. Reprint, New York: Modern Library, 2001.

Sinclair, Andrew. *Jack: A Biography of Jack London*. New York: Harper and Row, 1977.

HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW

Born: February 27, 1807

Portland, Maine

Died: March 24, 1882

Cambridge, Massachusetts

American poet

The sentimental (appealing to the emotions) poems of the American writer Henry Wadsworth Longfellow made him an extremely popular author at home and in other countries in the nineteenth century.

Early life

Henry Wadsworth Longfellow was born in Portland, Maine, on February 27, 1807, into an established New England family. As the son of a prominent lawyer, Henry was expected to have a similar profession as an adult. He attended Portland Academy and then Bowdoin College, in Maine, graduating in 1825. He was an excellent student whose skill in learning foreign languages led the trustees (persons appointed to administer the affairs of an institution) at Bowdoin (of which his father was one) to offer the young graduate a professorship of modern languages. He

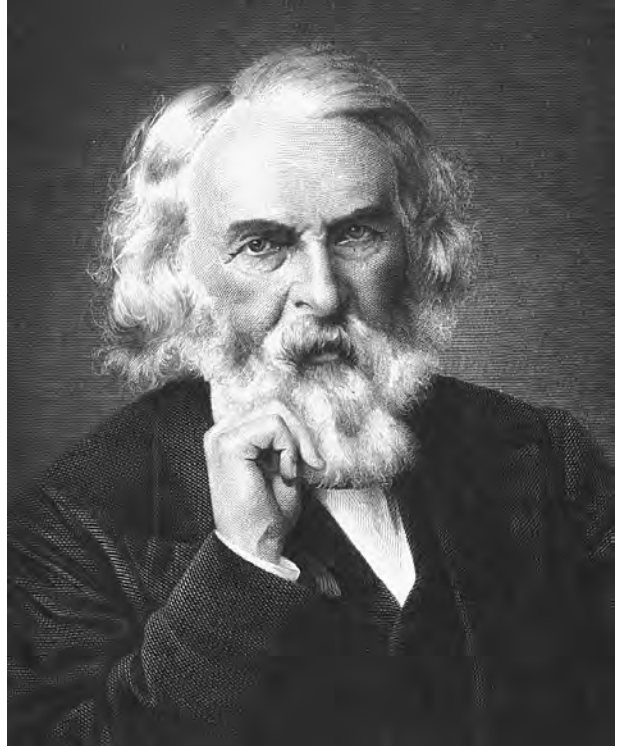
prepared himself further with study abroad (in Europe), at his own expense, before undertaking his duties. When he started his new position he had to create his own textbooks, because the study of modern languages was such a new field.

Young writer

During Longfellow's three years in Europe his lifelong harmony with Old World (European) civilization was firmly established. He returned home in 1829 and two years later married Mary Storer Potter. In 1833 he published *Outre-Mer: A Pilgrimage beyond the Sea*, a collection of picturesque (forming a pleasing picture) travel essays modeled after Washington Irving's (1783–1859) *Sketch Book*.

In 1834 Longfellow accepted a professorship at Harvard University in Cambridge, Massachusetts. He did not start his new job until 1837, after he had completed a tour of European and Scandinavian (northern European) countries. During this trip his wife died. While staying at Heidelberg, Germany, he came under the spell of the works of the German romantic poet Novalis (1772–1801). Novalis's moody, mystical (pertaining to a spiritual event) nocturnalism (pertaining to the night) struck a responsive chord in the grieving Longfellow.

In 1839 Longfellow published the sentimental prose romance *Hyperion* and his first volume of poetry, *Voices of the Night*. In *Hyperion* he rather indiscreetly (lacking sound judgment) told the story of his courtship of Frances Appleton, whom he had met in Europe soon after his wife's death. They were married in 1843. Her father, a wealthy Boston, Massachusetts, merchant, gave them



Henry Wadsworth Longfellow.

Craigie House as a wedding present. This house became a famous visiting place for Longfellow's admirers. It is now called Longfellow House and is a national historic site. It holds most of the original furnishings from Longfellow's time, including his personal library of over ten thousand books.

Early poetry

Longfellow's poem "Hymn to the Night," in *Voices of the Night*, conveys the poet's debt to Novalis and his romantic kinship with the "calm, majestic presence of the Night." However, "A Psalm of Life," one of the best-known poems from this first volume, reflects the influence of the famed German poet Johann

Wolfgang von Goethe (1749–1832). His forceful philosophy suggested to Longfellow the direction of his hymn to action: “Life is real! Life is earnest! / Be not like dumb, driven cattle! / Be a hero in the strife.” *Voices of the Night* was well received, and within a few years forty-three thousand copies had been sold. Longfellow’s audience as a popular writer was assured.

Longfellow’s next volume, *Ballads and Other Poems* (1842), contained two strong narrative poems, “The Wreck of the Hesperus” and “The Skeleton in Armor,” as well as the sentimental verses “Maidenhood” and “The Rainy Day” (“Into each life some rain must fall, / Some days must be dark and dreary”) and the moralizing (explaining in the sense of right and wrong) poem “The Village Blacksmith.”

After a trip to Europe in 1842 Longfellow published *Poems on Slavery* (1842) and *The Spanish Student: A Play in Three Acts* (1843). In 1845 two volumes of poetry appeared: the anthology (a series of chosen literary pieces) *The Waif*, to which Longfellow contributed the poem “The Day Is Done”; and *The Belfry of Bruges and Other Poems*. Several poems in this second collection reflect Longfellow’s deep attachment to the traditions of European culture. In addition, this volume contained the popular “The Old Clock on the Stairs,” “The Arrow and the Song,” “The Arsenal at Springfield,” “The Bridge,” and one of his best sonnets (traditional, fourteen-line poems), “Mezzo Cammin.”

Epic poems

Longfellow wrote several epic poems. An epic poem is a long poem that tells a story, typically about a hero, and centers on uncommon achievements and events. He

achieved a national reputation with the publication of *Evangeline* (1847), a highly sentimental narrative poem on the expulsion (driving out) of the French from Acadia. He wrote *Evangeline* in dactylic hexameters. Dactyls are poetic feet of three syllables, with the first syllable long or accented and the others short or unaccented. Hexameters are verses having six poetic feet. The book was enthusiastically received.

Longfellow next released the unimaginative romantic novel *Kavanaugh* (1849) and *By the Seaside and the Fireside* (1850), which contained the very popular nationalistic (designed to arouse pride in one’s country) poem “The Building of the Ship”: “Thou, too, sail on, O Ship of State! / Sail on, O UNION, strong and great!”

In 1854 Longfellow resigned his Harvard professorship to devote himself to his writing career. A year later he published *The Song of Hiawatha*, a narrative epic poem on the Native American. For this work Longfellow drew on Henry Schoolcraft’s books on Native Americans. He wrote in trochees or poetic feet of two syllables, the first long or accented and the second short or unaccented. In short order, he repeated the success of *Hiawatha* with *The Courtship of Miles Standish* (1858).

Major projects in later years

Following the tragic death of Longfellow’s second wife in a fire in their home in 1861, he busied himself with the *Tales of a Wayside Inn* (1863), in which various speakers, sitting around a fireplace, narrate stories. Other tales appeared in 1872 and 1873. Longfellow also translated poetry from eighteen languages. His most significant transla-

tion, published in 1867, was of a long poem by the medieval writer Dante Alighieri (1265–1321) called the *Divine Comedy*.

In the last phase of Longfellow's long career, he worked on another major project, *The Christus: A Mystery*. Completed in 1872, this work was concerned with "various aspects of Christendom in the Apostolic, Middle, and Modern Ages." The work came in three parts. An earlier work, *The Golden Legend* (1851), formed part II; part III, *The New England Tragedies* (1868), dealt with Puritan (a religious group in New England that stressed a strict moral code) themes; and, finally, part I, *The Divine Tragedy* (1871), concerned the life of Jesus Christ.

Several more volumes of Longfellow's verse were issued before his death on March 24, 1882, in Cambridge, Massachusetts. After his death, he became the first American whose bust (sculpture of one's head) was placed in the Poet's Corner in Westminster Abbey, London, England.

To the modern reader, Longfellow's sentimental and optimistic poetry often sounds old-fashioned. He used his wide knowledge of the literature of other countries as a source for both the form and content of many of his poems. Several of his poems are set in other countries including Italy, Spain, France, and Norway. It should be remembered that Longfellow wrote for the common man. In his elegant and clear style he presented popular American values, such as the family circle and heroism.

For More Information

Arvin, Newton. *Longfellow: His Life and Work*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1963.

Carpenter, George Rice. *Henry Wadsworth Longfellow*. Boston: Small, Maynard, 1901. Reprint, Philadelphia: R. West, 1978.

Lukes, Bonnie L. *Henry Wadsworth Longfellow: America's Beloved Poet*. Greensboro, NC: Morgan Reynolds, 1998.

Thompson, Lawrance. *Young Longfellow, 1807–1843*. New York: Macmillan, 1938.

JOE LOUIS

Born: May 13, 1914

Lexington, Alabama

Died: April 12, 1981

Las Vegas, Nevada

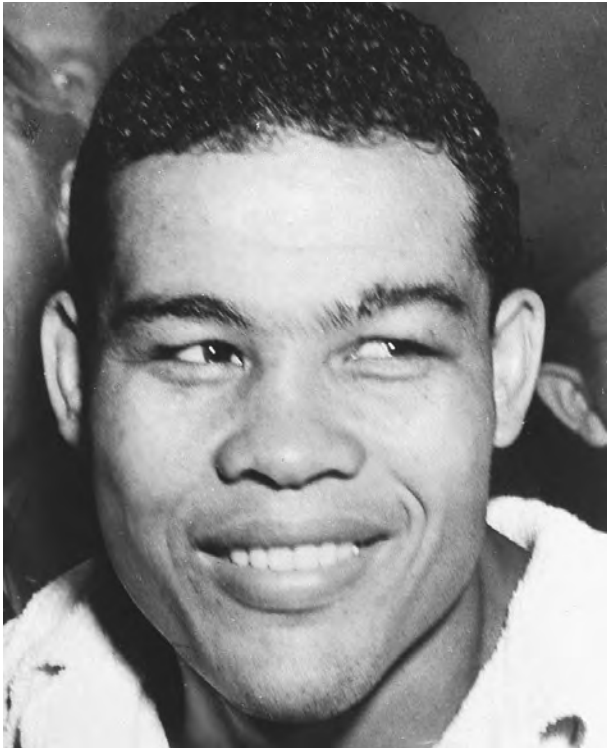
African American boxer

African American boxer Joe Louis was world heavyweight champion from 1937 to 1948. He defended his title twenty times in four years.

Early years

Joseph Louis Barrow, born on May 13, 1914, was the seventh of eight children of Munroe Barrow and Lily Reese. His father was an Alabama sharecropper and died when Joe was four. His mother took in washing to support her family. Joe was close to his large family, particularly to his mother, from whom he inherited a deep religious sentiment. His mother married Patrick Brooks, with children of his own, when Joe was seven, and the family moved to Detroit, Michigan, in 1926.

LOUIS



Joe Louis.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

After Brooks lost his job, Joe and his brothers shined shoes, ran errands, and sold newspapers before and after school to help out the family. Joe also worked as an assistant to an ice-wagon driver. He later said that carrying heavy ice helped him to develop his big shoulder muscles.

As a teenager, Joe was the best boxer of his group. At nineteen he won the National Light Heavyweight Amateur Crown of the Golden Gloves in 1933.

Louis received his ring name from one of his managers, John Roxborough, who found the name Joe Louis Barrow too long. Jack Blackburn, a very knowledgeable boxing

man, was Louis's trainer. He taught Louis how to punch and worked with him to develop his body coordination.

Early matches

Before Louis became champion, he was beaten once, by Max Schmeling in 1936. The following year he defeated Jim Braddock for the championship. In 1938 Louis met Schmeling again and knocked him out in the first two minutes of the first round. Louis fought boxers including Billy Conn, Tony Galento, Rocky Marciano (1923–1969), and “Jersey Joe” Walcott (1914–1994). He won nineteen other title fights.

During World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers: Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies: England, France, the United States, and the Soviet Union) Louis was drafted, served faithfully, and fought two bouts for army and navy relief.

The curse of many victories in a short period of time was the accumulation of a heavy tax burden. For example, Louis won \$349,228 for his victory over Schmeling and \$591,117 for beating Conn. In his entire ring career he earned \$4,677,992. But his federal income taxes were \$1,199,000. When penalties were assessed, taxes became astronomical.

Business ventures

Another source of trouble for Louis was his partnership in a public relations firm. In the early 1960s this firm entered into a contract with Cuba for \$250,000 to promote tourism. Although this was not illegal, it was considered in poor taste to deal with a country with whom the United States did not maintain diplomatic relations.

Louis's other business ventures included the Joe Louis Food Franchise, a chain of food shops he opened in 1969 with his former ring rival Billy Conn. The former champ also served as a celebrity greeter at the Caesar's Palace Casino in Las Vegas, Nevada.

Final years

Unfortunately, drugs took a toll on the once indomitable (not able to be beaten) champion in his final years. In 1969, he was hospitalized after collapsing on a New York City street. While the incident was at first credited to "physical breakdown," Louis later admitted to cocaine use and fears of a plot against his life. The following year, Louis spent five months in the hospital suffering from paranoid delusions (irrational anxiety and fear toward others). Strokes and heart ailments caused his condition to worsen. He had surgery to correct an aortic aneurysm (abnormal widening of a blood vessel) in 1977 and was thereafter confined to a wheelchair.

Despite failing health, Louis still found time to attend major boxing events. On April 12, 1981, he sat ringside at the Larry Holmes and Trevor Berbick heavyweight championship bout at Caesar's Palace. Hours after the fight, Louis went into cardiac arrest (a heart failure) and died at the age of sixty-six.

In 1994, the bronzed boxing glove that Louis used to defeat Max Schmeling was donated to the city of Detroit by the Michigan Jewish Sports Hall of Fame. Dubbed "The Glove That Floored Nazi Germany," it was enshrined in a plexiglass case at the city's Cobo Center, a monument to Louis's enduring legacy.

For More Information

Bak, Richard. *Joe Louis: The Great Black Hope*. Dallas: Taylor Publishers, 1996.

Barrow, Joe Louis, Jr., and Barbara Munder. *Joe Louis: 50 Years an American Hero*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1988.

Louis, Joe, with Edna and Art Rust, Jr. *Joe Louis, My Life*. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1978.

Mead, Chris. *Champion—Joe Louis, Black Hero in White America*. New York: Scribner, 1985.

GEORGE LUCAS

Born: May 14, 1944

Modesto, California

American director, screenwriter, and producer

American filmmaker George Lucas created some of the most profitable movies in history, including the *Star Wars* and *Indiana Jones* films. Lucas is also responsible for many new developments in filmmaking, especially involving special effects.

Early years

George Walton Lucas Jr. was born in Modesto, California, on May 14, 1944, the only son among George and Dorothy Lucas's four children. His father sold office supplies and equipment and owned a walnut farm. Lucas was not a good student; he enjoyed racing cars and owned a souped-up, high-powered Fiat (a brand of Italian automobile)

in high school. Shortly before graduating he was involved in a serious car accident, nearly dying from his injuries. After recovering from a three-month hospital stay, Lucas decided that he wanted to go to art school. His parents refused to pay for it, so he instead enrolled at Modesto Junior College to study social sciences.

Lucas became interested in photography and film and began making films with a small camera. While photographing a car race he met Haskell Wexler (1922–), a famous cinematographer (motion picture cameraman), who helped him get into the University of Southern California (USC) film school. Lucas produced eight student films, including *THX-1138: 4EB* (1965), in which he explored his vision of the future. After graduating Lucas worked as a cameraman (he filmed part of the famous 1968 Rolling Stones concert in Altamont, California, in which a man was stabbed to death) and as an editor for films produced by the United States Information Agency. While at this job he met Marcia Griffin, a film editor. They married in 1969 and adopted a child in 1981. The couple divorced in 1984, and Lucas later adopted two children on his own.

Early film career

In 1969 Lucas won a scholarship from Warner Brothers Studios, which allowed him on the set to watch the filming of *Finian's Rainbow*, which was being directed by Francis Ford Coppola (1939–). Lucas and Coppola became friends, and Lucas helped edit the film. Lucas also worked on Coppola's next film, *The Rain People*. Through Coppola's newly created film studio and production company, American Zoetrope, Lucas made

his first feature, *THX—1138*, based on the short film he made as a student.

In 1973 Lucas experienced his first real film success with *American Graffiti*, which focused on one summer night in 1962, following teenage boys and their cars. Lucas co-wrote the script and directed it, with Coppola serving as a co-producer. *American Graffiti* was filmed in less than a month for a little over \$750,000. Although Universal, the studio that had paid for the production, did not believe *American Graffiti* would make a profit, by several months after its release it had become the surprise hit of the year. It was one of the most profitable films of the 1970s and was nominated (put forward for consideration) for five Academy Awards.

Star Wars

Lucas next began working on the script for an original space story, *Star Wars*. He planned the story as a series of three related trilogies (series of three works); *Star Wars* was the first episode of the middle trilogy. The film included elements of westerns, soap operas, and other types of films as well. The Lucas-directed *Star Wars* was released in May 1977. It received very positive reviews. His very personal vision also appealed to a mass audience. The film smashed all box office records, and many people went to see it more than once.

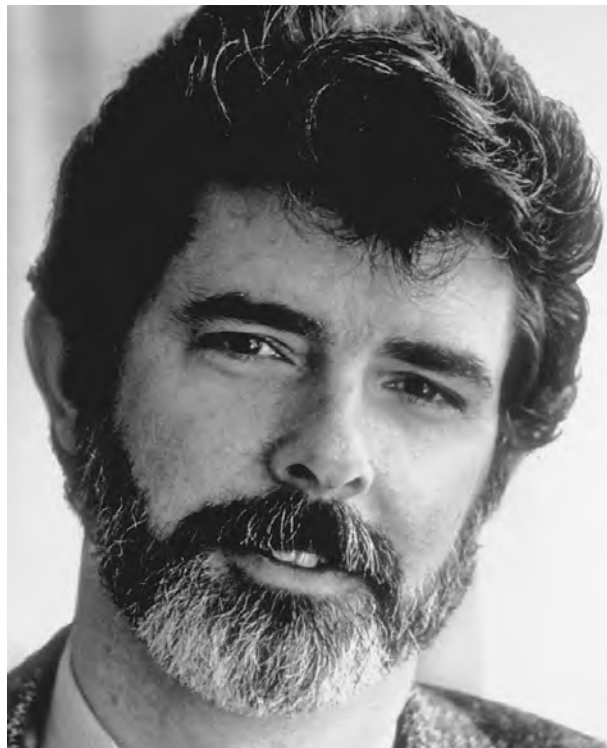
Star Wars earned \$400 million worldwide in its first release. The experience of making the film, though, left Lucas exhausted, and he did not direct another film for twenty years. He had made a wise decision to turn down a director's fee (money that a director receives for making a film) for his work on the film in exchange for rights to merchandising (the ability to make money

from products, such as toys, related to the movie). He also retained the rights to the *Star Wars* sequels (follow-up films). Lucas made \$500 million between 1977 and 1980 from the sale of *Star Wars* merchandise, including books, toys, kits, and consumer items. He managed the merchandising through his company, LucasFilm Ltd., which was established in 1979. Lucas set up other companies to manage his film empire.

In 1980 the second film in Lucas's trilogy, *The Empire Strikes Back*, was released. Lucas was the executive producer (one who pays for the release of a movie) and wrote the story on which the script was based. Although some criticized the story, many noted that the special effects were better. Lucas returned to a more active role in 1983's *The Return of the Jedi*. He co-wrote the script and again served as executive producer. While the special effects were excellent, critics thought they took attention away from the characters and the story. Still, all three films together brought in \$1 billion. Sales of official merchandise brought in over \$3 billion.

Other successful projects

At the time Lucas began developing *Star Wars*, he had an idea for another series of films. The *Indiana Jones* series was developed as a tribute to adventure films of the 1940s. Lucas wrote the story and served as producer for the first *Indiana Jones* movie, entitled *Raiders of the Lost Ark*. His story again pleased both critics and audiences. Lucas was less involved in the next two *Indiana Jones* movies, *Indiana Jones and the Temple of Doom* and *Indiana Jones and the Last Crusade*. In 1992 he produced a television series, *The Young Indiana Jones Chronicles*, which lasted



George Lucas.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

for only one season. Throughout the 1980s and most of the 1990s Lucas worked mainly as a producer. Movies such as *Howard the Duck* (1986) and *Radioland Murders* (1994) were failures; others, such as *Tucker: The Man and His Dream* (1988) and *Willow* (1988), were more successful.

Lucas, with profits from his films and LucasFilm, Ltd., founded Skywalker Ranch, a production house (a place where a movie is edited for theatrical release) in California. Lucas based all of his companies there; one in particular changed the face of the film industry. Originally created to handle the special effects for *Star Wars*, Industrial Light and

Magic (ILM) improved film technology (applied science) through research and development. ILM branched out to do special effects for other movies, such as *Star Trek* and *E.T.: The Extra-Terrestrial*. ILM was also responsible for THX, an improved sound system found in many movie theaters.

Vision continues

Though many doubted the other two *Star Wars* trilogies would ever be made, in 1994 Lucas began writing the scripts for the first trilogy. To prepare audiences, “special edition” versions of the original *Star Wars* trilogy were released in theaters beginning in 1997. Using effects developed by his companies, Lucas fixed some of the errors in the first films and included new scenes, adding four and a half minutes to *Star Wars*.

In May 1999 Lucas released *The Phantom Menace*, the first installment of the first *Star Wars* trilogy. Lucas directed the film and wrote the script. In December 2001 Lucas donated several items used in the *Star Wars* films to the online auction firm eBay to raise money for relatives of the victims of the September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks on the United States. In 2002 the next *Star Wars* film, *Attack of the Clones*, was released.

For More Information

- Champlin, Charles. *George Lucas: The Creative Impulse*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1992.
- Rau, Dana Meachen, and Christopher Rau. *George Lucas: Creator of Star Wars*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1999.
- Riehecky, Janet. *George Lucas: An Unauthorized Biography*. Chicago: Heinemann Library, 2001.

White, Dana. *George Lucas*. Minneapolis: Lerner Publications, 2000.

Woog, Adam. *George Lucas*. San Diego: Lucent Books, 2000.

PATRICE LUMUMBA

Born: July 2, 1925

Kasai, Congo

Died: January 18, 1961

Katanga, Congo

Congolese prime minister

Patrice Lumumba was the first prime minister of the Republic of the Congo. He was a leading figure in the Congo as that country established its independence from Belgium, which had controlled the Congo since the late nineteenth century. Lumumba's murder in 1961 has made him a symbol of struggle for champions of African nations' attempts to unite and to break free of the influence of the European powers that once colonized (held territory in) the continent.

Child of a village

Patrice Emery Lumumba was born on July 2, 1925, in the tiny village of Onalua in northeastern Kasai, a Congolese province (political unit or region). At the time of his birth, the Congo was still a colony (a territory governed by a foreign power) of Belgium. As a child, Lumumba attended Protestant and then Catholic schools run by white missionaries—that is, by people sent to do religious

or charitable work on behalf of their church. At the mission schools, Lumumba proved to be a fine student, even though the mud-brick house he lived in had no electricity and he could not study after dark. In addition, the mission schools were poorly equipped, with few textbooks or basic school supplies.

Nevertheless, Lumumba's teachers spotted his quick intelligence and loaned him their own books, encouraging him to advance. Some teachers also found that his intelligence caused them problems, feeling he asked too many troublesome questions.

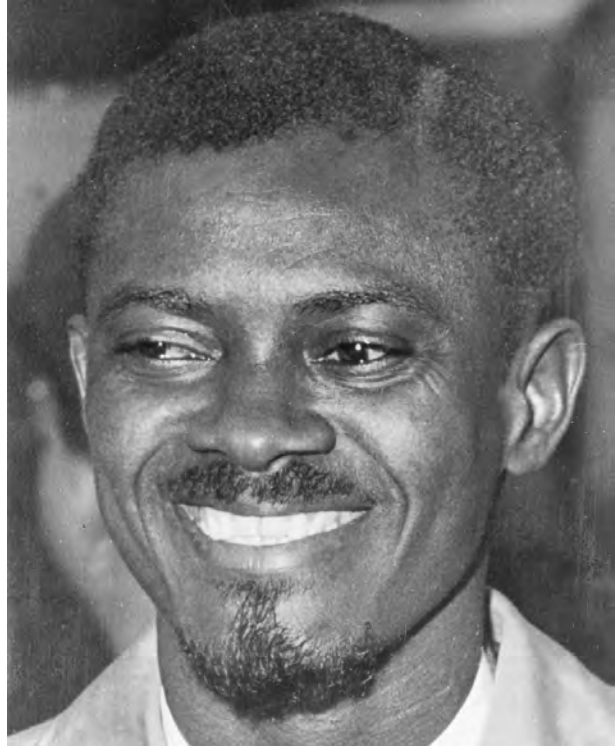
Political leader

As a young man, Lumumba found a job as a postal clerk in the city of Stanleyville (now called Kisangani) in 1954. There he rapidly became a community leader and organized a postal workers' labor union. His activities were encouraged by local members of the Belgian Liberal political party.

In 1957, having been appointed to the position of sales director for a brewery, Lumumba left Stanleyville for the Congo's capital, Léopoldville (now called Kinshasa). There he soon became involved in an important political project. He helped to found the Movement National Congolais (MNC) political party, which aimed to represent all Congolese, rather than representing only the interests of a particular tribe or region. Lumumba's exciting personality and public speaking talents soon won him prominence in this party.

National figure

In 1959 the Belgian authorities announced a new plan for the Congo. They proposed



Patrice Lumumba.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

to hold local elections that would lead within five years to full Congolese independence. During that year, Lumumba gained recognition as the only truly national figure on the Congo political scene. His persuasive, attractive personality dominated the political meeting called the Luluabourg Congress in April 1959, in which all the political groups who favored a unitary form of government for the Congo—one that would unite tribes and regions into one nation—attempted to establish a common front. However, Lumumba's growing reputation and seemingly radical views caused hostility among other MNC leaders. The result of this disagreement was a

split in the party in July 1959. Most of the party's original founders supported Albert Kalonji as their representative, while Lumumba held onto the loyalty of most other party members.

Lumumba was briefly imprisoned in November 1959 on charges of encouraging the outbreak of riots in Stanleyville, but he was set free in time to attend the Round Table Conference in Brussels, Belgium. The Belgian government had called for this conference as a forum in which all Congolese political parties could discuss plans for their country's future. At the conference, Lumumba's dramatic presence stole the show from other Congolese leaders. His efforts throughout this period were directed more firmly than those of any other Congolese politician toward the organization of a nationwide movement for an independent Congo.

Head of government

In the May 1960 general elections, Lumumba and his allies won 41 of 137 seats in the National Assembly (the Congo's legislature). They also gained important positions in four of six provincial governments. As leader of the largest single party, Lumumba was somewhat reluctantly selected by the Belgians to become the Congo's first prime minister (and minister of defense) a week before independence. Lumumba's longtime political rival Joseph Kasavubu became president of the republic with Lumumba's apparent support.

During his brief time in office, Lumumba had to face an unusually high number of sudden emergencies. These included the revolt of the army and the secession (formal withdrawal from the Congo) of the provinces of Katanga and Southern Kasai, which had been

encouraged by Belgian interests and military forces. Lumumba turned to the United Nations (UN) for support, only to discover that it had no intention of accepting his definition of what was best for the Congo. It insisted on opposing the use of any force to alter the situation. Desperate for help, Lumumba asked for support from the Soviet Union to begin military action against the secessionist governments of Southern Kasai and Katanga. He was stopped in this attempt when President Kasavubu dismissed him from office in September 1960.

The National Assembly put Lumumba back in power as prime minister, but a small group from the army, led by Colonel Mobutu, took over the government instead. Lumumba was put under unofficial house arrest (confinement in one's home). Meanwhile, his political associates had gone to Stanleyville to organize a rival government. Lumumba slipped out of the capital and tried to make his way toward Stanleyville, but he was arrested by an army patrol and held prisoner in a military camp at Thysville.

Lumumba's death and legacy

Even after his imprisonment, Lumumba's reputation and the strength of his followers remained a threat to the unstable new rulers of the Congo. This was demonstrated when Lumumba nearly managed the incredible feat of persuading his military jailers to help him retake power. This incident only strengthened the conviction of authorities in the capital to get rid of Lumumba. They formed a plan to transfer him to either one of the secessionist states of Southern Kasai or Katanga (where he was sure to be executed) as a possible way of reconciling with these two breakaway regions.

MARTIN LUTHER

On January 18, 1961, Lumumba was flown to Elisabethville, the capital of Katanga. There, despite the presence of UN troops, he was picked up by a small group led by Katanga's interior minister and included white mercenaries (professional soldiers hired by a foreign army). He was taken to a nearby house and murdered.

The Katanga government made clumsy attempts to cover up the murder, but the shock waves caused by the killing traveled around the world. They created enough international pressure to cause the UN Security Council to permit the use of force as a last resort by UN forces in the Congo. This decision caused events that led to the restoration of a civilian government in Léopoldville and to the eventual end of all movements by regions to secede from the Congo. In addition, Lumumba's tragic murder caused him to be hailed as a hero and symbol for various causes after his death. However, he is best remembered as a passionate believer in the power of African nations to shape their own destinies and free themselves from colonial influence.

For More Information

- Heinz, G., and H. Donnay. *Lumumba: The Last Fifty Days*. New York: Grove Press, 1970.
- Hoskyns, Catherine. *The Congo Since Independence, January 1960—December 1961*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1965.
- Kanza, Thomas R. *The Rise and Fall of Patrice Lumumba*. Boston: G. K. Hall, 1979.
- Witte, Ludo de. *The Assassination of Lumumba*. Edited by Ann Wright and Renee Fenby. New York: Verso, 2001.

Born: November 10, 1483

Saxony, Germany

Died: February 18, 1546

Saxony, Germany

German reformer

The German reformer (one who works to change outdated practices and beliefs) Martin Luther was the first and greatest figure in the sixteenth-century Reformation. An author of commentaries on Scripture (sacred writings), theology (the study of religion), and priestly abuses, a hymnologist (writer of hymns [sacred songs]), and a preacher, from his own time to the present he has been a symbol of Protestantism (group of Christian faiths that do not believe in the supremacy of the pope, but in the absolute authority of the Bible).

Family and education

Martin Luther was born at Eisleben in Saxony, Germany, on November 10, 1483, the son of Hans and Margaret Luther. Luther's parents were peasants, but his father had worked hard to raise the family's status, first as a miner and later as the owner of several small mines, to become a small-scale businessman. In 1490 Martin was sent to the Latin school at Mansfeld, in 1497 to Magdeburg, and in 1498 to Eisenach. His early education was typical of late-fifteenth-century practice. To a young man in Martin's situation, the law and the church offered the only chance for a successful career. He chose to become a lawyer to increase the Luther fam-

ily's success, which Hans had begun. Martin was enrolled at the University of Erfurt in 1501. He received a bachelor of arts degree in 1502 and a master of arts in 1505. In the same year he enrolled in the instructors of law, giving every sign of being a dutiful and, likely, a very successful, son.

Religious conversion

Between 1503 and 1505, however, Martin experienced a religious crisis that would take him from the study of law forever. A dangerous accident in 1503, the death of a friend a little later, and Martin's own personal religious development had by 1505 changed his focus. Then, on July 2, 1505, returning to Erfurt after visiting home, Martin was caught in a severe thunderstorm and flung to the ground in terror; at that moment he vowed to become a monk if he survived. This episode changed the course of Luther's life. Two weeks later, against his father's wishes and to the dismay of his friends, Martin Luther entered the Reformed Congregation of the Eremitical Order of St. Augustine at Erfurt.

Life as a monk at Erfurt was difficult. Luther made his vows in 1506 and was ordained (officially given a religious position in the church) a priest in 1507. No longer in disagreement with his father, he was then selected for advanced theological study at the University of Erfurt.

Luther at Wittenberg

In 1508 Luther was sent to the University of Wittenberg to lecture in arts. He was also preparing for his doctorate of theology while he taught. In 1510 Luther was sent to Rome, Italy, and in 1512 received his doctorate in theology. Then came the second significant

turn in Luther's career: he was appointed professor of theology at Wittenberg. He was to teach throughout the rest of his life.

In 1509 Luther published his lectures on Peter Lombard (1095–1160); in 1513–1515 those on the Psalms; in 1515–1516 on St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans; and in 1516–1518 on the epistles to the Galatians and Hebrews. Besides instruction and study, however, Luther had other duties. From 1514 he preached in the parish church; he was regent (head) of the monastery school; and in 1515 he became the supervisor of eleven other monasteries.

Righteousness of God

The doctrine of justification, taking shape in Luther's thought between 1515 and 1519, drew him further into theological thought as well as into certain positions of practical priestly life. The most famous of these is the controversy (causing opposing viewpoints) over indulgences. A person who committed a sin would buy an indulgence from the church to avoid punishment—especially punishment after death. In 1513 a great effort to distribute indulgences was proclaimed throughout Germany. In 1517 Luther posted the Ninety-Five Theses for an academic debate on indulgences on the door of the castle church at Wittenberg. This was the customary time and place to display such an article. They were given widespread fame and called to the attention of both theologians and the public.

News of Luther's theses spread, and in 1518 he was called before Cardinal Cajetan, the Roman Catholic representative at Augsburg, to deny his theses. Refusing to do so, Luther returned to Wittenberg, where, in the

next year, he agreed to a debate with the theologian Johann Eck (1486–1543). The debate soon became a struggle between Eck and Luther in which Luther was driven by his opponent to taking even more radical theological positions, thus laying himself open to the charge of heresy (believing in something that opposes what is formally taught by the Church). By 1521 Eck secured a papal bull (decree) condemning Luther, and Luther was summoned to the Imperial Diet at Worms (meeting of the Holy Roman Empire held at Worms, Germany) in 1521 to answer the charges against him.

Diet of Worms

Luther came face to face with the power of the Roman Catholic Church and empire at Worms in 1521. He was led to a room in which his writings were piled on a table and ordered to disclaim them. He replied that he could not do this. Luther left Worms and was taken, for his own safety, to the castle of Wartburg, where he spent some months in privacy, beginning his great translation of the Bible into German and writing numerous essays.

Return to Wittenberg

In 1522 Luther returned to Wittenberg and continued the writing that would fill the rest of his life. In 1520 he had written three of his most famous tracts (written piece of propaganda, or material written with the intent of convincing people of a certain belief): *To The Christian Nobility of the German Nation*; *On the Babylonian Captivity of the Church*; and *Of the Liberty of a Christian Man*.

In 1525 Luther married Katherine von Bora, a nun who had left her convent. From



Martin Luther.

*Courtesy of the New York Public Library
Picture Collection.*

that date until his death, Luther's family life became not only a model Christian home but a source of psychological support to him.

Luther's writings continued to flow steadily. Among the most important are the *Great Catechism* and the *Small Catechism* of 1529 and his collection of sermons and hymns, many of the latter, like *Ein Feste Burg*, still sung today.

Debates with Theologians

In 1524–1525 Luther entered into a discussion of free will with the great Erasmus

(1466–1536). Luther's *On the Will in Bondage* (1525) remained his final statement on the question. In 1528 he turned to the question of Christ's presence in the Eucharist (communion with God) in his *Confession concerning the Lord's Supper*.

In 1530 Luther supervised, although he did not entirely agree with, the writing of Philipp Melancthon's (1497–1560) *Augsburg Confession*, one of the foundations of later Protestant thought. From 1530 on Luther spent as much time arguing with other Reformation leaders on matters of theology as with his Catholic opponents.

In 1539 Luther wrote his *On Councils and Churches* and witnessed in the following years the failure of German attempts to heal the wounds of Christianity. In the 1540s Luther was stricken with disease a number of times, drawing great comfort from his family and from the devotional exercises that he had written for children. In 1546 he was called

from a sickbed to settle the disputes of two German noblemen. On the return trip he fell ill and died at Eisleben, the town of his birth, on February 18, 1546.

For More Information

Bainton, Roland H. *Here I Stand: A Life of Martin Luther*. New York: Abingdon-Cokesbury Press, 1950.

Booth, Edwin P. *Martin Luther: The Great Reformer*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1999.

Kolb, Robert. *Martin Luther As Prophet, Teacher, Hero*. Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Books, 1999.

Leplay, Michel. *Martin Luther*. Paris: Desclée de Brouwer, 1998.

Schwarz, Hans. *True Faith in the True God: An Introduction to Luther's Life and Thought*. Minneapolis: Augsburg, 1996.

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY



contents

Entries by Nationality xvii

Reader's Guide xxxi

Volume 1: A–Ba

Hank Aaron	1	Aeschylus	29
Ralph Abernathy	4	Spiro Agnew	31
Bella Abzug	7	Alvin Ailey	34
Chinua Achebe	10	Madeleine Albright	37
Abigail Adams	12	Louisa May Alcott	39
Ansel Adams	15	Alexander II	41
John Adams	17	Alexander the Great	43
Samuel Adams	20	Muhammad Ali	47
Joy Adamson	22	Woody Allen	49
Jane Addams	25	Isabel Allende	52
Alfred Adler	27	Julia Alvarez	54
		American Horse	57

Idi Amin	59	Lucille Ball	159
Hans Christian Andersen	62	David Baltimore	161
Carl David Anderson	64	Honoré de Balzac	164
Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	66	Benjamin Banneker	166
Marian Anderson	69	Frederick Banting	168
Fra Angelico	71	Klaus Barbie	170
Maya Angelou	73	Christiaan Barnard	173
Kofi Annan	76	Clara Barton	175
Susan B. Anthony	79	Count Basie	177
Virginia Apgar	81	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Benigno Aquino	84		
Yasir Arafat	86	<i>Volume 2: Be–Cap</i>	
Archimedes	89	Beatles	181
Hannah Arendt	91	William Beaumont	185
Jean-Bertrand Aristide	93	Simone de Beauvoir	187
Aristophanes	96	Samuel Beckett	189
Aristotle	98	Ludwig van Beethoven	192
Louis Armstrong	101	Menachem Begin	194
Neil Armstrong	102	Alexander Graham Bell	196
Benedict Arnold	105	Clyde Bellecourt	200
Mary Kay Ash	108	Saul Bellow	202
Arthur Ashe	110	William Bennett	204
Isaac Asimov	113	Ingmar Bergman	206
Fred Astaire	116	Irving Berlin	208
John Jacob Astor	118	Leonard Bernstein	210
Margaret Atwood	120	Chuck Berry	213
W. H. Auden	123	Mary McLeod Bethune	215
John James Audubon	125	Benazir Bhutto	218
Augustus	128	Owen Bieber	220
Aung San Suu Kyi	130	Billy the Kid	223
Jane Austen	132	Larry Bird	224
Baal Shem Tov	137	Shirley Temple Black	227
Charles Babbage	139	Elizabeth Blackwell	229
Johann Sebastian Bach	141	Tony Blair	232
Francis Bacon	143	William Blake	234
Roger Bacon	145	Konrad Bloch	237
Joan Baez	147	Judy Blume	239
F Lee Bailey	150	Humphrey Bogart	242
Josephine Baker	152	Julian Bond	244
George Balanchine	154	Daniel Boone	246
James Baldwin	156	John Wilkes Booth	248

William Booth	250	Al Capone	352
Lucrezia Borgia	252	Truman Capote	354
P. W. Botha	255	Frank Capra	357
Sandro Botticelli	257	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Margaret Bourke-White	259		
Boutros Boutros-Ghali	261	Volume 3: Car–Da	
Ray Bradbury	264	Lázaro Cárdenas	361
Ed Bradley	266	Stokely Carmichael	363
Mathew Brady	269	Andrew Carnegie	367
Johannes Brahms	271	Lewis Carroll	370
Louis Braille	273	Johnny Carson	372
Louis Brandeis	275	Kit Carson	374
Marlon Brando	278	Rachel Carson	377
Leonid Brezhnev	280	Jimmy Carter	379
Charlotte Brontë	283	George Washington Carver	383
Emily Brontë	284	Pablo Casals	386
Gwendolyn Brooks	286	Mary Cassatt	388
Helen Gurley Brown	289	Vernon and Irene Castle	390
James Brown	291	Fidel Castro	393
John Brown	294	Willa Cather	397
Rachel Fuller Brown	297	Catherine of Aragon	399
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	299	Catherine the Great	401
Robert Browning	302	Henry Cavendish	404
Pat Buchanan	305	Anders Celsius	407
Pearl S. Buck	308	Miguel de Cervantes	408
Buddha	310	Paul Cézanne	411
Ralph Bunche	312	Marc Chagall	414
Warren Burger	314	Wilt Chamberlain	416
Robert Burns	317	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	419
Aaron Burr	320	Charlie Chaplin	421
George Bush	323	Charlemagne	424
George W. Bush	326	Charles, Prince of Wales	427
Laura Bush	329	Ray Charles	430
Lord Byron	331	Geoffrey Chaucer	433
Julius Caesar	335	César Chávez	436
Caligula	338	Dennis Chavez	438
Maria Callas	340	Linda Chavez	440
Cab Calloway	342	Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	443
John Calvin	344	John Cheever	447
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	346	Anton Chekhov	449
Albert Camus	349	Dick Cheney	451

Mary Boykin Chesnut	454
Chiang Kai-shek	456
Julia Child	459
Shirley Chisholm	461
Frédéric Chopin	464
Jean Chrétien	467
Agatha Christie	469
Winston Churchill	472
Marcus Tullius Cicero	475
Liz Claiborne	478
Cleopatra VII	480
Bill Clinton	483
Hillary Rodham Clinton	487
Ty Cobb	490
Nat “King” Cole	492
Bessie Coleman	494
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	496
Marva Collins	499
Michael Collins	501
Confucius	503
Sean Connery	506
Joseph Conrad	508
Nicolaus Copernicus	510
Aaron Copland	513
Francis Ford Coppola	515
Bill Cosby	518
Jacques Cousteau	521
Noel Coward	523
Michael Crichton	525
Davy Crockett	527
Oliver Cromwell	529
Walter Cronkite	532
E. E. Cummings	535
Marie Curie	538
Roald Dahl	543
Dalai Lama	546
Salvador Dali	549
Clarence Darrow	551
Charles Darwin	554
Bette Davis	556
Miles Davis	558

Ossie Davis	561
Sammy Davis Jr.	563
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 4: De–Ga

James Dean	567
Claude Debussy	569
Ruby Dee	571
Daniel Defoe	574
Edgar Degas	576
Charles de Gaulle	579
F. W. de Klerk	581
Cecil B. DeMille	585
Deng Xiaoping	587
René Descartes	590
Hernando de Soto	592
John Dewey	594
Diana, Princess of Wales	597
Charles Dickens	600
Emily Dickinson	603
Denis Diderot	606
Joe DiMaggio	608
Walt Disney	611
Elizabeth Dole	613
Placido Domingo	616
Donatello	619
John Donne	621
Fyodor Dostoevsky	624
Frederick Douglass	626
Arthur Conan Doyle	629
Francis Drake	632
Alexandre Dumas	634
Paul Laurence Dunbar	636
Pierre du Pont	638
François Duvalier	640
Amelia Earhart	643
George Eastman	646
Clint Eastwood	648
Thomas Edison	650
Albert Einstein	654
Dwight D. Eisenhower	657

Mamie Eisenhower	661	Karl Friedrich Gauss	775
Joycelyn Elders	662	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
George Eliot	665		
T. S. Eliot	668	Volume 5: Ge–I	
Elizabeth I	672	Hans Geiger	779
Elizabeth II	675	Theodor Geisel	781
Duke Ellington	678	Genghis Khan	784
Ralph Waldo Emerson	680	J. Paul Getty	786
Desiderius Erasmus	683	Kahlil Gibran	788
Euclid	686	Althea Gibson	790
Euripides	688	Dizzy Gillespie	792
Medgar Evers	690	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	794
Gabriel Fahrenheit	695	Whoopi Goldberg	797
Fannie Farmer	696	William Golding	800
Louis Farrakhan	698	Samuel Gompers	801
William Faulkner	701	Jane Goodall	804
Dianne Feinstein	704	Benny Goodman	807
Enrico Fermi	707	Mikhail Gorbachev	809
Geraldine Ferraro	710	Berry Gordy Jr.	813
Bobby Fischer	713	Al Gore	816
Ella Fitzgerald	715	Jay Gould	818
F. Scott Fitzgerald	718	Stephen Jay Gould	821
Gustave Flaubert	721	Katharine Graham	824
Malcolm Forbes	723	Martha Graham	827
Henry Ford	725	Cary Grant	829
Francis of Assisi	729	Graham Greene	831
Benjamin Franklin	731	Wayne Gretzky	833
Sigmund Freud	735	Brothers Grimm	836
Betty Friedan	738	Woody Guthrie	838
Robert Frost	741	Alex Haley	843
John Kenneth Galbraith	745	Alexander Hamilton	846
Galen	748	Oscar Hammerstein	849
Galileo	750	John Hancock	852
George Gallup	753	George Frideric Handel	854
Indira Gandhi	754	Thomas Hardy	857
Mohandas Gandhi	758	Stephen Hawking	860
Gabriel García Márquez	762	Nathaniel Hawthorne	862
Judy Garland	764	William Randolph Hearst	865
Marcus Garvey	767	Werner Heisenberg	868
Bill Gates	769	Joseph Heller	870
Paul Gauguin	773	Lillian Hellman	872

Ernest Hemingway	875
Jimi Hendrix	878
Henry VIII	880
Patrick Henry	883
Audrey Hepburn	886
Katharine Hepburn	888
Herod the Great	891
William Herschel	893
Thor Heyerdahl	895
Edmund Hillary	898
S. E. Hinton	900
Hippocrates	902
Hirohito	904
Alfred Hitchcock	907
Adolf Hitler	909
Ho Chi Minh	912
Thomas Hobbes	915
Billie Holiday	918
Oliver Wendell Holmes	920
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	923
Homer	926
Soichiro Honda	929
bell hooks	931
Benjamin Hooks	933
Bob Hope	936
Anthony Hopkins	938
Lena Horne	940
Harry Houdini	943
Gordie Howe	946
Julia Ward Howe	949
Howard Hughes	951
Langston Hughes	954
Victor Hugo	957
Zora Neale Hurston	960
Saddam Hussein	962
Lee Iacocca	967
Henrik Ibsen	970
Imhotep	972
Washington Irving	975
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 6: J–L

Andrew Jackson	979
Jesse Jackson	983
Michael Jackson	986
Reggie Jackson	989
P. D. James	991
Thomas Jefferson	994
Mae Jemison	997
Jesus of Nazareth	1000
Jiang Zemin	1003
Joan of Arc	1005
Steve Jobs	1007
Elton John	1011
John Paul II	1013
Lyndon B. Johnson	1016
Magic Johnson	1020
Samuel Johnson	1023
Al Jolson	1025
James Earl Jones	1027
Quincy Jones	1029
Ben Jonson	1032
Michael Jordan	1034
James Joyce	1038
Benito Juárez	1040
Carl Jung	1043
Franz Kafka	1047
Wassily Kandinsky	1050
Immanuel Kant	1052
John Keats	1054
Helen Keller	1056
Gene Kelly	1058
Edward Kennedy	1061
John F. Kennedy	1064
John F. Kennedy Jr.	1069
Robert Kennedy	1071
Johannes Kepler	1074
Jack Kerouac	1076
Charles F. Kettering	1078
Ayatollah Khomeini	1081
Nikita Khrushchev	1083
B. B. King	1086

Billie Jean King	1089	Dolley Madison	1191
Coretta Scott King	1091	James Madison	1194
Martin Luther King Jr.	1094	Madonna	1197
Stephen King	1098	Ferdinand Magellan	1201
Rudyard Kipling	1101	Najib Mahfuz	1203
Henry Kissinger	1104	Norman Mailer	1205
Calvin Klein	1107	Bernard Malamud	1208
Kublai Khan	1109	Malcolm X	1210
Marquis de Lafayette	1113	David Mamet	1214
Lao Tzu	1115	Nelson Mandela	1216
Ralph Lauren	1117	Édouard Manet	1219
Emma Lazarus	1119	Wilma Mankiller	1221
Mary Leakey	1121	Mickey Mantle	1224
Bruce Lee	1124	Mao Zedong	1226
Spike Lee	1126	Rocky Marciano	1230
Tsung-Dao Lee	1129	Ferdinand Marcos	1233
Vladimir Lenin	1131	Marcus Aurelius	1236
Leonardo da Vinci	1136	Marie Antoinette	1238
C. S. Lewis	1139	Mark Antony	1240
Carl Lewis	1141	Thurgood Marshall	1243
Sinclair Lewis	1144	Karl Marx	1246
Roy Lichtenstein	1146	Mary, Queen of Scots	1249
Maya Lin	1148	Cotton Mather	1252
Abraham Lincoln	1150	Henri Matisse	1255
Charles Lindbergh	1154	Mayo Brothers	1258
Carl Linnaeus	1157	Willie Mays	1261
Joseph Lister	1159	Joseph McCarthy	1264
Andrew Lloyd Webber	1161	Hattie McDaniel	1267
Alain Locke	1163	John McEnroe	1270
John Locke	1166	Terry McMillan	1273
Jack London	1168	Aimee Semple McPherson	1275
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	1170	Margaret Mead	1277
Joe Louis	1173	Catherine de' Medici	1281
George Lucas	1175	Golda Meir	1284
Patrice Lumumba	1178	Rigoberta Menchú	1286
Martin Luther	1181	Felix Mendelssohn	1289
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Kweisi Mfume	1292
		Michelangelo	1295
Volume 7: M–Ne		Harvey Milk	1298
Douglas MacArthur	1185	John Stuart Mill	1301
Niccolò Machiavelli	1188	Edna St. Vincent Millay	1303

Arthur Miller	1305	Manuel Noriega	1401
Henry Miller	1308	Jessye Norman	1404
Slobodan Milosevic	1310	Nostradamus	1406
John Milton	1313	Rudolf Nureyev	1409
Joan Miró	1316	Joyce Carol Oates	1413
Molière	1318	Sandra Day O'Connor	1416
Claude Monet	1320	Georgia O'Keefe	1420
Thelonious Monk	1323	Laurence Olivier	1422
Marilyn Monroe	1325	Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	1425
Joe Montana	1327	Eugene O'Neill	1428
Montesquieu	1329	George Orwell	1430
Maria Montessori	1331	Ovid	1432
Thomas More	1334	Jesse Owens	1435
Jim Morrison	1336	Mohammad Reza Pahlavi	1439
Toni Morrison	1338	Arnold Palmer	1441
Samuel F. B. Morse	1341	Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus	1443
Moses	1343	Charlie Parker	1445
Grandma Moses	1345	Blaise Pascal	1447
Mother Teresa	1347	Louis Pasteur	1450
Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart	1350	Linus Pauling	1453
Hosni Mubarak	1353	Luciano Pavarotti	1456
Muhammad	1355	Ivan Pavlov	1459
Elijah Muhammad	1358	Anna Pavlova	1462
John Muir	1360	I. M. Pei	1464
Edvard Munch	1362	Pelé.	1467
Rupert Murdoch	1364	William Penn	1469
Benito Mussolini	1367	Pericles	1472
Vladimir Nabokov	1371	Eva Perón	1474
Ralph Nader	1373	Jean Piaget	1477
Napoleon Bonaparte	1376	Pablo Picasso	1479
Ogden Nash	1379	Sylvia Plath	1483
Nefertiti	1381	Plato	1485
Isaac Newton	1382	Pocahontas	1488
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Edgar Allan Poe	1490
 Volume 8: Ni–Re			
Friedrich Nietzsche	1387	Sidney Poitier	1493
Florence Nightingale	1390	Pol Pot	1495
Richard Nixon	1392	Marco Polo	1498
Alfred Nobel	1397	Juan Ponce de León	1501
Isamu Noguchi	1398	Alexander Pope	1502
		Cole Porter	1505
		Katherine Anne Porter	1507

Emily Post	1509	Richard Rodgers	1610
Colin Powell	1511	Auguste Rodin	1613
Dith Pran	1514	Will Rogers	1615
Elvis Presley	1517	Rolling Stones	1618
André Previn	1520	Eleanor Roosevelt	1621
Leontyne Price	1522	Franklin D. Roosevelt	1624
E. Annie Proulx	1524	Theodore Roosevelt	1628
Marcel Proust	1526	Diana Ross	1631
Ptolemy I	1528	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	1634
Joseph Pulitzer	1531	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	1636
George Pullman	1533	Carl Rowan	1639
Aleksandr Pushkin	1535	J. K. Rowling	1641
Vladimir Putin	1537	Peter Paul Rubens	1643
Pythagoras	1540	Wilma Rudolph	1646
Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	1543	Salman Rushdie	1649
Walter Raleigh	1547	Babe Ruth	1651
Sri Ramakrishna	1550	Nolan Ryan	1653
A. Philip Randolph	1552	Albert Sabin	1657
Harun al-Rashid	1555	Carl Sagan	1659
Ronald Reagan	1557	Andrei Sakharov	1662
Christopher Reeve	1561	J. D. Salinger	1664
Erich Maria Remarque	1564	Jonas Salk	1667
Rembrandt	1566	George Sand	1669
Janet Reno	1568	Carl Sandburg	1671
Pierre Auguste Renoir	1571	Margaret Sanger	1673
Paul Revere	1574	Jean-Paul Sartre	1676
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Oskar Schindler	1678
		Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	1681
		Franz Schubert	1684
		Charles M. Schulz	1687
Volume 9: Rh–S		Martin Scorsese	1690
Cecil Rhodes	1577	Walter Scott	1693
Condoleezza Rice	1580	Haile Selassie	1696
Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	1583	Selena	1698
Sally Ride	1585	Sequoyah	1701
Leni Riefenstahl	1588	William Shakespeare	1702
Cal Ripken Jr.	1591	George Bernard Shaw	1706
Diego Rivera	1593	Mary Shelley	1708
Paul Robeson	1596	Percy Shelley	1711
Maximilien de Robespierre	1599	Beverly Sills	1714
Smokey Robinson	1601	Neil Simon	1716
John D. Rockefeller	1604		
Norman Rockwell	1607		

Frank Sinatra	1719	Marshal Tito	1821
Upton Sinclair	1722	J. R. R. Tolkien	1824
Isaac Bashevis Singer	1724	Leo Tolstoy	1827
Bessie Smith	1727	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	1830
Socrates	1729	Eiji Toyoda	1832
Stephen Sondheim	1732	Harry S. Truman	1834
Sophocles	1734	Donald Trump	1837
Steven Spielberg	1737	Sojourner Truth	1840
Benjamin Spock	1740	Tu Fu	1843
Joseph Stalin	1743	Tutankhamen	1845
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	1747	Desmond Tutu	1847
Edith Stein	1749	Mark Twain	1850
Gertrude Stein	1752	John Updike	1855
John Steinbeck	1755	Vincent Van Gogh	1859
Robert Louis Stevenson	1757	Jan Vermeer	1862
Bram Stoker	1759	Jules Verne	1864
Oliver Stone	1761	Amerigo Vespucci	1867
Tom Stoppard	1764	Victoria	1869
Harriet Beecher Stowe	1766	Gore Vidal	1872
Antonio Stradivari	1769	Virgil	1874
Johann Strauss	1771	Antonio Vivaldi	1877
Igor Stravinsky	1773	Voltaire	1879
Barbra Streisand	1776	Wernher von Braun	1882
Sun Yat-sen	1779	Kurt Vonnegut	1884
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Richard Wagner	1889
<i>Volume 10: T–Z</i>			
Maria Tallchief	1785	Alice Walker	1891
Amy Tan	1787	Madame C. J. Walker	1894
Elizabeth Taylor	1790	Barbara Walters	1897
Peter Ilych Tchaikovsky	1792	An Wang	1900
Alfred, Lord Tennyson	1795	Booker T. Washington	1903
Valentina Tereshkova	1798	George Washington	1906
William Makepeace Thackeray	1801	James Watt	1910
Twyla Tharp	1804	John Wayne	1913
Clarence Thomas	1807	Daniel Webster	1916
Dylan Thomas	1810	Noah Webster	1919
Henry David Thoreau	1813	Orson Welles	1922
Jim Thorpe	1816	Eudora Welty	1925
James Thurber	1819	Edith Wharton	1928
		James Whistler	1929
		E. B. White	1932
		Walt Whitman	1935

Elie Wiesel	1938	Virginia Woolf	1962
Oscar Wilde	1940	William Wordsworth	1965
Laura Ingalls Wilder	1943	Wright Brothers	1969
Thornton Wilder	1946	Frank Lloyd Wright	1972
Tennessee Williams	1948	Richard Wright	1975
Woodrow Wilson	1951	William Butler Yeats	1979
Oprah Winfrey	1954	Boris Yeltsin	1982
Anna May Wong	1958	Paul Zindel	1987
Tiger Woods	1960	<i>Index</i>	xxxv



*entries by
nationality*

African American

Hank Aaron 1: 1
 Ralph Abernathy 1: 4
 Alvin Ailey 1: 34
 Muhammad Ali 1: 47
 Marian Anderson 1: 69
 Maya Angelou 1: 73
 Louis Armstrong 1: 101
 Arthur Ashe 1: 110
 Josephine Baker 1: 152
 James Baldwin 1: 156
 Benjamin Banneker 1: 166
 Count Basie 1: 177
 Chuck Berry 2: 213
 Mary McLeod Bethune 2: 215
 Julian Bond 2: 244
 Gwendolyn Brooks 2: 286

James Brown 2: 291
 Ralph Bunche 2: 312
 Stokely Carmichael 3: 363
 George Washington Carver 3: 383
 Wilt Chamberlain 3: 416
 Ray Charles 3: 430
 Benjamin Chavis Muhammad 3: 443
 Shirley Chisholm 3: 461
 Nat “King” Cole 3: 492
 Bessie Coleman 3: 494
 Marva Collins 3: 499
 Bill Cosby 3: 518
 Miles Davis 3: 558
 Ossie Davis 3: 561
 Sammy Davis Jr. 3: 563
 Ruby Dee 4: 571
 Frederick Douglass 4: 626

Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Jessye Norman	8: 1404
Joycelyn Elders	4: 662	Jesse Owens	8: 1435
Duke Ellington	4: 678	Charlie Parker	8: 1445
Medgar Evers	4: 690	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Louis Farrakhan	4: 698	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Althea Gibson	5: 790	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Alex Haley	5: 843	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Bessie Smith	9: 1727
bell hooks	5: 931	Sojourner Truth	10: 1840
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Alice Walker	10: 1891
Lena Horne	5: 940	Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Reggie Jackson	6: 989		
Mae Jemison	6: 997	<i>Albanian</i>	
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Mother Teresa	7: 1347
James Earl Jones	6: 1027		
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	<i>American</i>	
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Hank Aaron	1: 1
B. B. King	6: 1086	Ralph Abernathy	1: 4
Coretta Scott King	6: 1091	Bella Abzug	1: 7
Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094	Abigail Adams	1: 12
Spike Lee	6: 1126	Ansel Adams	1: 15
Carl Lewis	6: 1141	John Adams	1: 17
Alain Locke	6: 1163	Samuel Adams	1: 20
Malcolm X	7: 1210	Jane Addams	1: 25
Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Spiro Agnew	1: 31
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Alvin Ailey	1: 34
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Madeleine Albright	1: 37
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Louisa May Alcott	1: 39
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	Muhammad Ali	1: 47
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Woody Allen	1: 49
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Julia Alvarez	1: 54
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	American Horse	1: 57

Carl David Anderson	1: 64	Daniel Boone	2: 246
Marian Anderson	1: 69	John Wilkes Booth	2: 248
Maya Angelou	1: 73	Margaret Bourke-White	2: 259
Susan B. Anthony	1: 79	Ray Bradbury	2: 264
Virginia Apgar	1: 81	Ed Bradley	2: 266
Louis Armstrong	1: 101	Mathew Brady	2: 269
Neil Armstrong	1: 102	Louis Brandeis	2: 275
Benedict Arnold	1: 105	Marlon Brando	2: 278
Mary Kay Ash	1: 108	Gwendolyn Brooks	2: 286
Arthur Ashe	1: 110	Helen Gurley Brown	2: 289
Isaac Asimov	1: 113	James Brown	2: 291
Fred Astaire	1: 116	John Brown	2: 294
John Jacob Astor	1: 118	Rachel Fuller Brown	2: 297
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Pat Buchanan	2: 305
John James Audubon	1: 125	Pearl S. Buck	2: 308
Joan Baez	1: 147	Ralph Bunche	2: 312
F. Lee Bailey	1: 150	Warren Burger	2: 314
Josephine Baker	1: 152	Aaron Burr	2: 320
George Balanchine	1: 154	George Bush	2: 323
James Baldwin	1: 156	George W. Bush	2: 326
Lucille Ball	1: 159	Laura Bush	2: 329
David Baltimore	1: 161	Maria Callas	2: 340
Benjamin Banneker	1: 166	Cab Calloway	2: 342
Clara Barton	1: 175	Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Count Basie	1: 177	Al Capone	2: 352
William Beaumont	2: 185	Truman Capote	2: 354
Alexander Graham Bell	2: 196	Frank Capra	2: 357
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200	Stokely Carmichael	3: 363
Saul Bellow	2: 202	Andrew Carnegie	3: 367
William Bennett	2: 204	Johnny Carson	3: 372
Irving Berlin	2: 208	Kit Carson	3: 374
Leonard Bernstein	2: 210	Rachel Carson	3: 377
Chuck Berry	2: 213	Jimmy Carter	3: 379
Mary McLeod Bethune	2: 215	George Washington Carver	3: 383
Owen Bieber	2: 220	Mary Cassatt	3: 388
Billy the Kid	2: 223	Irene Castle	3: 390
Larry Bird	2: 224	Willa Cather	3: 397
Shirley Temple Black	2: 227	Wilt Chamberlain	3: 416
Judy Blume	2: 239	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	3: 419
Humphrey Bogart	2: 242	Ray Charles	3: 430
Julian Bond	2: 244	César Chávez	3: 436

Dennis Chavez	3: 438	Thomas Edison	4: 650
Linda Chavez	3: 440	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	3: 443	Dwight D. Eisenhower	4: 657
John Cheever	3: 447	Mamie Eisenhower	4: 661
Dick Cheney	3: 451	Joycelyn Elders	4: 662
Mary Boykin Chesnut	3: 454	T. S. Eliot	4: 668
Julia Child	3: 459	Duke Ellington	4: 678
Shirley Chisholm	3: 461	Ralph Waldo Emerson	4: 680
Liz Claiborne	3: 478	Medgar Evers	4: 690
Bill Clinton	3: 483	Fannie Farmer	4: 696
Hillary Rodham Clinton	3: 487	Louis Farrakhan	4: 698
Ty Cobb	3: 490	William Faulkner	4: 701
Nat "King" Cole	3: 492	Dianne Feinstein	4: 704
Bessie Coleman	3: 494	Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Marva Collins	3: 499	Geraldine Ferraro	4: 710
Aaron Copland	3: 513	Bobby Fischer	4: 713
Francis Ford Coppola	3: 515	Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715
Bill Cosby	3: 518	F. Scott Fitzgerald	4: 718
Michael Crichton	3: 525	Malcolm Forbes	4: 723
Davy Crockett	3: 527	Henry Ford	4: 725
Walter Cronkite	3: 532	Benjamin Franklin	4: 731
E. E. Cummings	3: 535	Betty Friedan	4: 738
Clarence Darrow	3: 551	Robert Frost	4: 741
Bette Davis	3: 556	John Kenneth Galbraith	4: 745
Miles Davis	3: 558	George Gallup	4: 753
Ossie Davis	3: 561	Judy Garland	4: 764
Sammy Davis Jr.	3: 563	Bill Gates	4: 769
James Dean	4: 567	Theodor Geisel	5: 781
Ruby Dee	4: 571	J. Paul Getty	5: 786
Cecil B. DeMille	4: 585	Althea Gibson	5: 790
John Dewey	4: 594	Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792
Emily Dickinson	4: 603	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	5: 794
Joe DiMaggio	4: 608	Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797
Walt Disney	4: 611	Samuel Gompers	5: 801
Elizabeth Dole	4: 613	Benny Goodman	5: 807
Frederick Douglass	4: 626	Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813
Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Al Gore	5: 816
Pierre Du Pont	4: 638	Jay Gould	5: 818
Amelia Earhart	4: 643	Stephen Jay Gould	5: 821
George Eastman	4: 646	Katharine Graham	5: 824
Clint Eastwood	4: 648	Martha Graham	5: 827

Woody Guthrie	5: 838	Helen Keller	6: 1056
Alex Haley	5: 843	Gene Kelly	6: 1058
Alexander Hamilton	5: 846	Edward Kennedy	6: 1061
Oscar Hammerstein	5: 849	John F. Kennedy	6: 1064
John Hancock	5: 852	John F. Kennedy Jr.	6: 1069
Nathaniel Hawthorne	5: 862	Robert Kennedy	6: 1071
William Randolph Hearst	5: 865	Jack Kerouac	6: 1076
Joseph Heller	5: 870	Charles F. Kettering	6: 1078
Lillian Hellman	5: 872	B. B. King	6: 1086
Ernest Hemingway	5: 875	Billie Jean King	6: 1089
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Coretta Scott King	6: 1091
Patrick Henry	5: 883	Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094
Katharine Hepburn	5: 888	Stephen King	6: 1098
S. E. Hinton	5: 900	Henry Kissinger	6: 1104
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Calvin Klein	6: 1107
Oliver Wendell Holmes	5: 920	Ralph Lauren	6: 1117
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	5: 923	Emma Lazarus	6: 1119
bell hooks	5: 931	Bruce Lee	6: 1124
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Spike Lee	6: 1126
Bob Hope	5: 936	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Lena Horne	5: 940	Carl Lewis	6: 1141
Harry Houdini	5: 943	Sinclair Lewis	6: 1144
Julia Ward Howe	5: 949	Roy Lichtenstein	6: 1146
Howard Hughes	5: 951	Abraham Lincoln	6: 1150
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Charles Lindbergh	6: 1154
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Alain Locke	6: 1163
Lee Iacocca	5: 967	Jack London	6: 1168
Washington Irving	5: 975	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	6: 1170
Andrew Jackson	6: 979	Joe Louis	6: 1173
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	George Lucas	6: 1175
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Douglas MacArthur	7: 1185
Reggie Jackson	6: 989	Dolley Madison	7: 1191
Thomas Jefferson	6: 994	James Madison	7: 1194
Mae Jemison	6: 997	Madonna	7: 1197
Steve Jobs	6: 1007	Norman Mailer	7: 1205
Lyndon B. Johnson	6: 1016	Bernard Malamud	7: 1390
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Malcolm X	7: 1210
Al Jolson	6: 1025	David Mamet	7: 1214
James Earl Jones	6: 1027	Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	Mickey Mantle	7: 1224
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Rocky Marciano	7: 1230

Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Pocahontas	8: 1488
Cotton Mather	7: 1252	Edgar Allan Poe	8: 1490
Mayo Brothers	7: 1258	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Cole Porter	8: 1505
Joseph McCarthy	7: 1264	Katherine Anne Porter	8: 1507
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Emily Post	8: 1509
John McEnroe	7: 1270	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Elvis Presley	8: 1517
Aimee Semple McPherson	7: 1275	André Previn	8: 1520
Margaret Mead	7: 1277	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	E. Annie Proulx	8: 1524
Harvey Milk	7: 1298	Joseph Pulitzer	8: 1531
Edna St. Vincent Millay	7: 1303	George Pullman	8: 1533
Arthur Miller	7: 1305	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Henry Miller	7: 1308	Ronald Reagan	8: 1557
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Christopher Reeve	8: 1561
Marilyn Monroe	7: 1325	Erich Maria Remarque	8: 1564
Joe Montana	7: 1327	Janet Reno	8: 1568
Jim Morrison	7: 1336	Paul Revere	8: 1574
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Samuel F. B. Morse	7: 1341	Sally Ride	9: 1585
Grandma Moses	7: 1345	Cal Ripken, Jr.	9: 1591
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
John Muir	7: 1360	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Vladimir Nabokov	7: 1371	John D. Rockefeller	9: 1604
Ralph Nader	7: 1373	Norman Rockwell	9: 1607
Ogden Nash	7: 1379	Richard Rodgers	9: 1610
Richard Nixon	8: 1392	Will Rogers	9: 1615
Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398	Eleanor Roosevelt	9: 1621
Jessye Norman	8: 1404	Franklin D. Roosevelt	9: 1624
Joyce Carol Oates	8: 1413	Theodore Roosevelt	9: 1628
Sandra Day O'Connor	8: 1416	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Georgia O'Keeffe	8: 1420	Carl Rowan	9: 1639
Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	8: 1425	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Eugene O'Neill	8: 1428	Babe Ruth	9: 1651
Jesse Owens	8: 1435	Nolan Ryan	9: 1653
Arnold Palmer	8: 1441	Albert Sabin	9: 1657
Charlie Parker	8: 1445	Carl Sagan	9: 1659
Linus Pauling	8: 1453	J. D. Salinger	9: 1664
I. M. Pei	8: 1464	Jonas Salk	9: 1667
Sylvia Plath	8: 1483	Carl Sandburg	9: 1671

Margaret Sanger	9: 1673	An Wang	10: 1900
Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	9: 1681	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Charles M. Schulz	9: 1687	George Washington	10: 1906
Martin Scorsese	9: 1690	John Wayne	10: 1913
Selena	9: 1698	Daniel Webster	10: 1916
Sequoyah	9: 1701	Noah Webster	10: 1919
Beverly Sills	9: 1714	Orson Welles	10: 1922
Neil Simon	9: 1716	Eudora Welty	10: 1925
Frank Sinatra	9: 1719	Edith Wharton	10: 1928
Upton Sinclair	9: 1722	James Whistler	10: 1929
Isaac Bashevis Singer	9: 1724	E. B. White	10: 1932
Bessie Smith	9: 1727	Walt Whitman	10: 1935
Stephen Sondheim	9: 1732	Elie Wiesel	10: 1938
Steven Spielberg	9: 1737	Laura Ingalls Wilder	10: 1943
Benjamin Spock	9: 1740	Thornton Wilder	10: 1946
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	9: 1747	Tennessee Williams	10: 1948
Gertrude Stein	9: 1752	Woodrow Wilson	10: 1951
John Steinbeck	9: 1755	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Oliver Stone	9: 1761	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Harriet Beecher Stowe	9: 1766	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Igor Stravinsky	9: 1773	Wright Brothers	10: 1969
Barbra Streisand	9: 1776	Frank Lloyd Wright	10: 1972
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Amy Tan	10: 1787	Paul Zindel	10: 1987
Elizabeth Taylor	10: 1790		
Twyla Tharp	10: 1804	<i>Arabian</i>	
Clarence Thomas	10: 1807	Muhammad	7: 1355
Henry David Thoreau	10: 1813		
Jim Thorpe	10: 1816	<i>Argentine</i>	
James Thurber	10: 1819	Eva Perón	8: 1474
Harry S. Truman	10: 1834		
Donald Trump	10: 1837	<i>Asian American</i>	
Sojourner Truth	10: 1840	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Mark Twain	10: 1850	Maya Lin	6: 1148
John Updike	10: 1855	Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398
Gore Vidal	10: 1872	I. M. Pei	8: 1464
Wernher von Braun	10: 1882	Amy Tan	10: 1787
Kurt Vonnegut	10: 1884	An Wang	10: 1900
Alice Walker	10: 1891	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Barbara Walters	10: 1897		

Australian

Rupert Murdoch 7: 1364

Austrian

Joy Adamson 1: 22

Alfred Adler 1: 27

Sigmund Freud 4: 735

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart 7: 1350

Franz Schubert 9: 1684

Johann Strauss 9: 1771

Belgian

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886

Brazilian

Pelé 8: 1467

Burmese

Aung San Suu Kyi 1: 130

Cambodian

Pol Pot 8: 1495

Dith Pran 8: 1514

Canadian

Margaret Atwood 1: 120

Frederick Banting 1: 168

Jean Chrétien 3: 467

John Kenneth Galbraith 4: 745

Wayne Gretzky 5: 833

Gordie Howe 5: 946

Aimee Semple McPherson 7: 1275

Chilean

Isabel Allende 1: 52

Chinese

Chiang Kai-shek 3: 456

Confucius 3: 503

Deng Xiaoping 4: 587

Jiang Zemin 6: 1003

Lao Tzu 6: 1115

Tsung-Dao Lee 6: 1129

Mao Zedong 7: 1226

I. M. Pei 8: 1464

Sun Yat-sen 9: 1779

Tu Fu 10: 1843

An Wang 10: 1900

Colombian

Gabriel García Márquez 7: 762

Congolese

Patrice Lumumba 6: 1178

Cuban

Fidel Castro 3: 393

Czech

Madeleine Albright 1: 37

Franz Kafka 6: 1047

Tom Stoppard 9: 1764

Danish

Hans Christian Andersen 1: 62

Dutch

Desiderius Erasmus 4: 683

Rembrandt 8: 1566

Vincent Van Gogh 10: 1859

Egyptian

Boutros Boutros-Ghali 2: 261

Cleopatra VII 3: 480

Imhotep 5: 972

Najib Mahfuz 7: 1203

Moses 7: 1343

Hosni Mubarak 7: 1353

Nefertiti 7: 1381

Tutankhamen 10: 1845

English

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	1: 66	Cary Grant	5: 829
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Graham Greene	5: 831
Jane Austen	1: 132	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Charles Babbage	1: 139	Thomas Hardy	5: 857
Francis Bacon	1: 143	Stephen Hawking	5: 860
Roger Bacon	1: 145	Henry VIII	5: 880
Beatles	2: 181	Alfred Hitchcock	5: 907
Elizabeth Blackwell	2: 229	Thomas Hobbes	5: 915
William Blake	2: 234	P. D. James	6: 991
William Booth	2: 250	Elton John	6: 1011
Charlotte Brontë	2: 283	Samuel Johnson	6: 1023
Emily Brontë	2: 284	Ben Jonson	6: 1032
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	2: 299	John Keats	6: 1054
Robert Browning	2: 302	Rudyard Kipling	6: 1101
Lord Byron	2: 331	Mary Leakey	6: 1121
Lewis Carroll	3: 370	Joseph Lister	6: 1159
Vernon Castle	3: 390	Andrew Lloyd Webber	6: 1161
Henry Cavendish	3: 404	John Locke	6: 1166
Charlie Chaplin	3: 421	John Stuart Mill	7: 1301
Charles, Prince of Wales	3: 427	John Milton	7: 1313
Geoffrey Chaucer	3: 433	Thomas More	7: 1334
Agatha Christie	3: 469	Isaac Newton	7: 1382
Winston Churchill	3: 472	Florence Nightingale	8: 1390
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	3: 496	Laurence Olivier	8: 1422
Joseph Conrad	3: 508	George Orwell	8: 1430
Noel Coward	3: 523	William Penn	8: 1469
Oliver Cromwell	3: 529	Alexander Pope	8: 1502
Charles Darwin	3: 554	Walter Raleigh	8: 1547
Daniel Defoe	4: 574	Cecil Rhodes	9: 1577
Diana, Princess of Wales	4: 597	Rolling Stones	9: 1618
Charles Dickens	4: 600	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	9: 1634
John Donne	4: 621	J. K. Rowling	9: 1641
Arthur Conan Doyle	4: 629	William Shakespeare	9: 1702
Francis Drake	4: 632	Mary Shelley	9: 1708
George Eliot	4: 665	Percy Shelley	9: 1711
T. S. Eliot	4: 668	Tom Stoppard	9: 1764
Elizabeth I	4: 672	Alfred, Lord Tennyson	10: 1795
Elizabeth II	4: 675	William Makepeace Thackeray	10: 1801
William Golding	5: 800	J. R. R. Tolkien	10: 1824
Jane Goodall	5: 804	Victoria	10: 1869
		Oscar Wilde	10: 1940

Virginia Woolf	10: 1963	Molière	7: 1318
William Wordsworth	10: 1965	Claude Monet	7: 1320
<i>Ethiopian</i>		Montesquieu	7: 1329
Haile Selassie	9: 1697	Napoleon Bonaparte	7: 1376
<i>Filipino</i>		Nostradamus	8: 1406
Benigno Aquino	1: 84	Blaise Pascal	8: 1447
Ferdinand Marcos	7: 1233	Louis Pasteur	8: 1450
<i>Flemish</i>		Marcel Proust	8: 1526
Peter Paul Rubens	9: 1643	Pierre Auguste Renoir	8: 1571
<i>Frankish</i>		Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	9: 1583
Charlemagne	3: 424	Maximilien de Robespierre	9: 1599
<i>French</i>		Auguste Rodin	9: 1613
John James Audubon	1: 125	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	9: 1636
Honoré de Balzac	1: 164	George Sand	9: 1669
Simone de Beauvoir	2: 187	Jean-Paul Sartre	9: 1676
Louis Braille	2: 273	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	10: 1830
John Calvin	2: 344	Jan Vermeer	10: 1862
Albert Camus	2: 349	Jules Verne	10: 1864
Paul Cézanne	3: 411	Voltaire	10: 1879
Jacques Cousteau	3: 521	<i>German</i>	
Marie Curie	3: 538	Hannah Arendt	1: 91
Claude Debussy	4: 569	John Jacob Astor	1: 118
Edgar Degas	4: 576	Johann Sebastian Bach	1: 141
Charles de Gaulle	4: 579	Klaus Barbie	1: 170
René Descartes	4: 590	Ludwig van Beethoven	2: 192
Denis Diderot	4: 606	Konrad Bloch	2: 237
Alexandre Dumas	4: 634	Johannes Brahms	2: 271
Gustave Flaubert	4: 721	Catherine the Great	3: 401
Paul Gauguin	4: 773	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Victor Hugo	5: 957	Gabriel Fahrenheit	4: 695
Joan of Arc	6: 1005	Karl Friedrich Gauss	4: 775
Marquis de Lafayette	6: 1113	Hans Geiger	5: 779
Édouard Manet	7: 1219	Brothers Grimm	5: 836
Marie Antoinette	7: 1238	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Henri Matisse	7: 1255	Werner Heisenberg	5: 868
		William Herschel	5: 893
		Adolf Hitler	5: 909
		Franz Kafka	6: 1047
		Immanuel Kant	6: 1052

Johannes Kepler 6: 1074
 Henry Kissinger 6: 1104
 Martin Luther 6: 1181
 Karl Marx 7: 1246
 Felix Mendelssohn 7: 1289
 Friedrich Nietzsche 8: 1387
 André Previn 8: 1520
 Erich Maria Remarque 8: 1564
 Leni Riefenstahl 9: 1588
 Oskar Schindler 9: 1678
 Edith Stein 9: 1749
 Wernher von Braun 10: 1882
 Richard Wagner 10: 1889

Ghanian

Kofi Annan 1: 76

Greek

Aeschylus 1: 29
 Archimedes 1: 89
 Aristophanes 1: 96
 Aristotle 1: 98
 Euclid 4: 686
 Euripides 4: 688
 Galen 4: 748
 Hippocrates 5: 902
 Homer 5: 926
 Pericles 8: 1472
 Plato 8: 1485
 Pythagoras 8: 1540
 Socrates 9: 1729
 Sophocles 9: 1734

Guatemalan

Rigoberta Menchú 7: 1286

Haitian

Jean-Bertrand Aristide 1: 93
 François Duvalier 4: 640

Hispanic American

César Chávez 3: 436
 Dennis Chavez 3: 438
 Linda Chavez 3: 440
 Selena 9: 1698

Hungarian

Joseph Pulitzer 8: 1531

Indian

Buddha 2: 310
 Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar 3: 419
 Indira Gandhi 4: 754
 Mohandas Gandhi 4: 758
 Sri Ramakrishna 8: 1550
 Salman Rushdie 9: 1649

Iranian

Ayatollah Khomeini 6: 1081
 Mohammad Reza Pahlavi 8: 1439

Iraqi

Saddam Hussein 5: 962

Irish

Samuel Beckett 2: 189
 Michael Collins 3: 501
 James Joyce 6: 1038
 C. S. Lewis 6: 1139
 George Bernard Shaw 9: 1706
 Bram Stoker 9: 1759
 Oscar Wilde 10: 1940
 William Butler Yeats 10: 1979

Israeli

Menachem Begin 2: 194
 Golda Meir 7: 1284

Italian

Fra Angelico 1: 71

Lucrezia Borgia	2: 252
Sandro Botticelli	2: 257
Caligula	2: 338
Frank Capra	2: 357
Donatello	4: 619
Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Francis of Assisi	4: 729
Galileo	4: 750
Leonardo da Vinci	6: 1136
Niccolò Machiavelli	7: 1188
Catherine de' Medici	7: 1281
Michelangelo	7: 1295
Maria Montessori	7: 1331
Benito Mussolini	7: 1367
Luciano Pavarotti	8: 1456
Antonio Stradivari	9: 1769
Amerigo Vespucci	10: 1867
Antonio Vivaldi	10: 1877

Jamaican

Marcus Garvey	4: 767
-------------------------	--------

Japanese

Hirohito	5: 904
Soichiro Honda	5: 929
Eiji Toyoda	10: 1832

Judean

Herod the Great	5: 891
---------------------------	--------

Lebanese

Kahlil Gibran	5: 788
-------------------------	--------

Libyan

Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	8: 1543
-------------------------------	---------

Lithuanian

Al Jolson	6: 1025
---------------------	---------

Macedonian

Alexander the Great	1: 43
Ptolemy I	8: 1528

Mexican

Lázaro Cárdenas	3: 361
Benito Juárez	6: 1040
Diego Rivera	9: 1593

Mongolian

Genghis Khan	5: 784
Kublai Khan	6: 1109

Native American

American Horse	1: 57
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Pocahontas	8: 1488
Sequoyah	9: 1701
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785

New Zealander

Edmund Hillary	5: 898
--------------------------	--------

Nigerian

Chinua Achebe	1: 10
-------------------------	-------

Norwegian

Thor Heyerdahl	5: 895
Henrik Ibsen	5: 970
Edvard Munch	7: 1362

Pakistani

Benazir Bhutto	2: 218
--------------------------	--------

Palestinian

Yasir Arafat	1: 86
------------------------	-------

Panamanian

Manuel Noriega 8: 1401

Persian

Harun al-Rashid 8: 1555

Polish

Baal Shem Tov 1: 137
Menachem Begin 2: 194
Frédéric Chopin 3: 464
Joseph Conrad 3: 508
Nicolaus Copernicus 3: 510
Marie Curie 3: 538
John Paul II 6: 1013
Albert Sabin 9: 1657
Isaac Bashevis Singer 9: 1724

Portuguese

Ferdinand Magellan 7: 1201

Roman

Augustus 1: 128
Julius Caesar 2: 335
Marcus Tullius Cicero 3: 475
Jesus of Nazareth 6: 1000
Marcus Aurelius 7: 1236
Mark Antony 7: 1240
Ovid 8: 1432
Virgil 10: 1874

Romanian

Elie Wiesel 10: 1939

Russian

Alexander II 1: 41
Isaac Asimov 1: 113
George Balanchine 1: 154
Irving Berlin 2: 208
Leonid Brezhnev 2: 280
Catherine the Great 3: 401

Marc Chagall 3: 414
Anton Chekhov 3: 449
Fyodor Dostoevsky 4: 624
Mikhail Gorbachev 5: 809
Wassily Kandinsky 6: 1050
Nikita Khrushchev 6: 1083
Vladimir Lenin 6: 1131
Vladimir Nabokov 7: 1371
Rudolf Nureyev 8: 1409
Ivan Pavlov 8: 1459
Anna Pavlova 8: 1462
Aleksandr Pushkin 8: 1535
Vladimir Putin 8: 1537
Andrei Sakharov 9: 1662
Joseph Stalin 9: 1743
Igor Stravinsky 9: 1773
Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky 10: 1792
Valentina Tereshkova 10: 1798
Leo Tolstoy 10: 1827
Boris Yeltsin 10: 1982

Scottish

Alexander Graham Bell 2: 196
Tony Blair 2: 232
Robert Burns 2: 317
Andrew Carnegie 3: 367
Sean Connery 3: 506
Arthur Conan Doyle 4: 629
Mary, Queen of Scots 7: 1249
John Muir 7: 1360
Walter Scott 9: 1693
Robert Louis Stevenson 9: 1757
James Watt 10: 1910

Serbian

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310

South African

Christiaan Barnard 1: 173
P. W. Botha 2: 255
F. W. de Klerk 4: 581

Nelson Mandela 7: 1216
Desmond Tutu 10: 1847

Spanish

Pablo Casals 3: 386
Catherine of Aragon 3: 399
Miguel de Cervantes 3: 408
Salvador Dali 3: 549
Hernando de Soto 4: 592
Placido Domingo 4: 616
Joan Miró 7: 1316
Pablo Picasso 8: 1479
Juan Ponce de León 8: 1501

Swedish

Ingmar Bergman 2: 206
Anders Celsius 3: 407
Carl Linnaeus 6: 1157
Alfred Nobel 8: 1397

Swiss

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886
Carl Jung 6: 1043
Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus 8: 1443
Jean Piaget 8: 1477

Tibetan

Dalai Lama 3: 546

Trinidadian

Stokely Carmichael 3: 363

Ugandan

Idi Amin 1: 59

Venetian

Marco Polo 8: 1498

Vietnamese

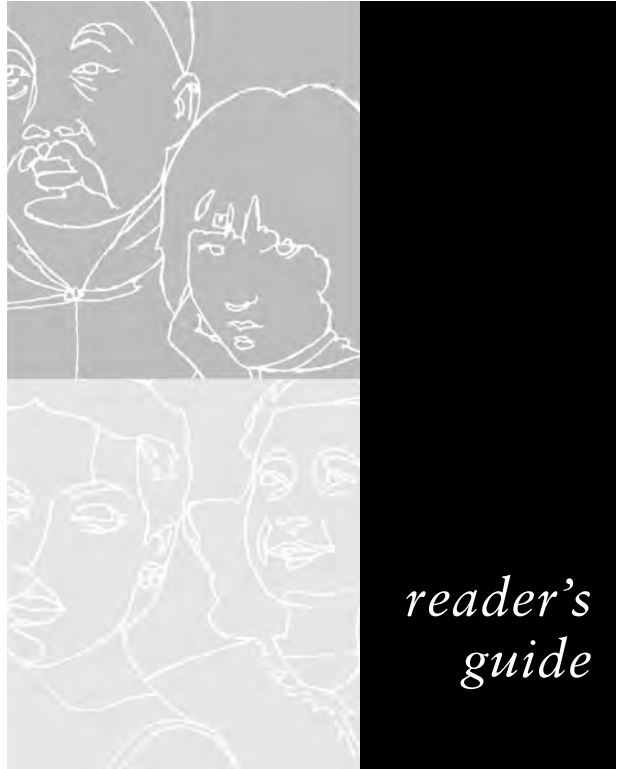
Ho Chi Minh 5: 913

Welsh

Roald Dahl 3: 543
Anthony Hopkins 5: 938
Dylan Thomas 10: 1810

Yugoslav

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310
Marshal Tito 10: 1821



U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography features 750 biographies of notable historic and contemporary figures from around the world. Chosen from American history, world history, literature, science and math, arts and entertainment, and the social sciences, the entries focus on the people studied most often in middle school and high school, as identified by teachers and media specialists.

The biographies are arranged alphabetically across ten volumes. The two- to four-page entries cover the early lives, influences, and careers of notable men and women of diverse fields and ethnic groups. Each essay includes birth and death information in the header and concludes with a list of sources

for further information. A contents section lists biographees by their nationality. Nearly 750 photographs and illustrations are featured, and a general index provides quick access to the people and subjects discussed throughout *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

Special thanks

Much appreciation goes to Mary Alice Anderson, media specialist at Winona Middle School in Winona, Minnesota, and Nina Levine, library media specialist at Blue Mountain Middle School in Cortlandt Manor, New York, for their assistance in developing the entry list. Many thanks also go to the following people for their important editorial contri-

butions: Taryn Benbow-Pfalzgraf (proofreading), Jodi Essey-Stapleton (copyediting and proofing), Margaret Haerens (proofreading), Courtney Mroch (copyediting), and Theresa Murray (copyediting and indexing). Special gratitude goes to Linda Mahoney at LM Design for her excellent typesetting work and her flexible attitude.

Comments and suggestions

We welcome your comments on the *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*. Please write: Editors, *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*, U•X•L, 27500 Drake Road, Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535; call toll-free: 1-800-877-4253; fax to 248-699-8097; or send e-mail via www.gale.com.



DOUGLAS MACARTHUR

Born: January 26, 1880

Little Rock, Arkansas

Died: April 5, 1964

Washington, D.C.

American general

American general Douglas MacArthur attained widespread fame through his military activities in the Pacific region during World War II (1939–45) and the Korean War (1950–53). His military conquests were sometimes inspiring and other times highly criticized. Regardless, MacArthur

remains the key figure in the American victory in the Pacific during World War II.

Student to soldier

Douglas MacArthur was born in Little Rock, Arkansas, on January 26, 1880, the descendant of a long line of military men. His father, Arthur MacArthur, was a well-known general. Educated in a random fashion on the rugged Western frontier posts, Douglas MacArthur recalled, “I learned to ride and shoot even before I could read or write.”

An average student, MacArthur began to excel upon entering the military academy at West Point, New York, in 1899. Proud and convinced of his destiny as a military leader,



Douglas MacArthur.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

MacArthur graduated first in his class in 1903 with the highest scholastic average at the academy in twenty-five years. After graduation from the academy, MacArthur sailed to the Philippines for his first military assignment. In 1904 he was promoted to first lieutenant, and that October was ordered to become his father's aide-de-camp (secretary) in Japan. Shortly thereafter he embarked upon a tour of the Far East, which he later called the "most important preparation of my entire life."

Rising military career

Returning to the United States, MacArthur began his fast rise through the mili-

tary ranks. In 1906 he was appointed aide-de-camp to President Theodore Roosevelt (1858–1919) and in 1913 became a member of the general staff. He was appointed colonel of the Rainbow Division during World War I (1914–18), or the Great War, in which European powers, along with America and Russia, waged war over control of Europe. MacArthur emerged as a talented and colorful military leader. He returned from combat with many military honors.

Following the war, he became a brigadier general and superintendent of West Point, where he remained until 1922. After another assignment in the Philippines, MacArthur was appointed chief of staff of the U.S. Army in 1930, a post he held through 1935.

In between wars

The years between World War I and World War II were frustrating ones for professional soldiers, and MacArthur was no exception. In 1922 he married Louise Cromwell Brooks and divorced her in 1929. Soon afterward, the national economy bottomed out during the 1930s, as the Great Depression (a period from 1929 to 1939 during which nearly half the industrial workers in the country lost their jobs) consumed America. Gloomy about the social unrest of the 1930s, he warned a Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, audience in 1932 about the presence of Communists (people who believed in communism, a political system in which goods and property are owned by the government). At a time of great uncertainty, MacArthur was able to stir fears that Communists were living in America.

In June 1932 thousands of ragged veterans of World War I marched on Washington,

D.C., to petition Congress for early payment of their war service bonuses. Camped with their wives and children, they were set upon by tanks, four troops of cavalry with drawn swords, and steel-helmeted infantry with fixed bayonets—all led by MacArthur. He argued that his actions narrowly prevented a Communist revolution. This would not be the last time MacArthur would favor extreme measures of force.

World War II

In 1935 MacArthur went back to military service when President Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945) sent him to the Philippines to develop a defensive strategy for the islands. Only two years later, he married Jean Marie Faircloth and retired from the U.S. Army in 1937. His retirement would not last, though. With the heightening crisis in Asia, he was recalled to active duty as a lieutenant general and commander of U.S. forces in the Far East in July 1941.

Despite advance warning, the Japanese invasion of December 1941 badly defeated MacArthur's forces in the Philippines. MacArthur was determined to hold the Philippines but the situation was hopeless. He was ordered to withdraw to Australia to take command of Pacific operations. Reluctantly, MacArthur agreed, and accompanied by his wife and child he set out on a daring escape by patrol torpedo (PT) boat, a small, lightweight craft. Discouraged by the American defeat, he announced upon arrival, "I came through and I shall return."

Success in the Pacific

After the Philippine defeat, MacArthur began the long campaign to smash Japanese

military power in the Pacific during World War II. Slowed in the early months by shortages of men and supplies, MacArthur's forces eventually won major victories. Although his personal responsibility for the battles was exaggerated by the skillful news management of his staff, there can be little question of the general's success in New Guinea and in the Philippines.

In 1944 MacArthur convinced President Roosevelt that an invasion of the Philippines was necessary to ensure victory in the Pacific. In October 1944 MacArthur waded onto the invasion beach at Leyte and delivered his prepared address into a waiting microphone: "People of the Philippines: I have returned. . . . Rally to me." For MacArthur, as for millions of Americans, it was an inspiring moment, possibly even more inspiring than his acceptance of the Japanese surrender at Tokyo Bay on September 2, 1945.

With the end of World War II, President Harry Truman (1884–1972) appointed MacArthur supreme commander of the Allied powers in Japan. During this appointment, MacArthur successfully reduced Japan's military, helped restore the Japanese economy, and advanced religious freedoms and civil liberties in postwar Japan.

A new war

The outbreak of the Korean War, in which American-led forces aided South Korea in their fight against Communist North Korea, resulted in MacArthur's appointment as commander of the United Nations (UN) forces. In the first months of combat, MacArthur launched a brilliant attack at Inchon that severely hurt the North Korean armies.

MacArthur then advanced his troops to the Yalu River, the boundary between North Korea and China. Failing to consider the possibility of a Chinese attack, he assured his troops that they would be home in time for Christmas dinner. In November, however, massive Chinese armies sent the UN forces into retreat. Angered and embarrassed, MacArthur publicly called for the extension of the war to China. President Truman, who wanted to limit American involvement in the East, had repeatedly warned MacArthur not to express his own ideas of the war to the public. Truman finally relieved the general of his command in April 1951.

“Old Soldiers Never Die”

MacArthur’s return to the United States was greeted by massive public expressions of support for the general and criticisms from the president. On April 19, 1951, he presented his case to a joint session of Congress, attracting a tremendous radio and television audience. His speech ended on a note that stirred millions of Americans: “I now close my military career and just fade away.”

MacArthur became more active than he had predicted. He testified at great length before the Senate Armed Services and Foreign Relations committees. Then he traveled across the country criticizing the Truman administration, insisting they had sold out Asia to communism. In December 1952 President-elect Dwight Eisenhower (1890–1969) met with MacArthur to hear the general’s views on ending the Korean War. MacArthur supported a peace conference that, if unsuccessful, would be followed by “the atomic bombing of enemy military concentrations and installations in North Korea.” MacArthur also called for mili-

tary action to overthrow Communist China. As a result, MacArthur was not consulted again.

MacArthur then retreated to a life of out of the public eye. A soldier to the end, he died in the army’s Walter Reed Hospital on April 5, 1964. His wife, Jean, died on January 22, 2000, at the age of 101. Although controversial throughout much of his career, MacArthur is remembered as one of America’s great military leaders.

For More Information

Finkelstein, Norman H. *The Emperor General: A Biography of Douglas MacArthur*. Minneapolis: Dillon Press, 1989.

MacArthur, Douglas. *Reminiscences*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1964.

Manchester, William. *American Caesar, Douglas MacArthur, 1880–1964*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1978.

Perret, Geoffrey. *Old Soldiers Never Die: The Life of Douglas MacArthur*. New York: Random House, 1996.

NICCOLÒ MACHIAVELLI

Born: May 3, 1469

Florence, Italy

Died: May 22, 1527

Florence, Italy

Italian statesman and author

The Italian author and statesman Niccolò Machiavelli is best known for *The Prince*, in which he voiced his political philosophy.

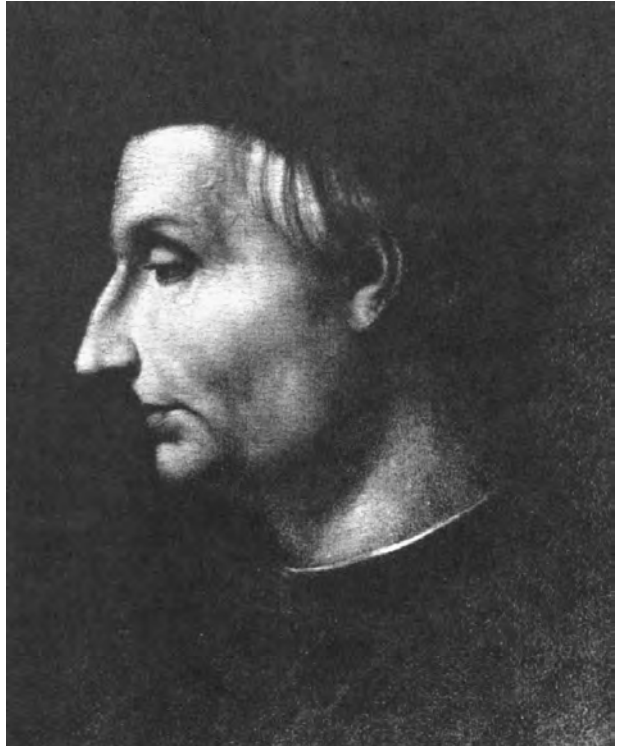
Early life

Niccolò Machiavelli was born on May 3, 1469, in Florence, Italy, of nobility, though by no means wealth. His parents, Bernardo and Bartolomea, had three other children, two daughters and a son. Bernardo was a lawyer and small landowner with a small salary. Machiavelli's education started at age seven. Some accounts say that Machiavelli spent the years from 1487 to 1495 working for a Florentine banker. A love of books was a family value that Machiavelli shared. His writings prove that he tirelessly read the classics.

In 1498 Machiavelli was named chancellor (secretary to a nobleman, prince, or king) and secretary of the second chancellery (chief executive officer) of the Florentine Republic (government in Florence whose leaders were voted for by citizens). His duties consisted chiefly of carrying out the policy decisions of others, writing diplomatic letters, reading and writing reports, and taking notes; he also went on some twenty-three diplomatic missions (formal visits by a representative of a nation to foreign countries to conduct discussions on international affairs) to foreign states. These included four trips to France and two to the court of Rome.

In 1502 Machiavelli married Marietta Corsini, who bore him four sons and two daughters. His grandson, Giovanni Ricci, is credited with saving many of Machiavelli's letters and writings.

In 1510 Machiavelli, inspired by his Roman history, was active in organizing a citizen militia (a body of citizens, who are not soldiers by career, called to duty in a national emergency) of the Florentine Republic. In August 1512 a Spanish army entered Tuscany and sacked Prato. In terror, the Florentines



Niccolò Machiavelli.

removed their leader Soderini, a man Machiavelli characterized as “good, but weak,” and allowed the Medici, a family formerly in power, to return. On November 7 Machiavelli was dismissed from his role as chancellor. Soon afterward he was arrested, imprisoned, and subjected to torture as a suspected schemer (one who plots or plans) against the Medici family. Though innocent, he remained a suspect for years to come. Unable to secure an appointment from the reinstated (reestablished) Medici, he turned to writing.

The Prince

Machiavelli had a passion for ancient history. He had a fierce desire to rebuild the gov-

ernment with a stronger political and moral foundation, similar to that of the Roman Republic (107–101 B.C.E.). He felt the biggest need of his day was a strong political and military leader who could bring together northern Italy, ridding it of French and Spanish influence. At the time that he wrote *The Prince* he pictured such a possibility while the restored Medici ruled both Florence and the papacy (system of government of the Roman Catholic Church of which the pope is the head). This hope is played out in the final chapter of *The Prince*. It is a heartfelt plea to his Medici patrons (people who support a specific cause, a person, or an establishment) to set Italy free from the “barbarians.” It closes with a quotation from Petrarch’s patriotic poem *Italia mia*: “Virtue will take arms against fury [anger], and the battle will be brief; for the ancient valor [courage] in Italian hearts is not yet dead.” No one listened to this plea in 1513, but it was to play a role three centuries later in the Risorgimento (a movement for Italian unification).

The chapters of *The Prince* are written in a clear and straightforward style. Earlier political writers had treated politics as a branch of morals. Machiavelli broke with this long tradition and treated politics on its own. Machiavellian politics described the world as it was, rather than what people imagined or were taught to believe. This was a big change in tradition.

Abandoning the Christian view of history as guided by God, Machiavelli viewed events in purely human terms. Often it is fortune that gives—or takes away—the political leader’s opportunity for significant (important and meaningful) action. Like others in the Renaissance, Machiavelli believed that

man had the ability to control his own fate. This was the opposite of the Middle Ages’ (period in Western European history that started with the end of the Roman empire and continued to the fifteenth century) concept of an all-powerful divine will (a higher soul or spirit that controls the destinies and actions of all) or the ancient Greeks’ crushing fate (inescapable downfall). Machiavelli’s *virtù* (artistry) in politics—unlike Christian virtue—is a useful combination of force and level-headedness.

Serious critics of Machiavelli sometimes forget that he attempted to describe rather than to invent the rules of political success. For him the state was greater than its citizens and their individual interests; its health consisted in unity, but even at its height its lifetime was expected to end at some point.

Other works

Certain passages in the *Discourses* (I, 11 and 12; II, 2) explained Machiavelli’s argument with the Church: by bad example, the court of Rome, Italy, had lost its devotion and religion; the Italian states were weak and divided because the Church, too weak politically to dominate them, had nevertheless prevented any one state from uniting them. He suggested that the Church might have been destroyed by its own corruption (deception and lies) had not St. Francis (c. 1182–1226) and St. Dominic (c. 1170–1221) restored it by founding new orders. However, Machiavelli gives a good comparison between the pagan (religion of many gods) religion of ancient Rome and the Christian religion.

As a historian, Machiavelli in his *History of Florence* did better than earlier historians, because he focused on the underlying causes

rather than the chain of events in the history of the Florentines from the death of Lorenzo de' Medici (1442–1492) in 1492. Medici was an Italian merchant prince who, without an official title, led the Florence government until his son took over.

Machiavelli stuck closely to his motto that a servant of government must be loyal and self-sacrificing. Nowhere did he suggest that the political morality (sense of right and wrong) of princes is a model for day-to-day dealings between ordinary citizens. His reputation as being evil and disloyal is largely undeserved; it began not long after his death. His works were banned in the first printed Index (1559). In Elizabethan England (England during Queen Elizabeth's reign, 1558–1603), Machiavelli was represented on the stage and in literature as evil. The primary source of this misrepresentation (incorrect presentation) was the translation into English by Simon Patericke in 1577 of a work popularly called *Contre-Machiavel*, which misrepresented Machiavelli and blamed his teachings for the St. Bartholomew Night massacre of 1572 (a night chosen by the Queen of Florence to rid the city of all non-Catholics). A poem by Gabriel Harvey the following year falsely blamed Machiavelli for four principal crimes: poison, murder, deception (the act of lying and cheating), and violence. Machiavelian enemies followed in works by other playwrights (writers of plays).

Machiavelli's values are represented in nineteenth-century liberalism (political philosophy based on belief in progress, the goodness of man, and individual freedom). Both Machiavelli and liberalism support government over religious power, the recruitment (the act of bringing together) of citizen

armies, the preference for a government with voting citizens and elected officials rather than a king or queen, and the ideals of honesty, work and society's responsibility overriding the lone citizen's.

Though he was unappreciated in his time and times thereafter, Machiavelli's influence lives on in the thinking of people worldwide. He died in Florence in June 1527, receiving the last rites of the Church that he had bitterly criticized.

For More Information

Godman, Peter. *From Poliziano to Machiavelli*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1998.

Viroli, Maurizio. *Niccolò's Smile: A Biography of Macchiavelli*. Edited by Antony Shugaar. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 2000.

DOLLEY MADISON

Born: May 20, 1768

New Garden, North Carolina

Died: July 12, 1849

Washington, D.C.

American first lady

Dolley Madison was the much-admired wife of the fourth U.S. president, James Madison (1751–1836). She was highly respected by some of history's greatest politicians, including President Andrew Jackson (1767–1845), who



Dolley Madison.

Courtesy of the National Archives and Records Administration.

once described her as a “national institution.” This was high praise during a time when women were expected to remain in the background and be seen but not heard.

Life in Philadelphia

Dolley Payne Madison was born on May 20, 1768, on a farm in New Garden, North Carolina. Her parents were John Payne Jr. and Mary Coles Payne, who were Quaker Virginians. (The Quakers were a religious society that was started in the seventeenth century.)

In 1783 after the Revolutionary War (1775–83), in which the American colonies fought for independence from British rule, her parents made the decision to sell their plantation. They freed their slaves and moved the family north when Dolley was fifteen years old. Her father used the money made from selling the plantation to set up a business in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania.

When Dolley was nineteen years old, the representatives to the Constitutional Convention (May 25–September 17, 1787) gathered in Philadelphia. Many important representatives attended the convention, which resulted in the creation of the U.S. Constitution. George Washington (1732–1799), Alexander Hamilton (1755–1804), and Benjamin Franklin (1706–1790) were among those who attended the convention. At this time Dolley saw for the first time a Virginian named James Madison, who was later called the “Father of the Constitution.”

Family tragedy

Dolley Payne grew into a beautiful and popular woman. At the age of twenty-one she met John Todd, a lawyer, and the two were married in January 1790. The couple eventually had two sons. Then, in August 1793, an outbreak of yellow fever (a deadly disease that is spread by mosquitoes) occurred. A great number of people died, including Dolley’s husband and her youngest son. Although she also became ill, she eventually recovered after a long, slow fight.

A new life

In the spring of 1794 James Madison requested a meeting with Dolley Payne Todd. Madison was an extremely ambitious man

who was well known in Philadelphia. He helped draft the Constitution, the document that represents the basic laws on which America is founded. He also was responsible for suggesting the Bill of Rights, the first ten constitutional amendments that safeguard an individual's civil freedoms. Within a few weeks after the two met, it was widely rumored that they were engaged. Although she denied this rumor, it proved to be true, as Dolley Payne Todd and James Madison were married in September 1794.

Over the next several years, Dolley and James observed and at times were directly involved in some of the most important events in the history of the United States. In 1797 they saw John Adams inaugurated as president. In 1801 Thomas Jefferson began the first of his two terms as president. At that time, James Madison was made secretary of state. In 1803 the United States bought the Louisiana Territory from France. As a result of this purchase (the Louisiana Purchase), the United States had suddenly doubled in size.

As first lady

When Jefferson decided not to run for a third term, James Madison was elected president of the United States. Madison began his first term in 1809, and Dolley Madison became the first lady. Some say she took on the job as if she had been born to fill it. She was widely known for her caring and loving nature, her fashion sense, and her graceful manners.

In 1812 James Madison was reelected and the War of 1812 (1812–14) began. The war was fought between Great Britain and the United States over Britain's disregard for American neutrality and their practice of

boarding American ships and forcing sailors to join the British navy. On August 24, 1814, British troops moved into Washington, D.C., and Dolley Madison was told that she should leave the city. She made certain that she saved her husband's important papers, the silver, and a portrait of George Washington. Madison narrowly escaped the British, who burned the Capitol Building and set fire to the President's House.

In the following years, Madison witnessed the end of the war and James Monroe's inauguration as president. After leaving office, the Madisons moved to Montpelier, Virginia. They found peace in Virginia during their retirement years. They spent their time improving James's beloved home, where Dolley Madison would remain for the next twenty years.

James Madison's death

James Madison died in 1836. He willed his papers to Dolley Madison so that she could make some money by having them published. The Madison papers were James's writings on the many years of significant historical events. After her husband's death, Dolley Madison moved back to Washington, D.C. She then sold some of her late husband's papers to Congress and received \$30,000 for them.

In the remaining years of Madison's life, she would see four different presidents enter office, the rest of the Madison papers sold to Congress, the laying of the first stone for the Washington Monument, and the introduction of the first telegraph (an early communication system). She had led a full, active, and productive life. On July 12, 1849, Dolley Madison died in Washington, D.C.

For More Information

- Davidson, Mary R. *Dolly Madison: Famous First Lady*. Champaign, IL: Garrard, 1966. Reprint, New York: Chelsea Juniors, 1992.
- Flanagan, Alice K. *Dolley Payne Todd Madison, 1768–1849*. New York: Children's Press, 1997.
- Gerson, Noel B. *The Velvet Glove, A Life of Dolly Madison*. Nashville, TN: T. Nelson, 1975.
- Moore, Virginia. *The Madisons: A Biography*. McGraw Hill, 1979.
- Pflueger, Lynda. *Dolley Madison: Courageous First Lady*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1999.

JAMES MADISON

Born: March 16, 1751

Port Conway, Virginia

Died: June 28, 1836

Orange County, Virginia

American president and founding father

James Madison, the fourth president of the United States, was one of the principal founders of America's republican form of government. As a Founding Father he helped plan and approve the U.S. Constitution and the Bill of Rights, two documents that laid the foundation for the American way of life.

Early life and schooling

James Madison lived all his life (except for his presidential years) in the beautiful county of Orange, Virginia, on a 5,000-acre plantation that produced tobacco and grains and was worked by perhaps one hundred slaves. After being schooled at home, Madison went to preparatory school and then to the College of New Jersey at Princeton. The young man took to his studies, which included learning Latin and Greek.

Madison was continually exposed to the Christian religion and was influenced by the new thought of the eighteenth century. He admired writers and thinkers like John Locke (1632–1704), Isaac Newton (1642–1727), Jonathan Swift (1667–1745), and others. Madison was a founding member of the American Whig Society, a debating club in Princeton. During his college career, waves of revolution rolled through the campus as protests increased against British policies.

American Revolution

Upon graduation, Madison's health was weakening and he was forced to live at home, where he continued his education. Once recovered, Madison served on the Orange County Committee of Safety for two years. By then, the American Revolution (1775–83) had erupted as American forces fought for independence from Great Britain.

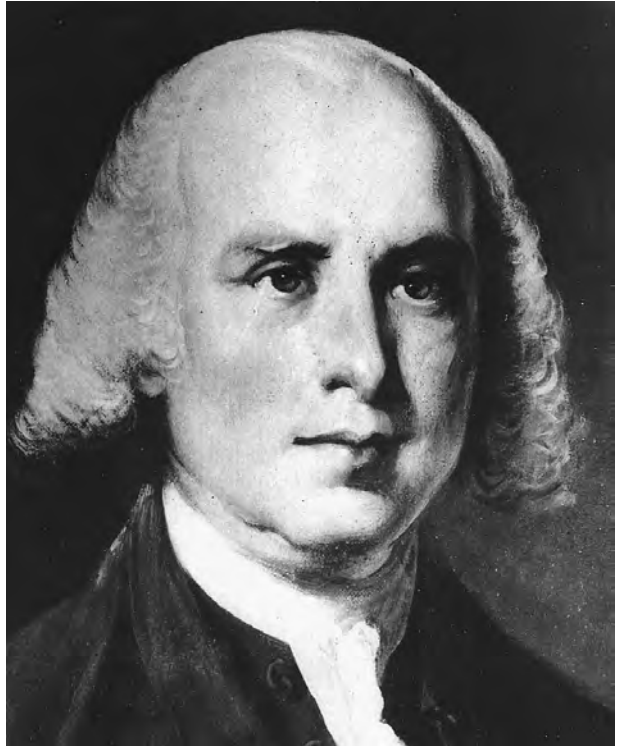
In 1776 Madison was elected to the Virginia convention. The convention decided to move for independence from Britain and drafted a new state constitution, or a body of laws that formally lay out the structure of a new government. Madison's special contribution was in strengthening the articles on reli-

gious freedom to proclaim “liberty of conscience for all.” Elected to the governor’s council in 1777, he moved to Williamsburg, Virginia. For two years he dealt with the routine problems of the Revolutionary War. He also began a lifelong friendship with Virginia governor Thomas Jefferson (1743–1826).

Madison’s skill led to his 1780 election to the Continental Congress, which brought famous delegates to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, to discuss the problems with British rule. During the first year he became one of the leaders of the so-called nationalist group. The group believed that success of the American Revolution was possible only under a strong central government. By the end of his service in 1783, the peace treaty with Britain was passed and the war ended. Madison was among the half dozen leading promoters of stronger national government and earned a reputation as a well-informed and effective leader. Madison spent three years in Virginia helping pass Jefferson’s bill for religious freedom and other reform measures.

The Constitution

In May 1787 Madison attended the Constitutional Convention, whose representatives gathered in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. The convention brought together America’s leading politicians, including Benjamin Franklin (1706–1799) and John Adams (1735–1826). The convention would produce the Constitution, the document that embodies the principles on which America is founded. At the convention Madison supported the Virginia plan for giving real power to the national government. He guided George Washington (1732–1799) and other Virginia delegates to support this plan. In the



James Madison.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

end, Madison became the most constructive member of the convention.

Madison’s basic contribution was the idea that an enlarged, strengthened national government was in fact the best way to protect freedom and expand self-government. In addition to taking part in the debates, Madison took notes on them. Published after his death, these give the only full record of the convention.

Establishment of the new government

Madison shared leadership in the ratification, or passing, of the Constitution with

New York representative Alexander Hamilton (1755–1804). Madison designed a strategy for the supporters of the Constitution (the Federalists) and wrote portions of the *Federalist Papers*, which were essays on political theory for the new country. In a dramatic debate with Senator Patrick Henry (1736–1799), Madison helped bring about the ratification of the Constitution in June 1788. Then, as Washington's closest adviser and as a member of the first federal House of Representatives, Madison led in establishing the new government. He drafted Washington's inaugural address, or first speech as president, and helped the president during his first term.

January 1790 marked the beginning of Madison's—along with Jefferson's—leadership of what became the Democratic-Republican party. Madison opposed the privileged position Hamilton gave to commerce and wealth. This attitude became the foundation of their political party. Madison also greatly opposed Jay's Treaty, which settled differences between America and Great Britain regarding trade. Madison felt that the treaty would align the United States with England in a way that would betray the nation's principles, or standards. Thus, the final ratification of Jay's Treaty (April 1796) over Madison's bitter opposition marked his declining influence in Congress. A year later he retired to Virginia.

The political frustrations of the years 1793 to 1800 were relieved by Madison's happy marriage in 1794 to Dolley (or Dolly) Payne Todd. Dolley, a widow, was a beautiful and respected woman. Later, when Madison was elected president, she would play an important part in shaping the role of first lady.

Secretary of state

Madison worked hard to secure Jefferson's election as president in 1800, and in response he was appointed secretary of state. Madison skillfully aided the president in the Louisiana Purchase, which acquired land west of the Mississippi River from France. The purchase would nearly double the country's size and begin a push westward to expand the young nation.

The renewed war between France and Britain, however, became a major crisis, as both powers inflicted heavy damage on American ships. Madison promoted the 1807 embargo, or stoppage, which barred American ships from the high seas. However, the nation's economy was fragile and heavily dependent on trade with Europe. The embargo did not last. Madison soon accepted its repeal at the end of Jefferson's administration.

As president

Elected president in 1808, Madison continued his struggle to find peace in a world at war. Unfortunately, ineffective policies, disagreement within his party, and Cabinet restructuring would weaken Madison's power as president. After relations with England fell apart, war was declared in June 1812. Many New England preachers and politicians opposed the war, and their lack of support severely slowed the war effort and added to the president's difficulties. He nonetheless was reelected easily in 1812.

Madison was hopeful for a swift victory in the new war. However, several military setbacks destroyed these hopes. When America won battles at sea in 1813, the tables seemed

to be turning. But problems mounted for the president. Chaos in American finance, problems with European allies, and another ineffective military campaign left Madison discouraged, and he suffered a nearly fatal illness in June 1813. The young government seemed to be failing apart due to the war.

The summer of 1814 brought to the American battlefields thousands of battle-hardened British troops. A small but well-disciplined British force defeated the disorganized Americans as Madison watched from a nearby hillside. His embarrassment was complete when he saw flames of the burning Capitol and White House while fleeing across the Potomac River. However, after he returned to Washington three days later, he was soon cheered by news of the British defeat in Baltimore Harbor. News also arrived that two American forces had driven back a powerful British force coming down Lake Champlain in Vermont. On Christmas Eve, 1814, a peace treaty was signed between Britain and America.

Years of retirement

In March 1817 Madison retired from public office and returned to his home in Montpelier, Virginia. During the next years, Madison practiced scientific agriculture, helped Jefferson found the University of Virginia, and advised President James Monroe (1758–1831) on foreign policy. He returned officially to public life only to take part in the Virginia constitutional convention of 1829. But his health slowly declined, forcing him more and more to be a silent observer.

By the time of his death on June 28, 1836, he was the last of the great founders of the American republic. After his death, Dol-

ley Madison published her husband's personal papers. The Madison papers offer wonderful insights into the politics of the new nation during a time of great historical significance.

For More Information

Leavell, J. Perry, Jr. *James Madison*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.

Madison, James. *James Madison: Writings*. New York: Library of America, 1999.

Malone, Mary. *James Madison*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.

McCoy, Drew R. *The Last of the Fathers: James Madison and the Republican Legacy*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1989.

Polikoff, Barbara G. *James Madison: 4th President of the United States*. Ada, OK: Garrett Educational Corp., 1989.

MADONNA

Born: August 16, 1958

Bay City, Michigan

American singer, dancer, and actress

Singer, dancer, and actress Madonna is a sensational self-promoter who drove herself to stardom on the pop music charts, in concert halls, on film, and in music videos.

Early life

Born on August 16, 1958, in Bay City, Michigan, Madonna Louise Veronica Ciccone



Madonna.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

was the third of six children in a Catholic family. Her father Sylvio, also known as Tony, was a design engineer for Chrysler/General Dynamics. Madonna's mother was of French Canadian descent. She died of breast cancer when Madonna was five years old. Tony Ciccone moved the family to Pontiac, Michigan, and he married one of the women hired to care for the Ciccone household. The adjustment was difficult for Madonna as the eldest daughter. She had considered herself the "lady of the house" and had received much of her father's affection and attention.

Madonna acted in school plays in her early school years. As a teenager she discov-

ered her love and talent for dancing, an activity she pursued under the direction and leadership of Christopher Flynn, her private ballet instructor. Madonna worked hard and played hard as well, something Flynn made easy by introducing her to the disco nightlife of Detroit, Michigan. Still, she cared for her younger brothers and sisters and worked hard in school. She graduated early from high school and was awarded a dance scholarship to the University of Michigan. She stayed two years before going to New York City in 1978 with thirty-seven dollars and a wealth of determination and ambition.

Pop music breakthrough

Madonna moved into an apartment in New York City's East Village, a poorer neighborhood filled with crime and drug problems. Her first jobs included figure modeling for artists and acting in low-budget movies. She danced briefly with the Alvin Ailey American Dance Theater and studied for a time with choreographer (one who creates and arranges dance performances) Pearl Lang before going to Paris, France, as a singer and dancer with French disco artist Patrick Hernandez. Madonna had developed a fascination with music. She played drums and sang backup in several small bands. When she returned to New York she wrote and recorded songs and hung out in popular Manhattan nightclubs. She was signed to a recording contract with Sire Records in October 1982.

The album *Madonna* was released in July 1983. Repeat club performances and radio airplay of several cuts from the album eventually earned her three huge hits with "Holiday," "Lucky Star," and "Borderline." A series of hit

songs, videos, concert tours, and films followed. A brief performance in the film *Vision Quest* resulted in the top-five hit “Crazy for You.” Her second album, *Like a Virgin*, released in 1984, produced two number one hits—the title track and “Material Girl.” In early 1985 she went on her first concert tour, which was so successful that she had to switch to larger locations to meet the demand for tickets. Thousands of teenage girls all over the country began tying lace bows on top of their heads, wearing underwear as outerwear, and walking the halls of schools and shopping malls as “Madonna wannabees.” Madonna’s appearance in the film *Desperately Seeking Susan* in 1985 led to another popular single and video, “In the Groove.”

Increasing popularity and criticism

Madonna married actor Sean Penn in 1985. In 1986 she released her third album, *True Blue*, from which three singles topped the charts: “Papa Don’t Preach,” “True Blue,” and “Live to Tell,” which also appeared in *At Close Range*, a film starring Penn. In 1987 a movie starring Madonna called *Who’s That Girl* was largely ignored, but the accompanying soundtrack and concert tour were successful.

The release of Madonna’s album *Like a Prayer* (1989) came at the same time as the breakup of her marriage. The video of the title song, showing Madonna confessing to a priest and then engaging in suggestive behavior with him, caused a stir in the Catholic Church. The controversy (dispute) resulted in a disagreement over a five million dollar endorsement (paid public support of a company’s products) contract with the Pepsi company. Controversy again surrounded Madonna in 1990 when the music video channel MTV refused to play the

racy video for “Justify My Love,” a new track from her greatest hits album *The Immaculate Collection*, before 11:00 P.M.

Other films featuring Madonna include *Shanghai Surprise* (1986), in which she co-starred with then-husband Sean Penn; *Dick Tracy* (1989), which was accompanied by a soundtrack of Madonna songs; and *Truth or Dare*, a feature-length collection of footage from her Blonde Ambition Tour of 1990–91. Madonna also appeared in *A League of Their Own* (1992) and *Body of Evidence* (1993). Each work kept the press and critics focused on her.

Money machine

By 1992 Madonna’s popularity stretched across the world, and she had established herself as a sharp, confident businesswoman. She signed a sixty million dollar contract with Time-Warner, which included her own record company (under the Maverick label) and called for her to make videos, films, books, merchandise, and more than six albums. The announcement of the deal was timed with the release of the album *Erotica*, an extended video, and an adults-only picture book called *Sex*, featuring black-and-white photographs in which Madonna appears mostly without clothes with everything from men and women (in all combinations, positions, and numbers) to chairs, dogs, and slices of pizza. She was even shown hitchhiking wearing nothing but high heels. The book was a best-seller across the country.

The 1994 release of *Bedtime Stories*, written mainly by Madonna, showed her with a softer image and more soulful sound. In the mid-1990s she set her sights on playing the leading role in Andrew Lloyd Webber’s

(1948–) movie musical *Evita*, and after repeated tryouts, she convinced producers that she would bring a unique understanding to the lead role of Argentine leader Eva Peron (1919–1952). In her personal life, Madonna settled into a relationship with Carlos Leon, a personal trainer. In 1995 she released her second greatest hits album, *Something to Remember*.

In 1996 Madonna gave birth to a girl named Lourdes Maria Ciccone Leon (Lola for short). Madonna described the event to *People* magazine as “the greatest miracle of my life.” She even traded in her pink Hollywood mansion for a home in a low-key suburb of Los Angeles, California. Meanwhile, her determination to play the starring role in *Evita* paid off, although her performance received mixed reviews. In 1997 the song “You Must Love Me” from the film’s soundtrack won the Academy Award for best song.

Balancing work and family

In 1998 Madonna released *Ray of Light*. The album reflected her study of the kabbalah (an ancient Jewish teaching) and interest in Far East Indian culture. Its electronic influence also kept Madonna in touch with modern dance culture, proving to critics that she still knew how to stay ahead of the pack. The album received rave reviews and was one of her best-selling records. It also won Grammy Awards for best dance recording, best pop album, and best music video (short form).

That next year, Madonna contributed the single “Beautiful Stranger” to the *Austin Powers: The Spy Who Shagged Me* soundtrack. The single won a Grammy Award for best song written for a motion picture, television or other visual media. Madonna co-starred in

the film *The Next Best Thing* in 2000. While the film got poor reviews, the soundtrack did moderately well. It contained two new Madonna songs, “American Pie” (a remake of the Don McLean classic) and “Time Stood Still.” It was Madonna’s first record for which she was the executive producer.

In August 2000 Madonna gave birth to a son named Rocco. The child was her son with British film director Guy Ritchie. Shortly after that event, Madonna released *Music*, which carried on the electronic element she introduced in *Ray of Light*. The album received mostly good reviews. In December 2000 Madonna and Ritchie had their son baptized in a thirteenth-century cathedral in Dornoch, Scotland. The next day, Madonna and Ritchie were married at Scotland’s nineteenth-century Skibo Castle.

Madonna, the Material Girl turned serious actress, singer, songwriter and mom, appears to have it all. She accepts it all—including the constant media attention—with calm, as if she were planning the next phase. She told *Time* magazine, “I never wish I had a different life. I am lucky to be in the position of power that I am in and to be intelligent.... It’s not my nature to just kick back.”

For More Information

Morton, Andrew. *Madonna*. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 2001.

Sexton, Adam. *Desperately Seeking Madonna: In Search of the Meaning of the World’s Most Famous Woman*. New York: Delta, 1993.

Taraborrelli, J. Randy. *Madonna: An Intimate Biography*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 2001.

FERDINAND MAGELLAN

Born: 1480

Oporto, Portugal

Died: April 27, 1521

Cebu, Philippines

Portuguese explorer

While in the service of Spain, the Portuguese explorer Ferdinand Magellan led the first European voyage of discovery to circumnavigate (travel around) the globe. His voyage provided clear proof that the Earth is round.

Early life and travels

Ferdinand Magellan was born in Oporto, Portugal, in 1480. His parents were members of the Portuguese nobility, and the young Magellan found himself in the service of royalty at an early age. He was only twelve when he began serving the queen of Portugal as a page, a position of employment for youths in royal courts. As a young member of Queen Leonora's School of Pages in Lisbon (the Portuguese capital) Magellan was encouraged to learn subjects that would aid him greatly later, such as cartography (mapmaking), astronomy, and celestial navigation (learning how to steer a ship based on the positions of the stars).

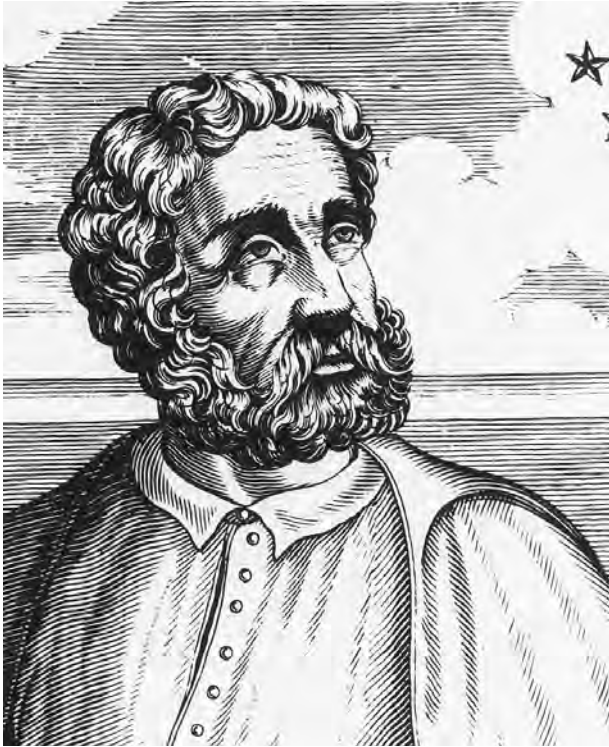
Magellan joined the Portuguese service to sail with the fleet in 1505. He went to East Africa and later was at the battle of Diu, in which the Portuguese destroyed the Egyptian fleet's dominance in the Arabian Sea. He went twice to Malacca, located in present-day Malaysia, and participated in that port's con-

quest (the act of conquering) by the Portuguese. It is possible that he also went on a mission to explore the Moluccas (islands in Indonesia, then called the Spice Islands). Trading in spices brought great wealth to European nations at this time, and there was much competition among them to claim territories that were rich in spices, especially in Southeast Asia, called the East Indies. The Moluccas were the original source of some of the world's most valuable spices at that time, including cloves and nutmeg.

In 1513 Magellan was wounded in a battle in North Africa. But all of his services to Portugal brought him little favor from the Portuguese king, and in 1517 he went to Seville, Spain, to offer his services to the Spanish court.

Exploring for Spain

Spain and Portugal were both great powers at this time. They were in great competition over the rights to claim and settle the newly "discovered" regions of the Americas and the East. In 1494 the Treaty of Tordesillas divided the overseas world of the "discoveries" between the two powers, essentially splitting the globe in half from pole to pole. Portugal acquired everything from Brazil eastward to the East Indies, while the Spanish hemisphere (half-globe) of discovery and conquest ran westward from Brazil to an area near the Cape Verde Islands. The parts of this area that lay furthest east of Spain had not yet been explored by the Spaniards, and they assumed that some of the Spice Islands might lie within their half of the globe. They were wrong, but Magellan's scheme was to test that assumption. He decided that the best way to reach these islands was to sail in a westward



Ferdinand Magellan.

direction from Europe, thus traveling around the globe.

Other explorers had paved the way for Magellan by making key mistakes and discoveries. Christopher Columbus (1451–1506) had badly underestimated the distance between Europe and the East Indies, sailing westward from the European coast and “discovering” North America and the Caribbean islands (West Indies). Vasco Núñez de Balboa’s (1475–1517) march across the Panamanian isthmus had revealed the existence of the Pacific Ocean, which he had claimed for Spain. Thereafter, explorers eagerly sought northern and southern all-water passages

across the Americas to reach the spice-rich East. Magellan also sought such a passage.

Magellan’s great voyage

King Charles V (1500–1558) of Spain approved Magellan’s proposal, and on September 20, 1519, Magellan led a fleet of five ships out into the Atlantic. Unfortunately, the ships—the *San Antonio*, *Trinidad*, *Concepción*, *Victoria*, and *Santiago*—were barely adequate to sail, and the crew were not all firmly loyal to their leader. With Magellan went his brother-in-law, Duarte Barbosa, and the loyal and able commander of the *Santiago*, João Serrão. Arriving at Brazil, the fleet sailed down the South American coast to the San Julián bay in the region called Patagonia. They stayed there from March to August 1520. During this time an attempted mutiny was put down, with only the top leaders being punished. Afterwards, however, the *Santiago* was wrecked, and its crew had to be taken aboard the other vessels.

Leaving San Julián, the fleet sailed southward. On October 21, 1520, it entered what is now called the Strait of Magellan (the channel of water between the southern tip of South America and the island of Tierra del Fuego). The fleet proceeded cautiously, taking over a month to pass through the strait. During this time the master of the *San Antonio* deserted and sailed back to Spain, and so only three of the original five ships entered the Pacific on November 28. A long voyage northward through the Pacific followed, and it was only on March 6, 1521, that the fleet finally anchored at Guam.

Magellan then headed eastward to Cebu in the Philippines, where, in an effort to gain the favor of a local ruler, he became involved in a local war and was killed in battle on April

27, 1521. Barbosa and Serrão were killed soon afterwards. The remaining crew were forced to destroy the *Concepción*, and the great circumnavigation was completed by a courageous former mutineer, Juan Sebastián del Cano. Commanding the *Victoria*, he picked up a small cargo of spices in the Moluccas, crossed the Indian Ocean, and traveled around the Cape of Good Hope (at the southern tip of Africa) from the east. He finally reached Seville on September 8, 1522. In the meantime, the *Trinidad* had tried to head back across the Pacific to Panama but was finally forced back to the Moluccas. There its crew was jailed by the Portuguese, and only four men later returned to Spain.

Magellan's legacy

Magellan's project brought little in the way of material gain to Spain. The Portuguese were well established in the East. Their route to the east, by way of Africa, had proved to be the only practical way of getting by sea to India and the Spice Islands. Yet despite nearly destroying itself in the process, the Magellan fleet for the first time revealed in a practical fashion the full extent of the globe. As a scientific effort, it proved to be the greatest of all the "conquests" undertaken by the overseas adventurers of fifteenth- and sixteenth-century Europe.

For More Information

Guillemard, Francis H. H. *The Life of Ferdinand Magellan*. New York: AMS Press, 1971.

Meltzer, Milton. *Ferdinand Magellan: First to Sail Around the World*. New York: Marshall Cavendish/Benchmark Books, 2001.

Nowell, Charles E., ed. *Magellan's Voyage Around the World: Three Contemporary*

Accounts. Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press, 1962.

Steffoff, Rebecca. *Ferdinand Magellan and the Discovery of the World Ocean*. New York: Chelsea House, 1990.

NAJIB MAHFUZ

Born: December 12, 1912

Cairo, Egypt

Egyptian novelist

Najib Mahfuz is Egypt's most famous novelist and the first Arab to win the Nobel Prize in Literature.

Early life

Najib Mahfuz was born in Cairo, Egypt, on December 12, 1912. He was the youngest of seven children in a middle-class merchant family. When he was ten years old, his family moved to a more Westernized (reflecting the ideals of Europe and the United States) neighborhood of Cairo. Mahfuz became fond of reading detective stories, going to the movies, playing soccer, and listening to music with his friends. During his high school years he began to read the Arabic classics as well as the Western ones that he could find in translation.

Mahfuz studied philosophy (the study of the universe and man's place in it) at Cairo University, and after graduating in 1934 he began working as a civil servant (a person who works for the government). He contin-



Najib Mahfuz.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

ued to work until he retired as director of the Cinema Organization, after which he worked as an adviser to several cultural organizations within the Egyptian government. Mahfuz made frequent contributions to the daily newspaper *Al-Ahram*, where most of his writings appeared in serial form before being published in book form. He was married in his early forties and is the father of two daughters.

Develops as writer

Mahfuz's early writings are considered historical because he dealt with subjects inspired by ancient Egyptian history. In an

interview with the magazine *Al-Hawadess*, Mahfuz corrected this notion by saying that only one of the early three works—*Kifah Tiba* (The Struggle for Thebes, 1944)—was a true historical novel. With *Al-Qahira Al-Jadida* (New Cairo, 1945), Mahfuz then began a series of novels that dealt with more contemporary (current) subject matter and characters. Most of the novels after these bear names of the old-time areas of Cairo, such as *Khan Al-Khalil* (1946) and *Zuqaq al-Midaq* (1947).

Mahfuz's trilogy (series of three dramas), *Al-Thulathia* (made up of *Bayn al-Qasrayn*, *Qasr al-Shauq*, and *Al-Sukkariyya*), written between 1946 and 1952, traces the changes undergone by a family in Cairo and its leader, Ahmad Abd a-Jawad. Through his characters, Mahfuz skillfully describes the cultural and political problems that Egypt experienced in the early 1900s. *Al-Thulathia* was considered a major contribution to world literature and a unique contribution of Egyptian genius. It was awarded Egypt's highest literary honor in 1957.

In *Awlad Haritna* (Sons of Our Alley, 1967), Mahfuz questioned the relationship between God and man, good and evil, and life and death. His interest in the differences between *ilm* (knowledge) and *iman* (faith) appears throughout his later writings, such as *Alf Layla wa Layla* (A Thousand and One Nights, 1982). *Al'Alsh fi al-Hakika* (He Who Lives in Truth, 1985) was considered more of a historical novel than fictional writing.

Offends Muslim leaders

Mahfuz's novels have often gotten him into trouble with Arab leaders. *The Children of Gabalawi* (1959) was banned in Egypt because it was seen as offensive to the Islamic faith. In

the 1960s several of his novels were considered attacks on the administration of President Gamal Nasser (1918–1970). Because of Mahfuz's support for Egyptian President Anwar Sadat's (1918–1981) peace treaty with Israel in 1979, his writings were banned in many Arab countries during the 1980's, although most of the bans were later lifted.

In Mahfuz's Egypt, where literacy (the ability to read and write) is still not widespread, radio, movies, and television play a large role in education and entertainment. Many of Mahfuz's writings have been adapted to the screen and stage. This enabled him to become widely known and admired throughout the Arab world. In October 1988 Mahfuz was awarded the Nobel Prize in literature, the first Arab writer to be so honored. Asked about his plans for spending the \$300,000 prize money, the *New York Times* reported that he looked at his spouse and replied, "That is my wife's job."

It surprised many when, in a 1992 interview with the *Paris Review*, Mahfuz criticized fellow author Salman Rushdie (1947–), whose novel *The Satanic Verses* had led to the offer of a million-dollar reward for Rushdie's death by Iran's religious leader, the Ayatollah Khomeini (1900–1989). In 1994 a Muslim extremist (one who holds extreme political or religious views) stabbed Mahfuz. The attack damaged nerves in Mahfuz's arm. Mahfuz was a vocal critic of the September 2001 terrorist attacks on the United States, although he also stated that war was not a solution to the problem of terrorism.

In 2002 it was announced that a statue of Mahfuz would be built in west Cairo to honor his achievements. Although Mahfuz continues to write, his failing eyesight and

problems with his arm have caused him to restrict himself to mostly shorter pieces, such as a series of descriptions of his dreams that have been published in Egypt's *Nisf Al-Dunia* magazine.

For More Information

Beard, Michael, and Adnan Haydar, eds. *Naguib Mahfouz: From Regional Fame to Global Recognition*. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press, 1993.

Honan, William. "From 'Balzac of Egypt,' Energy and Nuance." *The New York Times* (October 14, 1988).

Mahfouz, Naguib. *Echoes of an Autobiography*. New York: Doubleday, 1997.

Peled, Matityahu. *Religion, My Own*. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction Books, 1983.

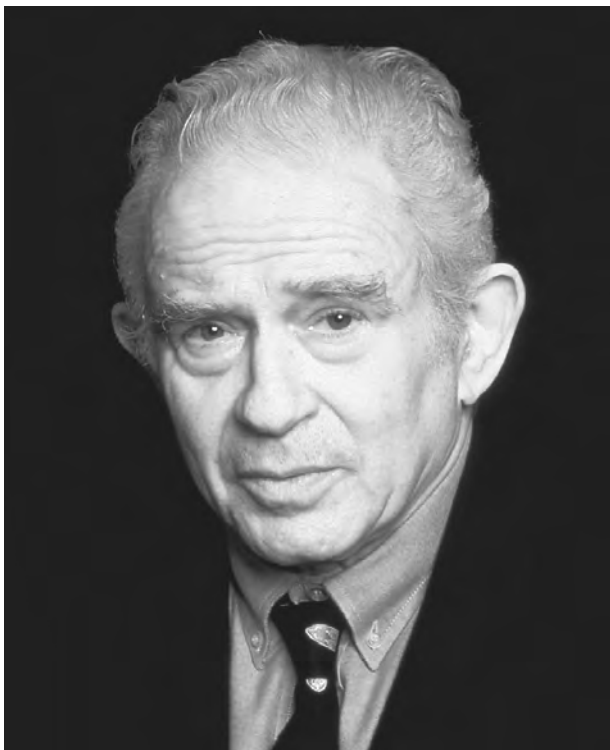
NORMAN MAILER

Born: January 31, 1923

Long Branch, New Jersey

American author and director

Norman Mailer, American author, film producer, and director, wrote *The Naked and the Dead*, one of the most famous American novels about World War II (1939–45; a war in which Germany, Italy, and Japan fought against Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States). Only in his later political journalism did he reach that level of achievement again.



Norman Mailer.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Early life and education

Norman Kingsley Mailer was born in Long Branch, New Jersey, on January 31, 1923, the son of Isaac Barnett Mailer and Fanny Schneider Mailer. His father, an accountant, was originally from South Africa, having traveled to America by way of England. His mother's father was a rabbi (a leader of the Jewish religion). Mailer's family moved to Brooklyn, New York, when he was four. Mailer was an excellent student who loved to build model airplanes. At nine years old his mother encouraged him to write a story. Writing one chapter a day, the young Mailer completed a story that he called "An Invasion of Mars."

Mailer graduated from high school in 1939 and earned a bachelor of science degree in aeronautical (dealing with flight) engineering from Harvard University in Massachusetts. He won a college fiction contest, wrote for the *Harvard Advocate*, worked on two (unpublished) novels, and had a novella (longer than a short story, but shorter than a novel) published. Drafted into the army in 1944, he served in the Philippines in an infantry unit (a group of soldiers on foot) as both a clerk and a rifleman.

Writes popular war novel

In the army Mailer knew he was living the material for his third novel. From notes in letters to his wife, he composed a brilliant narrative around an army unit's taking of a Japanese-held Pacific island. Borrowing the natural writing style of writers such as John Dos Passos (1896–1970) and James Farrell (1904–1979), the use of symbols from Herman Melville (1819–1891), and the journalist's observations from Ernest Hemingway (1899–1961), Mailer described (in language that offended many) the war and the inner conflicts of American fighting men. Mailer insisted that *The Naked and the Dead* (1948) was not written about a specific war but of "death and man's creative urge, fate, man's desire to conquer the elements." The work was a popular success and won him critical praise.

After attending the Sorbonne in Paris, France (part of the University of Paris), Mailer returned to the United States in the mid-1950s and helped found the New York newspaper the *Village Voice*. His next novel, *Barbary Shore* (1951), is set in a Brooklyn rooming house and contains complaints

about the government of the United States. *The Deer Park* (1955), both the novel and the play Mailer adapted it from, focuses on two of Mailer's most memorable characters, Sergius O'Shaughnessy, former Air Force pilot, and Elena Esposito, broken-down dancer and actress. *An American Dream* (1965) shows Steve Rojack, trapped in an urban (city-based) nightmare of sex, murder, and despair, escaping with what remains of his soul to the jungles of Yucatán, Mexico. *Why Are We in Vietnam?* (1967), one of Mailer's least popular works, takes its eighteen-year-old hero on an Alaskan hunting trip that ends with his initiation into manhood. These books voiced Mailer's view of the problems that lay beneath the surface of American life.

Changes to nonfiction

Mailer began a second career in the mid-1950s as an essayist and journalist. He became a national personality with the publication of *Advertisements for Myself* (1959), a collection of earlier writings that included bitter attacks, personal interviews, cultural essays, stories, works in progress, and confessions of how Mailer reached the depths of his own state and found a "new consciousness" (awareness).

Although the 1960s were a time of personal conflict and public rebellion for Mailer, he wrote many works during that period that helped establish him as a leading writer of nonfiction. *The Presidential Papers* (1963) presented criticism of American politics and society that introduced a new Mailer, a public historian of the years when John F. Kennedy (1917–1963) was president. This work, along with *Cannibals and Christians* (1966), attempted to establish him as "self-appointed master of the Now." *The Prisoner of Sex*

(1971) contained a discussion of Mailer's various sexual relationships.

The peace march on Washington, D.C., in 1967 and the presidential conventions of 1968 gave Mailer some of his best material. Mailer, a skilled reporter, turned his notes into "non-fictional novels" using the style of New Journalism, in which real events are described with the addition of writing devices such as narrative, dialogue, and multiple points of view. The Washington experience became *The Armies of the Night: History as a Novel, the Novel as History* (1968), for which Mailer received a National Book Award and a Pulitzer Prize. The political conventions shaped *Miami and the Siege of Chicago* (1968). These works reflect Mailer's personality and controversial (causing dispute) opinions on historic events, creating sharp descriptions of the conflict between individual and collective power. Other works using New Journalism methods include *Of a Fire on the Moon* (1971), *The Executioner's Song* (1979), and *Harlot's Ghost* (1991).

In the late 1970s Mailer began receiving letters from a prisoner named Jack Henry Abbott, whom Mailer began to consider a promising writer. Mailer helped Abbott publish a book of letters, *In the Belly of the Beast* (1981), wrote the book's introduction, and spoke up on behalf of Abbott, helping him get released from prison in 1981. Two weeks later Abbott stabbed a man to death and went back to prison. Mailer was criticized for not recognizing Abbott's violent nature. (Abbott hung killed himself in prison in 2002.)

Later works

In 1987 Mailer directed his first film, *Tough Guys Don't Dance*. During the 1990s Mailer again turned his attention to biograph-

ical essays and novels. *Portrait of Picasso As A Young Man* (1995) and *Oswald's Tale: An American Mystery* (1995) received poor reviews. Many critics felt that Mailer had used questionable new sources for subjects whose lives had already been examined. Among the theories Mailer presents is that violence and death are at the heart of Pablo Picasso's (1881–1973) Cubism (art based on geometry, or the study of points, lines, and surfaces) period.

Not one to avoid challenging subjects, Mailer chose to write a novel about Jesus Christ in 1997. As noted in the *New York Times Book Review*, Mailer wrote not merely of Jesus's life, but a modern-day Gospel, *The Gospel According to the Son*, using the voice of Jesus Himself—a choice avoided by all surviving ancient Gospels and by almost all modern novelists. Still, as in many of his other works, critics pointed to “rare powerful moments of invention” and gave Mailer credit for his knowledge of religious texts.

Mailer continued observing and commenting on major social and political issues throughout the 1990s, often interviewing people whose ideas opposed his, such as the conservative (preferring traditions and opposed to change) politician and newscaster Patrick Buchanan (1938–). In 2002 Mailer appeared as Ernest Hemingway in several performances of a dramatic reading called “Zelda, Scott, and Ernest,” based on the friendship among Hemingway, the writer F. Scott Fitzgerald (1896–1940), and Fitzgerald's wife Zelda. “It's as close as I'll ever get to Hemingway,” Mailer told the *Washington Post*.

For More Information

Adams, Laura. *Existential Battles: The Growth of Norman Mailer*. Athens: Ohio University Press, 1976.

Foster, Richard J. *Norman Mailer*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1968.

Leeds, Barry H. *The Structured Vision of Norman Mailer*. New York: New York University Press, 1969.

Mailer, Adele. *The Last Party: Scenes from My Life with Norman Mailer*. New York: Barricade Books, 1997.

Rollyson, Carl E. *The Lives of Norman Mailer: A Biography*. New York: Paragon House, 1991.

BERNARD MALAMUD

Born: April 26, 1914

Brooklyn, New York

Died: March 18, 1986

New York, New York

American author

Bernard Malamud is considered one of the most prominent figures in Jewish American literature, a movement that began in the 1930s and is known for its combination of tragic and comic elements.

Early life

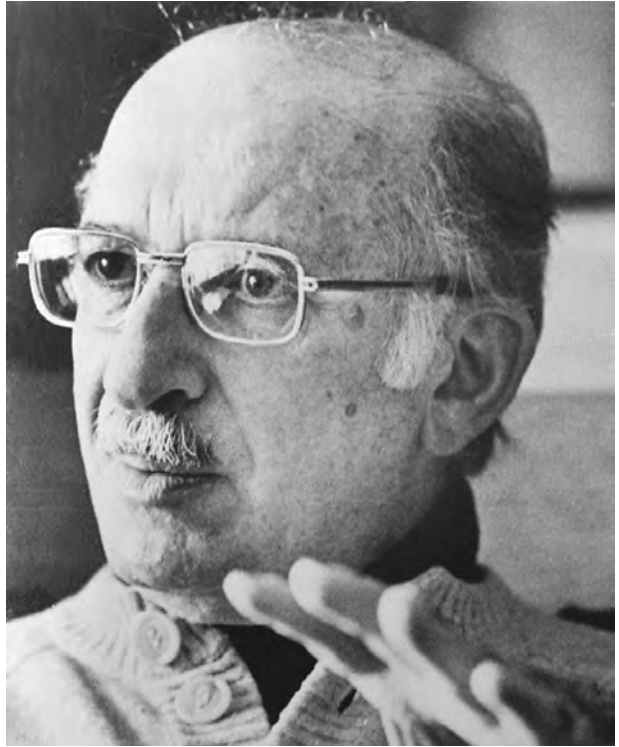
Bernard Malamud was born on April 26, 1914, in Brooklyn, New York, the first of Max and Bertha Fidelman Malamud's two sons. His parents, whom he described as “gentle, honest, kindly people,” had come to the United States from Russia in the early 1900s and ran their own grocery store. They were not highly educated and knew very little

about literature or the arts. "There were no books that I remember in the house, no records, music, pictures on the wall," Malamud said. Malamud liked to read and to attend a local Yiddish (the language spoken by Jews in Europe) theater. He began to try to write stories of his own.

Malamud attended high school in Brooklyn and received his bachelor's degree from the City College of New York in 1936. After graduation he worked in a factory and as a clerk at the Census Bureau in Washington, D.C. Although he wrote in his spare time, Malamud did not begin writing seriously until hearing of the horrors of the Holocaust, when the Germans, led by Adolf Hitler (1889–1945), put six million Jewish people to death during World War II (1939–45; a war in which Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States battled Germany, Italy, and Japan). Malamud also began reading about Jewish tradition and history. In 1949 he started teaching at Oregon State University. He left this post in 1961 to teach creative writing at Bennington College in Vermont, where he remained until shortly before his death.

First works

Malamud's first novel, *The Natural* (1952), traces the life of Roy Hobbs, an American baseball player. The book has mythic elements and explores such themes as initiation and isolation. Malamud's second novel, *The Assistant* (1957), tells the story of Morris Bober, a Jewish immigrant who owns a grocery store in Brooklyn. Although he is struggling to make ends meet, Bober hires an anti-Semitic (prejudiced against Jewish people) youth, whom he learns is homeless and



Bernard Malamud.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

on the verge of starvation. This novel shows the value of maintaining faith in the goodness of the human soul. Malamud's first collection of short stories, *The Magic Barrel* (1958), was awarded the National Book Award in 1959. Many of Malamud's best-known short stories were republished in *The Stories of Bernard Malamud* in 1983.

A New Life (1961), considered one of Malamud's most true-to-life novels, is based in part on Malamud's teaching career at Oregon State University. This work focuses on an ex-alcoholic Jew from New York City who becomes a professor at a college in the Pacific Northwest. It examines the main character's

search for self-respect, while poking fun at life at a learning institution. Malamud's next novel, *The Fixer* (1966), is one of his most powerful works. The winner of both the Pulitzer Prize and the National Book Award, this book is based on the historical account of Mendel Beiliss, a Russian Jew who was accused of murdering a Christian child. With *The Tenants* (1971), Malamud returns to a New York City setting in a contrast between two writers—one Jewish and the other African American—struggling to survive in an urban ghetto (the run-down part of a city).

Later years

In *Dubin's Lives* (1979), which took Malamud over five years to write, the main character, William Dubin, attempts to create a sense of worth for himself, both as a man and as a writer. Malamud's last finished novel, *God's Grace* (1982), studies both the original Holocaust and a new, imagined Holocaust of the future. The novel is a wild, at times brilliant, at times confusing, description of a flood similar to that in the Bible story of Noah's ark.

Malamud continued to place stories in top American magazines. Mervyn Rothstein reported in the *New York Times* that Malamud said at the end of his life, "With me, it's story, story, story." In Malamud's next-to-last collection, *Rembrandt's Hat*, only one story, "The Silver Crown," deals with Jewish themes.

Malamud's final, unfinished work, "The Tribe," concerns the adventures of a Russian Jewish peddler, Yozip, among the western Native American Indians. Malamud gave few interviews, but those he did grant provided the best insight into his work, as when he told Michiko Kakutani in the *New York Times*:

"People say I write so much about misery, but you write about what you write best."
Bernard Malamud died on March 18, 1986.

For More Information

- Alter, Iska. *The Good Man's Dilemma: Social Criticism in the Fiction of Bernard Malamud*. New York: AMS Press, 1981.
- Astro, Richard, and Jackson J. Benson. eds. *The Fiction of Bernard Malamud*. Corvallis: Oregon State University Press, 1977.
- Avery, Evelyn. *The Magic Worlds of Bernard Malamud*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 2001.

MALCOLM X

Born: May 19, 1925

Omaha, Nebraska

Died: February 21, 1965

New York, New York

African American civil rights leader

African American civil rights leader Malcolm X was a major twentieth-century spokesman for black nationalism. Unlike many other African American leaders of this time, who supported nonviolent methods, Malcolm X believed in using more aggressive measures in the fight for civil rights.

As a boy

Malcolm X was born Malcolm Little on May 19, 1925, in Omaha, Nebraska. His father, a Baptist minister, was an outspoken

follower of Marcus Garvey (1887–1940), the black nationalist leader. (A nationalist is a person who promotes one nation's culture and interests over all others.) Garvey supported a "back-to-Africa" movement for African Americans. During Malcolm's early years, his family moved several times because of racism (dislike and poor treatment of people based on their race). They moved from Omaha, Nebraska, after being threatened by the Ku Klux Klan, a group that believes that white people are superior to all other races. While living in an all-white neighborhood in Michigan their house was burned. When Malcolm was six years old, his father was mysteriously murdered. The black community was convinced that white people had committed the crime. Three of Malcolm's four uncles were also murdered by white people.

By the 1930s the nation had fallen into the Great Depression, a decade-long period of great economic hardship. Work was scarce, and Malcolm's family struggled. For a time his mother and her eight children lived on public welfare. When his mother became mentally ill, Malcolm was sent to a foster home. His mother remained in a mental institution for about twenty-six years. The children were divided among several families, and Malcolm lived in various state institutions and boardinghouses. At thirteen Malcolm was charged with delinquency (behaving in a way that is against the law) and was sent to a juvenile detention home (a place where young people are held in custody). He dropped out of school at the age of fifteen.

A criminal life

Living with his sister in Boston, Massachusetts, Malcolm worked as a shoeshine

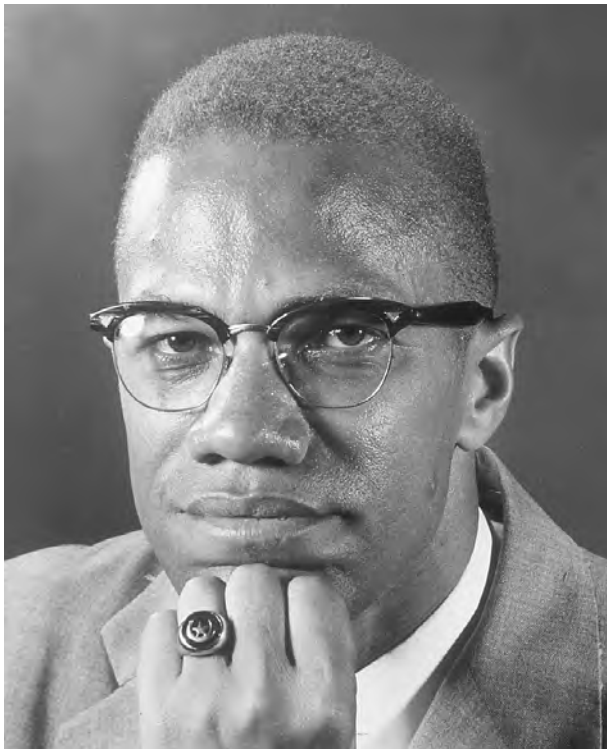
boy, a busboy, and a waiter. In Boston Malcolm began visiting the black ghetto (an area of a city where a minority lives) of Roxbury. There, he was drawn to the neighborhood's street life. He began wearing flashy clothing and jumped into a criminal life that included gambling, selling drugs, and burglary.

In 1942 Malcolm moved to New York City's Harlem neighborhood where he continued his unlawful lifestyle. He adapted well to the New York City street life and rose quickly in the criminal world. Malcolm became known as Detroit Red, for his red shock of hair. When the police uncovered his criminal activities, Malcolm returned to Boston.

Reformed in prison

In 1946, at the age of twenty, Malcolm was sentenced to ten years in prison for burglary. While in prison he began to transform his life. He began reading books on history, philosophy, and religion. In prison his brother Reginald visited him and told Malcolm about the Black Muslims. The Black Muslims were an Islamic religious organization whose official name was the Lost-Found Nation of Islam. The leader of the group was Elijah Muhammad (1897–1975).

Malcolm began to study Muhammad's teachings and to practice the religion faithfully. These teachings taught that the white man is evil and doomed by Allah to destruction. Also, the teachings stressed that the best course for black people is to separate themselves from Western, white civilization—culturally, politically, physically, and psychologically. The Black Muslim teachings also prohibited personal habits such as smoking, drinking, and the eating of pork. In addition



Malcolm X.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

to finding his new religion while in prison, Malcolm began copying words from the dictionary and developed the vocabulary that would help him become a passionate and effective public speaker.

In 1952 Malcolm was released from prison, and he went to Chicago, Illinois, to meet Elijah Muhammad. There he was accepted into the movement and given the name of Malcolm X. Malcolm believed the “X” represented his “slave” name that was forever lost after being raised in a mainly white nation. Malcolm X became assistant minister of the Detroit Mosque, or Muslim house of worship. The following year he returned to Chicago to

study personally under Muhammad, and shortly thereafter was sent to organize a mosque in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. In 1954 he went to lead the mosque in Harlem.

The message of Malcolm X

Malcolm X soon became the most visible national spokesman for the Black Muslims. As the voice of the organization he was a speech-writer, a philosopher, and an inspiring speaker who was often quoted by the media. His debating talents against white and black opponents helped spread the movement’s message.

At this time in the United States there was a major movement for racial integration, or bringing the races together in peace. However, Malcolm X and the Black Muslims were calling for racial separation. He believed that the civil rights gains made in America amounted to almost nothing. He criticized those African Americans who used nonviolent methods in order to achieve integration. Malcolm X called for self-defense in the face of white violence.

Malcolm X urged black people to give up the Christian religion. He preached that the high crime rate in black communities was basically a result of African Americans following the lifestyle of Western, white society. During this period Malcolm X, following Elijah Muhammad, urged black people not to participate in elections. These elections, the movement believed, meant supporting the immoral (against the ideas of right and wrong held by most people) political system of the United States.

In 1957 Malcolm X met a young student nurse, Betty Jean Sanders (1936–1997), in New York. She soon became a member of the

Black Muslims. They were married in 1958, and she became Betty Shabazz. The couple eventually had six daughters.

Losing momentum

By 1959 the Black Muslim movement had moved into the national spotlight. Racial tensions were reaching a boiling point, and white Americans grew fearful of Malcolm X and his message of black supremacy (the belief that the black race is better than all others). By 1960 Black Muslim membership had grown to more than one hundred thousand.

As the movement reached its peak, some observers felt that there were elements within the Black Muslim movement that wanted to oust Malcolm X, or force him from office. There were rumors that he was planning to take over leadership from Elijah Muhammad and that he wanted to make the organization political. Others felt that the personal jealousy of some Black Muslim leaders was a factor.

On December 1, 1963, Malcolm X stated that he saw President John F. Kennedy's assassination as a case of "The chickens coming home to roost." Soon afterward Elijah Muhammad suspended him and ordered him not to speak for the movement for ninety days. On March 8, 1964, Malcolm X publicly announced that he was leaving the Nation of Islam. He said he was starting two new organizations: the Muslim Mosque, Inc., and the Organization of Afro-American Unity. He remained a believer in the Islamic religion.

An international focus

During the next months Malcolm X made several trips to Africa and Europe and one to Mecca, a city in Saudi Arabia that is

the holiest city of the Islamic religion. Based on these trips, he wrote that he no longer believed that all white people were evil and that he had found the true meaning of the Islamic religion. He changed his name to El-Hajj Malik El-Shabazz.

Malcolm X announced that he planned to take the black struggle to an international audience by putting black people's complaints against the United States before the United Nations (UN). For this purpose he sought aid from several African countries through the Organization of Afro-American Unity. At the same time he stated that his organizations were willing to work with other black organizations and with progressive white groups in the United States. Together, these organizations would work on voter registration, on black control of community public institutions such as schools and the police, and on other civil and political rights for black people.

Malcolm X began holding meetings in Harlem at which he discussed the policies and programs of his new organizations. Then, on a Sunday afternoon, February 21, 1965, as he began to address one such meeting, Malcolm X was assassinated.

Since his death Malcolm X's influence on the political and social thinking of African Americans has been enormous, and the literature about him has only grown. Alex Haley's 1965 book, *The Autobiography of Malcolm X*, was written from several interviews conducted with Malcolm X before he died. It is now considered a classic in African American literature. Malcolm X Community College in Chicago, Malcolm X Liberation University in Durham, North Carolina, and the Malcolm X Society are all named for him.

For More Information

- Breitman, George. *The Last Year of Malcolm X: The Evolution of a Revolutionary*. New York: Merit Publishers, 1967.
- Lomax, Louis. *To Kill a Black Man*. Los Angeles, CA: Holloway House Publishing Company, 1968.
- Lomax, Louis. *When the Word Is Given: A Report on Elijah Muhammad, Malcolm X and the Black Muslim World*. Cleveland, OH: World Publishing Company, 1963.
- Myers, Walter Dean. *Malcolm X: By Any Means Necessary*. New York: Scholastic, 1993.
- Malcolm X. *The Autobiography of Malcolm X*. New York: Grove Press, 1965. Reprint, New York: Ballantine Books, 1992.

DAVID MAMET

Born: November 30, 1947

Chicago, Illinois

American writer, playwright/dramatist, screenwriter, and director/producer

Playwright, screenwriter (a person who writes scripts for movies), and director David Mamet is known for his accurate use of American vernacular (the normal spoken form of a language), through which he explores the relationship between language and behavior.

Taught to love words

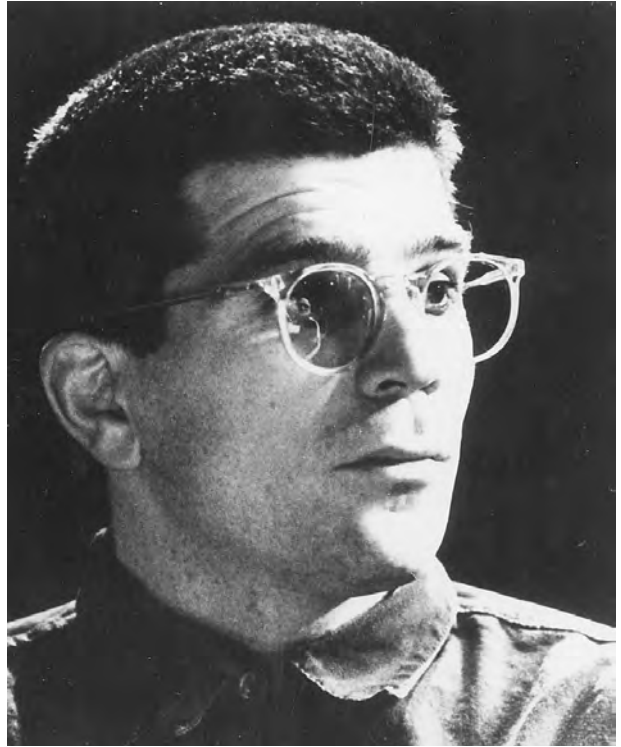
David Alan Mamet was born in Chicago, Illinois, on November 30, 1947, the only son

of Bernard and Leonore Mamet (they also had a younger daughter). His father was a labor lawyer who loved to argue and taught his children how to listen, question things, and express themselves as precisely as possible. Mamet spent many afternoons in his father's office, making phone calls and typing letters on the typewriter. Mamet's parents' high standards and their divorce when he was eleven made his childhood an unhappy one. He was very close to his sister, however. At fifteen he started working at the Hull House Theatre and discovered his life's direction. He went on to study literature and theater at Goddard College in Vermont (receiving a bachelor's degree in 1969) and acting at the Neighborhood Playhouse School of Theater in New York.

Successful plays

In 1971 Mamet began teaching drama at Goddard and wrote several plays. His first play to receive attention, *The Duck Variations* (1972), displays features found in much of his work: a fixed setting, few characters, a simple plot, and dialogue that captures the rhythms of everyday speech. *Sexual Perversity in Chicago* (1974) (later adapted for film as *About Last Night*. . . .) examines relationships between men and women. *American Buffalo* (1975), for which Mamet received the New York Drama Critics Circle Award, is set in a junk shop and deals with the efforts of three men trying to steal a valuable coin. The main character of *The Water Engine: An American Fable* (1977) creates a new engine but is murdered when he refuses to sell his invention for profit. Other plays from this period include *A Life in the Theatre*, *The Woods*, *Reunion*, and *Dark Pony* (all 1977), as well as *The Sanctity of Marriage* (1979).

Glengarry Glen Ross (1982), Mamet's most praised work, is the story of four Florida real estate agents competing to become their company's top salesperson by trying to cheat unsuspecting customers. The play was awarded both the New York Drama Critics Circle Award and the Pulitzer Prize in drama. *Edmond* (1982) involves a businessman who leaves his wife and wanders into a run-down area of New York City. After being beaten and robbed, he turns to violence and is imprisoned for murdering a waitress. *Prairie du chien* (1985) and *The Shawl* (1985) are companion pieces. The first play centers on an unusual murder, while the second concerns a psychic's efforts to obtain a client's inheritance. *Speed-the-Plow* (1988), in which pop singer Madonna (1958–) made her first performance on Broadway, is the story of a close male friendship that is threatened by the arrival of a strange woman.



David Mamet.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Screenplays and other works

Mamet has also written several screenplays (scripts for movies). The first, *The Postman Always Rings Twice* (1981), is generally considered his least successful effort. In *The Verdict* (1982), based on Barry Reed's novel *Verdict* (1980), an alcoholic lawyer battles injustice to win a lawsuit for a woman who suffered brain damage during childbirth. Reviewers praised Mamet's dialogue, and the screenplay was nominated (put forward for consideration) for an Academy Award. He also made his first effort at directing with the 1987 film *House of Games* (for which he also wrote the screenplay), about a doctor's involvement with a con man.

In the latter half of the 1980s Mamet published two collections of essays, *Writing in*

Restaurants and Some Freaks. Both books are packed with Mamet's opinions on a variety of topics such as friendship, religion, politics, morals, society, and of course, the American theater. Mamet has also taught at The Yale Drama School and New York University. He often lectures to classes at the Atlantic Theater Company, and he was one of the company's founding members.

Later efforts

Mamet continues to direct films and write plays, essays, and screenplays. His recent film works include the 1994 film version of his play *Oleanna* (which was first pro-

duced on stage in 1992), *The Winslow Boy* (1999), *State and Main* (2000), and *Heist* (2001). In 1999 he wrote a book of essays, *Jafsie and John Henry. Wilson: A Consideration of the Sources*, a novel, was released in 2001. Mamet married actress Rebecca Pidgeon in 1991. They have two children. He also has two children from his first marriage to actress Lindsay Crouse.

For More Information

Bigsby, C. W. E. *David Mamet*. London: Methuen, 1985.

Carroll, Dennis. *David Mamet*. New York: St. Martin's, 1987.

Heilpern, John. *How Good Is David Mamet, Anyway?* New York: Routledge, 2000.

King, Kimball. *Ten Modern American Playwrights*. New York: Garland, 1982.

Mamet, David. *On Directing Film*. New York: Viking, 1991.

NELSON
MANDELA

Born: 1918

Transkei, South Africa

South African president and political activist

Nelson Mandela is a South African leader who spent years in prison for opposing apartheid, the policy by which the races were separated and whites were given power over blacks in South Africa. Upon his release from prison, Man-

delo became the first president of a black-majority-ruled South Africa in which apartheid was officially ended. A symbol of hope for many, Mandela is also a former winner of the Nobel Peace Prize.

Youth and education

Nelson Rolihlahla Mandela was born in a small village in the southeastern region of South Africa called the Transkei. His father was chief of the village and a member of the royal family of the Thembu tribe, which spoke the Xhosa language. As a boy, Mandela grew up in the company of tribal elders and chiefs, which gave him a rich sense of African self-government and heritage, despite the cruel treatment of blacks in white-governed South Africa.

Mandela was also deeply influenced by his early education in Methodist church schools. The instruction he received there set Mandela on a path leading away from some African tribal traditions, such as an arranged marriage set up by a tribal elder, which he refused. After being expelled from Fort Hare University College in 1940 for leading a student strike, Mandela obtained a degree from Witwatersrand University. In 1942 he received a degree in law from the University of South Africa.

Joining the ANC

In 1944 Mandela joined the African National Congress (ANC), a South African political party. Since its founding, the ANC's main goal had been to work to improve conditions and rights for people of color in South Africa. However, its fairly conservative stance had led some members to call for less timid measures. Mandela became one of the ANC's

younger and more radical leaders as a member of the ANC's Youth League. He became president of the league in 1951.

The years between 1951 and 1960 were troubled times, both for South Africa and for the ANC. Younger antiapartheid activists (protesters), including Mandela, were coming to the view that nonviolent demonstrations against apartheid did not work, because they allowed the South African government to respond with violence against Africans. Although Mandela was ready to try every possible technique to destroy apartheid peacefully, he began to feel that nonviolent resistance would not change conditions in the end.

In 1952 Mandela's leadership of ANC protest activities led to a nine-month jail sentence. Later, in 1956, he was arrested with other ANC leaders for promoting resistance to South Africa's "pass laws" that prevented blacks from moving freely in the country. Mandela was charged with treason (a crime committed against one's country), but the charges against him and others collapsed in 1961. By this time, however, the South African government had outlawed the ANC. This move followed events at Sharpeville in 1960, when police fired on a crowd of unarmed protesters.

Sharpeville had made it clear that the days of nonviolent resistance were over. In 1961 antiapartheid leaders created a semi-underground (operating illegally) movement called the All-African National Action Council. Mandela was appointed its honorary secretary and later became head of Umkhonto weSizwe (the Spear of the Nation), a militant ANC organization which used sabotage (destruction of property and other tactics



Nelson Mandela.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

used to undermine the government) in its fight against apartheid.

Political prisoner

In 1962 Mandela was again arrested, this time for leaving South Africa illegally and for inciting strikes. He was sentenced to five years in jail. The following year he was tried with other leaders of Umkhonto weSizwe on a charge of high treason, following a government raid of the group's secret headquarters. Mandela was given a life sentence, which he began serving in the maximum security prison on South Africa's Robben Island.

During the twenty-seven years that Mandela spent in prison, his example of quiet suffering was just one of many pressures on South Africa's apartheid government. Public discussion of Mandela was illegal, and he was allowed few visitors. But as the years dragged on, he was increasingly viewed as a martyr (one who suffers for a cause) in South Africa and around the world, making him a symbol of international protests against apartheid.

In 1988 Mandela was hospitalized with an illness, and after his recovery he was returned to prison under somewhat less harsh conditions. By this time, the situation within South Africa was becoming desperate for the ruling white powers. Protest had spread, and international pressures for the end of apartheid were increasing. More and more, South Africa was isolated as a racist state. It was against this backdrop that F. W. de Klerk (1936–), the president of South Africa, finally responded to the calls from around the world to release Mandela.

Freedom

On February 11, 1990, Mandela walked out of prison. He received joyful welcomes wherever he went around the world. In 1991 he assumed the presidency of the ANC, which had been given legal status again by the government.

Both Mandela and deKlerk realized that only a compromise between whites and blacks could prevent civil war in South Africa. As a result, in late 1991, a multiparty Convention for a Democratic South Africa met to establish a new, democratic government that gave people of all colors rights to determine the country's future. Mandela and deKlerk led the negotiations, and their efforts gained them the

Nobel Peace Prize in 1993. In September 1992, the two leaders signed a document that created a freely elected constitutional assembly to draft a new constitution and to act as a transition government (a government that functions temporarily while a new government is being formed). On April 27, 1994, the first free elections open to all South African citizens were held. The ANC won over sixty-two percent of the popular vote, and Mandela was elected president.

Presidency and retirement

As president, Mandela worked to ease the dangerous political differences in his country and to build up the South African economy. To a remarkable degree he was successful in his aims. Mandela's skill at building compromise and his enormous personal authority helped him lead the transition to democracy. In an effort to help the country heal, he also backed the establishment of a Truth and Reconciliation Commission which offered amnesty (exemption from criminal prosecution) to those who had committed crimes during the apartheid era. This action helped to promote discussion about the country's history.

Mandela retired in June 1999, choosing not to challenge Thabo Mbeki, his vice president, in elections. Mbeki won the election for the ANC and was inaugurated as president on June 16, 1999. Mandela quickly took on the role of statesman after leaving office, acting that year as a mediator in the peace process in Burundi, where a civil war had led to the killing of thousands.

In late 2001, Mandela joined the outcry against terrorism when he expressed his support for the American bombing of Afghanistan after terrorist attacks against the

United States on September 11, 2001. By January 2002, however, Mandela had modified his support somewhat after South African Muslims criticized him for appearing to be insensitive to the sufferings of the Afghan people. As quoted by the Associated Press, Mandela called his earlier remarks supporting the bombings an “overstatement” and urged caution against prematurely labeling Osama bin Laden, the man suspected of plotting the attacks, as a terrorist.

For More Information

Benson, Mary. *Nelson Mandela: The Man and the Movement*. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, 1986.

Harwood, Ronald. *Mandela*. New York: New American Library, 1987.

Hughes, Libby. *Nelson Mandela: Voice of Freedom*. New York: Dillon Press, 1992.

Johns, Sheridan, and R. Hunt Davis Jr., eds. *Mandela, Tambo, & the African National Congress: The Struggle Against Apartheid, 1948–1990: A Documentary Study*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1991.

Mandela, Nelson. *Long Walk to Freedom: The Autobiography of Nelson Mandela*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1994.

ÉDOUARD MANET

Born: January 23, 1832

Paris, France

Died: April 30, 1883

Paris, France

French painter

The works of the French painter Édouard Manet influenced many other artists; their modern subject matter and more natural, less precise style were seen as revolutionary.

Early years

Édouard Manet was born in Paris, France, on January 23, 1832, to Auguste Édouard Manet and Eugénie Désirée Manet. Manet's mother was an artistic woman who made sure that Édouard and his two brothers took piano lessons. His father, an official at the Ministry of Justice, expected his son to study law and was opposed to the idea of him becoming a painter. It was decided that Édouard would join the navy, and at the age of sixteen he sailed to Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, on a training vessel. Upon his return he failed to pass the navy's entrance examination. His father finally gave in, and in 1850 Manet began studying figure painting in the studio of Thomas Couture, where he remained until 1856. Manet also traveled abroad and made many copies of classic paintings for both foreign and French public collections.

Early works

Manet's entry for the Salon (annual public exhibition, or show) of 1859, the *Absinthe Drinker*, a romantic but daring work, was rejected. At the Salon of 1861, his *Spanish Singer*, one of a number of works of Spanish character painted in this period, not only was admitted to the Salon but won an honorable mention and the praise of the poet Théophile Gautier. This was to be Manet's last success for many years.



Édouard Manet.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

In 1863 Manet married Suzanne Leenhoff, his piano teacher. That year he showed fourteen paintings at the Martinet Gallery; one of them, *Music in the Tuileries*, caused a hostile reaction. Also in 1863 the Salon rejected Manet's large painting *Luncheon on the Grass*; its combination of clothed men and a nude woman was considered offensive. Manet elected to have it shown at the now famous Salon des Refusés, created by the Emperor to quiet complaints from the large number of painters whose work had been turned away by the official Salon. In 1865 Manet's *Olympia* produced an even more vio-

lent reaction at the official Salon, and his reputation as a rebel became widespread.

Supporters and admirers

In 1866, after the Salon jury had rejected two of Manet's works, novelist Émile Zola (1840–1902) came to his defense with a series of articles filled with strongly expressed praise. In 1867 Zola published a book that predicted, "Manet's place is destined to be in the Louvre." (The Louvre, in Paris, is the largest and most famous art museum in the world.) In May 1868 Manet, at his own expense, exhibited fifty of his works at the Paris World's Fair; he felt that his paintings had to be seen together in order to be fully understood.

Although the painters of the impressionist movement (a French art movement of the second half of the nineteenth century whose members sought in their works to represent the first impression of an object upon the viewer) were influenced by Manet during the 1860s, later it appeared that he had also learned from them. His colors became lighter, and his strokes became shorter and quicker. Still, Manet remained mainly a figure and studio painter and refused to show his works with the impressionists at their private exhibitions.

Late works

Toward the end of the 1870s Manet returned to the figures of the early years. Perhaps his greatest work was his last major one, *A Bar at the Folies-Bergère*. In 1881 Manet was admitted to membership in the Legion of Honor, an award he had long dreamed of. By then he was seriously ill, and walking became increasingly difficult for him. In his weakened

condition he found it easier to handle pastels than oils, and he produced a great many flower pieces and portraits (paintings of people, especially their faces) in that medium. In early 1883 his left leg was amputated (cut off), but this did not prolong his life. He died peacefully in Paris on April 30, 1883.

Manet was short, unusually handsome, and witty. He was remembered as kind and generous toward his friends. Still, many elements of his personality were in conflict. Although he was a revolutionary artist, he craved official honors; while he dressed fashionably, he spoke a type of slang that was at odds with his appearance and manners; and although his style of life was that of a member of the conservative (preferring to maintain traditions and resist change) classes, his political beliefs were liberal (open-minded and preferring change).

For More Information

Bataille, Georges. *Manet*. New York: Skira/Rizzoli, 1983.

Brombert, Beth Archer. *Édouard Manet: Rebel in a Frock Coat*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1996.

WILMA MANKILLER

Born: November 18, 1945

Tahlequah, Oklahoma

Native American community activist, tribal chief, and tribal legislator

Wilma Mankiller was the first woman elected principal chief of the Cherokee Nation. She works to improve the lives of Native Americans by helping them receive better education and health care and urges them to preserve and take pride in their traditions.

Early life

Wilma Mankiller was born in Tahlequah, Oklahoma, the capital of the Cherokee Nation, on November 18, 1945. Her father was Charlie Mankiller, a Cherokee, and her mother was Irene Mankiller, who was of Dutch-Irish ancestry. Wilma has four sisters and six brothers. Her great-grandfather was one of the more than sixteen thousand Native Americans and African slaves who were ordered by President Andrew Jackson (1767–1845) to walk from their former homes in the Southeast to new “Indian territory” in Oklahoma in the 1830s. The harsh weather, hunger, disease, and abuse from U.S. soldiers that the walkers experienced on what came to be called the Trail of Tears led to the deaths of at least four thousand of them.

The Mankillers were very poor in Oklahoma. Charlie Mankiller thought he could make a better life for them in California and accepted a government offer to relocate. However, promises that were made to the family were not kept, money did not arrive, and there was often no employment available, so their life did not improve after their arrival in San Francisco. The children were also homesick. As Mankiller recalled in her autobiography, called *Mankiller: A Chief and Her People*, “I experienced my own Trail of Tears when I was a young girl. No one pointed a gun at me or at



Wilma Mankiller.

Reproduced by permission of Wilma Mankiller.

members of my family. No show of force was used. It was not necessary. Nevertheless, the United States government, through the Bureau of Indian Affairs, was again trying to settle the 'Indian problem' by removal. I learned through this ordeal about the fear and anguish that occur when you give up your home, your community, and everything you have ever known to move far away to a strange place. I cried for days, not unlike the children who had stumbled down the Trail of Tears so many years before. I wept tears . . . tears from my history, from my tribe's past. They were Cherokee tears."

Political awakening

Mankiller finished high school and took a job as a clerk. She met and married Hector Hugo Olaya de Bardi in 1963, and they had two daughters. Wilma settled into the role of wife and mother. This was a time when there were many political and social movements taking place across America. In 1969 her life was changed. San Francisco State student and Mohawk Richard Oakes (1942–1972), along with other Native Americans of different tribes, occupied an abandoned prison on Alcatraz island in the San Francisco Bay to call attention to the mistreatment of Native Americans by the U.S. government. The invasion was seen as a historic event by many Native American people, Mankiller included. "When Alcatraz occurred, I became aware of what needed to be done to let the rest of the world know that Indians had rights, too. Alcatraz articulated [expressed] my own feelings about being an Indian," Mankiller stated in her autobiography. She began a commitment to serve the Native American people to the best of her ability in the area of law and legal defense.

In addition to wanting to help her people, Mankiller began to desire independence, and she began taking courses at a community college and later at San Francisco State. This caused a conflict with her marriage. "Once I began to become more independent, more active with school and in the community, it became increasingly difficult to keep my marriage together. Before that, Hugo had viewed me as someone he had rescued from a very bad life," she noted in her autobiography. In 1974 she was divorced and became a single head of the household.

Personal tragedies and health problems

In 1971 Mankiller's father died from a kidney disease in San Francisco, which she said "tore through my spirit like a blade of lightning." The family took Charlie Mankiller home to Oklahoma for burial, and then Wilma Mankiller returned to California. It was not long before she too had kidney problems, inherited from her father. Her early kidney problems could be treated, though eventually she had to have a transplant. Her brother Donald became her "hero" by donating one of his kidneys so that she could live.

In 1976 Mankiller returned to Oklahoma for good. She found a job as a community coordinator in the Cherokee tribal headquarters and enrolled in graduate courses at the University of Arkansas in Fayetteville. This required her to drive a long distance every day. She was returning home one morning in 1979 when a car approached her on a blind curve and, out of nowhere, another car attempted to pass it. She swerved to miss the approaching car but failed. The vehicles collided almost head-on. Mankiller was seriously injured, and many thought she would not survive. The driver of the other automobile did not. It turned out to be Sherry Morris, Mankiller's best friend. Mankiller had to overcome both her physical injuries and the guilt she experienced after the accident. Then in 1980 she came down with myasthenia gravis, a muscle disease. Again her life was threatened, but her will to live and her determination to heal her body with the power of her mind prevailed.

Becomes principal chief

In 1983 Ross Swimmer (1943–), then principal chief of the Cherokee Nation of

Oklahoma, asked Mankiller to be his deputy chief in the election. While campaigning she was surprised by the criticism she received—not for her stand on any particular issue, but simply because she was a woman. Swimmer and Mankiller won the election and took office in August. On December 5, 1985, Swimmer was nominated to head the Bureau of Indian Affairs in Washington, D.C. Mankiller was sworn in to replace him as principal chief of the Cherokee Nation. She focused on education and health care, overseeing the construction of new schools, job-training centers, and health clinics.

Mankiller overcame many tragedies to become a guiding power for the Cherokee people of Oklahoma and a symbol of achievement for women everywhere. Throughout her life, Mankiller has managed to not complain about how bad things were for herself, for her people, and for Native Americans in general. She instead has worked to help make life better. Although she declined to seek another term as principal chief in 1995 for health reasons, she remains in the public eye, writing and giving lectures across the country. She has stressed that if all the Native Americans who were eligible to vote actually did so, officials elected with those votes would be forced to address the problems of Native Americans. She also has called for an end to the increasing problem of violence against women. Mankiller was inducted into the Women's Hall of Fame in New York City in 1994 and was given a Presidential Medal of Freedom by then-president Bill Clinton (1946–) in 1998.

For More Information

Kucharczyk, Emily Rose. *Wilma Mankiller*. Woodbridge, CT: Blackbirch Press, 2002.

Mankiller, Wilma, and Michael Wallis. *Mankiller: A Chief and Her People*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1993.

Yannuzzi, Della A. *Wilma Mankiller: Leader of the Cherokee Nation*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1994.

MICKEY MANTLE

Born: October 20, 1931

Spavinaw, Oklahoma

Died: August 13, 1995

Dallas, Texas

American baseball player

Baseball player Mickey Mantle (known as “the Mick”) won four home-run championships, a Triple Crown (highest batting average, most home runs, and most RBIs [runs batted in] in one season), and three Most Valuable Player (MVP) awards during his eighteen-year career with the New York Yankees.

Early years

Mickey Charles Mantle was born on October 20, 1931, in Spavinaw, Oklahoma, to Elvin (“Mutt”) and Lovell Richardson Mantle. A former semi-pro (professional but independent of Major League Baseball) baseball player, Mutt Mantle named his first child after Detroit Tigers catcher Mickey Cochrane. Mickey was barely out of diapers before he was practicing baseball with his father. Mutt taught his son to be a switch-hitter: Mickey would use his natural right-handed swing

against his left-handed father and then turn around and bat left-handed against his right-handed grandfather.

Mantle played baseball, basketball, and football at his high school in Commerce, Oklahoma. During one game, however, he was kicked in the leg and developed osteomyelitis, a bone disease that would later affect his baseball career. Mantle attracted the attention of New York Yankee scout Tom Greenwade, who signed him to a contract of \$140 a week with a \$1,500 signing bonus.

Quick rise to the majors

Mantle reported to the Yankees’ minor league team in Independence, Kansas, in 1949 as a shortstop. After two years in the minor leagues, the Yankees invited him to their major league training camp. He earned a place on the roster, and the New York media soon began comparing him to Babe Ruth (1895–1948) and other past Yankee greats. Only nineteen years old and two years out of high school, Mantle did not immediately live up to the hype. He started slowly in his new position—right field—and was sent back to the minor leagues. Mantle’s difficulties continued when, in 1952, his father died of Hodgkin’s disease, a form of cancer, at the age of thirty-nine. Mantle had been very close to his father, and he took the death hard.

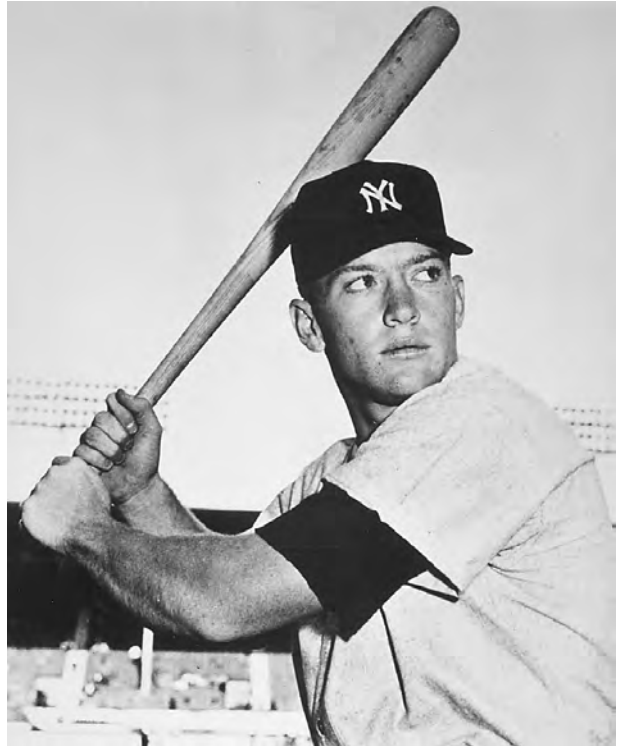
Mantle was moved to center field when Joe DiMaggio (1914–1999) retired from the Yankees following the 1951 season. He began to adjust to big-league play, and in 1952 he batted .311 with 23 home runs and 87 RBIs. That season Mantle began to establish himself as one of baseball’s best home-run hitters. During one game against the Washington Senators, Mantle hit a ball completely out of

Griffith Stadium in Washington, D.C. Measured at 565 feet, it is believed to be the longest home run ever hit. The New York Yankees won the World Series during each of Mantle's first three seasons, from 1951 to 1953. During the 1952 World Series against the Brooklyn Dodgers, Mantle batted .345 with two home runs. In the 1953 Series, again against the Dodgers, he batted only .208 but hit two more home runs.

Continued success

Mantle's talents led the Yankees as they ruled throughout the late 1950s. They won the American League pennant each year from 1955 to 1958, taking the World Series in 1956 and 1958. Mantle became a genuine superstar in 1956 when he won baseball's Triple Crown, with a .353 batting average, 52 home runs, and 130 RBIs. He was also selected the American League's MVP. In 1957 he hit .365 and was again named the league MVP.

Mantle's success at the plate continued as the Yankees remained strong well into the 1960s. After losing the pennant to the Chicago White Sox in 1959, the team came back to win it the next five seasons, joined by new stars such as Tony Kubek, Bobby Richardson, Bill Skowron, and Roger Maris. Mantle captured the home run title again in 1960, and he led the competition for the title again in 1961—one of the most dramatic home run seasons in the history of the game. By early August Mantle already had hit 43 home runs, while Maris, his teammate, had 42. The record for home runs in a season was held by Babe Ruth, who had blasted 60 in 1927. Although Mantle ended the year with 54 home runs (his all-time high), Maris hit 61 homers and established the new all-time



Mickey Mantle.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

record (later broken by Mark McGwire in 1998, then Barry Bonds in 2001).

Mantle continued to excel even though his legs hurt most of the time from the osteomyelitis and other injuries. In 1962 he was named American League MVP for the third time. Although the Yankees continued to win pennants, their days of glory were coming to an end. They lost the 1963 World Series to the Los Angeles Dodgers and the 1964 World Series to the St. Louis Cardinals. By 1965 the Yankees's run was over. Mantle became unhappy with his pain and with his many strikeouts. During the 1965 season he said, "It isn't any fun when things are like this.

I'm only thirty-three, but I feel like forty." Mantle continued to play through the 1968 season; he announced his retirement in the spring of 1969.

Later years

Mantle left the Yankees with many great achievements. In addition to hitting 536 lifetime home runs, he led the American League in homers four times and was chosen as its most valuable player three times. He is one of only a few players to win a Triple Crown. He played on twelve pennant-winning and seven World Series-winning teams. He still holds the all-time record for home runs in World Series play (18) as well as numerous other World Series records. Mantle was a symbol of the Yankees and their greatness. In 1974 he was elected to baseball's Hall of Fame in his first year on the ballot (a list of players who are eligible to be voted into the Hall of Fame).

After retiring from baseball, Mantle pursued a business career, opening a restaurant and working in public relations for a casino in Atlantic City, New Jersey. He also made appearances to sign autographs and play in golf tournaments. His experience in television commercials and small film roles led to a job as a broadcaster for televised Yankees games. His career and personal life was marred by alcoholism, however.

Mantle had married Merlyn, a bank employee, in the 1950s, and they had four sons. Mantle was absent for much of their childhood, however, and he had a reputation for his all-night drinking. He and his wife separated in 1988. Their son Billy died of heart failure in March 1994 after being treated for Hodgkin's disease, the same illness that had taken Mantle's father and grandfa-

ther. Earlier in 1994 Mantle learned that his years of heavy drinking had left him with hepatitis (a swelling of the liver) and liver cancer. Although he received a liver transplant in June 1995, the cancer had spread to other organs, and Mantle died on August 13. His outstanding abilities and courage in the face of pain made him a hero to a generation of youngsters and adults alike.

For More Information

Castro, Tony. *Mickey Mantle: America's Prodigal Son*. Washington, DC: Brassey's, 2002.

Gallagher, Mark. *Explosion! Mickey Mantle's Legendary Home Runs*. New York: Arbor House, 1987.

Mantle, Mickey, and Herb Glick. *The Mick*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1985.

MAO ZEDONG

Born: December 26, 1893

Shaoshan, Hunan, China

Died: September 9, 1976

Beijing, China

Chinese statesman

Mao Zedong was a Chinese statesman whose status as a revolutionary in world history is probably next only to that of Vladimir Lenin (1870–1924). More than anyone else in recent history, Mao Zedong helped to reshape the social and political structures of his ancient and heavily populated country.

Early years

Mao Zedong was born in Shaoshan, Hunan, China, on December 26, 1893. Mao had two younger brothers and one younger sister. His father, Mao Jensheng, had started out as a poor peasant but eventually paid off his debts, became a landowner, and started a business trading rice. A devoted follower of the religion of Buddhism, his mother, Wen Ch'i-mei, wanted her son to have a religious career. Mao did not venture outside his home province (state) until he was twenty-five. Up to then, his formal education was limited to six years at a junior normal school where he acquired a limited knowledge of science, learned almost no foreign language, but developed a clear written style and a considerable understanding of social problems, Chinese history, and current affairs. However, Mao inherited the practical traditions of Hunan education with the hope that somehow it would help him find ways to strengthen and improve his country.

Mao's brief time in Peking, China, in 1918 broadened his view. Although his life there was miserable, he was working under the chief librarian of Peking University, who was one of the pioneer Marxists of China. (Marxists are those that believe in a social system created by Karl Marx [1818–1883] that gives the control to the working class. This system ultimately leads to communism, where goods and services are owned and distributed by the government.) On his return to Hunan in the following year, Mao was already committed to communism. While making a living as a primary schoolteacher, he edited radical (extreme) magazines, organized trade unions, and set up politically oriented schools of his own. With the rise of the



Mao Zedong.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Chinese Communist Party (CCP) in 1921, of which Mao was one of fifty founding members, these activities were pursued with added energy and to a greater depth.

Meanwhile, the major political party, the Kuomintang (KMT), was reorganized, and a coalition (partnership) was formed between the KMT and CCP. Mao's main task was to coordinate the policies of both parties; however, he was unable to prove himself in this position due to his lack of academic and social standing. In 1925 when the coalition ran into problems, Mao was sent back to Hunan to "convalesce," or recover.

Champion of the peasants

An unfortunate result of this setback was that Mao was completely left out of the nationwide protests against Japan and Britain in the summer of that year, during which many of his comrades made their mark as leaders of the trade union movement or party politics. Out of his “convalescence,” Mao discovered the revolutionary potential of the peasants, the poor farm workers whose great numbers had been treated poorly by the warlords. From then on Mao switched his attention to this vast underprivileged class of people.

Mao’s newly acquired knowledge and experience enabled him to play a leading role in the peasant movement led by both the KMT and CCP. By 1927 he was in a position to support a class substitution in the Chinese revolution. Mao proposed that the poor peasants fill the role of revolutionary vanguard (the most important positions). Shortly after the publication of his *Report on the Peasant Movement in Hunan*, the KMT-CCP coalition broke up and the Communists were forced underground.

Establishment of soviets

Some survivors of the party went underground in the cities, to continue their struggle as a working-class party; the rest took up arms against the government and eventually established rural soviets (small governments) in central and northern China. One of these soviets was Mao’s Ching-kang mountain base area between Kiangsi and Hunan, where he had to rely chiefly on the support of the poor peasants.

The soviets threatened to disrupt the unity of the revolutionary movement, because it was thought that it would break it up into small pockets. The center of the CCP,

located underground in Shanghai, China, therefore took on the task of strengthening its leadership and party loyalty. A successful revolution, in its view, had to take the course of a series of urban uprisings under proletarian (working-class) leadership. In its effort to achieve this, the center had to ease the growing powers of the soviet leaders like Mao. Its effort gradually produced results: Mao first lost his control over the army he had organized and trained, then his position in the soviet party, and finally even much of his power in the soviet government.

The Long March

The years of this struggle within the party coincided with Chiang Kai-shek’s (1897–1975) successes in his anti-Communist campaigns. Eventually Chiang was able to drive the Communists out of their base areas on the Long March (a year-long, six-thousand-mile journey through the hills of Shensi). The loss of nearly all the soviets in central China suffered by the Communists proved the weaknesses of central party leadership.

When the revolutionary movement slowed and the hardships of the Long March were felt, those who might have challenged Mao for leadership fell by the wayside. By the time the Communists arrived at Yen-an, China, the party had gained a measure of unity, to be further consolidated (brought together) after the outbreak of the Sino-Japanese War in 1937, where China and Japan fought over land in China. This was the first truly nationalist war China had ever fought, in which the nation as a whole united to face the common foe of Japan.

By early 1941 the unity between the KMT and CCP had come to exist in name

only. This new situation called for the emergence of a Communist leader who could rival Chiang in case a civil war broke out. Mao was such the person, and soon his popularity began to grow.

Leader of the Chinese Communists

The personality cult (a community of worship) of Mao grew until his concepts were written into the party's constitution of 1945 (the constitution would outline the party's rules and principles). Under Mao's brilliant leadership the party fought from one victory to another, until it took power in 1949. Mao's concepts now guided the Communists in their way of thinking, their organization, and their action. In giving their faith to Mao's belief, they found unity and strength, and an understanding of the nature, strategy, and tactics of the revolution.

But Mao's concept had very little to say about the modernization and industrialization of China. Therefore, after 1949 the CCP was left to follow the example of the Soviet Union, with Soviet aid in the years of the cold war, the four-decade period of sour relations between Communist and free-world powers.

Mao launched the Socialist Upsurge in the Countryside of 1955 and the Great Leap Forward in 1958. The essential feature of these movements was a reliance upon the voluntary spirit of the people motivated by a new moral discipline, rather than upon money. The failure of the Great Leap Forward hurt Mao's power and reputation even further.

Cultural revolution

At this time, the worsening relations with the Soviet Union made its fatal impact.

Withdrawal of Soviet material aid practically all but ended China's attempt to copy the Soviet model. In the midst of this, Mao began his comeback.

During the famous Cultural Revolution of 1966 through 1969, Mao organized the army and young students into the Red Guards. With their help, Mao began to reorganize the CCP. Soon there was no Chinese thought beyond the extent of Mao's thought. By this Mao hoped to create enthusiasm of the Chinese masses to work harder while enduring a quiet and uncomplicated life. This may be the only way for a poor and heavily populated country like China to afford rapid transition into an industrialized country.

Last years

By the time Mao was in his late seventies, his life's work was essentially done, although he retained power until the end. Physically weakened, suffering from a lifetime of effort and Parkinson's Disease (a brain disorder), Mao's ability to rule in new and innovative ways to meet the demands of China's modernization grew increasingly weak. One of his final major acts was to reopen contact with the United States.

On September 9, 1976, Mao died in Beijing, China. Mao was undoubtedly the key figure in China in the twentieth century and one of the century's most important movers and reformers. He had devoted his life to the advancement of a peasant class terrorized for centuries by those in power. However, in pursuit of his own goals, Mao himself could be a violent and overpowering ruler.

For More Information

- Feigon, Lee. *Mao: A Reinterpretation*. Chicago: Ivan R. Dee, 2002.
- Garza, Hedda. *Mao Zedong*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.
- Short, Philip. *Mao: A Life*. New York: Henry Holt, 2000.
- Terrill, Ross. *Mao: A Biography*. New York: Harper & Row, 1980. Reprint, Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 1999.

ROCKY MARCIANO

Born: September 1, 1923

Brockton, Massachusetts

Died: August 31, 1969

Des Moines, Iowa

American boxer

Boxer Rocky Marciano held the heavyweight boxing title for four years during the 1950s. He is the only boxing champion to ever retire undefeated.

His younger years

Rocky Marciano was born Rocco Francis Marchegiano on September 1, 1923, in Brockton, Massachusetts. His father, Pierino, worked at a shoe factory. His mother's name was Pasqualena. Rocky would spend much of his life making sure she would not live in the poverty he had known growing up. He worked many different jobs to help his family, including as a dishwasher, in a candy factory, as a gardener, and in a shoe factory.

As a youngster Rocky played baseball and football and dreamed of a professional career in one of those sports. He got into many fights when he thought he or his friends had been insulted, but he did not take up boxing until after 1943, when he was drafted into the army. He took the sport up because it helped him avoid "KP" ("kitchen police," soldiers who assisted the cooks) and other less desirable activities. He showed a natural ability and fought as an amateur following his discharge from the army in 1946. He won twenty-seven of his thirty fights.

Baseball dreams

In 1947 Marciano had a chance to fulfill his dream of being a baseball player. He was given a tryout with the Chicago Cubs as a catcher. He did not make the team, because he could not accurately throw from home plate to second base due to an arm injury he received in the army. It was the end of his baseball dreams. The following year he turned professional in the boxing ring.

By the spring of 1949 Marciano's boxing skills had received attention, after he knocked out his first sixteen opponents. The people he fought were not up to his level, but he learned much about the sport during this period. The quality of his opponents improved over the latter half of 1949 and 1950. Marciano continued to beat all opponents, knocking out most of them.

Proved doubters wrong

There were those who thought not much good would come from the 190-pound heavyweight from Brockton in the early days. Goody Petronelli, who was a famous fight trainer, saw one of Marciano's early fights. In

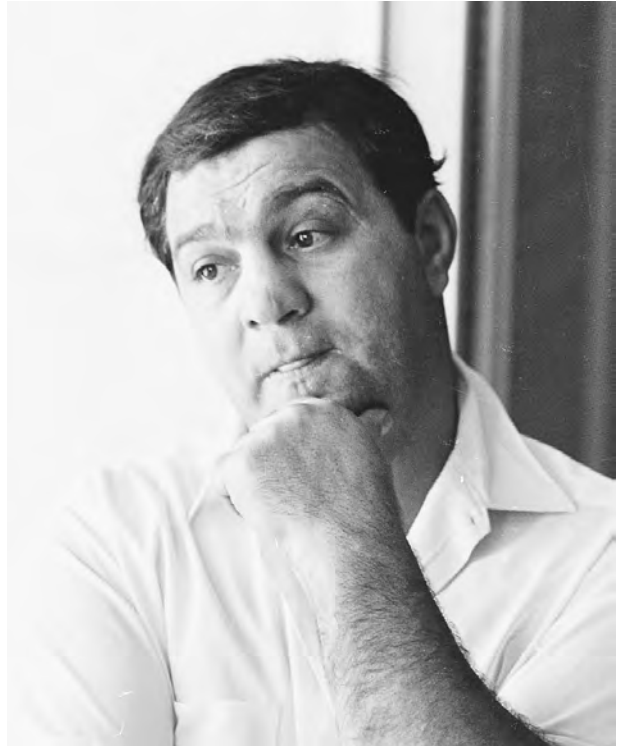
a story for *Sports Illustrated* he said, “I never thought he’d make it. He was too old, almost twenty-five. He was too short, he was too light. He had no reach. Rough and tough, but no finesse [refinement].” The hometown folks believed in him, though. They traveled in groups to Marciano’s fights in nearby Providence, Rhode Island, and yelled “Timm-berrr” when Rocky had an opponent ready to go down.

Boxing technique

Charley Goldman was the trainer who taught Marciano his trademark technique, which would serve him well as champion. Marciano was shorter than many of his opponents and his arms were not as long. Goldman taught him to use these characteristics to his advantage. He told him to make himself smaller by bending his knees almost into a deep knee squat. This gave his opponents less targets on his body to hit. He learned to punch from that position, coming straight up almost from the floor with amazing power. Even with what seemed like a physical disadvantage, because of his training and will to win, Marciano turned out to be one of the best-conditioned athletes in sports.

Marciano defeats Joe Louis

By October 26, 1951, Marciano had thirty-seven wins and thirty-two knockouts under his belt. That was the day Marciano faced his most formidable (challenging) opponent—former heavyweight champion Joe Louis (1914–1981). Louis was past his prime, his best fighting years, and Marciano knocked him out in the eighth round. Marciano had such mixed feelings about beating a man he had considered his hero that he



Rocky Marciano.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

cried in Louis’s dressing room after the fight. The fight established Marciano as one of the most famous fighters in the heavyweight division, and assured him of a chance to box for the title before too long.

Takes the Belt from Jersey Joe

After another five fights he got the chance to go for the title. Jersey Joe Walcott was the defending champion and Marciano was the challenger when the pair met in Philadelphia on September 23, 1952. Marciano won a victory that is remembered as typical of his tough-guy, never-say-die style. Marciano was behind on points and strug-

gling all night. He would not give up and finally caught Walcott with a short, overhand right to the jaw in the thirteenth round. Walcott was knocked unconscious and Marciano won the championship belt.

His years as champion

Marciano defended his title only six times, but some of those fights are considered classics by boxing fans. He knocked out Walcott in the first round of their rematch in 1953. He then knocked out challenger Roland La Starza later that year.

Marciano won a decision against Ezzard Charles in 1954. He almost lost his title in their rematch later that year. In the sixth round Charles cut Marciano's nose so badly that his cornermen (the people who Marciano had in his corner of the ring) could not stop the bleeding. The ring doctor watched the cut closely and considered stopping the fight, but Marciano came back forcefully against Charles in the eighth round and knocked him out.

Marciano defended his title against Don Cockell in 1955 by a knockout. It was later learned that organized crime tried to get him to throw the fight.

Marciano's last fight was September 21, 1955, the third time he defended his title in Yankee Stadium. He knocked out Archie Moore in the ninth round. Over four hundred thousand North American viewers watched the bout on closed-circuit television.

Retired from boxing

On April 27, 1956, Marciano retired from boxing. He was thirty-one. "I thought it was a mistake when Joe Louis tried a come-

back," he told the *New York Times* in an interview. "No man can say what he will do in the future, but barring poverty, the ring has seen the last of me. I am comfortably fixed, and I am not afraid of the future." He said he wanted to spend more time with his family. Some people have said that he also was upset because he had to pay half of his earnings to his manager.

The last years

After Marciano retired he made money from personal appearances. He was frugal (very careful with money). He preferred getting rides from friends who had private planes, even though he could usually be given paid transportation to and from any of his personal appearances.

On August 31, 1969, the day before his forty-sixth birthday, he died in a private-plane crash near Des Moines, Iowa. He was survived by his wife of nineteen years, Barbara, and his two children, Rocco Kevin and Mary Anne.

Marciano was never among the top boxers of all time in terms of skill, speed, or power, but he knew how to use the skills he had developed and his fans recognized his grit. One sportswriter commented that if all the heavyweight champions of all time were locked together in a room, Marciano would be the one to walk out.

For More Information

Skehan, Everett M. *Rocky Marciano: The Biography of a First Son*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1977.

Sullivan, Russell. *Rocky Marciano: The Rock of His Times*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 2002.

FERDINAND MARCOS

Born: September 11, 1917

Sarrat, Philippines

Died: September 28, 1989

Honolulu, Hawaii

Filipino president and politician

Philippine president Ferdinand Marcos began his career in politics with the murder of Julio Nalundasan in 1935, and ended it after the murder of Benigno Aquino Jr. in 1983. Some believe his entire life was based on fraud, deceit, and theft, and his time as president has come to represent one of the prime examples of a corrupt government.

Youth and family

Ferdinand Edralin Marcos was born on September 11, 1917, in Sarrat, a village in the Ilocos North region of the island of Luzon in the Philippines. His parents, Josefa Edralin and Mariano Marcos, were both teachers from important families. In 1925 Mariano Marcos became a congressman, surrounding the young Ferdinand in a political atmosphere at an early age. Mariano also had a strong influence on what was to become Ferdinand's competitive, win-at-all-costs nature. Mariano and Josefa pushed Ferdinand to excel at everything, not only his studies at school, but also at activities such as wrestling, boxing, hunting, survival skills, and marksmanship (skill with a gun or rifle). In college, Marcos's main interest was the .22-caliber college pistol team.

Marcos's real father was not Mariano but a wealthy Chinese man named Ferdinand

Chua. (Marcos would claim that Chua was his "godfather.") Chua was a well-connected judge who was responsible for much of Marcos's unusual good luck as a young man. Among other things, Chua paid for young Marcos's schooling and later managed to influence the Philippine Supreme Court to overturn the young Marcos's conviction for murder.

On September 20, 1935, Julio Nalundasan was at home celebrating his congressional election victory over Mariano Marcos when he was shot and killed with a .22-caliber bullet fired by the eighteen-year-old Ferdinand Marcos. Three years later, Ferdinand was arrested for Nalundasan's murder. A year later, after having graduated from law school, he was found guilty of the crime. While in jail Marcos spent six months writing his own appeal for a new trial. When the Supreme Court finally took up Marcos's appeal in 1940, the judge in charge (apparently influenced by Judge Chua) threw out the case. Marcos was a free man. The next day, he returned to the Supreme Court and took the oath to become a lawyer.

Wartime activities

Throughout Marcos's childhood, the Philippines had been a colony (a foreign region under the control of another country) of the United States. However, the Philippines had been largely self-governing and gained independence in 1946. This occurred only after fierce fighting in the country during World War II (1939–45), the international conflict for control of large areas of the world between the Axis (Germany, Japan, and Italy) and the Allies (United States, Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and others). During



Ferdinand Marcos.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

World War II, the Philippines were invaded and occupied by the Japanese, while U.S. forces and Filipino resistance fighters fought to regain control of the country.

Marcos emerged from World War II with a reputation as the greatest Filipino resistance leader of the war and the most decorated soldier in the U.S. armed forces. However, he appeared to have spent the war on both sides, lending support to both the Japanese and the United States. In early 1943 in Manila (the capital of the Philippines), Marcos created a “secret” resistance organization called Ang Mga Maharlika that he claimed consisted of agents working against the Japanese. In fact,

the group consisted of many criminals—forgers, pickpockets, gunmen, and gangsters—hoping to make money in the wartime climate.

At the war’s end, Marcos took up the practice of law again. He often filed false claims in Washington, D.C., on behalf of Filipino veterans seeking back pay (wages owed) and benefits. Encouraged by his success with these claims, he filed a \$595 thousand claim on his own behalf, stating that the U.S. Army had taken over two thousand head of cattle from Mariano Marcos’s ranch. In fact, this ranch never existed, which made Washington conclude that the cattle never existed.

Political career

In December 1948 a magazine editor published four articles on Marcos’s war experiences, causing Marcos’s reputation to grow. In 1949, campaigning on promises to get veterans’ benefits for two million Filipinos, Marcos ran as a Liberal Party candidate for a seat in the Philippine House of Representatives. He won with 70 percent of the vote. In less than a year he was worth a million dollars, mostly because of his American tobacco subsidies (financial assistance to grow tobacco), a huge cigarette smuggling operation, and his practice of pressuring Chinese businesses to cooperate with him. In 1954 he formally met Imelda Romualdez (1929–) and married her.

Marcos was reelected twice, and in 1959 he was elected to the Philippine Senate. He was also the Liberal Party’s vice-president from 1954 to 1961, when he successfully managed Diosdado Macapagal’s (1911–1997) run for the Philippine presidency. As part of his arrangement with Marcos, Macapagal was supposed to step aside after one term to allow Marcos to run for the presidency. When

Macapagal did not do this, Marcos joined the opposition Nationalist Party and became their candidate in the 1965 election against Macapagal and easily won. Marcos was now president of the Philippines.

In 1969 Marcos became the first Philippine president to win a second term. However, not all Filipinos were happy with his presidency, and the month following his reelection included the most violent public demonstrations in the history of the country. Three years later, facing growing student protest and a crumbling economy, Marcos declared martial law, a state of emergency in which military authorities are given extraordinary powers to maintain order. Marcos's excuse for declaring martial law was the growing revolutionary movement of the Communist New People's Army, which opposed his government.

During the next nine years of martial law, Marcos tripled the armed forces to some two hundred thousand troops, guaranteeing his grip on government. When martial law was lifted in 1981, he kept all the power he had been granted under martial law to himself. Meanwhile the economy continued to crumble while Ferdinand and Imelda Marcos became one of the richest couples in the world. As Marcos's health began to fail and U.S. support for him lessened, opposition to Marcos grew in the Philippine middle class.

Final years

The Marcos regime began to collapse after the August 1983 assassination (political killing) of Benigno S. Aquino Jr. (1933–1983), who had been Marcos's main political rival. Aquino was shot and killed when he arrived at the Manila airport after three years in the

United States. The killing enraged Filipinos, as did authorities' claim that the murder was the work of a single gunman. A year later, a civilian investigation brought charges against a number of soldiers and government officials, but in 1985 none of them were found guilty. Nevertheless, most Filipinos believe that Marcos was involved in Aquino's killing.

Marcos next called for a "snap [sudden] election" to be held early in 1986. In that election, which was marked by violence and charges of fraud, Marcos's opponent was Aquino's widow, Corazon Aquino. When the Philippine National Assembly announced that Marcos was the winner, a rebellion in the Philippine military, supported by hundreds of thousands of Filipinos marching in the streets, forced Ferdinand and Imelda Marcos to flee the country.

Marcos asked for U.S. aid but was given nothing more than an air force jet, which flew him and Imelda to Hawaii. He remained there until his death on September 28, 1989. The Marcoses had taken with them more than twenty-eight million cash in Philippine currency. President Aquino's administration said this was only a small part of the Marcoses' illegally gained wealth.

For More Information

Bonner, Raymond. *Waltzing with a Dictator: The Marcoses and the Making of American Policy*. New York: Vintage Books, 1988.

Celoza, Albert F. *Ferdinand Marcos and the Philippines: The Political Economy of Authoritarianism*. Westport, CT: Praeger, 1997.

Romulo, Beth Day. *Inside the Palace: The Rise and Fall of Ferdinand & Imelda Marcos*. New York: Putnam, 1987.

Seagrave, Sterling. *The Marcos Dynasty*. New York: Harper & Row, 1988.

Spence, Hartzell. *For Every Tear a Victory: The Story of Ferdinand E. Marcos*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1964.

MARCUS AURELIUS

Born: April 26, 121

Rome (now in Italy)

Died: March 17, 180

Vindobona (now Vienna, Austria)

Roman emperor

The Roman emperor Marcus Aurelius (121–180) was a Stoic philosopher. Stoicism was a complex philosophy that advised people to find happiness by living in harmony with the universe and by doing their part to better the world—without worries about fate or about things they were unable to control. When Marcus Aurelius became emperor there was widespread celebration that Plato’s dream of a philosopher-king had become reality at last.

Born into privilege

Born Marcus Annius Verus on April 26, 121, of a noble family, Marcus Aurelius Antoninus grew up close to the center of power. When he was a child, the emperor Hadrian (76–138) noticed him and made a word play on his name, Verus (meaning “true”), by calling him Verissimus (meaning “truest”) for his strong sense of morals. Hadrian had difficulty choosing an emperor to follow him, but placed Marcus on the path to

rule. When he adopted Marcus’s uncle by marriage, Antoninus Pius (86–161), he arranged for Antoninus to adopt Marcus Aurelius along with the young Lucius Verus (130–169).

Marcus Aurelius had an extraordinary education. Among his tutors was Diognetus, a painter and Stoic philosopher. Marcus studied subjects such as poetry and law, and generally was an excellent student. But philosophy was Marcus’s main interest. Under Diognetus’s influence, young Marcus became a Stoic at the age of eleven and remained a dedicated follower of stoicism for the rest of his life.

Rise to emperor

Antoninus Pius, only a year after he became emperor, had the title Caesar placed on Marcus in 139. His daughter Faustina probably married Marcus in 140. Throughout the reign of Antoninus (ruled 138–161), Marcus worked closely with him.

When Antoninus died and Marcus became emperor, he insisted that Verus also be given full power. Thus, for the first time, Rome had two equal emperors. The reason this arrangement did not produce conflict between lifetime equals was due in large part to the good nature of Verus and his acceptance of Marcus’s seniority in years and judgment.

Foreign wars

When Verus and Marcus first became joint emperors of Rome they faced the problem of war in the East. Parthia (located in present-day Iran) was always a rival for power in Armenia, and in 162 Parthia attacked. Marcus Aurelius remained in Rome and sent Verus to take charge of the war.

Although Verus was not a trained soldier, the war carried on smoothly. But in late 165 a plague, or very contagious disease, broke out among the Roman troops. They carried it back with them and the plague killed a quarter or more of the population of the Roman Empire. Rome recalled its armies from Parthia, defeated but not conquered. Nevertheless, Marcus and Verus celebrated a great triumph.

The Parthian War had ended none too soon, for the German War had already begun. In 167 a group of tribes crossed the Danube River, destroyed a Roman army, and successfully conquered a city in Italy. The danger was critical, for the plague was raging, particularly in the army camps. Also, the Roman treasury, always short of money, was worse off than usual.

Marcus raised new armies and funds and in 168 went with Verus to the battlefield. Verus died in early 169, and Marcus was left to face the war alone. The Germans were driven back, but the war dragged on, with Marcus mainly at the battlefield. Gradually the Romans gained the upper hand. But by 175 Marcus had to call off the war because of the revolt of Avidius Cassius in the East.

Revolt of Avidius Cassius

After his service in the Parthian War, Avidius Cassius, a Syrian, had been made governor of Syria and held great power. In 175 Marcus grew sick and it was rumored that he was either dying or dead. Partly for this reason Avidius was hailed emperor and accepted by most of the East. Marcus had to break off the war in Germany and hurry eastward.



Marcus Aurelius.

Cassius was murdered three months later and his body was sent back to Rome in late 176. The German War started again in 177, and Marcus returned to the battlefield. Once again he was winning the war. However, Marcus died on March 17, 180—never to see the final victory over the Germans.

The Meditations

Marcus Aurelius is most remembered for the collection of his thoughts or reflections usually entitled *The Meditations*. Apparently written down from time to time, the thoughts form no organized system of philosophy. Rather, they are the record of a person whose principles were noble, who had a warm love

of humankind, and who had a philosophy similar to religion. To Marcus, happiness was to be achieved by living “according to nature,” in harmony with the principle that ordered the universe; the peace of mind of such a person could not be affected by life’s difficulties.

For More Information

Birley, Anthony. *Marcus Aurelius: A Biography*. Rev. ed. London: Routledge, 2000.

Farquharson, Arthur S. L. *Marcus Aurelius: His Life and His World*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1975.

Sedgwick, Henry Dwight. *Marcus Aurelius: A Biography*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1921. Reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1971.

MARIE ANTOINETTE

Born: November 2, 1755

Vienna (now in Austria)

Died: October 16, 1793

Paris, France

French queen

Marie Antoinette was the queen of France at the outbreak of the French Revolution (1787–99). Her extravagant lifestyle, which included lavish parties and expensive clothes and jewelry, made her unpopular with most French citizens. When the king was overthrown, Marie Antoinette was put in jail and eventually beheaded.

A royal marriage

Marie Antoinette was born on November 2, 1755, in Vienna (now in Austria), the capital of the Holy Roman Empire. She was the eleventh daughter of the Holy Roman emperor Francis I (1708–1765) and the empress Maria Theresa (1717–1780). In 1770 she married Louis XVI (1754–1793). Louis was the French dauphin, or the oldest son of the king of France. He became king four years later in 1774, which made Marie Antoinette the queen.

The personalities of the two rulers were very different. Louis XVI was withdrawn and emotionless. Marie Antoinette was happy and careless in her actions and choice of friends. At first the new queen was well liked by the French citizens. She organized elegant dances and gave many gifts and favors to her friends. However, people began to resent her increasingly extravagant ways. She soon became unpopular in the court and the country, annoying many of the nobles, including the King’s brothers. She also bothered French aristocrats, or nobles, who were upset over a recent alliance with Austria. Austria was long viewed as France’s enemy. Among the general French population she became the symbol for the extravagance of the royal family.

The queen intervenes

Marie Antoinette did not disrupt foreign affairs as frequently as has been claimed. When she first entered France she interrupted an official German greeting with, “Speak French, Monsieur. From now on I hear no language other than French.” She sometimes tried, usually without great success, to obtain French support for her homeland.

The queen's influence on domestic policy before 1789 has also been exaggerated. Her interference in politics was usually in order to obtain jobs and money for her friends. It is true, however, that she usually opposed the efforts of reforming ministers such as A. R. J. Turgot (1727–1781) and became involved in court scandals against them. Activities such as the “diamond necklace affair,” where the queen was accused of having an improper relationship with a wealthy church official in exchange for an expensive necklace, increased her unpopularity and led to a stream of pamphlets and articles against her. The fact that after the birth of her children Marie Antoinette's way of life became more restrained did not alter the popular image of an immoral and extravagant woman.

The last days of the monarchy

In the summer of 1788 France was having an economic crisis. Louis XVI yielded to pressure and assembled the Estates General, which was a governmental body that represented France's three Estates—the nobles, the church, and the French common people. Marie Antoinette agreed to the return of Jacques Necker (1732–1804) as chief minister and to granting the Third Estate, which represented the commoners, as many representatives as the other two Estates combined. However, after such events as the taking of the Bastille on July 14, 1789 (French citizens overran a Paris prison and took the weapons stored there), Marie Antoinette supported the conservative court faction that insisted on keeping the royal family in power.

On October 1, 1789, the queen attended a banquet at Versailles, France, during which the French Revolution was attacked and insulted. A



Marie Antoinette.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

few days later (October 4–5) a Parisian crowd forced the royal court to move to Paris, where they could control it more easily. Marie Antoinette's role in the efforts of the monarchy to work with such moderates as the Comte de Mirabeau (1749–1791) and later with the constitutional monarchist A. P. Barnave (1761–1793) is unclear. But it appears that she lacked confidence in them. On June 21, 1791, the king and queen were captured at Varennes (a border town in France) after trying to escape. Convinced that only foreign assistance could save the monarchy, the queen sought the aid of her brother, the Holy Roman emperor Leopold II (1747–1792). At this time, many French military officers left the country. Thinking that

France would be easily defeated, she favored a declaration of war against Austria in April 1792. On August 10, 1792, a Paris crowd stormed the Tuileries Palace and ended the monarchy.

The queen is dead

On August 13, 1792, Marie Antoinette began a captivity that was to end only with her death. She was jailed in various Parisian prisons. After a number of unsuccessful attempts to escape, Marie Antoinette appeared before the Revolutionary Tribunal. She was charged with aiding the enemy and inciting civil war within France. The tribunal found her guilty and condemned her to death. On October 16, 1793, she went to the guillotine. (The guillotine was a machine used during the French Revolution to execute people by beheading them.) Marie Antoinette aroused sympathy by her dignity and courage in prison and before the executioner.

For More Information

Fraser, Antonia. *Marie Antoinette: The Journey*. New York: Doubleday, 2001.

Lever, Evelyne. *Marie Antoinette: The Last Queen of France*. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 2000.

Thomas, Chantal. *The Wicked Queen: The Origins of the Myth of Marie-Antoinette*. New York: Zone Books, 1999.

MARK
ANTONY

Born: c. 83 B.C.E.
Rome (now in Italy)

Died: 30 B.C.E.

Alexandria, Egypt

Roman politician and general

The Roman politician and general Mark Antony was the chief rival of another prominent Roman politician, Octavian (63 B.C.E.–14 C.E.), seeking leadership of the Roman Empire. Both men desired to assume power after the assassination (political murder) of Julius Caesar in 44 B.C.E. The man who came out on top of this struggle would go on to become perhaps the most powerful figure in the world at that time.

Youth and family

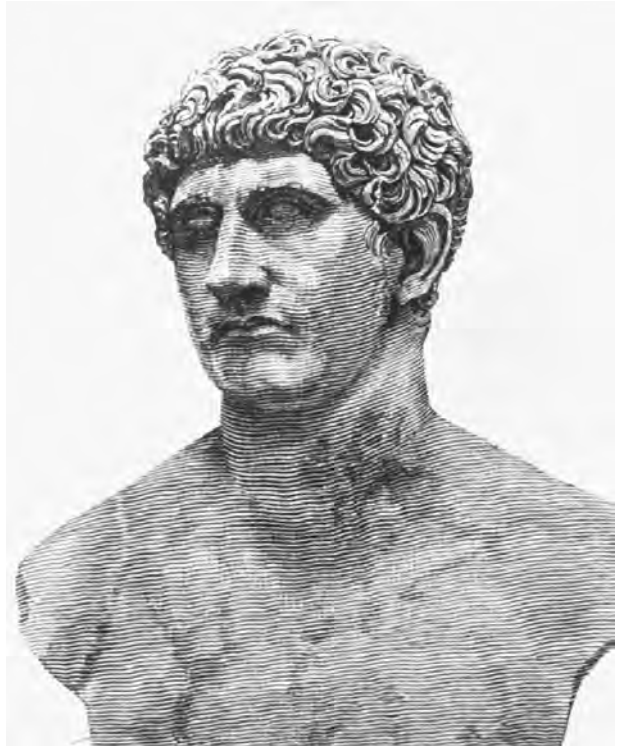
Mark Antony (in Latin, Marcus Antonius) came from a distinguished Roman family. His grandfather had been one of Rome's leading public speakers, and his father, Marcus Antonius Creticus, had died in a military expedition against pirates when Antony was young.

As a young man from a distinguished family, Antony received an appropriate education. His studies focused on skills that would be useful to him later in politics, such as the art of public speaking and the ability to think about a question or situation objectively and from many angles. All his life, however, he was known for mixing such activities with a love of less serious pleasures. At an early age he became known for the personality traits he showed later as an adult: he was brave, loyal to friends, athletic, and attractive, but he was also reckless, occasionally lazy, fond of drinking and carousing, and involved in love affairs.

Career with Caesar

Antony received his first overseas experience in the eastern portion of the Roman Empire, when, during 57 to 55 B.C.E., he served with the Roman governor of Syria, which was a province (territory) of Rome. From there he went to serve with Caesar (100–44 B.C.E.) in Gaul (a region of Europe that included what is now modern-day France, as well as parts of modern-day Germany, Belgium, and Italy). Caesar conquered Gaul for Rome, and Antony assisted him in suppressing local rebellion against the Romans. In 50 B.C.E., after returning to Rome, Antony was elected a tribune, an office that represented the people's interests. Tribunes were expected to stand up for the rights of individuals and for those who were not members of the highest classes of Roman society. By contrast, the Senate, Rome's primary governing and advisory body, was composed primarily of members from a small hereditary aristocracy (political upper class).

Antony came into the office at a critical time. Caesar's command in Gaul was coming to an end, and a group in the Senate was set on bringing Caesar to trial for what they saw as his misuse of his power. Caesar depended upon the tribunes to look after his interests in Rome, and Antony did so when he vetoed a decree that required Caesar and the men he commanded to lay down their arms. However, when the Senate gave its officers special powers to "preserve the state," Antony felt that the measure would be used against him and he fled to Caesar. By doing so, he gave Caesar the opportunity to assert his power, because he could claim he was defending the people's representatives—the tribunes—against the power of the Senate.



Mark Antony.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

A series of civil wars followed that pitted Caesar and the armies and politicians loyal to him against the forces of Pompey (106–48 B.C.E.), the leader of the Senate faction. Under Caesar, Antony was given several important military assignments and distinguished himself. After Caesar defeated Pompey, Antony returned to Italy as Caesar's second in command. In 45 B.C.E. Caesar designated him as consul (a one-year position that was one of the most powerful in Roman government) for 44 B.C.E.

Once again Antony found himself in a key position at an important time. Caesar was rapidly moving in the direction of a govern-

ment in which he would hold king-like powers. As a result, a plot formed to eliminate Caesar. On March 15, 44 B.C.E., he was assassinated. Antony was spared on the grounds that the aim of the plot was to remove an illegal ruler, and that killing the consul, who was the chief legitimate officer of the Roman state, would reflect poorly on the cause.

Second Triumvirate

With Caesar's death, Antony was forced to fight a two-front war. One front was against those who had plotted to kill Caesar. The other was with Caesar's supporters, who were undecided on how to avenge Caesar and as to who would lead them. Antony might have ensured his leadership without difficulty if the young Octavian, nephew of Caesar, had not appeared, claiming to be Caesar's adopted son and heir and also demanding to be given Caesar's political power.

Antony tried to strengthen his position by attempting to gain a new five-year command in Gaul, but Octavian skillfully lured some of Antony's legions (the largest unit in the Roman military) to his side. In the clash that followed, Antony's forces attacked Decimus Brutus (a leader of the plotters), but he was in turn attacked by the armies of Octavian and the consuls. He was defeated and forced to retreat north.

In the following months Antony strengthened himself with the armies of the western Roman Empire; while Octavian, realizing that the Senate was trying to use him, began to establish an alliance with Antony. The result was the formation of the Second Triumvirate of Antony, Octavian, and Lepidus (c. 90–13 B.C.E.), another of Caesar's for-

mer officers. As a triumvirate (consisting of three governing officials called triumvirs), they assumed absolute authority for ruling the empire, although Antony and Octavian soon edged Lepidus out of power. Unlike an earlier triumvirate consisting of Caesar, Pompey, and the politician Crassus (c. 115–53 B.C.E.), which was a mere political alliance, the Second Triumvirate became a constitutionally established body for ruling the state. Octavian assumed control in the west, Antony in the east, and Lepidus (for a time) in Africa.

Antony and Octavian now moved eastward to face the army of those who had killed Caesar. The two forces met at Philippi, Greece, in 42 B.C.E., where Antony's military skill led to victory.

Antony and Cleopatra

After this battle Antony's career entered its most famous period. While Octavian returned to Italy, Antony went east to put affairs in order in the eastern provinces. He also prepared a war against Parthia (located in present-day Iran), and, needing Egyptian support, he met with Cleopatra, queen of Egypt, in 41 B.C.E. An immediate romance followed. This was interrupted when the news arrived that Antony's brother and wife were openly defying Octavian in Italy. Antony moved back west and peace was patched up in 40 B.C.E. with Antony's wedding to Octavian's sister, Octavia, after the death of Antony's first wife.

Antony soon went east again, beating back the Parthians. In 36 B.C.E. he again took up his affair with Cleopatra, becoming involved with her both romantically and politically. Cleopatra saw her alliance with

Antony as a wonderful opportunity to revive the past glories of the Ptolemies, the royal family line from which she was descended. What Antony's ideas were is not clear. He was certainly was dependent on Cleopatra for money, and he did cede (give) territory and grant titles to Cleopatra's family.

Octavian's triumph

At the close of 33 B.C.E. the Second Triumvirate legally came to an end. At the same time the crisis between Octavian and Antony was reaching a climax. Antony still had support in Rome. Octavian turned public opinion against Antony, however, doing so by announcing Antony's divorce of Octavia for Cleopatra, reading Antony's will (in which his strong ties to Cleopatra were stressed), and starting rumors against Antony.

Octavian gathered support in Italy, while Antony's Roman friends had mixed emotions about waging war on the side of the Egyptian queen. The two men and their armies met off at Actium, Greece, on September 2, 31 B.C.E. In a confused battle Antony's fleet was defeated. He fled back to Egypt with Cleopatra. Upon Octavian's arrival in Egypt, Antony committed suicide. Octavian went on to become the first emperor of Rome, taking the name Augustus.

For More Information

Huzar, Eleanor Goltz. *Mark Antony, a Biography*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1978. Reprint, Dover, NH: Croom Helm, 1986.

Roberts, Alan. *Mark Antony: His Life and Times*. Worcestershire, England: Malvern, 1988.

Southern, Pat. *Mark Antony*. Stroud, England: Tempus, 1998.

Weigall, Arthur. *The Life and Times of Marc Anthony*. New York; London: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1931.

THURGOOD MARSHALL

Born: July 2, 1908

Baltimore, Maryland

Died: January 24, 1993

Bethesda, Maryland

African American Supreme Court justice and lawyer

Thurgood Marshall was an American civil rights lawyer, solicitor general, and the first African American to serve as associate justice of the U.S. Supreme Court. During his decades-long law career, Marshall worked for civil rights for all Americans.

Early life and schooling

Thurgood Marshall was born on July 2, 1908, in Baltimore, Maryland. He was the second child born to Norma Arica Williams, an elementary school teacher, and William Canfield Marshall, a waiter and country club steward. His family enjoyed a comfortable, middle-class existence. Marshall's parents placed great emphasis on education, encouraging Thurgood and his brother to think and learn. Whenever Thurgood got into trouble at school, he was made to memorize sections of the U.S. Constitution. This well-intended punishment would serve him well in his later legal career.



Thurgood Marshall.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Marshall attended Lincoln University in Pennsylvania, working a number of jobs to pay his tuition. He became more serious about his studies after being suspended briefly in his second year. After receiving his bachelor's degree, he enrolled in the law school at Howard University in Washington, D.C., in 1930 and graduated in 1933. While at Howard he was influenced by Charles Houston (1895–1950) and other legal scholars who developed and perfected methods for winning civil rights lawsuits.

Civil rights lawyer

Passing the Maryland bar exam (an exam that is given by the body that governs law

and that must be passed before one is allowed to practice law) in 1933, Marshall practiced in Baltimore until 1938. He also served as counsel for the Baltimore branch of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP). In 1935 he successfully attacked segregation (separation based on race) and discrimination (unequal treatment) in education when he participated in the desegregation of the University of Maryland Law School, to which he had been denied admission because of his race. Marshall became director of the NAACP's Legal Defense and Education Fund in 1939. A year earlier he had been admitted to practice before the U.S. Supreme Court, the U.S. Circuit Court of Appeals for the fourth, fifth, and eighth circuits, and the U.S. District Court for the Eastern District of Louisiana.

After winning twenty-nine of the thirty-two civil rights cases that he brought before the Supreme Court, Marshall earned the reputation of "America's outstanding civil rights lawyer." During the trials, he and his aides were often threatened with death in the lower courts of some southern states. Some of the important cases he argued became landmarks in the ending of segregation as well as constitutional precedents (examples to help justify similar decisions in the future) with their decisions. These include *Smith v. Allwright* (1944), which gave African Americans the right to vote in Democratic primary elections; *Morgan v. Virginia* (1946), which outlawed the state's policy of segregation as it applied to bus transportation between different states; and *Sweatt v. Painter* (1950), requiring the admission of an African American student to the University of Texas Law School. The most famous was *Brown v. Board of Edu-*

ation (1954), which outlawed segregation in public schools and more or less ended the practice once and for all. In addition, the NAACP sent Marshall to Japan and Korea in 1951 to investigate complaints that African American soldiers convicted by U.S. Army courts-martial had not received fair trials. His appeal arguments led to reduced sentences for twenty-two of the forty soldiers.

Presidential appointments

President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963) nominated Marshall in September 1961 for judge of the Second Court of Appeals. Marshall was confirmed by the Senate a year later after undergoing extensive hearings. Three years later Marshall accepted an appointment from President Lyndon Johnson (1908–1973) as solicitor general. In this post Marshall successfully defended the United States in a number of important cases concerning industry. Through his office he now defended civil rights actions on behalf of the American people instead of (as in his NAACP days) as counsel strictly for African Americans. However, he personally did not argue cases in which he had previously been involved.

In 1967 President Johnson nominated Marshall as associate justice to the U.S. Supreme Court. Marshall's nomination was strongly opposed by several southern senators on the Judiciary Committee, but in the end he was confirmed by a vote of sixty-nine to eleven. He took his seat on October 2, 1967, becoming the first African American justice to sit on the Supreme Court. During his time on the Supreme Court, he remained a strong believer in individual rights and never wavered in his devotion to end discrimination. He was a key part of the Court's progressive

majority that voted to uphold a woman's right to abortion (a woman's right to end a pregnancy). His majority opinions (statements issued by a judge) covered such areas as the environment, the right of appeal of persons convicted of drug charges, failure to report for and submit to service in the U.S. armed forces, and the rights of Native Americans.

Later years

The years when Ronald Reagan (1911–) and George Bush (1924–) occupied the White House were a time of sadness for Marshall, as the influence of liberals (those open to and interested in change) on the Supreme Court declined. In 1987 Marshall negatively criticized President Reagan in an interview with *Ebony* as “the bottom” in terms of his commitment to African Americans. He later told the magazine, “I wouldn't do the job of dogcatcher for Ronald Reagan.” Marshall viewed the actions of the conservative (those interested in maintaining traditions) Republican presidents as a step back to the days when “we (African Americans) didn't really have a chance.” Marshall was greatly disappointed when his friend and liberal colleague (coworker), Justice William J. Brennan Jr. (1906–1997), retired from the Supreme Court because of ill health. Marshall vowed to serve until he was 110; however, he was finally forced by illness to give up his seat in 1991. He died in 1993 at the age of eighty-four.

Justice Marshall had been born during the administration of Theodore Roosevelt (1858–1919) but had lived to see African Americans rise to positions of power and influence in America. To a great degree, the progress of African Americans toward equal opportunity was aided by the legal victories

won by him. By his death, he was considered a hero. His numerous honors included more than twenty honorary degrees from educational institutions in America and abroad. The University of Maryland Law School was named in his honor, as were a variety of elementary and secondary schools around the nation. During his life he received the NAACP's Spingarn Medal (1946), the Negro Newspaper Publisher Association's Russwurm Medal (1948), and the Living Makers of Negro History Award of the Iota Phi Lambda Sorority (1950). His name was inscribed on the honor roll of the Schomburg History Collection of New York for the advancement of race relations. He enjoyed family life with his second wife and their two sons, who themselves pursued careers in public life. Dignified and solemn in manner, but blessed with a sense of humor, Marshall's career was an example of the power and possibility of American democracy.

For More Information

Arthur, Joe. *The Story of Thurgood Marshall: Justice for All*. New York: Bantam Doubleday Dell Books for Young Readers, 1995.

Hitzeroth, Deborah, and Sharon Leon. *Thurgood Marshall*. San Diego: Lucent Books, 1997.

Tushnet, Mark V. *Making Civil Rights Law: Thurgood Marshall and the Supreme Court 1936–1961*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1994.

Tushnet, Mark V. *Making Constitutional Law: Thurgood Marshall and the Supreme Court 1961–1991*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1997.

Williams, Juan. *Thurgood Marshall: American Revolutionary*. New York: Times Books, 1998.

KARL MARX

Born: May 5, 1818

Trier, Germany (formerly in Rhenish Prussia)

Died: March 14, 1883

London, England

German philosopher and political leader

The German philosopher, revolutionary economist (one who studies the use of money and other material funds), and leader Karl Marx founded modern “scientific” socialism (a system of society in which no property is held as private). His basic ideas—known as Marxism—form the foundation of Socialist and Communist (an economic and government system characterized by citizens holding all property and goods in common) movements throughout the world.

Early life

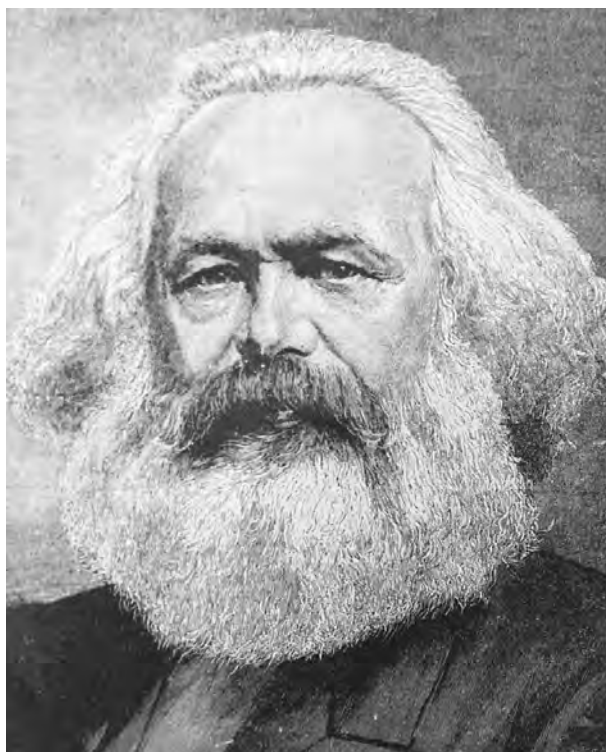
Karl Heinrich Marx was born in Trier, Rhenish Prussia (present-day Germany), on May 5, 1818, the son of Heinrich Marx, a lawyer, and Henriette Presburg Marx, a Dutchwoman. Both Heinrich and Henriette were descendants of a long line of rabbis (masters or teachers of Jewish religion). Barred from the practice of law because he was Jewish, Heinrich Marx converted to Lutheranism about 1817. Karl was baptized in the same church in 1824 at the age of six.

Karl attended a Lutheran elementary school but later became an atheist (one who does not believe in the existence of God) and a materialist (one who believes that physical matter is all that is real), rejecting both the Christian and Jewish religions. It was he who coined the saying “Religion is the opium [drug that deadens pain, is today illegal, and comes from the poppy flower] of the people,” a basic principle in modern communism.

Karl attended the Friedrich Wilhelm Gymnasium in Trier for five years, graduating in 1835 at the age of seventeen. The gymnasium’s program was the usual classical one—history, mathematics, literature, and languages, particularly Greek and Latin. Karl became very skillful in French and Latin, both of which he learned to read and write fluently. In later years he taught himself other languages, so that as a mature scholar he could also read Spanish, Italian, Dutch, Scandinavian, Russian, and English. As his articles in the *New York Daily Tribune* show, he came to handle the English language masterfully (he loved Shakespeare [1564–1616], whose works he knew by heart), although he never lost his heavy German accent when speaking.

Young adult years

In October 1835 Marx enrolled in Bonn University in Bonn, Germany, where he attended courses primarily in law, as it was his father’s desire that he become a lawyer. Marx, however, was more interested in philosophy (the study of knowledge) and literature than in law. He wanted to be a poet and dramatist (one who writes plays). In his student days he wrote a great deal of poetry—most of it preserved—that in his mature years he rightly recognized as imitative and



Karl Marx.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

unremarkable. He spent a year at Bonn, studying little but partying and drinking a lot. He also piled up heavy debts.

Marx’s dismayed father took him out of Bonn and had him enter the University of Berlin, then a center of intellectual discussion. In Berlin a circle of brilliant thinkers was challenging existing institutions and ideas, including religion, philosophy, ethics (the study of good and bad involving morals), and politics. Marx joined this group of radical (extreme in opinion) thinkers wholeheartedly. He spent more than four years in Berlin, completing his studies with a doctoral degree in March 1841.

Forced to move on

Marx then turned to writing and journalism to support himself. In 1842 he became editor of the liberal (open to new ideas) Cologne newspaper *Rheinische Zeitung*, but the Berlin government prohibited it from being published the following year. In January 1845 Marx was expelled from France “at the instigation [order] of the Prussian government,” as he said. He moved to Brussels, Belgium, where he founded the German Workers’ Party and was active in the Communist League. Here he wrote the famous *Manifesto of the Communist Party* (known as the *Communist Manifesto*). Expelled (forced out) by the Belgian government, Marx moved back to Cologne, where he became editor of the *Neue Rheinische Zeitung* in June 1848. Less than a year later, the Prussian government stopped the paper, and Marx himself was exiled (forced to leave). He went to Paris, but in September the French government expelled him again. Marx finally settled in London, England, where he lived as a stateless exile (Britain denied him citizenship and Prussia refused to take him back as a citizen) for the rest of his life.

In London Marx’s sole means of support was journalism. He wrote for both German- and English-language publications. From August 1852 to March 1862 he was correspondent for the *New York Daily Tribune*, contributing a total of about 355 articles. Journalism, however, paid very poorly; Marx was literally saved from starvation by the financial support of friend and fellow writer, Friedrich Engels (1820–1895). In London in 1864 Marx helped to found the International Workingmen’s Association (known as the First International), for which he wrote the

inaugural (opening) address. Thereafter Marx’s political activities were limited mainly to exchanging letters with radicals in Europe and America, offering advice, and helping to shape the socialist and labor movements.

Personal life

Marx was married to his childhood sweetheart, Jenny von Westphalen, who was known as the “most beautiful girl in Trier,” on June 19, 1843. She was totally devoted to him. She died of cancer on December 2, 1881, at the age of sixty-seven. For Marx it was a blow from which he never recovered.

The Marxes had seven children, four of whom died in infancy or childhood. He deeply loved his daughters, who, in turn, adored him. Of the three surviving daughters—Jenny, Laura, and Eleanor—two married Frenchmen. Both of Marx’s sons-in-law became prominent French socialists and members of Parliament. Eleanor was active as a British labor organizer.

Marx spent most of his working time in the British Museum, doing research both for his newspaper articles and his books. In preparation for *Das Kapital*, he read every available work in economic and financial theory and practice.

Marx’s excessive smoking, wine drinking, and love of heavily spiced foods may have been contributing causes to his illnesses. In the final dozen years of his life, he could no longer do any continuous intellectual work. He died in his armchair in London on March 14, 1883, about two months before his sixty-fifth birthday. He lies buried in London’s Highgate Cemetery, where his grave is marked by a bust (sculpture of a person’s head and shoulders) of him.

His works

Marxism achieved its first great triumph in the Russian Revolution (1917–21; when the lower class overthrew three hundred years of czar rule), when its successful leader, Vladimir Ilich Lenin (1870–1924), a lifelong follower of Marx, organized the Soviet Union as a proletarian dictatorship (country ruled by the lower class). Lenin based the new government on Marx's philosophy as Lenin interpreted it. Thus, Marx became a world figure and his theories became a subject of universal attention and controversy (open to dispute). Marx wrote hundreds of articles, brochures, and reports, but only five books.

His ideas

Marx's universal appeal lies in his moral approach to socio-economic problems, in his insights into the relationships between institutions and values, and in his ideas about the salvation (to save from destruction) of mankind. Hence Marx is best understood if one studies not only his economics, but also his theory of history and politics. The central idea in Marx's thought involves two basic notions: that the economic system at any given time determines the current ideas; and that history is an ongoing process keeping up with the economic institutions that change in regular stages.

To Marx, capitalism (an economic system characterized by private or corporate ownership of goods) was the last stage of historical development before communism. The lowest social or economic class of a community, when produced by capitalism, is the last historical class. The two are fated to be in conflict—the class struggle, which Marx wrote of in the *Communist Manifesto*—until

the lower class inevitably wins. The proletarian dictatorship, in turn, develops into communism, in which there are no classes and no inequalities. The logical suggestion is that with the final establishment of communism, history comes to a sudden end. This Marxist interpretation has been criticized in the non-communist world as historically inaccurate, scientifically weak, and logically ridiculous. Nevertheless, Marx's message of an earthly paradise (a classless society) has provided millions with hope and a new meaning of life. From this point of view, one may agree with the Austrian economist Joseph A. Schumpeter that "Marxism is a religion" and Marx is its "prophet."

For More Information

- Manuel, Frank Edward. *A Requiem for Karl Marx*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1995.
- Strathern, Paul. *Marx in 90 Minutes*. Chicago: Ivan R. Dee, 2001.
- Wheen, Francis. *Karl Marx: A Life*. New York: Norton, 2000.

MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

Born: c. December, 1542

Linlithgow, Scotland

Died: February 8, 1587

Northamptonshire, England

Scottish queen

Mary, Queen of Scots was queen of France and Scotland. She was also a claimant (someone who has a legal claim to be the lawful ruler) to the throne of England. She represented a great hope to Catholics in England who wanted a Catholic ruler on the throne. This hope failed when Mary was unable to unseat her cousin and rival, Elizabeth I (1533–1603), the Protestant English queen.

An infant queen

The relations of England, Scotland, and France in the mid-sixteenth century were strongly based on religious loyalties and conflicts. Protestant rulers prevailed in England, while the Catholic powers of France and Scotland became allies.

Mary Stuart (the future Mary, Queen of Scots) was the third child of King James V (1512–1542) and Mary of Guise, the rulers of Scotland. Both of her brothers had died before she was born at Linlithgow Palace in Linlithgow, Scotland, in December of 1542. Her father died only a week after her birth, and the infant princess became Mary, Queen of Scots. The period following the death of James V was an unhappy one for Scotland. In 1547 an English invasion led to the military occupation of the country. One of the chief results of this action was Scotland's tighter alliance with France. As a result, when Mary was five, the Scottish court arranged for her marriage to the four-year-old dauphin (heir to the throne) of France, the future King Francis II. She was sent to France immediately.

In France, Mary grew up with her future husband. The two children became close friends, though she was the more outgoing

and energetic of the two. Mary was educated with the dauphin and the other French royal children. She appears to have been a quick and able student whose charming personality had a great impact on all around her.

Meanwhile, Mary's home country of Scotland was under heavy French influence. Mary's mother, Mary of Guise, was appointed regent (the title given to someone who rules when the legal king or queen is absent, too young, or too ill to take the throne). Her government placed many Frenchmen in positions of power. Encouraged by Protestants in that country, a feeling of resentment against the French grew in Scotland.

Queen of France

In April 1558, at age fifteen, Mary married Francis. In November of the same year the Queen of England, Mary Tudor, died. Mary Stuart made a claim to the English throne, basing the claim on the fact that she was the great-granddaughter of the English king Henry VII and on the grounds that Elizabeth had been declared illegitimate (the child of an unmarried couple).

Mary's claim had no effect, and Elizabeth became queen (taking the title Elizabeth I) without opposition in England. However, Mary and Francis assumed the royal titles of England and Ireland, calling themselves the rightful rulers of those countries. They continued to use these titles when they became the rulers of France in July 1559. After taking the throne, Mary's husband, Francis II, ruled in France for only a little over a year, dying in December 1560. In 1561, Mary returned to Scotland, attempting to reassert her power there. Protestants had gained power in Scotland while Mary was absent, but she

intended to renew Catholic influence in her county.

Rule in Scotland

Elizabeth I's policy toward Mary was confusing. She saw that Mary was a threat, but she was unwilling to question the authority of another legitimate ruler (a king or queen who has a clear legal claim to the throne). Her policy shifted between attacking Mary when she was strong and aiding her when she was weak. For some seven years Mary held her position as queen of Scotland, but her permanent success in this position was unlikely, since Mary was clearly in conflict with important elements in Scotland.

In July 1565 Mary married for political purposes, rather than love. Mary became the wife of Henry, Lord Darnley, a move which strengthened her claims as heir to the throne of England, since Darnley was related to the English royal line. However, the marriage had somewhat different political results from those Mary hoped for. The Protestant lords of Scotland rebelled, led by the Earl of Moray and with support from Queen Elizabeth.

Mary was able to halt this threat by military force, but she could not prevent the harm done by the unpleasant personality of Darnley himself. She turned for comfort to her Italian secretary, David Riccio. Darnley, in turn, formed an alliance with the Protestant lords. On March 9, 1566, Darnley and the nobles dragged Riccio from Mary's room and murdered him. Within a short period, Moray and the other exiled rebel leaders had returned.



Mary, Queen of Scots.

Darnley's murder

Though Mary gave birth to a son (the later James VI of Scotland and James I of England) in June 1566, she was never close to Darnley again. Instead, she secretly became close to one of the Protestant lords, the Earl of Bothwell. In February 1567 Darnley was murdered when the house in which he had been staying was destroyed by a violent explosion, and evidence suggested that Mary and Bothwell had plotted Darnley's death.

Suspicious against Mary were strengthened when she did little to investigate the murder, allowed herself to be kidnapped by Bothwell, and then married him in May

1567. The events led to a Scottish civil war, during which Mary was captured and forced to abdicate (give up the throne). After close to a year of confinement, she escaped and once again raised a group of supporters. After these supporters were defeated at the Battle of Langside (May 13, 1568), Mary crossed the border into England on May 16, 1568. She was now a refugee from the Scotland she had tried to rule.

Elizabeth and Mary

Mary's move had placed Elizabeth in an awkward position. Elizabeth was not in favor of having the Catholic claimant to the English throne so close. But she also did not want to use English military force against the Scottish Protestants on Mary's behalf, and she did not wish Mary to take refuge in some Catholic court in another country. Elizabeth was also troubled by her own feelings about the divine nature of a monarch (the belief that a legitimate king or queen's power was a "divine right" to rule given by God). If Mary could be robbed of her divine right to rule, that seemed to suggest that Elizabeth could be removed from the throne by force as well.

Elizabeth decided, in a sense, to sit in judgment on Mary's case. A English commission met and ruled that the rebel government of Moray in Scotland was to remain in place for the time being, and that Mary was to remain in England.

Mary lived in England for the rest of her life and was virtually a prisoner there. Soon after her arrival, she became the center of Catholic plots to unseat Elizabeth. Although she was closely watched by the authorities, she continued to plan with her Catholic allies to escape and take the English throne. In

some cases Mary played a direct part in these plans; in others she was simply the cause for which the rebels gathered. However, in 1586 the English government uncovered the details of yet another plot, with evidence that included a letter from Mary that consented to the assassination (murder) of Elizabeth. Orders were given for Mary's trial, and she was found guilty in October 1586.

Parliament (the English houses of government) demanded Mary's execution, and she was put to death on February 8, 1587. Although Elizabeth seemed greatly displeased by this event in public, realistically she knew that the action was necessary. With Mary's death, the center of Catholic plotting against Elizabeth was removed.

For More Information

- Fraser, Antonia. *Mary Queen of Scots*. New York: Delacorte Press, 1969. Reprint, New York : Delta Trade Paperbacks, 2001.
- Lasky, Kathryn. *Mary, Queen of Scots: Queen without a Country*. New York: Scholastic, 2002.
- Marshall, Rosalind K. *The Queen of Scots*. Lanham, MD: Bernan-Unipub, 1987.

COTTON
MATHER

Born: March 19, 1663

Boston, Massachusetts

Died: February 13, 1728

Boston, Massachusetts

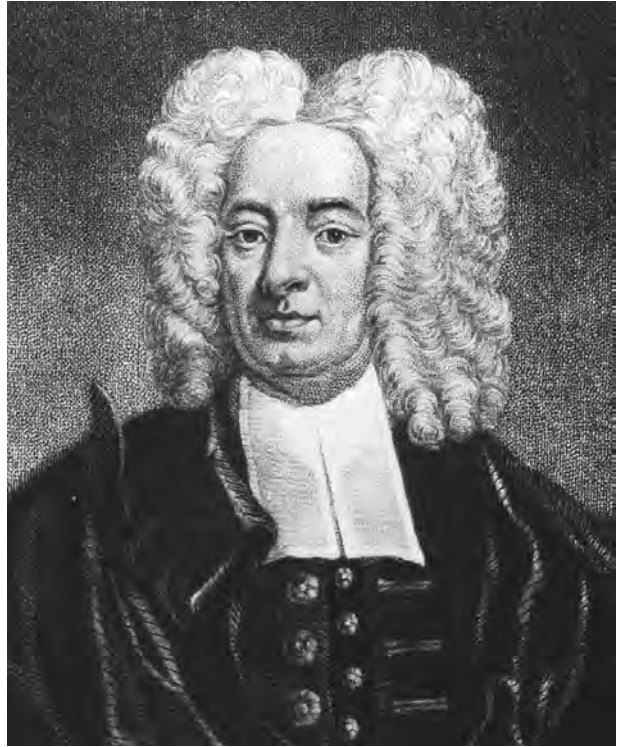
American historian and clergyman

Cotton Mather was a Puritan (a member of a group that broke away from the Church of England in the sixteenth and seventeenth century) preacher, historian (recorder of events and culture of the times), and the youngest man to graduate from Harvard College. Of the third generation of a New England founding family, he is popularly associated with the Salem witchcraft trials (1692–93; trials that took place in Salem, Massachusetts, in which nineteen women were accused, tried, and executed and several others imprisoned for what juries determined was witchcraft).

Early life and education

Born in Boston, Massachusetts, on March 19, 1663, Cotton Mather was the eldest son of Increase and Maria Mather and the grandson of Richard Mather, the first minister of Dorchester, Massachusetts, and of John Cotton, probably the most learned of first-generation American theologians (a specialist in the study of faith and religion). Cotton's father, Increase Mather, was minister to the Second Church in Boston, agent of the colony to England, and nonresident president of Harvard College from 1685 to 1701. Cotton knew he was expected by both his parents to follow in his father's footsteps. That tall order prompted him to be a very serious child whose fear of failing showed up in a stutter when he spoke. It took Cotton years of practice and prayer to overcome this speech problem.

Cotton Mather, having made remarkable progress under his father's training, was admitted to Harvard College at the age of twelve. He had begun studying Hebrew and showed great interest in philosophy (the study of knowl-



Cotton Mather.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

edge) and science. His father presented Mather's first degree at the age of sixteen. Mather soon took up the study of medicine and, as a young man, attended meetings organized by Increase for scientific experimentation and discussion. At nineteen he received his master's degree. He was made a fellow of Harvard College in 1690 and was involved in the affairs of the college throughout his life. One of his bitterest disappointments was that he was never asked to be its president.

Personal life

Disappointment and grief marked Cotton Mather's life. In 1686 he married Abigail

Philips; they had nine children. She died in 1702. In 1703 he married the widow Mrs. Elizabeth Hubbard; they had six children. She died in 1713. His last wife, Mrs. Lydia George, whom he married in 1715, went insane. Of his fifteen children, only six lived to adulthood and only two outlived him. Three widowed sisters depended largely on him, and he was burdened by severe money problems.

Anxiety and depression contributed to Mather's already impossibly high expectations of himself. But he was a deep thinker. When very young he began to read the Bible daily and to develop habits of prayer. His efforts to do good work and to achieve Christian attitudes lasted a lifetime. His early bitter criticisms of other churches later gave way to a spirit of acceptance. In 1685 Mather was ordained at the Second Church. He served as assistant minister until his father's death in 1723, when Mather became minister.

Witchcraft Trials at Salem

One of Massachusetts governor Sir William Phips's (1651–1695) first acts in office was the establishment of a court to try the suspected witches recently arrested at Salem, Massachusetts. Mather had attempted to show the reality of spirits (bodiless, but sometimes visible supernatural beings, ghosts), particularly evil spirits, in his study *Memorable Providences, Relating to Witchcrafts and Possessions ...* (1689). Although he had urged strong punishment of the devil's work, he suggested much milder punishment than death for those found to be guilty of witchcraft (the use of magic). Mather's approach was both religious and scientific. He separated himself from the trials as such and in fact warned the judges against "spectral

[ghostlike] evidences," but his advice went unheard. In his *Magnalia Christi Americana* (1702) Mather declared his disapproval of the methods used in the trials. But while they were going on, he had not entered public protest.

Other church controversies

A combination of forces diminished Increase and Cotton Mather's influence. A new breed of more open-minded men gathered in the recently established Brattle Church. These, with others, made sure of the removal of Increase from the presidency of Harvard in 1701. The House of Representatives appointed Cotton president, but the voting members of the college overruled their action and passed him by. Cotton then directed his attention to Yale College. But when Yale's president resigned, Cotton, apparently, refused the invitation to replace him. This was Cotton's last opportunity for high office.

Pioneer scientist and intellectual

Although the Mathers maintained clear but hard attitudes toward many cultural and church changes, they were in the intellectual front line of the Colonies. Cotton regularly wrote letters to men of learning around the world. In 1710 he was awarded a doctorate of divinity (highest degree awarded for study of in this case Christianity) by the University of Glasgow (Scotland). In 1713 he had the great honor of being elected to the Royal Society of London. He and Increase were among the first in the Colonies to support vaccinations against smallpox (very contagious disease giving a person sores on the skin, usually fatal) and were threatened for so

doing. With courage (even though a bomb was thrown through the window of Cotton's house), the Mathers, with Dr. Zabdiel Boylston (1679–1766), successfully put the project into effect.

Career as a writer

Despite unpopularity, Mather's activities continued. He wrote in seven languages and also mastered the Iroquois Indian language. In his lifetime three hundred eighty-two of his works were published. These took many forms: history, sermons, biography, fables, books of practical faith, religious and scientific essays, and poetry. Often very educational, his writing could also be straightforward and practical. Mather saw teaching as the main job of good writing.

In the *Psalterium Americanum* (1718) the talented Mather translated the Psalms and adapted them to music. His *Bonifacius, or Essays To Do Good* (1718) gave practical directions for personal faith. A very popular book, Benjamin Franklin (1706–1790) called it the work that most guided his youth.

Probably Mather's greatest work was his *Magnalia Christi Americana* (1702). Primarily a history of New England, it is composed from many of Mather's other writings. The seven sections tell of the settlement of New England, the lives of its governors and ministers, and the story of Harvard College and of the Congregational Church. The *Magnalia* provides a detailed statement of the Puritan mind.

Decline of power

Cotton Mather recorded the passing of an era. The Massachusetts Bay Colony had been an extreme, Bible-based community of "saints," whose existence as an example to

the rest of the world was to be safeguarded till Christ's second coming. In Mather's lifetime the separation of church and state and the development of the frontier and of a society absorbed in business and profits made the people's interest in church lessen. American-born colonists turned to nature and to reason for the sources of their new identity.

Cotton Mather outlived his father by only five years, dying on February 13, 1728, in Boston. Later American writers, Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882), Henry Thoreau (1817–1862), Harriet Beecher Stowe (1811–1896), James Russell Lowell (1819–1891), Nathaniel Hawthorne (1804–1864), and Henry Wadsworth Longfellow (1807–1882) all acknowledged their debt to him.

For More Information

Levin, David. *Cotton Mather: The Young Life of the Lord's Remembrancer, 1663-1703*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1978.

Lutz, Norma Jean. *Cotton Mather*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House Publishers, 2000.

Silverman, Kenneth. *The Life and Times of Cotton Mather*. New York: Harper & Row, 1984.

Wendell, Barrett. *Cotton Mather*. New York: Chelsea House, 1980.

HENRI
MATISSE

Born: December 31, 1869

Le Cateau-Cambrésis, France

Died: November 3, 1954

Cimiez, France

French painter and sculptor

The French painter and sculptor Henri Matisse was one of the great initiators of the modern art movement, which uses the combination of bold primary colors and free, simple forms. He was also the most outstanding personality of the first revolution in twentieth century art—Fauvism (style of art that uses color and sometimes distorted forms to send its message).

Childhood and art education

Henri Matisse was born on December 31, 1869, in Le Cateau-Cambrésis, France. After the war of 1870–71 his family moved to Bohain-en-Vermandois, France. Matisse's father was a corn merchant, his mother an amateur painter. Matisse studied law from 1887 to 1891 and then decided to go to Paris, France, to become a painter. He worked under Adolphe William Bouguereau (1825–1905) at the Académie Julian in Paris, but he left in 1892 to enter the studio of Gustave Moreau (1826–1898) at the École des Beaux-Arts, where he studied until 1897. Moreau was a liberal teacher who did not interfere with the individuality of his pupils. He encouraged his students to look at nature and to paint outdoors, as well as to frequently visit the museums. Matisse copied paintings in the Louvre and painted outdoors in Paris.

Begins with impressionism and moves to Fauvism

About 1898, under the influence of impressionism (an art form using dabs of

paint in primary colors to create an image representing a brief glance rather than a long study), the colors Matisse used became lighter, as in his seascapes of Belle-Île and landscapes of Corsica and the Côte d'Azur (coast of France on the Mediterranean Sea). Although impressionist in character, these early works of Matisse already showed a noticeable emphasis on color and simplified forms. Matisse married in 1898 and visited London, England, in the same year to study. On his return to Paris he attended classes at the Académie Carrière, where he met André Derain (1880–1954). Matisse created his first sculptures in 1899.

From 1900 Matisse struggled financially for years. In 1902 the artist, his wife Amélie, and their three children were forced to return to Bohain. In 1903 the Salon d'Automne was founded, and Matisse exhibited there. From 1900 to 1903, under the influence of Paul Cézanne (1839–1906), Matisse produced still lifes and nudes. In 1904 he had his first one-man show at the gallery of Ambroise Vollard in Paris and spent the summer in Saint-Tropez, France. In 1905 Matisse painted with Derain at Collioure; the works Matisse created there are excellent examples of Fauvism in their bright colors and flat patterning.

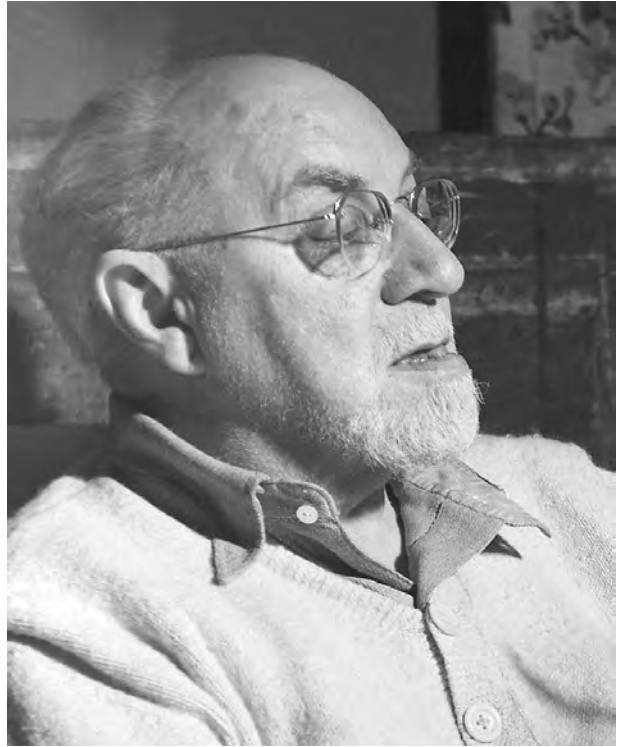
Fauve period

Matisse's Fauve period extended from 1905 to 1908, during which time he completed a brilliant series of masterpieces. At the 1905 Salon d'Automne these paintings, known as the Fauves, made their first public appearance. In 1906 Matisse's *Joie de vivre* was exhibited at the Indépendants; the painting gained him the title of the "King of the Fauves."

Matisse made his first trip to North Africa in 1906. His *Blue Nude, or Souvenir de Biskra* (1907), is a memento of the journey. In this painting he experimented with *contrapposto* (an S-curve pose), and he used the same form in the sculpture *Reclining Nude I* (1907). He had established a studio in the former Convent des Oiseaux in 1905; this became a meeting place for foreign artists. He developed into the leader of an international art school with mainly German and Scandinavian pupils who spread his ideas. His “Notes of a Painter,” published in *La Grande revue* in 1908, became the artistic handbook of a whole generation. Matisse was a pleasant man who looked more like a shy government official than an artist. He never accepted any fees for his teaching so that he was not obligated to staying in one place. He did not want commitments to interfere with his creative activity.

Change in style

Between 1908 and 1913 Matisse made journeys to Spain, Germany, Russia, and Africa. In Munich, Germany, he saw an exhibition of Islamic art (1910), and in Moscow, Russia, he studied Russian icons (1911). Russian collectors began to buy his paintings. He produced five sculptures—heads of Jeanette—during 1910 and 1911, which show a resemblance to African masks and sculptures. His Moroccan journey of 1911–12 had a positive influence on his development, which is seen in *Dance, Music, the Red Fishes*, and the series of interiors recording his studio and its contents. They show a stern and compact style with blacks and grays, mauves, greens, and ochers (brown tones). Great Matisse exhibitions were held in 1910, 1913, and 1919.



Henri Matisse.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

By 1919 Matisse had become an internationally known master. His style at that time was characterized by the use of pure colors and their complex interplay (harmonies and contrasts); the two-dimensionality of the picture surface enriched by decorative patterns taken from wallpapers, Oriental carpets, and fabrics; the human figures being treated in the same manner as the decorative elements. The goal of Matisse's art was the portrayal of the joyful living in contrast to the stresses of our technological age. Between 1920 and 1925 he completed a series of *odalisques* (female slaves), such as the *Odalisque with Raised Arms*; this period has been called an oasis of lightness.

Last years

In 1925 Matisse was made chevalier, the lowest ranking member of the Legion of Honor, and in 1927 he received the first prize at the Carnegie International Exhibition at Pittsburgh. After a visit to Tahiti, Matisse was a guest at the Barnes Foundation at Merion, Pennsylvania, and accepted Dr. Barnes's commission to paint a mural, *The Dance* (1932–1933), for the hall of the foundation. During the next years he produced paintings, drawings, book illustrations (etchings and lithographs), sculptures (he made fifty-four bronzes altogether), ballet sets, and designs for tapestry and glass. In 1944 Pablo Picasso (1881–1973) arranged for him to be represented in the Salon d'Automne to celebrate the liberation of Paris from Nazi rule.

Matisse considered the peak of his life-work to be his design and decoration of the Chapel of the Rosary for the Dominican nuns at Vence, France (1948–1951). He designed the black-and-white tile pictures, stained glass, altar crucifix, and vestments (ceremonial robes). At the time of the consecration (declaration of sacredness) of the Vence chapel, Matisse held a large retrospective exhibition (a look back at the work he created) in the Museum of Modern Art in New York City.

The ultimate step in the art of Matisse was taken in his papiers découpés, abstract cutouts in colored paper, executed in the mid-1940s, for example, the *Negro Boxer*, *Tristesse du roi*, and *Jazz*. The master died on November 3, 1954, in Cimiez, France, near Nice.

For More Information

Flux, Paul. *Henri Matisse*. Chicago: Heinemann Library, 2002.

Herrera, Hayden. *Matisse: A Portrait*. New York: Harcourt Brace, 1993.

Schneider, Pierre. *Matisse*. Edited by Michael Taylor and Bridget Strevens Romer. New York: Rizzoli, 1984.

MAYO BROTHERS**CHARLES
MAYO**

July 19, 1865

Rochester, Minnesota

May 26, 1939

Chicago, Illinois

American physician

**WILLIAM
MAYO**

June 29, 1861

Le Sueur, Minnesota

July 28, 1939

Rochester, Minnesota

American physician

Brothers and outstanding surgeons (doctors who perform operations) William Mayo and Charles Mayo, along with their father William Worrall Mayo, founded the world-famous Mayo Clinic in Rochester, Minnesota, one of the nation's first efforts at group practice of medicine.

Family practice

William James Mayo was born in Le Sueur, Minnesota, on June 29, 1861. His

brother, Charles Horace, was born four years later in Rochester, Minnesota, on July 19, 1865. They were two of William Worrall Mayo and Louise Abigail Wright Mayo's five children. Their father had come to the United States from England in 1845 and settled in Rochester, Minnesota, as a country doctor. William and Charles studied Latin, art, and the classics at the Rochester Training School. At home their mother taught them botany (the study of plants) and astronomy (the study of the Sun, the Moon, and the stars). Their father gave them instruction in chemistry (the study of simple substances and their physical make-up), anatomy (the study of the structure of living things), and laboratory methods. Both parents taught their children about the evils of prejudice and war and the benefits of working together.

The Mayo brothers frequently accompanied their father on professional visits, observed his diagnoses (identifications of a disease through observation of its symptoms) and methods of treatment, and helped with operations. It is no wonder that they both chose to study medicine. William graduated from the University of Michigan Medical School in 1883 and also took degrees at the New York Post-Graduate Medical School and Hospital in 1884 and at the New York Polyclinic in 1885. He joined his family in practice at Rochester, as did Charles after his 1888 graduation from the Chicago Medical School (later Northwestern University Medical School). William was quiet and reserved; Charles was lively and friendly, with a love of practical jokes. They were known as "Dr. Will" and "Dr. Charlie."

In 1889 the Sisters of Saint Francis opened Saint Mary's Hospital in Rochester



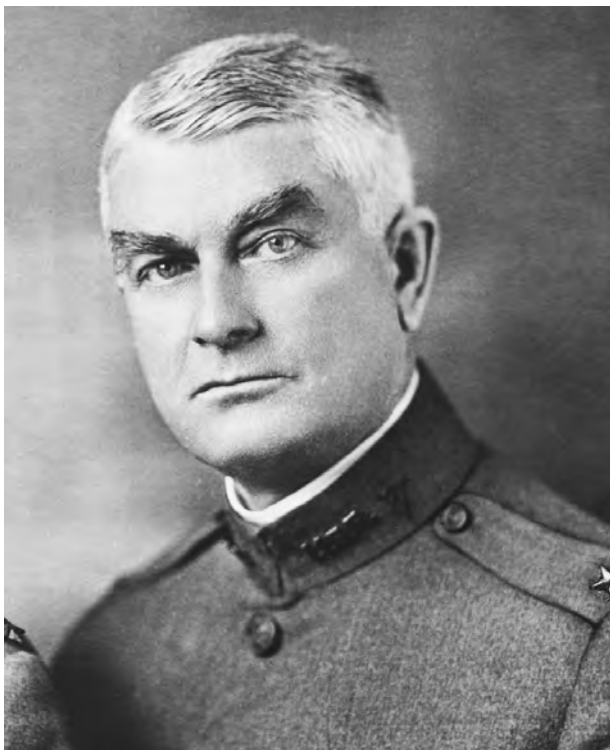
Charles Mayo.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

and asked the Mayo brothers and their father to help in planning the hospital and in attracting the services of skilled doctors. The three Mayos named their part of Saint Mary's the Mayo Clinic in 1903. It began as a surgical clinic but became a full medical center in 1915, and the brothers began to attract other famous physicians from all over the world. At that time they also founded the Mayo Foundation for Medical Education and Research as part of the University of Minnesota.

Work during wartime

William Mayo was commissioned as a first lieutenant in the army medical reserve



William Mayo.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

corps in 1912. During World War I (1914–18; a war in which the Allies of England, Italy, the United States, and other nations fought against the German-led Central Powers) he served as chief adviser for the surgical services in the office of the army's surgeon general. Charles was a colonel in the army medical corps and alternated with William as the associate chief adviser for all army surgical services. When President Woodrow Wilson (1856–1924) organized the Committee of American Physicians for Medical Preparedness in 1916, William was named its chairman and Charles one of its members. When the committee became the General Medical Board of the

Council for National Defense, William was made a member of its executive committee and Charles his alternate.

During World War I, the Mayo Clinic was very busy. There were draftees to examine and war training classes to run for new members of the medical corps. William and Charles designed courses to bring doctors up to date on the latest scientific and surgical developments. Also, before the war the United States had relied heavily on Germany for medical equipment and materials. When the German supply was cut off, American medical workers found it hard to adjust to the poorer quality of American-made medical equipment. Then, in 1918, an outbreak of the flu put extra pressure on the clinic. A hotel next door to the hospital was remodeled and used to handle the overflow of patients.

The two brothers divided their time between the Mayo Clinic and their duties in Washington so that one of them would always be in Rochester. The strain of their war service, added to the effort needed to keep the Mayo Clinic functioning, affected the health of both men. Charles contracted pneumonia (an infection in the lungs) during one of his posts in Washington, and William came down with a severe case of jaundice (a yellowing of the skin) in 1918, which kept him off duty for more than two months. In William's absence Charles filled his post in Washington, making this the first time that the brothers were both absent from the clinic for any extended period.

Postwar prejudice

After the war ended, the prejudice it had stirred up remained. For many years American medical students had taken for granted

that part of their training would take place in Germany and Austria, in the classes and laboratories of the European masters of surgery and medical science. But after the war anti-German feelings led many to question the belief that German medical knowledge was the best. German scientists and physicians were accused of stealing ideas from British and American thinkers.

While William and Charles Mayo were not very fond of the Germans, they were not willing to see such feelings translated into action against individuals. When the 1918 meeting of the American Surgical Association suggested that the German and Austrian honorary (achieving a title without having to meet the usual requirements) members be removed from the group, William strongly opposed the idea, insisting that political and military conflict should not extend into the world of science. The resolution banning the Germans and Austrians failed to pass at that session but was adopted at the next one, when William was not able to attend.

Later years

War service gave many physicians their first taste of teamwork in medical practice. Many did not like it, but increasing costs, decreasing numbers of patients, and unpaid bills led many to follow the example of the Mayo Clinic. The story of the clinic and the Mayo Foundation for Medical Education and Research made the Mayos nationally famous. The national news services printed stories such as the one about the millionaire with a superior air who, seeing William, ran up to demand, "Are you the head doctor here?" "No," William replied with a straight face, "my brother is the head doctor. I'm the belly doctor."

In 1919 William received the U.S. Distinguished Service medal, which Charles was also awarded in 1920. Both brothers continued to practice medicine and perform surgery until they were well into their sixties. William retired in 1928, and a series of strokes brought Charles's career to an end a year and a half later. They are best remembered as a team whose greatest achievement was the clinic built upon their partnership. The famed physicians who had worked together so closely died within a few months of each other in 1939—Charles Mayo on May 26 and William Mayo on July 28.

For More Information

- Davis, Lucile. *The Mayo Brothers: Doctors to the World*. New York: Children's Press, 1998.
- Habermann, Thomas M., Renee E. Ziemer, and Carolyn Stickney Beck. *The Mayo Brothers' Heritage*. Rochester, MN: Mayo Clinic Scientific Press, 2001.
- Johnson, Spencer. *The Value of Sharing: The Story of the Mayo Brothers*. La Jolla, CA: Value Communications, 1978.
- Starr, Paul. *The Social Transformation of American Medicine*. New York: Basic Books, 1982.

WILLIE MAYS

Born: May 6, 1931

Westfield, Alabama

African American baseball player

During the twenty-one seasons in his major league career, Willie Mays hit more than six hundred home runs. Besides being a solid hitter, Mays also has been called the game's finest defensive outfielder ever and perhaps its best baserunner as well.

Baseball childhood

William Howard Mays Jr. was born on May 6, 1931, in Westfield, Alabama, the son of a steelworker who played center field for the local Birmingham Industrial League semi-pro (a professional league independent of Major League Baseball) team. Mays's mother, Ann, had been a high school track star, and it was clear from a very early age that Willie had inherited his parents' athletic gifts. According to his father, William Howard Mays Sr., young Willie learned to walk at the age of six months, and soon thereafter the two center fielders were playing catch with each other, father instructing son in the basics of the game that would one day make him famous.

The parents of Willie Mays were divorced when he was only three, but Willie continued to live with his father, which meant that he continued to play baseball. It was not long before Mays realized that baseball offered him a way out of the steel mills, and he later admitted that when given the choice he always preferred playing ball to doing schoolwork. Not only did Mays play ball constantly, he would sit in the dugout with his father's Industrial League teammates and listen to baseball strategy and technique, absorbing the game's finer points and learning to be at his ease in a competitive environment. By the age of thirteen, he was playing on a semi-professional team called the Gray Sox.

Negro Leagues

So gifted was Mays as a teenager that he began playing for the Birmingham Black Barons, the local entry in the Negro Leagues, which was then the major leagues for African American players. Playing center field, Mays was paid a salary of \$250 a month to play with the Black Barons, far more money than he could have earned at part-time jobs. He eventually finished high school, but he did so as a professional baseball player.

By the time Mays had secured for himself the center fielder's spot on the Black Barons, legendary ballplayer Jackie Robinson (1919–1972) had broken the color barrier in major league baseball (African Americans were not allowed to play in the major leagues until Robinson joined the Brooklyn Dodgers in 1947), and the Negro Leagues were being scouted heavily by the newly integrated (consisting of players of all races) professional teams. One such scout for the New York Giants came to a Black Barons game to watch a teammate of Mays, but it was Willie Mays who captured his attention; the scout raved to his supervisors in the Giants' organization about him. The Giants had already signed a number of black baseball players, and it was not long before they offered Mays a \$4000 bonus and \$250-a-month salary to play for their minor league team (team controlled by a major league club to develop the talent of its players) in Iowa.

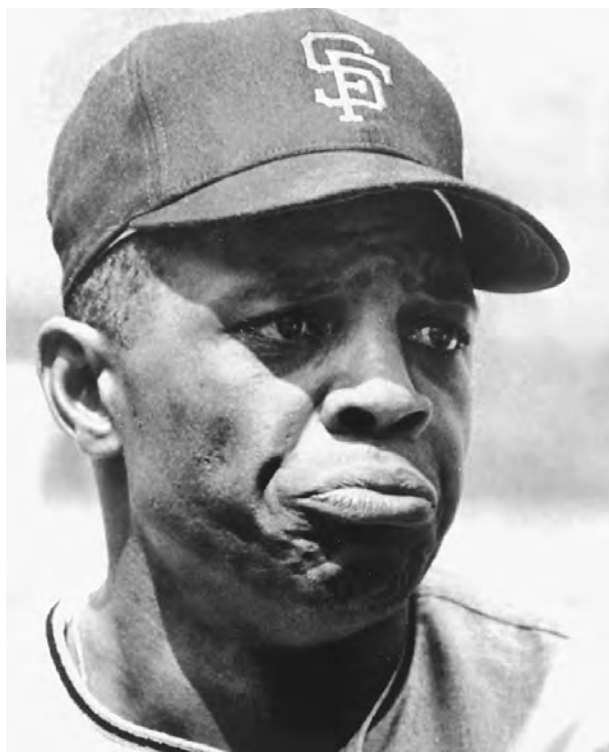
The talk of New York

Through the 1950 and the beginning of the 1951 season Mays tore through the minor leagues and was promoted to the Minneapolis Millers, a AAA club, the last stop before the major leagues. Mays's success was

highly unusual at the AAA level, and his name quickly became familiar to Leo Durocher (1905–1991), the manager of the New York Giants. The Giants were suffering through a poor season in 1951, and Durocher saw no reason to delay the elevation of Mays to the major league level. On May 25, 1951, Mays became the starting center fielder and number-three hitter in the New York Giants' lineup.

By mid-August of the 1951 season, neither the Giants nor their young star appeared to be going anywhere. Mays showed flashes of brilliance but he was still only a rookie, and the Giants remained thirteen and one-half games behind the Brooklyn Dodgers in the National League pennant race. The Giants went on to sweep a three game series with the Dodgers, however, and after winning sixteen games in a row they managed to catch their rivals on the last day of the regular season to force a play-off—three games that would decide the winner of the league championship. In one of the most famous episodes in baseball history, the Giants won the third and deciding game of the play-off. In the World Series, the Giants faced their crosstown rivals, the New York Yankees, and after a fine series the Giants lost in seven games. In recognition of his 20 home runs and .274 batting average during the season Mays was named the National League's Rookie of the Year for 1951.

After a stint in the U.S. Army, Mays returned in 1954, when he led the Giants to a world championship while hitting .345, with 41 home runs, and winning the Most Valuable Player (MVP) Award. Mays led the league in batting average, and in the first game of the World Series he made an over-



Willie Mays.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

the-shoulder catch of such remarkable skill that it has ever since been known simply as "The Catch." Giants' management rewarded Mays with a fat new contract, and he entered the 1955 season as a superstar.

Doing it all

It should not be forgotten that 1954 was Mays's first full season in the big leagues. What is especially remarkable is that the promise shown by his 1954 season would later be confirmed in season after season of excellence, beginning with the 51 homers he clubbed in 1955.

After the 1957 season the Giants left New York for San Francisco, where Mays found it difficult to fit in. Mays eventually learned the tricks of life out west, however, winning over the fans with his routine brilliance on the field and with the bat. In 1962 he led the Giants back to the World Series with a career-high 141 runs batted in; and in the following year he joined an exclusive club by smashing his 400th career homer. It seemed possible that Mays might one day catch Babe Ruth as the all-time leader in home runs.

The only question remaining for Mays was Babe Ruth's (1895–1948) record of 714 career home runs. Mays passed the records of many of the game's all-time greats until at last he trailed only the Babe, by 170 home runs. Mays's many years of continuous effort had taken their toll, however, and after the 1966 season his home runs and batting average both began to drop. But by the time he wound up his career with the New York Mets in 1973, he had made a strong case for himself as the greatest all-around player in baseball history.

The record of his accomplishments is long—the combination of his twenty-four straight All Star Game appearances, his more than 3,000 career base hits, and his first-year election to the baseball Hall of Fame with 94.6 percent of the possible votes was unparalleled—but Mays is remembered as much for the wonderful effortlessness of his play as for the numbers he racked up.

For More Information

Burkhardt, Mitch. *Willie Mays*. Los Angeles: Melrose Square Publishing Company, 1992.

Mays, Willie, and Lou Sahadi. *Say Hey: The Autobiography of Willie Mays*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1988.

McCormack, Shaun. *Willie Mays*. New York: Rosen Publishing Group, 2003.

JOSEPH MCCARTHY

Born: November 14, 1908

Grand Chute, Wisconsin

Died: May 2, 1957

Bethesda, Maryland

American senator

Joseph McCarthy, a U.S. senator from Wisconsin, became a national figure in a highly publicized pursuit of a Communist “conspiracy.” Because of him, the term *McCarthyism* became a synonym for a public “witch-hunt” intended to destroy the victim's political standing and public character.

Life in Wisconsin

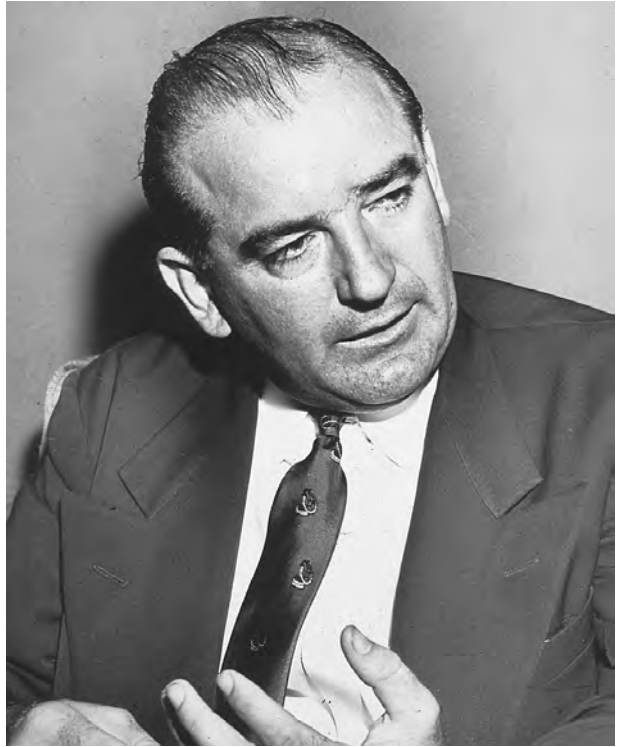
Joseph McCarthy was born on November 14, 1908, on a farm in Grand Chute, Wisconsin. The family was part of the Irish Settlement, a small group surrounded by farmers mainly of German and Dutch descent. His parents were devoted Catholics, literate but uneducated. The fifth of nine children, Joseph seems to have grown up shy and awkward, often rejected by his peers but favored by a protective mother. At the age of fourteen, after finishing grade school, he took up chicken farming, at which he was briefly successful.

McCarthy moved to the nearby town of Manawa and managed a grocery store. When he was almost twenty he enrolled in high school, graduating in only a single year. After two years as an engineering student at Marquette University, he went to law school and was president of his class. Soon afterward, McCarthy was admitted to the bar, an association for practicing lawyers.

In 1935 McCarthy tried practicing law in several Wisconsin towns, earning a reputation as a fierce gambler along the way. He also began playing the game of politics. After an unsuccessful bid as Democratic candidate for district attorney, he shifted his focus and became the Republican candidate for circuit court judge. He won, and at the age of twenty-nine he became the state's youngest circuit court judge. This victory also hinted at his later methods: He had lied in his campaign literature about his opponent's age (adding seven years to it) and about his own (moving his birth date back). By now, his basic personality was well shaped—clever and ambitious but lacking moral judgment, or the ability to distinguish between right and wrong.

World War II

During World War II (1939–45; a war involving many countries in the world in which the United States participated from 1941 until the end of the war), McCarthy served with the U.S. Marines as a ground officer in the Pacific. He took part in many battles and won several medals for “courageous devotion” while on duty. In 1944, while still in the Marines, his friends in Wisconsin put him on the ballot for the U.S. Senate. He lost the election but placed second and earned more than a hundred thousand votes. Soon afterward McCarthy left the Marines.



Joseph McCarthy.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

In 1945, after returning to Wisconsin, he was reelected as circuit court judge. A year later he ran for senator against Robert M. La Follette (1895–1953) and won. McCarthy had been a poor judge, being involved in at least one suspicious case. He had altered his war record to make it look more heroic, and he again cut moral corners in his campaigning. But he was a fitting candidate for the particular mood and cultural mix of Wisconsin at the time.

McCarthy finds an enemy

McCarthy's first years in the Senate were thoroughly average and at least slightly dis-

honorable. As a number of his past adventures, including some questionable tax returns, began catching up with him, he needed an issue that would distract attention from his affairs. On January 7, 1950, he asked three dinner companions to suggest an issue he could base his campaign on. They suggested communism, a political system in which property and goods are owned by the government and distributed among the people. The timing was perfect, as many in the changing nation feared the presence of communists living among them. Communism would give McCarthy a target. Now he needed to rally support.

In a speech in Wheeling, West Virginia, on February 9, 1950, McCarthy claimed to have in hand a list of 205 people in the State Department known to be members of the American Communist Party. In later speeches and interviews he kept changing the figures, depending on his audience and his mood. On February 20 he held the Senate floor for six hours in a stormy session in which other senators tried to get solid facts from him.

In the 1950 elections McCarthy secured the defeat of several Democratic senators who had dared question and oppose him. He spread terror even among his peers. His fellow Republicans were torn between fear of his skill and willingness to use his attacks on President Harry Truman (1884–1972), Secretary of State Dean Acheson (1893–1971), and former Secretary of State George Marshall (1880–1959).

Takes on the army

In 1952 McCarthy was reelected. He then used his investigative subcommittee as his point of support. He also used the press

and television as his playing field. He even tried to develop a counterintelligence unit of his own inside the administration's agencies. McCarthy finally turned his aim on the army in the Fort Monmouth hearings.

The Army-McCarthy televised hearings ran from April 22 to June 17, 1954, and turned the tables on McCarthy and his committee counsel, Roy Cohn (1927–1986). Evidence proved that they had sought special favors for G. David Schine (1927–1996), a subcommittee staff member, as an army inductee (a person who signs up for training or service in the military). It is hard to guess why McCarthy attacked the army, when he must have known that his anti-Communist views could not stand a chance against the distinguished army officers. The intense response of the army's legal representative, Joseph Welch (1890–1960), to McCarthy's attack on a member of Welch's firm marked the end.

In December the Senate passed a vote of censure, or an official disapproval, on McCarthy. He died three years later, on May 2, 1957, a broken man whose end had really come at the army hearing, when the nation recoiled from him and his power to inspire terror was halted.

McCarthy and society

Scholars have debated whether McCarthy's views expressed a basic appeal to the majority of Americans. He was often called a fascist, or one who seeks complete control, by liberals and the left. His support came mainly from a desperate group on the right (conservatives) who saw their world threatened by a mysterious conspiracy and were willing to see extreme methods used against it.

McCarthyism came into the nation's history at a moment when Americans were uncertain about their future in a changing world. McCarthy gave this fear the name of communism. He turned communism into a simple target for their hostility. He also came at a time when the cold war and the nuclear arms race had brought on a need for secrecy that led to a paranoid feeling of being surrounded by enemies within.

For More Information

Cook, Fred J. *The Nightmare Decade: The Life and Times of Senator Joe McCarthy*. New York: Random House, 1971.

Herman, Arthur. *Joseph McCarthy: Reexamining the Life and Legacy of America's Most Hated Senator*. New York: Free Press, 2000.

Rovere, Richard H. *Senator Joe McCarthy*. New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1959.

Sherrow, Victoria. *Joseph McCarthy and the Cold War*. Woodbridge, CT: Blackbirch Press, 1998.

HATTIE MCDANIEL

Born: June 10, 1898

Wichita, Kansas

Died: October 26, 1952

Hollywood, California

African American actress and singer

Hattie McDaniel's portrayal of the "mammy" figure in the film *Gone with the Wind*, for which she

received an Academy Award for best supporting actress in 1940, is still widely seen as a role that could only have been played by her. She was the first African American to receive an Oscar.

Hattie's youth

Hattie McDaniel was born on June 10, 1895, in Wichita, Kansas, the youngest of thirteen children in a family of performers. Her father, Henry McDaniel, was a Baptist minister, carpenter, banjo player, and minstrel showman, eventually organizing his own family into a minstrel troupe. Henry married a gospel singer named Susan Holbert in 1875 and moved their growing family to Denver, Colorado, in 1901.

Hattie was one of only two black children in her elementary school class in Denver. Racial prejudice (an unfair judgment based on race) was less hostile in the West than elsewhere in the United States. For her talents as a singer and reciter of poetry, McDaniel became something of a favorite at the 24th Street Elementary School, where mainly white students attended. McDaniel sang at church, at school, and at home; she sang so continuously that her mother reportedly bribed her into silence with spare change. Before long she was also singing in professional minstrel shows, as well as dancing, performing humorous skits, and later writing her own songs.

In 1910 Hattie left school in her sophomore year at East Denver High School and became a full-time minstrel performer, traveling the western states with her father's show and several other troupes. The minstrel shows were usually performed by black actors, but were also sometimes performed



Hattie McDaniel.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

by whites in blackface. The shows presented a variety of entertainment that poked fun at black cultural life for the enjoyment of mostly white audiences.

When Hattie's father retired around 1920, she joined Professor George Morrison's famous "Melody Hounds" on longer and more publicized tours. She also wrote dozens of show tunes such as "Sam Henry Blues," "Poor Wandering Boy Blues," and "Quittin' My Man Today."

Broke into radio and film

McDaniel's first marriage ended brutally in 1922, when her husband of three months,

George Langford, was reportedly killed by gunfire. Her career was much better, including a first radio performance in 1925 on Denver's KOA station. McDaniel was one of the first black women to be heard on American radio.

In 1929 McDaniel was left without a job due to the Great Depression (a time in the late 1920s and 1930s of economic hardship that resulted in unemployment for many), so she went to Milwaukee, Wisconsin, and found work at Sam Pick's Club Madrid—as a bathroom attendant. Eventually she became a performer there and remained at the Club Madrid for about a year. Next she went to Hollywood, California, where her brother and sister lived. Sam and Etta McDaniel had already played small roles in a number of motion pictures. Sam McDaniel had a regular part on the KNX (Los Angeles, California) radio show "The Optimistic Do-Nuts" and was able to get Hattie a small part, which she promptly turned into a big opportunity. McDaniel eventually became a hit with the show's listeners.

A big break came for McDaniel in 1934, when she was cast in the Fox production of *Judge Priest*. In this picture McDaniel was given the opportunity to sing a duet with Will Rogers (1879–1935), the well-known American humorist. Her performance was well received by the press and her fellow actors alike.

In 1935 McDaniel played "Mom Beck" in *The Little Colonel*. A number of African American journalists objected to Hattie's performance in the film. They charged that the character of Mom Beck, a happy black servant in the Old South, implied that black people might have been happier as slaves than they

were as free individuals. This movie marked the beginning of McDaniel's long feud with the more progressive elements of the African American community.

Won Oscar for *Gone with the Wind*

Once established in Hollywood, McDaniel found no shortage of work. In 1936 alone she appeared in twelve films. For the decade as a whole her performances numbered about forty—nearly all of them in the role of maid or cook to a white household. McDaniel won the role of “Mammy” in *Gone with the Wind* over several rivals. Her salary for *Gone with the Wind* was to be \$450 a week, which was much more than what her real-life counterparts could hope to earn.

McDaniel's performance as Mammy in *Gone with the Wind* was more than a bit part. It so impressed the Academy of Motion Picture Arts and Sciences that she was awarded the 1940 Oscar for best supporting actress, the first ever won by an African American. McDaniel's award-winning performance was generally seen by the black press as a symbol of progress for African Americans, although some members of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) were still displeased with her work. At the least, her Oscar was a symbol of possible conciliation (the act of settling a dispute) between the races.

Feuds with NAACP

McDaniel spent much of 1940 touring the country as Mammy, and in the following year she appeared in three substantial film roles, earning no less than \$31,000 for her efforts. She was married, for a third time, to James L. Crawford in 1941.

The mid-1940s brought trying times for McDaniel, who experienced a heart-wrenching false pregnancy in 1944 and soon after became the victim of racist-inspired legal problems. The actress found herself in a legal battle over a system in Los Angeles that limited the land and home ownership rights of African Americans. Having purchased a house in 1942, McDaniel faced the possibility of being thrown out of her home. She was one of several black entertainers who challenged the racist system in court, however, and won.

Still, throughout the 1940s a growing number of activists viewed McDaniel and all she represented as damaging to the budding fight for civil rights. NAACP president Walter White pressed both actors and studios to stop making films that tended to ridicule black people, and he singled out the roles of Hattie McDaniel as particularly offensive. In response McDaniel defended her right to choose whichever roles she saw fit, adding that many of her screen roles had shown themselves to be more than equal to that of their white employers.

Renewed success in radio

By the late 1940s McDaniel found herself in a difficult position. She found her screen opportunities disappearing even as she suffered insults from progressive blacks. After her third marriage ended in divorce in 1945, she became increasingly depressed and confused as to her proper path.

McDaniel could still use her vocal talent on radio. In 1947 she won the starring role of “Beulah” on *The Beulah Show*, a CBS radio show about a black maid and the white family for whom she worked. When Hattie

McDaniel took over the role as Beulah, she became the first black performer to star in a radio program intended for a general audience. The program was generally praised by the NAACP and the Urban League, along with the twenty million other Americans who listened to it every evening at the height of its popularity in 1950.

McDaniel's last marriage, to an interior decorator named Larry Williams, lasted only a few months. In 1951 she suffered a heart attack while filming the first few segments of a projected television version of *The Beulah Show*. By summer she was diagnosed with breast cancer. McDaniel died in Hollywood, California, on October 26, 1952. She will always be remembered as Mammy of *Gone with the Wind*.

For More Information

Bogle, Donald. *Brown Sugar: Eighty Years of America's Black Female Superstars*. New York: Harmony Books, 1980.

Bogle, Donald. *Toms, Coons, Mulattoes, Mammies and Bucks: An Interpretive History of Blacks in American Films*. New York: Viking Press, 1973.

Jackson, Carlton. *Hattie: The Life of Hattie McDaniel*. Lanham, MD: Madison Books, 1989.

JOHN MCENROE

Born: February 16, 1959

Wiesbaden, Germany

American tennis player and television commentator

John McEnroe was one of the most successful and high-profile players in the history of tennis. Throughout his career, McEnroe won seventeen Grand Slam titles, seventy-seven career single titles, and seventy-seven doubles titles.

Childhood on the court

John Patrick McEnroe Jr. was born on February 16, 1959, in Wiesbaden, Germany, where his father, John McEnroe Sr., was serving in the United States Air Force, and his mother, Kay McEnroe, was a surgical nurse. He was the oldest of three sons. In 1963 his family moved to Queens, New York, where he was raised. At an early age he showed advanced hand-eye coordination and athletic ability. According to his father, when John Jr. was only two years of age, he could strike a ball with a plastic bat, and at age four he could hit it a considerable distance.

It soon became obvious that McEnroe possessed a great deal of natural ability on the tennis court. Oddly, although he won several junior tournaments, and moved steadily upward in rank, he was never rated number one on the National Junior circuit. In 1970 McEnroe began training with Tony Palafox, a former Davis Cup (an international team tennis tournament) player for Mexico, and Harry "Hop" Hopman, a former Australian Davis Cup coach, at the Port Washington (Long Island) Tennis Academy.

McEnroe attended Trinity School, a well-known and expensive Ivy League preparatory school in Manhattan, where he was known to be funny, witty, and rowdy. He did above average scholastically—although by his own admission, he could have done better if it weren't for his many sports activities: four

years of soccer and tennis as well as two years of basketball.

Youngest win in Wimbledon finals

In 1977, after McEnroe graduated from high school, he was given the opportunity to play in Europe, where he won the French Juniors Tournament. Aiming for the Junior's title at Wimbledon, he had to pull out of the event when he qualified for the men's senior competition. Not only did he qualify for this important tournament, but he advanced to the semi-finals, where he was beaten by the more experienced Jimmy Connors (1952–), who won in four sets. At that time, McEnroe became the youngest man ever to reach the Wimbledon semi-finals. He also solidified his reputation as one of tennis's "bad boys" along with Jimmy Connors and Ilie Nastase (1946–). His disturbing, emotional outbursts were directed at linesmen, opponents, and himself. Although McEnroe played somewhat inconsistently for the remainder of the year, he was voted *Tennis* magazine's Rookie of the Year for 1977.

That fall McEnroe attended Stanford University in Palo Alto, California, on a tennis scholarship. He led the school's tennis team to the NCAA Championship in 1978. After his freshman year he decided to turn professional. In the summer of 1978 McEnroe was eliminated in the first round at Wimbledon but reached the semi-finals of the U.S. Open. By the end of that year, he was ranked sixth in the world in singles and fifth in doubles.

Temper tantrums and superstardom

As McEnroe's talent came to public attention, so did his "superstar" personality. At no tournament did his comments and dis-



John McEnroe.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

ruptive actions stand out more than they did at Wimbledon, which was run by the traditional All England Club. Whether there was any truth to his claims or not, McEnroe believed that the Wimbledon umpires were out to get him. Although McEnroe lost in the fourth round at the 1979 Wimbledon tournament, later that year he bounced back and won his first U.S. Open Championship, defeating fellow New Yorker Vitas Gerulaitis. McEnroe became the youngest player to win the U.S. Open since 1948.

At Wimbledon in July 1980 the world watched as one of tennis's greatest rivalries developed between McEnroe and Bjorn Borg

(1956–). The highlight of the match took place in the fourth set, which went into a tiebreaker. It took twenty-two minutes and thirty-four points for McEnroe to finally win the set. But Borg emerged victorious (1–6, 7–5, 6–3, 6–7, 8–6). It was Borg's fifth consecutive Wimbledon title, but it also showed the world that McEnroe had the endurance and mental toughness to be a top player. The rivals met again at the U.S. Open, where McEnroe found himself defending the title against a determined Borg, who had yet to win the Open. In a match with as many games as their famous Wimbledon final, McEnroe emerged the winner (7–6, 6–1, 6–7, 5–7, 6–4).

The 1981 Wimbledon tournament saw McEnroe and Borg once again in the final. This time McEnroe ended Borg's five year reign as he won in four sets (4–6, 7–6, 7–6, 6–4). That same year, in September, McEnroe defended his U.S. Open title once again against Borg (4–6, 6–2, 6–4, 6–3). Borg, perhaps feeling that his reign was over, retired after this defeat. McEnroe became the only man since Bill Tilden (1893–1953) to win three consecutive U.S. Open titles.

McEnroe's decline and comeback

In 1984 McEnroe won eighty-two of eighty-four matches, including his fourth World Championship of Tennis final, his third U.S. Pro Indoor Championship, and his second Grand Prix Masters title. He captured his third Wimbledon title, soundly defeating Connors (6–1, 6–1, 6–2), and his fourth U.S. Open title (beating Ivan Lendl 6–3, 6–4, 6–1). This victory was to mark the last major title of his career.

In 1986 McEnroe took time away from tennis and married actress Tatum O'Neal, his

girlfriend of two years (after the birth of their first child, Kevin), and retreated to his Malibu, California, home. His break from tennis did not last long as he came back in August to face Boris Becker in a tournament in Stratton Mountain, Vermont. The match invited comparisons to the earlier Borg-McEnroe rivalries. Unfortunately, his comeback never fully took shape. He continued as a Davis Cup player and his successes in Cup play earned him more press than his occasional singles titles. McEnroe, who has four children, divorced O'Neal in 1992. He married singer Patty Smyth in April of 1997. The couple has two daughters.

Sports broadcasting and charity work

In 1995 McEnroe began to call matches with the USA Network's coverage of the French Open. This began his present broadcasting career. He is a network television commentator for both NBC and CBS at Wimbledon, the French Open, and the U.S. Open. He currently competes in a select number of tournaments and special events, largely for charity. In 1999 McEnroe was inducted into the International Tennis Hall of Fame and was named captain of the Davis Cup team.

Although McEnroe's lack of single-minded devotion may have brought his tennis career to a halt, his charitable activities have brought to the public eye a side of him that was not seen during his reign as champion. An avid rock fan and guitar player, McEnroe occasionally plays at charity events. His interest in art led him to open the John McEnroe Art Gallery in New York City, which features up-and-coming young artists.

For More Information

Evans, Richard. *McEnroe, a Rage for Perfection: A Biography*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1982.

Evans, Richard. *McEnroe: Taming the Talent*. Lexington, MA: S. Green, 1990.

McEnroe, John. *You Cannot Be Serious*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 2002.

TERRY MCMILLAN

Born: October 18, 1951

Port Huron, Michigan

African American writer

Terry McMillan, an African American novelist and short story writer, describes in her works the experiences of urban (city-dwelling) African American women and men.

Early life

The oldest of five children, Terry McMillan was born on October 18, 1951, in Port Huron, Michigan, a mostly white, working-class factory city. Her father, Edward Lewis McMillan, was a blue-collar worker (a person who works somewhere, like a factory, where a uniform or protective clothing is needed). He suffered from tuberculosis (a disease of the lungs) and was confined to a sanitarium (an institution for sick people to rest and recover) during most of McMillan's childhood. He also drank too much and beat his wife. McMillan's parents divorced when she

was thirteen. In order to support the family, her mother, Madeline Tillman, held various jobs as a domestic worker, an auto worker, and a pickle factory employee.

At age sixteen McMillan got a job shelving books in a local library to help her mother provide for the family. There she discovered the world of the imagination. She became a devoted reader, enjoying the works of Nathaniel Hawthorne (1804–1864), Henry David Thoreau (1817–1862), Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882), and Thomas Mann (1875–1955). Reading the works of these great writers led McMillan to believe that the world of literature was a white one. Upon seeing a book by James Baldwin (1924–1987), she was astonished to learn that African Americans also wrote books.

Starts writing in California

When McMillan was seventeen, she left Port Huron and moved to Los Angeles, California, where she worked as a secretary and took a class in African American literature at Los Angeles City College. This course introduced her to the works of such writers as Richard Wright (1908–1960), Zora Neale Hurston (1891–1960), Jean Toomer (1892–1967), and especially Ann Petry (1908–1997), whose novel *The Street*, with its honest and natural account of an African American woman living in a brutal city environment, would greatly influence McMillan's early fiction.

It was during this period of McMillan's life that she started to write. A love poem—the result of a failed relationship—was her first attempt. As she stated in an interview: “That is how it started. It kept going and it started turning into this other stuff, started turning



Terry McMillan.

Reproduced by permission of Marion Ettlinger.

into sentences.” McMillan continued her interest in writing and her education by moving to northern California, where she studied journalism at the University of California at Berkeley. While at Berkeley she took a workshop with novelist and critic Ishmael Reed. Reed was excited by McMillan’s writing and encouraged her to continue. He published “The End” (1976), her first short story, in *Yardbird Reader*.

First novels

After McMillan graduated with a bachelor’s degree from Berkeley, she left California and moved to New York City. She joined the Harlem Writers Guild and went to artists’

colonies such as Yaddo in upstate New York and MacDowell in New Hampshire. At MacDowell she finished the first draft of what would become *Mama*, her first novel. Based on her own life, *Mama* (1987) explores the grim and humorous situation of an African American family in a large city. Set in Point Haven, Michigan, and in Los Angeles, the novel revolves around the lives of Mildred Peacock and her five children. Mildred’s oldest daughter, Freda, is sexually abused at fourteen, and her only son, Money, becomes a drug addict who winds up in prison. Despite the sad state of affairs that the Peacock household experiences, Mildred continues to fight to raise her family. Although critics felt the book lacked the focus of novels written by other African American women writers of the time, McMillan’s work was generally greeted with praise.

Disappearing Acts (1989), McMillan’s next novel, charts the love affair between Zora Banks, a junior high school music teacher who dreams of being a singer, and Franklin Swift, a high school dropout and often-unemployed carpenter and construction worker. Told in the first-person narrative voices (a type of storytelling where the narrator is the person engaged in the activity being retold) of Zora and Franklin and set in Brooklyn, New York, the novel is a powerful study of their relationship and the problems that prevent them from finding happiness together. While some reviewers applauded McMillan’s creation of the character of Franklin, many critics cited the novel’s use of slang as a major distraction. “The language that I use is accurate,” McMillan later said in her defense. “That’s the way we talk. And I want to know why I’ve never read a review where they complain about the language that male writers use!”

In 1990 McMillan edited *Breaking Ice: An Anthology of Contemporary African American Fiction*, a collection of stories by other African American writers. Her third novel, *Waiting To Exhale* (1992), describes the lives of Robin, Bernadine, Gloria, and Savannah, four educated African American women living in Phoenix, Arizona, who have an ongoing discussion about their problems in finding and keeping lovers. The book was greeted with tremendous critical and commercial success. By the end of 1996, more than 700,000 copies of the hardcover version and three million copies of the paperback had been sold. The film version, which grossed (earned before subtracting film production costs) \$67 million in its first year, also proved there was a largely untapped African American female audience eager for movies and novels. Critics praised the work as further evidence of McMillan's bold writing talent.

Continued success

Although *Waiting to Exhale* had been very popular, McMillan enjoyed even greater commercial success with her next novel, *How Stella Got Her Groove Back*. The novel had a first printing of 800,000 copies, a huge number for an African American female author, and film rights were sold immediately for a six million dollar advance. Again, McMillan based the story on her own experience, this time focusing on a middle-aged woman who falls for a twenty-year-old while on vacation in Jamaica. As Evette Porter pointed out in an interview with McMillan that appeared in the *Village Voice*, there are many similarities between the novel and its author, including a young Jamaican boyfriend, Jonathan Plummer, who McMillan met on the island. (They were mar-

ried in 1998.) Critics pointed out that the book's similarity to real life should not blur the novel's larger message about exercising personal freedom in the way one chooses to live.

There was no question in the late 1990s that McMillan, a former writing professor at Stanford University, in California, and the University of Wyoming, had established herself as a major novelist and pioneer in a new type of fiction—the African American urban romance novel. As other writers began to publish books with similar themes in an attempt to cash in on the success of McMillan's work, she turned back to the subject of family for her next novel, *A Day Late and a Dollar Short* (2001), which is somewhat similar to her earlier *Mama*.

For More Information

Fish, Bruce, and Becky Durost Fish. *Terry McMillan*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

Patrick, Diane. *Terry McMillan: The Unauthorized Biography*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1999.

Richards, Paulette. *Terry McMillan: A Critical Companion*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1999.

AIMEE SEMPLE MCPHERSON

Born: October 9, 1890

Ingersoll, Ontario, Canada

Died: September 27, 1944

Oakland, California

Canadian-born American evangelist



*Aimee Semple McPherson.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

Aimee Semple McPherson, American evangelist (one who preaches Christianity), symbolized important traits of American popular religion in the 1920s and 1930s. She was one of the first female evangelists, the first divorced evangelist, and the founder of the Foursquare Gospel church.

Early life

Aimee Kennedy was born on October 9, 1890, near Ingersoll, Ontario, Canada. Her father, James Morgan Kennedy, was a struggling farmer. Her mother, Mildred “Minnie” Pearce was a former member of the Salvation

Army (1865; founded by William Booth [1829–1912] as a religious organization with military structure for the purpose of bettering life for the poor and evangelizing the world). Soon after Aimee’s birth, her mother took her to the Salvation Army and dedicated her to God’s service. Aimee’s training was particularly geared toward religious work.

When Aimee was in high school, she began to question her religious beliefs. At the age of seventeen she went to a religious meeting and experienced Pentecostal (a branch of Christianity that supports individual religious experience and evangelism) conversion under the guidance of Scottish evangelist Robert Semple. In 1908 she married Semple and followed him to China as a missionary (one who travels to spread religious teachings). He died soon after arriving in China, leaving her pregnant and penniless. After the birth of Roberta Star, she returned home and continued her Pentecostal work. She also worked with her mother for the Salvation Army.

Travels

Semple married a New York grocery clerk, Harold S. McPherson, in 1913; this marriage ended in divorce five years later. Thereafter she set out as an untrained lay evangelist to preach a Pentecostal-type of revivalism (a religious practice focused on restoring the spirit of God into people) to the people of Ontario, Canada.

Physically attractive and possessing a dynamic personality and the instinctive ability to charm crowds, Aimee Semple McPherson gradually perfected her skills. By this time professional revivalism had achieved a distinctive style and organization; McPherson was in the forefront. Though she initially lived an almost

hand-to-mouth existence, following the route of traveling evangelists from Maine to Florida, success meant a move to larger cities in America, England, and Australia. In the cities audiences were often immense, with ten thousand to fifteen thousand people deliriously applauding her. “Speaking in tongues” and successful efforts at faith healing—both practiced by Pentecostal churches—were a part of her ministry. (Pentecostals believe that the sounds made by people while “speaking in tongues” are biblical messages that can be interpreted by another worshipper.)

Her own temple

By 1920 McPherson was permanently established in Los Angeles, California. In 1923 she and her followers dedicated Angelus Temple. She called her new breed of Christian church the Foursquare Gospel, a complete gospel for body, soul, spirit, and eternity. Seating over five thousand people, this served as her center of activity. Backed by a sharp business manager (her mother), McPherson developed a large group of devoted followers. She also became a community figure in tune with the publicity-oriented life of Los Angeles, the film capital of the world.

A popular evangelist, McPherson thrived on publicity and sensationalism (causing an intense and/or unnatural emotional reaction). The most astounding incident occurred in 1926, when McPherson, believed to have drowned in the Pacific Ocean, “miraculously” reappeared in the Mexican desert. Some challenged her tale of kidnapping and mistreatment, claiming she had been in hiding with one of her male followers. The resulting court battle attracted national attention.

McPherson continued her unconventional ways by engaging in a slander suit (when a person is taken to court for telling lies that damaged another’s reputation) with her daughter, publicly quarreling with her mother, and carrying on well-publicized vendettas (intense and lengthy fights) with other religious groups. Aimee Semple McPherson died of a sleeping pill overdose in Oakland, California, on September 27, 1944. The Foursquare Gospel church continues to thrive in America today.

For More Information

- Austin, Alvyn. *Aimee Semple McPherson*. Don Mills, ON: Fitzhenry and Whiteside, 1980.
- Bahr, Robert. *Least of All Saints: The Story of Aimee Semple McPherson*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1979.
- Blumhofer, Edith L. *Aimee Semple McPherson: Everybody’s Sister*. Grand Rapids, MI: W. B. Eerdmans, 1993.
- Epstein, Daniel Mark. *Sister Aimee: The Life of Aimee Semple McPherson*. New York: Harcourt, Brace, Jovanovich, 1993.
- Thomas, Lately. *Storming Heaven: The Lives and Turmoils of Minnie Kennedy and Aimee Semple McPherson*. New York: Morrow, 1970.

MARGARET MEAD

Born: December 16, 1901
Philadelphia, Pennsylvania
Died: November 15, 1978
New York, New York
American anthropologist

The American anthropologist (a scientist who studies human beings and their origins, distribution, and relationships) Margaret Mead developed the field of culture and personality research and was a leading influence in introducing the concept of culture into education, medicine, and public policy.

Early life

Margaret Mead was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, on December 16, 1901. She grew up in a free-thinking intellectual home. Her father, Edward Sherwood Mead, was a professor at the Wharton School of Finance and Commerce and the founder of the University of Pennsylvania's evening school. Her mother, Emily Fogg Mead, was a sociologist (a scientist who studies social group behaviors) and an early supporter of women's rights. Margaret's grandmother, Martha Ramsay Mead, a child psychologist (a scientist who studies the mind and its behavior), played an active role in the lives of Margaret, her three sisters and her brother. It was her grandmother who first taught Margaret to watch the behavior of the younger children to figure out the reasons behind their actions.

Mead's childhood school days were unusual in that she only attended one year of half days in the fourth grade and six total years at various high schools. This "formal" education was very much supplemented by all of the educators in her family. Mead loved tradition and ritual, so she joined the Episcopal church at the age of eleven. This faith would be her strength throughout her life. Mead at first wanted to be a painter when she grew up, but such intellectual role models led her to college thinking of English as a field of study.

Mead thrived on change outside of her religious beliefs. In 1919 Mead transferred from DePauw University, in Indiana, to Barnard College, in New York City, where she majored in psychology. Her senior year anthropology course with Franz Boas (1858–1942) was the most powerful event in her life, since it was then that she decided to become an anthropologist. She graduated from Barnard in 1923. In the same year she married Luther Cressman and entered the anthropology department of Columbia University.

Academic life

The Columbia department at this time consisted of Boas, who taught everything, and Ruth Benedict (1887–1948), his only assistant. The catastrophe of World War I (1914–18; a war between the Central powers—led by Germany—and the Allies: England, the United States, Italy, and other nations) and the displacement of people that followed had its impact on the developing study of anthropology. Anthropologists began to ask how their knowledge of the nature of humankind might be used to clarify current problems. At the same time the influence of Sigmund Freud (1856–1939) was beginning to affect all of behavioral (human action) sciences. The atmosphere in the Columbia department was charged with excitement, and whole new perspectives for anthropology were opening up.

Early fieldwork

Mead completed her studies in 1925 and set off for a year of fieldwork in Samoa in the face of opposition from older colleagues (people in the same area of interest) worried

about sending a young woman alone to a Pacific island. She was going to study the life of adolescent girls. She learned the native language (one of seven she eventually mastered) and lived in a Samoan household as “one of the girls.” She found that young Samoan girls experienced none of the tensions American and European teenagers suffered from, and she showed the kind of social arrangements that make this easy transition to adulthood possible.

On returning from the field Mead became assistant curator (one in charge of the museum) of ethnology (the science of classifying mankind into races) at the American Museum of Natural History, where she remained, eventually becoming curator and, in 1969, curator emeritus (honorary title). Her goal in going to the museum was “to make Americans understand cultural anthropology as well as they understood archaeology [study of material remains, fossils, rocks, of past human life and activity].”

In 1928, Mead left for New Guinea, this time with Reo Fortune, an anthropologist from New Zealand whom she had married that year. Her project was the study of the thought of young children, testing some of the then current theories. Her study of children’s thought in its sociocultural (having both social and cultural elements) context is described in *Growing Up in New Guinea* (1930). She later returned to the village of Peri, where this study was made, after twenty-five years, when the children she had known in 1929 were leaders of a community going through the difficulties of change to modern life. She described this change, with flashbacks to the earlier days, in *New Lives for Old* (1956).



Margaret Mead.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

New field methods

Mead’s interest in psychiatry had turned her attention to the problem of the cultural context of schizophrenia (a mental disorder whose symptoms are a detachment to one’s environment and a breakdown of one’s personality—thoughts, feelings, and actions). With this in mind she went to Bali, a society where going into a trance (the state of complete unconscious) and other forms of dissociation (an escape from the outer world into an inner one) are culturally approved and encouraged. She was now married to Gregory Bateson, a British anthropologist whom she had met in New Guinea. The Balinese study

was especially noteworthy for development of new field techniques. The extensive use of film made it possible to record and analyze significant details of behavior that had escaped the pencil-and-paper recordings. Of the thirty-eight thousand photographs which Mead and Bateson brought back, seven hundred fifty-nine were selected for *Balinese Character* (1942), a joint study with Bateson. This publication marks a major change in the recording and presentation of ethnological data and may prove in the long run to be one of her most significant contributions to the science of anthropology.

Largely through the work of Ruth Benedict and Mead, the relevance of anthropology to problems of public policy was recognized though somewhat belatedly. When World War II (1939–45; a war between the Axis powers: Japan, Italy, and Germany—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States) brought the United States into contact with peoples just coming from colonialism (a control of a group of people or area by a foreign government), the need to understand many lifestyles became obvious. Mead conducted a nationwide study of American food habits prior to the introduction of rationing (process in war time of conserving goods for soldiers by portioning them out sparingly to citizens). Later she was sent to England to try to explain to the British the habits of the American soldiers who were suddenly among them.

Rooted in psychology

Mead drew heavily on psychology, especially learning theory and psychoanalysis (type of treatment for emotional disorders in which a patient talks through childhood

experiences and looks at the significance of dreams). In return she contributed significantly to the development of psychoanalytic theory by emphasizing the importance of culture in personality development. She served on many national and international committees for mental health and was instrumental in introducing the study of culture into training programs for physicians and social workers.

Mead was a dominant force in developing the field of culture and personality and the related field of national character research. Her theoretical position is based on the assumption that an individual matures within a cultural context which includes an ideological system (ideas), the expectations of others, and techniques of socialization (methods of fitting in with one's social environment) which affect not only outward responses but also the inner mental structure.

Mead was criticized by certain other social scientists for neglecting quantitative (measuring) methods and for what has been called "anecdotal" (relying on short stories of interesting incidents for proof) handling of data. She was also accused of applying concepts of individual psychology to the analysis of social process while ignoring historical and economic factors. But since her concern lay with predicting the behavior of individuals within a given social setting and not with the development of institutions, the criticism does not hold much weight.

There is no question that Mead was one of the leading American intellectuals of the twentieth century. Through her best-selling books, her public lectures, and her well-read column in *Redbook* magazine, Mead popularized anthropology in the United States. She

was also a role model for American women, encouraging them to pursue professional careers previously closed to women while at the same time championing their roles as mothers.

Margaret Mead died on November 15, 1978, in New York City and was later awarded the Presidential Medal of Freedom.

For More Information

Bateson, Mary Catherine. *With a Daughter's Eye: A Memoir of Margaret Mead and Gregory Bateson*. New York: Morrow, 1984.

Cassidy, Robert. *Margaret Mead: A Voice for the Century*. New York: Universe Books, 1982.

Foerstel, Leonara, and Angela Gilliam, eds. *Margaret Mead's Contradictory Legacy*. Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1992.

Howard, Jane. *Margaret Mead: A Life*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1984.

CATHERINE DE' MEDICI

Born: April 13, 1519

Florence, Italy

Died: January 5, 1589

Blois, France

Italian-born politician

Catherine de' Medici was married to the French King Henry II (1519–1559) and was mother and regent

(one who governs a kingdom in the absence of the real ruler) of three other kings—Francis II (1544–1560), Charles IX (1550–1574), and Henry III (1551–1589). She had great influence over her sons and is thought by some to have authorized the famous Massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day in 1572.

Early life

Catherine was born in 1519 to a powerful Italian prince from the Medici family. Her mother died a few days after giving birth, and her father died a week later. Her father's relatives, among them popes Leo X (1475–1521) and Clement VII (1478–1534), took over her care. At the time of her birth, the Reformation was beginning with Martin Luther's (1483–1546) criticism of the Roman Catholic Church. It soon spread throughout Europe. Protestants, as they came to be called, sought a truer form of their faith than that offered by the political and often corrupt (engaging in unlawful activity) Catholic Church. French Protestants were known as Huguenots, and the rapid growth of their numbers soon made them a powerful force in French affairs.

In 1533 Pope Clement arranged the marriage of fourteen-year-old Catherine to fourteen-year-old Henry, the duke of Orleans and younger son of King Francis I (1494–1547) of France. Catherine eventually gave birth to ten children, beginning in 1543. The death of her husband's older brother in 1536 made Henry and Catherine next in line for the throne. Catherine's husband, now Henry II, had been cared for at age eleven by Diane de Poitiers, who was twenty years his senior. Despite this age difference, they became lovers, and throughout most of Henry's reign as king of France, which began in 1547,



Catherine de' Medici.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Diane had more influence over him than Catherine did. Diane was even given responsibility for raising Catherine's children.

Teenage kings

The Catholic leaders of France and Spain made peace in 1559 partly because they needed money but also so they could unite against Protestantism. The treaty was sealed by the marriage of Philip II (1527–1598) of Spain to Elisabeth, the teenage daughter of Catherine and King Henry. At the joust (a fight on horseback) held during the wedding celebrations, however, King Henry was injured by a lance that pierced his eye and

entered his brain. Henry's death a few days later brought his and Catherine's oldest son, sixteen-year-old Francis II, to the throne.

Sensing an opportunity, Huguenot leaders quickly organized a plot to take over the court of Francis II. Their plan failed, and the royal army arrested the leaders, executing fifty-seven of them. This did not end the conflicts in France; from this time forward, the Huguenot Navarre family and the Catholic Guise family began a long struggle. The death of Francis II the following year made Catherine regent for her second son Charles, who became King Charles IX at the age of ten. Through much of the 1560s, the two religious groups were at war while Catherine and Charles tried to avoid siding completely with either camp. Catherine tried to keep the country running smoothly in the face of this constant tension. The feud between the Navarre and Guise families became worse when the Huguenot leader Admiral Gaspard de Coligny (1519–1572) ordered the assassination of the duke of Guise in 1563.

The Peace of St. Germain

The signing of the Peace of St. Germain in 1570 brought a temporary end to a decade of war. Among the treaty's provisions were the decisions that Catherine's daughter Marguerite would marry Henry of Navarre (1553–1610), the Huguenot leader, that the Huguenots would be given several territories throughout France, and that Coligny would return to his position in the royal court. Catherine hoped he might act to calm his fellow Huguenots while she played the same role among Catholics. But Coligny quickly moved to become a friend and adviser of King Charles IX, leading many to believe he was planning another takeover.

Catherine decided to dispose of Gaspard de Coligny once and for all. She accepted an offer from the Guise party to have him assassinated, hoping that it would lead to revived power for her own party. The assassin shot Coligny but failed to kill him. After talking to Catherine and his younger brother Henry, Charles finally accepted their claim that Coligny was using him, that Coligny planned to overthrow the whole Catholic court, and he and the other Huguenot leaders should now be finished off. According to his brother Henry's diary, Charles at last shouted, "Kill the Admiral if you wish; but you must also kill all the Huguenots, so that not one is left alive to reproach (oppose) me. Kill them all!"

Massacre and more conflict

At two in the morning on August 24, Saint Bartholomew's Day, 1572, Catholic troops moved to kill the injured Coligny and other Huguenot leaders. Eventually all sense of order broke down; looting and fighting broke out across Paris, and over two thousand men, women, and children wound up dead. Catherine was reported to have ordered the attacks, but this has never been completely proved. Another civil war began, but by a strange turn of events, leadership of the Huguenot party now fell to Catherine's youngest son Francis, duke of Alençon. Placing himself at the head of the Protestant forces and dreaming of a crown, he declared that his older brother Henry, who had just been elected to the throne of Poland, was no longer available to rule France.

The departure of Catherine's third son, Henry, to take over the throne of Poland prompted another Huguenot uprising. With her usual energy, Catherine organized forces

to stop it, and with her usual decisiveness, she witnessed the executions of its leaders. She also witnessed the death of her son King Charles, aged twenty-four. She recalled her favorite, Henry, to take over as king. Henry III was crowned in 1575 and married, but he had no children who might eventually assume the throne. He also had disagreements with the Guise family, which complicated things. Catherine urged Henry to settle his differences with the Guise family for the sake of national and Catholic security.

Catherine remained politically active until the end of her life, touring France on Henry's behalf and trying to maintain the loyalty of its many war-torn territories. She also built up a huge collection of books and paintings, and she built or enlarged some of Paris's finest buildings. In 1589 she became ill while dancing at the marriage of one of her granddaughters. She died on January 5, living just long enough to hear that Henry's bodyguards had murdered Guise, which she saw as a rejection by her son of all that she had worked for. Later that year, Henry III was assassinated. In another twist, it was the Huguenot prince Henry of Navarre who took over the throne; he was unable to sit upon it until he adopted the Catholic faith in 1593 with the famous remark, "Paris is worth a Mass."

For More Information

Knecht, R. K. *Catherine de' Medici*. New York: Longman, 1998.

Mahoney, Irene. *Madame Catherine*. New York: Coward, McCann, & Geoghegan, 1975.

Paulson, Michael G. *Catherine de' Medici: Five Portraits*. New York: P. Lang, 2002.

Strage, Mark. *Women of Power: The Life and Times of Catherine de' Medici*. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1976.

GOLDA MEIR

Born: May 3, 1898

Kiev, Ukraine

Died: December 8, 1978

Jerusalem, Israel

Israeli prime minister, Zionist leader, and political leader

Golda Meir served as Israel's foreign minister from 1956 to 1966 and became its fourth prime minister in 1969. By the end of her life, she had become a hero as one of the first women to head a nation in the modern era. Meir was a leading figure in the movement called Zionism, the movement to create a Jewish state in Palestine, the area the Jews regarded as their historical home. The Zionist movement helped lead to the founding of Israel.

Childhood and early interests

Golda Meir was born the daughter of Moshe and Bluma Mabovitch in Kiev, Ukraine, on May 3, 1898. She moved with her family to Milwaukee, Wisconsin, in 1906. The Mabovitch family had fled their home in part to escape pogroms (mob attacks) that had been carried out against Jews in Russia at the time. Meir later recalled that her childhood terror of anti-Semitic (anti-Jewish) violence strongly influenced

her later commitment to establish Israel as a safe, secure Jewish state.

After attending high school, Meir went to the Teachers' Training College in Milwaukee in 1917. She had attained her school-teacher's training over the objections of her parents, who had felt that girls should be married, not pursue a profession. Meir did both, marrying Morris Myerson in 1917 (later she modified her name to Meir). In 1921 they left for Palestine. This Middle Eastern region, which included the territory of modern-day Israel and the West Bank, was at that time under the administration of Great Britain and largely populated by Arabs.

After arriving in Palestine, the Myersons joined a kibbutz (a communal settlement) where after some training they were put in charge of the chicken farm. However, Golda's husband became ill, and the couple decided to move to Tel Aviv. The couple eventually moved to Jerusalem where their two children were born. In Jerusalem, Golda found work as treasurer of the Office of Public Works of the Histadruth, a labor organization that included kibbutz workers and that became the most important economic organization in the Israeli state.

Birth of Israel

From 1928 Golda Meir was the secretary of the Working Women's Council in Palestine and served as its representative on the leadership of the Histadruth. She also represented the council at a number of international labor meetings and was a delegate to its sister organization, the Pioneer Women, in the United States. After 1929 she was elected a delegate to most meetings of the World Zionist Organization. This was the real beginning

of her Zionist political activity. In 1940 she was appointed head of the political department of the Histadruth. As such, she fought against the British White Paper of 1939, which limited Jewish immigration to Palestine. Meir organized illegal Jewish immigration to Palestine at this time, when Jews faced danger in Europe because of World War II (1939–45) and persecution by the German Nazi regime.

When the Palestine Administration (the main British governing body) imprisoned the leaders of the Jewish Agency, a Zionist organization, in June 1946, Meir was appointed acting head of the Jewish Agency's political department. Originally picked to replace the arrested Moshe Shertok-Sharett (1894–1965) in this position, she continued in this role until the proclamation of the independence of Israel on May 14, 1948. Early in 1948 she visited the United States to organize an emergency fund campaign for Palestine, with very successful results. On May 14 she was, as a member of Israel's Provisional Council of State, among the signers of its Declaration of Independence.

Israeli leader

Meir started her political career in Israel as its representative to the Soviet Union. With her election to the first Israeli Parliament (governing body), she returned to Israel and was appointed minister of labor and social insurance. While in this office, she worked to solve the most important internal problems of Israel: housing and employment for the new mass Jewish immigration. Still known by her married name, she engineered what became known as the "Myerson Plan," which allowed for the construction of more



Golda Meir.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

than thirty thousand units of one-room housing. She also oversaw the construction of some two hundred thousand low-income apartments to house Israel's newly immigrated families.

In 1956, Israeli prime minister David Ben-Gurion (1886–1976) called Meir "the best man" in his cabinet and named her to replace Shertok-Sharett as foreign minister, among the most important government jobs in the nation. It was now, as a result of Ben-Gurion's desire to have all Israelis bear Hebrew names, that she reluctantly altered her name to Meir, while keeping it as close as possible to Myerson.

In 1966, tired and ill, Meir resigned as minister of foreign affairs. However, soon after, under pressure from her political party, she agreed to take over the leadership of Israel's Labor Party. Over the next two years, she succeeded in reuniting three main labor groups that had split, the Mapai, the Achdut Ha'Avodah, and the Rafi, into one political party. The merger took place on January 2, 1968, and in August she retired from political activity. However, after the death of Prime Minister Levi Eshkol (1895–1969), when it looked as if conflict might arise within the Labor Party in the effort to find his replacement, Meir again came out of retirement to assume the post of Israel's prime minister on March 17, 1969.

Prime minister

Though elderly and in poor health, Meir proved her abilities to the country during her initial nine-month term. As a result, her Labor Party won the 1969 elections. Meir thus gained her own four-year term as prime minister. This period was marked by Meir's efforts to gain U.S. aid in the form of military and economic assistance. The assurances she won from U.S. president Richard Nixon (1913–1994) helped her open peace talks with the United Arab Republic in 1967, during which one of the several conflicts between Israel and its Arab neighbors (known as the Arab-Israeli Wars) had occurred.

Meir sided with radicals in her government who felt that the territories captured during the 1967 war should be settled by Israelis, yet she also retained the support of moderates who favored giving up land claims in exchange for peace. However, in 1973 and 1974, Israel's unpreparedness for another of the Arab-Israeli Wars, known as the Yom

Kippur War, brought demands for new leadership. After the 1973 elections, Meir was still able to form a new government, but divisions only increased and on April 10, 1974, she resigned as prime minister.

Even in retirement, Meir remained an important political presence in Israel. Her autobiography, *My Life*, helped assure her place in the public's imagination as the kindly grandmother who had risen to greatness in her nation's hour of need. Meir died in Jerusalem on December 8, 1978.

For More Information

Adler, David A. *Our Golda, the Story of Golda Meir*. New York: Viking Press, 1984.

Amdur, Richard. *Golda Meir: A Leader in Peace and War*. New York: Fawcett Columbine, 1990.

Hitzeroth, Deborah. *Golda Meir*. San Diego: Lucent Books, 1998.

Meir, Golda. *My Life*. New York: Putnam, 1975.

RIGOBERTA MENCHÚ

Born: January 9, 1959

Chimel, Guatemala

Guatemalan human rights activist

Rigoberta Menchú has been a passionate spokesperson for the rights of indigenous peoples—people who belong to an ethnic group that is native to a

region, such as the Mayan peoples of Central America. She won a Nobel Peace Prize in 1992 for her work on behalf of the indigenous groups of Guatemala, her native country. However, her work has made her a leading voice for the rights of indigenous peoples throughout the Western Hemisphere.

A hard childhood

Rigoberta Menchú was born on January 9, 1959, in Chimel, a village in the Quiché province (political unit or region) in the mountainous northwest region of Guatemala. Her mother was a midwife (a person who assists women in giving birth) and traditional healer. Her father, Vicente, was a day laborer (someone who is hired and paid to work on a daily basis) and community leader. Both her parents belonged to one of the many indigenous groups of Guatemala, the Quiché Maya. They spoke little Spanish, the language of those in power of Guatemala since its conquest by Spain in the sixteenth century. Instead, they spoke Quiché. Young Menchú herself spoke only Quiché until she was nineteen.

Menchú's difficult childhood is an example of how hundreds of thousands of Indian (indigenous) children grow up in Guatemala. Every year she followed her parents to the southern coastal plantations (large farms), where they spent months as laborers picking cotton and coffee. Two of her brothers died on the plantations, one after being poisoned by insecticides (chemicals used by farmers to kill insects) and the other because of malnutrition (poor diet). Menchú started working on the plantations when she was only eight, and at age thirteen she experienced her first close contact with people of Spanish culture



Rigoberta Menchú.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

when she worked as a maid for a wealthy family in Guatemala City. At this time, Menchú also experienced discrimination against Indians practiced by Latinos (people of Spanish culture). Her employers made her sleep on the floor on a mat next to the family dog—which, she later recalled, was treated better than her.

Guatemala's troubles

Menchú's political beliefs were shaped by Guatemala's troubled history. In 1954, a left-wing civilian president was removed from power by a coup d'état (the overthrow of a government by a small group of people

who have held positions of power) that was supported by the U.S. Central Intelligence Agency. After this coup, the country was ruled by military officers. They ruled the country harshly, tolerating little protest or disagreement. When a guerrilla movement (a movement in which small groups use surprise tactics and attacks to harass or overthrow those in power) opposed to the military rulers began in 1962, the government responded violently. They arrested and killed not only the guerrillas, but also those who supported them or were believed to support them, especially in the countryside.

Political violence began again in the 1970s, when government pressure was applied so widely and harshly that U.S. president Jimmy Carter (1924–) halted economic aid to Guatemala after repeated warnings to the government to stop human rights (basic rights and freedoms to which all people are entitled) violations. Guatemala's Indians, who made up 60 percent of the population, were forced to move into "model villages" and to serve in the military. In this environment, movements to benefit the conditions of Indians were viewed as part of a communist plot by the government.

Political activities

Menchú became politically active, inspired in part by her religious beliefs. Like many others in Central America, she was influenced by Liberation Theology, a movement that believes the Bible should be read through the eyes of the poor and that Jesus Christ had a special message of freedom for poor people.

Another important influence was Menchú's father, Vicente, who was active in

the Peasant Unity Committee, a group that fought to obtain land for peasants and to protect the land they held from being seized by wealthy landowners. Rigoberta Menchú joined the committee in 1979, and was asked to organize the country's twenty-two Indian groups against exploitation (being treated unfairly by those in power). Later that year her teenage brother was tortured and then killed by the army. The following year she lost her father when Vicente Menchú, along with other representatives of indigenous groups, occupied the Spanish embassy in Guatemala City as part of a protest activity. The army attacked the embassy and burned it, killing thirty-nine people, including Menchú's father.

International campaign for rights

The next year Menchú's mother was kidnapped, tortured, and killed by the Guatemalan army, and two of her sisters joined the guerrillas. Life in Guatemala had become too dangerous, and Menchú fled to Mexico in 1981. There she began an international crusade to represent the hardships of the Guatemalan Indians and joined the United Nations Working Group on Indigenous Populations.

In 1983, while Menchú was in Paris to promote her cause, she dictated (spoke out loud to be copied down) her life story to Elizabeth Burgos. The result was the widely read book *I, Rigoberta Menchú: An Indian Woman in Guatemala*, which was translated into more than a dozen languages. It brought her worldwide attention and helped her to become the foremost spokesperson for indigenous peoples.

Peace in Guatemala

In 1988, Menchú's first attempt to return to Guatemala ended badly when she was threatened and put in jail. However, she later visited her country again for short periods of time. It was during one such visit in October of 1992 that she learned she would be given the Nobel Peace Prize for her work on behalf of the rights of indigenous peoples. She was only thirty-three.

In June 1993, during a political crisis in Guatemala, Menchú played a key role in the events that brought to power a new president, Ramiro de León Carpio, a human rights advocate. International pressure also helped force the government to ease up on military violence and violation of people's rights, and in 1995 many refugees who had fled from Guatemala to Mexico began to return.

The following year, the Guatemalan government and rebel leaders signed a cease-fire agreement to end their forty-two-year conflict, Latin America's longest civil war. It was a war that Menchú and her family had fought hard to end.

World figure

Menchú's actions and statements have been considered controversial. Conservatives have accused her of being associated with communist groups, and the story of her life in *I, Rigoberta Menchú: An Indian Woman in Guatemala* was questioned by journalist David Stoll in 1998. In his own book, *Rigoberta Menchú and the Story of All Poor Guatemalans*, Stoll argued that Menchú had distorted key facts in her autobiography.

Nevertheless, Menchú remains an active voice for those who lack representation. In

2000 she filed charges in a Spanish court against several officials in Guatemala's former military governments, accusing them of genocide (mass murder), torture, and state terrorism against some two hundred thousand people who had been killed in her country during the 1980s. Menchú has also been a vocal opponent of the effects of globalization, or the increasing dominance of multinational corporations in the world's economy. In early 2002 she was among the most celebrated speakers at the World Social Forum, a gathering of antiglobalization protesters in Brazil that was timed to coincide with the World Economic Forum, a meeting of politicians and corporate officers that was held at the same time in New York, New York.

For More Information

- Brill, Marlene Targ. *Journey for Peace: The Story of Rigoberta Menchú*. New York: Dutton, 1996.
- Menchú, Rigoberta. *Crossing Borders*. Edited by Ann Wright. London: Verso, 1998.
- Menchú, Rigoberta, and Elizabeth Burgos. *I, Rigoberta Menchú: An Indian Woman in Guatemala*. London: Verso, 1984.
- Stoll, David. *Rigoberta Menchú and the Story of All Poor Guatemalans*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 1999.

FELIX MENDELSSOHN

Born: February 3, 1809
Hamburg, Germany

Died: November 4, 1847

Leipzig, Germany

German composer

Felix Mendelssohn was a German composer (a writer of music), conductor (the leader of a musical group), pianist, and organist. He developed a basic classical approach to musical composition with fresh romantic harmonies and expressiveness.

Childhood

Felix Jakob Ludwig Mendelssohn-Bartholdy was born in Hamburg, Germany, on February 3, 1809, the son of Abraham and Leah Mendelssohn and the grandson of the famous Jewish philosopher Moses Mendelssohn (1729–1786). In later years Felix's father humorously referred to himself as "formerly the son of my father and now the father of my son." In 1812 the family moved to Berlin, Germany, where Abraham established himself as a banker, converted to Protestantism (a branch of Christian religion), and changed the family name to Mendelssohn-Bartholdy.

Felix and his elder sister, Fanny, received their early piano instruction from their mother. In 1816, on a visit to Paris, France, he studied with the pianist Marie Bigot. The next year he began formal studies in composition with Carl Friedrich Zelter, a composer greatly admired by the poet Johann Wolfgang von Goethe (1749–1832). Also as a child, Mendelssohn took a keen interest in drawing and painting and took lessons in foreign languages.

Mendelssohn's first public appearance occurred at the age of nine. Famous musi-

cians gave concerts every Sunday at his father's house; in addition to broadening the musical horizons of the gifted boy, they enabled him, as a budding composer, to test many of his works as he wrote them. In 1819 he entered the Singakademie, a music academy, and from that time on compositions flowed steadily from his pen. In 1820, for example, he produced two piano sonatas (pieces for one instrument), a violin sonata, songs, a quartet for men's voices, a cantata, and a short opera.

First appearances

The first public presentation of Mendelssohn's works took place in 1822. That year he also wrote his official op. 1, a Piano Quartet in C Minor. All these works were well received. He had a private orchestra, for which he wrote the work now known as Symphony no. 1 in C Minor. He also continued with other work, such as the Piano Quartet in F Minor (1823).

In 1824 the famous pianist Ignaz Moscheles (1794–1870) arrived in Berlin from London, England, and for a time Mendelssohn studied piano with him. The following year Mendelssohn visited Paris, where he met many famous composers and performed his Piano Quartet in B Minor, dedicated to Goethe. Back in France he wrote with mature craftsmanship the celebrated *Midsummer Night's Dream Overture*.

In 1827 Mendelssohn's only opera, *Die Hochzeit des Camacho* (*The Marriage of Camacho*), based on *Don Quixote* by Cervantes (1547–1616), was presented in Berlin. More successful was the Octet for Strings, one of Mendelssohn's freshest and most original works. The same year he became acquainted

with Anton Thibaut, a professor of law and a gifted amateur writer of music who was concerned with revitalizing interest in old church music. Through him, Mendelssohn came to know the masterpieces of the Renaissance (a period of great artistic awakening during the fourteenth to sixteenth centuries) and early baroque choral music, an elaborate style of music popular in the eighteenth century. In 1828 appeared the Goethe-inspired overture *Calm Sea and Prosperous Voyage*.

Gaining popularity

On March 11, 1829, a great musical event occurred: Mendelssohn conducted the Singakademie in the first complete performance of Johann Sebastian Bach's (1685–1750) *St. Matthew Passion* since the composer's death. The work was a huge success, and the performance was of great importance to all later German composers for it marked the beginning of the revival of Bach's works. Later that year Mendelssohn visited England, where he conducted a concert of the Philharmonic Society. He took a long trip through Scotland, where he sketched the now famous Hebrides, or Fingal's Cave, Overture. On his return to Berlin he was offered the post of professor of music at the university but turned it down.

After writing the Reformation Symphony (1830) Mendelssohn began a series of visits to various European cities that lasted for almost three years. After a short stay with Goethe at Weimar, Mendelssohn went to Rome, Italy, where he began both the Scottish and the Italian symphonies. In the autumn he returned to Germany and played his newly composed Piano Concerto in G Minor in Munich, Germany. In 1832 he left for Lon-



Felix Mendelssohn.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

don, where he conducted the Hebrides Overture and the Piano Concerto in G Minor with great praise. That same year his first book of *Songs without Words (Lieder ohne Worte)* was published.

In 1835 Mendelssohn became director of the Gewandhaus concerts in Leipzig, Germany. He made Leipzig into a musical center of European significance because of his gifts as conductor, his creativity, and his all-encompassing (including all) musical education. He featured many contemporary (modern) compositions, such works as the C Major Symphony of Franz Schubert (1797–1828), newly discovered by Robert Schu-

mann (1810–1856), and selected compositions of J. S. Bach. The only sadness he experienced was the death of his father in 1835. A year later he met Cécile Jeanrenaud, whom he married in 1837. Five children were born of this marriage.

Later years

Upon the urging of the king of Prussia, Mendelssohn was appointed music director of the Academy of Arts in Berlin. Until 1845 he worked only occasionally in Berlin without giving up his post at Leipzig. His schedule was marked with several trips to London, with performances of his works in London and Birmingham, England.

In 1843 Mendelssohn founded the Leipzig Conservatory of Music, the first of its kind in Germany. He completed the Scottish Symphony, the Violin Concerto, and other major works of his maturity in Leipzig. In 1844 he conducted five Philharmonic concerts in London, and in 1846 he gave the first performance of his *Elijah*, written for the Birmingham Festival of that year. His chief occupation was still as conductor of the Gewandhaus concerts, but he also functioned as director of the Leipzig Conservatory, teaching piano and composition as part of his duties.

Mendelssohn's health began to fail in 1844. Three years later he was literally devastated by the death of his beloved sister, Fanny, on May 14. From then on his health fell apart drastically, and although he went on a short summer trip to Switzerland for his health, finishing the String Quartet in F Minor, he returned exhausted to Leipzig, where he died on November 4, 1847, at the age of thirty-eight.

For More Information

- Mercer-Taylor, Peter. *The Life of Mendelssohn*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- Radcliffe, Philip. *Mendelssohn*. New York: J. M. Dent, 1954.
- Todd, R. Larry, ed. *Mendelssohn and His World*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1991.
- Werner, Eric. *Mendelssohn: A New Image of the Composer and His Age*. Trans. New York: Free Press of Glencoe, 1963.

KWEISI MFUME

Born: October 24, 1948

Baltimore, Maryland

African American civil rights activist, city councilman, congressman, and professor

Kweisi Mfume has been an active leader in the civil rights struggle for many decades. As a congressman, Mfume became one of the most well-known African American politicians in Washington, D.C. Believing that he could achieve more for civil rights by working for the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), Mfume eventually left Congress to become president of the organization.

“Things spun out of control”

Kweisi Mfume was born Frizzell Gray on October 24, 1948, in Baltimore, Mary-

land. His stepfather, Clifton Gray, was a truck driver, and his mother, Mary Elizabeth Gray, took odd jobs, but the family was often short of cash. Mfume was a good student who was protective of his three younger sisters. When Mfume was eleven, Clifton Gray abandoned the family. Then, when Mfume was sixteen, his mother discovered that she had cancer and soon died. He told *U.S. News and World Report*, “After she died of cancer, things spun out of control.” Mfume quit high school during his second year and went to work to help support his sisters. At times he worked as many as three different jobs in a single week.

Mfume also began hanging out on street corners drinking with friends. As he recalled in *U.S. News and World Report*, “I was locked up a couple of times on suspicion of theft because I happened to be black and happened to be young. And before I knew it, I was a teenage parent, not once but twice, three times, four times, five times.” Mfume’s life changed on a July night in the late 1960s. He had been drinking with his friends when suddenly he began to feel strange. “People were standing around shooting craps [playing dice] and everything else, and something just came over me,” he remembered in *Business Week*. “I said, ‘I can’t live like this anymore.’ And I walked away.” Mfume spent the rest of the night in prayer, then proceeded to earn his high-school diploma and pursue a college degree.

A new name

In an effort to connect with his African background, Mfume adopted a new name early in the 1970s. His aunt had traveled to Ghana and suggested the name when she



Kweisi Mfume.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

returned. “Kweisi Mfume” is a phrase that translates as “conquering son of kings.” Mfume went to work at a radio station in Baltimore. He began as an unpaid volunteer and eventually became an announcer. He also earned a bachelor’s degree with honors from Morgan State University in 1976. When that college opened a radio station, Mfume was hired as program director. Mfume became one of the strongest voices in Baltimore’s black community. His growing popularity convinced him to try his hand at politics.

In 1978 Mfume ran for a seat in the Baltimore City Council. After an advisor recom-

mended that he start wearing suits and ties, he won the election by only three votes. Mfume became a constant critic of then-Baltimore mayor William Donald Schaefer (1921–), accusing Schaefer of ignoring poor neighborhoods. The two men almost came to blows on several occasions. Gradually Mfume became aware that politics was a game of compromise and building coalitions (temporary alliances). He learned the art of negotiation (give and take to settle an issue) and even developed a friendly relationship with Schaefer. Mfume told *Business Week* of his former enemy, “We could go to our graves battling each other, or we could get things done.”

A congressman with clout

In 1986 Mfume became a candidate for Congress from the Seventh District. His opponents attacked him by reminding voters that Mfume had dropped out of high school and fathered many children without marrying the mothers. Still, he won the election and took his seat in Congress in 1987. When he found himself on the House Committee on Banking, Finance, and Urban Affairs, he taught himself about banking issues and economics. When the map of his district was changed to include more rural regions of Maryland, he studied farming and zoning laws to be able to represent his new constituents (members of his district). Mfume told the *Washington Post*, “I wanted people to get used to me real quick because I didn’t plan on leaving.”

Mfume established himself as a liberal who supported an increase in federal aid to inner cities. He returned to Baltimore nearly every week to deal firsthand with his constituents, many of whom lived in the city. “I

keep coming back to these communities and the lessons I learned here because that’s what got me where I am,” he told the *Washington Post*. “When I can’t get anything moving in Washington I can always come back here. . . . Whatever I’m doing in Washington, if it doesn’t matter here, it doesn’t matter.”

By his fourth term, Mfume had enough influence to become chairman of the Congressional Black Caucus, a group in Congress that supports the interests of African Americans. Soon after his election as chairman, Mfume and the Caucus presented a list of demands to President Bill Clinton (1946–), most of them having to do with federal aid to cities and the poor. “Not too many brothers or sisters would say ‘no’ to the president,” NAACP executive director Benjamin Chavis (1948–) was quoted as saying in *Emerge*. Mfume told *Business Week*, “We are going to be taken seriously. . . . If that means killing an important piece of [leadership-backed] legislation, then that will be the case.”

A better opportunity

On February 20, 1996, Mfume left his seat in Congress to become the president of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP). He said that he could do more for civil rights as NAACP president than in Congress. After one year of leadership, Mfume had erased the NAACP’s \$4.5 million debt. However, many questioned whether he would be able to restore the association to its former place of leadership in the civil rights movement. He also faced the task of trying to change the image of the association in an effort to increase appeal among younger African Americans.

After one year on the job, Mfume said that his term as president had “gone by in the blink of an eye because the workload was so high and the challenges were so great and the possibilities were so unlimited. I’m a workaholic by nature, so the fact that all this kind of coincided together was good for me in the sense that it challenged me.” With the group’s financial problems behind him, Mfume told members that the NAACP still had a long way to go. Among the issues he intended to address were affordable health care, conservation, voting reform, and hate crimes. In January 2000, NBC Television struck a deal with the NAACP to find more minorities to write, produce, and direct television shows after NAACP complaints about the “virtual whitewash” in new programming. Mfume predicted similar agreements would follow with the ABC, CBS, and Fox networks.

For More Information

Mfume, Kweisi. *No Free Ride: From the Mean Streets to the Mainstream*. New York: One World, 1996.

Paterra, M. Elizabeth. *Kweisi Mfume: Congressman and NAACP Leader*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2001.

MICHELANGELO

Born: March 6, 1475

Caprese, Italy

Died: February 18, 1564

Rome, Italy

Italian artist

Michelangelo was one of the greatest sculptors of the Italian Renaissance and one of its greatest painters and architects.

Early life

Michelangelo Buonarroti was born on March 6, 1475, in Caprese, Italy, a village where his father, Lodovico Buonarroti, was briefly serving as a Florentine government agent. The family moved back to Florence before Michelangelo was one month old. Michelangelo’s mother died when he was six. From his childhood Michelangelo was drawn to the arts, but his father considered this pursuit below the family’s social status and tried to discourage him. However, Michelangelo prevailed and was apprenticed (worked to learn a trade) at the age of thirteen to Domenico Ghirlandaio (1449–1494), the most fashionable painter in Florence at the time.

After a year Michelangelo’s apprenticeship was broken off. The boy was given access to the collection of ancient Roman sculpture of the ruler of Florence, Lorenzo de’ Medici (1449–1492). He dined with the family and was looked after by the retired sculptor who was in charge of the collection. This arrangement was quite unusual at the time.

Early works

Michelangelo’s earliest sculpture, the *Battle of the Centaurs* (mythological creatures that are part man and part horse), a stone work created when he was about seventeen, is regarded as remarkable for the simple, solid forms and squarish proportions of the figures, which add intensity to their violent interaction.

Soon after Lorenzo died in 1492, the Medici family fell from power and Michelangelo fled to Bologna. In 1494 he carved three saints for the church of San Domenico. They show dense forms, in contrast to the linear forms which were then dominant in sculpture.

Rome

After returning to Florence briefly, Michelangelo moved to Rome. There he carved a Bacchus for a banker's garden of ancient sculpture. This is Michelangelo's earliest surviving large-scale work, and his only sculpture meant to be viewed from all sides.

In 1498 the same banker commissioned Michelangelo to carve the Pietà now in St. Peter's. The term pietà refers to a type of image in which Mary supports the dead Christ across her knees. Larger than life size, the *Pietà* contains elements which contrast and reinforce each other: vertical and horizontal, cloth and skin, alive and dead, female and male.

Florence

On Michelangelo's return to Florence in 1501 he was recognized as the most talented sculptor of central Italy. He was commissioned to carve the *David* for the Florence Cathedral.

Michelangelo's *Battle of Cascina* was commissioned in 1504; several sketches still exist. The central scene shows a group of muscular soldiers climbing from a river where they had been swimming to answer a military alarm. This fusion of life with colossal grandeur henceforth was the special quality of Michelangelo's art.

From this time on, Michelangelo's work consisted mainly of very large projects that he never finished. He was unable to turn down the vast commissions of his great clients which appealed to his preference for the grand scale.

Pope Julius II (1443–1513) called Michelangelo to Rome in 1505 to design his tomb, which was to include about forty life-size statues. Michelangelo worked on the project off and on for the next forty years.

Sistine Chapel

In 1508 Pope Julius II commissioned Michelangelo to decorate the ceiling of the chief Vatican chapel, the Sistine. The traditional format of ceiling painting contained only single figures. Michelangelo introduced dramatic scenes and an original framing system, which was his earliest architectural design. The chief elements are twelve male and female prophets (the latter known as sibyls) and nine stories from Genesis.

Michelangelo stopped for some months halfway along. When he returned to the ceiling, his style underwent a shift toward a more forceful grandeur and a richer emotional tension than in any previous work. The images of the *Separation of Light and Darkness*, and *Ezekiel* illustrate this greater freedom and mobility.

After the ceiling was completed in 1512, Michelangelo returned to the tomb of Julius and carved a *Moses* and two *Slaves*. His models were the same physical types he used for the prophets and their attendants in the Sistine ceiling. Julius's death in 1513 halted the work on his tomb.

Pope Leo X, son of Lorenzo de' Medici, proposed a marble facade for the family

parish church of San Lorenzo in Florence to be decorated with statues by Michelangelo. After four years of quarrying and designing the project was canceled.

Medici Chapel

In 1520 Michelangelo was commissioned to execute the Medici Chapel for two young Medici dukes. It contains two tombs, each with an image of the deceased and two allegorical (symbolic) figures: *Day* and *Night* on one tomb, and *Morning* and *Evening* on the other.

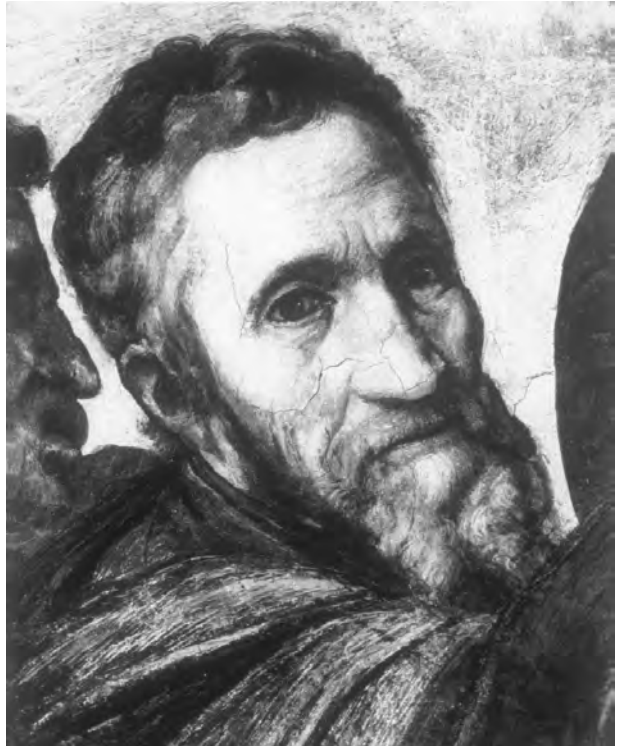
A library, the Biblioteca Laurenziana, was built at the same time on the opposite side of San Lorenzo to house Pope Leo X's books. The entrance hall and staircase are some of Michelangelo's most astonishing architecture, with recessed columns resting on scroll brackets set halfway up the wall and corners stretched open rather than sealed.

Poetry

Michelangelo wrote many poems in the 1530s and 1540s. Approximately three hundred survive. The earlier poems are on the theme of Neoplatonic love (belief that the soul comes from a single undivided source to which it can unite again) and are full of logical contradictions and intricate images. The later poems are Christian. Their mood is penitent (being sorrow and regretful); and they are written in a simple, direct style.

Last Judgment

In 1534 Michelangelo left Florence for the last time, settling in Rome. The next ten years were mainly given over to painting for Pope Paul III (1468–1549). In 1536 Michelangelo



Michelangelo.

began the *Last Judgment*, for Pope Paul III, on the end wall of the Sistine Chapel. The design shows some angels pushing the damned down to hell on one side and some pulling up the saved on the other side. Both groups are directed by Christ. The flow of movement in the *Last Judgment* is slower than in Michelangelo's earlier work. During this time, Michelangelo also painted frescoes in the Pauline Chapel in the Vatican (1541–1545).

Works after 1545

Michelangelo devoted himself almost entirely to architecture and poetry after

1545, including rebuilding of the Capitol area, the Piazza del Campidoglio, for Pope Paul III. The pope also appointed Michelangelo to direct the work at St. Peter's in 1546. The enormous church was planned to be an equal-armed cross, with a huge central space beneath the dome. Secondary spaces and structures would produce a very active rhythm. By the time Michelangelo died, a considerable part of St. Peter's had been built in the form in which we know it.

Michelangelo's sculpture after 1545 was limited to two *Pietàs* that he executed for himself. The first one, begun in 1550 and left unfinished, was meant for his own tomb. He began the *Rondanini Pietà* in Milan in 1555, and he was working on it on February 12, 1564 when he took ill. He died six days later in Rome and was buried in Florence.

Michelangelo excelled in poetry, sculpture, painting, and architecture. He was the supreme master of representing the human body. His idealized and expressive works have been a major influence from his own time to ours.

For More Information

Beck, James H. *Three Worlds of Michelangelo*. New York: Norton, 1999.

Bull, George Anthony. *Michelangelo: A Biography*. New York: Viking, 1995.

Gilbert, Creighton. *Michelangelo*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1967.

Pettit, Jayne. *Michelangelo: Genius of the Renaissance*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1998.

HARVEY MILK

Born: May 22, 1930

Woodmere, New York

Died: November 27, 1978

San Francisco, California

American politician and civil rights activist

San Francisco city politician Harvey Milk helped open the door for gays and lesbians in the United States by championing civil rights for homosexuals (those sexually attracted to members of the same sex). Since Milk's murder in 1978, he has remained a symbol of activism. However, Milk was not a one-issue politician. For him, gay issues were merely one part of an overall human rights vision. During his tragically short political career, Milk battled for a wide range of social changes in such areas as education, public transportation, child care, and low-income housing.

As a boy

Harvey Bernard Milk was born on May 22, 1930, in Woodmere, New York. His grandfather, an immigrant from Lithuania, was the owner of a respected department store. Milk's father, William, was also involved in the retail clothing trade. By his early teens, Milk was already aware of his homosexuality, but he chose to keep it to himself. In high school, he was active in sports and was considered a class clown. He developed a passion for opera and would frequently go alone to the Metropolitan Opera House in New York City.

In 1947 Milk entered New York State College for Teachers in Albany, New York. After earning his degree in 1951, Milk joined

the navy. He served as a chief petty officer on a submarine rescue ship during the Korean War (1950–53), in which American forces aided the South Korean fight against North Korea. Eventually he reached the rank of junior lieutenant before his honorable discharge in 1955.

Looking for a career path

Returning to New York, Milk took a job teaching high school. By this time, Milk was living openly with his lover, Joe Campbell, though he still kept his homosexuality hidden from his family. After a couple of years, Milk left teaching. He tried his hand at a number of other occupations before landing a job with the Wall Street investment firm Bache and Company in 1963. At Bache, Milk discovered that he had a knack for finance and investment, and his rise through the corporate world was swift.

In spite of his lifestyle, Milk's political and social values were conservative through the early 1960s. As the decade progressed, however, his views gradually began to change. Milk's new lover, Jack Galen McKinley, worked in theater, and through him Milk became involved as well. He was particularly interested in the experimental work of director Tom O'Horgan (1926–). Since the presence of gays in the theater world was very visible, Milk began to come to terms with his homosexual identity. At the same time, his overall world view began to move away from the mainstream, or what is typical, and toward a more left-leaning one.

In San Francisco

In 1968 McKinley was hired as stage director for O'Horgan's San Francisco pro-



Harvey Milk.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

duction of the musical *Hair*. Milk decided to move with McKinley to California, where he got a job in finance. Eventually, the conflict between his personal and professional lives became too much for Milk. During a 1970 protest of the American invasion of Cambodia, Milk burned his BankAmericard in front of a crowd of people. He was fired from his job later that day.

With his ties to mainstream life now broken, Milk returned to New York and theater work. By this time he was sporting long hair and a beard, looking more or less like an aging hippie. In 1972 he moved with his new partner, Scott Smith, back to San Francisco,

where the pair opened a camera shop on Castro Street, in the heart of what was becoming the city's gay neighborhood.

The Mayor of Castro Street

Milk entered the political arena for the first time in 1973 after being angered by the Watergate scandal. (Named after the building in which a burglary took place, Watergate involved political cover-ups that ultimately led to the resignation of President Richard Nixon [1913–1994].) Hoping to produce change through politics, Milk decided to run for a spot on the Board of Supervisors, San Francisco's city council. Using the gay community as his voting base, Milk sought to develop an alliance with other minorities in the city.

Of the thirty-two candidates in the race, Milk came in tenth. Though he lost the election, he gained enough support to put him on the city's political map. Because of his popularity in his own largely gay district, he became known as "the Mayor of Castro Street." Milk spent much of the next year preparing for his next election campaign, including taking on a more mainstream look. He also revitalized the Castro Village Association as a powerful civic organization and launched the popular Castro Street Fair. In addition, he conducted a voter registration drive that signed up two thousand new voters, and he began writing a newspaper column for the *Bay Area Reporter*.

Milk ran for supervisor again in 1975. Although he gained the support of several important labor unions, he lost again, this time placing seventh. In recognition of Milk's growing power base, however, newly elected Mayor George Moscone (1929–1978)

appointed Milk to the Board of Permit Appeals. This would become Milk's first public office. After just a few weeks, however, Milk announced his intention to run for the state assembly. That announcement led to his removal from his city post.

Milk ran against the Democratic party on the campaign theme "Harvey Milk versus the Machine." Milk lost yet again, by a mere four thousand votes. By this time, however, he had established a political machine of his own, the San Francisco Gay Democratic Club. In 1977, on his third try, Milk was finally elected to the Board of Supervisors, becoming the first openly gay elected official in the city's history.

Milk's agenda

Several key themes characterized Milk's successful campaign as well as his short career as a city official. One was his demand that government respond to the needs of individuals. Another was his ongoing emphasis on gay rights. A third theme was the fight to preserve the unique character of the city's neighborhoods.

As city supervisor, Milk was the driving force behind the passage of a gay-rights law that prohibited discrimination, or unequal treatment, in housing and employment based on sexual orientation. At his urging, the city announced a drive to hire more gay and lesbian police officers. He also started programs that benefited minorities, workers, and the elderly. Milk then gained national attention for his role in defeating a state senate proposal that would have prohibited gays and lesbians from teaching in public schools in California.

A life ended

On November 27, 1978, Milk and Mayor Moscone were shot to death in City Hall by Dan White (1946–1985), a former city supervisor who had quit the board to protest the passage of the city's gay rights law. In his trial for the killings, White's attorneys employed what came to be known as the Twinkie Defense. They claimed that the defendant had eaten so much junk food that his judgment had become impaired, or damaged, and that he had little control over his actions. White was convicted only of voluntary manslaughter, meaning he would receive the lightest sentence possible for a person who had admitted to intentionally killing someone. He served five years in prison before being paroled. On October 21, 1985, White committed suicide.

The outcome outraged homosexuals and their supporters across the United States. In San Francisco, riots erupted, resulting in hundreds of injuries, a dozen burned police cars, and about \$250,000 in property damage. The following night, thousands of people flocked to Castro Street to celebrate what would have been Milk's forty-ninth birthday.

Since his death, Milk has become a symbol for the gay community of both what has been achieved and what remains to be done. He has been immortalized in the names of the Harvey Milk Democratic Club (formerly the San Francisco Gay Democratic Club), Harvey Milk High School in New York, and San Francisco's annual Harvey Milk Memorial Parade. In 1985 the film *The Times of Harvey Milk* won the Academy Award for best documentary. Ten years later, *Harvey Milk*, an opera co-commissioned by the Houston Grand Opera, the New York City Opera, and the San Francisco Opera, opened in Houston.

For More Information

- Krakow, Kari. *The Harvey Milk Story*. Ridley Park, PA: Two Lives Publishers, 2002.
- Shilts, Randy. *The Mayor of Castro Street*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1982.
- Weiss, Mike. *Double Play: The San Francisco City Hall Killings*. Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley, 1984.

JOHN STUART MILL

Born: May 20, 1806

London, England

Died: May 8, 1873

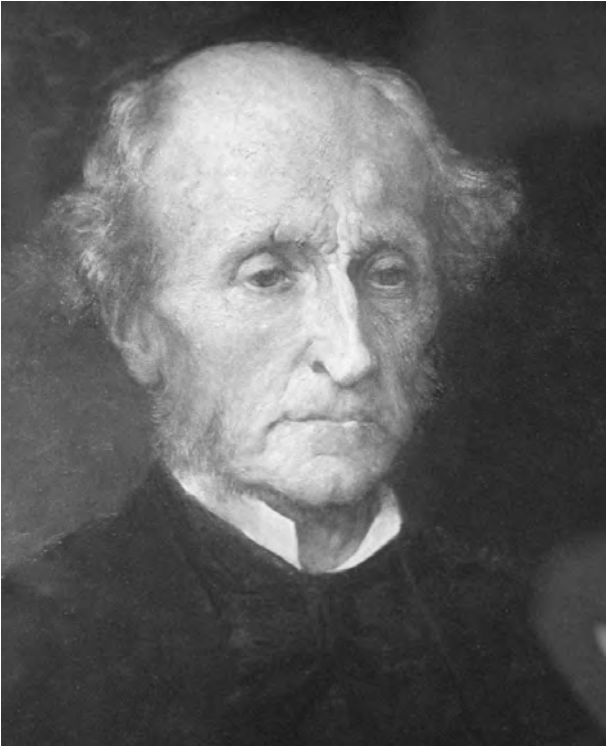
Avignon, France

English philosopher and economist

The English philosopher and economist (someone who studies the buying and selling of goods and services) John Stuart Mill was the most influential British thinker of the nineteenth century. He is known for his writings on logic and scientific method and for his many essays on social and political life.

Early years and education

John Stuart Mill was born the oldest of nine children on May 20, 1806, in London, England, to James and Harriet Burrow Mill. His father, originally trained as a minister, had come from Scotland to take up a career as a journalist. In 1808 James Mill began his lifelong association with Jeremy Bentham (1748–1832), the utilitarian (a philosophy



John Stuart Mill.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

saying that anything useful is positive and that to determine if an action is right, the usefulness of its consequences is the answer) philosopher. Mill shared the common belief of nineteenth-century psychologists that a child's character and performance are the result of the experiences and relationships he or she has as a child. With this view, he attempted to make his son into a philosopher by totally supervising his education.

John began the study of Greek at the age of three and took up Latin between his seventh and eighth years. From six to ten each morning the boy recited his lessons, and by the age of twelve he had mastered material

that was equal to a university degree in classics. He then took up the study of logic, mathematics, and political economy with the same energy. In addition to his own studies, Mill also tutored his brothers and sisters for three hours daily. Throughout his early years, Mill was treated as a younger equal by his father's friends, who were among the greatest intellectuals in England.

Only later did Mill realize that he never had a childhood. The most satisfying experiences he recalled from his boyhood were walks, music, reading *Robinson Crusoe*, and a year he spent in France. Before going abroad, Mill had never associated with anyone his own age. A year with Bentham's relatives in France gave young Mill a taste of normal family life and another language.

When he was sixteen, Mill began a debating society of utilitarians to discuss and make popular the ideas of his father, Bentham, and others. He also began to publish on various issues, writing nearly fifty articles and reviews before he was twenty. But in 1823, at his father's insistence, Mill cast off his interest in a political career and accepted a position at East India Company (a successful trading firm), where he remained for thirty-five years.

Adult life

Thomas Carlyle (1795–1881) once described Mill's life as "the autobiography of a steam engine." Nonetheless, in 1826 Mill underwent a mental crisis. He felt empty of satisfaction even with all of his knowledge. Mill eventually overcame his depression by opening himself to poetry. When he was twenty-five, he met Harriet Taylor, and she became the most important influence of his

life. Although she was married, they maintained a close relationship for twenty years, eventually marrying a few years after her husband's death.

“System of logic”

The main purpose of Mill's philosophic works was to repair the British empirical (experimental) tradition extending from English philosopher John Locke (1632–1704). He overcame much of the confusion of Locke by distinguishing between the connotation, or understood meaning, of terms and the denotation, or real meaning. Mill understood logic as knowledge by inference (the act of transferring a meaning from one thing to another).

Mill's logic concludes with an analysis of the methods of the social sciences. However, the variety of conditioning factors and the lack of control and repeatability of experiments weaken the effectiveness of both the experimental method and deductive (coming to a conclusion by reasoning) attempts. The proper method of the social sciences is a mixture: deductions from the inferential understandings provided by both psychology (study of the mind) and sociology (study of society and groups).

Mill's ideas

Mill suggested that there are higher pleasures and that men should be educated to these higher dreams, for a democratic government based on agreement is only as good as the education and tolerance of its citizenry. This argument is put forth in Mill's famous essay, “On Liberty.” Therein the classic formula of liberalism (political philosophy believing in progress, individual freedom, and protection of rights) is stated: the state

exists for man, and hence the only justifiable interference upon personal liberty is “self-protection.”

The great sadness of Mill's later years was the unexpected death of his wife in 1858. He took a house in Avignon, France, in order to be near her grave and divided his time between there and London. He won election to the House of Commons in 1865, although he refused to campaign. He died on May 8, 1873.

For More Information

Mill, John Stuart. *Autobiography of John Stuart Mill*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1924. Reprint, Krumlin, Eng.: Ryburn Pub., 1992.

Skorupski, John. *John Stuart Mill*. New York: Routledge, 1999.

Stafford, William. *John Stuart Mill*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1998.

EDNA ST. VINCENT MILLAY

Born: February 22, 1892

Rockland, Maine

Died: October 19, 1950

Austerlitz, New York

American poet

Edna St. Vincent Millay was an American lyric (expressing direct and personal feeling) poet whose personal life and verse reflected the attitudes of rebellious youth during the 1920s.



Edna St. Vincent Millay.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Early life and education

Edna St. Vincent Millay was born in Rockland, Maine, on February 22, 1892, one of Henry Tollman Millay and Cora Buzzelle Millay's three daughters. Her father worked as a teacher. Edna's parents divorced when she was eight, and she moved with her mother and sisters to Camden, Maine. Her mother worked as a nurse to support the family. She encouraged her daughters to be independent and to appreciate books and music. Edna studied piano and considered a music career, but when one of her first poems appeared in *St. Nicholas* magazine, she decided to become a writer. "Renascence," a

long poem written when she was nineteen, appeared in a collection called *The Lyric Year* (1912) and remains a favorite. A wealthy friend, impressed with Edna's talent, helped her attend Vassar College in New York.

Begins writing career

Following her graduation in 1917, Millay settled in New York's Greenwich Village and began to support herself by writing. Her first volume, *Renascence and Other Poems* (1917), brought her some attention. She also wrote short stories under the pseudonym (false writing name) Nancy Boyd. *A Few Figs from Thistles* appeared in 1920. In 1921 she issued *Second April* and three short plays, one of which, *Aria da Capo*, is a delicate but effective satire (making fun of) on war.

In 1923 Millay published *The Harp Weaver and Other Poems*, which won the Pulitzer Prize. She also married Eugen Jan Boissevain, a wealthy Dutchman. In 1925 they bought a farm near Austerlitz, New York. Millay participated in the defense of Nicola Sacco (1891–1927) and Bartolomeo Vanzetti (1888–1927), two Italian anarchists (those who rebel against any authority or ruling power) who had been accused of murdering two men in a Massachusetts robbery. Many people believed that the two men were charged only because they were foreigners and because of their political beliefs. In 1925 Millay was hired to write an opera with composer Deems Taylor (1885–1966); *The King's Henchman* (1927) was the most successful American opera up to that time. That year, after Sacco and Vanzetti were sentenced to death, she wrote the poem, "Justice Denied in Massachusetts," and also contributed to *Fear*, a pamphlet on the case.

Addresses social topics

Millay issued *Buck in the Snow* (1928), *Fatal Interview* (1931), and *Wine from These Grapes* (1934). She tried a dramatic dialogue on the state of the world in *Conversation at Midnight* (1937), but the subject was beyond her grasp. She returned to the lyric mode in *Huntsman, What Quarry* (1939). The careless expression of her outrage at fascism (a political movement that places nation and race above the individual and supports a government run by a single leader) in *Make Bright the Arrows* (1940) took away from its power. *The Murder of Lidice* (1942) was written in response to the destruction of a Czechoslovakian town by the Nazis (members of the controlling power in Germany from 1933 until 1945). Then Millay began to lose her audience; *Collected Sonnets* (1941) and *Collected Lyrics* (1943) did not win it back.

Millay's last years were dogged by illness and loss. Many of her friends died, and her husband's income disappeared when the Nazis invaded Holland during World War II (1939–45; a war in which Germany, Italy, and Japan fought against Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States). In 1944 a nervous breakdown kept her in the hospital for several months. Her husband died in 1949; on October 19, 1950, she followed him. Some of her last verse appeared after her death in *Mine the Harvest* (1954).

Edna St. Vincent Millay's poems' included such topics as sex, the liberated (freed from traditional roles) woman, and social justice. Though she wrote in traditional forms, her subject matter; her mixed tone of unconcerned calm, courage, and extreme force; and her lyric gifts were highly appreciated in her time.

For More Information

- Epstein, Daniel Mark. *What Lips My Lips Have Kissed: The Loves and Love Poems of Edna St. Vincent Millay*. New York: Henry Holt, 2001.
- Gould, Jean. *The Poet and Her Book*. New York: Dodd, Mead, 1969.
- Milford, Nancy. *Savage Beauty: The Life of Edna St. Vincent Millay*. New York: Random House, 2001.
- Sheean, Vincent. *The Indigo Bunting: A Memoir of Edna St. Vincent Millay*. New York: Harper, 1951. Reprint, New York, Schocken Books, 1973.

ARTHUR MILLER

Born: October 17, 1915

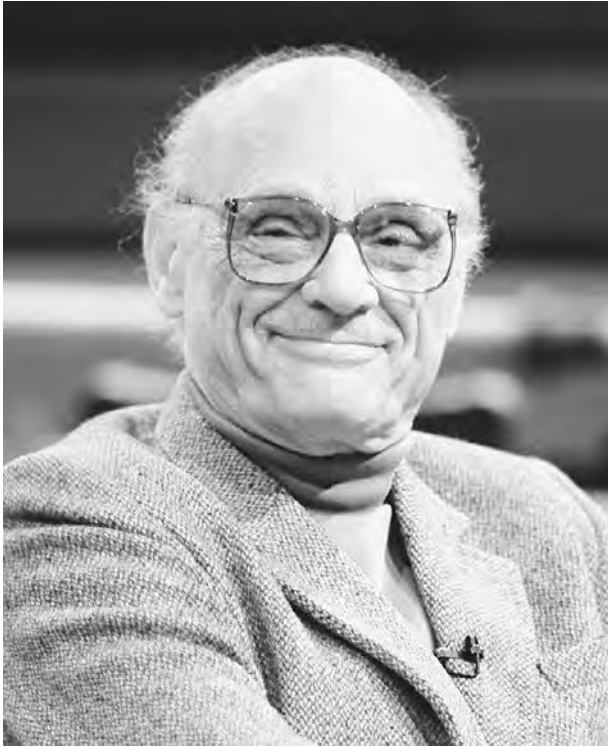
New York, New York

American dramatist, novelist, and screenwriter

Best known for his play *Death of a Salesman*, American playwright, novelist, and screenwriter Arthur Miller is considered one of the major dramatists of twentieth-century American theater.

Early years

Arthur Miller was born on October 17, 1915, in New York City, the second of Isidore and Augusta Barnett Miller's three children. His father had come to the United States from Austria-Hungary and ran a small coat-manufacturing business. His mother, a native of New York, had been a public school teacher.



Arthur Miller.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Miller was only an average student. He was much more fond of playing sports than doing his schoolwork. Only after graduating from high school in 1932 did Miller think about becoming a writer, when he read Russian novelist Fyodor Dostoyevsky's (1821–1881) *The Brothers Karamazov*. Miller attended City College in New York for two weeks, then worked briefly with his father and in an auto-parts warehouse to earn money to attend the University of Michigan. He enrolled there two years later, continuing to work as a dishwasher and as a night editor at a newspaper to help pay his expenses while he studied drama. He graduated in 1938, having won several awards for playwriting.

Miller returned to New York City to a variety of jobs, including writing for the Federal Theater Project, a government-sponsored program that ended before any of his work could be produced. Because of an old football injury, he was rejected for military service, but he was hired to tour army camps to collect material for a movie, *The Story of G. I. Joe*. His notes from these tours were published as *Situation Normal* (1944). That same year the Broadway production of his play *The Man Who Had All the Luck* opened, closing after four performances. In 1945 his novel *Focus*, an attack on anti-Semitism (the hatred of Jewish people), appeared.

Three successful plays

Miller's career blossomed with the opening of *All My Sons* on Broadway in 1947. The play, a tragedy (a drama having a sad conclusion), won three prizes and fascinated audiences across the country. Then *Death of a Salesman* (1949) brought Miller the Pulitzer Prize for drama, international fame, and an estimated income of two million dollars. The words of its hero, Willy Loman, have been heard in at least seventeen languages as well as on movie screens everywhere.

By the time of Miller's third Broadway play, *The Crucible* (1953), audiences were ready to accept his belief that "a poetic drama rooted in American speech and manners" was the only way to produce a tragedy out of the common man's life. The play was set in Salem, Massachusetts, in 1692, a time when many people were accused of being witches and were burned alive. Miller's play pointed out how similar those events were to Senator Joseph McCarthy's (1909–1957) investigations of anti-American activities during the

early 1950s, which led to wild accusations against many public figures. Miller himself was called before the House Committee on Un-American Activities in June 1956 and was asked to give the names of guilty parties. He stated, "My conscience will not permit me to use the name of another person and bring trouble to him." He was convicted of contempt of (lack of respect for) Congress, but the conviction was reversed in 1958.

Hit-or-miss efforts

Two of Miller's one-act plays, *A View from the Bridge* and *A Memory of Two Mondays* (1955), were social dramas focused on the inner life of working men; neither had the power of *Death of a Salesman*. Nor did his film script, *The Misfits* (1961). His next play, *After the Fall* (1964), was based on his own life. His second wife, actress Marilyn Monroe (1926–1962), was the model for one of the characters. *Incident at Vichy* (1965), a long, one-act play based on a true story set in France during World War II (1939–45; when Germany, Italy, and Japan battled France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States), examined the nature of guilt and the depth of human hatred. In *The Price* (1968) Miller returned to domestic drama in his portrayal of a tight, intense struggle between two brothers, almost strangers to each other, brought together by their father's death. It is Miller at the height of his powers, cementing his position as a major American dramatist.

But *The Price* proved to be Miller's last major Broadway success. His next work, *The Creation of the World and Other Business*, was a series of comic sketches first produced on Broadway in 1972. It closed after only twenty performances. All of Miller's works after that

premiered outside of New York. Miller staged the musical *Up From Paradise* (1974) at the University of Michigan. Another play, *The Archbishop's Ceiling*, was presented in 1977 at the Kennedy Center in Washington, D.C.

In the 1980s Miller produced a number of short pieces. *The American Clock* was based on Studs Terkel's (1912–) history of the Great Depression (a slump in the country's system of producing, distributing, and using goods and services that led to almost half of the industrial workers in the country losing their jobs during the 1930s). *Elegy for a Lady* and *Some Kind of Story* were two one-act plays that were staged together in 1982. Miller's *Danger, Memory!* was composed of the short pieces *I Can't Remember Anything* and *Clara*. All of these later plays have been regarded by critics as minor works. In the mid-1990s Miller adapted *The Crucible* for a film version starring Daniel Day-Lewis and Joan Allen.

Later years

Despite the absence of any major successes since the mid-1960s, Miller seems secure in his reputation as a major figure in American drama. In addition to his Pulitzer Prize in 1949, his awards include the Theatre Guild National Prize, 1944; Antoinette Perry (Tony) Award (given for achievement in the theater), 1947 and 1953; Emmy Award (given for achievement in television broadcasting), 1967; George Foster Peabody Award, 1981; John F. Kennedy Award for Lifetime Achievement, 1984; Dorothy and Lillian Gish Prize, 1999; National Book Foundation lifetime achievement award, 2001; New York City College Alumni Association medal for artistic devotion to New York, 2001; and the Japan Art Association lifetime achievement award, 2001.

For More Information

Bigsby, C. W. E. *A Critical Introduction to Twentieth-Century American Drama*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1982.

Glassman, Bruce. *Arthur Miller*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Silver Burdett Press, 1990.

Miller, Arthur. *Timebends: A Life*. New York: Grove Press, 1987. Reprint, New York: Penguin Books, 1995.

Schlueter, June, and James K. Flanagan. *Arthur Miller*. New York: Ungar, 1987.

HENRY MILLER

Born: December 26, 1891

New York, New York

Died: June 7, 1980

Pacific Palisades, California

American writer

American author Henry Miller was a major force in literature in the late 1950s, largely because his two most important novels, banned from publication and sale in the United States for many years, tested federal laws concerning art and pornography (material intended to cause sexual excitement).

Early years

Henry Miller was born on December 26, 1891, in New York, New York. His father was a tailor. From an early age he rebelled against his parents' devotion to work and a "respectable" life. In *Black Spring* (1936; United States pub-

lication, 1963), Miller wrote that "I was born in the street and raised in the street.... In the street you learn what human beings really are." Miller liked to read from an early age, finishing many adventure stories as well as classics of literature. He was an excellent student in high school and enrolled at the City College of New York, only to leave after two months. From 1909 to 1924 he tried different jobs, including working for a cement company, assisting his father at a tailor shop, and sorting mail for the Post Office. While in the messenger department of Western Union, he started writing a novel.

Goes to France to write

Throughout this period Miller had a troubled personal life, including two unsuccessful marriages (throughout his life he married five women and divorced all of them). Determined to become a writer, Miller went to Paris, France, where he remained for nearly ten years with very little money. In 1934 he composed *Tropic of Cancer* (published in the United States in 1961), a loosely constructed autobiographical (based on his own life) novel describing his struggles during his first years in Paris. Famous for its striking descriptions of real life, it won praise from other writers such as T. S. Eliot (1888–1965) and Ezra Pound (1885–1972). Many were outraged by the book's sexual passages, however, and Miller had to go to court to lift a ban on his work. The publicity helped the book become a best-seller, although critics continued to argue over its value.

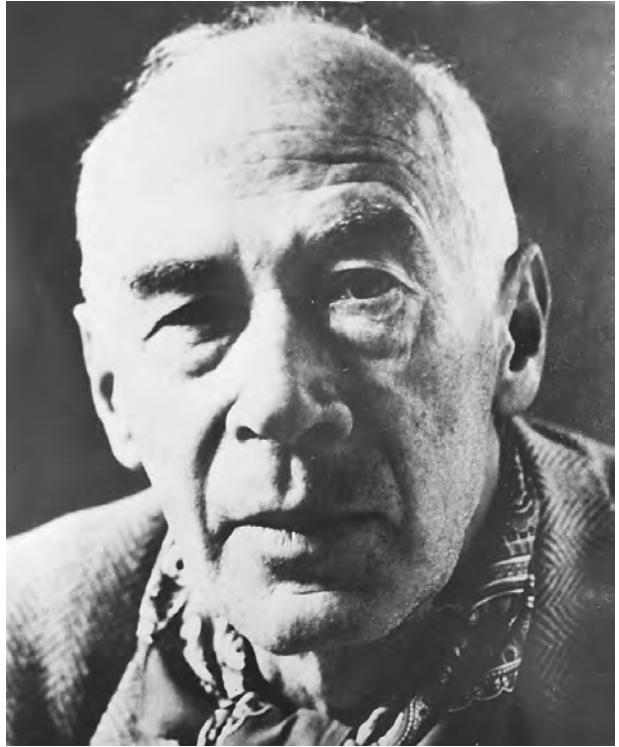
Black Spring and *Tropic of Capricorn* (1939; United States publication, 1962) are similar in style and feeling to *Tropic of Cancer*, drawing from the experiences of Miller's boy-

hood in Brooklyn, New York, and his early years overseas. In 1939 Miller visited his friend, the British novelist Lawrence Durrell (1912–1990), in Greece. *The Colossus of Maroussi* (1941), an account of his adventures with the natives of the Greek islands and one of the finest modern travel books, resulted.

Back in America

Returning to the United States in 1940, Miller settled permanently in Big Sur, on the Pacific coast of California. His sharp and often hilarious criticisms of America are recorded in *The Air-conditioned Nightmare* (1945) and *Remember to Remember* (1947). *The Time of the Assassins* (1956), a thoughtful study of the French poet Arthur Rimbaud (1854–1891), is a statement of Miller's artistic beliefs. *Big Sur and the Oranges of Hieronymus Bosch* (1958) deals with Miller's California friends.

Miller's major fiction of this period was the massive three-volume work *The Rosy Crucifixion*, which included *Sexus* (1949), *Plexus* (1953), and *Nexus* (1960). These contain retellings of his earlier adventures but lack the violent language of his earlier works. Miller's correspondence with Lawrence Durrell was published in 1962, and his letters to writer Anaïs Nin (1903–1977) were published in 1965. His *The World of Lawrence: A Passionate Appreciation* (1980) is about the life and career of writer D. H. Lawrence (1885–1930). *Opus Pistorum* (1984) is a novel thought to have been written by Miller in the early 1940s when he needed money. Most critics consider the work to be pure pornography, and some question whether Miller was the actual author.



Henry Miller.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Later years

In Miller's later years he was admired mainly for his role as spokesman and thinker. Criticizing the empty materialism (focus on the acquiring of personal possessions) of modern existence, he called for a new religion of body and spirit based upon the ideas of the writers Friedrich Nietzsche (1844–1900), Walt Whitman (1819–1892), and D. H. Lawrence. Miller's novels, despite shocking material and offensive language, express deep feeling. Their freedom of language and subject also helped lead the way for Beat Generation (intellectuals who also scorned the values of middle-class society) writers such as Jack

Kerouac (1922–1969) and Allen Ginsberg (1926–1997). Miller lived his final years alone pursuing his lifelong interest in watercolor painting. He died on June 7, 1980, in Pacific Palisades, California.

For More Information

Brassaï. *Henry Miller: The Paris Years*. Edited by Timothy Bent. New York: Arcade Publishers, 1995.

Brown, J. D. *Henry Miller*. New York: Ungar Publishing Company, 1986.

Ferguson, Robert. *Henry Miller: A Life*. New York: Norton, 1991.

SLOBODAN MILOSEVIC

Born: August 20, 1941

Pozarevac, Yugoslavia

Yugoslav president and Serbian political leader

Slobodan Milosevic was president of Serbia (a republic, or member state, of Yugoslavia) from 1989 to 1997 and president of Yugoslavia from 1997 to 2000. In 2001 he was sent to stand trial at the international war crimes tribunal (court) in The Hague, Netherlands, for his actions during the civil war that occurred in Yugoslavia during the 1990s.

The young Milosevic

Slobodan Milosevic was born on August 20, 1941, in Pozarevac, a small town near Belgrade, Serbia, the capital of Yugoslavia.

Slobodan was the second of two sons of Svetozar and Stanislava Milosevic. His ancestors belonged to the Vasojevici clan from Montenegro, another republic of Yugoslavia. His father finished Eastern Orthodox seminary (a place where people study to be priests) in Cetinje, Montenegro, and then studied at the School of Theology in Belgrade. His mother was a teacher in Pozarevac. People remember her as a strict, hardworking woman and a devoted Communist (a person who believes that goods should be owned and equally distributed by the government). When Slobodan was young, his parents separated and his father went to live in Montenegro. It is believed that his parents both eventually took their own lives—his father in 1962 and his mother in 1973.

Milosevic finished his elementary and high school education in Pozarevac. According to his teachers and classmates, young Milosevic was an outstanding high school student, always attentive and always neatly dressed. Although quiet and solitary, he was politically active and published several of his writings in the local high school journal. While still in high school, Milosevic met his future wife, Mirjana (Mira) Markovic, whose family ranked among the most prominent Communists in Serbia. Her father was a hero from World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis [Germany, Italy, and Japan] and the Allies [the United States, Britain, China and other nations]). Her uncle later became one of the leading politicians in post-war Serbia, and her aunt was a personal secretary of Josip Broz Tito (1892–1980) who was the Communist president of Yugoslavia from 1953 to 1980. The young couple's friends did not doubt that the love between Mirjana and Slobodan was sincere and gen-

uine—theirs was a bond between two similar souls. They raised two children.

A career in the making

In 1960 Milosevic was a law student at the University of Belgrade. He was an excellent student who was active in the university section of the League of Communists (the official name for the Communist Party), where he met Ivan Stambolic, a nephew of one of the most powerful Serbian Communist leaders. Many believe that it was Stambolic who elevated the political career of Milosevic.

In 1964, after graduating from the university, Milosevic was appointed as an economic adviser and a coordinator of the information service in the government of Belgrade. In 1968 he became a deputy director of a state-owned gas company, Tehnogas. After Stambolic left Tehnogas in 1973 and became the prime minister of Serbia, Milosevic rose to the post of director. Five years later he became president of the powerful Belgrade bank Beobanka. In 1982 he became a member of the collective presidency of the League of Communists of Serbia, and two years later a chief of the City of Belgrade Party Organization. The collective presidency of the League of Communists of Serbia elected Milosevic as its president in 1986.

A defining moment

On April 24, 1987, Milosevic visited Kosovo Polje, a suburb of the capital of the self-governing Serbian province of Kosovo, and attempted to calm the group of Serbs and Montenegrins who were protesting the continuous mistreatment by the Albanian majority. When an excited crowd tried to enter the



Slobodan Milosevic.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

building to speak directly to Milosevic, they were beaten back by the local police. Milosevic strode out and shouted to the crowd: “No one has the right to beat you!” These simple words changed the structure of Serbian politics. Shortly after, in a series of heated sessions of the League of Communists of Serbia, Milosevic succeeded in removing Stambolic and his associates from the Serbian political arena. In 1989 Milosevic became president of Serbia.

The disagreement among Serbia’s Communists over the Kosovo province shook the already crumbling Yugoslavia. After Serbia took back authority over the self-governing provinces of Kosovo and Vojvodina, the

prospect that Serbia might dominate all of Yugoslavia fueled nationalism (a patriotic desire for one's people to have its own nation) in the Yugoslav republics of Slovenia and Croatia and gave a boost to secessionist movements (or movements to withdraw from a nation). Following the collapse of the League of Communists of Yugoslavia in 1990, multiparty elections were held in each of the six Yugoslav republics. While Milosevic and his Socialist Party retained power in Serbia, forces that openly desired secession from Yugoslavia came into power in almost all other republics (with the exception of Montenegro).

The nationalist emotions that spread throughout Yugoslavia inspired ugly memories among Serbs who had been subjected to genocide (the intentional destruction of a people by mass murder) during World War II. Milosevic, who had already established himself as the leading champion of Serbian rights, was the natural ally to more than two million Serbs living outside the borders of Serbia. When the talks among the various Yugoslav republics were called off in 1991, the violent breakup of Yugoslavia was near.

Civil war

The collapse of Yugoslavia and the resulting civil war among the breakaway nations brought new attention to Milosevic. In the fighting that began in April 1992, Milosevic avoided personal involvement, leaving Serbian military groups to carry out attacks against the newly established nations of Croatia and Bosnia-Herzegovina. Nevertheless, many critics, particularly in the West, portrayed him as a merciless tyrant who wanted to create a greater Serbia. At the same time,

Milosevic and his Socialist Party appeared to be secure in their Belgrade headquarters.

By late 1995 United Nation-imposed sanctions had destroyed the Serbian economy, and Milosevic agreed to a peace plan during talks at an air base in Dayton, Ohio. He attempted to rebuild his image, since he was thought by many to be the force behind war crimes and millions of deaths. Milosevic began making strides at winning a more favorable public opinion, calling for tolerance, or respect, among ethnic groups and portraying himself as a heroic and peace-promoting defender of Serbs. Despite the near-40 percent unemployment and the overall decline in quality of life among Serbs, he was able to retain supporters.

Losing hold on power

In 1997 Milosevic's second and final term as president was at an end, but he hoped to continue his presidency by using a legal trick. On July 23, 1997, he changed his title from president of Serbia to president of the Yugoslav federation (which now consisted only of Serbia and its junior partner, Montenegro) in an attempt to retain his term. Then, in 1999, Milosevic refused to withdraw troops who were trying to stop an independence movement in Kosovo. In retaliation, the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO), led by the United States, bombed Serbia for two and a half months. Serbian forces, nonetheless, caused a significant amount of suffering in Kosovo.

On July 7, 2000, Yugoslavia's federal parliament enacted changes to the country's constitution that would allow Milosevic to serve two more four-year terms. However, Milosevic resigned in October 2000 because of the

massive popular revolt against him. Six months later, Milosovic was arrested by police after he threatened to kill himself, his wife, and his daughter. Only two months later, in late June 2001, he was sent to The Hague to be tried for war crimes, including genocide.

For More Information

Cohen, Leonard J. *Serpent in the Bosom: The Rise and Fall of Slobodan Milosevic*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 2001.

Doder, Dusko, and Louise Branson. *Milosevic: Portrait of a Tyrant*. New York: Free Press, 1999.

Sell, Louis. *Slobodan Milosevic and the Destruction of Yugoslavia*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press, 2002.

JOHN MILTON

Born: December 9, 1608

London, England

Died: November 8, 1674

London, England

English poet and essayist

The English poet John Milton was a champion of liberty. As a Protestant, he believed that the individual reader should interpret the Bible. He is chiefly famous for his epic (a long poem centered around a legendary hero) poem *Paradise Lost* and for his defense of uncensored (not checked for materials that may be harmful) publication.

Background and education

John Milton was born on December 9, 1608, in London, England. The future poet's father, John Milton, Sr., was a scrivener (a person who draws up deeds and wills). About 1600 he married Sara Jeffrey, the wealthy daughter of a merchant-tailor. Three of their children survived infancy: Anne, John, and Christopher.

The young Milton was known for his devotion to his studies, and his early interest in poetry. From his father, who was an amateur composer (a writer of music), young John developed the love of music, which later spread through his poetry. After private tutoring, he entered St. Paul's School in about 1620. Admitted to Christ's College at the age of fifteen, he intended to become a priest in the Church of England. Because of a disagreement with his tutor, he was rusticated (temporarily expelled) in 1626. Back at Cambridge about April 1626, Milton was assigned a different tutor and resumed the study of logic, ethics, Greek, Latin, and Hebrew. He composed Latin poems and epigrams (short poems dealing pointedly with a single thought or event and often ending with a clever turn of thought).

In 1628 Milton wrote his first major English poem, *On the Death of a Fair Infant, Dying of the Cough*, about the death of his sister's baby. A year later he wrote *On the Morning of Christ's Nativity*, celebrating the harmonizing power of divine love.

Milton, in one of his college orations (public speeches), broke with the usual practice of speaking in Latin by delivering English verse, beginning "Hail native language." Thereafter, he wrote Latin verse occasionally and a series of sonnets (poems of fourteen



John Milton.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

lines with a specific rhyming pattern) in Italian, but he composed increasingly in English.

The graceful thirties

After receiving bachelor of arts and master of arts degrees in 1629 and 1632, Milton lived in his family's suburban home in Hammersmith, England, and then at their country estate in Horton, Buckinghamshire, England. He continued studies in theology, history, mathematics, and literature, and participated in social and cultural life in London and the country. At this time he wrote sonnets, lyrics, and *A Mask* (better known as *Comus*; a mixture of song, dance, pageantry and poetry).

Milton's themes were both particular and universal. In *Lycidas* (1637) he deals with why God allows the good to die young. In 1639, when he learned that a friend had died, he penned a moving Latin elegy (poetry for the dead), finding solace in Christian hope. By this time Milton had abandoned the idea of entering the ministry. He was, however, dedicated to making the Church of England more Protestant (non-Catholic).

In 1638 and 1639 Milton toured France and Italy. His good looks, enthusiasm, and his ability to speak many languages helped him to enter polite society abroad. He intended also to go to Greece, but news of the growing political and religious crisis in England led him to return to London.

Crucial decades, 1640–1660

It was by writing prose that Milton found opportunity to serve his God and country. There was a civil war in England that lasted from 1642 to 1648. King Charles I (1600–1649), who was Catholic, was opposed by a large number of his subjects, who were Puritan Protestants. King Charles was defeated and executed. In 1641 and 1642 Milton poured out tracts (leaflets) opposing the control over religion held by the Catholic bishops. He felt their powers were based on man-made traditions, self-interest, and a combination of ignorance, superstition, and deliberate lies.

In 1644 Milton's *Of Education* dealt with another kind of domestic freedom: how to develop discipline, reasonableness, broad culture, all-round ability, and independence of judgment in schoolboys. The same year saw *Areopagitica*, his defense of man's right to free speech and discussion as the best means of

advancing truth. As the civil war ended, Milton turned to condemning royal tyranny (the abuse of power). *The Tenure of Kings and Magistrates* (1649) argued that men have a natural right to freedom and that contracts they make with rulers are voluntary and can be ended. Soon after its publication Milton began a decade as the revolutionary government's secretary for foreign tongues. His chief duty was to translate state letters into Latin. For some years, however, Milton had been losing his eyesight, and by early 1652 he was totally blind.

Milton had married Mary Powell in May 1642. In 1656, four years after his first wife's death, Milton married Kathrine Woodcock. Two years later she died after giving birth to a child, and he tenderly memorialized her in a sonnet, *To my late departed Saint*. In 1663 he married Elizabeth Minshell.

Milton heroically persisted despite his misfortunes. During the crisis preceding restoration of the monarchy he wrote several tracts. In *A Treatise of Civil Power* (1659) he again urged toleration and separation of Church and state. *Ready and Easy Way* (1660) argued for preservation of a republic, a government in which citizens hold power and vote to elect officials as their representatives in the government.

Triumph in defeat

When Charles II, son of the executed Charles I, regained the throne in 1660, Milton was in danger for supporting the overthrow of the monarchy. Milton was harassed and imprisoned and several of his books were burned. However, he was included in a general pardon.

Paradise Lost, the epic published in 1667, is inspired by the Bible story of the Creation,

the fall of Adam and Eve, the rebellion of Satan against God, and Satan being cast out from heaven. In it Milton tried to convey some insight into God's wisdom and providence, but he did not intend it to be taken literally. *Paradise Lost* is generally regarded as the greatest epic poem in the English language. In 1671 its sequel, *Paradise Regained*, appeared in one volume with *Samson Agonistes*. *Paradise Regained* treats the rejection by Jesus of Satan's temptations. Its central point is that the true hero conquers not by force but by humility and faith in God. *Samson Agonistes* deals with the theme of temptation, dramatizing how the Hebrew strong man yielded to passion and seeming self-interest.

In 1673 Milton reentered public controversy (open to dispute) with *Of True Religion*, a brief defense of Protestantism. Before his death he was planning to publish writings that appeared posthumously (after death): his Latin state papers (1676) and a short history of Moscovia (1682). In 1694 his nephew Edward Phillips published a life of his uncle with an English translation of the state papers.

In the early nineteenth century the Latin manuscript of Milton's *Christian Doctrine* was discovered and translated (1825). In it he systematically set out to free the Scriptures from misinterpretation by discovering what the Bible itself said on such matters as fate, angels, and faith.

Reputation and influence

Milton influenced many writers. Some, like John Dryden (1631–1700), admired his work and used it as the basis for their own writing. Others, including Alexander Pope (1688–1744), poked fun at it. Still others, such as Samuel Johnson (1709–1784),

admitted the worth of Milton's work but disagreed with his religious and political views.

In general, eighteenth-century poets praised him for possessing outstanding spiritual, intellectual, and moral worth. William Blake (1757–1827) and Percy Bysshe Shelley (1792–1822) praised his Satan as a romantic rebel. Samuel Taylor Coleridge (1772–1834) praised Milton's artistry and depth. In the 1920s, T. S. Eliot (1888–1965) criticized Milton's verse chiefly because of its influence. However, since about 1930, Milton has again been highly respected for his work.

John Milton died in London on November 8, 1674.

For More Information

Lewalski, Barbara Kiefer. *John Milton: A Critical Biography*. Malden, MA: Blackwell Publishers, 2001.

Parker, William Riley. *Milton: A Biography*. 2 vols. Oxford, England: Clarendon Press, 1968.

Shawcross, John T. *John Milton: The Self and the World*. Lexington: University Press of Kentucky, 1993.

Wilson, A. N. *The Life of John Milton*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1983.

JOAN MIRÓ

Born: April 20, 1893

Montroig, Spain

Died: December 25, 1983

Palma de Majorca, Spain

Spanish painter

The Spanish painter Joan Miró was one of the first surrealists (artists who created art that emphasized fantastic imagery who were part of a movement called surrealism that began in the early twentieth century). Miró developed a highly personalized visual language that originated from prehistoric and natural sources.

Early life

Joan Miró was born the first son of Michel Miró Adziras and Dolores Ferra on April 20, 1893, in Montroig near Barcelona, Spain. He came from a long line of hard-working craftsmen, and his father also worked as a goldsmith and a watchmaker. Although Miró did poorly at school, he began drawing regularly at the age of eight. (His sketchbooks of 1905 contain nature studies from Tarragona and Palma de Majorca, both areas in Spain). In 1907 he attended the Lonja School of Fine Arts in Barcelona where he received encouragement from his teachers. After a brief period working as a clerk, he attended the Gali School of Art in 1912, also in Barcelona.

Career begins

After Miró completed his artistic education in Barcelona, he produced portraits and landscapes in the Fauve manner, a style of painting popular around 1900 that emphasized brilliant and aggressive colors. He had his first one-man show in Barcelona in 1918 and later that year he became a member of the Agrupacio Courbet, to which the ceramist Joseph Llorenz Artigas belonged.

In 1919 Miró made his first trip to Paris, France, and thereafter he spent the winters in Paris and the summers in Montroig. He met

members of the Dada group, an artistic and literary movement which sought to expand the boundaries of conventional (having to do with the common and the unoriginal) art. His first one-man show in Paris was held in 1921 and his paintings of this period reflect cubist (having to do with an artistic movement in the early twentieth century which used geometric shapes) influences. His painting, *Montroig (The Olive Grove)* (1919), for example, has a frontal, geometric pattern greatly influenced by cubism.

The Tilled Field (1923–1924) marked the turning point in Miró's art toward a personal style. In the midst of a landscape with animals and delicately drawn objects are a large ear and eye; thus the person of the painter comes into the picture. The change in his art was furthered by his encounter with the works of Paul Klee (1879–1940), Wassily Kandinsky (1866–1944), and Jean Arp (1887–1966).

Miró's message

Miró's aim was to rediscover the sources of human feeling, to create poetry by way of painting, using a vocabulary of signs and symbols, plastic metaphors (an implied similarity between two different things), and dream images to express definite themes. He had a genuine sense of humor and a lively wit, which also characterized his art. His chief consideration was social, to get close to the great masses of humanity, and he was deeply convinced that art can make a genuine appeal only when returning to the roots of experience. In this respect Miró's attitude can be compared to that of Klee.

Miró was connected with the surrealists from 1924 to 1930. Surrealism was a source of inspiration to him, and he made use of its



Joan Miró.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

methods; however, he never accepted any surrealist "doctrine," or teachings. Rather, his art, like Klee's, seems more connected to modern fantastic art. Under the impact of surrealism Miró painted the *Harlequin's Carnival* (1924–1925) with its frantic movement of semiabstract (having both recognizable and unrecognizable qualities) forms. In 1926 he worked together with Max Ernst (1891–1976) on the sets and costumes for Sergei Diaghilev's ballet *Roméo et Juliette*.

Larger works and legacy

In 1936 Miró fled to Paris during the Spanish Civil War (1936–39; a revolt against

the conservative Republican government). The following year he created a large mural, the *Reaper*, for the Spanish Pavilion at the International Exposition in Paris. His work began to achieve great power through increased simplicity, intensified color, and abstraction, as in the *Bullfight* (1945), *Woman and Bird in Moonlight* (1949), and *Painting* (1953). He was awarded the Grand Prix International at the Venice Biennale for his graphic work.

Miró's most famous monumental works are the two ceramic walls, *Night and Day* (1957–59), for the United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organization (UNESCO) building in Paris; the mural painting (1950) and the ceramic mural (1960) for Harvard University in Cambridge, Massachusetts; and the ceramic mural (1967) for the Guggenheim Museum in New York City. In 1975 Miró demonstrated his devotion to his native country with the donation of the Miró Foundation to the city of Barcelona, Spain. The building, which houses his works and the exhibitions of other artists, was designed by the artist's great friend, Josep Lluís Sert. One exhibition room was dedicated to the showing of works by young artists who had not yet been discovered by the public. Miró died in Palma de Majorca, Spain, on December 25, 1983, at the age of ninety.

Miró enjoyed international acclaim during his long and productive career. He was one of the many outstanding Spaniards—including Pablo Picasso (1881–1973), Juan Gris (1887–1927), Salvador Dalí (1904–1989), and Francis Picabia—who, by belonging to the School of Paris, helped to establish the high esteem in which it was held during

the first half of the twentieth century. And like many of those other artists, Miró continued to energetically produce his art and to experiment with form and subject long after the years of his initial celebrity had passed.

For More Information

Bernier, Rosamond. *Matisse, Picasso, Miró: As I Knew Them*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1991.

Diehl, Gaston. *Miró*. New York: Crown Publishers, 1988.

Ross, Nicholas. *Miró*. Hauppauge, NY: Barron's, 1995.

MOLIÈRE

Born: January 15, 1622

Paris, France

Died: February 17, 1673

Paris, France

French dramatist, writer, and actor

The French dramatist Molière was the master of French comedy. His plays often attacked hypocrisy (pretending to possess qualities one does not actually have). He also directed, acted, and managed theater groups.

Early life

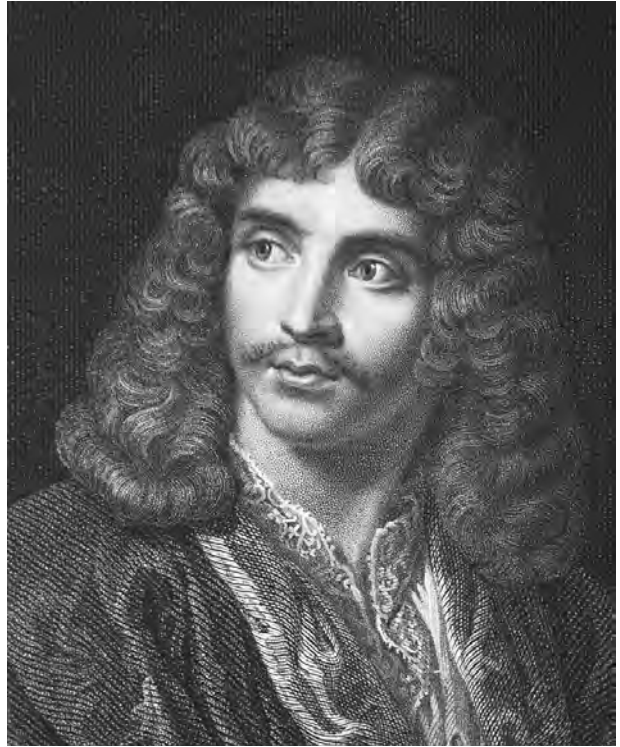
Molière was born Jean Baptiste Poquelin in Paris, France, on January 15, 1622. His father was a successful upholsterer (one who puts soft coverings on chairs) who held the post of official furnisher at the royal court.

Molière had been attracted to the theater since childhood. When Tiberio Fiorelli (called Scaramouche), an Italian actor, came to Paris in 1640, Molière struck up a friendship with him. Molière was educated at the Collège de Clermont, a Jesuit (Catholic order devoted to educational work) institution. There he received a solid classical background, and he may have known some future freethinkers, such as the dramatist Cyrano de Bergerac (1619–1655). After finishing his secondary education, Molière studied law briefly and was allowed to practice in 1641.

Chooses career in theater

Molière was expected to take over the post his father held, but in 1643 he decided to devote himself to the theater. He had met a young actress, Madeleine Béjart, with whom he was to be associated until her death in 1672. Since the theater life was not considered very respectable, he assumed the name “Molière” in order to spare embarrassment to his family. He joined a troupe known as the Illustre Théâtre that included Béjart and her family. By 1644, having served two prison terms as a result of the company’s debts, Molière joined another company with the Béjarts and toured all over France for the next thirteen years. In 1650 Molière became the head of the troupe, and he managed to secure the patronage (support) of the Prince of Conti.

Although little evidence of Molière’s travels is available, it is certain that he and his players learned much while performing in the French provinces. The short, stocky Molière was a hard worker. He frequently acted, sometimes under a clown’s mask, with the troupe he managed. When the company was called to give a performance before Louis



Molière.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

XIV (1638–1715) in 1658, it was Molière’s comedy, *Le Docteur amoureux*, that most amused the king. The king’s brother became patron (supporter) of the troupe, and Molière returned to Paris, the city of his birth.

Success and criticism

In December 1662 Molière presented a comedy, *L’École des femmes*, before the king. It was to be his greatest success. The play centers around Arnolphe, a middle-class man who chooses a child for his bride, whom he then raises in total ignorance. A young rival, unaware of Arnolphe’s identity, tells him exactly how he plans to steal the girl from

under his nose. The play caused a huge protest, known as the “Quarrel of *L'École des femmes*.” Molière’s enemies, jealous of the king’s favor toward him, attacked him as immoral and claimed he had stolen the story from another writer. Molière chose to answer his enemies in the form of a play. His *Critique de l'École des femmes*, presented in June 1663, included a discussion on stage of both the critics and the criticisms. The “Quarrel” served to establish comedy as an accepted form of literature.

In May 1664 Molière was invited to perform *Tartuffe ou l'Imposteur*, an attack on religious hypocrisy, for Louis XIV at Versailles, France. The play angered the Society of the Holy Sacrament, a powerful religious group, and for five long years Molière struggled without success for the right to perform his play. Finally, in 1669, the power of the Society had lessened, and *Tartuffe* was revived with great success at the Palais Royal. *Dom Juan*, first presented in February 1665, is considered one of Molière’s greatest plays, although it was not published until after his death and remained almost unknown until the twentieth century.

Later years

Although Molière enjoyed the personal support of the king, he struggled with illness, marital problems, and depression. Still, during this period he wrote and presented a work that shows his mastery and genius. *Le Misanthrope*, presented in June 1666, pleased his admirers, but it lacked the popular appeal necessary to make it a success. *L'Avare*, presented two years later, failed miserably, and Molière faced extreme financial (related to money) problems. A comedy-ballet, *Le Bour-*

geois gentilhomme (1670), helped bring in the public once again.

Molière had also developed a bad cough, which he tried to mask as a comic device. When overcome by a coughing spell onstage, he exaggerated it in an attempt to make the audience laugh. The condition worsened greatly, but Molière had little faith in medicine. In 1671 *Les Fourberies de Scapin*, a bright comedy similar to his early works, was presented. On February 17, 1673, during the fourth performance of his last work, *Le Malade imaginaire*, Molière began having seizures. He died that same night, attended only by two nuns, having been refused the right to see a priest.

For More Information

- Bermel, Albert. *Molière's Theatrical Bounty: A New View of the Plays*. Carbondale: Southern Illinois University Press, 1990.
- Bulgakov, Mikhail. *The Life of Monsieur de Molière*. New York: Funk & Wagnalls, 1970. Reprint, New York: New Directions, 1986.
- Scott, Virginia. *Molière: A Theatrical Life*. Cambridge, Eng.: Cambridge University Press, 2000.

CLAUDE MONET

Born: November 14, 1840
Paris, France
Died: December 5, 1926
Giverny, France
French painter

The French painter Claude Monet was the leading figure in the growth of impressionism, a movement in which painters looked to nature for inspiration and used vibrant light and color rather than the solemn browns and blacks of previous paintings.

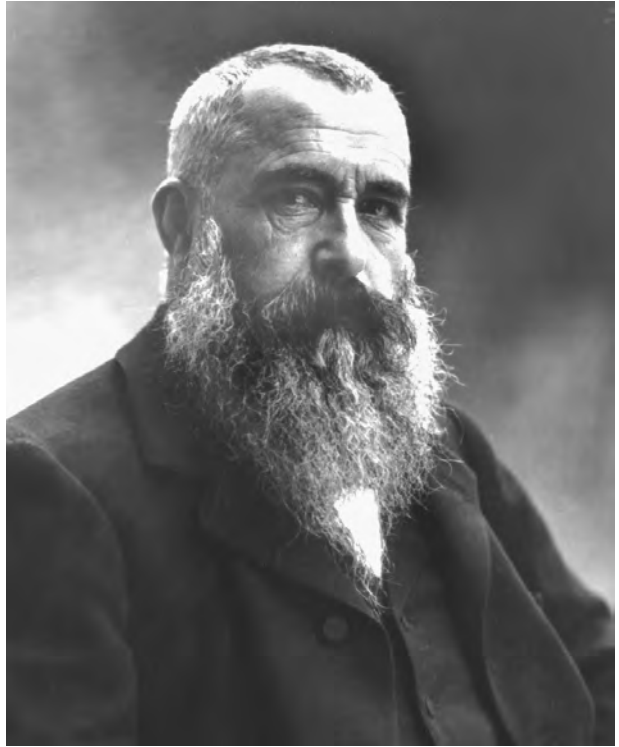
Background and early influences

Claude Monet was born in Paris, France, on November 14, 1840. His father, Adolphe Monet, was a grocer. In 1845 the family moved to Le Havre, France, where Monet's father and uncle ran a business selling supplies for ships. By the time he was fifteen Monet had become popular as a caricaturist (one who makes exaggerated portraits of people). Through an exhibition of his drawings at a local frame shop in 1858, Monet met Eugène Boudin, a landscape painter who became a great influence on the young artist. Boudin introduced Monet to outdoor painting, an activity that soon became his life's work.

By 1859 Monet was determined to pursue an artistic career. He worked at the free Académie Suisse in Paris, and he frequented the Brasserie des Martyrs, a gathering place for Gustave Courbet (1819–1877) and other French painters of the 1850s.

Early period

Monet's studies were interrupted by military service in Algeria (1860–62). In 1862 he entered the studio of Charles Gleyre in Paris and met Pierre-Auguste Renoir (1841–1919), Alfred Sisley (1839–1899), and Jean Frédéric Bazille (1841–1870). During 1863 and 1864 he often worked in the forest at



Claude Monet.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Fontainebleau, France, with other artists including Théodore Rousseau (1812–1867) and Jean François Millet (1814–1875). At the outbreak of the Franco-Prussian War in 1870, Monet traveled to London, England, where he met the art dealer Paul Durand-Ruel. The following year Monet and his wife, Camille, whom he had married in 1870, settled at Argenteuil, France, which became his home for the next six years.

Monet's constant movements during this period were directly related to his artistic ambitions. He was interested in natural light, atmosphere, and color, and he tried to record them in his paintings as accurately as possi-

ble. A striking example of his early style is the *Terrace at the Seaside, Sainte-Adresse* (1866), which contains a shining mixture of bright, natural colors. Throughout the 1860s and 1870s, he was often short of money and destroyed his own paintings rather than have them taken away by creditors (those to whom money is owed).

Monet and impressionism

As William Seitz wrote, “The landscapes Monet painted at Argenteuil between 1872 and 1877 are his best-known, most popular works, and it was during these years that impressionism most closely approached a group style.” Monet exhibited regularly in the impressionist group shows, the first of which took place in 1874. On that occasion his painting *Impression: Sunrise* (1872) inspired a newspaper critic to call all the artists “impressionists,” and the name stuck. Monet and the impressionists discovered that even the darkest shadows and the gloomiest days contain a wide variety of colors. However, Monet learned that he had to paint quickly and to use short brushstrokes loaded with individual colors.

During the 1880s the impressionists began to drift apart, although individual members continued to see one another and occasionally work together. Monet gradually gained critical and financial (relating to money) success during the late 1880s and the 1890s. This was due mainly to the efforts of Durand-Ruel, who sponsored one-man exhibitions of Monet’s work as early as 1883 and who, in 1886, also organized the first large-scale impressionist group show to take place in the United States.

Late work

Monet’s wife died in 1879; in 1892 he married Alice Hoschedé. During the 1890s he devoted his energy to paintings of haystacks (1891) and the facade (front) of Rouen Cathedral (1892–94). In these works Monet painted his subjects from the same physical position, allowing only the light and weather conditions to vary from picture to picture. By 1899 he began work on his famous paintings of the many water lilies in his gardens at Giverny, France. Monet’s late years were very difficult. His health declined rapidly, and by the 1920s he was almost blind.

In addition to Monet’s physical ailments, he struggled with the problems of his art. In 1920 he began work on twelve large canvases (each fourteen feet wide) of water lilies, which he planned to give to the state. To complete them, he fought against his own failing eyesight and the fact that he had no experience in creating large-scale mural art. In effect, the task required him to learn a new kind of painting at the age of eighty. The paintings are characterized by a broad, sweeping style and depend almost entirely on color. Monet worked on the water lily paintings until his death on December 5, 1926.

For More Information

- Russell, Vivian. *Monet’s Gardens: Through the Seasons at Giverny*. New York: Stewart, Tabori, & Chang, 1995.
- Seitz, William C. *Claude Monet*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1960.
- Spatte, Virginia. *Claude Monet: Life and Work*. New York: Rizzoli, 1992.

Tucker, Paul Hayes. *Claude Monet: Life and Art*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1995.

Tucker, Paul Hayes. *Monet in the 20th Century*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1998.

THELONIOUS MONK

Born: October 10, 1917

Rocky Mount, North Carolina

Died: February 17, 1982

Englewood, New Jersey

African American musician, composer, and music director/conductor

Thelonious Monk was an important member of the jazz revolution that took place in the early 1940s. Monk's unique piano style and his talent as a composer made him a leader in the development of modern jazz.

Teaches self to read music

Thelonious Sphere Monk was born on October 10, 1917, in Rocky Mount, North Carolina. The first musical sounds he heard were from a player piano that his family owned. At the age of five or six he began picking out melodies on the piano and taught himself to read music by looking over his sister's shoulder as she took lessons. About a year later the family moved to the San Juan Hill section of New York City, near the Hudson River. His father became ill soon afterward and returned to the South, leaving

Thelonious's mother, Barbara, to raise him and his brother and sister. Though the family budget was tight, she managed to buy a baby grand Steinway piano, and when Thelonious turned eleven she began paying for his weekly piano lessons. Even at that young age it was clear that the instrument was part of his destiny.

As a boy Monk received training in the gospel music style, accompanying the Baptist choir in which his mother sang, and playing piano and organ during church services. At the same time he was becoming initiated into the world of jazz; near his home were several jazz clubs as well as the home of the great Harlem stride pianist James P. Johnson, from whom Monk picked up a great deal. By the age of thirteen he was playing in a local bar and grill with a trio. At the Apollo Theater's famous weekly amateur music contests, Monk won so many times that he was eventually banned from the event.

The New York scene

In 1939 Monk put his first group together. His first important gig came in the early 1940s when he was hired as house pianist at a club called Minton's. It was a time of dramatic innovation in jazz, when a faster, more complex style was developing. The musicians for this new music, called bebop, created it virtually on the spot. Yet while Monk was important in inspiring bebop, his own music had few ties to any particular movement. Monk was Monk—an original—and the proof was in his compositions.

As the 1940s progressed and bebop became more and more the rage, Monk's career declined. In 1951 he was arrested with



Thelonious Monk.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

pianist Bud Powell on an extremely questionable charge of narcotics (illegal drugs) possession. Not only was he confined for sixty days in prison, but the New York State Liquor Authority removed his cabaret card, without which he could not get hired for local club dates. For the next several years he survived only with the help of his good friend and patron the Baroness de Koenigswarter.

Eccentric behavior causes trouble

The strange behavior that Monk displayed in public sometimes got him into trouble. In 1958 he was arrested, unde-

servedly, for disturbing the peace, and his cabaret license was revoked a second time. Forced to take out-of-town gigs, he was separated from his two main sources of stability—New York City and his wife Nellie. His odd behavior intensified as a result. During one episode in 1959 in Boston, Massachusetts, state police picked him up and brought him to the Grafton State Hospital, where he was held for a week.

Toward the end of the 1950s Monk began to receive the prestige he had for so long deserved. His late 1950s recordings on the Riverside label had done so well that in 1962 he was offered a contract from Columbia. As a performer he was equally successful, commanding, in 1960, two thousand dollars for week-long engagements with his band and one thousand dollars for single performances. His December 1963 concert at New York's Philharmonic Hall, a big-band presentation of originals, was for him a personal landmark.

In the early 1970s Monk made a few solo and trio recordings for Black Lion in London and played a few concerts. Beginning in the mid-1970s he isolated himself from his friends and colleagues, spending his final years at the home of the Baroness Nica de Koenigswarter in Weehawken, New Jersey. After playing a concert at Carnegie Hall in March 1976, Monk was too weak physically to make further appearances. He died on February 17, 1982, in Englewood Hospital, after suffering a massive stroke. Along with Miles Davis (1926–1991) and John Coltrane (1926–1967), Monk is remembered as one of the most influential figures in modern jazz. The music Monk left behind remains as some of the most innovative and unique material in all of music, jazz or otherwise.

For More Information

- De Wilde, Laurent. *Monk*. New York: Marlowe, 1997.
- Fitterling, Thomas. *Thelonious Monk: His Life and Music*. Berkeley, CA: Berkeley Hills Books, 1997.
- Giddins, Gary. *Rhythm-A-Ning: Jazz Tradition and Innovation in the 80s*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1985.
- Gourse, Leslie. *Straight, No Chaser: The Life and Genius of Thelonious Monk*. New York: Schirmer Books, 1997.
- Van der Blik, Rob, ed. *The Thelonious Monk Reader*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2001.

MARILYN MONROE

Born: June 1, 1926

Los Angeles, California

Died: August 5, 1962

Los Angeles, California

American model and actress

Decades after Marilyn Monroe's death, the film actress and model has remained one of Hollywood's greatest sex symbols with her eye-catching style, champagne blond hair, and breathless manner of speaking.

Growing up Norma Jean

Norma Jean Baker, better known as Marilyn Monroe, experienced a disrupted, love-

less childhood that included two years at an orphanage. When Norma Jean, born on June 1, 1926, in Los Angeles, California, was seven years old, her mother, Gladys (Monroe) Baker Mortenson, was hospitalized after being diagnosed as a paranoid schizophrenic, a severe mental condition. Norma was left in a series of foster homes and the Los Angeles Orphans' Home Society. The constant move from one foster home to another resulted in Norma's "sketchy" educational background.

After Norma's sixteenth birthday, her foster parents had to move from California. To avoid an orphanage or a new foster home, Norma chose to get married. On June 19, 1942, Norma married James Dougherty, but the marriage would all but end when he joined the U.S. Merchant Marines in 1943. Though her difficult childhood and early failed marriage would make Norma Jean a strong and resilient woman, these experiences would also add to her insecurities and flaws—things that would ultimately shape her into a great tragic figure of the twentieth century.

Becoming Marilyn

During World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers: Japan, Italy, and Germany—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States), Norma Jean worked at the Radio Plane Company in Van Nuys, California, but she was soon discovered by photographers. She enrolled in a three-month modeling course, and in 1946, aware of her considerable charm and the potential it had for a career in films, Norma obtained a divorce from Dougherty. She then headed for Hollywood, where Ben Lyon, head of casting at



Marilyn Monroe.
Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Twentieth Century Fox, arranged a screen test. On August 26, 1946, she signed a one hundred twenty-five dollar a week, one-year contract with the studio. Ben Lyon was the one who suggested a new name for the young actress—Marilyn Monroe.

During Monroe's first year at Fox, she did not appear in any films, and her contract was not renewed. In the spring of 1948 Columbia Pictures hired her for a small part in *Ladies of the Chorus*. In 1950 John Huston (1906–1987) cast her in *Asphalt Jungle*, a tiny part which landed her a role in *All About Eve*. She was now given a seven-year contract with Twentieth Century Fox and appeared in *The*

Fireball, *Let's Make It Legal*, *Love Nest*, and *As Young as You Feel*.

In 1952, after an extensive publicity campaign, Monroe appeared in *Don't Bother to Knock*, *Full House*, *Clash by Night*, *We're Not Married*, *Niagara*, and *Monkey Business*. The magazine *Photoplay* termed her the “most promising actress,” and she was earning top dollars for Twentieth Century Fox.

Popularity and personal failures

On January 14, 1954, Monroe married Yankee baseball player Joe Di Maggio (1919–1999). But the pressures created by her billing as a screen sex symbol caused the marriage to fall apart, and the couple divorced on October 27, 1954.

Continually cast as the “dumb blond,” Monroe made *The Seven Year Itch* in 1954. Growing weary of the stereotyping (broad generalizations based on appearance), she broke her contract with Fox and moved to New York City. There she studied at the Actors Studio with Lee and Paula Strasberg. Gloria Steinem (1934–) recalls a conversation with Monroe during that time in which Monroe referred to her own opinion of her abilities compared to a group of notables at the Actors Studio. “I admire all these people so much. I'm just not good enough.”

In 1955 Monroe formed her own studio, Marilyn Monroe Productions, and renegotiated a contract with Twentieth Century Fox. She appeared in *Bus Stop* in 1956 and married playwright Arthur Miller (1915–) on July 1, 1956. Critics described Monroe in the film *The Prince and the Showgirl*, produced by her own company, as “a sparkling light comedienne.” Monroe won the Italian David di

Donatello award for “best foreign actress of 1958,” and in 1959 she appeared in *Some Like It Hot*. In 1961 she starred in *The Misfits*, for which her husband Miller wrote the screenplay.

End of a star

The couple was divorced on January 24, 1961, and later that year Monroe entered a New York psychiatric clinic. After her brief hospitalization there she returned to the Fox studio to work on a film, but her erratic (unsteady and irregular) behavior betrayed severe emotional disturbance, and the studio fired her in June 1962.

Marilyn Monroe was found dead in her Los Angeles bungalow on August 5, 1962, an empty bottle of sleeping pills by her side. The exact events surrounding her death are not totally known and have been the subject of many rumors and books over the years. Monroe’s image is one of the most lasting and widely seen of any star in the twentieth century—and today. As a subject of biographies, more than twenty books have been written about her short and tragic life.

For More Information

Barris, George. *Marilyn—Her Life in Her Own Words: Marilyn Monroe’s Revealing Last Words and Photographs*. Secausus, NJ: Carol Pub. Group, 1995.

McDonough, Yona Zeldis, ed. *All the Available Light: A Marilyn Monroe Reader*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 2002.

Slatzer, Robert F. *The Life and Curious Death of Marilyn Monroe*. New York: Pinnacle House, 1974.

Spoto, Donald. *Marilyn Monroe: The Biography*. New York: HarperCollins, 1993.

Victor, Adam. *The Marilyn Encyclopedia*. Woodstock, NY: Overlook Press, 1999.

JOE MONTANA

Born: June 11, 1956

New Eagle, Pennsylvania

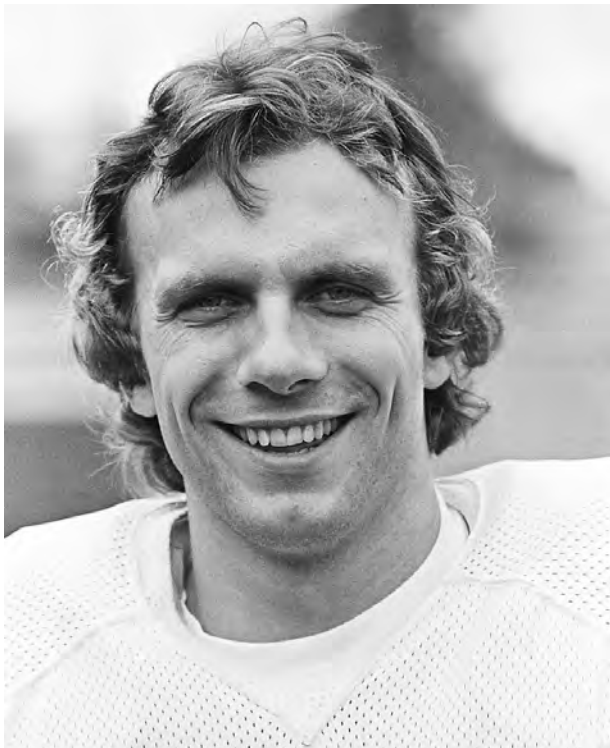
American football player

Joe Montana has earned a reputation as one of the top quarterbacks ever to play professional football, first rising to fame in the 1980s.

The quarterback’s beginnings

Joseph C. Montana Jr. was born on June 11, 1956, in New Eagle, Pennsylvania. His father, Joe Montana Sr., was a manager with a finance company, and his mother, Theresa, was a secretary with the same company. They lived in Monongahela, Pennsylvania. Joe loved playing sports. Every night as a young boy he would wait for his father to come home so that they could play catch with a football or a baseball, and practice throwing the balls through tire swings for accuracy. The Montanas also had a basketball hoop in their driveway, where Joe would often be seen playing a game with friends or practicing on his skills. He just loved to play sports.

Joe went to the local public schools, and graduated from Ringgold High School. There he was a B-student, a member of the choir, and



Joe Montana.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

served as vice president of his class during his senior year. He also was the starting quarterback for the football team from the middle of his junior year on. His abilities attracted the attention of major colleges around the country. In 1974 he was named in *Parade Magazine* as an All-American quarterback.

Seventh string

Joe Montana nearly accepted a basketball scholarship to North Carolina State University. But western Pennsylvania is known for its love of football, and such a tradition finally swayed Ringgold High's star quarterback to attend the University of Notre Dame

in Indiana on a football scholarship. It was a school known for excellence in both sports and academics. Joe knew that he would get a good education as well as a great chance to play football. As a homesick freshman, however, Montana may have had doubts about his decision-making skills when he realized that he was barely holding on as the Fighting Irish's seventh-string quarterback.

Early in his career Montana made the most of his occasional appearances in football games. As a sophomore he twice led Notre Dame back from behind in the fourth-quarter for unlikely wins, including a game against Air Force in which he came off the bench with just twelve minutes remaining to erase the Falcons' twenty-point lead. He inspired two more rallies as a junior and two more still as a senior. He soon was known as Notre Dame's "Comeback Kid." Still, Montana did not become Notre Dame's first-string quarterback until his senior year; and in his last game he again performed a comeback in the fourth quarter during an ice storm to defeat Houston in the last seven minutes. Yet, despite his amazing football instincts and his calmness under pressure, Montana was not a highly promoted prospect when he entered the 1979 National Football League (NFL) draft.

Life as a professional player

Eighty-one players were selected before the San Francisco 49ers drafted Montana late in the third round. New 49ers coach Bill Walsh ignored the negative scouting reports on his rookie quarterback, and envisioned Montana as the leader of his complex ball-control passing attack. Walsh's "system" depended on a quick quarterback with an accurate arm who could adjust quickly to the

other team's defensive strategies. By the 1981 season Montana and the 49ers had become a sophisticated and practically unstoppable offensive machine, but they met an old enemy in the National Football Conference championship game, the Dallas Cowboys. Montana again led a team from behind to win this game in the last seconds.

Super Bowl hero

San Francisco went on to win Super Bowl XVI over the Cincinnati Bengals, 26-21. Montana was named the game's Most Valuable Player (MVP). It was to become a familiar scenario during the decade. The 49ers would win four titles by 1990, including consecutive Super Bowls in 1989 and 1990, and Montana was awarded the MVP trophy in three of those championship games. Not only did Montana complete almost 70 percent of his passes in those four Super Bowl victories, but he also never threw an interception in 122 attempts. He drove the 49ers 92 yards in the last few moments of Super Bowl XXIII to beat Cincinnati again, 20-16. In Super Bowl XXIV Montana came back with an even more impressive performance, completing five touchdown passes in a 55-10 victory over the Denver Broncos. When he retired in 1995, Montana held NFL playoff records for completions, yards, and touchdowns, as well as single-season (1989) and career records for passing efficiency.

Life after football

Joe Montana was inducted into the Pro Football Hall of Fame on July 29, 2000. He is now involved in sports of a different kind. He raises horses with his family in Northern California. He and his children compete as riders of

the horses they raise. But no matter where he goes, Joe Montana will always be remembered as one of professional football's greatest players.

For More Information

Appleman, Marc. *Joe Montana*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1991.

Montana, Joe, and Richard Weiner. *Joe Montana's Art and Magic of Quarterbacking*. New York: Henry Holt, 1997.

Montana, Joe. *Montana*. Atlanta: Turner Publishing, 1995.

MONTESQUIEU

Born: January 18, 1689

Bordeaux, France

Died: February 10, 1755

Paris, France

French philosopher and satirist

The French satirist (writer using sarcasm to communicate his message) and political and social philosopher Montesquieu was the first of the great French scholars associated with the Enlightenment (a philosophical movement in the eighteenth century that rejected traditional social and religious ideas by placing reason as the most important ideal).

Early life

Charles Louis de Secondat, Baron de Montesquieu was born on January 18, 1689, at the castle of La Brède near Bordeaux. His father, Jacques de Secondat, was a soldier



Montesquieu.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

with a long noble ancestry, and his mother, Marie Françoise de Pesnel, who died when Charles Louis was seven, was an heiress (a woman with a large monetary inheritance) who eventually brought the barony (title of baron) of La Brède to the Secondat family. As was customary the young Montesquieu spent the early years of his life among the peasants (poor working class) in the village of La Brède. The influence of this period remained with Charles Louis, showing itself in his deep attachment to the soil. Montesquieu was also born into a climate of discontent in France. King Louis XIV's (1638–1715) long reign was uncomfortable for the citizens of France. His

unsuccessful wars and attempts to dictate religion and culture had a bad effect on France. Knowledge of this situation helps to explain some of Montesquieu's curiosity and his interest in societal rules and laws.

In 1700 Montesquieu was sent to the Oratorian Collège de Juilly, at Meaux, where he received a modern education. Returning to Bordeaux in 1705 to study law, he was admitted to practice before the Bordeaux Parlement (parliament) in 1708. The next five years were spent in Paris, France, continuing his studies. During this period he developed an intense dislike for the style of life in the capital, which he later expressed in his *Persian Letters*.

In 1715 Montesquieu married Jeanne de Lartigue, a Protestant (a member of the church that had left the rule of Roman Catholicism), who brought him a large dowry (sum of money given in marriage). He was also elected to the Academy of Bordeaux. The following year, on the death of his uncle Jean Baptiste, he inherited the barony of Montesquieu and the presidency of the Bordeaux Parlement.

Scholarly and literary career

Montesquieu had no great enthusiasm for law as a profession. He was much more interested in the spirit that lay behind law. It is from this interest that his greatest work, *The Spirit of the Laws*, developed. To free himself in order to continue his scholarly interests, he sold his office as president of the Bordeaux Parlement in 1721. With his newly freed time he wrote the *Persian Letters*.

The *Persian Letters* was a fierce and bitingly critical view of European civilization

and manners. The work takes the form of letters that three Persians (people from what is now Iran) traveling in Europe send to families and friends at home. Their letters are notes on what they see in the West. Montesquieu gave his travelers the foreign, commonsense understanding necessary to effectively criticize European (French) customs and institutions. Yet he also gave his Persians the weaknesses necessary to make his readers recognize in them their own weaknesses. All sides of European life were criticized. The message is that society lasts only on the basis of virtue and justice, which is rooted in the need of human cooperation and acceptance.

Although the *Letters* was published without his name, it was quickly recognized as the work of Montesquieu and won him the approval of the public and the displeasure of the governor, Cardinal André Fleury, who held up Montesquieu's introduction into the French Academy until 1728.

The Spirit of the Laws

Montesquieu brought his search for the general laws active in society and history to its completion in his greatest work. Published in 1748, *The Spirit of the Laws* was an investigation of the environmental and social relationships that lie behind the laws of civilized society. Combining the traditions of customary law with those of the modern theories of natural law, Montesquieu redefined law as "the necessary relationships that derive [come] from the nature of things." Laws "must be adapted to each peoples."

The Spirit of the Laws helped to lay the basis of the eighteenth-century movement for constitutionalism (government run by established law), which ended in the Revolution of

1789 (1789–93; rise and revolt of the middle class against the failures of King Louis XVI and his royals, many of whom were killed by the guillotine, or chopping block). In this sense Montesquieu's most basic belief may be viewed as an attempt to state the necessity of law review. *The Spirit of the Laws* was immediately celebrated as one of the great works of French literature.

Following the completion of his work, Montesquieu, who was going blind, went into semiretirement at La Brède. He died on February 10, 1755, during a trip to Paris.

For More Information

Joly, Maurice. *The Dialogue in Hell Between Machiavelli and Montesquieu*. Edited by John S. Waggoner. Lanham, MD: Lexington Books, 2002.

Macfarlane, Alan. *The Riddle of the Modern World: Of Liberty, Wealth, and Equality*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 2000.

Shackleton, Robert. *Montesquieu: A Critical Biography*. London: Oxford University Press, 1961.

Shklar, Judith N. *Montesquieu*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1987.

MARIA MONTESSORI

Born: August 31, 1870

Chiaravalle, Italy

Died: May 6, 1952

Noordwijk, Netherlands

Italian physician and educator



Maria Montessori.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

The Italian educator and physician Maria Montessori was the first Italian woman to receive a medical degree. She was the originator of the Montessori method of education for children.

Early life

On August 31, 1870, Maria Montessori was born in Chiaravalle, Italy. Her father, Alessandro Montessori, a retired army officer, was very traditional. Her mother, Renilde Stoppani Montessori, was an intelligent, modern-thinking woman from a wealthy family. Maria's mother taught her daughter how to be compassionate by giving

her the task of knitting for the poor every day. Maria herself chose to scrub a portion of the tile floor every day. Much later, as a teacher, Montessori included such work in her studies for children, calling them "exercises of practical life."

As an elementary school student Montessori blossomed. She was average in intelligence, but good at exams, and she led her classmates in many games. She found the classroom set-up and repetitions very boring, yet she learned. When it came time to leave elementary school she had to ask her parents if she could continue. Women in her time were not encouraged to get more than an elementary school education.

Montessori's father discouraged her interest in a professional career. With the encouragement and support of her mother, however, she prepared herself for her later career. When she was twelve, the family moved to Rome, Italy, to take advantage of the better educational facilities. An interest in engineering technology and mathematics led her to enroll in classes at a technical institute at the age of fourteen. Later an interest in biology led to her decision to study medicine. This decision required some courage, because of society's views on women's education.

Professional life

In 1894 Montessori became the first woman to receive a medical degree in Italy. Her experiences in the pursuit of this degree reinforced her already well-developed feminist (in support of equality of the sexes) ideas. Throughout her life she was a frequent participant in international feminist events.

Montessori's first appointment was as an assistant doctor in the psychiatric clinic of the University of Rome, where she had her first contact with learning disabled children. She became convinced that the problem of handling these children was as much one of teaching method as of medical treatment. In 1898 she was appointed director of the State Orthophrenic School in Rome, whose function was to care for the "hopelessly deficient" and "idiot" children of the city. She enjoyed tremendous success in teaching the children herself, while refining and applying her unique methods. In 1901 Montessori left the school to pursue further studies and research.

In 1906 the Italian government put Montessori in charge of a state-supported school in the San Lorenzo quarter of Rome, which had sixty children, aged three to six, from poverty-stricken families. By this time her early successes with learning disabled children suggested to her the idea of trying the same educational methods with normal children. She used what she termed a "prepared environment" to provide an atmosphere for learning—that is, small chairs and tables instead of rows of desks. The basic features of the method are development of the child's natural curiosity through responsible and individual freedom of behavior, improvement of the sharpness of the five senses (hearing, seeing, tasting, touching, smelling) through training, and development of body coordination through games and exercise. The function of the teacher is to provide educational material, such as counting beads or geometric puzzles, and act as an adviser and guide, staying as much as possible in the background.

The Montessori method

Montessori's view of the nature of the child, on which the Montessori method is based, is that children go through a series of "sensitive periods" with "creative moments," when they show spur-of-the-moment interest in learning. It is then that the children have the greatest ability to learn, and these periods should be utilized to the fullest so that the children learn as much as possible. They should not be held back by forced, rigid curricula (plans of study) or classes. Work, she believed, is its own reward to the child, and there is no necessity for other rewards. Self-discipline (controlling oneself) emerges out of the freedom of the learning environment.

Montessori's method was basically at odds with other major twentieth-century trends. Thus it was used only by a relatively few private schools. Since the early 1950s, however, her system has enjoyed a revival and a renewed interest in learning disabled children. Her works have been translated into at least twenty languages, and training schools for Montessori teachers have been established in several nations.

For More Information

- Kramer, Rita. *Maria Montessori: A Biography*. New York: Putnam, 1976. Reprint, Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley, 1988.
- Shephard, Marie Tennant. *Maria Montessori: Teacher of Teachers*. Minneapolis: Lerner Publications Company, 1996.
- Standing, E. M. *Maria Montessori: Her Life and Work*. London: Hollis & Carter, 1957. Reprint, New York: New American Library, 1984.

THOMAS MORE

Born: February 6, 1478

London, England

Died: July 6, 1535

London, England

English statesman and humanist

The life of the English humanist (one who studies human nature, interests, and values) and statesman (political leader) Sir Thomas More represents the political and spiritual disorder of the Reformation (the time of religious change in the sixteenth century that moved away from Roman Catholic tradition toward Protestantism). The author of *Utopia*, he was beheaded for being against the religious policy of Henry VIII (1491–1547).

Early life

Thomas More was born in London on February 6, 1478, to John and Agnes More, whose families were connected with the city's legal community. His father, John More, was the butler at the lawyer's club, Lincoln's Inn, as his father was before him. John very much wanted to be a lawyer himself. That opportunity came when he married Agnes Granger, the wealthy daughter of a local merchant. In marriage she shared some of that wealth with John. He was well-liked at Lincoln's Inn and was voted to be a member and then was admitted to the bar (a group of practicing lawyers). Agnes and John had four other children besides Thomas but three died very young.

Thomas' education began at a prominent London school, St. Anthony's. In 1490 Thomas entered the household of Archbishop John Morton, Henry VII's closest adviser. His

mother and father's connections made this possible. Service to Morton brought experience of the world. In 1492 More transferred to Oxford, where he first started Greek studies. Two years later he returned to London, where legal and political careers blossomed. By 1498 More had gained membership in Lincoln's Inn.

Christian humanism

More, while pursuing his legal career and entering Parliament in 1504, was drawn to the Christian humanist circle. This philosophy (the study of knowledge) coupled the study of Greek with the study of the gospel in seeking a more direct message. He spent his mid-twenties in close touch with London's strict Carthusian monks and almost became one. But More then decided that he could fulfill a Christian call to ministry while remaining a layman (non-clergy).

More first married Jane Colt, who bore three sons and a daughter before dying in 1511. He then married Alice Middleton. His legal career grew and led to an appointment as London's undersheriff in 1511. This meant additional work and income as public lawyer at Henry VIII's court and as court representative with foreign merchants.

More's first official trip abroad, at an embassy at Antwerp in 1515, gave him leisure time in which he began his greatest work, *Utopia*. Modeled after Plato's (c. 427–c. 347 B.C.E.) *Republic* and finished and published in 1516, it describes an imaginary land, free of the prideful greed and violence of the English scenes that More had witnessed.

Service under Henry VIII

In *Utopia* More discusses the difficulties of counseling (as a lawyer) princes. This aware-

ness kept him from accepting frequent invitations to serve Henry VIII, whose policies were often quite opposite to the humanist's philosophy. He finally accepted Henry's fee late in 1517 and had a solid career in diplomacy (the conduct in dealing with other nations), legal service, and finance. In 1529 he was chosen as the successor to Cardinal Wolsey as chancellor (secretary of the king) of England.

More's early doubts, however, proved justified. Under Wolsey's direction More, as Speaker of the House of Commons in 1523, promoted a war tax so unpopular that its collection was discontinued.

Wolsey's inability to obtain the annulment (to make invalid) of Henry's marriage to Catherine of Aragon (1485–1536) had raised More to highest office, and had placed him in the increasingly distressing role of Henry's chief agent in the strategies that began to sever England from Rome. More was deeply engaged in writings against Lutherans, defending the fundamental (essential) rules of the Roman Catholic Church, whose serious defects he knew. More cannot justly be held responsible for the increased number of Protestants killed during his last months in office, but this was the gloomiest phase of his career. He continued writing until a year after his resignation from office, given on May 16, 1532, which was caused by illness and distress over England's separation from the Catholic Church.

Break with the king

More recognized the dangers that his Catholic writings might bring in the upside-down world of Henry's break with Rome. So he tried to avoid political controversy (open to dispute). But Henry pressed him for a public acknowledgment of the country's break from Rome in 1534. More refused to take the



Thomas More.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

accompanying oath that denied the pope's power in England.

More's last dramatic year—from the first summons for questioning on April 12, 1534, through imprisonment, trial for treason (the act of betraying one's country), defiance of his lying accusers, and finally execution (a death sentence carried out legally) on July 6, 1535—should not be allowed to overshadow his entire life's experience. Its significance extends beyond the realm of English history. For many of Europe's most critical years, More worked to revitalize the Christian world. He attacked those who most clearly threatened its unity; once convinced that

Henry VIII was among their number, More withdrew his service and resisted to his death the effort to remove his loyalty.

For More Information

Ackroyd, Peter. *The Life of Thomas More*. New York: Nan A. Talese, 1998.

Gallagher, Ligeia. *More's Utopia and Its Critics*. Chicago: Scott, Foresman, 1964.

Marius, Richard. *Thomas More: A Biography*. New York: Knopf, 1984.

Monti, James. *The King's Good Servant But God's First: The Life and Writings of Saint Thomas More*. San Francisco: Ignatius Press, 1997.

JIM MORRISON

Born: December 8, 1943

Melbourne, Florida

Died: July 3, 1971

Paris, France

American singer and songwriter

Lead singer for the rock group the Doors, Jim Morrison was the poster-boy for the mind-bending, outlandish lifestyle of the 1960s in his brief but brilliant career.

First creative outlet in film

James Douglas Morrison was born in Melbourne, Florida, on December 8, 1943. His father, a career Navy officer, was transferred from base to base during his son's

childhood, but, by his Jim's early teens, the family had settled in Alexandria, Virginia. After finishing high school in Alexandria, Morrison took several classes at St. Petersburg Junior College and Florida State University before pulling up roots in 1964 and heading for the West Coast. By 1966 the twenty-two-year-old Morrison was enrolled in film classes at the University of California at Los Angeles (UCLA), but a friendship with fellow student Ray Manzarek would sideline any plans he had of becoming a filmmaker.

While the two young men had known each other only casually as fellow students, they ran into each other one day by accident, on a Venice, California, beach. Manzarek, an organist, along with Morrison, guitarist Robbie Krieger, and drummer John Densmore, decided to form their own rock band to put their songs to music. The young men decided to call their group the Doors, a name inspired by a quote from nineteenth-century English poet William Blake (1757–1827): "If the doors of perception were cleansed every thing would appear as it is, infinite." As Morrison was fond of saying, "there are things known and things unknown and in between are the Doors."

A long-term gig at the Whiskey-a-Go-Go on Hollywood's Sunset Strip allowed the Doors to develop their stage presence, and it eventually drew the attention of talent scouts searching for new recording acts. Not the least of the group's attractions was Morrison, who sang in a husky baritone, wore skin-tight pants, and went even further than Elvis Presley had in incorporating sexually suggestive movements into his onstage performances. With lyrics like "Come on baby, light my fire," Morrison drove young women wild.

The rise (and fall) of the Lizard King

After the release of their first album, *The Doors*, the group went back into the studio and cut *Strange Days*, both of which came out in 1967. Other albums would include *Waiting for the Sun* (1968), *The Soft Parade* (1969), *Morrison Hotel* (1970), *Absolutely Live* (1970), and *L.A. Woman* (1971). Morrison, interested in Native American lore and the images of the American deserts, dubbed himself the “Lizard King” and wrote several songs, including “Celebration of the Lizard,” in reference to his reptilian alter ego (another aspect of one’s personality).

Caught up in a wave of popularity, the young band found itself carried into a new world, where drugs, alcohol, and sex played a major role. Morrison, whose status as a celebrity had begun almost overnight, found it difficult to handle the change: his growing dependence on alcohol would dim his talent in the years that followed, and the superstar status made him believe he was immune to normal authority.

On March 1, 1969, Morrison and the Doors were booked for a concert at Dinner Key Auditorium, in Coconut Grove, in Morrison’s home state of Florida. During his performance before thirteen thousand screaming fans, Morrison exposed himself briefly to the audience. Nothing was done until pressure from disgusted Miami-area residents forced local police to issue a warrant for Morrison’s arrest. The singer, who had been vacationing out of the country, turned himself in to the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) and returned to Miami, where he went on trial on August 12, 1970. Found guilty of a misdemeanor (a minor crime) for profanity (vulgar language or behavior) and drunkenness, he



Jim Morrison.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

was sentenced to six months hard labor, although the sentence was stayed (postponed) while his attorney appealed the conviction. Morrison would not live to see the outcome of that appeal.

An early end

After the trial in Miami, Morrison’s life grew more chaotic, his relationships with band members more strained. Searching to recover a sense of himself, he went back to the poetry that he had loved while a college student. In 1970 he published his first book of verse, *The Lords [and] The New Creatures*, which had been privately printed the year before.

On July 3, 1971, Morrison's girlfriend found him dead in his bathtub. The cause of death was determined to be a heart attack, although an autopsy was never performed. He was buried at the Pere-Lachaise Cemetery in Paris, France. His death was kept secret until after the funeral to eliminate the crowds of saddened fans that would likely have attended. Morrison's grave remains one of the most visited sites in all of Paris.

For More Information

- Dalton, David. *Mr. Mojo Risin': Jim Morrison, the Last Holy Fool*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.
- Densmore, John. *Riders on the Storm: My Life with Jim Morrison and the Doors*. New York: Delacorte Press, 1990.
- Hopkins, Jerry. *The Lizard King: The Essential Jim Morrison*. New York: Collier, 1993.
- Kennealy, Patricia. *Strange Dreams: My Life with and without Jim Morrison*. New York: Dutton, 1992.
- Riordan, James, and Jerry Prochickey. *Break on Through: The Life and Death of Jim Morrison*. New York: Morrow, 1991.

TONI MORRISON

Born: February 18, 1931

Lorain, Ohio

African American writer

Toni Morrison is the first African American woman to win the Nobel Prize for Literature. She is best known for her novels focusing on intimate relationships, especially between men and women. These stories are set against the backdrop of African American culture.

Birth and family history

Toni Morrison was born Chloe Anthony Wofford in Lorain, Ohio, on February 18, 1931. She was the second of four children born to Ramah and George Wofford. Her mother's parents, Ardelia and John Solomon Willis, had left Greenville, Alabama, around 1910 after they lost their farm because of debts that they could not repay. Morrison's father's family left Georgia and moved north to escape sharecropping (a system of farming in which a farmer works on someone else's land and pays the owner a share of the crop) and violence against African Americans in the South. Both families settled in the steel-mill town of Lorain on Lake Erie. Morrison grew up during the Great Depression in the 1930s, a time of severe economic hardship. Her father supported the family by working three jobs for seventeen years.

Folklore, music, and history

Morrison's childhood was filled with African American folklore, music, rituals, and myths. Her family was, as Morrison says, "intimate with the supernatural" and frequently used visions and signs to predict the future. Storytelling was an important part of life in the Wofford family and both the children and the adults would share stories with one another. Morrison sees her writing functioning much like storytelling did in the past. It reminds

people about their heritage and shows them their place in the community. She has said that she uses her childhood memories to help her start writing. Her real-life world, therefore, is often included in her novels.

Once Morrison learned how to read, it became one of the things in life that she loved spending time doing. When she was in high school, she began to read the works of great authors such as Jane Austen (1775–1817), Leo Tolstoy (1828–1910), and the nineteenth-century French writer Gustave Flaubert (1821–1880). Morrison was impressed by the specific way these writers portrayed the things that they were familiar with. Their talents motivated her to write in such a way about the things she was most familiar with, particularly her African American culture.

Attends university and becomes a teacher

In 1949 Morrison went to Howard University in Washington, D.C., to study English. She changed her name to Toni because people at Howard had trouble pronouncing the name Chloe. While at Howard she was a member of the Howard University Players, a theater company that presented plays about the lives of African American people. Morrison received her bachelor of arts degree in English from Howard in 1953. After she received her master's degree in English from Cornell University in Ithaca, New York, in 1955, she taught for two years at Texas Southern University in Houston. Then she returned to Howard University to teach.

Marriage, family, and a career as an editor

While at Howard, Toni met Harold Morrison, a young architect from Jamaica who



Toni Morrison.

Reproduced by permission of Mr. Chris Felver.

also taught at the university. The couple married in 1958 and had two sons, Harold (also known as Ford) and Slade, before divorcing in 1964. Then Morrison went to Syracuse, New York, and began working as an editor for a Random House company. She had two small children and free time in the evenings. This environment helped her turn her attention to writing novels.

In 1968 Morrison moved to New York City, where she continued working as an editor for Random House. She eventually became a senior editor and was the only African American woman to have that job in the company. While there she helped to pub-

lish books by African American writers, including Toni Cade Bambara (1939–1995), Gayl Jones (1949–), and June Jordan (1936–). She also taught part-time, lectured across the country, and wrote many novels.

Morrison's novels

Morrison began writing her first novel, *The Bluest Eye* (1970), while she was in a writers' group at Howard University. The story is about an African American girl who wishes that her eyes were blue and fit a different image of beauty. Thirty years later the book still speaks to a universal audience and was chosen to be an Oprah Winfrey Book Club selection. *Sula* (1974), Morrison's second novel, was nominated for a National Book Award. Her third book, *Song of Solomon* (1977), won a National Book Critics Circle Award in 1977 and an American Academy of Arts and Letters Award. It was also chosen as the second novel by an African American to be a Book-of-the-Month selection. *Tar Baby* was published in 1981. *Beloved* (1987) won the Pulitzer Prize in 1988. *Jazz* was published in 1992 and *Paradise* followed in 1997. Meanwhile, Morrison worked as writer-in-residence at the State University of New York, first at Stony Brook and later at Albany, before moving on to Princeton University in New Jersey.

Morrison's novels are carefully written to produce poetic phrases and strong emotional responses from her readers. Her characters try to understand the truth about the world they live in. The subjects she writes about include good and evil, love and hate, beauty and ugliness, friendship, and death.

Morrison's masterpiece

Beloved, a story about life after slavery, is considered Morrison's masterpiece. In 1993, when she won the Nobel Prize for Literature for the body of her work, the Nobel Committee cited *Beloved* as Morrison's outstanding work. In 1996 she received a Medal for Distinguished Contribution to American Letters from the National Book Foundation.

In 1999 Morrison's first children's book, *The Big Box*, was published. She worked on the book together with her son Slade. The story is a dark look at childhood in America that pushes children and parents to take a new look at the rules and values that make up their lives. The book shows the ways in which well-meaning adults sometimes block children's independence and creativity.

Honored by the president

In 2001 Toni Morrison was given a National Arts and Humanities Award by President Bill Clinton in Washington, D.C. The president gave a speech during the award ceremony and said that Morrison had "entered America's heart."

For More Information

Blashfield, Jean F. *Toni Morrison*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2001.

Jones, Amy Robin. *Toni Morrison*. Chanhassen, MN: Child's World, 2002.

Kramer, Barbara. *Toni Morrison, Nobel Prize-Winning Author*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow Publishers, 1996.

SAMUEL F. B. MORSE

Born: April 27, 1791

Charlestown, Massachusetts

Died: April 2, 1872

New York, New York

American inventor and artist

Samuel F. B. Morse, American artist and inventor, designed and developed the first successful electromagnetic (magnetism caused by electricity) telegraph system.

Early life

Samuel Finley Breese Morse was born in Charlestown, Massachusetts, on April 27, 1791. He was the first son of Jedidiah Morse, a clergyman, and Elizabeth Breese, of New Jersey. "Finley," as his parents called him, was the son quickest to change moods while his other two brothers, Sidney and Richard, were less temperamental. His brothers helped him out many times in his adult years. The Morses' commitment to education had Samuel in Phillips Academy by the age of seven. Though not a star student, his drawing skills were good. Both his teachers' and his parents' encouragement led to Samuel's success with miniature portraits on ivory. Samuel graduated from Yale College in 1810. He wished to pursue a career in art, but his father was opposed to this. Samuel took a job as a clerk in a Charlestown bookstore. During this time he continued to paint. His father reversed his decision and in 1811 allowed Morse to travel to England to pursue art. During this time, Morse worked at the Royal Academy

with the respected American artist Benjamin West (1738–1820).

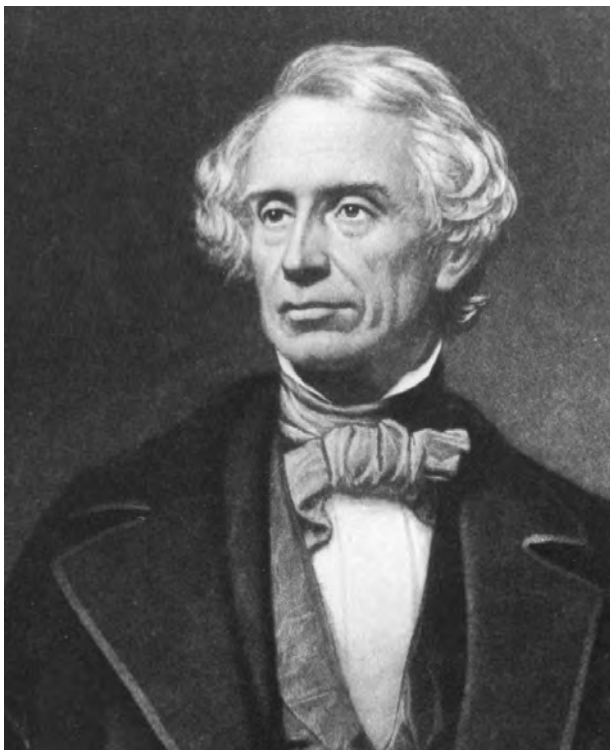
Artist at work

In 1815 Morse returned to America and set up a studio in Boston, Massachusetts. He soon discovered that his large canvases attracted attention but not sales. In those days Americans looked to painters primarily for portraits, and Morse found that even these sales were difficult to get. He traveled extensively in search of work, finally settling in New York City in 1823. Perhaps his two best-known canvases are his portraits of the Marquis de Lafayette (1757–1834; a French general who served with George Washington [1732–1799] during the American Revolution), which he painted in Washington, D.C., in 1825.

In 1826 Morse helped found, and became the first president of, the National Academy of Design, an organization that was intended to help secure sales for artists and to raise the taste of the public. The previous year Morse's wife had died; in 1826 his father died. The death of his mother in 1828 dealt another severe blow, and the following year Morse left for Europe to recover.

Electromagnetism

In October 1832 Morse returned to the United States. On the voyage he met Charles Thomas Jackson, an eccentric doctor and inventor, with whom he discussed electromagnetism. Jackson assured Morse that an electric impulse could be carried along even a very long wire. Morse later recalled that he reacted to this news with the thought that "if this be so, and the presence of electricity can be made visible in any desired part of the cir-



Samuel F. B. Morse.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

cuit, I see no reason why intelligence might not be instantaneously transmitted by electricity to any distance." He immediately made some sketches of a device to accomplish this purpose.

Even as an art professor at the University of the City of New York, the telegraph was never far from Morse's mind. He had long been interested in gadgetry and had even taken out a patent (document protecting the owner of an invention from having it stolen). He had also attended public lectures on electricity. His shipboard sketches of 1832 had clearly laid out the three major parts of the

telegraph: a sender, which opened and closed an electric circuit; a receiver, which used an electromagnet to record the signal; and a code, which translated the signal into letters and numbers. By January 1836 he had a working model of the device that he showed to a friend, who advised him of recent developments in the field of electromagnetism—especially the work of the American physicist (scientist of matter and energy) Joseph Henry (1797–1878). As a result, Morse was able to greatly improve the efficiency of his device.

Invention trial

In September 1837 Morse formed a partnership with Alfred Vail, who contributed both money and mechanical skill. They applied for a patent. The American patent remained in doubt until 1843, when Congress approved thirty thousand dollars to finance the building of an experimental telegraph line between the national capital and Baltimore, Maryland. It was over this line, on May 24, 1844, that Morse tapped out his famous message, "What hath God wrought [made]!"

Morse was willing to sell all of his rights to the invention to the federal government for one hundred thousand dollars, but a combination of a lack of congressional interest and the presence of private greed frustrated the plan. Instead he turned his business affairs over to Amos Kendall. Morse then settled down to a life of wealth and fame. He was generous in his charitable gifts and was one of the founders of Vassar College in 1861. His last years were spoiled, however, by questions as to how much he had been helped by others, especially Joseph Henry.

Morse died in New York City on April 2, 1872.

For More Information

Coe, Lewis. *The Telegraph: A History of Morse's Invention and Its Predecessors in the United States*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland, 1993.

Mabee, Carleton. *The American Leonardo: A Life of Samuel F. Morse*. Rev. ed. Fleischmanns, NY: Purple Mountain Press, 2000.

Tiner, John Hudson. *Samuel F. B. Morse: Artist with a Message*. Milford, MI: Mott Media, 1985.

MOSES

Born: c. 1392 B.C.E.

Egypt

Died: c. 1272 B.C.E.

Moab, Syria

Egyptian prophet

The Old Testament prophet Moses was chosen to lead Israel out of Egyptian slavery. He created Israel's nationhood and delivered the Ten Commandments.

Childhood years

Moses was the son of Amram and Yochebed of the tribe of Levi. Miriam and Aaron were his brother and sister. He was born in Egypt during the period in which the Israelites (Hebrews) had become a threat to the Egyptians simply because of their large population. The Pharaoh had ordered that all newborn male Hebrew children be cast into the Nile to drown. Amram and Yochebed took their newborn son and placed him in a waterproof basket and hid him in the tall

grasses of the Nile. Meanwhile, his sister Miriam hid and watched over the baby from a distance. A group of women and servants were bathing nearby. The Pharaoh's daughter, hearing the baby cry, found and rescued him. She named him "Moses," meaning "drawn from the water." Her desire for a son fulfilled, she made certain that he had the best of everything, including education.

Moses was brought up in the splendor of the Egyptian court as the Pharaoh's daughter's adopted son. Grown to manhood, he was aware of his Hebraic roots and shared a deep compassion for his confined kinsmen. He became furious while witnessing an Egyptian master brutally beating a Hebrew slave, and he impulsively killed the Egyptian. Fearing the Pharaoh's punishment, he fled into the desert of Midian, becoming a shepherd for Jethro, a Midianite priest whose daughter Zipporah he later married. While tending the flocks on Horeb Mountain in the wilderness, he saw a bush burning yet not turning to ash. He heard a voice from within the bush telling him that he had been chosen to serve as one to lead the children of Israel out of Egypt. He was also told to declare the unity of God to his people. At that time most Israelites were worshipping many gods. Moses was to tell them that there was only one God.

The tremendous responsibility of Moses's task, his shyness, and his own feeling of unworthiness brought forth a hesitancy and lack of confidence. The Divine answer was "Who made your tongue?" He was then assured that Aaron, his more talkative brother, would serve as his spokesman both to the children of Israel and to the Pharaoh. The promised destination for the Israelites' journey was a "land rich with milk and honey."



Moses.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Moses returned to Egypt and persuaded the Hebrews to organize for a quick trip from their Egyptian slave drivers. With Aaron, Moses informed the Pharaoh that the God of the Hebrews demanded that Pharaoh free God's people. The Pharaoh refused to obey, bringing upon himself and his people nine terrible plagues (diseases that spread rapidly and can cause death) that Moses produced upon Egypt by using the miraculous staff he had received from God as a sign of his authority. The Egyptians suffered under the plagues of water turned into blood, frogs, gnats, flies, disease to their cattle, boils, hail, locusts, and darkness. Each plague was

severe to the Egyptians but left the Israelites untouched. The tenth plague is now the Hebrew story of Passover. God sent the Angel of Death to kill the firstborn sons of the Egyptians—a proof of His immense strength and power. The Israelites protected their households by putting lamb's blood on their doorway, so that the Angel of Death would know to pass over their homes. This last plague broke the Pharaoh's resistance and moved him to grant the Hebrews permission to leave immediately. Moses thus found himself the leader of an undisciplined collection of slaves, Hebrew as well as non-Hebrew, escaping from Egyptian territory toward freedom.

Exodus

Moses' immediate goal was Mt. Horeb, called Mt. Sinai, where God had first revealed Himself to Moses. The Hebrews came to the sacred mountain encouraged by the power they sensed in Moses. Summoned by God, Moses ascended the mountain and received the tablets of stone while the children of Israel heard the thundering forth of the Ten Commandments. Inspired, the people agreed to the conditions of the Covenant (agreement made between people and God).

Through forty years in the wilderness of Sinai, overcoming many obstacles, Moses led the horde of former slaves, shaping them into a nation. Many miracles happened along the way. When the Israelites stopped in front of the Red Sea with the Egyptian soldiers at their heels, it was Moses' raised staff that parted the Red Sea so that they could cross. Once they had safely crossed, the sea crashed down, drowning many of their pursuers. When food supplies ran out, God sent down what was called "manna" (spiritual food) everyday for the nourishment of the

Israelites. Moses had to hear the Israelites complain about the food, the climate, and the slowness of their progress. Moses even had to hear the Israelites claim that Egypt had been better than this wilderness trip. When the people were in need of water, God told Moses to speak to a rock and water would spring from it. Moses' character was apparently worn down because, instead of following directions, he struck the rock with his staff. That was to have lasting impact on Moses's final days.

Covenant

With the help of his brother Aaron, Moses was able to hold together his ragtag band of ex-slaves for forty years. Only a man with tremendous will, patience, compassion, humility, and great faith could have forged the bickering and scheming groups who constantly challenged his wisdom and authority into a nation. Throughout the forty years Moses was in constant communication with his Lord, the God of Israel. This God added to the Ten Commandments through Moses by giving a code of law regulating the social and religious lives of the people. This collection of instructions, read to and confirmed by the people, was called the *Book of the Covenant*. These were protected in a specially designed box called the Ark of the Covenant. All of the specific details were spoken through Moses by the God of the Israelites.

Under Moses's leadership, most of the land east of the Jordan was conquered and given to the tribes of Reuben and Gad and to half of the tribe of Menashe. Moses, however, was not permitted to lead the children of Israel into Canaan, the Promised Land, because he had been disobedient to God during the period of wandering in the desert. His regular meetings with God had fulfilled him in ways that even his fellow

Israelites could detect. His face was always radiant when he exited any interview with his Almighty. Moses, 120 years old, died in the land of Moab and was buried opposite Bet Peor.

For More Information

- Hodges, Margaret. *Moses*. San Diego: Harcourt Brace, 1999.
- Kirsch, Jonathan. *Moses: A Life*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1998.
- Meier, Levi. *Moses—the Prince, the Prophet: His Life, Legend, and Message for Our Lives*. Woodstock, VT: Jewish Lights Publishers, 1998.
- Roshwald, Mordecai, and Miriam Roshwald. *Moses: Leader, Prophet, Man*. New York: T. Yoseloff, 1969.

GRANDMA MOSES

Born: September 7, 1860
Greenwich, New York
Died: December 13, 1961
Eagle Bridge, New York
American painter

Grandma Moses was one of America's best-known primitive painters (artists who did not receive a formal art education).

Anna Mary's youth

Anna Mary Robertson was born in Greenwich, New York, on September 7, 1860,



Grandma Moses.

the third of ten children born to Russell King Robertson, a farmer, and Margaret Shannahan. She had a happy childhood and worked hard on their family farm. Her father enjoyed seeing the children's drawings and would buy them large sheets of blank newspaper upon which they could draw. The young Anna Mary loved to draw happy, colorful scenes. She only attended school in the summer due to the cold and her lack of warm clothing. At twelve she began earning her living as a hired girl at homes near the family farm.

In 1887 Anna Mary married a farm worker, Thomas S. Moses, and the couple settled on a farm in Virginia. They had ten chil-

dren, five of whom died at birth. In 1907 the family moved to Eagle Bridge, New York, where Grandma Moses spent the rest of her life.

First paintings

It was on this farm in Eagle Ridge that Anna Mary painted her first painting. She was wallpapering her parlor and ran out of paper. To finish the room she put up white paper and painted a scene. It is known as the *Fireboard*, and it hangs today in the Bennington Museum in Bennington, Vermont. Her husband died in 1927, and her son and daughter-in-law took over the farm. As she aged and found farm work too difficult, Grandma Moses took up embroidering pictures in yarn to fill her spare time. At the age of seventy-six, because of arthritis, she gave up embroidery and began to paint. Her early work was usually based on scenes she found in illustrated books and on Currier and Ives prints (prints made during the 1800s, showing American lives, historical events, and celebrities).

Recognition

In 1938 Grandma Moses's paintings were discovered by an art collector and engineer, Louis Caldor. He saw a few of her paintings displayed in the window of a drug store in Hoosick Falls, New York, while on vacation. He purchased these, and the next day he bought all the paintings Grandma Moses had at her farm. In October of 1939, three of these paintings were exhibited at the "Contemporary Unknown Painters" show at New York's Museum of Modern Art. Her first one-woman show was held in New York City in 1940 and immediately she became famous. Her second one-woman show, also in New

York City, came two years later. By 1943 there was an overwhelming demand for her pictures, partially because her homespun, country scenes brought about wonderful feelings and memories for many people.

Most of Grandma Moses's paintings were done on pieces of strong cardboard, 24 by 30 inches or less. She regularly portrayed happy scenes of rural home life, sometimes picturing herself as a child. She also painted a number of historical pictures, usually about her ancestors, one of whom built the first wagon to run on the Cambridge Pike. In some works figures are dressed in eighteenth-century costumes, as people might have dressed in the country. Certain color schemes correspond to the various seasons: white for winter, light green for spring, deep green for summer, and brown for autumn. Among her most popular paintings are *The Old Oaken Bucket*, *Over the River to Grandma's House*, *Sugaring Off*, and *Catching the Turkey*.

Grandma Moses worked from memory, portraying a way of life she knew from experience. The people in her paintings are actively engaged in farm tasks, and, although separated, are part of the established order of seasonal patterns. In most paintings the landscape is shown as a large, scenic view and would be completed before the tiny figures were put in. Grandma Moses died on December 13, 1961.

Primitive art

Technically the work of primitive painters is distinguished by a conceptual (a general and broad view) rather than a visual or realistic and accurate approach to painting. This involves an innocent picture using a linear format (flat, one dimensional space) that portrays scenes and people with an absence of

weather in the skies and shadows around shapes. Some of the strengths of primitive painting lie in the feeling for pattern that is painted into the picture and the charm of the mood that is projected from the work. In Grandma Moses's paintings the viewer often feels the joy of life illustrated in the scenes. In *McDonnell's Farm* (1943), for example, a group of children are shown in a circular dance at the right, while all the other figures are busily engaged in farm tasks: one man loads the hay wagon, another harvests, another cuts the grass with a hooked tool called a scythe. In her paintings there is no despair, unhappiness, or aging, yet this unrealistic view of life is presented with remarkable power.

For More Information

- Biracree, Tom. *Grandma Moses*. New York: Chelsea House, 1989.
- Kallir, Jane. *Grandma Moses in the 21st Century*. Alexandria, VA: Art Services International, 2001.
- Kallir, Otto, ed. *Grandma Moses: American Primitive*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1975.
- Ketchum, William C., Jr. *Grandma Moses: An American Original*. New York: Smithmark, 1996.
- Moses, Grandma. *My Life's History*. Edited by Otto Kallier. New York: Harper, 1952.

MOTHER TERESA

Born: August 27, 1910
Skopje, Macedonia

Died: September 5, 1997

Calcutta, India

Albanian nun

Mother Teresa's devotional work among the poor and dying of India won her the Nobel Prize for Peace in 1979. She is also known as the founder of the only Catholic religious order still growing in membership.

Early life

Mother Teresa of Calcutta was born Agnes Gonxha Bojaxhiu in Skopje, Macedonia, on August 27, 1910. At the time of her birth Skopje was located within the Ottoman Empire, a vast empire controlled by the Turks in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries. Agnes was the last of three children born to Nikola and Dranafite Bojaxhiu, Albanian grocers. When Agnes was nine years old, her happy, comfortable, close-knit family life was upset when her father died. She attended public school in Skopje, and first showed religious interests as a member of a school society that focused on foreign missions (groups that travel to foreign countries to spread their religious beliefs). By the age of twelve she felt she had a calling to help the poor.

This calling took sharper focus through Mother Teresa's teenage years, when she was especially inspired by reports of work being done in India by Yugoslav Jesuit missionaries serving in Bengal, India. When she was eighteen, Mother Teresa left home to join a community of Irish nuns, the Sisters of Loretto, who had a mission in Calcutta, India. She received training in Dublin, Ireland, and in Darjeeling, India, taking her first religious vows in 1928 and her final religious vows in 1937.

One of Mother Teresa's first assignments was to teach, and eventually to serve as principal, in a girls' high school in Calcutta. Although the school was close to the slums (terribly poor sections), the students were mainly wealthy. In 1946 Mother Teresa experienced what she called a second vocation or "call within a call." She felt an inner urging to leave the convent life (life of a nun) and work directly with the poor. In 1948 the Vatican (residence of the pope in Vatican City, Italy) gave her permission to leave the Sisters of Loretto and to start a new work under the guidance of the Archbishop of Calcutta.

Founding the Missionaries of Charity

To prepare to work with the poor, Mother Teresa took an intensive medical training with the American Medical Missionary Sisters in Patna, India. Her first venture in Calcutta was to gather unschooled children from the slums and start to teach them. She quickly attracted both financial support and volunteers. In 1950 her group, now called the Missionaries of Charity, received official status as a religious community within the Archdiocese of Calcutta. Members took the traditional vows of poverty, chastity (purity), and obedience, but they added a fourth vow—to give free service to the most poor.

The Missionaries of Charity received considerable publicity, and Mother Teresa used it to benefit her work. In 1957 they began to work with lepers (those suffering from leprosy, a terrible infectious disease) and slowly expanded their educational work, at one point running nine elementary schools in Calcutta. They also opened a home for orphans and abandoned children. Before

long they had a presence in more than twenty-two Indian cities. Mother Teresa also visited other countries such as Ceylon (now Sri Lanka), Australia, Tanzania, Venezuela, and Italy to begin new foundations.

Dedication to the very poor

Mother Teresa's group continued to expand throughout the 1970s, opening new missions in places such as Amman, Jordan; London, England; and New York, New York. She received both recognition and financial support through such awards as the Pope John XXIII Peace Prize and a grant from the Joseph Kennedy Jr. Foundation. Benefactors, or those donating money, regularly would arrive to support works in progress or to encourage the Sisters to open new ventures.

By 1979 Mother Teresa's groups had more than two hundred different operations in over twenty-five countries around the world, with dozens more ventures on the horizon. The same year she was awarded the Nobel Prize for Peace. In 1986 she persuaded President Fidel Castro (1926–) to allow a mission in Cuba. The characteristics of all of Mother Teresa's works—shelters for the dying, orphanages, and homes for the mentally ill—continued to be of service to the very poor.

In 1988 Mother Teresa sent her Missionaries of Charity into Russia and opened a home for acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; an incurable disease that weakens the immune system) patients in San Francisco, California. In 1991 she returned home to Albania and opened a home in Tirana, the capital. At this time there were 168 homes operating in India.



Mother Teresa.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Saint Teresa

Despite the appeal of this saintly work, all commentators remarked that Mother Teresa herself was the most important reason for the growth of her order and the fame that came to it. Unlike many “social critics,” she did not find it necessary to attack the economic or political structures of the cultures that were producing the terribly poor people she was serving. For her, the primary rule was a constant love, and when social critics or religious reformers (improvers) chose to demonstrate anger at the evils of structures underlying poverty and suffering, that was between them and God.

In the 1980s and 1990s Mother Teresa's health problems became a concern. She suffered a heart attack while visiting Pope John Paul II (1920–) in 1983. She had a near fatal heart attack in 1989 and began wearing a pacemaker, a device that regulates the heart-beat.

In March 1997, after an eight week selection process, sixty-three-year-old Sister Nirmala was named as the new leader of the Missionaries of Charity. Although Mother Teresa had been trying to cut back on her duties for some time because of her health, she stayed on in an advisory role to Sister Nirmala.

Mother Teresa celebrated her eighty-seventh birthday in August, and died shortly thereafter of a heart attack on September 5, 1997. The world grieved her loss and one mourner noted, "It was Mother herself who poor people respected. When they bury her, we will have lost something that cannot be replaced."

Legacy of Mother Teresa

In appearance Mother Teresa was both tiny and energetic. Her face was quite wrinkled, but her dark eyes commanded attention, radiating an energy and intelligence that shone without expressing nervousness or impatience. Conservatives within the Catholic Church sometimes used her as a symbol of traditional religious values that they felt were lacking in their churches. By most accounts she was a saint for the times, and several almost adoring books and articles started to canonize (declare a saint) her in the 1980s and well into the 1990s. She herself tried to deflect all attention away from what she did to either the works of her group or to the God who was her inspiration.

The Missionaries of Charity, who had brothers as well as sisters by the mid-1980s, are guided by the constitution Mother Teresa wrote for them. They have their vivid memories of the love for the poor that created the phenomenon of Mother Teresa in the first place. The final part of her story will be the lasting impact her memory has on the next generations of missionaries, as well as on the world as a whole.

For More Information

Egan, Eileen. *Such a Vision of the Street*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1985.

Le Joly, Edward. *Mother Teresa of Calcutta*. San Francisco, CA: Harper & Row, 1983.

Mother Teresa. *In My Own Words*. Liguori, MO: Liguori Publications, 1996.

Muggeridge, Malcolm. *Something Beautiful for God*. New York: Walker and Company, 1984.

Spink, Kathryn. *Mother Teresa: A Complete Authorized Biography*. San Francisco: Harper San Francisco, 1997.

WOLFGANG AMADEUS MOZART

Born: January 27, 1756

Salzburg, Austria

Died: December 5, 1791

Vienna, Austria

Austrian composer

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart was an Austrian composer (a writer of music) whose mastery of the whole range of contemporary (modern) instrumental and vocal forms—including the symphony, concerto, chamber music, and especially the opera—was unchallenged in his own time and perhaps in any other.

Child prodigy

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart was born on January 27, 1756, in Salzburg, Austria. His father, Leopold Mozart, a noted composer, instructor, and the author of famous writings on violin playing, was then in the service of the archbishop of Salzburg. Leopold and Anna Maria, his wife, stressed the importance of music to their children. Together with his sister, Nannerl, Wolfgang received such intensive musical training that by the age of six he was a budding composer and an accomplished keyboard performer. In 1762 Leopold presented his son as performer at the imperial court in Vienna, Austria, and from 1763 to 1766 he escorted both children on a continuous musical tour across Europe, which included long stays in Paris, France, and London, England, as well as visits to many other cities, with appearances before the French and English royal families.

Mozart was the most celebrated child prodigy (an unusually gifted child) of this time as a keyboard performer. He also made a great impression as a composer and improviser (one who arranges or creates). In London he won the admiration of musician Johann Christian Bach (1735–1782), and he was exposed from an early age to an unusual variety of musical styles and tastes across Europe.



Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Gaining fame

From the age of ten to seventeen, Mozart's reputation as a composer grew to a degree of maturity equal to that of most older established musicians. He spent the years from 1766 to 1769 at Salzburg writing instrumental works and music for school dramas in German and Latin, and in 1768 he produced his first real operas: the German Singspiel (that is, with spoken dialogue) *Bastien und Bastienne*. Despite his growing reputation, Mozart found no suitable post open to him; and his father once more escorted Mozart, at age fourteen (1769), and set off for Italy to try to make his way as an opera composer.

In Italy, Mozart was well received: in Milan, Italy, he obtained a commission for an opera; in Rome he was made a member of an honorary knightly order by the Pope; and at Bologna, Italy, the Accademia Filarmonica awarded him membership despite a rule normally requiring candidates to be twenty years old. During these years of travel in Italy and returns to Salzburg between journeys, he produced his first large-scale settings of opera seria (that is, court opera on serious subjects): *Mitridate* (1770), *Ascanio in Alba* (1771), and *Lucio Silla* (1772), as well as his first string quartets. At Salzburg in late 1771 he renewed his writing of Symphonies (Nos. 14–21).

In Paris and Vienna

Paris was a vastly larger theater for Mozart's talents. His father urged him to go there, for "from Paris the fame of a man of great talent echoes through the whole world," he wrote his son. But after nine difficult months in Paris, from March 1778 to January 1779, Mozart returned once more to Salzburg, having been unable to secure a foothold and depressed by the entire experience, which had included the death of his mother in the midst of his stay in Paris. Unable to get hired for an opera, he wrote music to order in Paris, again mainly for wind instruments: the *Sinfonia Concertante* for four solo wind instruments and orchestra, the Concerto for flute and harp, other chamber music, and the ballet music *Les Petits riens*. In addition, he began giving lessons to make money.

Mozart's years in Vienna, from age twenty-five to his death at thirty-five, cover one of the greatest developments in a short span in the history of music. In these ten years Mozart's music grew rapidly beyond the

realm of many of his contemporaries; it exhibited both ideas and methods of elaboration that few could follow, and to many the late Mozart seemed a difficult composer.

The major instrumental works of this period bring together all the fields of Mozart's earlier activity and some new ones: six symphonies, including the famous last three: no. 39 in E-flat Major, no. 40 in G Minor, and no. 41 in C Major (the *Jupiter*—a title unknown to Mozart). He finished these three works within six weeks during the summer of 1788, a remarkable feat even for him.

In the field of the string quartet Mozart produced two important groups of works that completely overshadowed any he had written before 1780: in 1785 he published the six Quartets (K. 387, 421, 428, 458, 464, and 465) and in 1786 added the single Hoffmeister Quartet (K. 499). In 1789 he wrote the last three Quartets (K. 575, 589, and 590), dedicated to King Frederick William (1688–1740) of Prussia, a noted cellist.

Operas of the Vienna years

Mozart's development as an opera composer between 1781 and his death is even more remarkable, perhaps, since the problems of opera were more far-ranging than those of the larger instrumental forms and provided less adequate models. The first important result was the German Singspiel entitled *Die Entführung aus dem Serail* (1782; *Abduction from the Seraglio*). Mozart then turned to Italian opera. Mozart produced his three greatest Italian operas: *Le nozze di Figaro* (1786; *The Marriage of Figaro*), *Don Giovanni* (1787, for Prague), and *Così fan tutte* (1790). In his last opera, *The Magic Flute* (1791), Mozart turned back to German opera, and he

produced a work combining many strands of popular theater and including musical expressions ranging from folk to opera.

On concluding *The Magic Flute*, Mozart turned to work on what was to be his last project, the *Requiem*. This Mass had been commissioned by a benefactor (financial supporter) said to have been unknown to Mozart, and he is supposed to have become obsessed with the belief that he was, in effect, writing it for himself. Ill and exhausted, he managed to finish the first two movements and sketches for several more, but the last three sections were entirely lacking when he died. It was completed by his pupil Franz Süssmayer after his death, which occurred in Vienna, Austria, on December 5, 1791.

For More Information

Deutsch, Otto Erich. *Mozart: A Documentary Biography*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 1965.

Gutman, Robert W. *Mozart: A Cultural Biography*. New York: Harcourt Brace, 1999.

Parouty, Michel. *Mozart: From Child Prodigy to Tragic Hero*. New York: Harry N. Abrams, 1993.

Solomon, Maynard. *Mozart: A Life*. New York: HarperCollins Publishers, 1995.

HOSNI MUBARAK

Born: May 4, 1928

Kafr-El Meselha, Egypt

Egyptian president

Hosni Mubarak became president of Egypt after the assassination (political murder) of Anwar Sadat (1918–1981). He continued his country's peace with Israel, made efforts to bring peace to the entire Middle East, and cracked down on Islamic groups that participated in terrorist activities.

Early years

Hosni Mubarak was born on May 4, 1928 in the Nile delta province of Minufiya. He had four siblings and his father was a minor official in the Ministry of Justice. Mubarak's village of Kafr-El Meselha was known for its schools and had produced four cabinet ministers. Mubarak did well in school and completed primary schooling in his village and secondary studies in the nearby capital of Shibin El-Kom, Egypt, before going on to Egypt's Military Academy and then its Air Academy. He graduated from the Air Academy in 1950, completing his studies in only two years by attending year-round. He became a pilot and received part of his training in the former Soviet Union.

Military career

Mubarak was an instructor at the Air Academy and commanded Egypt's bomber force in the Yemen civil war in the 1960s. He was named director of the Air Academy in 1967 and given the important task of rebuilding the air force, which the Israelis had destroyed in the Six Day War of June 1967. Mubarak moved up to air force chief of staff in 1969 and commander in chief in 1972. He helped plan a successful surprise attack on Israeli forces occupying the east



Hosni Mubarak.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

bank of the Suez Canal in October 1973, launching the Yom Kippur War.

President Sadat named Mubarak vice president in 1975. Sadat preferred the international spotlight to administrative work, so Mubarak took over the day-to-day running of the government, leading cabinet meetings and handling security details. He gained foreign affairs experience with many trips to other countries, including Syria, Iraq, the United States, and China. His experience was important in the talks leading to the 1978 Camp David Accords, agreements signed by Egypt and Israel that ended years of conflict.

Takes over as president

Mubarak escaped with a minor hand wound when Islamic fundamentalists (those who interpret their religious beliefs as law) assassinated Sadat in October 1981. Taking over as president, he moved quickly to crush an Islamic uprising and jailed over two-thousand five-hundred members of militant (engaging in violence) Islamic groups. Mubarak kept most of Sadat's foreign and domestic policies, including the Camp David treaty and Sadat's close ties to the United States. All the Arab states but three had criticized Egypt for the treaty with Israel, so Mubarak tried to rebuild relations with Jordan, Iraq, Saudi Arabia, and Palestine Liberation Organization leader Yasir Arafat (1929–). It was Mubarak who encouraged Arafat to compromise and recognize Israel's right to exist.

Throughout the 1980s Mubarak increased the production of affordable housing, clothing, furniture, and medicine. He also kept a close eye on his officials, firing ministers at the first hint of wrongdoing and fining members of parliament for unnecessary absences. Egypt's heavy dependence on U.S. aid and her hopes for U.S. pressure on Israel for a Palestinian settlement continued under Mubarak. He also quietly improved relations with the former Soviet Union. In 1987 Mubarak won election to a second six-year term.

More Middle East conflict

Mubarak was angered over the 1990 Iraqi invasion of Kuwait, and he sent forty-five thousand troops to help fight back against the Iraqis. In 1993 he was reelected with 96.3 percent of the vote, a sign of the Egyptian people's approval of his stand against Islamic fundamentalists. Plots to assassinate Mubarak had

surfaced in 1992, 1993, and 1995, after two policemen were killed in another attack against the president. But Mubarak continued his tough stance. His crackdown led to charges against his government of torture, threats to the press, and other human rights abuses.

In September 1999 Egyptian voters elected Mubarak to a fourth six-year term in office. In 2000 he became the first Egyptian head of state to visit Lebanon since 1952. He also continued his efforts to achieve peace in the Middle East, meeting with Arafat, Israeli Prime Minister Ehud Barak (1942–), and U.S. President Bill Clinton (1946–). During these meetings he urged the foreign leaders to end the violence for the benefit of the entire region. In October 2001 Mubarak ordered hundreds of Islamic militants to stand trial in Egyptian courts for participating in terrorist activities.

For More Information

Cox, Vicki. *Hosni Mubarak*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

Solecki, John. *Hosni Mubarak*. New York: Chelsea House, 1991.

MUHAMMAD

Born: c. 570

Mecca, Arabia

Died: 632

Medina, Arabia

Arabian prophet

Muhammad was the founder of the religion of Islam and of a community at Medina that later developed into the Arab Empire.

Call to be a prophet

Muhammad was born after his father's death in Mecca, Arabia, around 570. His grandfather and mother both died when he was a child. As a child, he was unable by Arab custom to inherit anything. He was therefore relatively poor until about 595, when a wealthy woman, Khadija, asked him to go to Syria as a steward (protector, manager) of her trading supplies. After the successful accomplishment of the mission, she offered him marriage. She was a rich widow fifteen years his senior. She and Muhammad had four daughters, and several infant sons who died. From this time onward Muhammad was wealthy, but he began to spend time in solitary reflection on the problems of Mecca, where religious principles were being degraded and general unrest was in the city.

During a period of solitude around the year 610, Muhammad heard a voice as he meditated (focused his thoughts in a manner of prayer). The voice said, "You are the Messenger of God" (this being the title more frequently given to him by Muslims than that of prophet). Muhammad later decided he had heard the archangel Gabriel. He also found certain words "in his heart" (that is, his mind) as he meditated. Friends helped to convince him that he was called to convey messages from God to the Arabs as Moses (c. 1392–c. 1272 B.C.E.) and Jesus Christ (c. 6 B.C.E.–c. 30 C.E.) had done to the Jews and Christians. He continued to receive such messages from time to time until his death. They were collected into chapters and make up the Koran (Qur'an). The Koran, though sent through Muhammad, is held by Muslims to come from God.

Meccan preacher

At first Muhammad told these messages only to sympathetic friends, but from 612 or 613 he stated them publicly. Many people in Mecca, especially younger men, became followers of Muhammad. These members of his new religion of Islam became known as Muslims. In the course of time, however, resistance to Muhammad appeared among the leading merchants of Mecca, and he and his followers were sometimes mistreated. Apparently to escape the mistreatment, approximately eighty of his followers traveled to Ethiopia. About 616, pressure in the form of a boycott (refusal to trade with) was placed on the clan of Hashim to make it cease protecting Muhammad. But until after the death of the head of the clan, Muhammad's uncle Abu-Talib, it was felt that to abandon him would be dishonorable.

The new head, however, found a justified way to leave Muhammad behind, and it became virtually impossible for Muhammad to continue preaching in Mecca. In September 622, after secret negotiations over the previous two years, he settled in the area of Medina, two hundred miles to the north, where seventy of his followers had already gone. This "emigration" (leaving one's living place for another) is the Hijra (Latin, *hegira*), on which the Islamic era is based.

First years at Medina

The Arab clans of Medina mostly acknowledged Muhammad's prophethood and entered into association with him and the emigrants (those who leave their country) from Mecca. At first the emigrants depended on Medinese hospitality, but soon small groups of them began to attempt raids on

Meccan caravans. Later the Muslims of Medina also joined in. At first the raids had little success, but in March 624 a larger band of just over three hundred, led by Muhammad himself, defeated a supporting force of perhaps eight hundred Meccans with heavy losses. This was a serious blow to Meccan reputation, and the Muslims felt that God was defending Muhammad.

To teach Muhammad a lesson, the Meccans in March 625 invaded the Medinese area with about three thousand men. Many Muslims were killed before they could regain the safety of the hill. Militarily this was not a serious loss for Muhammad, since the Meccans had also suffered casualties and retreated immediately; but the loss shook the belief that God was defending him. Confidence was only gradually restored.

The next major event was the siege of Medina by ten thousand Meccans and allies in April 627. Muhammad protected the central part of the area by a trench that tricked the cavalry. After two weeks Meccans and their allies retreated. In March 628 the Meccans settled the Treaty of al-Hudaybiya with him. The treaty was a triumph for Muhammad. In the following months many nomadic (having to do with moving from area to area) tribesmen and a few leading Meccans joined Muhammad and became Muslims. When the treaty was criticized in January 630, Muhammad was able to march on Mecca with ten thousand men. Muhammad entered Mecca in triumph. Two weeks later two thousand joined Muhammad's army in opposing a concentration of tribesmen east of Mecca and shared in the victory of Hunayn.

New religion

By 630 the religion of Islam had become firmly rooted. In the earliest parts of the Koran, it emphasized God's goodness and power and called on men to acknowledge this in worship. It also stated the reality of the Day of Judgment, when men would be assigned to paradise or hell depending on their attitude toward God, their generosity with their wealth, and similar points. These matters were significant to the tensions of Mecca, which were seen as arising from the merchants' overconfidence in their wealth and power. The Koran contained attacks on idols (symbols of objects to be worshipped) and a resolve that "there is no deity but God."

The religious practices of the Muslims included communal worship or prayers several times a day touching the ground with the forehead in acknowledgement of God's majesty. They also gave alms (money to the poor). At Medina the fast (not eating any food) from sunrise to sunset during the month of Ramadan (sacred ninth month of the Islamic calendar) was introduced; and when circumstances made it possible, some of the ceremonies of the traditional pilgrimage (holy journey) to Mecca became a duty for Muslims.

Years of triumph

Beyond Medina a system of alliances was gradually built up with the nomadic Arab tribes. As Muhammad grew stronger, he came to insist that those wanting an association should become Muslims. After the conquest of Mecca and the victory at Hunayn in January 630, he was the strongest man in Arabia, and delegations came from tribes seeking alliance with him. When he died on



Muhammad.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

June 8, 632, he was in effective control of a large part of Arabia.

Muhammad's personality and achievement

Muhammad is said to have been a fast walker, of sturdy build, with a prominent forehead, a hooked nose, large brownish-black eyes, and a pleasant smile. He showed great charm in his dealings with people and, when appropriate, gentleness and even tenderness. Medieval Europe (500–1500), however, on the defensive against Arab armies and Islamic culture, came to look on him as a monster or demon.

At times Muhammad was indeed harsh to those in his power, but this was not out of keeping with the times. His marital relations—at his death he had nine wives and one concubine (a kept woman without marriage)—must also be judged in the framework of the times. A political purpose can be traced in all of his marriages. For his time he was a man seeking positive change for his people.

Politically Muhammad's greatest achievement was to create the framework that made possible the uniting of the Arab tribes. He also won over his chief Meccan opponents, and their administrative skills were later invaluable in conquering and ruling many provinces. The growth of the Arab Empire, and with it the religion of Islam, was made possible by favorable circumstances; but the opportunity would not have been grasped but for Muhammad's gifts as visionary, statesman, and administrator.

For More Information

Andrae, Tor. *Mohammed: The Man and His Faith*. New York: Scribner, 1936. Reprint, Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 2000.

Pirenne, Henri. *Mohammed and Charlemagne*. London: G. Allen & Unwin, 1939. Reprint, Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 2001.

Watt, W. Montgomery. *Muhammad at Mecca*. Oxford, England: Clarendon Press, 1953.

Watt, W. Montgomery. *Muhammad at Medina*. Oxford, England: Clarendon Press, 1956.

ELIJAH
MUHAMMAD

Born: October 7, 1897
Sandersville, Georgia
Died: February 25, 1975
Chicago, Illinois
African American religious leader

Elijah Muhammad was the leader of the Nation of Islam (“Black Muslims”) during their period of greatest growth in the mid-twentieth century. He was a major promoter of independent, black-operated businesses, institutions, and religion.

Early life

Elijah Muhammad was born Elijah (or Robert) Poole on October 7, 1897, near Sandersville, Georgia. His parents were former slaves who worked as sharecroppers (farming the owner’s land for a share of the crops) on a cotton plantation; his father was also a Baptist preacher. One of thirteen children, his schooling only lasted until he was nine; then Elijah had to work in the fields and on the railroad. His light skin color made him even more aware of the injustices (unfair treatments) that had been done to his ancestors. He left home at age sixteen to travel and work at odd jobs. He settled in Detroit, Michigan, in 1923, working on a car assembly line.

Poole became an early follower of W. D. Fard (c. 1877–c. 1934), the founder of the Nation of Islam, a religious faith practiced by Muslims in which Allah is the one god and Muhammad is his prophet (one who speaks through messages from a divine source). Fard

appeared in Detroit in 1930, selling silk goods and telling his customers in the African American ghetto of their ancestral “home-land” across the seas. Fard proclaimed Islam the one correct religion for African Americans, denouncing Christianity as the religion of the slave masters. Soon Fard announced the opening of the Temple of Islam. It featured an unorthodox (nontraditional) form of Islam, but the movement also emphasized African American self-help and education.

Life as leader

Fard disappeared, as mysteriously as he had arrived, in the summer of 1934. The movement he had founded quickly developed several smaller groups. The most important was led by Poole, who had become a top leader to Fard and who had changed his name along the way to Elijah Muhammad. The movement had long had a policy of requiring members to drop their “slave” names.

Settling in Chicago, Illinois, Muhammad built what quickly became the most important center of the movement. Chicago soon featured not only a Temple of Islam, but a newspaper called *Muhammad Speaks*, a University of Islam, and several apartment houses, grocery stores, and restaurants—all owned by the movement. Temples were opened in other cities, and farms were purchased so that “pure” food could be made available to members. The movement was very controlled. Members had strict rules to follow regarding eating (various foods, such as pork, were forbidden), smoking and drinking (both banned), dress and appearance (conservative, neat clothing and good grooming were required), and personal



Elijah Muhammad.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

behavior—drugs, the use of foul language, gambling, listening to music, and dancing were all not allowed.

Muhammad also revised the religion of the movement. Under his system Fard was proclaimed the earthly representative of Allah, and Elijah Muhammad was his divinely appointed prophet. Muhammad also taught that black people were the original human beings and that white people had been given a temporary privilege to govern the world. That period, however, was due to end soon; the time was at hand for black people to resume their former dominant role.

In 1942 Muhammad was one of a group of militant African American leaders arrested on charges of violation of the draft laws. He was accused of sympathizing with the Japanese during World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis—Germany, Japan, and Italy—and the Allies—England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States) and of encouraging his members to resist the military draft. He had, indeed, argued that white people oppressed (forced down) all people of color, and that it made no sense for African Americans to fight those who were victims of white discrimination (an unjust treatment or judgment because of differences) as much as they themselves were. For his words and actions Muhammad spent four years, from 1942 to 1946, in a federal prison at Milan, Michigan.

Splintering off

Small groups of like-minded individuals occasionally withdrew from Muhammad's movement. In the early 1960s Muhammad came to be overshadowed by the charming Malcolm X (1925–1967), leader of the New York Temple. In 1964 Malcolm X founded his own movement, which moved toward a more traditional form of Islam. However, Malcolm X was assassinated on February 21, 1965.

Elijah Muhammad died on February 25, 1975. After his death the leadership of his movement passed to his son, Wallace (now Warith) Deen Muhammad, who renamed the movement the World Community of Al-Islam in the West, and then the American Muslim Mission. Warith Muhammad relaxed the strict dress code, abandoned resistance to military service, encouraged members to vote and to salute the flag, and even opened the

movement to white people. In general, he made the movement much more conventionally Islamic.

Many members were disturbed at the movement's new, moderate direction. The most important of them formed a new group called the Nation of Islam, led by Louis Farrakhan (1933–). Farrakhan generally retained Elijah Muhammad's ideas and practices.

For More Information

Clegg, Claude Andrew, III. *An Original Man: The Life and Times of Elijah Muhammad*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1997.

Evanzz, Karl. *The Messenger: The Rise and Fall of Elijah Muhammad*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1999.

Halasa, Malu. *Elijah Muhammad*. New York: Chelsea House, 1990.

JOHN MUIR

Born: April 21, 1838

Dunbar, Scotland

Died: December 24, 1914

Los Angeles, California

Scottish-born American naturalist and explorer

The writings of John Muir, American naturalist (a scientist of natural history) and explorer, are important for their scientific observations and their contributions to the cause of conservation (the preservation and protection of natural resources).

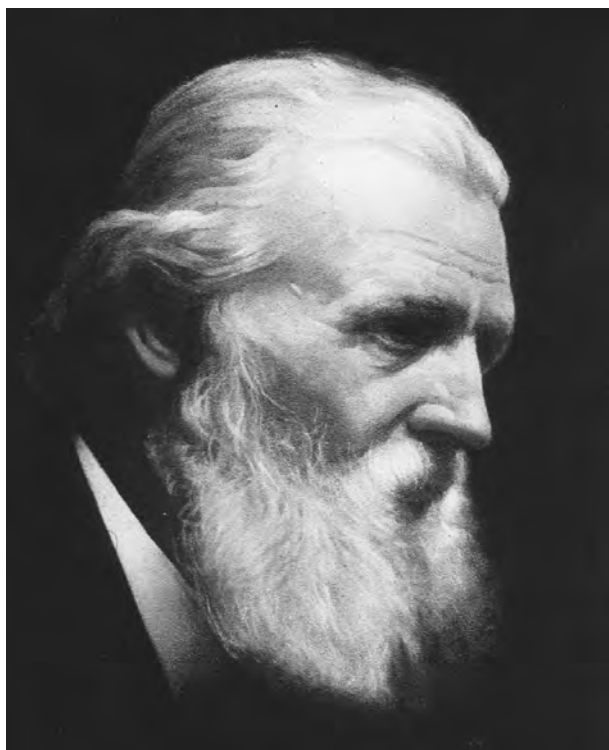
Early life

John Muir was born in Dunbar, Scotland, on April 21, 1838. He was the third of Daniel and Anne Gilrye Muir's eight children. Muir recalled in *The Story of My Boyhood and Youth* (1913) that his father was religious and extremely strict, keeping his children in line with frequent whippings. In 1849 the Muirs moved to the United States and bought farmland near Portage, Wisconsin. Muir's father worked him hard on the farm and would not allow him to waste daylight hours on reading. Muir asked for and received permission to rise early in order to study. He invented an "early-rising machine" that dumped him out of bed at one o'clock each morning so that he could read. In 1860 he displayed this and other inventions at the Wisconsin State Fair.

Student of nature

In 1861 Muir entered the University of Wisconsin to study science. He also tried studying medicine but soon gave it up for various jobs that challenged his skill at inventing things. His interest in nature, particularly plants, was growing; he made frequent trips throughout Wisconsin and nearby states to observe plant life. In 1867 he gave up his own inventions "to study the inventions of God." He set out on the walk described in *A Thousand Mile Walk to the Gulf* (1916). Actually, he went as far as Cuba. In 1868 he traveled to San Francisco, California, and worked on a sheep ranch. Exploring Yosemite Valley occupied much of his next six years. On all of his explorations he kept a journal of scientific and personal observations and also pencil drawings.

In 1880, after returning from exploring in Alaska, Muir married Louie Wanda



John Muir.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Strentzel, the daughter of a Polish plant grower. They would have two children. In 1881, after another trip to Alaska, Muir settled on a fruit ranch near Martinez, California. He worked for ten years to make enough money to enable him to stop. Having provided permanently for his wife, two daughters, and himself, he turned his full attention to the study of nature. Glaciers and freezing particularly interested him, and his work contributed to an explanation of the process by which glaciers are formed. He also went on expeditions to Europe, Asia, and Australia.

Pioneer in conservation movement

In 1889 Muir argued in *Century* magazine that Yosemite Valley should become a national park. The passage of a law in 1890 making that happen owed much to Muir's influence. *The Mountains of California* (1893), *Our National Parks* (1901), and his many articles in popular magazines greatly advanced the conservation movement, as did his creation in 1892 of the Sierra Club, an organization dedicated to preserving wild lands such as Yosemite. Muir served as the president of the club until his death.

Muir's wife died in 1905. From then until his death Muir published four books, including *Stickeen* (1909), which was a popular dog story, and *My First Summer in the Sierra* (1911). He died in Los Angeles, California, on December 24, 1914. *John of the Mountain*, drawn from Muir's journal of his 1899 Alaskan expedition, was published in 1938.

For More Information

Ehrlich, Gretel. *John Muir: Nature's Visionary*. Washington, DC: National Geographic Society, 2000.

Muir, John. *John of the Mountains; the Unpublished Journals of John Muir*. Edited by Linnie Marsh Wolfe. Boston: Houghton, Mifflin, 1938. Reprint, Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1979.

Smith, Herbert F. *John Muir*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1965.

Teale, Edwin Way. *The Wilderness World of John Muir*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 2001.

Wolfe, Linnie M. *Son of the Wilderness: The Life of John Muir*. New York: A. A. Knopf,

1945. Reprint, Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1978.

EDVARD MUNCH

Born: December 12, 1863

Loieten, Norway

Died: January 23, 1944

Oslo, Norway

Norwegian painter and artist

The Norwegian painter and graphic artist Edvard Munch illustrated man's emotional life in love and death. His art was a major influence of the expressionist movement, in which where artists sought to give rise to emotional responses.

Early life

Born on December 12, 1863, in Loieten, near Kristiania (now Oslo), Norway, Edvard Munch was the son of a military doctor. Childhood experiences with death and sickness—both his mother and sister died of tuberculosis (an often-fatal disease that attacks the lungs and bones)—greatly influenced his emotional and intellectual development. This and his father's fanatic Christianity led Munch to view his life as dominated by the “twin black angels of insanity and disease.”

After studying engineering, Munch soon turned to art. In 1880 Munch began to study art and joined the realist painters (school of painters who sought to depict their subjects as realistically as possible) and writers of the Kristiania bohemian (fashionable and uncon-

ventional) circle. His ideas were strongly influenced at this time by the writer Hans Jaeger (1854–1910), who sought to establish an ideal society based on materialist atheism (not believing in material wealth) and free love. Jaeger's hopeless love affair with the wife of Christian Krohg, leader of the bohemian painters, and Munch's own brief affairs caused him to intensify the connection he saw between women, love, and death.

Munch's paintings during the 1880s were dominated by his desire to use the artistic vocabulary of realism to create subjective content, or content open to interpretation of the viewer. His *Sick Child* (1885–1886), which used a motif (dominant theme) popular among Norwegian realist artists, created through color a mood of depression that served as a memorial to his dead sister. Because of universal critical rejection, Munch turned briefly to a more mainstream style, and through the large painting *Spring* (1889), a more academic version of the *Sick Child*, he obtained state support for study in France.

A change

After studying briefly at a Parisian art school, Munch began to explore the possibilities made available by the French postimpressionists, a movement that looked to push impressionism beyond its limitations. The death of his father in 1889 caused a major spiritual crisis, and he soon rejected Jaeger's philosophy. Munch's *Night in St. Cloud* (1890) embodied a renewed interest in spiritual content; this painting served as a memorial to his father by presenting the artist's dejected state of mind. He summarized his intentions, saying "I paint not what I see, but what I saw," and identified his paintings as "symbolism: nature



Edvard Munch.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

viewed through a temperament" (manner of thinking). Both statements accent the transformation of nature as the artist experienced it.

In 1892 the Berlin Artists' Association, an official organization consisting primarily of German academic artists, invited Munch to exhibit in Berlin, Germany. His paintings created a major scandal in Germany's artistic capital, and the exhibition was closed. But Munch used the publicity to arrange other exhibitions and sell paintings; his art prospered and he decided to stay in Germany. He also began work on a series of paintings later entitled the *Frieze of Life*, which concentrated on the themes of love, anxiety, and death.

To make his work accessible to a larger public, Munch began making prints (works of art that could be easily copied) in 1894. Motifs for his prints were usually derived from his paintings, particularly the *Frieze*. The *Frieze* also served as the inspiration for the paintings he made for Max Linde (1904), Max Reinhardt's *Kammerspielhaus* (1907), and the *Freia Chocolate Factory in Oslo* (1922).

Later years

Following a nervous breakdown, Munch entered a hospital in Copenhagen, Denmark, in 1908. In the lithograph (a type of print) series *Alpha and Omega* he depicted his love affairs and his relationship to friends and enemies. In 1909 he returned to Norway to lead an isolated life. He sought new artistic motifs in the Norwegian landscape and in the activities of farmers and laborers. A more optimistic view of life briefly replaced his former anxiety, and this new life view attained monumental expression in the murals of the Oslo University Aula (1911–1914).

During World War I (1914–18), when Germany led forces against the forces of much of Europe and the United States, Munch returned to his earlier motifs of love and death. Symbolic paintings and prints appeared side by side with stylized studies of landscapes and nudes during the 1920s. As a major project, never completed, he began to illustrate Henrik Ibsen's (1828–1906) plays. During his last years, plagued by partial blindness, Munch edited the diaries written in his youth and painted harsh self-portraits and memories of his earlier life. He died in Ekely outside Oslo on January 23, 1944.

For More Information

- Eggum, Arne. *Edvard Munch: Paintings, Sketches, and Studies*. New York: C. N. Potter, 1984.
- Heller, Reinhold. *Edvard Munch: The Scream*. New York: Viking, 1972.
- Langaard, Johan H., and Reidar Revold. *Edvard Munch*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1963.
- Stang, Ragna. *Edvard Munch: The Man and His Art*. Edited by Geoffrey Culverwell. New York: Abbeville Press, 1979.

RUPERT MURDOCH

Born: March 11, 1931

Melbourne, Australia

Australian publisher

Starting out as a newspaper publisher in his native Australia, Rupert Murdoch became a powerful media entrepreneur (someone who begins a business venture) with many publications in England and the United States. His style of journalism brought criticism from serious readers but served the entertainment needs of a wide audience.

Early life

Born March 11, 1931, in Melbourne, Australia, Keith Rupert Murdoch was the second son of a distinguished journalist. He and his two sisters and a brother were raised on a farm. His mother surrounded her children with classics in literature as well as music, with their living room hosting a grand piano.

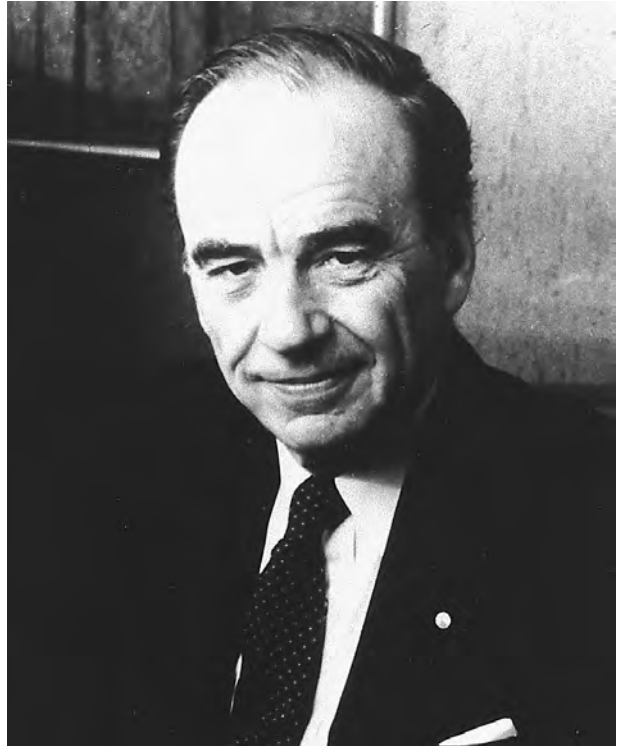
Rupert learned to ride horses at the age of five. His childhood has been described as ideal. His father, Sir Keith Murdoch, was a celebrated World War I (1914–18) reporter, who later became chief executive of the leading Melbourne *Herald* newspaper group.

After studying at Oxford University in England, Murdoch entered journalism as a reporter for the Birmingham *Gazette* and served an apprenticeship at the London *Daily Express*, where he learned the secrets of building circulation (average number of copies of a publication sold over a given time period). Returning to Australia to begin his publishing career, Murdoch revived the Adelaide *News* that he had inherited after his father's death in 1952.

Publishing world

In the process of expanding his \$1.4 billion-a-year News Corporation Limited, Murdoch often heard from critics who disliked his entertaining style of journalism. He applied a recognizable formula to most of his papers. His trademark operations included rigid cost controls, circulation gimmicks (tricks to gain sales), flashy headlines, and a steady emphasis on sex, crime, and scandal stories. Murdoch's brand of publishing was scorned as rude and irresponsible by his fellow publishers.

In early 1969 Murdoch became a London publisher when he gained control of the Sunday paper *News of the World*, the largest English-language circulation paper in the world. Later in 1969 he bought a worn-down liberal paper, the *Sun*, which he transformed into an eye-catching tabloid featuring daily displays of a topless girl on page three. The *Sun* became the most profitable paper in his



Rupert Murdoch.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

empire. In 1981 Murdoch bought the failing but prestigious London *Times*.

Murdoch expanded into the American market in 1973 when he acquired the San Antonio *Express and News*. In early 1974 he started the weekly tabloid the *National Star* (later renamed *Star*) to compete with the popular *Enquirer*. It adopted a format based on celebrity gossip, health tips, and self-help advice that boosted its circulation to almost four million.

In his quest for a big-city audience, Murdoch surprised the publishing world in 1976

when he bought the *New York Post*, a highly regarded liberal (open-minded) paper. By changing its image he nearly doubled the circulation. Murdoch's newspaper style, though, did not fare as well in the United States as in Britain. The *New York Post* was a steady financial drain despite its increased circulation. Murdoch's formula did not attract advertisers. His American papers did not show a profit until 1983.

Murdoch was seen as an effective popular journalist who gave his readers what they wanted. Ignoring his critics, he regarded most papers as too snobbish in their approach and too boring in appearance. He preferred a bright and entertaining product that would attract the largest body of readers.

Branching out

In 1983 Murdoch purchased a controlling interest (a majority of the company's stock that allowed him to make decisions for the company) in Satellite Television, a London company. His plan for beaming programs from satellites directly to homes equipped with small receivers did not progress, and his attempt to gain control of Warner Communications and its large film library did not succeed. In 1985, however, he did purchase the film company Twentieth Century Fox. A year later he bought six (Metromedia) television stations and sought to create a fourth major network called Fox Television. The United States does not permit foreign nationals to own broadcast stations. In order to maintain his control of Fox Television, Murdoch became a citizen of the United States in 1985. In 1987 he bought the U.S. publishing house Harper and Row.

Other than publishing, Murdoch's busi-

ness interests include two television stations in Australia, half ownership in the country's largest private airlines, book publishing, records, ranching, gas and oil exploration, and a share in the British wire service Reuters News Corporation Limited, which earned almost \$70 million in 1983.

Murdoch's personal wealth has been estimated at over \$340 million. Seen as fierce in his business dealings, Murdoch is known to be shy in his personal life. Living primarily in New York, he guarded his privacy with his wife Anna (a former *Sydney Daily Mirror* reporter) and their four children, one by a previous marriage. Murdoch divorced Anna in 1999 and married Wendi Deng, a former television executive more than thirty years his junior. In April 2000 he was diagnosed and treated for a "low grade" form of cancer. His radiation treatments did not slow his work pace. In 2001 Wendi had a baby girl, making Murdoch a father for the fifth time.

For More Information

- Chenoweth, Neil. *Rupert Murdoch: The Untold Story of the World's Greatest Media Wizard*. New York: Crown Business, 2002.
- Evans, Harold. *Good Times, Bad Times*. New York: Atheneum, 1984.
- Kearns, Burt. *Tabloid Baby*. Nashville: Celebrity Books, 1999.
- Kiernan, Thomas. *Citizen Murdoch*. New York: Dodd, Mead, 1986.
- Leapman, Michael. *Arrogant Aussie: The Rupert Murdoch Story*. Secaucus, NJ: L. Stewart, 1985.

BENITO MUSSOLINI

Born: July 29, 1883

Predappio, Italy

Died: April 28, 1945

Como, Italy

Italian dictator

Benito Mussolini was head of the Italian government from 1922 to 1943. He was the founder of fascism, and as a dictator he held absolute power and severely mistreated his citizens and his country. He led Italy into three straight wars, the last of which led to his overthrow by his own people.

Early life and career

Benito Mussolini was born at Dovia di Predappio, Italy, on July 29, 1883. The Mussolinis were a poor family who lived in a crowded two-bedroom apartment. His father was a blacksmith and a follower of socialism (a system providing for the sharing of land and goods equally among all people); his mother taught elementary school. Benito, although intelligent, was violent and had a large ego. He was a poor student at school and learned very little. As a student at a boarding school in Faenza, Italy, Mussolini stabbed another student, and as a result he was expelled. After receiving his diploma in 1901 he briefly taught secondary school. He went to Switzerland in 1902 to avoid military service, where he associated with other socialists. Mussolini returned to Italy in 1904, spent time in the military, and engaged in politics full time thereafter.

Mussolini had become a member of the Socialist Party in 1900 and had begun to attract wide admiration. In speeches and articles he was extreme and violent, urging revolution at any cost, but he was also well spoken. Mussolini held several posts as editor and labor leader until he emerged in the 1912 Socialist Party Congress. He became editor of the party's daily paper, *Avanti*, at the age of twenty-nine. His powerful writing injected excitement into the Socialist ranks. In a party that had accomplished little in recent years, his youth and his intense nature was an advantage. He called for revolution at a time when revolutionary feelings were sweeping the country.

From Socialist to Fascist

Mussolini deserted the Socialist Party in 1914 to cross over to the enemy camp, the Italian middle class. He knew that World War I (1914–18) would bury the old Europe, and he began to prepare for “the unknown.” In late 1914 he founded an independent newspaper, *Popolo d'Italia*, and backed it up with his own movement, the Autonomous Fascists. He drew close to the new forces in Italian politics, the extreme middle-class youth, and he made himself their spokesman. The Italian working class now called Mussolini “Judas” and “traitor.” Mussolini was wounded during army training in 1917, but he managed to return to politics that same year. His newspaper, which he now backed with a second political movement, Revolutionary Fascists, was his main strength. After the war, Mussolini's career declined. He organized his third movement, Constituent Fascists, in 1918, but it did not survive. Mussolini ran for office in the 1919 parliamentary elections but was defeated.



Benito Mussolini.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

In March 1919 Mussolini founded another movement, Fighting Fascists, won the favor of the Italian youth, and waited for events to favor him. The elections in 1921 sent him to Parliament at the head of thirty-five Fascist deputies; the third assembly of his movement gave birth to a national party, the National Fascist Party, with more than 250 thousand followers and Mussolini as its uncontested leader. In October 1922 Mussolini successfully marched into Rome, Italy. He now enjoyed the support of key groups (industry, farmers, military, and church), whose members accepted Mussolini's solution to their problems: organize

middle-class youth, control workers harshly, and set up a tough central government to restore "law and order." Thereafter, Mussolini attacked the workers and spilled their blood over Italy. It was the complete opposite of his early views of socialism.

Fascist state

Once in power, Mussolini took steps to remain there. He set general elections, but they were fixed to always provide him with an absolute majority in Parliament. The assassination of the Socialist leader Giacomo Matteotti, a noted opponent, by Fascist followers reversed his fortunes and nearly brought him down. Mussolini, however, recovered. He suspended civil liberties, destroyed all opposition, and imposed open dictatorship (absolute rule). In 1929 his Concordat with the Vatican settled the historic differences between the Italian state and the Roman Catholic Church. Pope Pius XI (1857–1939) said that Mussolini had been sent "by Divine Providence."

As the 1930s began, Mussolini was seated safely in power and enjoyed wide support. The strongest groups who had put Mussolini into power now profited from it. However, the living standard of the working majority fell; the average Italian worker's income amounted to one-half of that of a worker in France, one-third of that of a worker in England, and one-fourth of that of a worker in America. As national leader, Mussolini offered no solutions for Italy's problems. He surrounded himself with ambitious and greedy people and let them bleed Italy dry while his secret agents gathered information on opponents.

Mussolini's three wars

In 1930 economic depression (a decline in the production of goods because of a decline in demand, accompanied by rising unemployment) arrived in Italy. Mussolini reacted at first with a public works program but soon shifted to foreign adventure. The 1935 Ethiopian War was planned to direct attention away from internal problems. The "Italian Empire," Mussolini's creation, was announced in 1936. The 1936 Spanish intervention, in which Mussolini aided Francisco Franco (1892–1975) in Spain's civil war, followed but had no benefit for Italy. Mussolini then joined forces with German dictator Adolf Hitler (1889–1945) and in 1938 began to attack Jewish people within the country just as Germany was doing. As the 1930s ended, Mussolini was losing all his support within Italy.

The outbreak of World War II (1939–45) left Mussolini an unimportant figure in world politics, and he worried that Hitler would redraw the map of Europe without him. He decided "to make war at any cost." The cost was clear: modern industry, modern armies, and popular support. Mussolini lacked all of these. Nonetheless, in 1940 he pushed Italy into war against the will of the people, ignoring the only meaningful lesson of World War I: the United States alone had decided that conflict, and therefore America, not Germany, was the most important power.

Disaster and death

In 1940–41 Mussolini's armies, badly supplied and poorly led, suffered defeats from Europe across the Mediterranean to the African continent. Italy lost its war in 1942; Mussolini's power collapsed six months later. Restored as Hitler's puppet in northern Italy in 1943, he drove Italy deeper into invasion, occupation, and civil war during 1944 and 1945. The end approached, but Mussolini struggled to survive. He was finally executed by a firing squad on April 28, 1945, at Dongo in Como province.

For More Information

- Cassels, Alan. *Mussolini's Early Diplomacy*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1970.
- Kirkpatrick, Ivone. *Mussolini: A Study in Power*. New York, Hawthorn Books, 1964.
- Mack Smith, Denis. *Mussolini*. New York: Knopf, 1982.
- Mussolini, Benito. *The Fall of Mussolini: His Own Story*. Edited by Max Ascoli. New York: Farrar, Straus, 1948. Reprint, Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1975.
- Mussolini, Benito. *My Rise and Fall*. New York: Da Capo Press, 1998.
- Ridley, Jasper Godwin. *Mussolini*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1998.



VLADIMIR NABOKOV

Born: April 23, 1899

St. Petersburg, Russia

Died: July 2, 1977

Montreaux, Switzerland

Russian-born American writer and poet

Russian-born American poet, fiction writer, and butterfly expert Vladimir Nabokov, most famous for the novel *Lolita*, noted for his dramatic descriptions, experimental style, and carefully structured plots, was one of the most highly acclaimed novelists of his time.

Gifted child

Vladimir Nabokov was born in St. Petersburg, Russia, on April 23, 1899, one of Vladimir Dmitrievich Nabokov and Helene Rukavishnikov Nabokov's five children. Nabokov's parents were wealthy and encouraged him to develop his imagination. He studied languages, mathematics, puzzles, and games, including chess, soccer, and boxing. He was educated by private tutors and read English before he read Russian. He entered Prince Tenishev School in St. Petersburg at age eleven. Interested in butterflies his entire life, he became a recognized authority on the subject while still young. Nabokov began writing poems when he was thirteen years old and, as he described it, "the numb fury of



Vladimir Nabokov.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

verse making first came over me.” His first book of poetry was published in 1914.

Nabokov’s father, a lawyer and newspaper editor, was part of a failed movement to establish democracy (a system of government where the people rule) in Russia. The family lost its land and fortune after the Russian Revolution (a Communist overthrow of the government) in 1917 and fled to London, England, where Nabokov entered Cambridge University in 1919. Nabokov graduated in 1922 and rejoined his family in Berlin, Germany, where his father was shot to death by a monarchist (a believer in absolute rule by a single person).

Begins writing career

Nabokov married Vera Slonim in 1925. They had one son, Dmitri, who later became an opera singer. In Berlin Nabokov taught boxing, tennis, and languages and constructed crossword puzzles. He began writing under the name “V. Sirin,” selling stories, poems, and essays to Russian-language newspapers in Berlin and then Paris, France. His work included translating different stories and poems into Russian and writing short stories, plays, novels, and criticism. In 1940 he moved to the United States.

In 1940 Nabokov taught languages at Stanford University in California. From 1941 to 1948 he taught at Wellesley College in Massachusetts, where he became a professor of literature. He also did research in entomology (the study of insects) at the Museum of Comparative Zoology at Harvard University in Massachusetts from 1942 to 1948. He later discovered several species of butterflies, including “Nabokov’s wood nymph.” While teaching he wrote *The Real Life of Sebastian Knight* (1941), a parody (humorous imitation) of a mystery story whose hero is based on the author’s own life. In 1944 he completed a study of the life of Russian author Nicolai Gogol (1809–1852). Nabokov became an American citizen in 1945. By then his stories were appearing regularly in popular magazines.

Nabokov’s 1947 novel *Bend Sinister* is about an intellectual’s battle with a police state. In 1949 Nabokov was appointed professor of Russian and European literature at Cornell University in New York, where he taught until 1959. He wrote a book of memories of his life in Russia, *Speak, Memory*, in 1951. Several short sketches published in the

New Yorker were put together in *Pnin* (1957), his novel about a Russian teaching at an American university.

Popular success

Nabokov remained unknown to the general public until writing *Lolita*, a sad but funny account of Humbert Humbert, a middle-aged professor who falls for a twelve-year-old schoolgirl. It was first published in Paris in 1955. After its American release in 1958, some U.S. libraries banned it. The publicity helped the book become immensely popular. Nabokov also wrote the screenplay (the script for a movie) for the 1962 movie version of the book. With profits from the novel and the film, Nabokov was able to quit teaching and devote himself entirely to his writing and butterfly hunting.

In 1959 Nabokov published *Invitation to a Beheading*, a story of a man awaiting execution, which he had first written in Russian in 1938. In 1960 he moved his family to Montreux, Switzerland. He received critical praise for *Pale Fire* (1962), written as a 999-line poem with a long speech by an unstable New England scholar who is actually a mythical king in exile.

Later works

In 1963 Nabokov's English translation of Alexander Pushkin's (1799–1837) romantic novel *Eugene Onegin* was published. Nabokov called the four-volume work his "labor of love." Several translations of earlier Russian works followed, including *The Defense*, a novel about chess. Nabokov constructed his novels like puzzles, rather than

working from beginning to end. In 1964 he told *Life* magazine, "Writing has always been for me a torture and a pastime." Nabokov died on July 2, 1977, at the Palace Hotel in Montreaux.

In April 2000 Nabokov's *Butterflies: Unpublished and Uncollected Writings*, which contained fiction, poems, nonfiction, and writings related to Nabokov's love of butterflies, was published. Dmitri Nabokov translated it from Russian.

For More Information

Boyd, Brian. *Vladimir Nabokov: The American Years*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1991.

Cornwell, Neil. *Vladimir Nabokov*. Plymouth, England: Northcote House, 1999.

Dembo, L. S., ed. *Nabokov: The Man and His Work*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press, 1967.

Field, Andrew. VN, *The Life and Art of Vladimir Nabokov*. New York: Crown, 1986.

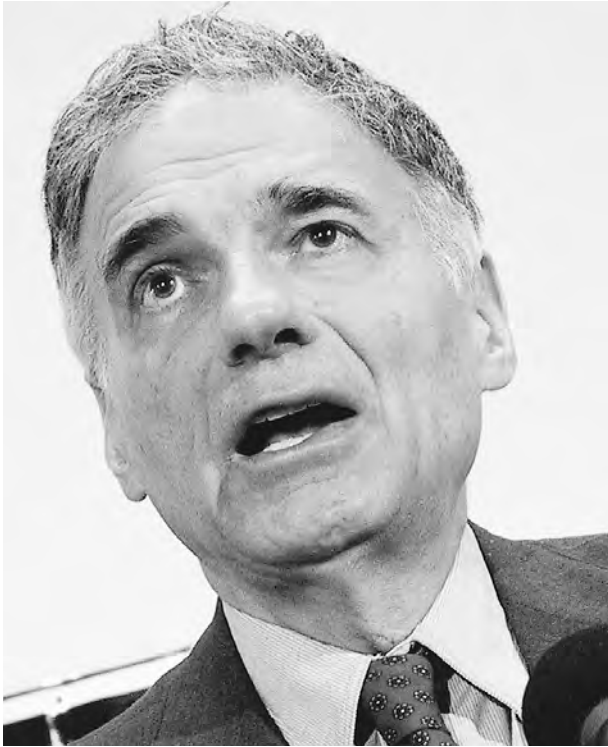
Nabokov, Vladimir. *Speak, Memory: An Autobiography Revisited*. Rev. ed. London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1967. Reprint, New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1999.

RALPH
NADER

Born: February 27, 1934

Winsted, Connecticut

American activist, social crusader, and lawyer



Ralph Nader.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

American social crusader and lawyer Ralph Nader became a symbol of the public's concern over the business practices of large corporations. He inspired investigations that were meant to improve the operations of industries and government bureaus. He also ran for president and tried to bring about changes in the elective process to provide voters with more choices.

Dinner table discussions

Ralph Nader was born on February 27, 1934, in Winsted, Connecticut, the youngest of four children of Nadra and Rose

(Bouziane) Nader, Lebanese immigrants who operated a local restaurant and bakery. His parents led the family in political discussions every night around the dinner table. His father was against any kind of injustice and insisted that every person had an obligation to try to make the world a better place.

Nader was interested in the law at an early age; he loved reading copies of the Congressional Record (printed speeches of members of Congress) that his high-school principal gave him. He graduated from Princeton University's Woodrow Wilson School of Public and International Affairs in 1955 and then went to Harvard Law School, receiving his degree in 1958. His role as an activist began developing during college. While at Princeton he attempted, but failed, to stop the spraying of campus trees with a pesticide (spray to kill insects) called DDT. He considered pesticides to be dangerous and harmful to the environment. Nader served briefly in the U.S. Army, traveled, then opened a law office in Hartford, Connecticut. He also lectured in history and government at the University of Hartford.

Auto safety watchdog

Nader was one among many concerned about safety in auto design. While still at Harvard, he had studied auto injury cases and came to believe that design flaws, rather than driver mistakes, were responsible for the large numbers of car accidents. He testified on the subject before state legislative committees and wrote articles for magazines. In 1964 Nader was appointed a consultant (a person who provides professional advice or services) to the Department of Labor and began to study auto safety in depth. He also worked with the Government Operations Subcom-

mittee headed by Senator Abraham A. Ribicoff (1910–1998), providing it with data on auto accidents. In 1965 he left the department to prepare a book on the subject.

Nader's book *Unsafe at Any Speed: The Designed-in Dangers of the American Automobile* (1965) appeared while Ribicoff's committee was holding hearings on the subject of auto safety. Nader, after testifying before the committee, became a target of auto manufacturers then dealing with lawsuits by victims of auto accidents who blamed it on bad car designs. Although new safety laws would have eventually been established, the issue attracted public interest after Nader revealed that he had been personally harassed and his private life investigated by detectives working for General Motors. The admission in March 1966 by General Motors president James M. Roche that his firm had indeed had Nader investigated received national television coverage and made Nader a public figure. These events helped speed up the process of establishing new auto safety laws. In 1966, the National Traffic and Motor Vehicle Safety Act was passed. Nader's book became a best-seller and a factor in the new safety legislation becoming law in September. He broadened his investigations of the auto industry and the National Traffic Safety Agency, which was responsible for enforcing the new law. In November he sued General Motors for \$26 million for invasion of privacy.

Birth of "Nader's Raiders"

Nader then began a series of studies in various fields aimed at improving responsible industrial production. These included safety in mines and control of oil and gas pipes that were dangerous to people and the environ-

ment. Nader also worked on behalf of what became the 1967 Wholesome Meat Act. By being careful with his money, working efficiently, and using his income from book sales, article writing, and lectures, Nader attracted over a hundred young people—soon known as "Nader's Raiders"—from law schools and elsewhere. They helped him gather data about industries and government bureaus. In 1969 he founded his Center for the Study of Responsive Law (an organization that conducts research and publishes reports about consumer issues). In August 1970 Nader was awarded \$425,000 from his lawsuit against General Motors, funds he promptly put into his crusade.

From the late 1970s through the early 1990s, Nader's public image faded from his *Unsafe at Any Speed* days. By 1988, however, he campaigned successfully to reduce California car-insurance rates and used public opinion to help block a proposed 50-percent pay hike for members of Congress. He gained notoriety in 1990 when a *Forbes* magazine story accused him of working together with trial lawyers for supporting Americans' right to sue. The criticism failed to stop him from looking into other issues; he soon turned his attention to investigating safety flaws in the airline industry. But his book on the subject, *Collision Course: The Truth About Airline Safety*, with Wesley J. Smith (1949–), was criticized by some for its questionable use of data.

Presidential campaigns

After failing to stop the North American Free Trade Agreement (1993; an agreement between Canada, Mexico, and the United States to reduce tariffs and eliminate other barriers to trade), Nader was nominated as

the 1996 Green Party (a political party that focuses mainly on ecological and environmental issues) candidate for president, winning some support in popular polls. Nader himself summed up his philosophy this way: "You've got to keep the pressure on, even if you lose." In 1997 Nader again teamed with Wesley J. Smith to write *No Contest: Corporate Lawyers and the Perversion of Justice in America*. The book explored the business of law in which, the authors suggested, profit is more important than justice. In 1988 Nader launched Commercial Alert, an organization that fights against harmful and excessive advertising and marketing.

In June 2000 Nader again accepted the presidential nomination of the Green Party. He promised to run a campaign that focused on policies to address the gap between the rich and the poor, improve health insurance for all Americans, and challenge corporations to end practices that waste the country's resources and harm the environment. He argued that since he could see no real difference between George W. Bush (1946–) and Al Gore (1948–), the Republican and Democratic candidates, the two-party system did not give voters enough choice. Nader wound up with only 3 percent of the vote, but in one of the closest elections ever, Democrats criticized him for taking votes away from Gore and causing Bush to win key states and, therefore, the election. Nader shrugged off the criticism and went back to work to strengthen the Green Party and prepare for the next round of elections.

For More Information

Bowen, Nancy. *Ralph Nader: Man with a Mission*. Brookfield, CT: Twenty-First Century Books, 2002.

Graham, Kevin. *Ralph Nader: Battling for Democracy*. Denver: Windom, 2000.

Nader, Ralph. *Crashing the Party*. New York: Thomas Dunne Books/St. Martin's Press, 2002.

NAPOLEON BONAPARTE

Born: August 15, 1769

Ajaccio, Corsica

Died: May 5, 1821

Island of St. Helena

French dictator

Napoleon Bonaparte, French emperor, was one of the greatest military leaders in history. He helped remake the map of Europe and established many government and legal reforms, but constant battles eventually led to his downfall.

Early years

Napoleon Bonaparte was born Napoleon Buonaparte on August 15, 1769, in the Corsican city of Ajaccio. He was the fourth of eleven children of Carlo Buonaparte and Letizia Romolino. His father, a member of a noble Italian family, remained on good terms with the French when they took over control of Corsica.

Napoleon began his education at a boys' school in Ajaccio. Then, at age ten, he was allowed to enter French military schools for aristocrats and was sent in 1779, with his

older brother Joseph, to the College of Autun in Burgundy, France. Napoleon later transferred to the College of Brienne, another French military school. While at school in France, he was made fun of by the other students for his lower social standing and because he spoke Spanish and did not know French well. His small size earned him the nickname of the “Little Corporal.” Despite this teasing, Napoleon received an excellent education. When his father died, Napoleon led his household.

By 1785 Napoleon was a second lieutenant in the French army, but he often returned to Corsica. In 1792 he took part in a power struggle between forces supporting Pasquale Paoli (1725–1807), a leader in the fight for Corsican independence, and those supporting the French. After Paoli was victorious, he turned against Napoleon and the Bonaparte family, forcing them to flee back to France. Napoleon then turned his attention to a career in the army there. The French Revolution (1789–93), a movement to overthrow King Louis XVI (1754–1793) and establish a republic, had begun. Upon his return from Corsica in 1793, Napoleon made a name for himself and won a promotion by helping to defeat the British at Toulon and regain that territory for France.

Military successes

After being imprisoned for ten days on suspicion of treason and refusing assignment to lead the Army of the West, Napoleon was assigned to work for the map department of the French war office. His military career nearly ended, but when forces loyal to the king attempted to regain power in Paris in 1795, Napoleon was called in to stop the



Napoleon Bonaparte.

uprising. As a reward he was appointed commander of the Army of the Interior. Later that year Napoleon met Josephine de Beauharnais (1763–1814), and they were married in March 1796. Within a few days Napoleon left Josephine in Paris and started his new command of the Army of Italy. Soon the French troops were winning battle after battle against the Italians and Austrians. Napoleon advanced on Vienna, Austria, and engineered the signing of a treaty that gave France control of Italy.

Napoleon returned to Paris a hero, and he soon decided to invade Egypt. He sailed from Toulon, France, in May 1798 with an

army of thirty-five thousand men. With only a few losses, all of lower Egypt came under Napoleon's control. He set about reorganizing the government, the postal service, and the system for collecting taxes. He also helped build new hospitals for the poor. However, at this time a group of countries had banded together to oppose France. Austrian and Russian forces had regained control of almost all of Italy. Then, in August 1798, the British destroyed French ships in the Battle of the Nile, leaving the French army cut off from its homeland. Napoleon left the army under the command of General Jean Kléber and returned to France with a handful of officers.

Leadership of France

Landing at Fréjus, France, in October 1799, Napoleon went directly to Paris, where he helped overthrow the Directory, a five-man executive body that had replaced the king. Napoleon was named first consul, or head of the government, and he received almost unlimited powers. After Austria and England ignored his calls for peace, he led an army into Italy and defeated the Austrians in the Battle of Marengo (1800). This brought Italy back under French control. The Treaty of Amiens in March 1802 ended the war with England for the time being. Napoleon also restored harmony between the Roman Catholic Church and the French government. He improved conditions within France as well by, among other things, establishing the Bank of France, reorganizing education, and reforming France's legal system with a new set of laws known as the Code Napoleon.

By 1802 the popular Napoleon was given the position of first consul for life, with

the right to name his replacement. In 1804 he had his title changed to emperor. War resumed after a new coalition was formed against France. In 1805 the British destroyed French naval power in the Battle of Trafalgar. Napoleon, however, was able to defeat Russia and Austria in the Battle of Austerlitz. In 1806 Napoleon's forces destroyed the Prussian army; after the Russians came to the aid of Prussia and were defeated themselves, Alexander I (1777–1825) of Russia made peace at Tilsit in June 1807. Napoleon was now free to reorganize western and central Europe as he pleased. After Sweden was defeated in 1808 with Russia's help, only England remained to oppose Napoleon.

Napoleon was unable to invade England because of its superior naval forces. He decided to introduce the Continental System, a blockade designed to close all the ports of Europe to British trade. He hoped this would force the British to make peace on French terms. In Spain in 1808 the Peninsular War broke out over Spanish opposition to the placement of Napoleon's brother Joseph on the throne. The English helped Spain in this battle, which kept French troops occupied until 1814. In addition, Alexander I's decision to end Russia's cooperation with the Continental System led Napoleon to launch an invasion of that country in 1812. Lack of supplies, cold weather, and disease led to the deaths of five hundred thousand of Napoleon's troops.

Fall from glory

Napoleon had his marriage to Josephine dissolved and then, in March 1810, he married Marie Louise, the daughter of Emperor Francis II of Austria. Despite this union, Aus-

tria declared war on him in 1813. In March 1814 Paris fell to a coalition made up of Britain, Prussia, Sweden, and Austria. Napoleon stepped down in April. Louis XVIII (1755–1824), the brother of Louis XVI, was placed on the French throne. Napoleon was exiled to the island of Elba, but after ten months he made plans to return to power. He landed in southern France in February 1815 with 1,050 soldiers and marched to Paris, where he reinstated himself to power. Louis XVIII fled, and Napoleon's new reign began. The other European powers gathered to oppose him, and Napoleon was forced to return to war.

The Battle of Waterloo was over within a week. On June 18, 1815, the combined British and Prussian armies defeated Napoleon. He returned to Paris and stepped down for a second time on June 22. He had held power for exactly one hundred days. Napoleon at first planned to go to America, but he surrendered to the British on July 3. He was sent into exile on the island of St. Helena in the South Atlantic Ocean. There he spent his remaining years until he died of cancer on May 5, 1821.

For More Information

- Asprey, Robert B. *The Reign of Napoleon Bonaparte*. New York: Basic Books, 2001.
- Asprey, Robert B. *The Rise of Napoleon Bonaparte*. New York: Basic Books, 2000.
- Castelot, André. *Napoleon*. Paris: Rombaldi, 1974.
- Markham, Felix. *Napoleon*. New York: New American Library, 1964.
- Thompson, J. M. *Napoleon Bonaparte*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1952.
- Reprint, New York: Blackwell, 1988.

OGDEN NASH

Born: August 19, 1902

Rye, New York

Died: May 19, 1971

Baltimore, Maryland

American poet and writer

Ogden Nash was one of the most commercially successful English-language poets of the twentieth century.

Early years and education

Frederick Ogden Nash was born in Rye, New York, to Edmund Strudwick Nash and Mattie Chenault on August 19, 1902. His father was in the import-export business, but the Nash family's ancestry in North Carolina stretched back to the American Revolutionary era; the city of Nashville, Tennessee, was named in honor of an ancestor. Nash grew up in various East Coast communities and also lived in Savannah, Georgia, during his youth. He attended St. George's School in Newport, Rhode Island, and he was accepted to Harvard but dropped out in 1921 after a year.

Nash held a variety of jobs but none for very long. He worked on Wall Street as a bond salesperson, but sold only one bond—to his godmother—and instead spent his afternoons in movie theaters. He was a schoolteacher for a year at St. George's School, and from there he was hired as an advertising copywriter for streetcar signs. In 1925 he was hired in the marketing department of the Doubleday publishing house and did well enough that he moved on to its editorial department as a manuscript reader.



Ogden Nash.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Begins writing verse

Nash said that it was the poor quality of the manuscripts he read that led him to try to write. He attempted to produce serious verse in the style of the eighteenth-century Romantic poets but soon gave it up. He preferred to scribble comic verse on pages that he crumpled and tossed across the office to the desks of coworkers. This led Nash and a friend named Joseph Alger to work together to produce a 1925 children's book, *The Cricket of Carador*. A few years later, Nash teamed with two Doubleday coworkers to produce *Born in a Beer Garden; or, She Troupes to Conquer*, which made fun of classic literature.

In 1930 Nash wrote a poem called "Spring Comes to Murray Hill" and submitted it to the *New Yorker*, one of the most respected, well-read magazines of the day. Nash had thought up the poem while gazing out his office window and thinking about his life. The *New Yorker* published the poem and invited Nash to submit more; his regular appearances in the magazine led to a contract for his first work, *Hard Lines*, published in 1931. It was a tremendous success, going into seven printings in its first year alone. Nash soon quit his Doubleday job.

Successful formula

During the 1930s and 1940s, Nash's poems continued to appear in many magazines and published collections, and he was praised as one of America's greatest humorists (writers of clever humor). He found great success with his ability to express disbelief and dismay at the problems of modern American life. He also criticized religious preaching and pompous (having to do with showing self-importance) senators and presented amusing quirks (particular or unusual characteristics) of the English language. Still, he referred to himself simply as a "worsifier" instead of a "versifier." British reviews of his work often criticized him for taking liberties with spelling and rhyme. One of his most famous examples is the line: "If called by a panther/Don't anther."

In 1931 Nash married Frances Rider Leonard, with whom he had two daughters. His experiences with fatherhood provided more subject matter for his verse, evident in the 1936 collection *The Bad Parents' Garden of Verse*. Nash also wrote screenplays for three Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer films—*The Firefly*

NEFERTITI

(1937), *The Shining Hair* (1938), and *The Feminine Touch* (1941). In California he met another well-known writer, S. J. Perelman (1904–1979), who had written for the Marx Brothers films. They worked together on a musical, *One Touch of Venus*, which was a huge success on Broadway in 1943.

Later years

Nash was elected to both the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and National Institute of Arts and Letters. During the 1950s he wrote more frequently for the children's market, with such titles as *The Boy Who Laughed at Santa Claus* (1957), *Custard the Dragon* (1959), and *Girls are Silly* (1962). He also wrote for television productions of *Peter and the Wolf* and *The Sorcerer's Apprentice*. He often wrote about his experiences babysitting his grandchildren. After suffering various illnesses in his later years, he wrote a number of poems about the medical establishment that were later collected in 1970's *Bed Riddance: A Posy for the Indisposed*.

Nash died on May 19, 1971. Several collections of his work were published after his death, including *I Wouldn't Have Missed It* (1975) and *A Penny Saved Is Impossible* (1981).

For More Information

Nash, Ogden. *Loving Letters from Ogden Nash: A Family Album*. Introduced and selected by Linell Nash Smith. Boston: Little, Brown, 1990.

Stuart, David. *The Life and Rhymes of Ogden Nash*. Lanham, MD: Madison Books, 2000.

Born: c. 1390 B.C.E.

Thebes, Egypt

Died: c. 1360 B.C.E.

Egypt

Egyptian queen

Nefertiti was an Egyptian queen and wife of King Akhenaten who remains a mystery to scholars today. A bust (sculpture of a person's head and shoulders) of her discovered in 1913 is one of the most widely recognized symbols of ancient Egypt.

Few facts known

Nefertiti was born around 1390 B.C.E. Some believe she was of Egyptian blood, while others believe she was a foreign princess. Her name, which means "the beautiful one is come," is of Egyptian origin, and evidence indicates that she had an Egyptian wet-nurse or governess of noble rank, which has led to the belief that she was born within the circle of the Egyptian royal court. She may have been a niece or daughter of Ay, who was a keeper of records under King Amenhotep III.

As queen

When Nefertiti was fifteen years old, she married Amenhotep IV, who was a year older and became king upon his father's death. They had six daughters and, according to some, one son. During the first five years of Amenhotep's reign, Nefertiti enjoyed a high profile. Evidence of her political importance is seen in the large number of carved scenes in which she is shown accompanying him during ceremonial acts. She is shown taking part in the daily worship and making offerings



Nefertiti.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

similar to those of the king—acts quite unlike those usually performed by previous chief queens, all of whom had a secondary role.

In the fifth year of his reign, Amenhotep changed his name to Akhenaten. He went against the beliefs of previous kings by announcing that the sun god Aten was the greatest of all Egyptian gods and the only one who should be worshipped, rather than Amen-Ra, who had long been considered supreme. Nefertiti shared his belief. Largely because of opposition over this issue, Akhenaten built a new capital called Akhetaten and moved the royal family there.

Mysterious disappearance

After the fourteenth year of Akhenaten's rule, there are no more pictures of Nefertiti; she simply disappears from view. Some believe she was the power behind the throne and thus responsible for the changes during the rule of Akhenaten until being dismissed from her position and banished to the North Palace at Amarna. This would mean there was a conflict within the royal family, with Nefertiti favoring the continued worship of Aten while Akhenaten and his son-in-law Tutankhamen (c. 1370–c. 1352 B.C.E.) supported a return to the worship of Amen-Ra. Most scholars, however, now suppose that Nefertiti's disappearance may simply be due to the fact that she died, and one of the king's other wives took her place at his side. A more dramatic, if less accepted, theory holds that she assumed a new, masculine identity toward the end of Akhenaten's rule—that Nefertiti and the young Smenkhkare, who ruled briefly either with or after Akhenaten and is believed by some to have been his son, were in fact the same person.

For More Information

Freed, Rita E., Yvonne J. Markowitz, and Sue H. D'Auria, eds. *Pharaohs of the Sun*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1999.

Tyldesley, Joyce A. *Nefertiti: Egypt's Sun Queen*. New York: Viking, 1998.

ISAAC
NEWTON

Born: December 25, 1642

Woolsthorpe, Lincolnshire, England

Died: March 20, 1727

London, England

English scientist and mathematician

Isaac Newton was an English scientist and mathematician. He made major contributions in mathematics and physics (the study of the relationship between matter and energy) and advanced the work of previous scientists on the laws of motion, including the law of gravity.

Early life and education

Isaac Newton was born on Christmas Day, 1642, at Woolsthorpe, a village in south-western Lincolnshire, England. His father died two months before he was born. When he was three years old, his mother remarried and moved away, leaving Isaac in the care of his grandmother. After a basic education in local schools, at the age of twelve he was sent to the King's School in Grantham, England, where he lived in the home of a pharmacist (one who prepares and distributes medication) named Clark. Newton was interested in Clark's chemical library and laboratory and built mechanical devices to amuse Clark's daughter, including a windmill run by a live mouse, floating lanterns, and sun dials.

After Newton's stepfather died, his mother returned to Woolsthorpe, and she pulled him out of school to help run the family farm. He preferred reading to working, though, and it became apparent that farming was not his destiny. At the age of nineteen he entered Trinity College, Cambridge, England. After receiving his bachelor's degree in 1665, Newton stayed on for his master's, but an outbreak of the plague (a highly infectious and deadly disease often carried by rats)



Isaac Newton.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

caused the university to close. Newton returned to Woolsthorpe for eighteen months, from 1666 to 1667, during which time he performed the basic experiments and did the thinking for his later work on gravitation (the attraction the mass of the Earth has for bodies near its surface) and optics (the study of light and the changes it experiences and produces). The story that a falling apple suggested the idea of gravitation to him seems to be true. Newton also developed his own system of calculus (a form of mathematics used to solve problems in physics).

Returning to Cambridge in 1667, Newton quickly completed the requirements for his master's degree and then began a period

of expanding on the work he had started at Woolsthorpe. His mathematics professor, Isaac Barrow, was the first to recognize Newton's unusual ability. When Barrow resigned to take another job in 1669, he recommended that Newton take his place. Newton became a professor of mathematics at age twenty-seven and stayed at Trinity in that capacity for twenty-seven years.

Experiments in optics

Newton's main interest at the time was optics, and for several years his lectures were devoted to the subject. His experiments in this area had grown out of his interest in improving the effectiveness of telescopes (instruments that enable the user to view distant objects through the bending of light rays through a lens). His discoveries about the nature and properties of light had led him to turn to suggestions for a reflecting telescope rather than current ones based on the refractive (bending) principle. Newton built several reflecting models in which the image was viewed in a concave (rounded like the inside of a bowl) mirror through an eyepiece in the side of the tube. In 1672 he sent one of these to the Royal Society (Great Britain's oldest organization of scientists).

Newton was honored when the members of the Royal Society were impressed by his reflecting telescope and when they elected him to their membership. But when he decided to send the society a paper describing his experiments on light and the conclusions he had drawn from them, the results almost changed history for the worst. The paper was published in the society's *Philosophical Transactions*. Many scientists refused to accept the findings, and others

were strongly opposed to conclusions that seemed to show that popular theories of light were false. At first Newton patiently answered his critics with further explanations, but when these produced more criticism, he became angry. He vowed he would never publish again, even threatening to give up science altogether. Several years later, at the urging of the astronomer Edmund Halley (c. 1656–1743), Newton put together the results of his work on the laws of motion, which became the great *Principia*.

His major work

Newton's greatest work, *Philosophiae naturalis principia mathematica*, was completed in eighteen months. It was first published in Latin in 1687, when Newton was forty-five. Its appearance established him as the leading scientist of his time, not only in England but in the entire Western world. In the *Principia* Newton, with the law of universal gravitation, gave mathematical solutions to most of the problems relating to motion with which earlier scientists had struggled.

In the years after Newton's election to the Royal Society, the thinking of his peers and of scholars had been slowly developing along lines similar to those which his had taken, and they were more open to his explanations of the behavior of bodies moving according to the laws of motion than they had been to his theories about the nature of light. Yet the *Principia*'s mathematical form made it difficult for even the sharpest minds to follow. Those who did understand it saw that it needed to be made easier to read. As a result, in the years from 1687 to Newton's death, the *Principia* was the subject of many books and articles attempting to better explain Newton's ideas.

London years

After the publication of the *Principia*, Newton became depressed and lost interest in scientific matters. He became interested in university politics and was elected a representative of the university in Parliament. Later he asked friends in London to help him obtain a government appointment. The result was that in 1696, at the age of fifty-four, he left Cambridge to become warden and then master of the Mint (place where money is printed or manufactured). Newton took the job just as seriously as he had his scientific pursuits and made changes in the English money system that were effective for over one hundred years.

Newton's London life lasted as long as his professorship. He received many honors, including the first knighthood given for scientific achievement and election to life presidency of the Royal Society. In 1704 he published the *Opticks*, mainly a collection of earlier research, which he revised (changed) three times. In later years he supervised two updated versions of the *Principia*, he carried on a correspondence with scientists all over Great Britain and Europe, he continued his study and investigation in various fields, and, until his very last years, he performed his duties at the Mint.

His Opticks

The *Opticks* was written and originally published in English rather than Latin, and as a result it reached a wide range of readers in England. The reputation the *Principia* had prepared the way for the success of Newton's second published work. Also, its content and manner of presentation made the *Opticks* more approachable. It contained an account of experiments performed by Newton him-

self and his conclusions drawn from them, and it had greater appeal for the experimentally minded public of the time than the more mathematical *Principia*.

Of great interest for scientists were the questions with which Newton concluded the text of the *Opticks*—for example, “Do not Bodies act upon Light at a distance, and by their action bend its rays?” These make up a unique expression of Newton's ideas; posing them as negative (incorrect) questions made it possible for him to suggest ideas that he could not support by experimental evidence or mathematical proof, paving the way for further research by future scientists.

Later years

Two other areas to which Newton devoted much attention were chronology (the science of assigning to events their proper dates) and theology (the study of religion). His *Chronology of Ancient Kingdoms*, published in full after his death, attempts to link Egyptian, Greek, and Hebrew history and myths and to establish dates of historical events. In his *Observations upon the Prophecies of Daniel and the Apocalypse of St. John*, his aim was to show that the predictions of the Old and New Testaments had so far come true.

Newton died on March 20, 1727. His surviving writings and letters reveal a person with tremendous powers of concentration, the ability to stand long periods of intense mental strain, and the ability to remain free of distractions. The many portraits of Newton show him as a man with natural dignity, a serious expression, and large searching eyes. He had developed a mathematical explanation of the universe and opened the door for further study. In changing from pursuit of

answers to the question “Why?” to focus upon “What?” and “How?,” he prepared the way for the age of technology (a scientific way of achieving a practical purpose).

For More Information

Anderson, Margaret Jean. *Isaac Newton: The Greatest Scientist of All Time*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1996.

Berlinski, David. *Newton's Gift: How Sir Isaac Newton Unlocked the System of the World*. New York: Free Press, 2000.

Rankin, William. *Introducing Newton*. New York: Totem Books, 1994.

Tiner, John Hudson. *Isaac Newton: Inventor, Scientist, and Teacher*. Milford, MI: Mott Media, 1981.

Westfall, Richard S. *The Life of Isaac Newton*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1993.

White, Michael. *Isaac Newton: The Last Sorcerer*. Reading, MA: Helix Books, 1999.

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY



contents

Entries by Nationality xvii

Reader's Guide xxxi

Volume 1: A–Ba

Hank Aaron	1	Aeschylus	29
Ralph Abernathy	4	Spiro Agnew	31
Bella Abzug	7	Alvin Ailey	34
Chinua Achebe	10	Madeleine Albright	37
Abigail Adams	12	Louisa May Alcott	39
Ansel Adams	15	Alexander II	41
John Adams	17	Alexander the Great	43
Samuel Adams	20	Muhammad Ali	47
Joy Adamson	22	Woody Allen	49
Jane Addams	25	Isabel Allende	52
Alfred Adler	27	Julia Alvarez	54
		American Horse	57

Idi Amin	59	Lucille Ball	159
Hans Christian Andersen	62	David Baltimore	161
Carl David Anderson	64	Honoré de Balzac	164
Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	66	Benjamin Banneker	166
Marian Anderson	69	Frederick Banting	168
Fra Angelico	71	Klaus Barbie	170
Maya Angelou	73	Christiaan Barnard	173
Kofi Annan	76	Clara Barton	175
Susan B. Anthony	79	Count Basie	177
Virginia Apgar	81	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Benigno Aquino	84		
Yasir Arafat	86	<i>Volume 2: Be–Cap</i>	
Archimedes	89	Beatles	181
Hannah Arendt	91	William Beaumont	185
Jean-Bertrand Aristide	93	Simone de Beauvoir	187
Aristophanes	96	Samuel Beckett	189
Aristotle	98	Ludwig van Beethoven	192
Louis Armstrong	101	Menachem Begin	194
Neil Armstrong	102	Alexander Graham Bell	196
Benedict Arnold	105	Clyde Bellecourt	200
Mary Kay Ash	108	Saul Bellow	202
Arthur Ashe	110	William Bennett	204
Isaac Asimov	113	Ingmar Bergman	206
Fred Astaire	116	Irving Berlin	208
John Jacob Astor	118	Leonard Bernstein	210
Margaret Atwood	120	Chuck Berry	213
W. H. Auden	123	Mary McLeod Bethune	215
John James Audubon	125	Benazir Bhutto	218
Augustus	128	Owen Bieber	220
Aung San Suu Kyi	130	Billy the Kid	223
Jane Austen	132	Larry Bird	224
Baal Shem Tov	137	Shirley Temple Black	227
Charles Babbage	139	Elizabeth Blackwell	229
Johann Sebastian Bach	141	Tony Blair	232
Francis Bacon	143	William Blake	234
Roger Bacon	145	Konrad Bloch	237
Joan Baez	147	Judy Blume	239
F Lee Bailey	150	Humphrey Bogart	242
Josephine Baker	152	Julian Bond	244
George Balanchine	154	Daniel Boone	246
James Baldwin	156	John Wilkes Booth	248

William Booth	250	Al Capone	352
Lucrezia Borgia	252	Truman Capote	354
P. W. Botha	255	Frank Capra	357
Sandro Botticelli	257	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Margaret Bourke-White	259		
Boutros Boutros-Ghali	261	Volume 3: Car–Da	
Ray Bradbury	264	Lázaro Cárdenas	361
Ed Bradley	266	Stokely Carmichael	363
Mathew Brady	269	Andrew Carnegie	367
Johannes Brahms	271	Lewis Carroll	370
Louis Braille	273	Johnny Carson	372
Louis Brandeis	275	Kit Carson	374
Marlon Brando	278	Rachel Carson	377
Leonid Brezhnev	280	Jimmy Carter	379
Charlotte Brontë	283	George Washington Carver	383
Emily Brontë	284	Pablo Casals	386
Gwendolyn Brooks	286	Mary Cassatt	388
Helen Gurley Brown	289	Vernon and Irene Castle	390
James Brown	291	Fidel Castro	393
John Brown	294	Willa Cather	397
Rachel Fuller Brown	297	Catherine of Aragon	399
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	299	Catherine the Great	401
Robert Browning	302	Henry Cavendish	404
Pat Buchanan	305	Anders Celsius	407
Pearl S. Buck	308	Miguel de Cervantes	408
Buddha	310	Paul Cézanne	411
Ralph Bunche	312	Marc Chagall	414
Warren Burger	314	Wilt Chamberlain	416
Robert Burns	317	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	419
Aaron Burr	320	Charlie Chaplin	421
George Bush	323	Charlemagne	424
George W. Bush	326	Charles, Prince of Wales	427
Laura Bush	329	Ray Charles	430
Lord Byron	331	Geoffrey Chaucer	433
Julius Caesar	335	César Chávez	436
Caligula	338	Dennis Chavez	438
Maria Callas	340	Linda Chavez	440
Cab Calloway	342	Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	443
John Calvin	344	John Cheever	447
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	346	Anton Chekhov	449
Albert Camus	349	Dick Cheney	451

Mary Boykin Chesnut	454
Chiang Kai-shek	456
Julia Child	459
Shirley Chisholm	461
Frédéric Chopin	464
Jean Chrétien	467
Agatha Christie	469
Winston Churchill	472
Marcus Tullius Cicero	475
Liz Claiborne	478
Cleopatra VII	480
Bill Clinton	483
Hillary Rodham Clinton	487
Ty Cobb	490
Nat “King” Cole	492
Bessie Coleman	494
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	496
Marva Collins	499
Michael Collins	501
Confucius	503
Sean Connery	506
Joseph Conrad	508
Nicolaus Copernicus	510
Aaron Copland	513
Francis Ford Coppola	515
Bill Cosby	518
Jacques Cousteau	521
Noel Coward	523
Michael Crichton	525
Davy Crockett	527
Oliver Cromwell	529
Walter Cronkite	532
E. E. Cummings	535
Marie Curie	538
Roald Dahl	543
Dalai Lama	546
Salvador Dali	549
Clarence Darrow	551
Charles Darwin	554
Bette Davis	556
Miles Davis	558

Ossie Davis	561
Sammy Davis Jr.	563
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 4: De–Ga

James Dean	567
Claude Debussy	569
Ruby Dee	571
Daniel Defoe	574
Edgar Degas	576
Charles de Gaulle	579
F. W. de Klerk	581
Cecil B. DeMille	585
Deng Xiaoping	587
René Descartes	590
Hernando de Soto	592
John Dewey	594
Diana, Princess of Wales	597
Charles Dickens	600
Emily Dickinson	603
Denis Diderot	606
Joe DiMaggio	608
Walt Disney	611
Elizabeth Dole	613
Placido Domingo	616
Donatello	619
John Donne	621
Fyodor Dostoevsky	624
Frederick Douglass	626
Arthur Conan Doyle	629
Francis Drake	632
Alexandre Dumas	634
Paul Laurence Dunbar	636
Pierre du Pont	638
François Duvalier	640
Amelia Earhart	643
George Eastman	646
Clint Eastwood	648
Thomas Edison	650
Albert Einstein	654
Dwight D. Eisenhower	657

Mamie Eisenhower	661	Karl Friedrich Gauss	775
Joycelyn Elders	662	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
George Eliot	665		
T. S. Eliot	668	Volume 5: Ge–I	
Elizabeth I	672	Hans Geiger	779
Elizabeth II	675	Theodor Geisel	781
Duke Ellington	678	Genghis Khan	784
Ralph Waldo Emerson	680	J. Paul Getty	786
Desiderius Erasmus	683	Kahlil Gibran	788
Euclid	686	Althea Gibson	790
Euripides	688	Dizzy Gillespie	792
Medgar Evers	690	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	794
Gabriel Fahrenheit	695	Whoopi Goldberg	797
Fannie Farmer	696	William Golding	800
Louis Farrakhan	698	Samuel Gompers	801
William Faulkner	701	Jane Goodall	804
Dianne Feinstein	704	Benny Goodman	807
Enrico Fermi	707	Mikhail Gorbachev	809
Geraldine Ferraro	710	Berry Gordy Jr.	813
Bobby Fischer	713	Al Gore	816
Ella Fitzgerald	715	Jay Gould	818
F. Scott Fitzgerald	718	Stephen Jay Gould	821
Gustave Flaubert	721	Katharine Graham	824
Malcolm Forbes	723	Martha Graham	827
Henry Ford	725	Cary Grant	829
Francis of Assisi	729	Graham Greene	831
Benjamin Franklin	731	Wayne Gretzky	833
Sigmund Freud	735	Brothers Grimm	836
Betty Friedan	738	Woody Guthrie	838
Robert Frost	741	Alex Haley	843
John Kenneth Galbraith	745	Alexander Hamilton	846
Galen	748	Oscar Hammerstein	849
Galileo	750	John Hancock	852
George Gallup	753	George Frideric Handel	854
Indira Gandhi	754	Thomas Hardy	857
Mohandas Gandhi	758	Stephen Hawking	860
Gabriel García Márquez	762	Nathaniel Hawthorne	862
Judy Garland	764	William Randolph Hearst	865
Marcus Garvey	767	Werner Heisenberg	868
Bill Gates	769	Joseph Heller	870
Paul Gauguin	773	Lillian Hellman	872

Ernest Hemingway	875
Jimi Hendrix	878
Henry VIII	880
Patrick Henry	883
Audrey Hepburn	886
Katharine Hepburn	888
Herod the Great	891
William Herschel	893
Thor Heyerdahl	895
Edmund Hillary	898
S. E. Hinton	900
Hippocrates	902
Hirohito	904
Alfred Hitchcock	907
Adolf Hitler	909
Ho Chi Minh	912
Thomas Hobbes	915
Billie Holiday	918
Oliver Wendell Holmes	920
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	923
Homer	926
Soichiro Honda	929
bell hooks	931
Benjamin Hooks	933
Bob Hope	936
Anthony Hopkins	938
Lena Horne	940
Harry Houdini	943
Gordie Howe	946
Julia Ward Howe	949
Howard Hughes	951
Langston Hughes	954
Victor Hugo	957
Zora Neale Hurston	960
Saddam Hussein	962
Lee Iacocca	967
Henrik Ibsen	970
Imhotep	972
Washington Irving	975
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 6: J–L

Andrew Jackson	979
Jesse Jackson	983
Michael Jackson	986
Reggie Jackson	989
P. D. James	991
Thomas Jefferson	994
Mae Jemison	997
Jesus of Nazareth	1000
Jiang Zemin	1003
Joan of Arc	1005
Steve Jobs	1007
Elton John	1011
John Paul II	1013
Lyndon B. Johnson	1016
Magic Johnson	1020
Samuel Johnson	1023
Al Jolson	1025
James Earl Jones	1027
Quincy Jones	1029
Ben Jonson	1032
Michael Jordan	1034
James Joyce	1038
Benito Juárez	1040
Carl Jung	1043
Franz Kafka	1047
Wassily Kandinsky	1050
Immanuel Kant	1052
John Keats	1054
Helen Keller	1056
Gene Kelly	1058
Edward Kennedy	1061
John F. Kennedy	1064
John F. Kennedy Jr.	1069
Robert Kennedy	1071
Johannes Kepler	1074
Jack Kerouac	1076
Charles F. Kettering	1078
Ayatollah Khomeini	1081
Nikita Khrushchev	1083
B. B. King	1086

Billie Jean King	1089	Dolley Madison	1191
Coretta Scott King	1091	James Madison	1194
Martin Luther King Jr.	1094	Madonna	1197
Stephen King	1098	Ferdinand Magellan	1201
Rudyard Kipling	1101	Najib Mahfuz	1203
Henry Kissinger	1104	Norman Mailer	1205
Calvin Klein	1107	Bernard Malamud	1208
Kublai Khan	1109	Malcolm X	1210
Marquis de Lafayette	1113	David Mamet	1214
Lao Tzu	1115	Nelson Mandela	1216
Ralph Lauren	1117	Édouard Manet	1219
Emma Lazarus	1119	Wilma Mankiller	1221
Mary Leakey	1121	Mickey Mantle	1224
Bruce Lee	1124	Mao Zedong	1226
Spike Lee	1126	Rocky Marciano	1230
Tsung-Dao Lee	1129	Ferdinand Marcos	1233
Vladimir Lenin	1131	Marcus Aurelius	1236
Leonardo da Vinci	1136	Marie Antoinette	1238
C. S. Lewis	1139	Mark Antony	1240
Carl Lewis	1141	Thurgood Marshall	1243
Sinclair Lewis	1144	Karl Marx	1246
Roy Lichtenstein	1146	Mary, Queen of Scots	1249
Maya Lin	1148	Cotton Mather	1252
Abraham Lincoln	1150	Henri Matisse	1255
Charles Lindbergh	1154	Mayo Brothers	1258
Carl Linnaeus	1157	Willie Mays	1261
Joseph Lister	1159	Joseph McCarthy	1264
Andrew Lloyd Webber	1161	Hattie McDaniel	1267
Alain Locke	1163	John McEnroe	1270
John Locke	1166	Terry McMillan	1273
Jack London	1168	Aimee Semple McPherson	1275
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	1170	Margaret Mead	1277
Joe Louis	1173	Catherine de' Medici	1281
George Lucas	1175	Golda Meir	1284
Patrice Lumumba	1178	Rigoberta Menchú	1286
Martin Luther	1181	Felix Mendelssohn	1289
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Kweisi Mfume	1292
		Michelangelo	1295
		Harvey Milk	1298
Volume 7: M–Ne		John Stuart Mill	1301
Douglas MacArthur	1185	Edna St. Vincent Millay	1303
Niccolò Machiavelli	1188		

Arthur Miller	1305	Manuel Noriega	1401
Henry Miller	1308	Jessye Norman	1404
Slobodan Milosevic	1310	Nostradamus	1406
John Milton	1313	Rudolf Nureyev	1409
Joan Miró	1316	Joyce Carol Oates	1413
Molière	1318	Sandra Day O'Connor	1416
Claude Monet	1320	Georgia O'Keefe	1420
Thelonious Monk	1323	Laurence Olivier	1422
Marilyn Monroe	1325	Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	1425
Joe Montana	1327	Eugene O'Neill	1428
Montesquieu	1329	George Orwell	1430
Maria Montessori	1331	Ovid	1432
Thomas More	1334	Jesse Owens	1435
Jim Morrison	1336	Mohammad Reza Pahlavi	1439
Toni Morrison	1338	Arnold Palmer	1441
Samuel F. B. Morse	1341	Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus	1443
Moses	1343	Charlie Parker	1445
Grandma Moses	1345	Blaise Pascal	1447
Mother Teresa	1347	Louis Pasteur	1450
Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart	1350	Linus Pauling	1453
Hosni Mubarak	1353	Luciano Pavarotti	1456
Muhammad	1355	Ivan Pavlov	1459
Elijah Muhammad	1358	Anna Pavlova	1462
John Muir	1360	I. M. Pei	1464
Edvard Munch	1362	Pelé.	1467
Rupert Murdoch	1364	William Penn	1469
Benito Mussolini	1367	Pericles	1472
Vladimir Nabokov	1371	Eva Perón	1474
Ralph Nader	1373	Jean Piaget	1477
Napoleon Bonaparte	1376	Pablo Picasso	1479
Ogden Nash	1379	Sylvia Plath	1483
Nefertiti	1381	Plato	1485
Isaac Newton	1382	Pocahontas	1488
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Edgar Allan Poe	1490
		Sidney Poitier	1493
		Pol Pot	1495
		Marco Polo	1498
		Juan Ponce de León	1501
		Alexander Pope	1502
		Cole Porter	1505
		Katherine Anne Porter	1507
Volume 8: Ni–Re			
Friedrich Nietzsche	1387		
Florence Nightingale	1390		
Richard Nixon	1392		
Alfred Nobel	1397		
Isamu Noguchi	1398		

Emily Post	1509	Richard Rodgers	1610
Colin Powell	1511	Auguste Rodin	1613
Dith Pran	1514	Will Rogers	1615
Elvis Presley	1517	Rolling Stones	1618
André Previn	1520	Eleanor Roosevelt	1621
Leontyne Price	1522	Franklin D. Roosevelt	1624
E. Annie Proulx	1524	Theodore Roosevelt	1628
Marcel Proust	1526	Diana Ross	1631
Ptolemy I	1528	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	1634
Joseph Pulitzer	1531	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	1636
George Pullman	1533	Carl Rowan	1639
Aleksandr Pushkin	1535	J. K. Rowling	1641
Vladimir Putin	1537	Peter Paul Rubens	1643
Pythagoras	1540	Wilma Rudolph	1646
Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	1543	Salman Rushdie	1649
Walter Raleigh	1547	Babe Ruth	1651
Sri Ramakrishna	1550	Nolan Ryan	1653
A. Philip Randolph	1552	Albert Sabin	1657
Harun al-Rashid	1555	Carl Sagan	1659
Ronald Reagan	1557	Andrei Sakharov	1662
Christopher Reeve	1561	J. D. Salinger	1664
Erich Maria Remarque	1564	Jonas Salk	1667
Rembrandt	1566	George Sand	1669
Janet Reno	1568	Carl Sandburg	1671
Pierre Auguste Renoir	1571	Margaret Sanger	1673
Paul Revere	1574	Jean-Paul Sartre	1676
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Oskar Schindler	1678
		Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	1681
		Franz Schubert	1684
		Charles M. Schulz	1687
Volume 9: Rh–S		Martin Scorsese	1690
Cecil Rhodes	1577	Walter Scott	1693
Condoleezza Rice	1580	Haile Selassie	1696
Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	1583	Selena	1698
Sally Ride	1585	Sequoyah	1701
Leni Riefenstahl	1588	William Shakespeare	1702
Cal Ripken Jr.	1591	George Bernard Shaw	1706
Diego Rivera	1593	Mary Shelley	1708
Paul Robeson	1596	Percy Shelley	1711
Maximilien de Robespierre	1599	Beverly Sills	1714
Smokey Robinson	1601	Neil Simon	1716
John D. Rockefeller	1604		
Norman Rockwell	1607		

Frank Sinatra	1719
Upton Sinclair	1722
Isaac Bashevis Singer	1724
Bessie Smith	1727
Socrates	1729
Stephen Sondheim	1732
Sophocles	1734
Steven Spielberg	1737
Benjamin Spock	1740
Joseph Stalin	1743
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	1747
Edith Stein	1749
Gertrude Stein	1752
John Steinbeck	1755
Robert Louis Stevenson	1757
Bram Stoker	1759
Oliver Stone	1761
Tom Stoppard	1764
Harriet Beecher Stowe	1766
Antonio Stradivari	1769
Johann Strauss	1771
Igor Stravinsky	1773
Barbra Streisand	1776
Sun Yat-sen	1779
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 10: T–Z

Maria Tallchief	1785
Amy Tan	1787
Elizabeth Taylor	1790
Peter Ilych Tchaikovsky	1792
Alfred, Lord Tennyson	1795
Valentina Tereshkova	1798
William Makepeace Thackeray	1801
Twyla Tharp	1804
Clarence Thomas	1807
Dylan Thomas	1810
Henry David Thoreau	1813
Jim Thorpe	1816
James Thurber	1819

Marshal Tito	1821
J. R. R. Tolkien	1824
Leo Tolstoy	1827
Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	1830
Eiji Toyoda	1832
Harry S. Truman	1834
Donald Trump	1837
Sojourner Truth	1840
Tu Fu	1843
Tutankhamen	1845
Desmond Tutu	1847
Mark Twain	1850
John Updike	1855
Vincent Van Gogh	1859
Jan Vermeer	1862
Jules Verne	1864
Amerigo Vespucci	1867
Victoria	1869
Gore Vidal	1872
Virgil	1874
Antonio Vivaldi	1877
Voltaire	1879
Wernher von Braun	1882
Kurt Vonnegut	1884
Richard Wagner	1889
Alice Walker	1891
Madame C. J. Walker	1894
Barbara Walters	1897
An Wang	1900
Booker T. Washington	1903
George Washington	1906
James Watt	1910
John Wayne	1913
Daniel Webster	1916
Noah Webster	1919
Orson Welles	1922
Eudora Welty	1925
Edith Wharton	1928
James Whistler	1929
E. B. White	1932
Walt Whitman	1935

Elie Wiesel	1938	Virginia Woolf	1962
Oscar Wilde	1940	William Wordsworth	1965
Laura Ingalls Wilder	1943	Wright Brothers	1969
Thornton Wilder	1946	Frank Lloyd Wright	1972
Tennessee Williams	1948	Richard Wright	1975
Woodrow Wilson	1951	William Butler Yeats	1979
Oprah Winfrey	1954	Boris Yeltsin	1982
Anna May Wong	1958	Paul Zindel	1987
Tiger Woods	1960	<i>Index</i>	xxxv



*entries by
nationality*

African American

Hank Aaron 1: 1
 Ralph Abernathy 1: 4
 Alvin Ailey 1: 34
 Muhammad Ali 1: 47
 Marian Anderson 1: 69
 Maya Angelou 1: 73
 Louis Armstrong 1: 101
 Arthur Ashe 1: 110
 Josephine Baker 1: 152
 James Baldwin 1: 156
 Benjamin Banneker 1: 166
 Count Basie 1: 177
 Chuck Berry 2: 213
 Mary McLeod Bethune 2: 215
 Julian Bond 2: 244
 Gwendolyn Brooks 2: 286

James Brown 2: 291
 Ralph Bunche 2: 312
 Stokely Carmichael 3: 363
 George Washington Carver 3: 383
 Wilt Chamberlain 3: 416
 Ray Charles 3: 430
 Benjamin Chavis Muhammad 3: 443
 Shirley Chisholm 3: 461
 Nat “King” Cole 3: 492
 Bessie Coleman 3: 494
 Marva Collins 3: 499
 Bill Cosby 3: 518
 Miles Davis 3: 558
 Ossie Davis 3: 561
 Sammy Davis Jr. 3: 563
 Ruby Dee 4: 571
 Frederick Douglass 4: 626

Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Jessye Norman	8: 1404
Joycelyn Elders	4: 662	Jesse Owens	8: 1435
Duke Ellington	4: 678	Charlie Parker	8: 1445
Medgar Evers	4: 690	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Louis Farrakhan	4: 698	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Althea Gibson	5: 790	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Alex Haley	5: 843	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Bessie Smith	9: 1727
bell hooks	5: 931	Sojourner Truth	10: 1840
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Alice Walker	10: 1891
Lena Horne	5: 940	Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Reggie Jackson	6: 989		
Mae Jemison	6: 997	<i>Albanian</i>	
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Mother Teresa	7: 1347
James Earl Jones	6: 1027		
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	<i>American</i>	
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Hank Aaron	1: 1
B. B. King	6: 1086	Ralph Abernathy	1: 4
Coretta Scott King	6: 1091	Bella Abzug	1: 7
Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094	Abigail Adams	1: 12
Spike Lee	6: 1126	Ansel Adams	1: 15
Carl Lewis	6: 1141	John Adams	1: 17
Alain Locke	6: 1163	Samuel Adams	1: 20
Malcolm X	7: 1210	Jane Addams	1: 25
Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Spiro Agnew	1: 31
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Alvin Ailey	1: 34
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Madeleine Albright	1: 37
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Louisa May Alcott	1: 39
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	Muhammad Ali	1: 47
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Woody Allen	1: 49
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Julia Alvarez	1: 54
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	American Horse	1: 57

Carl David Anderson	1: 64	Daniel Boone	2: 246
Marian Anderson	1: 69	John Wilkes Booth	2: 248
Maya Angelou	1: 73	Margaret Bourke-White	2: 259
Susan B. Anthony	1: 79	Ray Bradbury	2: 264
Virginia Apgar	1: 81	Ed Bradley	2: 266
Louis Armstrong	1: 101	Mathew Brady	2: 269
Neil Armstrong	1: 102	Louis Brandeis	2: 275
Benedict Arnold	1: 105	Marlon Brando	2: 278
Mary Kay Ash	1: 108	Gwendolyn Brooks	2: 286
Arthur Ashe	1: 110	Helen Gurley Brown	2: 289
Isaac Asimov	1: 113	James Brown	2: 291
Fred Astaire	1: 116	John Brown	2: 294
John Jacob Astor	1: 118	Rachel Fuller Brown	2: 297
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Pat Buchanan	2: 305
John James Audubon	1: 125	Pearl S. Buck	2: 308
Joan Baez	1: 147	Ralph Bunche	2: 312
F. Lee Bailey	1: 150	Warren Burger	2: 314
Josephine Baker	1: 152	Aaron Burr	2: 320
George Balanchine	1: 154	George Bush	2: 323
James Baldwin	1: 156	George W. Bush	2: 326
Lucille Ball	1: 159	Laura Bush	2: 329
David Baltimore	1: 161	Maria Callas	2: 340
Benjamin Banneker	1: 166	Cab Calloway	2: 342
Clara Barton	1: 175	Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Count Basie	1: 177	Al Capone	2: 352
William Beaumont	2: 185	Truman Capote	2: 354
Alexander Graham Bell	2: 196	Frank Capra	2: 357
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200	Stokely Carmichael	3: 363
Saul Bellow	2: 202	Andrew Carnegie	3: 367
William Bennett	2: 204	Johnny Carson	3: 372
Irving Berlin	2: 208	Kit Carson	3: 374
Leonard Bernstein	2: 210	Rachel Carson	3: 377
Chuck Berry	2: 213	Jimmy Carter	3: 379
Mary McLeod Bethune	2: 215	George Washington Carver	3: 383
Owen Bieber	2: 220	Mary Cassatt	3: 388
Billy the Kid	2: 223	Irene Castle	3: 390
Larry Bird	2: 224	Willa Cather	3: 397
Shirley Temple Black	2: 227	Wilt Chamberlain	3: 416
Judy Blume	2: 239	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	3: 419
Humphrey Bogart	2: 242	Ray Charles	3: 430
Julian Bond	2: 244	César Chávez	3: 436

Dennis Chavez	3: 438	Thomas Edison	4: 650
Linda Chavez	3: 440	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	3: 443	Dwight D. Eisenhower	4: 657
John Cheever	3: 447	Mamie Eisenhower	4: 661
Dick Cheney	3: 451	Joycelyn Elders	4: 662
Mary Boykin Chesnut	3: 454	T. S. Eliot	4: 668
Julia Child	3: 459	Duke Ellington	4: 678
Shirley Chisholm	3: 461	Ralph Waldo Emerson	4: 680
Liz Claiborne	3: 478	Medgar Evers	4: 690
Bill Clinton	3: 483	Fannie Farmer	4: 696
Hillary Rodham Clinton	3: 487	Louis Farrakhan	4: 698
Ty Cobb	3: 490	William Faulkner	4: 701
Nat "King" Cole	3: 492	Dianne Feinstein	4: 704
Bessie Coleman	3: 494	Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Marva Collins	3: 499	Geraldine Ferraro	4: 710
Aaron Copland	3: 513	Bobby Fischer	4: 713
Francis Ford Coppola	3: 515	Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715
Bill Cosby	3: 518	F. Scott Fitzgerald	4: 718
Michael Crichton	3: 525	Malcolm Forbes	4: 723
Davy Crockett	3: 527	Henry Ford	4: 725
Walter Cronkite	3: 532	Benjamin Franklin	4: 731
E. E. Cummings	3: 535	Betty Friedan	4: 738
Clarence Darrow	3: 551	Robert Frost	4: 741
Bette Davis	3: 556	John Kenneth Galbraith	4: 745
Miles Davis	3: 558	George Gallup	4: 753
Ossie Davis	3: 561	Judy Garland	4: 764
Sammy Davis Jr.	3: 563	Bill Gates	4: 769
James Dean	4: 567	Theodor Geisel	5: 781
Ruby Dee	4: 571	J. Paul Getty	5: 786
Cecil B. DeMille	4: 585	Althea Gibson	5: 790
John Dewey	4: 594	Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792
Emily Dickinson	4: 603	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	5: 794
Joe DiMaggio	4: 608	Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797
Walt Disney	4: 611	Samuel Gompers	5: 801
Elizabeth Dole	4: 613	Benny Goodman	5: 807
Frederick Douglass	4: 626	Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813
Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Al Gore	5: 816
Pierre Du Pont	4: 638	Jay Gould	5: 818
Amelia Earhart	4: 643	Stephen Jay Gould	5: 821
George Eastman	4: 646	Katharine Graham	5: 824
Clint Eastwood	4: 648	Martha Graham	5: 827

Woody Guthrie	5: 838	Helen Keller	6: 1056
Alex Haley	5: 843	Gene Kelly	6: 1058
Alexander Hamilton	5: 846	Edward Kennedy	6: 1061
Oscar Hammerstein	5: 849	John F. Kennedy	6: 1064
John Hancock	5: 852	John F. Kennedy Jr.	6: 1069
Nathaniel Hawthorne	5: 862	Robert Kennedy	6: 1071
William Randolph Hearst	5: 865	Jack Kerouac	6: 1076
Joseph Heller	5: 870	Charles F. Kettering	6: 1078
Lillian Hellman	5: 872	B. B. King	6: 1086
Ernest Hemingway	5: 875	Billie Jean King	6: 1089
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Coretta Scott King	6: 1091
Patrick Henry	5: 883	Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094
Katharine Hepburn	5: 888	Stephen King	6: 1098
S. E. Hinton	5: 900	Henry Kissinger	6: 1104
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Calvin Klein	6: 1107
Oliver Wendell Holmes	5: 920	Ralph Lauren	6: 1117
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	5: 923	Emma Lazarus	6: 1119
bell hooks	5: 931	Bruce Lee	6: 1124
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Spike Lee	6: 1126
Bob Hope	5: 936	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Lena Horne	5: 940	Carl Lewis	6: 1141
Harry Houdini	5: 943	Sinclair Lewis	6: 1144
Julia Ward Howe	5: 949	Roy Lichtenstein	6: 1146
Howard Hughes	5: 951	Abraham Lincoln	6: 1150
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Charles Lindbergh	6: 1154
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Alain Locke	6: 1163
Lee Iacocca	5: 967	Jack London	6: 1168
Washington Irving	5: 975	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	6: 1170
Andrew Jackson	6: 979	Joe Louis	6: 1173
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	George Lucas	6: 1175
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Douglas MacArthur	7: 1185
Reggie Jackson	6: 989	Dolley Madison	7: 1191
Thomas Jefferson	6: 994	James Madison	7: 1194
Mae Jemison	6: 997	Madonna	7: 1197
Steve Jobs	6: 1007	Norman Mailer	7: 1205
Lyndon B. Johnson	6: 1016	Bernard Malamud	7: 1390
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Malcolm X	7: 1210
Al Jolson	6: 1025	David Mamet	7: 1214
James Earl Jones	6: 1027	Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	Mickey Mantle	7: 1224
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Rocky Marciano	7: 1230

Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Pocahontas	8: 1488
Cotton Mather	7: 1252	Edgar Allan Poe	8: 1490
Mayo Brothers	7: 1258	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Cole Porter	8: 1505
Joseph McCarthy	7: 1264	Katherine Anne Porter	8: 1507
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Emily Post	8: 1509
John McEnroe	7: 1270	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Elvis Presley	8: 1517
Aimee Semple McPherson	7: 1275	André Previn	8: 1520
Margaret Mead	7: 1277	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	E. Annie Proulx	8: 1524
Harvey Milk	7: 1298	Joseph Pulitzer	8: 1531
Edna St. Vincent Millay	7: 1303	George Pullman	8: 1533
Arthur Miller	7: 1305	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Henry Miller	7: 1308	Ronald Reagan	8: 1557
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Christopher Reeve	8: 1561
Marilyn Monroe	7: 1325	Erich Maria Remarque	8: 1564
Joe Montana	7: 1327	Janet Reno	8: 1568
Jim Morrison	7: 1336	Paul Revere	8: 1574
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Samuel F. B. Morse	7: 1341	Sally Ride	9: 1585
Grandma Moses	7: 1345	Cal Ripken, Jr.	9: 1591
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
John Muir	7: 1360	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Vladimir Nabokov	7: 1371	John D. Rockefeller	9: 1604
Ralph Nader	7: 1373	Norman Rockwell	9: 1607
Ogden Nash	7: 1379	Richard Rodgers	9: 1610
Richard Nixon	8: 1392	Will Rogers	9: 1615
Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398	Eleanor Roosevelt	9: 1621
Jessye Norman	8: 1404	Franklin D. Roosevelt	9: 1624
Joyce Carol Oates	8: 1413	Theodore Roosevelt	9: 1628
Sandra Day O'Connor	8: 1416	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Georgia O'Keeffe	8: 1420	Carl Rowan	9: 1639
Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	8: 1425	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Eugene O'Neill	8: 1428	Babe Ruth	9: 1651
Jesse Owens	8: 1435	Nolan Ryan	9: 1653
Arnold Palmer	8: 1441	Albert Sabin	9: 1657
Charlie Parker	8: 1445	Carl Sagan	9: 1659
Linus Pauling	8: 1453	J. D. Salinger	9: 1664
I. M. Pei	8: 1464	Jonas Salk	9: 1667
Sylvia Plath	8: 1483	Carl Sandburg	9: 1671

Margaret Sanger	9: 1673	An Wang	10: 1900
Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	9: 1681	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Charles M. Schulz	9: 1687	George Washington	10: 1906
Martin Scorsese	9: 1690	John Wayne	10: 1913
Selena	9: 1698	Daniel Webster	10: 1916
Sequoyah	9: 1701	Noah Webster	10: 1919
Beverly Sills	9: 1714	Orson Welles	10: 1922
Neil Simon	9: 1716	Eudora Welty	10: 1925
Frank Sinatra	9: 1719	Edith Wharton	10: 1928
Upton Sinclair	9: 1722	James Whistler	10: 1929
Isaac Bashevis Singer	9: 1724	E. B. White	10: 1932
Bessie Smith	9: 1727	Walt Whitman	10: 1935
Stephen Sondheim	9: 1732	Elie Wiesel	10: 1938
Steven Spielberg	9: 1737	Laura Ingalls Wilder	10: 1943
Benjamin Spock	9: 1740	Thornton Wilder	10: 1946
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	9: 1747	Tennessee Williams	10: 1948
Gertrude Stein	9: 1752	Woodrow Wilson	10: 1951
John Steinbeck	9: 1755	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Oliver Stone	9: 1761	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Harriet Beecher Stowe	9: 1766	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Igor Stravinsky	9: 1773	Wright Brothers	10: 1969
Barbra Streisand	9: 1776	Frank Lloyd Wright	10: 1972
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Amy Tan	10: 1787	Paul Zindel	10: 1987
Elizabeth Taylor	10: 1790		
Twyla Tharp	10: 1804	<i>Arabian</i>	
Clarence Thomas	10: 1807	Muhammad	7: 1355
Henry David Thoreau	10: 1813		
Jim Thorpe	10: 1816	<i>Argentine</i>	
James Thurber	10: 1819	Eva Perón	8: 1474
Harry S. Truman	10: 1834		
Donald Trump	10: 1837	<i>Asian American</i>	
Sojourner Truth	10: 1840	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Mark Twain	10: 1850	Maya Lin	6: 1148
John Updike	10: 1855	Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398
Gore Vidal	10: 1872	I. M. Pei	8: 1464
Wernher von Braun	10: 1882	Amy Tan	10: 1787
Kurt Vonnegut	10: 1884	An Wang	10: 1900
Alice Walker	10: 1891	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Barbara Walters	10: 1897		

Australian

Rupert Murdoch 7: 1364

Austrian

Joy Adamson 1: 22

Alfred Adler 1: 27

Sigmund Freud 4: 735

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart 7: 1350

Franz Schubert 9: 1684

Johann Strauss 9: 1771

Belgian

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886

Brazilian

Pelé 8: 1467

Burmese

Aung San Suu Kyi 1: 130

Cambodian

Pol Pot 8: 1495

Dith Pran 8: 1514

Canadian

Margaret Atwood 1: 120

Frederick Banting 1: 168

Jean Chrétien 3: 467

John Kenneth Galbraith 4: 745

Wayne Gretzky 5: 833

Gordie Howe 5: 946

Aimee Semple McPherson 7: 1275

Chilean

Isabel Allende 1: 52

Chinese

Chiang Kai-shek 3: 456

Confucius 3: 503

Deng Xiaoping 4: 587

Jiang Zemin 6: 1003

Lao Tzu 6: 1115

Tsung-Dao Lee 6: 1129

Mao Zedong 7: 1226

I. M. Pei 8: 1464

Sun Yat-sen 9: 1779

Tu Fu 10: 1843

An Wang 10: 1900

Colombian

Gabriel García Márquez 7: 762

Congolese

Patrice Lumumba 6: 1178

Cuban

Fidel Castro 3: 393

Czech

Madeleine Albright 1: 37

Franz Kafka 6: 1047

Tom Stoppard 9: 1764

Danish

Hans Christian Andersen 1: 62

Dutch

Desiderius Erasmus 4: 683

Rembrandt 8: 1566

Vincent Van Gogh 10: 1859

Egyptian

Boutros Boutros-Ghali 2: 261

Cleopatra VII 3: 480

Imhotep 5: 972

Najib Mahfuz 7: 1203

Moses 7: 1343

Hosni Mubarak 7: 1353

Nefertiti 7: 1381

Tutankhamen 10: 1845

English

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	1: 66	Cary Grant	5: 829
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Graham Greene	5: 831
Jane Austen	1: 132	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Charles Babbage	1: 139	Thomas Hardy	5: 857
Francis Bacon	1: 143	Stephen Hawking	5: 860
Roger Bacon	1: 145	Henry VIII	5: 880
Beatles	2: 181	Alfred Hitchcock	5: 907
Elizabeth Blackwell	2: 229	Thomas Hobbes	5: 915
William Blake	2: 234	P. D. James	6: 991
William Booth	2: 250	Elton John	6: 1011
Charlotte Brontë	2: 283	Samuel Johnson	6: 1023
Emily Brontë	2: 284	Ben Jonson	6: 1032
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	2: 299	John Keats	6: 1054
Robert Browning	2: 302	Rudyard Kipling	6: 1101
Lord Byron	2: 331	Mary Leakey	6: 1121
Lewis Carroll	3: 370	Joseph Lister	6: 1159
Vernon Castle	3: 390	Andrew Lloyd Webber	6: 1161
Henry Cavendish	3: 404	John Locke	6: 1166
Charlie Chaplin	3: 421	John Stuart Mill	7: 1301
Charles, Prince of Wales	3: 427	John Milton	7: 1313
Geoffrey Chaucer	3: 433	Thomas More	7: 1334
Agatha Christie	3: 469	Isaac Newton	7: 1382
Winston Churchill	3: 472	Florence Nightingale	8: 1390
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	3: 496	Laurence Olivier	8: 1422
Joseph Conrad	3: 508	George Orwell	8: 1430
Noel Coward	3: 523	William Penn	8: 1469
Oliver Cromwell	3: 529	Alexander Pope	8: 1502
Charles Darwin	3: 554	Walter Raleigh	8: 1547
Daniel Defoe	4: 574	Cecil Rhodes	9: 1577
Diana, Princess of Wales	4: 597	Rolling Stones	9: 1618
Charles Dickens	4: 600	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	9: 1634
John Donne	4: 621	J. K. Rowling	9: 1641
Arthur Conan Doyle	4: 629	William Shakespeare	9: 1702
Francis Drake	4: 632	Mary Shelley	9: 1708
George Eliot	4: 665	Percy Shelley	9: 1711
T. S. Eliot	4: 668	Tom Stoppard	9: 1764
Elizabeth I	4: 672	Alfred, Lord Tennyson	10: 1795
Elizabeth II	4: 675	William Makepeace Thackeray	10: 1801
William Golding	5: 800	J. R. R. Tolkien	10: 1824
Jane Goodall	5: 804	Victoria	10: 1869
		Oscar Wilde	10: 1940

Virginia Woolf 10: 1963
William Wordsworth 10: 1965

Ethiopian

Haile Selassie 9: 1697

Filipino

Benigno Aquino 1: 84
Ferdinand Marcos 7: 1233

Flemish

Peter Paul Rubens 9: 1643

Frankish

Charlemagne 3: 424

French

John James Audubon 1: 125
Honoré de Balzac 1: 164
Simone de Beauvoir 2: 187
Louis Braille 2: 273
John Calvin 2: 344
Albert Camus 2: 349
Paul Cézanne 3: 411
Jacques Cousteau 3: 521
Marie Curie 3: 538
Claude Debussy 4: 569
Edgar Degas 4: 576
Charles de Gaulle 4: 579
René Descartes 4: 590
Denis Diderot 4: 606
Alexandre Dumas 4: 634
Gustave Flaubert 4: 721
Paul Gauguin 4: 773
Victor Hugo 5: 957
Joan of Arc 6: 1005
Marquis de Lafayette 6: 1113
Édouard Manet 7: 1219
Marie Antoinette 7: 1238
Henri Matisse 7: 1255

Molière 7: 1318
Claude Monet 7: 1320
Montesquieu 7: 1329
Napoleon Bonaparte 7: 1376
Nostradamus 8: 1406
Blaise Pascal 8: 1447
Louis Pasteur 8: 1450
Marcel Proust 8: 1526
Pierre Auguste Renoir 8: 1571
Armand-Jean du Plessis
 de Richelieu 9: 1583
Maximilien de Robespierre 9: 1599
Auguste Rodin 9: 1613
Jean-Jacques Rousseau 9: 1636
George Sand 9: 1669
Jean-Paul Sartre 9: 1676
Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec 10: 1830
Jan Vermeer 10: 1862
Jules Verne 10: 1864
Voltaire 10: 1879

German

Hannah Arendt 1: 91
John Jacob Astor 1: 118
Johann Sebastian Bach 1: 141
Klaus Barbie 1: 170
Ludwig van Beethoven 2: 192
Konrad Bloch 2: 237
Johannes Brahms 2: 271
Catherine the Great 3: 401
Albert Einstein 4: 654
Gabriel Fahrenheit 4: 695
Karl Friedrich Gauss 4: 775
Hans Geiger 5: 779
Brothers Grimm 5: 836
George Frideric Handel 5: 854
Werner Heisenberg 5: 868
William Herschel 5: 893
Adolf Hitler 5: 909
Franz Kafka 6: 1047
Immanuel Kant 6: 1052

Johannes Kepler 6: 1074
 Henry Kissinger 6: 1104
 Martin Luther 6: 1181
 Karl Marx 7: 1246
 Felix Mendelssohn 7: 1289
 Friedrich Nietzsche 8: 1387
 André Previn 8: 1520
 Erich Maria Remarque 8: 1564
 Leni Riefenstahl 9: 1588
 Oskar Schindler 9: 1678
 Edith Stein 9: 1749
 Wernher von Braun 10: 1882
 Richard Wagner 10: 1889

Ghanian

Kofi Annan 1: 76

Greek

Aeschylus 1: 29
 Archimedes 1: 89
 Aristophanes 1: 96
 Aristotle 1: 98
 Euclid 4: 686
 Euripides 4: 688
 Galen 4: 748
 Hippocrates 5: 902
 Homer 5: 926
 Pericles 8: 1472
 Plato 8: 1485
 Pythagoras 8: 1540
 Socrates 9: 1729
 Sophocles 9: 1734

Guatemalan

Rigoberta Menchú 7: 1286

Haitian

Jean-Bertrand Aristide 1: 93
 François Duvalier 4: 640

Hispanic American

César Chávez 3: 436
 Dennis Chavez 3: 438
 Linda Chavez 3: 440
 Selena 9: 1698

Hungarian

Joseph Pulitzer 8: 1531

Indian

Buddha 2: 310
 Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar 3: 419
 Indira Gandhi 4: 754
 Mohandas Gandhi 4: 758
 Sri Ramakrishna 8: 1550
 Salman Rushdie 9: 1649

Iranian

Ayatollah Khomeini 6: 1081
 Mohammad Reza Pahlavi 8: 1439

Iraqi

Saddam Hussein 5: 962

Irish

Samuel Beckett 2: 189
 Michael Collins 3: 501
 James Joyce 6: 1038
 C. S. Lewis 6: 1139
 George Bernard Shaw 9: 1706
 Bram Stoker 9: 1759
 Oscar Wilde 10: 1940
 William Butler Yeats 10: 1979

Israeli

Menachem Begin 2: 194
 Golda Meir 7: 1284

Italian

Fra Angelico 1: 71

Lucrezia Borgia	2: 252
Sandro Botticelli	2: 257
Caligula	2: 338
Frank Capra	2: 357
Donatello	4: 619
Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Francis of Assisi	4: 729
Galileo	4: 750
Leonardo da Vinci	6: 1136
Niccolò Machiavelli	7: 1188
Catherine de' Medici	7: 1281
Michelangelo	7: 1295
Maria Montessori	7: 1331
Benito Mussolini	7: 1367
Luciano Pavarotti	8: 1456
Antonio Stradivari	9: 1769
Amerigo Vespucci	10: 1867
Antonio Vivaldi	10: 1877

Jamaican

Marcus Garvey	4: 767
-------------------------	--------

Japanese

Hirohito	5: 904
Soichiro Honda	5: 929
Eiji Toyoda	10: 1832

Judean

Herod the Great	5: 891
---------------------------	--------

Lebanese

Kahlil Gibran	5: 788
-------------------------	--------

Libyan

Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	8: 1543
-------------------------------	---------

Lithuanian

Al Jolson	6: 1025
---------------------	---------

Macedonian

Alexander the Great	1: 43
Ptolemy I	8: 1528

Mexican

Lázaro Cárdenas	3: 361
Benito Juárez	6: 1040
Diego Rivera	9: 1593

Mongolian

Genghis Khan	5: 784
Kublai Khan	6: 1109

Native American

American Horse	1: 57
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Pocahontas	8: 1488
Sequoyah	9: 1701
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785

New Zealander

Edmund Hillary	5: 898
--------------------------	--------

Nigerian

Chinua Achebe	1: 10
-------------------------	-------

Norwegian

Thor Heyerdahl	5: 895
Henrik Ibsen	5: 970
Edvard Munch	7: 1362

Pakistani

Benazir Bhutto	2: 218
--------------------------	--------

Palestinian

Yasir Arafat	1: 86
------------------------	-------

Panamanian

Manuel Noriega 8: 1401

Persian

Harun al-Rashid 8: 1555

Polish

Baal Shem Tov 1: 137
Menachem Begin 2: 194
Frédéric Chopin 3: 464
Joseph Conrad 3: 508
Nicolaus Copernicus 3: 510
Marie Curie 3: 538
John Paul II 6: 1013
Albert Sabin 9: 1657
Isaac Bashevis Singer 9: 1724

Portuguese

Ferdinand Magellan 7: 1201

Roman

Augustus 1: 128
Julius Caesar 2: 335
Marcus Tullius Cicero 3: 475
Jesus of Nazareth 6: 1000
Marcus Aurelius 7: 1236
Mark Antony 7: 1240
Ovid 8: 1432
Virgil 10: 1874

Romanian

Elie Wiesel 10: 1939

Russian

Alexander II 1: 41
Isaac Asimov 1: 113
George Balanchine 1: 154
Irving Berlin 2: 208
Leonid Brezhnev 2: 280
Catherine the Great 3: 401

Marc Chagall 3: 414
Anton Chekhov 3: 449
Fyodor Dostoevsky 4: 624
Mikhail Gorbachev 5: 809
Wassily Kandinsky 6: 1050
Nikita Khrushchev 6: 1083
Vladimir Lenin 6: 1131
Vladimir Nabokov 7: 1371
Rudolf Nureyev 8: 1409
Ivan Pavlov 8: 1459
Anna Pavlova 8: 1462
Aleksandr Pushkin 8: 1535
Vladimir Putin 8: 1537
Andrei Sakharov 9: 1662
Joseph Stalin 9: 1743
Igor Stravinsky 9: 1773
Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky 10: 1792
Valentina Tereshkova 10: 1798
Leo Tolstoy 10: 1827
Boris Yeltsin 10: 1982

Scottish

Alexander Graham Bell 2: 196
Tony Blair 2: 232
Robert Burns 2: 317
Andrew Carnegie 3: 367
Sean Connery 3: 506
Arthur Conan Doyle 4: 629
Mary, Queen of Scots 7: 1249
John Muir 7: 1360
Walter Scott 9: 1693
Robert Louis Stevenson 9: 1757
James Watt 10: 1910

Serbian

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310

South African

Christiaan Barnard 1: 173
P. W. Botha 2: 255
F. W. de Klerk 4: 581

Nelson Mandela 7: 1216
Desmond Tutu 10: 1847

Spanish

Pablo Casals 3: 386
Catherine of Aragon 3: 399
Miguel de Cervantes 3: 408
Salvador Dali 3: 549
Hernando de Soto 4: 592
Placido Domingo 4: 616
Joan Miró 7: 1316
Pablo Picasso 8: 1479
Juan Ponce de León 8: 1501

Swedish

Ingmar Bergman 2: 206
Anders Celsius 3: 407
Carl Linnaeus 6: 1157
Alfred Nobel 8: 1397

Swiss

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886
Carl Jung 6: 1043
Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus 8: 1443
Jean Piaget 8: 1477

Tibetan

Dalai Lama 3: 546

Trinidadian

Stokely Carmichael 3: 363

Ugandan

Idi Amin 1: 59

Venetian

Marco Polo 8: 1498

Vietnamese

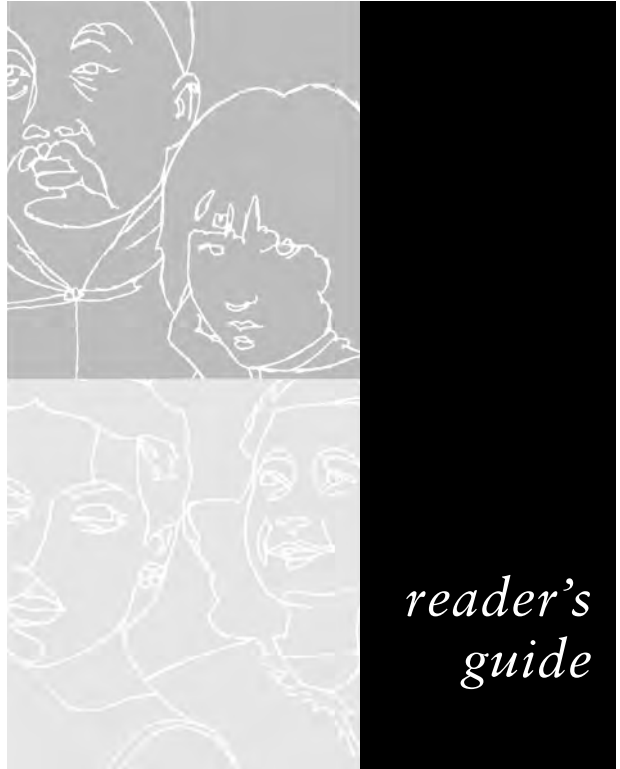
Ho Chi Minh 5: 913

Welsh

Roald Dahl 3: 543
Anthony Hopkins 5: 938
Dylan Thomas 10: 1810

Yugoslav

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310
Marshal Tito 10: 1821



reader's guide

U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography features 750 biographies of notable historic and contemporary figures from around the world. Chosen from American history, world history, literature, science and math, arts and entertainment, and the social sciences, the entries focus on the people studied most often in middle school and high school, as identified by teachers and media specialists.

The biographies are arranged alphabetically across ten volumes. The two- to four-page entries cover the early lives, influences, and careers of notable men and women of diverse fields and ethnic groups. Each essay includes birth and death information in the header and concludes with a list of sources

for further information. A contents section lists biographees by their nationality. Nearly 750 photographs and illustrations are featured, and a general index provides quick access to the people and subjects discussed throughout *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

Special thanks

Much appreciation goes to Mary Alice Anderson, media specialist at Winona Middle School in Winona, Minnesota, and Nina Levine, library media specialist at Blue Mountain Middle School in Cortlandt Manor, New York, for their assistance in developing the entry list. Many thanks also go to the following people for their important editorial contri-

butions: Taryn Benbow-Pfalzgraf (proofreading), Jodi Essey-Stapleton (copyediting and proofing), Margaret Haerens (proofreading), Courtney Mroch (copyediting), and Theresa Murray (copyediting and indexing). Special gratitude goes to Linda Mahoney at LM Design for her excellent typesetting work and her flexible attitude.

Comments and suggestions

We welcome your comments on the *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*. Please write: Editors, *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*, U•X•L, 27500 Drake Road, Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535; call toll-free: 1-800-877-4253; fax to 248-699-8097; or send e-mail via www.gale.com.



FRIEDRICH NIETZSCHE

Born: October 15, 1844

Röcken, Germany

Died: August 25, 1900

Weimar, Germany

German philosopher and poet

The German philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche predicted a European collapse into a time where no one could define truth and the end of man was desired. In works of powerful and beautiful prose (writing that differs from poetry in its rhythm and closeness to ordinary speech) and poetry he struggled to head off the disaster.

Early life

Friedrich Wilhelm Nietzsche was born on October 15, 1844, in Röcken, Germany, where his father served as a Lutheran pastor. Friedrich's father's death, when he was four years old, was distressing, which he often referred to in his later writings. Soon after, his youngest brother died, resulting in his mother moving her family in with her mother and two sisters. The death of both his father and his brother left Nietzsche in a household of women including his sister, Elizabeth.

After attending local schools in Naumburg, in 1858 Nietzsche won a scholarship to Pforta, one of the best boarding schools in Germany. Here he received a thorough training in the classics and acquired several life-



Friedrich Nietzsche.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

time friends. At the end of this period of schooling, Nietzsche, who had earlier shared the Lutheran religion of his family, found that he had ceased to accept Christianity—a view that soon hardened into outright disbelief in any God. With the highest recommendations of his Pforta teachers, Nietzsche enrolled in the University of Bonn in 1864.

There Nietzsche pursued classical studies with Friedrich Ritschl, and when Ritschl moved to Leipzig, Germany, Nietzsche followed him. Nietzsche attempted to enter into the social life of the students, even joining a dueling (formal combat with two people bearing weapons) club, but he soon discovered

that his sense of his own mission in life had distanced him from the pursuits and interests most students shared. At this time, too, Nietzsche apparently contracted syphilis (sexually transmitted disease) in a brothel (house where people trade sexual acts for money). The incurable disease gradually damaged his strong body. In middle life he suffered almost constantly from head and stomach upsets. Loneliness and physical pain were the constant background of his life—though Nietzsche later came to interpret them as the necessary conditions for his work.

Publications

Nietzsche's early publications in classical philology (study of literature and the languages of literature) so impressed his teacher that when a chair (professorship) of philology opened up at the university in Basel, Switzerland, Ritschl was able to secure it for Nietzsche, then only twenty-four years old and still without his degree. The University of Leipzig gave him his doctoral degree on the strength of his writings without requiring an examination. Nietzsche then entered upon a teaching career.

The composer (writer of music) Richard Wagner (1813–1883) had greatly influenced Nietzsche's first book, *The Birth of Tragedy* (1872), which gave an imaginative account of the forces that led to the rise of Greek tragedy (a drama that describes a struggle between a hero and a larger force or power with a sad or troubled ending) and to its later fall. Nietzsche's book ends with support of Wagner's musical drama as a revival of Greek tragedy. But no sooner had it been published than Nietzsche began to see the difference between Wagner's musical genius and the shabby mes-

sages of the Wagnerian cult (devoted followers of Wagner). From then on, though he still felt affection for Wagner personally, Nietzsche attacked ever more strongly the “decadence” of Wagner’s political and philosophical (having to do with knowledge) ideas. Two works of his last year of writing deal with the subject: *The Wagner Case* (1888) and *Nietzsche Contra Wagner* (1888).

Nietzsche’s teaching at Basel was interrupted frequently by prolonged bouts of sickness and by several months of service as a medical orderly during the Franco-Prussian War (1870–71; a conflict between France and the combined states of Germany, which resulted in the loss of some territory for France), which further irritated his illness. In April 1879 his health had weakened so much that he was driven to resign. He was given a small monthly income, and he now began a ten-year period of wandering in search of a friendly climate. Though having increasing pain from the ruthless progress of his disease, Nietzsche managed to produce one hundred one books before his final collapse. They belong to the first rank of German literature and contain a stimulating set of philosophical ideas.

Nietzsche’s philosophy

Nietzsche believed that European man was standing at a critical turning point. The advance of scientific enlightenment, in particular the Darwinian theory (Darwin’s theory that man evolved from primitive life forms), had destroyed the old religious ideas. In *Thus Spoke Zarathustra*, Nietzsche wrote: “God is dead.” Further, he declared that man, no longer “the image of God,” is a chance product of a nature uninterested in purpose or value.

The great danger is that man will find his existence meaningless. Unless a new grounding for values is provided, Nietzsche predicted a rapid weakening into destruction for society.

Nietzsche aimed in all his work to provide a new meaning for human existence in a meaningless world. In the absence of any religious guidance, men must create their own values. Nietzsche’s writings are either criticisms of the old system of values or attempts to form a new system. For European man, the traditions common to both Jewish and Christian religions were the source of the old values. Nietzsche attacked it head-on in such works as *A Genealogy of Morals* (1887) and *The Antichrist* (1888).

In Nietzsche’s constructive works he sought to find in life itself a force that would serve to set human existence apart. He found it in the theory of the urge to dominate and master. All creatures desire this, but only man has achieved sufficient power to turn the force back on himself. Self-mastery and self-overcoming are the qualities that give a unique value to human life. The ideal man, the “superman,” will delight in being the master of his life, measuring out his passions, and giving style to his character. His power over himself and his life will give him a flood of creative energy. This will be the new reality and the standard by which all of life is judged.

All morality (right conduct) is therefore the result of overcoming one’s self, but Nietzsche had a standard by which to tell between the morality of the superman from the morality of Christianity. Christianity is based on the concept of afterlife. It attacks the idea of being master of your life, calling that idea “pride,” and sees natural passions as evil, putting guilt and fear onto its followers.

The new morality, on the other hand, will support life, encourage self-assertion, and do away with guilt. In *Thus Spake Zarathustra* (1883) Nietzsche formed the ultimate test of the superman's statements. Confronted with the notion that the world process is cyclical (circular or in sequence) and eternal, the superman still supports life. Let it be—again and again—with all its joys and sorrows.

Last days

On January 3, 1889, Nietzsche collapsed on a street in Turin, Italy. When he regained consciousness, his sanity was gone. He began to send off wild letters to friends and strangers signed “Dionysus—the Crucified.” He was taken to his mother's home and lived on in a semiconscious state, sinking ever further from the real world until his death on August 25, 1900.

For More Information

- Andreas-Salomé, Lou. *Nietzsche*. Redding Ridge, CT: Black Swan Books, 1988.
- Elsner, Gary. *Nietzsche: A Philosophical Biography*. Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 1992.
- Hollingdale, R. J. *Nietzsche: The Man and His Philosophy*. Rev. ed. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1999.
- Kaufmann, Walter. *Nietzsche: Philosopher, Psychologist, Antichrist*. 4th ed. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1974.
- Nietzsche, Friedrich. *Selected Letters of Friedrich Nietzsche*. Edited by Christopher Middleton. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1969. Reprint, Indianapolis: Hackett, 1996.

FLORENCE NIGHTINGALE

Born: May 12, 1820

Florence, Italy

Died: August 13, 1910

London, England

English nurse

The English nurse Florence Nightingale was the founder of modern nursing and made outstanding contributions to the knowledge and improvement of public health.

Early years and study

Florence Nightingale was born in Florence, Italy, on May 12, 1820; she was named after the city of her birth. Her father, William E. Nightingale, was a wealthy landowner who had inherited an estate in Derbyshire, England. Like many members of the wealthy class, he and Florence's mother, Fanny, dedicated themselves to the pursuit of active social lives. Florence and her sister, Parthenope, were tutored by their father in languages, mathematics, and history. Though Florence was tempted by the idea of a brilliant social life and marriage, she also wanted to achieve independence, importance in some field of activity, and obedience to God through service to society.

In 1844 Nightingale decided that she wanted to work in hospitals. Her family objected strongly to her plan; hospital conditions at that time were known to be terrible, and nurses were untrained and thought to be of questionable morals. Ignoring all resistance, Nightingale managed to visit some hos-

pitals and health facilities. She then received permission from her parents to spend a few months at Kaiserworth, a German training school for nurses and female teachers. In 1853 she became superintendent of the London charity-supported Institution for Sick Gentlewomen in Distressed Circumstances. This opportunity allowed her to become independent from her family and also to try out new ideas in organizing and managing an institution, conducted in a scientific, nonreligious setting.

War efforts

In October of 1854 Nightingale organized a party of thirty-eight nurses, mostly from different religious orders, for service in the Crimean War (1853–56), in which Great Britain, France, and Sardinia fought against Russian expansion in Europe. The nurses arrived at Constantinople (now Istanbul, Turkey) in November. Conditions at the British base hospital at Scutari (now Uskudar, Turkey) were awful and grew steadily worse as the number of sick and wounded soldiers rapidly increased. The British army did not have enough medical services and used what it did have poorly—a confusing and complicated supply system actually cut off deliveries to the patients. The Barrack Hospital, where Nightingale and her nurses worked and lived, was built on a massive cesspool (an underground area into which liquid waste flows), which poisoned the water and even the building itself. The general attitude was that the common soldier was a drunken brute on whom all comforts would be wasted.

Nightingale saw that her first task was to get the military doctors to accept her and the other nurses. Her determined personality,



Florence Nightingale.

combined with the continuing arrival of the newly sick and wounded, soon brought this about. She also had a large fund of private money—much of it raised by the *London Times*—with which she could obtain badly needed supplies. By the end of 1854, some order had been created and the hospital was cleaner—not only through Nightingale’s efforts but also through improvements made by a governmental sanitary commission. The death rate among patients fell by two-thirds. But with improvement came new problems, including anger from officials who were found at fault for the poor hospital conditions and rising disputes among the nurses.

Hospital reform efforts back home

Florence Nightingale left Scutari in the summer of 1856, soon after the war ended. By then she was famous among the troops and the public as the “Lady with the Lamp” and the “Nightingale in the East.” This popular image is not quite accurate. Although she did some active nursing in the wards, Nightingale’s real work lay outside the expression of tenderness and concern. It began with her refusal to respond to public praise and with her use of her influence in high places, including with the queen, to fight for effective reform of the entire system of military hospitals and medical care.

In *Notes on Matters Affecting the Health, Efficiency and Hospital Administration of the British Army* (1857) Nightingale used the experiences of the war to prove that a new system was necessary. Within five years this effort led to the reconstruction of the administrative structure of the War Office. Nightingale’s *Notes on Hospitals* (1859) detailed the proper arrangements for civilian institutions (places that were not a part of the military). In the next year she presided over the founding of the Nightingale School for the training of nurses at St. Thomas’s Hospital in London, England. After 1858 she was recognized as the leading expert on military and civilian sanitation (the removal of water-transported waste) in India. She also believed that irrigation (the supplying of water to an area using artificial methods) was the solution to the problem of famine. In 1907 Nightingale was the first woman to be awarded the Order of Merit.

Later years

Nightingale’s personality is well documented. She rebelled against the idle, shel-

tered existence of her family her entire life. She achieved a leading position in a world dominated by men, driving and directing her male coworkers as hard as she did herself. She often complained that women were selfish, and she had no time for the growing women’s rights movement. But she also developed an idea of spiritual (relating to or affecting the spirit) motherhood and saw herself as the mother of the men of the British army—“my children”—whom she had saved. Florence Nightingale never really recovered from the physical strain of the Crimean War. After 1861 she rarely left her home and was confined to her bed much of the time. She died on August 13, 1910, in London, England.

For More Information

- Dossey, Barbara Montgomery. *Florence Nightingale: Mystic, Visionary, Healer*. Springhouse, PA: Springhouse Corp., 2000.
- Small, Hugh. *Florence Nightingale: Avenging Angel*. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1999.
- Vickers, Rebecca. *Florence Nightingale*. Chicago: Heinemann Library, 2000.
- Wellman, Sam. *Florence Nightingale: Lady with the Lamp*. Uhrichsville, OH: Barbour, 1999.
- Woodham-Smith, Cecil. *Florence Nightingale*. New ed. London: Constable, 1996.

**RICHARD
NIXON**

Born: January 9, 1913
Yorba Linda, California

Died: April 22, 1994

Yorba Linda, California

American president and vice president

Richard Nixon was the thirty-seventh president of the United States. He successfully served as a member of the House of Representatives and of the Senate and was vice president under Dwight Eisenhower (1890–1969). Despite all his political triumphs, Nixon will probably best be remembered as the first president to resign from office.

Young Nixon in California

Richard Milhous Nixon was born on his father's lemon farm in Yorba Linda, California, on January 9, 1913. Of the four other sons in the family, two died in childhood. After the farm failed, the family moved to Whittier, California, where Nixon's father ran a grocery store. Nixon had a troubled childhood. Raised by a sometimes abusive father and a controlling mother, Nixon adopted parts of both his parents' personalities. Some historians have believed that, as a result of his childhood, Nixon had a drive to succeed and felt he had to pretend to be "good" while using any tactics necessary to achieve his goals.

At Whittier College, Nixon excelled as a student and a debater. He was president of his freshman class and, as a senior, president of the student body. Graduating second in his class in 1934, he won a scholarship to Duke University Law School. Although he was a member of the national scholastic law fraternity, he failed to find a job in one of the big New York law firms. This failure, along with the views of his father, left him with a strong dislike of the "eastern establishment."

Reluctantly, Nixon returned to Whittier and began practicing law. Soon afterward, Nixon met Thelma Catherine Patricia (Pat) Ryan (1912–1993), a high school teacher. The two were married in 1940 and would have two daughters, Patricia and Julie.

Public service, then soldier

Shortly before the United States entered World War II (1939–45), where American-led forces faced-off against Germany, Japan, and Italy, Nixon began working for the federal government in the Office of Emergency Management. Nixon soon left this post and entered the navy as a lieutenant junior-grade in August 1942. He was sent to the Pacific as an operations officer with the South Pacific Combat Air Transport Command. Fourteen months later he returned to the United States to work as a lawyer in uniform.

In September 1945 a group of Republicans in Whittier asked him to run for Congress. He jumped at the opportunity. Nixon left the navy in January 1946 and began his victorious campaign, in which he defeated a five-term congressman.

Congressional activities and national fame

As congressman, Nixon was assigned to the House Labor Committee and to the Select Committee on Foreign Aid. In 1947 he and other committee members toured Europe. Nixon quickly established a reputation as an internationalist in foreign policy, proving that he worked well with foreign nations.

As a member of the House Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC), Nixon became a leading anti-Communist crusader. (Communism is a political system where

goods and services are owned and controlled by the government.) He first attracted national attention as a member of HUAC when he led the suit that resulted in the conviction of Alger Hiss (1904–1996), a former State Department official charged with Communist connections. While Nixon gained national attention fighting the threat of Communism, he also caught the attention of General Dwight Eisenhower (1890–1969), who chose him as his running mate in his successful presidential campaign of 1952. Eisenhower in part recruited Nixon in hopes of drawing valuable support in the West.

The vice presidency

As vice president, Nixon continued to please his supporters and anger his critics. He acted as the chief political spokesman in Eisenhower's administration. Among Nixon's assignments was foreign travel. In office less than a year, Nixon made an extended trip through Asia, visiting, among other places, Hanoi, North Vietnam, then under French control. He established many useful relationships on these trips and impressed critics at home with his knowledge of foreign affairs.

On a trip to Latin America in 1958, he was set upon by mobs but handled himself coolly. In 1959 he visited Poland and the Soviet Union, a former Communist nation made up of Russia and other states. While in Moscow, his meeting with Soviet premier Nikita Khrushchev (1894–1971) prepared the way for Khrushchev's later visit to the United States to meet with Eisenhower.

Running for president

In 1960 Nixon won the Republican presidential nomination and chose Henry Cabot

Lodge (1902–1985) as his running mate. The campaign against the Democratic team of Senators John F. Kennedy (1917–1963) and Lyndon Johnson (1908–1973) was close from the beginning. In the first of four televised debates with Kennedy, Nixon did not sharply challenge his opponent and appeared cold and distant, a far cry from the charming Kennedy. But the election was still close, and he lost by some one hundred thousand votes out of the sixty-eight million cast.

After the defeat, Nixon returned to Los Angeles to practice law. In 1964, after the Republican defeat by President Lyndon Johnson, it became clear that Nixon again considered himself a serious presidential contender. In 1968, winning his party's presidential nomination, he picked Governor Spiro T. Agnew (1918–1996) of Maryland as his running mate. Nixon and Agnew ran against the Democratic team of Hubert Humphrey (1911–1978) and Edmund Muskie (1914–). Third-party candidate George Wallace (1919–1998) of Alabama, a threat to both sides, eventually drew support away from Humphrey and cleared a path for Nixon's successful election to the White House.

The presidency

Nixon took the oath of office on January 20, 1969. In his inaugural address, or first speech as president, he appealed for harmony among American society. At that time American society was divided over the issues of domestic racial unrest and the Vietnam War (1955–75; a war in which American forces were aiding South Vietnam's fight against Communist North Vietnam). He promised to bring the nation together again.

Nixon's first foreign objective—to negotiate, or bargain for, an end to the Vietnam War—was unsuccessful. Despite repeated attempts, negotiations with North Vietnam at the Paris peace talks were unproductive. Meanwhile, in June he began replacing American troops with South Vietnamese troops. After a conference with South Vietnam president Nguyen Van Thieu (1923–2001), Nixon ordered 25,000 American combat troops brought home. By the end of 1969, having ordered 110,000 troops home, he expressed hope that all American combat troops would be out of Vietnam by the end of 1970. It would take two more years until most American ground troops had been withdrawn from Vietnam.

International relations

In his second month in office, Nixon embarked on a tour of Western Europe. His official visit to Romania made him the first American president to visit a Communist country. While on an Asian tour, the president called for cooperative efforts and promised American material aid but said that Asian countries must defend their freedoms with their own troops. In his first year, the president signed a treaty with the Soviet Union that worked toward placing limits on the production of nuclear arms.

In 1971 Nixon made the dramatic announcements that he would visit Peking, China, and Moscow, Soviet Union, in the first half of 1972. He also announced progress in the negotiations with the Soviet Union on an arms limitation treaty. The visit to Peking took place in February and he was invited to meet Chairman Mao Zedong (1893–1976), a mark of high respect.



*Richard Nixon.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

The fall from grace

In the presidential election of 1972, Nixon and Agnew ran against Democrats George McGovern (1922–) and Sargent Shriver (1915–). The election was a landslide for Nixon, but no one was expecting what would happen next. During his last election campaign, what first appeared as a minor burglary was to become the beginning of the end of Nixon's political career. A break-in at Democratic national headquarters in the Watergate apartment complex in Washington, D.C., was linked to Republicans.

During the trial of six men charged in the crime, the existence of the cover-up began to emerge and government officials fell like dominos in its path. By October 1973, as the Watergate investigation continued, Nixon lost several top aides as well as his vice president. Agnew resigned before pleading no contest to federal charges of receiving bribes, failing to pay his taxes properly, and other crimes while serving as governor of Maryland.

Soon the U.S. Supreme Court forced Nixon to turn over tape recordings he made during the election. The tapes showed he obstructed, or blocked, justice in stopping a Federal Bureau of Investigations (FBI) probe of the Watergate burglary. On August 9, 1974, in national disgrace, he became the first president of the United States to choose to leave office before the end of his term. He boarded a plane with his wife and returned to his California home, ending his public career. A month later, in a controversial move, President Gerald Ford (1913–) issued an unconditional pardon for any offenses Nixon might have committed while president.

Private citizen

Nixon led a quiet life until the criticism from the Watergate scandal had softened. Nixon then emerged in a role of elder statesman, visiting countries in Asia as well as returning to the Soviet Union and China. He also consulted with the administrations of George Bush (1924–) and Bill Clinton (1946–) and wrote his memoirs, or a book of his memories, and other books on international affairs and politics.

The Richard M. Nixon Library and Birthplace opened in the early 1990s in

Yorba Linda. On January 20, 1994, in what would be his last public appearance, ceremonies honoring him on the twenty-fifth anniversary of his first inauguration were held. He also announced the creation of the Center for Peace and Freedom, a policy center at the Richard M. Nixon Library and Birthplace.

Richard Nixon died of a stroke on April 22, 1994. A state funeral was held five days later in Yorba Linda, where President Clinton and others praised Nixon and his achievements. However Nixon is remembered, he will most likely never escape the shadow of Watergate.

For More Information

Ambrose, Stephen E. *Nixon*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1987.

Bernstein, Carl, and Bob Woodward. *All the President's Men*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1974. Reprint, 1999.

Nixon, Richard. *RN: The Memoirs of Richard Nixon*. New York: Grosset, 1978. Reprint, New York: Simon & Schuster, 1990.

Reeves, Richard. *President Nixon: Alone in the White House*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 2001.

Ripley, C. Peter. *Richard Nixon*. New York: Chelsea House, 1987.

Wicker, Tom. *One of Us: Richard Nixon and the American Dream*. New York: Random House, 1991.

Woodward, Bob, and Carl Bernstein. *The Final Days*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1976.

ALFRED NOBEL

Born: October 21, 1833

Stockholm, Sweden

Died: December 10, 1896

San Remo, Italy

Swedish chemist

The Swedish chemist Alfred Nobel invented dynamite and other explosives, but he is best remembered for using the bulk of his personal fortune to create the Nobel Foundation, which awards Nobel Prizes every year to those who benefit mankind.

Early life

Alfred Bernhard Nobel was born October 21, 1833, in Stockholm, Sweden, the son of Immanuel and Andrietta Ahlsell Nobel. He was often sick as a child and had to be attended to almost constantly by his mother. He attended St. Jakob's School in Stockholm in 1841 and 1842, but then the family moved to St. Petersburg, Russia, where Nobel's father, a chemist and inventor, had established an engineering and weapons company. Nobel and his brothers received private tutoring from 1843 to 1850. In 1850 Nobel set out on a two-year tour of western Europe and the United States, learning different languages and seeking ideas and contacts in engineering. Russia's involvement in the Crimean War (1853–56) led to great profits for Nobel's father's company, but after the war ended, weapons contracts were cancelled, and Nobel's father soon lost all of his money.

Explosive discoveries

Alfred Nobel remained in Russia when his father returned to Stockholm in 1858. Both were doing studies of nitroglycerin, a violent explosive liquid. In 1863 Alfred rejoined his father, and in that year he succeeded in exploding nitroglycerin at will by using gunpowder to set it off. In 1865 he introduced the use of exploding mercury to provide the charge for the blast, and this turned out to be the key to all the later high explosives. Nobel patented his invention and traveled around trying to cash in on it. Factories built to manufacture nitroglycerin were established near Stockholm and Hamburg, Germany, and the explosive oil was shipped around the world. In 1866 Nobel visited the United States and built factories in New York and San Francisco, California.

Meanwhile, in Europe, the Nobel companies faced growing criticism, arising from the many accidental explosions that happened when nitroglycerin was being moved or stored. Nobel had expected these problems. As early as 1864 he had tried using different solids to absorb the dangerous liquid, including kieselguhr (a light material made from the remains of certain kinds of algae, a type of plant that grows in water). This material reduced the blasting power slightly, and the resulting product was solid, plastic, and better able to withstand physical or temperature shock. This was dynamite, patented in 1867. The new invention was heavily promoted, and a worldwide industry was established.

After moving the company headquarters and laboratory to Paris, France, in 1870, Nobel continued to work toward developing other explosives. These included ballistite, which was created in 1887 in response to the military



Alfred Nobel.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

demand for a smokeless, slow-burning blasting powder. This was Nobel's last major invention, but throughout his life he improved on all of his creations in detail, patented them, and then left them to his companies, with which he had as little formal contact as possible.

Used fortune to benefit humanity

From 1865 to 1873 Nobel lived in Hamburg and then in Paris until 1891, when the use of ballistite by the Italian military made him unpopular there. He moved to San Remo, Italy, where he died on December 10, 1896. He was a truly international figure, traveling constantly. For all of his achieve-

ments, he was a reserved and shy man who hated publicity. He had taken care of his mother his whole life and never married.

Nobel's will directed that the bulk of his huge estate should fund annual prizes for those who, in the previous year, had most benefited mankind in five specified subjects: physics (the study of the relationship between matter and energy), chemistry, medicine, literature, and peace. His will was settled within four years, and the Nobel Foundation was created. A Nobel Prize is one of the highest honors that an individual can receive. Each winner receives a gold medal, a scroll, and a cash award based on the earnings of the foundation's investments during that year. Recent prizes have been around one million dollars each.

For More Information

Bankston, John. *Alfred Nobel and the Story of the Nobel Prize*. Bear, DE: Mitchell Lane Publishers, 2002.

Bergengren, Erik. *Alfred Nobel: The Man and His Work*. New York: Nelson, 1962.

Evlanoff, Michael and Marjorie Fluor. *Alfred Nobel: The Loneliest Millionaire*. Los Angeles: W. Ritchie Press, 1969.

Fant, Kenne. *Alfred Nobel: A Biography*. New York: Arcade, 1993.

ISAMU
NOGUCHI

Born: November 17, 1904
Los Angeles, California

Died: December 30, 1988

New York, New York

Asian American sculptor

Isamu Noguchi was a well-respected and admired Japanese American sculptor and designer. His sculptures, fountains, and gardens are focal points in major cities of the United States and worldwide.

Noguchi's youth

Isamu Noguchi was born to Isamu Noguchi and Leonie Gilmore on November 17, 1904, in Los Angeles, California. His father, a Japanese poet and authority on art, and his mother, an American writer, were never married. In 1906 he moved with his family to Japan, where his father married a Japanese woman, and Noguchi remained with his mother until he was thirteen years old. In 1918, his mother sent him back to the United States to finish his education. He went to public school in La Porte, Indiana, graduating in 1922. He became an apprentice (a person working to learn a trade) to Gutzon Borglum (1867–1941), the sculptor of Mount Rushmore, who told Noguchi he was not talented enough to be a sculptor. Thus, in 1923, Noguchi enrolled as a premedical student at Columbia University in New York City.

Prophet of his age

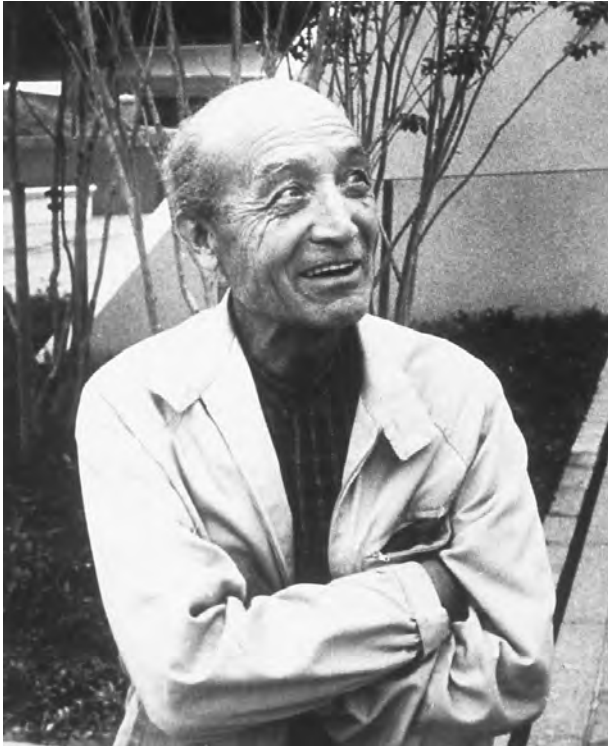
In 1925 Noguchi, at the urging of his mother, enrolled at the Leonardo da Vinci Art School in New York City to study sculpture. Here his talents were recognized and encouraged. Noguchi also attended the East Side Art School in New York City. In 1927 he won a scholarship and moved to Paris, France, where he was an apprentice to abstract sculp-

tor Constantin Brancusi (1876–1957) who became a strong influence on Noguchi's art. Noguchi felt that this art form was one that was well suited to his way of expressing himself in his work.

Noguchi lived in Japan for six months in 1930, working with clay and studying gardens. There he realized land could be sculpture that could be put to public use. In the 1930s he made art reflecting his social concerns, including a cement mural, 72 feet long, in Mexico City, Mexico, narrating Mexican history. In 1935 he began making stage sets for dancer Martha Graham (1893–1991), a partnership that would continue for fifty years. Throughout his career, Noguchi also worked with other choreographers (people who develop the dance steps and dances used in performances). In 1938 he made his first sculpture in stainless steel, a symbol of freedom of the press at the entrance to the Associated Press building in Rockefeller Center, New York City.

Power in stone

Noguchi enjoyed occasional exhibitions throughout the United States, Europe, and Asia. Among his important group shows was the exhibition of "14 Americans" at the Museum of Modern Art, New York City, in 1946. A return trip to Japan in 1949 prompted Noguchi to begin direct carving in stone. He also traveled throughout the world, and his work was purchased by many important museums. His only marriage, to actress Yoshiko Yamaguchi, lasted from 1951 to 1955. In 1968 the Whitney Museum of American Art sponsored a show featuring his work, and in 1978 the Walker Art Center exhibited his show *Imaginary Landscapes*.



Isamu Noguchi.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Connection with nature

Noguchi's forms seem to suggest nature and human beings interacting with one another or with their surroundings. Like Brancusi, Noguchi always retained in his pieces a strong feeling for the perfection of the material from which they are made. His preference was generally for wood or stone, and he was talented in making use of these materials in a way that showed them at their best.

Noguchi's work was also richly inspired by European surrealism (art that demonstrates the imagination and uses distorted images) and abstraction (art that does not resemble any real object). His experiences in

Asia gifted him with a unique ability for garden and courtyard design. Among his many important creations: a fountain and sculpture for the John Hancock Building, New York City; a garden for the UNESCO Headquarters, Paris (1956–1958); the Billy Rose Garden of Sculpture at the Israel National Museum, Jerusalem (1960–1965); a sunken garden at Yale University (1960–1964); and the 1968 *Red Cube*, a steel sculpture on Broadway in New York City.

Creative to the end

In 1982 Noguchi was awarded the Edward MacDowell Medal for outstanding lifetime contribution to the arts. In 1984, Noguchi's memorial to Benjamin Franklin (1706–1790), the *Bolt of Lightning*, a 102-foot stainless steel sculpture, was installed in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. In 1985 the Isamu Noguchi Garden Museum, displaying more than two hundred of his works, opened in Queens, New York.

In 1986, Noguchi ended his long career with a playful signature as the U.S. representative to the Venice Biennale art exposition. His exhibition of sculpture and lamps included the *Slide Mantra*, a religious-looking marble sculpture which visitors could climb up and slide down.

Noguchi was best known for sculpture, but he worked in many other mediums, including painting, ceramics, interior design, and architecture. His fountains grace several cities. In every work, he remained deeply attuned to his material and sensitive to its connection to nature and to society.

Isamu Noguchi died on December 30, 1988, in New York City.

For More Information

- Altshuler, Bruce. *Isamu Noguchi*. New York: Abbeville Press, 1994.
- Ashton, Dore. *Noguchi East and West*. New York: Knopf, 1992.
- Gordon, John. *Isamu Noguchi*. New York: Praeger, 1968.
- Tracy, Robert. *Spaces of the Mind: Isamu Noguchi's Dance Designs*. New York: Limelight Editions, 2000.

MANUEL NORIEGA

Born: February 11, 1934

Panama City, Panama

Panamanian military leader

First a friend, then an enemy of the United States, Manuel Noriega, the strongman of Panama, was finally taken down by a U.S. military operation, captured, and brought to Miami for trial on drug charges in 1989.

Early life

Manuel Antonio Noriega was born the son of an accountant and his maid in a poor section of Panama City, Panama, in 1934. At the age of five he was given up for adoption to a schoolteacher. He attended the National Institute, a well-regarded high school, with the intention of becoming a doctor, but his family could not afford to send him to medical school. Instead, Noriega accepted a scholarship to attend the Chorrios Military

Academy in Peru. He graduated in 1962 with a degree in engineering. Returning to Panama, he became a sublieutenant in the National Guard.

Military career

Colonel Omar Torrijos (1929–1981) liked Noriega and obtained for him the command of Chiriqui, the country's westernmost province. In October 1968, they led a military takeover of the government of President Arnulfo Arias. Noriega's troops seized radio and telephone stations in the city of David, cutting off communications with Panama City. Torrijos emerged as the major figure in the new government. In December 1969, when Torrijos was out of the country, a trio of officers tried to seize power. Torrijos flew his plane into an airport in David that had no lights for night landing. Noriega lined up cars along the runway with their lights on to help Torrijos make it down safely. With Noriega's troops at his service, Torrijos reclaimed the capital.

From that moment, Noriega's career blossomed. He became involved with U.S. intelligence activities. In 1971 he went to Havana, Cuba, at the request of U.S. president Richard Nixon (1911–1994) to obtain the release of crewmen of two American ships seized by Fidel Castro's (1927–) government. At this time Noriega was already involved in drug deals. A high-ranking drug enforcement officer recommended that President Nixon order Noriega's assassination, but Nixon did not follow through. As head of G-2, Panama's military intelligence command, Noriega was the second most powerful man in Panama. In 1975 G-2 agents rounded up businessmen who criticized Torrijos, took away their property, and sent



Manuel Noriega.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

them into exile in Ecuador. Torrijos once said of Noriega, "This is my gangster."

Increase in power

Torrijos died in 1981 in an unexplained plane crash. In the following two-year contest for power between politicians and military officers, Noriega emerged as the winner. In late 1983, following his promotion to general and commander of the National Guard, the guard was combined with the navy and air force into the Panama Defense Forces (which also included the national police). The following year Noriega's choice for president, Nicolás Ardito Barletta, won a narrow

victory over Arnulfo Arias. But Barletta failed to improve the country's weak economy (system of production, distribution, and use of goods and services), and Noriega forced him out. Noriega at this time began to be suspected of gun trafficking (smuggling), money laundering, torture, murder, and selling U.S. information and technology to Cuba and Eastern European governments. Noriega denied wrongdoing and said U.S. politicians were looking for a way to undo the Panama Canal treaties before the canal became Panamanian property on December 31, 1999.

In June 1987 Noriega's former chief of staff, Colonel Roberto Diaz Herrera, stated that Noriega had fixed the 1984 election and ordered the killing of Hugo Spadafora, who had publicly accused Noriega of drug trafficking. Herrera also said Noriega had been involved in Torrijos's death. Panamanians organized protests demanding the removal of Noriega. He responded by declaring a national emergency. He suspended constitutional rights, closed newspapers and radio stations, and drove his political enemies into exile. Herrera was captured and ordered to recant (take back) his statements. Church leaders, businessmen, and students organized into the National Civil Crusade, dressed in white, and went into the streets banging pots and pans. The riot squads drove them away.

United States steps in

By now Americans were outraged, and in June 1987 the U.S. Senate called for Noriega's removal. The administration of President Ronald Reagan (1911–) began looking for a way to bring Noriega down. The U.S. economic and military assistance ended, Panamanian bankers began withdrawing their

support, and Noriega quickly lost favor everywhere except for the Panama Defense Forces (PDF). Secret talks were held between U.S. officials and Noriega's representatives calling for him to resign and leave the country before the 1988 U.S. presidential election, saving George Bush (1924–), who as director of the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) had dealt with Noriega, from embarrassment. The Justice Department filed charges against Noriega in federal court in early 1988 as a warning. Assistant Secretary of State Eliot Abrams went to Panama to get President Eric Del Valle to fire Noriega. Instead, Noriega forced out Del Valle and named a new president.

After taking over as president, Bush increased the pressure. In May 1989 Noriega decided not to run in the election but backed another candidate, Carlos Duque. The opposition Panameñista Party nominated Guillermo Endara, who was immediately provided with \$10 million by the Bush administration. Even though the election was being watched by former President Jimmy Carter (1924–) and other foreign officials, as soon as Noriega realized that Duque was losing, he ordered the PDF to seize ballot boxes. When the opposition took to the streets in protest, Noriega's squads beat them. Endara and a vice presidential candidate, Guillermo Ford, lost the election.

Last straw

Noriega declared the election void (having no legal force or effect), installed another president, and, in October 1989, survived a takeover attempt supported by U.S. forces. To improve the nation's international image and to prevent Noriega from naming one of his people as administrator of the Panama

Canal, Bush took stronger action. Using as an excuse the firing on U.S. soldiers passing the PDF headquarters and Noriega's statement that U.S. actions had created a state of war, the United States launched a full-scale attack (Operation Just Cause) with twenty-four thousand troops on December 20, 1989.

Fighting continued for four days, with the United States losing hundreds of troops and the Panamanians losing thousands. Noriega escaped capture for a few days but was found hiding in the Papal Nunciature, a religious office. Under pressure from Vatican officials, Noriega surrendered to the Vatican Embassy in Panama City on January 3, 1990. In a deal worked out with the U.S.-created government headed by Guillermo Endara, U.S. authorities brought Noriega to Miami for trial, which was delayed into the early 1990s. He was convicted of several crimes including cocaine smuggling. He was sentenced to forty years in a Miami prison and ordered to pay \$44 million to the Panamanian government. In 1999 a French court sentenced Noriega and his wife to ten years in jail along with a \$33 million fine. Also in 1999 the Panamanian high court announced that it would seek to have Noriega returned to that country to make sure he served time there for murder.

In 2002 a parole hearing took place in Miami, which resulted in Noriega's denial for early release from his U.S. prison sentence. He would remain in prison in the United States for at least five more years.

For More Information

Dinges, John. *Our Man in Panama: How General Noriega Used the United States and Made Millions in Drugs and Arms*. New York: Random House, 1990.

Harris, David. *Shooting the Moon: The True Story of an American Manhunt Unlike Any Other, Ever*. Boston: Little, Brown, 2001.

Kempe, Frederick. *Divorcing the Dictator: America's Bungled Affair with Noriega*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1990.

Noriega, Manuel, and Peter Eisner. *America's Prisoner: The Memoirs of Manuel Noriega*. New York: Random House, 1997.

JESSYE NORMAN

Born: September 15, 1945

Augusta, Georgia

African American opera singer

Jessye Norman is an African American opera singer. Her rich soprano voice covers an uncommonly wide range, from classical to modern compositions.

Early years

Jessye Norman was born on September 15, 1945, in Augusta, Georgia. Her father, Silas, was an insurance broker and her mother, Janie, was a schoolteacher. There were four other children in the family. Music was very important in the family, and all the children took piano lessons at a young age. Her parents encouraged Jessye musically, and she began singing in church choirs at the age of four.

Norman's first step toward a singing career, taken at the suggestion of her high school chorus teacher, was to enter the Marion Anderson vocal competition in Philadel-

phia, Pennsylvania, at age sixteen. She did not win the competition, but her singing did gain her a full scholarship to Howard University in Washington, D.C. Norman fell in love with opera the first time she heard a Metropolitan Opera radio broadcast. "I was nine and didn't know what was going on, but I just loved it," she told Charles Michner of *Vanity Fair* magazine.

Debuts

Norman, to finance her graduate studies, entered the 1968 International Music Competition of the German Broadcasting Corporation in Munich, Germany, and took first prize. This famous award gave her immediate wide recognition and engagements throughout Germany leading to a December 1969 debut with the Deutsche Oper in Berlin, Germany. Norman had always been selective about her repertoire (a list of operas prepared for performance). She followed her own instincts and interests more than the advice of her teachers or requests of her management. This tendency put her at odds with the Deutsche Oper and forced her to seek out musical works on her own that she felt were more suitable to her vocal skills.

Norman's search took her to Italy, where she sang in Florence in the spring of 1970. In April of 1972 she made her debut at Milan's famous opera house, La Scala, in the title role of Verdi's *Aida*. Her first well-publicized American performance took place that summer in a concert performance of the same role at the Hollywood Bowl. Later in 1972 Norman further established herself in the United States with an all-Wagner concert at the Tanglewood Festival in Lennox, Massachusetts, and a recital tour of the country. That Septem-

ber she made her London, England, debut at the Royal Opera House, Covent Garden.

Travels

During the years from 1973 to 1975 Norman performed throughout the Western world—in Spain, Holland, Germany, Scotland, Italy, England, France, and Argentina, as well as the United States—and often performed works outside the standard repertoire.

In 1975 Norman moved to London and had no staged opera appearances for the next five years. While her reason for the withdrawal was that she needed to fully develop her voice, others felt that this was a period of concern for her weight and thus her stage image. She told John Gruen of the *New York Times*, “As for my voice, it cannot be categorized. I like so many different kinds of music that I’ve never allowed myself the limitations of one particular range.”

In October of 1980 Norman returned to the operatic stage in the title role of Richard Strauss’s (1864–1949) *Ariadne auf Naxos* at the Hamburger Staatsoper in Hamburg, Germany. In 1982 she appeared in her American stage debut with the Philadelphia Opera as Dido in Henry Purcell’s (1659–1695) *Dido and Aeneas* and as Jocasta in Igor Stravinsky’s (1882–1971) *Oedipus Rex*. Her debut at New York’s Metropolitan Opera took place in September of 1983. She sang at the January 21, 1985, inauguration of President Ronald Reagan (1911–), an invitation that she debated as an African American, as a Democrat, and as a nuclear disarmament activist. But she did accept and sang the folk song “Simple Gifts.”

Although Norman was concerned about her stage image, she often managed to con-



Jessye Norman.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

vert her large size to a positive advantage by choosing roles that called for stately and dignified bearing.

Honors and recent work

Among the numerous honors bestowed upon Norman were: *Musical America*’s musician of the year, 1982; honorary doctorates from Howard University (1982), Boston Conservatory of Music (1984), University of the South (1984), and Harvard University (1998). She was given the honor of being named Commandeur de l’Ordre des Arts et des Lettres from the French government, 1984. She also received awards for many of her recordings.

Norman's work in the 1990s included singing at the opening of the Metropolitan Opera's production of *Ariadne auf Naxos* in 1993, taking part at a gala for the New York Philharmonic in 1995, and appearing at concerts throughout the world.

In March 1997, Jessye Norman was honored by New York City's Associated Black Charities at the eleventh annual Black History Makers Awards Dinner for her contributions to the arts and to African American culture. Norman made her first appearance in Russia in 2001. She sang at the "Tribute in Light" memorial ceremony in New York City to honor those people who died in the destruction of the World Trade Center on September 11, 2001.

For More Information

Gruen, John. *New York Times* (September 25, 1983).

International Encyclopedia of Music and Musicians. 1975.

Jacobson, R. *Opera News* (December 24, 1983).

"Jessye Norman." *Contemporary Black Biography*. Vol 5. Detroit: Gale, 1993.

"Jessye Norman." *Notable Black American Women*. Detroit: Gale, 1992.

NOSTRADAMUS

Born: December 1503

Saint-Remy-de-Provence, France

Died: July 1566

Salon, France

French astrologer, physician, and author

Nostradamus was a physician (doctor) and astrologer (someone who believes that the future can be learned by studying the stars and planets). Today Nostradamus is remembered chiefly for the predictions he made of future events.

Early years

Michel de Notredame, commonly called Nostradamus, was born in December 1503 in the south of France. His family was of Jewish heritage but had converted to Catholicism during a period of religious intolerance (unwillingness to give freedom to people who have different beliefs) and prejudice (hostility aimed at a person or group of people based on their beliefs, looks, or habits). Both of his grandfathers were scholars and instructed Nostradamus themselves when he was young. One grandfather was a physician. The other taught him classical languages.

At the age of fourteen Nostradamus left his family to study in Avignon, France, a major ecclesiastical (church related) and academic center. In class he often voiced dissension (disagreement) with the teachings of the Catholic priests. Nostradamus later attended the University of Montpellier, where he studied both medicine and astrology. It was common to study both at that time. He graduated in 1522 and began calling himself Nostradamus, a Latin version of his name. This was a common practice of university graduates.

The first several years of Nostradamus's career as a doctor were spent traveling in France. Many towns and villages were being destroyed by the bubonic plague (a widespread destructive disease). It was called "Le Charbon" ("coal" or "carbon") because of the

black sores it left on its victim's body. The epidemic (a disease that affects a large number of people or regions) had no cure. Doctors commonly "bled" (letting blood out) their patients, thinking it would take the disease with it. They knew nothing of how to prevent further infection or how unclean conditions helped spread the disease.

Nostradamus prescribed fresh air and water for the afflicted. He also recommended a low-fat diet and clean bedding. He often administered an herbal remedy made from rosehips, later discovered to be rich in vitamin C. Entire towns recovered under his care. Nostradamus's herbal remedies were common to the era. His beliefs about infection control, however, were contrary to the practices of his time. Such beliefs could have resulted in charges of heresy (opinions that are against church teachings) and a sentence of death.



Nostradamus.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Personal tragedies

Word of Nostradamus's healing powers made him a celebrated figure. He wrote a book listing the doctors and pharmacists he had met in southern Europe, translated anatomical texts, developed recipes for gourmet foods, and received his doctorate in 1529 from the University of Montpellier. He also taught at the university for three years, but left when his radical ideas about disease were criticized.

Nostradamus married and settled in the town of Agen, France, with his wife. They had two children. Unfortunately, Le Charbon came again. While Nostradamus was trying to heal others, his wife and two young children died of the plague. Citizens looked upon him with scorn because he could not

save his own family. His in-laws sued for the return of his wife's dowry (the goods she brought to her husband when they were married). His patron (sponsor) also broke ties with him.

Visions

For the next several years Nostradamus traveled through southern Europe. By 1544 heavy rains were again helping to spread the plague to southern France. With his medicinal practices, Nostradamus managed to halt the spread of disease in one town. He was again celebrated for his skills.

Nostradamus moved to the town of Salon, France, set up a medical practice, remarried, and began a new family. Outwardly, Nostradamus was a devoted practicing Catholic. However, at night he spent the hours in his study meditating in front of a brass bowl filled with water and herbs. Meditation would bring on a trance. In such trances visions would come to him.

Nostradamus began writing about his visions when he wrote the first of his almanacs. It contained predictions of things to come in the next year. The almanacs appeared each year from 1550 to 1565. They were very popular with the public. The Almanacs spoke of astrological phases of the coming year and contained quatrains, or rhymed four-line verse, offering hints of upcoming events. The published works served to spread his fame across France to an even greater degree.

Nostradamus's visions had become such an important part of his studies that he decided to gather them into one massive work for future generations. He called this book *Centuries*. He planned that there would be ten volumes, each containing one hundred predictions in quatrain form. In it, the next two thousand years of humanity would be forecast—through the year 3797.

Prophecies brought fame and fortune

Nostradamus began working on *Centuries* in 1554. The first seven volumes were published the following year. He completed the other volumes soon after, but would not allow them to be published until after his death. The reception of the initial works made Nostradamus a celebrated figure.

Nostradamus's writings attracted the interest of France's royal family. He was invited to the Paris court of Henry II (1519–1559) and his wife, Catherine de' Medici (1519–1589). The Medicis were known for their Europe-wide political ambitions. The queen hoped that Nostradamus could give her guidance regarding her seven children. Nostradamus arrived in Paris in August of 1556.

Nostradamus explained that one of his quatrains referred to the king. It read: "The young lion will overcome the older one/ On the field of combat in single battle/ He will pierce his eyes through a golden cage/ Two wounds made one, then he dies a cruel death." Nostradamus cautioned King Henry against attending any ceremonial jousting during his forty-first year, which the regent's own astrologer had also asserted.

The physician spent the next few years in the luxury of the royal court. He heard that Catholic authorities were again becoming suspicious of his soothsaying (making prophecies) and were about to investigate him. He returned to his hometown of Salon and his wife and children.

On June 28, 1559, when he was forty-one years old, Henry II was injured in a jousting tournament celebrating two marriages in his family. With thousands watching, his opponent's lance "pierced the King's golden visor, entered his head behind the eye, both blinding him and penetrating deep into his brain. He held onto life for ten agonizing days," wrote John Hogue in *Nostradamus and the Millennium*.

Later years

Already a celebrated individual in France, Nostradamus now became a figure inspiring both awe and fright among the populace. His other prophecies regarding France's royal line were consulted, and most seemed to predict only death and tragedy. Henry's surviving widow, now Queen Regent Catherine de' Medici, visited him in Salon during her royal tour of 1564. He again told her (as he had when he drew up their astrology charts) that all four of her sons would become kings. All did, but all died young.

Nostradamus died in Salon, France, in 1566. Many translations of his *Centuries* and treatises on their significance appeared in the generations following his death. They remain popular to the present day. Some critics point out that the verses are vague and can be read in many ways. Other interpreters claim Nostradamus predicted Adolf Hitler's (1889–1945) rise to power, the explosion of the U.S. space shuttle Challenger in 1986, and many other events.

For More Information

Hogue, John. *Nostradamus and the Millennium: Predictions of the Future*. New York: Doubleday, 1987.

Leoni, Edgar. *Nostradamus and His Prophecies*. New York: Bell Publishing Company, 1982. Reprint, Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 2000.

McCann, Lee. *Nostradamus: The Man Who Saw Through Time*. New York: Creative Age Press, 1941. Reprint, New York: Wings Books, 1995.

Randi, James. *The Mask of Nostradamus*. New York: Scribner, 1990.

RUDOLF NUREYEV

Born: March 17, 1938

Irkutsk, Russia

Died: January 6, 1993

Paris, France

Russian dancer

The Russian-born dancer and choreographer (a composer of dance) Rudolph Nureyev captured international acclaim as the greatest male ballet dancer of the 1960s and 1970s. His versatility (the ability to change easily) and energy were expressed in countless classical and modern roles, on both stage and screen.

Childhood

Rudolf Hametovich Nureyev was born on March 17, 1938, on a train travelling to Vladivostok in Russia, where his father was an instructor of Soviet soldiers. He was the youngest of the four children of Hamet and Farida Nureyev, who came from Asiatic Mongol ancestry. At the outbreak of World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis Powers: Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States), his father joined the Soviet army and the family moved to Moscow, Russia. There, Nureyev, along with his three older sisters, grew up in terrible poverty, and the Nureyevs were forced to live with other families. At school he did not fair any better. Constantly teased and harassed by his fellow students for being raised so poor, Nureyev grew up lonely and isolated. But the young boy found enjoyment in one thing—music.



Rudolf Nureyev.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Nureyev, despite early discouragement from his parents, began his dancing career with amateur folk dance groups and the Ufa Opera Ballet. At the age of seventeen he entered the Leningrad Ballet School to study with the outstanding teacher Alexander Pushkin. After three years of training he joined the Kirov Ballet as a soloist, dancing full length roles in *Don Quixote*, *Gayane*, *Giselle*, *La Bayadere*, *The Nutcracker*, *Swan Lake*, and *The Sleeping Beauty*.

Earning fame

Nureyev's offstage reputation was equally sensational, bringing him constant

trouble with both the Kirov management and the Russian political authorities. In the Kirov's first-ever appearance in Paris, France, in 1961, Nureyev was an outstanding success, yet his resistance of company regulations sparked a command return to Moscow. On June 17, 1961, Nureyev cut his ties with the Soviet Union (the former country that consisted of Russia and several smaller nations) seeking political asylum (political protection) at Le Bourget Airport in Paris, France.

Within five days, Nureyev embarked on a six-month season with the international Grand Ballet du Marquis de Cuevas, dancing the Prince and the Blue Bird in *The Sleeping Beauty*. As partner to Rosella Hightower, he made his London, England, debut in October 1961 at the Royal Academy of Dancing, where he met the ballerina Margot Fonteyn (1919–1991), who became his principal partner for many years. He became a regular guest artist with the Royal Ballet from 1962 to the mid-1970s, in addition to performing with Ruth Page's Chicago Opera Ballet, American Ballet Theatre, and on U.S. and French television.

With an inexhaustible stamina, Nureyev continued to perform at a nonstop pace, acquiring over ninety roles and appearances with over thirty major ballet and modern dance companies. Frederick Ashton (1904–1988), the British choreographer, was the first to create a role specifically for Nureyev in *Marguerite and Armand* in March 1963. Nureyev's own first production was the last act of *La Bayadere* for the Royal Ballet in November 1963, and his first reconstruction was the nineteenth-century three-act classic *Raymonda* for the Royal Ballet in June 1964.

His fascination with modern dance, which led to performances with American choreographers Martha Graham (1893–1991), Murray Louis, and Paul Taylor, began with Rudi Van Dantzig's *Monument for a Dead Boy* with the Dutch National Ballet in December 1968. He broke into film in 1972 with his directing debut of his own production of *Don Quixote* in Melbourne, Australia, and the creation of the film *I Am A Dancer*. The film *Rudolph Valentino*, directed by Ken Russell in 1976, gave Nureyev his debut as a film actor.

Self-reliance and a constant drive directed Nureyev's energy into a performing schedule around the world that only Anna Pavlova (1885–1931) could equal. His guest performances were slightly cut back with his assumption (the act of taking for oneself) of a three-year directorship of the Paris Opera Ballet in 1983. A rapidly changing character—shrewd, cunning, charming, and passionate—Nureyev demonstrated a commitment and a savage power equaled by no other dancer in his day. His last stage appearance was for a curtain call at the Palace Garnier

after the production of his dance *La Bayadere* had been performed. He succumbed to acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; a disease that attacks the body's immune system) in Paris on January 6, 1993. He was fifty-four years old. "Any time you dance," Nureyev once said in an interview in *Entertainment Weekly*, "what you do must be sprayed with your blood."

For More Information

- Bland, Alexander. *The Nureyev Image*. London: Studio Vista, 1976.
- Maybarduk, Linda. *The Dancer Who Flew: A Memoir of Rudolf Nureyev*. Plattsburgh, NY: Tundra Books, 1999.
- Percival, John. *Nureyev: Aspects of the Dancer*. New York: Putnam, 1975.
- Solway, Diane. *Nureyev: His Life*. New York: William Morrow, 1998.
- Stuart, Otis. *Perpetual Motion: The Public and Private Lives of Rudolf Nureyev*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1995.



JOYCE CAROL OATES

Born: June 16, 1938

Lockport, New York

American writer and poet

One of the United States's most prolific (producing a lot of work) and versatile (producing a wide variety of work) contemporary writers, Joyce Carol Oates focuses upon the spiritual, sexual, and intellectual decline of modern American society.

Early years

Joyce Carol Oates was born on June 16, 1938, in Lockport, New York, the oldest of

Frederic and Caroline Oates's three children. The family lived on a farm owned by Caroline's parents. Joyce's father was a tool designer, and her mother was a housewife. Oates was a serious child who read a great deal. Even before she could write, she told stories by drawing pictures. She has said that her childhood "was dull, ordinary, nothing people would be interested in," but she has admitted that "a great deal frightened me."

In 1953, at age fifteen, Oates wrote her first novel, though it was rejected by publishers who found its subject matter, which concerned the rehabilitation (the restoring to a useful state) of a drug addict, too depressing for teenage audiences. After high school Oates won a scholarship to Syracuse Univer-



Joyce Carol Oates.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

sity, where she studied English. Before her senior year she was the co-winner of a fiction contest sponsored by *Mademoiselle* magazine. After graduating at the top of her class in 1960, Oates enrolled in graduate school at the University of Wisconsin, where she met Raymond Joseph Smith, an English professor. They were married in 1961.

Teaching and writing

In 1961, after Oates earned her master's degree and began work on her doctorate in English, she found one of her own stories in Margaret Foley's collection *Best American Short Stories*. Oates then decided on a writing

career, and in 1963 she published her first volume of short stories, *By the North Gate* (1963). Oates also taught at the University of Detroit between 1961 and 1967. In 1967 she and her husband moved to Canada to teach at the University of Windsor, where together they founded the publication *Ontario Review* in 1974. After leaving the University of Windsor in 1977, Oates became writer-in-residence and later a professor at Princeton University in New Jersey.

Oates's first novel, *With Shuddering Fall* (1964), shows her interest in evil and violence in the story of a romance between a teenage girl and a thirty-year-old stock car driver that ends with his death in an accident. Oates's best-known early novels form a trilogy (three-volume work) exploring three different parts of American society. The first, *A Garden of Earthly Delights* (1967), tells the story of the daughter of a migrant worker who marries a wealthy farmer in order to provide for her illegitimate (having unmarried parents) son. The woman's existence is destroyed when the boy murders his stepfather and kills himself. In *Expensive People* (1967), Oates exposes the world of people in the suburbs whose focus on material comforts reveals the emptiness of their lives. The final volume, *them* (1969), which won the National Book Award for fiction, describes the violence and suffering endured by three generations of an urban (city-dwelling) family in Detroit, Michigan. Oates's experiences as a teacher in Detroit during the early 1960s contributed to her knowledge of the city and its social problems.

Oates's novels of the 1970s explore characters involved with various American professional and cultural institutions while

adding tragic elements. *Wonderland* (1971) is about a brilliant doctor who is unable to build a satisfying home life. *Do With Me What You Will* (1973) focuses on a young attorney who is honored by his peers for his devotion to social work. *The Assassins: A Book of Hours* (1975) deals with the effects of the murder of a politician on his wife and two brothers. *Son of the Morning* (1978) documents the rise and fall of a preacher whose faith is challenged and made stronger by various events in his life. *Unholy Loves* (1979) revolves around the lives of several teachers at a small New York college.

During the early 1980s Oates published several novels based on works by nineteenth-century authors. *A Bloodsmoor Romance* (1982) is the story of five maiden sisters living in Pennsylvania in the late 1800s and is influenced by the writings of Charlotte Brontë (1816–1855) and Emily Brontë (1818–1848). In *Mysteries of Winterthurn* (1984), Oates borrowed heavily from the works of Edgar Allan Poe (1809–1849). While some critics dismissed these works, others, citing Oates's accomplished description of evil, maintained that they are significant achievements in literature.

Other works and other names

Throughout Oates's writing career she has distributed her energies among several projects at once. Her book-length essay *On Boxing* (1987) led to at least one appearance commenting on a televised boxing match. Around the same time, she submitted a mystery novel to a publisher under a pseudonym (fake writing name) and had the thrill of having it accepted. Oates published the novel *Lives of the Twins* (1987) under the name Rosamond

Smith. "I wanted a fresh reading; I wanted to escape from my own identity," Oates told Linda Wolfe in the *New York Times Book Review*. Though she used the name again for several other books, she resumed using her name with the publication of *My Heart Laid Bare*, in which she explores morality (the question of right and wrong) during the 1920s.

Oates's works in other forms also address darker sides of the human condition. Most critics feel that Oates's short fiction, for which she has twice received the O. Henry Special Award for Continuing Achievement, best expresses her main themes. Such collections as *By the North Gate; Where Are You Going, Where Have You Been?: Stories of Young America* (1974); *The Lamb of Abyssalia* (1980); and *Raven's Wing* (1986) contain pieces that focus on violent and abusive relationships between men and women.

Later works

In *Because It Is Bitter, and Because It Is My Heart* (1990), Oates returns to the familiar themes of race and violence. Other works from this time include *Black Water* (1992), an account of a tragic encounter between a powerful U.S. senator and a young woman he meets at a party, and *Foxfire: Confessions of a Girl Gang* (1993), which describes the destructive activities of a group of teenage girls in the 1950s. The story is pieced together from former Foxfire gang member Maddy Wirtz's memories and journal and takes place in the industrial New York town of Hammond. Oates also had several plays published and produced in the 1990s.

In 1999 Oates's twenty-ninth novel, *Broke Heart Blues*, was published. In March 2000 *Blonde*, based on the life of actress

Marilyn Monroe (1926–1962), was released. The book was a finalist for the National Book Award for fiction. In June 2000 *Getting to Know You*, a film based on Oates's 1992 short story collection *Heat*, was released. Oates edited the collection *The Best American Essays of the Century*, which was published in 2000. *Middle Age: A Romance*, a novel, and *Beasts*, a novella (a work whose length is greater than that of a short story but less than that of a novel), were published in 2001.

For More Information

Bender, Eileen. *Joyce Carol Oates*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1987.

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Joyce Carol Oates*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1987.

Johnson, Greg. *Invisible Writer: A Biography of Joyce Carol Oates*. New York: Dutton, 1998.

SANDRA DAY O'CONNOR

Born: August 26, 1930

El Paso, Texas

American Supreme Court justice

In 1981 Sandra Day O'Connor became the first woman to serve as a justice in the 191-year history of United States Supreme Court. A Republican appointed by Ronald Reagan, O'Connor has grit and intelligence that has made her an interesting figure in the nation's highest court of law.

Life on the Lazy B

Sandra Day O'Connor was born in El Paso, Texas, on August 26, 1930. Her parents, Harry and Ida Mae Day, owned a cattle ranch in southeastern Arizona called the Lazy B. In the beginning, the ranch did not have electricity or running water. Sandra grew up branding cattle, learning to fix whatever was broken, and enjoying life on the ranch.

Her experiences on the ranch shaped her character and developed her belief in hard work, but her parents also wanted O'Connor to gain an education. Living in such a remote area, the options for going to school were limited, and she had already shown that she was quite bright. By age four, she had learned how to read. Exploring places and schools that would be the best match for O'Connor's abilities, her parents decided to send her to El Paso to live with her grandmother and attend school. In El Paso she attended Radford School for girls and Austin High. She spent her summers at the ranch and the school years with her grandmother. She graduated high school early at the age of sixteen.

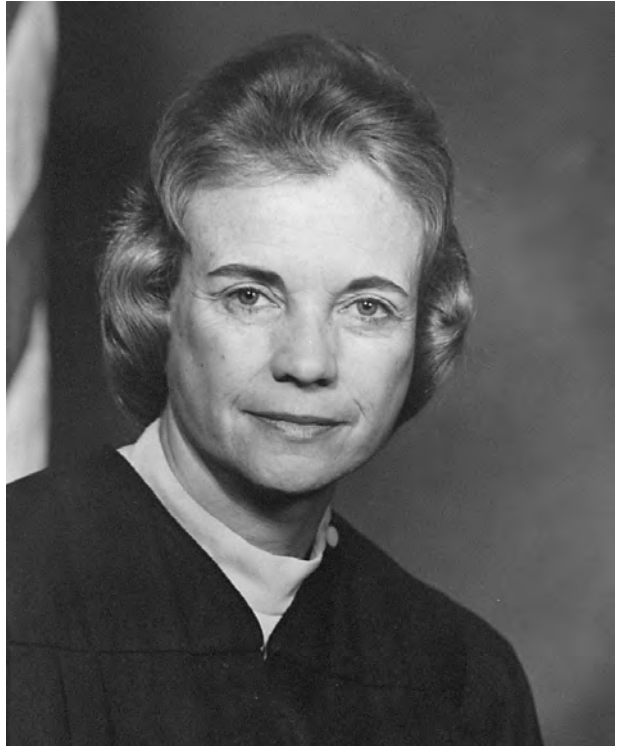
In 1946, after competing against many other people and despite the probability that she might not be accepted because she was a woman, O'Connor was accepted to Stanford University. In a program in which she finished two degrees in just six years instead of seven, she graduated in 1950 with a bachelor's degree in economics and received a law degree in 1952. While she was in law school, she was a member of the board of editors of the *Stanford Law Review*, a very high honor for a law student. Upon graduation she was at the top of her class, graduating third in a class of 102 students. O'Connor was just two places behind another future Supreme Court justice, William H. Rehnquist (1924–).

Marriage and career

After graduating, O'Connor tried to get a job in Los Angeles and San Francisco law firms, but because of the prejudices against women at that time (unfair treatment based on her sex), she could not get a job as a lawyer. She was offered a position as a legal secretary, which did not match her education and training. Instead, she took a position as a deputy county attorney in San Mateo, California. During this time, she also married John O'Connor, who was one class behind her at Stanford. Upon his completion of law school, the couple moved to Germany, where he served as an attorney in the U.S. Army. She worked as a civilian attorney, specializing in contracts.

Upon their return to the United States, the O'Connors settled in the Phoenix, Arizona, area. O'Connor and another lawyer opened a law office in suburban Maryvale, but for the next few years she devoted most of her time to raising her three sons, who were born between 1957 and 1962. She also joined many groups to improve her community and she began to take an active role in local Republican politics.

In 1965 O'Connor returned to full-time employment as one of Arizona's assistant attorneys general, an assistant to the chief law officer in the state. In 1969 the state senator from her district resigned, which led Governor Jack Williams (1909–1998) to appoint O'Connor to replace him. When the position was open for election in 1970, O'Connor won it and was easily reelected again in 1972. She was chosen as the Republican majority leader in the state senate in 1972. This was the first time that any woman anywhere in the country had held that position.



*Sandra Day O'Connor.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

In 1974 O'Connor left the state senate and became a county judge in the Maricopa County Superior Court. In 1979 Bruce Babbitt (1938–), the governor of Arizona, appointed her to the Arizona Court of Appeals.

During the last month of the 1980 presidential campaign, candidate Ronald Reagan (1911–) needed more support from female voters. He said that if he were elected he would appoint a woman to the Supreme Court. In July 1981 President Reagan kept his promise and nominated Sandra Day O'Connor. The Senate quickly and unanimously confirmed her. She became the first

female justice in the 191-year history of the court. When Reagan selected her for the Supreme Court, she became the first person appointed in twenty-four years with state court experience and the first in thirty-two years with lawmaking experience.

Supreme Court justice

Many people expected O'Connor to be solidly conservative (to work to preserve or keep traditions and resist changes) in her decisions on the Supreme Court. In fact, many conservative politicians objected to her appointment. They thought she would not oppose abortion (the termination of a pregnancy) because she was a woman. Abortion is a key issue for Republican conservatives. However, many women support abortion rights or the right for a woman to choose.

O'Connor made this issue somewhat confusing for the people who were studying her because she was not part of the organized women's movement which supports abortion. Although the Moral Majority (a very conservative Christian group opposing or against abortion) complained that O'Connor was in favor of abortion, she had cast votes against as well as for it in the legislature. As a justice, she aligned herself with the opponents of abortion (people against abortion).

Although she was not a strong supporter of the women's movement, O'Connor was a founder of both the Arizona Women Lawyers Association and the National Association of Women Judges. She also had fought to remove discrimination (or unequal treatment) against women from her state's bar (the body that governs law) rules and community property laws. As a justice, she was against discrimination based on gender. Her most

famous Supreme Court opinion (a formal written statement by a judge) was in the court case *Mississippi University for Women v. Hogan* (1982). In this decision, the Supreme Court ruled that it was unconstitutional for a state nursing school to refuse to admit men. With this decision, she displayed her ability to rule on equality issues that affect men.

Second decade on the Supreme Court

Supreme Court justices are important people for any president in office. Their rulings and votes are very influential and affect law and justice in the entire country. If an important issue is at stake in a case or a vote, the justices decide the way laws are carried out, which may be at odds or in agreement with a particular president or administration. O'Connor made decisions that sometimes confused presidents who wanted to be able to depend on her to vote in a certain way. By 1990 her vote had become unpredictable. In many decisions both sides tried to win her support.

During the 1990s, O'Connor was an important figure in determining the direction of a number of freedom rulings by the Supreme Court. These rulings included an interpretation of freedom of speech (rights to speak out publicly or privately) and censorship (control over what people may see, do, read, write, or hear). She also worked on a ruling about control of the Internet and cases about freedom of religion. She voted against a state-required moment of silence in public schools.

She also was involved in other court cases that ruled on privacy issues that were very important to American people. In a 1992 case against abortion rights, *Planned Parenthood v. Casey*, O'Connor was one of the majority who voted to keep abortion legal for

women. In other words, abortion was a woman's private decision.

O'Connor also influenced the court in cases involving discrimination and harassment (or unwelcome verbal or physical contact) based on gender. She gave the deciding vote in a decision against affirmative action in *Adarand v. Peña* (1995). Affirmative action began during the presidency of Lyndon B. Johnson (1908–1973). It was a program to improve opportunities for women and minorities in education and in the workplace.

One of the most important decisions that O'Connor took part in during her second decade on the Supreme Court was the result of one of the closest presidential elections in American history. When the votes from Florida were counted from the 2000 presidential election, the results were so close that many people wanted a recount. The justices stepped in and stopped a recount. With this ruling, they decided the election and Bush became president thirty-five days after election day.

Third decade on the Supreme Court

Early in 2001, rumors were circulating that O'Connor was planning to retire from the Supreme Court. She said they were not true, and she has remained in the center of many critical issues. In July of the same year she made a prominent speech to the Minnesota Women Lawyers Association about the death penalty. O'Connor also talked about the issue of people who have been sentenced to the death penalty and then have been found innocent and set free. She questioned the court-appointed lawyers who represented some of the people sentenced to the death penalty. She said that defendants who were represented by court-appointed lawyers were more likely to be

found guilty and sentenced to the death penalty. These reversed rulings (in which convicted people go free) are based on DNA evidence, the scientific evidence based on a person's identity that is established by genetic code found in hair, blood, and so forth. She has made comments that she thinks it might be important to look more closely at the counsel (attorneys) that are assigned to these cases and the process for convictions. Many of O'Connor's decisions while on the Supreme Court have been in support of the death penalty.

In 2002 O'Connor offered a bit more insight into her complex character by publishing the memoir *Lazy B: Growing up on a Cattle Ranch in the American Southwest*. She wrote it with her brother H. Alan Day. In it, O'Connor offers a look into how her Arizona ranch roots shaped her life, career, and views.

Although her decisions have not always been popular with women's rights activists, O'Connor still is considered to be a role model for women.

For More Information

- Berwald, Beverly. *Sandra Day O'Connor: A New Justice, a New Voice*. New York: Fawcett Columbine, 1991.
- Herda, D. J. *Sandra Day O'Connor: Independent Thinker*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1995.
- Huber, Peter. *Sandra Day O'Connor*. New York: Chelsea House, 1990.
- O'Connor, Sandra Day, and H. Alan Day. *Lazy B: Growing Up on a Cattle Ranch in the American Southwest*. New York: Random House, 2002.
- Williams, Jean Kinney. *Sandra Day O'Connor: Lawyer and Supreme Court Justice*. Chicago: Ferguson Publishing Company, 2002.

GEORGIA O'KEEFFE

Born: November 15, 1887

Sun Prairie, Wisconsin

Died: March 6, 1986

Santa Fe, New Mexico

American painter

The American painter Georgia O'Keeffe (1887–1986) developed a distinctive art form that includes startling details of plant forms, bleached bones, and landscapes of the New Mexico desert—all created with natural clarity.

The young artist

Georgia O'Keeffe was born in Sun Prairie, Wisconsin, on November 15, 1887, to Francis and Ida O'Keeffe. She had six siblings, and the family lived on a farm outside of Madison, Wisconsin. Georgia attended the Sacred Heart Academy, and here she had a chance to learn about drawing and painting. She also attended Saturday art lessons. Her family moved to Williamsburg, Virginia, and she attended Chatham Episcopal Institute. Here she excelled in the school's art program.

In 1904 Georgia graduated and moved to study at the Art Institute of Chicago, Illinois (1905), and the Art Students League in New York City (1907–1908). She worked briefly as a commercial artist in Chicago, and in 1912 she became interested in the principles of Oriental design. After working as a public school art supervisor in Amarillo, Texas (1912–1914), she attended art classes conducted by Arthur Wesley Dow at Columbia University in New York City. She began to use Dow's system

of art education, based on frequent themes in Oriental art, in her teacher-training courses at West Texas State Normal College, where she served as department head (1916–1918).

Career as an artist begins

In 1916 Alfred Stieglitz (1864–1946), the well-known New York photographer and supporter of modernism (a style of art that went against established norms), exhibited some of O'Keeffe's abstract (a type of art that does not strongly represent real objects) drawings. In 1924 O'Keeffe and Stieglitz were married.

Lake George, Coat and Red (1919), a chief example of O'Keeffe's early abstract style, was a roughly brushed composition in which a twisted, mysterious form looms against a rainbow-colored sky. Early in her career she developed a personal, extremely polished style, favoring abstract subject matter such as flower details and severe architectural themes. Many of her paintings were dramatic, sharp-focus enlargements of botanical (flower or plant life) details.

Between 1926 and 1929 O'Keeffe painted a group of views of New York City. *New York Night* (1929) transformed skyscrapers into patterned, glittering structures. More architecturally characteristic were such paintings as *Lake George Barns* (1926) and *Ranchos Church, Taos* (1929). These simple buildings, further simplified in her painting, were America's anonymous folk architecture; in these forms O'Keeffe found a peace that contrasted with the frantic city environment.

New Mexico and new artistic subjects

In 1929 O'Keeffe began spending time in New Mexico; the region's dramatic mesas,

ancient Spanish architecture, vegetation, and dry terrain became the focus of her art. Her subjects were simple and basic. Even her stories of death in the desert—a sunbleached skull lying in the sand or attached to a post (as in *Cow's Skull with Red*, 1936)—were preserved. She regarded these whitened remains as symbols of the desert, nothing more. The dried animal bones and wooden crucifixes of the region that appear in her desert (*Black Cross, New Mexico*, 1929) were disturbing imaginings.

In 1945 O'Keeffe bought an old adobe house in New Mexico; she moved there after her husband's death in 1946. The house served as a frequent subject in paintings such as *Black Patio Door* (1955) and *Patio with Cloud* (1956).

Many of O'Keeffe's paintings of the 1960s, large-scale patterns of clouds and landscapes seen from the air, reflected a romanticized view of nature reminiscent of her early themes. These large paintings culminated in a twenty-four-foot mural on canvas, *Sky above Clouds IV* (1965). Her paintings of the 1970s were intense, powerful representations of a black rooster.

A portrayal of O'Keeffe, *In Cahoots with Coyote* from Terry Tempest Williams's 1994 book *An Unspoken Hunger*, painted a vivid narrative of the artist's intense interest in the beloved New Mexico she first visited in 1917. Her search for the ideal color, light, stones, and parched bones, transformed her desert country excursions into a personal closeness she felt with the perfection around her. Once, in a canyon bottom, she was so absorbed by the sight that she laid her head back Coyote-fashion and howled at the sky, terrifying her companions nearby who feared she was



Georgia O'Keeffe.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

injured. "I can't help it—it's all so beautiful," was her response.

The end of a brilliant career

O'Keeffe's boldly original American works spanned a wide vision from taut city towers to deserts in such vivid hues and form "as to startle the senses," according to Williams's narrative. O'Keeffe painted until a few weeks before her death in Santa Fe, New Mexico, on March 6, 1986, at the age of ninety-eight.

Many of O'Keeffe's works found a permanent home among the adobe buildings of Santa Fe. The Georgia O'Keeffe Museum,

designed by New York architect Richard Gluckman, opened in 1997 to hold more of her pastels, drawings, paintings, and sculptures than any other museum.

For More Information

Brooks, Philip. "Georgia O'Keeffe: An Adventurous Spirit." New York: F Watts, 1995.

Eldredge, Charles C. *Georgia O'Keeffe: American and Modern*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1993.

Kucharczyk, Emily Rose. *Georgia O'Keeffe*. Woodbridge, CT: Blackbirch Press, 2002.

Nicholson, Lois P. *Georgia O'Keeffe*. San Diego, CA: Lucent Books, 1995.

Robinson, Roxana. *Georgia O'Keeffe: A Life*. New York: Harper & Row, 1989.

LAURENCE OLIVIER

Born: May 22, 1907

Dorking, England

Died: July 11, 1989

Amhurst, England

English actor and director

Laurence Olivier, internationally popular for his acting and directing, was often regarded as one of the supreme actors of his generation.

Early start at performing

Laurence Olivier was born on May 22, 1907, in Dorking, Surrey, England, the third

child of Gerard Kerr Olivier, a minister, and Agnes Crookenden. As a child Olivier imitated the forceful sermons he saw his father give. His mother, whom he was close to, encouraged him to learn and recite dramatic speeches from plays instead. His first appearances on the stage were in schoolboy productions of plays by William Shakespeare (1564–1616). Olivier was crushed by the sudden death of his mother in 1920, and he used acting to help deal with his pain. When his school, St. Edward's in Oxford, England, was invited to put on a performance of *The Taming of the Shrew* at the Shakespeare Memorial Theatre in Stratford-upon-Avon, England, in 1922, Olivier's performance as Katharina attracted considerable attention.

To prepare for a career in acting, Olivier studied at the Central School in London, England. He found his first paying jobs in the theater during term holidays, working as an assistant stage manager and playing small roles. After a year of experience at various theaters, Olivier joined the Birmingham Repertory Company in 1926, appearing in *She Stoops to Conquer* (1927) and a modern dress production of *Macbeth* (1928). At the age of twenty he also played the title role in Anton Chekhov's (1860–1904) *Uncle Vanya* (1927).

First commercial success

In 1928 Olivier had a part in the first production of *Journey's End*, considered one of the greatest plays ever about the horrors of war. In 1929 he made his first New York City appearance in *Murder on the Second Floor* and also worked in his first film, *The Temporary Widow*. His role in *Private Lives* (1930) brought him his first real commercial success, and soon after he made his first appear-

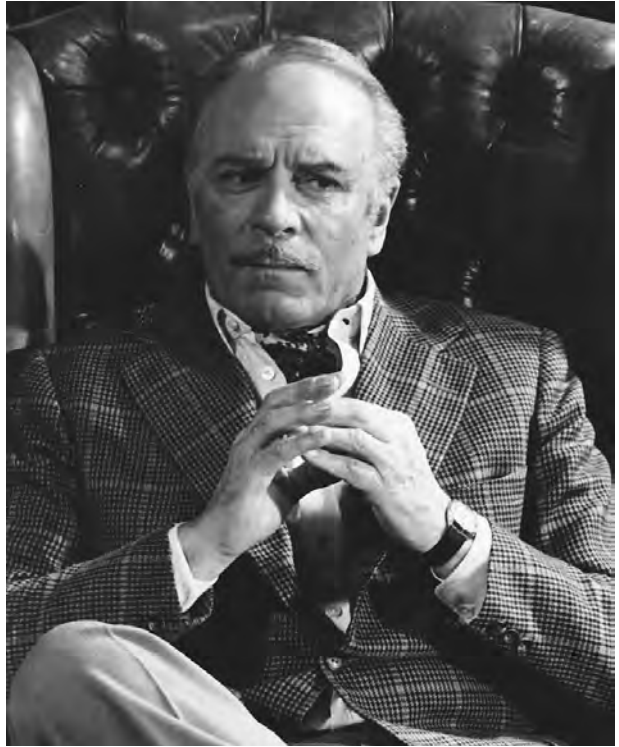
ance in a movie made in Hollywood, California. However, his early film career was filled with disappointments, including Greta Garbo's (1905–1990) refusal to accept him as her leading man in *Queen Christina*.

Back in England in 1934 Olivier received positive reviews for his performances in *Queen of Scots* and *Theatre Royal*. He next tackled his first major Shakespearean roles on the professional stage, alternating the parts of Romeo and Mercutio with John Gielgud (1904–2000) at the New Theatre (1935). The following year Olivier starred in his first Shakespearean film, *As You Like It*. Although disappointed with the film, he used the actors and composer William Walton for future Shakespeare productions. In 1937 he joined London's Old Vic Company for a season, playing in *Hamlet*, *Henry V*, *Macbeth*, and *Twelfth Night*. Having demonstrated his range and skill in interpreting Shakespeare's works, Olivier was now recognized as a top-notch stage actor.

Film triumphs

Three major screen roles, in *Wuthering Heights* (1939, for which he was nominated, or put forward for consideration, for an Academy Award for Best Actor), *Rebecca* (1940, a second Academy Award nomination), and *Pride and Prejudice* (also 1940), firmly established Olivier's film career. Also in 1940 Olivier and Academy Award winner Vivien Leigh (1913–1967) were married. In 1941 Olivier and Leigh played the tragic lovers in *That Hamilton Woman*, regarded as one of the great romantic films of the era.

During World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers: Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies: England,



Laurence Olivier.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

France, the Soviet Union, and the United States) Olivier served with the Fleet Air Arm and was released twice to act in British war films. In 1943 and 1944 he appeared in a film version of *Henry V*, originally planned as a propaganda project (the spreading of ideas or information to help a cause) for the British war effort. He won a special Academy Award for his triple triumph as director, producer, and star of the film.

Postwar work

Olivier was discharged from the service to join the Old Vic's management in rebuilding the company after the difficult war years.

He remained with the company until 1949. Some of his most memorable roles during this time were in *Arms and the Man* (1944) and *Uncle Vanya* (1945); he also played the title roles in *Richard III* (1945) and *King Lear* (1946), the latter of which he also directed. Perhaps his most demanding performance was for the double bill in which he appeared in *Oedipus Rex* and *The Critic* (1945). Returning to film direction in 1948 with his famous black-and-white version of *Hamlet*, Olivier won an Academy Award for best actor, and the film won the award for best picture. Olivier was also knighted by King George VI (1895–1952) of England.

In 1951 Olivier appeared in *Antony and Cleopatra* and *Caesar and Cleopatra* in both London and New York City. He also performed in *The Sleeping Prince* (1955), *Macbeth*, and *Titus Andronicus* during the 1954 and 1955 seasons at the Shakespeare Memorial Theatre, and in *Coriolanus* (1959), again at Stratford. He scored his first success in a modern role as the music hall comedian Archie Rice in *The Entertainer* (1957), repeating the part in the 1959 film version. He also directed and starred in *The Prince and the Showgirl* (1957) opposite Marilyn Monroe (1926–1962). In 1961 he was appointed the first director of the Chichester Festival Theatre. *Uncle Vanya*, starring Olivier and his third wife Joan Plowright (1929–), proved to be a huge success for the company's opening 1962 season.

Later years

Olivier was then named the first director of the state-supported National Theatre, a position he held until 1973. For the National's opening 1963–64 season Olivier directed

Hamlet and appeared in *Uncle Vanya* (which he also directed) and *The Recruiting Officer*. In later seasons he appeared in *Love for Love* (1965), *The Dance of Death* (1967), *The Merchant of Venice* (1970), and *A Long Day's Journey into Night* (1971). His most significant production as director was Chekhov's *The Three Sisters* in 1968. He also directed the 1970 film of the production. In 1970 Olivier was given the title Lord Olivier of Brighton—becoming the first actor to achieve such a rank. During his National years he appeared in several other filmed stage productions, and his commercial films included *Nicholas and Alexandra* (1971) and *Sleuth* (1972).

After leaving the National, Olivier appeared in twenty-nine films in thirteen years, including *Marathon Man* (1976), *A Bridge Too Far* (1977), *A Little Romance* (1979), and *The Jazz Singer* (1981). During this span he received two more Academy Award nominations, becoming the most nominated actor in history. In 1982 Olivier wrote his autobiography (the story of his own life) *Confessions of an Actor*; another book, *On Acting*, was published in 1986. In 1987 he announced to the world his retirement from motion pictures, but he promised to remain active in television. On July 11, 1989, Olivier died in Amhurst, England, of complications from a muscle disorder.

For More Information

Hirsch, Foster. *Laurence Olivier*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1979.

Holden, Anthony. *Laurence Olivier*. New York: Atheneum, 1988.

Lewis, Roger. *The Real Life of Laurence Olivier*. New York: Applause, 1997.

Olivier, Laurence. *Confessions of an Actor: An Autobiography*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1982.

Spoto, Donald. *Laurence Olivier*. New York: HarperCollins, 1992.

JACQUELINE KENNEDY ONASSIS

Born: July 28, 1929

Southampton, New York

Died: May 19, 1994

New York, New York

American first lady and editor

An internationally famous first lady, Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis raised her two children alone after the assassination of President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963). After a seven-year remarriage to Aristotle Onassis (c. 1900–1975), she turned to a career as a book editor.

A privileged childhood

Jacqueline Lee Bouvier was born on July 28, 1929, to Janet Lee Bouvier (1908–) and John (Jack) Vernon Bouvier III (1892–1957). Jackie was a strong and independent child. She was initially considered a discipline problem at Miss Chapin's, the fashionable school on Manhattan's East Side that she attended as a young girl. Janet and Jack had a troubled marriage, and they were divorced in 1940. Jackie lived with her mother, who in 1942 remarried Hugh Dubley Auchincloss, Jr. (1897–1976), a lawyer from a wealthy old family. The Auchinclosses were much wealthier than the Bou-

viere, and Jackie and her sister Lee lived with their mother and her new husband.

Jackie's mother's remarriage created conflict in the family. Although Jackie adored her father, she saw less and less of him, especially after her mother and stepfather moved their family to Washington, D.C. The summers were spent at the Auchincloss home, known as Hammersmith Farm, in Newport, Rhode Island. In 1944 Jackie was sent to boarding school at Miss Porter's in Farmington, Connecticut.

Jackie was a beautiful and elegant young woman. When she made her social debut, a top newspaper gossip columnist named her Debutante of 1947. Jackie began her college education at Vassar, where she seemed embarrassed by the reputation attached to her social success. She was a serious student who worked hard and made the dean's list. She spent two years at Vassar, and then studied for a year in France through a program offered by Smith College. After she returned to the United States, Jackie finished college at George Washington University in Washington, D.C. She then took a job at the *Washington Times-Herald* newspaper as a photographer.

Life as a Kennedy

In 1951 Jackie met John Fitzgerald Kennedy for the first time. The next year Kennedy was elected senator from Massachusetts and moved to Washington. The two continued to see each other, and they became engaged in June 1953. On September 12, 1953, Jacqueline Lee Bouvier married Kennedy at an enormous wedding that was the social event of the season.

Jackie Kennedy was a shy, private woman with little experience in politics or



Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis.

knowledge of politicians, but she was a help to her husband in many ways. She worked with him on his public speaking, helping him develop the charismatic (or charming) style for which he would become so famous.

In 1956 there was talk that John Kennedy would be the Democratic vice presidential nominee. Many members of the Kennedy family attended the convention, which was an exciting and exhausting one. Jackie was there to lend her support, despite the fact that she was seven months pregnant. Although John Kennedy gave a speech nominating Adlai Stevenson (1900–1965) as the Democratic candidate for president, Estes

Kefauver (1903–1963) was selected as the vice presidential candidate.

On August 23, 1956, soon after her husband had left for a short vacation, Jackie went into premature labor. The baby was stillborn, or dead at birth, and Jackie's brother-in-law Bobby Kennedy (1925–1968) comforted her and made the arrangements for the baby's burial. In 1957 Jackie suffered another loss when her father died. This was also a difficult period in the Kennedy marriage. Much was rumored at the time, and has been written since, about the various affairs that John Kennedy had both before and during his presidency. Undoubtedly, these rumors put a strain on his and Jackie's marriage.

On November 27, 1957, Caroline Bouvier Kennedy was born. Just months after Caroline's birth, her father was up for reelection as senator from Massachusetts, and Jackie was active in the 1958 senatorial campaign as well.

Jackie becomes first lady

Soon after John Kennedy was reelected senator and returned to Washington, he began to seek the presidential nomination. Jackie campaigned vigorously for her husband until she became pregnant in 1960. Even afterwards she continued to help as much as she was physically able until the birth of her son, John Jr.

As soon as John Kennedy was elected president, Jackie began working to reorganize the White House so that she could turn it into a home for her children and protect their privacy. At the same time she recognized the importance of the White House as a public institution and a national monument. She

formed the White House Historical Association to help her with the task of redecorating the building, as well as a Special Committee for White House Paintings to further advise her. She wrote an introduction to "The White House: A Historical Guide," and she also developed the idea of a filmed tour of the White House that she would conduct. The tour was broadcast on Valentine's Day 1962, and it was eventually distributed to 106 countries.

In April of 1963 the Kennedys announced that Jackie was once again pregnant. On August 7, 1963, Patrick Bouvier Kennedy was born. He died three days later. Another tragedy struck soon after. Jackie Kennedy was riding by her husband's side when he was assassinated on November 22, 1963, in Texas. In the days that followed John Kennedy's death, the image of his widow and children, and the dignity with which they conducted themselves, were very much a part of the nation's experience of mourning and loss.

After leaving the White House

In the years immediately after her husband's death, Jackie Kennedy was seen very much in the role of his widow. At the same time there was constant speculation about whether or not she would remarry. Jackie was actively involved in brother-in-law Robert Kennedy's campaign for president in 1968. After his assassination in June 1968, she was again a well-known figure at a very public funeral.

In October 1968 Jackie Kennedy married Aristotle Onassis (c. 1900–1975), a wealthy Greek businessman. He was sixty-two and she was thirty-nine. Jackie spent large portions of her time in New York to be with her children. As the years went by, the Onassis

marriage was rumored to be a difficult one, and the couple began to spend most of their time apart. Aristotle Onassis died in 1975. Widowed for a second time, Jackie returned permanently to New York. For the next two decades Jackie worked as a book editor for several large publishers in New York City.

In 1994 Jackie Kennedy told the public that she was being treated for non-Hodgkin's lymphoma (a form of cancer), and that her condition was responding well to therapy. However, the disease proved fatal on May 19, 1994, when she died in New York City. She is buried next to John F. Kennedy in Arlington National Cemetery.

In death, Jackie Kennedy remains a symbol of strength in American culture. Her courage during some of the country's darkest periods has inspired countless books about her and solidified her important role in one of the nation's favorite families.

For More Information

Andersen, Christopher P. *Jack and Jackie: Portrait of an American Marriage*. New York: William Morrow, 1996.

Birmingham, Stephen. *Jacqueline Bouvier Kennedy Onassis*. New York: Grosset & Dunlap, 1978.

Frischauer, Willi. *Jackie*. London: Joseph, 1976.

Heymann, C. David. *A Woman Named Jackie*. Secaucus, NJ: Carol Communications, 1989.

Kelly, Kitty. *Jackie Oh!* Secaucus, NJ: L. Stuart, 1978.

Spoto, Donald. *Jacqueline Bouvier Kennedy Onassis: A Life*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 2000.

EUGENE O'NEILL

Born: October 16, 1888

New York, New York

Died: November 27, 1953

Boston, Massachusetts

American playwright

Eugene O'Neill was among the leading dramatists of the American theater. Four of his plays were honored with the Pulitzer Prize. His main concern was with the anguish and pain experienced by sensitive (easily hurt or damaged) people.

Early life on the road

Eugene Gladstone O'Neill was born on October 16, 1888, in a New York City hotel. He was the youngest of the three children of James O'Neill, an outstanding romantic actor, and Ella Quinlan O'Neill. Eugene had two brothers, James, Jr. (born 1878), and Edmund (born 1883). Edmund's death at a young age brought deep feelings of guilt into the family. Eugene spent his first seven years on tour with his parents. Although he received a lot of exposure to the theater, he hated living in hotel rooms, and the constant traveling drove his mother to become addicted to drugs.

From the age of seven to fourteen, O'Neill was educated at Catholic schools. When he rebelled against any further Catholic education, his parents sent him to Betts Academy in Connecticut. He also began to spend time with his brother, James, a heavy drinker, who "made sin easy for him." Eugene's formal education ended in 1907

with an unfinished year at Princeton University in New Jersey. By this time his three main interests were books, alcohol, and women.

Decides to write

In 1909 O'Neill married Kathleen Jenkins before leaving for Honduras to mine for gold. A month after his return in April 1910, his son Eugene O'Neill, Jr., was born. O'Neill left later that year to work at sea. He also did odd jobs in Buenos Aires, Argentina. Back in New York in 1911, he spent several weeks drinking in bars before shipping out again to England. Almost half of his published plays show his interest in the sea. In 1912 O'Neill's marriage broke up, he tried to kill himself, and he developed tuberculosis (a disease of the lungs). By the time he was released from the hospital in June 1913, he had decided to become a dramatist.

O'Neill began to write constantly. With his father's aid, five of his one-act plays were published in 1914. O'Neill then joined George Pierce Baker's playwriting class at Harvard University in Massachusetts. O'Neill planned to return to Harvard in the fall of 1915 but ended up instead at the "Hell Hole," a hotel and bar in New York City, where he drank heavily and produced nothing. He next joined the Provincetown Players in Cape Cod, Massachusetts, whose productions of his plays about the sea, including *Bound East for Cardiff*, made him well known by 1918. Also in 1918 O'Neill married Agnes Boulton. They had a son, Shane, and a daughter, Oona.

Wins first Pulitzer Prize

In O'Neill's early writing he concentrated heavily on the one-act form. His hard work led to great success with the production of

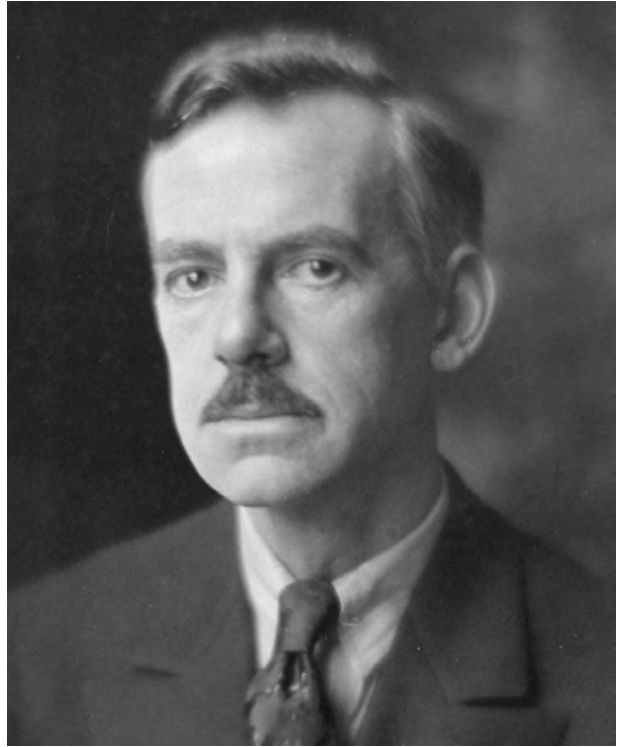
his full-length *Beyond the Horizon* (1920), for which he won his first Pulitzer Prize. The play is similar to the one-act form in its structure, but by adding a poetic and well-spoken character, O'Neill was able to reach high dramatic moments.

O'Neill's father, mother, and brother all died within a four-year span during the 1920s. His marriage was also troubled, as he had fallen in love with Carlotta Monterey. He divorced Agnes Boulton in 1929 and soon married Carlotta. Even with these pressures, O'Neill was incredibly productive. In the fifteen years following the appearance of *Beyond the Horizon*, he wrote twenty-one plays, some brilliant successes (including *Anna Christie* and *Strange Interlude*, both Pulitzer Prize winners, as well as *Desire Under the Elms*, and *Mourning Becomes Electra*) and others total failures.

Later life

Carlotta Monterey brought a sense of order to O'Neill's life. His health worsened rapidly from 1937 on, but her care helped him remain productive. O'Neill had poor relationships with his children: Eugene Jr., who killed himself in 1950; Shane, who became addicted to drugs; and Oona, who was ignored by her father after her marriage to actor Charlie Chaplin (1889–1977). O'Neill even left Shane and Oona out of his will. When O'Neill knew that death was near, he tore up six of his unfinished plays rather than have someone else rewrite them. He died on November 27, 1953.

With the exception of *The Iceman Cometh* (1946), all of O'Neill's later works were produced after his death. *The Iceman Cometh* fascinated audiences despite its length. *Long Day's Journey into Night* (1956), an autobiographical (describing his own life) work



Eugene O'Neill.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

using no theatrical effects, showed O'Neill at the height of his dramatic power. It also received the Pulitzer Prize. Among all of his late plays, *A Touch of the Poet* (1958) has the strongest elements of romantic warmth.

For More Information

Alexander, Doris. *Eugene O'Neill's Creative Struggle: The Decisive Decade, 1924–1933*. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1992.

Black, Stephen A. *Eugene O'Neill: Beyond Mourning and Tragedy*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1999.

Gelb, Arthur, and Barbara Gelb. *O'Neill: Life with Monte Cristo*. New York: Applause Theatre and Cinema Books, 2000.

Sheaffer, Louis. *O'Neill, Son and Playwright*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1968, revised edition 2002.

GEORGE ORWELL

Born: June 25, 1903

Motihari, India

Died: January 21, 1950

London, England

English writer, novelist, and essayist

The English novelist and essayist, George Orwell, is best known for his satirical (using wit or sarcasm to point out and devalue sin or silliness) novels *Animal Farm* and *Nineteen Eighty-four*.

Early years

George Orwell was born Eric Arthur Blair in Motihari, Bengal, India, to Richard and Ida Mabel Blair. He had an older sister and a younger sister. His father was a minor customs official in the Indian Civil Service. When Orwell was four years old, his family returned to England, where they settled at Henley, a village near London, England. His father soon returned to India.

As a child, Orwell was shy and lacked self-confidence. He suffered from bronchitis all his life. He spent long hours reading and was especially interested in science fiction, ghost stories, William Shakespeare's (1564–

1616) plays, and fiction by Edgar Allan Poe (1809–1849), Charles Dickens (1812–1870), and Rudyard Kipling (1865–1936). When Orwell was eight years old, he was sent to a private preparatory school in Sussex, England. He later claimed that his experiences there determined his views on the English class system. From there he went by scholarship to two private secondary schools: Wellington for one term and Eton for four and a half years.

Orwell then joined the Indian Imperial Police, receiving his training in Burma, where he served from 1922 to 1927. While home on leave in England, Orwell made the important decision not to return to Burma, but to pursue writing. His resignation from the Indian Imperial Police became effective on January 1, 1928. Later evidence suggests that he had come to understand the imperialism for which he was serving, and had rejected it. Imperialism is a political and economic practice whereby a nation increases its power by gaining control or ownership of other territories.

Establishment as a writer

Shortly after making this decision Orwell stayed in Notting Hill, a poor section in London's East End, and in a working-class district of Paris, France. He wrote two novels, both lost, during his stay in Paris, and he published a few articles in French and English. After working as a kitchen porter and dishwasher, and suffering from pneumonia (a lung disease), he returned to his parents' house in Suffolk, England, toward the end of 1929.

Back in England, Orwell earned his living by teaching and by writing occasional articles, while he completed several versions of his first book, *Down and Out in London and Paris*. This

novel recorded his experiences in the East End and in Paris. Because he was earning his living as a teacher when his novel was scheduled for publication, he preferred to publish it under a pseudonym (a made-up name used by an author to disguise his or her true identity). From a list of four possible names submitted to his publisher, he chose “George Orwell.”

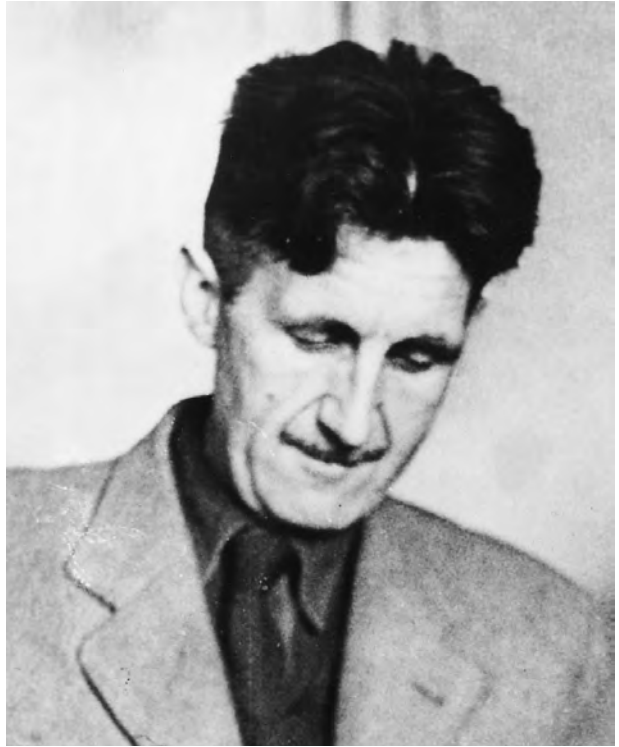
First novels

Orwell's *Down and Out* was issued in 1933. During the next three years he supported himself by teaching, reviewing, and clerking in a bookshop. In 1934 he published *Burmese Days*. The plot of this novel concerns personal intrigue (plotting) among an isolated group of Europeans in Burma (a country now known as Myanmar). Two more novels followed: *A Clergyman's Daughter* (1935) and *Keep the Aspidistra Flying* (1936).

In the spring of 1936 Orwell moved to Wallington, Hertfordshire, and several months later married Eileen O'Shaughnessy, a teacher and journalist. The Left Book Club authorized Orwell to write an inquiry into the lives of the poor and unemployed. *The Road to Wigan Pier* (1937) included an essay on class and socialism (a social system in which the production of goods and distribution of wealth is controlled centrally). It marked Orwell's birth as a political writer, an identity that lasted for the rest of his life.

Political commitments and essays

In July 1936 the Spanish Civil War broke out. Orwell arrived in Barcelona, Spain, at the end of autumn and joined the militia (a group of citizens who serve in the armed forces of a country). Orwell was wounded in the middle of May 1937. During his recovery,



George Orwell.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

the militia was declared illegal, and he fled into France in June. His experiences in Spain had made him into a revolutionary socialist, one who advocated change to a socialist form of society through rebellion of the people.

After Orwell returned to England, he began writing *Homage to Catalonia* (1938), which describes his disappointment with the Loyalists during the Spanish Civil War. He then wished to return to India to write a book, but he became ill with tuberculosis (a serious disease of the lungs). He was treated in a hospital until late in the summer of 1938. He spent the following winter in Morocco, where he wrote *Coming Up for Air*

(1939). After he returned to England, Orwell authored several of his best-known essays. These include the essays on Dickens and on boys' weeklies and "Inside the Whale."

After World War II (1939–1945; a war fought between the Axis: Italy, Germany, and Japan, and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States) began, Orwell wanted to enlist. The army, however, rejected him as physically unfit. Later he served for a period in the home guard and as a fire watcher. The Orwells moved to London in May 1940. In early 1941 George Orwell began writing "London Letters" for *Partisan Review*, and in August he joined the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC) as a producer in the Indian section. He remained in this position until 1943.

First masterpiece

In 1943 Orwell's mother died; he left the BBC to become literary editor of the *Tribune*; and he began reviewing books on a more regular basis. By February 1944 Orwell had completed *Animal Farm*, but several publishers rejected it on political grounds. It finally appeared in August 1945. This fable intends to enforce a useful truth, the failure of communism, through animals that speak and act like humans.

Toward the end of World War II, Orwell traveled to France, Germany, and Austria as a reporter. His wife died in March 1945. The next year he settled on Jura off the coast of Scotland, with his youngest sister as his housekeeper.

Crowning achievement

Although Orwell's health was now steadily falling apart, he started work on *Nineteen*

Eighty-four. Published in 1949, this book is an elaborate satire (a literary work that uncovers the corrupt morals of humans) on modern politics, foretelling a world in which humans are made less than human in a world where citizens are at the mercy of the state's absolute control. Orwell entered a London hospital in September 1949 and the next month married Sonia Brownell. He died in London on January 21, 1950.

Orwell's work is strongly autobiographical (based on the events of his own life) and combines elements of his own middle-class experience with his desire to cause social reform. He was critical of intellectuals whose political viewpoints struck him as superficial. His strong stand against communism (a system in which the government controls all businesses) resulted from his experience of its methods gained as a fighter in the Spanish Civil War.

For More Information

- Boerst, William J. *Generous Anger: The Story of George Orwell*. Greensboro, NC: Morgan Reynolds, 2001.
- Hitchens, Christopher. *Why Orwell Matters*. New York: Basic Books, 2002.
- Meyers, Jeffrey. *Orwell: Wintry Conscience of a Generation*. New York: Norton, 2000.
- Shelden, Michael. *Orwell: The Authorized Biography*. New York: HarperCollins, 1991.

OVID

Born: 43 B.C.E.
Sulmo, Italy

Died: c. 18 C.E.

Tomis (now Constanta, Romania)

Roman poet

Ovid was a Roman poet. His verse is distinguished by its easy elegance and sophistication (subtle complexity).

Early life

Ovid was born Publius Ovidius Naso on March 20, 43 B.C.E., at Sulmo (modern Sulmona), Italy, about ninety miles from Rome. His father was wealthy and intended for him to become a lawyer and an official. He gave Ovid an excellent education, including study under great rhetoricians (masters of language and speech).

Ovid preferred exercises that dealt with historical or imaginary circumstances. His orations (formal speeches) seemed like poems without meter. His ease in composition, the content of some of his poems, and the rhetorical (having to do with language skills) nature of much of his work in general all reflect his training with the rhetoricians.

Ovid also studied in Athens, Greece, toured the Near East, and lived for almost a year in Sicily. His father convinced him to return to Rome, where he served in various minor legal positions, but he disliked the work and lacked political ambitions.

Early works

After leaving legal work, Ovid moved in the best literary circles. He had attracted notice as a poet while still in school and in time came to be surrounded by a group of admirers. This period of Ovid's life seems to

have been relatively peaceful as well as productive. Of his private life we know little except that he was married three times.

Ovid's early work was almost always on the theme of love. He wrote three short books of verses known as the *Amores* (*Loves*). Most of these poems concern Ovid's love for a woman who is generally considered to be imaginary. During this time he also wrote his *Heroides*, a series of letters from mythical heroines to their absent husbands or lovers.

His exile

In 8 or 9 C.E. Ovid was banished to Tomi, a city on the Black Sea in what is now modern Romania. The reasons behind Ovid's exile have been the subject of much guessing. He himself tells us that the reason was "a poem and a mistake." The poem was clearly his *Loves*. The poem made fun of conventional (socially accepted) love poetry and offered vivid portrayals of contemporary Roman society.

This work was an immediate and overwhelming success in fashionable society, but apparently infuriated the emperor Augustus (63 B.C.E.–14 C.E.). The emperor excluded it from the public libraries of Rome along with Ovid's other works. The journey to his exile in Tomi lasted nearly a year. When he arrived, he found it a frontier post, where books and educated people were not to be found and Latin was practically unknown. Tomi was subject to attack by hostile barbarians and to bitterly cold winters.

The production of the last ten years of his life consists largely of appeals to be allowed to return to Rome, but Augustus was too bitterly offended to forgive him. The next emperor



Ovid.

Tiberius (42 B.C.E.–37 C.E.) was even more unyielding. Ovid's exile was not so unbearable as his letters indicate. He learned the native languages, and his pleasantness and friendliness made him a beloved and revered figure to the local citizens. They exempted him from taxes and treated him well.

His masterpiece

Ovid's masterpiece is generally considered to be his *Metamorphoses*. It is an epic (a long poem centered around legendary heroes), fifteen books in length, and devoted mainly to the theme of changes in shape. The first twelve books were derived from Greek

mythology, and books thirteen to fifteen devoted to Roman legends and history. The transitions between the various stories are managed with great skill. *Metamorphoses* owes its preservation to the incomparable narrative skill with which Ovid takes the old tales of a mythology and gives spirit to them with charm and freshness.

Later influence

In ancient culture the influence of Ovid on all writers who followed him was inescapable for those who were consciously attempting to return to earlier standards. His stories, particularly from *Metamorphoses*, were a major source for the illustrations of artists.

In the Middle Ages (500 through 1450), especially the High Middle Ages (1000 through 1200), when interest in Ovid's works was primarily centered on *Metamorphoses*, *Loves*, and *Heroides*, Ovid helped to fill the overpowering medieval hunger for storytelling.

During the Renaissance period (the fourteenth through sixteenth centuries), Ovid was easily the most influential of the Latin poets. Painters and sculptors used his work for themes. Writers of all ranks translated, adapted, and borrowed from him freely. In English literature alone Edmund Spenser (1552–1599), John Milton (1608–1674), and William Shakespeare (1564–1616) show a deep knowledge and use of Ovid.

After the Renaissance, Ovid's influence was most often indirect. However, many authors and artists used him directly from then until modern times, ranging from John Dryden (1631–1700), who translated *Metamorphoses*, and Pablo Picasso (1881–1973), who illustrated Dryden's work.

For More Information

Fraenkel, Hermann F. *Ovid: A Poet between Two Worlds*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1945.

Holzberg, Niklas. *Ovid: The Poet and His Work*. Edited by G. M. Goshgarian. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 2002.

Otis, Brooks. *Ovid as an Epic Poet*. Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press, 1966.

Thibault, John C. *The Mystery of Ovid's Exile*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1964.

JESSE OWENS

Born: September 12, 1913

Oakville, Alabama

Died: March 31, 1980

Tucson, Arizona

African American track star

American track star Jesse Owens became the hero of the 1936 Olympic Games in Berlin, Germany, as his series of victories scored a moral victory for African American athletes.

A young track star

James Cleveland Owens was born in Oakville, Alabama, on September 12, 1913, the son of a sharecropper, a farmer who rents land. He was a sickly child, often too frail to help his father and brothers in the fields. The family moved to Cleveland, Ohio, in 1921,

for better work opportunities. There was little improvement in their life, but the move did enable young Owens to enter public school, where a teacher accidentally wrote down his name as “Jesse” instead of J. C. He carried the name with him for the rest of his life.

When Owens was in the fifth grade, the athletic supervisor asked him to join the track team. From a skinny boy he developed into a strong runner, and in junior high school he set a record for the 100-yard dash. In high school in 1933 he won the 100-yard dash, the 200-yard dash, and the broad jump in the National Interscholastic Championships. Owens was such a complete athlete, a coach said he seemed to float over the ground when he ran.

Record setter and Olympian

A number of universities actively recruited Owens, but he felt that college was only a dream. He felt he could not leave his struggling family and young wife when a paycheck needed to be earned. Owens finally agreed to enter Ohio State University in Columbus, Ohio, after officials found employment for his father. In addition to his studies and participation in track, Owens worked three jobs to pay his tuition. He experienced racism (the idea that one race is superior to others) while a student at Ohio State, but the incidents merely strengthened his desire to succeed. At the Big Ten Conference track and field championships at the University of Michigan in 1935, he broke three world records and tied another. His 26 foot 8 1/4-inch broad jump set a record that was not broken for twenty-five years.

Owens was a member of the 1936 U.S. Olympic team competing in Berlin, Germany.



Jesse Owens.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

The African American members of the squad faced the challenges not only of competition but also of Adolph Hitler's (1889–1945) boasts of Aryan supremacy, or the domination of Hitler's ideal white, European athletes. Owens won a total of four gold medals at the Olympic games. As a stunned Hitler angrily left the stadium, German athletes embraced Owens and the spectators chanted his name. He returned to a hero's welcome in America, and was honored with a ticker tape parade in New York City. Within months, however, he was unable to find work to finance his senior year of college. Owens took a job as a playground supervisor, but was soon approached

by promoters who wanted him to race against horses and cars. With the money from these exhibitions, he was able to finish school.

In 1937 Owens lent his name to a chain of cleaning shops. They prospered until 1939, when the partners fled, leaving Owens with a bankrupt business and heavy debts. He found employment with the Office of Civilian Defense in Philadelphia (1940–1942) as national director of physical education for African Americans. From 1942 to 1946 he was director of minority employment at Ford Motor Company in Detroit, Michigan. He later became a sales executive for a Chicago sporting goods company.

Ambassador of sport

In 1951 Owens accompanied the Harlem Globetrotters basketball team to Berlin at the invitation of the U.S. High Commission and the army. He was appointed secretary of the Illinois Athletic Commission (1952–1955), and was sent on a global goodwill tour as ambassador of sport for the United States. Also in 1955, he was appointed to the Illinois Youth Commission. In 1956 he organized the Junior Olympic Games for youngsters in Chicago between the ages of twelve and seventeen. Owens and his friend, boxer Joe Louis (1914–1981), were active in helping African American youth.

Owens headed his own public relations firm in Chicago, Illinois, and for several years had a jazz program on Chicago radio. He traveled throughout the United States and overseas, lecturing youth groups. Not especially involved in the civil rights movement, which pushed for equal rights among all races, Owens admired civil rights leader Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968). Owens and

his childhood sweetheart, whom he had married in 1931, had three daughters.

Honors

Forty years after Owens won his gold medals, he was invited to the White House to accept a Medal of Freedom from President Gerald Ford (1913–). The following year, the Jesse Owens International Trophy for amateur athletes was established. In 1979 President Jimmy Carter (1924–) honored Owens with a Living Legend Award.

In the 1970s Owens moved his business from Chicago to Phoenix, Arizona, but as time progressed, his health deteriorated. He died of cancer on March 31, 1980, after a lengthy stay in a Phoenix hospital. He was buried in Chicago several days later.

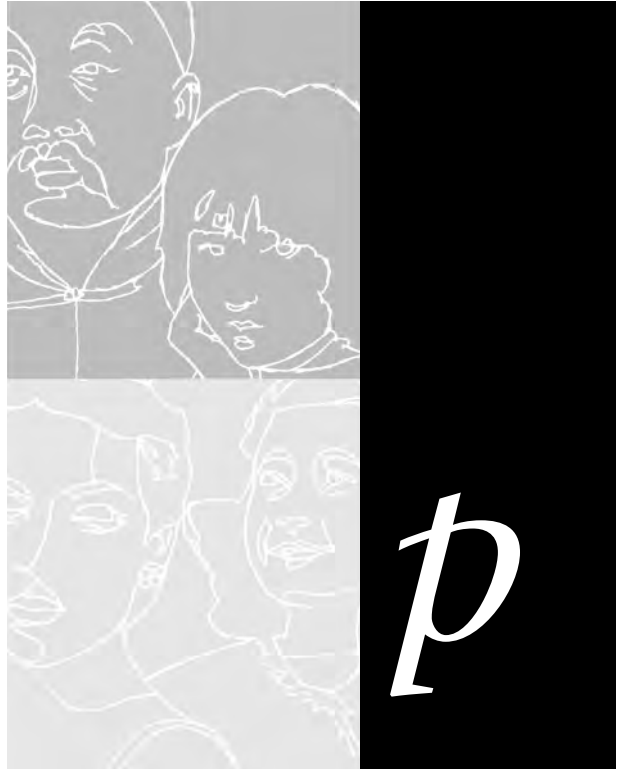
The highest honor Owens received came a full ten years after his death. Congressman Louis Stokes from Cleveland pushed tirelessly to earn Owens a Congressional Gold Medal. President George Bush (1924–) finally gave the award to Owens's widow in 1990. During the ceremony, President Bush called Owens "an Olympic hero and an American hero every day of his life." Owens's fabled career as a runner again caught public attention in the 1996 Olympic Games—the sixtieth anniversary of his Berlin triumph—as

entrepreneurs (risk-taking businessmen) hawked everything from Jesse Owens gambling chips to commemorative (having to do with honoring someone or something) oak tree seedlings similar to the one Owens was awarded as a gold medallist in Berlin.

Racism at home had denied Owens the financial fruits of his victory after the 1936 games, but his triumph in what has been called the most important sports story of the century continued to be an inspiration for modern day Olympians like track stars Michael Johnson (1967–) and Carl Lewis (1961–). In *Jet* magazine (August 1996), Johnson credited Owens for paving the way for his and other black athletes' victories.

For More Information

- Baker, William J. *Jesse Owens: An American Life*. New York: Free Press, 1986.
- Josephson, Judith Pinkerton. *Jesse Owens, Track and Field Legend*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.
- Mandell, Richard. *The Nazi Olympics*. New York: Macmillan, 1971.
- Nuwer, Hank. *The Legend of Jesse Owens*. New York: F. Watts, 1998.
- Owens, Jesse. *Blackthink: My Life as Black Man and White Man*. New York: Morrow, 1970.



MOHAMMAD REZA PAHLAVI

Born: October 27, 1919

Tehran, Iran

Died: July 21, 1980

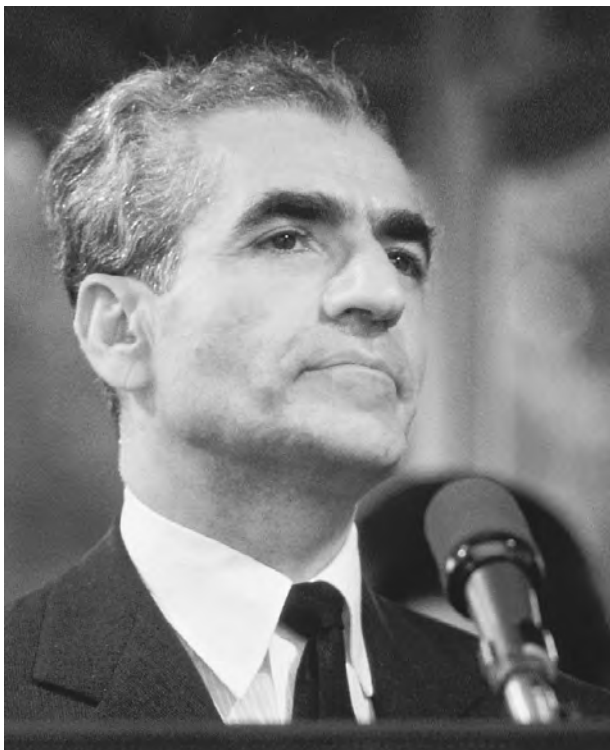
Cairo, Egypt

Iranian shah

Mohammad Reza Pahlavi was shah of Iran following his father's reign. He established many reforms to improve the country, but a revolution, led by Ayatollah Ruhollah Khomeini (1900–1989) in 1979, forced him into exile.

Crown prince at six

Mohammad Reza Pahlavi was born on October 27, 1919. His father, who was then an officer in the Persian Cossack regiment, became shah (king) of Iran as Reza Shah Pahlavi in 1926. Mohammad Reza was proclaimed crown prince at the age of six. From this time on he was carefully educated for his future role as shah by his stern father. In 1931 he was sent to Switzerland to attend Le Rosey school for boys. He was a good student but made few friends because, as a prince, he was not permitted to leave the school grounds. After returning to Iran in 1936, he entered a Tehran military school, graduating in 1938. In 1939 he married Princess Fawzia of Egypt. He developed a love for sports,



Mohammad Reza Pahlavi.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

enjoying soccer and skiing, and he later became a licensed pilot.

Replaces father as shah

In the fall of 1941 Pahlavi's father was forced to step down from the throne by British and Russian forces who had taken over the country after a short struggle. On September 27, 1941, he replaced his father as Mohammad Reza Shah Pahlavi. This was a confusing and dangerous time for Iran. Not only was World War II (1939–45) being fought, but Iran was squeezed between bitter enemies Russia and Britain. In addition, the vast resources of oil in Iran were eagerly

sought by the Russians, the Americans, and the British.

Pressure on Iran from the Soviet Union came from more than one side. The young shah was caught in a struggle between the pro-Soviet Tudeh Party, which wanted social revolution without the shah, and the pro-British National Will Party, which wanted the shah but no social change. The shah himself was not satisfied with either idea. After World War II the Soviet Union refused to remove its forces from Iran as it had promised. Instead the Soviet forces stayed to help a branch of the Persian Communist Party set up a separate government in the northwest province of Azerbaijan. Iran brought this issue to the United Nations (UN). After much discussion the Soviet Union left Azerbaijan in May 1946, and the shah became very popular.

Internal conflict

Iran's problems were not over; the oil question had not been solved. The new National Front Party, formed under the leadership of Dr. Mohammad Mosaddeq, stated that since Iran had refused to give oil rights to the Soviet Union, it should take them away from the British. The country was plunged into a crisis and by 1953, communications broke down between the shah and Prime Minister Mosaddeq and also among the prime minister, his cabinet, and the parliament. The crisis, in which the Tudeh Party was gaining the upper hand, forced the shah and Sorayya (his second wife) to leave the country. Nine days later, with U.S. aid, Mosaddeq was overthrown, and the shah returned in triumph.

Pahlavi returned with a new resolve to do things his way. He started what later was

called the “White Revolution.” After distributing the land among the peasants, he put forests and water under the control of the government, established profit-sharing plans for workers, gave more freedom to women, and established civil service programs. New industries were created, and Iran became one of the most stable countries in the Middle East.

Later years

On October 27, 1967, his forty-eighth birthday, and after twenty-six years as shah, Pahlavi was crowned as His Imperial Majesty Mohammad Reza Pahlavi Aryamehr, Shahanshah of Iran. What made this crowning unique in Persian history was that his third wife, Farah, was crowned as empress, the first since the coming of Islam in the seventh century. Their six-year-old son, Reza, was declared crown prince.

During the 1970s, oil-rich countries such as Iran exercised much world power. It was also the strongest military country in the Middle East. However, the shah ruled with unlimited authority and his popularity began to decrease, especially among Muslims who were followers of Ayatollah Ruhollah Khomeini. The Ayatollah led a revolution in 1979, forcing the shah and his family into exile. Mohammed Reza Pahlavi died in Cairo, Egypt, on July 27, 1980.

For More Information

Barth, Linda. *Mohammed Reza Pahlavi*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

Pahlavai, Mohammad Reza, Shah of Iran. *Answer to History*. New York: Stein and Day, 1980.

Saikal, Amin. *The Rise and Fall of the Shah*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1980.

Shawcross, William. *The Shah's Last Ride: The Fate of an Ally*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1988.

ARNOLD PALMER

Born: September 10, 1929

Youngstown, Pennsylvania

American golfer

Arnold Palmer was the first person to make one million dollars playing golf. Palmer attracted legions of fans—known as “Arnie’s Army”—who hung on his every shot, celebrating his successes and suffering his failures along with him.

Early years

Arnold Daniel Palmer was born in Youngstown, Pennsylvania, the oldest of Milfred “Deacon” Palmer and Doris Palmer’s four children. He grew up in nearby Latrobe, Pennsylvania. Palmer’s father gave golf lessons at the Latrobe Country Club and gave Arnold his first set of golf clubs when the boy was three years old. Arnold began to sneak onto Latrobe’s nine-hole course at every opportunity. He began working as a caddie (one who carries a golfer’s clubs) at the age of eleven.

While playing for the Latrobe High School golf team, Palmer lost only one match in four years. During his senior year he met



Arnold Palmer.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Bud Worsham, whose brother was a professional golfer. At Worsham's urging, Palmer accepted a golf scholarship to Wake Forest College in North Carolina. During Palmer's senior year in college, Worsham was killed in a car accident. Shaken by Worsham's death, Palmer left school and joined the Coast Guard. In 1954 he began selling painting supplies to support his participation in amateur golf. He won the National Amateur championship that year.

Begins pro career

Palmer became a professional golfer in November 1954. A month later he married

Winnie Walzer, whom he had met while playing in an amateur tournament. In 1955 Palmer won the Canadian Open, earning twenty-four hundred dollars. He captured three tournaments in 1956 and four in 1957, when his earnings of twenty-eight thousand dollars made him the number five money-winner on the tour. Palmer won three tournaments during each of the next two seasons. One of his 1958 victories was the prestigious (honored) Masters, a tournament held every year in Augusta, Georgia.

In 1960, just as golf was beginning to receive regular television coverage, Palmer's spectacular come-from-behind wins in the Masters and the U.S. Open made him a national hero. He won the British Open in 1961 and 1962 and the Masters in 1962 and 1964. Palmer became one of the nation's most famous people. He became involved with many businesses, tried acting in television and movies, and wrote a new golf book every few years. Palmer became the richest athlete in the world, with a yearly income of more than one million dollars.

Golf legend

Although Palmer continued to win tournaments through the 1960s, some believed that his businesses were distracting him from golf. Still, in 1970 the Associated Press (AP) named him Athlete of the Decade (a ten-year period). Palmer won only a few minor Professional Golfers Association (PGA) titles during the 1970s. In 1980 he entered the Senior PGA tour and won the PGA Seniors championship. He also captured the 1981 United States Golf Association (USGA) Senior Open, and he took the PGA Seniors again in 1984. His last victory on the Senior tour was in

1988. In 1994 he made his final U.S. Open appearance in Oakmont, Pennsylvania, where the cheers of his "Army" brought him to tears. A similar scene occurred at his last appearance at the British Open in 1995.

Palmer has received virtually every national award in golf. He had sixty-one wins on the PGA tour, including seven major championships, and he is a member of the World Golf Hall of Fame, the American Golf Hall of Fame, and the PGA Hall of Fame. Palmer also used his fame to benefit charities, serving as Honorary National Chairman of the March of Dimes Birth Defects Foundation for twenty years. He played a major role in raising money to build the Arnold Palmer Hospital for Children and Women in Orlando, Florida. He also established a yearly fund-raising golf event for the Latrobe Area Hospital in 1992.

Later years

Palmer underwent surgery for cancer in January 1997. After he recovered, his wife was found to be suffering from a different type of cancer. She died in 1999. Palmer continued his involvement with golf. He testified on behalf of the PGA in a lawsuit brought by golfer Casey Martin, who was suing for the right to use a golf cart to move between holes while playing because of a problem with one of his legs. Palmer and others argued that the cart would give Martin an unfair advantage over other players.

In 1999 Palmer was one of several investors who purchased the Pebble Beach golf course in California for \$820 million. In 2001 he was criticized for signing an endorsement contract (payment to a person for public support of a company's products)

to promote a golf club that fails to meet USGA regulations. In April 2002 Palmer played in his forty-eighth and final Masters tournament in Augusta.

For More Information

Guest, Larry. *Arnie: Inside the Legend*. 2nd ed. Nashville: Cumberland House Publishers, 1997.

Hauser, Thomas. *Arnold Palmer: A Personal Journey*. San Francisco: CollinsPublishersSanFrancisco, 1994.

Palmer, Arnold. *A Golfer's Life*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1999.

PHILIPPUS AUREOLUS PARACELSUS

Born: November 10, 1493

Einsiedeln, Switzerland

Died: September 24, 1541

Salzburg, Austria

Swiss alchemist and doctor

Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus was a Swiss doctor and alchemist (medieval doctor) noted for founding medical chemistry. He also was the first physician to correctly describe a number of serious illnesses, including tuberculosis, a disease of the lungs.

Youth and early career

Theophrastus Bombastus von Hohenheim, later called Paracelsus, was born in Einsiedeln, Switzerland, on November 10,



Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

1493. His father was a physician and instructed Theophrastus in Latin, botany, chemistry, and the history of religion. Theophrastus attended a mining school in Villach, where his father was appointed town physician. There he learned about metals, ores, and chemicals used to process them.

Theophrastus studied in Basel, Switzerland, and Italy, where he learned classical medical theory. He also studied at the University of Vienna, and then returned to Italy, where he received his doctorate in medicine from the University of Ferrara in 1515. While he was in Ferrara he took the name Paracelsus, which means “beyond Celsus.” Celsus

was a doctor of ancient Rome who was admired by Paracelsus’s fellow physicians.

Paracelsus resumed his study of metals briefly, and then began a series of travels that lasted to the end of his life. He was an army physician in Denmark from 1518 to 1521. In 1522 he joined the military forces in Venice, Italy. By 1526 he had settled briefly at Tübingen, Austria, where he gathered a small group of students. Later that year he traveled to Strasbourg, France, where he bought his citizenship and apparently intended to settle down.

New approaches to medicine

The classical theories of Aristotle (384–322 B.C.E.), a Greek philosopher, and Galen (c. 130–c. 200), a Greek physician, formed the basis of medicine at the time. Aristotle and Galen believed that the human body contained four elements (earth, air, fire, and water). These had to be balanced in order to maintain health. Paracelsus believed that diseases came from outside the body. He thought diseases could be cured by supplying the right chemical, as opposed to herbal medicines. These would restore internal balance. His successful cures served to support his theories and he acquired a reputation as a healer.

In 1526 Paracelsus went to Basel, Switzerland, to treat a patient. He stayed on and became the town physician. His responsibilities included lecturing at the university and supervising the local apothecaries (druggists). His lectures drew large audiences, but his teaching and style were unpopular with the authorities.

Paracelsus openly challenged traditional medical teachings. He preferred to lecture in

German rather than Latin, which was the traditional language of teaching. Also, he refused to prescribe the medicines of the local apothecaries. In 1528 Paracelsus had to flee to escape arrest and imprisonment.

Alchemy and philosophy

Paracelsus also wrote books about medicine, surgery, and cosmology (the nature of the universe). Paracelsus said that his outlook on the world was based on philosophy, astronomy, alchemy, and virtue. Alchemy was a medieval form of chemistry. Some people studied alchemy hoping to turn baser (lesser) metals into gold. In contrast, Paracelsus regarded alchemy as a spiritual science. He felt it required moral virtue on the part of the person who practiced it.

Paracelsus believed that for every evil there was a good that would eliminate it. Thus, he believed that there was a cure for every disease. He studied alchemy hoping to discover the means of restoring youth and prolonging life. He also thought that alchemy should not be restricted only to chemistry. He thought it was at work in all of nature. He felt strongly about relating his philosophy of nature to his religious beliefs.

After 1531 Paracelsus appears to have undergone a spiritual conversion. He gave up his material possessions. It is said he became like a beggar. He went to cities in Austria and Italy, where the plague (a highly contagious disease often carried by rats) was raging, and he attended to the sick. In this new spirit that drove him, Paracelsus gave special attention to the poor and the needy. His work was guided by a more mystical view of man and especially of the physician.

In 1540 Paracelsus went to Salzburg, Austria, but he was very sick. He died there on September 24, 1541.

For More Information

Hall, Manly Palmer. *Paracelsus, His Mystical and Medical Philosophies*. Los Angeles, CA: Philosophical Research Society, 1980.

Stillman, John Maxson. *Theophrastus Bombastus von Hohenheim Called Paracelsus*. Chicago: Open Court Publishing Company, 1920.

Stoddart, Anna M. *The Life of Paracelsus*. London: J. Murray, 1911.

Weeks, Andrew. *Paracelsus: Speculative Theory and the Crisis of the Early Reformation*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1997.

CHARLIE PARKER

Born: August 29, 1920

Kansas City, Kansas

Died: March 12, 1955

New York, New York

African American musician

Charlie Parker, American musician, was one of the most widely influential soloists in jazz history and one of the creators of a new style of playing called bop, or bebop.



Charlie Parker.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Early life

Charles Christopher Parker Jr. was born in Kansas City, Kansas, on August 29, 1920, the only child of Charles and Addie Parker. The family moved to Kansas City, Missouri, in 1927. His mother, who raised him by herself after his father left the family, bought him a saxophone in 1931, and he started taking lessons in school. In the following years he played with several well-known local big bands, and in 1935 he left high school to become a full-time musician. By the age of fifteen Parker, known as “Yardbird” or “Bird” because of his love of eating chicken, was married and had begun using drugs. In 1941

he became a member of pianist Jay McShann’s (1916–) band, with which he made his first commercial recordings.

Parker’s earliest records reveal that he was already developing the more complicated musical approach that was characteristic of his mature work. This approach and his harsh tone made it difficult for the casual listener to follow the logic of his choruses. Also, with major changes taking place in the rhythm section, his music sometimes met with opposition or downright confusion. Parker played with extraordinary technical skill, which allowed him to express his ideas very clearly even at the most rapid tempo (the rate of speed of a musical piece).

New style of playing

At this time Parker also met and began performing with trumpet player Dizzy Gillespie (1917–1993), widely accepted as the cofounder with Parker of the jazz style that became known as bop or bebop (featuring complicated harmonies and quick tempos). In 1945 they recorded some of the greatest titles in the new style. Although younger musicians quickly realized Parker’s genius, musicians who were older and more set in their ways did not approve of him or his playing. In 1946, as a result, Parker suffered a mental breakdown and was committed for six months to a sanitarium (an institution for rest and recovery). Upon his release he formed his own quintet (five-piece group) and performed with it for several years, mainly in the New York City area. He also toured with Norman Granz’s “Jazz at the Philharmonic” and made trips to Paris, France, in 1949 and Scandinavia in 1950.

Parker composed a number of tunes that became jazz classics, though these were usu-

ally casually assembled items based on chord sequences of popular tunes. In terms of melodic skill, his recordings of ballads such as “Embraceable You” and “How Deep Is the Ocean” are even more revealing than his songs in the bebop style. Many other musicians imitated his playing, but his own achievements were unique.

In the last five years of Parker's life he was unable to work steadily as a result of physical and mental illness. On March 4, 1955, he made his final public appearance; he died eight days later in New York City.

For More Information

Giddins, Gary. *Celebrating Bird: The Triumph of Charlie Parker*. New York: Beech Tree Books, 1987. Reprint, New York: Da Capo Press, 1998.

Reisner, Robert George. *Bird: The Legend of Charlie Parker*. New York: Citadel Press, 1962. Reprint, New York: Da Capo Press, 1975.

Russell, Ross. *Bird Lives: The High Life and Hard Times of Charlie (Yardbird) Parker*. New York: Charterhouse, 1973. Reprint, New York: Da Capo Press, 1996.

Woideck, Carl. *Charlie Parker: His Music and Life*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 1996.

BLAISE PASCAL

Born: June 19, 1623
Clermont-Ferrand, France

Died: August 19, 1662

Paris, France

French mathematician, scientist, and philosopher

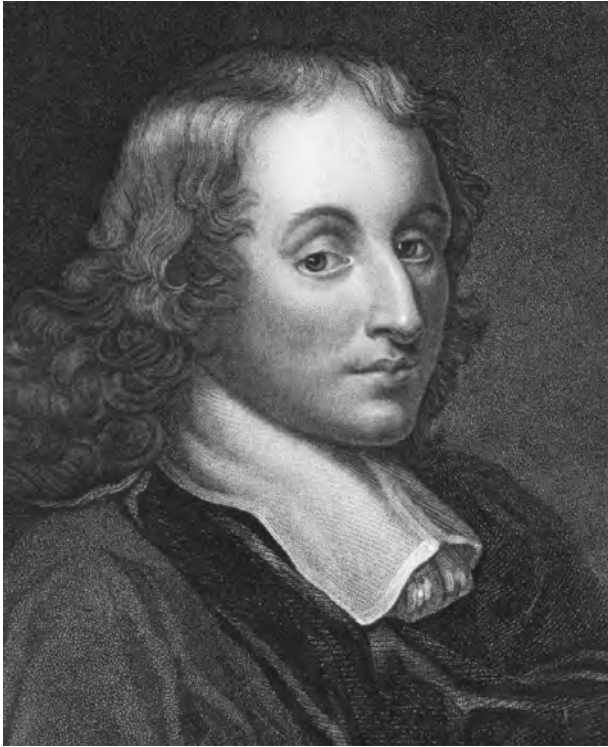
Blaise Pascal was an influential mathematical writer, a master of the French language, and a great religious philosopher (a person who seeks wisdom). He began making contributions to mathematics at a very young age. The computer programming language “Pascal” is named after him.

Young master of geometry

Blaise Pascal was born at Clermont-Ferrand, France, on June 19, 1623. His father, Étienne, was a civil servant and served as king's counselor. Blaise's mother, Antoinette, died in 1626. Blaise was three years old at the time and had two sisters, Gilberte and Jacqueline. In 1631 the family moved to Paris, France.

Blaise's father did not like the way school was taught at that time and instructed all three children at home himself. He placed special emphasis on learning Latin and Greek. He did not expose Blaise to geometry because he felt the topic was too enticing and attractive. Geometry is the branch of mathematics that deals with points, lines, angles, surfaces, and solids. He thought that if exposed to geometry and mathematics too soon, Blaise would abandon the study of classics.

This ban on mathematics merely served to make Blaise even more curious. On his own he experimented with geometrical figures. He invented his own names for geometrical terms because he had not been taught the standard terms. Some people believe that



Blaise Pascal.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Blaise was twelve years old when he started attending meetings of a mathematical academy with his father. Other scholars think that he did not attend the meetings until he was about sixteen. Whichever was the case, he was far younger than the adults who were there.

In 1640 the Pascal family moved to Rouen, France. Blaise was still taught mainly by his father. He worked very hard, but was frequently in poor health. During this time he developed a new theorem, or mathematical formula that can be proven, in geometry. He sometimes referred to this theorem as a “mystic hexagram.” It was quite different from

geometry that dealt with measured properties of figures. It was the foundation for an important, and, at the time, almost entirely undeveloped branch of mathematics.

In 1640, at age sixteen, Pascal wrote a book, *Essay on Conics*. It deals with the geometry of cones. He gave the mystic hexagram central importance in this book. At the age of nineteen, Pascal invented a calculating machine. It was able to add and subtract by having a person move a series of gears and cylinders. This was an early form of a computer.

Jansenists and Port Royal

In 1646 Pascal’s father had an accident and was confined to his house. Some neighbors who were Jansenists came to visit him. The Jansenists were a religious group formed by Cornelius Jansen (1585–1638). Their beliefs were very different from the teachings of the Jesuits, who were the most influential group at the time. The Pascals began adopting the Jansenist beliefs. As a result, they received opposition from the local Jesuits.

After Étienne Pascal’s death in 1651, Pascal’s sister Jacqueline joined the Jansenists at their convent in Port Royal. Pascal continued to enjoy a more worldly life. He had a number of aristocratic (upper-class) and famous friends and money from his patrimony (inheritance) to support himself. In 1654, however, he completely converted to Jansenism, and joined his sister at the convent at Port Royal.

Provincial Letters

In 1655 the writer Antoine Arnauld (1612–1694) was formally condemned for

heretical teaching, a teaching that opposed the standard beliefs of the church. Pascal decided to defend Arnauld. He wrote a series of pamphlets that were supposed to look like letters between two friends, one in the city and one in the country or provinces. They came to be known as *The Provincial Letters* and poked fun at the Jesuits. They were very popular. The Jesuits tried without success to find the author. The wit, reason, eloquence, and humor of the letters made the Jesuits a laughingstock (object of ridicule).

The Pensées

When Pascal died in 1662, he left behind an unfinished theological work (relating to religious faith and practices), the *Pensées*. This was an apology, or defense, for Christianity. It was published eight years later by the Port Royal community in a thoroughly garbled and incoherent form. A reasonably authentic version first appeared in 1844. It deals with the great problems of Christian thought, faith versus reason, and free will.

The *Pensées*, unlike the *Provincial Letters*, were not highly edited and polished. The *Letters* give Pascal a place in literary history as the first of several great French writers practicing polite irony (humor in which words are used to mean the opposite of their true meaning) and satire (making fun of human faults and weakness). In contrast, some people think that the feeling of the *Pensées* makes it seem that it could almost have been written by another man. In them, reason is supposedly made to take second place to religion. Both books, however, are recognized as being among the great volumes in the history of religious thought.

Later mathematical and scientific work

Little is known of Pascal's personal life after his entry into Port Royal. Some of Pascal's scientific and mathematical works were not published until after his death. His "Treatise on the Equilibrium of Liquids," and his work on the links between theories involving liquids and gases, were enormously important in providing knowledge to develop air compressors, vacuum pumps, and hydraulic (run by the pressure created by forcing liquid through a small opening) elevators. Although he never wrote at great length on mathematics after entering Port Royal, the many short pieces that do survive are almost always concise and incisive.

The mathematical theory of probability (whether something is more likely to happen or not) made its first great step forward when Pascal and Pierre de Fermat (1601–1665) began writing to one another. They found that they both had come to similar conclusions independently. Pascal planned a treatise (a formal explanation of a theory) on the subject, but again only a fragment survived. It was published after his death. Pascal suffered increasingly from head pains after 1658. He died on August 19, 1662.

Pascal published many of his theorems without providing proofs as a challenge to other mathematicians. Solutions were found by some of the best mathematicians of the time, all rising to do their best by Pascal's leadership. The computer programming language "Pascal" is named after Blaise Pascal in honor of his early contributions to the science of computing. Thus, the influence of Blaise Pascal lives on today.

For More Information

- Bishop, Morris. *Pascal: The Life of Genius*. New York: Reynal & Hitchcock, 1936. Reprint, New York: Greenwood Press, 1968.
- Mortimer, Ernest. *Blaise Pascal: The Life and Work of a Realist*. New York: Harper, 1959. Reprint, Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1976.
- McPherson, Joyce. *A Piece of the Mountain: The Story of Blaise Pascal*. Lebanon, TN: Greenleaf Press, 1997.
- O'Connell, Marvin Richard. *Blaise Pascal: Reasons of the Heart*. Grand Rapids, MI: W. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1997.

LOUIS PASTEUR

Born: December 27, 1822

Dôle, France

Died: September 28, 1895

Paris, France

French chemist and biologist

The French chemist and biologist Louis Pasteur is famous for his germ theory and for the development of vaccines. He made major contributions to chemistry, medicine, and industry. His discovery that diseases are spread by microbes, which are living organisms—bacteria and viruses—that are invisible to the eye, saved countless lives all over the world.

The tanner's son

Louis Pasteur was born on December 27, 1822, in the small town of Dôle, France. His father was a tanner, a person who prepares animal skins to be made into leather. The men in Pasteur's family had been tanners back to 1763, when his great-grandfather set up his own tanning business. Part of the tanning process relies on microbes (tiny living organisms). In tanning, microbes prepare the leather, allowing it to become soft and strong. Other common products such as beer, wine, bread, and cheese depend on microbes as well. Yet, at the time Pasteur was a child, few people knew that microbes existed.

Pasteur's parents, Jean-Joseph Pasteur and Jeanne Roqui, taught their children the values of family loyalty, respect for hard work, and financial security. Jean-Joseph, who had received little education himself, wanted his son to become a teacher at the local lycée (high school). Pasteur attended the École Primaire (primary school), and in 1831 entered the Collège d'Arboix. He was regarded as an average student, who showed some talent as an artist. Nonetheless, the headmaster encouraged Pasteur to prepare for the École Normale Supérieure, a very large training college for teachers located in Paris. With this encouragement he applied himself to his studies. He swept the school prizes during the 1837 and 1838 school year.

Pasteur went to Paris in 1838 at the age of sixteen. His goal was to study and prepare for entering the École Normale. Yet, he returned to Arboix less than a month later, overwhelmed with homesickness. In August of 1840 he received his bachelor's degree in letters from the Collège Royal de Besançon and was appointed to tutor at the Collège. In

1842, at age twenty, he received his bachelor's degree in science. He then returned to Paris, and was admitted to the *École Normale* in the autumn of 1843. His doctoral thesis (a long essay resulting from original work in college) was on crystallography, the study of forms and structures of crystals.

Investigations into crystals

In 1848, while professor of physics at the lyc ee of Tournon, the minister of education granted Pasteur special permission for a leave of absence. During this time, Pasteur studied how certain crystals affect light. He became famous for this work. The French government made him a member of the Legion of Honor and Britain's Royal Society presented him with the Copley Medal.

Studies on fermentation

In 1852 Pasteur became chairman of the chemistry department at the University of Strasbourg, in Strasbourg, France. Here he began studying fermentation, a type of chemical process in which sugars are turned into alcohol. His work resulted in tremendous improvements in the brewing of beer and the making of wine. He also married at this time.

In 1854, at the age of thirty-one, Pasteur became professor of chemistry and dean of sciences at the new University of Lille. Soon after his arrival at Lille, a producer of vinegar from beet juice requested Pasteur's help. The vinegar producer could not understand why his vinegar sometimes spoiled and wanted to know how to prevent it.

Pasteur examined the beet juice under his microscope. He discovered it contained alcohol and yeast. The yeast was causing the



Louis Pasteur.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

beet juice to ferment. Pasteur then demonstrated that controlled heating of the beet juice destroyed the yeast, and prevented fermentation. This process, called "pasteurization," was eventually applied to preserve a number of foods such as cheese and milk. It also became the basis for dramatically reducing infection in the operating room.

Studies on silkworms

In 1865 Pasteur was asked to help the ailing silk industry in France. An epidemic among silkworms was ruining it. He took his microscope to the south of France and set to work. Four months later he had isolated the

microorganism causing the disease. After three years of intensive work he suggested methods for bringing it under control.

The theory of microbial disease

Pasteur's scientific triumphs coincided with personal and national tragedy. In 1865 his father died. His two daughters were lost to typhoid fever in 1866. Overworked and grief-stricken, Pasteur suffered a cerebral hemorrhage (a bleeding caused by a broken blood vessel in the brain) in 1868. Part of his left arm and leg were permanently paralyzed. Nevertheless, he pressed on.

Pasteur saw the trains of wounded men coming home from the Franco-German War (1870–71; war fought to prevent unification under German rule). He urged the military medical corps to adopt his theory that disease and infection were caused by microbes. The military medical corps unwillingly agreed to sterilize their instruments and bandages, treating them with heat to kill microbes. The results were spectacular, and in 1873 Pasteur was made a member of the French Academy of Medicine—a remarkable accomplishment for a man without a formal medical degree.

Animal studies

A particularly devastating outbreak of anthrax, a killer plague that affected cattle and sheep, broke out between 1876 and 1877. The *anthrax bacillus* (a type of microbe shaped like a rod) had already been identified by Robert Koch (1843–1910) in 1876. It had been argued that the bacillus did not carry the disease, but that a toxic (poisonous) substance associated with it did. Pasteur proved that the bacillus itself was the disease agent, or the carrier of the disease.

In 1881 Pasteur had convincing evidence that gentle heating of *anthrax bacilli* could so weaken its strength that it could be used to inoculate animals. Inoculation is a process of introducing a weakened disease agent into the body. The body gets a mild form of the disease, but becomes immunized (strengthened against) the actual disease. Pasteur inoculated one group of sheep with the vaccine and left another untreated. He then injected both groups with the *anthrax bacillus*. The untreated sheep died and the treated sheep lived.

Pasteur also used inoculation to conquer rabies. Rabies is a fatal disease of animals, particularly dogs, which is transmitted to humans through a bite. It took five years to isolate and culture the rabies virus microbe. Finally, in 1884, in collaboration with other investigators, Pasteur perfected a method of growing the virus in the tissues of rabbits. The virus could be weakened by exposing it to sterile air. A vaccine, or weakened form of the microbe, could then be prepared for injection. The success of this method was greeted with excitement all over the world.

The question soon arose as to how the rabies vaccine would act on humans. In 1885 a nine-year-old boy, Joseph Meister, was brought to Pasteur. He was suffering from fourteen bites from a rabid dog. With the agreement of the child's physician, Pasteur began his treatment with the vaccine. The injections continued over a twelve-day period, and the child recovered.

Honors from the world

In 1888 a grateful France founded the Pasteur Institute. It was destined to become one of the most productive centers of biological study in the world.

In 1892 Pasteur's seventieth birthday was the occasion of a national holiday. A huge celebration was held at the Sorbonne. Unfortunately Pasteur was too weak to speak to the delegates who had gathered from all over the world. His son read his speech, which ended: "Gentlemen, you bring me the greatest happiness that can be experienced by a man whose invincible belief is that science and peace will triumph over ignorance and war. . . . Have faith that in the long run . . . the future will belong not to the conquerors but to the saviors of mankind."

On September 28, 1895, Pasteur died in Paris. His last words were: "One must work; one must work. I have done what I could." He was buried in a crypt in the Pasteur Institute. Years later Joseph Meister, the boy Pasteur saved from rabies, worked as a guard at his tomb.

For More Information

Dubos, René. *Louis Pasteur: Free Lance of Science*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1950. Reprint, New York, NY: Da Capo Press, 1986.

Geison, Gerald L. *The Private Science of Louis Pasteur*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1995.

Jakab, E. A. M. *Louis Pasteur: Hunting Killer Germs*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 2000.

Smith, Linda Wasmer. *Louis Pasteur: Disease Fighter*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.

LINUS PAULING

Born: February 28, 1901
Portland, Oregon

Died: August 19, 1994

Big Sur, California

American chemist

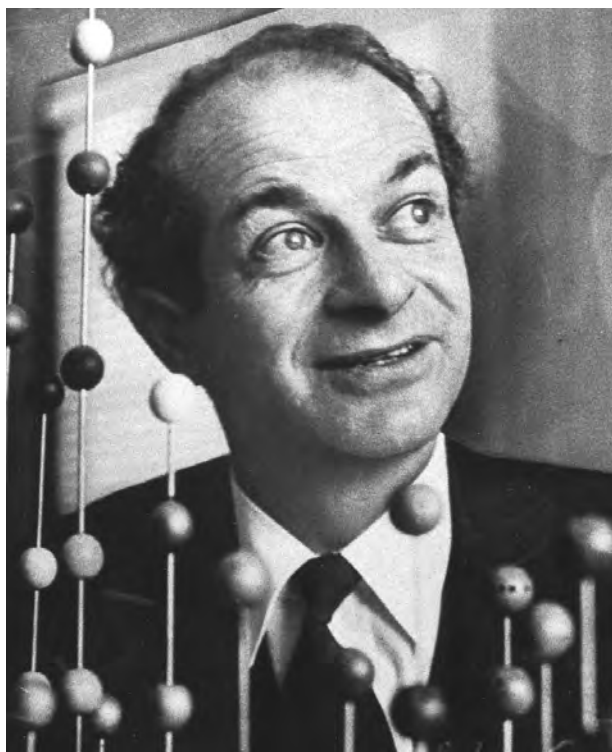
The American chemist Linus Pauling was awarded the Nobel Prize twice. Through his research he clarified much about the structure of the smallest units of matter. His studies on sickle cell anemia (a disease that mainly affects African Americans) helped to create the field of molecular biology. He founded the science of orthomolecular medicine, which is based on the idea that diseases result from chemical imbalances and can be cured by restoring proper levels of chemical substances.

The early years

Linus Carl Pauling was born in Portland, Oregon, on February 28, 1901. He was the first of three children born to Herman Henry William Pauling, a druggist, and Lucy Isabelle Pauling. The family moved several times as Herman Pauling struggled to make a living.

Linus was a shy but curious child. He collected insects and minerals as he wandered through the woods. He read continuously. His interest in science was apparently stimulated by his friend, Lloyd Jeffress, during his grammar school years. Jeffress kept a small chemistry laboratory in a corner of his bedroom, where he performed simple experiments. Pauling was intrigued by these experiments and decided to become a chemical engineer.

Herman Pauling died in 1910, when Linus was nine. Linus did many odd jobs to help support his mother and sisters after his father died. He delivered milk, washed



Linus Pauling.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

dishes, and worked in a machine shop. During high school Pauling pursued his interest in chemistry, performing experiments using material he “borrowed” from an abandoned metal company, where his grandfather was a security guard.

College

In the fall of 1917 Pauling entered Oregon Agricultural College (OAC), now Oregon State University, in Corvallis, Oregon. There he studied how the physical and chemical properties of substances are related to the structure of the atoms (basic units of matter) and molecules of which they are composed.

A molecule is the smallest particle into which a substance can be divided and still have the chemical identity of the original substance.

During his senior year, Pauling met Ava Helen Miller while teaching chemistry in a home-economics class. They were married June 17, 1923, and later had four children. Pauling received his bachelor's degree from OAC on June 5, 1922. He began attending the California Institute of Technology (Cal Tech) in Pasadena the following fall. He received his doctorate, *summa cum laude* (with highest honors), in chemistry in 1925.

After college

After graduation Pauling traveled in Europe for two years, studying in the new field of quantum mechanics. The science of quantum mechanics is based on the idea that particles can sometimes behave like waves, and waves can sometimes act like particles that have no mass. In the fall of 1927 Pauling was appointed assistant professor on Cal Tech's faculty of theoretical chemistry. He was later made a full professor of chemistry. He stayed at Cal Tech until 1963. In addition, from 1937 to 1958, he headed the Gates and Crellin Chemical Laboratories.

Chemical structure

The central theme of Pauling's work was always understanding the properties of chemical substances in relation to their structure. He began by determining the structure of various inorganic (nonliving) compounds. He then tried to understand the rules that govern the structure of molecules. He went on to predict the chemical and physical properties of atoms and ions. (Ions are atoms or groups of atoms that have an electrical charge.)

In 1930 Pauling and R. B. Corey began to study the structure of amino acids and small peptides. Amino acids are the organic acids that make up proteins. Peptides are compounds made up of two or more amino acids. On April 6, 1931, Pauling published the first major paper on this topic (“The Nature of the Chemical Bond”) and was awarded the American Chemical Society’s Langmuir Prize for “the most noteworthy work in pure science done by a man thirty years of age or less.”

In 1939 Pauling published his book *The Nature of the Chemical Bond and the Structure of Molecules and Crystals*. This book has been considered by many as one of the most important works in the history of chemistry. The ideas presented in the book and related papers are the primary basis upon which Pauling was awarded the Nobel Prize for Chemistry in 1954.

Sickle cell anemia

In the mid-1930s Pauling turned his interest to the structure of biological molecules. In 1936 he and C. D. Coryell discovered that the magnetic properties of hemoglobin (the protein in red blood cells that contains iron and carries oxygen) change upon being exposed to oxygen. These studies led to the 1949 proposal that humans may manufacture more than one kind of adult hemoglobin. Some hemoglobin tends to clump together and does not function properly when it is exposed to less oxygen. This is a disease called sickle cell anemia. This was the first documented instance of a “molecular” disorder.

World peace

The 1940s were a decade of significant change in Pauling’s life. While on a 1947 trip

to Europe he decided that he would raise the issue of world peace in every speech he made in the future. In 1957 he organized a petition calling for an end to nuclear bomb testing. In January of the following year he presented this petition at the United Nations. Over eleven thousand scientists from all over the world had signed it. In 1958 he published his views on the military threat facing the world in his book *No More War!*

Pauling’s views annoyed many in the scientific and political communities. He was often punished for these views. In 1952 the U.S. State Department three times denied him a passport to attend an important scientific convention in England. In 1960 he was called before the Internal Security Committee of the U.S. Senate to explain his antiwar activities. However, nothing could keep Pauling from protesting, writing, speaking, and organizing conferences against the world’s continuing militarism. In recognition of these efforts, Pauling was awarded the 1963 Nobel Prize for Peace.

Vitamin C and beyond

Pauling’s long association with Cal Tech ended in 1963, when he became a research professor at the Center for the Study of Democratic Institutions in Santa Barbara, California. He also went on to teach chemistry at the University of California in San Diego, California, and at Stanford University in Palo Alto, California.

In 1966 Pauling began to explore the possible effects of vitamin C in preventing colds. He summarized his views in the 1970 book *Vitamin C and The Common Cold*. His work helped establish the science of orthomolecular medicine. This field is based on

the idea that substances normally present in the body, such as vitamin C, can be used to prevent disease and illness.

In 1972 Pauling cofounded the Institute of Orthomolecular Medicine, a non-profit organization for scientific research. It was later named the Linus Pauling Institute of Science and Medicine.

In 1974 Pauling testified before the U.S. Senate Subcommittee on Health on food supplement legislation. He argued for controls over vitamins but did not want to classify them as drugs.

In 1986 he published *How To Live Longer and Feel Better*. In 1990, along with Daisaku Ikeda Seimei, he published *In Quest of the Century of Life—Science and Peace and Health*.

Pauling received many awards during his successful career. He was a member of the National Academy of Sciences and of the British Royal Society.

Pauling died of cancer on August 19, 1994, at his ranch outside Big Sur, California. Since his death, research continues on every aspect of his earlier discoveries, especially his theory about vitamin C and its effects on disease and the human body. His scientific career and work for world peace show us what a courageous imagination and approach can accomplish.

For More Information

Hager, Thomas. *Force of Nature: The Life of Linus Pauling*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1995.

Mead, Clifford, and Thomas Hager, eds. *Linus Pauling: Scientist and Peacemaker*. Corvallis: Oregon State University Press, 2001.

Newton, David E. *Linus Pauling: Scientist and Advocate*. New York: Facts on File, 1994.

Pauling, Linus. *Linus Pauling: Scientist and Peacemaker*. Edited by Clifford Mead, Thomas Hager. Corvallis: Oregon State University Press, 2001.

Serafini, Anthony. *Linus Pauling: A Man and His Science*. New York: Paragon House, 1989.

LUCIANO PAVAROTTI

Born: October 12, 1935

Modena, Italy

Italian opera singer

Luciano Pavarotti is possibly the most operatic tenor (the highest male singing voice) since Enrico Caruso (1873–1921). He is noted for combining accuracy of pitch and quality of sound production with a natural musicality.

His early years

Luciano Pavarotti was born on the outskirts of Modena in north-central Italy on October 12, 1935. He speaks fondly of his childhood, but the family had little money. Pavarotti, his parents, and his sister were crowded into a two-room apartment. His father was a baker, and his mother worked in a cigar factory. In 1943, because of World War II (1939–45; when France, Great Britain, the United States, and the Soviet Union fought against Germany, Japan, and Italy) the family had to leave the city. For the following

year they rented a single room from a farmer in the neighboring countryside.

Pavarotti's earliest musical influences were his father's recordings featuring the popular tenors of the day. At around the age of nine he began singing with his father in a small local church choir. He took a few voice lessons at the time, but he has said they were not significant. After a normal childhood with an interest in sports, especially soccer, he graduated from the Schola Magistrale and faced the dilemma of choosing a career.

Pavarotti was interested in pursuing a career as a professional soccer player, but his mother convinced him to train as a teacher. He taught in an elementary school for two years, but his interest in music finally won out. Recognizing the risk involved, his father reluctantly gave his consent. He agreed that Pavarotti would be given free room and board until age thirty. After that time, if he had not succeeded as a singer, he would earn a living by any means that he could.

The beginning of his career

Pavarotti began serious study in 1954 at the age of nineteen with Arrigo Pola, a respected teacher and professional tenor in Modena. Pola knew of the family's money problems and offered to teach Pavarotti for free. At about this time Pavarotti met Adua Veroni, whom he married in 1961.

When Pola moved to Japan two and a half years later, Pavarotti became a student of Ettore Campogalliani, who was also teaching the now well-known soprano (the highest female singing voice), Pavarotti's childhood friend Mirella Freni (1935–). During his years of study Pavarotti held part-time jobs in



Luciano Pavarotti.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

order to help sustain himself—first as an elementary school teacher and then, when he failed at that, as an insurance salesman.

The first six years of study resulted in nothing more significant than a few recitals, all in small towns, and all without pay. When a nodule (a small lump) developed on Pavarotti's vocal chords causing a "disastrous" concert in Ferrara, Italy, he decided to give up singing. After this episode, Pavarotti's voice almost immediately improved. He feels this was due to a psychological release connected with this decision. Whatever the reason, the nodule not only disappeared but, as he related in his autobiography, "Everything I

had learned came together with my natural voice to make the sound I had been struggling so hard to achieve.”

Becomes a success

Pavarotti won the Achille Peri Competition in 1961, for which the first prize was the role of Rodolfo in a production of Puccini's *La Bohème* to be given in Reggio Emilia on April 28 of that year. Although his debut was a success, a certain amount of maneuvering was necessary to secure his next few contracts. A well-known agent, Alesandro Ziliani, had been in the audience and, after hearing Pavarotti, offered to represent him. When *La Bohème* was to be produced in Lucca, Italy, Ziliani told the management that they could only have the services of a well-known singer they wanted if they took Pavarotti in a package deal.

Pavarotti's concert at Covent Garden, London, England, in the fall of 1963 also resulted from an indirect invitation. Giuseppe di Stefano had been scheduled for a series of performances, but the management was aware that he frequently canceled on short notice. They needed someone whose quality matched the rest of the production, yet who would learn the role without any assurance that he would get to sing it. Pavarotti agreed. When di Stefano canceled after one and a half performances, Pavarotti stepped in for the remainder of the series with great success.

Pavarotti's debut in 1965 at La Scala, in Milan, Italy, again as Rodolfo, came at the suggestion of Herbert von Karajan, who had been conducting *La Bohème* there for two years and had, as Pavarotti said, “run out of tenors.” Pavarotti was somewhat resentful

that the invitation did not come directly from the La Scala management. Also in 1965 Pavarotti made his American debut in Miami, Florida, as Edgardo in Donizetti's *Lucia di Lammermoor*. Illness troubled him during his New York City debut at the Metropolitan Opera in November 1968 and compelled him to cancel after the second act of the second performance.

Nineteenth-century Italian opera comprises most of Pavarotti's repertoire (group of songs that one can sing), particularly Puccini, Verdi, and Donizetti, whose music he found the most comfortable to sing. He sings few recitals, because he regards them as more strenuous than opera.

Expands his career

Very few opera singers are convincing actors and Pavarotti is not among them. However, by the mid-1980s he spent nearly as much time on practicing his acting as on his singing. In 1972 he starred in a commercial film, *Yes, Giorgio*. His solo album of Neapolitan songs, “O Sole Mio,” outsold any other record by a classical singer.

Throughout the 1980s Pavarotti strengthened his status as one of the opera world's leading figures. Televised performances of Pavarotti in many of his greatest and favorite roles helped him broaden his appeal. He was able to reach millions of viewers each time one of his opera performances or solo concerts was seen. He also began to show increasing flexibility as a recording artist. He recorded classical operas and Italian folk songs. He also recorded contemporary popular songs with composer and conductor Henry Mancini (1924–1994). He became the world's third-highest top-selling musician,

right behind Madonna (1958–) and Elton John (1947–).

By the time Pavarotti proposed and staged the first “Three Tenors” concert in Rome, he was unabashedly (boldly, without disguise) thrilled with his immense popularity. “I want to be famous everywhere,” he told *Newsweek*.

Pavarotti received his share of criticism and rejection as well. He was barred from contracts with the Lyric Opera of Chicago in 1989 because he canceled many performances due to bad health. He was sued by the British Broadcasting Company (BBC) in 1992 for selling the network a lip-synched (pretending to sing to a pre-recorded track) concert. He was booed at La Scala during a performance of *Don Carlo*. He finally canceled tours and took several months off to rest.

Pavarotti returned to the stage in 1993 with a concert before five hundred thousand people in Central Park, in New York City. Critics accused him of blatant commercialism (overly concerned with making money), but the crowds loved the performances. In 1997 the three tenors—Plácido Domingo (1941–), José Carreras (1947–) and Pavarotti—toured to mixed reviews, but delighted audiences who seemed unwilling to let Pavarotti even think of retiring.

In 2000 prosecutors in Bologna, Italy, tried Pavarotti on tax fraud charges. They claimed that although Pavarotti lived in Monte Carlo he still had many property holdings in Italy. Pavarotti was accused of owing almost \$5 million and could have spent as much as a year and a half in prison. In the end, he was acquitted (had charges dismissed).

In 2002 Pavarotti continued to drop hints that he would be retiring soon, but had

not given any specific date. Through his talent and his desire to reach out to audiences everywhere, Pavarotti has been an important figure in bringing the world of opera to a great variety of people.

For More Information

Kesting, Jürgen. *Luciano Pavarotti: The Myth of the Tenor*. Edited by Susan H. Ray. Boston: Northeastern University Press, 1996.

Lewis, Marcia. *The Private Lives of the Three Tenors*. New York: Carol Pub., 1996.

Pavarotti, Adua. *Pavarotti: Life with Luciano*. New York: Rizzoli, 1992.

Pavarotti, Luciano, with William Wright. *Pavarotti: My Own Story*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1981.

IVAN PAVLOV

Born: September 26, 1849

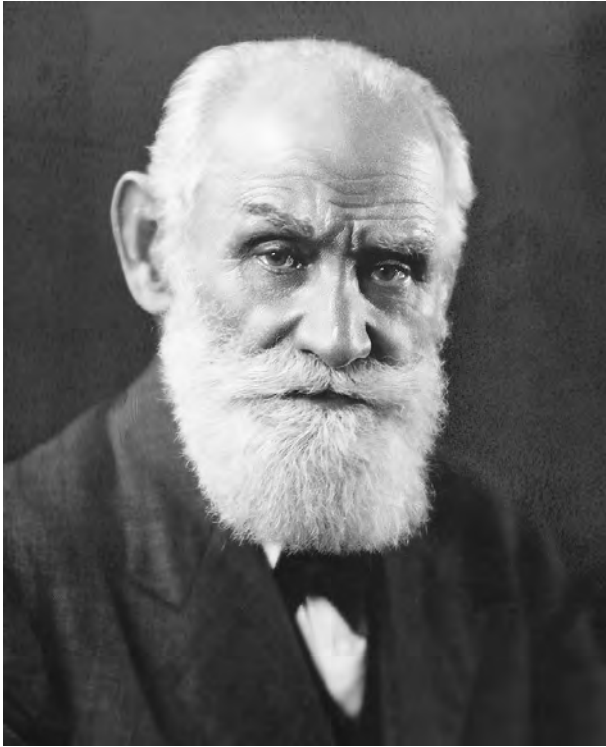
Ryazan, Russia

Died: February 27, 1936

Leningrad (now St. Petersburg), Russia

Russian physiologist

Ivan Pavlov was a Russian physiologist (someone who studies the physical and chemical workings of living things) and a leader in the study of blood circulation, digestion, and conditioned reflexes (unconscious physical reactions to outside forces that are the result of repetition of those forces and reactions). He believed that he estab-



Ivan Pavlov.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

lished the physiological (relating to the physical and chemical workings of living things) nature of psychological (relating to the behavior of the mind) activity.

The early years

Ivan Petrovich Pavlov was born in Ryazan, Russia, on September 26, 1849, the son of a poor parish priest, from whom Pavlov acquired a lifelong love for physical labor and for learning. He loved to work with his father in gardens and orchards and this early interest in plants lasted his entire life. At the age of nine or ten, Pavlov suffered from a fall that affected his general health and

delayed his formal education. When he was eleven he entered the second grade of the church school at Ryazan. In 1864 he went to the Theological Seminary of Ryazan, a school for training priests. There he studied religion, classical languages, and philosophy, and he developed an interest in science.

Making of a physiologist

In 1870 Pavlov was admitted to the University of St. Petersburg (Leningrad) in Russia. He studied animal physiology as his major and chemistry as his minor. At the university he studied organic chemistry (the science that studies how living things are made) and inorganic chemistry (the science that studies how nonliving things are made). In this way he learned about what makes up both nonliving things and plants and animals. He also learned the techniques of scientific investigation. Scientific investigation starts with asking a question; the scientist then gathers information about the question and creates a statement that might describe the answer; finally, the scientist tests the possible answer through observation.

After graduating from the University of St. Petersburg, Pavlov entered the Military Medical Academy in 1881. He worked there as a laboratory assistant for two years. In 1877, while still at the academy, he published his first work. It was about the regulation of the circulation of blood by reflexes (any unconscious or involuntary action of the body). Two years later he completed his course at the academy. He successfully competed in an examination that was given to the entire school. By winning this competition, Pavlov was given a scholarship to continue postgraduate study at the academy.

In 1881 Pavlov married Serafima Karchevskais. He spent the next decade at the academy. In 1883 he completed his thesis (a long essay resulting from original research in college) on the nerves of the heart. Shortly afterwards he received the degree of doctor of medicine. During the 1880s Pavlov perfected his techniques of scientific investigation. This work made his later important discoveries possible.

In 1890 Pavlov was appointed chairman of pharmacology (science of preparing medicines) at the academy. A year later he became director of the Department of Physiology of the Institute of Experimental Medicine. In 1895 he accepted the chair of physiology at the academy, which he held until 1925. For the next forty-five years Pavlov pursued his studies on the digestive glands and conditioned reflexes.

Scientific contributions

During the first phase of his scientific activity (1874–1888), Pavlov studied the circulatory system. He focused on how blood pressure changes under various conditions and how heart activity is regulated. He saw that the blood pressure of dogs in his laboratory hardly changed, whether they were fed dry food or excessive amounts of meat broth.

Pavlov observed special fibers called nerves that carry sensations and create motion throughout the body. His observations led him to state that the rhythm and the strength of the heartbeat is regulated by four specific nerve fibers. It is now generally accepted that two nerves, the vagus and sympathetic, produce the effects on the heart that Pavlov noticed.

In his second phase of scientific work (1888–1902), Pavlov concentrated on the nerves directing the digestive glands. In 1888 he discovered the nerves of the pancreas that control the flow of insulin. Insulin is a substance that regulates the digestion of starches and sugars. In 1889 Pavlov discovered the nerves controlling the gastric (stomach) glands. For this work Pavlov received the 1904 Nobel Prize in Physiology or Medicine.

The final phase of Pavlov's scientific career (1902–1936) focused on determining how conditioned reflexes affect the brain. Pavlov had observed that his laboratory dogs would secrete saliva and gastric juices before meat was actually given to them. The sight, odor, or even the footsteps of the attendant bringing the meat were enough to trigger the flow of saliva.

Pavlov realized that the dogs were responding to activity associated with their feeding. In 1901 he termed this response a “conditioned reflex.” A conditioned reflex is a learned behavior, one that happens in response to something. This is different than an unconditioned reflex. An example of an unconditioned reflex is the pupil of the eye getting smaller when a person looks at a bright light. The person does not learn how to make the pupil of the eye smaller. It simply happens automatically.

Pavlov's important lectures, papers, and speeches dealing with conditioned reflexes and the brain were presented between 1923 and 1927. He discovered that conditioned responses can be wiped out—at least temporarily—if not reinforced (strengthened through being rewarded).

In 1918 Pavlov had an opportunity to study several cases of mental illness. He

described a certain type of schizophrenia, a very serious mental illness, as being caused by weakening of brain cells. He thought the illness was a means of protecting already weakened brain cells from further destruction.

Pavlov's last scientific article was written for the *Great Medical Encyclopedia* in 1934. In it he discussed his idea that there are two systems of nerve fibers. The first system receives signals or impressions of the external world through sense organs. Both humans and animals have this system. The second system deals with the signals of the first system and involves words and thoughts. Only humans have this system. Conditioned reflexes play a significant role in both nerve systems. Pavlov thought the conditioned reflex was the main way in which living things adapt to their surroundings.

Philosophy and outlook

Pavlov was opposed to extreme political positions of any kind. He did not welcome the Russian Revolution of 1917, which destroyed the old system of the czars, or Russian supreme rulers, and replaced it with a Communist system. In a Communist society, property is held by the state and the state controls the distribution of goods. Pavlov was hostile to the new Communist system. Even so, Premier Lenin (1870–1924; the leader of the Soviet Union) signed a special decree in 1921, assuring that Pavlov would have support for his scientific work. In 1930 the government built him a laboratory. By 1935 Pavlov had become reconciled to the Communist system. He declared that the “government, too, is an experimenter but in an immeasurably higher category.”

Pavlov became seriously ill in 1935 but recovered sufficiently to participate at the Fif-

teenth International Physiological Congress. Later he attended the Neurological Congress in London, England. He died on February 27, 1936.

Pavlov's work on conditioned reflexes and brain activity lives on today. It formed the basis of behaviorism. Behaviorism is an important branch of psychology that deals with observing the behaviors and habits of humans and animals.

For More Information

- Babkin, Boris P. *Pavlov: A Biography*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1949.
- Gray, Jeffrey A. *Ivan Pavlov*. New York: Viking Press, 1980.
- Todes, Daniel Philip. *Ivan Pavlov: Exploring the Animal Machine*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2000.
- Wells, Harry K. *Pavlov and Freud*. New York: International Publishers, 1956.

ANNA PAVLOVA

Born: January 31, 1881

St. Petersburg, Russia

Died: January 22, 1931

The Hague, Netherlands

Russian dancer

Anna Pavlova was in her time—and is perhaps even now—the most famous dancer in the world. Pavlova carried on long, globe-covering tours, creating new ballet audiences everywhere.

Uncertain background

Anna Pavlova was born on January 31, 1881, in St. Petersburg, Russia, the daughter of Lyubov Feodorovna, a washerwoman. Her father's identity is not known. When Anna was very small, her mother married reserve soldier Matvey Pavlov, who died when Anna was two years old. She and her mother were very poor, and they spent the summers with Anna's grandmother. According to Pavlova, she wanted to be a dancer from the age of eight, when she attended a performance of *The Sleeping Beauty* at the Maryinsky Theatre. Two years later she was accepted as a student at St. Petersburg's Imperial Ballet School. This school for classical dancers offered its students lifelong material protection; the czar (the ruler of Russia) Alexander III (1845–1894) was its main supporter. In return, the school demanded complete physical dedication.

Although the young Pavlova was considered frail and not exactly beautiful, she was nevertheless very supple (able to bend and twist with ease and grace). Her talents impressed ballet master Marius Petipa, who was to become her favorite teacher. Pavlova also learned from other famous Maryinsky teachers and choreographers (those who create and arrange dance performances) such as Christian Johanssen, Pavel Gerdt, and Enrico Cecchetti, who provided her with a classical foundation based on ballet tradition. Pavlova made her company debut at the Maryinsky in September 1899. Competition among dancers was intense, but Anna Pavlova soon attracted attention with the poetic and expressive quality of her performances.

Busy touring schedule

Pavlova's first of many tours (it is estimated that she traveled over four hundred



Anna Pavlova.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

thousand miles in the days before air travel and was seen by millions) was to Moscow, Russia, in 1907. In February 1910 Pavlova, performing with the brawny Moscow dancer Mikhail Mordkin (1880–1944), made her first appearance in America, at the Metropolitan Opera House. Most of the American audiences had never before seen classical ballet, and critics did not know how to describe what Pavlova did on stage, although all agreed that it was wonderful.

Although these early tours were undertaken with the czar's consent, Pavlova's final trip to Russia occurred in the summer of 1914. She was traveling through Germany on

her way to London, England, when Germany declared itself at war with her homeland in August 1914. Pavlova's protection from and obligations to the czar and his Maryinsky Theatre had come to an end.

From this point until her death, Pavlova continued to make long, exhausting tours, always with her own company—whose members came from different countries and were not always as talented as her—to support. She returned to America several times; she went to South America in 1917; in 1919 she visited Bahia and Salvador. A 1920–21 American tour represented Pavlova's fifth major tour of the United States in ten years, and in 1923 the company traveled to Japan, China, India, Burma, and Egypt. South Africa, Australia, and New Zealand were given a glimpse of Pavlova in 1926, and the years 1927 and 1928 were dedicated to a European tour.

Kept performing the classics

Although Pavlova's performances changed and were influenced by exposure to foreign cultures and new methods of dancing, she remained a somewhat conservative (not trying many new things) performer. Her company continued to perform several of the great ballet classics, such as *Giselle* and *The Sleeping Beauty*; her own popular signature pieces were the *Bacchanale*, a duet created by her former fellow-student Mikhail Fokine, and her eerily beautiful *The Swan*.

Pavlova's ability to accept her role as spokesperson for her art, often with good humor and always with devotion and poise, brought vast audiences to her and eventually to the ballet itself. She was willing to perform in different venues, from the most famous theaters of Europe to London's music halls or

even New York's gigantic Hippodrome. Pavlova's private days were spent at Ivy House in London, where she kept a large collection of birds and animals, including a pair of pet swans. Her companion, manager, and perhaps husband (Pavlova gave different accounts of the exact nature of their relationship) was Victor Dandré, a fellow native of St. Petersburg.

Pavlova died in The Hague, Netherlands, on January 22, 1931. She had performed constantly until her death; her final words were to ask for her Swan costume to be prepared and, finally, "Play that last measure softly."

For More Information

- Allman, Barbara. *Dance of the Swan: A Story About Anna Pavlova*. Minneapolis: Carolrhoda Books, 2001.
- Fonteyn, Margot, Dame. *Pavlova: Portrait of a Dancer*. New York: Viking, 1984.
- Lazzarina, Roberto and John. *Pavlova: Repertoire of a Legend*. New York: Schirmer Books, 1980.
- Levine, Ellen. *Anna Pavlova, Genius of the Dance*. New York: Scholastic, 1995.
- Money, Keith. *Anna Pavlova: Her Life and Art*. New York: Knopf, 1982.

I. M.
PEI

Born: April 26, 1917

Canton, China

Chinese-born American architect

Chinese American architect, I. M. Pei, directed for nearly forty years one of the most successful architectural practices in the United States. Known for his dramatic use of concrete and glass, Pei counts among his most famous buildings the East Wing of the National Gallery of Art in Washington, D.C., the John Hancock Tower in Boston, Massachusetts, and the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame Museum in Cleveland, Ohio.

Childhood

Ieoh Ming Pei was born in Canton, China, on April 26, 1917. His early childhood was spent in Canton and Hong Kong, where his father worked as director of the Bank of China. In the late 1920s, after the death of Pei's mother, the family moved to Shanghai, China, where Pei attended St. Johns Middle School. His father, who had many British banking connections, encouraged his son to attend college in England, but Pei decided to move to the United States in order to study architecture at the University of Pennsylvania. As a youth, Pei watched the growing cityscape in Shanghai, which planted the seeds for his love of architecture. Upon his arrival in 1935, however, he found that the University of Pennsylvania's course work, with its heavy emphasis on fine draftsmanship, was not well suited to his interest in structural engineering. He enrolled instead in the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT) in Boston, Massachusetts.

While at MIT, Pei considered pursuing a degree in engineering, but was convinced by Dean William Emerson to stick with architecture. Pei graduated with a bachelor's degree in architecture in 1940, winning the Ameri-



I. M. Pei.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

can Institute of Architects Gold Medal and the Alpha Rho Chi (the fraternity of architects). Pei considered going to Europe or returning to China, but with both regions engulfed in war, he decided to remain in Boston and work as a research assistant at the Bemis Foundation (1940–1941).

From professor to architect

In 1942 Pei married Eileen Loo, a Chinese student recently graduated from Wellesley College. After the wedding Pei moved to Cambridge, Massachusetts, where Eileen enrolled in Harvard's Graduate School of Landscape Architecture. Through her sugges-

tion, Pei enrolled in the Harvard Graduate School of Design in the summer of 1942. There Pei was introduced to the work of Europe's leading architects. He absorbed their ideas about designing unadorned (without decorations) buildings in abstract shapes—buildings that exposed their systems of support and materials of construction.

Pei's work at Harvard was interrupted in early 1943 when he was called to serve on the National Defense Research Committee in Princeton, New Jersey. He maintained his contacts in Cambridge, however, and between 1943 and 1945 formed informal partnerships with two other students of Walter Gropius (1883–1969), E. H. Duhart and Frederick Roth. With these men, Pei designed several low-cost modern houses that were intended to be built of prefabricated (built in advance) plywood panels and “plug-in” room modules. Several of these designs were awarded recognition in *Arts and Architecture* magazine and thus served to give Pei his first national exposure.

In 1946 Pei was appointed assistant professor after obtaining his master's degree in architecture. While teaching, he worked in the Boston office of architect Hugh Stubbins from 1946 to 1948. Pei's career as a Harvard professor ended in 1948 when, at the age of thirty-one, he was hired to direct the architectural division of Webb and Knapp, a huge New York City contracting firm owned by the wealthy businessman William Zeckendorf. A bold developer with tremendous capital (money from business), Zeckendorf specialized in buying run-down urban lots and building modern high rise apartments and offices.

As architect of Webb and Knapp, Pei oversaw the design of some of the most

extensive urban development schemes in the mid-twentieth century, including the Mile High Center in Denver, Colorado, and Hyde Park Redevelopment in Chicago, Illinois (both 1954–1959). These projects gave Pei the opportunity to work on a large scale and with big budgets. Moreover, he learned how to work with community, business, and government agencies. In his words, he learned to consider “the big picture.”

His own architectural firm

By mutual agreement, Pei and his staff of some seventy designers split from Webb and Knapp in 1955 to become I. M. Pei & Associates, an independent firm, but one which still initially relied on Zeckendorf as its chief client. It was for Zeckendorf, in fact, that Pei and his partners designed some of their most ambitious works—Place Ville Marie, the commercial center of Montreal, Canada, (1956–1965); Kips Bay Plaza, the Manhattan, New York, apartment complex (1959–1963); and Society Hill, a large housing development in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania (1964).

In terms of style, Pei's work at this time was strongly influenced by Mies van der Rohe (1886–1969). Certainly the apartment towers at Kips Bay and Society Hill owe much to Mies's earlier slab-like skyscrapers sheathed in glass grids. But unlike Mies, who supported his towers with frames of steel, Pei experimented with towers of pre-cast concrete window frames laid on one another like blocks. This system proved to be quick to construct and required no added fireproof lining or exterior sheathing, making it relatively inexpensive. The concrete frames also had the aesthetic (having to do with appearance) advantage of looking “muscular” and permanent.

During the 1960s Pei continued to build “skin-and-bones” office and apartment towers, but he also began to get commissions for other types of buildings that allowed him more artistic expression. Among the first of these was the National Center for Atmospheric Research (NCAR) in Boulder, Colorado (1961–1967). Distinguished by a series of unusual hooded towers, and photogenically (having to do with photo-like qualities) situated against the backdrop of the Rocky Mountains, the NCAR complex helped to establish Pei as a designer of serious artistic intent.

Triangles and curtains of glass

Of Pei’s many museums, he became best known for the East Wing of the National Gallery in Washington, D.C. (1968–1978). Located on a distinct but oddly shaped site, Pei cleverly divided the plan into two triangular sections—one containing a series of intimate gallery spaces and the other housing administrative and research areas. He connected these sections with a dramatic sky-lit central court, bridged at various levels by free-floating passageways. Technological advances are seen on the exterior, where space-age rubber gaskets have been inserted between the blocks of marble to prevent cracks from developing in the walls.

Although Pei’s reputation was slightly tarnished in the mid-1970s when plates of glass mysteriously fell out of his John Hancock Tower in Boston, Pei was still considered a master of curtain glass construction in the 1980s. He demonstrated this again in the glass-sheathed Allied Bank Tower in Dallas (1985) and later worked on a well-publicized glass pyramid built in the courtyard of the

Louvre Museum in Paris (1987). But his magnificent work in glass would not stop there. In September of 1995, The Rock and Roll Hall of Fame Museum was dedicated in Cleveland, Ohio.

Among Pei’s numerous awards, he places personal significance on receiving the Medal of Liberty from President Ronald Reagan (1911–) at the Statue of Liberty. To him, it is a symbol of acceptance and respect from the American people. When not designing buildings, Pei enjoys gardening around his home in Katonah, New York. He has four children, two of whom work as architects in his busy office on Madison Avenue.

For More Information

Cannell, Michael T. *I. M. Pei: Mandarin in Modernism*. New York: Carol Southern Books, 1995.

Suner, Bruno. *Pei*. Paris: Hazan, 1988.

Wiseman, Carter. *I. M. Pei: A Profile in American Architecture*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1990.

PELÉ

Born: October 23, 1940

Tres Coracoes, Brazil

Brazilian soccer star

Pelé, called “the Black Pearl,” was one of the greatest soccer players in the history of the game. With a career total of 1,280 games, he may have been the world’s most popular athlete in his prime.



Pelé.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

A young talent

Edson Arantes Do Nascimento, who took the name Pelé, was born on October 23, 1940, in Tres Coracoes, Brazil, the son of a minor league soccer player. Pelé grew up in an extremely poor neighborhood, where one of the only sources of entertainment for a poor boy was to play soccer, barefoot and with a makeshift ball. Many players on the Brazilian soccer fields gained nicknames that had no apparent meaning. His father was dubbed “Dondinho” and young Edson took the name “Pelé,” though he does not recall how or why he picked up the name.

Pelé was coached by his father and the hard work soon paid off, for when he was eleven Pelé played for his first soccer team, that of the town of Bauru, Brazil. He moved up in competition with outstanding play and soon was one of the best players on the team. At the age of fifteen his mentor (an advisor), former soccer star Waldemar de Brito, brought him to Sao Paulo to try out for the major league teams. Pelé was quickly rejected. De Brito then took Pelé to Santos where he earned a spot on the soccer team. There, Pelé earned nearly five thousand cruzeiros (about sixty dollars) per month to play soccer. He soon received broader exposure when he was loaned to the Vasco da Gama team in Rio de Janeiro, Brazil.

International play

In 1958 Pelé went to Stockholm, Sweden, to compete in the World Cup championship, the soccer championship that brings together all of the soccer-playing nations for one tournament. His play there helped his country win its first title as Pelé scored two goals in a dramatic 4-2 win over Sweden. He returned to Santos, and his team went on to win six Brazilian titles. In 1962 he again played on the Brazilian team that won the World Cup, but an injury forced him to sit out the contest.

Soccer is a low scoring game, but on November 19, 1969, before a crowd of one hundred thousand in Rio de Janeiro, Pelé scored his one thousandth goal. He led the Sao Paulo League in scoring for ten straight seasons. He was not only a high scorer, but a master of ball handling as well. It seemed the ball was somehow attached to his feet as he moved down the field.

In 1970 Pelé again played for Brazil's World Cup team, and in Mexico City, Mexico, they beat Italy for the championship. It was Pelé's play, both in scoring and in setting up other goals, that won them the title. When he announced that he would retire from international competition after a game to be played July 18, 1971, plans were made to televise the event throughout the world. By the time he left the game he had scored a total of 1,086 goals.

In America

After Pelé retired, he continued to play until he was signed to play for the New York Cosmos of the North American Soccer League for a reported three-year, \$7 million contract. A year later New York was at the top of their division, and in 1977 the Cosmos won the league championship. Pelé retired for good after that victory, but continued to be active in sports circles, becoming a commentator and promoter of soccer in the United States. When the World Cup was played in Detroit, Michigan, in 1994, Pelé was there, capturing the hearts of millions of fans around the world. Later that spring, he married his second wife, Assiria Seixas Lemos. In May of 1997, he was elected Minister of Sports in his home country of Brazil.

On December 11, 2001, the Federation Internationale de Football Association (FIFA) named Pelé, along with Argentina's Diego Maradona, as the men's players of the century.

For More Information

Bodo, Peter, and David Hirshey. *Pelé's New World*. New York: Norton, 1977.

Canazares, Susan, and Samantha Berger. *Pelé, the King of Soccer*. New York: Scholastic, 1999.

Harris, Harry. *Pelé: His Life and Times*. New York: Parkwest, 2002.

Marcus, Joe. *The World of Pelé*. New York: Mason/Charter, 1976.

Pelé. *My Life and the Beautiful Game*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1977.

WILLIAM PENN

Born: October 14, 1644

London, England

Died: July 30, 1718

Berkshire, England

English statesman and philosopher

William Penn founded Pennsylvania and played a leading role in the history of New Jersey and Delaware.

Colonial childhood

William Penn was born in London, England, on October 14, 1644. He was the first of three children of Admiral William Penn and Margaret Jasper. Admiral Penn served in the parliamentary navy during the Puritan Revolution (1647), when the royal forces of King Charles I (1600–1649) fought with those in England's parliament. Although rewarded by English statesman Oliver Cromwell (1599–1658) and given land in Ireland, he soon fell out of favor and took



William Penn.

part in the restoration of Charles II (1630–1685) as the king of Great Britain. A close friend of the Duke of York, Admiral Penn was knighted by Charles II. With so influential a father, there seemed little doubt that William's future had promise.

Nothing better demonstrates how young Penn represented his period than his early religious enthusiasm. At the age of thirteen he was deeply moved by Quaker Thomas Loe. (Quakers are a religious following who were persecuted [harassed] in the seventeenth century for their beliefs and forced to find new homes in Europe and America.) Afterward, at Oxford University in England, he came under the

influence of Puritans (English Protestants). When he refused Anglican (Church of England) practices, he was expelled (kicked out) in 1662. Afterwards, at his father's request, Penn attended the Inns of Court, gaining knowledge of the law. A portrait of this time shows him dressed in armor, with handsome, strong features, and the air of confidence of a young member of the ruling class.

Quaker advocate

Appearances, in Penn's case, were misleading. While supervising his father's Irish estates, Penn was drawn into the Quaker world. His conversion to Quakerism was inspired by the simple piety (religious devotion) of their religion and the need to provide relief for victims of persecution. At the age of twenty-two, against his father's wishes, Penn became a Quaker advocate, or supporter. His marriage in 1672 to Gulielma Maria Springett, of a well-known Quaker family, completed his religious commitment.

Penn's background and political connections were important resources for the persecuted Quakers. A major theme of his many writings was the unfairness of persecution. One remarkable achievement during this period was Penn's handling of the "Bushell Case." Penn managed to convince a jury not to imprison a Quaker only for his faith. When the judge demanded that the jury change its verdict (decision), Penn maintained successfully that a jury must not be influenced by the bench. This landmark case established the freedom of English juries.

Colonial proprietor

Religious persecution and colonization (settling new lands) went hand in hand as the

Quakers looked to America for a new home. Various problems with the Quaker interests in New Jersey led to Penn's heightened involvement. Penn contributed to the "Concessions and Agreements" (1677) offered to settlers, although he was not its principal author. This document gave the settlers virtual control over the colony through an elected assembly, or group of leaders. It also offered a guarantee of personal liberties (freedoms), especially religious toleration and trial by jury, which the Quakers were unable to receive in England.

The problems with New Jersey formed an introduction to the founding of Pennsylvania. Of major importance, however, was Penn's Quaker faith and devotion to religious and political freedom. This laid the foundation for his ideas that Pennsylvania would be a "Holy Experiment." In addition, Penn thought the colony could become a profitable enterprise (business) to be inherited by his family.

Founding Pennsylvania

Penn and his people were given control over the land and thorough powers of government. The grant, or document, reflected the period in which it was written: in keeping with new imperial regulations (British rule), Penn was made personally responsible for the enforcement of the Navigation Acts, a series of laws intended to increase English shipping. He also had to keep an agent in London and was required to send laws to England for royal approval.

In several ways Pennsylvania was the most successful English colony. Penn's first treaties (peace agreements) with the Indians, signed in 1683 and 1684, were based on an acceptance of Indian equality and resulted in an era of peace. Penn also wrote promotional

papers for Pennsylvania and arranged circulation of these materials overseas. The response was one of the largest and most varied migrations in the history of colonization. Moreover, Pennsylvania's economic beginnings were unusually successful. A fertile country (able to produce crops), the commercial advantages of Philadelphia, and substantial investments by Quaker businesspeople produced rapid economic growth.

Despite this success Pennsylvania was not without problems. Because of oversights in Penn's charter, an area along the southern border, including Philadelphia, was claimed by Lord Baltimore. This problem was only partly fixed when Penn secured control over what later became Delaware from the Duke of York. Just as troublesome were political controversies within the colony. Although Penn believed that the people should be offered self-government and that the rights of every citizen should be guaranteed, he did not think the colonists should have full power. In order to provide a balance in government, and partly to protect his own rights, he sought a key role in running the colony. What Penn envisioned in his famous "Frame of Government" (1682) was a system in which he would offer leadership, and the elected assembly would follow his pattern.

Almost from the start there were challenges to Penn's ideas. Controversies developed among the branches of government, with the representatives trying to restrict the authority of Penn and the council. Disputes centered on taxation, land policy, Penn's appointments, and defense. Other difficulties included Penn's identification with King James II (1633–1701), which brought him imprisonment from 1692 to 1694. No less

troublesome was his debt. Penn's financial responsibility in the founding of Pennsylvania led to his imprisonment for debt, a humiliating blow.

Final years

After England's Glorious Revolution, when James II was replaced by William III (1650–1702) and Mary II (1662–1694) as England's rulers in 1689, Penn and his family went to live in Pennsylvania. Arriving in 1699, he reestablished friendly contacts with the Indians and worked hard to heal a religious schism (separation) among the Quakers. He also fought piracy (robbing at sea) and tried to secure financial backing for colonial self-defense, demanded by the Crown but resisted by the Quakers.

Penn's major achievement was the new charter of 1701. Under its terms the council was eliminated, and Pennsylvania became the only colony governed by a single legislature of elected representatives. This system, which lasted until 1776, permitted the Delaware settlers to have their own governing body. Penn returned to England late in 1701 to fight a proposal in Parliament which would have voided all proprietary grants. He never saw Pennsylvania again.

Penn's last years were filled with disappointment. After the death of his first wife in 1694, Penn married Hannah Callowhill in 1696. Hampered by debts, colonial disaffection, and the general poor relationship with the King's ministers toward private colonies, Penn almost completed the sale of Pennsylvania to the Crown in 1712 before he suffered his first disabling stroke, a destruction of brain tissue which often leads to paralysis. He died at Ruscombe, Berkshire, on July 30, 1718.

For More Information

- Dunn, Mary M. *William Penn: Politics and Conscience*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1967.
- Geiter, Mary K. *William Penn*. New York: Longman, 2000.
- Lutz, Norma Jean. *William Penn: Founder of Democracy*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2000.
- Peare, Catherine O. *William Penn*. New York: H. Holt, 1958.
- Steffoff, Rebecca. *William Penn*. Broomall, PA: Chelsea House Publishers, 1997.

PERICLES

Born: c. 495 B.C.E.

Athens, Greece

Died: 429 B.C.E.

Athens, Greece

Greek statesman

Pericles was the leading statesman of Athens and brought it to the height of its political power and artistic achievement. The years from 446 to 429 B.C.E. have been called the Periclean Age.

Early life and family

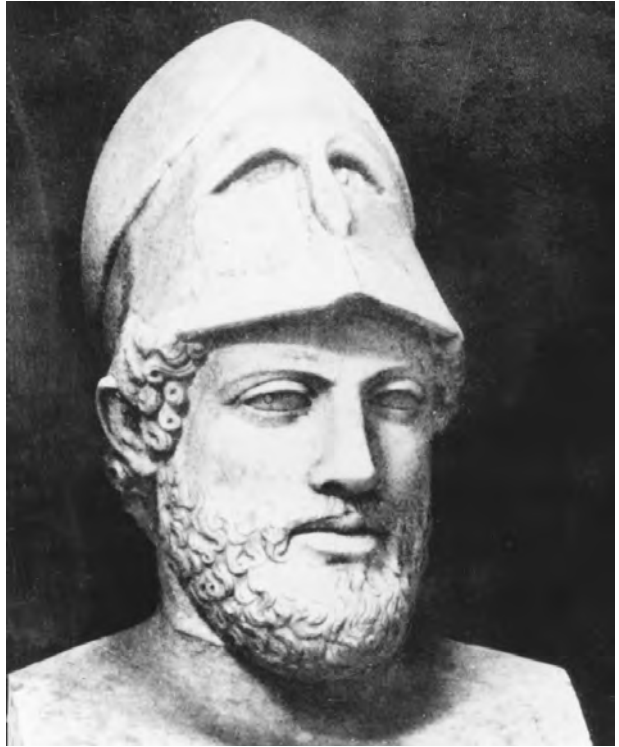
Pericles was the son of Xanthippus, a statesman and general of an upper class family (probably the Bouzygae), and Agariste, a niece of the famous statesman Cleisthenes, the leader of a powerful clan, the Alcmeonidae. Pericles inherited great wealth; as a young man, he put up the money for the costly production of Aeschylus's play *The Per-*

sae in 472 B.C.E. Pericles received the best education available, studying music under Damon and mathematics under Zeno of Elea. His greatest influence was a scholar named Anaxagoras, who taught him how to make speeches and was a model of the calm style that Pericles would use in politics. In his pursuit of a public career, Pericles chose to speak out in favor of a more advanced democracy.

Champion of democracy

Pericles became prominent in the Assembly, where he called for constitutional reform. He worked closely with Ephialtes, an older and more established leader of democratic views. They were both elected generals sometime before 462. In 462–461 they decided to attack Cimon, a leading conservative (one who believes in maintaining things as they are) and the most powerful of the generals in office, by accusing him of bribery. However, he was cleared of the charges. Later, Sparta's appeals to Athens for help against an uprising there were granted on the advice of Cimon and against the advice of Ephialtes. When the Athenian army under Cimon's command arrived to help, Spartan leaders changed their minds and dismissed them. This insulting treatment enraged the people of Athens and disgraced Cimon.

While Cimon and the army were off to help Sparta in 462, Ephialtes and Pericles carried out their extreme democratic reforms, stripping the Areopagus Council of all constitutional powers and making the authority of the Assembly and the Heliaea (people's courts) absolute. Athens also made alliances with Sparta's enemies, Argos and Thessaly. At this time Ephialtes was assassinated, and Pericles became the undisputed leader of Athens.



Pericles.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Legislator of domestic affairs

Pericles passed further legislation to weaken the Areopagus Council, introduced pay for political services, and restricted Athenian citizenship to children whose mothers and fathers were both Athenian. He also changed the Delian League, a collection of city-states bound together with Athens to stand against Persia, into an Athenian Empire. He collected annual payments from the member states to maintain a fleet of ships, and the money left over was used to improve Athens. Pericles oversaw the construction of many famous and beautiful temples and public buildings in Athens, including the Parthenon.

Pericles eventually proposed the recall of Cimon, which resulted in victories over Persia and a truce with Sparta. Pericles's own operations as a military commander in western waters in 455 and 454 were successful. However, it is not known how much Pericles was involved with later wars fought on two fronts—against Sparta in Greece (resulting in neither side winning) and against Persia in Egypt (which resulted in a heavy defeat).

Problems arise

Pericles's actions on behalf of the Athenian Empire led to increased problems with Sparta. In 447–446 the storm broke within the empire, with many regions rising up: Athens's power in Boeotia collapsed, Euboea revolted, Megara broke free from Athenian occupation, and Sparta invaded Attica. Leading an Athenian army, Pericles crossed to Euboea and then rushed back to face the enemy in Attica. To everyone's amazement the Spartan king withdrew his army. Pericles was said by some to have bribed the king. Pericles hurried back to Euboea and stamped out the revolt. A peace treaty was achieved, but Athens had lost most of its gains.

Pericles's foreign policy was to stop any revolt in the Athenian Empire and to resist Sparta. He paraded the naval power of Athens with an expedition in the Black Sea (c. 437), and he advised Athens to make alliances with Corcyra (Corfu), a leading naval power in the west, in 433. A series of incidents followed that resulted in war with Sparta and its allies in 431. Pericles's strategy was an offensive by sea, avoidance of battle on land, and control of the empire. Inside the walls of Athens, an outbreak of disease struck down a third of Athens's armed forces, two

sons of Pericles among them. The people of Athens began to turn against him for the first time. He was fined but reelected general in 429 before dying later that year. The society he led followed his ideas—a love of Athens, a belief in freedom for Athenians, and a faith in the ability of man.

For More Information

- Kagan, Donald. *Pericles of Athens and the Birth of Democracy*. New York: Free Press, 1991.
- Poulton, Michael. *Pericles and the Ancient Greeks*. Austin, TX: Raintree/Steck-Vaughn, 1997.
- Skeele, David, ed. *Pericles: Critical Essays*. New York: Garland, 2000.

EVA PERÓN

Born: May 7, 1919
Los Toldos, Argentina
Died: July 26, 1952
Buenos Aires, Argentina
Argentine political leader

Eva Perón was the second wife and political partner of President Juan Perón (1895–1974) of Argentina. An important political figure in her own right, she was known for her campaign for female suffrage (the right to vote), her support of organized labor groups, and her organization of a vast social welfare program that benefited and gained the support of the lower classes.

Early years

The youngest of five children of Juan Duarte and Juana Ibarguren, María Eva Duarte was born on May 7, 1919, in the little village of Los Toldos in Buenos Aires province, Argentina. Following the death of her father, the family moved to the larger nearby town of Junín, where her mother ran a boarding house. At the age of sixteen, Evita, as she was often called, left high school after two years and went to Buenos Aires with the dream of becoming an actress. Lacking any training in the theater, she obtained a few small parts in motion pictures and on the radio. She was finally employed on a regular basis with one of the largest radio stations in Buenos Aires making 150 pesos every month. Her pay had increased to five thousand pesos every month by 1943 and jumped to thirty-five thousand pesos per month in 1944.



Eva Perón.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Partners with Perón

In 1943 Eva met Colonel Juan Perón, who had assumed the post of secretary of labor and social welfare in the military government that had recently come to power. Eva developed a close relationship with the widowed Perón, who was beginning to organize the Argentine workers in support of his own bid for the presidency. Becoming Perón's loyal political confidante (one with whom secrets are trusted) and partner, she helped him increase his support among the masses. In October 1945, after Perón was arrested and put in prison by a group of military men who did not support him, she helped to organize a mass demonstration that led to his release. A few days later, on October 21, 1945, Eva and Juan Perón were married.

Now politically stronger than ever, Perón became the government candidate in the February 1946 presidential election. Señora de Perón participated actively in the campaign, something no Argentine woman had ever done. She directed her appeal to the less privileged groups of Argentine society, whom she labeled "los descamisados" (the shirtless ones).

Influence in political affairs

Following Perón's election, Eva began to play an increasingly important role in the political affairs of the nation. During the early months of the Perón administration she

launched an active campaign for national women's suffrage, which had been one of Perón's campaign promises. Due largely to her efforts, suffrage for women became law in 1947, and in 1951 women voted for the first time in a national election.

Eva also assumed the task of gathering the support of the working classes and controlling organized labor groups. Taking over a suite of offices in the Secretariate of Labor, Perón's former center of power, she used her influence to hire and fire ministers and top officials of the General Confederation of Labor, the chief labor organization in Argentina. Although not given the official title, she acted as the secretary of labor, supporting workers' demands for higher wages and backing a number of social welfare measures.

Helped the lower classes

Because Eva came from a lower-class background, she identified with the members of the working classes and was strongly committed to improving their lives. She devoted several hours every day to meeting with poor people and visiting hospitals, orphanages, and factories. She also supervised the newly created Ministry of Health, which built many new hospitals and established a successful program to fight different diseases.

A large part of Eva's work with the poor was carried out by the María Eva Duarte de Perón Welfare Foundation, established in June 1947. Its funds came from contributions, often obtained with force, from trade unions, businesses, and industrial firms. The foundation grew into an enormous semi-official welfare agency that distributed food, clothing, medicine, and money to needy peo-

ple throughout Argentina and on occasion to those suffering from disasters in other Latin American countries.

Enjoying great popularity among the descamisados, Eva Perón helped greatly in maintaining the loyalty of the masses to the Perón administration. On the other hand, her program of social welfare and her campaign for female suffrage led to considerable opposition among the *gente bien* (upper class), to whom Eva was unacceptable because of her humble background and earlier activities. Eva was driven by the desire to master those members of the government that had rejected her, and she could be cruel and spiteful with her enemies.

Death and place in history

In June 1951 it was announced that Eva would be the vice presidential candidate on the reelection ticket with Perón in the upcoming national election. Eva's candidacy was strongly supported by the General Confederation of Labor, but opposition within the military and her own failing health caused her to decline the nomination. Already suffering from cancer, Eva died on July 26, 1952, at the age of thirty-two. After Eva's death, which produced a huge display of public grief, Perón's political fortunes began to decline. He was finally removed from office by a military takeover in September 1955.

Eva Perón's friends and enemies agreed that she was a woman of great personal charm. Her supporters have elevated her to popular sainthood as the champion of the lower classes. The favorable portrayal of her in the play *Evita*, first staged in 1978, and in the 1997 film of the same name, brought Eva to

the forefront of the American public. By a large part of the officer corps of the military, however, she is greatly despised. There is still considerable difference of opinion regarding her true role in the Perón administration and her true place in Argentine history.

For More Information

Barnes, John. *Evita, First Lady: A Biography of Eva Perón*. New York: Grove Press, 1978.

Fraser, Nicholas, and Marysa Navarro. *Evita*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1996.

Perón, Eva. *In My Own Words*. Edited by Laura Dail. New York: New Press, 1996.

Taylor, Julie. *Eva Perón: The Myths of a Woman*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1979.

JEAN PIAGET

Born: August 9, 1896

Neuchâtel, Switzerland

Died: September 17, 1980

Geneva, Switzerland

Swiss psychologist

The Swiss psychologist and educator Jean Piaget is famous for his learning theories based on different stages in the development of children's intelligence.

Young naturalist

Jean Piaget was born on August 9, 1896, in Neuchâtel, Switzerland, the son of a histo-

rian. Much of Piaget's childhood was influenced by what he saw in his father, a man intensely dedicated to his studies and work. Because of this, at an early age Piaget began passing up recreation for studying, particularly the study of the natural sciences. When he was eleven, his notes on a rare part-albino (having extremely pale or light skin) sparrow were published, the first of hundreds of articles and over fifty books. Several times, when submitting his works to be published in various magazines, Piaget was forced to keep his young age a secret. Many editors felt that a young author had very little credibility.

Piaget's help in classifying Neuchâtel's natural-history museum collection inspired his study of mollusks (shellfish). One article, written when he was fifteen, led to a job offer at a natural history museum in Geneva, Switzerland; he declined in order to continue his education. At Neuchâtel University he finished natural science studies in 1916 and earned a doctoral degree for research on mollusks in 1918.

Early career

Piaget's godfather introduced him to philosophy (the search for knowledge). Biology (the study of living organisms) was thus merged with epistemology (the study of knowledge), both basic to his later learning theories. Work in two psychological laboratories in Zurich, Switzerland, introduced him to psychoanalysis (the study of mental processes). In Paris at the Sorbonne he studied abnormal psychology (the study of mental illness), logic, and epistemology, and in 1920 with Théodore Simon in the Binet Laboratory he developed standardized reasoning tests (universal tests). Piaget thought that



Jean Piaget.

Courtesy of the Archives of the History of America.

these quantitative (expressed as an amount) tests were too strict and saw that children's incorrect answers better revealed their qualitative thinking (quality of thinking) at various stages of development. This led to the question he would spend the rest of his life studying: How do children learn?

After 1921 Piaget was director of research, assistant director, and then codirector at the Jean Jacques Rousseau Institute, later part of Geneva University, where he was the professor of history in scientific thought (1929–1939). He also taught at universities in Paris, Lausanne, and Neuchâtel. He was chairman of the International Bureau of Edu-

cation and was a Swiss delegate to United Nations Economic and Scientific Committee (UNESCO). In 1955 he founded the Center for Genetic Epistemology in Geneva with funds from the Rockefeller Foundation, and in 1956 he founded and became director of the Institute for Educational Science in Geneva.

The study of children

Piaget found four stages of mental growth while studying children, particularly his own: a sensory-motor stage, from birth to age two, when mental structures concentrate on concrete (or real) objects; a pre-operational stage, from age two to seven, when children learn symbols in language, fantasy, play, and dreams; a concrete operational stage, from age seven to eleven, when children master classification, relationships, numbers, and ways of reasoning (arguing to a conclusion) about them; finally, a formal operational stage, from age eleven, when they begin to master independent thought and other people's thinking.

Piaget believed that children's understanding through at least the first three stages differ from those of adults and are based on actively exploring the environment (surroundings) rather than on language understanding. During these stages children learn naturally without punishment or reward. Piaget saw nature (heredity, or characteristics passed down from parents) and nurture (environment) as related and equally as important, with neither being the final answer. He found children's ideas about nature neither inherited (passed down from parents) nor learned but constructed from their mental structures and experiences. Men-

tal growth takes place by integration, or learning higher ideas by absorbing lower-level ideas, and by substitution, or replacing early explanations of an occurrence or idea with a more reasonable explanation. Children learn in stages in an upward spiral of understanding, with the same problems attacked and solved more completely at each higher level.

Harvard psychologist Jerome Bruner (1915–) and others introduced Piaget's ideas to the United States around 1956, after his books were translated into English. The goal of American education in the late 1950s, to teach children how to think, called for further interest in Piaget's ideas. His defined stages of when children's concepts change and mature came from experiments with children. These ideas are currently favored over the later developed stimulus-response theory (to excite in order to get response) of behaviorist (doctors who focus on the behaviors of their subjects) psychologists, who have studied animal learning.

Piaget's theories developed over years. Further explanations and experiments were performed, but these refinements did not alter his basic beliefs or theories.

Awards and legacy

Piaget received honorary degrees from Oxford and Harvard universities and made many impressive guest appearances at conferences concerning childhood development and learning. He remained a quiet figure, though, preferring to avoid the spotlight. This kind of lifestyle allowed him to further develop his theories.

Piaget kept himself to a strict personal schedule that filled his entire day. He awoke

every morning at four and wrote at least four publishable pages before teaching classes or attending meetings. After lunch he would take walks and ponder on his interests. "I always like to think on a problem before reading about it," he said. He read extensively in the evening before going to bed. Every summer he vacationed in the Alpine Mountains of Europe and wrote many works.

Piaget died on September 17, 1980 in Geneva, Switzerland, and was remembered by the *New York Times* as the man whose theories were "as liberating [freeing] and revolutionary as Sigmund Freud's [1856–1939] earlier insights into the stages of human emotional life. Many have hailed him as one of the country's most creative scientific thinkers."

For More Information

Evans, Richard I. *Jean Piaget, the Man and His Ideas*. New York: E. P. Dutton, 1973.

Fravell, John H. *The Developmental Psychology of Jean Piaget*. Princeton, NJ: Van Nostrand Press, 1963.

Furth, Hans G. *Piaget and Knowledge: Theoretical Foundations*. 2nd ed. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1981.

PABLO PICASSO

Born: October 25, 1881

Malaga, Spain

Died: April 8, 1973

Mougins, France

Spanish painter, sculptor, and graphic artist

The Spanish painter, sculptor, and graphic artist Pablo Picasso was one of the most productive and revolutionary artists in the history of Western painting. As the central figure in developing cubism (an artistic style where recognizable objects are fragmented to show all sides of an object at the same time), he established the basis for abstract art (art having little or no pictorial representation).

Early years

Pablo Ruiz Picasso was born on October 25, 1881, in Malaga, Spain. He was the eldest and only son with two younger sisters, Lola and Concepción. His father, José Ruiz Blasco, was a professor in the School of Arts and Crafts. Pablo's mother was Maria Ruiz Picasso (the artist used her surname from about 1901 on). It is rumored that Picasso learned to draw before he could speak. As a child, his father frequently took him to bullfights, and one of his earlier paintings was a scene from a bullfight.

In 1891 the family moved to La Coruña, where, at the age of fourteen, Picasso began studying at the School of Fine Art. Under the academic instruction of his father, he developed his artistic talent at an extraordinary rate.

When the family moved to Barcelona, Spain, in 1896, Picasso easily gained entrance to the School of Fine Arts. A year later he was admitted as an advanced student at the Royal Academy of San Fernando in Madrid, Spain. He demonstrated his remarkable ability by completing in one day an entrance examination for which an entire month was permitted.

Picasso soon found the atmosphere at the academy stifling, and he returned to Barcelona, where he began to study historical

and contemporary art on his own. At that time Barcelona was the most vital cultural center in Spain, and Picasso quickly joined the group of poets, painters, and writers who gathered at the famous café Els Quatre Gats (The Four Cats). Between 1900 and 1903 Picasso stayed alternately in Paris, France, and Barcelona. He had his first one-man exhibition in Paris in 1901.

Paris at the turn of the twentieth century

At the turn of the twentieth century Paris was the center of the international art world. In painting it was the birthplace of the impressionists—painters who depicted the appearance of objects by means of dabs or strokes of unmixed colors in order to create the look of actual reflected light. While their works retained certain links with the visible world, they exhibited a decided tendency toward flatness and abstraction.

Picasso set up a permanent studio in Paris in 1904. His studio soon became a gathering place for the city's most modern artists, writers, and patrons.

Picasso's early work reveals a creative pattern which continued throughout his long career. Between 1900 and 1906 he worked through nearly every major style of contemporary (modern) painting. In doing so, his own work changed with extraordinary quickness.

Blue and pink periods

The years between 1901 and 1904 were known as Picasso's Blue Period. Nearly all of his works were executed in somber shades of blue and contained lean, melancholy, and introspective (concentrating on their own thoughts) figures. Two outstanding examples

of this period are the *Old Guitarist* (1903) and *Life* (1903).

In the second half of 1904 Picasso's style took a new direction. In these paintings the color became more natural, delicate, and tender in its range, with reddish and pink tones dominating the works. Thus this period was called his Pink Period. The most celebrated example of this phase is the *Family of Saltimbanques* (1905). Picasso's work between 1900 and 1905 was generally flat, emphasizing the two-dimensional character of the painting surface. Late in 1905, however, he became increasingly interested in pictorial volume. This interest seems to have been influenced by the late paintings of Paul Cézanne (1839–1906).

The face in *Portrait of Gertrude Stein* (1906) reveals still another new interest: its mask-like abstraction was inspired by Iberian sculpture, an exhibition of which Picasso had seen at the Louvre, in Paris, in the spring of 1906. This influence reached its fullest expression a year later in one of the most revolutionary pictures of Picasso's entire career, *Les Femmes d'Alger (O. J. R. M.)* (1907).

Picasso and cubism

Les Femmes d'Alger (O. J. R. M.) is generally regarded as the first cubist painting. The faces of the figures are seen from both front and profile positions at the same time. Between 1907 and 1911 Picasso continued to break apart the visible world into increasingly small facets of monochromatic (using one color) planes of space. In doing so, his works became more and more abstract. Representation gradually vanished from his painting, until it became an end in itself—for the first time in the history of Western art.



Pablo Picasso.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

The growth of this process is evident in all of Picasso's work between 1907 and 1911. Some of the most outstanding pictorial examples of the development are *Fruit Dish* (1909), *Portrait of Ambroise Vollard* (1910), and *Ma Jolie*, also known as *Woman with a Guitar* (1911–12).

Collages and further development

About 1911 Picasso and Georges Braque (1882–1963) began to introduce letters and scraps of newspapers into their cubist paintings, thus creating an entirely new medium, the cubist collage. Picasso's first, and proba-

bly his most celebrated, collage is *Still Life with Chair Caning* (1911–1912).

After Picasso experimented with the new medium of collage, he returned more intensively to painting. In his *Three Musicians* (1921), the planes became broader, more simplified, and more colorful. In its richness of feeling and balance of formal elements, the *Three Musicians* represents a classical expression of cubism.

Additional achievements

Picasso also created sculpture and prints throughout his long career, and made numerous important contributions to both media. He periodically worked in ceramics, and designed sets, curtains, and interiors for the theater.

In painting, even the development of cubism fails to define Picasso's genius. About 1915, and again in the early 1920s, he turned away from abstraction and produced drawings and paintings in a realistic and serenely beautiful classical style. One of the most famous of these works is the *Woman in White* (1923). Painted just two years after the *Three Musicians*, the quiet and unobtrusive (not calling attention to itself) elegance of this masterpiece testifies to the ease with which Picasso could express himself pictorially.

Guernica

One of Picasso's most celebrated paintings of the 1930s is *Guernica* (1937). This work had been commissioned for the Spanish Government Building at the Paris World's Fair. It depicts the destruction by bombing of the town of Guernica during the Spanish Civil War (1936–39; the military revolt

against the Spanish government). The artist's deep feelings about the work, and about the massacre (a mass killing) which inspired it, are reflected in the fact that he completed the work, that is more than 25 feet wide and 11 feet high, within six or seven weeks.

Guernica is an extraordinary monument within the history of modern art. Executed entirely in black, white, and gray, it projects an image of pain, suffering, and brutality that has few parallels. Picasso applied the pictorial language of cubism to a subject that springs directly from social and political awareness.

Picasso's politics

Picasso also declared publicly in 1947 that he was a Communist (someone who believes the national government should control all businesses and the distribution of goods). When he was asked why he was a Communist, he stated, "When I was a boy in Spain, I was very poor and aware of how poor people had to live. I learned that the Communists were for the poor people. That was enough to know. So I became for the Communists." But sometimes the Communist cause was not as keen on Picasso as Picasso was about being a Communist. A 1953 portrait he painted of Joseph Stalin (1879–1953) caused an uproar in the Communist Party's leadership. The Soviet government banished his works.

Although Picasso had been in exile from his native Spain since the 1939 victory of Generalissimo Francisco Franco (1892–1975), he gave eight hundred to nine hundred of his earliest works to the city and people of Barcelona. To display these works, the Palacio Aguilar was renamed the Picasso Museum and the works were moved inside. But because of

Franco's dislike for Picasso, Picasso's name never appeared on the museum.

Picasso was married twice, first to dancer Olga Khoklova and then to Jacqueline Roque. He had four children. He was planning an exhibit of over two hundred of his works at the Avignon Arts Festival in France when he died at his thirty-five-room hilltop villa of Notre Dame de Vie in Mougins, France, on April 8, 1973.

The discovery of cubism represents Picasso's most important achievement in the history of twentieth-century art. Throughout his life he exhibited a remarkable genius for sculpture, graphics, and ceramics, as well as painting. His is one of the most celebrated artists of the modern period.

For More Information

Cowling, Elizabeth. *Interpreting Matisse, Picasso*. Harry N. Abrams, 2002.

Léal, Brigitte, Christine Piot, and Marie-Laure Bernadac. *The Ultimate Picasso*. Edited by Molly Stevens and Marjolijn de Jager. New York: Harry N. Abrams, 2000.

Olivier, Fernande. *Picasso and His Friends*. New York: Appleton-Century, 1965.

Richardson, John. *A Life of Picasso*. New York: Random House, 1991.

SYLVIA PLATH

Born: October 27, 1932
Boston, Massachusetts

Died: February 11, 1963

London, England

American poet and novelist

Best known for *The Bell Jar*, poet and novelist Sylvia Plath explored the themes of death, self, and nature in works that expressed her uncertain attitude toward the universe.

Early life

Sylvia Plath was born in Boston, Massachusetts, on October 27, 1932, to Otto and Aurelia Plath. Her father, a professor of biology (the study of plant and animal life) at Boston University and a well-respected authority on bees, died when she was eight years old. She was left with feelings of grief, guilt, and anger that would haunt her for life and led her to create most of her poetry. Plath gave the appearance of being a socially well-adjusted child. She was also an excellent student who dazzled her teachers in the Winthrop, Massachusetts, public school system and earned straight A's and praise for her writing abilities. She was just eight and a half when her first poem was published in the *Boston Herald*.

Plath lived in Winthrop with her mother and younger brother, Warren, until 1942. These early years gave her a powerful awareness of the beauty and terror of nature and a strong love and fear of the ocean. In 1942 her mother found a job as a teacher and purchased a house in Wellesley, Massachusetts, a respectable, middle-class, educational community that also influenced Plath's life and values. Her first story, "And Summer Will Not Come Again," was published in *Seventeen* magazine in August 1950. In September



Sylvia Plath.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

1950 Plath entered Smith College in Northampton, Massachusetts, on a scholarship (money given to a gifted student to attend college). There she once again excelled in her studies academically and socially. Referred to as “the golden girl” by teachers and peers, she planned her writing career in detail. She filled notebooks with stories and poems, shaping her words carefully and winning many awards.

Out in the world

In August 1952 Plath won a fiction contest held by *Mademoiselle*, earning her a position as guest editor at the magazine in June

1953. Her experiences in New York City, were depressing and later became the basis for her novel *The Bell Jar* (1963). Upon her return home Plath, tired of her image as the All-American girl, suffered a serious mental breakdown, tried to kill herself, and was given shock treatments. In February 1953 she had recovered enough to return to Smith College. She graduated and won a Fulbright scholarship to Cambridge University in England, where she met her future husband, the poet Ted Hughes (1930–1998). They were married in June 1956 in London, England.

After Plath earned her graduate degree, she returned to America to accept a teaching position at Smith for the 1957–1958 school year. She quit after a year to devote all her time to writing. For a while she attended a poetry course given by American poet Robert Lowell (1917–1977), where she met American poet Anne Sexton (1928–1974). Sexton’s and Lowell’s influences were important to her development as a poet. Both urged her to write about very private subjects. Plath and her husband were invited as writers-in-residence to Yaddo, in Saratoga Springs, New York, where they lived and worked for two months. It was here that Plath completed many of the poems collected in *The Colossus* (1960), her first volume of poems. Her first child, Frieda, was born in 1960. Another child, Nicholas, was born two years later.

The Colossus was praised by critics for its “fine craft” and “brooding [anxious] sense of danger and lurking horror” at man’s place in the universe. But it was criticized for its absence of a personal voice. Not until “Three Women: A Monologue for Three Voices” (1962)—a radio play that was considered a key work by some critics—would Plath begin

to free her style and write more natural, less narrative (telling a story) poetry. “Three Women” is like much of Plath’s later poetry in that its structure is dramatic and expresses the highly personal themes that mark her work.

Expressing inner demons

As Plath’s poetry developed, it became more autobiographical (about her own life) and private. Almost all the poems in *Ariel* (1965), considered her finest work and written during the last few months of her life, are personal accounts of her anger, insecurity, fear, and tremendous sense of loneliness and death. She had found the voice that she had tried to express for so long. Violent and vivid in its description of suicide, death, and brutality, *Ariel* shocked critics, especially several poems that compare her father to a member of the Nazis (members of the ruling party in Germany, 1933–45, who killed six million Jewish people during World War II [1939–45], which was a war fought between Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union and the United States against Germany, Italy, and Japan).

Plath could not escape the tragedy that invaded and took over her personal life. By February 1963 her marriage had ended. She was ill and living on the edge of another breakdown while caring for two small children in a small apartment in London, England, during the coldest winter in years. On February 11 she killed herself. The last thing she did was to leave her children two mugs of milk and a plate of buttered bread.

Later works

In later poetry published after her death in *Crossing The Water* (1971) and *Winter Trees* (1971), Plath voiced her long-hidden rage

over “years of doubleness, smiles, and compromise.” A more complete look into Plath’s tortured mind was possible following the publication in 2002 of *The Unabridged Journals of Sylvia Plath, 1950–1962*.

Although Sylvia Plath is often regarded by critics as the poet of death, her final poems, which deal with the self and how it goes about living in a destructive, materialistic (focused on the acquiring of material wealth) world, clearly express her need for faith in the healing powers of art.

For More Information

Alexander, Paul. *Rough Magic: A Biography of Sylvia Plath*. New York: Viking, 1991, revised edition 1999.

Butscher, Edward. *Sylvia Plath: Method and Madness*. New York: Seabury Press, 1976.

Rosenblatt, Jon. *Sylvia Plath: The Poetry of Initiation*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1979.

Wagner-Martin, Linda. *Sylvia Plath: A Literary Life*. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1999.

PLATO

Born: c. 427 B.C.E.

Athens, Greece

Died: c. 347 B.C.E.

Athens, Greece

Greek philosopher

The Greek philosopher Plato founded the Academy in Athens, one of the great philosophical schools of antiq-



Plato.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

uity (ancient times). His thought had enormous impact on the development of Western (having to do with American and European thought) philosophy.

Early life

Plato was born in Athens, Greece, the son of Ariston and Perictione, both of Athenian noble backgrounds. He lived his whole life in Athens, although he traveled to Sicily and southern Italy on several occasions. One story says he traveled to Egypt. Little is known of his early years, but he was given the finest education Athens had to offer noble families, and he devoted his considerable tal-

ents to politics and the writing of tragedy (works that end with death and sadness) and other forms of poetry. His acquaintance with Socrates (c. 469–c. 399 B.C.E.) altered the course of his life. The power that Socrates's methods and arguments had over the minds of the youth of Athens gripped Plato as firmly as it did many others, and he became a close associate of Socrates.

The end of the Peloponnesian War (431–04 B.C.E.), which caused the destruction of Athens by the Spartans, left Plato in a terrible position. His uncle, Critias (c. 480–403 B.C.E.), was the leader of the Thirty Tyrants (a group of ruthless Athenian rulers) who were installed in power by the victorious Spartans. One means of holding onto power was to connect as many Athenians as possible with terrible acts committed during the war. Thus Socrates, as we learn in Plato's *Apology*, was ordered to arrest a man and bring him to Athens from Salamis for execution (to be put to death). When the great teacher refused, his life was threatened, and he was probably saved only by the overthrow of the Thirty Tyrants and the reestablishment of the democracy (a system of government in which government officials are elected by the people).

Death of Socrates

Plato welcomed the restoration of the democracy, but his mistrust was deepened some four years later when Socrates was tried on false charges and sentenced to death. Plato was present at the trial, as we learn in the *Apology*, but was not present when the hemlock (poison) was given to his master, although he describes the scene in clear and touching detail in the *Phaedo*. He then turned in disgust from Athenian politics and never

took an active part in government, although through friends he did try to influence the course of political life in the Sicilian city of Syracuse.

Plato and several of his friends withdrew from Athens for a short time after Socrates's death and remained with Euclides (c. 450–373 B.C.E.) in Megara. His productive years were highlighted by three voyages to Sicily, and his writings, all of which have survived.

The first trip, to southern Italy and Syracuse, took place in 388 and 387 B.C.E., when Plato met Dionysius I (c. 430–367 B.C.E.). Dionysius was then at the height of his power in Sicily for having freed the Greeks there from the threat of Carthaginian rule. Plato became better friends with the philosopher Dion (c. 408–353 B.C.E.), however, and Dionysius grew jealous and began to treat Plato harshly.

His dialogues

When Plato returned to Athens, he began to teach in the Gymnasium Academe and soon afterward acquired property nearby and founded his famous Academy, which survived until the early sixth century C.E. At the center of the Academy stood a shrine to the Muses (gods of the arts), and at least one modern scholar suggests that the Academy may have been a type of religious brotherhood.

Plato had begun to write the dialogues (writings in the form of conversation), which came to be the basis of his philosophical (having to do with the search for knowledge and truth) teachings, some years before the founding of the Academy. To this early period Plato wrote the *Laches* which deals with

courage, *Charmides* with common sense, *Euthyphro* with piety (religious dedication), *Lysis* with friendship, *Protagoras* with the teaching of virtues, or goodness, and many others. The *Apology* and *Crito* stand somewhat apart from the other works of this group in that they deal with historical events, Socrates's trial and the period between his conviction and execution.

Plato's own great contributions begin to appear in the second group of writings, which date from the period between his first and second voyages to Sicily. The *Meno* carries on the question of the teachability of virtue first dealt with in *Protagoras* and introduces the teaching of *anamnesis* (recollection), which plays an important role in Plato's view of the human's ability to learn the truth.

The Republic

Socrates is again the main character in the *Republic*, although this work is less a dialogue than a long discussion by Socrates of justice and what it means to the individual and the city-state (independent states). Just as there are three elements to the soul, the rational, the less rational, and the impulsive irrational, so there are three classes in the state, the rulers, the guardians, and the workers. The rulers are not a family of rulers but are made up of those who have emerged from the population as a whole as the most gifted intellectually. The guardians serve society by keeping order and by handling the practical matters of government, including fighting wars, while the workers perform the labor necessary to keep the whole running smoothly. Thus the most rational elements of the city-state guide it and see that all in it are given an education equal to their abilities.

Only when the three work in harmony, with intelligence clearly in control, does the individual or state achieve the happiness and fulfillment of which it is capable. The *Republic* ends with the great myth of Er, in which the wanderings of the soul through births and rebirths are retold. One may be freed from the cycle after a time through lives of greater and greater spiritual and intellectual purity.

Last years

Plato's third and final voyage to Syracuse was made some time before 357 B.C.E., and he tried for the second time to influence the young Dionysius II. Plato was unsuccessful and was held in semicaptivity before being released. Plato's *Seventh Letter*, the only one in the collection of thirteen considered accurate, perhaps even from the hand of Plato himself, recounts his role in the events surrounding the death of Dion, who in 357 B.C.E. entered Syracuse and overthrew Dionysius. It is of more interest, however, for Plato's statement that the deepest truths may not be communicated.

Plato died in 347 B.C.E. the founder of an important philosophical school, which existed for almost one thousand years, and the most brilliant of Socrates's many pupils and followers. His system attracted many followers in the centuries after his death and resurfaced as Neoplatonism, the great rival of early Christianity.

For More Information

Kahn, Charles H. *Plato and the Socratic Dialogue: The Philosophical Use of a Literary Form*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1996.

Shorey, Paul. *What Plato Said*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1933.

POCAHONTAS

Born: c. 1595

Virginia

Died: 1617

Gravesend, Kent, England

Native American princess

Pocahontas was the daughter of a Native American chief in Virginia at the time when the British came to settle in the area. Her marriage to an English settler brought eight years of peace between the Indians and the British.

The "playful one"

Pocahontas's real name was Matoaka. As a child, she was also called Pocahontas, meaning "playful one," and the name stuck. Her father was Powhatan (c. 1550–1618), the chief of a group of tribes that bore his name and spoke the Native American Algonquian language.

In 1607 English colonists founded Jamestown. They had been sent by the Virginia Company, a company in London that had the English king's permission to set up a colony in the area for trade with England. As a young girl, Pocahontas often played at the Jamestown fort. She became friends with some of the boys there and charmed the settlers by turning cartwheels with the boys in the Jamestown marketplace.

Relations between the Native Americans and the settlers were not always smooth, but Pocahontas's friendship with the settlers may have helped keep peace. Captain John Smith (c. 1580–1631), who was the leader of the Jamestown colony until 1609, reported that

Pocahontas saved his life when he was captured by Powhatan's warriors in 1608. According to Smith, whose story is not believed by all historians, Pocahontas's actions kept Smith from being killed by Powhatan's men. Saving John Smith also saved the Jamestown colony.

Life with the English

Despite the incident with Smith, tensions between the Native Americans and the colonists in Virginia remained. In 1613, while Pocahontas was visiting the village of the Potomac Indians, she was taken prisoner by Samuel Argall, captain of a ship named *Treasurer*. Argall wanted to use Pocahontas as a hostage to exchange for Englishmen who were held by Powhatan's group, and for tools and supplies that the Native Americans had stolen. She was taken to Jamestown, where she was treated with respect by the governor, Sir Thomas Dale (–1619). Dale was touched by her intelligence and by her proper behavior. After being instructed in the Christian religion, she was baptized (admitted to Christianity and given a Christian name) with the name Rebecca.

John Rolfe (1585–1622), a gentleman at Jamestown, fell in love with Pocahontas and asked Dale for permission to marry her. Dale readily agreed in order to win the friendship of the Indians, even though Pocahontas may have already been married to a chief named Kocoum. Chief Powhatan also consented, and the marriage took place in June 1614 in the church at Jamestown in an Anglican service, following the Anglican branch of Christianity that had been developed in England. Both Native Americans and Englishmen apparently considered the union a bond



Pocahontas.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

between them. Pocahontas's marriage to Rolfe brought eight years of peaceful relations in Virginia.

A princess visits England

In 1616 the Virginia Company invited Pocahontas to visit England, thinking that her visit would aid the company in securing investments from the British. Rolfe, Pocahontas, her brother-in-law Tomocomo, and several Indian girls sailed to England. There Pocahontas was a great success. She was treated as a princess, entertained by the Anglican bishop of London, and introduced to England's King James I and Queen Anne.

Early in 1617 Pocahontas and her party prepared to return to Virginia. However, she became ill while in the village at Gravesend. Pocahontas had developed a case of smallpox, an infectious and dangerous disease caused by a virus and leading to high fever. Pocahontas died from the disease and was buried in Gravesend Church. Her only child, Thomas Rolfe, was educated in England, and later returned to Virginia.

Lasting contribution

Pocahontas was one of the first women to play an important role in what became the United States. Her friendship with the English settlers helped ensure the success of Jamestown, which became the first permanent English settlement in America.

For More Information

Fritz, Jean. *The Double Life of Pocahontas*. New York: Putnam, 1983.

Holler, Anne. *Pocahontas: Powhatan Peacemaker*. New York: Chelsea House, 1993.

Mossiker, Frances. *Pocahontas: The Life and the Legend*. New York: Knopf, 1976. Reprint, New York: Da Capo Press, 1996.

Woodward, Grace Steele. *Pocahontas*. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1969.

EDGAR ALLAN POE

Born: January 19, 1809
Boston, Massachusetts

Died: October 7, 1849

Baltimore, Maryland

American poet and writer

One of America's major writers, Edgar Allan Poe was far ahead of his time in his vision of a special area of human experience—the “inner world” of dreams and the imagination. He wrote fiction, poetry, and criticism and also worked as a magazine editor.

Orphaned at three

Edgar Allan Poe was born in Boston, Massachusetts, on January 19, 1809, the son of David Poe Jr. and Elizabeth Arnold Poe, both professional actors. By the time he was three, Edgar, his older brother, and his younger sister were orphans; their father deserted the family, and then their mother died. The children were each sent to different families to live. Edgar went to the Richmond, Virginia, home of John and Frances Allan, whose name Poe was to take later as his own middle name. The Allans were wealthy, and though they never adopted Poe, they treated him like a son, made sure he was educated in private academies, and took him to England for a five-year stay. Mrs. Allan, at least, showed considerable affection toward him.

As Edgar entered his teenage years, however, bad feelings developed between him and John Allan. Allan disapproved of Edgar's ambition to become a writer, thought he was ungrateful, and seems to have decided to cut Poe out of his will. When, in 1826, Poe entered the newly opened University of Virginia, he had so little money that he turned to gambling in an attempt to make money. In eight months he lost two thousand dollars.

Allan's refusal to help him led to a final break between the two, and in March 1827 Poe went out on his own.

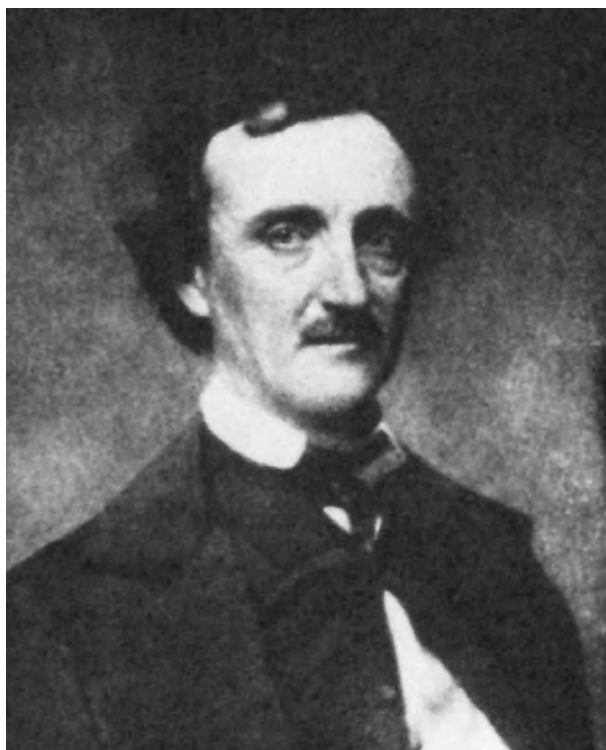
Enlists in the army

Poe then signed up for a five-year term in the U.S. Army. In 1827 his *Tamerlane and Other Poems* was published at his own expense, but the book failed to attract notice. By January 1829, serving under the name of Edgar A. Perry, Poe rose to the rank of sergeant major. He did not want to serve out the full five years, however, and he arranged to be discharged from the army on the condition that he would seek an appointment at West Point Academy. He thought such a move might please John Allan. That same year *Al Araaf, Tamerlane and Minor Poems* was published in Baltimore, Maryland, and it received a highly favorable notice from the novelist and critic John Neal.

Poe visited Allan in Richmond, but he left in May 1830 after he and Allan had another violent quarrel. The West Point appointment came through the next month, but, since Poe no longer had any use for it, he did not last long. Lacking Allan's permission to resign, Poe sought and received a dismissal for "gross neglect of duty" and "disobedience of orders." Poe realized that he would never receive financial help from Allan.

Marriage and editing jobs

Poe lived in Baltimore for a while with his aunt Maria Clemm and her seven-year-old daughter, Virginia. In 1831 he published *Poems by Edgar Allan Poe* and began to place short stories in magazines. In 1833 he received a prize for "Ms. Found in a Bottle," and his friend John Pendleton Kennedy, a



Edgar Allan Poe.

lawyer and writer, got him a job on the *Southern Literary Messenger*. In 1836 Poe married his cousin Virginia—now thirteen years old—and moved to Richmond with her and her mother. Although excessive drinking caused him to lose his job in 1837, he had written eighty-three reviews, six poems, four essays, and three short stories for the journal. He had also greatly increased its sales. Losing this job was extremely distressing to him, and his state of mind from then on, as one biographer put it, "was never very far from panic."

The panic increased after 1837. Poe moved with Virginia and her mother to New

York City, where he managed to publish *The Narrative of Arthur Gordon Pym* (1838), his only long work of fiction. The family then moved to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, where Poe served as coeditor of *Burton's Gentleman's Magazine*. In two years he boosted its circulation from five thousand to twenty thousand and contributed some of his best fiction to its pages, including "The Fall of the House of Usher." In 1840 he published *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque*. But there was trouble at *Burton's*, and in 1841 Poe left to work as the editor of *Graham's Magazine*. It was becoming clear that two years was about as long as Poe could hold a job, and though he contributed quality fiction and criticism to the magazine, his drinking, his feuding with other writers, and his inability to get along with people caused him to leave after 1842.

Illness and crisis

"The Murders in the Rue Morgue" and "The Man That Was Used Up" emerged in 1843, and a Philadelphia newspaper offered a one-hundred-dollar prize for his story "The Gold Bug," but Poe's problems were increasing. His wife, who had been a vital source of comfort and support to him, began showing signs of the consumption (or tuberculosis, an infection of the lungs) that would eventually kill her. When his troubles became too great, Poe tried to relieve them by drinking, which made him ill. Things seemed to improve slightly in 1844; the publication of the poem "The Raven" brought him some fame, and this success was followed in 1845 by the publication of two volumes, *The Raven and Other Poems* and *Tales*. But his wife's health continued to worsen, and he was still not earning enough money to support her and Clemm.

Poe's next job was with *Godey's Lady's Book*, but he was unable to keep steady employment, and things got so bad that he and his family almost starved in the winter of 1846. Then, on January 30, 1847, Virginia Poe died. Somehow Poe continued to produce work of very high caliber. In 1848 he published the ambitious *Eureka*, and he returned to Richmond in 1849 to court a now-widowed friend of his youth, Mrs. Shelton. They were to be married, and Poe left for New York City at the end of September to bring Clemm back for the wedding. On the way he stopped off in Baltimore, Maryland. No one knows exactly what happened, but he was found unconscious on October 3, 1849, near a saloon that had been used as a polling place. He died in a hospital four days later.

It is not hard to see the connection between the nightmare of Poe's life and his work. His fictional work resembles the dreams of a troubled individual who keeps coming back, night after night, to the same pattern of dream. At times he traces out the pattern lightly, at other times in a "thoughtful" mood, but often the tone is terror. He finds himself descending, into a cellar, a wine vault, or a whirlpool, always falling. The women he meets either change form into someone else or are whisked away completely. And at last he drops off, into a pit or a river or a walled-up tomb.

For More Information

Bittner, William R. *Poe: A Biography*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1962.

Meyers, Jeffrey. *Edgar Allan Poe: His Life and Legacy*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1992.

Quinn, Arthur H. *Edgar Allan Poe: A Critical Biography*. New York: Appleton-Century, 1941. Reprint, Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1998.

Walsh, John Evangelist. *Midnight Dreary: The Mysterious Death of Edgar Allan Poe*. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press, 1998.

SIDNEY POITIER

Born: February 20, 1924

Miami, Florida

African American actor

Actor Sidney Poitier's presence in film during the 1950s and 1960s opened up the possibility for bigger and better roles for African American performers.

Poor childhood

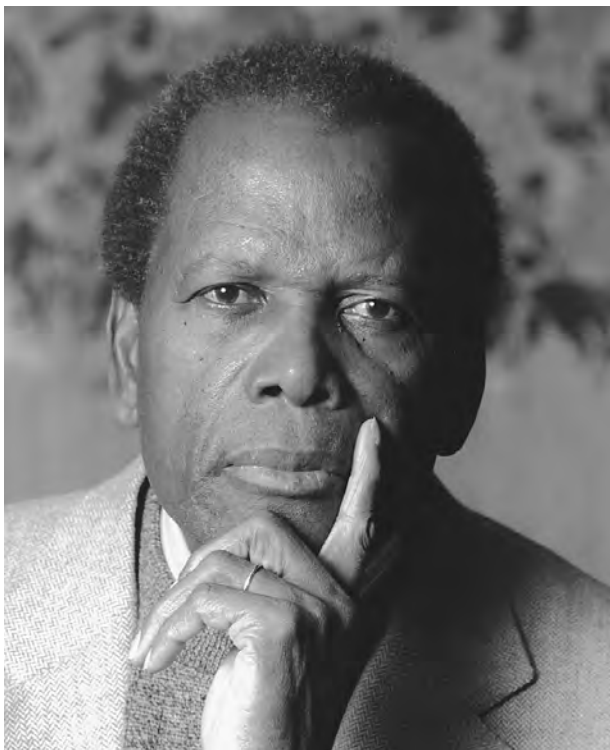
Born on February 20, 1924, in Miami, Florida, but raised in the Bahamas, Sidney Poitier was the son of Reginald and Evelyn Poitier. His father was a tomato farmer, and the family was very poor. Still, Poitier later told Frank Spotnitz in *American Film* that his father "had a wonderful sense of himself. Every time I took a part, from the first part, from the first day, I always said to myself, 'This must reflect well on his name.'" The family moved from the village of Cat Island to Nassau, the Bahamian capital, when Poitier was eleven years old, and it was there that he first experienced the magic of the movies. Poitier returned to Miami at age fifteen to live with his older brother Cyril.

Poitier left for New York City at age sixteen, serving briefly in the army. He then worked as a dishwasher in a restaurant. Seeing an ad for actors in a newspaper, he went to a tryout at the American Negro Theater. Theater cofounder Frederick O'Neal became impatient with Poitier's Caribbean accent and poor reading skills. "He came up on the stage, furious, and grabbed me by the scruff of my pants and my collar and marched me toward the door," Poitier told the *Los Angeles Times*. Poitier, determined to succeed, continued working in the restaurant but listened to radio broadcasts in his spare time to improve his speaking. He later returned to the theater and was hired as a janitor in exchange for acting lessons.

Acting career picks up

Poitier served as an understudy (one who learns a performer's lines in case that performer is unable to perform) for actor-singer Harry Belafonte (1927–) in a play called *Days of Our Youth*, and an appearance one night led to a small role in a production of the Greek comedy *Lysistrata*. On opening night of the latter play Poitier was so nervous that he delivered the wrong lines and ran off the stage; still, his brief appearance so impressed critics that he ended up getting more work.

Poitier made his film debut in the 1950 feature *No Way Out*, playing a doctor tormented by the racist (one who is prejudiced against other races) brother of a man whose life he could not save. Poitier worked steadily throughout the 1950s, appearing in the South African tale *Cry, the Beloved Country*, the classroom drama *The Blackboard Jungle*, and *The Defiant Ones*, in which Poitier and



Sidney Poitier.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Tony Curtis (1925–) play prison escapees who are chained together; their struggle helps them look past their differences and learn to respect each other.

In the 1960s Poitier began to make his mark on American popular culture. After appearing in the film version of Lorraine Hansberry's play *A Raisin in the Sun*, in a role he had developed on the stage, Poitier took the part of an American serviceman in Germany in *Lilies of the Field* (1963). This role earned him an Academy Award for Best Actor, making him the first African American to earn this honor.

Breaking down barriers

In 1967 Poitier appeared in three hit movies. In *To Sir, With Love* he played a schoolteacher, while in *In the Heat of the Night* he played Virgil Tibbs, a black detective from the North who helps solve a murder in a southern town and wins the respect of the prejudiced police chief there. In the comedy *Guess Who's Coming to Dinner*, also starring Spencer Tracy (1900–1967) and Katherine Hepburn (1907–), Poitier's character is engaged to a white woman. The film was Hollywood's first love story between members of different races that did not end tragically. Reflecting on the feelings of filmmakers during this period, Poitier remarked to Susan Ellicott of the *London Times*, "I suited their need. I was clearly intelligent. I was a pretty good actor. I believed in brotherhood, in a free society. I hated racism, segregation [separation based on race]. And I was a symbol against those things."

Of course, Poitier was more than a symbol. David J. Fox reported in the *Los Angeles Times* that actor James Earl Jones (1931–), at a tribute to Poitier hosted by the American Film Institute (AFI) in 1992, remembered, "He marched on Montgomery and Memphis with Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr. [1929–1968], who said of Poitier: 'He's a man who never lost his concern for the least of God's children.'" Rosa Parks (1913–), who in 1955 became a civil rights hero simply by refusing to sit in the "negro" section of a Montgomery bus, attended the tribute and praised Poitier as "a great actor and role model."

Begins directing

In 1972 Poitier costarred with Belafonte in the western *Buck and the Preacher* for

Columbia Pictures. After an argument with the film's director, Poitier took over; though he and Belafonte urged Columbia to hire another director, a studio official saw footage Poitier had shot and encouraged him to finish the film himself. Poitier went on to direct three features starring comedian Bill Cosby (1937–) in the 1970s: *Uptown Saturday Night*, *Let's Do It Again*, and *A Piece of the Action*. They also worked together on the comedy *Ghost Dad* (1990), which was a disaster. Poitier also directed the hit comedy *Stir Crazy* (1980), as well as several other features.

Poitier took only a handful of film roles in the 1980s, but in 1991 he played Supreme Court justice Thurgood Marshall (1908–1993) in the television film *Separate but Equal*. In 1992 he returned to the big screen for the comedy-drama *Sneakers*, which costarred Robert Redford (1937–) and River Phoenix (1970–1993). The AFI tribute to Poitier also took place in 1992; in his speech he welcomed young filmmakers into the fold and urged them to “be true to yourselves and be useful to the journey,” reported *Daily Variety*.

Later years

Poitier and his wife, actress Joanna Shimkus, travel a great deal because they live in California and have children in New York. Poitier returned to television for 1995's western drama *Children of the Dust*. He continued to star in television movies with *To Sir with Love II* (1996) and the Showtime drama *Mandela and de Klerk* (1997). The latter follows the story of Nelson Mandela's (1918–) last years in prison to his election as leader of South Africa. Both received mixed reviews.

In 2000 Poitier received the Screen Actors Guild Lifetime Achievement Award. In

April of that year, *The Measure of a Man: A Spiritual Autobiography* (the story of his own life) was published. In February 2001 Poitier won a Grammy award for best spoken-word album for his reading of the book. Poitier was presented with the NAACP's (National Association for the Advancement of Colored People) Hall of Fame Award in March 2001. In March 2002 Poitier was awarded an honorary Academy Award for his long, dignified career. The award was especially meaningful because it came on the same night that African Americans won both the Best Actor (Denzel Washington) and Best Actress (Halle Berry) awards.

For More Information

Bergman, Carol. *Sidney Poitier*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.

Poitier, Sidney. *The Measure of a Man: A Spiritual Biography*. San Francisco: Harper-SanFrancisco, 2000.

Poitier, Sidney. *This Life*. New York: Knopf, 1980.

POL POT

Born: May 19, 1928

Kompong Thom, Cambodia

Died: April 15, 1998

Near Anlong Veng, Cambodia

Cambodian premier

Pol Pot was a leader in the Cambodian Communist movement and became premier of the government of Democ-



Pol Pot.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

atic Kampuchéa (DK) from 1976 to 1979. He directed the mass killing of intellectuals, professional people, and city dwellers—over a million of his own people.

Early life

Pol Pot was born Saloth Sar on May 19, 1928, near Anlong Veng, Cambodia, the second son of a successful landowner. Pol Pot's father had political connections at the royal court at the Cambodian capital of Phnom Penh, some seventy miles from Prek Sbau, the small hamlet in Kompong Thom province where Pol Pot was born. Visits by court officials and even by Cambodian king Sisowath

Monivong himself to Pol Pot's father's home appear to have been common. Pol Pot often denied that he was Saloth Sar, probably to protect his family. He adopted his new name by 1963, and even after he had become premier, people were unsure of his actual identity.

Pol Pot was a poor student. He was educated by Buddhists and at a private Catholic institution in Phnom Penh, and then enrolled at a technical school (a place where mechanical or scientific subjects are taught) in the town of Kompong Cham to learn carpentry. He later obtained a government scholarship to study radio and electrical technology in Paris. However, in France Pol Pot began to spend less time studying and more time becoming involved with the Communist Party. (Communists believe in revolution to create a society in which the means of production—land, factories, and mines—are owned by the people as a whole rather than by individuals.)

Communist activity

After returning to Cambodia in 1953, Pol Pot drifted into the Vietnamese-influenced "United Khmer Issarak (Freedom) Front" of Cambodian Communists. The Front was one of many Cambodian groups that opposed French control of Cambodia as well as the government of Prince Norodom Sihanouk. After Cambodia won its independence from the French in 1954 Pol Pot became involved with the Khmer People's Revolutionary Party (KPRP), the first Cambodian Communist party. His hatred for intellectuals (people who think, study, and understand) and politicians grew during this time. He was influenced by Tou Samouth, a former Front president who was interested in making the

KPRP a genuinely Cambodian organization that could rally members of different groups against Sihanouk. The KPRP had conflicts with the Vietnamese, who wanted to control the anti-Sihanouk Cambodian resistance.

In September 1960 Pol Pot and a handful of followers met secretly at the Phnom Penh railroad station to found the “Workers Party of Kampuchéa” (WPK). Samouth was named secretary general. By 1963 Pol Pot had replaced Samouth as party secretary, and Samouth later disappeared under mysterious circumstances. For the next thirteen years Pol Pot and other WPK members disappeared from public view and set up their party organization in a remote forest area. During this period Pol Pot worked to strengthen his leadership position in the WPK and to hold down Vietnamese elements in the anti-Sihanouk movement. However, he carefully avoided a feud with the Vietnamese Communists, who were increasing their hold on parts of Cambodian territory. He also traveled to Beijing, China, to receive organizational training. Upon his return to Cambodia in 1966, the WPK changed its name to the Communist Party of Kampuchéa (CPK).

The CPK led many demonstrations against the Sihanouk administration, which caused Sihanouk to order the execution of dozens of CPK members, whom he referred to as the Khmer Rouge (“Red Khmers”). In December 1969 and January 1970 Pol Pot and other CPK leaders prepared to take down Sihanouk. But the military in Phnom Penh beat them to it, overthrowing Sihanouk in March 1970 and bringing Lon Nol to the Cambodian presidency. In 1971 Pol Pot was reelected as CPK secretary general and as commander of its “Revolutionary Army.” The

Vietnamese became angry when the CPK refused their request to begin talks with Lon Nol and the United States as Vietnamese-U.S. discussions took place in Paris. By terms of the Paris Accords, the Vietnamese pulled some of their troops out of Cambodia in early 1973. CPK “Revolutionary Army” units quickly took their place, and clashes between Lon Nol’s and Pol Pot’s forces continued.

Killing his own people

In April 1975 Phnom Penh fell to several Communist Cambodian and pro-Sihanouk groups. For nearly a year Pol Pot and other Cambodian Communists, as well as Sihanouk, struggled for power in the new state of “Democratic Kampuchéa.” Another CPK party congress in January 1976 led to Pol Pot’s reelection as secretary general, but also revealed differences of opinion between Pol Pot and other members of the party. Relations with Vietnam also continued to worsen. In April 1976, after the decision by Sihanouk to step down as head of state, a new Democratic Kampuchéa (DK) government was proclaimed, and Pol Pot became premier. However, his authority was challenged by Vietnam-influenced party leaders. Beginning in November 1976 Pol Pot began to remove many of his rivals, including cabinet ministers and other top party leaders.

Meanwhile, Pol Pot’s reform policies drove many people from major cities and forced tens of thousands into labor. The Cambodians were denied food and medical care, and mass killings of all suspected opponents—especially intellectuals or those with political experience—took place. Pol Pot was responsible for the deaths of over one million Cambodians—nearly 20 percent of the coun-

try's total population. Although opposition to Pol Pot was growing among party members, his visits to China and North Korea in September and October 1977 increased his standing among other Asian Communist leaders, even as fighting with Vietnamese border forces grew worse.

The fall of a dictator

Continued Vietnamese attacks on DK territory left Pol Pot with a shaky hold on power, and finally he and other DK leaders were forced to flee Phnom Penh in January 1979. They regrouped and established an underground government in western Cambodia and in the Cardamom mountain range. In July 1979 Pol Pot was sentenced to death in absentia (without him being present) for the murder of his own people. The sentence was issued by the new government of the "People's Republic of Kampuchéa," installed with the help of Vietnamese forces. With world attention focused on Cambodia, Pol Pot stepped down as DK prime minister in December 1979. However, he remained as party secretary general and as head of the CPK's military commission, making him the overall commander of the DK's thirty-thousand-man force battling the Vietnamese in Cambodia.

Little was known of Pol Pot's activities after that. In September 1985 the DK announced that Pol Pot had retired as commander of the DK's "National Army" and had been appointed to be "Director of the Higher Institute for National Defense." After several years of living underground, Pol Pot was finally captured in June 1997. The Khmer Rouge had suffered from internal conflicts in recent years and finally split into opposing forces, the largest of which joined with the government of Cambo-

dia under Sihanouk and hunted down their former leader. Pol Pot was sentenced to life in prison. While under house arrest, he died of heart failure on April 15, 1998.

For More Information

Chandler, David P. *Brother Number One: A Political Biography*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 1992.

Kiernan, Ben. *The Pol Pot Regime: Race, Power, and Genocide in Cambodia under the Khmer Rouge, 1975–79*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1996.

Steffoff, Rebecca. *Pol Pot*. New York: Chelsea House, 1991.

MARCO POLO

Born: c. 1254

Venice

Died: January 8, 1324

Venice

Venetian explorer and writer

The traveler and writer Marco Polo left Venice for Cathay (now China) in 1271, spent seventeen years in Kublai Khan's (1215–1294) empire, and returned to Venice in 1295. His account of his experiences is one of the most important travel documents ever written.

Family business

Born into a noble family of Venetian merchants, Marco Polo began his long expe-

rience with Cathay through the adventures of his father, Niccolo, and his uncle, Maffeo Polo, partners in a trading operation at a time when Venice was the world leader in foreign commerce. The Polos had left Venice to travel all the way to Peking, China, and back when Marco was only six years old. During their nine-year absence, Marco was raised by his mother and other members of his extended family. He became a tough, loyal, observant young man, eager to please and interested in adventure.

Marco Polo's father and uncle were well received in China by the Mongol prince Kublai Khan in 1266. The Polos impressed Kublai Khan with their intelligence and their knowledge of the world. For these reasons he kept them around for several years. In 1269 he sent them to Rome as his messengers with a request that the pope send one hundred Europeans to share their knowledge with him. Although the pope did not grant the request, the Polo brothers, in search of further profit and adventure, set out to return to China in 1271. Since his mother had died recently, Marco Polo was taken along on the trip, marking his debut, or first appearance, as a world traveler at age seventeen. The return to China, over land and sea, desert and mountain, took slightly more than three years.

Despite their failure to bring back the one hundred Europeans from Rome, Kublai Khan welcomed the Polos back and again took them into his service. He became increasingly impressed with Marco Polo, who, like his father and uncle, demonstrated not only his ability to travel but also his knowledge of the Mongol language and his remarkable powers of observation.



Marco Polo.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Years in China

With the approval of Kublai Khan, the Polos began widespread trading ventures within his empire. While on these business trips around the empire, Marco Polo demonstrated his quick mind and his ability to relate what he saw in clear, understandable terms. His reports, which formed the basis of his famous account of his travels, contained information on local customs, business conditions, and events. It was in these reports that he displayed his talent as an objective and accurate observer. Kublai Khan read and used these reports to keep informed of developments within his empire.

All three of the European visitors were kept on as messengers and advisers. The younger Polo was used on several extended missions that sent him traveling over much of China and even beyond. By his own account he came near the edge of Tibet and northern Burma. This relationship between the Polos and Kublai Khan lasted more than sixteen years, during which Marco served as Kublai Khan's personal representative in the city of Yangchow, China.

Leaving the khan

Although the Polos enjoyed the profits of their enterprise, they longed to return to Venice to enjoy their wealth. They were prevented from returning for a time because Kublai Khan was unwilling to release them from his service. Their chance to return to Europe came in 1292, when they were sent on a mission to Persia and then to Rome. The assignment represented Kublai Khan's way of releasing them from their obligations to him. In Persia they were to arrange a marriage between one of Kublai Khan's regional rulers and a Mongol princess. They were forced to remain in Persia for nearly a year when the man who was supposed to be married died and a new groom had to be found. From the Persian court, the Venetians continued their journey home, arriving in 1295 after an absence of nearly twenty-five years.

Marco Polo did not return to Asia again. He entered the service of Venice in its war against the rival city-state of Genoa. In 1298 Marco served as a gentleman-commander of a ship in the Venetian navy. In September 1298 he was captured and imprisoned in Genoa. He was famous for his adventures, and as a result he was

treated with unusual courtesy for a prisoner and released within a year. Little is known of Marco Polo's life after his return to Venice. He apparently returned to private life and business until his death in 1324.

Record of his travels

While imprisoned in Genoa, Marco Polo related the story of his travels to a fellow prisoner named Rusticiano, a man from Pisa, Italy, who wrote in the romantic style of thirteenth-century literature. A combination of Marco Polo's gift of observation and the writing style of Rusticiano emerged in the final version of Marco Polo's travels. The book included Polo's personal remembrances as well as stories related to him by others.

In his book, which was translated into many languages, Polo left a wealth of information. The information contained in his maps has proved remarkably accurate when tested by modern methods. His observations about customs and local characteristics have also been proven true by research.

For More Information

Collis, Maurice. *Marco Polo*. London: Faber and Faber, 1950.

Larner, John. *Marco Polo and the Discovery of the World*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1999.

Latham, Ronald. *The Travels of Marco Polo*. Middlesex, England: Penguin Books, 1958.

Steffoff, Rebecca. *Marco Polo and the Medieval Explorers*. New York: Chelsea House Publishers, 1992.

JUAN PONCE DE LEÓN

Born: c. 1460

San Servas, Spain

Died: July 1521

Havana, Cuba

Spanish explorer and conqueror

The Spanish conqueror and explorer Juan Ponce de León conquered the island of Puerto Rico and explored the coastline of Florida, which he claimed for the Spanish crown.

Early life

Juan Ponce de León was born in San Servas, Spain. Although born into a noble family, he was poor, and like many in similar situations, he sought fame and fortune as a soldier. He received an education in fighting skills, manners, and religion while serving a knight named Pedro Nunez de Guzman, and later helped in the ten-year conquest of the Muslim kingdom of Granada in southern Spain.

Afterward, Ponce de León heard stories of Christopher Columbus's (c. 1451–1506) discovery of a new world and volunteered to go along on a return trip. In September 1493 he was one of twelve hundred men who set out for the island of Hispaniola (modern Dominican Republic and Haiti). Ponce de León survived disease, bad weather, and a shortage of food and drink to help colonize the new lands by forcing the Indians into slavery.

Conquering and governing

Ponce de León spent most of the early 1500s in Hispaniola, establishing farms, dis-

tributing land rights, helping construct buildings to aid in defense, and working to set up an island economy (system of production, distribution, and use of goods and services). He also married and fathered four children. He was named deputy governor of Hispaniola by Governor Nicolas de Ovando after helping put down an Indian uprising in the eastern province of the island in 1504.

The Indians told Ponce de León that he would find gold on a neighboring island to the east, called Boriquien (Puerto Rico). Four years later he crossed over and conquered the island. During the conquest he shared the honors with a famous greyhound dog named Bercerillo. It was said that the Indians were more afraid of ten Spaniards with the dog than one hundred without him. Ponce de León was appointed governor of Puerto Rico by King Ferdinand of Spain (1452–1516). The island became popular with other settlers because it was well run by Ponce de León and it had a large number of slaves and many natural resources. Ponce de León was also noted for his nonviolent treatment of the Indians, which was rare for the time.

Stripped of his title as governor by King Ferdinand in 1512 after a political conflict, Ponce de León obtained permission from the king to discover and settle the island of Bimini, which was believed to lie somewhere to the northwest. He was also interested in locating a famous body of water that was said to have the power to restore youth to the aged. This myth, repeated to Ponce de León by the Indians, was of European origin. According to the legend, the spring was in the Garden of Eden, which was located somewhere in Asia (the early Spaniards believed America to be Asia).



Juan Ponce de León.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Important discoveries

In March 1513 Ponce de León sailed from Puerto Rico and a month later anchored near the mouth of the St. Johns River on the northeast coast of Florida. Impressed with its many beautiful flowers, and having landed on Easter day, he named the land Florida, from the Spanish *Pascua florida*, or “flowery Easter.” While traveling southward he encountered the strong current of the Gulf Stream as it poured through a channel. He had discovered the Bahama Channel, which later became the route of the treasure ships on their return voyage to Spain. He continued exploring the East Coast and then sailed up the Gulf Coast to

Pensacola Bay. During his return voyage to Puerto Rico he sighted several small islands crowded with tortoises and named the islands the Tortugas, or “tortoises.”

In 1514 Ponce de León returned to Spain where he received another grant, to establish colonies in the “Island of Florida” at his own expense. In February 1521 the colonizing expedition landed on the Florida coast near Charlotte Harbor. A fierce attack by Native Americans caused the settlement to be left abandoned. Ponce de León, wounded in the battle, died a few days after returning to Cuba. He was buried in Puerto Rico; the words on his gravestone read, “Here rest the bones of a valiant LION [León], mightier in deeds than in name.”

For More Information

Dolan, Sean. *Juan Ponce de León*. New York: Chelsea House, 1995.

Fuson, Robert Henderson. *Juan Ponce de León and the Spanish Discovery of Puerto Rico and Florida*. Blacksburg, VA: McDonald & Woodward Publishing Company, 2000.

ALEXANDER POPE

Born: May 21, 1688

London, England

Died: May 30, 1744

London, England

English poet

The English poet Alexander Pope is regarded as one of the finest poets and satirists (people who use wit or sarcasm to point out and devalue sin or silliness) of the Augustan (mid-seventeenth to mid-eighteenth century English literature) period and one of the major influences on English literature in this time and after.

Early years

Alexander Pope was born on May 21, 1688, in London, England, to Alexander and Edith Pope. His Roman Catholic father was a linen merchant. His family moved out of London and settled in Binfield in Windsor Forest around 1700. Pope had little formal schooling. He educated himself through extensive studying and reading, especially poetry.

Although Pope was healthy and plump in his infancy, he became severely ill later in his childhood, which resulted in a slightly disfigured body—he never grew taller than 4 feet 6 inches. He suffered from curvature of the spine, which required him to wear a stiff canvas brace. He had constant headaches. His physical appearance, frequently ridiculed by his enemies, undoubtedly gave an edge to Pope's satire (humor aimed at human weaknesses), but he was always warmhearted and generous in his affection for his many friends.

Early poems

Pope was precocious (showed the characteristics of an older person at a young age) as a child and attracted the notice of a noted bookseller who published his *Pastorals* (1709). By this time Pope was already at



Alexander Pope.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

work on his more ambitious *Essay on Criticism* (1711) designed to create a rebirth of the contemporary literary scene.

The Rape of the Lock (1712) immediately made Pope famous as a poet. It was a long humorous poem in the classical style (likeness to ancient Greek and Roman writing). Instead of treating the subject of heroic deeds, though, the poem was about the attempt of a young man to get a lock of hair from his beloved's head. It was based on a true event that happened to people he knew. Several other poems were published by 1717, the date of the first collected edition of Pope's works.

Translations of Homer

Pope also engaged in poetic imitations and translations. His *Messiah* (1712) was an imitation of Virgil (70–19 B.C.E.). He also did a version of Geoffrey Chaucer's (1342–1400) poetry in the English of Pope's day. But it was Pope's versions of Homer (c. 700 B.C.E.) that were his greatest achievement as a translator.

Pope undertook the translation of Homer's *Iliad* because he needed money. The interest earned from his father's annuities (money from investments) had dropped sharply. The translation occupied him until 1720. It was a great financial success, making Pope independent of the customary forms of literary patronage (support from wealthy people), and it was highly praised by critics.

From the time parts of *Iliad* began to appear, Pope became the victim of numerous pamphlet attacks on his person, politics, and religion. In 1716 an increased land tax on Roman Catholics forced the Popes to sell their place at Binfield and to settle at Chiswick. The next year Pope's father died, and in 1719 the poet's increased wealth enabled him to move with his mother to Twickenham.

From 1725 to 1726 Pope was engaged in a version of *Odyssey*. He worked with two other translators, William Broome and Elijah Fenton. They completed half of the translation between them. It was Pope's name, however, that sold the work, and he naturally received the lion's share (biggest part) of the profits.

Editorial work

Pope also undertook several editorial projects. Parnell's *Poems* (1721) was followed by an edition of the late Duke of Bucking-

ham's *Works* (1723). Then, in 1725, Pope's six volumes on the works of William Shakespeare (1564–1616) were published. Pope's edits and explanatory notes were notoriously capricious (impulsive and not scholarly). His edition was attacked by Lewis Theobald in *Shakespeare Restored* (1726), a work that revealed a superior knowledge of editorial technique. This upset Pope, who then made Theobald the original hero of *Dunciad*.

The Dunciad

In 1726 and 1727 the writer Jonathan Swift (1667–1745) was in England and a guest of Pope. Together they published three volumes of poetry. Renewed contact with Swift must have given a driving force to Pope's poem on "Dulness," which appeared as the three-book *Dunciad* (1728). Theobald was the prime dunce, and the next year the poem was enlarged by a burlesque (broad comedy) on commentators and textual critics.

Clearly Pope used *Dunciad* as personal satire to pay off many old scores. But it was also prompted by his distaste for that whole process by which worthless writers gained undeserved literary prominence (fame). The parody (comic imitation) of the classical epic (heroic poem) was accompanied by further mock-heroic elements, including the intervention of a goddess, the epic games of the second book, and the visit to the underworld and the vision of future "glories." Indeed, despite its devastating satire, *Dunciad* was essentially a phantasmagoric (created by the imagination) treatment by a great comic genius. In 1742 Pope published a fourth book to *Dunciad* separately, and his last published work was the four-volume *Dunciad* in 1743.

An Essay on Man

Pope's friendship with the former statesman Henry St. John Bolingbroke, who had settled a few miles from Twickenham, stimulated his interest in philosophy and led to the composition of *An Essay on Man*. Some ideas expressed in it were probably suggested by Bolingbroke. For example, the notion that earthly happiness is enough to justify the ways of God to man was consistent with Bolingbroke's thinking.

In essence, the *Essay* is not philosophy (the study of knowledge) but a poet's belief of unity despite differences, of an order embracing the whole multifaceted (many-sided) creation. Pope's sources were ideas that had a long history in Western thought. The most central of these was the doctrine of plenitude, which Pope expressed through the metaphors (a figure of speech in which words or phrases are used to find similarities in things that are not comparable) of a "chain" or "scale" of being. He also asserted that the discordant (not harmonious) parts of life are bound harmoniously together.

Later years

Pope wrote *Imitations of Horace* from 1733 to 1738. (Horace was a Roman poet who lived from 65 to 8 B.C.E.) He also wrote many "epistles" (letters to friends) and defenses of his use of personal and political satire. As Pope grew older he became more ill. He described his life as a "long disease," and asthma increased his sufferings in his later years. At times during the last month of his life he became delirious. Pope died on May 30, 1744, and was buried in Twickenham Church.

Alexander Pope used language with genuine inventiveness. His qualities of imagination are seen in the originality with which he handled traditional forms, in his satiric vision of the contemporary world, and in his inspired use of classical models.

For More Information

Mack, Maynard. *Alexander Pope: A Life*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1985.

Quennell, Peter. *Alexander Pope: The Education of Genius, 1688–1728*. New York: Stein and Day, 1968.

Russo, John Paul. *Alexander Pope; Tradition and Identity*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1972.

COLE PORTER

Born: June 9, 1891

Peru, Indiana

Died: October 15, 1964

Santa Monica, California

American composer

American composer Cole Porter wrote songs—both words and music—for more than thirty stage and film musicals. His best work set standards of sophistication (appealing to good taste) and wit seldom matched in the popular musical theater.

Early life and education

Cole Albert Porter was born in Peru, Indiana, on June 9, 1891, the son of a phar-



Cole Porter.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

macist. His mother was determined that her only son become a creative artist, while his wealthy Midwestern pioneer (someone who settles new land) grandfather was determined that he enter business or farming. Cole's mother's influence proved stronger, and Porter received considerable musical training as a child. He began playing violin and piano at age six. He learned circus acrobatics watching the Hagenbeck and Wallace circus, which spent its winters nearby. By 1901 he had composed a one-song "operetta" (a short opera) entitled *The Song of the Birds*, and a piano piece, "The Bobolink Waltz," which his mother published in Chicago, Illinois.

Porter attended Worcester Academy in Massachusetts, where he composed the class song of 1909. At Yale (1909–1913) he wrote music and collaborated (worked with others) on lyrics for the scores of several amateur shows presented by his fraternity (social club at colleges and universities) and the Yale Dramatic Association.

Porter then entered Harvard Law School. Almost at once, however, he changed his course of study to music. Before leaving Harvard he collaborated on a comic operetta, *See America First* (1916), which became his first show produced on Broadway. It was a complete disaster.

Becomes a success

In 1917 Porter was in France, and for some months during 1918 and 1919 he served in the French Foreign Legion. After this he studied composition (music writing) briefly with the composer Vincent d'Indy in Paris, France. Returning to New York, he contributed songs to the Broadway production *Hitchy-Koo* of 1919, his first success. Also in 1919 he married the wealthy socialite (someone who keeps company with well-respected people) Linda Lee Thomas. The Porters began a lifetime of traveling on a grand scale and became famous for their lavish parties and the circle of celebrities in which they moved.

Porter contributed songs to various stage shows and films and in 1923 composed a ballet, *Within the Quota*, which was performed in Paris and New York. Songs such as "Let's Do It" (1928), "What Is This Thing Called Love" (1929), "You Do Something to Me" (1929), and "Love for Sale" (1930) established him as a creator of worldly, witty, occa-

sionally risqué (off-color) lyrics with unusual melodic lines to match.

In the 1930s and 1940s Porter provided full scores for a number of bright Broadway and Hollywood productions, among them *Anything Goes* (1934), *Jubilee* (1935), *Rosalie* (1937), *Panama Hattie* (1940), and *Kiss Me Kate* (1948). These scores and others of the period abound with his characteristic songs: "Night and Day," "I Get a Kick out of You," "You're the Top," "Anything Goes," "Begin the Beguine," "Just One of Those Things," "Don't Fence Me In," "In the Still of the Night," and "So in Love."

Later years

Serious injuries from a riding accident in 1937 plagued Porter for the remainder of his life. A series of operations led to the amputation (cutting off) of his right leg in 1958. In his last years he produced one big Broadway success (*Can-Can*; 1953). Cole Porter died on October 15, 1964, in Santa Monica, California.

Porter's songs show an elegance of expression (wording) and a cool detachment that are a perfect example of the kind of sophistication unique to the 1930s. He was also a truly talented creator of original melodies. Like George Gershwin (1898–1937), he frequently disregarded the accepted formulas of the conventional popular song and turned out pieces of charm and distinction.

For More Information

Citron, Stephen. *Noel and Cole: The Sophisticates*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1993.

Grafton, David. *Red, Hot & Rich!: An Oral History of Cole Porter*. New York: Stein and Day, 1987.

Howard, Jean. *Travels with Cole Porter*. New York: Abrams, 1991.

McBrien, William. *Cole Porter: A Biography*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1998.

KATHERINE ANNE PORTER

Born: May 15, 1890

Indian Creek, Texas

Died: September 18, 1980

Silver Spring, Maryland

American author

American writer Katherine Anne Porter, winner of a Pulitzer Prize in 1966, was known for her delicate observations and precise descriptions.

Early life

Katherine Anne Porter was born on May 15, 1890, in Indian Creek, Texas, the fourth of five children of Harrison Boone Porter and Mary Alice Jones. She was a descendant of Jonathan Boone, brother of the famous explorer Daniel Boone (1734–1820), and her father, a farmer, was a second cousin of the writer O. Henry (Sidney Porter) (1862–1910). After her mother died in 1892, Porter and her siblings went to live with their grandmother. After her grandmother died in 1901, Porter was sent to several convent (an establishment of nuns) schools in Texas and Louisiana. In



Katherine Ann Porter.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

1906 Porter ran away from school and got married; she was divorced three years later. In 1914 she went to Chicago, Illinois, to pursue an acting career. She returned to Texas later that year and worked briefly as a singer.

From early childhood Porter had been writing stories, an activity she described as the passion of her life. In 1917 she joined the staff of the *Critic*, a Fort Worth, Texas, weekly newspaper, and in 1918 and 1919 she worked for the *Rocky Mountain News* in Denver, Colorado, writing mostly book reviews and political articles. She then moved to New York City, where she continued to write. During the 1920s she traveled often to Mexico,

wrote articles about the country, and studied art. She also worked on a biography of minister and author Cotton Mather (1663–1728) and wrote some book reviews.

Published works

Porter's first volume of stories, *Flowering Judas* (1930), impressed critics, although it did not sell very well. It won a Guggenheim fellowship (an award with a cash prize intended to be used for study or research) that allowed her to study abroad, and after a brief stay in Mexico she sailed in 1932 to Bremerhaven, Germany (which provided the setting for her only novel, *Ship of Fools*). A second volume of stories, *Hacienda* (1934), and a short novel, *Noon Wine* (1937), followed her marriage in 1933 to Eugene Pressly, a member of the U.S. Foreign Service in Paris, France. After divorcing Pressly, she married Albert Russell Erskine Jr., whom she divorced in 1942.

Pale Horse, Pale Rider (1942) consists of three short novels, including *Noon Wine*. The title work is a bitter, tragic tale of a young woman's love for a soldier who dies of influenza (the flu). The title story of *The Leaning Tower and Other Stories* (1944), set in Berlin, Germany, deals with the menace of Nazism (a German political movement that scorned democracy and attempted to wipe out other races of people, such as the Jews, who were considered inferior to the Germans). *The Days Before* (1952) is a collection of essays. *Ship of Fools* (1962) was a best seller but drew mixed reviews. Based on Sebastian Brant's (c. 1458–1521) fifteenth-century novel *Das Narrenschiff*, it examines the lives of an international group of voyagers, whose human folly alters their personal lives and blinds them to the growth of Nazism.

Porter was for many years more popular everywhere else in the country but her home state of Texas, where stories of cowboys and the old west were more popular than anything else. Her unhappiness with the social injustice and lack of rights for women in the state was one of the factors that led her to leave, and she often addressed these issues in her writings. Still, Porter came to be considered the best author who ever hailed from Texas. She won a Texas Institute of Letters fiction award for *Ship of Fools* and a Pulitzer Prize for her *Collected Stories* in 1966.

Later years

Porter chose the University of Maryland, from which she had received a honorary degree (a degree achieved without meeting the usual requirements) in 1966, as the site of her personal library, begun with donations of some personal papers. In Texas, her childhood home in Kyle was turned into a museum. In addition, the Southwestern Writers Collection at Southwest Texas State University contains her typewritten recipe for a “genuine Mole Poblana,” Mexico’s “National Dish,” she wrote, with chili and chocolate (*Texas Monthly*, January 1997). Apparently learned during two years living in Mexico, it was a tribute to her exciting life after her abandonment of her early, strict religious upbringing.

Katherine Anne Porter died on September 18, 1980, in Silver Spring, Maryland. Her ashes were buried at Indian Creek beside her mother’s grave. However, her writing continued to live on. The *Letters of Katherine Anne Porter* were published after her death.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Katherine Anne Porter*. Broomall, PA: Chelsea House, 2001.

Busby, Mark, and Dick Heaberlin, eds. *From Texas to the World and Back: Essays on the Journeys of Katherine Anne Porter*. Fort Worth: Texas Christian University Press, 2001.

Givner, Joan. *Katherine Anne Porter: A Life*. Rev. ed. Athens: University of Georgia Press, 1991.

Hendrick, George. *Katherine Anne Porter*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1965.

EMILY POST

Born: October 3, 1873

Baltimore, Maryland

Died: September 25, 1960

New York, New York

American author

For many years a leading authority on socially correct behavior, Emily Post provided solutions to social problems. With a name that became linked with proper manners in the minds of many, she was a successful author, newspaper columnist, and radio broadcaster.

Privileged childhood

Born into a wealthy family in Baltimore, Maryland, Emily Price’s birth date is variously reported as October 3, 27, or 30, 1873. She was the only child of Bruce Price, an architect, and Josephine Lee Price. Growing up in an era of servants and chaperones (older people who accompany younger peo-



Emily Post.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

ple to social gatherings to make sure they behave), Emily was educated at home and attended a finishing school (a school that prepares girls for social life) in New York, New York, where her family had moved. She also traveled to Canada, France, and Italy with her father, often going with him to check on the progress of the buildings he had designed. She married Edwin Main Post, a banker, in 1892, and they had two sons.

Begins writing

Emily Post and her husband drifted apart, and his cheating caused the marriage to end in a divorce in 1905. She asked for no

money from him since he had lost almost everything in a stock market crash. To add to her small income and support herself and her sons, Post began writing short stories that were published in the popular fiction magazines *Ainslie's* and *Everybody's*. She also produced wrote several novels. The first, *The Flight of a Moth* (1904), was about a young American widow attracted to a crooked Russian nobleman.

As a successful writer and a woman of social position, Post was encouraged by an editor at the Funk and Wagnalls publishing company to write a book on etiquette (proper social behavior). *Etiquette—The Blue Book of Social Usage*, first published in 1922, quickly became a best-seller, bringing her fame and fortune.

Etiquette expert

Post's guiding belief was that good manners began with consideration for the feelings of others and included good form in speech, knowledge of proper social graces, and charm. She believed that the best way to do almost anything was the way that pleased the greatest number of people and offended the fewest. Before her book had been out a month, readers bombarded her with questions the book had not addressed, and these formed the basis of later versions of the book.

Etiquette was originally written for the newly rich who wanted to live, entertain, and speak like the wealthy. The focus of later versions of the book, however, was the character of "Mrs. Three-In-One," a wonder woman who acted as cook, waitress, and charming hostess at small dinner parties. Post also started a column of questions and answers that

appeared in 150 newspapers and received as many as twenty-six thousand letters a year at her New York office and more at newspapers in other cities. During the 1930s she appeared three times a week on her own radio program, which continued for eight years.

Although Post's advice on social behavior changed over the years, even in later versions of the book she refused to give up the idea of the chaperone. She also maintained an earlier belief that it was improper for a woman to visit a man alone in his apartment or to go on overnight automobile trips. Her "Blue Book," which was the American standard of etiquette for years, was reported to be second only to the Bible as the book most often stolen from libraries.

Later years

Emily Post maintained her social position, traveled in Europe, and always spent the summer months away from New York City at a home in Tuxedo Park, New York (designed and built by her father), and later in life at Edgartown, Martha's Vineyard, Massachusetts. She wrote other books besides her writings on etiquette, including: *The Emily Post Cook Book* (1951); *The Personality of a House* (1930), partly based on her experiences rebuilding and remodeling her summer home at Martha's Vineyard; and *Children Are People* (1940), much of which came from hours time she spent with her grandson. In 1946 she formed the Emily Post Institute, headed by her son Edwin, to study problems the issues of gracious living.

Emily Post remained active throughout her life, awakening early, but remaining in bed to devote time to letters and her daily column. She always made her first appear-

ance of the day at lunch, which was served promptly at one o'clock. The expert on American etiquette, whose name became a household word, died in her New York apartment on September 25, 1960, at the age of eighty-six.

For More Information

Cate, James. "Keeping Posted." *University of Chicago Magazine* (May/June 1972).

Dolson, Hildegarde. "Ask Mrs. Post." *Reader's Digest* (April 1941).

Post, Peggy. *Emily Post's Etiquette*. 16th edition. New York: HarperCollins, 1997.

COLIN POWELL

Born: April 5, 1937

New York, New York

*African American soldier, military official,
and secretary of state*

During Colin Powell's long and impressive military and government career, he has served in some of the country's highest positions, including chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. When President George W. Bush (1946–) chose Powell for the job of secretary of state, he became the first African American to ever serve in this position.

A young soldier

Colin Luther Powell was born in the Harlem neighborhood of New York, New



Colin Powell.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

York, on April 5, 1937. His parents were immigrants from Jamaica. He spent most of his childhood in the South Bronx neighborhood of New York City, which was then regarded as a step up from Harlem. The neighborhood included white, African American, and Puerto Rican residents. Powell has said that he never thought of himself as a “minority” while a child.

Despite his parents’ urgings that he should “strive for a good education” in order to “make something” of his life, Powell remained an ordinary student throughout high school. At City College of New York, however, Powell discovered his leadership

skills after joining the army’s Reserve Officers’ Training Corps (ROTC). He graduated from the program in 1958 and was made a second lieutenant (an army officer who is below all other officers) in the U.S. Army. He was then assigned to duty in West Germany. In 1962 he met and married Alma Vivian Johnson, with whom he eventually had three children.

Powell’s next overseas assignment was in South Vietnam. At the time the United States was involved in the Vietnam War (1955–75; a civil war in which anti-Communist forces in South Vietnam, supported by the United States, were fighting against a takeover by Communist forces in North Vietnam). During his first tour of duty in Vietnam (1962–63), Powell was wounded in action. He returned for a second tour (1968–69) and received the Soldier’s Medal for pulling several men from a burning helicopter.

Working in Washington

After his second tour in Vietnam, Powell returned to the United States and studied for a master’s degree in business administration at George Washington University in Washington, D.C. He received the degree in 1971, then went to work at the Pentagon, the headquarters of the U.S. Department of Defense and military services. He then moved on to a position in the Office of Management and Budget under the director, Caspar Weinberger (1917–), and his deputy, Frank Carlucci (1930–). These two men were to have a major influence on Powell’s career.

In the late 1970s, Powell attained the rank of major general (an army officer who is above a brigadier general) and held positions in the Pentagon and Department of Energy. In 1983 he became a military assistant to

Weinberger, who was then the secretary of defense under President Ronald Reagan (1911–). While Powell was assisting Weinberger, his advice was sought by the National Security Council (NSC), the agency within the executive branch that advises the president on affairs relating to national security. The NSC wanted to make a secret sale of weapons to Iran in the belief that it would help to free American hostages that were being held in Lebanon by terrorist groups supporting Iran. Powell advised the NSC that the sale was illegal. His opposition helped to establish a reputation for having strong moral character that later served him well and that kept him from being harmed when the NSC's illegal arms deal was eventually exposed.

In 1986 Powell was asked by President Reagan to become Frank Carlucci's deputy on the NSC. He replaced Carlucci as national security adviser (head of the NSC) in 1987 and held the post for the rest of the Reagan administration. Arms control and attempts to overthrow the socialist government of Nicaragua were high priorities for Powell and other policy-makers during this period.

Heading the Joint Chiefs of Staff

When President-elect George Bush (1924–) told Powell that he wished to name a new national security adviser, Powell could have chosen to leave the army to earn a substantial income giving lectures or consulting in the business world. However, Powell did not retire. Instead, having been promoted to full general (an army officer who is above a lieutenant general), he took over the army's Forces Command. In this position he was responsible for overseeing the readiness of over a million regular, reserve, and National

Guard personnel in the United States. Powell took on more responsibility when he was nominated by President Bush in 1989 to become chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff (JCS; the group that is responsible for giving military information and advice to the president, the secretary of defense, and the National Security Council). Powell was the first black officer to hold this post.

As chairman of the JCS, Powell played a key role in the December 1989 American military invasion of Panama to unseat that country's military leader, Manuel Noriega (1938–). Earlier in 1989, Noriega, who had been in control of the Panamanian government since 1983, had cancelled presidential elections. Noriega was also involved in the buying and selling of illegal drugs and other unlawful activities. The U.S. government overthrew Noriega in an effort to bring the leader to the United States to be tried on drug charges, to protect Americans, and to give the Panamanian people back their freedom. Television appearances in which Powell explained the purpose of the operation brought him to the favorable attention of the American public.

Powell was also highly visible during Operation Desert Shield. This was a joint effort by the United States and several other nations to pressure Saddam Hussein (1937–), the president of the Middle Eastern nation Iraq, into removing his forces from the neighboring country of Kuwait. Iraq had occupied Kuwait in August 1990. It soon became apparent that this operation, unlike the one in Panama, would take months to decide and involved the risk of high casualties (deaths of soldiers) if war broke out between the Iraqis and the international forces.

Operation Desert Shield turned into Operation Desert Storm on January 16, 1991, beginning the six-week conflict that was known as the Persian Gulf War. Powell again demonstrated his leadership during this time, and the Iraqi army was swiftly crushed. For his part in this war, Powell was awarded a Congressional gold medal.

Secretary of State

After Powell retired from the military in 1993, he was often mentioned as a potential candidate for president. While many hoped that he would run for president in 1996, he announced in 1995 that he would not do so. Instead, Powell supported George W. Bush in the campaign that led to Bush's election in 2000. On December 16, 2000, Bush announced that he would name Powell as his secretary of state, the nation's top foreign policy position. Powell was the first African American named to this post.

On September 11, 2001, anti-American terrorists crashed jet planes into the Pentagon and into the two towers of the World Trade Center in New York City. The attack killed thousands and led Bush to declare that the United States would pursue a "war on terrorism." The Bush administration's efforts concentrated initially on targets in Afghanistan, and Powell's greatest challenge was to build support for the American "war" among Arab and Muslim governments. As the effort to stamp out terrorism continued, Powell was perceived as a force for moderation in the Bush government, pushing for the building of alliances and for restraint when others argued for more aggressive military action.

For More Information

- Banta, Melissa. *Colin Powell*. New York: Chelsea House, 1995.
- Finlayson, Reggie. *Colin Powell*. Minneapolis: Lerner Publications, 1997.
- Hughes, Libby. *Colin Powell: A Man of Quality*. Parsippany, NJ: Dillon Press, 1996.
- Powell, Colin L., with Joseph E. Persico. *My American Journey*. New York: Random House, 1995.
- Schraff, Anne. *Colin Powell: Soldier and Patriot*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.
- Wheeler, Jill C. *Colin Powell*. Edina, MN: Abdo Pub., 2002.

DITH PRAN

Born: September 27, 1942

Siem Reap, Cambodia

Cambodian journalist, photographer, and activist

Dith Pran was a Cambodian journalist who suffered four years of abusive treatment after the Communist Khmer Rouge forces took over his country in 1975. Pran eventually escaped and became a crusader for justice in Cambodia. His story was portrayed in the 1984 movie *The Killing Fields*.

Early years

Dith Pran was born on September 27, 1942, in the town of Siem Reap, Cambodia. At that time, the Japanese army occupied

Cambodia, which belonged to French Indochina, but Pran's home was far from the center of power. Pran grew up in a middle-class family near the ruins of ancient temples called Angkor Wat with his two sisters and three brothers. His father, Dith Proeung, was a public-works official who supervised the building of roads. Pran attended local schools, where he learned French. He learned English on his own, and after finishing high school in 1960, he went to work as an interpreter (a person who translates from one language into another) for the U.S. Military Assistance Command in Cambodia.

The war next door

After World War II (1939–45) Communist rebels in neighboring Vietnam fought against French attempts to take over their country. (Communists believe in revolution to achieve a society in which the means of production—land, factories, and mines—are owned by the people as a whole rather than by individuals.) The Communists drove the French forces out, gained control over North Vietnam, and began fighting anti-Communist forces in the south, which were supported by the United States. Although Cambodia remained fairly peaceful, Vietnamese troops from both sides began using the country as a place of refuge. In 1965 Cambodia's government ended its relations with the United States, charging that U.S. troops had entered the country's borders to pursue their enemies.

After the U.S. withdrawal, Pran found work with a British film crew and at a hotel near Angkor Wat. In 1970 a U.S.-backed leader, Lon Nol, seized power in the Cambodian capital of Phnom Penh. War broke out between Lon Nol's forces and those of the



Dith Pran.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Khmer Rouge, or “Red Cambodians,” another Communist group. The Khmer Rouge wanted Cambodia to return to farming to meet its citizens' needs and to destroy anything linked to the West. Pran moved his family to Phnom Penh and was hired as a guide and interpreter for *New York Times* reporters in the area, including Sydney Schanberg, who had come to Phnom Penh in 1972. The two became close friends, and by 1973 Pran worked only with Schanberg.

As the war continued, the Khmer Rouge seemed to become stronger. Meanwhile the United States had pulled its troops out of Vietnam, which was then overtaken by Com-

munist forces. In April 1975 American personnel left Phnom Penh as well. Knowing that the Khmer Rouge was about to win, thousands of Cambodians scrambled to escape. Pran helped his wife and their four children escape on a U.S. military truck, but he stayed to help Schanberg report the story of the Khmer Rouge takeover. Both men hoped that with the takeover complete, things would eventually calm down. But the Khmer Rouge soldiers entering the city soon displayed their true intentions.

“Year Zero” begins

What followed were attacks on shops, looting, and killings. Soldiers opened fire on people in the streets. Many were slaughtered in these first attacks, and many more were killed as almost three million Cambodians were forced out of the city. Pran, Schanberg, and two other reporters went to a hospital to see how many were dead or injured and were met by a group of armed Khmer Rouge soldiers. Pran talked the soldiers out of killing Schanberg and the others, saving their lives. Schanberg soon returned to the United States, where he looked after Pran’s wife and children in New York, New York.

Pran, meanwhile, was stuck in the new Cambodia, or “Kampuchéa” as the Khmer Rouge had renamed it. He dressed like a peasant and pretended to be a simple villager. It was a wise decision. The Khmer Rouge had orders to execute anyone who wore eyeglasses, perfume, makeup, watches, or other evidence of Western influence. As a symbol of the fact that Cambodia was starting over, 1975 was referred to as “Year Zero.” Pran made his way to a village twenty miles from Siem Reap, where he and other villagers were

forced to harvest rice while receiving political instruction at night. The workers were allowed to eat just one spoonful of rice per day. Pran and the other starving villagers ate anything they could find: bark, snakes, snails, rats, and even the flesh of dead bodies. One night Pran dared to sneak out to try to eat some raw rice. For this the guards ordered his fellow villagers to beat him and leave him outside in a rainstorm.

Nearly two million Cambodians were killed by the Khmer Rouge, but the rest of the world remained silent. Having withdrawn from Southeast Asia, the United States had turned its attention to other issues, and there were few protests of the Khmer Rouge killings. But Sydney Schanberg did not forget. He had received a Pulitzer Prize in 1976 for his Cambodia reporting, and he continued to search for his friend Pran. In January 1979, the Vietnamese invaded Cambodia and finally overthrew the Khmer Rouge. Pran returned to his hometown and found that over fifty members of his family had been killed. Wells were filled with skulls and bones, and the land was covered with graves. Nicknamed “killing fields,” these were distinguished from the nearby ground by the fact that the grass was greenest over them.

Death and life

The Vietnamese made Pran a village administrative chief. When a group of Eastern European reporters visited, he managed to get a message to Schanberg through a member of the East German media. But once the Vietnamese learned that Pran had been a reporter, he decided to escape before they could question him. In July 1979 Pran and

ELVIS PRESLEY

several others set out on a sixty-mile journey past land mines and the forces of the Vietnamese and Khmer Rouge. He arrived at the Thai border and entered a refugee camp there in October. He asked an American relief officer to contact Schanberg, who met him a week later. Schanberg helped Pran move to the United States, where he was reunited with his family. *The New York Times* gave him a job as a reporter, and Pran became a U.S. citizen in 1986.

Pran began to devote his spare time to helping fellow Cambodians who had suffered under the Khmer Rouge. He took several trips back to Cambodia and attempted to bring the Khmer Rouge to justice before the World Court. He and his wife operate the Dith Pran Holocaust Awareness Project, which maintains a photographic record on the Internet to assist Cambodians in finding missing family members. Pran interviewed twenty-nine people who had suffered during the takeover and published the results in 1997 as *Children of Cambodia's Killing Fields: Memoirs by Survivors*. For Pran, the ghosts of Cambodia remain, and the memories are "Still alive to me day and night," he said in an online interview at *The Site*. "It's unbelievable what [the Khmer Rouge] did to the Cambodian people."

For More Information

Pran, Dith. *Children of Cambodia's Killing Fields: Memoirs by Survivors*. Edited by Kim DePaul. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1997.

Schanberg, Sydney H. *The Death and Life of Dith Pran*. New York: Viking, 1985.

Born: August 8, 1935

Tupelo, Mississippi

Died: August 16, 1977

Memphis, Tennessee

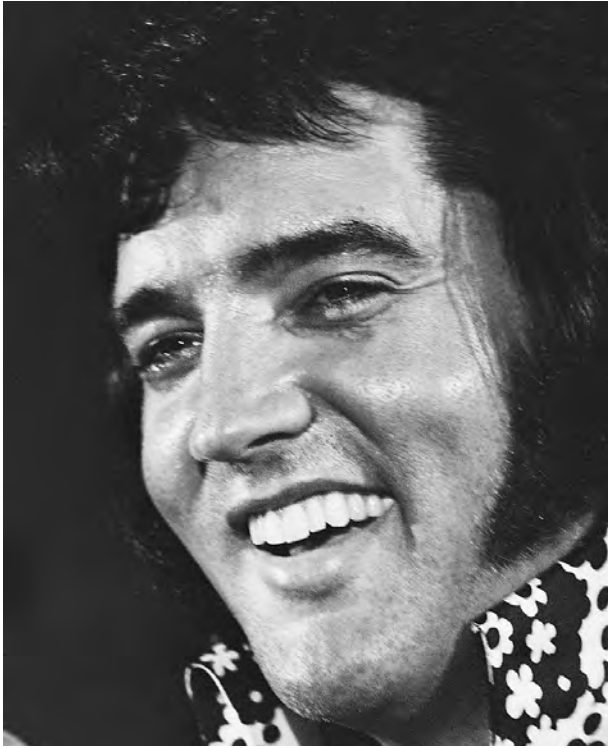
American singer

Elvis Presley, the "King of Rock 'n' Roll," was the leading American singer for two decades and the most popular singer of the entire early rock 'n' roll era.

Young Elvis and Sun Records

Elvis Aron Presley was born in Tupelo, Mississippi, on January 8, 1935, to Gladys and Vernon Presley. His twin brother, Jesse Garon Presley, died shortly after birth. His father worked as a carpenter, farmer, and factory worker to support the family but was not successful in any of his jobs. Raised in a poor and religious environment, Elvis grew especially close to his mother. Elvis's singing ability was discovered when he was an elementary school student in Tupelo, and he first started singing with the choir of his local church. He received his first guitar as a birthday present when he was about twelve and taught himself how to play, although he could not read music. He went on to participate in numerous talent contests in Tupelo and in Memphis, Tennessee, where the family moved when Elvis was thirteen.

In 1953, after Elvis graduated from L. C. Humes High School in Memphis, he began working as a truck driver to pay his way into the Memphis Recording Services studio to



Elvis Presley.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

cut his own records. Less than a year later he recorded “That’s All Right Mama” for Sun Records. It became his first commercial release, selling twenty thousand copies.

The birth of rock ‘n’ roll

Elvis reached the top of the country charts with “Mystery Train” in 1955. His first number one song on the so-called “Hot 100” was “Heartbreak Hotel” (1956), which held that position for seven of the twenty-seven weeks it was on the chart. This song also reached the top of the country charts, and it became a symbol of his ability to combine country singing with rhythm-and-blues, as

well as with the new rage that had grown out of rhythm-and-blues: rock ‘n’ roll. The rest of the 1950s brought Elvis “living legend” status with records that included “Hound Dog” (1956), “Don’t Be Cruel” (1956), “Blue Suede Shoes” (1956), “Love Me Tender” (1956), “All Shook Up” (1957), and “Jailhouse Rock” (1957). He started the 1960s in similar fashion with “It’s Now or Never” (1960) and “Are You Lonesome Tonight?” (1960).

Elvis was universally dubbed the “King of Rock ‘n’ Roll” and led the new music from its beginnings in the 1950s to its peak in the 1960s and on to its permanent place in the music of the 1970s and the 1980s. His impact on American popular culture was tremendous, as he seemed to affect manner of dress, hairstyles, and even behavior. John Lennon (1940–1980) would later note Elvis as one of the most important influences on the Beatles. Even his spinning hip movements became legendary as he continued his rock ‘n’ roll conquest to the extent of 136 gold records (500,000 sold) and 10 platinum records (1 million sold). Ultimately he had the most records to make the rating charts and was the top recording artist for two straight decades, the 1950s and the 1960s.

Elvis in the movies

Elvis was an instant success in television and movies as well. Millions watched his television appearances on *The Steve Allen Show*, *The Milton Berle Show*, *The Toast of the Town*, and a controversial (open to dispute) appearance on the *The Ed Sullivan Show*, in which cameras were instructed to stay above the hips of “Elvis the Pelvis.” He was an even bigger box office smash, beginning with *Love Me Tender* in 1956. Thirty-two movies later, Elvis

had become the top box-office draw for two decades, with ticket sales over \$150 million.

Although few of Elvis's motion pictures were well-received by the critics, they showcased his music and extended his image and fame. His movies included *Jailhouse Rock* (1957), *King Creole* (1958), *G. I. Blues* (1960), *Blue Hawaii* (1961), *Girls! Girls! Girls!* (1962), *Viva Las Vegas* (1964), and *Spinout* (1966). *Wild in the Country* (1961), based on the J. R. Salamanca novel *The Lost Country*, marked his debut in a straight dramatic role.

Controversy

Elvis began a well-publicized stint in the army in 1958. That year, while he was stationed in Fort Hood, Texas, his mother died. The remainder of his military service was spent stationed in Germany, until his discharge (release) in 1960. It was in Germany that he met Priscilla Beaulieu (1945–), his future wife.

Elvis's success in the entertainment industry was accompanied by numerous failures in his personal life. He arranged to have Priscilla, still a teenager, live at his new Memphis home, Graceland Mansion, while she finished high school there. He married her in 1967, and she bore him his only child, Lisa Marie Presley, in 1968. In 1973 he and Priscilla were divorced. During this time, and for his entire career, his personal manager, Tom Parker, controlled his finances. As Elvis's millions grew, so too did the mismanagement of Parker, a known gambler. Parker was later prosecuted for his financial dealings, but he was acquitted (proven innocent). Elvis made an estimated \$4.3 billion in earnings during his lifetime, but he never acquired a concept of financial responsibility. This caused fre-

quent legal battles during and after his lifetime among his management people and several record companies. Elvis had similar luck with his friendships, and frequently surrounded himself with a gang of thugs to shield him from an adoring public.

Beginning of the end

A weight problem became evident in the late 1960s, and in private Elvis became increasingly dependent on drugs, particularly amphetamines and sedatives. His personal doctor, George Nichopoulos, would later be prosecuted, but acquitted, for prescribing and dispensing thousands of pills and narcotics (illegal drugs) to him.

Though Elvis's weight and drug dependency were increasing, Elvis continued a steady flow of concert performances in sold-out arenas well into the 1970s. On August 16, 1977, the day before another concert tour was about to begin, Elvis was found dead in Graceland Mansion by his fiancée, Ginger Alden. The official cause of death was heart disease, although information revealed after his death about his drug dependency created a media event. His death caused worldwide scenes of mourning.

Elvis continues to be celebrated as superstar and legend as much in death as he was in life. Graceland Mansion, which he had purchased in 1957 for \$102,500, is the top tourist attraction in Memphis and has attracted millions of visitors from both America and around the world.

Presley became the first-ever inductee into three music halls of fame when it was announced that he would be inducted into the Gospel Music Hall of Fame on November

27, 2001, in Nashville, Tennessee. He was already a member of the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame and Country Hall of Fame.

For More Information

Gordon, Robert. *The Elvis Treasures*. New York: Villard, 2001.

Jenkins, Mary. *Memories Beyond Graceland Gates*. Buena Park, CA: West Coast Publishers, 1989.

Lichter, Paul. *The Boy Who Dared to Rock: The Definitive Elvis*. Garden City, NY: Dolphin Books, 1978.

Parish, James Robert. *The Elvis Presley Scrapbook*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1977.

Sauer, Wendy. *Elvis Presley: A Complete Reference*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland, 1984.

youngest child of a wealthy Jewish family. His father, Jacob, was a respected attorney, as well as an accomplished amateur pianist. Music was an important part of family life, and young André, wanting to participate, asked for lessons. After testing revealed that he had perfect pitch, he was enrolled in the Berlin Conservatory of Music at the age of six. As the threat of World War II (1939–45; a war in which German-led forces were crushed by those led by Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and, later, the United States) loomed, life under Nazi (the National Socialist German Workers' Party, which, under the control of Adolf Hitler [1889–1945], took control of Germany in 1933) rule became increasingly difficult, and in 1938 the family fled to Paris, France. Previn studied at the Paris Conservatory of Music until the family moved to the United States.

Life in Los Angeles, California, was different from life in Berlin and Paris in almost every way possible—from the climate and architecture to the language spoken and career opportunities available. Upon arrival to the United States, none of the family spoke English, including Previn's father, which made practicing law impossible. To make ends meet, he gave music lessons at home—yet nothing stood in the way of young Previn's musical education. He studied piano, theory, and composition from the best instructors available, Joseph Achron and Mario Castelnuovo-Tedesco.

Previn became an American citizen at the age of fourteen, about the same time he became obsessed by the most American of all musical forms—jazz. Previn began splitting time between his classical studies and jazz, and word of his talent spread. As a teenager

ANDRÉ PREVIN

Born: April 6, 1929

Berlin, Germany

German-born American composer, musician, and music director/conductor

German-born American composer André Previn has received acclaim in every musical venue explored during his exceptional career that has spanned more than six decades.

The gift

Born Andreas Ludwig Priwin in Berlin, Germany, on April 6, 1929, Previn was the

Previn practiced piano up to six hours a day. Eager to help his family financially, he quickly followed up when he heard that the movie studio Metro-Goldwyn Mayer (MGM) needed someone to compose a jazz arrangement (a musical score). This led to writing more arrangements, at first sporadically and then more regularly, several times a week after school. Seduced by Hollywood's glamour, he signed a contract with MGM when he turned eighteen. He also made his first recording on the Sunset label while still in his teens.

Virtuoso

Previn's career flourished in the late 1950s and early 1960s with musical hits that he adapted from the theatrical stage for films, and original scores he composed and conducted for other musicals and dramas. He became musical director at MGM, was nominated for sixteen Academy Awards, and won four.

Another part of Previn's musical talent was calling, however. According to his own account in *No Minor Chords, My Days in Hollywood*, he longed to be part of the inner circle of what he regarded as the legitimate world of classical music. Hollywood was not the place to write and perform serious music. In 1965 he began recording with the London Symphony Orchestra, and from 1967 to 1970, he was conductor-in-chief of the Houston Symphony Orchestra.

In 1969, while Previn was married to his second wife Dory Langdon, he began to be seen with actress Mia Farrow, ex-wife of popular singer Frank Sinatra (1915–1998). She gave birth to their twin sons, Matthew and Sascha in early 1970. The scandal resulted in Previn leaving the Houston Symphony Orchestra. Langdon and Previn divorced,



André Previn.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

and he married Farrow shortly thereafter. Due to career conflicts, they divorced in the late 1970s.

The Maestro

Life changed gradually until Previn accepted the appointment of principal conductor with the London Symphony Orchestra in 1969. In London he became a popular personality, appearing frequently on television to talk about music. He also toured throughout Europe and the United States with the London Symphony, and became especially well known for his interpretations of British and Russian symphonic works.

Throughout Previn's active conducting career—with the Pittsburgh Symphony Orchestra (1976–1984), the Los Angeles Philharmonic (1985–1989), and the Royal Philharmonic (music director, 1985–1988; principal conductor, 1988–1991), and as Conductor Laureate of the London Symphony (since 1993)—he continued to compose. Compositions included a *Symphony for Strings*; “Four Outings,” for brass quintet; a piano concerto, commissioned by Vladimir Ashkenzy; a cello sonata, written for Yo-Yo Ma; a song cycle, written for Dame Janet Baker; a music drama, *Every Good Boy Deserves Favour*, written in collaboration with playwright Tom Stoppard; and an opera based on Tennessee Williams's (1911–1983) *A Streetcar Named Desire*, commissioned by the San Francisco Opera in 1998.

In 1982 Previn married Heather Hales and they had one child. In the early 1990s he returned to one of his first loves—jazz. He resumed recording, and formed the Andre Previn Jazz Trio, which toured Japan, North America, and Europe in 1992 and 1993. In 1998 Previn was honored with an award for his career as a conductor and composer at the Kennedy Center Honors ceremony in Washington, D.C.

For More Information

Bookspan, Martin, and Ross Yockey. *André Previn: A Biography*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1981.

Previn, André, with Antony Hopkins. *Music Face to Face*. London: Hamilton, 1971.

Previn, André. *No Minor Chords, My Days in Hollywood*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1991.

Ruttencutter, Helen Drees. *Previn*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1985.

LEONTYNE PRICE

Born: February 10, 1927

Laurel, Mississippi

African American opera singer

Leontyne Price was a prima donna soprano (the lead female singer in an opera) and considered in most many circles as one of the finest opera singers of the twentieth century.

Early life and career

Mary Leontyne Price was born in Laurel, Mississippi, on February 10, 1927. Her parents were especially encouraging in developing their daughter's love of music. As a young girl, Price played piano and sang in her church choir. Nine-year-old Price was especially influenced when she saw American opera singer Marian Anderson (1897–1993) perform in Jackson, Mississippi. She claims this experience as the moment she knew she wanted to be an opera singer.

Educated in public schools in Laurel, Price then attended Central State College in Wilberforce, Ohio, where she received her bachelor of arts degree in 1948. Her particular interest was singing in the glee club at Central State, where she displayed an abundance of musical talent, and she decided to make a career of singing.

After Central State College, Price entered New York's Juilliard School of Music where she studied until 1952. At the same time she took private lessons under Florence Page Kimball. Price was the first African American singer to gain international star-

dom in opera, an art form previously reserved for the upper-class white society. Her success signified not only a monumental stride for her own generation, but for those that came before and after her.

Rising star

While still at Juilliard, Price exhibited her soprano (highest operatic voice) ability at various concerts and in her appearance as Mistress Ford in Giuseppe Verdi's (1813–1901) *Falstaff*. Virgil Thomson took notice of her performance and provided her with her Broadway stage debut in the Broadway revival of his *Four Saints in Three Acts*. Her ability then earned her the role of Bess in George Gershwin's (1898–1937) *Porgy and Bess* in a touring company that met with great successes in London, England; Paris, France; Berlin, Germany; and Moscow, Russia. She also played Bess when the company performed *Porgy and Bess* on Broadway. During the tour she married William Warfield, who sang the role of Porgy. Other composers took note of Price's ability, and in 1953 she sang premieres of works by Henri Sauget, Lou Harrison, John La Montaine, and Igor Stravinsky (188–1971), among others.

Price received overwhelming critical praise for her 1954 Town Hall concert in New York City and followed that with her first performance in grand opera (an opera where all of the text is sung), in 1955, as Floria in Giacomo Puccini's (1858–1924) *Tosca* on network television with the National Broadcasting Company (NBC) Opera. She made her first opera stage appearance in 1957 as Madame Lidoine in Francis Poulenc's *Dialogues of the Carmelites* with the San Francisco Opera Company. Price also toured Italy



Leontyne Price.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

successfully that year and sang *Aida* at La Scala in Milan. She continued to sing with the San Francisco Opera, as well as with the Lyric Opera of Chicago and other major opera houses in North America.

In 1960 Price portrayed Donna Anna in *Don Giovanni* at the Salzburg Festival in Austria. On January 27, 1961, she made her debut in New York's famous Metropolitan Opera as Leonora in *Il Trovatore*, which earned her thunderous applause and moved opera critics to regard her as one of the greats of the twentieth century. She also sang the title role at the Metropolitan Opera in *Madame Butterfly* and the role of Minnie in *La*

Franciulla del West (The Girl of the Golden West). Price appeared in 118 Metropolitan productions between 1961 and 1969. In 1965 she was awarded the Presidential Medal of Freedom by President Lyndon Johnson (1908–1973), who said, “Her singing has brought light to her land.”

One of Price’s greatest triumphs was her creation of the role of Cleopatra in Samuel Barber’s *Antony and Cleopatra*. Its premiere opened the 1966 Metropolitan Opera season as well as the beautiful new Metropolitan Opera House in Lincoln Center. Her best and favorite performances were as Verdi heroines Elvira in *Ernani*, Leonora in *Il Trovatore*, Amelia in *The Masked Ball*, and especially as Aida.

Later career

Price made other worldwide tours that included Australia and Argentina’s Teatro Colon in Buenos Aires in 1969. In the 1970s Price drastically cut the number of opera appearances, preferring to focus instead on her first love, recitals (solo performances), in which she enjoyed the challenge of creating several characters on stage in succession. In 1985, Price gave her final performance at New York’s Lincoln Center in the title role of Verdi’s *Aida*. She was fifty-seven years old.

Price made numerous recordings of music outside of opera and was awarded honorary degrees from Dartmouth College, Howard University, and Fordham University, among others. Music critics universally lavished praise on her voice and her portrayals. Divorced from Warfield in 1972, she lives in her homes in Rome, Italy, and New York.

In October of 2001, Price briefly came out of retirement to give her rendition of

“America the Beautiful” to a capacity crowd at Carnegie Hall. The performance opened a special ceremony dedicated to the memory of those who died in the terrorists attacks of September 11, 2001, when thousands died in New York City after two planes crashed into the World Trade Center.

For More Information

Lyon, Hugh Lee. *Leontyne Price: Highlights of a Prima Donna*. New York: Vantage Press, 1973.

McNair, Joseph D. *Leontyne Price*. Chanhassen, MN: Child’s World, 2001.

Steins, Richard. *Leontyne Price, Opera Superstar*. Woodbridge, CT: Blackbirch Press, 1993.

Woronoff, Kristen. *Leontyne Price*. Woodbridge, CT: Blackbirch Press, 2002.

E. ANNIE PROULX

Born: August 22, 1935

Norwich, Connecticut

American writer

E. Annie Proulx won the 1993 PEN/Faulkner Award for her novel *Postcards* and a Pulitzer Prize in 1994 for her next novel, *The Shipping News*.

Early life and education

Edna Annie Proulx was born on August 22, 1935, in Norwich, Connecticut, the

first of George Napoleon Proulx and Lois Nelly Gill Proulx's five children. Proulx's father was the vice president of a textile company. His family had come to the United States from Quebec, Canada. The family often moved to different places in New England and North Carolina because of her father's job. Her mother, a painter, encouraged her to notice everything around her. She was taught to observe the activities of ants and to notice every detail, the feeling of fabrics, and the unique parts of people's faces.

Proulx attended Colby College in Maine briefly in the 1950s but left to work different jobs, including waiting tables and working at the post office. She received a bachelor's degree in history from the University of Vermont in 1969 and a master's degree from Sir George Williams University in Montreal, Canada, in 1973. She then began working toward her Ph.D. (an advanced degree beyond a master's degree), but in 1975 she abandoned the idea, thinking she would not be able to find a teaching job. Proulx told *Contemporary Authors* that she was "wild" during those years. Her third marriage broke up at around the same time. As a result, Proulx became a single parent to her three sons.

Writing career

In tiny towns in Vermont, Proulx spent her time fishing, hunting, and canoeing, and began working as a freelance (not under contract) journalist. She wrote articles for magazines on many different topics. Her work appeared in publications such as *Country Journal*, *Organic Gardening*; and *Yankee*. In the early 1980s Proulx produced a series of



E. Annie Proulx.

Reproduced by permission of Mr. Jerry Bauer.

"how-to" books, including *Sweet & Hard Cider: Making It, Using It, and Enjoying It*; *The Fine Art of Salad Gardening*; and *Plan and Make Your Own Fences and Gates, Walkways, Walls and Drives*. She also created her own newspaper, the *Vershire Behind the Times*, which existed from 1984 to 1986. She also found time to average two short stories a year, nearly all of which were published.

In 1983 Proulx's career as a fiction writer was boosted by a notice in *Best American Short Stories*, an honor that was repeated in 1987. Proulx published her first book, *Heart Songs and Other Stories*, in 1988.

Against the beautiful backdrop of the New England countryside, her stories involve the struggles of people trying to cope with their complicated lives. Proulx illustrates the stories with sharp descriptions, such as a man who eats a fish “as he would a slice of watermelon” or a woman who is as “thin as a folded dollar bill, her hand as narrow and cold as a trout.”

Successful novels

Editors that worked with Proulx on her short stories suggested that she try to write a novel. She came up with *Postcards* (1992), the story of a man from New England who flees the family farm after accidentally killing his bride-to-be. The passages involving the man’s wanderings across the country come from Proulx’s own trip across America while doing research. The book was a professional and personal success. Proulx became the first woman to receive the PEN/Faulkner Award for fiction, which came with a fifteen thousand dollar bonus.

The very next year, Proulx capped this success by writing *The Shipping News*. A dark but comic tale set in Newfoundland, it is the story of an unlucky newspaper reporter named Quoye. It is packed with details, all drawn in a vibrant (full of life) lively style. The book resulted in a steady stream of awards: first, the Heartland Prize from the *Chicago Tribune*, followed by the Irish Times International Award, and the National Book Award. These honors were all topped by the 1994 Pulitzer Prize for fiction.

Later works

After becoming famous, Proulx found that she had less time to research and write.

In 1994 she had short stories published in *Atlantic Monthly* and *Esquire*. She bought a second home in Newfoundland, and by the spring of 1995 she had moved to Wyoming. In researching her next novel, Proulx became an expert on accordion music. She studied not how to play the instrument, but how to take one apart and then rebuild it. *Accordion Crimes*, released in 1996, is about the music of immigrants and particularly about different kinds of accordion music.

In 1999 Proulx released *Close Range: Wyoming Stories*, which won a book award from *The New Yorker* for best work of fiction. In 2001 *The Shipping News* was released as a film.

For More Information

Contemporary Authors. Vol. 145. Detroit: Gale, 1995.

Contemporary Literary Criticism. Vol. 81: Yearbook 1993. Detroit: Gale, 1994.

New York Times (April 21, 1993).

MARCEL PROUST

Born: July 10, 1871

Auteuil, France

Died: November 18, 1922

Paris, France

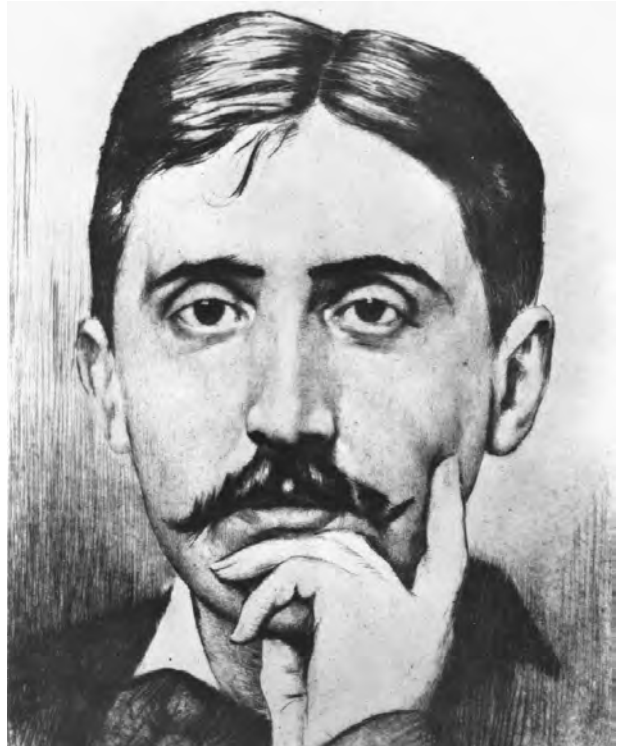
French author

French novelist Marcel Proust was one of the greatest writers of the twentieth century. His books abandoned plot

and dramatic action in favor of the narrator's descriptions of his experiences in the world.

Early years and education

Marcel Proust was born on July 10, 1871, in Auteuil, a suburb of Paris, France. His parents, Dr. Adrien Proust and Jeanne Weil, were wealthy. Proust was a nervous and frail child. When he was nine years old, his first attack of asthma (a breathing disorder) nearly killed him. In 1882 Proust enrolled in the Lycée Condorcet. Only during his last two years of study there did he distinguish himself as a student. After a year of military service, Proust studied law and then philosophy (the study of the world and man's place in it). Proust became known as a brilliant conversationalist with the ability to mimic others, although some considered him a snob and social climber.



Marcel Proust.

First works

In 1892 and 1893 Proust wrote criticism, sketches, and short stories for the journal *Le Banquet* and to *La Revue blanche*. His first work, *Les Plaisirs et les jours* (Pleasures and Days), a collection of short stories and short verse descriptions of artists and musicians, was published in 1896. Proust had made an attempt at a major work in 1895, but he was unsure of himself and abandoned it in 1899. It appeared in 1952 under the title of *Jean Santeuil*; from thousands of pages, Bernard de Fallois had organized the novel according to a sketchy plan he found among them. Parts of the novel make little sense, and many passages are from Proust's other works. Some, however, are beautifully written. *Jean Santeuil* is the biography of a made-up character who struggles to follow his artistic calling.

After abandoning *Jean Santeuil*, Proust returned to his studies, reading widely in other literatures. During 1899 he became interested in the works of the English critic John Ruskin (1819–1900), and after Ruskin's death the next year, Proust published an article that established him as a Ruskin scholar. Proust wrote several more articles on Ruskin, and with the help of an English-speaking friend, Marie Nordlinger, and his mother, Proust translated into French Ruskin's *The Bible of Amiens* (1904) and *Sesame and Lilies* (1906). Reading Ruskin's ideas on art helped him form his own ideas and move beyond the problems of *Jean Santeuil*.

In 1903 Proust's father died. The death of his mother two years later forced Proust into a sanatorium (an institution for rest and recovery), but he stayed less than two months. He emerged once again into society and into print after two years with a series of articles published in *Le Figaro* during 1907 and 1908. By November 1908 Proust was planning his *Contre Sainte-Beuve* (published in 1954; On Art and Literature). He finished it during the summer of 1909 and immediately started work on his great novel.

Remembrance of Things Past

Although Proust had by 1909 gathered most of the material that became *À la recherche du temps perdu* (Remembrance of Things Past), he still felt unable to structure the material. In January 1909 the combination of flavors in a cup of tea and toast brought him sensations that reminded him of his youth in his grandfather's garden. These feelings revealed the hidden self that Proust had spoken of in *Contre Sainte-Beuve*, and he felt that the process of artistic rebirth was the theme his novel required. In *À la recherche du temps perdu* Proust was mainly concerned with describing not real life but his narrator Marcel's view of it. Marcel traces his growth through a number of remembered experiences and realizes that these experiences reflect his inner life more truly than does his outer life.

Proust began his novel in 1909 and worked on it until his death. In 1913 he found a publisher who would produce, at the author's expense, the first of three projected volumes *Du Côté de chez Swann* (Swann's Way). French writer André Gide (1869–1951) in 1916 obtained the rights to publish the rest of the volumes. *À l'ombre des jeunes filles en*

fleur (Within a Budding Grove), originally a chapter title, appeared in 1918 as the second volume and won the Goncourt Prize. As other volumes appeared, Proust expanded his material, adding long sections just before publication. Feeling his end approaching, Proust finished drafting his novel and began revising and correcting proofs. On November 18, 1922, Proust died of bronchitis and pneumonia (diseases of the lungs) contracted after a series of asthma attacks. The final volumes of his novel appeared under the direction of his brother Robert.

For More Information

- Brée, Germaine. *The World of Marcel Proust*. Boston: Houghton, Mifflin, 1966.
- Carter, William C. *Marcel Proust: A Life*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2000.
- Cocking, J. M. *Proust*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1956.
- Painter, George D. *Proust*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1959–1965.
- White, Edmund. *Marcel Proust*. New York: Viking, 1999.

PTOLEMY I

Born: c. 366 B.C.E.

Macedonia

Died: 283 B.C.E.

Macedonian military leader, general, and ruler

Ptolemy I (c. 366–283 B.C.E.) was a Macedonian general under Alexander the Great (356–323 B.C.E.) and

founder of the Ptolemaic dynasty of Egypt, a family of fifteen kings—all of whom were named Ptolemy—who reigned over Egypt for more than three hundred years.

Early life

Born in the upper Macedonian region of Eordaia to the Macedonian nobleman Lagos and Arsinoë, Ptolemy grew up in the royal court at Pella. Little is known about Ptolemy's childhood. In 343 B.C.E. he joined Alexander at Mieza where he studied for three years with the Greek philosopher Aristotle (384–322 B.C.E.).

Ptolemy returned to Pella with Alexander by 340 B.C.E. and supported his younger friend's quarrel with his father, Philip, the King of Macedonia. In 337 B.C.E. Alexander left Macedonia with his mother Olympias, Ptolemy, and his close friends for Epirus and Illyria but soon returned to Macedonia. Alexander's relationship with Philip remained sour, and the king forced Ptolemy from the court because he considered him a dangerous adviser to his son.

Alexander's adviser and general

In 336 B.C.E. when Philip was assassinated by a group of nobles, Ptolemy returned to the court and supported Alexander's claim to the throne. Alexander, in turn, appointed Ptolemy companion, lifeguard, and seneschal, an office in charge of the household and servants. Ptolemy accompanied Alexander on his military campaigns to regions in the Danube in 336 B.C.E. and to crush rebellion in Corinth and to destroy Thebes in 335 B.C.E.

Ptolemy stood beside Alexander, helping the young king expand his empire. Ptolemy encouraged and aided Alexander's invasion of



Ptolemy I.

Asia Minor to free the eastern Greeks from the Persian Empire of Darius III (died 330 B.C.E.) and to invade Syria and conquer Persia. Ptolemy fought at Issos in 333 B.C.E. and, riding beside Alexander, pursued Darius into the hills. He then accompanied Alexander through Phoenicia and in the conquering of Tyre in 332 B.C.E. and marched through Jerusalem to Egypt. In Egypt, Ptolemy aided Alexander's peaceful conquest of the country and the founding of the city of Alexandria, and probably accompanied his king to the temple of Zeus Ammon, in Siwa. Ptolemy quickly realized the immense value of Egypt, and he developed keen interests in the region.

From Egypt, Ptolemy accompanied Alexander to northern Mesopotamia for the third and final major conflict with Darius's armies, at Gaugamela in 331 B.C.E. During the next six years Ptolemy campaigned with Alexander through western India and along the Indus Valley. Ptolemy recognized Alexander's claim to the Persian throne without hesitation and revealed to Alexander the plot of the royal pages (messengers) to assassinate him. In India, Ptolemy fought beside Alexander and in one battle saved his king's life.

At Susa in 324 B.C.E., when Alexander asked his companions to marry Persians, Ptolemy agreed and married Artacama, the daughter of the Persian nobleman Artabazos. But after Alexander's death Ptolemy quickly divorced her.

Ruler of Egypt

With Alexander's death in Babylon on June 13, 323 B.C.E., Ptolemy's political and military ambitions were freed. He quickly recognized the problems of co-rulership with Alexander's half brother Arrhidaeios—who suffered from mental and physical disabilities—and his son Alexander, who was born shortly after Alexander the Great's death. Ptolemy immediately claimed Egypt as his satrapy, meaning that he became governor of the province. Ptolemy also stood strongly opposed to Perdikkas, to whom Alexander had given his signet ring (a ring engraved with a seal) and the regency (governing power) of the empire.

Ptolemy brought Alexander's body for burial to Memphis in Egypt, though Alexander had wished to be buried at Siwa. Ptolemy built an altar there for Alexander but kept the body at Memphis until a suitable mau-

soleum, or tomb, could be built in Ptolemy's new Egyptian capital, Alexandria.

Perdikkas's regency rapidly fell to violent warfare among Ptolemy, Lysimachos who held Thrace, Antigonos (382–301 B.C.E.) the "One-Eyed" in Greater Phrygia, and Seleucus who desired power in Syria. Until 281 B.C.E. the "successors" fought bitterly. In 306 B.C.E. Antigonos assumed the title of king and claimed all of Alexander's empire. In opposition, Ptolemy declared Egypt's independence, proclaimed himself king of Egypt, and established a powerful dynasty (a line of rulers from the same family) that would last until Cleopatra's (51–30 B.C.E.) suicide in 30 B.C.E.

After Ptolemy I divorced Artacama, he married the Macedonian noblewoman Eurydice. Unhappy with this political alliance, Ptolemy put her aside, and by 317 B.C.E. had married his widowed half-sister and lover, Berenice. The girl, a niece of Eurydice, was almost twenty-seven years younger than Ptolemy. Berenice gave birth to two children, Arsinoë (II) and Ptolemy (II).

Maintaining rule

In Upper Egypt, Ptolemy I founded the city Ptolemais. As satrap of Egypt, he clashed violently with Cleomenes of Naucrates, whom Alexander in 332 B.C.E. had appointed financial manager of Egypt and chief of the eastern delta (lands east of the Nile River) and had entrusted with the completion of Alexandria. Cleomenes, however, had assumed the satrapship, but Alexander had relieved him from duty. In 321 B.C.E. Ptolemy charged Cleomenes with embezzlement of funds (stealing money) and executed him, thereby removing a political rival.

Between 306 B.C.E. and 286 B.C.E. Ptolemy concentrated on the development of his empire. He gained control of Cyrene and conquered Palestine, coastal Syria, and Cyprus. In 286 B.C.E. he became protector of the southern Cycladic islands and their center at Delos. Throughout his empire he established the well-constructed Ptolemaic administration; he built the legal and military organizations and the military settlements, raised foreign armies, and raised native money for the military. Using Alexander's daily journal and other official materials, Ptolemy wrote an excellent history of Alexander and his campaigns. Greek historian Arrian's *Anabasis* (second century C.E.) preserved much of Ptolemy's study.

In 285 B.C.E. Ptolemy stepped down from his throne in favor of his twenty-two-year-old son, Ptolemy II. Two years later Ptolemy I died and was deified (given god-like status) by the young king in 279 B.C.E. and given the title Theos Soter, "God and Savior."

For More Information

Bevan, Edwyn. *The House of Ptolemy*. Chicago: Argonaut, 1968.

Ellis, Walter M. *Ptolemy of Egypt*. London; New York: Routledge, 1994.

JOSEPH PULITZER

Born: April 10, 1847

Mako, Hungary

Died: October 29, 1911

Charleston, South Carolina

Hungarian-born American publisher and editor

Joseph Pulitzer, Hungarian-born editor and publisher, was important in the development of the modern newspaper in the United States.

Early years

Joseph Pulitzer was born in Mako, Hungary, on April 10, 1847, the son of Philip Pulitzer, a well-to-do grain dealer, and Louise Berger. Pulitzer was educated by private tutors, from whom he learned to speak German and French. Thin, with poor vision and weak lungs, he tried to enlist in the army in Europe but was turned down. In 1864 he left Hungary for the United States and became a soldier in the Union army during the Civil War (1861–65), when Northern and Southern American states fought mainly over the issue of slavery. After the war, the tall, red-bearded youth had no job and settled in St. Louis, Missouri, where there was a large German population. Pulitzer worked as a waiter, taxi driver, and a caretaker of mules before getting a job as a reporter on a newspaper called the *Westliche Post*.

A short time after joining the *Post*, Pulitzer was nominated (his name was put forward for consideration) for the state legislature by the Republican Party. His campaign was considered a long shot because he was nominated in a Democratic district. Pulitzer, however, ran seriously and won. In the legislature he fought graft (illegal gain) and corruption (improper conduct by elected officials). In one wild dispute he shot a man in the leg for saying that he had written an untrue story in the newspaper. Pulitzer escaped punishment with a fine that his friends paid.



Joseph Pulitzer.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Newspaper acquisitions

Pulitzer was hard-working and ambitious. He bought the *St. Louis Post* for about three thousand dollars in 1872. He also bought a German paper and sold it at a twenty thousand dollar profit. These profits helped pay for his political activities and for law school. In 1876 Pulitzer was allowed to practice law in Missouri. He started a law practice, but he gave it up in 1878 after purchasing the troubled *St. Louis Dispatch* at a sheriff's sale for twenty-seven hundred dollars and combining it with the *Post*. Aided by his brilliant editor in chief, John A. Cockerill,

Pulitzer launched crusades against lotteries, gambling, and tax dodging; led drives to have streets cleaned and repaired; and sought to make St. Louis more civic-minded. The *Post-Dispatch* became a success.

In 1883 Pulitzer, then thirty-six, purchased the *New York World* for \$346,000 from businessman Jay Gould (1836–1892), who was losing forty thousand dollars a year on the paper. Pulitzer made the down payment (a portion of the total price paid at the beginning of a loan) from *Post-Dispatch* profits and made all later payments out of profits from the *World*. Even as Pulitzer's eyes began to fail in the 1880s (he went blind in 1889), he carried on a battle for readers with William Randolph Hearst (1863–1951), publisher of the *New York Journal*. In New York, New York, he promised that the *World* would “expose all fraud and sham, fight all public evils and abuses” and “battle for the people with earnest sincerity.” He concentrated on human-interest stories, scandal (behavior that causes loss of faith in a person), and sensational material. Pulitzer's *World* was a strong supporter of the common man. It often supported unions during strikes.

Later life

Pulitzer in the early part of his career opposed large headlines and art. Later, as his fight with Hearst increased in the 1890s, the two giants went to ever larger headline type and more fantastic art and engaged in questionable practices until Pulitzer decided things had gone too far and cut back. Pulitzer defended his methods, though, saying that people had to know about crime in order to fight it. He once told a critic, “I want to talk to a nation, not a select committee.”

Pulitzer died aboard his yacht in the harbor at Charleston, South Carolina, on October 29, 1911. In his will he provided two million dollars for the establishment of a school of journalism at Columbia University in New York City. Also, by the terms of his will, the prizes bearing his name were established in 1915. Pulitzer Prizes are awarded every year to honor achievements in journalism, literature, and music.

For More Information

Barrett, James W. *Joseph Pulitzer and His World*. New York: Vanguard Press, 1941.

Brian, Denis. *Pulitzer: A Life*. New York: J. Wiley, 2001.

Noble, Iris. *Joseph Pulitzer: Front Page Pioneer*. New York: Messner, 1957.

Seitz, Don C. *Joseph Pulitzer: His Life and Letters*. New York; AMS Press, 1970.

Whitelaw, Nancy. *Joseph Pulitzer and the New York World*. Greensboro, NC: Morgan Reynolds, 2000.

GEORGE PULLMAN

Born: March 3, 1831

Brocton, New York

Died: October 19, 1897

Chicago, Illinois

American industrialist

George Pullman was an American industrial businessman who developed the railroad sleeping car and

built a big business with it. He was one of the last industrialists (someone who owns and operates a large-scale business) to operate a company town.

Childhood and early career

George Mortimer Pullman was born on March 3, 1831, in Brocton, New York, but his parents soon moved to Portland, New York. After attending public schools, his formal education ended at the age of fourteen, shortly after the death of his father. Pullman then went to work in a general store and became the main source of income for his family. In 1848 Pullman joined his older brother in Albion, New York, where he worked as a cabinetmaker.

In 1853 Pullman became a general contractor and helped move several buildings that stood in the way of a project to widen the Erie Canal. (The Erie Canal is a key waterway in Lake Erie that connects the Great Lakes and opened the region to shipping.) Upon completion of that work in 1855 he moved to Chicago, where he entered the business of raising buildings onto higher foundations to avoid flooding—a problem caused by much of Chicago's land area being only a few feet above the level of Lake Michigan.

Railroads cars

The idea of a sleeping car for railroads was not new, and various efforts had been made to construct and operate such cars before Pullman joined the field. He formed a partnership with Benjamin Field, who had the rights to operate “sleepers” on the Chicago and Alton and the Galena and Union railroads. Pullman remodeled two



George Pullman.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

passenger cars into sleepers, using the structure of an upper bed hinged to the side of the car and supported by two jointed arms. Business grew slowly but steadily until the Civil War (1861–65), when Confederate (the South) and Union (the North) forces clashed over several issues, mainly secession, or the Confederacy's desire to leave the Union. In 1862 Pullman went to the Colorado gold fields, where he operated a trading store and in his spare time continued to develop his sleeping car.

Returning to Chicago, Pullman and Field constructed the "Pioneer" sleeping car, which became a classic in rail history. Its

first trip brought Abraham Lincoln's (1809–1865) widow from Washington, to Springfield, Illinois, shortly after the president's assassination. Other railroads began to use the Pullman car. In 1867, the year of Pullman's marriage, the Illinois legislature (governing body) began to regularly use the Pullman Palace Car Company, which eventually became the world's largest such building concern. At first, Pullman contracted for his cars (hired other companies to build them); in 1870 he began construction in Detroit, Michigan, although the headquarters remained in Chicago. The Pullman company always rented sleeping cars; it never sold them.

By 1880 Pullman owned the rights to land in the Calumet region of Chicago, where he constructed a new factory and a company town—a town where the chief employment for the town's residents comes from one company. Deeply disturbed by depressing city conditions, he believed his town could be a model of efficiency and healthfulness, though it was planned to return a 6 percent profit. The town cost over \$5 million to build, and a serious strike in 1894 marked the beginning of the separation of factory and town. Pullman died in Chicago on October 19, 1897.

For More Information

- Husband, Joseph. *The Story of the Pullman Car*. Chicago: A. C. McClurg, 1917. Reprint, Grand Rapids, MI: Black Letter Press, 1974.
- Leyendecker, Liston E. *Palace Car Prince: A Biography of George Mortimer Pullman*. Niwot: University of Colorado Press, 1992.

Mencken, August. *The Railroad Passenger Car*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins Press, 1957. Reprint, Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 2000.

Myers, Elisabeth P. *George Pullman: Young Sleeping Car Builder*. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1963.

ALEKSANDR PUSHKIN

Born: May 26, 1799

Moscow, Russia

Died: January 29, 1837

St. Petersburg, Russia

Russian author

Aleksandr Pushkin is ranked as one of Russia's greatest poets. He not only brought Russian poetry to its highest excellence, but also had a great influence on all Russian literature in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries.

Early years

Aleksandr Sergeevich Pushkin was born to Sergei and Nadezhda Pushkin on May 26, 1799. On his father's side he was a descendant of Russian nobility. On his mother's side he was related to an African lord. But by the time Aleksandr was born, the family had gradually lost most of their wealth and influence, and they were lowered to the position of minor nobility. Aleksandr's family life was far from ideal. His father was domineering and easily irritated, and his mother often left the young child alone in pursuit of her social ambitions.

Between 1811 and 1817 Pushkin attended a special school for privileged children of the nobility. Pushkin was not a very good student in most subjects, but he performed brilliantly in French and Russian literature.

Early works, 1814–1820

After finishing school, Pushkin led a wild and undisciplined life. He wrote about 130 poems between 1814 and 1817, while still at school. Most of his works written between 1817 and 1820 were not published because his topics were considered inappropriate.

In 1820 Pushkin completed his first narrative poem, *Ruslan and Ludmilla*. It is a romance composed of fantastic adventures but told with the humor of the previous century. However, even before *Ruslan and Ludmilla* was published in June 1820, Pushkin was exiled to the south of Russia because of the political humor he had expressed in his earlier poems. Pushkin left St. Petersburg on May 6, and he would not return for more than six years.

South of Russia

Pushkin spent the years from 1820 to 1823 in various places in the southern part of Russia, including the Caucasus and in the Crimea. He was happy there at first, but later, he felt bored by the life in small towns and took up again a life of gambling and drinking. He was always short of money. He worked as a civil servant (government worker), but did not make much money and his family refused to support him.

Pushkin began to earn money with his poetic works, but not enough to keep up with



Aleksandr Pushkin.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

his wealthy friends. In 1823 he was transferred to Odessa, a larger city more to his liking. Then he moved to Mikhailovskoye, an estate owned by his family.

Mikhailovskoye, 1824–1826

When Pushkin arrived at Mikhailovskoye, his relations with his parents were not good. His father was angry at him. The family left the estate about mid-November, and Pushkin found himself alone with the family nurse. He lived alone for much of the next two years, occasionally visiting a neighboring town and infrequently entertaining old Petersburg friends. At this time the nurse told Pushkin

many folk tales, and it is believed that she gave him a feeling for folk life that showed itself in many of his poems.

Pushkin's two years at Mikhailovskoye were extremely rich in poetic output. Among other works, he wrote the first three chapters of *Eugene Onegin*, and composed the tragedy *Boris Godunov*. In addition, he composed many important lyrics (poetic dramas set to music) and a humorous tale in verse entitled *Count Nulin*.

His maturity

Pushkin was eventually forgiven by the new czar (Russian ruler), Nicholas I (1796–1855). The czar promised Pushkin that all of his works would be censored (edited for approval) by the czar himself. Pushkin promised to publish nothing that would harm the government. After some time this type of censorship became a burden for Pushkin.

Pushkin continued to live a wild life for awhile, but wanted to settle down. He proposed to Nathalie Goncharova in 1830. He asked his future in-laws for money and convinced them to provide him with land and a house. He continued to work on *Eugene Onegin*, wrote a number of excellent lyrics, and worked on, but did not finish a novel.

Eugene Onegin was begun in 1824 and finished in August 1831. This is a novel in verse (poetry) and most regard it as Pushkin's most famous work. It is a "novel" about life at that time, constructed in order to permit digressions (the moving away from the main subject in literary works) and a variety of incidents and tones. The heart of the tale concerns the life of Eugene Onegin, a bored

nobleman who rejects the advances of a young girl, Tatiana. He meets her later, when she is greatly changed and now sophisticated. He falls in love with her. He is in turn rejected by her because, although she loves him, she is married.

Marriage, duel, and death

After 1830 Pushkin wrote less and less poetry. He married Nathalie Goncharova in 1831. She bore him three children, but the couple were not happy together. His new wife had many other admirers. He challenged one of her admirers to a duel that took place on January 26, 1837. Pushkin was wounded and died on January 29. There was great mourning at his death.

Many of Pushkin's works provided the basis for operas by Russian composers. They include *Ruslan and Ludmilla* by Mikhail Glinka (1804–1857), *Eugene Onegin* and *The Queen of Spades* by Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky (1840–1893), *Boris Godunov* by Modest Mussorgsky (1839–1881), and *The Golden Cockerel* by Nicolai Rimsky-Korsakov (1844–1908).

For More Information

Feinstein, Elaine. *Pushkin: A Biography*. New York: Ecco Press, 2000.

Magarshack, David. *Pushkin: A Biography*. London: Chapman & Hall, 1967.

Simmons, Ernest. *Pushkin*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1937, revised edition 1971.

Vickery, Walter. *Pushkin: Death of a Poet*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1968.

Vitale, Serena. *Pushkin's Button*. Edited by Ann Goldstein. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Giroux, 1998.

VLADIMIR PUTIN

Born: October 1, 1952

Leningrad, Russia

Russian president

When Vladimir Putin was appointed prime minister of Russia, very little was known about his background. This former Soviet intelligence agent entered politics in the early 1990s and rose rapidly. By August of 1999, ailing President Boris Yeltsin (1931–) appointed him prime minister. When Yeltsin stepped down in December of 1999, Putin became the acting president of Russia, and he was elected president to serve a full term on March 26, 2000.

Early life and education

Vladimir Putin was born on October 1, 1952, in Leningrad (now St. Petersburg), Russia. An only child, his father was a foreman in a metal factory and his mother was a homemaker. Putin lived with his parents in an apartment with two other families. Though religion was not permitted in the Soviet Union, the former country which was made up of Russia and other smaller states, his mother secretly had him baptized as an Orthodox Christian.

Though a small child, Putin could hold



Vladimir Putin.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

his own in fights thanks to martial arts classes. By the age of sixteen he was a top-ranked expert at sambo, a Russian combination of judo and wrestling. By the time he was a teenager Putin had begun to display the ambition that he later became known for, and he attended a respected high school, School 281, which only accepted students with near-perfect grades. The institution was the only one in Russia to stress chemistry, which was Putin's interest. However, he soon moved toward liberal arts and biology. Putin played handball and worked at the school radio station, where he played music by the Beatles and other Western rock bands. Fascinated

with spy movies as a teen, he aspired to work for the KGB, the Russian secret service.

Work in the KGB

At Leningrad State University, Putin graduated from the law department in 1975 but instead of entering the law field right out of school, Putin landed a job with the KGB, the only one in his class of one hundred to be chosen. The branch he was assigned to was responsible for recruiting foreigners who would work to gather information for KGB intelligence.

In the early 1980s Putin met and married his wife, Lyudmila, a former teacher of French and English. In 1985 the KGB sent him to Dresden, East Germany, where he lived undercover as Mr. Adamov, the director of the Soviet-German House of Friendship, a social and cultural club. Putin appeared to genuinely enjoy spending time with Germans, unlike many other KGB agents, and respected the German culture.

Around the time Putin went to East Germany, Soviet leader Mikhail Gorbachev (1931–) was beginning to introduce economic and social reforms (improvements). Putin was apparently a firm believer in the changes. In 1989 the Berlin Wall, which stood for nearly forty years separating East from West Germany, was torn down and the two united. Though Putin supposedly had known that this was going to happen, he was disappointed that it occurred amid chaos and that the Soviet leadership had not managed it better.

Russian politics

In 1990 Putin returned to Leningrad and continued his undercover intelligence work

for the KGB. In 1991, just as the Soviet Union was beginning to fall apart, Putin left the KGB with the rank of colonel, in order to get involved in politics. Putin went to work for Anatoly Sobchak, the mayor of St. Petersburg, as an aide and in 1994 became deputy mayor.

During Putin's time in city government, he reportedly helped the city build highways, telecommunications, and hotels, all to support foreign investment. Although St. Petersburg never grew to become the financial powerhouse that many had hoped, its fortunes improved as many foreign investors moved in, such as Coca-Cola and Japanese electronics firm NEC.

On to the Kremlin

In 1996, when Sobchak lost his mayoral campaign, Putin was offered a job with the victor, but declined out of loyalty. The next year, he was asked to join President Boris Yeltsin's "inner circle" as deputy chief administrator of the Kremlin, the building that houses the Russian government. In March of 1999, he was named secretary of the Security Council, a body that advises the president on matters of foreign policy, national security, and military and law enforcement.

In August of 1999, after Yeltsin had gone through five prime ministers in seventeen months, he appointed Putin, who many thought was not worthy of succeeding the ill president. For one thing, he had little political experience; for another, his appearance and personality seemed boring. However, Putin increased his appeal among citizens for his role in pursuing the war in Chechnya. In addition to blaming various bombings in Moscow and elsewhere on Chechen terror-

ists, he also used harsh words in criticizing his enemies. Soon, Putin's popularity ratings began to soar.

Acting president of Russia

In December of 1999, Russia held elections for the 450-seat Duma, the lower house of Russia's parliament (governing body). Putin's newly-formed Unity Party came in a close second to the Communists in a stunning showing. Though Putin was not a candidate in this election, he became the obvious front-runner in the upcoming presidential race scheduled for June of 2000.

On New Year's Eve in 1999, Yeltsin unexpectedly stepped down as president, naming Putin as acting president. Immediately, Western news media and the U.S. government scrambled to create a profile of the new Russian leader. Due to Putin's secretive background as a KGB agent, there was little information. His history as a spy caused many Westerners and some Russians as well to question whether he should be feared as an enemy of the free world.

In Putin's first speech as acting president, he promised, "Freedom of speech, freedom of conscience, freedom of the press, the right to private property—these basic principles of a civilized society will be protected," according to a *Newsweek* report. In addition, Putin removed several of Yeltsin's loyalists and relatives from his cabinet.

Elected President

On March 26, 2000, Russians elected Putin out of a field of eleven candidates. After his election, Putin's first legislative move was to win approval of the Start II arms reduction

treaty from the Duma. The deal, which was negotiated seven years earlier, involved decreasing both the Russian and American nuclear buildup by half. Putin's move on this issue was seen as a positive step in his willingness to develop a better relationship with the United States. In addition, one of Putin's earliest moves involved working with a team of economists to develop a plan to improve the country's economy. On May 7, 2000, Putin was officially sworn in as Russia's second president and its first in a free transfer of power in the nation's eleven-hundred-year history.

Putin, a soft-spoken and stone-faced man, keeps his personal life very private. In early 2000, an American publishing company announced that in May it would release an English-language translation of his memoirs, *First Person*, which was banned from publication in Russia until after the March 26 presidential election.

Putin has made great efforts to improve relations with the remaining world powers. In July 2001, Putin met with Chinese President Jiang Zemin (1926–) and the two signed a “friendship treaty” which called for improving trade between China and Russia and improving relations concerning U.S. plans for a missile defense system. Four months later, Putin visited Washington, D.C. to meet with President George W. Bush (1946–) over the defense system. Although they failed to reach a definite agreement, the two leaders did agree to drastically cut the number of nuclear arms in each country. Early in 2002, Putin traveled to Poland and became the first Russian president since 1993 to make this trip. Representatives of the two countries signed agreements involving business, trade, and transportation.

For More Information

Putin, Vladimir. *First Person*. New York: PublicAffairs, 2000.

Shields, Charles J. *Vladimir Putin*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

PYTHAGORAS

Born: c. 575 B.C.E.

Samos, Greece

Died: c. 495 B.C.E.

Metapontum

Greek philosopher, scientist, and religious scholar

The Greek philosopher, scientist, and religious teacher Pythagoras developed a school of thought that accepted the passage of the soul into another body and established many influential mathematical and philosophical theories.

Early life

Born on the island of Samos, off Greece, in the Mediterranean Sea, Pythagoras was the son of Mnesarchus. Little is known about his early life. After studying in Greece, he fled to southern Italy to escape the harsh rule of Polycrates (died c. 522 B.C.E.), who came to power about 538 B.C.E. Pythagoras is said to have traveled to Egypt and Babylon during this time.

Pythagoras and his followers became politically powerful in Croton in southern Italy, where Pythagoras had established a school for his newly formed sect, or group of followers. It is probable that the Pythagore-

ans took positions in the local government in order to lead men to the pure life that was directed by their teachings. Eventually, however, a rival group launched an attack on the Pythagoreans at a gathering of the sect, and the group was almost completely destroyed. Pythagoras either had been forced to leave Croton or had left voluntarily shortly before this attack. He died in Metapontum early in the fifth century B.C.E.

Religious teachings

Pythagoras and his followers were important for their contributions to both religion and science. His religious teachings were based on the doctrine (teaching) of metempsychosis, which teaches that the soul never dies and is destined to a cycle of rebirths until it is able to free itself from the cycle through the purity of its life.

Pythagoreanism differed from the other philosophical systems of its time in being not merely an intellectual search for truth but a whole way of life which would lead to salvation, or to be delivered from sin. An important part of Pythagoreanism was the relationship of all life. A universal life spirit was thought to be present in animal and vegetable life, although there is no evidence to show that Pythagoras believed that the soul could be born in the form of a plant. It could be born, however, in the body of an animal, and Pythagoras claimed to have heard the voice of a dead friend in the howl of a dog being beaten.

Mathematical teachings

The Pythagoreans presented as fact the dualism (that life is controlled by opposite forces) between Limited and Unlimited. It



Pythagoras.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

was probably Pythagoras who declared that numbers could uncover the secrets of the universe, limiting and giving shape to matter (anything that takes up space). His study of musical intervals, leading to the discovery that the chief intervals can be expressed in numerical ratios (relationships between numbers) between the first four integers (positive whole numbers), also led to the theory that the number ten, the sum of the first four integers, embraced the whole nature of number.

So great was the Pythagoreans' respect for the "Tetractys of the Decad" (the sum of $1 + 2$

+ 3 + 4) that they swore their oaths (promises) by it rather than by the gods, as was normal during his day. Pythagoras may have discovered the theorem which still bears his name (in right triangles [triangle with one angle equal to 90 degrees], the square on the hypotenuse equals the sum of the squares on the other sides), although this proposal has been discovered on a writing stone dating from the time of the Babylonian king Hammurabi (died c. 1750 B.C.E.). Regardless of their sources, the Pythagoreans did important work in extending the body of mathematical knowledge.

As a more general outline, the Pythagoreans presented the two contraries (opposites), Limited and Unlimited, as ultimate principles, or truths. Numerical oddness and evenness are equated with Limited and Unlimited, as are one and plurality (many), right and left, male and female, motionlessness and movement, straight and crooked, light and darkness, and good and bad. It is not clear whether an ultimate One, or Monad, was presented as the cause of the two categories.

Cosmological views

The Pythagoreans, as a result of their religious beliefs and careful study of mathematics, developed a cosmology (dealing with

the structures of the universe) which differed in some important respects from the world views at the time, the most important of which was their view of the Earth as a sphere which circled the center of the universe. It is not known how much of this theory was credited to Pythagoras himself.

The mathematical knowledge carried out by Pythagoras and his followers would have been enough to make him an important figure in the history of Western thought. However, his religious sect and the self-discipline and dedication which he taught, embracing as it did a vast number of ancient beliefs, make him one of the great teachers of religion in the ancient Greek world.

For More Information

- Fey, James. *Looking for Pythagoras: The Pythagorean Theorem*. White Plains, NY: Dale Seymour Publications, 1997.
- Philip, J. A. *Pythagoras and Early Pythagoreanism*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1966.
- Strohmeyer, John, and Peter Westbrook. *Divine Harmony: The Life and Teachings of Pythagoras*. Berkeley, CA: Berkeley Hills Books, 1999.



MU'AMMAR AL-QADHAFI

Born: 1942

Surt, Libya

Libyan revolutionary, dictator, and army officer

Mu'ammār al-Qadhafī led the revolution that set up the Libyan republic in 1969. His dream was to unite all Arab lands and create a system of “government by the masses.” However, by encouraging and helping provide funds for terrorist activities (the activities of people who use violence to try to get what they want) against Israel and its allies, he became

an enemy of many countries throughout the world.

Early life and influences

Mu'ammār al-Qadhafī (also written as Qaddafi, Gheddafi, and Khadafi, among others) was born in 1942 in the desert region of Libya bordering the Mediterranean Sea along the Gulf of Sirte. His parents barely made a living herding sheep and goats. He was the last child and only son. Qadhafī was an intelligent boy, and his family made many sacrifices so that he could receive an education. While in school he became inspired by the ideas of Gamal Abdel Nasser (1918–1970), one of the strongest voices calling for Arab independence and unity and a man who had



Mu'ammār al-Qadhafī.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

helped overthrow King Farouk (1920–1965) of Egypt in 1952.

Qadhafi began to organize student protests against Israel, which had been at war with several Arab nations after gaining its independence in 1948. He was expelled as a result and moved to the city of Misurata, Libya, where he completed his high-school education between 1961 and 1963. At the same time he began to organize a movement to overthrow King Idris (1890–1983), who had become Libya's first head of state when the country won its independence from Italy in 1951. Qadhafi felt that King Idris allowed Western powers such as Britain and the

United States to have too much say in Libyan affairs. After joining the army in October 1963, Qadhafi found more supporters to help his cause.

Kingdom to republic

On September 1, 1969, when King Idris was out of the country for health reasons, Qadhafi put his plan into effect. He and his young officers easily took over government and military offices and proclaimed Libya an Arab republic. Qadhafi became president of the Revolutionary Command Council (RCC) and had total control over the new republic. Following the example of his hero, Nasser, Qadhafi called for the removal of American and British military bases from Libya. This action was completed in June 1970. Many reforms were begun, including the nationalizing (giving control or ownership to the national government) of Libya's foreign-owned banks and oil fields. Qadhafi spoke out in favor of Arab unity and strongly criticized Israel. He also urged Libyans to follow the strict teachings of the Islamic faith, such as those that ban smoking, drinking alcohol, and gambling.

Qadhafi announced the People's Revolution in a speech in April 1973. He claimed that he wanted to involve the people as much as possible in the exercising of political power by creating "elected people's committees." On March 2, 1977, the Socialist People's Libyan Arab Jamahiriyya (a term meaning "government by the masses") was proclaimed. Qadhafi called for the creation of "revolutionary committees" that did not have clearly defined powers but were called upon to "defend the Revolution." Some were worried about what Qadhafi's motives were. As a

result, there were many attempts, by both Libyans and the agents of foreign governments, to overthrow or kill Qadhafi in the early 1980s. He survived and remained the unquestioned leader of the republic, even though as part of the *Jamahiriyya* he had given up all formal titles.

Qadhafi was very active in foreign affairs, visiting many foreign countries and almost all Arab lands. He thought it was important to stress his opposition to Israel and his desire for Arab unity. However, his search for political agreements with other countries such as Sudan, Egypt, Tunisia, and Syria achieved only limited results and led to a great deal of mistrust. Qadhafi's opposition to Western interference with Libyan business also led to bad feelings between Libya and the United States. Moreover, the United States accused Libya of supporting armed opposition and terrorist movements in other countries.

Qadhafi claimed that his political concept, the Third Universal Theory, came from the principles of the Koran (the Islamic holy book) and was therefore in harmony with Islam. The publication of the three-part Green Book attempted to explain his ideas. It criticized representative democracies (the systems of government in which people elect representatives to make laws) as being dishonest. The book also claimed that political problems could be solved only by the direct participation of the masses in government, as laid down in the *Jamahiriyya*. Qadhafi also intended to create a business structure under which workers would become "partners, not employees." The Green Book also placed great emphasis on the role of the family. Himself married and the father of three children, Qadhafi lived simply, rejecting all luxuries and vices.

Supporter of terrorism

As acts of international terrorism became more frequent in the 1980s, Qadhafi drew increased attention as the source of training and funding for such activities. On December 27, 1985, Palestinian terrorists attacked airports in Rome, Italy, and Vienna, Austria. U.S. president Ronald Reagan (1911–) accused Libya of being behind the attacks, but Qadhafi denied involvement. On January 1, 1986, President Reagan ordered all U.S. citizens to leave Libya, and on April 14 the United States bombed the country. Nearly one hundred people were killed in the attack. Qadhafi was injured, and his infant daughter was killed.

After two Libyan men were accused of blowing up a Pan American jet over Lockerbie, Scotland, in 1988, killing 270 people, Qadhafi was ordered to turn over the suspects for trial. His refusal led the United Nations (UN) to impose sanctions (business or military measures adopted against a country to get that country to obey international law) against Libya. These sanctions were lifted in 1999 when the two men were finally brought to trial for the bombing. (One man was convicted.) However, a court in France ruled in 2000 that Qadhafi could be brought to trial in France for his role in another bombing in 1989. In that incident, 171 people were killed when a bomb exploded in a French airplane over the African country of Niger. Qadhafi continued to deny that he was a supporter of terrorism and refused demands that he make payments to families of victims.

Although U.S. sanctions against Libya remained in place, the removal of those imposed by the United Nations led to new efforts by Qadhafi to improve relations with other African and European countries. At a

July 2001 meeting of the Organization of African Unity, African leaders agreed to reorganize the group, to change its name to the African Union, and to work toward greater unity among all member nations. Qadhafi was the leader in the creation of this plan and spent \$1 million to support it. He also announced changes in Libya's government, including the dismissal of the prime minister and foreign minister. These changes, along with the executions of suspected spies and opponents of his policies, led many to believe that Qadhafi, remembering how he had come to power, was becoming more and more afraid of being overthrown himself.

For More Information

- Blundy, David, and Andrew Lycett. *Qaddafi and the Libyan Revolution*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1987.
- Cooley, J. K. *Libyan Sandstorm*. New York: Holt, Rinehart, Winston, 1982.
- Haley, P. E. *Qaddafi and the United States Since 1969*. New York: Praeger, 1984.
- Tremlett, George. *Gadaffi: The Desert Mystic*. New York: Carroll and Graff Publishers, 1993.



WALTER RALEIGH

Born: c. 1552

Devonshire, England

Died: October 29, 1618

London, England

English explorer, statesman, and courtier

The English statesman Sir Walter Raleigh was also a soldier, explorer, and a man of letters (a distinguished writer). As a champion of overseas expansion into the New World, Raleigh was a victim of mistrust and Spanish hatred.

Early life

Born into a wealthy family, Walter Raleigh (or Ralegh) was the son of a farmer who earned a great deal of money in shipping ventures. Through his father, Raleigh gained an interest in seafaring. Raleigh spent time at Oriel College, Oxford, England, before leaving to join the Huguenot (Protestant) army in the French religious war in 1569. Five years in France saw him safely through two major battles and the massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day, where beginning August 24, 1572, more than seventy thousand French protestants were killed. By 1576 he was in London as a lodger at the Middle Temple and saw his poems in print. His favorite poetic theme, the temporary state of all earthly things, was



Walter Raleigh.

popular with other poets of the Renaissance, a time of great cultural change led by the works of great artists and writers.

After two years in obscurity, Raleigh accompanied his half brother, Sir Humphrey Gilbert, on a voyage apparently in search of a Northwest Passage to the Orient (Eastern Asia). The voyage quickly developed into a privateering mission against the Spanish, where Raleigh hired out his ship to attack the Spanish. On their return in 1579, Raleigh and Gilbert faced the displeasure of the Privy Council, the advisors to the King. Raleigh's behavior did little to please the council, and he was imprisoned twice in six months for

disturbing the peace. Once out of jail, and at the head of a company of soldiers, he sailed to serve in the Irish wars.

Progress at court

Extravagant in dress and behavior, handsome, and superbly self-confident, Raleigh rose rapidly at court, which consisted of the royal family and its advisors. His opinion of Ireland was accepted by Queen Elizabeth (1558–1603), and she kept him home as an adviser. He received royal favor as well, including a house in London and two estates in Oxford.

Raleigh was knighted (given the honorary distinction of knighthood) in 1584 and the next year became the chief officer of the stannaries (or mines) in Devon and Cornwall, lord lieutenant of Cornwall, and vice admiral of the West. Although he was hated for his arrogance, his reforms (improvements) of the mining codes made him very popular. He sat for Devonshire in the Parliaments (meetings of the governing body of England) of 1584 and 1586 and then went on to succeed Sir Christopher Hatton as captain of the Queen's Guard—his highest office at court.

Overseas

By 1582 Humphrey Gilbert had organized a company to settle English Catholics in the Americas. Although forbidden by Elizabeth to accompany his half brother, Raleigh invested money and a ship of his own design to the mission. After Gilbert's death on the return from Newfoundland, a region that is now a province of eastern Canada, Raleigh was given a charter (authority from the queen) to "occupy and enjoy" new lands. Raleigh sailed as soon as he had his charter and reached the

Carolina shore of America, claiming the land for himself.

At the same time, Raleigh sought to persuade Elizabeth into a more active role in his proposed colonizing venture, which would settle lands newly discovered in America. Although unconvinced, she reluctantly gave a ship and some funds. Raleigh remained at court and devoted his energies to financing the operation. The first settlers were transported by Raleigh's cousin Sir Richard Grenville (1542–1591). Fights, lack of discipline, and hostile Indians led the colonists to return to England with Francis Drake (c.1543–1596) in 1586, bringing with them potatoes and tobacco—two things unknown in Europe until that time.

John White (died c.1593) led a second expedition the next year. The coming of the Spanish Armada (a large fleet of warships) delayed the sending of supplies for more than two years. When the relief ships reached the colony in 1591, it had vanished. Raleigh sent other expeditions to the Virginia coast but failed to establish a permanent settlement there. His charter would eventually be withdrawn by James I (1566–1625) in 1603.

Retirement from court

In 1591 Raleigh was to have gone to sea in search of the Spanish fleet, but Elizabeth refused permission. Instead, Grenville was sent and soon trapped by Spanish forces. Raleigh raised a new fleet to avenge his cousin. Upon his return Raleigh was imprisoned for a short time in the Tower of London because the queen had discovered his relationship with Elizabeth Throgmorton, one of her own maids of honor. (Raleigh later married Elizabeth Throgmorton.)

In 1596 Raleigh and his court rival, Robert Devereux (1566–1601), led a brilliantly successful raid on Cadiz, Spain, and he seemed to have finally satisfied Elizabeth. He was readmitted to court, continued to serve in Parliament, held more naval commands, and became governor of the island of Jersey. With Devereux's execution for treason (crimes against one's country), Raleigh's place as Elizabeth's favorite seemed secure. But the queen herself was near death, and Raleigh's enemies lost no time in poisoning the mind of James Stuart (1566–1625), her successor, against him.

His imprisonment

After James I took the throne, Raleigh was dismissed from his posts and forced out of his London house. Soon after, he was falsely connected to a plot against the king and was once again sentenced to the Tower, where he attempted to kill himself. Raleigh was sentenced to death, a sentence that would later be dropped. He was imprisoned for thirteen years.

Raleigh attracted the sympathy and friendship of James's eldest son, Henry, who sought his advice on matters of shipbuilding and naval defense. Raleigh dedicated his monumental "History of the World," written during this period of imprisonment, to the prince. Henry protested Raleigh's continued imprisonment but died before he could effect his release.

Last voyage

Freed early in 1616, Raleigh invested most of his remaining funds in the projected voyage to search for gold mines in South America. The expedition, which sailed in June of the follow-

ing year, was a disastrous failure. No treasure or mines were found, and Raleigh's men violated James's strict instructions to avoid fighting with Spanish colonists in the area. Still worse, during the battle with the Spaniards, Raleigh's eldest son, Walter, was killed.

Upon his return Raleigh was arrested once again. James and Sarmiento, the Spanish ambassador, wanted him tried on a charge of piracy, but since he was already under a sentence of death, a new trial was not possible. His execution would have to proceed from the charge of treason of 1603. James agreed to this course, and Raleigh was beheaded on October 29, 1618.

For More Information

Irwin, Margaret. *That Great Lucifer; a Portrait of Sir Walter Raleigh*. New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1960.

Kargon, Robert. *Atomism in England*. Oxford, England: Clarendon Press, 1966.

Korman, Susan. *Walter Raleigh: English Explorer and Author*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2001.

Wallace, Willard M. *Sir Walter Raleigh*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1959.

SRI

RAMAKRISHNA

Born: February 18, 1833

Kamapukur, India

Died: August 16, 1886

Calcutta, India

Indian religious leader and mystic

Sri Ramakrishna was an Indian mystic (one whose religious beliefs are based on spirituality and practices outside of traditional religion), reformer, and saint who, in his own lifetime, came to be hailed by people of all classes as a spiritual embodiment (taking on the physical form) of God.

Childhood

Born in a rural Bengal village in India, Sri Ramakrishna was the fourth of five children. His parents were simple but traditional Brahmins (Hindu religion) deeply committed to the maintenance of traditional religious piety, or religious devotion. Legend has it that when Ramakrishna's father, Khudiram, made a pilgrimage (religious journey) to the holy place of Gaya, he had a vision of the Hindu god Vishnu, who told Khudiram he would be reincarnated (take the form) of his next son. Likewise, Ramakrishna's mother, Chandra Devi, had visions that her next born would be a divine (god-like) child. Shortly afterwards, Chandra Devi gave birth to Sri Ramakrishna.

As a child, Ramakrishna did not like routine schoolwork and never learned to read or write. Instead, he began to demonstrate spiritual qualities well beyond his years, which included experiencing intensely joyful experiences, long periods of thought, and spiritual absorption in the sacred (holy) and traditional Indian plays, especially with the roles of the gods Shiva and Krishna. During his formal initiation ceremony into the Brahmin caste (an Indian social class), he shocked his high-caste relatives by openly accepting a ritual meal cooked by a woman of low caste.

Though Ramakrishna resisted traditional priestly studies, at the age of sixteen he went to Calcutta, India, to assist his brother, who

was serving as a priest for a number of local families. He was disturbed by the gross business practices and inhumanity of the city environment. However, when his brother was asked to become a priest at a large temple complex at Dakshineswar near the Ganges River outside Calcutta, Ramakrishna found a new and ultimately permanent environment for his spiritual growth and teaching.

Spiritual struggles

That temple complex—one of the most impressive in the area—had been built by a wealthy widow of low caste whose spiritual ideal (standard) was the mother goddess Kali. This great deity (god) traditionally combines the terror of death and destruction with universal motherly security and is often represented in a statue of ferocious appearance. She represents an immense variety of religious and human emotions, from the most primitive to the highest forms, and therefore has a symbolic universality not easily contained within traditional religious forms.

Ramakrishna was selected to serve as priest in the Kali temple, and it was here that he had a series of important religious experiences in which he felt that Kali was calling him to a universal spiritual mission for India and all mankind. His untraditional and often bizarre behavior during this period of spiritual transformation was interpreted by many as a sign of madness. However, it clearly represented his struggles to free himself from routine religious patterns and to achieve a new and deeper spirituality. He imitated the actions of the god-monkey Hanuman (a sign of humility and service); he fed animals from the same food prepared for Kali (a disrespect to the traditionalists); he cleaned an outcaste's hovel (the shack



Sri Ramakrishna.

of a person expelled from his or her caste) with his hair, a terrible insult for a Brahmin; he sang and danced wildly when the spirit moved; and he rejected his Brahminical status, believing that caste superiority lowered the character of his spirituality. All of these acts symbolized his inward spiritual transformation.

Spiritual maturity

When Ramakrishna was twenty-eight his emotional confusion eased, and he began to study a wide variety of traditional religious teachings. His teachers were impressed with his ability to learn, his amazing memory, and his remarkable talent for spiritual skill. He was openly hailed as a supreme sage, one who

is regarded for his wisdom and experience. At the age of thirty-three he began to study Muslim tradition, and after a short period of instruction he had a vision of a “radiant figure”—interpreted as the founder of Islam Mohammed (c. 570–632) himself, which solidified his universal religious calling.

In 1868 Ramakrishna undertook an extensive pilgrimage; but despite the honors given to him he was saddened by the poverty (extremely poor conditions) of the masses and began living with outcaste groups to bring awareness to their situation, insisting that his rich patrons (supporters) make formal efforts to improve their condition. He was always a man of the people: simple, full of warmth, and without snobbishness or religious dogma (system of beliefs).

World mission

By now Ramakrishna had a wide following from all classes and groups. He was not merely a great teacher; he was regarded as a physical form of the sacred source of Indian religious tradition and of the universal ideals toward which all men strive. His spiritual energies and attractive personality were combined with a sharp sense of humor—often aimed at himself or his disciples (followers) when the hazards of pride and self-satisfaction seemed impossible to avoid.

During the last decade of his life, one of the most important events was the conversion of his disciple Vivekananda (1863–1902), who was destined to organize and promote Ramakrishna’s teachings throughout India, Europe, and the United States. In 1886, when Ramakrishna was near death, he formally designated Vivekananda his spiritual heir, or one who takes over his teachings.

Ramakrishna’s teachings do not appear in any clear form. He wrote nothing. His disciples recorded his words only in the context of the spiritual force of his personality, and therefore in collected form these sayings have the character of a gospel—a message of salvation centered in the spiritual teachings of his own life. He rejected all efforts to worship him personally; rather, he suggested that his presentation of man’s spiritual potential serve as a guide and inspiration to others. Above all, Ramakrishna had a “grass-roots” appeal equaled by few others in any religious tradition, marked by his love of all men and his enthusiasm for all forms of spirituality.

For More Information

- Hixon, Lee. *Great Swan: Meetings with Ramakrishna*. Boston: Shambhala, 1992.
- Kripal, Jeffrey John. *Kali’s Child: The Mystical and the Erotic in the Life and Teachings of Ramakrishna Paramahansa*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1993.
- Müller, Friedrich Max. *Ramakrishna: His Life and Sayings*. New York: C. Scribner’s Sons, 1899. Reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1975.
- Nikhilananda, Swami, trans. *The Gospel of Sri Ramakrishna*. New York: Ramakrishna-Vivekananda Center, 1942.

**A. PHILIP
RANDOLPH**

Born: April 15, 1889
Crescent City, Florida

Died: May 16, 1979

New York, New York

*African American civil rights leader
and trade unionist*

The American labor and civil rights leader A. Philip Randolph, considered the most prominent of all African American trade unionists, was one of the major figures in the struggle for civil rights and racial equality.

Early life and education

Asa Philip Randolph was born in Crescent City, Florida, on April 15, 1889, the second of two sons of James and Elizabeth Randolph. His father was a traveling minister of the African Methodist Episcopal Church and his mother was also devoted to the church. Both of his parents were strong supporters of equal rights for African Americans. The young Randolph had a close relationship with his older brother, William. The brothers' early childhood games included role playing in which they worked for African American rights. The family moved to Jacksonville, Florida, in 1891. Asa attended local primary schools and later went on to the Cookman Institute in Jacksonville, Florida.

In the spring of 1911 Randolph left Florida for New York City, where he studied at the City College of New York while working as an elevator operator, a porter, and a waiter. While taking classes at the City College, Randolph discovered great works of literature, especially those of English playwright William Shakespeare (1564–1616), and he also began to sharpen his public speaking skills.

Beginning the fight

Following his marriage in 1914 to Lucille E. Green, he helped organize the Shakespearean Society in Harlem and played the roles of Hamlet, Othello, and Romeo, among others. At the age of twenty-one Randolph joined the Socialist Party of Eugene V. Debs (1855–1926). (The Socialist Party is a political party that believes the producers, or working class, should have the political power and ability to distribute goods.) In 1917 Randolph and Chandler Owen founded the *Messenger*, a radical publication now regarded by scholars as among the most brilliantly edited work in African American journalism.

Randolph's belief that the African American can never be politically free until he was economically secure led him to become the foremost supporter of the full integration of black workers into the American trade union movement (bringing blacks into the ranks of trade unions, which fight for the rights of workers). In 1925 he undertook the leadership of the campaign to organize the Brotherhood of Sleeping Car Porters (BSCP), which would become the first African American union in the country. The uphill battle, marked by fierce resistance from the Pullman Company (who was then the largest employers of African Americans in the country), was finally won in 1937 and made possible the first contract ever signed by a white employer with an African American labor leader. Later, Randolph served as president emeritus (honorary president) of the BSCP and a vice-president of the American Federation of Labor and Congress of Industrial Organizations.



A. Philip Randolph.

Reproduced by permission of Fisk University Library.

Making changes

In the 1940s Randolph developed the strategy of mass protest to win two major executive orders, or orders from the government. In 1941, with America's entrance into World War II (1939–45), he developed the idea of a massive march on Washington, D.C., to protest the exclusion (to keep out) of African American workers from jobs in the industries that were producing war supplies. He agreed to call off the march only after President Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945) issued Executive Order 8802, which banned discrimination (selection based on race) in defense plants and established the nation's

first Fair Employment Practice Committee. In 1948 Randolph warned President Harry Truman (1884–1972) that if segregation (separation based on race) in the armed forces was not abolished (to put an end to), masses of African Americans would refuse entering the armed forces. Soon Executive Order 9981 was issued to comply with his demands.

In 1957 Randolph organized the Prayer Pilgrimage to Washington to support civil rights efforts in the South, and in 1957 and 1958 he organized a Youth March for Integrated Schools. In August 1963, Randolph organized the March on Washington, D.C., fighting for jobs and freedom. This was the site of Martin Luther King Jr.'s (1929–1968) famed "I Have a Dream," speech, and a quarter million people went in support. Randolph was called "the chief" by King. And in 1966, at the White House conference "To Fulfill These Rights," he proposed a ten-year program called a "Freedom Budget" which would eliminate poverty for all Americans regardless of race.

Legacy

The story of Randolph's career reads like a history of the struggles for unionization (creating trade unions) and civil rights in this century. He lent his voice to each struggle and enhanced the development of democracy (government by the people) and equality in America. Randolph always said that his inspiration came from his father. "We never felt that we were inferior to any white boys," Randolph said. "We were told constantly and continuously that 'you are as able,' 'you are as competent,' and 'you have as much intellectuality as any individual.'" Randolph died on May 16, 1979.

However, Randolph's message lived on. Seventeen years after his death, Randolph's civil

HARUN AL-RASHID

rights leadership and labor activism became the subject of a 1996 Public Broadcasting Service (PBS) documentary, "A. Philip Randolph: For Jobs and Freedom." The tribute that took him from "obscurity" to a force that "moved presidents," was presented during Black History Month, in February, telling his story through reenactments, film footage, and photos.

Included were powerful images of the quest, including the formation of the National Association for the Promotion of Labor Unionism Among Negroes in 1919 and the twelve-year battle to organize porters in spite of the Pullman Company's use of spies and firings to stop it.

Throughout Randolph's years as a labor and civil rights leader, he rocked the foundations of racial segregation, pressuring presidents and corporations alike to recognize the need to fix the injustices heaped on African Americans. Embracing a nonviolent, forward-looking activism, Randolph will be remembered as both a radical activist and "Saint Philip."

For More Information

- Anderson, Jervis. *A. Philip Randolph: A Biographical Portrait*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1986.
- Branch, Taylor. *Parting the Waters: America in the King Years, 1954–1963*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1988.
- Cwiklik, Robert. *A. Philip Randolph and the Labor Movement*. Brookfield, CT: Millbrook Press, 1993.
- Hanley, Sally. *A. Philip Randolph*. New York: Chelsea House, 1989.
- Patterson, Lillie. *A. Philip Randolph: Messenger for the Masses*. New York: Facts on File, 1996.

Born: c. 766

Reyy, Persia

Died: c. 809

Tus, Persia

Persian caliph

Harun al-Rashid became the fifth caliph (religious and political leader of an Islamic state) of the Abbasid dynasty (ruling family) in September 786 at the age of twenty. During his reign the power and prosperity of the dynasty was at its height, though it has also been argued that its decline began at that time.

Early life

Harun al-Rashid was born at Reyy near Tehran, Iran, in 766. He was the third son of the third Abbasid caliph, Mohammed al-Mahdi and his wife Khayzurán, a former slave from Yemen. Harun was raised as a prince in the court at Baghdad, Iran. At the age of sixteen he was named second heir after his older brother, Musa al-Hadi.

Rashid's instructor and aide during his early youth was Yahya ibn Khalid the Barmakid (a powerful Persian family). Yahya continued to advise Rashid when he was named the leader of military expeditions against the Byzantines at age fourteen. The Byzantines were inhabitants of Byzantium, the seat of the Christian Empire. Rashid was rewarded for the success of these campaigns by being named governor of Ifriqiyah (Tunisia), Egypt, Syria, Armenia, and Azerbaijan Province in Iran. The honorific, or title, of al-Rashid (the Upright) was added to his name.



Harun al-Rashid.

*Reproduced by permission of Hulton-Getty/
Tony Stone Impressions.*

Rashid's father died in 785 and his brother al-Hadi assumed the throne. Al-Hadi, however, died mysteriously in September 786. His death was said to have been the result of a court conspiracy or plot. Rashid was proclaimed caliph. He at once appointed Yahya as his vizier, or primary minister.

His reign

Rashid, for the first seventeen years of his reign, relied to a great extent on his vizier and two of the vizier's sons, al-Fadl and Jafar. Yahya appears to have been an exceptionally

good administrator. He is known for showing great wisdom in selecting and training his staff. His two sons had similar qualities. However, they fell from favor suddenly on the night of January 28, 803, when they were imprisoned and had their lands taken from them. The basic reason for this action was that the Barmakid family had become too powerful.

By this time Rashid was finding it difficult to hold his vast empire together. There was an almost constant series of local uprisings. An independent territory was established in Morocco by the Idrisid dynasty in 789. The following year, a semi-independent territory was established in Tunisia by the Aghlabid dynasty. These events marked a significant loss of power by Rashid's central government.

The danger of breaking up the government was further increased by Rashid's unwise arrangement for succession. One son, al-Amin, was to become caliph and another son, al-Mamun, was to have control of certain provinces and of a section of the army.

The seat of the Christian Empire was Byzantium (Constantinople). Rashid took a personal interest in the campaigns against the Byzantines. He led expeditions against them in 797, 803, and 806. In 797 the Byzantine empress Irene made peace and agreed to pay a large sum of money. Her successor, the emperor Nicephorus, later denounced this treaty. In 806 he was forced to make an even more humiliating treaty, which required paying annual tribute to Baghdad.

Though it is not mentioned in Arabic sources, there seem to have been diplomatic contacts between Rashid and Charlemagne

(c. 742–814), the most famous European ruler of the Middle Ages. Rashid recognized Charlemagne as protector of Christian pilgrims to Jerusalem.

Rashid died at Tus in eastern Persia in 809, during an expedition to restore order there.

The view of history

The poet Alfred, Lord Tennyson, thinking of some of the stories of the *Arabian Nights*, spoke of “the good Haroun Alraschid.” However, the scholar R. A. Nicholson thought he was an “irascible [irritable; readily angered] tyrant, whose fitful amiability [good-naturedness] and real taste for music and letters hardly entitle him to be described either as a great monarch or a good man.”

Despite all its violence and cruelty and its readiness to have human beings executed and tortured, the court of Harun al-Rashid undoubtedly had something which later ages admire. It was far from being without a conscience, and in the quality of its living there were elements of grandeur and a nobility of style; and the tone of this life was set by Rashid and the Barmakids.

For More Information

Clot, André. *Harun al-Rashid and the World of the Thousand and One Nights*. Edited by John Howe. New York: New Amsterdam, 1989.

El-Hibri, Tayeb. *Reinterpreting Islamic Historiography: Harun al-Rashid and the Narrative of the Abbasid Caliphate*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1999.

RONALD REAGAN

Born: February 6, 1911

Tampico, Illinois

American president, actor, and governor

Beginning as a radio sports announcer, Ronald Reagan enjoyed success as a movie actor and television personality before beginning a political career. After two terms as governor of California (1967–1975), he defeated Democrat Jimmy Carter (1924–) for the presidency in 1980 and was re-elected in 1984.

Illinois youth

Born on February 6, 1911, in Tampico, Illinois, Ronald Wilson Reagan was the second son of John Edward (“Jack”) and Nelle Wilson Reagan. His parents were relatively poor, and Jack Reagan moved the family to a number of small Illinois towns trying to establish himself in business. When Ronald was nine the family moved to Dixon, Illinois, where he grew to adulthood.

Nicknamed “Dutch,” young Reagan liked solitude but was popular. He enjoyed nature, reading, and especially sports. His father’s alcoholism caused problems at home, but his mother was a powerful force for stability. As a teenager and young man, Reagan gained fame for his accomplishments as a lifeguard, rescuing seventy-seven people during the summers of 1926 to 1933, while working in a park along Illinois’s Rock River. (Reagan also dove into the river to “save” one swimmer’s dentures from the river bottom—for which he received a ten-dollar tip.) Rea-

gan graduated from Dixon High School in 1928 and enrolled the following fall at Eureka College, a small Illinois school affiliated with his mother's church. He graduated from Eureka in 1932.

On the air and screen

Graduating in the middle of the national and world economic crisis known as the Great Depression (1929-39), Reagan eventually found a job in Davenport, Iowa, as a sports announcer for a radio station. His skill soon earned him a position at WHO in Des Moines, Iowa. At the station one of his chief duties was to reconstruct Chicago Cubs baseball game broadcasts from reports sent by telegraph (a communication device that uses coded signals to send messages). In 1937 Reagan persuaded WHO to send him to cover the Cubs' spring training games in California. However, his real motive was to try to launch an acting career in Hollywood, and he was soon appearing in the movies.

As an actor Reagan received decent reviews, but not especially good roles. In 1940, however, he landed a role that made him famous, playing college football star George Gipp in the movie *Knute Rockne—All American*. In January 1940 he married actress Jane Wyman (1914–), with whom he had a daughter and adopted a son, although another infant born to them died in June 1947. The marriage began to fail shortly thereafter, and Reagan and Wyman divorced in June of 1948.

Part of the cause for the divorce was apparently Reagan's near-obsession in the late 1940s with the business of the Screen Actors Guild. He was president of the guild, which is the labor union for movie actors, from

1947 to 1952, and again in 1959. During this time he also became well known for his strong anticommunist views. Meanwhile, his own acting career began to falter, as he was offered a limited range of roles. Personally, however, he achieved happiness with his marriage in March 1952 to actress Nancy Davis (1921–). The couple had two children.

Disappointed by his diminishing movie opportunities and financially pressed, Reagan soon turned to television. Signed by the General Electric (G.E.) company in 1954 as the host of the company's weekly half-hour dramatic series, *General Electric Theater*, Reagan was a TV success. Taking advantage of Reagan's popularity, G.E. insisted that he go on personal appearance tours, speaking at G.E. factories. Within a few years, he perfected "the speech": a salute to private enterprise with an "anticollectivist" (anticommunist) message, combined with a sales pitch for G.E. products.

Governor and candidate

In 1962 Reagan formally registered as a member of the Republican Party. He began to plunge full time into political activities. He captured national attention with a speech supporting Republican presidential candidate Barry Goldwater in 1964.

By early 1965 a group of prominent California conservatives (people who resist change and prefer to keep traditions) decided Reagan should run for governor of their state. Benefiting from massive financial support, shrewd campaigning, and a strong conservative trend among California's voters, Reagan easily won the Republican primary. Running against Democratic governor Edmund G. (Pat) Brown (1905–1996) in the general election, he won with 58 percent of the vote in 1966.

Reagan took immediate, dramatic action as governor, approving sweeping cuts in the state's budget and a freeze on additional hiring for state agencies. He also raised state income-tax rates. Reelected in 1970, he established a reputation for sound financial management and pressed for reform of the state welfare system, tightening the requirements applicants needed to meet in order to receive aid from the state.

During his first term Reagan made an energetic run for the 1968 Republican presidential nomination. He did not win the nomination, but his campaign established him as a future presidential possibility. In 1976 he gave Republican president Gerald Ford (1913–) a hard but unsuccessful race for his party's nomination. Reagan then became his party's leading candidate for the 1980 Republican nomination.

Early White House years

After announcing his candidacy once again in late 1979, Reagan campaigned aggressively as a strong conservative. His masterful performance in a televised debate with President Jimmy Carter (1924–) sealed his victory. In November 1980 Reagan became the nation's fortieth president. His election was viewed by many as a “new beginning,” as the Republicans also won control of the Senate.

As chief executive Reagan maintained generally high ratings in public-opinion polls. He was wounded in March 1981 when John Hinckley attempted to assassinate him, an event that boosted public support still further. Although he irritated his most conservative supporters when, in 1981, he appointed the first female Supreme Court justice, San-



Ronald Reagan.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

dra Day O'Connor (1930–), he kept most of his conservative following by sticking to his goal of reducing taxes and increasing defense spending while also reducing spending for social programs. In 1981 Reagan persuaded Congress to pass a large, three-year reduction in income-tax rates, even though federal deficits were more than \$100 billion per year. The issue of deficits—spending that exceeds revenue—continued to trouble the Reagan presidency.

The “Great Communicator”

Reagan's skill in handling the media earned him the nickname the “Great Commu-

nicator” and allowed him to become the spokesman and symbol of the political movement that elected him. However, his actions as president were not always as aggressive as his words. Although he darkly referred to the Soviet Union as “evil,” he ended the Carter-imposed halt on grain shipments to that country. He committed a large number of U.S. Marines to help keep peace during the civil war in the Middle East nation of Lebanon, but he removed them after an attack against them led to 240 American deaths.

Reagan's second term

By 1984 Reagan appeared difficult to beat for re-election. In the November polling, he defeated Democratic challenger Walter Mondale (1928–) easily, with 58 percent of the popular vote. After winning re-election, Reagan continued to talk tough concerning the Soviet Union, but he also worked to pursue an agreement with the country to limit weapons. Meetings with Soviet leader Mikhail Gorbachev (1931–) in 1985 and 1986 accomplished little toward that goal, however, and Reagan pressed ahead with an aggressive program of national defense.

Meanwhile, economic problems at home did not improve, as the deficit continued at record-high levels and the nation continued to import more than it exported. In addition, in late 1986 Reagan ran into serious problems due to the “Iran-contra” scandal. This scandal involved a secret sale of arms to Iran, apparently to gain the release of American hostages held by terrorists in Lebanon who supported Iran. The profits of the sale were directed towards aid to the “contras”—forces struggling to overthrow a socialist government in Nicaragua. Congress, however, had

banned such aid. Congressional hearings on the scandal captured headlines throughout 1987, revealing significant misstatements by Reagan and apparent misuse of power by some in his administration.

As Reagan's second term drew to a close, it was clear that he had not accomplished the conservative “revolution” predicted in 1980. However, an important part of his legacy was the increased conservatism of the Supreme Court. Reagan's appointment to the court of justices O'Connor, Antonin Scalia (1936–), and Anthony Kennedy (1936–), along with the promotion of William Rehnquist (1924–) to the position of Chief Justice, had moved the court strongly to the right.

Struggle with Alzheimer's

After his return to private citizenship in 1989, Reagan continued to be a popular and active public figure. By the mid-1990s, however, Reagan had been diagnosed with Alzheimer's disease, an ultimately fatal degeneration, or breaking down, of the central nervous system. As his condition deteriorated, Reagan withdrew from public appearances.

Throughout his presidency, Reagan maintained a hold on the public's affection unequalled since the presidency of Dwight Eisenhower (1890–1969). Many would agree that Ronald Reagan, however history might judge his presidency, possessed a gift for inspiring the American people with his speaking style and personality.

For More Information

Blumenthal, Sidney, and Thomas Byrne Edsall. *The Reagan Legacy*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1988.

- Cannon, Lou. *President Reagan: The Role of a Lifetime*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1991. Reprint, New York: Public Affairs, 2000.
- Edwards, Anne. *Early Reagan*. New York: Morrow, 1987.
- Judson, Karen. *Ronald Reagan*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.
- Morris, Edmund. *Dutch: A Memoir of Ronald Reagan*. New York: Random House, 1999.
- Noonan, Peggy. *When Character Was King: A Story of Ronald Reagan*. New York: Viking, 2001.
- Pemberton, William E. *Exit with Honor: The Life and Presidency of Ronald Reagan*. Armonk, NY: M. E. Sharpe, 1997.
- Reagan, Ronald. *An American Life*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1990.

CHRISTOPHER REEVE

Born: September 25, 1952

New York, New York

American actor and activist

Best known for the lead role in *Superman*, Christopher Reeve has dedicated his life to those with disabilities ever since he suffered an injury that left him paralyzed from the neck down.

Rise to stardom

Christopher Reeve was born September 25, 1952, the oldest of two sons born to

Franklin D. Reeve, a novelist, translator, and university professor, and Barbara Pitney Lamb Johnson, a journalist. Reeve's parents were divorced when he was about four years old, and he moved with his mother and brother to Princeton, New Jersey. Although he enjoyed a privileged childhood following his mother's remarriage to a stockbroker, he nevertheless had to cope with the anger and tension that characterized his parents' relationship.

Reeve would often pass the time during his youth playing the piano, swimming, sailing, or engaging in some other similar activity. While he was still just a child around ten or so the stage began to call. His very first role was in a Princeton theater company's production of Gilbert and Sullivan's *The Yeoman of the Guard*, and after that experience, Reeve was hooked. Later, as a gawky teenager lacking in self-confidence, he found that acting helped him overcome his feelings of clumsiness and insecurity. Reeve starred in virtually every stage production at his exclusive private high school and also spent the summer months immersed in the theater, either as a student or an actor. By the time he was sixteen, he was a true professional with an Actors' Equity Association membership card and an agent.

After graduating from high school in 1970, Reeve attended Cornell University, where he earned a bachelor's degree in English and music theory in 1974. Meanwhile, he continued his drama education, serving as a backstage observer at both the Old Vic in London, England, and the Comedie-Francaise in Paris, France, before enrolling in the Juilliard School for Drama in New York City to pursue graduate studies.



Christopher Reeve.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Reeve's first major acting assignment came shortly after his graduation from Cornell when he joined the cast of the television soap opera *Love of Life*. He remained with the program for two years, during which time he also performed on stage in the evenings with various New York City theater companies, including the Manhattan Theater Club and the Circle Repertory Company. In 1975 Reeve headed to California and won his first movie role, a bit part in a 1978 nuclear submarine disaster movie titled *Gray Lady Down*. But when no other work was forthcoming, he returned to New York City and appeared in an off-Broadway play that opened in January 1977.

Superman

Then, to Reeve's surprise, Hollywood came calling with an offer to try out for the role of Superman in an upcoming film of the same title. At first, Reeve thought the idea was downright silly and very untheatrical, but when he read the script, he loved it. When *Superman* premiered in December 1978, it met with almost universal critical praise and box-office success. Suddenly, Reeve was a megastar with all of the baggage that entailed, including countless demands on his time, a total loss of privacy, and the danger of being offered only similar roles to the "Man of Steel."

Superman II, which Reeve had agreed to do when he signed on for the first film, was spectacularly successful upon its debut in mid-1981. The critics also liked it, with some even saying that it was better than the first movie. Throughout the 1980s and early 1990s, Reeve enjoyed an increasingly busy film career. Besides reprising his most famous role in *Superman III* (1983) and *Superman IV: The Quest for Peace* (1987), which he also helped write, Reeve appeared in about a dozen other pictures, including *Deathtrap* (1982), *Noises Off* (1992), *The Remains of the Day* (1993), and *Village of the Damned* (1995).

Tragedy strikes the Man of Steel

On May 27, 1995, Reeve's world was shattered in a matter of seconds when he was thrown from his horse head first during an equestrian competition in Virginia. The impact smashed the two upper vertebrae in his spine, leaving him completely paralyzed from the neck down and able to breathe only with assistance from a ventilator. Reeve remained in intensive care for five weeks as

he fought off sickness, underwent surgery to fuse the broken vertebrae in his neck, and weathered several other life-threatening complications of his injury.

With Reeve's characteristic grit and determination, he set about the task of putting his life in order. He mastered the art of talking between breaths of his ventilator. He learned how to use his specialized wheelchair, which he commands by blowing puffs of air into a straw-like control device. Always hungry for the smallest sign of progress, he did countless exercises, competing against himself to improve and grow stronger.

Reeve astounded his friends and admirers by making his first public appearance on October 16, 1995, less than six months after his accident. The occasion was an awards dinner held by the Creative Coalition, an actors' advocacy organization he had helped establish. Reeve joked with the audience about what had happened to him and immediately put everyone at ease, then introduced his old friend Robin Williams (1952–), who was being honored for the work he had done on behalf of the group.

Facing the future

The awards dinner was just the beginning for Reeve, who has since channeled his considerable energies into a wide variety of endeavors. Before his accident, Reeve was an activist on behalf of children's issues, human rights, the environment, and the National Endowment for the Arts (NEA). He has since assumed the role of national spokesman for the disabled, especially those people who, like him, have suffered spinal-cord injuries. He is also the founder of the Christopher Reeve Paralysis Foundation, which raises funds for

biomedical research and acts as a champion for the disabled, and serves as chairman of the American Paralysis Association.

Meanwhile, Reeve continues to cope with the daily trials and occasional triumphs related to his quadriplegia, or being paralyzed from the neck down. "You don't want the condition to define you," he once commented, "and yet it occupies your every thought." While he may never be completely free of his respirator (a device to help one breathe), he does manage to go without it for several hours at a time. He can move his head and shrug his shoulders, and he reports some movement and sensation in his hands and feet.

Reeve is determined to walk again; one of his fondest dreams has been to stand up on his fiftieth birthday in 2002 and offer a toast to all of the people who helped him get to that point. "When John Kennedy promised that by the end of the 1960s we would put a man on the moon," Reeve told *Time* magazine, "everybody, including the scientists, shook their heads in dismay. But we did it. We can cure spinal-cord injuries too, if there's the will. What was possible in outer space is possible in inner space."

Christopher Reeve, husband to Dana Morisini since 1992, is the father of three children. He continues to be an inspiration to many, frequently traveling across the world to speak and to support various groups and organizations.

For More Information

Havill, Adrian. *Man of Steel: The Career and Courage of Christopher Reeve*. New York: Signet, 1996.

Nickson, Chris. *Superhero: A Biography of Christopher Reeve*. New York: St. Martin's/Thomas Dunne, 1998.

Reeve, Christopher. *Still Me*. New York: Random House, 1998.

ERICH MARIA REMARQUE

Born: July 22, 1898

Osnabrück, Germany

Died: September 25, 1970

Locarno, Switzerland

German-born American author

The German-born American author Erich Maria Remarque was a popular novelist whose *All Quiet on the Western Front*, describing the soldier's life in World War I (1914–18; a war involving Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Turkey on one side, and Great Britain, France, Russia, Italy, Japan, and the United States on the other), was a best-seller.

Early life

Erich Maria Remarque, whose real name was Erich Paul Remark, was born on July 22, 1898, in Osnabrück, Germany, the only son among Peter Franz Remark and Anna Maria Remark's three children. His father worked as a bookbinder. The family was poor and moved at least eleven times during Remarque's childhood. He began writing at age sixteen or seventeen.

Remarque attended the University of Münster and was planning for a career as an

elementary school teacher. Toward the end of World War I, which Germany had entered in support of Austria-Hungary, he was drafted into the army. While recovering in a German hospital from wounds suffered during the war, Remarque worked on *Die Traumbude* (*The Dream Room*), his first novel, which was published in 1920. Around this time he switched to the original French spelling of his last name. After the war he worked as a press reader, teacher, salesman, and racing driver, among other professions.

Popular success

The immense success of *Im Westen nichts Neues* (1929; *All Quiet on the Western Front*) established Remarque as an author. This novel falls into a class of antiwar and antimilitary fiction that grew rapidly in Germany in the later 1920s—Arnold Zweig's (1887–1968) *Sergeant Grischa* is another famous example. These books are characterized by a matter-of-fact, often conversational style similar to that of a newspaper or magazine report.

Although Remarque conceals little of the horror and bloodiness of life in the trenches, at the same time there is a sentimental streak in the book that is maintained strongly right through to the last pages, in which, following the death of his friend, the hero himself dies two weeks before the end of the war, on a day when all is reported quiet at the front. *All Quiet on the Western Front* was translated into some twenty-five languages and sold over thirty million copies. The 1930 film version of the book was a huge box-office hit and won several Academy Awards.

Blacklisted in Germany

Remarque's next book was also a war novel, *Der Weg zurück* (1931; *The Road Back*). *Drei Kameraden* (1937; *Three Comrades*) deals with life in postwar Germany and is also a tragic love story. By 1929 Remarque had left Germany and lived in Switzerland. The pacifism (opposition to war or violence) in his works and their strong sense of sadness and suffering made them very unpopular with the Nazi government (the controlling party in Germany beginning in the 1930s that scorned democracy and considered all non-Germans, and especially Jewish people, as inferior). In 1938, in fact, Remarque was stripped of his German citizenship.

In 1939 Remarque arrived in the United States, and he became an American citizen in 1947. His next novel, *Liebe deinen Nächsten* (1940), was published in America under the title *Flotsam*. After World War II (1939–45), in which Germany, Japan, and Italy were defeated by the Allies (including the United States, Great Britain, France, and the Soviet Union, among others), Remarque's productivity increased, and he turned more and more to the study of personal relationships set against a background of war and social destruction. *Arc de Triomphe* (1946), the story of a German refugee (someone who is forced to live outside of his or her own country) doctor in Paris, France, just before World War II, returned Remarque's name to the best-seller lists.

Later years

Remarque's later works include *Zeit zu leben und Zeit zu sterben* (1954; *A Time to Love and a Time to Die*), *Der schwarze Obelisk*



Erich Maria Remarque.

Reproduced by permission of Mr. Jerry Bauer.

(1956; *The Black Obelisk*), *Der Funke Leben* (1957; *Spark of Life*), *Der Himmel kennt keine Günstlinge* (1961; *Heaven Has No Favorites*), and *Die Nacht von Lissabon* (1962; *The Night in Lisbon*). All these novels are gripping and skillful stories of personal crisis, escape, and adventure. Remarque also had one play produced, *Die letzte Station* (1956; *The Last Station*). Erich Maria Remarque died in Locarno, Switzerland, on September 25, 1970.

For More Information

Barker, Christine R., and R. W. Last. *Erich Maria Remarque*. New York: Barnes & Noble Books, 1979.

Gilbert, Julie Goldsmith. *Opposite Attraction: The Lives of Erich Maria Remarque and Paulette Goddard*. New York: Pantheon, 1995.

REMBRANDT

Born: July 15, 1606

Leiden, Netherlands

Died: October 4, 1669

Netherlands

Dutch artist

Rembrandt was one of the most important artists of the great age of Dutch painting. In range, originality, and expressive power, his large production of paintings, drawings, and etchings has never been surpassed.

Childhood

Rembrandt Harmensz van Rijn was born in Leiden, Netherlands, on July 15, 1606, next to the last of the nine or more children of a miller, Harmen Gerritsz van Rijn, and a baker's daughter, Cornelia Neeltgen Willemsdr. van Zuytbroeck. For seven years Rembrandt was a student at the Latin school, and then, in 1620, he enrolled at Leiden University at the age of thirteen. After only a few months, however, he left to pursue his true passion—painting. He was an apprentice (a person working to learn a skill) for three years to the painter Jacob Isaacsz van Swanenburgh, who had studied in Italy.

In 1624 Rembrandt went to Amsterdam to work with Pieter Lastman, a painter of bib-

lical, mythological, and historical scenes. After Lastman's death in 1633, Rembrandt continued to use his teacher's subjects and motifs (dominant themes). It was Lastman's ability to tell a story visually that impressed his youthful pupil. The earliest known works by Rembrandt, beginning with the *Stoning of St. Stephen* (1625), show an only partially successful imitation of Lastman's style, applied to scenes in which a number of figures are involved in a dramatic action.

By 1625 Rembrandt was working independently in Leiden. He was closely associated at this time with Jan Lievens (1607–1674), also a student of Lastman's. The two young men worked so similarly that even in their own lifetime there was doubt as to which of them was responsible for a particular painting. They used the same models and even worked on each other's pictures.

By 1631 Rembrandt was ready to compete with the accomplished portrait painters of Amsterdam. His portrait of the Amsterdam merchant Nicolaes Ruts (1631) is an amazing likeness executed with a degree of assurance that makes it clear why its author was in demand as a portraitist (an artist who draws or paints a person, usually the head and shoulders).

Early Amsterdam years

Around 1631 or 1632 Rembrandt moved to Amsterdam, where he had already achieved some recognition as a portraitist. Both his career and his personal life prospered. After an engagement of more than a year, he married a well-to-do young woman, Saskia van Uijlenburgh. In 1639 the young couple set themselves up in a fine house in the Breestraat, now maintained as a museum, the Rembrandthuis. Like many wealthy men

of his time, Rembrandt soon began to collect works of art, armor, costumes, and curiosities (unusual trinkets) from far places. He used some of these objects as props in his paintings and etchings (images that are the result of transferring an image off a metal plate onto paper with the use of chemicals).

Rembrandt's works of the mid-1630s were his most baroque, an elaborate style developed in the sixteenth century; indeed he seemed to be purposefully challenging the enormous reputation of painter Peter Paul Rubens (1577–1640). This is most expressed in the scenes from the *Passion of Christ* (1633–1639). The etching *Angel Appearing to the Shepherds* (1634) shows how the same drama and excitement, the combination of fine detail with a grand new sweep based largely on bringing together the composition through light and shadow, and the choice of the crucial moment—all characteristic of Rembrandt's baroque style—showed in his graphic works as well as his paintings in this period.

Middle period

One of Rembrandt's largest and most famous paintings is the group portrait known since the mid-eighteenth century as the *Night Watch*. This is, in fact, not a night scene at all, and it is correctly titled the *Militia Company of Captain Frans Banning Cocq*. The painting was unfortunately cut down in the eighteenth century. There is no foundation at all for the legend that Captain Cocq and his company were unhappy with their painting and that this failure began a decline in Rembrandt's fortunes that lasted until the end of his life. In fact, there is considerable evidence that the picture was highly praised from the start.



Rembrandt.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Such difficulties as Rembrandt had were not caused by any rejection of his work.

Having had three children who died in infancy, Saskia gave birth to a fourth child, Titus, in September 1641. In June 1642 Saskia died. Geertge Dirx then entered Rembrandt's household in order to take care of Titus. Hendrickje Stoffels, who is first mentioned in connection with Rembrandt in 1649, remained with him until her death in 1663. She left a daughter, Cornelia, who had been born to them in 1654.

About 1640 Rembrandt developed a new interest in landscape which lasted through the next two decades. A series of

drawings and etchings show keen observation of nature, great originality in composing, and marvelous economy. The etched *View of Amsterdam* (c.1640) influenced the landscape paintings of Jacob van Ruisdael (c.1628–1682). The tiny painting *Winter Landscape* (1646) has all the earmarks of having been painted from life, on the spot. This would be a rare case in seventeenth-century Dutch landscape, which usually was painted in the studio from sketches.

Later years

The first Anglo-Dutch War (1652–54; when England battled the Dutch Republic) may have played a part in Rembrandt's financial difficulties, of which there is evidence from 1653 on. All of his prized possessions were sold at auction, beginning in December 1657, and three years later Rembrandt, Titus, and Hendrickje moved to a smaller house.

In 1652 a Sicilian nobleman who was a discerning (selective and shrewd) collector commissioned a painting from Rembrandt. If the painting was satisfactory, two more were to be ordered. *Aristotle Contemplating a Bust of Homer* was completed in 1653 and shipped off to Sicily, and the two additional pictures were sent in 1661. The meaning of the *Aristotle* is not yet fully understood, but its quality is unquestionable.

Rembrandt's *Self-Portrait* (1658) shows the aging artist seated squarely before us, meeting our eyes with forthright gaze, and wearing a fantastic costume whose sharp horizontals and verticals stress the composition based on right angles that best represents this period. A number of admirable etched portraits also date from this time, as well as etchings of religious subjects, such as the impres-

sive *Ecce homo* (1655), which reflects an engraving made in 1510 by the great Dutch graphic artist Lucas van Leyden (1494–1533).

Later years

In 1660 and 1661 Rembrandt painted an enormous canvas for the splendid new town hall in Amsterdam. It was the *Conspiracy of the Batavians*, or the *Oath of Julius Civilis*, known to us through the remaining fragment and a pen-and-wash drawing of the entire composition.

Hendrickje died in 1663. In September 1668 Titus died as well. The lonely Rembrandt continued to paint. His last *Self-Portrait* is dated 1669. When he died in Amsterdam, on October 4, 1669, a painting, *Simeon with the Christ Child in the Temple*, was left unfinished on his easel.

For More Information

- Bonafoux, Pascal. *Rembrandt, Master of the Portrait*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1992.
- Gerson, Horst. *Rembrandt Paintings*. New York: Reynal, 1968.
- Schama, Simon. *Rembrandt's Eyes*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1999.
- White, Christopher. *Rembrandt and His World*. New York: Viking, 1964.

JANET
RENO

Born: July 21, 1938

Miami, Florida

American attorney general

Janet Reno was the seventy-fifth attorney general of the United States and the first woman ever to serve as attorney general, the nation's top law-enforcement job. She sought new frontiers for the Justice Department, which is led by the attorney general and is a powerful force for creating social change.

A Florida family

Reno was born on July 21, 1938, in Miami, Florida. The first of four children of journalists Henry and Jane Reno, she grew up in South Dade County, Florida. Her father, a Danish immigrant, wrote for the *Miami Herald* for forty-three years. As a police reporter, covering news of the police department and local crime, he became friends with judges and law enforcement personnel. This world became familiar to Reno at an early age. Her mother, a reporter for the *Miami News*, is remembered as an offbeat intellectual who wrestled alligators, read poetry, and befriended the Seminole Indians. She built with her own hands the Reno family home on the edge of Florida's swampy Everglades region.

Growing up near the Everglades, Reno developed a love of the outdoors. She was fond of canoeing, camping, and athletics. She imagined she might become a baseball player, a doctor, or a marine biologist. As an adult, however, her ambitions turned toward matters of justice and law.

Becoming a lawyer

After graduating from high school, Reno attended Cornell University, earning a degree in chemistry in 1960. Following Cornell she enrolled at Harvard University Law School, becoming one of only sixteen women in a class of five hundred. The legal profession

was full of obstacles for women in those times, and in 1962 Reno was denied a summer job at a well-known Miami law firm "because she was a woman." The next year, however, she entered the legal profession with her law degree in hand.

From 1963 to 1971 Reno worked as a lawyer for two Miami law firms. In 1971 she gained political experience when she joined the staff of the Judiciary Committee of the Florida House of Representatives. In the spring of 1973 she provided legal assistance to the Florida Senate on a project to revise the state's system of rules and regulations for criminal procedures. These experiences were followed by a job as assistant state attorney for the Eleventh Judiciary Circuit of Florida. She worked for the Judiciary Circuit (the term refers to state court activities within a particular district) from 1973 to 1976.

In 1978 Reno was appointed as state attorney for Dade County. This made her the first woman ever named to the position of top prosecutor for a county in Florida. Reno held the position for fifteen years until she was nominated as U.S. attorney general by President Bill Clinton (1946–) in 1993.

Dade County's top lawyer

As Dade County prosecutor, Reno was the top lawyer responsible for prosecuting and winning cases on behalf of the county and its people. She was criticized for early failures, but later her successes in prosecuting violent crimes, and her fearlessness in dealing with Miami's crime problem, helped win her a reputation as a tough prosecutor.

During this time, Reno made juvenile justice a focus of her work. She became



Janet Reno.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

known for her attempts to find alternatives to the imprisonment of young people. She also tried to find ways that the state could deal with troubled youth at the earliest possible age. She stressed the links between children experiencing care and love and the prevention of crime. She looked for opportunities to fight crime by building resources for children and education.

National agenda

On March 12, 1993, Reno was confirmed as U.S. attorney general by the U.S. Senate. In this position she saw to the enforcement of national policies on crime,

race relations, immigration, corruption, and other legal issues affecting many aspects of American life. In the area of crime and law enforcement, she focused on broad programs involving efforts to help criminals reform and to provide treatment for drug offenders as a means of stopping crime. She also supported gun control and the hiring of additional police. In addition, Reno argued for broad reforms to provide ordinary citizens with greater access to the courts and justice system. She stressed the importance of addressing the root causes of crime and violence.

The heart of Reno's agenda involved programs for children. As attorney general she pushed for reforms that would provide assistance to troubled youths as early as possible, believing in the possibilities for turning children away from careers in crime. Reno's other concerns included aggressive civil rights enforcement, ending discrimination (unequal treatment) based on sexual preferences, and tougher enforcement of environmental laws. The basic challenge she faced in her work involved translating these broad social goals into real and effective changes in law enforcement and the justice system.

A controversial figure

Reno's commitment was admired by many during her term as attorney general. However, she was also a controversial figure. Reno was severely criticized for the Justice Department's actions during a crisis in Waco, Texas, in 1993, when an extreme religious sect called the Branch Davidians became involved in a standoff with law enforcement officials. After negotiations between the two sides broke down, federal agents stormed the grounds and building in which the Branch

Davidians were housed, and dozens of the sect's members died after setting the building on fire. Reno also became a target of Republicans in Congress who accused her of failing to investigate vigorously when members of the Clinton administration were charged with illegal practices. At the same time, some members of the Clinton administration felt that Reno was too quick to cave in to Republican demands. Although President Clinton reappointed Reno to a second term in 1996, it was reported that he did so reluctantly.

In 2000 Reno again drew fire over her handling of the case of Elian Gonzalez Brotons, a six-year-old refugee who was living with relatives in Miami after his mother drowned while bringing him by boat to Florida from Cuba. After months of negotiations and efforts to resolve his case in court, Reno ordered federal agents to seize the boy from his relatives' home and return him to his father, who was living in Cuba. Many Cuban Americans, especially in Miami, were outraged by Reno's order.

Despite this controversy, Reno returned to Florida with political ambitions in 2001, when her term as attorney general ended. In September 2001 she announced that she would run as a Democrat for governor of the state, but she lost in a close primary race to attorney Bill McBride on September 10, 2002.

Battling Parkinson's

Reno suffers from Parkinson's disease, an illness that attacks the nervous system. As a highly visible and active public figure combating a severe illness, she has inspired others who live with Parkinson's and other serious diseases. Her achievements as a woman in the male-dominated legal field were also honored

when she was inducted into the National Women's Hall of Fame in October 2000.

For More Information

Anderson, Paul. *Janet Reno—Doing the Right Thing*. New York: J. Riley, 1994.

Meachum, Virginia. *Janet Reno: United States Attorney General*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1995.

PIERRE AUGUSTE RENOIR

Born: February 25, 1841

Limoges, France

Died: December 3, 1919

Cagnes-sur-Mer, France

French painter

The French painter Pierre Auguste Renoir was one of the central figures of the impressionist movement (a French art movement of the second half of the nineteenth century whose members sought in their works to represent the first impression of an object upon the viewer). His work is characterized by a richness of feeling and a warmth of response to the world and to the people in it.

Early life

Pierre Auguste Renoir was born in Limoges, France, on February 25, 1841, the sixth of Léonard Renoir and Marguerite Merlet's seven children. His father was a tailor, and his mother was a dressmaker. His family moved to Paris,



Pierre Auguste Renoir.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

France, in 1844. Because he showed a remarkable talent for drawing, Renoir became an apprentice (one who works for someone in order to learn his or her trade) in a porcelain factory, where he painted plates. Later, after the factory had gone out of business, he worked for his older brother, decorating fans. Throughout these early years Renoir made frequent visits to the Louvre (the world's largest and most famous art museum, located in Paris), where he studied the art of earlier French masters, particularly those of the eighteenth century—Antoine Watteau (1684–1721), François Boucher (1703–1770), and Jean Honoré Fragonard (1732–1806). His deep respect for these artists influenced his own painting throughout his career.

Early career

In 1862 Renoir decided to study painting seriously and entered the studio of the painter Charles Gleyre, where he met other artists such as Claude Monet (1840–1926), Alfred Sisley (1839–1899), and Jean Frédéric Bazille (1841–1870). During the next six years Renoir's art showed the influence of Gustave Courbet (1819–1877) and Édouard Manet (1832–1883), the two most innovative (doing things in a new way) painters of the 1850s and 1860s. Courbet's influence is especially evident in the bold *Diane Chasseresse* (1867), while Manet's influence can be seen in the flat tones of *Alfred Sisley and His Wife* (1868). Still, both paintings reveal a sense of intimacy (closeness) that is characteristic of Renoir's personal style.

The 1860s were difficult years for Renoir. At times he was too poor to buy paints or canvas, and the Salons (exhibitions, or displays) of 1866 and 1867 rejected his works. The following year the Salon accepted his painting *Lise*, a portrait (picture of a person, especially their face) of his girlfriend, Lise Tréhot. He continued to develop his work and to study the paintings of other artists of the day—not only Courbet and Manet, but Camille Corot (1796–1875) and Eugène Delacroix (1798–1863) as well. Renoir's debt to Delacroix is apparent in the lush (appealing to the senses) *Odalisque* (1870).

Renoir and impressionism

A revolution was beginning in French painting. A number of young painters began to rebel against the traditions of Western painting and went directly to nature for their inspiration and into the actual society of which they were a part. As a result, their works revealed a look of freshness that in

many ways departed from the look of Old Master painting. The new art displayed bright light and color instead of the solemn browns and blacks of previous painting. These qualities, among others, signaled the beginning of impressionist art.

In 1869 Renoir and Monet worked together at La Grenouillère, a bathing spot on the river Seine. Both artists became interested in painting light and water. According to Phoebe Pool (1967), this was a key moment in the development of impressionism, for it “was there that Renoir and Monet made their discovery that shadows are not brown or black but are coloured by their surroundings, and that the ‘local colour’ of an object is modified by the light in which it is seen, by reflections from other objects and by contrast with juxtaposed [placed side by side] colours.”

The styles of Renoir and Monet were almost identical at this time, a sign of the dedication with which they pursued and shared their new discoveries. During the 1870s they continued to work together at times, although their styles generally developed in more personal directions. In 1874 Renoir participated in the first impressionist exhibition; his works included the *Opera Box*. Of all the impressionists, Renoir most thoroughly adapted the new style to the great tradition of figure painting.

Although the impressionist exhibitions were the targets of much public scorn during the 1870s, Renoir’s popularity gradually increased during this time. He became a friend of Caillebotte, one of the first supporters of the impressionists, and he was also backed by several art dealers and collectors. The artist’s connection with these individuals is documented by a number of handsome

portraits, for instance, *Madame Charpentier and Her Children* (1878). In the 1870s Renoir also produced some of his most celebrated impressionist scenes, including the *Swing* and the *Moulin de la Galette* (both 1876). These works show men and women together, openly and casually enjoying a society bathed in warm sunlight. Figures blend softly into one another and into their surrounding space. These paintings are pleasurable and full of human feeling.

Renoir’s “dry” period

During the 1880s Renoir began to separate himself from the impressionists, largely because he became unhappy with the direction the new style was taking in his own hands. In paintings like the *Luncheon of the Boating Party* (1880–81), he felt that his style was becoming too loose and that forms were becoming less distinct. As a result, he looked to the past for a fresh inspiration. In 1881 he traveled to Italy and was particularly impressed by the art of Raphael (1483–1520).

During the next six years Renoir’s paintings became increasingly dry: he began to draw in a tight, classical manner, carefully outlining his figures in an effort to give them increased clarity. The works from this period, such as the *Umbrellas* (1883) and the *Grandes baigneuses* (1884–87), are generally considered the least successful of Renoir’s mature expressions.

Late career

By the end of the 1880s Renoir had passed through his dry period. His late work is truly remarkable: a glorious outpouring of nude figures, beautiful young girls, and lush landscapes. Examples of this style include the *Music Lesson* (1891), *Young Girl Reading* (1892), and *Sleeping*

Bather (1897). In many ways, the generosity of feeling in these paintings expands on the achievements of his great work in the 1870s.

Renoir's health declined severely in his later years. In 1903 he suffered his first attack of arthritis (a painful swelling of the joints) and settled for the winter at Cagnes-sur-Mer, France. The arthritis made painting painful and often impossible. Still, he continued to work, at times with a brush tied to his crippled hand. Renoir died at Cagnes-sur-Mer on December 3, 1919, but not before an experience of supreme triumph: the state had purchased his portrait *Madame Georges Charpentier* (1877), and he traveled to Paris in August to see it hanging in the Louvre.

For More Information

Castellani, Francesca. *Renoir: His Life and Works*. Philadelphia: Courage Books, 1998.

Renoir, Jean. *Renoir: My Father*. Edited by Randolph and Dorothy Weaver. Boston: Little, Brown, 1962. Reprint, New York: New York Review Books, 2001.

White, Barbara Ehrlich. *Renoir, His Life, Art, and Letters*. New York: Abrams, 1984.

PAUL REVERE

Born: January 1, 1735

Boston, Massachusetts

Died: May 10, 1818

Boston, Massachusetts

American patriot, silversmith, and engraver

Paul Revere is remembered for his ride to warn fellow American patriots of a planned British attack before the Revolutionary War (1775–83), the war fought by Americans to gain independence from England. He was also a fine silversmith (a person who makes objects out of silver) and a master engraver (a person who cuts designs onto things such as metal or wood).

Learning a trade

Paul Revere was born on January 1, 1735, in Boston, Massachusetts. He was the son of Apollos De Revoire, a French Huguenot (member of the Protestant faith) who had come to Boston at the age of thirteen to apprentice (a person who works for another to learn a trade) in the shop of a silversmith. Once Revoire had established his own business, he changed his name to the English spelling Revere.

Paul Revere was the third of twelve children and the oldest of his father's sons to survive into adulthood. As a young man, he studied at the North Writing School in Boston. As a teenager, he learned the art of gold and silversmithing from his father. With help from his mother, he began running the Revere family silver shop at age nineteen, after his father died. On August 17, 1757, he married Sarah Orne and eventually fathered eight children.

As early as 1765, Revere began to experiment with engraving on copper and produced several portraits and a songbook. He was popular as a source for engraved items such as bookplates, seals (stamps with raised designs that could make a print on another substance), and coats of arms (designs that indicated a family line).

Revere also began to fashion engravings that were anti-British. In 1768 he made one of the most famous pieces of silver of the American colonial era—a bowl created at the request of the fifteen Sons of Liberty. The Sons of Liberty were organizations formed in order to protest the 1765 Stamp Act, a taxation on printed materials imposed by the British that the Americans considered unjust. The bowl that Revere created was engraved to honor the “glorious Ninety-two Members of the Honorable House of Representatives of the Massachusetts Bay” who had refused to withdraw a letter they had sent to the other colonies protesting the Townshend Acts (another measure imposed by the British). Revere’s extraordinary skill also extended to his carving picture frames for the painter John Singleton Copley (1738–1815). Copley painted a famous portrait of Revere, shown in shirt sleeves and holding a silver teapot.



Paul Revere.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Revere’s ride

Revere became a trusted messenger for the Massachusetts Committee of Safety, an organization set up to resist the British. He foresaw an attack by the British troops against the location of military supplies in Concord, Massachusetts, and arranged a signal to warn the patriots in Charlestown, Massachusetts. During the late evening of April 18, 1775, the chairman of the Committee of Safety told him that the British were going to march to Concord. Revere signaled by hanging two lanterns in the tower of Boston’s North Church. This showed that the British were approaching “by sea,” that is, by way of the Charles River. He crossed the river, borrowed a horse in Charlestown, and started for Concord. Arriving in Lexington, Massachusetts, at midnight, he awakened American rebels John Hancock (1737–1793) and Samuel

Adams (1722–1803), allowing the two men to flee to safety.

Revere was captured that night by the British, but he persuaded his captors that the whole countryside was aroused to fight, and they freed him. He returned to Lexington, where he saw the first shot fired in the first battle of the Revolutionary War (1776). This ride and series of events were made legendary by Henry Wadsworth Longfellow (1807–1882) in the poem “Paul Revere’s Ride.”

A master craftsman

After the Revolutionary War Revere remained in Boston, where he created

objects in silver for distinguished members of local society. He died in Boston on May 10, 1818. Today, he is still remembered as a craftsman in silver, as well as a master of engraving. An on-the-spot reporter, he recorded the events leading up to and during the revolution with great accuracy. He engraved what he saw on metal plates, which were then used to create prints on paper that were highly popular with the people of Boston.

For More Information

- Forbes, Esther. *Paul Revere and the World He Lived In*. New York: American Past, 1983.
- Lee, Martin. *Paul Revere*. New York: F. Watts, 1987.
- Sullivan, George. *Paul Revere*. New York: Scholastic Reference, 1999.
- Triber, Jayne E. *A True Republican: The Life of Paul Revere*. Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press, 1998.

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY



contents

Entries by Nationality xvii

Reader's Guide xxxi

Volume 1: A–Ba

Hank Aaron	1	Aeschylus	29
Ralph Abernathy	4	Spiro Agnew	31
Bella Abzug	7	Alvin Ailey	34
Chinua Achebe	10	Madeleine Albright	37
Abigail Adams	12	Louisa May Alcott	39
Ansel Adams	15	Alexander II	41
John Adams	17	Alexander the Great	43
Samuel Adams	20	Muhammad Ali	47
Joy Adamson	22	Woody Allen	49
Jane Addams	25	Isabel Allende	52
Alfred Adler	27	Julia Alvarez	54
		American Horse	57

Idi Amin	59	Lucille Ball	159
Hans Christian Andersen	62	David Baltimore	161
Carl David Anderson	64	Honoré de Balzac	164
Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	66	Benjamin Banneker	166
Marian Anderson	69	Frederick Banting	168
Fra Angelico	71	Klaus Barbie	170
Maya Angelou	73	Christiaan Barnard	173
Kofi Annan	76	Clara Barton	175
Susan B. Anthony	79	Count Basie	177
Virginia Apgar	81	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Benigno Aquino	84		
Yasir Arafat	86	<i>Volume 2: Be–Cap</i>	
Archimedes	89	Beatles	181
Hannah Arendt	91	William Beaumont	185
Jean-Bertrand Aristide	93	Simone de Beauvoir	187
Aristophanes	96	Samuel Beckett	189
Aristotle	98	Ludwig van Beethoven	192
Louis Armstrong	101	Menachem Begin	194
Neil Armstrong	102	Alexander Graham Bell	196
Benedict Arnold	105	Clyde Bellecourt	200
Mary Kay Ash	108	Saul Bellow	202
Arthur Ashe	110	William Bennett	204
Isaac Asimov	113	Ingmar Bergman	206
Fred Astaire	116	Irving Berlin	208
John Jacob Astor	118	Leonard Bernstein	210
Margaret Atwood	120	Chuck Berry	213
W. H. Auden	123	Mary McLeod Bethune	215
John James Audubon	125	Benazir Bhutto	218
Augustus	128	Owen Bieber	220
Aung San Suu Kyi	130	Billy the Kid	223
Jane Austen	132	Larry Bird	224
Baal Shem Tov	137	Shirley Temple Black	227
Charles Babbage	139	Elizabeth Blackwell	229
Johann Sebastian Bach	141	Tony Blair	232
Francis Bacon	143	William Blake	234
Roger Bacon	145	Konrad Bloch	237
Joan Baez	147	Judy Blume	239
F Lee Bailey	150	Humphrey Bogart	242
Josephine Baker	152	Julian Bond	244
George Balanchine	154	Daniel Boone	246
James Baldwin	156	John Wilkes Booth	248

William Booth	250	Al Capone	352
Lucrezia Borgia	252	Truman Capote	354
P. W. Botha	255	Frank Capra	357
Sandro Botticelli	257	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Margaret Bourke-White	259		
Boutros Boutros-Ghali	261	<i>Volume 3: Car–Da</i>	
Ray Bradbury	264	Lázaro Cárdenas	361
Ed Bradley	266	Stokely Carmichael	363
Mathew Brady	269	Andrew Carnegie	367
Johannes Brahms	271	Lewis Carroll	370
Louis Braille	273	Johnny Carson	372
Louis Brandeis	275	Kit Carson	374
Marlon Brando	278	Rachel Carson	377
Leonid Brezhnev	280	Jimmy Carter	379
Charlotte Brontë	283	George Washington Carver	383
Emily Brontë	284	Pablo Casals	386
Gwendolyn Brooks	286	Mary Cassatt	388
Helen Gurley Brown	289	Vernon and Irene Castle	390
James Brown	291	Fidel Castro	393
John Brown	294	Willa Cather	397
Rachel Fuller Brown	297	Catherine of Aragon	399
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	299	Catherine the Great	401
Robert Browning	302	Henry Cavendish	404
Pat Buchanan	305	Anders Celsius	407
Pearl S. Buck	308	Miguel de Cervantes	408
Buddha	310	Paul Cézanne	411
Ralph Bunche	312	Marc Chagall	414
Warren Burger	314	Wilt Chamberlain	416
Robert Burns	317	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	419
Aaron Burr	320	Charlie Chaplin	421
George Bush	323	Charlemagne	424
George W. Bush	326	Charles, Prince of Wales	427
Laura Bush	329	Ray Charles	430
Lord Byron	331	Geoffrey Chaucer	433
Julius Caesar	335	César Chávez	436
Caligula	338	Dennis Chavez	438
Maria Callas	340	Linda Chavez	440
Cab Calloway	342	Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	443
John Calvin	344	John Cheever	447
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	346	Anton Chekhov	449
Albert Camus	349	Dick Cheney	451

Mary Boykin Chesnut	454
Chiang Kai-shek	456
Julia Child	459
Shirley Chisholm	461
Frédéric Chopin	464
Jean Chrétien	467
Agatha Christie	469
Winston Churchill	472
Marcus Tullius Cicero	475
Liz Claiborne	478
Cleopatra VII	480
Bill Clinton	483
Hillary Rodham Clinton	487
Ty Cobb	490
Nat “King” Cole	492
Bessie Coleman	494
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	496
Marva Collins	499
Michael Collins	501
Confucius	503
Sean Connery	506
Joseph Conrad	508
Nicolaus Copernicus	510
Aaron Copland	513
Francis Ford Coppola	515
Bill Cosby	518
Jacques Cousteau	521
Noel Coward	523
Michael Crichton	525
Davy Crockett	527
Oliver Cromwell	529
Walter Cronkite	532
E. E. Cummings	535
Marie Curie	538
Roald Dahl	543
Dalai Lama	546
Salvador Dali	549
Clarence Darrow	551
Charles Darwin	554
Bette Davis	556
Miles Davis	558

Ossie Davis	561
Sammy Davis Jr.	563
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 4: De–Ga

James Dean	567
Claude Debussy	569
Ruby Dee	571
Daniel Defoe	574
Edgar Degas	576
Charles de Gaulle	579
F. W. de Klerk	581
Cecil B. DeMille	585
Deng Xiaoping	587
René Descartes	590
Hernando de Soto	592
John Dewey	594
Diana, Princess of Wales	597
Charles Dickens	600
Emily Dickinson	603
Denis Diderot	606
Joe DiMaggio	608
Walt Disney	611
Elizabeth Dole	613
Placido Domingo	616
Donatello	619
John Donne	621
Fyodor Dostoevsky	624
Frederick Douglass	626
Arthur Conan Doyle	629
Francis Drake	632
Alexandre Dumas	634
Paul Laurence Dunbar	636
Pierre du Pont	638
François Duvalier	640
Amelia Earhart	643
George Eastman	646
Clint Eastwood	648
Thomas Edison	650
Albert Einstein	654
Dwight D. Eisenhower	657

Mamie Eisenhower	661	Karl Friedrich Gauss	775
Joycelyn Elders	662	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
George Eliot	665		
T. S. Eliot	668	Volume 5: Ge–I	
Elizabeth I	672	Hans Geiger	779
Elizabeth II	675	Theodor Geisel	781
Duke Ellington	678	Genghis Khan	784
Ralph Waldo Emerson	680	J. Paul Getty	786
Desiderius Erasmus	683	Kahlil Gibran	788
Euclid	686	Althea Gibson	790
Euripides	688	Dizzy Gillespie	792
Medgar Evers	690	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	794
Gabriel Fahrenheit	695	Whoopi Goldberg	797
Fannie Farmer	696	William Golding	800
Louis Farrakhan	698	Samuel Gompers	801
William Faulkner	701	Jane Goodall	804
Dianne Feinstein	704	Benny Goodman	807
Enrico Fermi	707	Mikhail Gorbachev	809
Geraldine Ferraro	710	Berry Gordy Jr.	813
Bobby Fischer	713	Al Gore	816
Ella Fitzgerald	715	Jay Gould	818
F. Scott Fitzgerald	718	Stephen Jay Gould	821
Gustave Flaubert	721	Katharine Graham	824
Malcolm Forbes	723	Martha Graham	827
Henry Ford	725	Cary Grant	829
Francis of Assisi	729	Graham Greene	831
Benjamin Franklin	731	Wayne Gretzky	833
Sigmund Freud	735	Brothers Grimm	836
Betty Friedan	738	Woody Guthrie	838
Robert Frost	741	Alex Haley	843
John Kenneth Galbraith	745	Alexander Hamilton	846
Galen	748	Oscar Hammerstein	849
Galileo	750	John Hancock	852
George Gallup	753	George Frideric Handel	854
Indira Gandhi	754	Thomas Hardy	857
Mohandas Gandhi	758	Stephen Hawking	860
Gabriel García Márquez	762	Nathaniel Hawthorne	862
Judy Garland	764	William Randolph Hearst	865
Marcus Garvey	767	Werner Heisenberg	868
Bill Gates	769	Joseph Heller	870
Paul Gauguin	773	Lillian Hellman	872

Ernest Hemingway	875
Jimi Hendrix	878
Henry VIII	880
Patrick Henry	883
Audrey Hepburn	886
Katharine Hepburn	888
Herod the Great	891
William Herschel	893
Thor Heyerdahl	895
Edmund Hillary	898
S. E. Hinton	900
Hippocrates	902
Hirohito	904
Alfred Hitchcock	907
Adolf Hitler	909
Ho Chi Minh	912
Thomas Hobbes	915
Billie Holiday	918
Oliver Wendell Holmes	920
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	923
Homer	926
Soichiro Honda	929
bell hooks	931
Benjamin Hooks	933
Bob Hope	936
Anthony Hopkins	938
Lena Horne	940
Harry Houdini	943
Gordie Howe	946
Julia Ward Howe	949
Howard Hughes	951
Langston Hughes	954
Victor Hugo	957
Zora Neale Hurston	960
Saddam Hussein	962
Lee Iacocca	967
Henrik Ibsen	970
Imhotep	972
Washington Irving	975
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 6: J–L

Andrew Jackson	979
Jesse Jackson	983
Michael Jackson	986
Reggie Jackson	989
P. D. James	991
Thomas Jefferson	994
Mae Jemison	997
Jesus of Nazareth	1000
Jiang Zemin	1003
Joan of Arc	1005
Steve Jobs	1007
Elton John	1011
John Paul II	1013
Lyndon B. Johnson	1016
Magic Johnson	1020
Samuel Johnson	1023
Al Jolson	1025
James Earl Jones	1027
Quincy Jones	1029
Ben Jonson	1032
Michael Jordan	1034
James Joyce	1038
Benito Juárez	1040
Carl Jung	1043
Franz Kafka	1047
Wassily Kandinsky	1050
Immanuel Kant	1052
John Keats	1054
Helen Keller	1056
Gene Kelly	1058
Edward Kennedy	1061
John F. Kennedy	1064
John F. Kennedy Jr.	1069
Robert Kennedy	1071
Johannes Kepler	1074
Jack Kerouac	1076
Charles F. Kettering	1078
Ayatollah Khomeini	1081
Nikita Khrushchev	1083
B. B. King	1086

Billie Jean King	1089	Dolley Madison	1191
Coretta Scott King	1091	James Madison	1194
Martin Luther King Jr.	1094	Madonna	1197
Stephen King	1098	Ferdinand Magellan	1201
Rudyard Kipling	1101	Najib Mahfuz	1203
Henry Kissinger	1104	Norman Mailer	1205
Calvin Klein	1107	Bernard Malamud	1208
Kublai Khan	1109	Malcolm X	1210
Marquis de Lafayette	1113	David Mamet	1214
Lao Tzu	1115	Nelson Mandela	1216
Ralph Lauren	1117	Édouard Manet	1219
Emma Lazarus	1119	Wilma Mankiller	1221
Mary Leakey	1121	Mickey Mantle	1224
Bruce Lee	1124	Mao Zedong	1226
Spike Lee	1126	Rocky Marciano	1230
Tsung-Dao Lee	1129	Ferdinand Marcos	1233
Vladimir Lenin	1131	Marcus Aurelius	1236
Leonardo da Vinci	1136	Marie Antoinette	1238
C. S. Lewis	1139	Mark Antony	1240
Carl Lewis	1141	Thurgood Marshall	1243
Sinclair Lewis	1144	Karl Marx	1246
Roy Lichtenstein	1146	Mary, Queen of Scots	1249
Maya Lin	1148	Cotton Mather	1252
Abraham Lincoln	1150	Henri Matisse	1255
Charles Lindbergh	1154	Mayo Brothers	1258
Carl Linnaeus	1157	Willie Mays	1261
Joseph Lister	1159	Joseph McCarthy	1264
Andrew Lloyd Webber	1161	Hattie McDaniel	1267
Alain Locke	1163	John McEnroe	1270
John Locke	1166	Terry McMillan	1273
Jack London	1168	Aimee Semple McPherson	1275
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	1170	Margaret Mead	1277
Joe Louis	1173	Catherine de' Medici	1281
George Lucas	1175	Golda Meir	1284
Patrice Lumumba	1178	Rigoberta Menchú	1286
Martin Luther	1181	Felix Mendelssohn	1289
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Kweisi Mfume	1292
		Michelangelo	1295
		Harvey Milk	1298
Volume 7: M–Ne		John Stuart Mill	1301
Douglas MacArthur	1185	Edna St. Vincent Millay	1303
Niccolò Machiavelli	1188		

Arthur Miller	1305	Manuel Noriega	1401
Henry Miller	1308	Jessye Norman	1404
Slobodan Milosevic	1310	Nostradamus	1406
John Milton	1313	Rudolf Nureyev	1409
Joan Miró	1316	Joyce Carol Oates	1413
Molière	1318	Sandra Day O'Connor	1416
Claude Monet	1320	Georgia O'Keefe	1420
Thelonious Monk	1323	Laurence Olivier	1422
Marilyn Monroe	1325	Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	1425
Joe Montana	1327	Eugene O'Neill	1428
Montesquieu	1329	George Orwell	1430
Maria Montessori	1331	Ovid	1432
Thomas More	1334	Jesse Owens	1435
Jim Morrison	1336	Mohammad Reza Pahlavi	1439
Toni Morrison	1338	Arnold Palmer	1441
Samuel F. B. Morse	1341	Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus	1443
Moses	1343	Charlie Parker	1445
Grandma Moses	1345	Blaise Pascal	1447
Mother Teresa	1347	Louis Pasteur	1450
Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart	1350	Linus Pauling	1453
Hosni Mubarak	1353	Luciano Pavarotti	1456
Muhammad	1355	Ivan Pavlov	1459
Elijah Muhammad	1358	Anna Pavlova	1462
John Muir	1360	I. M. Pei	1464
Edvard Munch	1362	Pelé.	1467
Rupert Murdoch	1364	William Penn	1469
Benito Mussolini	1367	Pericles	1472
Vladimir Nabokov	1371	Eva Perón	1474
Ralph Nader	1373	Jean Piaget	1477
Napoleon Bonaparte	1376	Pablo Picasso	1479
Ogden Nash	1379	Sylvia Plath	1483
Nefertiti	1381	Plato	1485
Isaac Newton	1382	Pocahontas	1488
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Edgar Allan Poe	1490
		Sidney Poitier	1493
		Pol Pot	1495
		Marco Polo	1498
		Juan Ponce de León	1501
		Alexander Pope	1502
		Cole Porter	1505
		Katherine Anne Porter	1507
Volume 8: Ni–Re			
Friedrich Nietzsche	1387		
Florence Nightingale	1390		
Richard Nixon	1392		
Alfred Nobel	1397		
Isamu Noguchi	1398		

Emily Post	1509	Richard Rodgers	1610
Colin Powell	1511	Auguste Rodin	1613
Dith Pran	1514	Will Rogers	1615
Elvis Presley	1517	Rolling Stones	1618
André Previn	1520	Eleanor Roosevelt	1621
Leontyne Price	1522	Franklin D. Roosevelt	1624
E. Annie Proulx	1524	Theodore Roosevelt	1628
Marcel Proust	1526	Diana Ross	1631
Ptolemy I	1528	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	1634
Joseph Pulitzer	1531	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	1636
George Pullman	1533	Carl Rowan	1639
Aleksandr Pushkin	1535	J. K. Rowling	1641
Vladimir Putin	1537	Peter Paul Rubens	1643
Pythagoras	1540	Wilma Rudolph	1646
Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	1543	Salman Rushdie	1649
Walter Raleigh	1547	Babe Ruth	1651
Sri Ramakrishna	1550	Nolan Ryan	1653
A. Philip Randolph	1552	Albert Sabin	1657
Harun al-Rashid	1555	Carl Sagan	1659
Ronald Reagan	1557	Andrei Sakharov	1662
Christopher Reeve	1561	J. D. Salinger	1664
Erich Maria Remarque	1564	Jonas Salk	1667
Rembrandt	1566	George Sand	1669
Janet Reno	1568	Carl Sandburg	1671
Pierre Auguste Renoir	1571	Margaret Sanger	1673
Paul Revere	1574	Jean-Paul Sartre	1676
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Oskar Schindler	1678
		Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	1681
		Franz Schubert	1684
		Charles M. Schulz	1687
		Martin Scorsese	1690
		Walter Scott	1693
		Haile Selassie	1696
		Selena	1698
		Sequoyah	1701
		William Shakespeare	1702
		George Bernard Shaw	1706
		Mary Shelley	1708
		Percy Shelley	1711
		Beverly Sills	1714
		Neil Simon	1716
Volume 9: Rh–S			
Cecil Rhodes	1577		
Condoleezza Rice	1580		
Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	1583		
Sally Ride	1585		
Leni Riefenstahl	1588		
Cal Ripken Jr.	1591		
Diego Rivera	1593		
Paul Robeson	1596		
Maximilien de Robespierre	1599		
Smokey Robinson	1601		
John D. Rockefeller	1604		
Norman Rockwell	1607		

Frank Sinatra	1719	Marshal Tito	1821
Upton Sinclair	1722	J. R. R. Tolkien	1824
Isaac Bashevis Singer	1724	Leo Tolstoy	1827
Bessie Smith	1727	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	1830
Socrates	1729	Eiji Toyoda	1832
Stephen Sondheim	1732	Harry S. Truman	1834
Sophocles	1734	Donald Trump	1837
Steven Spielberg	1737	Sojourner Truth	1840
Benjamin Spock	1740	Tu Fu	1843
Joseph Stalin	1743	Tutankhamen	1845
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	1747	Desmond Tutu	1847
Edith Stein	1749	Mark Twain	1850
Gertrude Stein	1752	John Updike	1855
John Steinbeck	1755	Vincent Van Gogh	1859
Robert Louis Stevenson	1757	Jan Vermeer	1862
Bram Stoker	1759	Jules Verne	1864
Oliver Stone	1761	Amerigo Vespucci	1867
Tom Stoppard	1764	Victoria	1869
Harriet Beecher Stowe	1766	Gore Vidal	1872
Antonio Stradivari	1769	Virgil	1874
Johann Strauss	1771	Antonio Vivaldi	1877
Igor Stravinsky	1773	Voltaire	1879
Barbra Streisand	1776	Wernher von Braun	1882
Sun Yat-sen	1779	Kurt Vonnegut	1884
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Richard Wagner	1889
		Alice Walker	1891
		Madame C. J. Walker	1894
		Barbara Walters	1897
Volume 10: T–Z		An Wang	1900
Maria Tallchief	1785	Booker T. Washington	1903
Amy Tan	1787	George Washington	1906
Elizabeth Taylor	1790	James Watt	1910
Peter Ilych Tchaikovsky	1792	John Wayne	1913
Alfred, Lord Tennyson	1795	Daniel Webster	1916
Valentina Tereshkova	1798	Noah Webster	1919
William Makepeace Thackeray	1801	Orson Welles	1922
Twyla Tharp	1804	Eudora Welty	1925
Clarence Thomas	1807	Edith Wharton	1928
Dylan Thomas	1810	James Whistler	1929
Henry David Thoreau	1813	E. B. White	1932
Jim Thorpe	1816	Walt Whitman	1935
James Thurber	1819		

Elie Wiesel	1938	Virginia Woolf	1962
Oscar Wilde	1940	William Wordsworth	1965
Laura Ingalls Wilder	1943	Wright Brothers	1969
Thornton Wilder	1946	Frank Lloyd Wright	1972
Tennessee Williams	1948	Richard Wright	1975
Woodrow Wilson	1951	William Butler Yeats	1979
Oprah Winfrey	1954	Boris Yeltsin	1982
Anna May Wong	1958	Paul Zindel	1987
Tiger Woods	1960	<i>Index</i>	xxxv



*entries by
nationality*

African American

Hank Aaron 1: 1
 Ralph Abernathy 1: 4
 Alvin Ailey 1: 34
 Muhammad Ali 1: 47
 Marian Anderson 1: 69
 Maya Angelou 1: 73
 Louis Armstrong 1: 101
 Arthur Ashe 1: 110
 Josephine Baker 1: 152
 James Baldwin 1: 156
 Benjamin Banneker 1: 166
 Count Basie 1: 177
 Chuck Berry 2: 213
 Mary McLeod Bethune 2: 215
 Julian Bond 2: 244
 Gwendolyn Brooks 2: 286

James Brown 2: 291
 Ralph Bunche 2: 312
 Stokely Carmichael 3: 363
 George Washington Carver 3: 383
 Wilt Chamberlain 3: 416
 Ray Charles 3: 430
 Benjamin Chavis Muhammad 3: 443
 Shirley Chisholm 3: 461
 Nat “King” Cole 3: 492
 Bessie Coleman 3: 494
 Marva Collins 3: 499
 Bill Cosby 3: 518
 Miles Davis 3: 558
 Ossie Davis 3: 561
 Sammy Davis Jr. 3: 563
 Ruby Dee 4: 571
 Frederick Douglass 4: 626

Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Jessye Norman	8: 1404
Joycelyn Elders	4: 662	Jesse Owens	8: 1435
Duke Ellington	4: 678	Charlie Parker	8: 1445
Medgar Evers	4: 690	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Louis Farrakhan	4: 698	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Althea Gibson	5: 790	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Alex Haley	5: 843	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Bessie Smith	9: 1727
bell hooks	5: 931	Sojourner Truth	10: 1840
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Alice Walker	10: 1891
Lena Horne	5: 940	Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Reggie Jackson	6: 989		
Mae Jemison	6: 997	<i>Albanian</i>	
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Mother Teresa	7: 1347
James Earl Jones	6: 1027		
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	<i>American</i>	
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Hank Aaron	1: 1
B. B. King	6: 1086	Ralph Abernathy	1: 4
Coretta Scott King	6: 1091	Bella Abzug	1: 7
Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094	Abigail Adams	1: 12
Spike Lee	6: 1126	Ansel Adams	1: 15
Carl Lewis	6: 1141	John Adams	1: 17
Alain Locke	6: 1163	Samuel Adams	1: 20
Malcolm X	7: 1210	Jane Addams	1: 25
Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Spiro Agnew	1: 31
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Alvin Ailey	1: 34
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Madeleine Albright	1: 37
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Louisa May Alcott	1: 39
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	Muhammad Ali	1: 47
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Woody Allen	1: 49
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Julia Alvarez	1: 54
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	American Horse	1: 57

Carl David Anderson	1: 64	Daniel Boone	2: 246
Marian Anderson	1: 69	John Wilkes Booth	2: 248
Maya Angelou	1: 73	Margaret Bourke-White	2: 259
Susan B. Anthony	1: 79	Ray Bradbury	2: 264
Virginia Apgar	1: 81	Ed Bradley	2: 266
Louis Armstrong	1: 101	Mathew Brady	2: 269
Neil Armstrong	1: 102	Louis Brandeis	2: 275
Benedict Arnold	1: 105	Marlon Brando	2: 278
Mary Kay Ash	1: 108	Gwendolyn Brooks	2: 286
Arthur Ashe	1: 110	Helen Gurley Brown	2: 289
Isaac Asimov	1: 113	James Brown	2: 291
Fred Astaire	1: 116	John Brown	2: 294
John Jacob Astor	1: 118	Rachel Fuller Brown	2: 297
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Pat Buchanan	2: 305
John James Audubon	1: 125	Pearl S. Buck	2: 308
Joan Baez	1: 147	Ralph Bunche	2: 312
F. Lee Bailey	1: 150	Warren Burger	2: 314
Josephine Baker	1: 152	Aaron Burr	2: 320
George Balanchine	1: 154	George Bush	2: 323
James Baldwin	1: 156	George W. Bush	2: 326
Lucille Ball	1: 159	Laura Bush	2: 329
David Baltimore	1: 161	Maria Callas	2: 340
Benjamin Banneker	1: 166	Cab Calloway	2: 342
Clara Barton	1: 175	Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Count Basie	1: 177	Al Capone	2: 352
William Beaumont	2: 185	Truman Capote	2: 354
Alexander Graham Bell	2: 196	Frank Capra	2: 357
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200	Stokely Carmichael	3: 363
Saul Bellow	2: 202	Andrew Carnegie	3: 367
William Bennett	2: 204	Johnny Carson	3: 372
Irving Berlin	2: 208	Kit Carson	3: 374
Leonard Bernstein	2: 210	Rachel Carson	3: 377
Chuck Berry	2: 213	Jimmy Carter	3: 379
Mary McLeod Bethune	2: 215	George Washington Carver	3: 383
Owen Bieber	2: 220	Mary Cassatt	3: 388
Billy the Kid	2: 223	Irene Castle	3: 390
Larry Bird	2: 224	Willa Cather	3: 397
Shirley Temple Black	2: 227	Wilt Chamberlain	3: 416
Judy Blume	2: 239	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	3: 419
Humphrey Bogart	2: 242	Ray Charles	3: 430
Julian Bond	2: 244	César Chávez	3: 436

Dennis Chavez	3: 438	Thomas Edison	4: 650
Linda Chavez	3: 440	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	3: 443	Dwight D. Eisenhower	4: 657
John Cheever	3: 447	Mamie Eisenhower	4: 661
Dick Cheney	3: 451	Joycelyn Elders	4: 662
Mary Boykin Chesnut	3: 454	T. S. Eliot	4: 668
Julia Child	3: 459	Duke Ellington	4: 678
Shirley Chisholm	3: 461	Ralph Waldo Emerson	4: 680
Liz Claiborne	3: 478	Medgar Evers	4: 690
Bill Clinton	3: 483	Fannie Farmer	4: 696
Hillary Rodham Clinton	3: 487	Louis Farrakhan	4: 698
Ty Cobb	3: 490	William Faulkner	4: 701
Nat "King" Cole	3: 492	Dianne Feinstein	4: 704
Bessie Coleman	3: 494	Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Marva Collins	3: 499	Geraldine Ferraro	4: 710
Aaron Copland	3: 513	Bobby Fischer	4: 713
Francis Ford Coppola	3: 515	Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715
Bill Cosby	3: 518	F. Scott Fitzgerald	4: 718
Michael Crichton	3: 525	Malcolm Forbes	4: 723
Davy Crockett	3: 527	Henry Ford	4: 725
Walter Cronkite	3: 532	Benjamin Franklin	4: 731
E. E. Cummings	3: 535	Betty Friedan	4: 738
Clarence Darrow	3: 551	Robert Frost	4: 741
Bette Davis	3: 556	John Kenneth Galbraith	4: 745
Miles Davis	3: 558	George Gallup	4: 753
Ossie Davis	3: 561	Judy Garland	4: 764
Sammy Davis Jr.	3: 563	Bill Gates	4: 769
James Dean	4: 567	Theodor Geisel	5: 781
Ruby Dee	4: 571	J. Paul Getty	5: 786
Cecil B. DeMille	4: 585	Althea Gibson	5: 790
John Dewey	4: 594	Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792
Emily Dickinson	4: 603	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	5: 794
Joe DiMaggio	4: 608	Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797
Walt Disney	4: 611	Samuel Gompers	5: 801
Elizabeth Dole	4: 613	Benny Goodman	5: 807
Frederick Douglass	4: 626	Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813
Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Al Gore	5: 816
Pierre Du Pont	4: 638	Jay Gould	5: 818
Amelia Earhart	4: 643	Stephen Jay Gould	5: 821
George Eastman	4: 646	Katharine Graham	5: 824
Clint Eastwood	4: 648	Martha Graham	5: 827

Woody Guthrie	5: 838	Helen Keller	6: 1056
Alex Haley	5: 843	Gene Kelly	6: 1058
Alexander Hamilton	5: 846	Edward Kennedy	6: 1061
Oscar Hammerstein	5: 849	John F. Kennedy	6: 1064
John Hancock	5: 852	John F. Kennedy Jr.	6: 1069
Nathaniel Hawthorne	5: 862	Robert Kennedy	6: 1071
William Randolph Hearst	5: 865	Jack Kerouac	6: 1076
Joseph Heller	5: 870	Charles F. Kettering	6: 1078
Lillian Hellman	5: 872	B. B. King	6: 1086
Ernest Hemingway	5: 875	Billie Jean King	6: 1089
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Coretta Scott King	6: 1091
Patrick Henry	5: 883	Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094
Katharine Hepburn	5: 888	Stephen King	6: 1098
S. E. Hinton	5: 900	Henry Kissinger	6: 1104
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Calvin Klein	6: 1107
Oliver Wendell Holmes	5: 920	Ralph Lauren	6: 1117
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	5: 923	Emma Lazarus	6: 1119
bell hooks	5: 931	Bruce Lee	6: 1124
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Spike Lee	6: 1126
Bob Hope	5: 936	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Lena Horne	5: 940	Carl Lewis	6: 1141
Harry Houdini	5: 943	Sinclair Lewis	6: 1144
Julia Ward Howe	5: 949	Roy Lichtenstein	6: 1146
Howard Hughes	5: 951	Abraham Lincoln	6: 1150
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Charles Lindbergh	6: 1154
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Alain Locke	6: 1163
Lee Iacocca	5: 967	Jack London	6: 1168
Washington Irving	5: 975	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	6: 1170
Andrew Jackson	6: 979	Joe Louis	6: 1173
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	George Lucas	6: 1175
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Douglas MacArthur	7: 1185
Reggie Jackson	6: 989	Dolley Madison	7: 1191
Thomas Jefferson	6: 994	James Madison	7: 1194
Mae Jemison	6: 997	Madonna	7: 1197
Steve Jobs	6: 1007	Norman Mailer	7: 1205
Lyndon B. Johnson	6: 1016	Bernard Malamud	7: 1390
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Malcolm X	7: 1210
Al Jolson	6: 1025	David Mamet	7: 1214
James Earl Jones	6: 1027	Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	Mickey Mantle	7: 1224
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Rocky Marciano	7: 1230

Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Pocahontas	8: 1488
Cotton Mather	7: 1252	Edgar Allan Poe	8: 1490
Mayo Brothers	7: 1258	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Cole Porter	8: 1505
Joseph McCarthy	7: 1264	Katherine Anne Porter	8: 1507
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Emily Post	8: 1509
John McEnroe	7: 1270	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Elvis Presley	8: 1517
Aimee Semple McPherson	7: 1275	André Previn	8: 1520
Margaret Mead	7: 1277	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	E. Annie Proulx	8: 1524
Harvey Milk	7: 1298	Joseph Pulitzer	8: 1531
Edna St. Vincent Millay	7: 1303	George Pullman	8: 1533
Arthur Miller	7: 1305	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Henry Miller	7: 1308	Ronald Reagan	8: 1557
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Christopher Reeve	8: 1561
Marilyn Monroe	7: 1325	Erich Maria Remarque	8: 1564
Joe Montana	7: 1327	Janet Reno	8: 1568
Jim Morrison	7: 1336	Paul Revere	8: 1574
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Samuel F. B. Morse	7: 1341	Sally Ride	9: 1585
Grandma Moses	7: 1345	Cal Ripken, Jr.	9: 1591
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
John Muir	7: 1360	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Vladimir Nabokov	7: 1371	John D. Rockefeller	9: 1604
Ralph Nader	7: 1373	Norman Rockwell	9: 1607
Ogden Nash	7: 1379	Richard Rodgers	9: 1610
Richard Nixon	8: 1392	Will Rogers	9: 1615
Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398	Eleanor Roosevelt	9: 1621
Jessye Norman	8: 1404	Franklin D. Roosevelt	9: 1624
Joyce Carol Oates	8: 1413	Theodore Roosevelt	9: 1628
Sandra Day O'Connor	8: 1416	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Georgia O'Keeffe	8: 1420	Carl Rowan	9: 1639
Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	8: 1425	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Eugene O'Neill	8: 1428	Babe Ruth	9: 1651
Jesse Owens	8: 1435	Nolan Ryan	9: 1653
Arnold Palmer	8: 1441	Albert Sabin	9: 1657
Charlie Parker	8: 1445	Carl Sagan	9: 1659
Linus Pauling	8: 1453	J. D. Salinger	9: 1664
I. M. Pei	8: 1464	Jonas Salk	9: 1667
Sylvia Plath	8: 1483	Carl Sandburg	9: 1671

Margaret Sanger	9: 1673	An Wang	10: 1900
Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	9: 1681	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Charles M. Schulz	9: 1687	George Washington	10: 1906
Martin Scorsese	9: 1690	John Wayne	10: 1913
Selena	9: 1698	Daniel Webster	10: 1916
Sequoyah	9: 1701	Noah Webster	10: 1919
Beverly Sills	9: 1714	Orson Welles	10: 1922
Neil Simon	9: 1716	Eudora Welty	10: 1925
Frank Sinatra	9: 1719	Edith Wharton	10: 1928
Upton Sinclair	9: 1722	James Whistler	10: 1929
Isaac Bashevis Singer	9: 1724	E. B. White	10: 1932
Bessie Smith	9: 1727	Walt Whitman	10: 1935
Stephen Sondheim	9: 1732	Elie Wiesel	10: 1938
Steven Spielberg	9: 1737	Laura Ingalls Wilder	10: 1943
Benjamin Spock	9: 1740	Thornton Wilder	10: 1946
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	9: 1747	Tennessee Williams	10: 1948
Gertrude Stein	9: 1752	Woodrow Wilson	10: 1951
John Steinbeck	9: 1755	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Oliver Stone	9: 1761	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Harriet Beecher Stowe	9: 1766	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Igor Stravinsky	9: 1773	Wright Brothers	10: 1969
Barbra Streisand	9: 1776	Frank Lloyd Wright	10: 1972
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Amy Tan	10: 1787	Paul Zindel	10: 1987
Elizabeth Taylor	10: 1790		
Twyla Tharp	10: 1804	<i>Arabian</i>	
Clarence Thomas	10: 1807	Muhammad	7: 1355
Henry David Thoreau	10: 1813		
Jim Thorpe	10: 1816	<i>Argentine</i>	
James Thurber	10: 1819	Eva Perón	8: 1474
Harry S. Truman	10: 1834		
Donald Trump	10: 1837	<i>Asian American</i>	
Sojourner Truth	10: 1840	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Mark Twain	10: 1850	Maya Lin	6: 1148
John Updike	10: 1855	Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398
Gore Vidal	10: 1872	I. M. Pei	8: 1464
Wernher von Braun	10: 1882	Amy Tan	10: 1787
Kurt Vonnegut	10: 1884	An Wang	10: 1900
Alice Walker	10: 1891	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Barbara Walters	10: 1897		

Australian

Rupert Murdoch 7: 1364

Austrian

Joy Adamson 1: 22

Alfred Adler 1: 27

Sigmund Freud 4: 735

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart 7: 1350

Franz Schubert 9: 1684

Johann Strauss 9: 1771

Belgian

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886

Brazilian

Pelé 8: 1467

Burmese

Aung San Suu Kyi 1: 130

Cambodian

Pol Pot 8: 1495

Dith Pran 8: 1514

Canadian

Margaret Atwood 1: 120

Frederick Banting 1: 168

Jean Chrétien 3: 467

John Kenneth Galbraith 4: 745

Wayne Gretzky 5: 833

Gordie Howe 5: 946

Aimee Semple McPherson 7: 1275

Chilean

Isabel Allende 1: 52

Chinese

Chiang Kai-shek 3: 456

Confucius 3: 503

Deng Xiaoping 4: 587

Jiang Zemin 6: 1003

Lao Tzu 6: 1115

Tsung-Dao Lee 6: 1129

Mao Zedong 7: 1226

I. M. Pei 8: 1464

Sun Yat-sen 9: 1779

Tu Fu 10: 1843

An Wang 10: 1900

Colombian

Gabriel García Márquez 7: 762

Congolese

Patrice Lumumba 6: 1178

Cuban

Fidel Castro 3: 393

Czech

Madeleine Albright 1: 37

Franz Kafka 6: 1047

Tom Stoppard 9: 1764

Danish

Hans Christian Andersen 1: 62

Dutch

Desiderius Erasmus 4: 683

Rembrandt 8: 1566

Vincent Van Gogh 10: 1859

Egyptian

Boutros Boutros-Ghali 2: 261

Cleopatra VII 3: 480

Imhotep 5: 972

Najib Mahfuz 7: 1203

Moses 7: 1343

Hosni Mubarak 7: 1353

Nefertiti 7: 1381

Tutankhamen 10: 1845

English

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	1: 66	Cary Grant	5: 829
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Graham Greene	5: 831
Jane Austen	1: 132	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Charles Babbage	1: 139	Thomas Hardy	5: 857
Francis Bacon	1: 143	Stephen Hawking	5: 860
Roger Bacon	1: 145	Henry VIII	5: 880
Beatles	2: 181	Alfred Hitchcock	5: 907
Elizabeth Blackwell	2: 229	Thomas Hobbes	5: 915
William Blake	2: 234	P. D. James	6: 991
William Booth	2: 250	Elton John	6: 1011
Charlotte Brontë	2: 283	Samuel Johnson	6: 1023
Emily Brontë	2: 284	Ben Jonson	6: 1032
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	2: 299	John Keats	6: 1054
Robert Browning	2: 302	Rudyard Kipling	6: 1101
Lord Byron	2: 331	Mary Leakey	6: 1121
Lewis Carroll	3: 370	Joseph Lister	6: 1159
Vernon Castle	3: 390	Andrew Lloyd Webber	6: 1161
Henry Cavendish	3: 404	John Locke	6: 1166
Charlie Chaplin	3: 421	John Stuart Mill	7: 1301
Charles, Prince of Wales	3: 427	John Milton	7: 1313
Geoffrey Chaucer	3: 433	Thomas More	7: 1334
Agatha Christie	3: 469	Isaac Newton	7: 1382
Winston Churchill	3: 472	Florence Nightingale	8: 1390
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	3: 496	Laurence Olivier	8: 1422
Joseph Conrad	3: 508	George Orwell	8: 1430
Noel Coward	3: 523	William Penn	8: 1469
Oliver Cromwell	3: 529	Alexander Pope	8: 1502
Charles Darwin	3: 554	Walter Raleigh	8: 1547
Daniel Defoe	4: 574	Cecil Rhodes	9: 1577
Diana, Princess of Wales	4: 597	Rolling Stones	9: 1618
Charles Dickens	4: 600	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	9: 1634
John Donne	4: 621	J. K. Rowling	9: 1641
Arthur Conan Doyle	4: 629	William Shakespeare	9: 1702
Francis Drake	4: 632	Mary Shelley	9: 1708
George Eliot	4: 665	Percy Shelley	9: 1711
T. S. Eliot	4: 668	Tom Stoppard	9: 1764
Elizabeth I	4: 672	Alfred, Lord Tennyson	10: 1795
Elizabeth II	4: 675	William Makepeace Thackeray	10: 1801
William Golding	5: 800	J. R. R. Tolkien	10: 1824
Jane Goodall	5: 804	Victoria	10: 1869
		Oscar Wilde	10: 1940

Virginia Woolf	10: 1963	Molière	7: 1318
William Wordsworth	10: 1965	Claude Monet	7: 1320
<i>Ethiopian</i>		Montesquieu	7: 1329
Haile Selassie	9: 1697	Napoleon Bonaparte	7: 1376
<i>Filipino</i>		Nostradamus	8: 1406
Benigno Aquino	1: 84	Blaise Pascal	8: 1447
Ferdinand Marcos	7: 1233	Louis Pasteur	8: 1450
<i>Flemish</i>		Marcel Proust	8: 1526
Peter Paul Rubens	9: 1643	Pierre Auguste Renoir	8: 1571
<i>Frankish</i>		Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu	9: 1583
Charlemagne	3: 424	Maximilien de Robespierre	9: 1599
<i>French</i>		Auguste Rodin	9: 1613
John James Audubon	1: 125	Jean-Jacques Rousseau	9: 1636
Honoré de Balzac	1: 164	George Sand	9: 1669
Simone de Beauvoir	2: 187	Jean-Paul Sartre	9: 1676
Louis Braille	2: 273	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	10: 1830
John Calvin	2: 344	Jan Vermeer	10: 1862
Albert Camus	2: 349	Jules Verne	10: 1864
Paul Cézanne	3: 411	Voltaire	10: 1879
Jacques Cousteau	3: 521	<i>German</i>	
Marie Curie	3: 538	Hannah Arendt	1: 91
Claude Debussy	4: 569	John Jacob Astor	1: 118
Edgar Degas	4: 576	Johann Sebastian Bach	1: 141
Charles de Gaulle	4: 579	Klaus Barbie	1: 170
René Descartes	4: 590	Ludwig van Beethoven	2: 192
Denis Diderot	4: 606	Konrad Bloch	2: 237
Alexandre Dumas	4: 634	Johannes Brahms	2: 271
Gustave Flaubert	4: 721	Catherine the Great	3: 401
Paul Gauguin	4: 773	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Victor Hugo	5: 957	Gabriel Fahrenheit	4: 695
Joan of Arc	6: 1005	Karl Friedrich Gauss	4: 775
Marquis de Lafayette	6: 1113	Hans Geiger	5: 779
Édouard Manet	7: 1219	Brothers Grimm	5: 836
Marie Antoinette	7: 1238	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Henri Matisse	7: 1255	Werner Heisenberg	5: 868
		William Herschel	5: 893
		Adolf Hitler	5: 909
		Franz Kafka	6: 1047
		Immanuel Kant	6: 1052

Johannes Kepler 6: 1074
 Henry Kissinger 6: 1104
 Martin Luther 6: 1181
 Karl Marx 7: 1246
 Felix Mendelssohn 7: 1289
 Friedrich Nietzsche 8: 1387
 André Previn 8: 1520
 Erich Maria Remarque 8: 1564
 Leni Riefenstahl 9: 1588
 Oskar Schindler 9: 1678
 Edith Stein 9: 1749
 Wernher von Braun 10: 1882
 Richard Wagner 10: 1889

Ghanian

Kofi Annan 1: 76

Greek

Aeschylus 1: 29
 Archimedes 1: 89
 Aristophanes 1: 96
 Aristotle 1: 98
 Euclid 4: 686
 Euripides 4: 688
 Galen 4: 748
 Hippocrates 5: 902
 Homer 5: 926
 Pericles 8: 1472
 Plato 8: 1485
 Pythagoras 8: 1540
 Socrates 9: 1729
 Sophocles 9: 1734

Guatemalan

Rigoberta Menchú 7: 1286

Haitian

Jean-Bertrand Aristide 1: 93
 François Duvalier 4: 640

Hispanic American

César Chávez 3: 436
 Dennis Chavez 3: 438
 Linda Chavez 3: 440
 Selena 9: 1698

Hungarian

Joseph Pulitzer 8: 1531

Indian

Buddha 2: 310
 Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar 3: 419
 Indira Gandhi 4: 754
 Mohandas Gandhi 4: 758
 Sri Ramakrishna 8: 1550
 Salman Rushdie 9: 1649

Iranian

Ayatollah Khomeini 6: 1081
 Mohammad Reza Pahlavi 8: 1439

Iraqi

Saddam Hussein 5: 962

Irish

Samuel Beckett 2: 189
 Michael Collins 3: 501
 James Joyce 6: 1038
 C. S. Lewis 6: 1139
 George Bernard Shaw 9: 1706
 Bram Stoker 9: 1759
 Oscar Wilde 10: 1940
 William Butler Yeats 10: 1979

Israeli

Menachem Begin 2: 194
 Golda Meir 7: 1284

Italian

Fra Angelico 1: 71

Lucrezia Borgia	2: 252
Sandro Botticelli	2: 257
Caligula	2: 338
Frank Capra	2: 357
Donatello	4: 619
Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Francis of Assisi	4: 729
Galileo	4: 750
Leonardo da Vinci	6: 1136
Niccolò Machiavelli	7: 1188
Catherine de' Medici	7: 1281
Michelangelo	7: 1295
Maria Montessori	7: 1331
Benito Mussolini	7: 1367
Luciano Pavarotti	8: 1456
Antonio Stradivari	9: 1769
Amerigo Vespucci	10: 1867
Antonio Vivaldi	10: 1877

Jamaican

Marcus Garvey	4: 767
-------------------------	--------

Japanese

Hirohito	5: 904
Soichiro Honda	5: 929
Eiji Toyoda	10: 1832

Judean

Herod the Great	5: 891
---------------------------	--------

Lebanese

Kahlil Gibran	5: 788
-------------------------	--------

Libyan

Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	8: 1543
-------------------------------	---------

Lithuanian

Al Jolson	6: 1025
---------------------	---------

Macedonian

Alexander the Great	1: 43
Ptolemy I	8: 1528

Mexican

Lázaro Cárdenas	3: 361
Benito Juárez	6: 1040
Diego Rivera	9: 1593

Mongolian

Genghis Khan	5: 784
Kublai Khan	6: 1109

Native American

American Horse	1: 57
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Pocahontas	8: 1488
Sequoyah	9: 1701
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785

New Zealander

Edmund Hillary	5: 898
--------------------------	--------

Nigerian

Chinua Achebe	1: 10
-------------------------	-------

Norwegian

Thor Heyerdahl	5: 895
Henrik Ibsen	5: 970
Edvard Munch	7: 1362

Pakistani

Benazir Bhutto	2: 218
--------------------------	--------

Palestinian

Yasir Arafat	1: 86
------------------------	-------

Panamanian

Manuel Noriega 8: 1401

Persian

Harun al-Rashid 8: 1555

Polish

Baal Shem Tov 1: 137

Menachem Begin 2: 194

Frédéric Chopin 3: 464

Joseph Conrad 3: 508

Nicolaus Copernicus 3: 510

Marie Curie 3: 538

John Paul II 6: 1013

Albert Sabin 9: 1657

Isaac Bashevis Singer 9: 1724

Portuguese

Ferdinand Magellan 7: 1201

Roman

Augustus 1: 128

Julius Caesar 2: 335

Marcus Tullius Cicero 3: 475

Jesus of Nazareth 6: 1000

Marcus Aurelius 7: 1236

Mark Antony 7: 1240

Ovid 8: 1432

Virgil 10: 1874

Romanian

Elie Wiesel 10: 1939

Russian

Alexander II 1: 41

Isaac Asimov 1: 113

George Balanchine 1: 154

Irving Berlin 2: 208

Leonid Brezhnev 2: 280

Catherine the Great 3: 401

Marc Chagall 3: 414

Anton Chekhov 3: 449

Fyodor Dostoevsky 4: 624

Mikhail Gorbachev 5: 809

Wassily Kandinsky 6: 1050

Nikita Khrushchev 6: 1083

Vladimir Lenin 6: 1131

Vladimir Nabokov 7: 1371

Rudolf Nureyev 8: 1409

Ivan Pavlov 8: 1459

Anna Pavlova 8: 1462

Aleksandr Pushkin 8: 1535

Vladimir Putin 8: 1537

Andrei Sakharov 9: 1662

Joseph Stalin 9: 1743

Igor Stravinsky 9: 1773

Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky 10: 1792

Valentina Tereshkova 10: 1798

Leo Tolstoy 10: 1827

Boris Yeltsin 10: 1982

Scottish

Alexander Graham Bell 2: 196

Tony Blair 2: 232

Robert Burns 2: 317

Andrew Carnegie 3: 367

Sean Connery 3: 506

Arthur Conan Doyle 4: 629

Mary, Queen of Scots 7: 1249

John Muir 7: 1360

Walter Scott 9: 1693

Robert Louis Stevenson 9: 1757

James Watt 10: 1910

Serbian

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310

South African

Christiaan Barnard 1: 173

P. W. Botha 2: 255

F. W. de Klerk 4: 581

Nelson Mandela 7: 1216
Desmond Tutu 10: 1847

Spanish

Pablo Casals 3: 386
Catherine of Aragon 3: 399
Miguel de Cervantes 3: 408
Salvador Dali 3: 549
Hernando de Soto 4: 592
Placido Domingo 4: 616
Joan Miró 7: 1316
Pablo Picasso 8: 1479
Juan Ponce de León 8: 1501

Swedish

Ingmar Bergman 2: 206
Anders Celsius 3: 407
Carl Linnaeus 6: 1157
Alfred Nobel 8: 1397

Swiss

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886
Carl Jung 6: 1043
Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus 8: 1443
Jean Piaget 8: 1477

Tibetan

Dalai Lama 3: 546

Trinidadian

Stokely Carmichael 3: 363

Ugandan

Idi Amin 1: 59

Venetian

Marco Polo 8: 1498

Vietnamese

Ho Chi Minh 5: 913

Welsh

Roald Dahl 3: 543
Anthony Hopkins 5: 938
Dylan Thomas 10: 1810

Yugoslav

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310
Marshal Tito 10: 1821



reader's guide

U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography features 750 biographies of notable historic and contemporary figures from around the world. Chosen from American history, world history, literature, science and math, arts and entertainment, and the social sciences, the entries focus on the people studied most often in middle school and high school, as identified by teachers and media specialists.

The biographies are arranged alphabetically across ten volumes. The two- to four-page entries cover the early lives, influences, and careers of notable men and women of diverse fields and ethnic groups. Each essay includes birth and death information in the header and concludes with a list of sources

for further information. A contents section lists biographees by their nationality. Nearly 750 photographs and illustrations are featured, and a general index provides quick access to the people and subjects discussed throughout *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

Special thanks

Much appreciation goes to Mary Alice Anderson, media specialist at Winona Middle School in Winona, Minnesota, and Nina Levine, library media specialist at Blue Mountain Middle School in Cortlandt Manor, New York, for their assistance in developing the entry list. Many thanks also go to the following people for their important editorial contri-

butions: Taryn Benbow-Pfalzgraf (proofreading), Jodi Essey-Stapleton (copyediting and proofing), Margaret Haerens (proofreading), Courtney Mroch (copyediting), and Theresa Murray (copyediting and indexing). Special gratitude goes to Linda Mahoney at LM Design for her excellent typesetting work and her flexible attitude.

Comments and suggestions

We welcome your comments on the *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*. Please write: Editors, *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*, U•X•L, 27500 Drake Road, Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535; call toll-free: 1-800-877-4253; fax to 248-699-8097; or send e-mail via www.gale.com.



CECIL RHODES

Born: July 5, 1853

Bishop's Stortford, England

Died: March 26, 1902

Muizenberg, South Africa

English businessman and imperialist

The English businessman and financier Cecil Rhodes founded the modern diamond industry and controlled the British South Africa Company, which acquired Rhodesia and Zambia as British territories. He was also a noted philanthropist (working for charity) and founded the Rhodes scholarships.

Early life

Cecil John Rhodes was born on July 5, 1853, at Bishop's Stortford, England, one of nine sons of the parish vicar (priest). While his brothers were sent off to attend better schools, Cecil's poor health forced him to stay at home and attend the local grammar school. Instead of attending college, sixteen-year-old Cecil was sent to South Africa to work on a cotton farm. Arriving in October 1870, he grew cotton with his brother Herbert in Natal, South Africa, a harsh environment. Soon the brothers learned that growing cotton was no way to build a fortune and by 1871 "diamond fever" was sweeping the region with promises of fame and fortune. The two brothers soon left Natal for the newly developed diamond



Cecil Rhodes.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

field at Kimberley, South Africa, an even less inviting environment.

In the 1870s Rhodes laid the foundation for his later massive fortune by working an open-pit mine where he personally supervised his workers and even sorted diamonds himself. The hard work would pay off as Rhodes developed a moderate fortune by investing in diamond claims, initiating mining techniques, and in 1880 forming the De Beers Mining Company.

In 1873 Rhodes returned to England to attend Oxford University. During his education, Rhodes split his time between South

Africa and Oxford, where he did not fit in socially but finally earned a bachelor of arts degree in 1881.

Birth of an empire

During the mid-1870s, Rhodes spent six months alone, wandering the unsettled plains of Transvaal, South Africa. There, he developed his philosophies on British Imperialism, where the British Empire rules over its foreign colonies. These philosophies consisted of a “dream” where a brotherhood of elite Anglo-Saxons (whites) would occupy all of Africa, the Holy Land in the Middle East, and other parts of the world. After a serious heart attack in 1877, Rhodes revealed his ideas of British Imperialism when he made his first will. In it, Rhodes called for the settlement of his as-yet-uneared fortune to found a secret society that would extend British rule throughout the world and colonize most parts of it with British settlers, leading to the “ultimate recovery of the United States of America” by the British Empire.

From 1880 to 1895 Rhodes’s star rose steadily. Basic to this rise was his successful struggle to take control of the rival diamond interests of Barnie Barnato, with whom he partnered in 1888 to form De Beers Consolidated Mines, a company whose extraordinary powers led to acquiring lands for the purpose of extending the British Empire. With his brother Frank he also formed Goldfields of South Africa, with several large mines in the Transvaal.

Entering politics

During this same time Rhodes built a career in politics. He was elected to the Cape Parliament in 1880, the governing body of

South Africa. In Parliament, Rhodes succeeded in focusing attention on the Transvaal and German expansion so as to secure British control of Bechuanaland by 1885. In 1888 Rhodes secured mining grants from Lobengula, King of the Ndebele, which by highly stretched interpretations gave Rhodes a claim to what became Rhodesia. In 1889 Rhodes persuaded the British government to grant a charter (authority from the British throne) to form the British South Africa Company, which in 1890 put white settlers into Lobengula's territories and founded Salisbury and other towns. This sparked conflict with the Ndebele, but they were crushed by British forces in the war of 1893.

By this time Rhodes controlled the politics of Britain's Cape Colony. In July 1890 he became premier of the Cape with the support of the English-speaking white and nonwhite voters and the Afrikaners (descendants of the Dutch settlers of South Africa). Rhodes won their support by creating a "Bond" where some twenty-five thousand shares of the British South Africa Company were distributed among them. His policy was to aim for the creation of a South African federation (union of states) under the British flag, and he gained the trust of the Afrikaners by restricting the Africans' educational and property qualifications in 1892 and setting up a new system of "native administration" in 1894.

Later career

At the end of 1895 Rhodes's fortunes took a disastrous turn. In poor health and anxious to hurry his dream of a South African federation, he organized a plot against the Boer government of the Transvaal, which was run by the Dutch settlers. Through his min-

ing company, arms and ammunition were smuggled into Johannesburg, South Africa, to be used for a revolution by "outlanders," mainly British. A strip of land on the borders of the Transvaal was awarded to the chartered company by Joseph Chamberlain (1836–1914), the British colonial secretary. Leander Jameson, administrator of Rhodesia, was stationed there with company troops. The Johannesburg plotters did not rebel but Jameson, however, rode in on December 27, 1895, and was captured. As a result, Rhodes had to resign his premiership in January 1896. Thereafter he concentrated on developing Rhodesia and especially in extending the railway, which he dreamed would one day reach Cairo, Egypt.

When the Anglo-Boer War broke out in October 1899, Rhodes hurried to Kimberley, which the Boers surrounded a few days later. It was not relieved until February 16, 1900, during which time Rhodes had been active in organizing defense and sanitation. His health was worsened by the takeover, and after traveling in Europe he returned to the Cape in February 1902, where he died at Muizenberg, South Africa, on March 26.

In death, Rhodes's fortune allowed him to leave behind a legacy that is still relevant today. Rhodes left six million pounds, most of which went to Oxford University to establish the Rhodes scholarships to provide places at Oxford for students from the United States, the British colonies, and Germany. Land was also left to eventually provide for a university in Rhodesia.

For More Information

Flint, John. *Cecil Rhodes*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1974.

Roberts, Brian. *Cecil Rhodes: Flawed Colossus*. New York: Norton, 1988.

Rotberg, Robert I. *The Founder: Cecil Rhodes and the Pursuit of Power*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1988.

Thomas, Antony. *Rhodes: Race for Africa*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1997.

CONDOLEEZZA RICE

Born: November 14, 1954

Birmingham, Alabama

*African American national security advisor
and educator*

Condoleezza Rice is a leading expert on the politics and military of Eastern Europe, the former Soviet Union, and other areas of the world. In 2001 President George W. Bush (1946–) named Rice his national security advisor, a key advisor and player in foreign affairs. She became the first African American and the first woman ever to hold the position.

Childhood talents

Condoleezza Rice was born in Birmingham, Alabama, on November 14, 1954. Condi, as she was known to her friends, was born into a family of educators. Both of her parents were teachers. In fact, Rice traces her career choice to her family's political discussions when she was growing up. Her parents also encouraged academic achievement, telling her she could "do and be whatever

[she] wanted," Rice told *Ebony* magazine. She succeeded in many activities from an early age. She took piano lessons at three years old and was playing Bach and Beethoven before her feet reached the pedals. She studied figure skating, French, and Spanish. She entered the eighth grade at only eleven years of age, and graduated from high school at age fifteen.

Rice then entered the University of Denver, first studying piano but later switching to political science when she realized she would never be a great pianist. She graduated with high honors when she was nineteen. Later, she returned to the University of Denver to study international studies in graduate school, earning a doctorate degree.

Beginning an impressive career

In 1981 Rice started teaching political science at Stanford University in California. She focused on the politics of the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe, publishing articles and addressing audiences on these subjects. Through her writing, teaching, and public speaking, she became well known as an expert on the politics of the Soviet Union. With Alexander Dallin, she wrote *Uncertain Allegiance: The Soviet Union and the Czechoslovak Army* (1984). With Phillip Zelikow, she wrote *The Gorbachev Era* (1986). In 1986 she also served as special assistant to the Joint Chiefs of Staff, a group of leaders in the U.S. military who advise the president in matters of war. The following year she traveled to Bulgaria to speak to Soviet representatives about controlling the spread of weapons.

In 1989 Rice was named director of Soviet and East European affairs on the National Security Council. In this position,

she analyzed and explained to President George Bush (1924–) the events of international importance occurring in the region. She helped Bush prepare for summit meetings with then-Soviet president Mikhail Gorbachev (1931–) and other top officials.

The purpose of the meetings was to create a plan for peace around the world. Much of the talk was about controlling the spread of weapons. The leaders also discussed expanding trade and the independence movements in many of the Soviet Union republics. As an advisor for Bush, Rice had important knowledge to provide about the politics and military abilities in that region. This work was exciting but challenging for her. In an interview with *San Francisco: The Magazine*, she said that the hardest part was remaining objective and “keeping the analyst in me separate from my political views.”

Rice told *Ebony* magazine it was a “truly amazing time to be working in the White House,” because so much was changing in the Eastern-bloc countries. The Berlin Wall, which was erected between East and West Berlin by the Communist government of East Germany in 1961, had come down, allowing citizens of the East to move freely to the West. Shortly thereafter, the world witnessed the fall of the Soviet Union.

Return to Stanford

In 1991 Rice left Washington to return to academic life at Stanford University in California. Her expertise had been sought and her presence felt by many. At one point, the governor of California suggested that she run for a Senate seat in that state, but she declined. The *New York Times* frequently sought her opinion and commentary on for-



Condoleezza Rice.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

eign affairs. She also contributed editorials and work to *Time* magazine and newspapers such as the *Los Angeles Times*. She continues to publish her scholarly work.

In 1991 the thirty-seven-year-old Rice was appointed by the governor of California to a special committee to draw new state legislative and congressional districts in the state. She was the youngest member chosen. The governor told the *Los Angeles Times* that all the members shared certain characteristics. “All are distinguished scholars. All are leaders in their fields, known for [fairness] and devoted to the truth.” Other people agreed with this opinion of Rice. In 1991 two

major companies elected Rice to their boards of directors. She was named provost of Stanford, a very high-ranking position.

Trusted advisor in peace and war

After many years back in university life, Rice was asked to help George W. Bush run for president in 2000. When he was elected, he named her national security advisor. She was chosen for her vast experience and expertise but also because she was a trusted friend of George W. Bush. This combination of expertise and exceptional trust became especially important during the fall of 2001.

Following the attacks of September 11, 2001, Rice became more important at the national and international levels. In the war in Afghanistan, Rice was a strong supporter of President Bush's actions and a trusted advisor in the conflict. In press conferences and on television news programs, she denounced the actions of the Taliban, Osama bin Laden (1957–), and the terrorist group al-Qaida. In Washington on November 8, she said, "What we are engaged in now is an act of self-defense to try to root out al-Qaida, to try to deny them safe harbor." She also has spoken forcefully about the U.S. military action and policies to fight the War on Terror.

Life as a successful minority

Rice has been fortunate, but she has also encountered her share of racism (a dislike or disrespect of someone solely because of the color of his or her skin). In high school she took difficult classes and had high grades. Her counselor, though, told her she was not suited for college. Rice told *Ebony* magazine that she did not do very well on an SAT

exam, which is used for applying to colleges. However, she also recalled, "I remember thinking that the odd thing about it was that [the counselor] had not bothered to check my record. I was a straight-A student in all advanced courses. . . . I was a figure skater and a piano student. That none of that occurred to her I think was a [quiet] form of racism. It was the problem of low expectations [for African Americans]."

In 1990 an unfortunate public incident occurred at the San Francisco airport. Rice was with a group of representatives from the Soviet Union. She was wearing the correct White House identification, yet a security person ordered her to stand behind the security lines. When she tried to explain that she was with the group, he shoved her. Newspapers made a big deal of the event. They wondered if the security person was being racist. Rice, however, told *Ebony* magazine that she did not feel any racial anger from him, "just that he was rude."

Rice has also come across her share of sexism (a dislike or disrespect of someone solely because of his or her gender). When people say sexist things to her, she has said she sometimes responds by talking about other powerful women. "Haven't they heard of [former prime minister of England] Margaret Thatcher, [former prime minister of India] Indira Gandhi, or Cleopatra [the Queen of Egypt] for that matter?" she said to *Jet* magazine. She told *Ebony* magazine that sexism "usually comes in the line of 'How'd you end up doing this?'" Rice's most successful weapon against racism and sexism has been her own intelligence and ability.

For More Information

“Condoleezza Rice.” *Contemporary Black Biography*. Vol. 28. Detroit: Gale, 2001.

“Condoleezza Rice.” *Notable Black American Women, Book 2*. Edited by Jessie Carney Smith. Detroit: Gale, 1996.

Felix, Antonia. *Condi: The Condoleezza Rice Story*. New York: Newmarket Press, 2002.

ARMAND-JEAN DU PLESSIS DE RICHELIEU

Born: September 9, 1585

Paris, France

Died: December 4, 1642

Paris, France

French cardinal and statesman

Cardinal Richelieu devoted himself to securing French leadership in Europe and increasing King Louis XIII's (1601–1643) power within France.

Early life

Armand-Jean du Plessis de Richelieu was born on September 9, 1585, in Paris, fourth of the five children of François du Plessis, the lord of Richelieu, and Suzanne de La Porte. His father was the head of King Henry III's (1551–1589) central administration and also served Henry IV (1553–1610) before dying in 1590 of a fever. His mother was forced to move the family to the home of her mother-in-law. Armand, who throughout his life suf-

fered from different illnesses, returned to Paris to study at the College de Navarre, from which he went on to a military academy. The family planned for his brother Alphonse to become bishop of Luçon, France, but Alphonse decided to become a monk. Because it would help the family, Armand volunteered to take his brother's place, and in 1603 he began studying religion. He went to Rome in 1607 and was named a bishop by the pope. He returned to Paris and obtained his degree in theology (religious studies).

Career as bishop

In 1608 Richelieu arrived in Luçon and began his duties as bishop. In 1614 he was elected as a representative of religion in the Estates General (the legislature). At the suggestion of Maria de' Medici (1573–1642), who was the head of a council that was ruling on behalf of her young son Louis XIII, Richelieu was chosen to speak at the last session of the Estates. He then went back to Luçon, but a year later returned to Paris and was appointed secretary of state for foreign affairs and war. He held the post for only five months before Louis XIII seized power in April 1617 and dismissed his mother's staff members. In 1618 Richelieu was ordered into exile in the city of Avignon, France.

Some of Louis XIII's advisers believed that Richelieu would be a calming influence on the king's mother, so the king recalled him in March 1619 and ordered him to resume serving her. Richelieu helped settle several disputes between the king and his mother. The queen mother wanted the king to help Richelieu become a cardinal; she hoped to control royal policy through the influence Richelieu would have as a member of the



Cardinal Richelieu.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

king's council. The resistance of the king and his ministers gradually crumbled; in September 1622 the pope appointed Richelieu a cardinal, and in April 1624 the king called Richelieu to his council.

Position as minister

Richelieu remained the king's principal minister until his death, and he was made a duke in 1631. He gradually built up in the council a group of men, his "creatures," who were loyal to him as well as to the king. These men kept him informed of possible threats against the king, giving him time to foil any takeover attempts. He also relied on his fam-

ily, which he extended by carefully arranging marriages of his nieces and cousins into great families. He made it clear that he was loyal to the king.

Many Catholics, including the queen mother, regarded Huguenots (French Protestants, who opposed many decisions made by the pope and placed less emphasis on ceremonies than Catholics did) as the enemy and insisted that they be dealt with. Richelieu agreed with them up to a point, taking over the Huguenot city of La Rochelle, France, and cooperating on a program of reforms. But he allowed the Huguenots to continue practicing their religion as long as they stayed loyal to the king, and his advice to Louis XIII on other matters caused the queen mother to finally break with Richelieu in 1630. The king then removed her people from his court.

Foreign policy

Richelieu wanted France to become the leading power in Europe. He knew that the country would eventually have to go to war with Spain, which at the time was a part of the Hapsburg empire (an empire that was made up of parts of the present-day countries of Austria, the Czech Republic, Hungary, Croatia, and others). While he reorganized the French army and established a navy, Richelieu encouraged German resistance to the Hapsburg emperor in Vienna, figuring this would buy the French some time while the Hapsburg king in Spain focused his attention on controlling Germany. He also gave money to the Dutch Republic and the Swedish warrior king Gustavus Adolphus (Gustavus II; 1594–1632) to help them in their fight against the Hapsburgs. Eventually France was drawn into war, which was still

going on when Richelieu died on December 4, 1642, having served his country to the best of his ability.

For More Information

Bergin, Joseph. *The Rise of Richelieu*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1991.

Glossop, Pat. *Cardinal Richelieu*. New York: Chelsea House, 1990.

Knecht, Robert. *Richelieu*. New York: Longman, 1991. Reprint, 2000.

Levi, Anthony. *Cardinal Richelieu and the Making of France*. New York: Carroll & Graf, 2000.

professor of political science and her mother was a counselor. Her parents encouraged Sally and her younger sister Karen to study hard and do their best, but allowed the children the freedom to develop at their own pace. In 1983 *Newsweek* quoted Dale B. Ride as saying, "We might have encouraged, but mostly we just let them explore."

Ride showed natural athletic ability as a youngster, often playing baseball and football with the neighborhood children. Although she liked all sports, tennis was her favorite. She had developed her tennis skills since the age of ten. Ride eventually ranked eighteenth on the national junior tennis circuit.

Student sets own agenda

Ride's tennis ability won her a partial scholarship to Westlake School for Girls, a prep school in Los Angeles. From her earliest years in school, Ride had gotten straight A grades. She did a lot of reading, often science fiction. However, sometimes she did not apply herself to her studies. In her junior year of high school she became interested in the study of physics, through the influence of her science teacher, Elizabeth Mommaerts.

After graduating from high school in 1968, Ride enrolled in the physics program at Swarthmore College, in Swarthmore, Pennsylvania. However, she continued to devote a large amount of time and energy to tennis and soon left college to work on her game full time. Tennis pro Billie Jean King (1943–) told Ride she had the talent to pursue a professional career in tennis.

Ride eventually decided not to pursue tennis. Instead, she returned to California as an undergraduate student at Stanford Univer-

SALLY RIDE

Born: May 26, 1951

Los Angeles, California

American astronaut and physicist

Sally Ride is best known as the first American woman sent into outer space, and she is also the youngest person ever sent into orbit. She has received numerous medals and honors for her work as an astronaut, and for her commitment to educating the young.

Early life

Sally Kristen Ride is the older of two daughters of Dale B. Ride and Carol Joyce (Anderson) Ride of Encino, California. She was born May 26, 1951. Her father was a



Sally Ride.

Courtesy of the U.S. National Aeronautics and Space Administration.

sity. She received a bachelor's degree in both physics and English literature in 1973. She also received her master's degree from Stanford in 1975. She continued work toward her doctoral degree in physics, astronomy, and astrophysics (the study of the physical elements that make up the universe) at Stanford and submitted her dissertation (a long essay written by a candidate for a doctoral degree) in 1978.

Into the wild blue yonder

At about the same time National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) was looking for young scientists to be “mis-

sion specialists” on space flights. Ride applied and was selected for space flight training in 1978. She was one of only thirty-five chosen from eight thousand applicants. As part of her training, Ride had to study basic science and math, meteorology (weather and climate), guidance, navigation, and computers. She trained for flying on a T-38 jet trainer and other simulators (devices that are modeled after real crafts to create similar sensations for training pilots).

Ride was selected as part of the ground-support crew for the second (November, 1981) and third (March, 1982) shuttle flights. Her duties included the role of “cap-com,” or capsule communicator. The “cap-com” relays commands from the ground to the shuttle crew. These experiences prepared her to be an astronaut.

Before Ride's first shuttle flight, George W.S. Abbey, NASA's director of flight operations, described her as an ideal choice for the crew. He noted that she had “an unusual flair for solving difficult engineering problems” and that she was a “team player.” On the seventh mission of the space shuttle *Challenger* (June 18 to June 24, 1983), Ride served as flight engineer. With John M. Fabian she launched communications satellites for Canada and Indonesia. They also conducted the first successful satellite deployment and retrieval in space using the shuttle's remote manipulator arm.

In this way, at thirty-one, Ride became the youngest person sent into orbit as well as the first American woman in space. Ride points to her fellow female astronauts with pride. She feels that since these women were chosen for training, Ride's own experience could not be dismissed as insignificant. That

had been the unfortunate fate of the first woman in orbit, the Soviet Union's Valentina Tereshkova.

Ride was also chosen for another *Challenger* flight led by Captain Crippen, October 5 through October 13, 1984. This time, the robot arm was used in some unusual ways. She performed "ice-busting" on the shuttle's exterior and readjusted a radar antenna. With this flight, Ride became the first American woman to make two space flights.

Response to the Challenger tragedy

Ride had been chosen for a third scheduled flight. Sadly, training was cut short in January 1986, when the space shuttle *Challenger* exploded in midair shortly after take-off. The twelve-foot rubber O-rings that serve as washers between steel segments of the rocket boosters failed under stress. The entire crew of seven was killed.

Ride was chosen for President Ronald Reagan's Rogers Commission, which investigated the explosion. Perhaps the most important recommendation the commission made was to include astronauts at management levels in NASA.

As leader of a task force on the future of the space program, Ride wrote *Leadership and America's Future in Space* in 1987. In her report she said that NASA should take environmental and international research goals into consideration. Ride said NASA has a duty to inform the public and capture the interest of youngsters. She cited a 1986 work that described the lack of math and science skills among American high school graduates. A mere 6 percent are fluent in these fields, compared to up to 90 percent in other nations.

Ride left NASA in 1987 to join Stanford's Center for International Security and Arms Control. Two years later she became physics professor at the University of California in San Diego (UCSD) and director of the California Space Institute. In the summer of 1999 Ride joined the board of Directors of Space.com, an Internet site devoted to news and information on the cosmos. She left that position a year later, to spend more time in science education.

Top priority: educating children

Ride has followed through on her commitment to science education. In her own high school years, she discovered how important it was to have a mentor (advisor). She felt so strongly about the positive influence Mommaerts had on her that she dedicated her first children's book to her former teacher. Ride coauthored two children's books, *To Space and Back*, and *Voyager*.

In 1998 Ride developed EarthKAM, an innovative project for studying natural phenomena (occurrences). This is a unique program for students in middle school through college. Students research a natural phenomenon on Earth and take pictures of it with digital cameras mounted in the crew cabins of NASA space shuttles. The pictures are then downloaded from the Internet into the classroom. Over ten thousand students from all over the United States participate in EarthKAM.

In 2001 Ride formed Imaginary Lines, a company dedicated to encouraging young women interested in the sciences. Through the Sally Ride Science Club, young women in the fourth through eighth grades will be able to network and hook up with mentors. To quote UCSD chancellor Robert Dynes in the

Los Angeles Times, August 29, 1999: "Sally's a hero at bringing the excitement of science into the classroom. Many children today never experience a full-blast spirit of discovery. Sally teaches kids to go for it. Flat out. That's the magic."

For More Information

Camp, Carole Ann. *Sally Ride: First American Woman in Space*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.

Hopping, Lorraine Jean. *Sally Ride: Space Pioneer*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 2000.

Hurwitz, Jane, and Sue Hurwitz. *Sally Ride: Shooting for the Stars*. New York: Fawcett Columbine, 1989.

O'Conner, Karen. *Sally Ride and the New Astronauts: Scientists in Space*. New York: F Watts, 1983.

Ride, Sally, and Susan Okie. *To Space and Back*. New York: Lothrop, Lee, and Shepard, 1986.

Early career as a dancer and actress

Helene Berta Amalie Riefenstahl was born in Berlin, Germany, on August 22, 1902. Her father, Alfred Riefenstahl, who owned a plumbing firm, and her only brother, Heinz, died in World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers: Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States). As a child she enjoyed reading, painting, and dancing. Early on she decided to become a dancer and received thorough training, both in traditional Russian ballet and in modern dance with Mary Wigman (1886–1973). By 1920 Riefenstahl was a successful dancer touring cities such as Munich, Dresden, and Frankfurt, Germany; Prague, Czechoslovakia; and Zurich, Switzerland.

By 1924 Riefenstahl's dance career was over after she suffered a serious knee injury. It was during her recovery period that her life would change forever when she saw one of the popular mountain films of Arnold Fanck. With characteristic determination and energy she set out to meet Fanck and talk him into offering her an acting role in his *Der heilige Berg* (*The Holy Mountain*, 1926). The film was well-received, and Riefenstahl made up her mind to stay with the relatively new medium of motion pictures. Over the next seven years she made five more films with Fanck. In Fanck's films Riefenstahl was often the only woman in a crew of rugged men who were devoted to adding the beauty and dangers of the still untouched high mountains onto their action-filled adventure films. Not only did she learn to climb and ski well, she also absorbed all she could about camera work, directing, and editing.

LENI RIEFENSTAHL

Born: August 22, 1902

Berlin, Germany

German film director

The German film director Leni Riefenstahl achieved fame and notoriety for her film *Triumph of the Will*, which critics believed to be propaganda, or material created to spread beliefs, of Adolf Hitler's (1889–1945) army, the Third Reich.

Eventually Riefenstahl dreamed up a different kind of mountain film, more romantic and mystical, in which a woman, played by herself, would be the central character and which she herself would direct. *Das blaue Licht* (*The Blue Light*, 1932) was based on a mountain legend and was shot in remote parts of the Tessin and the Dolomite mountains in northern Italy. It demanded—and received—a great deal of dedication from those involved, many of whom were former associates of Fanck's who continued to work with Riefenstahl on other films. *The Blue Light* won praise overseas, where it received the silver medal at the 1932 Biennale in Venice, Italy, and at home, where it also attracted the attention of Adolf Hitler.

Films for the Third Reich

When Adolf Hitler came to power in 1933 he asked Riefenstahl to film that year's Nazi Party (Hitler's political party) rally in Nuremberg, Germany. *Sieg des Glaubens* (*Victory of Faith*, 1933) has been lost; presumably it was destroyed because it showed party members who were soon afterwards killed by Hitler. Hitler then invited Riefenstahl to do the 1934 rally as well, a task she claimed to have accepted only after a second "invitation" and the promise of total artistic freedom.

Triumph des Willens (*Triumph of the Will*, 1935) is considered by many to be the propaganda film of all times. (Later, Riefenstahl maintained she intended the movie to be a documentary.) Carefully edited from over sixty hours of film by herself, with concern for rhythm and variety rather than chronological (order of time) accuracy, it empha-



Leni Riefenstahl.

Reproduced by permission of the Kobal Collection.

sized the fellowship of the Nazi Party, the unity of the German people, and the greatness of their leader who, through composition, cutting, and special camera angles, was given mythical dimensions.

Triumph of the Will made a powerful appeal to the irrational, emotional side of the viewer, particularly in Germany at the time. Not surprisingly, the film was awarded the German Film Prize for 1935. But it was also given the International Grand Prix at the 1937 Paris World Exhibition, albeit over the protest of French workers.

Riefenstahl's next film, the short *Tag der Freiheit: Unsere Wehrmacht* (*Day of Freedom: Our Armed Forces*, 1935) was in a way a sequel, shot to please the German Armed Forces, who were not at all pleased about having received little attention in *Triumph of the Will*.

The Olympic Games

Another major assignment from Hitler followed: to shoot the 1936 Olympic Games held in Germany. *Olympia, Part 1: Fest der Völker* (*Festival of Nations*) and *Part 2: Fest der Schönheit* (*Festival of Beauty*) premiered in 1938, again to great German and also international praise. Careful preparation, technical inventiveness, and eighteen months of editing helped Riefenstahl elevate sports photography—until then a matter for newsreels only—to a level of art rarely achieved. From the naked dancers in the opening sequence and the emphasis upon the African American athlete Jesse Owens (1913–1980) to the striking diving and steeplechase scenes, the film celebrated the beauty of the human form in motion through feats of strength and endurance.

Immediately after completing *The Blue Light* Riefenstahl had made plans to film *Tiefland* (*Lowlands*), a project interrupted by illness, Hitler's assignments, and World War II (1939–45). The film was finally finished in 1954. Many of Riefenstahl's other projects, most notably her plan to do a film on Penthisilea, the Amazon queen, were never completed at all. This was due partly to the fact that she was a woman in a man's profession but mostly to the war and the choices she made under the Nazis. Ultimately, all her work, in spite of the great talent and dedica-

tion it so clearly demonstrates, is tainted by the readiness and skill with which she put her art at the service of the Third Reich, whether it was from loyalty, political blindness, ambition, or, most likely, a combination of all three.

Later career

When Riefenstahl's film career came to a halt, her focus switched to still photography. She visited Africa many times in hopes of making a film, but eventually these trips resulted in two books of photography (*The Last of the Nubu*, in 1974, and *The People of Kau*, in 1976). Once again her work was praised for its beauty and criticized for its political leanings. When she was seventy, Reinstahl learned to scuba dive and concentrated her photography on underwater coral life, resulting in a new book *Coral Garden* (1976).

In 1993, when Riefenstahl was ninety-one years old, German director Ray Mueller made a film biography, *The Wonderful, Horrible Life of Leni Riefenstahl*. It was released along with the English translation of her autobiography, *Leni Riefenstahl: A Biography*. In both the film and the book, Riefenstahl proclaimed her innocence and mistreatment, never having realized the effect her films had on promoting the Nazi cause.

For More Information

BergPan, Renata. *Leni Riefenstahl*. Boston: Twayne, 1980.

Infield, Glenn B. *Leni Riefenstahl: The Fallen Film Goddess*. New York: Crowell, 1976.

Riefenstahl, Leni. *Leni Riefenstahl: A Memoir*. New York: Picador USA, 1995.

CAL RIPKEN JR.

Born: August 24, 1960

Havre de Grace, Maryland

American baseball player

Cal Ripken Jr. holds many records in professional baseball, but it is his breaking of Lou Gehrig's (1903–1941) record of 2,131 consecutive games played that gained him so many admirers, who call him the “Iron Man” of baseball. The perseverance, endurance, and everyday work ethic that Ripken exhibited throughout his twenty-one seasons with the Baltimore Orioles made him one of the most popular professional athletes in all of sports.

Growing up with the Orioles

Calvin Edwin Ripken Jr. was born on August 24, 1960, in the small Maryland town of Havre de Grace, to Calvin Sr. and Viola Ripkin. His father had been with the Baltimore Orioles baseball team as a minor league catcher since 1957. After a shoulder injury dashed his hopes of a major league career, the elder Ripken stayed on with the club as a coach and manager at both the minor and major league level. During the summers, the family would leave Aberdeen, Maryland, about thirty miles north of Baltimore, and travel with Cal Sr. during the baseball season. Even with all of the traveling alongside his father, Cal Jr. never saw much of him because of the long hours he put in at the ball park. He soon came to the conclusion that the only way he would be able to see his father was if he played baseball.

In 1976, Ripken's father was promoted to a coaching position with the Orioles in Baltimore. Cal Jr. was a constant presence, pitching and hitting during batting practices, retrieving balls, getting advice from major league stars like Brooks Robinson (1937–), and dreaming of becoming a Baltimore Oriole.

In high school Ripken made the varsity (a school's main team which is usually made up of upperclassmen) baseball team as a freshman. Ripken played in the Mickey Mantle World Series in Texas in 1977 and won the Harford County batting title with an amazing .492 batting average (the percent of time a baseball player gets a hit) his senior year. His high school team was crowned state Class A champions in 1978 and, soon after, Ripken was selected by the Orioles in the second round of the annual baseball draft. His dream was complete, as he was now a member of the Baltimore Orioles organization.

Begins play for the Orioles

Ripken was employed by Baltimore's minor league team in Bluefield, West Virginia, where he was assigned the shortstop position instead of pitcher. His first season with Bluefield was not a great success. He had a .264 batting average and led the league in errors with thirty-three. Soon after, he was moved to the Orioles's Florida Instructional League team in Miami and improved to a .303 batting average.

By the next season Ripken's play greatly improved. He was named the Southern League's all-star and was soon moved up the ladder again, this time to the Orioles's AAA team (the minor league team one step below the major league team) in Rochester, New York, in 1981. He continued to develop in



Cal Ripken Jr.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Rochester, with a batting average of .288 and twenty-three home runs, before being called up to the major leagues in August of 1981.

Ripken had a batting average of only .128 in thirty-nine at-bats during his first season with the Orioles, but his second season would prove to be a turning point. Ripken's performance in his second season improved to a .264 batting average with twenty-eight home runs. He was selected as the American League's Rookie of the Year.

In 1983, with Ripken firmly in place and comfortable, he helped the Orioles win the World Series against the Philadelphia Phillies. For his efforts he was voted the

American League's Most Valuable Player for the series and the *Sporting News* player of the year.

"Iron Man"

By the 1989 season, Ripken was slowly taking over as the team's leader. Despite losing the divisional title to the Toronto Blue Jays, Ripken committed only eight errors and hit twenty-one home runs. This made him the first shortstop to have eight 20-homer seasons. On June 12, 1990, Ripken moved into second place for the record of most consecutive games played as he appeared in his one thousand three hundredth consecutive game, surpassing Everett Scott's mark. He also set a shortstop record by playing ninety-five games without committing an error.

On September 6, 1995, Ripken became baseball's "Iron Man" as he surpassed Lou Gehrig's all-time consecutive games played record of 2,130. He had not missed a game since May 30, 1982, and when the game became official in the fifth inning, the capacity crowd at Baltimore's Camden Yards roared its approval. During a speech after the milestone game, Ripken underplayed his achievement and showed the humility (the state of not being arrogant) that had become his trademark. "Tonight I stand here, overwhelmed, as my name is linked with the great and courageous Lou Gehrig," he told the crowd. "I'm truly humbled to have our names spoken in the same breath."

On September 20, 1998, Ripken took a day off work, leaving his streak of most consecutive games played at an astounding two 2,632, undoubtedly one of the safest records in all of sports. In July of 2001, Ripken played in his last All-Star game, winning the

Most Valuable Player award. At the end of that season, Ripken walked away from the game for good. In retirement he holds nearly every Oriole offensive batting record, including most hits, doubles, home runs, and runs batted in.

For More Information

Campbell, Jim. *Cal Ripken, Jr.* Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1997.

Nicholson, Lois. *Cal Ripken, Jr., Quiet Hero*. 2nd ed. Centreville, MD: Tidewater Publishers, 1995.

Ripken, Cal, Jr. *Ripken: Cal on Cal*. Edited by Mark Vancil. Arlington, TX: Summit Pub. Group, 1995.

Ripken, Cal, and Mike Bryan. *The Only Way I Know*. New York: Viking, 1997.

Rosenfeld, Harvey. *Iron Man: The Cal Ripken, Jr. Story*. New York: St. Martin's Mass Market Paperback, 1996.

Savage, Jeff. *Cal Ripken, Jr.: Star Shortstop*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow, 1994.

DIEGO RIVERA

Born: December 8, 1886

Guanajuato, Mexico

Died: November 25, 1957

Mexico City, Mexico

Mexican painter

Diego Rivera was one of Mexico's most famous painters. He rebelled against the traditional school of painting and developed a style that combined historical, social, and political ideas. His great body of work reflects cultural changes taking place in Mexico and around the world during the turbulent twentieth century.

The young artist

Diego Maria Rivera and his twin brother Carlos were born in Guanajuato, Guanajuato State, Mexico, on December 8, 1886. Less than two years later his twin died. Diego's parents were Diego Rivera and Maria Barrientos de Rivera. His father worked as a teacher, an editor for a newspaper, and a health inspector. His mother was a doctor. Diego began drawing when he was only three years old. His father soon built him a studio with canvas-covered walls and art supplies to keep the young artist from drawing on the walls and furniture in the house. As a child, Rivera was interested in trains and machines and was nicknamed "the engineer." The Rivera family moved to Mexico City, Mexico, in 1892.

In 1897 Diego began studying painting at the San Carlos Academy of Fine Arts in Mexico City. His instructors included Andrés Ríos Félix Para (1845–1919), Santiago Rebull (1829–1902), and José María Velasco (1840–1912). Para showed Rivera Mexican art that was different from the European art that he was used to. Rebull taught him that a good drawing was the basis of a good painting. Velasco taught Rivera how to produce three-dimensional effects. He was also influenced by the work of José Guadalupe Posada (1852–1913), who produced scenes of everyday Mexican life engraved on metal.



Diego Rivera.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

In 1902 Rivera was expelled from the academy for leading a student protest when Porfirio Díaz (1830–1915) was reelected president of Mexico. Under Díaz's leadership, those who disagreed with government policies faced harassment, imprisonment, and even death. Many of Mexico's citizens lived in poverty, and there were no laws to protect the rights of workers. After Rivera was expelled, he traveled throughout Mexico painting and drawing.

Art in Europe

Although Rivera continued to work on his art in Mexico, he dreamed of studying in

Europe. Finally, Teodora A. Dehesa, the governor of Veracruz, Mexico, who was known for funding artists, heard about Rivera's talent and agreed to pay for his studies in Europe. In 1907 Rivera went to Madrid, Spain, and worked in the studio of Eduardo Chicharro. Then in 1909 he moved to Paris, France. In Paris he was influenced by impressionist painters, particularly Pierre-Auguste Renoir (1841–1919). Later he worked in a postimpressionist style inspired by Paul Cézanne (1839–1906), Paul Gauguin (1848–1903), Georges Seurat (1859–1891), Henri Matisse (1869–1954), Raoul Dufy (1877–1953), and Amedeo Modigliani (1884–1920).

As Rivera continued his travels in Europe, he experimented more with his techniques and styles of painting. The series of works he produced between 1913 and 1917 are cubist (a type of abstract art usually based on shapes or objects rather than pictures or scenes) in style. Some of the pieces have Mexican themes, such as the *Guerrillero* (1915). By 1918 he was producing pencil sketches of the highest quality, an example of which is his self-portrait. He continued his studies in Europe, traveling throughout Italy learning techniques of fresco (in which paint is applied to wet plaster) and mural painting before returning to Mexico in 1921.

Murals and frescoes

Rivera believed that all people (not just people who could buy art or go to museums) should be able to view the art that he was creating. He began painting large murals on walls in public buildings. Rivera's first mural, the *Creation* (1922), in the Bolívar Amphitheater at the University of Mexico, was the first important mural of the twentieth century.

The mural was painted using the encaustic method (a process where a color mixed with other materials is heated after it is applied). Rivera had a great sense of color and an enormous talent for structuring his works. In his later works he used historical, social, and political themes to show the history and the life of the Mexican people.

Between 1923 and 1926 Rivera created frescoes in the Ministry of Education Building in Mexico City. The frescoes in the Auditorium of the National School of Agriculture in Chapingo (1927) are considered his masterpiece. The oneness of the work and the quality of each of the different parts, particularly the feminine nudes, show off the height of his creative power. The general theme of the frescoes is human biological and social development. The murals in the Palace of Cortés in Cuernavaca (1929-1930) depict the fight against the Spanish conquerors.

Marriage, art, and controversy in the United States

In 1929 Rivera married the artist Frida Kahlo (1907–1954). The couple traveled in the United States, where Rivera produced many works of art, between 1930 and 1933. In San Francisco he painted murals for the Stock Exchange Luncheon Club and the California School of Fine Arts. Two years later he had an exhibition at the Museum of Modern Art in New York City. One of his most important works is the fresco in the Detroit Institute of Arts (1933), which depicts industrial life in the United States. Rivera returned to New York and began painting a mural for Rockefeller Center (1933). He was forced to stop work on the mural because it included a picture of

Vladimir Lenin (1870–1924), the founder of the Russian Communist Party and the first leader of the Soviet Union. Many people in the United States disagreed with communism (a political and economic system in which property and goods are owned by the government and are supposed to be given to people based on their need) and Lenin and the mural was later destroyed. Rivera was a member of the Mexican Communist Party and many of his works included representations of his political beliefs. In New York Rivera also did a series of frescoes on movable panels depicting a portrait of America for the Independent Labor Institute before returning to Mexico in 1933.

Back to Mexico

After Rivera and Kahlo returned to Mexico, he painted a mural for the Palace of Fine Arts in Mexico City (1934). This was a copy of the project that he had started in Rockefeller Center. In 1935 Rivera completed frescoes, which he had left unfinished in 1930, on the stairway in the National Palace. The frescoes show the history of Mexico from pre-Columbian times to the present and end with an image representing Karl Marx (1818–1883), the German philosopher and economist whose ideas became known as Marxism. These frescoes show Rivera's political beliefs and his support of Marxism. The four movable panels he worked on for the Hotel Reforma (1936) were removed from the building because they depicted a representation of his views against Mexican political figures. During this period he painted portraits of Lupe Marín and Ruth Rivera and two easel paintings, *Dancing Girl in Repose* and the *Dance of the Earth*.

In 1940 Rivera returned to San Francisco to paint a mural for a junior college on the general theme of culture in the future. Rivera believed that the culture of the future would be a combination of the artistic genius of South America and the industrial genius of North America. His two murals in the National Institute of Cardiology in Mexico City (1944) show the development of cardiology (the study of the heart) and include portraits of the outstanding physicians in that field. In 1947 he painted a mural for the Hotel del Prado, *A Dream in the Alameda*.

A celebration of fifty years of art

In 1951 an exhibition honoring fifty years of Rivera's art took place in the Palace of Fine Arts. His last works were mosaics for the stadium of the National University and for the Insurgents' Theater, and a fresco in the Social Security Hospital No. 1. Frida Kahlo died on July 13, 1954. Diego Rivera died in Mexico City on November 25, 1957.

For More Information

Hamill, Pete. *Diego Rivera*. New York: Harry N. Abrams, 1999.

Marnham, Patrick. *Dreaming with His Eyes Open: A Life of Diego Rivera*. New York: Knopf, 1998.

Rivera, Diego, and Gladys March. *My Art, My Life; an Autobiography*. New York: Citadel Press, 1960. Reprint, New York: Dover Publications, 1991.

Wolfe, Bertram David. *The Fabulous Life of Diego Rivera*. New York: Stein and Day, 1963. Reprint, New York: Cooper Square Press, 2000.

PAUL ROBESON

Born: April 9, 1898

Princeton, New Jersey

Died: January 23, 1976

Philadelphia, Pennsylvania

African American singer, actor, and political activist

Paul Robeson was an African American singer, actor, and political activist. He crusaded for equality and justice for African Americans.

Early life and distinguished scholar

Paul Leroy Robeson was born the last of eight children in the Robeson family, on April 9, 1898, in Princeton, New Jersey. His father, William Drew Robeson, was a runaway slave who fought for the North in the Civil War (1861–65), when Northern forces clashed with those of the South over secession, or the South's desire to leave the Union. His father put himself through Lincoln University, received a degree in divinity, and was pastor at a Presbyterian church in Princeton. Paul's mother, Anna Louisa Robeson, was a member of the distinguished Bustill family of Philadelphia, which included patriots in the Revolutionary War (1775–83), when the American colonies fought for independence from Great Britain. She also helped found the Free African Society, and maintained agents in the Underground Railroad, a secret system to help runaway slaves.

Paul's mother died when he was six and his father moved the remaining family to Sommerville, New Jersey. There, young Paul spent his childhood under his father's influ-

ence, regularly working with him after school and also singing in his father's church. From his father Robeson learned to work hard, pursue valuable goals, fight for his beliefs, and to help his people's cause.

At seventeen Robeson won a scholarship to Rutgers University in New Brunswick, New Jersey. Although he was only the third African American student in the school's history, Robeson was immensely popular and was considered an athlete "without equal." He won an amazing twelve major letters (varsity spots on sports teams) in four years. His academic record was also brilliant. He won first prize (for four consecutive years) in every speaking competition the at the college for which he was eligible, and he was elected to Phi Beta Kappa, a scholarship honor society. In addition, he engaged in social work in the local black community and delivered his senior class graduation speech. Rutgers subsequently honored him as the "perfect type of college man."

Turns to entertainment

Robeson graduated from the Columbia University Law School in 1923 and took a job with a New York City law firm. In 1921 he married Eslanda Goode Cardozo; they had one child. Robeson's career as a lawyer ended abruptly when others within the firm turned on him because he was African American. He then turned to acting as a career, playing the lead in *All God's Chillun Got Wings* (1924) and *The Emperor Jones* (1925). He added to his acting by singing spirituals. He was the first to give an entire program of exclusively African American songs in concert, and he was one of the most popular concert singers of his time.

Robeson starred in such stage presentations as *Show Boat* (1928), *Othello*, in Lon-

don, England (1930), *Toussaint L'Ouverture* (1934), and *Stevedore* (1935). His *Othello* (1943–44) ran for 296 performances—a remarkable run for a Shakespearean play on Broadway. While playing opposite white actress Mary Ure, he became the first black actor ever to do the role in England's Shakespeare Memorial Theater.

Robeson's most significant films were *Emperor Jones* (1933), *Show Boat*, *Song of Freedom* (both 1936), and *Proud Valley* (1939). Charles Gilpin and Robeson, as the first African American men to play serious roles on the American stage, opened up this aspect

of the theater for African Americans. Robeson used his talents not only to entertain but to gain appreciation for the cultural differences among men.

International affairs

During the 1930s Robeson entertained throughout Europe and the United States. In 1934 he made the first of several trips to the Soviet Union. He spoke out against the Nazis, Adolf Hitler's (1889–1945) radical German army, and sang to Loyalist troops during the Spanish Civil War (1936–39), when battles erupted between Spain's traditionalists and reigning Second Spanish Republic. In addition he raised money to fight the Italian invasion of Ethiopia, supported the Committee to Aid China, and became chairman of the Council on African Affairs (which he helped establish in 1937). A spokesman for cultural black nationalism (a radical movement that called for African Americans to set up their own self-governing nation), Robeson also continued to fight racial discrimination (forced separation people based on race). During World War II (1939–45), when the Allies—the United States, England, France, and the Soviet Union—battled German-led Axis forces, he supported the American effort by entertaining soldiers in camps and laborers in war industries.

After the war, Robeson worked full-time campaigning for the rights of African Americans around the world. In a period of great paranoia within the nation, the American government and many citizens felt threatened by Robeson's crusade for peace and on behalf of minorities. The fact that for over fifteen years he was America's most popular African American did not prevent Robeson

from being banned from American concert and meeting halls and being denied a passport to travel overseas.

Awards and legacy

During the 1950s Robeson performed in black churches and for trade unions. After eight years of denial, he won his passport, gave a concert in Carnegie Hall, and published *Here I Stand* in 1958. He went abroad on concert, television, and theater engagements. He received numerous honors and awards: the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People's (NAACP) Spingarn Medal, several honorary degrees from colleges, the Diction Award from the American Academy of Arts and Letters, numerous awards from labor unions and civic organizations, and the Stalin Peace Prize.

Robeson had used an “unshakable dignity and courage” learned from his father to break stereotypes (generalizations of a person or group) and limitations throughout his life. He added fifteen spoken languages, a law degree, an international career as singer and actor, and civil rights activist to his long list of accomplishments in his effort to be “the leader of the black race in America.”

Robeson returned to America in 1963 in poor health and soon retired from public life. Slowly deteriorating and living in seclusion, Robeson died on January 23, 1976, in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, after suffering a stroke.

Honored after death

It took Robeson seventy-seven years to win the respect of the college sports world.

During his outstanding, four-year football career at Rutgers University, Robeson was named All-American in 1917 and 1918, the first African American to do so. In 1995, after his race and politics no longer took away from his legacy and the awards were based more on accomplishments, he was inducted posthumously (after his death) into the College Football Hall of Fame at the new fourteen million dollar museum's grand opening in South Bend, Indiana. *Sports Illustrated* called it a "long-overdue step toward atonement [setting things right]."

In an article in *Jet* magazine, Robeson's son, Paul Jr., who accepted the honor, talked about his father's influence on African American men and his dedication to causes. "He felt it was a job he had to do for his people and the world as a whole," said the younger Robeson. His songs, such as his trademark *Ol' Man River*, and acting have remained available in videos and new releases of his vintage recordings.

For More Information

Duberman, Martin Bauml. *Paul Robeson*. New York: Knopf, 1988.

Larsen, Rebecca. *Paul Robeson, Hero Before His Times*. New York: E Watts, 1989.

Robeson, Paul. *Here I Stand*. New York: Othello Associates, 1958. Reprint, Boston: Beacon Press, 1988.

Robeson, Susan. *The Whole World in His Hands: A Pictorial Biography of Paul Robeson*. Secaucus, NJ: Citadel Press, 1981.

Wright, David K. *Paul Robeson: Actor, Singer, Political Activist*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1998.

MAXIMILIEN DE ROBESPIERRE

Born: May 6, 1758

Arras, France

Died: July 28, 1794

Paris, France

French political leader and lawyer

Maximilien de Robespierre was the leading voice of the government that ruled France during the French Revolution. He was largely responsible for the Reign of Terror, in which thousands of suspected French traitors were executed.

Early life

Maximilien François Marie Isidore de Robespierre was born on May 6, 1758, in Arras, France. His mother died when he was only six and his father, a lawyer, abandoned the family soon afterward. Robespierre received a law degree from the Collège Louis-le-Grand in Paris, France, and practiced law in Arras. He began to assume a public role as a voice calling for political change and wrote articles detailing his opinions. At age thirty he was elected to the Estates General, the French legislature.

Role in early revolution

During the first period of the French Revolution (1789–91), in which the Estates General became the National Assembly, Robespierre made many speeches. His ideas were seen as extreme: his belief in civil liberty and equality, his refusal to compromise, and his anger toward all authority won him little



Maximilien de Robespierre.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

support in the legislature. He favored giving the vote to all men, not just property owners, and he opposed slavery in the colonies. Robespierre was more popular at meetings of a Paris club called the Jacobins, whose members admired him and referred to him as “the Incorruptible” because of his honesty and firm sense of right and wrong.

When Robespierre’s term as a legislator ended in September 1791, Robespierre remained in Paris, spending time at the Jacobins and publishing a weekly political journal. During this period he was a critic of King Louis XVI (1754–1793) and those who supported a limited, constitutional monarchy

(rule by a single person). Robespierre, deeply suspicious of the king, spoke and wrote in opposition to the course of events until August 1792, when the monarchy was overthrown and the First French Republic was established.

Period in power

A group of representatives was quickly elected to draft a constitution and to govern the country in the meantime, and Robespierre was elected to attend. As a spokesman for the Jacobins in the National Convention, he was a harsh critic of the king, who was finally placed on trial, convicted, and executed in January 1793. In the months that followed Robespierre turned his anger on a group of moderates (those who prefer less abrupt change) called the Girondins, leading the effort to have their members removed from the convention, arrested, and executed.

In July 1793 Robespierre was elected to the Committee of Public Safety, which acted to protect the republic during the dual problems of foreign war (most of Europe was fighting against the Revolutionary government in France) and civil war (which threatened to bring down that government). It executed people who were suspected of supporting the king or making plans to take over the government. Thousands were put to death with a quick trial or no trial at all. This became known as the Reign of Terror.

Robespierre faced increased opposition on both sides. Included among these were the Hébertists, a group that controlled the Paris city government and was upset with wartime shortages and increased prices, and the Indulgents, moderate Jacobins who felt that the Reign of Terror should be relaxed

since the war had ended. Robespierre had leaders of both groups rounded up and executed, including Georges Jacques Danton (1759–1794), who had once been a close associate of his. Robespierre and his supporters claimed that they wanted to create a Republic of Virtue in which citizens would live honest, moral lives and serve the community.

Downfall and execution

Opposition to Robespierre continued to grow. More and more of the public, now that the military crisis was over, wanted a relaxation, not an increase, of the terror. In July 1794 Robespierre spoke for the need of the Committee of Public Safety to continue its activities. His opponents took a stand against him and on July 27 they voted for his arrest. He and his followers were quickly released, however, and they gathered to plan a rising of their own. But the opposition leaders rallied their forces; Robespierre and his supporters were captured that night and executed the next day. The period of the Thermidorian Reaction, during which the Terror was ended and France returned to a more moderate government, began with the deaths of Robespierre and his supporters.

For More Information

Hardman, John. *Robespierre*. New York: Longman, 1999.

Haydon, Colin, and William Doyle, eds. *Robespierre*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1999.

Jordan, David P. *The Revolutionary Career of Maximilien Robespierre*. New York: Free Press, 1985.

McGowen, Tom. *Robespierre and the French Revolution in World History*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2000.

SMOKEY ROBINSON

Born: February 19, 1940

Detroit, Michigan

African American singer, songwriter, and producer

Hailed by some as the greatest living American songwriter, Motown star Smokey Robinson has been composing and singing rhythm and blues hits for more than three decades.

Growing up a “Miracle”

William “Smokey” Robinson Jr. was born on February 19, 1940, in Detroit, Michigan, in the rough Brewster ghetto, a poor and generally dangerous neighborhood. Young Smokey grew up listening to his mother’s records, including the works of B. B. King (1925–), Muddy Waters (1915–1983), John Lee Hooker (1917–2001), Sarah Vaughan (1924–1990), and Billy Eckstine (1914–1993). These black artists, he commented in *Rolling Stone*, were “the first inspirational thing I had.” When Robinson was ten, his mother died, and his sister Geraldine took him in, raising him along with her ten children. The family was poor but close-knit, and Robinson spent his youth writing songs and singing in local bands.

Robinson would not consider a professional career until he graduated from high



Smokey Robinson.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

school, and even then he tried barber school and courses in dentistry before giving his full attention to music. In 1954 he formed a rhythm and blues (a form of music combining jazz, blues, and other musical styles) group called the Matadors; the name was changed to the Miracles three years later when a female singer, Claudette Rogers, joined the group. Rogers married Robinson in 1959. At first the members of the Miracles—who were each paid five dollars per week by their agent, Berry Gordy (1929–)—found the music business difficult.

Robinson was lucky to have encountered Berry Gordy during an audition for another

agent; Gordy, then a fledgling (just starting out) music producer on a limited budget, was equally fortunate to have found Robinson. Gordy began to produce the Miracles' singles in 1958, collaborating with Robinson on lyrics and tunes. Their first release, "Got a Job"—an answer to the Silhouettes' number one hit "Get a Job"—hit number 93 on the nationwide Billboard Top 100 chart. The debut was encouraging, but nothing prepared Gordy and Robinson for the limelight they would gain in 1960. Late that year they released an upbeat single, "Shop Around," that became a chart-topping million-seller. The Miracles became a national phenomenon, and Gordy was able to launch Motown Records, a landmark production company that introduced such talents as Diana Ross (1944–) and the Supremes, Stevie Wonder (1950–), Marvin Gaye (1939–1984), and the Temptations.

Became a sought-after songwriter

Robinson and the Miracles were Gordy's first star-quality group, and they continued their association with Motown as the company grew. Indeed, Robinson wrote hit songs not only for his group but for other Motown headliners as well.

Throughout the 1960s, especially in the latter half of the decade, the Motown sound competed with the music of the British invasion (the sudden appearance of extremely popular British bands, led by the Beatles and Rolling Stones) for popularity among America's youth. Robinson and the Miracles were favorites among the Motown personnel, earning more than six gold records (five hundred thousand or more records sold) containing such hits as "The Tracks of My Tears," "You've Really Got a Hold on Me," "I Second That

Emotion,” and “Ooo Baby Baby.” Still, Robinson was on the verge of leaving the group in 1968 when his son Berry was born. He reconsidered almost immediately, however, when the Miracles single, “Tears of a Clown,” became a number one hit, first in England and then in the United States. Robinson left the Miracles in 1972; the band went on without him until the late 1970s.

For a time after leaving the Miracles, Robinson concentrated on his business duties as vice president of Motown Records. He soon returned to recording, however, this time as a solo artist. His solo albums are, on the whole, more thoughtful and mellow than his work with the Miracles.

Inducted into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame

Robinson's records of the late 1980s, when he was well into his third decade in the music business, continued to gain popularity and the approval of critics. A *People* magazine reviewer found that on his 1986 album *Smoke Signals*, for example, the singer “remains a uniquely resilient performer.” His 1987 album entitled *One Heartbeat* was termed “another winning package of sharp, sophisticated soul” by a reviewer from *Rolling Stone*. Robinson hits like “Cruisin’,” “Just to See Her”—a Grammy Award winner—and “Being With You” became both rhythm and blues and pop hits. Coupled with his success with the Miracles and as a major Motown songwriter, Robinson's solo achievements in the music industry led to his 1986 induction into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame, and in 1989 he was named a Grammy Living Legend.

Coping with such enormous fame has not always been easy for Robinson. He wrote

of his personal struggles in his 1989 collaboration with David Ritz, *Smokey: Inside My Life*. Musician writer Jon Young remarked that the autobiography (a story that recounts one's own life) “documents everything from [Robinson's] family history and the early days of the Miracles to his extramarital affairs and, most striking, a graphic account of two years in the [depths] of cocaine addiction in the mid-'80s.” When asked why he chose to provide such candid details about his drug addiction, Robinson responded to Young, “I wrote it because it was God's will. . . . I was saved from drugs in 1986 when my pastor prayed for me. I never went to rehab or to a doctor. It was a miracle healing from God, so that I could carry the message about the perils of drugs. At the time I was saved, I was already dead. You are now speaking to Lazarus.”

Left Motown for SBK Records

With the onset of the 1990s, Robinson's contract with Motown Records expired and after a long and productive career with the record company, he moved to SBK Records. With SBK, Robinson released a well-received album he coproduced and recorded in less than six weeks, 1991's *Double Good Everything*.

Also in 1991 Robinson ventured into previously uncharted areas of the music world, considering an album of country-western tunes and penning the score for a Broadway musical titled *Hoops*, which presented the history of the Harlem Globetrotters basketball team.

Musical productivity and recognition for his accomplishments have not slowed for Smokey Robinson. In 1999 he released the well-received *Intimate* album. Two years later

Smokey Robinson and the Miracles were inducted into the Vocal Group Hall of Fame & Museum, which is dedicated to “honor the greatest vocal groups in the world.”

For More Information

Given, Dave. *The Dave Given Rock 'n' Roll Stars Handbook*. Smithtown, NY: Exposition Press, 1980.

Robinson, Smokey, and David Ritz. *Smokey: Inside My Life*. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1989.

JOHN D. ROCKEFELLER

Born: July 8, 1839

Richford, New York

Died: May 23, 1937

Ormond, Florida

American industrialist and philanthropist

John D. Rockefeller, an American industrialist (a person who owns or oversees an industrial corporation) and philanthropist (a person who works to help mankind), founded the Standard Oil Company, the University of Chicago, and the Rockefeller Foundation.

Childhood

John Davison Rockefeller was born on July 8, 1839, in Richford, New York, the second of six children. His father owned farm property and traded in many goods, including lumber and patent medicines. His

mother, who was quite the opposite of his father's fun-loving ways, brought up her large family very strictly. After living in Oswego, New York, for several years, the family moved to Cleveland, Ohio, in 1853, when it was beginning to grow into a city. John graduated from high school there and excelled in mathematics.

After graduation Rockefeller attended a commercial college for three months, after which he found his first job at the age of sixteen as a produce clerk. In 1859, at age nineteen, he started his first company, Clark and Rockefeller, with a young Englishman. They grossed (money earned before expenses) four hundred fifty thousand dollars in the first year of trading. Clark did the fieldwork while Rockefeller controlled office management, bookkeeping, and relationships with bankers.

Expanding businesses

From the start Rockefeller showed a genius for organization and method. The firm prospered during the Civil War (1861–65), when Confederate (Southern) forces clashed with those of the Union (North). With the Pennsylvania oil strike (1859) and the building of a railroad to Cleveland, they branched out into oil refining (purifying) with Samuel Andrews, who had technical knowledge of the field. Within two years Rockefeller became senior partner; Clark was bought out, and the firm Rockefeller and Andrews became Cleveland's largest refinery.

With financial help from S. V. Harkness and from a new partner, H. M. Flagler (1830–1913), who also secured favorable railroad freight rebates, Rockefeller survived the bitter competition in the oil industry. The

Standard Oil Company, started in Ohio in 1870 by Rockefeller, his brother William, Flagler, Harkness, and Andrews, had a worth of one million dollars and paid a profit of 40 percent a year later. While Standard Oil controlled one-tenth of American refining, the competition remained.

Rockefeller still hoped to control the oil industry. He bought out most of the Cleveland refineries as well as others in New York, Pittsburgh, and Philadelphia. He turned to new transportation methods, including the railroad tank car and the pipeline. By 1879 he was refining 90 percent of American oil, and Standard used its own tank car fleet, ships, docking facilities, barrel-making plants, depots, and warehouses.

Rockefeller came through the Panic of 1873, a severe financial crisis, still urging organization of the refiners. As his control approached near-monopoly (unfair control over an industry), he fought a war with the Pennsylvania Railroad in 1877 which created a refining company to try to break Rockefeller's control. But bloody railroad strikes (workers' protests) that year forced them to surrender to Standard Oil. Rockefeller's dream of order was near completion.

America's first trust

By 1883, after winning control of the pipeline industry, Standard's monopoly was at a peak. Rockefeller created America's first great "trust" in 1882. Ever since 1872, Standard had placed its gains outside Ohio in the hands of Flagler as "trustee" because laws denied one company's ownership of another's stock. All profits went to the Ohio company while the outside businesses remained independent. Nine trustees of the



*John D. Rockefeller.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

Standard Oil Trust received the stock of forty businesses and gave the various shareholders trust certificates in return. The trust had a worth of about seventy million dollars, making it the world's largest and richest industrial organization.

In the 1880s the nature of Rockefeller's business began to change. He moved beyond refining oil into producing crude oil itself and moved his wells westward with the new fields opening up. Standard also entered foreign markets in Europe, Asia, and Latin America. From 1885 a committee system of management was developed to control Standard Oil's enormous empire.

Attacking the trust

Public opposition to Standard Oil grew with the emergence of the muckraking journalists (journalists who expose corruption), in particular, Henry Demarest Lloyd (1847–1903) and Ida Tarbell (1857–1944) who published harsh stories of the oil empire. Rockefeller was criticized for various practices: railroad rebates (a system he did not invent and which many refiners used); price fixing; and bribery (exchanging money for favors); crushing smaller firms by unfair competition, such as cutting off their crude oil supplies or restricting their transportation outlets. Standard Oil was investigated by the New York State Senate and by the U.S. House of Representatives in 1888. Two years later the Ohio Supreme Court invalidated Standard's original trust agreement. Rockefeller formally disbanded the organization and in 1899 Standard was recreated legally under a new form as a "holding company," (this merger was dissolved by the U.S. Supreme Court in 1911, long after Rockefeller himself had retired from active control in 1897).

Perhaps Rockefeller's most famous excursion outside the oil industry began in 1893, when he helped develop the Mesabi iron ore range of Minnesota. By 1896 his Consolidated Iron Mines owned a great fleet of ore boats and virtually controlled Great Lakes shipping. Rockefeller now had the power to control the steel industry, and he made an alliance with the steel king, Andrew Carnegie (1835–1919), in 1896. Rockefeller agreed not to enter steelmaking and Carnegie agreed not to touch transportation. In 1901 Rockefeller sold his ore holdings to the vast new merger created by Carnegie and J. P. Morgan (1837–1913), U.S. Steel. In that year

his fortune passed the \$200 million mark for the first time.

Philanthropic endeavors

Rockefeller, from his first employment as a clerk, sought to give away one-tenth of his earnings to charity. His donations grew with his fortune, and he also gave time and energy to philanthropic (charity-related) causes. At first he depended on the Baptist Church for advice. The Church wanted its own university, and in 1892, the University of Chicago opened. The university was Rockefeller's first major philanthropic creation, and he gave it over \$80 million during his lifetime. Rockefeller chose New York City for his Rockefeller Institute of Medical Research (now Rockefeller University), chartered in 1901. In 1902 he established the General Education Board.

The total of Rockefeller's lifetime philanthropies has been estimated at about \$550 million. Eventually the amounts involved became so huge (his fortune reached \$900 million by 1913) that he developed a staff of specialists to help him. Out of this came the Rockefeller Foundation, chartered in 1913, "to promote the well-being of mankind throughout the world." He died on May 23, 1937, in Ormond, Florida.

Rockefeller's personal life was fairly simple. He was a man of few passions who lived for his work, and his great talent was his organizing genius and drive for order, pursued with great single-mindedness and concentration. His life was absorbed by business and family (wife Laura and four children), and later by organized giving. He created order, efficiency, and planning with extraordinary success and sweeping vision.

For More Information

- Chernow, Ron. *Titan: The Life of John D. Rockefeller, Sr.* New York: Random House, 1998.
- Coffey, Ellen Greenman. *John D. Rockefeller, Empire Builder.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Silver Burdett, 1989.
- Harr, John Ensor, and Peter J. Johnson. *The Rockefeller Century.* New York: Scribner, 1988.
- Harr, John Ensor, and Peter J. Johnson. *The Rockefeller Conscience: An American Family in Public and in Private.* New York: Scribner, 1991.
- Nevins, Allan. *Study in Power: John D. Rockefeller, Industrialist and Philanthropist.* Norwalk, CT: Easton Press, 1989.
- Segall, Grant. *John D. Rockefeller: Anointed With Oil.* New York: Oxford University Press, 2001.

NORMAN ROCKWELL

Born: February 3, 1894

New York, New York

Died: November 8, 1978

Stockbridge, Massachusetts

American illustrator

Norman Rockwell's heartwarming illustrations of American life appeared on covers of the *Saturday Evening Post* magazine for many years. When people use the expression "as American as

apple pie," they could just as well say "as American as a Norman Rockwell painting."

Early years

Norman Perceval Rockwell was born on February 3, 1894, in New York City, the first of Jarvis Waring Rockwell and Nancy Hill's two sons. His father worked for a textile firm, starting as office boy and eventually moving up to manager of the New York office. His parents were very religious, and the young Rockwell sang in the church choir. Until he was about ten years old the family spent its summers at farms in the country. Rockwell recalled in his autobiography (the story of his own life) *My Adventures as an Illustrator*, "I have no bad memories of my summers in the country." He believed that these summers "had a lot to do with what I painted later on."

Rockwell enjoyed drawing at an early age and soon decided he wanted to be an artist. During his freshman year in high school, he also attended the Chase School on Saturdays to study art. Later that year he attended Chase twice a week. Halfway through his sophomore year, he quit high school and went full time to art school.

Started at bottom in art school

Rockwell enrolled first in the National Academy School and then attended the Art Students League. Because he was so serious when working on his art, he was nicknamed "The Deacon" by the other students. In his first class with a live model (a person modeling without clothing), the model was lying on her side and because all Rockwell could see were her feet and buttocks—that was all he drew. Rockwell noted that, as Donald Walton wrote in his book *A Rockwell Portrait*, "he



Norman Rockwell.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

started his career in figure drawing from the bottom up.”

At the Art Students League, Rockwell was strongly influenced by his teachers George Bridgeman, who helped him excel in his drawing skills, and Thomas Fogarty, who passed on his enthusiasm for illustration to Rockwell. While Rockwell was still at the school, Fogarty sent him to a publisher, where he got a job illustrating a children's book. He next received an assignment from *Boys' Life* magazine. The editor liked his work and continued to give him assignments. Eventually Rockwell was made art director of the magazine. He worked regularly on other

children's magazines as well. “The kind of work I did seemed to be what the magazines wanted,” he remarked in his autobiography.

Paintings made the Post

In March 1916 Rockwell traveled to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, to see George Horace Lorimer, editor of the *Saturday Evening Post*. It was Rockwell's dream to do a *Post* cover. Since he did not have an appointment, he showed his work to the art editor, who then showed it to Lorimer. The editor accepted Rockwell's two finished paintings for covers as well as three sketches for future covers. Rockwell's success with the *Post* made him more attractive to other magazines, and he began selling paintings and drawings to *Life*, *Judge*, and *Leslie's*. Also in 1916 he married Irene O'Connor, a schoolteacher.

In 1917, shortly after the United States entered World War I (1914–18; a war fought between German-led Central Powers and the Allies: England, the United States, Italy, and other nations), Rockwell joined the navy and was assigned to the camp newspaper. Meanwhile, he continued painting for the *Post* and other publications. After the war Rockwell started doing advertising illustration, working for Jell-O, Willys cars, and Orange Crush soft drinks, among others. In 1920 he was hired to paint a picture for the Boy Scout calendar. (He would continue to provide a picture for the popular calendar for over fifty years.) During the 1920s Rockwell's income soared. In 1929 he was divorced from his wife Irene, and in 1930 he married Mary Barstow, with whom he had three sons. In 1939 the family moved to a sixty-acre farm in Arlington, Vermont. In 1941 the Milwaukee Art Institute gave Rockwell his first one-man show in a major museum.

Wide variety of work

After President Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945) made a speech to Congress in 1941 describing the “four essential human freedoms,” Rockwell created paintings of the four freedoms: Freedom of Speech, Freedom of Worship, Freedom from Want, and Freedom from Fear. He completed the paintings in six months in 1942, and they were published in the *Post* in 1943. The pictures became greatly popular, and many other publications asked the *Post* for permission to reprint them. The federal government also took the original paintings on a national tour to sell war bonds. As Ben Hibbs, editor of the *Post*, noted in Rockwell’s autobiography, “They were viewed by 1,222,000 people in 16 leading cities and were instrumental in selling \$132,992,539 worth of bonds.”

In 1943 Rockwell’s studio burned to the ground. He lost some original paintings and drawings as well as his large collection of costumes. He and his family then settled in nearby West Arlington, Vermont. Rockwell worked on special stamps for the Postal Service as well as posters for the Treasury Department, the military, and Hollywood movies. He also did illustrations for Sears mail-order catalogs, Hallmark greeting cards, and books such as *The Adventures of Tom Sawyer* and *The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn*. In 1953 Rockwell and his family moved to Stockbridge, Massachusetts. In the summer of 1959, his wife Mary suffered a heart attack and died. In 1961 he married Molly Punderson, a retired schoolteacher.

Also in 1961 Rockwell received an honorary (obtained without meeting the usual requirements) Doctor of Fine Arts degree from the University of Massachusetts as well

as the Interfaith Award of the National Conference of Christians and Jews for his *Post* cover painting of the Golden Rule. Rockwell’s last *Post* cover (he did three hundred seventeen in all) appeared in December 1963. The magazine’s circulation was shrinking at that time, and new management decided to switch to a new format. Rockwell continued painting news pictures for *Look* and contributing to *McCall’s*.

People’s choice

In 1969 Rockwell had a one-man show in New York City. Critics were usually unkind toward Rockwell’s work or ignored it completely, but the public loved his paintings, and many were purchased for prices averaging around \$20,000. Thomas Buechner wrote in *Life*, “It is difficult for the art world to take the people’s choice very seriously.” In 1975, at the age of eighty-one, Rockwell completed his fifty-sixth Boy Scout calendar. In 1976 the city of Stockbridge celebrated a Norman Rockwell Day. On November 8, 1978, Rockwell died in his home.

In 1993 a new Rockwell museum was opened near Stockbridge. Museum director Laurie Norton Moffatt listed all of Rockwell’s works in a two-volume book; according to Landrum Bolling of the *Saturday Evening Post*, the total exceeded four thousand original works. In November 1999 an exhibit of Rockwell’s work entitled “Norman Rockwell: Pictures for the American People” opened at the High Museum of Art in Atlanta, Georgia.

For More Information

Buechner, Thomas S. *Norman Rockwell, Artist and Illustrator*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1970.

Claridge, Laura P. *Norman Rockwell: A Life*. New York: Random House, 2001.

Moline, Mary. *Norman Rockwell Encyclopedia: A Chronological Catalog of the Artist's Work 1910–1978*. Indianapolis: Curtis, 1979.

Rockwell, Norman. *Norman Rockwell, My Adventures as an Illustrator: An Autobiography*. Indianapolis: Curtis, 1979. Reprint, New York: Abrams, 1988.

Walton, Donald. *A Rockwell Portrait*. Kansas City, KS: Sheed Andrews and McMeel, Inc., 1978.

RICHARD RODGERS

Born: June 28, 1902

Long Island, New York

Died: December 30, 1979

New York, New York

American composer

Richard Rodgers, American composer, wrote the music for over fifty stage and film musicals and helped make the American musical a legitimate art form.

Childhood years

Richard Charles Rodgers was born near Arverne, Long Island, New York, on June 28, 1902. His father was a successful physician and his mother, a well-trained amateur musician. Rodgers heard music in his home from earliest childhood and was regularly taken to the theater. He was especially delighted by

the operettas (short operas) of Victor Herbert and other popular composers. A little later he was inspired by the musicals of Jerome Kern, whose influence, Rodgers said, was “a deep and lasting one.”

By the age of six Rodgers was playing the piano by ear and had begun receiving piano lessons. He attended secondary schools in New York. By the age of fourteen he had written two popular songs. Before he entered Columbia University in 1919, he had already written music for two amateur shows and had met Lorenz (Larry) Hart (1895–1943), a literate, amusing, somewhat driven creator of verse, with whom Rodgers would collaborate for the next twenty-four years. Their first published song was “Any Old Place with You” (1919), and hundreds followed. Rodgers left Columbia at the end of his second year to devote himself full time to musical studies at the Institute of Musical Art, where he spent another two years.

Collaboration with Hart

After working on amateur shows and on a few unsuccessful professional attempts, Rodgers and Hart won acclaim for their review *Garrick Gaities* in 1925. Also in 1925, Rodgers, Hart, and Dorothy Fields (1905–1974) collaborated on *Dearest Enemy*, “an American musical play” (as they called it), contributing respectively music, lyrics, and book, adding something new to the theatrical scene. Not only was the material original, charming, and witty, but the form and subject of the entertainment were distinctly unusual. Here was a play based on American history with unpredictable and pertinent musical sections.

During the next decade Rodgers and Hart wrote three shows for the London stage and a

number of Broadway musicals and Hollywood films. Though not all of them were successful, they were distinguished by a number of fine romantic ballads such as “My Heart Stood Still” (1927), “With a Song in My Heart” (1929), “Dancing on the Ceiling” (1930), and “Lover” (1932). Hart’s lyrics always managed to avoid too much sentimentality, and Rodgers matched them with tunes of grace and skill.

Among the nine stage shows written between 1935 and 1942 were several of Rodgers and Hart’s most famous: *Jumbo* (1935); *On Your Toes* (1936), for which the distinguished Russian-born choreographer George Balanchine (1904–1983) created the ballet; *Slaughter on Tenth Avenue*; *Babes in Arms* (1937); *The Boys from Syracuse* (1938); and *Pal Joey* (1940). A number of the songs written during this time are among Rodgers and Hart’s most durable: “There’s a Small Hotel,” “Where or When,” “My Funny Valentine,” “This Can’t Be Love,” and “The Lady Is a Tramp.”



Richard Rodgers.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Collaboration with Hammerstein

After Hart died in 1943, Rodgers entered a period of unprecedented (having never occurred before) success with lyricist Oscar Hammerstein II (1895–1960). Of their ten musicals, five were among the longest-running and biggest-grossing shows ever created for Broadway: *Oklahoma!* (1943), *Carousel* (1945), *South Pacific* (1949), *The King and I* (1951), and *The Sound of Music* (1959).

The best work of Rodgers and Hart was marked by a considerable measure of wit and sophistication. In contrast, the style of the Rodgers and Hammerstein collaboration was dominated by a basic, almost folklike, simplicity. In many songs both music and words

seem stripped to the barest essentials. Romantic sentiment is a major ingredient.

Through touring productions, film versions, and recordings, the Rodgers and Hammerstein shows have become known around the world. Songs that have become popular standards include “Oh, What a Beautiful Morning,” “People Will Say We’re in Love,” “If I Loved You,” “You’ll Never Walk Alone,” “Some Enchanted Evening,” “Hello, Young Lovers,” and “Climb Every Mountain.”

After Hammerstein’s death in 1960 Rodgers for the first time served as his own lyricist for the score of *No Strings* (1962).

Contribution to musical theater

Rodgers's long association with the popular musical theater was an important one. His best projects were aimed at giving the musical play an ever more natural American expression. *Oklahoma!*, especially, brought an engaging simplicity and earthiness to the form. On many occasions Rodgers's choice of subject matter was unconventional (different from the norm), involving characters, situations, and themes of a seriousness seldom encountered previously in musical comedy. His work enriched and broadened a genre once regarded as little more than frivolous (not serious) entertainment and helped make it into an authentic American art form.

Rodgers's death on December 30, 1979, did not stop the popularity of his musical works, which enjoyed numerous revivals. Vintage original cast reissues and contemporary recordings, movies and videos, Broadway and community playhouse productions, and even illustrated books abound. They became the avenue through which the timeless works credited with launching the twentieth century musical continued to exist. Neither did Rodgers's shows lose dramatic impact. Their stories remained vividly current, such as *South Pacific*, which encompasses the uncertainties of its World War II (1939–45; when Great Britain, the United States, the Soviet Union, and France fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan) setting, and *The King and I*, which deals with racism and absolute authority.

Rodgers's work continues

Since music had to be hand-copied during most of Rodgers's lifetime, the musical scores from different productions did not

always agree. Although there are some early recordings to follow for authenticity (similarity to the original), it still left room for changes in interpretation or even omission (leaving out) of particular numbers during performances.

The original shows were showered with honors, from an Academy Award for best song ("It Might as Well be Spring" from *State Fair* won this award in 1945) to another one ten years later for best score for *Oklahoma!* Three shows won Tony Awards for Best Musical—*South Pacific* (1949), *The King and I* (1951), and *The Sound of Music* (1959).

Later performances continued to bring fame and additional awards as top stars such as Julie Andrews (1935–) and Patti LuPone (1949–) recorded Rodgers's songs and acted in revivals. A revival of *Oklahoma!* was presented in London in 2001. It was shown on Broadway in 2002 to critical praise.

One of the biggest breakthroughs in carrying on Rodgers's work was the transfer to videotape of a superior 1954 original movie of *Oklahoma!* It surpassed a same-cast, second filming of poorer quality and performance that had circulated for years. It took until 1994, when equipment finally was developed to transfer the "original edition" onto video for mass distribution.

Rodgers is remembered not only for his beautiful melodies, but also for the advancements he made for the American musical theater through his work with Hart and, especially, with Hammerstein.

For More Information

Block, Geoffrey, ed. *The Richard Rodgers Reader*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2002.

Green, Stanley. *The Rodgers and Hammerstein Story*. New York: J. Day Co., 1963. Reprint, New York: Da Capo Press, 1980.

Hyland, William G. *Richard Rodgers*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1998.

Rodgers, Richard. *Musical Stages: An Autobiography*. New York: Random House, 1975.

Secret, Meryle. *Somewhere For Me: A Biography of Richard Rodgers*. New York: Knopf, 2001.

AUGUSTE RODIN

Born: November 12, 1840

Paris, France

Died: November 17, 1917

Meudon, France

French sculptor

The French sculptor Auguste Rodin created his sculptures largely as volumes existing in space, as materials to be controlled for a variety of surface effects. By doing this he anticipated the aims of many twentieth-century sculptors.

Childhood

François Auguste Rodin, the son of a police inspector, was born in Paris, France, on November 12, 1840. A shy child, Rodin showed little interest in anything besides drawing, and by the time he turned thirteen he had decided to dedicate his life to becoming an artist.

Rodin studied drawing under Horace Lecoq de Boisbaudran and modeling under the sculptor Jean Baptiste Carpeaux at the School of Decorative Arts in Paris (1854–1857). At the same time Rodin studied literature and history at the Collège de France. Rejected three times by a well-known art school, he supported himself by doing decorative work for ornamentalists and set designers.

In 1864 Rodin began to live with the young seamstress Rose Beuret, whom he married the last year of his life. Also in 1864 he completed his *Man with a Broken Nose*, a bust of an old street porter, which the Salon (French art gallery) rejected. That year he entered the studio of Carrier-Belleuse, a sculptor who worked in the light rococo, or elaborate, mode of the previous century. Rodin remained with Carrier-Belleuse for six years and always spoke warmly of him. In 1870 he and his teacher went to Brussels, Belgium, where they began the sculptural decoration of the Bourse.

The human figure

In 1875 Rodin went to Italy, where he was deeply inspired by the work of Donatello (c. 1386–1466) and of Michelangelo (1475–1564), whose sculpture he characterized as being marked by both “violence and constraint.” Back in Paris in 1876, Rodin made a bronze statue of a standing man raising his arms toward his head in such a way as to project an air of uncertainty. Rodin originally entitled the piece the *Vanquished*, then called it the *Age of Bronze*. When he submitted it to the Salon, it caused an immediate controversy, for it was so lifelike that it was believed to have been cast from the living



Auguste Rodin.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

model. The piece was unusual for the time in that it had no literary or historical meaning.

In 1878 Rodin began work on the *St. John the Baptist Preaching* and various related works, including the *Walking Man*. Influenced partially by some of Donatello's late works, it was based on numerous poses of the model in constant motion. Rodin raised the very act of walking into a subject worthy of concentrated study.

By 1880 Rodin's fame had become international, and that year the French government hired him to design a doorway for the proposed Museum of Decorative Arts. The project, called the *Gates of Hell* after

Dante's (1265–1321) *Inferno*, occupied Rodin for the rest of his life, and particularly in the next decade, but it was never finished. The gates were cast in their incomplete state in the late 1920s.

The Gates of Hell was conceived in the tradition of the great portals (gateways) of Western art, such as Lorenzo Ghiberti's (1378–1455) *Gates of Paradise* in Florence, Italy. Rodin was unable to plan the gates as a complete organized design and they remained a loose collection of groups. Yet certain of the isolated figures or groups of figures, when enlarged and executed separately, became some of Rodin's finest pieces: *Three Shades* (1880), *Crouching Woman* (1885), the *Old Courtesan* (1885), the *Kiss* (1886), and the *Thinker* (1888).

Portrait busts

From the late 1880s Rodin received many commissions from private individuals for portrait busts and from the state for monuments recognizing well-known people. Among Rodin's portrait busts are those of playwright George Bernard Shaw (1856–1950), writer Henri Rochefort (1830–1913), and poet Charles Baudelaire (1821–1867).

In the *Head of Baudelaire* (1892), as in his other portraits, Rodin went beyond mere realism to catch the inner spirit. Baudelaire's face looks ahead with strict attention, and the eyes seem to be transfixed (concentrated) upon something invisible.

Rodin matured slowly, and his first principal work, the *Age of Bronze*, was not made until he was past thirty-five, yet he achieved fame in his lifetime. After 1900 he knew inti-

mately many of the great men of his time, and his apprentices included Antoine Bourdelle (1861–1929) and Charles Despiau (1874–1946). In 1916 Rodin left his works to the state. He died in Meudon, France, on November 17, 1917.

For More Information

Butler, Ruth. *Rodin: The Shape of Genius*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1993.

Grunfeld, Frederic R. *Rodin: A Biography*. New York: Holt, 1987.

Sutton, Denys. *Triumphant Satyr: The World of Auguste Rodin*. New York: Hawthorn Books, 1967.

WILL ROGERS

Born: September 5, 1879

Oologah, Oklahoma

Died: August 15, 1935

Point Barrow, Alaska

American journalist, humorist, and performing artist

One of the most celebrated humorists (writers of clever humor) and public figures of his day, Will Rogers offered dry, whimsical commentaries on a variety of political, social, and economic issues, and he became the voice of the “average” citizen.

Childhood as a cowboy

Will Rogers was born on September 5, 1879, to Clement and Mary Rogers. The

youngest of eight children, Will was raised in a wealthy and privileged family on a ranch near Claremore, Oklahoma, which was then Indian Territory. His father, Clement, a rancher and farmer, was also a sharp businessman and an influential politician. Although Rogers loved his father, their strong personalities often led to conflict. His relationship with his mother was loving and affectionate, and when she passed away, ten-year-old Rogers was devastated.

Rogers was one-quarter Cherokee and liked to boast that this heritage, combined with his early experience as a cowboy, made him the ideal example of the American citizen. His early adult years were spent between working on the family ranch and traveling the world, and it was in South Africa that Rogers began his performing career with a Wild West show as a trick rider. He later joined a circus, then back in the United States, he worked in another Wild West show, which eventually led to a job in vaudeville, a theater style that used a variety of acts. In vaudeville he added to his performances with off beat lectures on the art of roping. Rogers’s humorous chatter, casual delivery, and southwestern drawl proved a popular combination, resulting in an invitation to join the popular Ziegfeld Follies on Broadway. He delighted audiences with his homely philosophy (the study of knowledge) and sharp remarks, becoming a renowned humorist and interpreter of the news.

Rogers and his wife and children moved to California, where he acted in a number of films, beginning with *Laughing Bill Hyde* (1918). Rogers’s two-year contract was terminated, however, when the studio changed hands. He then began his own film produc-



Will Rogers.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

tion company, but when this failed he was forced to return to New York City and the Ziegfield Follies.

The cowboy philosopher

Three years later the first two collections of Rogers's humor appeared—*The Cowboy Philosopher on the Peace Conference* and *The Cowboy Philosopher on Prohibition*, both published in 1919. *The Cowboy Philosopher on the Peace Conference* poked fun at the political activities surrounding the Versailles Treaty (signed in 1919, the treaty helped settle matters following World War I [1914–18]). The second volume ridiculed the Eighteenth

Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, passed in 1919, which outlawed the sale and consumption of alcohol.

Rogers posed as the cowboy philosopher, a rural American gaping wide-eyed at the shenanigans of a modern world run by crooked businessmen and dishonest politicians. Yet although Rogers's brand of popular humor appealed to the average citizen, he himself became a part of the establishment he made fun of. He befriended members of Congress as well as business leaders and at one time publicly supported the Fascist regime of Italian dictator Benito Mussolini (1883–1945), who ruled Italy with a cruel and iron fist. Rogers, as quoted by James Feibleman in *In Praise of Comedy: A Study in Its Theory and Practice*, once stated that he wished his gravestone to read, "I joked about every prominent man of my time, but I have never met a man I didn't like."

Rogers began a secondary career as an after-dinner speaker, and his success led in 1922 to a syndicated weekly newspaper column. The first two years of these columns were collected in the 1924 book *The Illiterate Digest*. The columns showcase the cutting criticisms Rogers aimed at government, the influence of big business, and the then-popular topic of world disarmament (to reduce weapons) in the aftermath of World War I (1914–18).

The cowboy in Europe

Rogers next moved onto the international stage of political humor. The *Saturday Evening Post* sent him abroad and his columns from Europe were collected in *Letters of a Self-Made Diplomat to His President*, published in 1926. The articles were published in the

magazine in the form of fictional letters to then-president Calvin Coolidge (1872–1933) and were full of humorous advice to the chief executive from Rogers's European observations. The next leg of the journey for the *Post* took Rogers to the Soviet Union, the former country that today is made up of Russia and several smaller nations, and his columns about this experience appeared in *There's Not a Bathing Suit in Russia*. This 1927 volume chronicles his trip to the world's first Communist government, a political system where the goods and services are owned and distributed by a controlling central government.

During this period Rogers further expanded into another media—the growing field of radio. He gave his first broadcast over the airwaves in 1926 and by 1930 had his own weekly slot. Like each of his speeches and syndicated columns, the radio speeches centered on a topic of current interest and were filled with Rogers's stories and sharp commentary on the issue. By the end of the 1920s Rogers was using his position in the spotlight to campaign for humanitarian causes (causes that improve the life of others). During devastating flooding along the Mississippi River in 1927, he visited the ravaged areas, gave special performances and donated the proceeds to flood victims, and testified before Congress supporting increased disaster aid to the area.

The year 1929 dealt a severe blow to the American frame of mind—in October the stock market crashed and the country was plunged into a deep economic depression, putting millions out of work. Rogers continued in his role as the foremost humorist of the nation's "little people" in his radio broadcasts and journalistic essays. In one piece, quoted

by E. Paul Alworth in *Will Rogers*, he wrote: "Now everybody has got a scheme to relieve unemployment, but there is just one way to do it and that's for everybody to go to work. 'Where?' Why right where you are, look around and you see lots of things to do, weeds to be cut, fences to be fixed, lawns to be mowed, filling stations to be robbed, gangsters to be catered to. . . ." Rogers supported the radical transformations President Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882–1945) began under the New Deal beginning in 1933. The celebrity spoke out in favor of lending a helping hand to those affected the most by the economic situation and again gave benefit performances.

He continued to star in films and indulged in his passion for airplanes. In August of 1935 a small plane carrying Rogers and a pilot friend, on their way to survey air routes from the United States to the Soviet Union, crashed over Point Barrow, Alaska, killing the entertainer. Rogers was fifty-five. His death was an occasion of national mourning. Newspapers and radio commentators praised him, a memorial was dedicated near his Oklahoma birthplace, and several volumes of his speeches, essays, broadcasts, and sayings appeared in print. Will Rogers is remembered as one of the best-loved celebrities of his era and one of the twentieth century's best-known humorists. Forty years after his death, collections of his essays and quips were still appearing in bookstores.

For More Information

Alworth, E. Paul. *Will Rogers*. Boston: Twayne, 1974.

Brown, William R. *Imagemaker: Will Rogers and the American Dream*. Columbia: University of Missouri Press, 1970.

Keating, Francis Anthony. *Will Rogers: An American Legend*. New York: Harcourt, 2002.

Rogers, Will. *The Autobiography of Will Rogers*. Edited by Donald Day. New York: AMS Press, 1979.

Yagoda, Ben. *Will Rogers: A Biography*. New York: Knopf, 1993.

ROLLING STONES

English rock and roll band

Often billed as “the world’s greatest rock and roll band,” the English rock group the Rolling Stones has outlasted nearly all of its 1960s peers and continues to belt out hits well into the group’s collective middle age.

Birth of a legend

The Rolling Stones were formed as early as 1949 when the two main members of the group, guitarist Keith Richards and singer Mick Jagger, went to school together. Richards (surname sometimes listed as Richard, born December 18, 1943, in Dartford, Kent, England) was the only child of Bert and Doris Richards, a working-class couple. His father was a foreman in a General Electric factory. Jagger (Michael Philip Jagger, born July 26, 1943, in Dartford, Kent, England) was one of Joe and Eva Jagger’s two sons. His father was a physical education instructor. Both Richards and Jagger were

fans of American musicians such as Chuck Berry (1926–) and Bo Diddley (1928–).

Eleven years later the two crossed paths again. At the time, Jagger was attending London’s School of Economics, while Richards was struggling at Sidcup Art College. They found out about a local musician named Alexis Korner who held blues jams at the Ealing Club. After Jagger began to sing for Korner’s Blues Incorporated, he decided to join a group that Richards was putting together. Other members included pianist Ian Stewart, bass player Dick Taylor, drummer Tony Chapman, and a guitar player named Brian Jones (Lewis Brian Hopkins-Jones, born February 28, 1942, in Cheltenham, Gloucestershire, England, died July 3, 1969). Jones, although only one year older than Jagger and Richards, had already fathered two children by the time he was sixteen. And while Richards was more influenced by the playing of Chuck Berry, Jones was a pure blues player.

Charlie Watts (Charles Robert Watts, born June 2, 1941, in Islington, England) was drumming for a jazz group when he was asked to replace Tony Chapman. The oldest member, bassist Bill Wyman (William Perks, born October 24, 1936 [some sources say 1941]), replaced Dick Taylor and completed the group. Manager Andrew Loog Oldham got them work at the Marquee Club in London, England, in 1963, billed as “Brian Jones and The Rollin’ Stones” (after a song by Muddy Waters [1915–1983]). With hair longer than any other group and a bad-boy attitude, the Stones became known as “the group parents love to hate.” Their public image was constantly fueled by Oldham, who also decided that pianist Stewart did not fit in and pushed him to the background.

Oldham got the Stones a contract with Decca Records, and in June 1963 they released their first single, a version of Chuck Berry's "Come On" backed with "I Want to Be Loved." Reaction was good, and it would only take another six months for the group to make it big. Continuing their eight-month residence at the Crawdaddy Club in Richmond, England, they released their version of the Beatles's "I Wanna Be Your Man" followed by Buddy Holly's (1936–1959) "Not Fade Away." Their fourth single, "It's All Over Now" by Bobby Womack, would climb all the way to number one (reflecting highest sales and radio play) in their homeland. Their next hit, "Little Red Rooster," also reached number one but was banned in the United States.

"Satisfaction"

The Rolling Stones already had two albums out in England by the time they broke the U.S. Top 10 with "The Last Time," written by Jagger and Richards. In the summer of 1965 they had a worldwide number one hit with "Satisfaction." Allan Klein then took over as manager, and in 1966 the band released *Aftermath*, its first album of all original songs. In 1967 the Stones recorded *Their Satanic Majesties Request*, noted mainly for being the last album that Brian Jones, who had become heavily involved with drugs, truly worked on. After 1968's *Beggars Banquet*, Jones finally quit (or was kicked out of) the band in June 1969. Less than one month later he drowned in a swimming pool; the official cause of death was listed as "death by misadventure."

Two days later the Stones hired Mick Taylor (born January 17, 1948, in Hertfordshire, England), former guitarist for John Mayall's Bluesbreakers, as Jones's replacement. Their



*The Rolling Stones.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

first album after he joined, *Let It Bleed*, contained two haunting tunes, "Midnight Rambler" and "Gimme Shelter." The latter became the title of the movie documenting the Stones' free concert at Altamont, California, at which members of the Hell's Angels motorcycle gang (who had been hired as security guards) stabbed a man to death right in front of the stage. The group also released a live album from that tour, *Get Yer Ya Ya's Out*.

Experimentation and change

In 1971 The Stones formed their own label, Rolling Stones Records, and they began to experiment with different kinds of music.

Sticky Fingers contained songs with touches of jazz and country. *Exile on Main Street* has come to be regarded as their finest recording. Its country influence was stronger than ever, but the album also contains gospel, blues, and all-out rock. Their next two albums, *Goat's Head Soup* and *It's Only Rock and Roll*, were viewed as so-so efforts. In 1975 Taylor decided to walk away from the band. "I really got off on playing with them, but it wasn't enough of a challenge," he told *Rolling Stone* magazine.

Guitarist Ron Wood (born June 1, 1947, in London, England), who played with the Faces, fit the Stones mold perfectly, with the same musical roots and a look that was almost a carbon copy of Richard. Wood took Taylor's place on a 1975 tour of America, bounding back and forth with the Faces before finally joining the Stones full time. The first full album he contributed to was *Black and Blue* in 1976. The group's future was in doubt in 1977 when Richards was arrested in Toronto, Canada, for drug dealing, but his sentence did not include any jail time. "Drugs were never a problem," he told Edna Gundersen. "Police-men were a problem." After 1978's classic *Some Girls*, the later Stones records are hard to tell apart. Only the 1981 hit "Start Me Up" stands out from this period.

During the 1980s it was often rumored that the Rolling Stones would break up. Richards was not happy when Jagger took time off to work on his first solo album. Jagger then refused to tour to support the Stones' *Dirty Work*, instead hitting the road to promote his own *She's The Boss*. Richards, who had himself toured with Wood's New Barbarians in 1979, was outraged that Jagger would make the Stones a second choice. Richards released his own solo album, *Talk Is Cheap*.

Big-money tours

Although other solo albums and side projects followed, rumors of the band's breakup were put on hold in 1989, when the Stones announced plans for a new album and a world tour. *Steel Wheels* quickly sold over two million copies, and the accompanying tour, which earned over one hundred forty million dollars, was a hit with music reviewers and fans. However, *Steel Wheels* was to be Bill Wyman's last album and tour with the Stones—he announced his retirement in 1993. With Darryl Jones replacing Wyman, the Stones next released *Voodoo Lounge*, an album that in many ways was meant to recreate the classic Stones sound of the early 1970s. The album would go on to sell four million copies, and the supporting tour went on to become the highest grossing tour of all time.

Rumors of a Rolling Stones breakup eventually stopped. The band settled into the routine of producing a new album and going on tour every few years. Although they came under fire for the high prices of tickets (as high as three hundred dollars a seat on their 1999 tour), interest in their concerts remained high. In their free time, each member kept busy in his own way: Jagger worked on films and released other solo albums, including *Goddess in the Doorway*; Richards made solo albums and guest appearances on albums by blues artists such as Hubert Sumlin; Ron Wood, after receiving treatment for alcohol abuse, opened the Harrington Club in London, a private club devoted to healthy living (its restaurant serves only organic vegetables); Charlie Watts, with the help of drummer and producer Jim Keltner, released *The Charlie Watts/Jim Keltner Project*, a solo drum album; Bill Wyman also remained busy

(while insisting he did not regret leaving the band), writing books and recording music.

In 2001 Jagger and Richard appeared at Paul McCartney's (1942–) Concert for New York City to raise money for victims of the September 11 terrorist attacks on the United States. In 2002 the Rolling Stones announced another tour, which led to more grumbling about high ticket prices. Still, there seemed to be no decrease in the number of people willing to pay any price to see the legendary band.

For More Information

Appleford, Steve. *The Rolling Stones: Rip This Joint—The Stories Behind Every Song*. Rev. ed. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 2000.

Booth, Stanley. *The True Adventures of the Rolling Stones*. New York: Vintage Books, 1985.

Dalton, David. *The Rolling Stones: The First Twenty Years*. New York: Knopf, 1981.

Davis, Stephen. *Old Gods Almost Dead: The 40-Year Odyssey of the Rolling Stones*. New York: Broadway Books, 2001.

Sanchez, Tony. *Up and Down with the Rolling Stones*. New York: Da Capo Press, 1996.

ELEANOR ROOSEVELT

Born: October 11, 1884

New York, New York

Died: November 6, 1962

New York, New York

American first lady, international diplomat, writer, and philanthropist

Eleanor Roosevelt was the wife of Franklin Delano Roosevelt (1882–1945), the thirty-second president of the United States. She was a well-known philanthropist (a person who works to aid others through charity). She was also an author, a world diplomat, and a tireless champion of social causes.

A lonely girlhood

Anna Eleanor Roosevelt was born in New York, New York, on October 11, 1884. Her family was financially comfortable but troubled. Her father was Elliott Roosevelt, the younger brother of Theodore Roosevelt (1858–1919), who served as president of the United States. Although handsome and charming, Elliott suffered from frequent mental depression and alcoholism. Eleanor's mother was preoccupied with the family's image in upper-class society and embarrassed by Eleanor's appearance—which was not considered pretty.

Although Eleanor's father was often absent, she regarded him as a glamorous and exciting parent. When Eleanor was a child, her father entered an institution for alcoholics. It was one of many early losses for the young girl, whose mother died when she was just eight years old. After her mother's death, Eleanor and her two younger brothers went to live with their maternal grandmother in New York. Shortly thereafter the older brother died, and when Eleanor was not yet ten, she learned that her father had died. Her grandmother sheltered her from all outside contact except for family acquaintances.

Eleanor Roosevelt began discovering a world beyond her family after entering a



Eleanor Roosevelt.

school for young women at South Fields, England, at age fifteen. The school's headmistress (female principal) taught her students a sense of service and responsibility to society. Eleanor began to act upon this teaching after her return to New York, plunging into work for the good of others. At that same time, her tall, handsome cousin, Franklin Delano Roosevelt, began courting her. They were married in March 1905. Eleanor now had to contend with a controlling mother-in-law and with a husband who loved to be out in public and who did not really understand Eleanor's struggle to overcome her shyness and insecurity.

Becoming a public figure

Between 1906 and 1916, the Roosevelts had six children, one of whom died as an infant. The family lived in Hyde Park, New York, while Franklin pursued his political ambitions to become a leading figure in the Democratic Party. He served a term in the New York State Senate before President Woodrow Wilson (1856–1924) appointed him assistant secretary of the Navy in 1913. Although Eleanor did much work for the Red Cross (a charitable medical organization) during World War I (1914–18), she remained out of the public eye.

A major turning point in Eleanor's life came in 1921, when Franklin contracted polio (an infectious disease that can cause paralysis). Franklin suffered from paralysis and permanently lost the use of his legs. Although Franklin's mother insisted that Franklin accept his condition and retire, Eleanor finally asserted her will over her mother-in-law and nursed him back into activity. Within a few years he had regained his strength and political ambitions. Meanwhile, Eleanor had become more of a public figure, speaking and working for the League of Women Voters (an organization that promoted active involvement in government), the National Consumers' League (an organization focused on the welfare of consumers and workers), the Women's Trade Union League (an organization concerned with better working conditions for women), and the women's division of the New York State Democratic Committee. She began to act as Franklin's "legs and ears" and acquired a certain reputation of her own. After Franklin became governor of New York in 1928, she kept busy inspecting state hospitals, homes, and prisons for her husband.

President's wife

Franklin Roosevelt's election to the presidency in 1932 meant, as Eleanor later wrote, "the end of any personal life of my own." She quickly became the best-known (and also the most criticized) first lady in American history. She evoked both intense admiration and strong hatred from her fellow Americans.

As first lady, Eleanor gave radio broadcasts and wrote a column that appeared in newspapers across the country. She traveled throughout the United States on fact-finding trips for Franklin. In particular, she became a voice for those in need, including working women, African Americans, youth, and tenant farmers. Such groups had been severely affected by the economic crisis known as the Great Depression (1929–39; the longest and most severe economic depression in the United States), which Franklin Roosevelt had tried to combat through the series of social programs known as the New Deal. Eleanor spoke out freely on issues, and she also became a key contact within the administration for officials seeking the president's support. In short, Eleanor became a kind of go-between between the individual citizen and the government, as well as between the president and some members of his administration.

During the 1930s Eleanor was particularly concerned with creating equal opportunities for women and with making sure that appropriate jobs for writers, artists, musicians, and theater people became a key part of the New Deal employment program known as the Works Progress Administration (WPA). She also promoted the cause of Arthurdale, a farming community built by the government for unemployed miners in West Virginia. She was concerned with pro-

viding work for jobless youth, both white and black. Much more than her husband, she spoke out against racism and tried to aid the struggle of black Americans toward full citizenship.

World figure

As the United States moved toward war in the late 1930s, Eleanor Roosevelt spoke out forcefully in favor of her husband's foreign policy. She accepted an appointment as deputy director in the Office of Civilian Defense but resigned in 1942 after being criticized for being a poor administrator in this position. After the United States formally entered World War II (1939–45) in 1941, she made numerous trips overseas to boost the spirits of troops and to inspect Red Cross facilities.

After Franklin Roosevelt died in office in April 1945, Eleanor was expected to retire to a quiet, private life. However, by the end of the year she was back in public. America's new president, Harry S. Truman (1884–1972), made her the American representative to the United Nations Commission on Human Rights. She remained in this post through 1952. Later, she continued to work for international understanding and cooperation as a representative of the American Association for the United Nations.

During the last decade of her life Eleanor Roosevelt traveled to numerous foreign countries, including the Soviet Union. She completed her *Autobiography* (1961), which included her earlier books *This Is My Story* (1937), *This I Remember* (1949), and *On My Own* (1958). By the early 1960s her strength had lessened. She died in New York City on November 6, 1962.

Despite her shy and lonely girlhood, Eleanor Roosevelt became one of the most important American women of the twentieth century. Her personal and social outlook inspired millions.

For More Information

Freedman, Russell. *Eleanor Roosevelt: A Life of Discovery*. New York: Clarion Books, 1993.

Goodwin, Doris Kearns. *No Ordinary Time: Franklin and Eleanor Roosevelt—The Home Front in World War II*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1994.

Jacobs, William Jay. *Eleanor Roosevelt: A Life of Happiness and Tears*. New York: Coward-McCann, 1983.

Roosevelt, Eleanor. *The Autobiography of Eleanor Roosevelt*. Boston: G. K. Hall, 1984. Reprint, New York: Da Capo Press, 1992.

Somerville, Mollie. *Eleanor Roosevelt As I Knew Her*. McLean, VA: EPM Publications, 1996.

Youngs, J. William T. *Eleanor Roosevelt: A Personal and Public Life*. Edited by Oscar Handlin. Boston: Little, Brown, 1985. Reprint, New York: Longman, 2000.

FRANKLIN D. ROOSEVELT

Born: January 20, 1882

Hyde Park, New York

Died: April 12, 1945

Warm Springs, Georgia

American president, governor, and politician

Franklin D. Roosevelt, thirty-second president of the United States, led the nation out of the period of economic crisis known as the Great Depression (1929–39) and later into World War II (1939–45). Before he died, he cleared the way for peace, including the establishment of the United Nations.

Youth and marriage

Franklin Delano Roosevelt was born on January 30, 1882, into a well-known family. The Roosevelts had been fairly wealthy for many generations. The family had often been important in the civic affairs of New York. When Franklin was born, his father was fifty-one years old and his mother was twenty-eight. As his parents' only child, he did not have to compete with other siblings for their attention. Tutors and governesses (female, live-in teachers) educated him at home until he was fourteen. At this time he attended Groton School, which educated boys of the upper class. The young Roosevelt was thus surrounded by privilege and by a sense of social importance from an early age. His family traveled in elite (high-society) circles, and he even visited the White House to meet President Grover Cleveland (1837–1908) when he was five years old.

As a young man, Roosevelt attended Harvard University in Cambridge, Massachusetts. While living in Cambridge, he met and decided to marry his cousin, Eleanor Roosevelt (1884–1962). The couple married in 1905. At that same time Franklin entered the Columbia University Law School. He became a lawyer and took a job as a clerk in a New York firm. However, he took his duties there lightly. It was later recalled that he had told

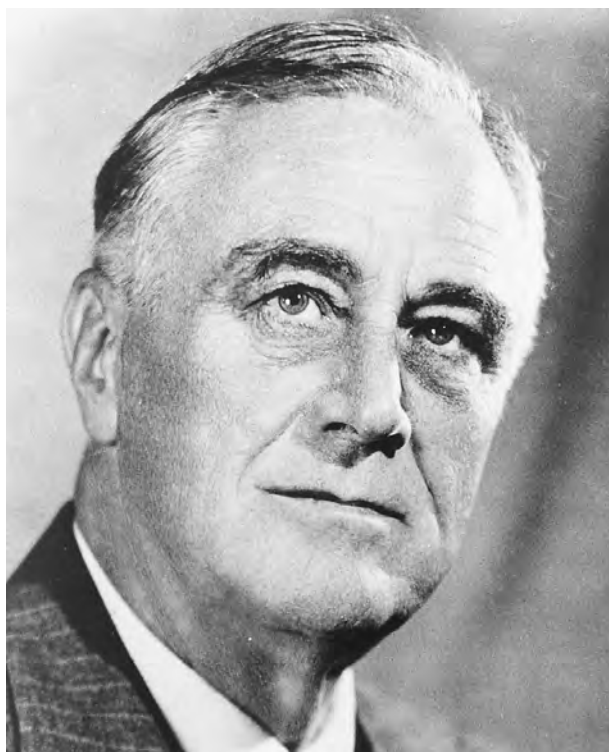
other clerks that he intended to enter politics and eventually become president.

Entering politics

Roosevelt's opportunity came in 1910. He accepted the Democratic nomination for the New York Senate and was elected. He was reelected in 1912, and that same year Woodrow Wilson (1856–1924) was elected president of the United States. Roosevelt had worked to support Wilson's run for office, and his efforts were noticed by the important Democrat Josephus Daniels (1862–1948). When Daniels became secretary of the Navy under Wilson, he persuaded Wilson to offer Roosevelt the assistant secretaryship.

Roosevelt soon became restless in his new position, and he decided to run for the Democratic nomination for U.S. senator of New York. Wilson and Daniels were not pleased, and afterward President Wilson never really trusted Roosevelt. This distrust increased when Roosevelt disagreed with the Wilson administration's policy in the years preceding World War I (1914–18), the conflict that pitted Great Britain, France, Russia, Italy, and other countries against the forces of Germany, Austria-Hungary, and others. Wilson wanted to remain neutral—he wanted to keep the United States from taking sides in the war. Roosevelt openly favored greater engagement in the war. When America finally did enter the war in 1917, Roosevelt worked for a cause he believed in.

After the war came to an end, President Wilson suffered a devastating stroke while fighting to gain American support for the Versailles Treaty, the peace document which set the terms for the war's end. Throughout the United States there was obvious disappoint-



Franklin D. Roosevelt.
Reproduced by permission of the
Franklin D. Roosevelt Library.

ment with the treaty's final terms. Many Americans felt that they would do little to ensure future peace and democracy in the world. Anger and disappointment were widespread.

National politician

The Republican Party had the advantage of not having been responsible for America's role in World War I. In 1920 the Republicans nominated U.S. senator Warren G. Harding (1865–1923) of Ohio as their candidate for president. The Democrats nominated Ohio governor James Cox (1870–1957). His vice presidential candidate was Roosevelt.

It was a doomed run for office, but in one respect it was a beginning rather than an ending for Roosevelt. He had covered the nation by special trains, speaking many times a day and meeting local leaders everywhere. Roosevelt and Cox were easily defeated, but Roosevelt emerged as the leading figure in the Democratic party.

Victim of poliomyelitis

After his run for vice president, Roosevelt returned to work in New York City's financial district. But in the summer of 1921 he became mysteriously ill. His disease, which was not immediately diagnosed, was poliomyelitis. Often called simply polio, this infectious disease is caused by a virus and can lead to paralysis. Roosevelt became almost totally paralyzed as a result of this illness. He would never be able to use his legs again, which might have ended his political career. However, Eleanor and Franklin Roosevelt's friend Louis McHenry Howe (1871–1936) set out to renew Roosevelt's ambition.

Roosevelt's struggle during the next few years was very difficult and disappointing. He did exhausting exercises to reactivate his paralyzed muscles. In 1923 he tried the warm mineral waters of Warm Springs, Georgia. Roosevelt invested a good part of his remaining fortune in Warm Springs, and it soon became a resort for those with similar ailments.

New York governor

While at Warm Springs in 1928, Roosevelt was called to political duty again. Al Smith (1873–1944), the four-time governor of New York, was now running as a Democratic candidate for president. Although it became clear that Smith could not win the

national election, Smith felt that Roosevelt, as a candidate for governor, would help to carry New York. Roosevelt resisted, feeling that if he lost the race for the governorship he might lose his own chance to become president. Nevertheless, he ran and was barely elected.

Roosevelt now began the four years of his New York governorship that led to his presidency. By 1930, it was clear that he should be the Democratic candidate for president in 1932. Since 1929 the nation had been struggling in the Great Depression, the worst economic depression of its kind in history, and the Republican administration of then-president Herbert Hoover (1874–1964) had failed to find a way to help the country recover.

First presidential term

Roosevelt was elected president in 1932. He came to office with a dangerous economic crisis at its height. Some 30 percent of the work force was unemployed. Roosevelt began providing relief on a large scale by giving work to the unemployed and by approving a device for bringing increased income to farmers. He adjusted the U.S. currency (the American money system) so that those in debt could pay what they owed. Banks that were closed all over the country were helped to reopen, and gradually the crisis was overcome.

In 1934 Roosevelt proposed a national social security system that, he hoped, would prevent another such depression. Citizens would never be without at least minimum incomes again, because the new social security system (still in use today) used money paid by employees and employers to provide support to those who were unemployed,

retired, and disabled. Many citizens became devoted supporters of the president who had helped them. Roosevelt became so popular that he won reelection in 1936 by an overwhelming majority.

Second and third terms

Roosevelt's second presidential term began with a battle with the Supreme Court. The justices of the court had considered some of his economic programs to be against the principles of the U.S. Constitution. Roosevelt tried to fight the court by adding new justices who would be more accepting of his policies. However, many even in his own party opposed him in this attempt to pack the court, and the Congress defeated it. After this disagreement, relations were suspended between Roosevelt and the Congress. Nevertheless, in 1940 Roosevelt ran for a third presidential term. He was now certain that the leader of Nazi Germany, Adolf Hitler (1889–1945), intended to conquer all of Europe. Roosevelt saw that Europe would fall unless the United States came to its support.

The presidential campaign of 1940 was the climax of Roosevelt's plea that Americans set themselves against the Nazi threat. Many Americans remembered their disappointment after World War I, and many also leaned toward supporting the Germans rather than the group of countries known as the Allies (including Great Britain, France, and the Soviet Union). The Allies opposed what were known as the Axis Powers—Germany, Italy, and Japan. The American people were so unwilling to be involved in this war that by the end of his campaign Roosevelt practically promised that young Americans would never be sent overseas to fight.

Roosevelt narrowly won the election. He was not far into his third presidential term when the decision to enter the war was made for him. On December 7, 1941, the Japanese attacked the Pearl Harbor naval base in Hawaii, causing serious losses to American forces. At once the White House became headquarters for those who controlled the strategy of World War II. British Prime Minister Winston Churchill (1871–1947) practically began living there. Together the leaders agreed that defeating Germany and Italy was the first priority, rather than focusing on the threat posed by Japan.

The war ends

Hitler's strategy was to defeat the Soviet Union, conquer North Africa, and link up with the Japanese in the East. Roosevelt wanted to retake France, which had been occupied by Germany, and to force Hitler to fight on two fronts. Churchill, however, wanted to attack lower Europe, cut Hitler's lines to the East, and shut him off from Africa. The invasion of Europe was postponed, but Allied troops were sent into Africa. Eventually these forces crossed to the island of Sicily in the Mediterranean Sea and made a slow march up the Italian peninsula. At the same time, Allied troops landed on the beaches of France. The twin attacks forced an Italian collapse and the German surrender.

Meanwhile, American general Douglas MacArthur (1880–1964) drove the Japanese back and destroyed their fleet in the Pacific. After the German surrender, the war came to an end with the American atomic bomb explosion over the Japanese cities of Hiroshima and Nagasaki.

Final days

The decision to drop the bombs was not made by Roosevelt, but by the man who followed him, President Harry S. Truman (1884–1972). Although Roosevelt was elected to a fourth term in 1944, he died before World War II ended. He had gone to Warm Springs in 1945, completely exhausted after having returned from a conference of Allied leaders to set the terms for final peace. At the conference, he had forced other leaders to accept his scheme for a United Nations. On April 12, 1945, he suffered a fatal stroke when an artery ruptured in his brain.

For More Information

- Alsop, Joseph. *FDR, 1882–1945: A Centenary Remembrance*. New York: Viking, 1982. Reprint, New York: Gramercy Books, 1998.
- Burns, James MacGregor. *The Three Roosevelts: Patrician Leaders Who Transformed America*. New York: Atlantic Monthly Press, 2001.
- Freedman, Russell. *Franklin Delano Roosevelt*. New York: Clarion Books, 1990.
- Larsen, Rebecca. *Franklin D. Roosevelt: Man of Destiny*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1991.
- Leuchtenburg, William E. *The FDR Years: On Roosevelt and His Legacy*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1995.
- Schlesinger, Arthur M., Jr. *The Age of Roosevelt*. 3 vols. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1957.

THEODORE ROOSEVELT

Born: October 27, 1858
New York, New York

Died: January 16, 1919

Oyster Bay, New York

American president, politician, and cavalryman

The first modern American president, Theodore Roosevelt was also the youngest and one of the most popular, important, and controversial. During his years in office he greatly expanded the power of the presidency.

Overcoming sickness

Theodore Roosevelt was born in New York City, New York, on October 27, 1858. His father was of an old Dutch mercantile (relating to trade) family in the city's affairs. An energetic, dominant figure, his father was the only man, young Roosevelt once said, that he "ever feared."

As an adult, Roosevelt was known for his great energy and athleticism. But as a young boy, he was very sick. He suffered from severe asthma, a respiratory disease that can cause difficulty breathing. Because of his sickness, he was educated at home by private tutors until the time that he entered college. At age twelve he followed his father's advice and began building his strength through weightlifting, horseback riding, boxing, wrestling, and hunting. He grew to love such activities throughout his life.

Early career

Roosevelt entered Harvard College in 1876. At Harvard, he developed his lifelong political and historical interests. Four months after his graduation in 1880, he married Alice Hathaway Lee, with whom he had a daughter.

In 1882 Roosevelt began the first of three political terms in the New York State Assem-

bly, one of the houses of government of New York state. Upon his retirement in 1884 he had become the leader of the Republican party's reform wing. As a reformer, he gained a reputation for fighting against political corruption (illegal or unethical practices).

In his last term, Roosevelt was discouraged by the sudden deaths of his mother and his wife within hours of each other in February 1884. He retired to a ranch in the American West to study history, completing books on the American senator Thomas Hart Benton and the American statesman Gouverneur Morris. He also began writing his major work, the four-volume *Winning of the West*.

Politics and a romantic interest in childhood friend, Edith Carow, eventually drew Roosevelt back east. He married Carow in 1886. The couple had four sons and a daughter.

Serving the nation

In 1889 he was in Washington, D.C., where he had been appointed by President Benjamin Harrison (1833–1901) to serve on the Civil Service Commission. Under Roosevelt's leadership the group became dedicated to opening equal opportunities for all who were qualified to serve and work in government.

In 1895 Roosevelt returned to New York City to serve two years as president of the police board. He enforced the law with relentless efficiency and honesty, which often led him into arguments with the leaders of his own Republican party. He succeeded in modernizing the force, limiting corruption, and raising morale to new heights. However, he resigned from this position in 1897 to become President William McKinley's (1843–1901) assistant secretary of the Navy.



Theodore Roosevelt.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

As assistant secretary, Roosevelt worked closely with senators in Congress to promote war against Spain. This conflict, the Spanish American War (1898), ended Spain's control of colonies in Latin America and resulted in America's gaining its own territories, including the Philippines. Roosevelt embraced the war mainly to expand America's global influence and because he had exaggerated notions of the heroic glories of war. Anxious to prove himself under fire, Roosevelt resigned from the navy in April 1898 to organize the 1st Volunteer Cavalry regiment. This horseback cavalry unit was known as the "Rough Riders." Roosevelt took command of the unit in Cuba

and distinguished himself in a bold charge up the hill next to San Juan. In late summer 1898 he returned home as a war hero and was nominated for governor of New York.

From governor to president

Roosevelt won election as governor in the fall of 1898. His two-year administration was full of positive activity. Winning the favor of public opinion and showing himself to be a master politician, he forced an impressive body of new laws and regulations through a reluctant New York Assembly and Senate.

In 1900 Roosevelt accepted the Republican vice presidential nomination. A landslide victory for McKinley and Roosevelt followed, but on September 6, 1901, McKinley was shot in Buffalo, New York, and he died eight days later. Roosevelt was sworn in as president.

First presidential term

Roosevelt's first three years in office were limited by the conservative policies of Republicans in Congress and the way in which he had come to power. Nevertheless, in 1902 Roosevelt shook the financial community by ordering proceedings against the association of railroad groups known as the Northern Securities Company. When a group of firms or corporations combines or cooperates in order to control prices or reduce competition, this action is known as a trust. Efforts to combat trusts, such as Roosevelt's actions against Northern Securities, are known as antitrust actions. By the time Roosevelt left office as president he had begun forty-three antitrust actions.

In his foreign policy, Roosevelt was intent on expanding the United States' global power. He established a somewhat tolerant government in the Philippines, settled an old

Alaskan boundary dispute with Canada on terms favorable to the United States, and took advantage of a revolution in Panama to acquire the Panama Canal Zone. Roosevelt's policies aimed at expanding American influence and limiting European power in the Western Hemisphere. The United States, he declared, assumed the right to intervene in the internal affairs of the Latin American nations in the event of "chronic wrongdoing" or "impotence [weakness or inability]."

In 1904 Roosevelt ran for a second, full presidential term. He won the election and carried in a great number of candidates to Congress through the influence of his popularity.

Second administration

Roosevelt pushed through a much more progressive program in his second term. One of his primary accomplishments was his drive to protect and to increase development of America's natural resources. By March 1909 Roosevelt's use of his executive power had resulted in the transfer of 125 million acres to the forest reserves. About half as many acres containing coal and mineral deposits had been placed under greater public control. Sixteen national monuments and fifty-one wildlife refuges had been established, and the number of national parks had been doubled.

In the area of foreign policy, Roosevelt's impact on the international scene continued during his second term. This was especially true in the Far East. Perceiving that Japan was destined to become a major Far Eastern power, he encouraged that country to serve as a force to keep the area stable. To this end he used his influence to end a war between Russia and Japan that took place in 1904–5. For his efforts, he received the Nobel Peace Prize.

Progressive movement

Rejecting suggestions that he run for reelection, Roosevelt selected William Howard Taft (1857–1930) as his successor. Taft was elected and this led to disputes within the Republican Party. Caught between the conservative supporters of Taft and the advanced progressive followers of himself and Senator Robert M. La Follette, Roosevelt set forth a radical program of social and economic reforms in 1910. Thereafter pressure to declare himself a candidate for the nomination in 1912 mounted until he reluctantly did so.

Although Roosevelt outpolled Taft easily in the Republican primaries, Taft's control of the party organization won him the nomination. Roosevelt's supporters then stormed out of the party and organized the Progressive Party, also known as the Bull Moose Party. During the campaign that fall, Roosevelt called forcefully for federal regulation of corporations, tax reform, river valley developments, and social justice for workers and the underprivileged. But the Democratic nominee, Woodrow Wilson (1856–1924), won the election.

Roosevelt died at his home in Oyster Bay, Long Island, on January 6, 1919. Today, his reputation as a domestic reformer remains secure.

For More Information

Brands, H. W. T. R. *The Last Romantic*. New York: Basic Books, 1997.

Burton, David H. *Theodore Roosevelt*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1972.

Gable, John A. *Theodore Roosevelt Cyclopedia*. Rev. ed. Westport, CT: Meckler, 1989.

Morris, Edmund. *Theodore Rex*. Random House, 2001.

Roosevelt, Theodore. *Theodore Roosevelt: An Autobiography*. New York: Macmillan, 1913. Reprint, New York: Da Capo Press, 1985.

DIANA ROSS

Born: March 26, 1944

Detroit, Michigan

African American singer and actress

Diana Ross, once the lead singer for the Motown supergroup the Supremes, was the most successful female singer of the rock and roll era. In the next few decades, she continued to enjoy success with a solo career and numerous television and film appearances.

Early life

Diana Ross was born on March 26, 1944, in Detroit, Michigan. She was the second of six children of Fred and Ernestine Ross, who lived in Brewster-Douglass, one of Detroit's low income housing districts. Because of her tight-knit family Ross grew up virtually unaware of the harsh life that surrounded her. While her family was active in the Baptist church choir, Diana learned secular music (nonreligious music) from a cousin. She played baseball and took tap dance and majorette lessons at Brewster Center.

At age fourteen Ross tried out for a part in a school musical, but was turned down. The brief failure turned into good fortune, as she was invited to sing with the Primettes, a girls' vocal group that included Florence Ballard (1943–1976) and Mary Wilson (1944–)



Diana Ross.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

among its members. She sang with the Primettes throughout her high school years at Cass Technical High School, where she took sewing and fashion design courses. The male counterparts of the Primettes were called the Primes, and their members included Paul Williams (1939–1973) and Eddie Kendricks (1939–1992), who would later form part of the Motown superstar group the Temptations.

Primettes to Supremes

Yet another Motown superstar, Smokey Robinson (1940–), introduced Ross and the Primettes at Motown Studios, where they visited frequently until they met Motown producer

Berry Gordy (1929–). Gordy instructed Ross and her friends to finish high school and come back, which they did in 1962. Ross, Ballard, and Wilson then signed a contract with Motown, and Ballard selected a name for the group—the “Supremes”—a name that Ross disliked.

The Supremes released a number of singles and often sang background vocals for Marvin Gaye (1939–1984) and Mary Wells (1943–1992). “Let Me Go the Right Way” became the first Supremes song to register on the national charts, and it enabled the group to join the touring Motor Town Revue. “Where Did Our Love Go?” was their first national number one hit, selling over two-million singles, and the Supremes became the Revue’s opening act. Ross’s ambition and talent helped the trio turn the fierce competition for recording songs at Motown in their favor, and she became the group’s lead singer.

The Supremes proceeded to lead Motown and its outstanding artists into its heyday in the 1960s with a series of number one hits that included “Baby Love” (1964), “Stop! In the Name of Love” (1965), “Back in My Arms Again” (1965) and “I Hear a Symphony” (1966). A popular television group, the Supremes continued to skyrocket in popularity along with the Motown label, and their principal songwriting team—Eddie Holland, Lamont Dozier, and Brian Holland—produced many more of their number one songs, including “You Keep Me Hangin’ On” (1966), “You Can’t Hurry Love” (1966), “Love Is Here and Now You’re Gone” (1967), and “The Happening” (1967).

A solo act

Holland-Dozier-Holland left Motown in 1967, and the Supremes entered their next

phase with a new billing as Diana Ross and the Supremes. Florence Ballard was replaced by Cindy Birdsong, also in 1967. The year 1968 brought "Love Child," yet another top hit, this one written by the Supremes themselves. By this time rumors had begun to circulate about Ross leaving the group, and they reached their peak after her successful performance on the 1969 television special "Like Hep." Ross's last single with the group was the number one hit "Someday, We'll Be Together" (1969). She began her solo career after their last appearance together in January of 1970.

Things would only get better for Ross. Motown Records invested heavily in her new career, which debuted with "Reach Out and Touch (Somebody's Hand)" (1970). Many changes began to take place in her personal life as well. She had helped the Jackson Five get its start with Motown and Berry Gordy, and she had moved into her new Beverly Hills home. In 1971 Ross was married to Robert Silberstein, a pop-music manager, with whom she had three daughters—Rhonda, Tracee, and Chudney.

Ross was cast as the legendary jazz singer Billie Holiday (1915–1959) in the Motown film production *Lady Sings the Blues*. Her critically acclaimed performance earned her an Academy Award nomination for best actress. In 1973 she returned to her customary position atop the national record charts with "Touch Me in the Morning." Her next film was *Mahogany* (1975), from which her "Theme from Mahogany" (1976) was nominated for the Academy Awards' best song in a motion picture and topped the record charts again. After her third daughter was born in 1975 she and Silberstein were divorced.

Ross's hit parade continued with the number one "Love Hangover" (1976). She closed

out the decade with a Broadway show entitled *An Evening With Diana Ross* (1976–1977); a March 6, 1977, television special that featured her alone; and a portrayal as Dorothy in Motown's film production of the Broadway show *The Wiz* (1978).

Later career

Ross continued to perform in concerts, in Atlantic City and Las Vegas casinos, and at charity functions. Her 1980 single "Upside Down" was her sixteenth number one hit, a record surpassed only by the Beatles. She moved to Connecticut with her three daughters and in 1985 married Norwegian businessman Arne Naess, Jr. In 1989 Ross made a return to Motown with a new album titled *Workin' Overtime*, and in 1991 she worked with Stevie Wonder (1950–) and other artists to make *The Force Behind the Power*, a group of modern ballads. In January of 1994, she was highly praised for her role as a mental patient in the ABC television movie *Out of Darkness*.

But tragedy tainted Ross's newfound success in film in 1996 when her brother, Arthur Ross, and his wife, Patricia Ann Robinson, were found smothered to death on June 22, in Oak Park, Michigan. Ross and her family put up a reward of twenty-five thousand dollars for any information leading to an arrest. In September of 1996, two men, Ricky Brooks and Remel Howard, were charged with the killings. Police had no motive at the time, only to say that drugs were involved.

Ross's attempt to jumpstart her professional career has been a difficult one. In 2000, a much-hyped reunion tour with the Supremes was canceled after only a few shows. Concert promoters noted lack of ticket sales as the reason for the cancellation.

Another reason was the dispute between Ross and Mary Wilson, who turned down the reunion tour because she was offered considerably less money than Ross.

For More Information

- Brown, Geoff. *Diana Ross*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1981.
- Davis, Sharon. *Diana Ross: The Legend in Focus*. Edinburgh: Mainstream, 2000.
- Haskins, James. *Diana Ross: Star Supreme*. New York: Viking, 1985.
- Ross, Diana. *Diana Ross: Going Back*. New York: Universe Publishers, 2002.
- Wyeth, John, Jr. *Diana Ross*. New York: Chelsea House, 1996.

DANTE GABRIEL ROSSETTI

Born: May 12, 1828

London, England

Died: April 9, 1882

Birchington-on-Sea, Kent, England

English painter and poet

The English painter and poet Dante Gabriel Rossetti was a cofounder of the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood, a band of painters that reacted against unimaginative and traditional historical paintings. His works show a passionate imagination, strongly contrasting Victorian art which was popular during the second half of the nineteenth century.

Childhood

Born on May 12, 1828, in London, England, of English-Italian parents, Dante Gabriel Rossetti was surrounded throughout his childhood in the atmosphere of medieval Italy, which drew heavily from art and literature from the sixth to fifteenth centuries. This influence became a major source of his subject matter and artistic inspiration later in his career. As a child, almost as soon as he could speak, he began composing plays and poems. He also liked to draw and was a bright student. After two years in the Royal Academy schools he studied briefly under Ford Madox Brown in 1848.

Shortly after Rossetti joined William Holman Hunt's studio in 1848, the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood was formed, in Hunt's words, "to do battle against the frivolous [silly] art of the day." An association of artists so varied in artistic style, technique, and expressive spirit as the Pre-Raphaelites could not long survive, and it was principally owing to Rossetti's forceful, almost hypnotic personality that the Brotherhood held together long enough to achieve the critical and popular recognition necessary for the success of its mission.

Rossetti's paintings

Rossetti did not have the natural technical talent that is seen in the small detail and brilliant color of a typical Pre-Raphaelite painting, and his early oil paintings, the *Girlhood of Mary Virgin* (1849) and the *Ecce Ancilla Domini* (1850), were produced only at the expense of great technical effort. In the less demanding technique of watercolor, however, Rossetti clearly revealed his imaginative power. The series of small watercolors of the 1850s produced such masterpieces as

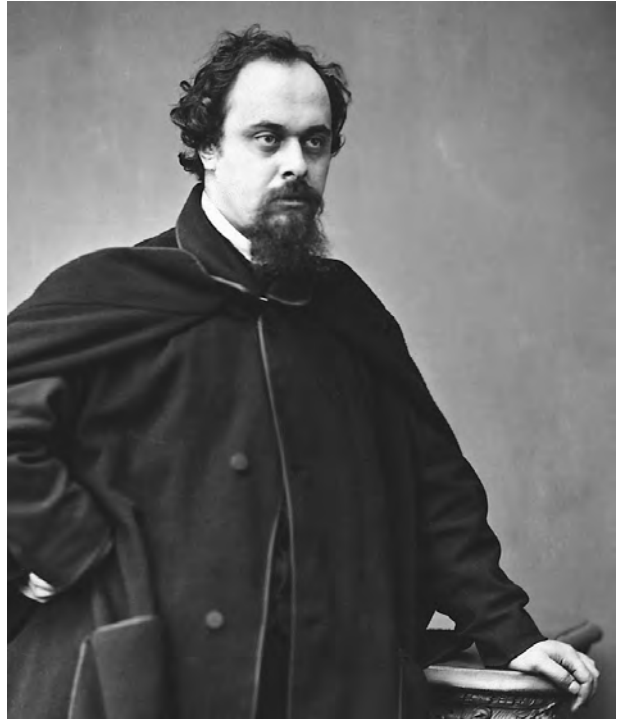
Dante's Dream (1856) and the *Wedding of St. George and the Princess Sabra* (1857).

In almost all of Rossetti's paintings of the 1850s he used Elizabeth Siddal as his model. Discovered in a hat shop in 1850, she was adopted by the Brotherhood as their ideal of feminine beauty. In 1852 she became exclusively Rossetti's model, and in 1860 his wife. Struggling with growing depression, she killed herself two years later. Rossetti buried a manuscript of his poems in her coffin, a characteristically dramatic gesture which he later regretted. *Beata Beatrix* (1863), a posthumous portrait (portrait done after her death) of Elizabeth Siddal is one of Rossetti's most deeply felt paintings. It is one of his last masterpieces and the first in a series of symbolic, female portraits, which declined gradually in quality as his interest in painting decreased.

Rossetti's poetry

Although poetry was simply a relaxation from painting early in Rossetti's career, writing later became more important to him, and in 1871 he wrote to fellow painter Ford Madox Brown, "I wish one could live by writing poetry." In 1861 he published his translations from Dante (1265–1321) and other early Italian poets, reflecting the medieval obsessions of his finest paintings. In 1869 the manuscript of his early poems was recovered from his wife's coffin and published the next year.

Rossetti's early poems under strong Pre-Raphaelite influence, such as "The Blessed Damozel" (1850; later revised) and "The Portrait," have an innocence and spiritual passion paralleled by his paintings of the 1850s. As his interest in painting declined, Rossetti's poetry improved, until in his later works, such as "Rose Mary" and "The White Ship"



Dante Gabriel Rossetti.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

(both included in *Ballads and Sonnets*, 1881), his use of richly colored word textures achieves fantastic expression and feeling.

Rossetti died on April 9, 1882, in Birchington-on-Sea, Kent, England. Rossetti had reached a position of artistic respect, and his spirit was a significant influence on the cultural developments of the late nineteenth century. Although his technique was not always the equal of his powerful feeling, his imaginative genius earned him a place in the ranks of England's most forward-thinking artists.

For More Information

Ash, Russell. *Dante Gabriel Rossetti*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1995.

Bass, Eben E. *Dante Gabriel Rossetti, Poet and Painter*. New York: P. Lang, 1990.

Dobbs, Brian. *Dante Gabriel Rossetti: An Alien Victorian*. London: Macdonald and Jane's, 1977.

JEAN-JACQUES ROUSSEAU

Born: June 28, 1712

Geneva, Switzerland

Died: July 2, 1778

Ermenonville, France

French philosopher, author, and composer

The Swiss-born philosopher (seeker of wisdom), author, political theorist (one who forms an explanation or theory on a subject based on careful study), and composer (writer of music) Jean-Jacques Rousseau ranks as one of the greatest figures of the French Enlightenment, a period of great artistic awakening in France.

Early years

Jean-Jacques Rousseau was born to Suzanne Bernard and Isaac Rousseau on June 28, 1712, in Geneva, Switzerland. Nine days later his mother died. At the age of three, he was reading French novels with his father, and Jean-Jacques acquired his passion for music from his aunt. His father fled Geneva to avoid imprisonment when Jean-Jacques was ten. By the time he was thirteen, his formal education had ended and he was sent to work for a notary public (someone legally empowered to certify documents), but he

was soon dismissed as fit only for watchmaking. Afterwards Rousseau spent three miserable years serving as a watchmaker, which he abandoned when he found himself unexpectedly locked out of the city by its closed gates. He faced the world with no money or belongings and no obvious talents.

Rousseau found himself on Palm Sunday, 1728, in Annecy, France, at the house of Louise Eleonore, Baronne de Warens. Rousseau lived under her roof off and on for thirteen years and was dominated by her influence. Charming and clever, a natural businesswoman, Madame de Warens was a woman who lived by her wits. She supported him and found him jobs, most of which he disliked. A friend, after examining the lad, informed her that he might aspire to become a village curé (priest) but nothing more. Still Rousseau read, studied, and thought. He pursued music and gave lessons, and for a time he worked as a tutor.

First publications and operas

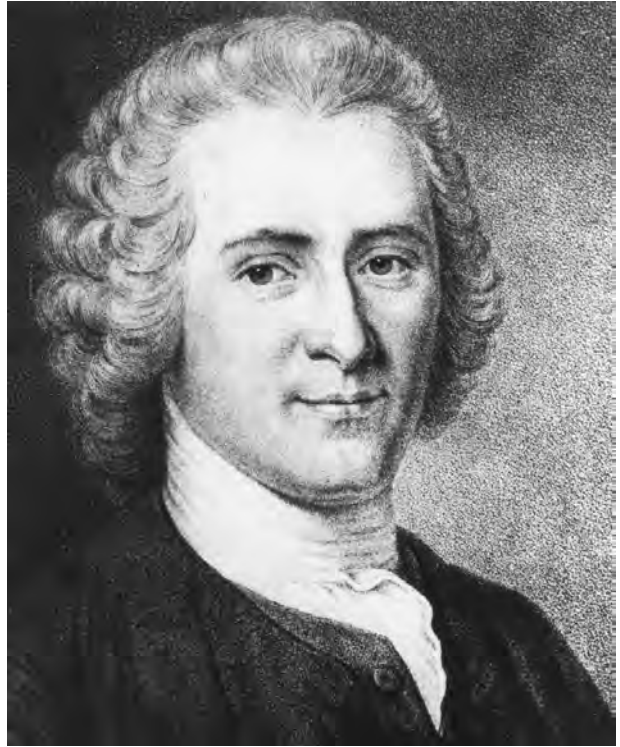
Rousseau's scheme for musical notation, published in 1743 as *Dissertation sur la musique moderne*, brought him neither fame nor fortune—only a fond letter from the Académie des Sciences. But his interest in music spurred him to write two operas—*Les Muses galantes* (1742) and *Le Devin du village* (1752)—and permitted him to write articles on music for Denis Diderot's (1713–1784) *Encyclopédie; the Lettre sur la musique française* (1753) and the *Dictionnaire de musique*, published in 1767.

From September 1743 until August 1744 Rousseau served as secretary to the French ambassador to Venice, Italy. He experienced at firsthand the stupidity and corrup-

tion (dishonesty and deception) involved in these offices. Rousseau spent the remaining years before his success with his first *Discours* in Paris, where he lived the poor lifestyle of a struggling intellectual.

In March 1745 Rousseau began an affair with Thérèse Le Vasseur. She was twenty-four years old, a maid at Rousseau's lodgings. She remained with him for the rest of his life—as mistress, housekeeper, mother of his children, and finally, in 1768, as his wife. They had five children—though some biographers have questioned whether any of them were Rousseau's. Apparently he regarded them as his own even though he assigned them to a hospital for abandoned children. Rousseau had no means to educate them, and he reasoned that they would be better raised as workers and peasants by the state.

By 1749 Rousseau had befriended the French philosopher Diderot. The publication of Diderot's *Lettre sur les aveugles* had resulted in his imprisonment at Vincennes, France. While walking to Vincennes to visit Diderot, Rousseau read an announcement of a prize being offered by the Dijon Academy for the best essay on the question, "Has progress of the arts and sciences contributed more to the corruption or to the purification of morals?" Rousseau won the prize of the Dijon Academy with his *Discours sur les sciences et les arts*. His famous "attack" on civilization called for sixty-eight articles defending the arts and sciences. Though he himself regarded this essay as "the weakest in argument and the poorest in harmony and proportion" of all his works, he nonetheless believed that it sounded one of his essential themes: the arts and sciences, instead of freeing men and increasing their happiness, had for the most part imprisoned men further.



Jean-Jacques Rousseau.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Major works

Rousseau's novel *La Nouvelle Héloïse* (1761) attempted to portray in fiction the sufferings and tragedy that foolish education and restrictive social customs had among sensitive creatures. Rousseau's two other major writings—*L'émile ou de l'éducation* (1762) and *Du contrat social* (1762)—undertook the more difficult task of constructing an education and a social order that would enable men to be natural and free; that is, to enable men to recognize no bondage except the bondage of natural necessity. To be free in this sense, said Rousseau, was to be happy.

La Nouvelle Héloïse appeared in Paris in January 1761. Originally entitled *Lettres de deux amants, habitants d'une petite ville au pied des Alpes*, the work was structurally a novel in letters, after the fashion of the English author Samuel Richardson (1689–1761). The originality of the novel won it harsh reviews, but its sexual nature made it immensely popular with the public. It remained a best seller until the French Revolution in 1789, a massive uprising calling for political and social change throughout France.

The reputation of *La Nouvelle Héloïse* was nothing compared to the storm produced by *L'émile* and *Du contrat social*. Even today the ideas set forth in these works are revolutionary. Their expression, especially in *L'émile*, in a style both readable and alluring made them dangerous. *L'émile* was condemned (officially disapproved of) by the Paris Parliament (the governing body) and heavily criticized by the archbishop of Paris. Both of the books were burned by the authorities in Geneva, Switzerland.

Exile and death

Forced to flee from France, Rousseau sought refuge at Yverdon in the territory of Bern. There he was kicked out by the Bernese authorities and would spend the next few years seeking a safe place to live. Finally, British philosopher David Hume (1711–1776) helped Rousseau settle in Wotton, Derbyshire, England, in 1766. Hume managed to obtain from George III (1738–1820) a yearly pension (sum of money) for Rousseau. But Rousseau, falsely believing Hume to be in league with his Parisian and Genevan enemies, not only refused the pension but also openly broke with the philosopher.

Rousseau returned to France in June 1767 under the protection of the Prince de Conti. Wandering from place to place, he at last settled in 1770 in Paris. There he made a living, as he often had in the past, by copying music. By December 1770 the *Confessions*, upon which he had been working since 1766, was completed, and he gave readings from this work at various private homes. His last work, *Les Rêveries du promeneur solitaire*, begun in 1776 and unfinished at his death, records how Rousseau, an outcast from society, recaptured “serenity, tranquility, peace, even happiness.”

In May 1778 Rousseau accepted Marquis de Girardin's hospitality at Ermenonville near Paris. There, with Thérèse at his bedside, he died on July 2, 1778, probably from uremia, a severe kidney disease. Rousseau was buried on the Île des Peupliers at Ermenonville. In October 1794 his remains were transferred to the Panthéon in Paris. Thérèse, surviving him by twenty-two years, died in 1801 at the age of eighty.

For More Information

- Cranston, Maurice. *Jean-Jacques: The Early Life and Work of Jean-Jacques Rousseau, 1712–1754*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1983.
- Cranston, Maurice. *The Noble Savage: Jean-Jacques Rousseau, 1754–1762*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1991.
- Cranston, Maurice. *The Solitary Self: Jean-Jacques Rousseau in Exile and Adversity*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1997.
- Crocker, Lester G. *Jean-Jacques Rousseau*. New York: Macmillan, 1968.
- Strathern, Paul. *Rousseau in 90 Minutes*. Chicago: Ivan R. Dee, 2002.

CARL ROWAN

Born: August 11, 1925

Ravenscroft, Tennessee

Died: September 23, 2000

Washington, D.C.

African American diplomat and journalist

Journalist and author Carl Rowan was one of the first African American officers in the U.S. Navy. He also served as U.S. ambassador (representative) to Finland and director of the U.S. Information Agency.

Early life and education

Carl Thomas Rowan was born on August 11, 1925, in Ravenscroft, Tennessee. He was one of five children born to Thomas David and Johnnie B. Rowan and was raised in McMinnville, Tennessee. As a youth he worked hoeing grass for ten cents an hour. Rowan was determined to get a good education. He graduated from Bernard High School in 1942 as class president and valedictorian (having the highest rank in the class). Rowan then moved in with his grandparents in Nashville, Tennessee, and worked in a hospital for tuberculosis (an infection of the lungs) patients before enrolling in the Tennessee Agricultural and Industrial State College in the fall of 1942.

Rowan, in his freshman year, participated in a training program that led to his being chosen as one of the first fifteen African American persons in history to gain a commission (a certificate giving military rank) as an officer in the U.S. Navy. He was trained at Oberlin College in Ohio and at the Naval Midshipmen School at Fort Schuyler, New

York, and he served during World War II (1939–45; a war fought between France, Great Britain, the United States, and the Soviet Union on one side, and Germany, Italy, and Japan on the other). After leaving the Navy, Rowan returned to Oberlin College, earning his bachelor's degree in mathematics in 1947. He went on to receive his master's degree in journalism from the University of Minnesota. In 1950 Rowan married Vivien Louise Murphy, a public health nurse; they had three children.

Member of the media

Rowan then joined the Minneapolis (Minnesota) *Tribune* as a copyreader. He became a general assignment reporter in 1950. Among his early pieces were a series of columns entitled *How Far from Slavery?*, which he wrote after returning to the South to study issues of race. The articles contributed to Rowan being the first African American to receive the Minneapolis "Outstanding Young Man" award. They also served as the basis for his first book, *South of Freedom* (1952).

Rowan spent 1954 writing columns from India, Pakistan, and Southeast Asia. These led to a second book, *The Pitiful and the Proud* (1956). A third book, *Go South to Sorrow*, was published in 1957. Rowan was the only journalist to receive the Sigma Delta Chi award for newspaper reporting in three straight years: for general reporting in 1954, for best foreign correspondence in 1955, and for his coverage of the political unrest in Southeast Asia in 1956.

Government service

In January 1961 Rowan was appointed deputy assistant secretary of state for public



Carl Rowan.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

affairs in the administration of President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963). He was involved in the area of news coverage of U.S. military involvement in Vietnam (1955–75; from 1961 to 1970 the United States aided South Vietnam in its war against Communist North Vietnam) and accompanied then Vice President Lyndon Johnson (1908–1973) on a tour through Southeast Asia, India, and Europe.

Rowan went on to serve as ambassador to Finland (January 1963–January 1964) and as director of the U.S. Information Agency (January 1964–July 1965), the vast government communications network. In the latter post, Rowan became the first African American to

hold a seat on the National Security Council and oversaw a staff of thirteen thousand. In 1965 Rowan resigned to accept an offer to write a national column for the Field Newspaper Service Syndicate and to do three weekly radio commentaries (expressions of opinion) for the Westinghouse Broadcasting Company.

Unafraid to express opinions

Rowan developed a reputation for being independent and often controversial (causing dispute). He urged Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968) to change his antiwar stance because he felt it was hurting the civil rights movement, and he called for J. Edgar Hoover (1895–1972), director of the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI), to resign. His column reached nearly half of all homes receiving newspapers in the United States. He appeared on many public affairs television programs, served as a roving reporter for *Reader's Digest* magazine, and was a popular public speaker.

Rowan once told *Publisher's Weekly*, "You gotta get tired before you retire," and he went on to publish several more books, including *Dream Makers*, *Dream Breakers: The World of Thurgood Marshall* and *The Coming Race War in America: A Wake-Up Call*. In 1987 he started Project Excellence, a program designed to make it easier for top-performing African American high school students to attend college. By 2000 the program had given out twenty-six million dollars in scholarships to over eleven hundred fifty students. Rowan died of natural causes in Washington, D.C., on September 23, 2000.

For More Information

Bynum, Lynn. *Carl T. Rowan, Journalist Extraordinary*. Bloomington: Afro-American Arts Institute, Indiana University, 1975.

Rowan, Carl T. *Breaking Barriers: A Memoir*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1991.

Rowan, Carl T. *South of Freedom*. New York: Knopf, 1952. Reprint, Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press, 1997.

Zehnpfennig, Gladys. *Carl T. Rowan, Spokesman for Sanity*. Minneapolis: Denison, 1971.

J. K. ROWLING

Born: July 31, 1965

Chipping Sodbury, England

English writer

J. K. Rowling is an English author of novels for young people, and caused an overnight sensation with her first book, *Harry Potter and the Philosopher's Stone* (. . . *Sorcerer's Stone* in the United States), which rose to the top of the children's best-seller lists in 1998. Even before publication, publishers in the United States were competing for rights to the book, with the top bidder paying one hundred thousand dollars—the most ever for a first novel by a children's book author.

A British upbringing

Born near Bristol, England, Joanne K. Rowling grew up with a younger sister and an intense interest in storytelling. Rabbits played a large part in her early tales, for Rowling and her sister badly wanted a rabbit. Her first story, at age five or six, involved a rabbit named, quite logically, Rabbit, who got the measles (a

contagious virus that occurs in children) and visited his friend, a giant bee named Miss Bee. Rowling said in *J. K. Rowling: The Wizard Behind Harry Potter*, "Ever since Rabbit and Miss Bee, I have wanted to be a writer, though I rarely told anyone so. I was afraid they'd tell me I didn't have a hope."

Two moves took the Rowling family eventually to the town of Tutshill near Chepstow in the Forest of Dean along the border of England and Wales. This brought a longtime country-living dream to reality for Rowling's parents, both Londoners, and the nine-year-old Rowling learned to love the countryside. She and her sister could wander unsupervised amid the fields and play along the River Wye. Rowling once noted that the only problem with her new life was school. It was an old-fashioned school with roll-top desks and a teacher who frightened Rowling.

From Tutshill Primary, Rowling went to Wyedean Comprehensive School. A quiet and unathletic child, English was her favorite subject, and she created stories for her friends at lunchtime, tales involving heroic deeds. Contact lenses soon sorted out any feelings of inferiority in the young Rowling; writing became more impulsive and less of a hobby in her teenage years. Attending Exeter University, Rowling studied French after her parents had advised her that bilingualism (speaking two languages) would lead to a successful career as a secretary.

Working at Amnesty International, Rowling discovered one thing to like about life as a secretary: she could use the computer to type up her own stories during quiet times. At age twenty-six, Rowling gave up her office job to teach English in Portugal. It was there that she began yet another story that might become a



J. K. Rowling.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

book, about a boy who is sent off to wizard school. All during the time she spent in Portugal, Rowling took notes on this story and added bits and pieces to the life of her main character, Harry Potter. In Portugal she also met the man who became her husband, and they had a daughter. They later got divorced.

Of naps and “Harry Potter”

Back in England, Rowling decided to settle in Edinburgh and prepared to raise her daughter as a single mother. Accepting a job as a French teacher, she set herself a goal: to finish her novel before her teaching job began. This was no easy task with an active toddler in

hand. Rowling confined her writing to her daughter’s nap time, much of it spent in coffeehouses where the understanding management allowed her space for her papers. She was able to send off her typed manuscript to two publishers before beginning her teaching post, but it was not until several months later that the happy news arrived: her book, *Harry Potter and the Philosopher’s Stone*, would be published in England. And then a few months later, the American rights were bought for an amazing price, and Rowling said good-bye to teaching.

Harry Potter, an orphan, has led a miserable life with the Dursley family, his aunt, uncle, and cousin, who force him to live in a broom closet under the stairs. Small, skinny, and wearing glasses, Harry is an unlikely hero. The only thing physically interesting about Harry is the lightning-shaped scar on his forehead. One day Harry gets a letter telling him that he has been admitted to Hogwarts School of Witchcraft and Wizardry. Thus begins the magical story of Harry Potter. Rayma Turton in *Magpies* called the book “a ripping yarn,” and a “school story with a twist.”

Sequels prove equally popular

Even as enthusiastic reviews were pouring in from America, Rowling’s second installment of the “Harry Potter” saga, *Harry Potter and the Chamber of Secrets*, was published in England to another rave review. The third installment of the series, *Harry Potter and the Prisoner of Azkaban*, begins when Harry is thirteen and starting his third year at Hogwarts School for Witchcraft and Wizardry. Harry’s life-threatening adventures in *The Prisoner of Azkaban*, the fourth Harry Potter novel, indicated a subtle but distinct shift away from the lightheartedness that charac-

terizes the first two novels. Such a shift was “inevitable,” Rowling admitted in a *School Library Journal* interview. “If you are writing about Good and Evil, there comes a point where you have to get serious.”

In November 2001, Harry Potter gained even more fame when *Harry Potter and the Sorcerer’s Stone* graced the big screen as a major motion picture. Rowling’s magical creations cast a spell over theatergoers as the movie was both a commercial and critical success. Rowling lives in Scotland with her daughter, Jessica, and second husband, Neil Murray, whom she married in December 2000. She is currently working on the remaining novels in the “Harry Potter” series.

For More Information

Chippendale, Lisa A. *Triumph of the Imagination: The Story of Writer J. K. Rowling*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

Compson, William. *J. K. Rowling*. New York: Rosen Pub. Group, 2002.

Shapiro, Marc. *J. K. Rowling: The Wizard Behind Harry Potter*. New York: St. Martin’s Griffin, 2000.

Steffens, Bradley. *J. K. Rowling*. San Diego: Lucent Books, 2002.

PETER PAUL RUBENS

Born: June 28, 1577

Siegen, Westphalia, Germany

Died: May 30, 1640

Antwerp, Belgium

Flemish painter and diplomat

The Flemish painter and diplomat Peter Paul Rubens was one of the supreme geniuses in the history of painting.

Childhood

Peter Paul Rubens was born to Jan Rubens and Maria Pypelinckx on June 28, 1577. Jan Rubens was a lawyer of Antwerp who, because of his religious preference, fled to Germany in 1568 to escape persecution. In Cologne, Germany, he had an affair with the wife of William the Silent, Prince of Orange, and as a result he was thrown into prison. Released after two years, due to the devoted efforts of his wife, Jan Rubens was allowed to live in Siegen, in Westphalia, Germany, where Peter Paul was born. The family lived for some years in Cologne until Jan Rubens died in 1587, at which time his widow returned to Antwerp, Belgium, bringing her three children with her.

After a period of schooling which included instruction in Latin and Greek, the young Rubens became a messenger to a noblewoman, Marguerite de Ligne, Countess of Lalaing. This early experience of court life, though he was glad to be released from it, was undoubtedly useful to the future artist, much of whose time would be passed in noble and royal circles. Returning to his home in Antwerp, he had decided to be a painter. He studied under three masters—Tobias Verhaecht, Adam van Noort, and Otto van Veen (1556–1629)—and in 1598 was accepted as a master in the Antwerp Guild of St. Luke, the painters’ guild, or association.

Italian Period, 1600–1608

In Rome, Italy, Rubens completed his education as an artist, studying with unfailing



Peter Paul Rubens.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

enthusiasm the sculptures of antiquity (the period before the sixth century) and especially the paintings of Raphael (1483–1520) and Michelangelo (1475–1564). During his first stay in Rome, from 1601 to 1602, he painted three altarpieces for the Church of Sta Croce in Gerusalemme (now in the Hospital at Grasse).

Late in 1605 Rubens was again in Rome; he decided to remain there for almost three years. During this time he was commissioned (hired) to decorate the high altar of Santa Maria in Vallicella—an extraordinary honor for a foreigner. His first solution, an altarpiece showing the Madonna and Child with St. Gregory and other saints (now in the

Museum at Grenoble), did not make a good impression owing to unfavorable lighting conditions in the church, and he replaced it by a set of three pictures painted on slate. In October 1608, before this work had been unveiled, there came word that Rubens's mother was seriously ill, and the artist left at once for Antwerp. Though he did not know it at the time, he was never to see Italy again.

Antwerp period, 1609–1621

Rubens arrived at his home to learn that his mother had died before he left Rome. Although it was surely his intention to return to Italy, he soon found reasons for remaining in Antwerp. The Archduke Albert, the acting ruler of the Spanish Netherlands, appointed him court painter with special privileges. In October 1609 Rubens married Isabella Brant, and a year later he purchased a house in Antwerp. The charming painting *Rubens and His Wife in the Honeysuckle Arbor* was painted about this time.

The first big project to be undertaken after Rubens's return from Italy was the *Raising of the Cross* (1609–1611), a triptych, or three-paneled piece, for the church of St. Walburga (now in the Cathedral of Antwerp). With this bold and intensely dramatic work Rubens at once established himself as the leading master of the city. It was followed by another triptych, equally large and no less successful, the *Descent from the Cross* (1611–1614) in the Cathedral.

Rubens's workshop was now in full operation, and he was able, with the aid of his pupils and assistants, to achieve an astonishing output of pictures. The most brilliant of his assistants was Anthony Van Dyck (1599–1641), who entered his studio about

1617 or 1618 and who helped in the execution of a number of important commissions.

In 1620 Rubens was commissioned to execute a series of thirty-nine ceiling paintings for the Jesuit church in Antwerp. It was the largest decorative cycle that the artist had yet undertaken, and as such it called into play all his powers of invention and organization. The entire complex of ceiling paintings was destroyed by fire in 1718.

International fame, 1621–1630

In 1622 Rubens was in Paris, France, to sign a contract for the decoration of two great galleries in the Luxembourg Palace, the residence of the queen mother, Marie de' Medici (1573–1642). The first of these projects, the incomparable series of twenty-one large canvases illustrating the life of Marie (now in the Louvre, Paris), was finished in 1625. The subject matter was decidedly unpromising, but Rubens succeeded in transforming the dreary history of the queen into a brilliant and spectacular one.

There were other decorative schemes to occupy Rubens's attention during this period. For King Louis XIII (1601–1643) of France he designed the tapestry series, the *History of Constantine the Great*, and several years later Infanta Isabella commissioned him to design an even larger tapestry cycle, the *Triumph of the Eucharist*, for the Convent of the Descalzas Reales in Madrid, Spain.

Rubens's diplomatic (having to do with international relations) activity, which had begun some time earlier, reached a peak in the years from 1628 to 1630, when he played an important part in bringing about peace between England and Spain. As the agent of

the Infanta (the daughters of Spanish rulers), he went first to Spain, where in addition to carrying out his political duties he found a new and enthusiastic art patron (a supporter) in King Philip IV (1605–1665). His mission to England was equally successful. Charles I (1600–1649) knighted the artist-diplomat, and the University of Cambridge awarded him an honorary master of arts degree. Rubens returned to Antwerp in March 1630.

Last years, 1630–1640

Isabella Brant, Rubens's first wife, had died in 1626. In December 1630 he married Helena Fourment, a girl of sixteen. Though he had hoped, on returning to Antwerp, to withdraw from political life, he acted once more as confidential agent for the Infanta in the frustrating and unsuccessful negotiations with the Dutch. At length he succeeded in being released from diplomatic employment. In 1635 he purchased a country estate, the Castle of Steen, located some miles south of Antwerp, and from there on divided his time between this country retreat and his studio in town.

In 1635, when the new governor of the Netherlands, Cardinal Infante Ferdinand, visited Antwerp, Rubens was given the task of preparing the temporary street decorations. Swiftly bringing together teams of artists and craftsmen to work from his designs, the master created an amazing series of painted theaters and victorious arches, which were far greater than expected in their magnificence. His last great project was a vast cycle of mythological (having to do with stories that are handed down through generations) paintings for the decoration of Philip IV's hunting lodge near Madrid, the Torre de la Parada.

Rubens was increasingly troubled by arthritis (a persistent swelling of the joints) toward the end of his life, which eventually persuaded him to give up painting altogether. One of the most moving paintings of the last years is the self-portrait in Vienna, in which the master, though already touched by suffering, wears an air of calm and peace. He died in Antwerp on May 30, 1640.

For More Information

- Lescourret, Marie-Anne. *Rubens: A Double Life*. Chicago: Ivan R. Dee, 1993.
- McLanathan, Richard. *Peter Paul Rubens*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1995.
- Oppenheimer, Paul. *Rubens: A Portrait*. New York: Cooper Square Press, 2002.
- Scribner, Charles, III. *Peter Paul Rubens*. New York: Abrams, 1989.
- White, Christopher. *Peter Paul Rubens: Man & Artist*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1987.

WILMA RUDOLPH

Born: June 23, 1940

St. Bethlehem, Tennessee

Died: November 12, 1994

Brentwood, Tennessee

African American track and field athlete, sports manager, and coach

The African American athlete Wilma Rudolph made history in the 1960 Summer Olympic games in Rome,

Italy, when she became the first American woman to win three gold medals in the track and field competition.

An uphill battle

Almost every circumstance was stacked against Wilma Rudolph from the day she was born on June 23, 1940. Her father, Ed Rudolph, had eleven children by a first marriage while his second marriage yielded eight more, of which Wilma was the fifth. At birth she weighed only four-and-a-half pounds. Her mother, Blanche, a housemaid, feared for Wilma's survival from the outset. The family lived in tiny St. Bethlehem, Tennessee, a farming community about forty-five miles southeast of Nashville, Tennessee. Shortly after Wilma was born, the Rudolphs moved to nearby Clarksville, Tennessee, where they lived in town. Her father worked as a porter on railroad cars, and her mother cleaned houses six days a week. Older siblings helped care for the sickly baby who had come into the world prematurely.

At the age of four, Wilma was severely weakened when she contracted polio, a disease that attacks the central nervous system and often causes developmental problems in children. She survived the illness, but she lost the use of her left leg. Specialists in Nashville recommended routine massage therapy for the limb, and Mrs. Rudolph learned it and taught it to some of the older children. Thus, Wilma's legs were massaged a number of times each day, helping her to regain strength. Rudolph's confidence may have flagged at times in her childhood when it seemed she might spend a lifetime in leg braces or even a wheelchair. Through the efforts of her devoted family—and her own

steely determination to strengthen herself—she rose from disability to Olympic glory.

Staged a comeback from physical disability

After five years of treatment, Wilma one day stunned her doctors when she removed her leg braces and walked by herself. Soon she was joining her brothers and sisters in basketball games in the Rudolph backyard and running street races against other children her age. “By the time I was 12,” she told the *Chicago Tribune*, “I was challenging every boy in our neighborhood at running, jumping, everything.”

Rudolph desperately wanted to play high school basketball, but she simply could not convince the coach to put her on the team. When she finally worked up the nerve to ask him for a tryout, he agreed to coach her privately for ten minutes each morning. Still she was cut in her freshman year. She finally earned a position on the roster at Burt High School in Clarksville, Mississippi, because the coach wanted her older sister to play. Her father agreed to allow her sister to join the team only if Wilma was allowed to join, too.

Rudolph soon blossomed into a fine basketball player. As a sophomore she scored 803 points in twenty-five games, a new state record for a player on a girls’ basketball team. She also started running in track meets and found that her greatest strengths lay in the sprint. She was only fourteen when she attracted the attention of Ed Temple, the women’s track coach at Tennessee State University. Temple told her she had the potential to become a great runner, and during the summer breaks from high school she trained with him and the students at Tennessee State.



Wilma Rudolph.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

An Olympian

The Olympic Games were a far-off dream to a young African American woman in Tennessee. She was a teenager before she even learned what the Olympics were. Rudolph caught on fast, though. In four seasons of high school track meets, she never lost a race. At the tender age of sixteen, she qualified for the Summer Olympics in Melbourne, Australia, and came home with a bronze medal.

Rudolph entered Tennessee State University in the fall of 1957, with the intention of majoring in elementary education. All of her spare time was consumed by running, however. The pace took its toll, and she

found herself too ill to run through most of the 1958 season. She rebounded in 1959, only to pull a muscle at a crucial meet between the United States and the Soviet Union, the former country made up of Russia and several smaller nations. Ed Temple, who would prove to be a lifelong friend, supervised her recovery, and by 1960 Rudolph was ready to go to Rome, Italy.

At the 1960 Olympics, Rudolph won all three of her gold medals in very dramatic fashion. In both the 100-meter dash and the 200-meter dash, she finished at least three yards in front of her closest competitor. She tied the world record in the 100-meter and set a new Olympic record in the 200. Rudolph also brought her 400-meter relay team from behind to win the gold. The French called her “La Gazelle.” Without question, Rudolph’s achievements at the 1960 Olympic Games remain a stand-out performance in the history of Olympic competition.

After the fame

Wilma Rudolph became an instant celebrity in Europe and America. Crowds gathered wherever she was scheduled to run. She was given ticker tape parades, an official invitation to the White House by President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963), and a dizzying round of dinners, awards, and television appearances.

Rudolph made one decision that she stuck to firmly: she refused to participate in the 1964 Olympic games. She felt that she might not be able to duplicate her achievement of 1960, and she did not want to appear to be fading. She retired from amateur athletics in 1963, finished her college work, and became a school teacher and athletic coach.

She also became a mother, raising four children on her own after two divorces.

Talent didn’t go to waste

For more than two decades, Wilma Rudolph sought to impart the lessons she learned about amateur athletics to other young men and women. She was the author of an autobiography, *Wilma*, which was published in 1977—and the subject of a television movie based on her book. She lectured in every part of America and even served in 1991 as an ambassador to the European celebration of the dismantling of the Berlin Wall, the wall that for three decades separated East from West Berlin, Germany. Rudolph helped to open and run inner-city sports clinics and served as a consultant to university track teams. She also founded her own organization, the Wilma Rudolph Foundation, dedicated to promoting amateur athletics.

Rudolph was a member of the United States Olympic Hall of Fame and the National Track and Field Hall of Fame. She traveled frequently and was well known for her motivational speeches to youngsters.

On November 12, 1994, Wilma Rudolph died at her home in Brentwood, Tennessee, of a brain tumor. She is survived by two sons, two daughters, six sisters, two brothers, and a truly inspirational legacy.

For More Information

Coffey, Wayne. *Wilma Rudolph*. Woodbridge, CT: Blackbirch Press, 1993.

Flanagan, Alice K. *Wilma Rudolph: Athlete and Educator*. Chicago: Ferguson, 2000.

Krull, Kathleen. *Wilma Unlimited: How Wilma Rudolph Became the World's Fastest Woman*. San Diego: Harcourt Brace, 1996.

Ruth, Amy. *Wilma Rudolph*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 2000.

Sherrow, Victoria. *Wilma Rudolph: Olympic Champion*. New York: Chelsea House, 1995.

SALMAN RUSHDIE

Born: June 19, 1947

Bombay, India

Indian writer

The works of the Indian author Salman Rushdie often focused on outrages of history and particularly of religions. His book *The Satanic Verses* earned him a death sentence from the Iranian leader Ayatollah Ruhollah Khomeini (1900–1989).

Early life and education

Ahmed Salman Rushdie was born on June 19, 1947, in Bombay, India, the only son among Anis Ahmed Rushdie and Negin Butt's four children. His father was a businessman who had been educated at Cambridge University in England. Rushdie's childhood was happy and he was always surrounded by books. Rushdie remembers wanting to be a writer at age five. He was sent to England at age fourteen to attend Rugby, a private school. His fellow students tormented him both because he was Indian and because he had no athletic ability.

Rushdie later attended Cambridge, as his father had done, and his experience there was much more positive. He received his master's degree in history in 1968. After a brief career as an actor he worked as a free-lance advertising copywriter in England from 1970 to 1980. The experience of expatriation (living outside one's country of birth), which he shared with many writers of his generation who were born in the Third World, is an important theme in his work.

First books

Rushdie's first published book, *Grimus* (1975), was classified as science fiction by many critics. It is the story of Flapping Eagle, a Native American who is given the gift of immortality (eternal life) and goes on a journey to find the meaning of life. Although the book received positive reviews, it did not sell very well. Rushdie continued working as a part-time ad writer over the five years it took him to write *Midnight's Children*. He quit his job after finishing the novel without even knowing if it would be published.

Released first in the United States in 1981, *Midnight's Children* is in part the story of a baby who was not only the result of an extramarital affair (an affair between a married person and someone other than his or her spouse) but who was then switched at birth with a second child from a similar situation. The hero is also caught between the two great Indian religions, Islam and Hinduism. Finally, he spends his life moving back and forth between the Indian republic and Pakistan. The book received rave reviews in the United States and was a popular and critical success in England. Rushdie followed this up with *Shame* (1983), the story of a Pakistani



Salman Rushdie.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

woman, Sufiya Zinobia, who blushes so hotly with embarrassment at her nation's history that her body boils her bath water and burns the lips of men who attempt to kiss her.

Angers Muslim leaders

Rushdie's *The Satanic Verses* (1988) opens with the survival of two Indian men who fall out of the sky after their jumbo jet to England is blown up in midair by terrorists. These two characters then gain divine and demonic powers. Rushdie's habit of using the atrocities of history—especially involving religion—made *The Satanic Verses* a book of frightening precognition (describing events that have not

yet occurred): another character in the novel is a writer sentenced to death by a religious leader.

The title of the novel refers to verses from the Koran (the holy book of the Islamic faith), which were removed by later Islamic historians, describing a time when the Arab prophet (one with religious insight) Mohammed (the founder of Islam) briefly changed his belief in a single god and allowed mention to be made of three local goddesses. This was considered offensive and an insult to Islam by the Iranian leader Ayatollah Ruhollah Khomeini, who issued a *fatwa*, or religious order, calling for Rushdie's death. Rushdie went into hiding and received round-the-clock protection from British security guards. Rushdie's wife of thirteen months, author Marianne Wiggins, went into hiding with him when the death threat was announced. She soon emerged and announced that their marriage was over.

Khomeini's death threat extended not only to Rushdie himself, but to the publishers of *The Satanic Verses*, any bookseller who carried it, and any Muslim who publicly approved of its release. Several bookstores in England and America received bomb threats, and the novel was briefly removed from the shelves of America's largest book-selling chains. Two Islamic officials in London, England, were murdered for questioning the correctness of Rushdie's death sentence on a talk show. Many book-burnings were held throughout the world.

Rushdie himself, and his possible disguises in hiding, became the subject of many jokes. For example, during the 1990 Academy Awards presentation, which was seen

worldwide by an estimated one billion viewers, comedian Billy Crystal (1947–) joked that “the lovely young woman” who usually hands Oscar statuettes to their recipients “is, of course, Salman Rushdie.”

Working under a death sentence

In 1990 Rushdie released the fantasy (a made-up story) novel *Haroun and the Sea of Stories*, written for his son by his first marriage. That same year Rushdie publicly embraced Islam and apologized to those offended by the *The Satanic Verses*. He made several appearances in London bookstores to autograph his newest work. But even after the Ayatollah's death, his successor, Iran's President Hashemi Rafsanjani, refused to lift the death sentence. Rushdie continued to appear in public only occasionally, and then under heavy security.

Rushdie continued to live an isolated life. He remarried, however, and became a father for the second time. Occasionally he made radio appearances, but they were usually unannounced. Rushdie's novel entitled *The Moor's Last Sigh* was published in 1995. This book drew angry reactions from Hindu militants (those engaged in war) in India. In 1998, as part of an attempt to restore relations between Iran and England, the Iranian foreign minister, while repeating criticism of *The Satanic Verses*, announced that Iran had no intention of harming Rushdie or encouraging anyone to do so. A relieved Rushdie said he would end his nine years of seclusion.

In 1999 Rushdie published *The Ground Beneath Her Feet*, the story of a famous singer lost during an earthquake. Rushdie described it as “a novel of our age” in an interview with CNN's Jonathan Mann. In April 2000 Rushdie created a sensation by visiting India,

his first visit to his birthplace since he was four years old. In November 2001 Rushdie told the *Manchester Guardian* that most Muslims' view of Islam is “jumbled” and “half-examined.” He criticized Muslims for blaming “outsiders” for the world's problems and said that they needed to accept the changes in the modern world to truly achieve freedom.

For More Information

Cundy, Catherine. *Salman Rushdie*. Manchester, England: Manchester University Press, 1996.

Rushdie, Salman. *Conversations with Salman Rushdie*. Edited by Michael Reder. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 2000.

Rushdie, Salman. *Imaginary Homelands: Essays and Criticism, 1981–1991*. London: Granta Books, 1991.

Ruthven, Malise. *A Satanic Affair: Salman Rushdie and the Rage of Islam*. London: Chatto & Windus, 1990.

BABE RUTH

Born: February 6, 1895

Baltimore, Maryland

Died: August 16, 1948

New York, New York

American baseball player

Babe Ruth, an American baseball player, was one of sport's most famous athletes and an enduring legend.



Babe Ruth.

Reproduced by permission of Getty Images.

Early years

George Herman Ruth Jr., later known as Babe Ruth, was born on February 6, 1895, in Baltimore, Maryland, one of George Herman Ruth and Kate Schamberger's eight children. Of the eight, only George Jr. and a sister, Mamie, survived. Ruth's father owned a tavern, and running the business left him and his wife with little time to watch over their children. Young George began skipping school and getting into trouble. He also played baseball with other neighborhood children whenever possible.

At the age of seven Ruth was sent to the St. Mary's Industrial School for Boys, a school that took care of boys who had problems at home. It was run by the Brothers (men who had taken vows to lead religious lives) of a Catholic order of teachers. Ruth wound up staying there off and on until he was almost twenty. At St. Mary's, Ruth studied, worked in a tailor shop, and learned values such as sharing and looking out for smaller, weaker boys. He also developed his baseball skills with the help of one of the Brothers.

Signs baseball contract

Ruth became so good at baseball (both hitting and as a left-handed pitcher) that the Brothers wrote a letter to Jack Dunn, manager of the Baltimore Orioles minor league baseball team, inviting him to come see Ruth. After watching Ruth play for half an hour, Dunn offered him a six-month contract for six hundred dollars. Dunn also had to sign papers making him Ruth's guardian until the boy turned twenty-one.

When Dunn brought Ruth to the Oriole locker room for the first time in 1914, one of the team's coaches said, "Well, here's Jack's newest babe now!" The nickname stuck, and Babe Ruth stuck with the team as well, performing so well that he was moved up later that year to the Boston Red Sox of the American League. Ruth pitched on championship teams in 1915 and 1916, but he was such a good hitter that he was switched to the outfield so that he could play every day. (Pitchers usually play only every four or five days because of the strain that pitching has on their throwing arm.) In 1919 his twenty-nine home runs set a new record and led to the beginning of a new playing style. Up to that point home

runs occurred very rarely, and baseball's best players were usually pitchers and high-average "singles" hitters. By 1920 Ruth's frequent home runs made the "big bang" style of play more popular and successful.

Becomes legend with the Yankees

In 1920 Babe Ruth was sold to the New York Yankees for one hundred thousand dollars and a three hundred fifty thousand dollar loan. This was a huge event which increased his popularity. In New York his achievements and personality made him a national celebrity. Off the field he enjoyed eating, drinking, and spending or giving away his money outright; he earned and spent thousands of dollars. By 1930 he was paid eighty thousand dollars for a season, a huge sum for that time, and his endorsement income (money received in return for public support of certain companies' products) usually added up to be more than his baseball salary.

Ruth led the Yankees to seven American League championships and four World Series titles. He led the league in home runs many times, and the 60 he hit in 1927 set a record for the 154-game season. (Roger Maris hit 61 home runs in a 162-game season in 1961.) Ruth's lifetime total of 714 home runs is second only to the 755 hit by Hank Aaron (1934–). With a .342 lifetime batting average for 22 seasons of play, many consider Babe Ruth the game's greatest player.

When Ruth's career ended in 1935, he had hoped to become a major league manager, but his reputation for being out of control made teams afraid to hire him. In 1946 he became head of the Ford Motor Company's junior baseball program. He died in New York City on August 16, 1948.

For More Information

- Creamer, Robert W. *Babe: The Legend Comes to Life*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1974.
- Miller, Ernestine G. *The Babe Book: Baseball's Greatest Legend Remembered*. Kansas City, MO: Andrews McMeel, 2000.
- Ritter, Lawrence S. *The Babe: The Game That Ruth Built*. New York: Total Sports, 1997.
- Smelser, Marshall. *The Life That Ruth Built: A Biography*. New York: Quadrangle/New York Times Book Co., 1975. Reprint, Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1993.
- Van Riper, Guernsey. *Babe Ruth, One of Baseball's Greatest*. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1983.
- Wagenheim, Kal. *Babe Ruth: His Life and Legend*. New York: Praeger, 1974. Reprint, Chicago: Olmstead Press, 2001.

NOLAN RYAN

Born: January 31, 1947

Refugio, Texas

American baseball player

Nolan Ryan is considered one of the best pitchers of all time, known both for his fastball and as a role model for players and fans alike.

Early years

Lynn Nolan Ryan Jr. was born January 31, 1947, in Refugio, Texas. He was the

youngest of six children of Lynn Nolan Ryan Sr. and Martha Ryan. Ryan grew up in Alvin, Texas, where his father worked for an oil company and delivered papers for the *Houston Post*. Ryan credits his father for instilling in him the value of a strong work ethic. In second grade, Ryan began helping his father on his paper routes.

Much of Ryan's youth was consumed by sports. While he spent two years on his high school basketball team, it was baseball that was his passion. During his senior year, he dominated the pitching mound. He amassed a 20–4 record, batted .700 in the state tournament, and was named to the All-State team before graduating high school in 1965.

Minor leagues

Ryan was selected by the New York Mets during the 1965 free-agent draft and played in the West Carolinas League beginning on September 11, 1966. During Ryan's time with this league, his teammates began to respect his fastball. Although Ryan lacked true ball control, he nonetheless frightened batters and catchers alike with his scorching fastball, which one day would be known as "The Ryan Express."

As a result the New York Mets called Ryan up to play in the major leagues at the end of the 1966 season. The Mets at that time were in sore need of great players, because until 1969, the Mets had finished last or next to last in every season since the team was founded in 1962. Unfortunately for the Mets, the 1967 season did not bring the great play expected. Ryan was often homesick and therefore missed much of the 1967 season due to illness, an arm injury, and service with the U.S. Army Reserves.

Marriage and the Mets

Ryan married his high school sweetheart, Ruth, in 1968. She moved to New York City to be closer to Ryan and help ease his homesickness. Along with the improved playing ability Ryan achieved during that season, the New York Mets also improved as a team. The Mets added two key people to their pitching staff, Jerry Koosman and Tom Seaver (1944–), a strikeout leader in his own right from whom Ryan learned a great deal.

During the 1969 season, Ryan played as both a starting and relief pitcher, finishing the season with a 6–3 record. This type of finish soon became the norm for Ryan as he concentrated more on striking out batters than on winning games. Regardless, it was primarily Ryan's pitching abilities that took the New York Mets to the league championships that year and later the World Series. Ryan saved the Mets' bid for the World Series title when in the third game of the series, he made the crucial plays needed to earn the win. The Mets went on to upset the Baltimore Orioles after five games.

Ryan, even with a world championship title to his credit, still felt uncomfortable in New York City, and requested to be traded in 1971. Without much discussion, the Mets agreed to Ryan's request and traded him along with three other players to the California Angels. Because of this move, he was able to distance himself from the East and a climate and location he was never fond of. Looking back, as players and managers often do, this trade is often considered the worst in the history of the Mets. Once in California, Ryan blasted his way into superstar status. He stayed with the Angels for eight seasons, from 1972 through 1979.

Team accomplishments

With the Angels Ryan struck out more than three hundred batters for the first time. Ryan finished the 1972 season with 19 wins, 16 losses, and 329 strikeouts. With the close of the 1973 season, Ryan became the first-ever pitcher to have back-to-back seasons of over 300 strikeouts. Striking out 383 hitters, Ryan set an all-time major league record. Additionally, in the 1973 season, Ryan became only the fifth pitcher in baseball history to pitch two no-hit games in one season.

The 1974 and 1975 seasons were also quite good for Ryan statistically. In the 1974 season, Ryan pitched his third no-hit game and completed a third season of over three hundred strikeouts. The 1975 season saw Ryan complete his fourth no-hit game. Ryan became the second pitcher in major league history to achieve this feat.

Move to Texas and desperation

Although Ryan played some of his best games with the California Angels, he still longed for his native Texas. His break came at the end of the 1979 season when he became a free agent. Ryan was immediately signed with the Houston Astros and became baseball's first pitcher to earn one million dollars a year. Although this amount is common by today's standards, when it was awarded to Ryan, such a sum was unheard of at the time.

Ryan pitched for the Astros from 1980 through the 1988 season. In 1981, he threw his fifth no-hitter. He led the league with the lowest earned run average in 1981 and 1987. In 1980, 1981, and 1986, the Astros were in the National League playoffs, but lost all three times.



Nolan Ryan.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

After Ryan completed his contract with the Astros, he again was a free agent at the end of the 1988 season. He was quickly picked up, this time by the Texas Rangers in time for the 1989 season. Although Ryan would not play in a playoff series with the Rangers, he did pitch his sixth and seventh no-hit games and led the American League in strikeouts in the 1989, 1990, and 1991 seasons.

Called it quits

On September 22, 1993, on Nolan Ryan Appreciation Day in Seattle, Washington, all that Ryan dreamed of and played for came to

an abrupt halt. Although he planned to retire at the end of the 1993 season, he expected to do so with the grace and dignity deserving of his accomplishments. After feeling his right elbow pop with pain from a torn ligament in the middle of the Rangers game against the Seattle Mariners, Ryan knew his chances at the World Series were over. Ryan was sidelined for the rest of the game, giving him ample time to reflect on his twenty-seven-year career.

That day, at forty-six, Ryan walked off the field giving baseball and its fans something that is rarely seen. As an athlete, Ryan defined his own class and style. He attained the five-thousand-strikeout mark at the age of forty-two, when most professional sports players had long since retired. In 1999 Ryan was inducted into the Baseball Hall of Fame for playing a record twenty-seven seasons and pitching seven no-hitters.

In April of 2000 Ryan underwent emergency double-bypass surgery at the Heart Hospital of Austin, Texas. After experiencing shortness of breath and chest pains, his wife drove him to the Round Rock Medical Center, where doctors performed tests. He was

then taken to the Heart Hospital of Austin, where an angiogram (an X ray of blood vessels) showed a substantial blockage of the left main coronary artery.

Nolan Ryan is currently a cattle rancher and a businessman. He and his wife are also active promoters of healthy and fit lifestyles for Americans.

For More Information

Anderson, Ken. *Nolan Ryan: Texas Fastball to Cooperstown*. Austin, TX: Eakin Press, 2000.

Nicholson, Lois P. *Nolan Ryan*. New York: Chelsea House, 1995.

Rolfe, John. *Nolan Ryan*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1992.

Ryan, Nolan, T. R. Sullivan, and Mickey Herskowitz. *Nolan Ryan: The Road to Cooperstown*. Lenexa, KS: Addax, 1999.

Ryan, Nolan, and Harvey Frommer. *Throwing Heat: The Autobiography of Nolan Ryan*. New York: Doubleday, 1988.

Sanna, Ellyn. *Nolan Ryan*. New York: Rosen Pub. Group, 2002.



ALBERT SABIN

Born: August 26, 1906

Bialystok, Poland

Died: March 3, 1993

Washington, D.C.

Polish-born American physician and virologist

Polish-born physician and virologist (scientist who studies viruses) Albert Sabin developed the first effective and widely used live virus polio myelitis (polio) vaccine.

Early years and education

Born on August 26, 1906, in Bialystok, Poland, Albert Bruce Sabin came to the

United States with his parents and three siblings in 1921 in order to avoid persecution (harsh treatment) directed against Jews. They established residence in Paterson, New Jersey. Sabin's father worked in the textile industry in both silk and regular cloth. Sabin worked hard to learn his new language, working odd jobs throughout his high school and college years.

At Paterson High School Sabin participated in after-school activities including the literary and debating clubs. He graduated in 1923. Sabin entered New York University as a pre dental student, then switched to medical school microbiology (the study of life forms that cannot be seen without the aid of a microscope).



Albert Sabin.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Begins polio research

Upon receiving his medical degree in 1931, Sabin immediately began research on the nature and cause of polio, a viral infection that can result in death or paralysis. This disease had reached epidemic (affecting a huge number of people) proportions, affecting people around the world.

Sabin joined the staff of the Rockefeller Institute in New York City in 1935 and four years later left for a post at the Children's Hospital Research Foundation in Cincinnati, Ohio. It was there that he proved that polio viruses not only grew in nerve tissue, as was generally assumed, but that they lived in the

small intestines. This discovery indicated that polio might be vulnerable to a vaccine taken orally (through the mouth).

Sabin's work on a polio vaccine was interrupted by World War II (1939–45; a war fought mostly in Europe with France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States on one side, and Germany, Japan, and Italy on the other). In 1941 he joined the U.S. Army Epidemiological Board's Virus Committee and accepted assignments in Europe, Africa, the Middle East, and the Pacific. During this phase of his career Sabin developed vaccines for encephalitis (swelling of the brain), sand-fly fever, and dengue fever (a virus transmitted by mosquitoes).

Develops polio vaccine

At the war's end Sabin returned to Cincinnati and to his research on the polio virus. His approach was to make the human stomach a hostile environment for the polio virus. He intended to accomplish this by isolating a mutant (altered, different) form of the polio virus that was incapable of producing the disease. The avirulent (not able to harm the body's defenses) virus would then be grown and introduced into the intestines. There it would reproduce rapidly, displacing the deadly virulent forms of the polio virus and protecting the human host from the disease.

After an intensive investigation Sabin managed to isolate the viruses he sought. Sabin and his research associates first swallowed the live avirulent viruses themselves before they experimented on other human subjects. For two years (1955–1957) the vaccine was tested on hundreds of prison inmates with no harmful effects.

At this point Sabin was ready for large-scale tests, but he could not carry them out in the United States. A rival polio vaccine developed by Dr. Jonas Salk (1914–1995) in 1954 was then being tested for its ability to prevent the disease among American school children. Salk's approach was to create a vaccine using a killed form of the virus.

Some foreign virologists, especially those from the Soviet Union, were convinced of the superiority of the Sabin vaccine. It was first tested widely in Russia, Latvia, Estonia, Czechoslovakia, Poland, Hungary, and East Germany from 1957 to 1959. A much smaller group of persons living in Sweden, England, Singapore, and the United States received Sabin's vaccine by the end of 1959.

In the meantime Salk's vaccine had been accidentally contaminated with some live virulent polio viruses. It caused death or severe illness to several hundred school children. In addition, the Salk vaccine had to be injected into the body and it was effective for a relatively short time—less than a year. These problems made the American medical community more receptive to Sabin's vaccine.

Sabin's vaccine was free of dangerous viruses, easily administered orally, and effective over a long period of time. Ultimately it was a live virus vaccine that was used in the United States and the rest of the world to eliminate polio.

Later life

Always a tireless researcher, Sabin moved on to a new field of study, the possible role viruses play in creating cancer in humans. After more than a decade of work he was forced in 1977 to conclude that cancers

were not caused by viruses as he had first assumed. Sabin served as research professor at the University of South Carolina until 1982. In 1980 he traveled to Brazil to deal with a new outbreak of polio, and retired from medicine in 1986. Sabin died March 3, 1993, of heart failure.

Sabin's work on a vaccine for the polio virus affected millions of people. By 1993 health organizations reported the near-extinction of the polio disease in the Western Hemisphere.

For More Information

Berland, Theodore. *The Scientific Life*. New York: Coward-McCann, 1962.

Brody, Seymour. *Jewish Heroes of America*. Delray Beach, FL: RSB Publishers, 1995.

Rapoport, Roger. *The Super-Doctors*. Chicago: Playboy Press, 1975.

CARL SAGAN

Born: November 9, 1934

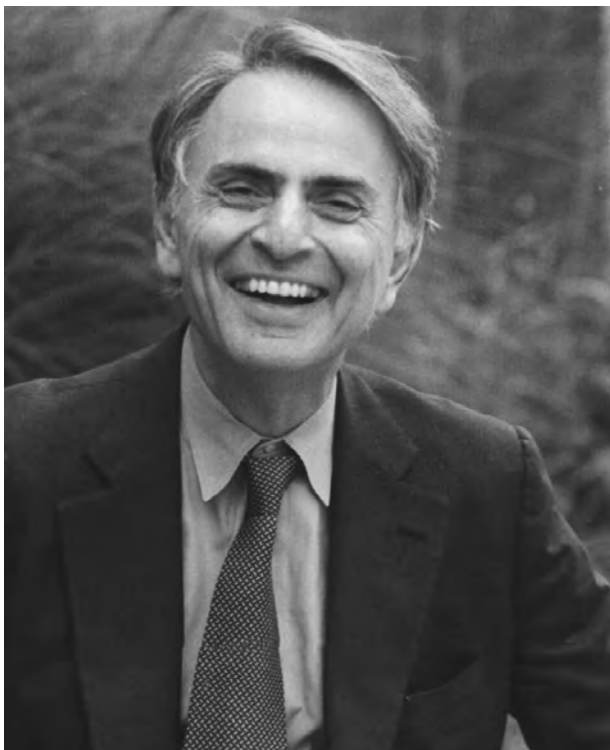
New York, New York

Died: December 20, 1996

Seattle, Washington

American astronomer, author, and lecturer

The American astronomer Carl Sagan studied the surfaces and atmospheres of the major planets, conducted experiments on the origins of life on Earth, made important contributions to the debate over the environmental consequences



Carl Sagan.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

of nuclear war, and wrote a number of popular books explaining developments in astronomy, biology, and psychology.

Younger years and education

Carl Edward Sagan was born on November 9, 1934, in New York City to Samuel and Molly Sagan. His father was a factory manager. As a child Carl was fascinated with the stars. By age nine he was an amateur astronomer and felt certain there was life on other planets. At age twelve he announced to his grandfather his intention to become an astronomer. However, it was not until he was a sophomore in high school

that he realized that astronomers actually got paid for their work.

The family later moved to Rahway, New Jersey, where Carl graduated from high school in 1951. He was voted “most likely to succeed” and “most outstanding male student.” With the help of several scholarships, he studied astronomy at the University of Chicago. He was captain of a championship intramural basketball team and president of the Astronomical Society, which he had founded. He received a bachelor of arts degree with special honors in the natural sciences in 1954, a bachelor of science degree in physics in 1955, and his doctorate in 1960.

Early teaching and research

Over the next ten years Sagan held teaching and/or research posts at the University of California at Berkeley, Harvard University, the Smithsonian Astrophysical Observatory, and Stanford University. In 1970 he became director of Cornell University’s Laboratory for Planetary Studies and David Duncan Professor of Astronomy and Space Science. In addition to his academic appointments Sagan served as a consultant to the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) and was closely associated with the unmanned (without astronauts onboard) space missions to Venus, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn.

The surface and atmosphere of Venus

Sagan’s first major research effort was an investigation of the surface and atmosphere of Venus. In the late 1950s the general scientific view was that the surface of Venus was relatively cool and that life of some sort might exist on the planet. Radio emissions had been

observed and it was thought that they came from the activity of charged particles located in an atmospheric layer.

Sagan overturned these ideas in 1961 by showing that the emissions could be caused by a very hot surface temperature, over 300 degrees Centigrade (572 degrees Fahrenheit), in which life could not exist. He said the high temperatures were caused by a “greenhouse effect,” in which the sun’s heat was trapped between the planet’s surface and its carbon dioxide cloud cover. These ideas were confirmed by an exploratory space vehicle sent to Venus by the Soviet Union in 1967.

Solar system research

The physical characteristics of the surface of Mars have long interested astronomers and science fiction writers. Telescopic observation of the planet revealed distinctive bright and dark areas on its surface. This led some to guess that large regions of Mars were covered with plants that change with the seasons.

In the mid-twentieth century, radar and other new means of observation were used to gather information on the topography (surface features), temperature, wind speeds, and atmosphere of Mars. Reviewing this newly collected data, Sagan concluded that the bright regions were lowlands filled with sand and dust blown by the wind and that the dark areas were elevated ridges or highlands.

The origins of life

Sagan also investigated the origins of life on Earth and championed the study of exobiology (the biology of extraterrestrial life). In the mid-1950s Harold Urey and Stanley Miller had successfully produced key organic

compounds in the laboratory by recreating the physical and chemical conditions that were common on Earth shortly before the first forms of life appeared. Building upon this research, Sagan exposed a mixture of methane, ammonia, water, and hydrogen sulfide to radiation. This had the effect of producing amino acids and adenosine triphosphate (ATP), complex chemical compounds that are crucial to living cells.

Popular writing

It is not his scientific achievements but his popular books and his television appearances that made Sagan a well-known public figure. In 1973 he published *The Cosmic Connection*, a lively introduction to space exploration and the search for extraterrestrial life. Four years later he published his Pulitzer Prize-winning book on the evolution of the human brain, *The Dragons of Eden*.

Another of Sagan’s books, *Cosmos* (1980), deserves notice because it was written in conjunction with his well-received television series of the same name. In this work Sagan offered a brief history of the physical universe, showed how the universe came to be understood with the help of modern science, and warned that the Earth was in danger of being destroyed by a nuclear disaster.

Nuclear winter

In December of 1983 Sagan, with colleagues R. P. Turco, O. B. Toon, T. P. Ackerman, and J. B. Pollack, published “Nuclear Winter: Global Consequences of Multiple Nuclear Explosions.” The article stated that in a nuclear war tremendous quantities of soot and dust would be injected into the atmosphere to form a gigantic black cloud

covering most of the Northern Hemisphere. This cloud would reduce the incoming sunlight by more than 95 percent for a period of several weeks and affect the climate on Earth for a number of years thereafter. During the cold, dark nuclear winter the vegetation which animals and humans need for sustenance (nourishment) would be seriously depleted and great harm would be done to the environment and to human society.

Sagan continued to work and speak about science until his death in Seattle, Washington, on December 20, 1996, of pneumonia brought on by a rare bone marrow disease.

Sagan once said that his own sense of wonder, combined with the encouragement his parents showed for pursuing unusual interests, were the factors that led him to his choice of work. He was best known for popularizing science, presenting it in generally understandable or interesting form. It is a fitting tribute that the Mars Pathfinder lander was renamed the Dr. Carl Sagan Memorial Station when it touched down on the surface of Mars in July of 1997.

For More Information

- Blashfield, Jean F. *Carl Sagan: Astronomer*. Chicago: Ferguson, 2001.
- Byman, Jeremy. *Carl Sagan: In Contact with the Cosmos*. Greensboro, NC: Morgan Reynolds, 2001.
- Cohen, Daniel. *Carl Sagan: Superstar Scientist*. New York: Dodd, Mead, 1987.
- Davidson, Keay. *Carl Sagan: A Life*. New York: J. Wiley, 1999.
- Poundstone, William. *Carl Sagan: A Life in the Cosmos*. New York: Henry Holt, 1999.

ANDREI SAKHAROV

Born: May 21, 1921

Moscow, Russia

Died: December 14, 1989

Moscow, Russia

Russian physicist and reformer

Andrei Sakharov was one of the Soviet Union's leading physicists and is regarded in scientific circles as the "father of the Soviet atomic bomb." He also became Soviet Russia's most prominent political dissident (a person who holds political views that differ from the majority) in the 1970s.

Early years and education

Andrei Sakharov was born in Moscow, Russia, on May 21, 1921, the oldest of two sons. He was also part of a large family. When he was growing up, four Sakharov families shared the same apartment building. His father taught physics, the branch of science that examines matter and energy, and how they work together. He would take young Andrei to his laboratory and show him experiments. Andrei was dazzled and began performing his own experiments at home. His father encouraged him and gave him the desire to find fulfillment in his work.

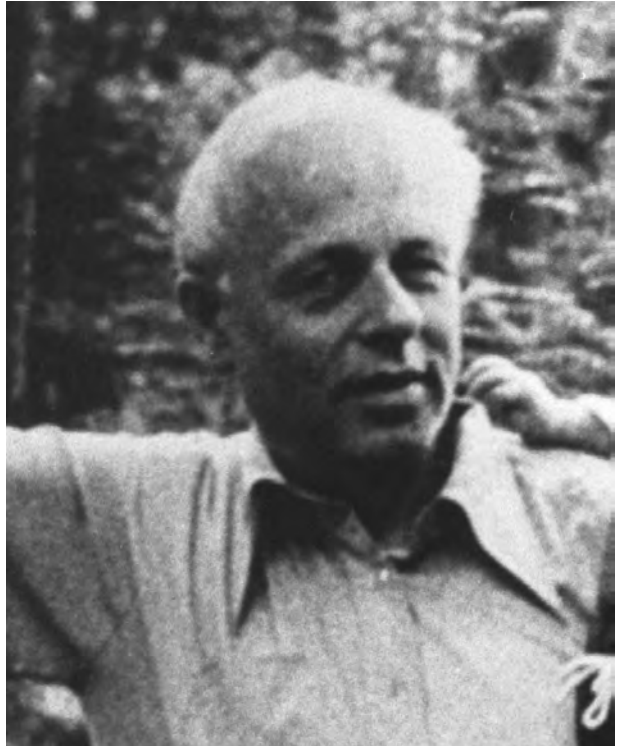
Sakharov studied physics at Moscow University. During World War II (1939–45; a war fought mostly in Europe between the Axis—Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies—led by the Soviet Union, Great Britain, France, and the United States) he served as an engineer in a military factory. He met Klavdia Vikhireva, a

laboratory assistant, and they married in 1943. The couple had three children.

Physics research

In 1945 Sakharov entered the Lebedev Institute in Physics where he joined the Soviet research group working on atomic weapons. He wrote many scientific articles and his achievements were recognized throughout the world. In 1953, at the age of thirty-two, he became the youngest person ever elected to the Soviet Academy of Sciences.

Between 1950 and 1968 Sakharov conducted top secret research on thermonuclear weapons. Thermonuclear weapons release destructive energy by fusing the nuclei (the dense central cores) of atoms under high temperatures. He was named "Hero of Socialist Labor" in 1953, 1956, and 1962. He also developed a strong awareness of the dangers of nuclear testing activity and the irreversible consequences of nuclear war.



Andrei Sakharov.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Takes stand against Soviet government policies

In the late 1950s Sakharov sent many letters to Soviet leaders urging them to stop nuclear testing. He also published several articles in Soviet journals arguing against continued nuclear testing and the arms race. His views apparently carried weight with Premier Nikita Khrushchev (1894–1971) and others, and influenced the Soviet decision to sign the first nuclear test ban treaty in 1963.

In 1966 and 1967 Sakharov openly pressed for civil liberties (rights of the people of a country). He became more militant (devoted to his cause) following the Soviet invasion of Czechoslovakia in 1968. Some-

times he and other dissidents stood vigil (watch) at trials of those arrested for protest activities. While standing vigil at a trial in 1970 Sakharov, who was then a widower, met Elena Bonner. They later married, and she became his strongest supporter.

Reflections and banishment

At this time Sakharov published his best-known and most persuasive and forceful political essay, *Reflections on Progress, Peaceful Coexistence and Intellectual Freedom*. In it he urged cooperation between East and West (primarily the Soviet Union and the United States), civil liberties, and an end to the arms

race. Following the publication of *Reflections* in the West, Sakharov was removed from most of his scientific projects and dismissed from the Soviet Atomic Energy Commission. It soon became difficult for him to publish scientific works. For a time, Sakharov was protected from being arrested because of his international prestige as a nuclear physicist, and his specific knowledge of the Soviet Union's nuclear weapons program.

Toward the end of the 1970s Sakharov became increasingly alarmed about the Soviet arms build-up, which he saw as a reflection of aggressive plans. He frequently expressed his thoughts to foreign reporters and many of his views were printed in the West. His outspoken criticism of the Soviet invasion of Afghanistan in late 1979 led to the banishment (forced exit) of Sakharov and his wife to Gorky, a small city two hundred fifty miles east of Moscow. He was cut off from open contact with friends and colleagues and constantly harassed by the KGB (Soviet secret police).

In 1983 Sakharov reportedly considered leaving Soviet Russia but was refused because of his knowledge of Soviet state secrets. On several occasions he engaged in hunger strikes (where someone refuses to eat as an act of protest) to call attention to continued threats against him and his family.

In 1983 U.S. president Ronald Reagan (1911–) proclaimed May 21 National Sakharov Day in recognition of his courage and his contribution to humanity. Sakharov was detained in Gorky for almost seven years, released at last by Premier Mikhail Gorbachev (1931–) in 1986. In 1989 he was elected to the newly formed Soviet legislature. The remaining three years of Sakharov's life were spent traveling abroad. He died of a heart attack on December 14, 1989, in Moscow.

Sakharov received the Nobel Peace Prize in 1975 for his work for nuclear disarmament and his outspoken criticism of human rights violations everywhere. He was for many, inside the Soviet Union and out, a noble symbol of courage, intelligence, and humanity. Part of his obituary said, "Everything [he] did was dictated by his conscience."

For More Information

- Bonner, Elena. *Alone Together*. New York: A. A. Knopf, 1986.
- Lourie, Richard. *Sakharov: A Biography*. Waltham, MA: Brandeis University Press, 2002.
- Sakharov, Andrei. *Memoirs*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1990.

J. D. SALINGER

Born: January 1, 1919
New York, New York
American writer

J. D. Salinger, best known for his controversial novel *The Catcher in the Rye* (1951), is recognized by critics and readers alike as one of the most popular and influential authors of American fiction during the second half of the twentieth century.

Growing up in the "House of Glass"

Jerome David Salinger was born in New York City on January 1, 1919, and like the

members of the fictional Glass family that appear in some of his works, was the product of mixed parentage—his father was Jewish and his mother was Scotch-Irish. Salinger's upbringing was not unlike that of Holden Caulfield of *The Catcher in the Rye*, the Glass children, and many of his other characters. Unlike the Glass family with its brood of seven children, Salinger had only an elder sister. He grew up in fashionable areas of Manhattan and for a time attended public schools. Later, the young Salinger attended prep schools where he apparently found it difficult to adjust. In 1934 his father enrolled him at Valley Forge Military Academy near Wayne, Pennsylvania, where he stayed for approximately two years, graduating in June of 1936.

Salinger maintained average grades and was an active, if at times distant, participant in a number of extracurricular activities. He began to write fiction, often by flashlight under his blankets after the hour when lights had to be turned out. Salinger contributed work to the school's literary magazine, served as literary editor of the yearbook during his senior year, participated in the chorus, and was active in drama club productions. He is also credited with composing the words to the school's anthem.

Published author

In 1938 Salinger enrolled in Ursinus College at Collegeville, Pennsylvania. While at Ursinus he resumed his literary pursuits, contributing a humorous column to the school's weekly newspaper. He left the school after only one semester. Obviously an intelligent and sensitive man, Salinger apparently did not respond well to the structure and rig-



J. D. Salinger.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

ors of a college education. This attitude found its way into much of his writing, as there is a pattern throughout his work of impatience with formal learning and academic types.

Despite Salinger's dislike of formal education, he attended Columbia University in 1939 and participated in a class on short story writing taught by Whit Burnett (1899–1973). Burnett, a writer and important editor, made a lasting impression on the young author, and it was in the magazine *Story*, founded and edited by Burnett, that Salinger published his first story, "The Young Folks," in the spring of 1940. Encouraged by

the success of this effort, Salinger continued to write and after a year of rejection slips finally broke into the rank of well-paying magazines catering to popular reading tastes.

Salinger entered military service in 1942 and served until the end of World War II (1939–45; a war in which Allied forces led by Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States fought with the Axis forces of Germany, Italy, and Japan). Salinger participated in the Normandy campaign, when Allied forces landed on French shores and turned the tide of the war, and the liberation of France from the occupying German army. He continued to write and publish while in the army, carrying a portable typewriter with him in the back of his jeep. After returning to the United States, Salinger's career as a writer of serious fiction took off. In 1946 the *New Yorker* published his story "Slight Rebellion Off Madison," which was later rewritten to become a part of *The Catcher in the Rye*.

The Catcher in the Rye

In 1951 Salinger's masterpiece *The Catcher in the Rye* landed at bookstores. In *The Catcher in the Rye*, Holden Caulfield is driven to the brink of a nervous breakdown by his disgust for the "phoniness" of the adult world that he is about to enter. He finds peace only in the presence of Phoebe, his young sister. Taking flight from this world, Holden plans to head west, where he hopes to live a peaceful existence in a log cabin. However, he begins his journey by traveling to New York where he plans to say goodbye to his sister, and on the way he participates in a series of humorous adventures. Such a confusion in direction is characteristic of Caulfield, as there seems to be a pattern of

impulsive behavior in many of his actions. One of Salinger's more subtle devices is to discredit his main character by placing him in situations wherein his own phoniness is exposed. In these situations his character is made all the more interesting through what readers quickly see as his sensitivity and intelligence.

It is little wonder that *The Catcher in the Rye* quickly became a favorite among young people; it skillfully demonstrates the adolescent experience with its spirit of rebellion. At various points in history, *The Catcher in the Rye* has been banned by public libraries, schools, and bookstores due to its presumed profanity (bad language), sexual subject matter, and rejection of traditional American values.

Success

Despite its popular success, the critical response to *The Catcher in the Rye* was slow in getting underway. It was not until *Nine Stories*, a collection of previously published short stories came out in 1953 that Salinger began to attract serious critical attention.

Salinger did not publish another book until 1961, when his much anticipated *Franny and Zooey* appeared. This work consists of two long short stories, previously published in the *New Yorker*. Each concerns a crisis in the life of the youngest member of his fictional Glass family—the quirky characters who populate most of his work. In 1963 Salinger published another Glass family story sequence, *Raise High the Roof Beam, Carpenters*; and *Seymour: An Introduction*, again from two previously published *New Yorker* pieces. Both stories revolve around the life and tragic death of Seymour Glass, the eldest of the Glass children, as narrated by his brother

Buddy Glass, who is frequently identified as Salinger's alter-ego, or a representation of the author's personality.

The myth of J. D. Salinger

While Salinger's fictional characters have been endlessly analyzed and discussed, the author himself has remained a mystery. Since the publication of *The Catcher in the Rye*, he has consistently avoided contact with the public, obstructing attempts by those wishing to pry into his personal life. In 1987 he successfully blocked the publication of an unauthorized biography by Ian Hamilton. In his lawsuit, Salinger claimed copyright infringement on private matters Hamilton had discovered in the course of research. Even after revising his material, Hamilton was unable to satisfy Salinger or the court and was forced to withdraw the book. In 1988 an extensively revised version of Hamilton's work was published under the title *In Search of J. D. Salinger*, which represents a comprehensive study of the author and his work.

Deemed the "Summer of Salinger" by columnist Liz Smith, the summer of 1999 saw the release of the latest Salinger biography and the sale of love letters the author wrote to a former girlfriend, which sold for \$156,000. The letters were bought by software millionaire Peter Norton, who returned the letters to the author. Paul Alexander's *Salinger: A Biography*, published on July 15, 1999, is the first full-length Salinger biography since Ian Hamilton's in 1988. Salinger has not made an effort to limit the release of the book, unlike the Hamilton biography.

In 1997 a rumor surfaced that a Salinger story originally printed in the *New Yorker* in

1965, "Hapworth 16, 1924," was soon to be released in book form. The publication is still planned but no date has been set.

Today Salinger lives in seclusion in rural New Hampshire, writing for his own pleasure and presumably enjoying his private world.

For More Information

Alexander, Paul. *Salinger: A Biography*. Los Angeles: Renaissance Books, 1999.

Bloom, Harold, ed. *J. D. Salinger: Modern Critical Views*. Chelsea House, 1987.

Hamilton, Ian. *In Search of J. D. Salinger*. New York: Random House, 1988.

Salinger, Margaret A. *Dream Catcher: A Memoir*. New York: Washington Square Press, 2000.

JONAS SALK

Born: October 28, 1914

New York, New York

Died: June 23, 1995

La Jolla, California

American immunologist and virologist

The American physician, virologist (scientist who studies viruses), and immunologist (medical scientist concerned with the structure and function of the immune system, the body's resistance to infection) Jonas Salk developed the first effective poliomyelitis (polio) vaccine.



Jonas Salk.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Early years and education

Jonas Edward Salk was born in New York City on October 28, 1914, the oldest of three sons of Daniel and Dora Salk. The family moved to the Bronx, New York, shortly after Jonas's birth. As a child he was thin and small and did not do well at sports, although he was an excellent student. With his mother's encouragement, he had a sense as a child that when he grew up he would "make a difference" by doing something significant.

Salk graduated from Townsend Harris High School, a school for exceptional students. He studied hard, read everything he could lay his hands on, and always got good

grades. At the age of sixteen Salk entered the College of the City of New York to study law. He subsequently changed his mind and decided instead to pursue medicine. In 1934 he enrolled in the College of Medicine of New York University, from which he graduated in 1939. Salk worked at New York's Mount Sinai Hospital from 1940 to 1942, when he went to the University of Michigan. There he helped develop an influenza (flu) vaccine. In 1944 he was appointed research associate in epidemiology (the study of the causes, distribution, and control of disease), and in 1946 he was made assistant professor.

Polio vaccine

In 1947 Salk accepted a position at the University of Pittsburgh as associate professor of bacteriology (the study of bacteria, one-celled organisms that can cause disease). There he carried out his research on a polio vaccine. Polio vaccines had been attempted before but without success. Until 1949 it was not known that there were three distinct types of polio viruses.

This discovery provided a starting point for Salk. Working under a grant from the National Foundation for Infantile Paralysis, he prepared a killed-virus vaccine effective against all three types. Testing began in 1950, and the preliminary report on the vaccine's effectiveness was published in the *Journal of the American Medical Association* in 1953. National field trials were held in 1954, and in 1955 the vaccine was determined safe for general use.

The Salk vaccine is made by cultivating (growing) three strains of the virus separately, then killing it by applying a strong chemical called formaldehyde. Tests are then per-

formed to make certain the virus is dead. A series of three or four injections is required to make someone immune.

Problems with the Salk vaccine

Acceptance of the vaccine was not without problems. Salk was criticized because a glaring Hollywood-like promotion was undertaken for the vaccine. Also, some medical colleagues favored a live-virus vaccine. The live-virus vaccine developed by Dr. Albert Sabin (1906–1993) contained a mutant (altered, different) form of the polio virus, called an avirulent virus. This means it was not able to harm the body's defenses. The live-virus vaccine had advantages over the killed-virus vaccine. It could be administered orally (through the mouth) rather than by injection, and one dosage gave permanent immunity.

The biggest problem with the Salk vaccine was that improper production of the vaccine by some drug companies resulted in the vaccine being contaminated with live polio virus. Many hundreds of children died or became extremely ill because of this.

Salk, during his polio researches, was made research professor of bacteriology at Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, (1949–1954) and professor of preventive medicine (1954–1957). In 1957 he was named Commonwealth professor of experimental medicine.

In 1963 he opened the Salk Institute for Biological Studies in San Diego, California. There he and his colleagues studied problems relating to the body's autoimmunization reaction; that is, why the body rejects foreign material, for example, an organ transplant.

Jonas Salk died on June 23, 1995, in La

Jolla, California, at the age of eighty from heart failure. In his lifetime he was able to see the effects of his life's work. By the time Salk died, polio had virtually disappeared from the United States.

For More Information

- Barter, James. *Jonas Salk*. San Diego: Lucent, Gale, 2002.
- Carter, Richard. *Breakthrough: The Saga of Jonas Salk*. New York: Trident Press, 1966.
- Curson, Marjorie. *Jonas Salk*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Silver Burdett, 1990.
- McPherson, Stephanie Sammartino. *Jonas Salk: Conquering Polio*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 2002.
- Naden, Corinne J., and Rose Blue. *Jonas Salk: Polio Pioneer*. Brookfield, CT: Millbrook Press, 2001.
- Tocci, Salvatore. *Jonas Salk: Creator of the Polio Vaccine*. Berkeley Heights, NJ : Enslow, 2002.

GEORGE SAND

Born: July 1, 1804

Paris, France

Died: June 9, 1876

Nohant, France

French author

The French novelist George Sand was one of the most successful female writers of the nineteenth century.



George Sand.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Early life

George Sand was born Armandine Aurore Lucille Dupin in Paris, France, on July 1, 1804. Her father, Maurice Dupin, was related to a line of kings and to the Maréchal de Saxe (Marshal of Saxe); her mother, Sophie, was the daughter of a professional bird fancier who came from a humble background. Maurice Dupin was a soldier and died when Aurore was four years old. After her father's death, Aurore, her mother, and her grandmother moved from Paris to Nohant, France. At the age of fourteen, Aurore was sent to the convent (a community for nuns) of the Dames Augustines Anglaises

in Paris. Though she was often rebellious against the convent's peaceful life, she also felt drawn to quiet, deep thought and direct communication with God.

To save Aurore from mysticism (the belief that communication with God can be achieved through spiritual insight), her grandmother called her to her home. Here Aurore studied nature, practiced medicine on the peasants (poor, working class), read from the philosophers of all ages, and developed a passion for the works of French writer François René Chateaubriand (1768–1848). Her colorful tutor encouraged her to wear men's clothing while horseback riding, and she galloped through the countryside in trousers and a loose shirt, free, wild, and in love with nature.

Marriage and lovers

Aurore became mistress of the estate at Nohant when her grandmother died. At nineteen she married Casimir Dudevant, the son of a baron and a servant girl. He was goodhearted but coarse and sensual, and he offended her far-fetched ideal of love. At the age of twenty-seven Aurore moved to Paris in search of independence and love, leaving her husband and children behind. She began writing articles to earn her living and met many writers. Henri de Latouche and historian Charles Sainte-Beuve (1804–1869) became her mentors.

Aurore fell in love with Jules Sandeau, a charming young writer. They collaborated on articles and signed them collectively "J. Sand." When she published her first novel, *Indiana* (1832), she took as her pen name "George Sand." Eventually her affair with Sandeau dissolved. Then she met the young poet Alfred de Musset (1810–1857), and they became lovers.

George Sand legally separated from her husband; she gained custody over their daughter, Solange, while her husband kept the other child, Maurice. She had come to enjoy a great reputation in Paris both as a writer and as a bold and brilliant woman. She had many admirers and chose new lovers from among them. Her lovers included the Polish composer Frédéric Chopin (1810–1849).

Her novels

Every night from midnight until dawn, George Sand covered her daily quota of twenty pages with her large, tranquil writing, never crossing out a line. All her novels are love stories in which her romantic idealism unfolds in a realistic setting.

The early works by George Sand are novels of passion, written to lessen the pain of her first love affairs. *Indiana* (1832) has as its central theme woman's search for the absolute in love. *Valentine* (1832) depicts an upper-class woman, unhappily married, who finds that a farmer's son loves her. *Lélia* (1854) is a lyrical but searching confession of the author's own physical coldness. *Lélia* is a beautiful woman loved by a young poet, but she can show him only motherly affection.

Le Compagnon du tour de France (1840), *Consuelo* (1842–1843), and *Le Pêché de Monsieur Antoine* (1847) are typical novels of this period for the author. She sympathized in these novels with the difficult lives of the worker and the farmer. She also wrote a number of novels devoted to country life, most produced during her retreat to Nohant. *La Mare au diable* (1846), *La Petite Fadette* (1849), and *Les Maîtres sonneurs* (1852) are typical novels of this genre.

As George Sand grew older, she spent more and more time at her beloved Nohant

and gave herself up to the gentle, peaceful life she created for herself there, the entertainment of friends, the staging of puppet shows, and most of all to her grandchildren. Though she had lost none of her vital energy and enthusiasm, she grew less concerned with politics. Her quest for the absolute in love had led her through years of stormy affairs to reaching a tolerant and universal love—of God, of nature, and of children. She died in Nohant on June 9, 1876.

For More Information

Dickenson, Donna. *George Sand: A Brave Man, the Most Womanly Woman*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1988.

Jack, Belinda. *George Sand: A Woman's Life Writ Large*. New York: Knopf, 2000.

Sand, George. *Story of My Life: The Autobiography of George Sand*. Edited by Thelma Jurgrau. Albany: State University Press of New York, 1991.

CARL SANDBURG

Born: January 6, 1878

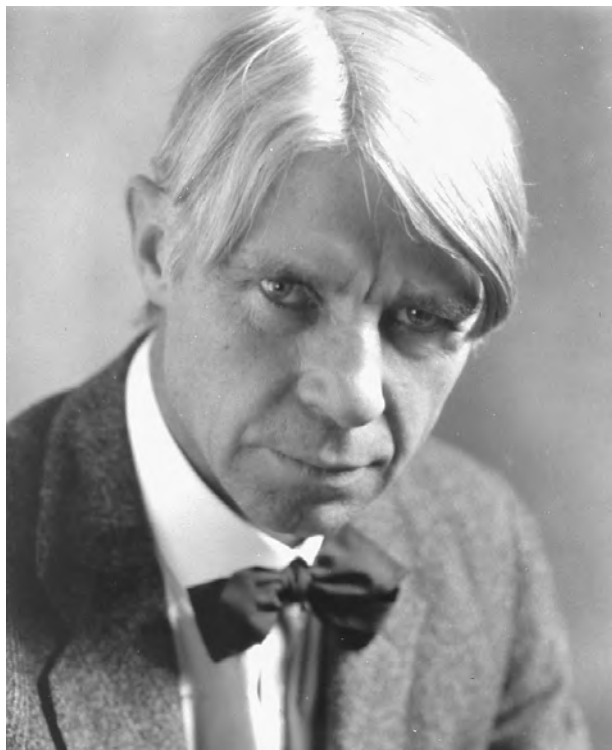
Galesburg, Illinois

Died: July 22, 1967

Flat Rock, North Carolina

American poet, biographer, and singer

An American poet, singer of folk songs and ballads, and biographer, Carl Sandburg is best known for his biography of Abraham Lincoln (1809–1865)



Carl Sandburg.

and his early verse celebrations of Chicago, Illinois.

Son of Swedish immigrants

Carl August Sandburg was born in Galesburg, Illinois, on January 6, 1878, the second of August Sandburg and Clara Mathilda Anderson's seven children. His parents had both come to the United States from Sweden; his father worked as a blacksmith's assistant. Sandburg liked to read and decided at age six that he wanted to be a writer, but he left school after finishing eighth grade to work at a series of jobs. Sandburg was brought up in a largely Republican household, but events

such as the local railway workers' strikes and the Chicago Haymarket riots of 1886 got him interested in social justice.

Sandburg traveled extensively through the West, where he began developing a love of the country and its people. Following eight months of service in the army, Sandburg entered Lombard (now Knox) College in Galesburg. There he wrote his first poetry and was encouraged by Professor Philip Green Wright, who privately published several volumes of his poems and essays.

Early writings

Sandburg left Lombard without graduating and eventually moved to Milwaukee, Wisconsin, where in 1907 and 1908 he was district organizer for the Social Democratic Party in the state. In 1907 he met Lilian Steichen, a schoolteacher, and they were married in 1908. From 1910 to 1912 Sandburg served as secretary to Milwaukee's Socialist (believing in collective ownership of the means of producing goods and services) mayor Emil Seidel. Later he moved to Chicago, becoming an editorial writer for the *Daily News* in 1917. Meanwhile his verse began appearing in *Poetry* magazine; *Chicago Poems* was published in 1916. He made his reputation as a poet of the American scene with *Cornhuskers* (1918), *Smoke and Steel* (1920), and *Slabs of the Sunburnt West* (1922).

Sandburg's early writings dealt with his belief in social justice and equality and were written in such a way that they barely resembled what most people thought of as poetry. "I Am the People, the Mob" from the *Chicago Poems* is an example. The ending of the poem is similar to the style of Walt Whitman (1819–1892): "When I, the People, learn to

remember, when I, the People, use the lessons of yesterday and no longer forget who robbed me last year, who played me for a fool—then there will be no speaker in all the world say the name: ‘The People,’ with any fleck of a sneer in his voice or any far-off smile of derision [ridicule]. The mob—the crowd—the mass—will arrive then.”

Sandburg’s early poetry not only tended toward unshaped imitation of real life but also copied other poets as well. Sandburg’s “Happiness” is somewhat similar to Ezra Pound’s (1885–1972) “Salutation,” and Sandburg’s “Fog” was compared to T. S. Eliot’s (1888–1965) “The Love Song of J. Alfred Prufrock,” which had appeared the year before “Fog” was published. Seventy-three previously uncollected Sandburg poems from the 1910s can be found in *Poems for the People* (1999).

Later work

From 1926 to 1939 Sandburg devoted himself mainly to writing the six-volume biography of President Abraham Lincoln, presenting Lincoln as a symbol of the American spirit; Sandburg received a Pulitzer Prize in history for this work (1939). He also collected the folk songs that made up *The American Songbook* (1927).

Honey and Salt (1963), a remarkable achievement for a “part-time” poet in his eighties, contains much of Sandburg’s best poetry. Here the mellowness and wisdom of age are evident, and the poems are more effective than his earlier verse. By this time Sandburg had developed and begun to express a deeply felt sympathy and concern for actual people. Tenderness replaces sentimentality; controlled feelings replace defensive “toughness.” There is

also a religious element in these last poems that does not appear in Sandburg’s earlier work.

Sandburg also collected folk songs and toured the country singing his favorites. He published a collection of these songs, called *The American Songbag*. Other Sandburg works include a collection of children’s stories, *Rootabaga Stories* (1922); *Good Morning, America* (1928); *The People, Yes* (1936); *Collected Poems* (1950), which won a Pulitzer Prize; and *Harvest Poems, 1910–1960* (1960). *Remembrance Rock* (1948), a sweeping view of American history, was his only novel. Sandburg died in Flat Rock, North Carolina, on July 22, 1967.

For More Information

- Golden, Harry L. *Carl Sandburg*. Cleveland: World Publishing, 1961. Reprint, Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1988.
- Meltzer, Milton. *Carl Sandburg: A Biography*. Brookfield, CT: Twenty-First Century Books, 1999.
- Niven, Penelope. *Carl Sandburg: A Biography*. New York: C. Scribner’s Sons, 1991.
- Yannella, Philip R. *The Other Carl Sandburg*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 1996.

MARGARET SANGER

Born: September 14, 1884

Corning, New York

Died: September 6, 1966

Tucson, Arizona

American author, nurse, and activist

The pioneering work of Margaret Sanger, an American crusader for scientific contraception (birth control), family planning, and population control, made her a world-renowned figure.

Influenced in childhood

Margaret Higgins Sanger was born Margaret Higgins on September 14, 1884, in Corning, New York. Her father was a fun-loving freethinker. Her mother was a devoted Roman Catholic who had eleven children before dying of tuberculosis, a deadly disease that attacks the lungs and bones. Margaret was greatly influenced by her father's political views in support of women's suffrage (the right to vote) and tax reform (improvements), although these and other beliefs caused the family to be seen as radical (extreme) in the eyes of their neighbors.

After graduating from the local high school and from Claverack College at Hudson, New York, Margaret took a teaching position in New Jersey, until she was forced to return home to care for her dying mother. Her mother's death in 1896 left her with a deep sense of dissatisfaction concerning her own and society's medical ignorance. Soon afterwards Margaret moved to White Plains, New York, where she took nurse's training. She then moved to New York City and served in the extremely poor conditions in the slums of its Lower East Side. In 1902 she married William Sanger. Although Margaret herself was plagued by tuberculosis, she had her first child, a son, the next year. The couple had another son, as well as a daughter who died in childhood.

Begins work in birth control

Margaret Sanger's experiences with slum mothers who begged for information about how to avoid more pregnancies transformed her into a social radical. She joined the Socialist Party, a political party that believes the government should own and distribute all goods, began attending radical rallies, and read everything she could about birth control practices. She became convinced that oversized families were the basic cause of poverty. In 1913 she began publishing a monthly newspaper, the *Woman Rebel*, in which she passionately urged family limitation and first used the term "birth control." After only six issues, she was arrested and charged with distributing "obscene" literature through the mails. She fled to Europe, where she continued her birth control studies, visiting clinics and talking with medical researchers.

Sanger returned to the United States in 1916 and, after charges against her were dropped, she began nationwide lecturing. In New York City she and her partners opened a birth control clinic in a slum area to give out materials and information about birth control. This time she was arrested under state law. She spent a month in prison, as did her sister. Leaving prison in 1917, Sanger intensified her activities, lecturing and raising money from a group of wealthy patrons (supporters) in New York, and launching the *Birth Control Review*, which became the voice of her movement for twenty-three years. Encouraged by a state court decision that loosened New York's anticontraceptive law, she shifted her movement's emphasis from direct action and open resistance to efforts to secure more flexible state and federal laws. Although regularly in trouble with New York

City authorities, she continued lecturing to large crowds and keeping in touch with European contraceptive research. Her visit to Japan in 1922 was the first of several Asian trips. A year later she and her friends opened clinical research bureaus to gather medical histories and dispense birth control information in New York City and Chicago, Illinois. By 1930 there were fifty-five clinics across the United States. Meanwhile Sanger divorced her husband and married J. Noah H. Slee.

Later work

Margaret Sanger's fame became world-wide in 1927, when she helped organize and spoke before the first World Population Conference at Geneva, Switzerland. She and her followers continued to lobby for freer state and federal laws on contraception and for the distribution of birth control knowledge through welfare programs. By 1940 the American birth control movement was operating a thriving clinic program and enjoying general acceptance by the medical profession and an increasingly favorable public attitude.

For most Americans, Margaret Sanger was the birth control movement. During World War II (1939–45), when European forces and the United States clashed with Germany, Italy, and Japan, her popularity continued to grow, despite her opposition to American participation in the war. (Sanger strongly believed that wars were the result of excess national population growth.) In 1946 she helped found the International Planned Parenthood Federation. This was one of her last great moments. She was troubled by a weak heart during her last twenty years, but she



Margaret Sanger.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

continued traveling, lecturing, and issuing frequent statements. She died in Tucson, Arizona, on September 6, 1966.

For More Information

Bachrach, Deborah. *Margaret Sanger*. San Diego: Lucent Books, 1993.

Chesler, Ellen. *Woman of Valor: Margaret Sanger and the Birth Control Movement in America*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1992.

Kennedy, David M. *Birth Control in America: The Career of Margaret Sanger*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1970.

Sanger, Margaret. *Margaret Sanger; an Autobiography*. New York: Norton, 1938. Reprint, New York: Cooper Square Press, 1999.

Whitelaw, Nancy. *Margaret Sanger: "Every Child a Wanted Child."* New York: Dillon Press, 1994.

JEAN-PAUL SARTRE

Born: June 21, 1905

Paris, France

Died: April 15, 1980

Paris, France

French philosopher and writer

The French philosopher and distinguished writer Jean-Paul Sartre ranks as the most versatile writer and as the dominant influence in three decades of French intellectual life.

Childhood and early work

Jean-Paul Sartre was born in Paris, France, on June 21, 1905. His father, a naval officer, died while on a tour of duty in Indochina before Sartre was two years old. His mother belonged to the Alsatian Schweitzer family and was a first cousin to the famous physician Albert Schweitzer (1875–1925). The young widow returned to her parents' house, where she and her son were treated as "the children." In the first volume of his autobiography, *The Words* (1964), Sartre describes his "unnatural" childhood as a spoiled and an unusually intelligent boy. Lacking any companions his own age, the child found "friends" exclu-

sively in books. He began reading when he was a very young boy. Reading and writing thus became his twin passions. "It was in books that I encountered the universe," he once said.

Sartre received much of his early education from tutors. He entered the école Normale Supérieure at the University of Paris in 1924 and graduated in 1929. While there, he met the novelist Simone de Beauvoir (1908–1986), and the two formed a close relationship that lasted thereafter. After completing required military service, Sartre took a teaching job at a lycée (public secondary school) in Le Havre, France. There he wrote his first novel, *Nausea* (1938), which some critics have called the century's most influential French novel.

World War II

From 1933 to 1935 Sartre was a research student at the Institut Français in Berlin and Freiburg, Germany. He discovered the works of Edmund Husserl (1859–1938) and Martin Heidegger (1889–1976) and began to philosophize on phenomenology, or the study of human awareness. A series of works on the models of consciousness poured from Sartre's pen: two works on imagination, one on self-consciousness, and one on emotions. He also produced a first-rate volume of short stories, *The Wall* (1939).

Sartre returned to Paris to teach in a lycée and to continue his writing, but this was interrupted by World War II (1939–45; a war in which France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, the United States and other countries fought against Germany, Italy, and Japan). Called up by the army, he served briefly on the Eastern front and was taken prisoner. After nine months he secured his release and

returned to teaching in Paris, where he became active in the Resistance, a secret French group dedicated to removing the occupying German army. During this period he wrote his first major work in philosophy, *Being and Nothingness: An Essay in Phenomenological Ontology* (1943).

After the war Sartre abandoned teaching, determined to support himself by writing. He was also determined that his writing and thinking should be engaging, or intellectually activating. Intellectuals, he thought, must take a public stand on every great question of their day. He thus became fundamentally a moralist (a teacher of right and wrong), both in his philosophical and literary works.

Other works

Sartre had turned to playwriting and eventually produced a series of theatrical successes which are essentially dramatizations of ideas, although they contain some finely drawn characters and lively plots. The first two, *The Flies* and *No Exit*, were produced in occupied Paris. They were followed by *Dirty Hands* (1948), usually called his best play; *The Devil and the Good Lord* (1957), an insulting, anti-Christian rant; and *The Prisoners of Altona* (1960), which combined convincing character portrayal with telling social criticism. Sartre also wrote a number of comedies: *The Respectful Prostitute* (1946), *Kean* (1954), and *Nekrassov* (1956), which the critic Henry Peyre claimed “reveals him as the best comic talent of our times.”

During this same period Sartre also wrote a three-volume novel, *The Roads to Freedom* (1945–1949); formal writings on literature; lengthy studies of Charles Baudelaire (1821–1867) and Jean Genet (1910–1986);



Jean-Paul Sartre.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

and a large number of reviews and criticisms. He also edited *Les Temps modernes*.

Though never a member of the Communist Party (a political party that believes goods and services should be controlled by a strong government), Sartre usually sympathized with the political views of the (liberal) far left. Whatever the political issue, he was quick to publish his opinions, often combining them with public acts of protest.

Later work

In 1960 Sartre returned to philosophy, publishing the first volume of his *Critique of*

Dialectical Reason. It represented essentially a modification of his existentialist ideas, or a philosophy that stresses the importance of the individual experience. The drift of Sartre's earlier work was toward a sense of the uselessness of life. In *Being and Nothingness* he declared man to be "a useless passion," forced to exercise a meaningless freedom. But after World War II, his new interest in social and political questions gave way to more optimistic and activist views.

Sartre was always controversial yet respected. In 1964 he was awarded but refused to accept the Nobel Prize in literature. Sartre suffered from declining health throughout the 1970s and died from lung problems in 1980. He is remembered as one of the most influential French writer of the twentieth century.

For More Information

Cohen-Solal, Annie. *Sartre: A Life*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1987.

Hayman, Ronald. *Sartre: A Biography*. New York: Carroll & Graf Publishers, 1992.

Kamber, Richard. *On Sartre*. Belmont, CA: Wadsworth/Thomson Learning, 2000.

OSKAR SCHINDLER

Born: April 28, 1908

Zwittau, Moravia, Austro-Hungarian Empire

Died: October 9, 1974

Frankfurt, Germany

German businessman

German businessman Oskar Schindler became an unlikely hero when he saved hundreds of Jews in Poland and Czechoslovakia from death at the hands of the Nazis during World War II (1939–45). By employing them in his factory, Schindler protected them from the wrath of the Nazi Party and preserved generations of Jewish families.

Early years

Oskar Schindler was born in 1908 in the industrial city of Zwittau, Moravia, then a German province of the Austro-Hungarian Empire and now part of the Czech Republic. The region where Oskar grew up and attended a German-language school was also known as the Sudetenland. Oskar's father, Hans Schindler, was a factory owner and his mother, Louisa Schindler, was a homemaker. Oskar had one younger sister named Elfriede with whom he had a close relationship, despite a seven-year age difference. As a child, Schindler was popular and had many friends, but he was not an exceptional student. Among his childhood playmates were the two sons of a local rabbi.

During the 1920s Schindler worked for his father selling farm equipment. In 1928, however, the young man's marriage to a woman named Emilie caused problems in the relationship between the two men and Schindler left his father's business to work as a sales manager for a Moravian electric company.

Meanwhile, the political landscape in Europe was undergoing major changes, especially in Germany, where Adolf Hitler (1889–1945) and his Nazi Party began their rise to power. Hitler began stirring up ethnic feelings among the Sudeten Germans, point-

ing out that their “rightful” ties were with Germany, not Czechoslovakia. By 1935 many Sudeten Germans joined the pro-Nazi Sudeten German Party. Schindler joined, too—not out of any love for the Nazis, but because it made business sense to go along with the prevailing wind.

In Poland

On September 1, 1939, Hitler invaded Poland, prompting Great Britain and France to declare war on Germany. Within a week, Schindler arrived in Krakow, Poland, eager to find a way to profit from the conflict in one way or another. In mid-October, the city became the new seat (central location) of government for all of Nazi-occupied Poland. Schindler quickly created friendships with key officers in both the Wehrmacht (the German army) and the SS (the special armed Nazi unit), offering them black-market (illegal) goods such as cognac and cigars.

It was around this same time that he met Itzhak Stern, a Jewish accountant who would eventually help his relations with the local Jewish business community. Schindler purchased a bankrupt kitchenware factory and opened it in January 1940. Stern was hired on as the bookkeeper and soon developed a close relationship with his employer.

Schindler relied on his legendary flair as well as his willingness to bribe the right people to secure numerous German army contracts for his pots and pans. To staff his factory, he turned to Krakow’s Jewish community, which, Stern told him, was a good source of cheap, reliable labor. At the time, some fifty-six thousand Jews lived in the city, most living in ghettos (poor neighborhoods that were traditionally reserved for Jews).



*Oskar Schindler.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

By the spring of 1940, the Nazi crackdown against Jews had begun. Schindler was ordered to pay his Jewish employees’ wages directly to the SS rather than to the workers themselves. In August Nazi authorities issued a new regulation ordering all but “work-essential” Jews to leave the city. This sparked the panic that sent Jews scrambling for work that would be considered “essential.”

His work begins

In June of 1942, the Nazis began relocating Krakow’s Jews to labor camps. Some of Schindler’s workers, including his office manager, were among the first group of people

ordered to report to the train station. Schindler raced to the station and argued with an SS officer about how essential his workers were to the war effort. By dropping the names of some of his Nazi friends and making a couple of threats, he was finally able to rescue the workers and escort them safely back to his factory.

In early 1943 the Nazis ordered the final “liquidation” of the Krakow ghetto. The man put in charge of the operation was a young SS officer named Amon Goeth, the commandant of the Plaszow forced labor camp just outside the city. Jews who were healthy and could work were sent to Plaszow and the rest were sent off to death camps or executed on the spot. When Goeth announced that local industries would be moved inside Plaszow, Schindler proposed establishing a labor mini-camp within his factory that would continue to employ his own workers. Goeth agreed after Schindler bribed him.

The list

In early 1944, however, Plaszow’s designation was changed from that of a labor camp to a concentration camp. This meant that its prisoners were suddenly marked for transport to death camps such as Auschwitz. Then came word in the summer that the main camp was to be closed as well as Schindler’s factory. Schindler approached Goeth about moving his factory and his workers to Czechoslovakia so that they might continue to supply the Third Reich (Hitler’s army) with vital war supplies. After another bribe, the SS officer agreed to throw his support behind the plan and told Schindler to draw up a list of those people he wanted to take with him. Schindler was now faced with the task of choosing those he wanted to save—literally a

matter of life and death. Schindler came up with a list containing some eleven hundred names, including all the employees of Emalia Camp and a number of others as well.

During the fall of 1944, Schindler made the necessary arrangements (and paid the necessary bribes) to begin the process of moving his factory to the town of Brunnlitz, Czechoslovakia. The liquidation of the Plaszow camp began that October. Shortly after around eight hundred men were shipped out in boxcars bound for Brunnlitz. Three hundred women and children who were supposed to join them there were mistakenly routed to Auschwitz instead. Schindler immediately rescued these women and children, and they were sent on to Brunnlitz.

Over the next seven months, Schindler’s factory never produced a single useful shell (the outer casings for bullets). He called it “start-up difficulties” when, in reality, he had purposefully weakened the manufacturing process to make sure that the shells failed quality-control tests.

End of the war

Finally, on May 8, 1945, the war came to an end after Germany surrendered. Schindler gathered all of his workers together on the factory floor to pass along the good news. He then asked them not to seek revenge for what had been done to them and called for a moment of silence in memory of those who had died. He also thanked the members of the SS who were present and encouraged them to go home peacefully and without further bloodshed.

Fearing capture, Schindler, along with his wife, fled west to avoid Russian troops advancing from the east. He preferred to take

his chances with the approaching U.S. forces instead. A couple of days later, the twelve hundred or so Schindlerjuden (“Shindler’s Jews”) were freed by a lone Russian officer who rode up to the factory on horseback.

After World War II

Schindler’s postwar life was similar to that before the war, which was marked by a string of failed business ventures, overspending, plenty of drinking, and love affairs. In 1949 Schindler moved to Argentina and purchased a farm. By 1957, however, Schindler had gone bankrupt and was relying on the charity of the Jewish organization B’nai B’rith to survive.

In 1958 Schindler abandoned his wife and returned to West Germany. Once again, the Jewish Distribution Committee and several grateful individuals came through for him with money. He started a cement business in Frankfurt, Germany, but it failed in 1961. From then on, he lived mostly off funds provided by the Schindlerjuden as well as a small pension (retirement money) the West German government granted him in 1968.

The same year Schindler lost his cement business, he was invited to visit Israel for the first time. He was delighted with the warm reception he received, which contrasted sharply with his treatment at home. Many of his countrymen were angry with him for saving Jews and testifying in court against Nazi war criminals. Every spring for the rest of his life, he returned to Israel for several weeks to bask in the admiration of the Schindlerjuden and their offspring, whom he regarded with great affection as his own family.

Shortly after Schindler’s fifty-fourth

birthday in 1962, he was officially declared a “Righteous Gentile (non-Jew)” and invited to plant a tree on the Avenue of the Righteous leading up to Jerusalem’s Yad Vashem Museum, a memorial to the Holocaust, the name for the German liquidation of Jews during World War II. Upon his death from heart and liver problems in 1974, he was granted his request to be buried in Israel. About five hundred Schindlerjuden attended his funeral and watched as his body was laid to rest in the Catholic cemetery on Mount Zion in Jerusalem. Thanks to Oskar Schindler, more than six thousand Holocaust survivors and their descendants were alive in the 1990s to tell the remarkable story of “Schindler’s List.”

For More Information

- Brecher, Elinor J. *True Stories of the List Survivors*. New York: Dutton, 1994.
- Keneally, Thomas. *Schindler’s List*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1982.
- Roberts, Jack L. *Oskar Schindler*. San Diego: Lucent Books, 1996.
- Roberts, Jeremy. *Oskar Schindler: Righteous Gentile*. New York: Rosen Publishing Group, 2000.
- Thompson, Bruce, ed. *Oskar Schindler*. San Diego: Greenhaven Press, 2002.

ARTHUR SCHLESINGER JR.

Born: October 15, 1917

Columbus, Ohio

American historian and politician

Arthur Schlesinger Jr. is an outstanding historian of the United States and an influential supporter of the Democratic Party.

Influenced by father's work

Arthur Meier Schlesinger Jr. was born on October 15, 1917, in Columbus, Ohio, with the name Arthur Bancroft Schlesinger, later changed by dropping his mother's maiden name and taking his father's full name. Schlesinger's father was one of the leading historians of the 1920s and 1930s. Arthur Schlesinger Sr. (1888–1965) taught one of the first college courses in American social and cultural history (in the early 1920s), he was a leader in the study of social history, and, as a professor at Harvard University between the two world wars, he directed the graduate work of several students who became noted social and intellectual historians. Thus, young Arthur was surrounded by American history.

Arthur Jr. graduated from Harvard University at age twenty and published his honors thesis (a written essay containing original research presented for an advanced degree) one year later. He then spent a year studying in England but did not pursue further degrees. During part of World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers: Italy, Japan, and Germany—and the Allies: France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States) he served in the U.S. government's Office of War Information. As a member in the Society of Fellows at Harvard he was able to do the research for *The Age of Jackson*, a biography of the seventh U.S. president, Andrew Jackson (1767–1845), which was published in 1945.

Expresses support for Democratic presidents

Though Schlesinger Sr. was a liberal (a person open to social improvement through change) and a Democrat, his work as a historian generally was not used to further his political views. Schlesinger Jr. was more active in politics, and it was his political involvement and the relation of his writing to that involvement that made him a public figure of unusual interest.

The Age of Jackson, which Schlesinger Jr. wrote during Franklin D. Roosevelt's (1882–1945) fourth term as president, argued that the reform era in the years before the American Civil War (1861–65; a war fought between the U.S. government and eleven southern states over opposing views on issues such as slavery and trade) was a reaction to one of many conservative (opposed to social change) periods that failed to address the nation's problems. Schlesinger argued that democracy under Jackson was a social movement that began among poor people in the eastern and southern parts of the country. This theory of regional organization was also linked to Roosevelt's New Deal (1933–39), a series of programs that attempted to carry out political, business, and social reform. It was said that *The Age of Jackson* "voted" for Roosevelt as well as Jackson. The book was awarded the Pulitzer Prize, and Schlesinger was appointed to the Harvard history department, joining his father.

In 1949 Schlesinger published *The Vital Center: The Politics of Freedom*, a history of American social thought organized around the political issues of the years following World War II (1939–45). *The Vital Center* "voted" for Harry Truman (1884–1972),

whose election as president had taken place one year earlier, both in terms of his support of domestic programs, such as those of the New Deal, and in his opposition to totalitarianism (the complete control of power by a government). *The Vital Center* remains a lasting description of the ideas of the mainstream of the Democratic Party.

While Schlesinger was a Harvard professor, he moved his focus from the period before the Civil War to that of the New Deal. Teaching American intellectual history from the colonies to the present, Schlesinger concentrated his research on the *Age of Roosevelt* and published the first three volumes covering the years to 1936: *The Crisis of the Old Order* (1957); *The Coming of the New Deal* (1958); and *The Politics of Upheaval* (1960). In the mid-1980s he resumed work on his multivolume history of the New Deal.

Advisor to Kennedy

Schlesinger was an active supporter of Adlai Stevenson (1900–1965) in Stevenson's unsuccessful bids for the presidency in 1952 and 1956, and he served as a speechwriter for John F. Kennedy (1917–1963) during his 1960 campaign for the presidency. *Kennedy or Nixon: Does it Make Any Difference* (1960) made his case for Kennedy. After serving in the White House as a special assistant to Kennedy (it was said that the two men met every day) and resigning his position at Harvard, Schlesinger wrote *A Thousand Days: John F. Kennedy in the White House* (1965), for which he was again awarded a Pulitzer Prize.

Schlesinger continued to express his ideas in book reviews on other works in American intellectual, political, and social history. He became the Albert Schweitzer Profes-



Arthur Schlesinger Jr.

sor of Humanities at the City University of New York in 1966 and president of the American Institute of Arts and Letters in 1981. In addition, he served as editor of the *History of American Presidential Elections* (four volumes, 1971), and in 1986 he wrote fourteen essays describing *The Cycles of American History*.

Cycles of history

Following Bill Clinton's (1946–) 1992 presidential nomination acceptance speech, Schlesinger stated that a new era in the United States had begun. He based his opinion on the cycles of American history theory put forth by his father. The elder Schlesinger predicted in 1939 that the New Deal would run out of

steam in the mid-1940s. It would give way to a conservative tide, he predicted, which in turn would yield a new liberal era starting in 1962. The next conservative phase would begin around 1978.

On the strength of this record, it was logical to predict, as the younger Schlesinger did in 1986, that at some point, shortly before or after the year 1990, there should come a sharp change in the national mood and direction. The reason each phase returned at roughly thirty-year periods, Schlesinger said, was because generational change kept the cycle going. But because each generation retained its belief in its youthful dreams, Schlesinger continued, the forward movement was guaranteed.

During the 1990s Schlesinger was among an increasing number of political observers who recognized that all was not well with multiculturalism (the maintenance of many different cultures and ethnic traditions); he felt that placing too great an influence on maintaining original cultures inside the United States made it impossible for there to exist a single, unified “American” culture at the same time. This led to the 1998 publication of *The Disuniting of America: Reflections on a Multicultural Society*, a new, enlarged edition of Schlesinger’s 1991 book about the subject. Also in 1998, Schlesinger was awarded a National Humanities Medal by President Clinton for his contributions to history. In 2000 Schlesinger published *A Life in the 20th Century: Innocent Beginnings, 1917–1950*, the first volume of his memoirs (remembrances of his life), in which he took a look back at the past century.

For More Information

Cunliffe, Marcus. “Arthur M. Schlesinger, Jr.” *Pastmasters: Some Essays on American*

Historians. Edited by Marcus Cunliffe and Robin Winks. New York: Harper and Row, 1969.

Schlesinger, Arthur M., Jr. *A Life in the Twentieth Century*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 2000.

FRANZ SCHUBERT

Born: January 31, 1797

Vienna, Austria

Died: November 19, 1828

Vienna, Austria

Austrian composer

Franz Schubert, an early romantic Austrian composer, is best known for his lieder (German art songs for voice and piano) during the nineteenth century. A new profusion of lyric poetry and the evolution of the piano into a highly complex mechanism allowed the gifted Schubert to compose exceptional lyrics.

Childhood and training

Franz Peter Schubert was born in Vienna, Austria, on January 31, 1797, the fourth son of Franz Theodor Schubert, a schoolmaster, and Elizabeth Vietz, a domestic servant in Vienna. Encouraged to pursue his talents in music, Franz received instruction in the violin from his father, his older brother Ignaz, and Michael Holzer, the organist at the Liechtenthal parish church.

In 1808, through a competitive examination, the eleven-year-old Schubert was

accepted into the choir of the Imperial Court Chapel as well as the Royal Seminary. Although he was homesick, he was an outstanding student. Besides singing in the choir, he played in the orchestra. He became familiar at this time with the music of Franz Joseph Haydn (1732–1809), Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart (1756–1791), and Ludwig von Beethoven (1770–1827).

Schubert was a shy youth, and spent most of his spare time practicing and composing by himself. He left the choir at age fifteen when his voice changed, but continued to study at the seminary. Antonio Salieri, the emperor's music director, heard about Schubert's talents and took him in as a student.

Early period

In 1814 the genius of Schubert was first made evident in his work *Gretchen am Spinnrade*, inspired by his reading of Johann Wolfgang von Goethe's (1749–1832) *Faust*. His first Mass and his first symphony appeared about this time and showed the influence of Haydn. Schubert set five other Goethe songs to music that year. By the end of 1814 Schubert was an assistant at his father's school and had begun to make the acquaintance of numerous poets, lawyers, singers, and actors, who soon would be the principal performers of his works at private concerts in their homes or in those of their wealthier friends.

Other eighteenth-century lyric poets whose works Schubert set to music include J. G. von Herder, the collector and translator of folk songs, F. G. Klopstock, and Friedrich von Schiller (1759–1805). None can compare, however, with the remarkable Goethe songs. Even the uninitiated (not educated on a particular subject) must respond to the



Franz Schubert.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

excitement of the *Erlkönig* (1815), where by means of changing accompaniment figures, sharp dissonance (an arrangement of clashing chords), and effective modulations (the shifting of one musical tone to another) Schubert makes a distinction between the four characters of the ballad—narrator, father, son, and Erlking—and creates one of the masterpieces of romantic music.

While still a schoolmaster, Schubert composed Symphonies No. 2 through No. 5. At this time he also wrote many of the delightful dances, waltzes, and *Ländler* (a type of Austrian waltz for which he was known during his lifetime).

By 1817 Schubert was living in the home of his friend Franz von Schober, where he wrote several piano sonatas (instrumental music composed of four contrasting movements). In his father's house there had been no piano. Examination of the sonatas proves Schubert to have been rather daring in his juxtaposition (placing one next to another) of keys, particularly in development sections. In addition to instrumental compositions, Schubert wrote fifty songs in 1817. In July 1817 Schubert was appointed to the household of Count Esterhazy and his family, who spent winters in an estate slightly north of Schönbrunn and summers at Zseliz in Hungary. There Schubert composed many of his works for piano duets.

Middle period

Between 1820 and 1823 Schubert achieved his musical maturity. Two of his operettas and several of his songs were performed in public and amateurs and professional quartets sang his part-songs for male voices. Some of his works began to be published and performed in private concerts.

In September 1821 Schubert and Schober left Vienna for the country with the intention of writing *Alfonso und Estrella*, his only grand opera. Shortly after his return to the city, he met Edward Bauernfeld, who introduced him to William Shakespeare's (1564–1616) works. In the fall of 1822, having completed his Mass in A-flat, Schubert began work on the Symphony in B Minor, which became known as the *Unfinished*. Three movements were sketched; two were completed. It is not known why the work was left incomplete.

Schubert's health began to fail, and in May he spent time in the Vienna General Hospital. *Rosamunde*, a play for which Schubert

had written incidental music—only the overture and ballet music are heard today—failed in 1823 and brought to a close his extended efforts to achieve a successful opera.

Schubert now turned to chamber music, producing an Octet for woodwinds and strings and his A Minor, D Minor, and G Major Quartets. In 1825 Schubert formed the mainstay of the Schubertiads, evenings at which Schubert's songs were sung.

Final years

In 1826 and 1827, despite the reappearance of his illness, Schubert wrote four masterpieces, each of which has remained a staple in his repertory (works commonly performed): the String Quartet in G, the Piano Sonata in G, the Piano Trio in B-flat, and the second Piano Trio in E-flat. Schubert was one of the torchbearers at Beethoven's funeral in 1827. Toward the end of that year Schubert completed his two series of piano pieces that he himself entitled *Impromptus*.

In 1828 Schubert composed several first-rate works: the magnificent F-Minor Fantasy for piano duet, the C-Major Symphony, the E-flat Mass, and nine songs to Ludwig Rellstab's poems. On March 26, 1828, Schubert participated in the only full-scale public concert devoted solely to his own works.

On November 11, Schubert began suffering from nausea and headache. Five days later the doctors diagnosed typhoid fever (a bacteria-caused disease marked with fever and the swelling of intestines). He died on November 19, 1828.

The impact of Schubert's work

In musical history Schubert stands with others at the beginning of the romantic

movement, anticipating the highly personal approach to composition of later composers but lacking the forcefulness and the creative means to experiment with instrumental music that Beethoven displayed.

Many of Schubert's large-scale instrumental pieces were unknown until after the middle of the nineteenth century. Moreover, unlike many other romantic composers, Schubert did not try a literary career. He was never a conductor or virtuoso (extremely gifted and skillful) performer. He did not achieve considerable public recognition during his lifetime. However, there is a lasting quality to Schubert's work that reaches out over the ages which few composers have matched.

For More Information

Clive, Peter. *Schubert and His World: A Biographical Dictionary*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1997.

McKay, Elizabeth Norman. *Franz Schubert: A Biography*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1996.

Newbould, Brian. *Schubert: The Music and the Man*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1997.

Reed, John. *Schubert*. 2nd ed. New York: Oxford University Press, 1997.

CHARLES M. SCHULZ

Born: November 26, 1922
Minneapolis, Minnesota

Died: February 12, 2000

Santa Rosa, California

American cartoonist

Cartoonist and creator of *Peanuts*, Charles M. Schulz was the winner of two Reuben, two Peabody, and five Emmy awards and a member of the Cartoonist Hall of Fame.

Early life

Charles Monroe Schulz was born in Minneapolis, Minnesota, on November 26, 1922, the son of Carl and Dena Halverson Schulz. His father was a barber. Charles loved to read the comics section of the newspaper with his father and was given the nickname "Sparky" after Sparkplug, the horse in the *Barney Google* comic strip. He began to draw pictures of his favorite cartoon characters at age six. At school in St. Paul, Minnesota, he was bright and allowed to skip two grades, which made him often the smallest in his class. Noting his interest in drawing, his mother encouraged him to take a correspondence course (in which lessons and exercises are mailed to students and then returned when completed) from Art Instruction, Inc., in Minneapolis after he graduated from high school.

During World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis: Italy, Japan, and Germany—and the Allies: France, England, the Soviet Union, and the United States), Schulz was drafted into the army and sent to Europe, rising to the rank of sergeant. After the war he returned to Minnesota as a young man with strong Christian beliefs. For a while he worked part-time for a Catholic magazine and taught for Art Instruction, Inc. Some of



Charles M. Schulz.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

his work appeared in the *Saturday Evening Post*, and eventually he created a cartoon entitled *Li'l Folks* for the *St. Paul Pioneer Press*.

Creates "Peanuts"

In 1950 the United Feature Syndicate of New York decided to publish Schulz's new comic strip, which he had wanted to call *Li'l Folks* but which was named *Peanuts* by the company. In 1950 the cartoon began appearing in seven newspapers with the characters Charlie Brown, Sherm, Patty, and Snoopy. Within a year the strip appeared in thirty-five papers, and by 1956 it was in over a hundred. The *Peanuts* cartoons were centered on

the simple and touching figures of a boy, Charlie Brown, and his dog, Snoopy and their family and school friends. Adults were never seen, only hinted at, and the action involved ordinary, everyday happenings.

Charlie Brown had a round head with half-circles for ears and nose, dots for eyes, and a line for a mouth. Things always seemed to go wrong for him, and he was often puzzled by the problems that life and his peers dealt out to him: the crabbiness of Lucy; the unanswerable questions of Linus, a young intellectual with a security blanket; the self-absorption of Schroeder the musician; the teasing of his schoolmates; and the behavior of Snoopy, the floppy-eared dog with the wild imagination, who sees himself as a fighter pilot trying to shoot down the Red Baron pilot (based on a famous German pilot during World War I) when he is not running a "Beagle Scout" troop consisting of the bird, Woodstock, and his friends.

Charlie Brown's inability to cope with the constant disappointments in life, the failure and renewal of trust (such as Lucy's tricking him every time he tries to kick the football), and his touching efforts to accept what happens as deserved were traits shared to a lesser degree by the other characters. Even crabby Lucy cannot interest Schroeder or understand baseball; Linus is puzzled by life's mysteries and the refusal of the "Great Pumpkin" to show up on Halloween. The odd elements and defects of humanity in general were reflected by Schulz's gentle humor, which made the cartoon appealing to the public.

Schulz insisted that he was not trying to send any moral and religious messages in *Peanuts*. However, even to the casual reader *Peanuts* offered lessons to be learned. Schulz

employed everyday humor to make a point, but usually it was the intellectual comment that carries the charge, even if it was only “Good Grief!” Grief was the human condition, but it was good when it taught us something about ourselves and was lightened by laughter.

Huge success

As the strip became more popular, new characters were added, including Sally, Charlie Brown’s sister; Rerun, Lucy’s brother; Peppermint Patty; Marcie; Franklin; José Peterson; Pigpen; Snoopy’s brother Spike; and the bird, Woodstock. Schulz received the Reuben award from the National Cartoonists Society in 1955 and 1964.

By this time Schulz was famous across the world. *Peanuts* appeared in over twenty-three hundred newspapers. The cartoon branched out into television, and in 1965 the classic special *A Charlie Brown Christmas* won Peabody and Emmy awards. Many more television specials and Emmys were to follow. An off-Broadway stage production, *You’re a Good Man, Charlie Brown*, was created in 1967 and ran for four years (it was also revived in 1999). Many volumes of Schulz’s work were published in at least nineteen languages, and the success of *Peanuts* inspired clothes, stationery, toys, games, and other merchandise. Schulz also wrote a book, *Why, Charlie Brown, Why?* (which became a CBS television special) to help children understand the subject of cancer (his mother had died of cancer in 1943).

Besides the previously mentioned awards, Schulz received the Yale Humor Award, 1956; School Bell Award, National Education Association, 1960; and honorary

degrees from Anderson College, 1963, and St. Mary’s College of California, 1969. A “Charles M. Schulz Award” honoring comic artists was created by the United Feature Syndicate in 1980.

Later years

The year 1990 marked the fortieth anniversary of *Peanuts*. An exhibit at the Louvre, in Paris, France, called “Snoopy in Fashion,” featured three hundred Snoopy dolls dressed in fashions created by more than fifteen world-famous designers. It later traveled to the United States. Also in 1990, the Smithsonian Institution featured an exhibit titled, “This Is Your Childhood, Charlie Brown . . . Children in American Culture, 1945–1970.” By the late 1990s *Peanuts* ran in over two thousand newspapers throughout the world every day.

Schulz was diagnosed with cancer in November 1999 after the disease was discovered during an unrelated operation. He announced in December 1999 that he would retire in the year 2000, the day after the final *Peanuts* strip. Schulz died on February 12, 2000, one day before his farewell strip was to be in newspapers. Schulz was twice married, to Joyce Halverson in 1949 (divorced 1972) and to Jean Clyde in 1973. He had five children by his first marriage.

In March 2000 the Board of Supervisors of Sonoma County, California, passed a resolution to rename Sonoma County Airport after Schulz. In June 2000 plans were announced for bronze sculptures of eleven *Peanuts* characters to be placed on the St. Paul riverfront. That same month President Bill Clinton (1946–) signed a bill giving Schulz the Congressional Gold Medal. In

2002 an exhibition entitled “Speak Softly and Carry a Beagle: The Art of Charles Schulz” was held at the Norman Rockwell Museum in Stockbridge, Massachusetts. Also in 2002, it was announced that the proposed Charles M. Schulz Museum and Research Center in Santa Rosa, California, would be completed in August 2003.

For More Information

Inge, M. Thomas. *Charles M. Schulz: Conversations*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 2000.

Johnson, Rheta Grimsley. *Good Grief: The Story of Charles M. Schulz*. 2nd rev. ed. Kansas City: Andrews and McMeel, 1995.

Schuman, Michael A. *Charles M. Schulz: Cartoonist and Creator of Peanuts*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2000.

Short, Robert L. *The Gospel According to Peanuts*. Richmond, VA: John Knox Press, 1964. Reprint, Louisville, KY: Westminster John Knox Press, 2000.

MARTIN SCORSESE

Born: November 17, 1942

Flushing, New York

American director and screenwriter

Martin Scorsese is a director and writer of highly personal films. While many of his works reflect his experience as an Italian American grow-

ing up in New York City, he has also made highly regarded movies of great works of literature.

His early years

Martin Scorsese was born on November 17, 1942, in Flushing, New York. He was the younger of two sons born to Charles and Catherine Scorsese of Sicilian descent. His father was a clothes presser, and his mother was a seamstress. Scorsese had asthma as a child, and he often spent time alone unable to participate in neighborhood activities. He was fascinated with movies and watched films on television, and his father took him to local theaters frequently while his healthier peers engaged in sports and more social activities. Scorsese was able to find in movies the thrills and excitement that did not exist for him in reality. At a young age he became an expert on the Hollywood movies of the 1940s and 1950s.

Originally, Scorsese wanted to become a priest. He attended a Catholic grade school and entered a junior seminary but left after one year. He then entered the Film School at New York University. Scorsese's *It's Not Just You Murray!* won the Producer's Guild Award for best student film in 1964. He also received awards for other short films that he made as an undergraduate.

Drew from own experience

After graduating, Scorsese remained at New York University as an instructor in basic film technique and criticism while beginning his career as a director. His first feature film, *Who's That Knocking at My Door*, was shown in 1969. It introduced the actor Harvey Keitel (1939–), who became a regular in Scors-

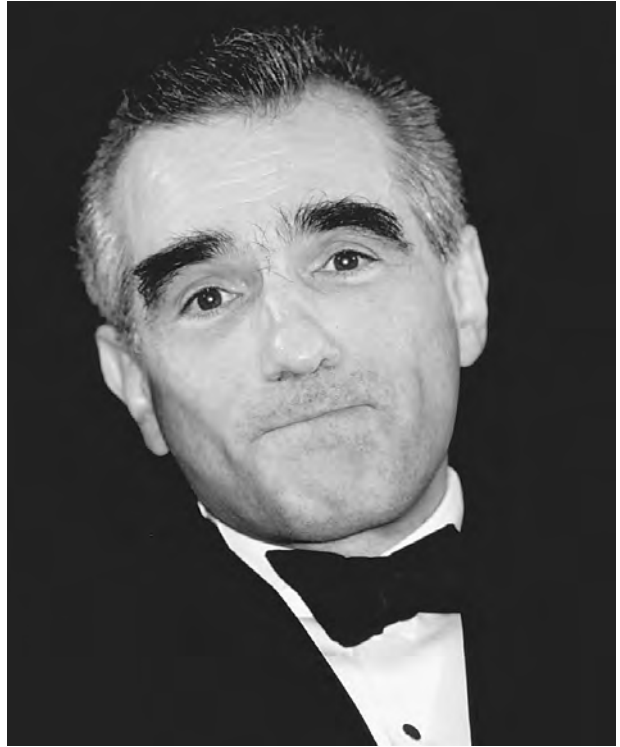
ese's works. The director also frequently casts his mother, Catherine, in his films, and Scorsese himself has acted in some as well.

Outraged by the killing of four Kent State student protesters of the Vietnam War (1960–75; a war in which the United States aided South Vietnam in an attempt to prevent a takeover by Communist North Vietnam), and of war in general, Scorsese and some of his students formed a group, the New York Cinetracks Collective, to film student protests against the conflict. The result was *Street Scenes*, shown at the 1970 New York Film Festival, which called for a withdrawal of U.S. troops from Vietnam as well as an end to the Reserve Officers' Training Corps (ROTC; an organization that trains college students for the military) on all U.S. college campuses.

Moves to Hollywood

In the early 1970s Scorsese moved to Hollywood, in Los Angeles, California, and met the producer and director Roger Corman, who asked him to direct a sequel to his *Bloody Mama*. Instead, Scorsese directed Corman's *Boxcar Bertha*, a 1972 gangster film similar to *Bonnie and Clyde*. According to Ephraim Katz in *The Film Encyclopedia*, *Boxcar Bertha* "gave the young director the opportunity to work within the Hollywood system and paved the way to his phenomenal [extraordinary] rise in the coming years."

Next on the filmmaker's career path was a return to familiar turf in *Mean Streets*, a 1973 release about a young Italian American trying to get by in a tough environment. Emphasizing character development over plot, *Mean Streets* featured a style of quick cuts that Scorsese used in later works. It also marked the director's first creative pairing with the



Martin Scorsese.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

actor Robert De Niro (1943–), whom Scorsese had grown up with in the Little Italy section of New York City. Their work together evolved into one of the most successful director and actor partnerships in modern film.

Ventures into new areas

Scorsese also began directing documentaries (films that follow real people and real events) in the 1970s. These included *Italianamerican*, a profile of his parents released in 1974, and *American Boy*, a 1978 account of a friend who had immersed himself in the drug culture of the 1960s. He veered away from his usual movie themes with *Alice*

Doesn't Live Here Anymore in 1975, a film about a widowed mother trying to find herself in Arizona. Scorsese followed with his first major hit, *Taxi Driver* (1976). *Taxi Driver* was awarded the International Grand Prize at the Cannes Film Festival. The director's nostalgic (remembering in a sentimental way) look at his city after World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis power: Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States), called *New York, New York* proved a critical failure in 1977, despite having the star power of Robert De Niro and Liza Minnelli (1946–). Scorsese became depressed as well as physically ill and required hospitalization following the making of this film.

Scorsese returned to documentaries in the late 1970s by directing a film of the final concert of the rock group the Band entitled *The Last Waltz*. De Niro convinced Scorsese to direct *Raging Bull*, a saga of the boxer Jake LaMotta (1922–). The movie earned Scorsese the National Society of Film Critics Award for Best Director, as well as his first Academy Award nomination. *Raging Bull* was later named the best film of the decade in a movie critics' poll. *The King of Comedy*, a 1983 film about a failed comic who kidnaps a famous talk-show host, was one of Scorsese's less successful efforts. It featured Robert De Niro and Jerry Lewis (1935–). Praises came his way again for his direction of *After Hours*, an unusual comedy about a mild-mannered New York City resident who gets involved in a series of late-night mishaps. Scorsese was honored with the Best Director Award at the Cannes Film Festival for this effort.

Box-office success greeted Scorsese's *The Color of Money* in 1986, a sequel to *The Hus-*

bler starring Paul Newman (1925–). It represented one of Scorsese's few big-budget productions up to that time. Certain religious groups were outraged by his next release, 1988's *The Last Temptation of Christ*, which dealt with an alternative interpretation of Jesus' acceptance of his role on earth.

Scorsese returned to more familiar cinematic ground in 1990 with *Goodfellas*, a violent tale of Mafia (organized crime) hoodlums in New York City that earned him Best Director Awards from the National Society of Film Critics, New York Film Critics, and Los Angeles Film Critics.

Showed versatility with period piece

Scorsese surprised the film community by his filming of *Age of Innocence*, the Edith Wharton (1862–1937) novel set in nineteenth-century New York City. "I had the script in my mind for two years and wrote it in two and half weeks," Scorsese told the magazine *Interview* about the film in 1993. Richly produced and slowly paced, it resembled nothing in Scorsese's directorial past. However, Scorsese jumped back to modern times with a tale of greed and deception in Las Vegas with his 1995 release, *Casino*. Scorsese's next film, *Kundun*, the story of Tibet's exiled spiritual leader, the Dalai Lama (1935–), was released in September 1997.

Scorsese showed his support of film history in 1990 by becoming president of the Film Foundation, an organization dedicated to film preservation. He has also been very active in promoting independent filmmakers. In 1994 became a member of the advisory board for the Independent Film Channel on cable television. The American Film Institute awarded Scorsese its 1997 Life Achievement

Award. In the same year he was awarded the Wexner Prize for originality in the arts. In 2001, because of his efforts to preserve old films, Scorsese was honored as the first person to receive the award for preservation by the International Federation of Film Archives.

Scorsese has directed twenty feature films and documentaries spanning four decades. He has also written a number of screenplays since his first film was released in 1968. His work is often rooted in his life experience of an Italian American Catholic heritage. The director's success can be attributed to his keen insight into human nature and his ability to use that insight to create many of the film industry's most memorable characters.

For More Information

Brunette, Peter, ed. *Martin Scorsese: Interviews*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 1999.

Dougan, Andy. *Martin Scorsese*. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1998.

Ehrenstein, David. *The Scorsese Picture: The Art and Life of Martin Scorsese*. New York: Carol Pub. Group, 1992.

Kelly, Mary Pat. *Martin Scorsese: A Journey*. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1991.

Scorsese, Martin. *Scorsese on Scorsese*. Boston: Faber and Faber, 1990.

WALTER SCOTT

Born: August 15, 1771
Edinburgh, Scotland

Died: September 21, 1832

Abbotsford, Scotland

Scottish author

The Scottish novelist and poet Sir Walter Scott is recognized as the master of the historical novel. He was one of the most influential authors of modern times.

Early life

Walter Scott was born in Edinburgh, Scotland, on August 15, 1771, the son of a lawyer with a long family tradition in law. By birth Scott was connected with both the rising middle class of Britain and the aristocratic (ruling class) Scottish heritage then passing into history. As a child, Scott battled polio, a disease that attacks children and impairs their development. Despite the ailment, Scott did enjoy a relatively active and happy childhood. During these years he developed a deep interest in literature and reading, especially the folk tales and legends of his native Scotland.

Scott was educated at Edinburgh University and prepared for a career in law, but his true passions lay in history and literature. During his years at the university, he read widely in English and Continental literatures, particularly medieval and Renaissance romances from the fourteenth to seventeenth centuries. He also enjoyed German romantic poetry and fiction, and the narrative folk poems known as ballads.

Translations and poetry

From these intense interests Scott's earliest publications developed: a translation of



Walter Scott.

J. W. von Goethe's (1749–1832) play *Götz von Berlichingen* (1799) and other translations from German; *Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border* (1802–1803), a collection of ballads that generated great interest in folk poetry; and a succession of narrative poems, mainly of historical action. These poems—including *The Lay of the Last Minstrel* (1805), *Marmion* (1808), and *The Lady of the Lake* (1810)—became best sellers, and Scott established his first literary reputation as a poet of the romantic school, an artistic movement developed in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries.

During these years Scott also pursued a legal career, rising to the official position of

clerk of the Court of Session. His enormous energies allowed him to engage in scholarly and journalistic activities. His edition and biography of John Dryden (1631–1700), the English poet and dramatist, published in 1808, remains of value. His politically motivated founding of the *Quarterly Review*, a literary journal, helped make Edinburgh the most influential center of British intellectual life outside London. In these years Scott also began to create an estate, Abbotsford. He modeled its furnishings and architecture on the traditions of the medieval era (c. 470–1470 C.E., also known as the Middle Ages).

Waverley novels

When sales of Scott's verse narrative *Rokeby* (1813) declined and a new poet, Lord Byron (1788–1824), appeared on the literary scene, Scott began to develop another of his many talents. Picking up the fragment of a novel he had begun in 1805, he tried his hand at fiction, and his most fully characteristic novel, *Waverley* (1814), resulted. As its subtitle, *'Tis Sixty Years Since*, established, *Waverley* was a historical novel about the 1745 rebellion to restore the Stuart line to the British throne. By leading a young and foolish Englishman through a wide range of Scottish classes, political factions (rival groups), and cultural modes, Scott built up a substantial picture of an entire nation's life at a dramatic historical period.

The success of *Waverley* established Scott in the career of a novelist, but it did not establish his name in that role. Unwilling to invest his career in fiction, he had published *Waverley* anonymously (without the author's name). Finding that the mask of anonymity had stimulated public interest, Scott signed

his later novels “by the Author of Waverley.” This signature became his trademark, the novels bearing it being called the “Waverley” novels. The Waverley novels exercised enormous fascination not only for Scots and Englishmen but also throughout Europe. These novels provided the characters and plots for countless stories, plays, and operas, the most famous of which is Gaetano Donizetti’s (1797–1848) opera *Lucia di Lammermoor*.

Scott’s achievement as a novelist can best be summarized by grouping his novels according to their topics and settings. His first successes were largely in the realm of Scottish history. In the order of their chronological setting (date in which the story takes place), the Scottish novels are *Castle Dangerous* (1832) and *The Fair Maid of Perth* (1828), both set in the fourteenth century; *The Monastery* and its sequel *The Abbot* (both 1820), set during the sixteenth century’s religious upheavals; *A Legend of Montrose* (1819) and *Old Mortality* (1816), which deal with the campaigns of the seventeenth-century civil wars; and a series of novels of the Jacobite (Stuart) rebellions of the eighteenth century—*Rob Roy* (1817), *Waverley*, and *Redgauntlet* (1824). Other Scottish novels indirectly related to historical themes are *The Black Dwarf* (1816), *The Heart of Midlothian* (1818), *The Bride of Lammermoor* (1819), and *The Pirate* (1822). Scott also wrote a group of novels set in his own times: *Guy Mannering* (1815), *The Antiquary* (1816), and *St. Ronan’s Well* (1824).

English novels

Scott, at a critical point of his career, turned to English history for his subject matter. Critics generally agree that the English

(and Continental—those of Europe) novels, mainly set in medieval times, are inferior, but they include Scott’s most lasting popular works. He began with *Ivanhoe* (1820) and then wrote three other novels set in the period of the Crusades: *The Talisman* (1825), *The Betrothed* (1825), and *Count Robert of Paris* (1832). *Quentin Durward* (1823) and *Anne of Geierstein* (1829) deal with the later Middle Ages, and the Renaissance is represented by *Kenilworth* (1821) and *The Fortunes of Nigel* (1822).

So massive a literary output cannot be reduced to broad generalizations. Most critics and readers seem to prefer Scott’s early novels. On the whole, Scott’s work is flawed by overly emotional writing, but his novels command the power to put modern readers in touch with men of the past.

Scott’s later years were clouded by illness, throughout which he continued to write. He spent the energies of his last years trying to write enough to recover honorably from the bankruptcy of a publishing firm in which he had invested heavily. He died in Abbotsford, Scotland, on September 21, 1832.

For More Information

Lockhart, J. G. *Life of Sir Walter Scott*. New York, T. Y. Crowell & Co., 1870. Reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1983.

Sutherland, John. *The Life of Walter Scott: A Critical Biography*. Cambridge, MA: Blackwell, 1995.

Todd, William B., and Ann Bowden. *Sir Walter Scott: A Bibliographical History, 1796–1832*. New Castle, DE: Oak Knoll Press, 1998.

HAILE SELASSIE

Born: July 23, 1892

Near Harar, Ethiopia

Died: August 27, 1975

Addis Ababa, Ethiopia

Ethiopian emperor

Haile Selassie was an emperor of Ethiopia whose influence as an African leader far surpassed the boundaries of his country. Although his popularity declined near the end of his sixty-year reign, Selassie remains a key figure in turning Ethiopia into a modern civilization.

Childhood

Haile Selassie was born Tafari Makonnen on July 23, 1892, the son of Ras Makonnen, a cousin and close friend of Emperor Menilek II. Baptized Lij Tafari, he is believed to be a direct descendant of King Solomon and the Queen of Sheba, two ancient rulers from the tenth century B.C.E. Raised as a Christian, Tafari was educated by private European tutors.

Haile Selassie spent his youth at the imperial court (court of the emperor) of Addis Ababa, Ethiopia. Surrounded by constant political plots, he learned much about the wielding of power. Menilek no doubt recognized Tafari's capacity for hard work, his excellent memory, and his mastery of detail. The emperor rewarded the youth's intellectual and personal capabilities by appointing him, at the age of fourteen, the governor of Gara Muleta in the province of Harar. When he was twenty, the emperor appointed him *dejazmatch* (commander) of the extensive province of Sidamo.

Regent and Emperor

Upon the death of Menilek in 1913, his grandson, Lij Yasu, succeeded to (gained) the throne. Yasu's apparent conversion to the religion of Islam alienated the national Christian church and gave its favor to the opposition movement led by Ras Tafari (as Haile Selassie was now named). The movement joined noblemen and high church officials in stripping Yasu of the throne in 1916. Zawditu, the daughter of Menilek, then became empress, with Ras Tafari appointed regent (acting ruler while the empress was away) and heir to the throne.

Throughout the regency the empress, conservative in nature and more concerned with religion than politics, served as opposition to Ras Tafari's rising interest in turning the country into a more modern nation. The result was an uneasy decade-long agreement between conservative and reforming forces (forces looking to make social improvements).

In 1926 Tafari took control of the army, an action that made him strong enough to assume the title of *negus* (king). Assuming this title was made possible, in part, by his success in international affairs, namely the admission of Ethiopia in 1923 to the League of Nations, a multinational organization aimed at world peace following World War I (1914–1918; a war fought mostly in Europe involving most countries on that continent and the United States). When Zawditu died in April 1930, Tafari demanded the title *negasa negast* (king of kings) and took complete control of the government with the throne name of Haile Selassie I ("Power of the Trinity").

Italian invasion

In 1931 the new emperor began to develop a written constitution (a system of basic laws of a country) to symbolize his interest in modernization and intention to increase the power of the government, which had been weakening since the death of Menilek. Haile Selassie's efforts were cut short, however, when Benito Mussolini's (1883–1945) Italy invaded the country in 1935. The Italian military used superior weaponry, airplanes, and poison gas to crush the ill-fated resistance led by the emperor. After the invasion, a fascist regime (a country under the control of an all-powerful ruler) occupied the country and marked the first loss of national independence in recorded Ethiopian history. In 1936 Haile Selassie went into exile, meaning he was forced out of the country. While in England he unsuccessfully went to the League of Nations for help.

In early 1941 British forces, aided by the heroic Ethiopian resistance, freed the country from Italian control, enabling Haile Selassie to triumphantly reenter his capital in May. The Italian colonial administration, backed by force and with a vastly improved road network, meant that the emperor returned to find a great deal of his government's independence had been destroyed, leaving him in certain ways stronger than before he left.

Throughout the next decade he rebuilt the administration; improved the army; passed legislation to regulate the government, church, and financial system; and further extended his control of the provinces (government territories) by crushing uprisings in Gojjam and Tigre. But in general the emperor had gradually grown more cautious, and he allowed few new leaders into his government.



Haile Selassie.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

In the 1950s Haile Selassie worked to absorb into Ethiopia the important Red Sea province of Eritrea (this was accomplished in 1962). Later he founded the University College of Addis Ababa, and welcomed home many Ethiopian college graduates from abroad. His Silver Jubilee (celebration of twenty-five years in power) in 1955 served as the occasion to present a revised constitution, followed in 1957 by the first general election. Haile Selassie's continued work to hold political balance between several major politicians as well as his efforts to shut out new politicians who still found few places in government, eventually led oppos-

ing elements to attempt a government coup (takeover) in December 1960. The coup failed, but it gave a short and violent message to the unchanging Ethiopian politics and hinted of future possibilities.

Pan-African leader

In the 1960s the emperor was clearly recognized as a major force in the pan-African movement (a movement dedicated to a united Africa), demonstrating his remarkable capacity for adapting to changing circumstances. It was a great personal triumph for him when, in 1963, the newly founded Organization of African Unity established its headquarters in Addis Ababa. Unlike other African leaders, Haile Selassie, of course, had not had to struggle once in office to prove his legitimate authority to his people. Rather, his control of government for more than forty years had given him enough time to demonstrate his strength.

By 1970 the emperor had slowly withdrawn from many day-to-day workings of the government and had become increasingly involved with foreign affairs. He probably made more state visits than any other head of state, enjoying such trips for their own sake even when they had little practical use. To him foreign relations brought admiration from around the world.

At home Haile Selassie showed more caution than ever in his approach to modernization. Though warm to Western advancements, throughout his long reign he never advanced faster than what was agreed upon among his peers. However, by his fortieth year in power he appeared to be more concerned with adjusting to change than with enacting change himself.

A famine, or devastating shortage of food, in Wello province in 1973 seriously hurt the reputation of Selassie's leadership. With a strain on the nation, Selassie was forced to abdicate (step down from power) on September 13, 1974. The eighty-year-old emperor Selassie spent his final year of life under house arrest (restricted to one's house by court order). His death was announced on August 27, 1975. The man who led Ethiopia for sixty years—through some of the nation's darkest times—did not even have a funeral service. The exact location of his grave has never been revealed.

For More Information

- Selassie, Haile, Emperor of Ethiopia. *My Life and Ethiopia's Progress, 1892–1937: The Autobiography of Emperor Haile Selassie I*. Edited by Edward Ullendorff. Oxford, England: Oxford University Press, 1976.
- Marcus, Harold G. *Haile Selassie I: The Formative Years, 1892–1936*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1987.
- Mosley, Leonard. *Haile Selassie: The Conquering Lion*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall, 1964.
- Sandford, Christine. *The Lion of Judah Hath Prevailed*. London: J. M. Dent, 1955. Reprint, Chicago: Research Associates School Times Publications, 1998.

SELENA

Born: April 16, 1971
Lake Jackson, Texas
Died: March 31, 1995
Corpus Christi, Texas
Hispanic American singer

Often called the “Mexican Madonna,” Selena used her talent and voice to become one of popular music’s fastest rising stars. Although she was murdered very early in her career, she brought great exposure to Tejano, or Tex-Mex, music.

A musical family

Selena Quintanilla-Perez was born on April 16, 1971, in Lake Jackson, Texas. Her parents were Abraham Jr. and Marcella Quintanilla. Her father had led a band in the 1950s and 1960s that played early rock and roll songs mixed with traditional Mexican music. This music, later called Tejano music, would become very popular throughout the southwest United States and Mexico. Abraham eventually gave up his music career to start a family.

Selena was the youngest of the three Quintanilla children. She attended elementary school in Lake Jackson, a small town about fifty-five miles south of Houston, Texas. When she was six years old, her father saw her talent. He was teaching her older brother, Abraham III, to play guitar when Selena began to sing. The children formed a family band. They practiced almost every day.

“Selena and the Boys”

In 1980 Selena’s father opened a restaurant. The family band, called Selena y Los Dinos, would play there on weekends and at weddings and parties. Her father began to write original Spanish-language songs for the band to perform. Since Selena’s first language was English, she had to learn the words to the Spanish-language songs syllable by syllable. They had many local fans,

but the family restaurant failed and closed down. Her father moved the family to his hometown of Corpus Christi, Texas, to start over again.

Traveling all over the state, the band continued to perform their music. The concert touring paid off when the band opened for a popular Tejano act called Mazz. At age eleven, Selena took the stage by storm and the crowd loved her. At this time, Selena focused on her music but often missed classes and stopped going to school for good when she was in the eighth grade. To keep up with her schooling, she took courses through the American School in Chicago. She eventually earned her General Education Diploma (GED) in 1989, which is the same as earning a high school diploma.

Early recordings

Selena took some time out from touring to record music. For Corpus Christi’s Freddie label, Selena recorded *Mis Primeras Grabaciones* in 1984. Freddie was one of the oldest and most established Spanish-language record companies in Texas. The album and its only single, “Ya Se Va,” did not sell well. Switching to Cara and Manny record labels, Selena’s albums did not sell much better. Living in a van, the band continued to tour by opening for larger Tejano acts in the southwest United States.

For larger and larger audiences, the band learned to play many different styles of music. They played rhythm-and-blues-based music in larger cities. They played more traditional Tejano music in small Texas towns. In 1988 Selena was popular enough that she was voted the female artist of the year at the Tejano Music Awards. She would win this



Selena.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

award again for the next seven years. Her popularity increased every year.

Growing success

In 1989 Selena joined EMI Records. She suddenly had a major record company supporting her. José Behar, the head of the company's new Latin music division, knew that she could appeal to a very wide audience, not just Tejano fans. In 1991 her song with Alvaro Torres, called "Buenos Amigos," became a hit. The song went to number one on *Billboard's* Latin chart and introduced her to audiences throughout the United States. With her next hit song, "Donde Quiero Que Estes," Selena

continued to grow in popularity and reach wider and wider markets for her music.

The early 1990s included many bright spots in Selena's music and personal life. On April 2, 1992, Selena married twenty-two-year-old Christopher Perez. He was the lead guitarist in her band. Together they shared in the success and in Selena's growing popularity, particularly in Mexico. Her father was now writing more international-sounding songs for her. These new songs were not only popular in Mexico but also began to be heard throughout the United States and in South and Central America. The size of the audiences at her shows swelled. In February 1994 more than sixty thousand people saw her perform in Houston. In March 1994 her album *Selena Live* won a Grammy Award for the best Mexican American album.

Selena's growing fame also increased record sales. In July 1994 Selena released *Amor Prohibido*. The album would sell more than one million copies. It was the top selling Latin album of that year. It also was named the Tejano Music Award's album of the year.

English-language success

Selena was often compared with other English-language artists such as Madonna (1958–), Janet Jackson (1966–), and Mariah Carey (1969–). She was eager to make an album in her first language so that she could have the same kind of success that these artists had. In December 1993 Selena was moved to a record company that made mostly English-language records. She began recording English-language songs for a new album and continued performing.

On March 31, 1995, Selena was shot and killed by the president of her fan club, Yolanda

Saldívar (1960–). Millions mourned her death and with this attention she became even more famous. *Dreaming of You*, the album released after her death in 1996, contained five songs sung in English. It also contained a number of traditional Tejano songs. The album was a huge hit and sold more than a million copies. It was the wide success that Selena had always hoped for. The album also introduced Tejano music to millions of new fans. At the Houston Astrodome, a place she often performed, she was honored with a memorial concert. A movie was made about her life, starring Jennifer Lopez (1970–), a year later.

For More Information

Arrarás, María Celeste. *Selena's Secret: The Revealing Story Behind Her Tragic Death*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1997.

Jones, Veda Boyd. *Selena*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1999.

Marvis, Barbara J. *Selena*. Childs, MD: Mitchell Lane, 1998.

Wheeler, Jill C. *Selena: The Queen of Tejano*. Edina, MN: Abdo & Daughters, 1996.

SEQUOYAH

Born: c. 1770

Taskigi, Tennessee

Died: August 1843

Tamaulipas, Mexico

Native American scholar and linguist

Sequoyah, Cherokee scholar, is the only known Native American to have created an alphabet for his tribe. This

advance helped thousands of Cherokee to become literate (able to read and write).

Early life

Sequoyah was born at the Cherokee village of Taskigi in Tennessee. His father probably was Nathaniel Gist, a trader. His mother was part Cherokee and was abandoned by her husband before the birth of Sequoyah. He used his Cherokee name until he approached manhood, when he took the name George Guess (as he understood his father's last name to be).

Sees need for written communication

A hunter and fur trader until a crippling hunting accident, Sequoyah became an excellent silversmith (maker of products containing silver). As an adult, he had contact with white people that made him curious about "talking leaves," as he called books. He believed that if the Cherokees had a system for gathering and passing on written information, it would help them keep their independence from white people. In 1809 he decided to master this secret and to apply it to his own language. After a dozen years of ridicule and insults, he invented a Cherokee alphabet of eighty-five or eighty-six characters that allowed every sound used in Cherokee communication to be written down.

In 1821 Sequoyah demonstrated his invention before the Cherokee council, which approved his work. Within two years, thousands of Cherokee had mastered the set of symbols, an advance that led to the printing of books in the Cherokee language as well as some newspapers printed partly in Cherokee.



Sequoyah.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Helps spread knowledge

In 1823 Sequoyah went to Arkansas to teach his alphabet to the Cherokee who already had moved westward, and he moved with them to Oklahoma in 1828. He became somewhat active in tribal politics and was a Cherokee representative to Washington, D.C., in 1828. With his alphabet a success, Sequoyah devoted much of his time to studying other tribal languages in a search for common elements. His tribe recognized the importance of his contribution when, in 1841, it voted him an allowance, which became an annuity (annual payment) of three hundred dollars.

Early in 1843 Sequoyah became interested in finding the part of the Cherokee nation that had reportedly moved west of the Mississippi River prior to the American Revolution (1775–83; when the American colonies fought for their independence from British rule). His journey led him westward and southward. He died in August 1843, possibly in the state of Tamaulipas in Mexico.

Sequoyah was honored by the state of Oklahoma, which placed a statue of him in Statuary Hall of the National Capitol. Also, a redwood tree, the Sequoia, was named in his honor, as was the Sequoia National Park.

For More Information

- Conley, Robert J. *Sequoyah*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 2002.
- Hoig, Stan. *Sequoyah: The Cherokee Genius*. Oklahoma City: Oklahoma Historical Society, 1995.
- Klausner, Janet. *Sequoyah's Gift: A Portrait of the Cherokee Leader*. New York: Harper-Collins, 1993.
- Shumate, Jane. *Sequoyah: Inventor of the Cherokee Alphabet*. New York: Chelsea House, 1994.

WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

Born: April 23, 1564
Stratford-upon-Avon, England
Died: April 23, 1616
Stratford-upon-Avon, England
English dramatist and poet

The English playwright, poet, and actor William Shakespeare was a popular dramatist. He was born six years after Queen Elizabeth I (1533–1603) ascended the throne, in the height of the English Renaissance. He found in the theater of London a medium just coming into its own and an audience eager to reward talents of the sort he possessed. He is generally acknowledged to be the greatest of English writers and one of the most extraordinary creators in human history.

Early life

William Shakespeare was born on April 23, 1564, in Stratford-upon-Avon, England. His mother, Mary Arden, was the daughter of a wealthy landowner from a neighboring village. His father, John, was a maker of gloves and a trader in farm produce. John also held a number of responsible positions in Stratford's government and served as mayor in 1569.

Though no personal documents survive from Shakespeare's school years, he probably attended the Stratford grammar school and studied the classics, Latin grammar and literature. It is believed that he had to discontinue his education at about thirteen in order to financially help his father. At eighteen he married Ann Hathaway. They had three children, Susanna, Hamnet, and Judith.

There are no records of Shakespeare's activities between 1585 and 1592. Some have speculated (guessed) that he was a traveling actor or a country schoolmaster. The earliest surviving mention of his career in London, England, is a jealous attack by Robert Greene, a playwright, which indicates that Shakespeare had already established

himself in the capital. It is hard to believe that even Shakespeare could have shown the mastery evident in his plays without several years of apprenticeship (the period of time a person works to learn a skill).

Early comedies

Three early comedies demonstrate that Shakespeare had learned to fuse conventional characters with convincing representations of the human life he knew. Shakespeare's first play is probably *The Comedy of Errors* (1590). Most acknowledge it as a brilliant and intricate farce (a humorous piece of work with a story unlikely to happen in real life) involving two sets of identical twins. The plot of his next comedy, *The Two Gentlemen of Verona* (1591) revolves around a faithful girl who educates her fickle (inconsistent) lover. It has romantic woods, a girl dressed as a boy, sudden changes, music, and happy marriages at the end. The last of the first comedies, *Love's Labour's Lost* (1593), deals with three young men who attempt to withdraw from the world and women for three years to study in their king's school. They quickly surrender to a group of young ladies who come to live nearby.

Early history plays and first tragedy

Though little read and performed today, Shakespeare's first plays in the popular history genre (particular style) are equally ambitious and impressive. *Henry VI* (1592), which is performed in three parts, and *Richard III* (1594) form an epic (story of heroic figures). They deal with the tumultuous (disorderly, agitating) events of English history between the death of Henry V (1387–1422) in 1422 and Henry VII (1457–1509) assuming the



William Shakespeare.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

throne in 1485, which began the period of stability maintained by Queen Elizabeth I (1533–1603). Nothing so ambitious as this monumental sequence had ever before been attempted in an English play.

Shakespeare's first tragedy, *Titus Andronicus* (1593), reveals similar ambition. It is recognized as a brilliant and successful piece in the tradition of the revenge play where someone tries to punish someone for a wrong that was done.

Nondramatic works

The theaters were closed because of plague (a bacteria-caused disease that spreads

quickly and can cause death) during much of 1593 and 1594. At this time Shakespeare wrote two narrative poems for the Earl of Southampton. Both the seriocomic (both happy and sad) *Venus and Adonis* and the tragic *Rape of Lucrece* are based on the Renaissance traditions of myth and symbolism.

Shakespeare's most famous poems are the 154 sonnets. They were probably composed in this period but were not published until 1609. Sonnets are fourteen-line poems with a fixed rhyme scheme. Though they often suggest autobiographical revelation (the discovery or realization in oneself), the sonnets cannot be proved to be any less fictional than the plays.

The Lord Chamberlain's Men

In 1594 Shakespeare became principal writer for the successful Lord Chamberlain's Men in London. This was one of the two leading companies of actors. He also became a regular actor in the company and a partner in the group of artist-managers who ran it. The company performed regularly in unroofed but elaborate theaters that seated up to three thousand people. The actors performed on a huge platform stage equipped with additional levels for performances. The audience sat on three sides or stood on the ground in front of the stage. In 1599 this group had the Globe Theater built on the south bank of the Thames River.

Shakespeare produced many plays for the company. They include the comedies *The Taming of the Shrew* (1594) about the taming of an ill-tempered, scolding woman and *A Midsummer Night's Dream* (1595), in which fairies and magic potions in moonlit woods become entangled with young lovers who

escape from a cruel society. These were followed by *The Merchant of Venice* (1596), *Much Ado about Nothing* (1598), *The Merry Wives of Windsor* (1599), and *As You Like It* (1600).

Shakespeare's tragedies of the period are among his most familiar plays: *Romeo and Juliet* (1596), *Julius Caesar* (1599), and *Hamlet* (1601). Although very different from each other, they share the setting of intense personal tragedy in a large world vividly populated by what seems like the whole range of humanity. Like most of his contemporaries in the theater, Shakespeare used the same techniques in writing comedies as tragedies. Politics are constantly present, and what is best in the protagonist (hero) is what does him in when he finds himself in conflict with the world.

Shakespeare, continuing his interest in the historical play, wrote *King John* (1596). Despite its one strong character it is a relatively weak play. His other epics range from *Richard II* (1595), through the two parts of *Henry IV* (1597), to *Henry V* (1599). These four plays pose disturbing questions about politics, particularly the difference between the man capable of ruling and the man worthy of doing so. They are not optimistic about man as a political animal.

The "problem plays"

Several plays produced at the end of Elizabeth's reign are often grouped as Shakespeare's "problem plays." They are not easily categorized as either tragedies or comedies. *All's Well That Ends Well* (1602) is a romantic comedy with qualities that seem bitter to many critics because it presents romantic relations between men and women in a harsh light. *Troilus and Cressida* (1602), is a bril-

liant, sardonic (skeptically humorous), and disillusioned piece on the Trojan War. *Measure for Measure* (1604) focuses on the link between political power and romantic desire.

King's Men and the late tragedies

Upon ascending to the throne in 1603, King James I (1566–1625) bestowed his patronage upon the Lord Chamberlain's Men, so that the flag of the King's Men now flew over the Globe. During his last decade in the theater Shakespeare was to write fewer but perhaps even finer plays. Almost all the greatest tragedies belong to this period, and they share several qualities. The heroes are dominated by passions that make their moral (having to do with right and wrong) status increasingly ambiguous (not clearly one thing or another) and their freedom increasingly constricted. In the end, what destroys the hero is what is best about him. Like the histories, the late tragedies continue to be felt as intensely relevant to the concerns of modern men.

Othello (1604) is concerned with trust and betrayal. In *King Lear* (1605) an aged king foolishly deprives his only loving daughter of her heritage in order to leave everything to her hypocritical (only pretending to have morals) and vicious sisters. *Macbeth* (1606) concentrates on the problems of evil and freedom. It mingles the supernatural with history, and makes a sympathetic hero of a murderer who sins against family and state.

Antony and Cleopatra and *Coriolanus* (both written in 1607 and 1608) embody Shakespeare's bitterest images of political life. *Antony and Cleopatra* sets the temptation of romantic desire against the call to Roman duty. *Coriolanus* pits a protagonist (hero) who cannot live with hypocrisy (pretending to

believe in something) against a society built on it. Both of these tragedies present ancient history with a vividness (intensity) that makes it seem contemporary.

The romances

A final group of plays takes a turn in a new direction. *Pericles* (1607), *Cymbeline* (1609), *The Winter's Tale* (1611), and *The Tempest* (1611) have a unique power to move and are in the realm of the highest art. *The Tempest* is the most popular and perhaps the finest of the group. In it Prospero and his daughter are shipwrecked on an island inhabited by supernatural creatures. Prospero rules the island with magic, but renounces (gives up) magic at the end. After the composition of *The Tempest* Shakespeare retired to Stratford. He returned to London to compose *Henry VIII* and *The Two Noble Kinsmen* in 1613. Neither seems to have fired his imagination. He died in Stratford-upon-Avon on April 23, 1616, at the age of fifty-two.

Shakespeare's work has continued to seem to each generation like its own most precious discovery. His value to his own age is suggested by the fact that two fellow actors performed the virtually unprecedented (never done before) act in 1623 of gathering his plays together and publishing them in the Folio edition. Without their efforts, since Shakespeare was apparently not interested in publication, many of the plays would not have survived.

For More Information

Bentley, Gerald E. *Shakespeare: A Biographical Handbook*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1961. Reprint, Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1986.

Chambers, Sir Edmund K. *William Shakespeare: A Study of Facts and Problems*. Oxford, England: Clarendon Press, 1930. Reprint, New York: Oxford University Press, 1988.

De Grazia, Margreta, and Stanley Wells, eds. *The Cambridge Companion to Shakespeare*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 2001.

Gollob, Herman. *Me and Shakespeare: Adventure with the Bard*. New York: Doubleday, 2002.

Schoenbaum, S. *William Shakespeare: A Compact Documentary Life*. Rev. ed. New York: Oxford University Press, 1987.

Southworth, John. *Shakespeare, The Player: A Life in the Theatre*. Stroud, Gloucestershire, England: Sutton, 2000.

GEORGE BERNARD SHAW

Born: July 26, 1856

Dublin, Ireland

Died: November 2, 1950

Ayot St. Lawrence, England

Irish playwright and critic

British playwright and critic George Bernard Shaw produced more than fifty plays and three volumes of music and drama criticism. Many critics consider him the greatest English dramatist since William Shakespeare (1564–1616).

Early years

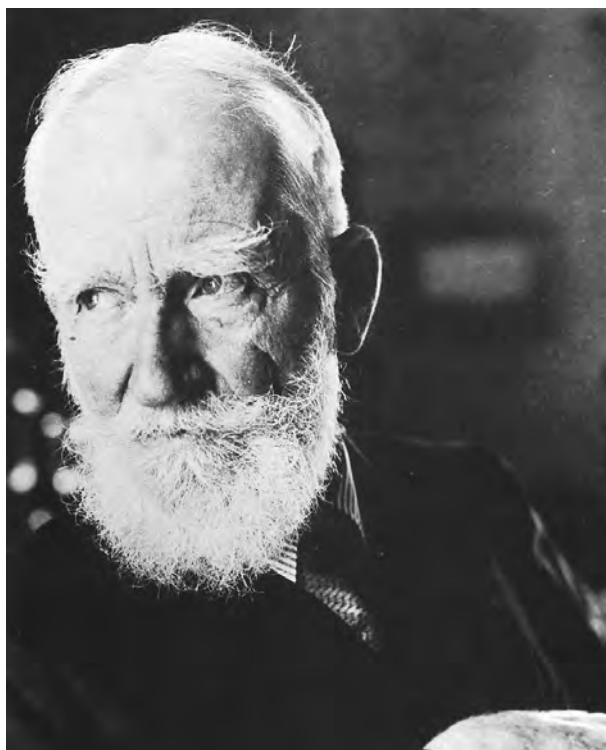
George Bernard Shaw was born in Dublin, Ireland, on July 26, 1856, the son of George Carr Shaw and Lucinda Elizabeth Gurly. His father was the co-owner of a corn mill and had a drinking problem. Shaw was tutored in classics by an uncle, and when he was ten years old, he entered the Wesleyan Connexional School in Dublin. Shaw hated school but loved reading and writing. He also learned a great deal about music and art from his mother, a music teacher and singer.

Shaw took a job as an office boy in 1871 at a monthly salary equal to \$4.50. He resigned in 1876 to join his mother and two sisters in London, England, where they ran a music school. At the age of sixteen Shaw had started writing criticism and reviews for Irish newspapers and magazines; in four years only one piece was accepted. Shaw continued to write criticism while supported by his mother; he also entertained the London society as a singer.

Different kinds of writing

Between 1876 and 1885 Shaw wrote five novels. *Immaturity*, the first, remained unpublished for fifty years, and the other four appeared in various magazines. *An Unsocial Socialist* (1884) was designed as part of a massive projected history of the entire social reform movement in England. *Cashel Byron's Profession* (1882) was produced in 1901 as the drama *The Admirable Bashville; or, Constancy Unrewarded*. *The Irrational Knot* was a description of modern marriage that was similar to Henrik Ibsen's (1828–1906) *A Doll's House*. It appeared in a magazine called *Our Corner*, as did *Love Among the Artists* (1887–88).

In 1879 Shaw had joined a socialist (one who believes in a society in which the means



George Bernard Shaw.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

of production are owned by the people) discussion group, and he joined the socialist Fabian Society in 1884. *Fabian Essays* (1887), edited by Shaw, discussed the importance of economics (the study of the production, distribution, and use of goods and services) and class structure. In 1882 two events completed Shaw's conversion to socialism: he heard a speech by Henry George, the American author of *Progress and Poverty*, and he read Karl Marx's (1818–1883) *Das Kapital*. In 1914 Shaw published *Common Sense about the War*, a criticism of the British government. *The Intelligent Woman's Guide to Capitalism and Socialism*, published in 1928, remains a major volume of socialist thought.

Between 1888 and 1894 Shaw wrote for newspapers and magazines as a music critic. At the end of this period, he began writing regularly for the *Saturday Review*; as a critic, he helped introduce Ibsen to the British public. Shaw's *Quintessence of Ibsenism* appeared in 1890, *The Sanity of Art* in 1895, and *The Perfect Wagnerite* in 1898. He married Charlotte Payne-Townshend, a fellow socialist, in 1898. She died in 1943.

Shaw's plays

Widowers' Houses, Shaw's first play, was produced in 1892. He identified this and his other early plays as "unpleasant." Shaw's first stage successes, *Arms and the Man* and *Candida*, were produced in 1894. *You Never Can Tell*, first produced in 1896 and not often performed, is Shaw's most underrated (not highly valued) comedy. The productions at the Royal Court Theater in London of the works of Shaw, Shakespeare, and Euripides (484–406 B.C.E.) between 1904 and 1907 increased Shaw's popularity; eleven of his plays received 701 performances.

Major Barbara (1905) is a drama of ideas, largely about poverty and capitalism (a system in which prices, production, and distribution of goods are determined by competition in a free market); like most of Shaw's drama, the play poses questions and finally contains messages or arguments. *Androcles and the Lion* (1911) discusses religion. *Heartbreak House* deals with the effects of World War I (1914–18; a war fought between the German-led Central Powers and the Allies: England, the United States, Italy, and other nations) on England; written between 1913 and 1916, it was first produced in 1920. Shaw's plays explored such topics as mar-

riage, parenthood, and education. Most of his plays after *Arms and the Man* begin with long essays that are often not directly related to the drama itself.

Shaw's popular success was coupled with growing critical respect. *Heartbreak House*, *Back to Methuselah* (1921), *Androcles and the Lion*, and *Saint Joan* (1923) are considered his best plays. Shaw was awarded the 1925 Nobel Prize for literature. He continued writing drama until 1947, when he completed *Buoyant Billions* at the age of ninety-one. He died in his home at Ayot St. Lawrence, England, on November 2, 1950.

For More Information

- Gibbs, A. M. *A Bernard Shaw Chronology*. New York: Palgrave, 2001.
- McCabe, Joseph. *George Bernard Shaw: A Critical Study*. New York: Haskell House Publishers, 1974.
- Ohmann, Richard M. *Shaw: The Style and the Man*. Middletown, CT: Wesleyan University Press, 1962.
- Peters, Sally. *Bernard Shaw: The Ascent of the Superman*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1996.

MARY SHELLEY

Born: August 30, 1797
London, England
Died: February 1, 1851
Bournemouth, England
English novelist

English novelist Mary Shelley is best known for writing *Frankenstein, or The Modern Prometheus* (1818) and for her marriage to the poet Percy Bysshe Shelley (1792–1822).

Early years

Mary Wollstonecraft Godwin was born on August 30, 1797, in London, England. She was the only daughter of Mary Wollstonecraft, the early feminist (one who works on behalf of women's rights) and author of *A Vindication of the Rights of Woman*, and William Godwin, the political writer and novelist, both of whom objected to the institution of marriage. Ten days after Mary's birth, Wollstonecraft died from complications, leaving Godwin, a self-absorbed intellectual, to care for both Mary and Fanny Imlay, Wollstonecraft's daughter from an earlier relationship.

Mary's home life improved little when four years later her father married his next-door neighbor, Mary Jane Clairmont, who already had two children of her own. The new Mrs. Godwin favored her own children over the daughters of the celebrated Wollstonecraft, and Mary was often alone and unhappy. She was not formally educated, but she read many of her mother's books and absorbed the intellectual atmosphere created by her father and such visitors as the poet Samuel Taylor Coleridge (1772–1834). Young Mary's favorite retreat was Wollstonecraft's grave in the St. Pancras churchyard, where she went to read and write, and eventually, to meet her lover, Percy Shelley (1792–1822).

Life with Shelley

An admirer of Godwin, Percy Shelley visited the author's home and briefly met Mary when she was fourteen, but their attraction did not take hold until a meeting two years later. Shelley, twenty-two, was married, and his wife was expecting their second child, but he and Mary, like Godwin and Wollstonecraft, believed that ties of the heart were more important than legal ones. In July 1814, one month before her seventeenth birthday, Mary ran away with Percy, and they spent the next few years traveling in Switzerland, Germany, and Italy. Percy's father, Sir Timothy Shelley, cut off his son's large allowance after the couple ran away together.

In 1816 Mary's half-sister Fanny committed suicide; weeks later, Percy's wife, Harriet, drowned herself. Mary and Percy were married in London in an unsuccessful attempt to gain custody of his two children by Harriet. Three of their own children died soon after birth, and Mary fell into a deep depression that did not improve even after the birth in 1819 of Percy Florence, her only surviving child. The Shelleys' marriage suffered, too, in the wake of their children's deaths, and Percy formed romantic attachments to other women.

Despite these difficult circumstances, Mary and Percy enjoyed a large group of friends, which included the poet Lord Byron (1788–1824) and the writer Leigh Hunt (1784–1859). They also maintained a schedule of very strict study—including classical and European literature, Greek, Latin, and Italian language, music and art—and other writing. During this period Mary completed *Frankenstein*, the story of a doctor who, while trying to discover the secret of life, steals bod-



Mary Shelley.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

ies from graves in an attempt to create life from the parts—but instead creates a monster.

Critical reaction to *Frankenstein*

While most early reviewers criticized what they considered the gruesome (inspiring horror) elements in *Frankenstein*, many praised the author's imagination and powers of description. In the later nineteenth century and throughout *Frankenstein* criticism, critics have searched for Percy Shelley's influence on the book. Scholars have also debated the value of the additional narratives that he encouraged his wife to write. While some have praised the novel's resulting three-part

structure, others have argued that these additions take away from and merely pad the story. Many have also noted the influence of Shelley's father's social views in the book; in addition, some critics claim to have found links to his fiction.

Mary Shelley's journal entries reveal that during 1816 and 1817, when *Frankenstein* was being written, she and her husband discussed the work many times. It is also known that in these years she and Shelley both read John Milton's (1608–1674) *Paradise Lost*, and that she was interested at this same time in Godwin's *Political Justice*, Thomas Paine's (1737–1809) *The Rights of Man*, and Aeschylus's (525–456 B.C.E.) *Prometheus Bound*. This is not to say that Mary Shelley borrowed her social and moral ideas from Paine, or from Shelley or Godwin. It is perfectly understandable that she shared the social thoughts of her father and her husband and that she wove these ideas, which were shared also by many of the enlightened English public during those years, into a pattern of her own making.

Life as a widow

The Shelleys were settled near Lenci, Italy, in 1822 when Percy Shelley drowned during a storm while sailing to meet Leigh Hunt and his wife. After a year in Italy, Mary returned to England for good with her son. After Percy's death Mary struggled to support herself and her child. Sir Timothy Shelley offered her some support, but he ordered that she keep the Shelley name out of print; thus, all her works were published without her name on them. Mary contributed a series of biographical and critical sketches to *Chamber's Cabinet Cyclopaedia* and published several short stories.

Mary Shelley also produced five more novels, which received negative criticism for being too wordy and having awkward plots. *The Last Man* (1826) is her best-known work after *Frankenstein*. This novel, in which she describes the destruction of the human race in the twenty-first century, is noted as an inventive description of the future and an early form of science fiction. *Valperga* (1823) and *The Fortunes of Perkin Warbeck* (1830) are historical novels that have received little attention from book critics, while *Lodore* (1835) and *Falkner* (1837), thought by many to be autobiographical (based on her own life), are often examined for clues to the lives of the Shelleys and their circle.

The Shelleys' situation improved when Sir Timothy increased Percy Florence's allowance with his coming of age in 1840, which allowed mother and son to travel in Italy and Germany; their journeys are recounted in *Rambles in Germany and Italy in 1840, 1842, and 1843* (1844). Too ill in her last few years to complete her most cherished project, a biography of her husband, Mary Shelley died at age fifty-three.

Mary Shelley's stories were collected and published after her death, as was *Mathilda*, a short novel that appeared for the first time in the 1950s. The story of a father and daughter's attraction, it has been viewed as a fictional treatment of her relationship with Godwin. The verse dramas *Proserpine* and *Midas* (1922) were written to accompany one of Percy Shelley's works and have earned mild praise for their poetry. Critics also admire Mary Shelley's nonfiction, including the readable, though now dated, travel volumes; the vigorous essays for *Chamber's Cabinet Cyclopaedia*; and her notes on her husband's poetry.

For More Information

- Bloom, Harold, ed. *Mary Shelley: Modern Critical Views*. New York: Chelsea House, 1985.
- Dunn, Jane. *Moon in Eclipse: A Life of Mary Shelley*. New York: St. Martin's, 1978.
- Seymour, Miranda. *Mary Shelley*. New York: Grove Press, 2000.
- Smith, Joanna M. *Mary Shelley*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1996.

PERCY SHELLEY

Born: September 4, 1792

Field Place, Sussex, England

Died: July 8, 1822

Viareggio, Italy

English poet

The English romantic poet Percy Shelley ranks as one of the greatest lyric poets in the history of English literature.

Early years

Percy Bysshe Shelley was born at Field Place near Horsham, Sussex, England, on August 4, 1792. He was the first son of a wealthy, country landowner. As a boy, Shelley felt harassed by his father. This abuse may have first sparked the flame of protest which, during his school days at Eton from 1804 until 1810, earned him the name of "Mad Shelley." At school, however, he proved himself to be a very capable and intelligent stu-



Percy Shelley.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

dent. He also began writing some short fiction pieces.

In the course of his first and only year at Oxford University, in England (1810–1811), Shelley and a friend Thomas Jefferson Hogg issued a pamphlet provocatively entitled “The Necessity of Atheism (the belief that there is no God).” Both students were expelled from the university. This event intensified Shelley’s rebelliousness against accepted notions of law and order, both in his private life and in government. In the summer of 1811 Shelley met and married Harriet Westbrook.

Shelley’s first poems

Shelley attempted to communicate his views on politics other topics in the poem “Queen Mab” (1813). Though an immature poem, nevertheless, it contained the germ of his mature philosophy: that throughout the cosmos there is “widely diffused / A spirit of activity and life,” an omnipresent (being everywhere) energy that, unless misguided by people’s lust for power, can lead humankind to paradise.

By the summer of 1814 Shelley had become closely involved with Mary Godwin (1797–1851). In late July Shelley left his wife and ran away to continental Europe with Godwin. In 1816, they married. The same year, Mary Shelley wrote *Frankenstein*.

“Alastor”

When Shelley returned to England, he was increasingly driven to the realization that paradise was not just around the corner. This may have prompted the writing of “Alastor, or the Spirit of Solitude” in December 1815. In this poem Shelley writes that poets are caught between the enticements of extreme idealism (visions for the improvement of humankind) and the awareness that the very nature of humans and the world prevents the achievement of this highest purpose.

Both Shelley’s “Hymn to Intellectual Beauty” and “Mont Blanc,” were planned in 1816, during a stay in Geneva, Switzerland, and make an impressive statement of his belief in an everlasting, compassionate “Spirit,” the hidden source of splendor and harmony in nature and of moral activity in humans.

“*The Revolt of Islam*”

The winter of 1816 and 1817 was a period of great emotional disturbance for Shelley. Harriet, his wife, died, presumably by suicide, in December. The courts refused to grant Shelley the custody of their two children. In addition, he was beginning to worry about his health. However, there were encouragements as well. Shelley was gaining some recognition as an original and powerful poet.

During the spring and summer of 1817, Shelley composed his most ambitious poem to that date, “*The Revolt of Islam*.” In this work the theme of love between man and woman was skillfully woven into the wider pattern of humankind’s love-inspired struggle for brotherhood. The work demonstrates that Shelley had now come to a mature insight into the complex relationship between good and evil. A person’s recognition of his or her boundaries is the first step to wisdom and inner liberty. Martyrdom does not put an end to hope, for it is a victory of the spirit and a vital source of inspiration.

“*Exile*” and “*Prometheus Unbound*”

In March 1818 Percy and Mary Shelley left England, never to return. The bulk of the poet’s output was produced in Italy in the course of the last four years of his short life. Though life in Italy had its obvious rewards, this period was by no means one of pure happiness for Shelley. He was increasingly anxious about his health. He was beginning to resent the social ostracism (shunning) that had made him an exile. The exile itself was at times hard to bear, even though the political and social situations in England were most unattractive. Finally, his son William died in June 1819. A note of despair can be perceived in some of his minor poems, such as the

“Stanzas Written in Dejection near Naples.” In “*Prometheus Unbound*” (1818–19), Shelley turned to myths (ancient stories that explain natural occurrences) to convey, in a more sensitive and complex way, the basic truth that had been expressed through the narrative technique of “*The Revolt of Islam*.”

Drama and social tracts

Like the other romantic poets, Shelley was aware of the limitations of poetry as a medium of mass communication. He, too, struggled to deliver his message to a larger audience. He experimented with stage drama in *The Cenci* (1819) a tragedy which illustrates the problems caused by humans’ lust for power, both physical and mental, in the sphere of domestic life.

Shelley’s interest, however, lay in wider issues, which he now began to tackle in satires (humorous pieces pointing out people’s weaknesses). He vented his social outrage in the stirring argument of *The Masque of Anarchy* (1819); in *Peter Bell the Third* (1819), a satire of the poet William Wordsworth (1770–1850); and in *Oedipus Tyrannus, or Swell-Foot the Tyrant* (1820), a mock tragedy on the royal British family.

In “*Hellas*” (1821), Shelley’s major political poem, *Hellas* celebrates the Greek war of liberation. It crowns a large series of minor poems in which Shelley, throughout his writing career, had hailed the spirit of liberty, not only among the oppressed classes of England but also among the oppressed nations of the world.

Final poems and prose works

Shelley’s concern with promoting the cause of freedom was genuine, but his per-

sonality found a more compatible outlet in his “visionary rhymes.” In his poems the almost mystical concepts of oneness and love, of poetry and brotherhood are expressed. Such themes remained the source of his inspiration to the last. As he was nearing his thirtieth year, he wrote with a more urgent yet less harsh sense of the unbridgeable gap between the ideal and the real. He movingly expressed this sense in “The Sensitive Plant” (1820) and in the poem that he composed on the death of John Keats (1795–1821), “Adonais” (1821).

Shelley’s *The Defence of Poetry* (1821) is one of the most eloquent prose assessments of the poet’s unique relation to the eternal. And, in 1822, he focused on the poet’s relation to earthly experience in *The Triumph of Life*. This work contains an impassioned condemnation of the corruption wrought by worldly life, whose “icy-cold stare” irresistibly obscures the “living flame” of imagination.

Shelley drowned in the Gulf of Spezia near Lerici, Italy, on July 8, 1822, shortly before his thirtieth birthday. He is regarded as one of the greatest English poets of the romantic age of art.

For More Information

Bornstein, George. *Yeats and Shelley*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1970.

Dowden, Edward. *The Life of Percy Bysshe Shelley*. London: K. Paul, Trench, and Company, 1886. Reprint, New York, Barnes & Noble, 1966.

Hohne, Horst. *In Search of Love: The Short and Troublesome Life and Work of Percy Bysshe Shelley*. New York: Peter Lang, 2000.

Hawkins, Desmond. *Shelley’s First Love*. Hamden, CT: Archon Books, 1992.

White, Newman Ivey. *Shelley*. New York: Knopf, 1940. Reprint, New York: Octagon Books, 1972.

BEVERLY SILLS

Born: May 25, 1929

Brooklyn, New York

American singer

Beverly Silles was a child performer, coloratura soprano (a light voice used in a very ornate type of singing), and operatic (in operas) superstar who retired from her performance career in 1980 to become general director of the New York City Opera Company.

Early years

Beverly Silles was born Belle Miriam Silverman in Brooklyn, New York, on May 25, 1929, during the era of Shirley Temple (1928–) and other child stars of the movies. Her father was an insurance salesman who wanted his daughter to become a teacher. Her mother had different plans, however. Silles was singing on the radio by age three. At the age of four she was a regular on a children’s Saturday morning radio program. At seven she sang in a movie and had already memorized twenty-two opera arias (solos). She continued to perform on radio shows and did laundry soap commercials, which got her the nickname “Bubbles.” She left

radio work at age twelve to pursue her love of opera.

After Sills graduated from grammar school she attended the Professional Children's School in New York City. By the time she was nineteen she had memorized between fifty and sixty operas. She studied voice privately with her lifelong associate Estelle Liebling and eventually achieved professional competence on the piano as well, studying with Paolo Gallico.

Billed as "the youngest prima donna in captivity," Sills joined a Gilbert and Sullivan touring company in 1945. Two years later she sang her first operatic role with the Philadelphia (Pennsylvania) Opera Company. She toured with several different small opera companies starting in 1948.

Sills made her debut with the New York City Opera on October 29, 1955, singing Rosalinde in *Die Fledermaus*. The critics loved her and predicted great success for her career. Eventually she would command a vast repertoire of one hundred roles, actively performing sixty of them in one hundred opera or concert appearances each year at the peak of her career. Her great memory allowed her not only to master her own enormous repertoire of roles but also to understand the other principal roles in the operas she performed. This ability earned her a reputation not only as a singer on the stage but as an actress as well.

Family life

In 1956 Sills married Peter Bulkeley Greenough, associate editor of the *Cleveland Plain Dealer*. She and her husband had two children. Their daughter was born hearing impaired and their son was developmentally



Beverly Sills.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

disabled. Their son had to be institutionalized (put in a hospital) when he was six due to the great amount of care he required. Sills carried two watches, one set to her son's schedule in the time zone where he lived, so that she could always know what he was doing. The tragedies with her children would lead Sills into philanthropic (helping others through work and donations) work later in her career.

Metropolitan Opera and Europe

On July 8, 1966, Sills sang Donna Anna in *Don Giovanni* with the Metropolitan Opera,

but her formal debut with the Metropolitan Opera did not actually occur until 1975. Sills was able to rise to the top of her profession before touring Europe. She finally did so in 1967, a guest of the Vienna State Opera. She went on to sing in Buenos Aires, Argentina; La Scala in Milan, Italy; and Covent Garden, London, England. She also performed in Naples, Italy; Berlin, Germany; and Paris, France.

On October 27, 1980, Sills gave her last performance. Opera critics said it was overdue, as her voice had been deteriorating (weakening) for some time due, in part, to health problems. The very next day she assumed the general directorship of the New York City Opera. She displayed great management skill and public relations talent, appearing on popular television programs and in other ways representing opera to a wide audience. She helped pull the New York City Opera out of both financial and public crises.

Sills wrote three autobiographies. She received honorary doctoral degrees from Harvard University, New York University, Temple University, the New England Conservatory, and the California Institute of the Arts. In 1973 she was awarded the Handel Medallion, New York City's highest cultural award.

In 1972 Sills added philanthropy to her list of careers, becoming the national chairman of the Mothers' March on Birth Defects. She continues to be a highly visible active public figure, promoting both operatic and philanthropic causes.

Retirement

In 1989 Sills formally retired and remained in quiet seclusion with her hus-

band for about five years. In 1994 she returned to public life as the chairwoman of the Lincoln Center for the Performing Arts. At this point in her life Sills says "I've done everything I set out to do . . . sung in every opera house I wanted to . . . to go on past the point where I should, I think would break my heart. I think my voice has served me very well."

For More Information

Paolucci, Bridget. *Beverly Sills*. New York: Chelsea House, 1990.

Sills, Beverly. *Bubbles: An Encore*. New York: Grosset & Dunlap, 1981.

Sills, Beverly, and Lawrence Linderman. *Beverly, an Autobiography*. New York: Bantam Books, 1987.

NEIL SIMON

Born: July 4, 1927

New York, New York

American playwright and writer

Pulitzer Prize-winning playwright Neil Simon is one of America's most productive and popular dramatists. His plays expose human weaknesses and make people laugh at themselves.

Early years

Marvin Neil Simon was born in the Bronx, in New York, on the Fourth of July in 1927. His father Irving, a garment salesman, disap-

peared from time to time, leaving his wife, Mamie, to support their two sons by working at a department store and by relying on family and friends. After his parents divorced, Simon lived with relatives in Forest Hills, New York. Simon received the nickname “Doc” as a child because he was always pretending to be a doctor, listening to people’s heartbeats with a toy stethoscope (an instrument used to listen to sounds inside the body). He also loved comedy films and was often thrown out of movie theaters for laughing too loudly.

Simon and his older brother Danny were very close. During their teens, they wrote and sold material to standup comedians and radio shows. It was his brother who encouraged him to pursue writing while in the United States Army Air Force Reserve program. Simon also attended college at this time. His childhood love of comedy stuck, and his writing was inspired by the work of his favorite comics—Robert Benchley (1889–1945) and Ring Lardner (1885–1933).

Writing for a living

After being discharged (let out) from the army, Simon got a job in Warner Brothers’ mailroom—thanks to his brother, who worked in the publicity department. They began working together again, and from 1947 to 1956 they wrote comedy for television shows starring Jackie Gleason (1916–1987) and Phil Silvers (1911–1985). Simon continued writing comedy after his brother quit to become a television director, and his work appeared on some of television’s top shows. The pleasure was fading, however, so he began writing plays in 1960.

Simon’s first play, *Come Blow Your Horn*, was a modest hit. It was followed shortly



Neil Simon.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

thereafter with *Barefoot in the Park*, which ran on Broadway for four years. His third play, *The Odd Couple*, introduced two famous characters, Felix and Oscar, two men with failing marriages who move in together to save money and find that they have the same problems living with each other as they did with their wives. Simon’s storylines usually presented conflicts between two people and were filled with funny one-liners.

Simon admitted that he often used personal experiences or those of his friends for material. *Come Blow Your Horn* was about two brothers who moved away from home and

shared an apartment (just as Simon and his brother had); *Barefoot in the Park* was the story of newlyweds adjusting to married life (similar to his own marriage); and of *The Odd Couple* Simon once commented, “[The story] happened to two guys I know—I couldn’t write a play about Welsh miners.” *The Odd Couple* had a two-year run on Broadway, won Simon his first Tony Award (an award given every year for achievement in the theater), and was adapted to television and film several times.

New approach to drama

In the 1970s Simon made an effort to add depth to his work by treating serious issues with comic touches. He presented works such as *The Last of the Red Hot Lovers*, the story of a married man in a mid-life crisis who has a series of affairs; *The Gingerbread Lady*, in which a one-time singer, who is now an alcoholic, struggles to make a comeback; and *The Prisoner of Second Avenue*, which witnesses the nervous breakdown of a recently fired business executive.

Simon continued to create characters who struggled to handle their feelings in difficult situations and who released tension with humor. He began to share more of himself and his life, including boyhood dreams of escaping from his family problems and the difficulty of coping with his wife’s terminal illness. During this period he wrote *The Sunshine Boys*, *The Good Doctor*, *California Suite*, and *Chapter Two*, whose main character, a widower, feels guilty over falling in love and remarrying, much as Simon had. He also wrote several screenplays, including *The Goodbye Girl*, which was nominated (put forward for consideration) for an Academy Award in 1977.

Even more personal works

Simon took his mixing of honesty and humor to new levels in the 1980s. *Brighton Beach Memoirs*, the first in a trilogy (series of three works) of semiautobiographical (somewhat based on his own life) plays, tells the story of a middle-class Jewish American teenager growing up in a troubled family. *Biloxi Blues* deals with the boy’s coming of age and facing of anti-Semitism (hatred of Jewish people) while in the army. Finally, *Broadway Bound* takes audiences into the boy’s young adulthood, as he struggles to establish his career and sees the problems in his parents’ relationship more clearly. Simon claimed that writing the play helped him address the problems he had with his own mother.

When Simon’s third marriage broke up, he wrote *Jake’s Women*, in which he introduces “ghosts”—good and bad experiences of two marriages and their effect on the third. He began the 1990s with *Lost in Yonkers*, a painfully funny story about the effect an abusive mother has on her grown children. The play was a success, and in 1991 it earned the Pulitzer Prize for drama.

Later years

Simon’s next work, *Laughter on the 23rd Floor*, is a behind-the-scenes look at writing comedy by committee, as a group of men shout one-liners, each trying to top the other. Critics found it funny but talked about the lack of plot and depth of the characters. Simon received Kennedy Center honors in 1995 from President Bill Clinton (1946–) for his contribution to the arts and to popular culture in the twentieth century. In 1996 Simon wrote a book entitled *Rewrites*, a look back at his early career. The book received mixed reviews; *Peo-*

ple Weekly commented that it “doesn’t live up to the creativity it documents.”

In 1997 Simon introduced his first major black character in *Proposals*. In an interview with David Stearns for *USA Today* he said, “It is one of the most loving plays I’ve ever written. There’s also a lot of anger. Because love is the main theme in the play, I was trying to cover all the aspects [elements] of it—those who get it and those who don’t.” In 1999 Simon was honored by ringing the bell to open trading at the New York Stock Exchange as part of the Exchange’s Bridging the Millennium program, which honored leaders of the twentieth century whose achievements continue to enrich humanity.

In 2001, just about the same time his new play *45 Seconds from Broadway* was opening, Simon was presented with the first Sarah Applebaum Nederlander Award for Excellence in Theatre at Wayne State University in Detroit, Michigan. As President Clinton remarked of Simon when presenting him with the Kennedy Center honors, “He challenges us and himself never to take ourselves too seriously. Thank you for the wit and the wisdom.”

For More Information

Bloom, Harold. *Neil Simon*. Bloomall, PA: Chelsea House, 2002.

Konas, Gary, ed. *Neil Simon: A Casebook*. New York: Garland, 1997.

Simon, Neil. *The Play Goes On: A Memoir*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1999.

Simon, Neil. *Rewrites: A Memoir*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1996.

FRANK SINATRA

Born: December 12, 1915

Hoboken, New Jersey

Died: May 14, 1998

Los Angeles, California

American singer, actor, and performer

Franc Sinatra is one of the most popular singers in American history. As an actor, he appeared in fifty-eight films and won an Academy Award for his role in *From Here to Eternity*. His career started in the 1930s and continued into the 1990s.

Early years

Francis Albert Sinatra was born in Hoboken, New Jersey, on December 12, 1915, the only child of Italian immigrants Martin and Natalie “Dolly” Sinatra. His father was a firefighter for the city of Hoboken and his mother was an amateur singer who often sang at social events. Sinatra lived in a mainly Italian American working-class neighborhood. His first experience with music came when his uncle gave him a ukulele, and on hot summer nights he loved to go outside and sing while playing the instrument. His other interest was boxing. To protect himself in the tough neighborhood he grew up in, he became a competent boxer. In high school he was a generous but pugnacious (likely to fight) individual—the traits he would carry with him throughout his life.

Early in his life Sinatra knew he wanted to become a singer. His influences were Rudy Vallee (1901–1986) and Bing Crosby (1903–1977). He dropped out of high school and began to sing at small clubs. He got his first



Frank Sinatra.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

big break on the radio talent show *Major Bowes and his Amateur Hour* in 1935, singing in a group called the Hoboken Four. At this time Sinatra sang in various New Jersey nightclubs, hoping to attract the attention of “Swing Era” bandleaders. In 1939, he began working on radio station WNEW in New York City with bandleader Harry James for \$75 per week. That same year he married his longtime sweetheart, Nancy Barbato. They would eventually have three children.

The beginning of success

After seven months with Harry James, Sinatra joined Tommy Dorsey and his orches-

tra, causing his career to skyrocket. Dorsey’s orchestra was one of the most popular in the land, and it remained so with Sinatra singing with it from 1940 through 1942.

During that time, Sinatra performed with the band in his first two movies—*Las Vegas Nights* (1941) and *Ship Ahoy* (1942). He began his solo career at the end of 1942 and continued his meteoric (speedy and brilliant) rise.

Fans

The Swing Era lasted from 1935 through the end of World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis Powers—Italy, Japan, and Germany—and the Allies—France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States). Sinatra was by far the Swing Era’s best-known vocalist. His musical roots combined Tin Pan Alley (the song writing center of New York City) and Italian opera. Most important to him throughout his career would be his insistence on his own style and arrangements for whatever music he sang, thus producing his own unique phrasing of lyrics and melody lines.

Though Sinatra was exempted from military service in World War II because of a damaged eardrum, he helped the war effort with his appearances in movies and benefits for soldiers. He was also an outspoken supporter of Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882–1945) and liberal viewpoints, including racial and religious tolerance. He made many appearances to support charities.

Sinatra’s wide-shouldered suits and his bow ties were imitated by many men, but his most ardent followers were teenaged girls, nicknamed “bobby-soxers” for the ankle-high socks they wore. His widespread appeal

was further fueled by America's explosive mass media growth in newspapers, magazines, films, record players, and radio stations. Sinatra was the first singer to attract the kind of near hysteria that would later accompany live appearances by Elvis Presley (1935–1977) and the Beatles.

This type of excitement reached its peak in the Columbus Day riot of October 12, 1944. Thousands of his fans (mostly female) were denied entry into the already-packed Paramount Theater in New York City. They stormed the streets and vented their frustration by smashing nearby shop windows.

The 1950s

There were rumors that Sinatra was connected to the Mafia (organized crime). These stories arose mostly from his socializing with alleged Mafia kingpins (chiefs). He also received bad publicity about his noted bar-room brawls (fights) with customers and reporters. The allegations of underworld activity were never proven, and no criminal charges were ever made.

In 1954 Sinatra appeared in the critically acclaimed film *From Here to Eternity* (1954). The role won him an Academy Award for best supporting actor. He appeared in nine films in just two years, including *Guys and Dolls* (1955), *Young At Heart* (1955), *The Tender Trap* (1955), *The Man With the Golden Arm* (1955), and *High Society* (1956). Sinatra was back on the record charts as well with "Young at Heart." Nelson Riddle became his musical arranger in the 1950s, and he helped Sinatra stay on the record charts throughout the rest of the decade. (In fact, Sinatra stayed on the charts steadily through 1967, in spite of rock and roll.) Sinatra did not just record singles.

He recorded albums around a central theme with a large collection of songs or ballads. From 1957 through 1966 he had twenty-seven Top Ten albums without producing one Top Ten single.

Sinatra's bobby-soxer fans were now adults and Sinatra had shifted smoothly to the role of the aging romantic bachelor. This was signified by the image of him leaning alone against a lamppost with a raincoat slung over one shoulder.

The 1960s

Sinatra's hits in the 1960s included "It Was a Very Good Year" and "Strangers in the Night" (1966). He reached the top of the singles charts in a duet, "Somethin' Stupid," with his daughter Nancy in 1967.

Sinatra continued to act in several movies in the 1960s, including *Ocean's 11* (1960), *The Manchurian Candidate* (1962), *Robin and the Seven Hoods* (1964), and *Tony Rome* (1967). Many critics felt several of these films had declined in artistic merit. Sinatra became known as part of a group of friends called the "Rat Pack." It included entertainers Dean Martin (1917–1995), Sammy Davis Jr. (1925–1990), Joey Bishop, and Peter Lawford.

"My Way"

After Sinatra's famous recording of "My Way" (1969), he made an ill-fated attempt to sing some of the lighter tunes of modern rock composers. This led to a brief retirement from entertainment (1971 through 1973). At this time he also shifted his politics from liberal to conservative. He had become a close friend of Ronald Reagan (1911–), helping him in his later successful presidential campaigns.

Sinatra's financial empire produced millions of dollars in earnings from investments in films, records, gambling casinos, real estate, missile parts, and general aviation. He came out of his retirement in 1974 with a renewed interest in older tunes. His return to the limelight was highlighted by his famous recording of "New York, New York" (1980) as he entered his sixth decade of entertaining.

In 1988 Sinatra, Sammy Davis Jr., and Dean Martin embarked on a cross-country tour. The tour lasted only one week. Sinatra later organized another reunion tour with Shirley MacLaine (1934–) in 1992 and it was an undeniable success.

By 1994 Sinatra was experiencing memory lapses, but that did not keep him from performing publicly. He merely added the use of a prompter (device that shows the words of a song) to remind him of the lyrics. After celebrating his eightieth birthday at a public tribute, new packages of recordings were released and became instant best-sellers. But Sinatra's health continued to deteriorate in the 1990s. On the evening of May 14, 1998, Sinatra died of a heart attack in Los Angeles, California.

The audiences who grew up with him and his music were complemented by adoration from younger generations. They have all made "Old Blue Eyes" one of the most outstanding popular singers of the twentieth century.

For More Information

Friedwald, Will. *Sinatra! The Song is You: A Singer's Art*. New York: Scribner, 1995.

Kelley, Kitty. *His Way: The Unauthorized Biography of Frank Sinatra*. New York: Bantam Books, 1986.

Morley, Sheridan. *Frank Sinatra: A Celebration*. New York: Applause, 1998.

Rockwell, John. *Sinatra: An American Classic*. New York: Random House, 1984.

Wilson, Earl. *Sinatra: An Unauthorized Biography*. New York: Macmillan, 1976.

UPTON SINCLAIR

Born: September 20, 1878

Baltimore, Maryland

Died: November 25, 1968

Bound Brook, New Jersey

American writer

Upton Sinclair, American novelist and political writer, was one of the most important muckrakers (writers who search out and reveal improper conduct in politics and business) of the 1900s. His novel *The Jungle* helped improve working conditions in the meat-packing industry.

Early life and education

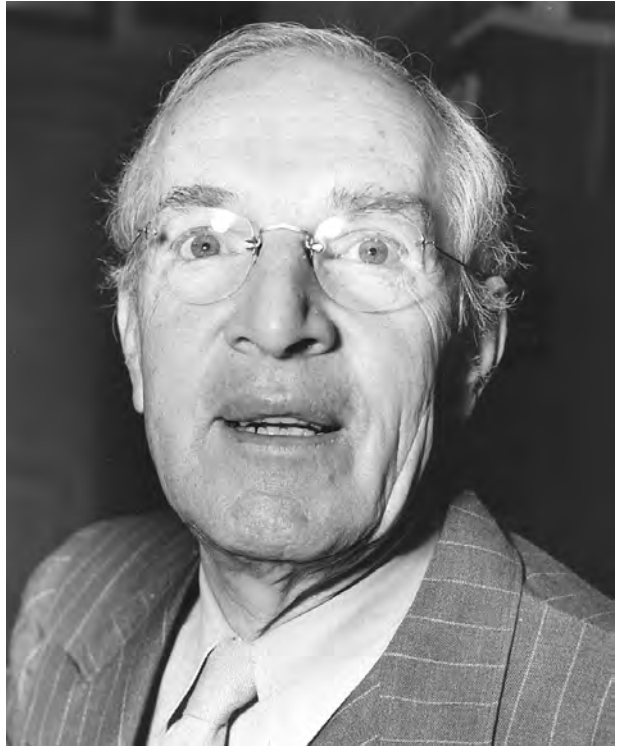
Upton Beale Sinclair Jr. was born in Baltimore, Maryland, on September 20, 1878. He was the only child of Upton Beall Sinclair and Priscilla Harden. His father worked at different times selling liquor, hats, and men's clothes. He also struggled with poverty and a drinking problem. Young Upton was a shy, thoughtful boy who taught himself to read at age five. The family moved to New York City when Upton was ten, and at fourteen he entered New York City College. He graduated in 1897 and

went to Columbia University to study law, but instead became more interested in politics and literature. He never earned a law degree. Through these years he supported himself by writing for adventure-story magazines. While attending Columbia he wrote eight thousand words a day. He also continued to read a great deal—over one two-week Christmas break he read all of William Shakespeare's (1564–1616) works as well as all of John Milton's (1608–1674) poetry.

Becomes involved in politics

Sinclair moved to Quebec, Canada, in 1900. That same year he married Meta Fuller, with whom he had a son. His first novel, *Springtime and Harvest* (1901), was a modest success. Three more novels in the next four years failed to provide even a bare living. Sinclair became a member of the Socialist Party in 1902, and he was a Socialist candidate for Congress from New Jersey in 1906. (Socialists believe in a system in which there is no private property and all people own the means of production, such as factories and farms, as a group.)

Also in 1906 Sinclair's *The Jungle*, a novel exposing unfair labor practices and unsanitary conditions in the meat-packing factories of Chicago, Illinois, was a huge success. Sinclair had spent seven weeks observing the operations of a meat-packing plant before writing the book. *The Jungle's* protest about the problems of laborers and the socialist solutions it proposed caused a public outcry. President Theodore Roosevelt (1858–1919) invited Sinclair to discuss packing-house conditions, and a congressional investigation led to the passage of the Pure Food and Drug Act.



Upton Sinclair.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Documents personal life

Sinclair divorced his first wife in 1913. The autobiographical (based on his own life) novel *Love's Pilgrimage* (1911) treats his marriage and the birth of his child with an honesty that shocked some reviewers. Sinclair married Mary Craig Kimbrough in 1913. *Sylvia* and *Sylvia's Marriage*, a massive two-part story, called for sexual enlightenment (freedom from ignorance and misinformation).

King Coal (1917), based on a coal strike of 1914 and 1915, returned to labor protest and socialistic comment. However, in 1917

Sinclair left the Socialist Party to support President Woodrow Wilson (1856–1924). He returned to the socialist camp when Wilson supported intervention in the Soviet Union. In California Sinclair ran on the Socialist ticket for Congress (1920), for the Senate (1922), and for governor (1926 and 1930).

Continues stirring things up

Sinclair continued his writings on political and reform issues. *Oil!* (1927) dealt with dishonesty in President Warren G. Harding's (1865–1923) administration. *Boston* (1928), a novel about the Sacco-Vanzetti case (in which two Italian men, believed by many to have been innocent, were convicted and executed for having committed a murder during a payroll robbery), brought to light much new material and demonstrated the constructive research that always lay beneath Sinclair's protest writings.

In 1933 Sinclair was persuaded to campaign seriously for governor of California. He called his program "End Poverty in California." His sensible presentation of Socialist ideas won him the Democratic nomination, but millions of dollars and a campaign based on lies and fear defeated him in the election.

World's End (1940) launched Sinclair's eleven-volume novel series that attempted to give an insider's view of the U.S. government between 1913 and 1949. One of the novels, *Dragon's Teeth* (1942), a study of the rise of Nazism (a German political movement of the 1930s whose followers scorned democracy and favored the destruction of all "inferior" non-Germans, especially Jewish people), won the Pulitzer Prize. Before his death on

November 25, 1968, Sinclair had produced more than ninety books that earned at least \$1 million, most of it contributed to socialist and reform causes.

For More Information

Harris, Leon A. *Upton Sinclair, American Rebel*. New York: Crowell, 1975.

Scott, Ivan. *Upton Sinclair: The Forgotten Socialist*. Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 1996.

Sinclair, Upton. *Autobiography*. New York: Harcourt, Brace, & World, 1962.

Sinclair, Upton. *My Lifetime in Letters*. Columbia: University of Missouri Press, 1960.

ISAAC BASHEVIS SINGER

Born: July 14, 1904

Radzymin, Poland

Died: July 24, 1991

Miami, Florida

Polish-born American author

Isaac Bashevis Singer, a Polish-American author, was admired for his recreation of the forgotten world of nineteenth-century Poland and his depiction of a timeless Jewish ghetto (a city neighborhood where a minority group lives).

Early life

Isaac Bashevis Singer was born on July 14, 1904, in Radzymin, Poland. His family

moved to Warsaw, Poland, when he was four years old. Both of his grandfathers were rabbis (Jewish spiritual leaders), and Singer was also groomed for Hasidism, a strict spiritual practice, and attended a seminary (a school to train rabbis). However, he decided on a writing career. His older brother, Israel Joseph, was a well-known Yiddish (a language spoken by Jewish people in eastern Europe) writer. Growing up, Singer was impressed by the Jewish folk tales told by his parents. These tales set the groundwork for some of Singer's fictional characters and religious faith.

After Singer completed his seminary studies, he worked as a journalist for the Yiddish press in various parts of Poland. Moving to the United States in 1935, Singer became a reporter for the *Daily Forward* in New York City, America's largest Yiddish newspaper. Although he personally adapted to his new habitat, his early literary efforts display an appreciation for the "old country." The subjects seem part of a distant past remembered from vivid tales of Polish storytellers.

First works

Singer's first novel, *The Family Moskat* (1950), was likened by critics to the narratives of the Russian writer Ivan Turgenev (1818–1883) and the French writer Honoré de Balzac (1799–1850). Based on Singer's own family, the novel succeeds in translating the reality of an orthodox (traditional) Jewish home into a universal reality. Two short stories, "Satan in Goray" and "The Dybbuk and the Golem" (1955), treat the superstition and foolishness of eastern European peasants (people from the lower,



Isaac Bashevis Singer.

Reproduced by permission of Mr. Jerry Bauer.

working class). A collection of short narratives, *Gimpel, the Fool, and Other Stories* (1957), reworked earlier themes but skillfully avoided repetition. Beneath the grotesque and folk elements, Singer included in "Gimpel" a psychological-theological (religious) moral conflict in which an uncomplicated man finds his existence threatened by black magic and sorcery (powers from evil spirits).

Modern man is the subject of Singer's novel *The Magician of Lublin* (1960), which portrays a protagonist (main character) who dares to violate the holiness of tradition. The

novel lacks the superb intricacy of *The Family Moskat* and the haunting suspense of "Gimpel." Still grappling with the modern experience in his next work, Singer set the eleven short pieces of *The Spinoza of Market Street* (1961) in a ghetto after World War II (1939–45; a war in which the United States, Great Britain, France, and the Soviet Union fought against Germany, Japan, and Italy). Having departed from his quaintly unsophisticated world into contemporary urban madness, Singer revealed the stylistic limitations of his simple, flowing writings. "I've always stayed in my same nook, my same corner," Singer once reflected. "If a writer ventures out of his corner he is nothing."

Later work

Singer's *The Slave* (1962), an epic about seventeenth-century Poland, recounts the brutal world of Russian Cossacks (peasant soldiers in the Ukraine) through the eyes of an enslaved, sensitive Jew; yet somehow the work appeals to modern sensibilities. Once again Singer's flawless writing recaptures a timeless folk element. When a collection of scenes filled with memories of Singer's childhood in the Warsaw ghetto (an extremely poor neighborhood), *A Day of Pleasure: Stories of a Boy Growing Up in Warsaw* (1969), won the National Book Award for children's literature, Singer remarked that he wrote for young people because "they still believe in God, the family, angels, devils, witches, goblins, and other such obsolete stuff." *A Friend of Kafka*, a collection of short fiction, appeared in 1970.

Recipient of numerous other literary awards, Singer remained an active journalist

and critic for the *Daily Forward*. He always wrote in Yiddish and then worked closely with his English translators (people who change text from one language to another) because of the difficulty in finding equivalents for his subtle writings. His "simple" and "unchanging" fictions have gained in popularity with a new generation possessing a taste for an obscure and sometimes grotesque past which seems more real than an unclear future, for his stories capture the essence of the human condition.

Singer received numerous awards throughout the latter portion of his life. Some of the more noted include Nobel Prize in literature (1978) and the Gold Medal for Fiction (1989). Singer continued to publish new material until his death in 1991.

For More Information

- Farrell, Grace, ed. *Critical Essays on Isaac Bashevis Singer*. New York: G. K. Hall, 1996.
- Goran, Lester. *The Bright Streets of Surfside: The Memoir of a Friendship with Isaac Bashevis Singer*. Kent, OH: Kent State University Press, 1994.
- Hadda, Janet. *Isaac Bashevis Singer: A Life*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1997.
- Siegel, Ben. *Isaac Bashevis Singer*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press, 1969.
- Singer, Isaac Bashevis. *In My Father's Court*. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 1966.
- Zamir, Israel. *Journey to My Father, Isaac Bashevis Singer*. New York: Arcade, 1995.

BESSIE SMITH

Born: April 15, 1894

Chattanooga, Tennessee

Died: September 26, 1937

Clarksdale, Mississippi

African American singer

The African American singer Bessie Smith was called “The Empress of the Blues.” Her magnificent voice, sense of the dramatic, clarity of diction (one never missed a word of what she sang), and incomparable time and phrasing set her apart from the competition and made her appeal as much to jazz lovers as to blues lovers.

Early years

Bessie Smith was born into poverty in Chattanooga, Tennessee, one of seven children of William and Laura Smith. Her father was a Baptist minister and a laborer. Her father died soon after her birth and her mother and two of her brothers died by the time she was eight or nine. An unmarried aunt raised her and her siblings. Smith realized that she had an unusual voice and sang for money on street corners at an early age, accompanied on guitar by Andrew, her younger brother.

At age eighteen Bessie worked with the Moses Stokes traveling minstrel show, and later with the Rabbit Foot Minstrels under Gertrude “Ma” Rainey. The minstrel show (a show based on African American music and humor) circuit was a difficult life. Late hours, low pay, gambling, fighting, and abusing alcohol and drugs were commonplace. But

Smith’s voice was remarkable, filling the largest hall without amplification (the expansion of sound) and reaching out to each listener in beautiful, earthy tones.

In 1920 Mamie Smith (no relation to Bessie Smith) recorded the first vocal blues record and sold one hundred thousand copies in the first month. Record executives realized they had a new market and the “race record” was born. These records were shipped only to the South and selected areas of the North where African American people congregated. Bessie Smith produced “Down-Hearted Blues” and “Gulf Coast Blues” in February 1923. An astounding 780 thousand copies sold within six months.

Recorded with the jazz elite

In 1923 Smith’s big break came when she was discovered by Columbia Records. Frank Walker handled her recording contract from 1923 through 1931 and helped launch her successful career of 160 titles.

Smith purchased a custom-designed railroad car for herself and her troupe in 1925. This allowed her to bypass some of the dispiriting (negative) effects of the racism found in both northern and southern states. She traveled with her own tent show or with the Theater Owners’ Booking Association (TOBA) shows, commanding a weekly salary that peaked at two thousand dollars.

Smith recorded with a variety of accompanists during her ten-year recording career. They included pianists Fred Longshaw, Porter Grainger, and Fletcher Henderson; saxophonists Coleman Hawkins and Sidney Bechet; trombonist Charlie Green; clarinetists Buster Bailey and Don Redman; and cornetist



Bessie Smith.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Joe Smith. With Louis Armstrong (1900–1971) she recorded “St. Louis Blues,” “Cold in Hand Blues,” “Careless Love Blues,” “Nashville Woman’s Blues,” and “I Ain’t Gonna Play No Second Fiddle.”

Singing the blues

As the popularity of Smith’s records grew, her touring schedule grew. As she traveled from her home base of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, throughout the United States, adoring crowds greeted her at each stop. In spite of Smith’s commercial success, her personal life was very similar to the blues she sang. Her marriage to Jack Gee was stormy

and ended in a bitter separation in 1929. Smith was also struggling to battle liquor.

Smith’s popularity as a recording artist crested around 1929. Then the combination of radio, talking pictures, and the Great Depression (1929–39; a period of severe economic downfall resulting in the loss of jobs for millions) undermined the entire recording industry. The price she could demand dipped and she was forced to sell her railroad car. The smaller towns she played housed theaters of lesser quality. Even so she starred in a 1929 two-reel film, *St. Louis Blues*, a semiautobiographical effort that received some exposure through 1932.

Smith’s lean years ended in 1937, as the recording industry again soared on the craziness of the early Swing Era, spearheaded by the success of Benny Goodman’s (1909–1986) band. Smith had proven adaptable throughout her career and could certainly swing with the best of them. Also, blues singing was experiencing a revival in popular taste.

Tragedy

On the morning of September 26, 1937, Smith and her close friend Richard Morgan were driving from a Memphis performance to Darling, Mississippi, for the next day’s show. Near Clarksdale, Mississippi, their car was involved in an accident resulting in Bessie Smith’s death.

It was estimated that over ten thousand adoring fans attended the funeral of the blues singer who had become the largest-selling recording artist of her day. In *Early Jazz*, Gunther Schuller heralded Smith as “the first complete jazz singer” whose influence on the

legendary Billie Holiday (1915–1959) and a whole generation of jazz singers cannot be overestimated.

For More Information

- Albertson, Chris. *Bessie*. New York: Stein and Day, 1972.
- Brooks, Edward. *The Bessie Smith Companion*. New York: Da Capo, 1983.
- Davis, Angela Yvonne. *Blues Legacies and Black Feminism: Gertrude 'Ma' Rainey, Bessie Smith, and Billie Holiday*. New York: Pantheon, 1998.
- Feinstein, Elaine. *Bessie Smith*. New York: Viking, 1985.
- Kay, Jackie. *Bessie Smith*. New York: Stewart, Tabori, and Chang, 1997.

SOCRATES

Born: c. 469 B.C.E.

Died: c. 399 B.C.E.

Athens, Greece

Greek philosopher and logician

The Greek philosopher and logician (one who studies logic or reason) Socrates was an important influence on Plato (427–347 B.C.E.) and had a major effect on ancient philosophy.

Early life

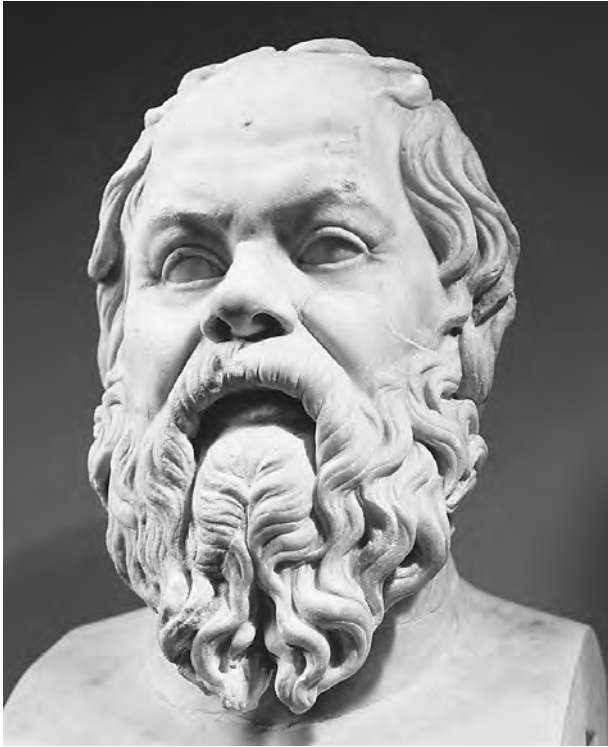
Socrates was the son of Sophroniscus, an Athenian stone mason and sculptor. He learned his father's craft and apparently practiced it for many years. He participated in the

Peloponnesian War (431–04 B.C.E.) when Athens was crushed by the Spartans, and he distinguished himself for his courage. Details of his early life are scarce, although he appears to have had no more than an ordinary Greek education before devoting his time almost completely to intellectual interests. He did, however, take a keen interest in the works of the natural philosophers, and Plato records the fact that Socrates met Zeno of Elea (c. 495–430 B.C.E.) and Parmenides (born c. 515 B.C.E.) on their trip to Athens, which probably took place about 450 B.C.E.

Socrates himself wrote nothing, therefore evidence of his life and activities must come from the writings of Plato and Xenophon (c. 431–352 B.C.E.). It is likely that neither of these presents a completely accurate picture of him, but Plato's *Apology*, *Crito*, *Phaedo*, and *Symposium* contain details which must be close to fact.

From the *Apology* we learn that Socrates was well known around Athens; uncritical thinkers linked him with the rest of the Sophists (a philosophical school); he fought in at least three military campaigns for the city; and he attracted to his circle large numbers of young men who delighted in seeing their elders proved false by Socrates. His courage in military campaigns is described by Alcibiades (c. 450–404 B.C.E.) in the *Symposium*.

In addition to stories about Socrates's strange character, the *Symposium* provides details regarding his physical appearance. He was short, quite the opposite of what was considered graceful and beautiful in the Athens of his time. He was also poor and had only the barest necessities of life. Socrates's physical ugliness did not stop his appeal.



Socrates.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

His thought

There was a strong religious side to Socrates's character and thought which constantly revealed itself in spite of his criticism of Greek myths. His words and actions in the *Apology*, *Crito*, *Phaedo*, and *Symposium* reveal a deep respect for Athenian religious customs and a sincere regard for divinity (gods). Indeed, it was a divine voice which Socrates claimed to hear within himself on important occasions in his life. It was not a voice which gave him positive instructions, but instead warned him when he was about to go off course. He recounts, in his defense before the Athenian court, the story of his friend

Chaerephon, who was told by the Delphic Oracle (a person regarded as wise counsel) that Socrates was the wisest of men. That statement puzzled Socrates, he says, for no one was more aware of the extent of his own ignorance than he himself, but he determined to see the truth of the god's words. After questioning those who had a reputation for wisdom and who considered themselves, wise, he concluded that he was wiser than they because he could recognize his ignorance while they, who were equally ignorant, thought themselves wise.

Socrates was famous for his method of argumentation (a system or process used for arguing or debate) and his works often made as many enemies as admirers within Athens. An example comes from the *Apology*. Meletus had accused Socrates of corrupting the youth, or ruining the youth's morality. Socrates begins by asking if Meletus considers the improvement of youth important. He replies that he does, whereupon Socrates asks who is capable of improving the young. The laws, says Meletus, and Socrates asks him to name a person who knows the laws. Meletus responds that the judges there present know the laws, whereupon Socrates asks if all who are present are able to instruct and improve youth or whether only a few can. Meletus replies that all of them are capable of such a task, which forces Meletus to confess that other groups of Athenians, such as the Senate and the Assembly, and indeed all Athenians are capable of instructing and improving the youth. All except Socrates, that is. Socrates then starts a similar set of questions regarding the instruction and improvement of horses and other animals. Is it true that all men are capable of training horses, or only those men with special qualifications and experience?

Meletus, realizing the absurdity of his position, does not answer, but Socrates answers for him and says that if he does not care enough about the youth of Athens to have given adequate thought to who might instruct and improve them, he has no right to accuse Socrates of corrupting them.

Thus the Socratic method of argumentation begins with commonplace questions which lead the opponent to believe that the questioner is simple, but ends in a complete reversal. Thus his chief contributions lie not in the construction of an elaborate system but in clearing away the false common beliefs and in leading men to an awareness of their own ignorance, from which position they may begin to discover the truth. It was his unique combination of dialectical (having to do with using logic and reasoning in an argument or discussion) skill and magnetic attractiveness to the youth of Athens which gave his opponents their opportunity to bring him to trial in 399 B.C.E.

His death

Meletus, Lycon, and Anytus charged Socrates with impiety (being unreligious) and with corrupting the youth of the city. Since defense speeches were made by the principals in Athenian legal practice, Socrates spoke in his own behalf and his defense speech was a sure sign that he was not going to give in. After taking up the charges and showing how they were false, he proposed that the city should honor him as it did Olympic victors. He was convicted and sentenced to death. Plato's *Crito* tells of Crito's attempts to persuade Socrates to flee the prison (Crito had bribed [exchanged money for favors] the jailer, as was customary), but

Socrates, in a dialogue between himself and the Laws of Athens, reveals his devotion to the city and his obligation to obey its laws even if they lead to his death. In the *Phaedo*, Plato recounts Socrates's discussion of the immortality of the soul; and at the end of that dialogue, one of the most moving and dramatic scenes in ancient literature, Socrates takes the hemlock (poison) prepared for him while his friends sit helplessly by. He died reminding Crito that he owes a rooster to Aesculapius.

Socrates was the most colorful figure in the history of ancient philosophy. His fame was widespread in his own time, and his name soon became a household word although he professed no extraordinary wisdom, constructed no philosophical system, established no school, and founded no sect (following). His influence on the course of ancient philosophy, through Plato, the Cynics, and less directly, Aristotle, is immeasurable.

For More Information

- Brickhouse, Thomas C., and Nicholas D. Smith. *The Philosophy of Socrates*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 2000.
- Chroust, Hermann. *Socrates: Man and Myth*. South Bend, IN: Notre Dame University Press, 1957.
- Gulley, Norman. *The Philosophy of Socrates*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1968.
- Phillips, Christopher. *Socrates Café: A Fresh Taste of Philosophy*. New York: Norton, 2001.
- Taylor, C. C. W. *Socrates: A Very Short Introduction*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2000.

STEPHEN SONDHEIM

Born: March 22, 1930

New York, New York

American composer

Stephen Sondheim redefined the Broadway musical form with his creative and award winning productions. He continues to be a major force in the shaping of the musical theater.

Early years

Stephen Sondheim was born on March 22, 1930, to upper-middle-class parents, Herbert and Janet Sondheim. His father was a dress manufacturer and his mother was a fashion designer and interior decorator. He studied piano for two years while very young and continued his interest in the musical stage throughout his education.

Sondheim's parents divorced in 1942 and his mother took up residence in Doylestown, Pennsylvania, which was near the summertime residence of Oscar Hammerstein II (1895–1960). As a friend of Hammerstein's son, Sondheim was able to ask the famous librettist (a person who writes the words for a musical or opera) for an evaluation of his first stage work, a high school production produced at the age of fifteen.

Hammerstein's critical evaluation of *By George* began the four-year relationship that was decisive in formulating the young Sondheim's style. Sondheim became Hammerstein's personal assistant and gained entry into the world of professional theater.

While attending Williams College in Massachusetts, Sondheim performed duties in the preparation and rehearsals of the Rogers and Hammerstein productions of *South Pacific* and *The King and I*. Upon graduation he won the Hutchinson Prize, which enabled him to study composition at Princeton University.

Early successes

Sondheim began his professional career in television by writing scripts for the *Topper* and *The Last Word* series. He also composed incidental music (minor pieces used as background or between scenes) for the Broadway musical *Girls of Summer*.

Shortly after that Sondheim made the acquaintance of Arthur Laurents, who introduced him to Jerome Robbins and Leonard Bernstein (1918–1990) as the possible songwriter for *West Side Story*, which was produced in 1957. The young man found himself involved in one of the most successful shows ever produced on Broadway. However, in an interview Sondheim gave to National Public Radio (NPR) in 2002, he said that, in spite of the success of *West Side Story*, he is embarrassed by the lyrics he wrote for the show because of their lack of artistic merit.

Sondheim followed this success by working on the Broadway production of *Gypsy* in 1959, distinguishing himself as one of the great young talents in American musical theater.

Sondheim, intent on broadening his talents, sought productions where he could use his musical as well as lyrical expertise. He produced *A Funny Thing Happened on the Way to the Forum* in 1962, a farce (broad and unsophisticated humor) based on the plays

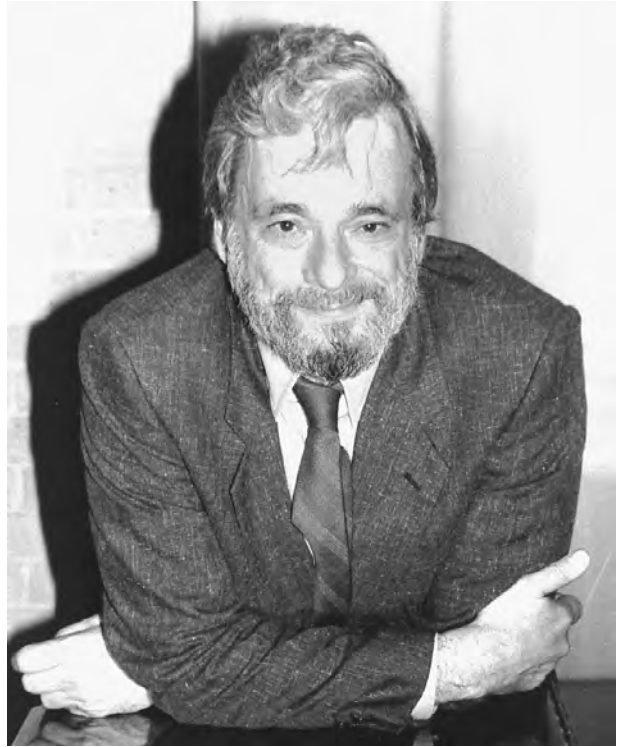
of Plautus (c. 254–184 B.C.E.). The show had an impressive run of almost one thousand performances, won the Tony Award for Best Musical, and was made into a successful film in 1966. Sondheim followed with two less successful ventures: *Anyone Can Whistle* (1964) and *Do I Hear a Waltz* (1965). Although both failed commercially, Sondheim contributed songs of high quality.

Develops his own musicals

In 1970 Sondheim produced *Company*, which once again won him unanimous (an agreement by all) praise from the critics. The production was awarded the Drama Critics and Tony Award for Best Musical of the season, and Sondheim received awards for the best composer (writer of music) and best lyricist (song-writer). One critic commented that *Company* “is absolutely first rate . . . the freshest . . . in years. . . This is a wonderful musical score, the one that Broadway has long needed.”

The following year Sondheim produced *Follies*, a retrospective (a look back) musical about the Ziegfield Follies, large Broadway productions of the 1920s. The composer blended the nostalgia (sentimental feelings for the past) of popular songs of the past with his own style of sentimental ballad. He was awarded both the Drama Critics and Outer Critics Circle Awards for Best Musical of 1971.

In *A Little Night Music* (1973) Sondheim exposed his strong background in classical music. Critics were reminded of several classical composers: Gustav Mahler (1860–1911), Maurice Ravel (1875–1937), Franz Liszt (1811–1886), and Sergey Rachmaninoff (1873–1943). The musical won the Tony Award and included his first commercial hit song, “Send in the Clowns.”



Stephen Sondheim.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Noted as a relentless (untiring, unwilling to stop) innovator, Sondheim worked with Hal Prince on *Pacific Overtures* (1976). In an attempt to relate the westernization of Japan with the commercialized present, Sondheim fused the unlikely elements of Haiku poetry (unrhymed verse of three lines that are made up of seventeen syllables), Japanese pentatonic scales (musical scales made up of only five notes), and Kabuki theater (a form of traditional classical Japanese drama) with modern stage techniques in a production that was hailed as a successful Broadway hit. It was followed by *Sweeney Todd* (1979), the melodramatic story of the barber of Fleet Street (Lon-

don) who conspired with the neighborhood baker to supply her with enough barbershop victims for her meat pies. Less funny than tragic, *Sweeney Todd* explored the dark side of the nineteenth-century English social system.

Artistic approach

Sondheim's talent derives from his ability to cross different types of music and theater, thus offering Broadway audiences works of remarkable craft. He deals with unexpected subjects that challenge and test the form of the American musical. Sondheim explores issues of contemporary life: marriage and relationships in *Company*; madness and the human condition in *Anyone Can Whistle*; nostalgia and sentiment in *Follies*; Western imperialism (extension of power) in *Pacific Overtures*; and injustice and revenge in *Sweeney Todd*.

Sondheim avoids filler, or needless content, in his lyrics. He concentrates on direct impact through verbal interplay. His lyrics are witty without ever sacrificing honesty for superficially (shallow and unimportant) clever rhyme. Similarly, he maintains his musical individuality even while operating in the adopted Eastern musical style of *Pacific Overtures*. Sondheim's consistent ability to merge words and music that hint at the deeper personality of his characters distinguishes him as a composer of rare ingenuity (clever at inventing) and talent.

Side by Side by Sondheim, a musical tribute to the artist, was successfully produced in 1976. Sondheim's later works included the film score for *Reds* (1981) and *Sunday in the Park with George* (1984), which won a 1985 Pulitzer Prize. *Into the Woods* was another musical hit on Broadway in 1987.

In recent years many of Sondheim's earlier projects have been reproduced and have enjoyed success in cities in the United States and in Europe. Sondheim's first musical *Front Porch in Flatbush*, which first opened in 1955 on Broadway, was put on in Chicago, Illinois, in 1999. In 2001 *Follies*, a musical that had not been on Broadway since opening in 1971, returned to the New York theater district. In 2000 Sondheim won the best new musical award from the twenty-fifth annual Laurence Olivier Awards for *Merrily We Roll Along*. The show had first opened in 1981 on Broadway but was new to London, England. Sondheim's musicals have thus stood the test of time, as they continue to entertain theatergoers worldwide.

For More Information

- Gottfried, Martin. *Sondheim*. Rev. ed. New York: H. N. Abrams, 2000.
- Green, Stanley. *The World of Musical Comedy*. San Diego, CA: A. S. Barnes, 1980.
- Secrest, Meryle. *Stephen Sondheim: A Life*. New York: Knopf, 1998.
- Zadan, Craig. *Sondheim and Company*. New York: Harper & Row, 1986.

SOPHOCLES

Born: c. 496 B.C.E.
Colonus, Greece
Died: 406 B.C.E.
Athens, Greece
Greek dramatist

The Greek playwright Sophocles was responsible for several improvements in the presentation of drama. His tragedies (plays in which characters suffer because of their actions and usually die) rank him among the greatest Greek classical dramatists.

Sophocles's background

The son of Sophilus, the owner of a successful weapons factory, Sophocles was born c. 496 B.C.E. in Colonus near Athens, Greece. He grew up during the most brilliant intellectual period of Athens. Sophocles won awards while in school for music and wrestling, and because of his constant activity he was known as the "Attic Bee." His music teacher was Lamprus, a famous composer. Tradition says that because of his beauty and talent, Sophocles was chosen to lead the male chorus at the celebration of the Greek victory over the Persians at Salamis.

In 468 B.C.E. Sophocles defeated the famous playwright Aeschylus (525–456 B.C.E.) in one of the drama contests common at the time. He gained first prize more than any other Greek dramatist. He was also known for being friendly and popular. From 443 to 442 B.C.E. he served the Athenian empire as imperial treasurer, and he was elected general at least twice. His religious activities included service as a priest, and he turned over his house for the worship of Asclepius (the Greek god of medicine) until a proper temple could be built. For this he was honored with the title *Dexion* as a hero after his death. Sophocles had two sons, Iophon and Sophocles, by his first wife, Nicostrata. He had a third son, Ariston, by his second wife, Theoris.

Style and contributions to theater

Of the approximately 125 tragedies that Sophocles is said to have written, only 7 have survived. According to the Greek biographer Plutarch (46–119), there were three periods in Sophocles's development as a writer: imitation of the style of Aeschylus, use of an artificial style, and use of a style that is most expressive of character. The existing plays are from the last period. While the works of Aeschylus deal with the relationship between man and the gods, the works of Sophocles deal with how characters react under stress (mental pressure). Sophocles's heroes are usually subjected to a series of tests that they must overcome.

Sophocles is credited with increasing the number of actors with speaking parts in a play from two to three. He raised the number of chorus members from twelve to fifteen and developed the use of painted scenery. He also abandoned the practice of presenting tragedies as trilogies (series of three works) by instead presenting three plays with different subjects. This led to faster development of characters. Sophocles's songs are also considered to be beautifully structured.

Plays

The dates of Sophocles's seven known plays are not all certain. In *Ajax* (447 B.C.E.) the hero, described as second only to Achilles, is humiliated (reduced to a lower position in the eyes of others) by Agamemnon and Menelaus when they award the arms of Achilles to Odysseus. Ajax vows revenge on the Greek commanders as well as on Odysseus. Except, the goddess Athena makes him believe he is attacking the Greeks when he is in fact attacking sheep. When he realizes what he has done, he is so upset that he com-



Sophocles.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

mits suicide. He is given a proper burial only after Odysseus steps in to make it possible.

The title character in *Antigone* (442–441 B.C.E.) is a young princess whose uncle, King Creon, has forbid her to bury her brother Polyneices. Her brother, in attempting to seize the throne from his brother Eteocles, killed Eteocles in a fight and also died himself. *Antigone* has been interpreted as showing the conflict between devotion to family and devotion to the state. In *Trachiniae* (437–432 B.C.E.) Heracles's wife, Deianira, worries about the fifteen-month absence of her husband. Deianira sends him a poisoned robe that she believes has magical powers to restore lost love. Her

son, Hyllus, and her husband denounce her before dying, and she commits suicide. In this play Sophocles describes the difficult situation of the person who, without meaning to, hurts those whom he or she loves.

Oedipus Rex (429 B.C.E.), which many have considered the greatest play of all time, is not about sex or murder, but man's ability to survive almost unbearable suffering. The worst of all things happens to Oedipus: unknowingly he kills his own father, Laius, and is given his own mother, Jocasta, in marriage after he slays the Sphinx. When a plague (a bacteria-caused disease that spreads quickly and can cause death) at Thebes forces him to consult an oracle (a person through whom a god is believed to speak), he finds that he himself is the cause of the plague. Sophocles brings up the question of justice—why is there evil in the world, and why does the man who is basically good suffer? The answer is found in the idea of *dike*—balance, order, justice. The world is orderly and follows natural laws. No matter how good or how well-meaning man may be, if he breaks a natural law, he will be punished and he will suffer.

Later works

Electra (418–414 B.C.E.) is Sophocles's only play whose theme is similar to those of the works of Aeschylus (*Libation Bearers*) and Euripides (484–406 B.C.E.; *Electra*). Again Sophocles concentrates on a character under stress: a worried Electra, anxiously awaiting the return of her avenging brother, Orestes. In *Philoctetes* (409 B.C.E.) Odysseus is sent with young Neoptolemus, the son of Achilles, to the island of Lemnos to bring back Philoctetes with his bow and arrows to help capture Troy. Neoptolemus has second thoughts and

STEVEN SPIELBERG

refuses to deceive the old man. *Philoctetes* clearly shows how man and society can come into conflict and how society can toss aside an individual when it does not need him.

Oedipus at Colonus (401 B.C.E.), produced after Sophocles's death, is the longest of his dramas. It brings to a conclusion his concern with the Oedipus theme. Exiled by Creon, Oedipus becomes a wandering beggar accompanied by his daughter Antigone. He stumbles into a sacred grove at Colonus and asks that Theseus be summoned. Theseus arrives and promises him protection, but Creon tries to remove Oedipus. Theseus comes to the rescue and foils Creon. The arrival of his son Polyneices angers Oedipus, who curses him. Oedipus soon senses his impending death and allows only Theseus to witness the event by which he is changed into a hero and a saint.

"Many are the wonders of the world," says Sophocles in *Antigone*, "but none is more wonderful than man." Sophocles's interest in human welfare is best shown in this famous quotation. Man is able to overcome all kinds of obstacles and is able to be inventive and creative, but he is mortal and therefore limited. Suffering is simply part of the nature of things, but learning can be gained from it, and through suffering man can achieve dignity.

For More Information

Adams, Sinclair M. *Sophocles the Playwright*.

Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1957.

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Sophocles*. New York: Chelsea House, 1990.

Scodel, Ruth. *Sophocles*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1984.

Born: December 18, 1947

Cincinnati, Ohio

American film director

Steven Spielberg is one of the wealthiest and most powerful moviemakers in Hollywood. The director of such elaborate fantasies as *Close Encounters of the Third Kind* and *E.T.: The Extra-Terrestrial*, he is regarded as a man who understands the pulse of America as it would like to see itself.

Early years

Steven Spielberg was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, on December 18, 1947. He was the oldest and the only son of four children. His father, Arnold, was an electrical engineer who worked in what was then the newly emerging field of computers. His mother, Leah, had been a concert pianist.

Steven's mother and three sisters doted on (gave a great deal of attention, spoiled) him. He was indulged throughout his childhood at home, but he was not treated the same way at school. He displayed little enthusiasm for his studies and made average grades at best. The Spielbergs moved frequently because of the father's job. They moved to New Jersey, suburban Phoenix, Arizona, and finally to what would be known as "Silicon Valley" near San Jose, California.

The young filmmaker

The first film that Spielberg recalled seeing in a movie theater was *The Greatest Show*



Steven Spielberg.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

on *Earth*, a spectacular 1952 circus epic directed by Cecil B. De Mille (1881–1959). As a child, Spielberg began using his family's home movie camera. He started recording camping trips and other family events but soon grew dissatisfied with them. He began to film narrative movies and attempted to set up shots with different angles and primitive special effects. By the time he was twelve years old he actually filmed a movie from a script using a cast of actors. He grew increasingly ambitious and continued to make movies from then on.

When Spielberg was sixteen, he filmed a feature-length science fiction movie, which

he entitled *Firelight*. This movie was over two hours long and had a complex plot about an encounter with some aliens. His father rented a local movie theater to show the film. In one night it made back the \$500 it cost to film it.

Spielberg's poor grades in high school prevented him from entering the University of Southern California (UCLA), but he was accepted at California State College at Long Beach. He graduated in 1970 with a bachelor's degree in English. Because California State had no formal film program, he frequently went to the movies and saw every film that he could. He also cajoled (flattered and manipulated) his way past the guards at Universal Studios and watched major projects being filmed.

Spielberg continued to make films and prepared a short subject film, *Amblin'*, which he later entered in the 1969 Atlanta Film Festival. It also won an award at the Venice Film Festival, and got him a seven-year contract at the studio whose gates he used to crash—Universal. Studio executives had been so impressed with *Amblin'*, a simple story about a boy and girl who hitchhike from the Mojave Desert to the ocean, that they released it with *Love Story*, a major hit of 1970. Today Spielberg uses the name “Amblin” for his own production company.

Early successes

Spielberg began his career as a professional by directing several episodes of television programs that were being shot at Universal. Included in his work at this time were episodes of *Marcus Welby, M.D.* and *Columbo*.

The first movie that Spielberg directed professionally was a made-for-television

movie named *Duel*. It was about a deadly battle of wits between an ordinary man driving a car and a crazed driver of an eighteen-wheeler truck. It was generally regarded as one of the greatest movies ever made for U.S. television. It was released in movie theaters in Europe and Japan as a feature film. It took sixteen days to make and had only cost \$350,000 to produce. Its release overseas earned over \$5 million and the film earned many awards.

Spielberg was offered many scripts to film after that, but he was not impressed by the quality of the properties that he was offered. He withdrew from the studio mainstream for a year in order to develop a project of his own.

Directing what he wanted

What Spielberg came up with was *The Sugarland Express*, a drama about a woman who browbeats (forcefully convinces) her husband into breaking out of jail to kidnap their baby from its foster parents. A spectacular car chase happens after the couple steals a police cruiser. The film was a critical success but a commercial failure. Nonetheless, it led to the breakthrough film of Spielberg's career, the spectacularly successful *Jaws* (1975).

Despite bringing in *Jaws* at 100 percent over its \$3.5 million budget, Spielberg became Hollywood's favorite director of the moment when the film grossed over \$60 million in its first month. The film was as popular with critics as with the public. Spielberg was now in a position to do whatever he wanted. He embarked on a film whose subject had obsessed him since his childhood.

Science fiction and beyond

Close Encounters of the Third Kind (1977) was perhaps Spielberg's most personal film. It dealt with the heroic efforts of average middle-class Americans to make contact with visitors from another planet. For all of its staggering special effects, its power derived from its exploration of what people will do when they find that they have the opportunity to make their dreams come true.

The "Indiana Jones" trilogy (1981–1989), *E.T.: The Extra-Terrestrial* (1982), and *The Color Purple* (1985) are examples of Spielberg at his best and worst. The "Indiana Jones" pictures mixed a loving affection for old-time movie serials with a contemporary sensibility. However, the high level of gore and violence in the second installment of the series, *Indiana Jones and the Temple of Doom* (1984), led to the creation of a new rating code, "PG-13," which cautions parents to the presence of violence, language, and nudity—but at a level or an intensity that is lower than that found in an R-Rated movie.

E.T. (1982) swept the nation, and its catchphrase, "Phone home!," was heard around the world. Another film, *The Color Purple* (1985), received mixed response. Spielberg was accused of patronizing (treating in a lowly manner; looking down upon) African Americans and prettifying rural Southern poverty. Others praised the movie; in fact, it received multiple awards and award nominations.

Spielberg was a great favorite among his fellow directors, such as George Lucas (1944–) and John Landis (1950–). He stood by the latter when he was implicated in the deaths of three cast members of *Twilight Zone: The Movie*, a film which Spielberg also

worked on. In 1991 Spielberg directed a big-budget movie about Peter Pan called *Hook*.

As Spielberg continued to direct and produce he grew more and more powerful. He was able to make any film that he wanted and seemed totally uninterested in pleasing the public or the critics.

Continued success

Spielberg's 1993 mega-hit *Jurassic Park* was the subject of one of the longest and most intensive pre-release publicity campaigns in film history. It was about a present day theme park that featured genetically engineered dinosaurs as the main attraction. The movie was a box office and home theater success. Spielberg released the sequel entitled *The Lost World: Jurassic Park* in 1997.

Perhaps the most poignant (emotionally moving) of Spielberg's movies was the critically acclaimed *Schindler's List* (1993), which was filmed in black and white. It was a fictionalized account of real life instances in which German businessman Oskar Schindler (1908–1974) saved the lives of thousands of Jews who worked in his factory during World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis Powers of Germany, Italy, Japan and the Allies of Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States). The picture won the 1993 Best Picture Academy Award and Spielberg won Best Director. In 1999 he won both the Golden Globe and the Academy Award for Best Director for his work on the movie *Saving Private Ryan*.

Spielberg married actress Amy Irving in 1985. They had one son, Max, before a divorce. He later married Kate Capshaw in 1991, and they have five children.

Spielberg has won many awards both in the United States and abroad not only for his films, but also for his work supporting human rights and social justice. He continues to be one of the most powerful film directors and producers in the world.

For More Information

Baxter, John. *Steven Spielberg: The Unauthorized Biography*. London: HarperCollins, 1997.

Crawley, Tony. *The Steven Spielberg Story*. New York: Quill, 1983.

Horn, Geoffrey M. *Steven Spielberg*. Milwaukee, WI: World Almanac, 2002.

Mott, Donald R., and Cheryl M. Saunders. *Steven Spielberg*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1986.

BENJAMIN SPOCK

Born: May 2, 1903

New Haven, Connecticut

Died: March 15, 1998

La Jolla, California

American pediatrician and political activist

Benjamin Spock, pediatrician (doctor who treats children) and political activist, was most noted for his book *Baby and Child Care*, which significantly changed widely held attitudes toward the raising of infants and children.

Youth and education

Benjamin McLane Spock was born on May 2, 1903, in New Haven, Connecticut, the oldest child in a large, strict New England family. His family was so strict that in his eighty-second year he would still be saying, “I love to dance in order to liberate myself from my puritanical [strict and conservative] upbringing.” He was educated at private preparatory schools when he was young and attended Yale from 1921 to 1925, majoring in English literature. He was also a member of the rowing crew that represented the United States in the 1924 Olympic Games in Paris, France. Spock began medical school at Yale in 1925 but transferred to Columbia University’s College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1927. By this time he had married Jane Davenport Cheney.

Spock had decided well before starting his medical studies that he would “work with children, who have their whole lives ahead of them.” He believed that pediatricians of the time were focusing too much on the physical side of child development, so he learned psychiatry (medicine focusing on the mind) as well.

Baby and Child Care

Between 1933 and 1944 Spock practiced pediatric (specializing in children) medicine. At the same time he taught pediatrics at Cornell Medical College and consulted (advised) in pediatric psychiatry for the New York City Health Department. On a summer vacation in 1943 he began to write his most famous book, *Baby and Child Care*. He continued to work on it from 1944 to 1946 while serving as a medical officer in the navy.



Benjamin Spock.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Many early baby-care books said to feed infants on a strict schedule and not to pick them up when they cried. Spock’s book broke with the strict tone and rigorous instructions found in earlier generations of baby-care books. Spock told his readers, “You know more than you think you do. . . . Don’t be afraid to trust your own common sense. . . . Take it easy, trust your own instincts, and follow the directions that your doctor gives you.” The response was overwhelming. At that time *Baby and Child Care* became America’s all-time best-seller except for William Shakespeare’s (1564–1616) works and the Bible. By 1976 it had also passed Shakespeare.

After Spock's discharge from the navy, he became associated with the famous Mayo Clinic (1947–1951). He then became a professor of child development at the University of Pittsburgh (1951–1955) and at Case Western Reserve (1955–1967).

Becomes politically active

Spock's political activism began during this period, growing logically out of his concern for children. A healthy environment for growing children, he believed, included a radiation-free atmosphere to breathe. In 1962 he became cochairman of SANE, an organization dedicated to stopping nuclear bomb tests in the Earth's atmosphere.

The following year Spock campaigned for Medicare, a government program to help older citizens. He angered the American Medical Association, many of whose members were already suspicious of a colleague who wrote advice columns for the *Ladies Home Journal* and *Redbook* instead of writing technical articles for the medical journals.

Spock was an early opponent of the Vietnam War (1955–75; a conflict fought in Vietnam when Communist North Vietnam invaded democratic South Vietnam). As the war escalated (grew), so did antiwar protest, in which Spock participated energetically. He marched and demonstrated with young people who had not yet been born when he had begun his medical career.

Spock's political opponents accused him of teaching "permissiveness" in *Baby and Child Care*. They claimed an entire generation of American youth had been raised and ruined. Without success Spock pointed out that similar student protests were happening in Third

World countries, where his book was not sold, and were not happening in Western European countries, where it sold well.

Baby and Child Care revised

Because of Spock's own strict personal upbringing and his acute moral sense, he may have intended a lot less than some of them realized when he told parents to "relax." In 1968 he revised *Baby and Child Care* to make his intentions more clear, now cautioning his readers "Don't be afraid that your children will dislike you" when they set limits and enforced them. Nevertheless, the 1968 edition showed a fifty percent drop in sales. Spock thought it was because of his stand on the war in Vietnam.

On May 20, 1968, Spock was put on trial for conspiracy, along with several other leading war protesters. The charge was that he had counseled young people to resist the draft. He was convicted, but on appeal the verdict was set aside (cancelled) on a technicality (small detail). Some upset readers turned in their well-thumbed copies of *Baby and Child Care* in order to prevent further undermining of their children's patriotism. To many other readers, however, the government's indictment (charging with an offense) of the baby doctor seemed rather like prosecuting Santa Claus.

Modifies and explains his views

Two books published in 1970, *Decent and Indecent: Our Personal and Political Behavior* and *A Teenager's Guide to Life and Love*, made it clear that Spock was a good deal more of a traditional moralist than either his friends or enemies realized. He had been driven into the antiwar and other reform

movements by the same old-fashioned conscience that propelled some of his opponents in exactly the opposite direction. At the same time the doctor showed himself capable of growing and changing. In 1972 he ran for president on the People's Party (an independent political party) ticket.

Spock was also capable of admitting a mistake. Badgered for some five years on the lecture platform by feminists objecting to the gender-role stereotypes of fathers and mothers as they appeared in *Baby and Child Care*, he eventually admitted that much of what they had said had been right. In 1976, thirty years after its initial publication, Spock brought out a third version of the famous book. He deleted material he himself termed "sexist" and called on fathers to share more of the parental responsibility.

Last years

Formally retired in 1967, Spock was the kind of person who never really retired in spirit. Contemplating his own death as his health began to fail in the 1980s, he wrote in 1985 (at the age of eighty-two) that he did not want any dark funeral tunes played over him: "My ideal would be the New Orleans black funeral, in which friends snake-dance through the streets to the music of a jazz band."

Spock had chronic bronchitis and suffered a stroke in 1989. His second wife, Mary, worked with him on his autobiography, *Spock on Spock*, which was published in 1989. Dr. Spock died at his home in La Jolla, California, on March 15, 1998, at the age of ninety-four.

Spock's work influenced how Americans brought up an entire generation of young

people. Even today his books are still regarded as a popular source of information for bringing up children.

For More Information

- Bloom, Lynn Z. *Doctor Spock: Biography of a Conservative Radical*. Indianapolis, IN: Bobbs-Merrill, 1972.
- Maier, Thomas. *Dr. Spock: An American Life*. New York: Harcourt Brace, 1998.
- Mitford, Jessica. *The Trial of Dr. Spock, the Rev. William Sloane Coffin, Jr., Michael Ferber, Mitchell Goodman, and Marcus Raskin*. New York: Knopf, 1969.
- Spock, Benjamin, and Morgan, Mary. *Spock on Spock: A Memoir of Growing Up with the Century*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1989.

JOSEPH STALIN

Born: December 21, 1879

Gori, Georgia

Died: March 5, 1953

Moscow, Union of Soviet Socialist Republics

Russian ruler

The Soviet statesman Joseph Stalin was the supreme ruler of the Soviet Union. He led his country alongside America and England through World War II (1939–45) in their fight against Germany, Italy and Japan. As ruler of Russia, Stalin was the leader of world communism for almost thirty years.

Early years

Joseph Stalin was born Iosif Vissarionovich Dzhugashvili on December 21, 1879, in Gori, Georgia. He was the only surviving son of Vissarion Dzhugashvili, a cobbler who first practiced his craft in a village shop but later in a shoe factory in the city. Stalin's father died in 1891. Stalin's mother, Ekaterina, a religious and illiterate (unable to read or write) peasant woman, sent her teenage son to the theological seminary in Tbilisi (Tiflis), Georgia, where Stalin prepared for the ministry. Shortly before his graduation, however, he was expelled in 1899 for spreading subversive views (ideas that went against those of the government).

Stalin then joined the underground revolutionary Marxist movement in Tbilisi, a movement devoted to the views of Karl Marx (1818–1883) and Frederick Engels (1821–1896), who believed in the political system of socialism that gave power to the working class and would ultimately lead to communism, where goods and services would be distributed by the government. In 1901 he was elected a member of the Tbilisi committee of the Russian Social Democratic Workers Party. The following year he was arrested, imprisoned, and later exiled (forced to move) to Siberia, a cold and remote region of Russia. Stalin escaped from Siberia in 1904 and rejoined the Marxist underground in Tbilisi. When the Russian Marxist movement split into two factions (rival groups), Stalin identified himself with the Bolsheviks.

During the time of the 1904–1905 revolution, Stalin made a name for himself as the organizer of daring bank robberies and raids on money transports, an activity that Marxist leader V. I. Lenin (1870–1924) considered

important due to the party's need for funds. Many other Marxists considered this type of highway robbery unworthy of a revolutionary socialist.

Stalin participated in congresses (governing parties) of the Russian Social Democratic Workers Party at Tampere, London, and Stockholm, Sweden, in 1905 and 1906, meeting Lenin for the first time at these congresses. In 1912 Lenin recruited Stalin into the Central Committee of the Bolshevik party. Stalin spent the major portion of the years from 1905 to 1912 in organizational work for the movement, mainly in the city of Baku, Russia. The secret police arrested him several times, and several times he escaped. Eventually, after his return from Vienna, Austria, the police caught him again, and he was exiled to the faraway village of Turukhansk beyond the Arctic Circle. He remained there until the fall of czarism, the Russian rule of a sole leader or king. He adopted the name Stalin ("man of steel") around 1913.

First Years of Soviet rule

After the fall of czarism, Stalin made his way at once to Petrograd, Russia, where until the arrival of Lenin from Switzerland he was the senior Bolshevik and the editor of *Pravda*, the party newspaper. After Lenin's return, Stalin remained in the high councils of the party, but had only a small role in the preparations for the October Revolution, which placed the Bolsheviks in power. In the first position of the communist Soviet government, he held the post of people's commissar for nationalities (in charge of party loyalty).

Within the party, he rose to the highest ranks, becoming a member of both the Political Bureau and the Organizational Bureau.

When the party Secretariat was organized, he became one of its leading members and was appointed its secretary general in 1922, where Lenin appreciated Stalin's ability as a politician and as a troubleshooter. The strength of Stalin's position in the government and in the party was probably anchored by his secretary generalship, which gave him control over party personnel administration—over admissions, training, assignments, promotions, and disciplinary matters. This position also ranked him as the most powerful man in Soviet Russia after Lenin.

Rise to power

During Lenin's last illness and after his death in 1924, Stalin served as a member of the three-man committee that ran the affairs of the party and the country. Stalin represented, for the time, the right wing (conservative) of the party that wanted to stay true to the ideas of the revolution. He and his spokesman, Nikolai Bukharin (1888–1938), warned against revolutionaries and argued in favor of continuing the more cautious and patient policies that Lenin had installed with the New Economic Policy (NEP).

In 1927 Stalin succeeded in defeating the entire opposition and in eliminating its leaders from the party. He then adopted much of its domestic program by starting a five-year plan of industrial development and by executing it with a degree of recklessness that angered many of his former supporters, who then formed an opposition to him. This opposition, too, was defeated quickly, and by the early 1930s Stalin had gained dictatorial (total) control over the party, the state, and the entire Communist International.



Joseph Stalin.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Stalin's personality

Although always depicted as a towering figure, Stalin, in fact, was fairly short. His personality was highly controversial, and it remains a mystery. Stalin was crude and cruel and, in some important ways, a primitive man. In political life he tended to be cautious and slow-moving, and his writing style was much the same. Stalin was at times, however, a clever speaker and a fierce debater. He seems to have possessed boundless energy and an amazing ability to absorb detailed knowledge.

About Stalin's private life, little is known beyond the fact that he seems always to have been a lonely man. His first wife, a Georgian

girl named Ekaterina Svanidze, died of tuberculosis, a terrible disease that attacks the lungs and bones. His second wife, Nadezhda Alleluyeva, killed herself in 1932, apparently over Stalin's dictatorial rule of the party. The only child from his first marriage, Jacob, fell into German hands during World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis—Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies—led by Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and, later, the United States) and was killed. The two children from his second marriage outlived their father, but they were not always on good terms with him. The son, Vasili, an officer in the Soviet air force, drank himself to death in 1962. The daughter, Svetlana, fled to the United States in the 1960s.

Stalin's achievements

In back-to-back five-year plans, the Soviet Union under Stalin began to modernize (to accept modern ideas and styles) with great speed. Although the military needs of the country drained away precious resources, and World War II brought total destruction to several cities and death to many millions of citizens, the nation by the end of Stalin's life had become an important industrial country in the world, second only to the United States.

The price the Soviet Union paid for this great achievement remains staggering. It included the destruction of all free enterprise (business organizations) in both town and country. The transformation of Soviet agriculture in the early 1930s into collectives (groups of managed farms) tremendously damaged the country's food production. Living standards were drastically lowered at first, and more than a million people died of starvation. Meanwhile, Stalin jailed and executed

vast numbers of party members, especially the old revolutionaries and the leading figures in many other areas. Stalin created a new kind of political system characterized by severe police control, strengthening of the government, and personal dictatorship. Historians consider his government one of history's worst examples of totalitarianism, or having complete political control with no opposition. In world affairs the Stalinist system became isolationist, meaning the country moved away from building relations with foreign nations.

From the middle of the 1930s onward, Stalin personally managed the vast political and economic system he had established. Formally, he took charge of it in May 1941, when he assumed the office of chairman of the Council of Ministers. After Germany invaded the Soviet Union, Stalin also assumed formal command of the entire military establishment.

Stalin's conduct of Russian military strategy in the war remains as controversial as most of his activities. Some evidence indicates that he committed serious mistakes, but other evidence gives him credit for brilliant achievements. The fact remains that under Stalin the Soviet Union won the war, emerged as one of the major powers in the world, and managed to bargain for a distribution of the spoils of war (seized land resulting from Soviet victory) that enlarged its area of domination significantly.

Stalin died of a brain hemorrhage (an abnormal bleeding of the brain) on March 5, 1953. His body was placed in a tomb next to Lenin's in Red Square in Moscow. After his death Stalin became a controversial figure in the communist world, where appreciation for his great achievements was offset by harsh criticism of his methods.

For More Information

- Downing, David. *Joseph Stalin*. Chicago: Heinemann Library, 2002.
- Otfinoski, Steven. *Joseph Stalin: Russia's Last Czar*. Brookfield, CT: Millbrook Press, 1993.
- Radzinskii, Edvard. *Stalin: The First In-Depth Biography Based on Explosive New Documents from Russia's Secret Archives*. New York: Doubleday, 1996.
- Ulam, Adam B. *Stalin: The Man and His Era*. Expanded ed. Boston: Beacon Press, 1989.

ELIZABETH CADY STANTON

Born: November 12, 1815

Johnstown, New York

Died: October 26, 1902

New York, New York

American writer and women's rights activist

The writer and reformer Elizabeth Cady Stanton (1815–1902) was perhaps the most gifted feminist leader in American history.

The makings of a feminist

Elizabeth Cady was born in Johnstown, New York, on November 12, 1815. She came from a wealthy and politically important family. Her father, Daniel Cady (1773–1859), was a well-known lawyer who had served in Congress, on the New York state legislature, and as a judge on the New York state supreme court. Her mother came from a wealthy fam-

ily whose members had included a hero of the American Revolution (1775–83), when the thirteen British colonies in North America fought for their freedom.

The Cadys had eleven children, most of whom did not survive to adulthood. Eleazar Cady, their only son to survive, died when he was twenty, leaving them with four daughters. In her autobiography, *Eighty Years and More*, Stanton related her father's feelings at having lost all his male heirs. Although the eleven-year-old Elizabeth attempted to console him, his reaction was to tell her, "Oh, my daughter, I wish you were a boy." The experience made young Cady determined to be the equal of any male. She tried hard to please her father by excelling in areas normally reserved for men, starting with Greek and horsemanship.

Cady's father's profession also led her to embrace the cause of women's rights. As the daughter of a judge, she was exposed early to the legal barriers to women's equality. While still a child, she heard her father tell abused women that they had no legal alternative but to endure mistreatment by their husbands and fathers. She was especially outraged by the rights of husbands to control their wives' property.

Education and marriage

As a young woman, Elizabeth Cady studied at the Troy Female Seminary from 1830 to 1833. She had the best education then available to women. The school offered a strong academic course of studies in addition to the more typical educational options for women at that time—which tended to focus on developing social skills. However, while at Troy, she experienced a nervous col-



Elizabeth Cady Stanton.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

lapse after experiencing a religious conversion (change) that filled her with fears that she would go to hell. After this experience, she developed an intense dislike toward organized religion.

In 1840 she married the abolitionist (a person who is against slavery) leader Henry B. Stanton (1805–1887). Her feminist side showed at the wedding ceremony, in which she insisted (and Stanton agreed) that she would not give the wife's traditional promise to “obey” her husband. Keeping her maiden name as Elizabeth Cady Stanton, rather than going by the name of Mrs. Henry B. Stanton, was also unusual at the time.

Working for suffrage

Although Henry Stanton sympathized with his wife's ambitions for a wider role in the world, he was not wealthy, and she remained home with her five children for many years. All the same, she was able to do some writing and speaking for the feminist cause. In 1848 she organized America's first woman's rights convention in Seneca Falls, New York, where the Stantons lived. She also composed a declaration of principles, which described the history of humankind as one in which men had repeatedly and intentionally suppressed the rights of women in order to establish “absolute tyranny” over them. Despite opposition, she persuaded the convention to approve a resolution calling for women's suffrage, or women's right to vote.

The Civil War (1861–65) was fought between the northern states and southern states to decide whether or not slavery would be allowed in new territories, and whether or not the South would leave the Union to form an independent nation. During the war Stanton and her ally Susan B. Anthony (1820–1906) created the National Woman's Loyal League to build support for what became the Thirteenth Amendment to the Constitution, which ended slavery in the United States. Once the slaves were free, Stanton and Anthony worked to ensure that women would be given the vote along with former male slaves. However, it was thought that if the struggle to gain the right to vote for black men was associated with votes for women, neither black men nor women of any color would get the vote.

This opposition only made Stanton and her colleagues more stubborn. Their campaign finally divided the women's suffrage

movement into two camps. One was their own, New York-based band of uncompromising radicals (people who are extreme in their political beliefs), called the National Woman Suffrage Association. The other was a more conservative group, the American Woman Suffrage Association, which was centered in Boston and supported the idea that attaining the vote for black men was more important than demanding the vote for women. There were several differences in the positions of the two organizations, and a good deal of personal hostility developed between them. By 1890, however, these problems were overcome, and the two organizations merged into the National American Woman Suffrage Association. Stanton became the group's president.

Later years

Stanton remained active during her later years, however, she was less concerned with suffrage and more interested in reforming divorce laws and other similar matters. A stylish and witty writer, she worked with Anthony and Matilda Gage on the first three volumes of the massive collection *History of Woman Suffrage* and edited *The Woman's Bible*. Stanton also wrote articles on a variety of subjects for the best magazines of her time. She died on October 26, 1902, in New York City. With Susan B. Anthony, she is recognized today as one of the most important figures in the early movement to gain women's rights in the United States.

For More Information

Griffith, Elisabeth. *In Her Own Right: The Life of Elizabeth Cady Stanton*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1984.

Stanton, Elizabeth Cady. *Eighty Years and More*. New York: European Publishing Company, 1898, revised edition 2002.

Ward, Geoffrey C. *Not For Ourselves Alone: The Story of Elizabeth Cady Stanton and Susan B. Anthony*. New York: Knopf, 1999.

EDITH STEIN

Born: October 12, 1891

Breslau, Germany

Died: August 9, 1942

Auschwitz, Poland

German philosopher

German philosopher Edith Stein was a leading supporter of the early twentieth century's phenomenological school of thought, which explored human awareness and perception. A Jew by birth who converted to Catholicism, she was killed in a Nazi (having to do with members of the German Socialist Party led by Adolf Hitler from 1933 to 1945) concentration camp (a guarded enclosure where political prisoners were kept) and canonized (declared a saint) in 1998.

Childhood

Edith Stein was born on October 12, 1891, in Breslau, Germany. She was the youngest of eleven children born to Jewish lumber merchants hailing originally from Silesia (now part of Poland). Raised in a very religious atmosphere, four of her siblings died



Edith Stein.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

before Stein's birth. Stein's father died when she was only a year old, leaving her mother, Auguste Stein, in charge of the debt-ridden business and the surviving children. Because her mother was required to devote most of her time to work outside the home, her oldest daughter, Else, took on much of the responsibility of raising the younger children.

As a child, Stein was known for her intelligence and sense of humor—she would often recite poetry and make clever remarks. But she disliked her reputation as “the smart one” of the family and began to develop a more quiet nature in her early school days. She attended the Victoria School in Breslau,

where she not only began classes early, but quickly became the top student in her grade. Her love of learning extended to her hours at home as well, where she spent much of her free time reading.

At the age of thirteen, Stein underwent a crisis of faith and decided to leave school. Although she no longer believed in God, she did not discuss her beliefs with her family and continued to attend religious services. Stein soon came to terms with her new ideas and decided to devote her life to teaching and the pursuit of the truth. She returned to Victoria School and completed her coursework in hopes of attending college.

Discovering Catholicism

Stein began her advanced education at the University of Breslau in 1911 where she was influenced by the works of Edmund Husserl (1859–1938) who was a professor of philosophy (the study of knowledge) at Göttingen University and was the founder of the school of thought known as phenomenology, an examination of the development of human awareness. The work was an eye-opener to Stein, who decided that she wanted to study with Husserl at Göttingen. It was at Göttingen that Stein was first exposed to the Roman Catholic faith. When in 1916 Husserl took a professorship at the University of Freiburg, he requested that Stein join him as his graduate assistant. She was very successful at Freiburg and soon became known as a top philosopher at the university.

Stein's interest in Catholicism increased in 1917 which led her to read the New Testament, the second half of the Bible. These experiences convinced Stein that she believed in God and the divinity of Jesus

Christ, but did not convert to Catholicism until 1921.

During a stay at a girl's school in Speyer, Germany, Stein was encouraged by the Jesuit priest and philosopher Erich Przywara not to abandon her academic work. At his urging, she began a German translation of a Latin work on truth by St. Thomas Aquinas (1225–1274). Through her study of Aquinas and her discussions with Przywara, she was convinced that she could serve God through a search for truth. Her writing and translations became popular, and Stein was invited to lecture for a number of groups on religious and women's issues in Germany, Switzerland, and Austria.

Completes book on Jewish life

Attacks on Jewish people were becoming frequent and in 1933, Adolf Hitler (1889–1945) and his Nazi Party came to power in Germany. One result of the rise of Hitler was that Stein and other people of Jewish origin in university positions were fired from her job. Stein felt that she had a unique opportunity and responsibility, as a Jewishborn Catholic, to bridge the gap of understanding between Christians and Jews. To accomplish this, she wrote the book *Aus dem Leben einer Jüdischen Familie*, (“Life in a Jewish Family”) which tried to show the similar human experiences of Jews and Christians in their daily lives. In 1933, she attempted to combine the thoughts of Husserl and Aquinas in her book *Endliches und ewiges Sein* (“Finite and Eternal Being”), completed in 1936. Under the anti-Jewish laws in effect then, however, the book was refused for publication and was not printed until 1950.

Because of the Nazi rule, Stein realized she was no longer safe in her native country and fled to a convent (a community of nuns) in Echt in the Netherlands on December 31, 1938. In Echt, she was joined by her sister Rosa, who had also converted to Catholicism.

Killed in concentration camp

In 1942 the Nazis began removing Jews from the Netherlands, and Stein urgently applied for a Swiss visa (an official authorization of travel) in order to transfer to a convent in Switzerland. Her sister was unable to arrange similar travel arrangements, however, and Stein refused to leave without her. On August 2, 1942, the sisters were removed from the convent at Echt by Nazi troops and transported to a concentration camp at Amersfoort, Netherlands, for a few days before being sent on to the Auschwitz camp in Poland. While nothing is known about their last days or the exact circumstances of their deaths, it is assumed the women were among the many people killed in the Nazi gas chambers, placed in mass graves on the site, and later cremated, or burned to ashes.

In 1987, decades after the travesties of the Jewish Holocaust (the horrors imposed by the Nazis which resulted in the deaths of thousands of Jews), Stein was beatified (blessed) by Pope John Paul II (1920–), who praised her as a Catholic martyr (one who dies for their beliefs) and also praised her phenomenological works. This created controversy among Jewish groups, who were upset that she was remembered in this way since the reason she was killed was because she was a Jew, not because she was Catholic. In an apologetic statement, John Paul II acknowledged that her fate was a symbol of

the great loss of Jewish life during World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis Powers: Germany, Italy, and Japan, and the Allied Powers: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States). This discussion highlighted the difficult, but important place Stein holds among both Jews and Catholics. Stein's canonization (emergence to sainthood) by the Pope on October 11, 1998, also drew protest from some Jews.

For More Information

Gaboriau, Florent. *The Conversion of Edith Stein*. Edited by Ralph McNerny. South Bend, IN: St. Augustine's Press, 2001.

Graef, Hilda C. *The Scholar and the Cross: The Life and Work of Edith Stein*. Westminster, MD: Newman Press, 1955.

Herbstrith, Waltraud. *Edith Stein: A Biography*. New York: Harper & Row, 1985.

Oben, Freda Mary. *The Life and Thought of Saint Edith Stein*. New York: Alba House, 2001.

Scaperlanda, María Ruiz. *Edith Stein: St. Teresa Benedicta of the Cross*. Huntington, IN: Our Sunday Visitor, 2001.

GERTRUDE STEIN

Born: February 3, 1874

Allegheny, Pennsylvania

Died: July 27, 1946

Neuilly, France

American writer

American writer Gertrude Stein was a powerful literary force in the early part of the twentieth century. Although the ultimate value of her writing was a matter of debate, it greatly affected the work of a generation of American writers.

Childhood

Gertrude Stein was born in Allegheny, Pennsylvania, on February 3, 1874, the youngest of five children of Daniel and Amelia Stein, her wealthy German-Jewish-American parents. As a child, she lived in Vienna, Austria, and Paris, France, but grew up mainly in Oakland, and San Francisco, California. Living in these different countries, she learned to speak German, French, and English fluently. She also learned music and dance. Her early formal education was spotty, but she was a dedicated reader and had a strong interest in art. When Stein was fourteen her mother died, followed by her father just three years later. With the family splintered, Stein, along with one sister, moved to Baltimore, Maryland, to live with her aunt.

With only a year of high school, Stein managed to be admitted in 1893 to Radcliffe College, in Massachusetts, where she specialized in psychology (the study of the mind) and became a favorite of psychologist and philosopher (one who seeks wisdom about humans and their place in the universe) William James (1842–1910). He discovered her great capacity for automatic writing, in which the conscious waking mind is suspended and the unconscious sleeping mind takes over. The emphasis of the primitive mind at the expense of the sophisticated mind was to become an important part in Stein's theory and is demonstrated in most of her writing.

Moves to France

Stein did not take a degree at Radcliffe or Johns Hopkins University, in Maryland, where she studied medicine for four years. In 1903 she went to Paris, France, and took up residence on the Left Bank (a famous neighborhood in Paris) with her brother Leo. In 1907 she met Alice B. Toklas (1877–1967), a wealthy young San Franciscan who became her lifelong companion and secretary, running the household, typing manuscripts, and screening visitors. France became their permanent home.

During Stein's early Paris years she established herself as a champion of the avant-garde painters, or artists that strive for new methods and techniques within their art. With her inherited wealth she supported young artists and knew virtually all of the important painters, including Pablo Picasso (1881–1973), who did a famous portrait of her, Henri Matisse (1869–1954), Juan Gris (1887–1927), Andrée Derain (1880–1954), and Georges Braque (1882–1963). Her brother Leo became a famous art critic, but their relationship, which had been extremely close, fell apart in 1912 because of a disagreement over his marriage.

Stein's first two books, *Three Lives* (1909) and *Tender Buttons* (1915), stirred considerable interest among a limited but sophisticated audience, and her home became an informal meeting place visited by many creative people, including American composer Virgil Thomson (1896–1969), British writers Ford Madox Ford (1873–1939), Lytton Strachey (1880–1932), and Edith Sitwell (1887–1964), and American writers Ezra Pound (1885–1972), Elliot Paul (1891–1958), Sherwood Anderson (1876–1941), F. Scott Fitzgerald (1896–

1940), and Ernest Hemingway (1899–1961). It was to Hemingway that Stein characterized the disenfranchised expatriate veterans (those living overseas) as a "lost generation."

A woman with deep black eyes and a supremely self-assured manner, Stein was frequently intimidating, impatient with disagreement, and oftentimes pushed people away. The unique style of her writing appealed primarily to a small audience, but her reputation as a patron of the arts was lifelong.

Stein's 1934 visit to the United States for the opening of her opera *Four Saints in Three Acts*, with music by Virgil Thomson, started an

enormously successful university lecture tour. During the German occupation of France (the time during World War II when German forces took over large portions of France), both Stein and Toklas lived briefly in Culoz, France, returning to Paris in 1944. Stein's reactions to World War II (1939–45; a war in which American-led British, French, Soviet, and American forces battled those led by Germany) were recorded in *Paris, France* (1940) and *Wars I Have Seen* (1945), and her interest in the soldiers was reflected in the conversations of *Brewsie and Willie* (1946), which was published a week before her death, on July 27, 1946, in Neuilly, France.

Her writings

Stein's first book, *Three Lives*, her most realistic work, foreshadowed her more abstract (conceptual and not easily expressed by conventional methods) writings and demonstrated a number of influences including, Gustave Flaubert's (1821–1880) *Trois contes*, and automatic writing. "Melanctha," the best of the three novellas (written pieces that are shorter than a novel but longer than a short story) that made up the book, was an especially tender treatment of an impulsive, flirting African American woman whose relations with men were recorded in a informal, deliberately repetitious style intended to capture the immediacy of consciousness. Stein wanted to give literature the plastic freedom that painting has, and *Tender Buttons* was a striking attempt at verbal "portraits" in the manner of the cubist painters, an early twentieth-century movement that emphasized the use of geometric shapes.

Stein's *The Making of Americans: Being a History of a Family's Progress* (1925) gave

character analysis within a family chronicle, although it was chiefly concerned with the servants and only very little with the family members. In the 1930s and 1940s she concentrated on memoirs (an account of personal experience), aesthetic theory, plays, and art criticism. *How to Write* (1931) and *The Geographical History of America: The Relation of Human Nature to the Human Mind* (1936) explained the theoretical basis of her literary practice.

The Autobiography of Alice B. Toklas (1933), written as if by Toklas, was an autobiography of Stein. Unexpectedly readable and charming, it became a best-seller. Critic F. W. Dupee called it "one of the best memoirs in American literature." A sequel, *Everybody's Autobiography* (1937), described Stein's visit to America, and *Portraits and Prayers* (1934) was a collection of verbal pictures of her Paris circle.

Stein's libretto (opera) for *Four Saints in Three Acts* (1934) was a study of the attraction of opposites—the self-disciplined and the compassionate. *Picasso* (1939) was an inconsistent, witty, sometimes illuminating study of the development of the great painter's art. Her three wartime books and *In Savoy; Or Yes Is for a Very Young Man: A Play of the Resistance in France* (1946) showed unexpected social concern.

After Stein's death, there were numerous publications of the works she left behind. Some of the more notable are *The Previously Uncollected Writings of Gertrude Stein* and *Dear Sammy: Letters from Gertrude Stein and Alice B. Toklas*. These works were released in 1974 and 1977 respectively. In 1996 Stein's *Four Saints in Three Acts* was remade into an avant-garde opera.

For More Information

- Bridgman, Richard. *Gertrude Stein in Pieces*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1970.
- Simon, Linda. *Gertrude Stein Remembered*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1994.
- Souhami, Diana. *Gertrude and Alice*. San Francisco: Pandora, 1992.
- Wineapple, Brenda. *Sister Brother: Gertrude and Leo Stein*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1996.

JOHN STEINBECK

Born: February 27, 1902

Salinas, California

Died: December 20, 1968

New York, New York

American writer

John Steinbeck, American author and winner of the Nobel Prize in 1962, was a leading writer of novels about the working class and was a major spokesman for the victims of the Great Depression (a downturn in the American system of producing, distributing, and using goods and services in the 1930s, and during which time millions of people lost their jobs).

Early life

John Ernst Steinbeck was born on February 27, 1902, in Salinas, California, the only son of John Ernst Steinbeck Sr. and Olive Hamilton. His father was a bookkeeper and accountant who served for many years as

the treasurer of Monterey County, California. Steinbeck received his love of literature from his mother, who was interested in the arts. His favorite book, and a main influence on his writing, was Sir Thomas Malory's (c. 1408–1471) *Le Morte d'Arthur*, a collection of the legends of King Arthur. Steinbeck decided while in high school that he wanted to be a writer. He also enjoyed playing sports and worked during the summer on various ranches.

Steinbeck worked as a laboratory assistant and farm laborer to support himself through six years of study at Stanford University, where he took only those courses that interested him without seeking a degree. In 1925 he traveled to New York (by way of the Panama Canal) on a freighter (boat that carries inventory). After arriving in New York, he worked as a reporter and as part of a construction crew building Madison Square Garden. During this time he was also collecting impressions for his first novel. *Cup of Gold* (1929) was an unsuccessful attempt at romance involving the pirate Henry Morgan.

Begins writing seriously

Undiscouraged, Steinbeck returned to California to begin work as a writer of serious fiction. A collection of short stories, *The Pastures of Heaven* (1932), contained vivid descriptions of rural (farm) life among the “unfinished children of nature” in his native California valley. His second novel, *To a God Unknown* (1933), was his strongest statement about man's relationship to the land. With *Tortilla Flat* (1935) Steinbeck received critical and popular success; there are many critics who consider it his most artistically satisfying work.



John Steinbeck.

Steinbeck next dealt with the problems of labor unions in *In Dubious Battle* (1936), an effective story of a strike (when workers all decide to stop working as a form of protest against unfair treatment) by local grape pickers. *Of Mice and Men* (1937), first conceived as a play, is a tightly constructed novella (short novel) about an unusual friendship between two migrant workers (laborers who travel to wherever there is available work, usually on farms). Although the book is powerfully written and often moving, some critics feel that it lacks a moral vision.

Steinbeck's series of articles for the *San Francisco Chronicle* on the problems of migrant farm laborers provided material for

The Grapes of Wrath (1939), his major novel and the finest working-class novel of the 1930s. *The Grapes of Wrath* relates the struggle of a family of Oklahoma tenant farmers forced to turn over their land to the banks. The family then journeys across the vast plains to the promised land of California—only to be met with scorn when they arrive. It is a successful example of social protest in fiction, as well as a convincing tribute to man's will to survive. *The Grapes of Wrath* received the Pulitzer Prize in 1940.

Other subjects

During World War II (1939–45), which the United States entered to help other nations battle Germany, Italy, and Japan, Steinbeck served as a foreign correspondent. From this experience came such nonfiction as *Bombs Away: The Story of a Bomber Team* (1942); *Once There Was a War* (1958), a collection of Steinbeck's dispatches from 1943; and *A Russian Journal* (1948), with photographs by Robert Capa. More interesting nonfiction of this period is *The Sea of Cortez*, coauthored with scientist Edward F. Ricketts. This account of the two explorers' research into sea life provides an important key to many of the themes and attitudes featured in Steinbeck's novels.

Steinbeck's fiction during the 1940s includes *The Moon Is Down* (1942), a tale of the Norwegian resistance to occupation by the Nazis (German ruling party that scorned democracy and considered all non-German people, especially Jews, inferior); *Cannery Row* (1944), a return to the setting of *Tortilla Flat*; *The Wayward Bus* (1947); and *The Pearl*, a popular novella about a poor Mexican fisherman who discovers a valuable pearl that brings bad luck to his family.

Later decline

In the 1950s Steinbeck's artistic decline was evident with a series of novels that were overly sentimental, stuffy, and lacking in substance. The author received modest critical praise in 1961 for his more ambitious novel *The Winter of Our Discontent*, a study of the moral disintegration (falling apart) of a man of high ideals. In 1962 *Travels with Charley*, a pleasantly humorous account of his travels through America with his pet poodle, was well received. Following the popular success of the latter work, Steinbeck was awarded the Nobel Prize.

Steinbeck's work remains popular in both the United States and Europe, chiefly for its social consciousness and concern and for the narrative qualities displayed in the early novels. Although he refused to settle into political conservatism (preferring to maintain traditions and resist change) in his later years, his all-embracing support of American values and acceptance of all national policies, including the Vietnam War (1955–75; conflict in which the United States fought against Communist North Vietnam when they invaded Democratic South Vietnam), lost him the respect of many liberal (preferring social change) intellectuals who had once admired his social commitments. He died on December 20, 1968, in New York City.

For More Information

Benson, Jackson J. *John Steinbeck, Writer: A Biography*. New York; Penguin Books, 1990.

Lynch, Audry. *Steinbeck Remembered*. Santa Barbara: Fithian Press, 2000.

Moore, Harry T. *The Novels of John Steinbeck: A First Critical Study*. Chicago: Normandie House, 1939, revised edition 1977.

Parini, Jay. *John Steinbeck: A Biography*. New York: H. Holt, 1995.

Steinbeck, John IV, and Nancy Steinbeck. *The Other Side of Eden: Life with John Steinbeck*. Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books, 2001.

ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Born: November 13, 1850

Edinburgh, Scotland

Died: December 3, 1894

Upolu, Samoa

Scottish writer

The Scottish novelist, essayist, and poet Robert Louis Stevenson was one of the most popular and highly praised British writers during the last part of the nineteenth century.

Sickly childhood

Robert Louis Stevenson was born on November 13, 1850, in Edinburgh, Scotland, the son of a noted lighthouse builder and harbor engineer. Though healthy at birth, Stevenson soon became a victim of constant breathing problems that later developed into tuberculosis, a sometimes fatal disease that attacks the lungs and bones. These persistent health problems made him extremely thin and weak most of his life.

By the time Stevenson entered Edinburgh University at the age of sixteen to study engineering, he had fallen under the spell of language and had begun to write. For



Robert Louis Stevenson.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

several years he attended classes irregularly, developing a bohemian existence (an artistic lifestyle different than that of mainstream society), complete with long hair and velvet jackets. He also associated himself with Edinburgh's seedy and dangerous neighborhoods.

Early works

When Stevenson was twenty-one years old, he openly declared his intention of becoming a writer, against the strong opposition of his father. Agreeing to study law as a compromise, in 1875 Stevenson was admitted to the Scottish bar, an organization for lawyers. Having traveled to the European

mainland several times for health and pleasure, he now swung back and forth between Scotland and a growing circle of artistic and literary friends in London, England, and Paris, France. Stevenson's first book, *An Inland Voyage* (1878), related his adventures during a canoe trip on Belgium and France's canals.

In France in 1876 Stevenson met an American woman named Fanny Osbourne. Separated from her husband, she was eleven years older than Stevenson and had two children. Three years later Stevenson and Osbourne were married. After accompanying his wife to America, Stevenson stayed in an abandoned mining camp, later recounted in *The Silverado Squatters* (1883). A year after setting out for the United States, Stevenson was back in Scotland. But the climate there proved to be a severe hardship on his health, and for the next four years he and his wife lived in Switzerland and in the south of France. Despite his health, these years proved to be productive. The stories Stevenson collected in *The New Arabian Nights* (1883) and *The Merry Men* (1887) range from detective stories to Scottish dialect tales, or tales of the region.

Popular novels

Treasure Island (1881, 1883), first published as a series in a children's magazine, ranks as Stevenson's first popular book, and it established his fame. A perfect romance, according to Stevenson's formula, the novel tells the story of a boy's involvement with murderous pirates. *Kidnapped* (1886), set in Scotland during a time of great civil unrest, has the same charm. In its sequel, *David Balfour* (1893), Stevenson could not avoid psychological and moral problems without marked strain. In *The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll*

BRAM STOKER

and *Mr. Hyde* (1886) he dealt directly with the nature of evil in man and the hideous effects that occur when man seeks to deny it. This work pointed the way toward Stevenson's more serious later novels. During this same period he published a very popular collection of poetry, *A Child's Garden of Verses* (1885).

After the death of Stevenson's father in 1887, he again traveled to the United States, this time for his health. He lived for a year at Saranac Lake, New York, in the Adirondack Mountains. In 1889 Stevenson and his family set out on a cruise of the South Sea Islands. When it became clear that only there could he live in relatively good health, he settled on the island of Upolu in Samoa. He bought a plantation (Vailima), built a house, and gained influence with the natives, who called him Tusifala ("teller of tales"). By the time of his death on December 3, 1894, Stevenson had become a significant figure in island affairs. His observations on Samoan life were published in the collection *In the South Seas* (1896) and in *A Footnote to History* (1892). Of the stories written in these years, "The Beach of Falesá" in *Island Nights' Entertainments* (1893) remains particularly interesting as an exploration of the confrontation between European and native ways of life.

For More Information

- Calder, Jenni. *Robert Louis Stevenson: A Life Study*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1980.
- Furnas, Joseph C. *Voyage to Windward: The Life of Robert Louis Stevenson*. New York: Sloane, 1951.
- Woodhead, Richard. *The Strange Case of R. L. Stevenson*. Edinburgh, Scotland: Luath, 2001.

Born: November 8, 1847

Clontarf, Ireland

Died: April 20, 1912

London, England

Irish writer

Bram Stoker is best known as the author of *Dracula* (1897), one of the most famous horror novels of all time.

Early life

Abraham Stoker was born in Clontarf, Ireland, on November 8, 1847. He was a sickly child, bedridden for much of his boyhood until about the age of seven. As a youth, Stoker was intrigued by the stories told him by his mother, Charlotte. Especially influential to the mind of young Stoker were the stories she related about the cholera epidemic of 1832 which claimed thousands of lives. These cruel and vivid tales began to shape the young Stoker's imagination.

Stoker grew up strong, and as a student at Trinity College, in Dublin, Ireland, he excelled in athletics as well as academics, and graduated with honors in mathematics in 1870. He worked for ten years in the Irish Civil Service, and during this time contributed theater criticism to the *Dublin Mail*. His glowing reviews of Henry Irving's performances encouraged the actor to seek him out. The two became friends, and in 1879 Stoker became Irving's manager. He also performed managerial, secretarial, and even directorial duties at London, England's Lyceum Theatre. In 1878 he married Flo-



Bram Stoker.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

rence Balcombe and the couple moved to Cheyne Walk, Chelsea, in London.

Early writings

Despite Stoker's active personal and professional life, he began writing and publishing novels, beginning with *The Snake's Pass* in 1890. The success of this book prompted Stoker to continue writing.

Although most of Stoker's novels were favorably reviewed when they appeared, they are dated by their stereotyped characters (characters based on broad generalizations) and romanticized plots, and are rarely read today. Even the earliest reviews frequently

point out the stiff characterization and tendency to be overly dramatic that flaw Stoker's writing. Critics have universally praised, however, his beautifully precise place descriptions. Stoker's short stories, while sharing the faults of his novels, have fared better with modern readers. Anthologists (a person who puts together a collection of literary pieces) frequently include Stoker's stories in collections of horror fiction. "Dracula's Guest," originally intended as an introductory chapter to *Dracula*, is one of the best known. After a pair of books—*The Watter's Mou'* and *Antheneum*—were well received, he began research into the world of vampires.

Dracula

Stoker's *Dracula* appeared in 1897. The story is centered around the diaries and journal entries of Jonathan Harke when he meets the mysterious Count Dracula. The Transylvanian follows Harke to England, where the count continues his blood-thirsty endeavors. Laced with themes of lust and desire, Stoker spins a bloodcurdling tale that still haunts readers more than one hundred years after it was first published.

Dracula is generally regarded as the culmination of the Gothic (style of the twelfth to fifteenth centuries) vampire story, preceded earlier in the nineteenth century by William Polidori's *The Vampyre*, Thomas Prest's *Varney the Vampyre*, J. S. Le Fanu's *Carmilla*, and Guy de Maupassant's *Le Horla*. An early reviewer of *Dracula* in the *Spectator* commented that "the up-to-dateness of the book—the phonograph diaries, typewriters, and so on—hardly fits in with the medieval methods which ultimately secure the victory for Count Dracula's foes." The narrative, comprising journal

entries, letters, newspaper clippings, a ship's log, and phonograph recordings, allowed Stoker to contrast his character's actions with their own analysis of their acts.

Some early critics of Stoker's novel noted the "unnecessary number of hideous incidents" which could "shock and disgust" readers of *Dracula*. One critic even advised keeping the novel away from children and nervous adults. Initially, *Dracula* was interpreted as a straightforward horror novel. Dorothy Scarborough indicated the direction of future criticism in 1916 when she wrote that "Bram Stoker furnished us with several interesting specimens of supernatural life always tangled with other uncanny motives." In 1931 Ernest Jones, in his *On the Nightmare*, drew attention to the theory that these motives involve repressed sexual desires. Critics have since tended to view *Dracula* from a Freudian psychosexual standpoint, which deals with the sexual desires of the unconscious mind. However, the novel has also been interpreted from folkloric, political, medical, and religious points of view.

The legacy of Dracula

Today the name of Dracula is familiar to many people who may be wholly unaware of Stoker's identity, though the popularly held image of the vampire bears little resemblance to the demonic being that Stoker depicted. Adaptations of *Dracula* in plays and films have taken enormous creative freedoms with Stoker's characterization. A resurgence of interest in traditional folklore has revealed that Stoker himself did not use established vampire legends. Yet *Dracula* has had tremendous impact on readers since its publication. Whether Stoker created a universal

fear, or as some modern critics would have it, gave form to a universal fantasy, he created a powerful and lasting image that has become a part of popular culture.

Following the death of Stoker's close friend Irving, in 1905, he was associated with the literary staff of the *London Telegraph* and wrote several more works of fiction, including the horror novels *The Lady of the Shroud* (1909) and *The Lair of the White Worm* (1911). He died on April 20, 1912, in London, England.

For More Information

- Belford, Barbara. *Bram Stoker: A Biography of the Author of Dracula*. New York: Random House, 1996.
- Farson, Daniel. *The Man Who Wrote Dracula: A Biography of Bram Stoker*. New York: St. Martin's, 1976.
- Glut, Donald F. *The Dracula Book*. Metuchen, NJ: Scarecrow Press, 1975.
- Leatherdale, Clive. *Dracula: The Novel and the Legend*. Northamptonshire, England: Aquarian Press, 1985.
- Whitelaw, Nancy. *Bram Stoker: Author of Dracula*. Greensboro, NC: Morgan Reynolds, 1998.

**OLIVER
STONE**

Born: September 15, 1946
New York, New York
American director and writer

Oliver Stone is a writer-director of films with a flashy style that often deal with issues of the 1960s, such as America's involvement with the Vietnam War (1955–75; a war in which the United States aided South Vietnam in its fight against a takeover by Communist North Vietnam). He has won several Academy Awards as a writer and as a director.

Conservative background

Oliver William Stone was born on September 15, 1946, in New York City, the only child of Louis and Jacqueline Goddet Stone. His father was a successful stockbroker. Stone's childhood was marked by all the privileges of wealth—private schooling, summer vacations in France, and most importantly, a sense of patriotism. Stone's father was strongly conservative (one who believes in maintaining social and political traditions and who opposes change). When Stone was a junior at the Hill School, a Pennsylvania college prep academy, his parents decided to divorce. He discovered that his father was actually deeply in debt, which led him to question the values he had been taught. Stone entered Yale University in 1965, but he quit after only one year.

Late in 1965 Stone took a job teaching English at a school in Saigon, South Vietnam. He arrived there at the same time as did the first major commitment of U.S. troops, which were sent to help fight in Vietnam's civil war. Stone left after six months and returned home. While on his way back, he began to work on a novel, which he continued to work on during a brief stay in Mexico and another failed attempt at college. He was unable to find a publisher for it, and he then decided to

join the army. Stone continued to work on the novel, which grew to eleven hundred pages. *A Child's Night Dream* was finally released in 1997.

Shaped by Vietnam experience

Stone could have avoided the Vietnam War by staying in college, but he joined the service and insisted on combat duty in an attempt to prove to his father that he was a man. He soon discovered that real combat was much different than he expected. "Vietnam completely deadened me and sickened me," he told the *Washington Post*. Stone was involved in several deadly battles. He was shot once and wounded by shrapnel (bomb fragments) another time, and he often witnessed the brutal treatment of Vietnamese citizens by U.S. soldiers.

After Stone was discharged and returned to the United States, he enrolled at New York University, where he began to study filmmaking with director Martin Scorsese (1942–). Stone decided he wanted to write screenplays and make movies. Stone graduated from the university in 1971 and within two years had sold his first project to a small Canadian film company. His first writing and directing effort was *Seizure* (1974), a horror story about a writer whose creations come to life.

Seizure did not make money or receive great reviews, and Stone entered a period marked by heavy drug and alcohol use. He finally pulled himself together in 1976 and decided to write a screenplay about his Vietnam experiences. Between 1976 and 1978 Stone wrote two stories on the war: *Platoon*, which was based on himself and other soldiers he had known in Vietnam; and *Born on the Fourth of July*, which was based on the

autobiography (the written story of one's own life) of crippled war veteran Ron Kovic. No studio would touch either property; the scripts were considered too violent and too depressing. Stone's writing talents were recognized, however, and he was invited to work on other projects.

Oscars and controversy

In 1977 Stone was hired to write the screenplay for *Midnight Express*, a drama based on the true-life imprisonment of Bill Hayes in a Turkish jail. Many reviewers criticized the film's violence and accused it of racism (unequal treatment based on race) against the Turks. The controversy (open to dispute) helped the movie turn a profit, and it was also nominated (put forward for consideration) for five Academy Awards. Stone himself won an Oscar for his screenplay.

Stone then wrote and directed the horror movie *The Hand* (1981), and he wrote scripts for other movies, including *Scarface*. The film *Scarface*, which told the story of a ruthless cocaine dealer, offended some with its violence. For Stone, who had rid himself of a cocaine habit while writing the screenplay, it was a very important project. In an effort to exercise more control over his work, Stone then began making films independently. With the backing of Hemdale, a small British production company, he filmed *Salvador* (1986), based on the violence of the United States-supported Salvadoran army. Hemdale then gave Stone the money to make *Platoon* (1986). Stone used the script he had written in 1976 and the film won a number of Oscars, including best picture and best director.

Stone followed *Platoon* with *Wall Street*, his first big-budget project. *Wall Street* told



Oliver Stone.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

the story of a young stockbroker and the ruthless older businessman who influences him. By this time Stone had found the money to film *Born on the Fourth of July* (1989). With Hollywood superstar Tom Cruise (1962–) as the raging Ron Kovic, who endures not only the horror of battle but life in a wheelchair, *Born on the Fourth of July* brought Stone yet another Academy Award for best director.

Stone explored the 1960s with *The Doors* (1991) and his most controversial feature, *JFK* (1991). In *JFK* Kevin Costner plays Jim Garrison, the Texas Attorney General who battled what the film views as a plot to cover up the real circumstances behind the assassi-

nation of President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963). The film's mixture of dream-like scenes and historical details angered many, but even his critics admitted that Stone's methods were effective. Stone returned to the subject of Vietnam for *Heaven and Earth* (1993), showing the war from the point of view of a Vietnamese woman. His brutally violent *Natural Born Killers* (1994), the story of two disturbed young lovers who become famous for their killing spree, was attacked for its casual treatment of violence.

Major step forward

Stone's next film was the story of another American president, Richard Nixon (1913–1994), who resigned in disgrace after the Watergate scandal (in which it was revealed that Nixon had broken the law by using bug-ging devices to listen in on the conversations of his opponents). With British actor Anthony Hopkins (1937–) in the title role, *Nixon* (1995) earned several Academy Award nominations. Many reviewers praised Stone's newly found ability to overlook his political beliefs and make a universally appealing film.

Stone's more recent film projects include directing *U-Turn* (1997), writing and directing *Any Given Sunday* (1999), and serving as executive producer of the TV movie *The Day Reagan Was Shot* (2001). In 2001 a Louisiana court threw out a lawsuit against Stone and Warner Brothers studios that claimed that viewing *Natural Born Killers* had led two people to shoot a store clerk, leaving her paralyzed. In 2002 Stone traveled to Cuba, where he spent seventy-two hours filming Cuban leader Fidel Castro (1927–) for a documentary (a completely fact-based film) on the country.

For More Information

- Riordan, James. *Stone: The Controversies, Excesses, and Exploits of a Radical Filmmaker*. New York: Hyperion, 1995.
- Salewicz, Chris. *Oliver Stone*. New York: Thunder's Mouth Press, 1998.
- Silet, Charles L. P., ed. *Oliver Stone: Interviews*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 2001.

TOM STOPPARD

Born: July 3, 1937

Zlin, Czechoslovakia

Czech-born English playwright

One of England's most important playwrights, Czechoslovakian-born Tom Stoppard is popular in the United States as well. His two great stage successes were *Rosencrantz and Guildenstern Are Dead* and *The Real Thing*, and he reached an even wider audience—and won an Academy Award—for his screenplay for the 1998 film *Shakespeare in Love*.

Early life and career

The second son of a doctor for the Bata shoe manufacturing company, Thomas Straussler (Stoppard) was born on July 3, 1937, in Zlin, Czechoslovakia. The family fell victim to the Nazi racial laws, a wide-ranging set of laws enforced by Germany's radical Nazi Army that were aimed at severely restricting the freedoms of Jews and other

minorities. Since there was “Jewish blood” in the family, his father was transferred to Singapore in 1939, taking the family with him. When the Japanese invaded that city in 1942, Thomas’s mother fled with her children to India. Dr. Straussler stayed behind and was later killed.

Thomas attended an American boarding school in Darjeeling, India. In 1946 his mother married Kenneth Stoppard, a British army major, and both of her sons took his name. The Stoppards moved to Bristol, England, where Thomas’s stepfather worked in the machine tool industry. Thomas continued his education at a preparatory school in Yorkshire, England.

At age seventeen Thomas felt that he had had enough schooling. He became first a reporter and then a critic for the *Western Daily Press* of Bristol, England, from 1954 to 1958. He left the *Press* and worked as a reporter for the *Evening World*, also in Bristol, from 1958 to 1960. Stoppard then worked as a freelance reporter from 1960 to 1963. During these years he experimented with writing short stories and short plays. In 1962 he moved to London, England, in order to be closer to the center of the publishing and theatrical worlds in the United Kingdom.

The playwright

Stoppard’s first radio plays for the British Broadcasting Company (BBC), *The Dissolution of Dominic Boot* and *M Is for Moon Among Other Things*, aired in 1964. Two more, *Albert’s Bridge* and *If You’re Glad I’ll Be Frank*, followed in 1965. His first television play, *A Separate Peace*, appeared the next year, as did his only novel, *Lord Malquist and Mr. Moon*, and the stage play that established his reputa-



Tom Stoppard.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

tion as a playwright, *Rosencrantz and Guildenstern Are Dead*.

The year 1968 saw another television play, *Neutral Ground*, and two short works for the theater, *Enter a Free Man* and *The Real Inspector Hound*. In 1970 Stoppard returned to the BBC with the two radio plays, *Artist Descending a Staircase* and *Where Are They Now*. He also authored the television plays *The Engagement* and *Experiment in Television* as well as the stage work *After Magritte*. It was about this time that Stoppard became acquainted with Ed Berman from New York City’s Off-Off-Broadway. Berman was attempting to establish an alternative theater

in London. For him Stoppard composed Dagg's *Our Pet*, which was produced in 1971 at the Almost Free Theater.

In 1972 Stoppard had presented *Jumpers*, which begins with circus acts and evolves into religious and moral philosophy (the study of knowledge). Although critics reacted warmly to the play, *Jumpers* did not enjoy the same praise that had greeted *Rosencrantz and Guildenstern*. Theater critic Stanley Kauffmann labeled it "fake, structurally and thematically," while another critic, John Simon, wrote that "there is even something arrogant about trying to convert the history of Western culture into a series of blackout sketches, which is very nearly what *Jumpers* is up to."

Two years later Stoppard produced his third major work, *Travesties*. It is based on the coincidence that Russian exile politician Vladimir Lenin (1870–1924), Irish novelist James Joyce (1882–1941), and the father of the French Dadaist movement in literature and art, Tristan Tzara (1896–1963), were all in Zurich, Switzerland, at times during World War I (1914–18; when German-led forces pushed for European domination). It is assumed that they never met in reality, but their interaction in Stoppard's play asks the question of what defines art. The author's conclusion seems to be that its sole function is to make the meaninglessness (complete emptiness) of life more bearable.

Later works

In 1977 Stoppard offered *Every Good Boy Deserves Favour*, a remarkable achievement performed for the first time at the Royal Festival Hall by the Royal Shakespeare Company and the one hundred-piece London Symphony Orchestra, conducted by Andre Previn (1929–).

Brought to the United States, it was presented at the Metropolitan Opera House in New York City with an eighty-one-piece orchestra.

Stoppard summed up his life's work as an attempt to "make serious points by flinging a custard pie around the stage for a couple of hours." Some of his serious points must have been heard in 1999, when he shared the Academy Award for Best Original Screenplay with Marc Norman for their work on the movie *Shakespeare in Love*. The movie also won the award for Best Picture of the year.

For More Information

- Cahn, Victor L. *Beyond Absurdity: The Plays of Tom Stoppard*. Rutherford, NJ: Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 1979.
- Dean, Joan Fitzpatrick. *Tom Stoppard: Comedy as a Moral Matrix*. Columbia: University of Missouri Press, 1981.
- Gussow, Mel, ed. *Conversations with Stoppard*. New York: Limelight Editions, 1995.
- Londre, Felicia Hardison. *Tom Stoppard*. New York: F Ungar Publishing Company, 1981.
- Nadel, Ira Bruce. *Tom Stoppard: A Life*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2002.

HARRIET BEECHER STOWE

Born: June 14, 1811
Litchfield, Connecticut
Died: July 1, 1896
Hartford, Connecticut
American writer

The impact created in 1852 by Harriet Beecher Stowe's novel *Uncle Tom's Cabin* made her one of the most widely known American women writers of the nineteenth century.

Childhood

Harriet Elizabeth "Hattie" Beecher was born in Litchfield, Connecticut, on June 14, 1811, into a family of powerful and very demanding individuals. Her father, Lyman Beecher, was a fiery, evangelical Calvinist (a strict religious discipline) who drove his six sons and two daughters along the straight and narrow path of devotion to God, to duty, and to himself. Much of her father's religious influence would show up in her writings as an adult. Her mother, Roxana Foote Beecher, died when she was four, leaving a legacy of quiet gentleness and a brother—the Beecher children's uncle Samuel Foote. Uncle Sam, a retired sea captain, brought a sense of romance and adventure into the household, as well as a measure of warm tolerance which might otherwise have been absent.

In October 1832 Harriet's family moved to Cincinnati, Ohio, where the elder Beecher became director of the Lane Theological Seminary and where his older daughter, Catherine, opened her Western Female Institute, a school in which Harriet taught. She began to study Latin and the romance languages and made her first attempts at writing fiction, although her sister did not approve.

In 1834 Harriet began writing for the *Western Monthly Magazine* and was awarded a fifty-dollar prize for her tale "A New England Sketch." Her writing during the next sixteen years was to be infrequent, for on January 6, 1836, she married Calvin Ellis Stowe, a pro-

fessor in the Lane Seminary. They had seven children during a period of financial hardship. At the same time she had the opportunity to visit the South, and she observed with particular attention the operation of the slave system there. The atmosphere at the Lane Seminary was that of extreme abolitionists (those fighting to end slavery). Harriet herself did not at that time pursue this position. In 1849 she published her first volume, *The Mayflower*, a slender book, but one that convinced her husband that she should seriously pursue a literary career.

Uncle Tom's Cabin

In 1850 Harriet's husband Calvin Stowe was called to a chair job at Bowdoin College in Brunswick, Maine, where they had their last child. She then set about writing *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, which first appeared in serial form in 1851 through 1852 in the *National Era*, a Washington, D.C., antislavery newspaper. The book was published in 1852 in a two-volume edition by the house of John P. Jewett and sold three hundred thousand copies in its first year—ten thousand in the first week. During the first five years of its publication, the book sold half a million copies in the United States alone.

Though Stowe's *Uncle Tom's Cabin* was received with wild attention, its reception was (except for the abolitionist press) almost completely in opposition. In the South each newspaper was a sea of fury, and in the North there were universal charges that the world of the slave had been misrepresented. The action of the book traces the passage of the slave Uncle Tom through the hands of three owners, each meant to represent a type of Southern figure. The first is a kind planter, the second a South-



Harriet Beecher Stowe.

Courtesy of the National Archives and Records Administration.

ern gentleman, and the last the wicked Simon Legree, who causes the death of Uncle Tom. The fortunes of the slaves in the book curve downward, and the finally successful dash for freedom taken by George and Eliza makes up the high drama of the book. But the overall treatment of slave and master reveals something far more complex than abolitionist ideas: the high, clear style contains much that is warmly, even fiercely sympathetic to the world of the old South.

Stowe answered her critics in 1853 with *A Key to Uncle Tom's Cabin*, a book designed to document the facts of the novel, but she also responded to her success by traveling

widely, receiving praise in England and in Europe. In 1856 she published her novel *Dred: A Tale of the Great Dismal Swamp*. This, too, was a slave novel, and its reception was hardly less enthusiastic than that of *Uncle Tom's Cabin*. In England alone, during the first month, over one hundred thousand copies were sold. Although Stowe then turned to instructive writings, producing a series of novels based on New England and drawing heavily on local color, her reputation for years to come was connected with the instructional power of her first two novels. Indeed, when she was introduced to President Abraham Lincoln (1809–1865) in 1862, he is said to have exclaimed, “So this is the little lady who started our big war!”

Later years

In 1869 Stowe again toured Europe, renewing an earlier friendship with Lord Byron's (1788–1824) widow. As a result, the novelist published *Lady Byron Vindicated* (1870), charging the dead poet with having violated his marriage vows by having a sexual relationship with his sister. Byron was a legend by this time, and the charges resulted in Stowe losing much of her loyal British audience. Undisturbed, however, she continued her series of novels, poems, and sketches, as well as her autobiography, never lacking a devoted and enthusiastic American audience.

The later years of Stowe's life were spent, in large part, in Florida, where she and her husband tried, with only moderate success, to manage the income from her literary activities. Stowe died in Hartford, Connecticut, on July 1, 1896.

Harriet Beecher Stowe's personality and her work are mint products of her culture.

They represent a special combination of rigid Calvinist discipline (fight against it though she tried), sentimental weakness for the romanticism of Sir Walter Scott (1771–1832) and Lord Byron, and a crusading sense of social and political responsibility.

For More Information

Fritz, Jean. *Harriet Beecher Stowe and the Beecher Preachers*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1994.

Hedrick, Joan D. *Harriet Beecher Stowe: A Life*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1994.

Wilson, Forrest. *Crusader in Crinoline: The Life of Harriet Beecher Stowe*. Philadelphia: J. B. Lippincott, 1941. Reprint, Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1972.

ANTONIO STRADIVARI

Born: c. 1644

Cremona, Italy

Died: December 18, 1737

Cremona, Italy

Italian violin maker

Italian violin maker Antonio Stradivari created instruments that are still considered the finest ever made. The new styles of violins and cellos that he developed were remarkable for their excellent tonal quality and became the basic design for all modern versions of the instruments.

Family of violin makers

There are no records of Antonio Stradivari's birth, but based on the documentation

of his age that accompanied his signature on some of the instruments he created late in his life, it is assumed that he was born in 1644. There is also little known about his youth. He was probably born in Cremona, Italy, the city where his family had been established for five centuries, and he was the son of Alessandro Stradivari. Cremona was a town that had been renowned for its master violin makers for nearly one hundred years. Its leading craftsman during Stradivari's early life was Niccolo Amati, who represented the third generation of his family to contribute to the development of the traditional violin style popular at the time. Stradivari was probably apprenticed (worked to learn a trade) to Amati by the early 1660s and under Amati's direction learned the craft of violin making.

Experimented with violin design

By 1666 Stradivari was producing instruments independently as well as continuing to work at his mentor's (an advisor and guide) shop, which he probably did until Amati's death in 1684. In 1667 he was married to Francesca Feraboschi and set up his own household and shop. The couple eventually had six children and two of their sons would follow in their father's footsteps as violin makers. In the decade or so before 1680 Stradivari created a wide variety of stringed instruments, including guitars, harps, lutes, and mandolins. He continued to follow Amati's basic design for violins, but during this time he began experimenting with improvements in tone and design.

The Stradivari family moved to a new house at No. 2, Piazza San Domenico in 1680, and the building would serve as the violin maker's home and workshop for the rest of his



Antonio Stradivari.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

life. Here he matured in his art and created his greatest works, most notably the violins that set the standard for perfection in the music world. In the 1680s he continued to develop his own style, moving away from Amati's design to create a more solid-looking violin made of new materials and finishes. The resulting instruments during this time created a more powerful sound than earlier violins, and musicians from outside Cremona began to seek out instruments from his workshop as his fame grew. Upon Amati's death in 1684, Stradivari was considered the city's greatest violin maker.

Despite Stradivari's considerable success with his designs, he continued to look for

ways to improve his violins. He succeeded in finding a deeper, fuller tone that was quite distinct from the lighter sounds of other Cremona instrument makers. Stradivari's wife died in 1698, and she was honored with a large funeral. In the summer of the following year, the craftsman married his second wife, Antonia-Maria Zambelli. He had five more children from this marriage, but none of them ever entered the instrument-making business.

Created finest works in "golden period"

The years from 1700 to 1720 were the greatest of Stradivari's career, and the era was often referred to as the craftsman's "golden period." It was during this time that he perfected his violin design and created his finest instruments. Not only was his design revolutionary, but the materials he used also helped to create his unique effects. He selected excellent wood, such as maple, for his violins and developed the orange-brown varnish that became a trademark of his work. His works from this period were so magnificent that some violins created at this time have developed individual identities and reputations. Some of the most famous include the 1704 "Betts" violin, now in the United States Library of Congress; the 1715 "Alard," which is considered the finest Stradivarius in existence; and the 1716 "Messiah," an instrument that Stradivari never sold and is now in the best condition of any of his surviving pieces.

After 1720 Stradivari continued to produce violins and other stringed instruments, but the number of items decreased through the years. While his work maintained a high level of quality, it began to show the effects of failing eyesight and a less steady hand. Stradivari continued producing instruments

on his own until his death at the age of ninety-three on December 18, 1737.

Stradivari's violins remain as some of the most sought-after instruments in the world. In May 2000 a Stradivari violin sold at a New York City auction for \$1.3 million. In September of that year experts laid to rest speculation that a Stradivari violin on display at the Ashmolean Museum in England was a forgery (a fake). The handcrafted 284 year-old Stradivari violin is considered the most valuable in the world, worth nearly \$15 million.

For More Information

Balfourt, Dirk J. *Antonius Stradivarius*. Translated by W. A. G. Doyle-Davidson. Stockholm, Sweden: Continental Book Company, 1947.

Henley, William. *Antonio Stradivari, Master Luthier, Cremona, Italy, 1644–1737; His Life and Instruments*. Sussex, England: Amati Publishers, Ltd., 1961.

Hill, W. Henry, Arthur E. Hill, and Alfred E. Hill. *Antonio Stradivari: His Life and Work, 1644–1737*. London: William E. Hill and Sons, 1902. Reprint, New York: Dover Publications, 1963.

JOHANN STRAUSS

Born: October 25, 1825

Vienna, Austria

Died: June 3, 1899

Vienna, Austria

Austrian composer

Johann Strauss, Vienna's greatest composer of light music, was known for his waltzes (dances) and operettas (light operas with songs and dances). His music seems to capture the height of elegance and refinement of the Hapsburg regime.

Early life

Johann Strauss Jr. was born on October 25, 1825, in Vienna, Austria. He was the eldest son of Johann Strauss Sr., a famous composer and conductor, known as "the father of the waltz." Although the elder Strauss wanted his sons to pursue business careers, the musical talents of Johann, Jr., quickly became evident, as he composed his first waltz at the age of six.

Strauss's mother secretly encouraged the musical education of her son behind his father's back. She arranged for one of the members of the father's orchestra to give the younger Johann lessons without his father's knowledge. When his father left the family in 1940, Strauss was relieved, for it meant that he could freely pursue his music without secrecy. At the age of nineteen he organized his own small orchestra, which performed some of his compositions in a restaurant in Hietzing. When his father died in 1849, Strauss combined his band with his father's and became the leader. He ultimately earned his own nickname, "the king of the waltz," or "the waltz king."

Touring

Strauss toured throughout Europe and England with great success and also went to America. He conducted huge concerts in Boston, Massachusetts, and New York City. He was the official conductor of the court



Johann Strauss.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

balls in Vienna from 1863 to 1870. During this time he composed his most famous waltzes, including *On the Beautiful Blue Danube* (1867), probably the best-known waltz ever written, *Artist's Life* (1867), *Tales from the Vienna Woods* (1868), and *Wine, Women, and Song* (1869).

In 1863 Jacques Offenbach (1819–1880), Paris's most popular composer of light operas, visited Vienna. The two composers met. The success of Offenbach's stage works encouraged Strauss to try writing operettas. He resigned as court conductor in 1870 to devote himself to this pursuit.

Operettas and waltzes

Three operettas are consistently popular and available for performance today. The finest of them, *Die Fledermaus* (1874; *The Bat*), is probably one of the greatest operettas ever written and a masterpiece of its kind. The lovely *Du und Du* waltz is made up of excerpts from this work. His two other most successful operettas were *A Night in Venice* (1883), from which he derived the music for the *Lagoon Waltz*, and *The Gypsy Baron* (1885), from which stems the *Treasure Waltz*.

Strauss continued to compose dance music, including the famous waltzes *Roses from the South* (1880) and *Voices of Spring* (1883). This last work, most often heard today as a purely instrumental composition, was originally conceived with a soprano solo as the composer's only independent vocal waltz.

Strauss wrote more than 150 waltzes, one hundred polkas, seventy quadrilles (square dances), mazurkas (folk dances from Poland), marches, and galops (French dances). His music combines considerable melodic invention, tremendous energy and brilliance with suavity and polish, and even at times an incredibly refined sensuality. He refined the waltz and raised it from its beginnings in the common beer halls and restaurants to a permanent place in aristocratic (having to do with the upper-class) ballrooms.

For More Information

Crittendon, Camille. *Johann Strauss and Vienna: Operetta and the Politics of Popular Culture*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 2000.

Ewen, David. *Tales from the Vienna Woods: The Story of Johann Strauss*. New York: H. Holt and Company, 1944.

Gartenberg, Egon. *Johann Strauss: The End of an Era*. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1974.

Jacob, Heinrich E. *Johann Strauss, Father and Son: A Century of Light Music*. New York: Greystone Press, 1940.

IGOR STRAVINSKY

Born: June 17, 1882

Oranienbaum, Russia

Died: April 6, 1971

New York, New York

Russian-born American composer

The Russian-born American composer Igor Stravinsky identified himself as an “inventor of music.” The novelty, power, and elegance of his works won him worldwide admiration before he was thirty. Throughout his life he continued to surprise admirers with transformations of his style that stimulated controversy.

Beginnings in Russia

Igor Fedorovich Stravinsky was born at Oranienbaum near St. Petersburg, Russia, on June 17, 1882. Although his father was a star singer of the Imperial Opera, he expected the boy to become a bureaucrat. Igor finished a university law course before he made the decision to become a musician. By this time he was a good amateur pianist, an occasional professional accompanist (someone who plays along with a singer), an enthusiastic reader of avant-garde (non-traditional) scores

from France and Germany, and a connoisseur (expert) of Italian, French, and Russian opera.

The closest friend from Stravinsky's youth was Stephan Mitusov, the stepson of a prince. Mitusov translated the poems of the French poet Paul Verlaine (1884–1896) that Stravinsky set to music in 1910, and he arranged the libretto (text that accompanies a musical work) of Stravinsky's opera *The Nightingale*.

Early works

One of Stravinsky's classmates at the university was Vladimir Rimsky-Korsakov, the son of the composer Nikolai Rimsky-Korsakov (1844–1908). Stravinsky became an apprentice to the elder Rimsky-Korsakov. He did not enter classes at the conservatory but worked privately at his home.

For the sake of learning the most advanced craftsmanship from Rimsky-Korsakov, Stravinsky hid his independent taste, confident that he could exercise it later. His *Symphony in E-flat* (1905–1907), *Pastorale* (1907), and *Fireworks* (1908) demonstrate this. Stravinsky also wrote a funeral dirge (a dark, moody piece) for Rimsky-Korsakov, which he later recalled as the best of his early works. It was not published, and the manuscript was lost.

Scandal, glory, and misunderstanding in France

The great impresario (sponsor of entertainment) Sergei Diaghilev (1872–1929) heard Stravinsky's works in St. Petersburg and invited him to go to Paris, France, to write orchestral arrangements of Chopin's (1810–1849) works for ballets that he was



Igor Stravinsky.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

producing. Each scandalized (caused a debate among) the first audiences. The ballets were also unique and quickly became classics. The three ballets—*Firebird* (1910), *Petrushka* (1911), and *The Rite of Spring* (1912–1913)—together made Stravinsky's influence on all the arts enormous. They established him as a leader of a heroic musical generation alongside older composers such as Maurice Ravel (1875–1937) and Arnold Schoenberg (1874–1951).

World War I (1914–18; a war involving Germany, Turkey, and Austria-Hungary on one side, and Great Britain, France, Russia, Italy, Japan, and the United States on the

other) prevented Stravinsky from writing more for Diaghilev's company. The Russian Revolution (1917; two revolutions that first overthrew the monarchy then replaced it with the Communists) prevented Stravinsky from returning home from Paris. During the war he lived in Switzerland, where he collaborated with the poet C. F. Ramuz on a series of works based on folklore, including *The Soldier's Tale* (1918). This work deeply influenced Bertolt Brecht (1898–1956), Jean Cocteau (1889–1963), and other dramatists of the 1920s.

Another ballet, begun in 1914, and finally orchestrated in 1923, was the grandest achievement of these years: *Svadebka* (Les Noces, or The Little Wedding). In it the barbaric power of *The Rite of Spring* and the modern concision (shortness) of *The Soldier's Tale* met in a serious affirmation of love. Along with these very diverse major works were several smaller ones, for voices and for instruments in various combinations. Outstanding among these was a memorial to Claude Debussy (1862–1918), *Symphonies for Wind Instruments*.

A short comic opera, *Mavra* (1922), revealed a new lyricism (personal, emotional) in Stravinsky's complicated development. Though it was not a popular success—to Stravinsky's great disappointment—it influenced young composers including Darius Milhaud, Francis Poulenc, Kurt Weill, Sergei Prokofiev, and Dmitri Shostakovich.

Stravinsky's instrumental works of the 1920s included the Piano Concerto, the Octet for Winds, the Sonata, and the Serenade for a piano solo. He produced an opera-oratorio (a long work usually without action or scenery), *Oedipus Rex*, in 1927, and a bal-

let, *Apollo*, in 1928. *The Fairy's Kiss* (1928), a ballet in tribute to Tchaikovsky, made use of themes from Tchaikovsky's songs and piano pieces. The death of Diaghilev in 1929 marked the end of a social focus for much of Stravinsky's work. Though Stravinsky became a French citizen in 1934, he was not able to win in France the recognition and security he needed.

The Symphony of Psalms (1930) for a chorus of men and boys and an orchestra without violins became the most widely known of all of Stravinsky's works after *The Rite of Spring*. At first its seriousness seemed at odds with the worldliness of the ballets. Later it was often recommended as a good starting point for acquaintance with Stravinsky's work as a whole. The theatrical works *Persephone* (1934) and *A Game of Cards* (1936) were as unique as the *Symphony of Psalms*. Stravinsky also wrote instrumental works on a grand scale: the *Violin Concerto* (1931), *Duo concertante for violin and piano* (1932), *Concerto for two pianos* (1935), *Concerto for chamber orchestra* ("Dumbarton Oaks," 1938), and *Symphony in C* (1940).

From 1942 to 1948 Stravinsky worked intermittently (on and off) on an uncommissioned (through his own initiative) setting of the Ordinary of the Roman Catholic Mass for chorus and winds. He had been spurred to this work by Mozart's Masses but not in any obvious way.

Renewals in America

When Stravinsky settled in the United States in 1939, he renewed his interest in popular music. He composed several short pieces, including *Ebony Concerto* (1946) for Woody Herman's band. His arrangement of

the "Star-Spangled Banner" (1944) was too severe to become a favorite. Several projects for film music were begun, though none was completed. A collaboration happier even than that with Diaghilev developed with the New York City Ballet under George Balanchine (1904–1983). The first fruit of this collaboration was *Orpheus* (1948). In 1948 Stravinsky undertook a full-length opera, *The Rake's Progress*. This was a fulfillment of his mature ethical and religious concerns. The music included some of Stravinsky's most melodious ideas.

The young conductor Robert Craft became Stravinsky's devoted aide while he worked on the opera, and he introduced Stravinsky to the work of Anton Webern. During the 1950s Stravinsky studied Webern and gradually absorbed new elements into his own still evolving, still very individual, style. This is evident in the Cantata on medieval English poems (1952), the Septet (1953), the Song (1954) with dirge canons in memory of Dylan Thomas (1914–1953), the oratorio *Canticum Sacrum* (1956) in honor of St. Mark, and the ballet *Agon* (1953–1957).

Stravinsky's works of the 1960s continued to demonstrate complex rhythms and sounds, as well as fascinating harmony and counterpoint. These included *Threni*, i.e., *Lamentations of Jeremiah* (1958), *A Sermon, a Narrative, and a Prayer* (1961), *The Flood* (1962), *Abraham and Isaac* (1963), *Requiem Canticles* (1966), the unaccompanied Anthem on stanzas from T. S. Eliot's (1888–1965) *Quartets*, *The Dove Descending Breaks the Air* (1962), the setting for voice and three clarinets of W. H. Auden's (1907–1973) *Elegy for JFK* (1964), and the song for voice and piano on Edward Lear's (1812–1888) poem *The Owl*

and the *Pussycat* (1968). Stravinsky's last major instrumental works were the *Movements for piano and orchestra* (1959) and the *Variations for orchestra* (1964), both of which were interpreted in ballets by Balanchine.

Stravinsky died on April 6, 1971, in New York City and was buried in Venice. His approach to musical composition was one of constant renewal. Rhythm was the most striking ingredient, and his novel rhythms were most widely imitated. His instrumentation and his ways of writing for voices were also distinctive and influential. His harmonies and forms were more elusive (difficult to grasp). He recognized melody as the "most essential" element.

For More Information

Joseph, Charles M. *Stravinsky Inside Out*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2001.

Stravinsky, Igor. *Autobiography*. London: Calder and Boyars, 1975.

Strobel, Heinrich. *Stravinsky: Classic Humanist*. New York: Merlin Press, 1955.

White, Eric W. *Stravinsky: The Composer and His Works*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1966.

BARBRA STREISAND

Born: April 24, 1942

Brooklyn, New York

American actress, singer, songwriter, director, and producer

Barbra Streisand is an award-winning performer on stage, television, and in motion pictures, as well as a recording artist of popular music.

Younger years

Barbara Joan Streisand was born on April 24, 1942, in Brooklyn, New York, to Emanuel and Diana (Rosen) Streisand. Her father was a high school English teacher who died when Streisand was only fifteen months old. Her mother raised Barbara and her older brother, Sheldon, by working as a secretary in the New York City public school system. Her mother remarried in the late 1940s.

Streisand has described her childhood as painful. She was shy as a child, and often felt rejected by other children because her looks were unusual. She accentuated her uniqueness by wearing odd outfits and by avoiding school activities. She also felt rejected by her mother and her stepfather, who was a used-car salesman.

Streisand graduated from high school when she was sixteen years old and moved to Manhattan in New York City, where she shared an apartment with friends. At this time Streisand changed the spelling of her first name to "Barbra." She worked in several small plays during this time and also sang in nightclubs.

Broadway debut

Streisand was spotted by a Broadway producer and was hired to appear in the musical *I Can Get It for You Wholesale*. The production opened in March of 1962, ran for nine months, and produced a very well-received cast album. With the popularity of

her stage role, she was an almost overnight success.

Streisand was signed by Columbia Records and recorded *The Barbra Streisand Album* and *The Barbra Streisand Second Album* in 1963. Both albums were very successful. *The Barbra Streisand Album* won Streisand a Grammy for both album of the year and best female vocal. She followed up with *The Barbra Streisand Third Album*.

Streisand then took the role of the comedian and singer Fanny Brice in the Broadway production of *Funny Girl* in 1964. It was one of the most successful stage productions in the history of Broadway, and her performance in it would win her first of many Golden Globe Awards.

Streisand's next album, *People*, was one of her highest-selling albums and earned her a third Grammy Award.

Television success

Streisand next took aim at television. *My Name Is Barbra* aired in 1965 and its follow-up *Color Me Barbra* followed in 1966. She appeared in a total of ten more television specials between 1967 and 1986.

In 1968, at the young age of twenty-six, Streisand was the largest selling female singer of popular standards since Judy Garland (1922–1969).

Motion picture success

Barbra's success continued throughout 1968, as she continued to release albums and perform concerts. She repeated her role as Fanny Brice for the 1968 film version of *Funny Girl*. She won an Academy Award for



Barbra Streisand.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

best actress for this role. In 1969 Streisand appeared as Dolly Levi in the motion picture *Hello, Dolly!* At this time she received a Golden Globe award as Best Female World Film Favorite.

After the success of *Funny Girl*, Streisand began to concentrate more on motion pictures than on live performances. She appeared in *What's Up, Doc?* and *Up the Sandbox* in 1972. In 1973 she won critical acclaim for her work in *The Way We Were*, in which she starred opposite Robert Redford (1937–). She won another Golden Globe Award for this role.

Director and producer

Streisand starred in *For Pete's Sake* and *Funny Lady* before her 1976 movie *A Star Is Born*. The movie and her rendition of the theme song, "Evergreen," earned her a second Academy Award, two Grammy Awards, and three Golden Globe Awards. The film was one of the highest moneymakers that year. Some critics, however, believed Streisand was executing too much control, as she was listed in the credits as not only the star, executive producer, and cosongwriter, but also as the wardrobe consultant and the designer of "musical concepts."

Streisand would take yet another leap in her creative life when she decided to direct, produce, and star in *Yentl* in 1983. Filmed in Eastern Europe, *Yentl* was the story of a woman masquerading as a man to get orthodox Jewish religious education. The film earned more than \$35 million, but it would be four years before she appeared in another film.

Streisand's role in *Nuts* (1987), opposite Richard Dreyfuss (1947–), is the story of a woman who must go through a competency (able to function mentally in a normal way) hearing to determine if she is sane enough to stand trial for manslaughter. Most critics disliked the film, which Streisand produced, but some called it her best work ever. The dramatic role prepared her for the tension and emotion that she displayed in her next movie.

In *The Prince of Tides* (1991) Streisand, opposite Nick Nolte (1940–), not only starred, but directed and coproduced the film. The film was nominated for several Academy Awards, including the award for best picture. Streisand won a Golden Globe Award for directing.

Top of the charts

In addition to performing in motion pictures and on television throughout the 1970s, 1980s, and 1990s, Streisand continued to release albums. After *Funny Girl—Original Broadway Cast Recording* there would be over fifty Streisand albums released. Over the years she has recorded duets with performers Barry Gibb (1946–), Bryan Adams, Don Johnson, Neil Diamond (1941–), Kim Carnes, Johnny Mathis, and Michael Crawford.

After receiving a death threat in 1967, Streisand developed stage fright and stopped performing in public concerts. She commented to Susan Price of *Ladies Home Journal*, "You don't get over stage fright—you just don't perform." However, new friendships seemed to have a positive impact. In the early 1990s she began to grow closer to her mother and became friends with then-President Bill Clinton (1946–) and his wife Hillary (1947–).

Streisand did a world tour in 1994, starting in London, England, and ending in New York City. Her shows were some of the biggest moneymaking concerts of the year.

Streisand released *Higher Ground* in November of 1997 and it immediately became number one on the *Billboard* chart. It set a record for the greatest span of time between a performer's first and most recent number one albums—thirty-three years. The first single released from the album, "Tell Him," a duet with Celine Dion (1968–), was immediately a Top 40 hit and was nominated for a Grammy Award.

A lifetime of achievement

Streisand has recorded fifty-four albums and has collected an overwhelming thirty-

nine gold albums, twenty-five platinum albums, and twelve multi-platinum albums. She was the first person to win an Academy Award, an Emmy Award, a Grammy Award, and an Antoinette Perry (Tony) Award. She is also the only person to have won an Academy Award for both acting and songwriting.

Streisand married actor James Brolin in July 1998. The couple divides their time between homes in Malibu and Beverly Hills, California. She has given concerts to help benefit political candidates and charities that benefit social causes such as acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; a disease that affects the body's immune system) research. The Streisand Foundation was established in 1992 to help advocate women's rights, civil liberties, and environmental protection.

President Clinton presented Streisand a National Medal of Arts in 2000. She gave what she said were her final live performances in Madison Square Garden in New York City that year.

Streisand won an Emmy in 2001 for her Fox TV special *Barbra Streisand: Timeless*. At the ceremony she sang "You'll Never Walk Alone" in tribute to the victims of the September 11, 2001, attacks on New York City and Washington, D.C.

For More Information

Bly, Nellie. *Barbra Streisand: The Untold Story*.

New York: Windsor, 1994.

Cunningham, Ernest W. *The Ultimate Barbra*.

Los Angeles: Renaissance Books, 1998.

Pappas, Rita. *Barbra Streisand*. Philadelphia:

Chelsea House, 2001

Waldman, Allison J. *The Barbra Streisand Scrapbook*. Secaucus, NJ: Carol Publishers, 1995, revised edition 2001.

SUN YAT-SEN

Born: November 12, 1866

Choyhung, Kwangtung, China

Died: March 12, 1925

Peking, China

Chinese president and politician

Sun Yat-sen was the leader of China's republican revolution. He did much to inspire and organize the movement that overthrew the Manchu dynasty in 1911—a family of rulers that reigned over China for nearly three hundred years. Through the Kuomintang Party he paved the way for the eventual reunification of the country.

Childhood

Sun Yat-sen was born on November 12, 1866, into a peasant household in Choyhung in Kwangtung near the Portuguese colony of Macao. His father worked as a farmer, which had been his family's traditional occupation for many generations. His early education, like his birthplace, established him as a man of two worlds, China and the West. After a basic training in the Chinese classics in his village school, he was sent to Hawaii in 1879 to join his older brother. There he enrolled in a college where he studied Western science and Christianity.



Sun Yat-sen.

Upon graduation in 1882, he returned to his native village. After learning about Christianity, Sun had come to believe that the religious practices in the village where he grew up were nothing more than superstitions. He soon showed these changed beliefs by damaging one of the village idols and was banished from the village.

Though Sun returned home briefly to undergo an arranged marriage, he spent his late teens and early twenties studying in Hong Kong. He began his medical training in Canton, China, but in 1887 returned to Hong Kong and enrolled in the school of medicine. After graduation in June 1892, he went to Macao, where Portuguese authori-

ties refused to give him a license to practice medicine.

By the time Sun returned to Hong Kong in the spring of 1893, he had become more interested in politics than in medicine. Upset by the Manchu government's corruption, inefficiency, and inability to defend China against foreign powers, he wrote a letter to Li Hung-chang (1823–1901), one of China's most important reform leaders (social-improvement leaders), supporting a program of reform. Ignored, Sun returned to Hawaii to organize the Hsing-chung hui (Revive China Society). When war between China and Japan appeared to present possibilities for the overthrow of the Manchus, Sun returned to Hong Kong and reorganized the Hsing-chung hui as a revolutionary secret society. An uprising was planned in Canton in 1895 but was discovered, and several of Sun's men were executed. Having become a marked man, Sun fled to Japan.

Revolutionist

The pattern for Sun's career was established: unorganized plots, failures, execution of coconspirators, overseas wanderings, and financial backing for further coups (hostile takeovers). Sun grew a moustache, donned Western-style clothes, and, posing as a Japanese man, set out once again, first to Hawaii, then to San Francisco, and finally to England to visit a former school instructor. Before leaving England, he often visited the reading room of the British Museum, where he became acquainted with the writings of Karl Marx (1818–1893).

Sun returned to Japan in July 1905 to find the Chinese student community stirred to a pitch of patriotic excitement. Joined by

other revolutionists such as Huang Hsing and Sung Chiao-jen (1882–1913), Sun organized, and was elected director of, the T'ung-meng hui (Revolutionary Alliance). The T'ung-meng hui was carefully organized, with a sophisticated and highly educated membership core drawn from all over China.

By this time Sun's ideas had developed into the "Three People's Principles"—his writings on nationalism, democracy, and people's livelihood. When Sun returned from another fundraising trip in the fall of 1906, his student following in Japan numbered in the thousands. However, under pressure from the government in China, the Japanese government threw him out.

Sun's fortunes had reached a low point. The failure of a series of poorly planned and armed coups relying upon the scattered forces of secret societies and rebel bands had reduced the reputation of the T'ung-meng hui in Southeast Asia. However, Sun found that Chinese opinion in the United States was turning against his rivals. Sun visited the United States and was on a successful fundraising tour when he read in a newspaper that a successful revolt had occurred in the central Yangtze Valley city of Wuchang, China.

President of the Chinese Republic

By the time Sun arrived back in China on Christmas Day 1911, rebellion had spread through the Yangtze Valley. An uneasy welcome greeted him, and in Nanking, China, revolutionaries from fourteen provinces elected him president of a provisional (temporary) government. On January 1, 1912, Sun Yat-sen proclaimed the establishment of the Republic of China.

The next year a bitter power struggle developed in the Chinese government. On March 20, 1913, Yüan's agents assassinated Sung Chiao-jen at the Shanghai, China, railroad station. Sun hurried back and demanded that those responsible be brought to justice. Yüan resisted, sparking the so-called second revolution. Yüan removed Sun from office and on September 15, 1913, ordered his arrest. By early December, Sun was once again a political refugee (one who is forced to flee) in Japan.

Preparations for a comeback

Sun now began to work for the overthrow of Yüan. However, Yüan was undone by his own mistakes rather than by Sun's plots. His attempt to replace the republic with a monarchy (rule by one) touched off revolts in southwestern China followed by uprisings of Sun's followers in several other provinces. Sun returned to Shanghai in April 1916, two months before Yüan's death.

Following a fruitless quest for Japanese assistance, Sun established a home in Shanghai. There he wrote two of the three treatises (formal writings) later incorporated into his *Chien-kuo fang-lueh* (Principles of National Reconstruction). In the first part, *Social Reconstruction*, completed in February 1917, Sun attributed the failure of democracy (rule by the people) in China to the people's lack of practice and application. The second treatise, *Psychological Reconstruction*, argued that popular acceptance of his program had been obstructed by acceptance of the old saying "Knowledge is difficult, action is easy." The third part, *Material Reconstruction*, constituted a master plan for the industrialization of China to be financed by lavish investments from abroad.

Once again Sun reorganized his party, this time as the Chinese Kuomintang. He also kept a hand in the political world in Canton, China. When the city was occupied on October 26, 1920, by Ch'en Chiung-ming and other supporters, Sun named Ch'en governor of Kwangtung, China. In April 1921 the Canton Parliament established a new government to rival the Peking government and elected Sun president.

After driving Ch'en from Peking, Sun resumed preparation for the northern expedition, but Ch'en recaptured Canton and forced Sun to flee to a gunboat in the Pearl River. There, in the company of a young military aide named Chiang Kai-shek (1887–1975), Sun tried unsuccessfully to engineer a comeback.

Communist alliance

Never one to be discouraged by failure, Sun returned to Shanghai and continued his plans to retake Canton through alliances with northern warlords (military commanders of independent armies). About this time, Sun accepted support from the Soviet Union, a mark of his disappointment with the Western powers and Japan and his need for political, military, and financial aid. Part of the agreement provided for the admission of individual Chinese Communists into the Kuomintang. On January 26, 1923, the Soviet Union guaranteed its support for the reunification of China. This would give Sun the muscle he needed.

Meanwhile Sun's military allies were paving the way for a return to Canton. By the middle of February 1923 Sun was back again as head of a military government. In January 1924 the first National Congress of the Kuomintang approved a new constitution (a formal document which sets the standards

for a government), which remodeled the party along Soviet lines. At the top of the party was the Central Executive Committee with bureaus in charge of propaganda (using literature and the media to influence the masses), workers, peasants, youth, women, investigation, and military affairs. Sun's *Three People's Principles* were restated to emphasize anti-imperialism (domination by a foreign power) and the leading role of the party.

Even the most disciplined party, Sun realized, would be ineffective without a military arm. To replace the unreliable warlord armies, Sun chose the Soviet model of a party army. The Soviets agreed to help establish a military academy, and a mission headed by Chiang kai-shek was sent to the Soviet Union to secure assistance.

Final days in Peking

However, the lure of warlord alliances remained strong. In response to an invitation from Chang Tso-lin (1873–1928) and Tuan Ch'i-jui (1865–1936), Sun set out for Peking to discuss the future of China. However, negotiations with Tuan Ch'i-jui soon collapsed. This proved to be the last time that Sun would be disappointed by his allies. Following several months of deteriorating health, in late 1924, Sun found that he had incurable cancer.

Sun passed his final days by signing the pithy "political testament," urging his followers to hold true to his goals in carrying the revolution through to victory. He also signed a highly controversial valedictory (farewell address) to the Soviet Union to reaffirm the alliance against Western domination. The following day, March 12, 1925, Sun died in Peking, China. He was given a state funeral under orders of Tuan Ch'i-jui.

Though the guiding spirit of the Chinese revolution, Sun was widely criticized during his lifetime. After his death he became the object of a cult (a following) that elevated him to a sacred position.

For More Information

Bergère, Marie-Claire. *Sun Yat-sen*. Edited by Janet Lloyd. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press, 1998.

Gasster, Michael. *Chinese Intellectuals and the Revolution of 1911*. Seattle: University of Washington Press, 1969.

Schiffirin, Harold Z. *Sun Yat-sen, Reluctant Revolutionary*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1980.

Wells, Audrey. *The Political Thought of Sun Yat-sen: Development and Impact*. New York: Palgrave, 2001.

U·X·L

ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF WORLD
BIOGRAPHY



contents

Entries by Nationality xvii

Reader's Guide xxxi

Volume 1: A–Ba

Hank Aaron	1	Aeschylus	29
Ralph Abernathy	4	Spiro Agnew	31
Bella Abzug	7	Alvin Ailey	34
Chinua Achebe	10	Madeleine Albright	37
Abigail Adams	12	Louisa May Alcott	39
Ansel Adams	15	Alexander II	41
John Adams	17	Alexander the Great	43
Samuel Adams	20	Muhammad Ali	47
Joy Adamson	22	Woody Allen	49
Jane Addams	25	Isabel Allende	52
Alfred Adler	27	Julia Alvarez	54
		American Horse	57

Idi Amin	59	Lucille Ball	159
Hans Christian Andersen	62	David Baltimore	161
Carl David Anderson	64	Honoré de Balzac	164
Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	66	Benjamin Banneker	166
Marian Anderson	69	Frederick Banting	168
Fra Angelico	71	Klaus Barbie	170
Maya Angelou	73	Christiaan Barnard	173
Kofi Annan	76	Clara Barton	175
Susan B. Anthony	79	Count Basie	177
Virginia Apgar	81	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Benigno Aquino	84		
Yasir Arafat	86	<i>Volume 2: Be–Cap</i>	
Archimedes	89	Beatles	181
Hannah Arendt	91	William Beaumont	185
Jean-Bertrand Aristide	93	Simone de Beauvoir	187
Aristophanes	96	Samuel Beckett	189
Aristotle	98	Ludwig van Beethoven	192
Louis Armstrong	101	Menachem Begin	194
Neil Armstrong	102	Alexander Graham Bell	196
Benedict Arnold	105	Clyde Bellecourt	200
Mary Kay Ash	108	Saul Bellow	202
Arthur Ashe	110	William Bennett	204
Isaac Asimov	113	Ingmar Bergman	206
Fred Astaire	116	Irving Berlin	208
John Jacob Astor	118	Leonard Bernstein	210
Margaret Atwood	120	Chuck Berry	213
W. H. Auden	123	Mary McLeod Bethune	215
John James Audubon	125	Benazir Bhutto	218
Augustus	128	Owen Bieber	220
Aung San Suu Kyi	130	Billy the Kid	223
Jane Austen	132	Larry Bird	224
Baal Shem Tov	137	Shirley Temple Black	227
Charles Babbage	139	Elizabeth Blackwell	229
Johann Sebastian Bach	141	Tony Blair	232
Francis Bacon	143	William Blake	234
Roger Bacon	145	Konrad Bloch	237
Joan Baez	147	Judy Blume	239
F Lee Bailey	150	Humphrey Bogart	242
Josephine Baker	152	Julian Bond	244
George Balanchine	154	Daniel Boone	246
James Baldwin	156	John Wilkes Booth	248

William Booth	250	Al Capone	352
Lucrezia Borgia	252	Truman Capote	354
P. W. Botha	255	Frank Capra	357
Sandro Botticelli	257	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
Margaret Bourke-White	259		
Boutros Boutros-Ghali	261	Volume 3: Car–Da	
Ray Bradbury	264	Lázaro Cárdenas	361
Ed Bradley	266	Stokely Carmichael	363
Mathew Brady	269	Andrew Carnegie	367
Johannes Brahms	271	Lewis Carroll	370
Louis Braille	273	Johnny Carson	372
Louis Brandeis	275	Kit Carson	374
Marlon Brando	278	Rachel Carson	377
Leonid Brezhnev	280	Jimmy Carter	379
Charlotte Brontë	283	George Washington Carver	383
Emily Brontë	284	Pablo Casals	386
Gwendolyn Brooks	286	Mary Cassatt	388
Helen Gurley Brown	289	Vernon and Irene Castle	390
James Brown	291	Fidel Castro	393
John Brown	294	Willa Cather	397
Rachel Fuller Brown	297	Catherine of Aragon	399
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	299	Catherine the Great	401
Robert Browning	302	Henry Cavendish	404
Pat Buchanan	305	Anders Celsius	407
Pearl S. Buck	308	Miguel de Cervantes	408
Buddha	310	Paul Cézanne	411
Ralph Bunche	312	Marc Chagall	414
Warren Burger	314	Wilt Chamberlain	416
Robert Burns	317	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	419
Aaron Burr	320	Charlie Chaplin	421
George Bush	323	Charlemagne	424
George W. Bush	326	Charles, Prince of Wales	427
Laura Bush	329	Ray Charles	430
Lord Byron	331	Geoffrey Chaucer	433
Julius Caesar	335	César Chávez	436
Caligula	338	Dennis Chavez	438
Maria Callas	340	Linda Chavez	440
Cab Calloway	342	Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	443
John Calvin	344	John Cheever	447
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	346	Anton Chekhov	449
Albert Camus	349	Dick Cheney	451

Mary Boykin Chesnut	454
Chiang Kai-shek	456
Julia Child	459
Shirley Chisholm	461
Frédéric Chopin	464
Jean Chrétien	467
Agatha Christie	469
Winston Churchill	472
Marcus Tullius Cicero	475
Liz Claiborne	478
Cleopatra VII	480
Bill Clinton	483
Hillary Rodham Clinton	487
Ty Cobb	490
Nat “King” Cole	492
Bessie Coleman	494
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	496
Marva Collins	499
Michael Collins	501
Confucius	503
Sean Connery	506
Joseph Conrad	508
Nicolaus Copernicus	510
Aaron Copland	513
Francis Ford Coppola	515
Bill Cosby	518
Jacques Cousteau	521
Noel Coward	523
Michael Crichton	525
Davy Crockett	527
Oliver Cromwell	529
Walter Cronkite	532
E. E. Cummings	535
Marie Curie	538
Roald Dahl	543
Dalai Lama	546
Salvador Dali	549
Clarence Darrow	551
Charles Darwin	554
Bette Davis	556
Miles Davis	558

Ossie Davis	561
Sammy Davis Jr.	563
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 4: De–Ga

James Dean	567
Claude Debussy	569
Ruby Dee	571
Daniel Defoe	574
Edgar Degas	576
Charles de Gaulle	579
F. W. de Klerk	581
Cecil B. DeMille	585
Deng Xiaoping	587
René Descartes	590
Hernando de Soto	592
John Dewey	594
Diana, Princess of Wales	597
Charles Dickens	600
Emily Dickinson	603
Denis Diderot	606
Joe DiMaggio	608
Walt Disney	611
Elizabeth Dole	613
Placido Domingo	616
Donatello	619
John Donne	621
Fyodor Dostoevsky	624
Frederick Douglass	626
Arthur Conan Doyle	629
Francis Drake	632
Alexandre Dumas	634
Paul Laurence Dunbar	636
Pierre du Pont	638
François Duvalier	640
Amelia Earhart	643
George Eastman	646
Clint Eastwood	648
Thomas Edison	650
Albert Einstein	654
Dwight D. Eisenhower	657

Mamie Eisenhower	661	Karl Friedrich Gauss	775
Joycelyn Elders	662	<i>Index</i>	xxxv
George Eliot	665		
T. S. Eliot	668	Volume 5: Ge–I	
Elizabeth I	672	Hans Geiger	779
Elizabeth II	675	Theodor Geisel	781
Duke Ellington	678	Genghis Khan	784
Ralph Waldo Emerson	680	J. Paul Getty	786
Desiderius Erasmus	683	Kahlil Gibran	788
Euclid	686	Althea Gibson	790
Euripides	688	Dizzy Gillespie	792
Medgar Evers	690	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	794
Gabriel Fahrenheit	695	Whoopi Goldberg	797
Fannie Farmer	696	William Golding	800
Louis Farrakhan	698	Samuel Gompers	801
William Faulkner	701	Jane Goodall	804
Dianne Feinstein	704	Benny Goodman	807
Enrico Fermi	707	Mikhail Gorbachev	809
Geraldine Ferraro	710	Berry Gordy Jr.	813
Bobby Fischer	713	Al Gore	816
Ella Fitzgerald	715	Jay Gould	818
F. Scott Fitzgerald	718	Stephen Jay Gould	821
Gustave Flaubert	721	Katharine Graham	824
Malcolm Forbes	723	Martha Graham	827
Henry Ford	725	Cary Grant	829
Francis of Assisi	729	Graham Greene	831
Benjamin Franklin	731	Wayne Gretzky	833
Sigmund Freud	735	Brothers Grimm	836
Betty Friedan	738	Woody Guthrie	838
Robert Frost	741	Alex Haley	843
John Kenneth Galbraith	745	Alexander Hamilton	846
Galen	748	Oscar Hammerstein	849
Galileo	750	John Hancock	852
George Gallup	753	George Frideric Handel	854
Indira Gandhi	754	Thomas Hardy	857
Mohandas Gandhi	758	Stephen Hawking	860
Gabriel García Márquez	762	Nathaniel Hawthorne	862
Judy Garland	764	William Randolph Hearst	865
Marcus Garvey	767	Werner Heisenberg	868
Bill Gates	769	Joseph Heller	870
Paul Gauguin	773	Lillian Hellman	872

Ernest Hemingway	875
Jimi Hendrix	878
Henry VIII	880
Patrick Henry	883
Audrey Hepburn	886
Katharine Hepburn	888
Herod the Great	891
William Herschel	893
Thor Heyerdahl	895
Edmund Hillary	898
S. E. Hinton	900
Hippocrates	902
Hirohito	904
Alfred Hitchcock	907
Adolf Hitler	909
Ho Chi Minh	912
Thomas Hobbes	915
Billie Holiday	918
Oliver Wendell Holmes	920
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	923
Homer	926
Soichiro Honda	929
bell hooks	931
Benjamin Hooks	933
Bob Hope	936
Anthony Hopkins	938
Lena Horne	940
Harry Houdini	943
Gordie Howe	946
Julia Ward Howe	949
Howard Hughes	951
Langston Hughes	954
Victor Hugo	957
Zora Neale Hurston	960
Saddam Hussein	962
Lee Iacocca	967
Henrik Ibsen	970
Imhotep	972
Washington Irving	975
<i>Index</i>	xxxv

Volume 6: J–L

Andrew Jackson	979
Jesse Jackson	983
Michael Jackson	986
Reggie Jackson	989
P. D. James	991
Thomas Jefferson	994
Mae Jemison	997
Jesus of Nazareth	1000
Jiang Zemin	1003
Joan of Arc	1005
Steve Jobs	1007
Elton John	1011
John Paul II	1013
Lyndon B. Johnson	1016
Magic Johnson	1020
Samuel Johnson	1023
Al Jolson	1025
James Earl Jones	1027
Quincy Jones	1029
Ben Jonson	1032
Michael Jordan	1034
James Joyce	1038
Benito Juárez	1040
Carl Jung	1043
Franz Kafka	1047
Wassily Kandinsky	1050
Immanuel Kant	1052
John Keats	1054
Helen Keller	1056
Gene Kelly	1058
Edward Kennedy	1061
John F. Kennedy	1064
John F. Kennedy Jr.	1069
Robert Kennedy	1071
Johannes Kepler	1074
Jack Kerouac	1076
Charles F. Kettering	1078
Ayatollah Khomeini	1081
Nikita Khrushchev	1083
B. B. King	1086

Billie Jean King	1089	Dolley Madison	1191
Coretta Scott King	1091	James Madison	1194
Martin Luther King Jr.	1094	Madonna	1197
Stephen King	1098	Ferdinand Magellan	1201
Rudyard Kipling	1101	Najib Mahfuz	1203
Henry Kissinger	1104	Norman Mailer	1205
Calvin Klein	1107	Bernard Malamud	1208
Kublai Khan	1109	Malcolm X	1210
Marquis de Lafayette	1113	David Mamet	1214
Lao Tzu	1115	Nelson Mandela	1216
Ralph Lauren	1117	Édouard Manet	1219
Emma Lazarus	1119	Wilma Mankiller	1221
Mary Leakey	1121	Mickey Mantle	1224
Bruce Lee	1124	Mao Zedong	1226
Spike Lee	1126	Rocky Marciano	1230
Tsung-Dao Lee	1129	Ferdinand Marcos	1233
Vladimir Lenin	1131	Marcus Aurelius	1236
Leonardo da Vinci	1136	Marie Antoinette	1238
C. S. Lewis	1139	Mark Antony	1240
Carl Lewis	1141	Thurgood Marshall	1243
Sinclair Lewis	1144	Karl Marx	1246
Roy Lichtenstein	1146	Mary, Queen of Scots	1249
Maya Lin	1148	Cotton Mather	1252
Abraham Lincoln	1150	Henri Matisse	1255
Charles Lindbergh	1154	Mayo Brothers	1258
Carl Linnaeus	1157	Willie Mays	1261
Joseph Lister	1159	Joseph McCarthy	1264
Andrew Lloyd Webber	1161	Hattie McDaniel	1267
Alain Locke	1163	John McEnroe	1270
John Locke	1166	Terry McMillan	1273
Jack London	1168	Aimee Semple McPherson	1275
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	1170	Margaret Mead	1277
Joe Louis	1173	Catherine de' Medici	1281
George Lucas	1175	Golda Meir	1284
Patrice Lumumba	1178	Rigoberta Menchú	1286
Martin Luther	1181	Felix Mendelssohn	1289
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Kweisi Mfume	1292
		Michelangelo	1295
		Harvey Milk	1298
Volume 7: M–Ne		John Stuart Mill	1301
Douglas MacArthur	1185	Edna St. Vincent Millay	1303
Niccolò Machiavelli	1188		

Arthur Miller	1305	Manuel Noriega	1401
Henry Miller	1308	Jessye Norman	1404
Slobodan Milosevic	1310	Nostradamus	1406
John Milton	1313	Rudolf Nureyev	1409
Joan Miró	1316	Joyce Carol Oates	1413
Molière	1318	Sandra Day O'Connor	1416
Claude Monet	1320	Georgia O'Keefe	1420
Thelonious Monk	1323	Laurence Olivier	1422
Marilyn Monroe	1325	Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	1425
Joe Montana	1327	Eugene O'Neill	1428
Montesquieu	1329	George Orwell	1430
Maria Montessori	1331	Ovid	1432
Thomas More	1334	Jesse Owens	1435
Jim Morrison	1336	Mohammad Reza Pahlavi	1439
Toni Morrison	1338	Arnold Palmer	1441
Samuel F. B. Morse	1341	Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus	1443
Moses	1343	Charlie Parker	1445
Grandma Moses	1345	Blaise Pascal	1447
Mother Teresa	1347	Louis Pasteur	1450
Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart	1350	Linus Pauling	1453
Hosni Mubarak	1353	Luciano Pavarotti	1456
Muhammad	1355	Ivan Pavlov	1459
Elijah Muhammad	1358	Anna Pavlova	1462
John Muir	1360	I. M. Pei	1464
Edvard Munch	1362	Pelé.	1467
Rupert Murdoch	1364	William Penn	1469
Benito Mussolini	1367	Pericles	1472
Vladimir Nabokov	1371	Eva Perón	1474
Ralph Nader	1373	Jean Piaget	1477
Napoleon Bonaparte	1376	Pablo Picasso	1479
Ogden Nash	1379	Sylvia Plath	1483
Nefertiti	1381	Plato	1485
Isaac Newton	1382	Pocahontas	1488
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Edgar Allan Poe	1490
 Volume 8: Ni–Re			
Friedrich Nietzsche	1387	Sidney Poitier	1493
Florence Nightingale	1390	Pol Pot	1495
Richard Nixon	1392	Marco Polo	1498
Alfred Nobel	1397	Juan Ponce de León	1501
Isamu Noguchi	1398	Alexander Pope	1502
		Cole Porter	1505
		Katherine Anne Porter	1507

Frank Sinatra	1719	Marshal Tito	1821
Upton Sinclair	1722	J. R. R. Tolkien	1824
Isaac Bashevis Singer	1724	Leo Tolstoy	1827
Bessie Smith	1727	Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec	1830
Socrates	1729	Eiji Toyoda	1832
Stephen Sondheim	1732	Harry S. Truman	1834
Sophocles	1734	Donald Trump	1837
Steven Spielberg	1737	Sojourner Truth	1840
Benjamin Spock	1740	Tu Fu	1843
Joseph Stalin	1743	Tutankhamen	1845
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	1747	Desmond Tutu	1847
Edith Stein	1749	Mark Twain	1850
Gertrude Stein	1752	John Updike	1855
John Steinbeck	1755	Vincent Van Gogh	1859
Robert Louis Stevenson	1757	Jan Vermeer	1862
Bram Stoker	1759	Jules Verne	1864
Oliver Stone	1761	Amerigo Vespucci	1867
Tom Stoppard	1764	Victoria	1869
Harriet Beecher Stowe	1766	Gore Vidal	1872
Antonio Stradivari	1769	Virgil	1874
Johann Strauss	1771	Antonio Vivaldi	1877
Igor Stravinsky	1773	Voltaire	1879
Barbra Streisand	1776	Wernher von Braun	1882
Sun Yat-sen	1779	Kurt Vonnegut	1884
<i>Index</i>	xxxv	Richard Wagner	1889
		Alice Walker	1891
		Madame C. J. Walker	1894
		Barbara Walters	1897
		An Wang	1900
		Booker T. Washington	1903
		George Washington	1906
		James Watt	1910
		John Wayne	1913
		Daniel Webster	1916
		Noah Webster	1919
		Orson Welles	1922
		Eudora Welty	1925
		Edith Wharton	1928
		James Whistler	1929
		E. B. White	1932
		Walt Whitman	1935
<i>Volume 10: T–Z</i>			
Maria Tallchief	1785		
Amy Tan	1787		
Elizabeth Taylor	1790		
Peter Ilych Tchaikovsky	1792		
Alfred, Lord Tennyson	1795		
Valentina Tereshkova	1798		
William Makepeace Thackeray	1801		
Twyla Tharp	1804		
Clarence Thomas	1807		
Dylan Thomas	1810		
Henry David Thoreau	1813		
Jim Thorpe	1816		
James Thurber	1819		

Elie Wiesel	1938	Virginia Woolf	1962
Oscar Wilde	1940	William Wordsworth	1965
Laura Ingalls Wilder	1943	Wright Brothers	1969
Thornton Wilder	1946	Frank Lloyd Wright	1972
Tennessee Williams	1948	Richard Wright	1975
Woodrow Wilson	1951	William Butler Yeats	1979
Oprah Winfrey	1954	Boris Yeltsin	1982
Anna May Wong	1958	Paul Zindel	1987
Tiger Woods	1960	<i>Index</i>	xxxv



*entries by
nationality*

African American

Hank Aaron 1: 1
 Ralph Abernathy 1: 4
 Alvin Ailey 1: 34
 Muhammad Ali 1: 47
 Marian Anderson 1: 69
 Maya Angelou 1: 73
 Louis Armstrong 1: 101
 Arthur Ashe 1: 110
 Josephine Baker 1: 152
 James Baldwin 1: 156
 Benjamin Banneker 1: 166
 Count Basie 1: 177
 Chuck Berry 2: 213
 Mary McLeod Bethune 2: 215
 Julian Bond 2: 244
 Gwendolyn Brooks 2: 286

James Brown 2: 291
 Ralph Bunche 2: 312
 Stokely Carmichael 3: 363
 George Washington Carver 3: 383
 Wilt Chamberlain 3: 416
 Ray Charles 3: 430
 Benjamin Chavis Muhammad 3: 443
 Shirley Chisholm 3: 461
 Nat “King” Cole 3: 492
 Bessie Coleman 3: 494
 Marva Collins 3: 499
 Bill Cosby 3: 518
 Miles Davis 3: 558
 Ossie Davis 3: 561
 Sammy Davis Jr. 3: 563
 Ruby Dee 4: 571
 Frederick Douglass 4: 626

Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Jessye Norman	8: 1404
Joycelyn Elders	4: 662	Jesse Owens	8: 1435
Duke Ellington	4: 678	Charlie Parker	8: 1445
Medgar Evers	4: 690	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Louis Farrakhan	4: 698	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Althea Gibson	5: 790	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Alex Haley	5: 843	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Bessie Smith	9: 1727
bell hooks	5: 931	Sojourner Truth	10: 1840
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Alice Walker	10: 1891
Lena Horne	5: 940	Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Reggie Jackson	6: 989		
Mae Jemison	6: 997	<i>Albanian</i>	
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Mother Teresa	7: 1347
James Earl Jones	6: 1027		
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	<i>American</i>	
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Hank Aaron	1: 1
B. B. King	6: 1086	Ralph Abernathy	1: 4
Coretta Scott King	6: 1091	Bella Abzug	1: 7
Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094	Abigail Adams	1: 12
Spike Lee	6: 1126	Ansel Adams	1: 15
Carl Lewis	6: 1141	John Adams	1: 17
Alain Locke	6: 1163	Samuel Adams	1: 20
Malcolm X	7: 1210	Jane Addams	1: 25
Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Spiro Agnew	1: 31
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Alvin Ailey	1: 34
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Madeleine Albright	1: 37
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Louisa May Alcott	1: 39
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	Muhammad Ali	1: 47
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Woody Allen	1: 49
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Julia Alvarez	1: 54
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	American Horse	1: 57

Carl David Anderson	1: 64	Daniel Boone	2: 246
Marian Anderson	1: 69	John Wilkes Booth	2: 248
Maya Angelou	1: 73	Margaret Bourke-White	2: 259
Susan B. Anthony	1: 79	Ray Bradbury	2: 264
Virginia Apgar	1: 81	Ed Bradley	2: 266
Louis Armstrong	1: 101	Mathew Brady	2: 269
Neil Armstrong	1: 102	Louis Brandeis	2: 275
Benedict Arnold	1: 105	Marlon Brando	2: 278
Mary Kay Ash	1: 108	Gwendolyn Brooks	2: 286
Arthur Ashe	1: 110	Helen Gurley Brown	2: 289
Isaac Asimov	1: 113	James Brown	2: 291
Fred Astaire	1: 116	John Brown	2: 294
John Jacob Astor	1: 118	Rachel Fuller Brown	2: 297
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Pat Buchanan	2: 305
John James Audubon	1: 125	Pearl S. Buck	2: 308
Joan Baez	1: 147	Ralph Bunche	2: 312
F. Lee Bailey	1: 150	Warren Burger	2: 314
Josephine Baker	1: 152	Aaron Burr	2: 320
George Balanchine	1: 154	George Bush	2: 323
James Baldwin	1: 156	George W. Bush	2: 326
Lucille Ball	1: 159	Laura Bush	2: 329
David Baltimore	1: 161	Maria Callas	2: 340
Benjamin Banneker	1: 166	Cab Calloway	2: 342
Clara Barton	1: 175	Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Count Basie	1: 177	Al Capone	2: 352
William Beaumont	2: 185	Truman Capote	2: 354
Alexander Graham Bell	2: 196	Frank Capra	2: 357
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200	Stokely Carmichael	3: 363
Saul Bellow	2: 202	Andrew Carnegie	3: 367
William Bennett	2: 204	Johnny Carson	3: 372
Irving Berlin	2: 208	Kit Carson	3: 374
Leonard Bernstein	2: 210	Rachel Carson	3: 377
Chuck Berry	2: 213	Jimmy Carter	3: 379
Mary McLeod Bethune	2: 215	George Washington Carver	3: 383
Owen Bieber	2: 220	Mary Cassatt	3: 388
Billy the Kid	2: 223	Irene Castle	3: 390
Larry Bird	2: 224	Willa Cather	3: 397
Shirley Temple Black	2: 227	Wilt Chamberlain	3: 416
Judy Blume	2: 239	Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar	3: 419
Humphrey Bogart	2: 242	Ray Charles	3: 430
Julian Bond	2: 244	César Chávez	3: 436

Dennis Chavez	3: 438	Thomas Edison	4: 650
Linda Chavez	3: 440	Albert Einstein	4: 654
Benjamin Chavis Muhammad	3: 443	Dwight D. Eisenhower	4: 657
John Cheever	3: 447	Mamie Eisenhower	4: 661
Dick Cheney	3: 451	Joycelyn Elders	4: 662
Mary Boykin Chesnut	3: 454	T. S. Eliot	4: 668
Julia Child	3: 459	Duke Ellington	4: 678
Shirley Chisholm	3: 461	Ralph Waldo Emerson	4: 680
Liz Claiborne	3: 478	Medgar Evers	4: 690
Bill Clinton	3: 483	Fannie Farmer	4: 696
Hillary Rodham Clinton	3: 487	Louis Farrakhan	4: 698
Ty Cobb	3: 490	William Faulkner	4: 701
Nat "King" Cole	3: 492	Dianne Feinstein	4: 704
Bessie Coleman	3: 494	Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Marva Collins	3: 499	Geraldine Ferraro	4: 710
Aaron Copland	3: 513	Bobby Fischer	4: 713
Francis Ford Coppola	3: 515	Ella Fitzgerald	4: 715
Bill Cosby	3: 518	F. Scott Fitzgerald	4: 718
Michael Crichton	3: 525	Malcolm Forbes	4: 723
Davy Crockett	3: 527	Henry Ford	4: 725
Walter Cronkite	3: 532	Benjamin Franklin	4: 731
E. E. Cummings	3: 535	Betty Friedan	4: 738
Clarence Darrow	3: 551	Robert Frost	4: 741
Bette Davis	3: 556	John Kenneth Galbraith	4: 745
Miles Davis	3: 558	George Gallup	4: 753
Ossie Davis	3: 561	Judy Garland	4: 764
Sammy Davis Jr.	3: 563	Bill Gates	4: 769
James Dean	4: 567	Theodor Geisel	5: 781
Ruby Dee	4: 571	J. Paul Getty	5: 786
Cecil B. DeMille	4: 585	Althea Gibson	5: 790
John Dewey	4: 594	Dizzy Gillespie	5: 792
Emily Dickinson	4: 603	Ruth Bader Ginsburg	5: 794
Joe DiMaggio	4: 608	Whoopi Goldberg	5: 797
Walt Disney	4: 611	Samuel Gompers	5: 801
Elizabeth Dole	4: 613	Benny Goodman	5: 807
Frederick Douglass	4: 626	Berry Gordy Jr.	5: 813
Paul Laurence Dunbar	4: 636	Al Gore	5: 816
Pierre Du Pont	4: 638	Jay Gould	5: 818
Amelia Earhart	4: 643	Stephen Jay Gould	5: 821
George Eastman	4: 646	Katharine Graham	5: 824
Clint Eastwood	4: 648	Martha Graham	5: 827

Woody Guthrie	5: 838	Helen Keller	6: 1056
Alex Haley	5: 843	Gene Kelly	6: 1058
Alexander Hamilton	5: 846	Edward Kennedy	6: 1061
Oscar Hammerstein	5: 849	John F. Kennedy	6: 1064
John Hancock	5: 852	John F. Kennedy Jr.	6: 1069
Nathaniel Hawthorne	5: 862	Robert Kennedy	6: 1071
William Randolph Hearst	5: 865	Jack Kerouac	6: 1076
Joseph Heller	5: 870	Charles F. Kettering	6: 1078
Lillian Hellman	5: 872	B. B. King	6: 1086
Ernest Hemingway	5: 875	Billie Jean King	6: 1089
Jimi Hendrix	5: 878	Coretta Scott King	6: 1091
Patrick Henry	5: 883	Martin Luther King Jr.	6: 1094
Katharine Hepburn	5: 888	Stephen King	6: 1098
S. E. Hinton	5: 900	Henry Kissinger	6: 1104
Billie Holiday	5: 918	Calvin Klein	6: 1107
Oliver Wendell Holmes	5: 920	Ralph Lauren	6: 1117
Oliver Wendell Holmes Jr.	5: 923	Emma Lazarus	6: 1119
bell hooks	5: 931	Bruce Lee	6: 1124
Benjamin Hooks	5: 933	Spike Lee	6: 1126
Bob Hope	5: 936	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Lena Horne	5: 940	Carl Lewis	6: 1141
Harry Houdini	5: 943	Sinclair Lewis	6: 1144
Julia Ward Howe	5: 949	Roy Lichtenstein	6: 1146
Howard Hughes	5: 951	Abraham Lincoln	6: 1150
Langston Hughes	5: 954	Charles Lindbergh	6: 1154
Zora Neale Hurston	5: 960	Alain Locke	6: 1163
Lee Iacocca	5: 967	Jack London	6: 1168
Washington Irving	5: 975	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow	6: 1170
Andrew Jackson	6: 979	Joe Louis	6: 1173
Jesse Jackson	6: 983	George Lucas	6: 1175
Michael Jackson	6: 986	Douglas MacArthur	7: 1185
Reggie Jackson	6: 989	Dolley Madison	7: 1191
Thomas Jefferson	6: 994	James Madison	7: 1194
Mae Jemison	6: 997	Madonna	7: 1197
Steve Jobs	6: 1007	Norman Mailer	7: 1205
Lyndon B. Johnson	6: 1016	Bernard Malamud	7: 1390
Magic Johnson	6: 1020	Malcolm X	7: 1210
Al Jolson	6: 1025	David Mamet	7: 1214
James Earl Jones	6: 1027	Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Quincy Jones	6: 1029	Mickey Mantle	7: 1224
Michael Jordan	6: 1034	Rocky Marciano	7: 1230

Thurgood Marshall	7: 1243	Pocahontas	8: 1488
Cotton Mather	7: 1252	Edgar Allan Poe	8: 1490
Mayo Brothers	7: 1258	Sidney Poitier	8: 1493
Willie Mays	7: 1261	Cole Porter	8: 1505
Joseph McCarthy	7: 1264	Katherine Anne Porter	8: 1507
Hattie McDaniel	7: 1267	Emily Post	8: 1509
John McEnroe	7: 1270	Colin Powell	8: 1511
Terry McMillan	7: 1273	Elvis Presley	8: 1517
Aimee Semple McPherson	7: 1275	André Previn	8: 1520
Margaret Mead	7: 1277	Leontyne Price	8: 1522
Kweisi Mfume	7: 1292	E. Annie Proulx	8: 1524
Harvey Milk	7: 1298	Joseph Pulitzer	8: 1531
Edna St. Vincent Millay	7: 1303	George Pullman	8: 1533
Arthur Miller	7: 1305	A. Philip Randolph	8: 1552
Henry Miller	7: 1308	Ronald Reagan	8: 1557
Thelonious Monk	7: 1323	Christopher Reeve	8: 1561
Marilyn Monroe	7: 1325	Erich Maria Remarque	8: 1564
Joe Montana	7: 1327	Janet Reno	8: 1568
Jim Morrison	7: 1336	Paul Revere	8: 1574
Toni Morrison	7: 1338	Condoleezza Rice	9: 1580
Samuel F. B. Morse	7: 1341	Sally Ride	9: 1585
Grandma Moses	7: 1345	Cal Ripken, Jr.	9: 1591
Elijah Muhammad	7: 1358	Paul Robeson	9: 1596
John Muir	7: 1360	Smokey Robinson	9: 1601
Vladimir Nabokov	7: 1371	John D. Rockefeller	9: 1604
Ralph Nader	7: 1373	Norman Rockwell	9: 1607
Ogden Nash	7: 1379	Richard Rodgers	9: 1610
Richard Nixon	8: 1392	Will Rogers	9: 1615
Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398	Eleanor Roosevelt	9: 1621
Jessye Norman	8: 1404	Franklin D. Roosevelt	9: 1624
Joyce Carol Oates	8: 1413	Theodore Roosevelt	9: 1628
Sandra Day O'Connor	8: 1416	Diana Ross	9: 1631
Georgia O'Keeffe	8: 1420	Carl Rowan	9: 1639
Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis	8: 1425	Wilma Rudolph	9: 1646
Eugene O'Neill	8: 1428	Babe Ruth	9: 1651
Jesse Owens	8: 1435	Nolan Ryan	9: 1653
Arnold Palmer	8: 1441	Albert Sabin	9: 1657
Charlie Parker	8: 1445	Carl Sagan	9: 1659
Linus Pauling	8: 1453	J. D. Salinger	9: 1664
I. M. Pei	8: 1464	Jonas Salk	9: 1667
Sylvia Plath	8: 1483	Carl Sandburg	9: 1671

Margaret Sanger	9: 1673	An Wang	10: 1900
Arthur Schlesinger Jr.	9: 1681	Booker T. Washington	10: 1903
Charles M. Schulz	9: 1687	George Washington	10: 1906
Martin Scorsese	9: 1690	John Wayne	10: 1913
Selena	9: 1698	Daniel Webster	10: 1916
Sequoyah	9: 1701	Noah Webster	10: 1919
Beverly Sills	9: 1714	Orson Welles	10: 1922
Neil Simon	9: 1716	Eudora Welty	10: 1925
Frank Sinatra	9: 1719	Edith Wharton	10: 1928
Upton Sinclair	9: 1722	James Whistler	10: 1929
Isaac Bashevis Singer	9: 1724	E. B. White	10: 1932
Bessie Smith	9: 1727	Walt Whitman	10: 1935
Stephen Sondheim	9: 1732	Elie Wiesel	10: 1938
Steven Spielberg	9: 1737	Laura Ingalls Wilder	10: 1943
Benjamin Spock	9: 1740	Thornton Wilder	10: 1946
Elizabeth Cady Stanton	9: 1747	Tennessee Williams	10: 1948
Gertrude Stein	9: 1752	Woodrow Wilson	10: 1951
John Steinbeck	9: 1755	Oprah Winfrey	10: 1954
Oliver Stone	9: 1761	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Harriet Beecher Stowe	9: 1766	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Igor Stravinsky	9: 1773	Wright Brothers	10: 1969
Barbra Streisand	9: 1776	Frank Lloyd Wright	10: 1972
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785	Richard Wright	10: 1975
Amy Tan	10: 1787	Paul Zindel	10: 1987
Elizabeth Taylor	10: 1790		
Twyla Tharp	10: 1804	<i>Arabian</i>	
Clarence Thomas	10: 1807	Muhammad	7: 1355
Henry David Thoreau	10: 1813		
Jim Thorpe	10: 1816	<i>Argentine</i>	
James Thurber	10: 1819	Eva Perón	8: 1474
Harry S. Truman	10: 1834		
Donald Trump	10: 1837	<i>Asian American</i>	
Sojourner Truth	10: 1840	Tsung-Dao Lee	6: 1129
Mark Twain	10: 1850	Maya Lin	6: 1148
John Updike	10: 1855	Isamu Noguchi	8: 1398
Gore Vidal	10: 1872	I. M. Pei	8: 1464
Wernher von Braun	10: 1882	Amy Tan	10: 1787
Kurt Vonnegut	10: 1884	An Wang	10: 1900
Alice Walker	10: 1891	Anna May Wong	10: 1958
Madame C. J. Walker	10: 1894	Tiger Woods	10: 1960
Barbara Walters	10: 1897		

Australian

Rupert Murdoch 7: 1364

Austrian

Joy Adamson 1: 22

Alfred Adler 1: 27

Sigmund Freud 4: 735

Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart 7: 1350

Franz Schubert 9: 1684

Johann Strauss 9: 1771

Belgian

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886

Brazilian

Pelé 8: 1467

Burmese

Aung San Suu Kyi 1: 130

Cambodian

Pol Pot 8: 1495

Dith Pran 8: 1514

Canadian

Margaret Atwood 1: 120

Frederick Banting 1: 168

Jean Chrétien 3: 467

John Kenneth Galbraith 4: 745

Wayne Gretzky 5: 833

Gordie Howe 5: 946

Aimee Semple McPherson 7: 1275

Chilean

Isabel Allende 1: 52

Chinese

Chiang Kai-shek 3: 456

Confucius 3: 503

Deng Xiaoping 4: 587

Jiang Zemin 6: 1003

Lao Tzu 6: 1115

Tsung-Dao Lee 6: 1129

Mao Zedong 7: 1226

I. M. Pei 8: 1464

Sun Yat-sen 9: 1779

Tu Fu 10: 1843

An Wang 10: 1900

Colombian

Gabriel García Márquez 7: 762

Congolese

Patrice Lumumba 6: 1178

Cuban

Fidel Castro 3: 393

Czech

Madeleine Albright 1: 37

Franz Kafka 6: 1047

Tom Stoppard 9: 1764

Danish

Hans Christian Andersen 1: 62

Dutch

Desiderius Erasmus 4: 683

Rembrandt 8: 1566

Vincent Van Gogh 10: 1859

Egyptian

Boutros Boutros-Ghali 2: 261

Cleopatra VII 3: 480

Imhotep 5: 972

Najib Mahfuz 7: 1203

Moses 7: 1343

Hosni Mubarak 7: 1353

Nefertiti 7: 1381

Tutankhamen 10: 1845

English

Elizabeth Garrett Anderson	1: 66	Cary Grant	5: 829
W. H. Auden	1: 123	Graham Greene	5: 831
Jane Austen	1: 132	George Frideric Handel	5: 854
Charles Babbage	1: 139	Thomas Hardy	5: 857
Francis Bacon	1: 143	Stephen Hawking	5: 860
Roger Bacon	1: 145	Henry VIII	5: 880
Beatles	2: 181	Alfred Hitchcock	5: 907
Elizabeth Blackwell	2: 229	Thomas Hobbes	5: 915
William Blake	2: 234	P. D. James	6: 991
William Booth	2: 250	Elton John	6: 1011
Charlotte Brontë	2: 283	Samuel Johnson	6: 1023
Emily Brontë	2: 284	Ben Jonson	6: 1032
Elizabeth Barrett Browning	2: 299	John Keats	6: 1054
Robert Browning	2: 302	Rudyard Kipling	6: 1101
Lord Byron	2: 331	Mary Leakey	6: 1121
Lewis Carroll	3: 370	Joseph Lister	6: 1159
Vernon Castle	3: 390	Andrew Lloyd Webber	6: 1161
Henry Cavendish	3: 404	John Locke	6: 1166
Charlie Chaplin	3: 421	John Stuart Mill	7: 1301
Charles, Prince of Wales	3: 427	John Milton	7: 1313
Geoffrey Chaucer	3: 433	Thomas More	7: 1334
Agatha Christie	3: 469	Isaac Newton	7: 1382
Winston Churchill	3: 472	Florence Nightingale	8: 1390
Samuel Taylor Coleridge	3: 496	Laurence Olivier	8: 1422
Joseph Conrad	3: 508	George Orwell	8: 1430
Noel Coward	3: 523	William Penn	8: 1469
Oliver Cromwell	3: 529	Alexander Pope	8: 1502
Charles Darwin	3: 554	Walter Raleigh	8: 1547
Daniel Defoe	4: 574	Cecil Rhodes	9: 1577
Diana, Princess of Wales	4: 597	Rolling Stones	9: 1618
Charles Dickens	4: 600	Dante Gabriel Rossetti	9: 1634
John Donne	4: 621	J. K. Rowling	9: 1641
Arthur Conan Doyle	4: 629	William Shakespeare	9: 1702
Francis Drake	4: 632	Mary Shelley	9: 1708
George Eliot	4: 665	Percy Shelley	9: 1711
T. S. Eliot	4: 668	Tom Stoppard	9: 1764
Elizabeth I	4: 672	Alfred, Lord Tennyson	10: 1795
Elizabeth II	4: 675	William Makepeace Thackeray	10: 1801
William Golding	5: 800	J. R. R. Tolkien	10: 1824
Jane Goodall	5: 804	Victoria	10: 1869
		Oscar Wilde	10: 1940

Virginia Woolf 10: 1963
William Wordsworth 10: 1965

Ethiopian

Haile Selassie 9: 1697

Filipino

Benigno Aquino 1: 84
Ferdinand Marcos 7: 1233

Flemish

Peter Paul Rubens 9: 1643

Frankish

Charlemagne 3: 424

French

John James Audubon 1: 125
Honoré de Balzac 1: 164
Simone de Beauvoir 2: 187
Louis Braille 2: 273
John Calvin 2: 344
Albert Camus 2: 349
Paul Cézanne 3: 411
Jacques Cousteau 3: 521
Marie Curie 3: 538
Claude Debussy 4: 569
Edgar Degas 4: 576
Charles de Gaulle 4: 579
René Descartes 4: 590
Denis Diderot 4: 606
Alexandre Dumas 4: 634
Gustave Flaubert 4: 721
Paul Gauguin 4: 773
Victor Hugo 5: 957
Joan of Arc 6: 1005
Marquis de Lafayette 6: 1113
Édouard Manet 7: 1219
Marie Antoinette 7: 1238
Henri Matisse 7: 1255

Molière 7: 1318
Claude Monet 7: 1320
Montesquieu 7: 1329
Napoleon Bonaparte 7: 1376
Nostradamus 8: 1406
Blaise Pascal 8: 1447
Louis Pasteur 8: 1450
Marcel Proust 8: 1526
Pierre Auguste Renoir 8: 1571
Armand-Jean du Plessis
 de Richelieu 9: 1583
Maximilien de Robespierre 9: 1599
Auguste Rodin 9: 1613
Jean-Jacques Rousseau 9: 1636
George Sand 9: 1669
Jean-Paul Sartre 9: 1676
Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec 10: 1830
Jan Vermeer 10: 1862
Jules Verne 10: 1864
Voltaire 10: 1879

German

Hannah Arendt 1: 91
John Jacob Astor 1: 118
Johann Sebastian Bach 1: 141
Klaus Barbie 1: 170
Ludwig van Beethoven 2: 192
Konrad Bloch 2: 237
Johannes Brahms 2: 271
Catherine the Great 3: 401
Albert Einstein 4: 654
Gabriel Fahrenheit 4: 695
Karl Friedrich Gauss 4: 775
Hans Geiger 5: 779
Brothers Grimm 5: 836
George Frideric Handel 5: 854
Werner Heisenberg 5: 868
William Herschel 5: 893
Adolf Hitler 5: 909
Franz Kafka 6: 1047
Immanuel Kant 6: 1052

Johannes Kepler 6: 1074
 Henry Kissinger 6: 1104
 Martin Luther 6: 1181
 Karl Marx 7: 1246
 Felix Mendelssohn 7: 1289
 Friedrich Nietzsche 8: 1387
 André Previn 8: 1520
 Erich Maria Remarque 8: 1564
 Leni Riefenstahl 9: 1588
 Oskar Schindler 9: 1678
 Edith Stein 9: 1749
 Wernher von Braun 10: 1882
 Richard Wagner 10: 1889

Ghanian

Kofi Annan 1: 76

Greek

Aeschylus 1: 29
 Archimedes 1: 89
 Aristophanes 1: 96
 Aristotle 1: 98
 Euclid 4: 686
 Euripides 4: 688
 Galen 4: 748
 Hippocrates 5: 902
 Homer 5: 926
 Pericles 8: 1472
 Plato 8: 1485
 Pythagoras 8: 1540
 Socrates 9: 1729
 Sophocles 9: 1734

Guatemalan

Rigoberta Menchú 7: 1286

Haitian

Jean-Bertrand Aristide 1: 93
 François Duvalier 4: 640

Hispanic American

César Chávez 3: 436
 Dennis Chavez 3: 438
 Linda Chavez 3: 440
 Selena 9: 1698

Hungarian

Joseph Pulitzer 8: 1531

Indian

Buddha 2: 310
 Subrahmanyam Chandrasekhar 3: 419
 Indira Gandhi 4: 754
 Mohandas Gandhi 4: 758
 Sri Ramakrishna 8: 1550
 Salman Rushdie 9: 1649

Iranian

Ayatollah Khomeini 6: 1081
 Mohammad Reza Pahlavi 8: 1439

Iraqi

Saddam Hussein 5: 962

Irish

Samuel Beckett 2: 189
 Michael Collins 3: 501
 James Joyce 6: 1038
 C. S. Lewis 6: 1139
 George Bernard Shaw 9: 1706
 Bram Stoker 9: 1759
 Oscar Wilde 10: 1940
 William Butler Yeats 10: 1979

Israeli

Menachem Begin 2: 194
 Golda Meir 7: 1284

Italian

Fra Angelico 1: 71

Lucrezia Borgia	2: 252
Sandro Botticelli	2: 257
Caligula	2: 338
Frank Capra	2: 357
Donatello	4: 619
Enrico Fermi	4: 707
Francis of Assisi	4: 729
Galileo	4: 750
Leonardo da Vinci	6: 1136
Niccolò Machiavelli	7: 1188
Catherine de' Medici	7: 1281
Michelangelo	7: 1295
Maria Montessori	7: 1331
Benito Mussolini	7: 1367
Luciano Pavarotti	8: 1456
Antonio Stradivari	9: 1769
Amerigo Vespucci	10: 1867
Antonio Vivaldi	10: 1877

Jamaican

Marcus Garvey	4: 767
-------------------------	--------

Japanese

Hirohito	5: 904
Soichiro Honda	5: 929
Eiji Toyoda	10: 1832

Judean

Herod the Great	5: 891
---------------------------	--------

Lebanese

Kahlil Gibran	5: 788
-------------------------	--------

Libyan

Mu'ammar al-Qadhafi	8: 1543
-------------------------------	---------

Lithuanian

Al Jolson	6: 1025
---------------------	---------

Macedonian

Alexander the Great	1: 43
Ptolemy I	8: 1528

Mexican

Lázaro Cárdenas	3: 361
Benito Juárez	6: 1040
Diego Rivera	9: 1593

Mongolian

Genghis Khan	5: 784
Kublai Khan	6: 1109

Native American

American Horse	1: 57
Clyde Bellecourt	2: 200
Ben Nighthorse Campbell	2: 346
Wilma Mankiller	7: 1221
Pocahontas	8: 1488
Sequoyah	9: 1701
Maria Tallchief	10: 1785

New Zealander

Edmund Hillary	5: 898
--------------------------	--------

Nigerian

Chinua Achebe	1: 10
-------------------------	-------

Norwegian

Thor Heyerdahl	5: 895
Henrik Ibsen	5: 970
Edvard Munch	7: 1362

Pakistani

Benazir Bhutto	2: 218
--------------------------	--------

Palestinian

Yasir Arafat	1: 86
------------------------	-------

Panamanian

Manuel Noriega 8: 1401

Persian

Harun al-Rashid 8: 1555

Polish

Baal Shem Tov 1: 137

Menachem Begin 2: 194

Frédéric Chopin 3: 464

Joseph Conrad 3: 508

Nicolaus Copernicus 3: 510

Marie Curie 3: 538

John Paul II 6: 1013

Albert Sabin 9: 1657

Isaac Bashevis Singer 9: 1724

Portuguese

Ferdinand Magellan 7: 1201

Roman

Augustus 1: 128

Julius Caesar 2: 335

Marcus Tullius Cicero 3: 475

Jesus of Nazareth 6: 1000

Marcus Aurelius 7: 1236

Mark Antony 7: 1240

Ovid 8: 1432

Virgil 10: 1874

Romanian

Elie Wiesel 10: 1939

Russian

Alexander II 1: 41

Isaac Asimov 1: 113

George Balanchine 1: 154

Irving Berlin 2: 208

Leonid Brezhnev 2: 280

Catherine the Great 3: 401

Marc Chagall 3: 414

Anton Chekhov 3: 449

Fyodor Dostoevsky 4: 624

Mikhail Gorbachev 5: 809

Wassily Kandinsky 6: 1050

Nikita Khrushchev 6: 1083

Vladimir Lenin 6: 1131

Vladimir Nabokov 7: 1371

Rudolf Nureyev 8: 1409

Ivan Pavlov 8: 1459

Anna Pavlova 8: 1462

Aleksandr Pushkin 8: 1535

Vladimir Putin 8: 1537

Andrei Sakharov 9: 1662

Joseph Stalin 9: 1743

Igor Stravinsky 9: 1773

Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky 10: 1792

Valentina Tereshkova 10: 1798

Leo Tolstoy 10: 1827

Boris Yeltsin 10: 1982

Scottish

Alexander Graham Bell 2: 196

Tony Blair 2: 232

Robert Burns 2: 317

Andrew Carnegie 3: 367

Sean Connery 3: 506

Arthur Conan Doyle 4: 629

Mary, Queen of Scots 7: 1249

John Muir 7: 1360

Walter Scott 9: 1693

Robert Louis Stevenson 9: 1757

James Watt 10: 1910

Serbian

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310

South African

Christiaan Barnard 1: 173

P. W. Botha 2: 255

F. W. de Klerk 4: 581

Nelson Mandela 7: 1216
Desmond Tutu 10: 1847

Spanish

Pablo Casals 3: 386
Catherine of Aragon 3: 399
Miguel de Cervantes 3: 408
Salvador Dali 3: 549
Hernando de Soto 4: 592
Placido Domingo 4: 616
Joan Miró 7: 1316
Pablo Picasso 8: 1479
Juan Ponce de León 8: 1501

Swedish

Ingmar Bergman 2: 206
Anders Celsius 3: 407
Carl Linnaeus 6: 1157
Alfred Nobel 8: 1397

Swiss

Audrey Hepburn 5: 886
Carl Jung 6: 1043
Philippus Aureolus Paracelsus 8: 1443
Jean Piaget 8: 1477

Tibetan

Dalai Lama 3: 546

Trinidadian

Stokely Carmichael 3: 363

Ugandan

Idi Amin 1: 59

Venetian

Marco Polo 8: 1498

Vietnamese

Ho Chi Minh 5: 913

Welsh

Roald Dahl 3: 543
Anthony Hopkins 5: 938
Dylan Thomas 10: 1810

Yugoslav

Slobodan Milosevic 7: 1310
Marshal Tito 10: 1821



reader's guide

U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography features 750 biographies of notable historic and contemporary figures from around the world. Chosen from American history, world history, literature, science and math, arts and entertainment, and the social sciences, the entries focus on the people studied most often in middle school and high school, as identified by teachers and media specialists.

The biographies are arranged alphabetically across ten volumes. The two- to four-page entries cover the early lives, influences, and careers of notable men and women of diverse fields and ethnic groups. Each essay includes birth and death information in the header and concludes with a list of sources

for further information. A contents section lists biographees by their nationality. Nearly 750 photographs and illustrations are featured, and a general index provides quick access to the people and subjects discussed throughout *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*.

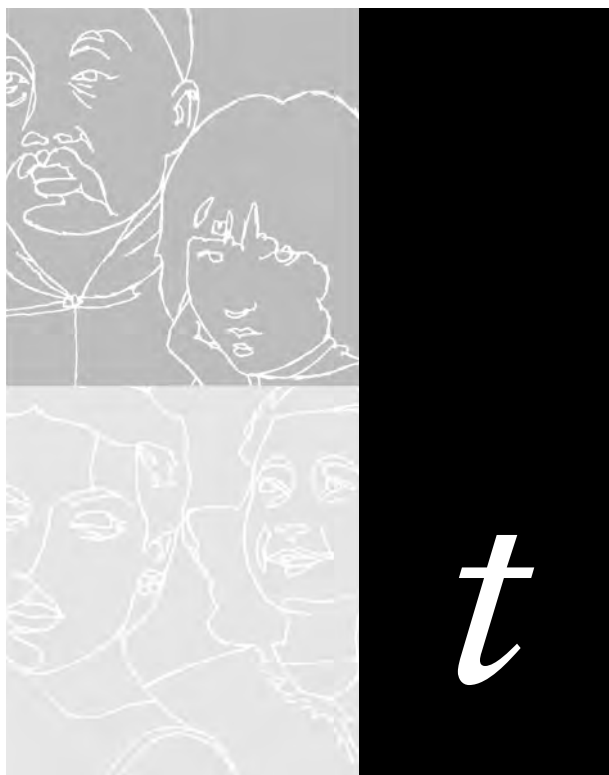
Special thanks

Much appreciation goes to Mary Alice Anderson, media specialist at Winona Middle School in Winona, Minnesota, and Nina Levine, library media specialist at Blue Mountain Middle School in Cortlandt Manor, New York, for their assistance in developing the entry list. Many thanks also go to the following people for their important editorial contri-

butions: Taryn Benbow-Pfalzgraf (proofreading), Jodi Essey-Stapleton (copyediting and proofing), Margaret Haerens (proofreading), Courtney Mroch (copyediting), and Theresa Murray (copyediting and indexing). Special gratitude goes to Linda Mahoney at LM Design for her excellent typesetting work and her flexible attitude.

Comments and suggestions

We welcome your comments on the *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*. Please write: Editors, *U•X•L Encyclopedia of World Biography*, U•X•L, 27500 Drake Road, Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535; call toll-free: 1-800-877-4253; fax to 248-699-8097; or send e-mail via www.gale.com.



MARIA TALLCHIEF

Born: January 24, 1925

Fairfax, Oklahoma

Native American dancer and choreographer

Maria Tallchief is a world-renowned ballerina and one of the premiere (first-ranking) American ballerinas of all time. She was the first American to dance at the Paris Opera and has danced with the Paris Opera Ballet, the Ballet Russe, and the Balanchine Ballet Society, later renamed the New York City Ballet.

Early years

Maria Tallchief was born in Fairfax, Oklahoma, on January 24, 1925. Fairfax is located on the Osage Indian Reservation. Her grandfather had helped negotiate the treaty (agreement) that established the reservation and kept the tribe's right to own any minerals found on the land. When oil was discovered on the reservation, the Osage became the wealthiest Native American tribe in the country.

Maria's father, Alexander Joseph Tall Chief, an Osage Indian, was a wealthy real estate executive. Her mother, Ruth Mary Porter Tall Chief, was of Scottish and Irish ancestry. Eliza Big Heart, her grandmother, frequently took young Maria and her sister, Marjorie, to the ceremonial tribal dances.



Maria Tallchief.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Tallchief began ballet and piano lessons at the age of three and frequently performed before civic organizations in Osage County. By age eight she and her sister had exhausted the training resources in Oklahoma, and the family moved to Beverly Hills, California. Although her mother hoped she would be a concert pianist, Tallchief devoted more and more of her time to dance. At one of her performances she devoted half of her program to the piano and half to dance.

By age twelve Tallchief was studying under Madame Nijinska, sister of the great Russian ballet dancer Vaslav Nijinsky (1890–1950), and

David Lichine, a student of the renowned Russian ballerina Anna Pavlova (1882–1931).

When she was fifteen years old, Tallchief danced her first solo performance at the Hollywood Bowl in a number choreographed by Nijinska. Following her graduation from Beverly Hills High School in 1942, it was apparent that ballet would be Tallchief's life. Instead of college she joined the Ballet Russe de Monte Carlo, a highly acclaimed Russian ballet troupe based in New York City. She made her debut with the company in Canada. It was at this time that Marie Elizabeth Tall Chief changed her name to Maria Tallchief to give herself a more European image.

Early professional career

Initially Tallchief was treated with skepticism (uncertainty) by members of the Russian troupe, who were unwilling to acknowledge the Native American's greatness. When choreographer George Balanchine (1904–1983) took control of the company, however, he recognized Tallchief's talent. He selected her for the understudy role in *The Song of Norway*. Under Balanchine, Tallchief's reputation grew, and she was eventually given the title of ballerina. During this time, Tallchief married Balanchine. When he moved to Paris, France, she went with him.

As had happened with the Ballet Russe, Tallchief was initially treated as an inferior in Paris. Her debut at the Paris Opera was the first ever for any American ballerina, and Tallchief's talent quickly won French audiences over. She later became the first American to dance with the Paris Opera Ballet at the Bolshoi Theatre in Moscow, Russia. She quickly became the ranking soloist and soon after joined the Balanchine Ballet Society, now called the New York City Ballet.

Later career

At the New York City Ballet Tallchief became recognized as one of the greatest dancers in the world. When she became the prima (lead) ballerina, she was the first American dancer to achieve this title. She held that title for eighteen years, until she retired.

Tallchief left the New York City Ballet in 1966. She went on to found the Chicago City Ballet in 1981. She also served as the artistic director of that company through 1987. Tallchief had formed a strong relationship with the Chicago art community when she danced in a production of *Orfeo ed Euridice* with the Lyric Opera of Chicago in 1962.

Tallchief was presented with a National Medal of the Arts award by the National Endowment for the Arts in 1999.

For More Information

Browne, Vee. *Maria Tallchief, Prima Ballerina*. Parsippany, NJ: Modern Curriculum Press, 1994.

Tallchief, Maria, and Larry Kaplan. *Maria Tallchief: America's Prima Ballerina*. New York: Henry Holt, 1997.

Gourley, Catherine. *Who Is Maria Tallchief?* New York: Grosset & Dunlap, 2002.

Lang, Paul. *Maria Tallchief: Native American Ballerina*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.

AMY TAN

Born: February 19, 1952
Oakland, California
Asian American writer

Amy Tan is known for her lyrically written (using flowing, melodic language) tales of emotional conflict between Chinese American mothers and daughters separated by generational and cultural differences.

Early life

Amy Ruth Tan was born in Oakland, California, on February 19, 1952. Her father was a Chinese-born Baptist minister; her mother was the daughter of an upper-class family in Shanghai, China. Throughout much of her childhood, Tan struggled with her parent's desire to hold onto Chinese traditions and her own longings to become more Americanized (integrated with American ideals). Her parents wanted Tan to become a neurosurgeon (a doctor who performs surgery on the brain), while she wanted to become a fiction writer. While still in her teens, Tan experienced the loss of both her father and her sixteen-year-old brother to brain tumors and learned that two sisters from her mother's first marriage in China were still alive (one of several autobiographical elements she would later incorporate into her fiction).

Tan majored in English at San Jose State, in California, in the early 1970s rather than fulfill her mother's expectations of becoming a surgeon. After graduate work at the University of California, Berkeley, she began a career as a technical writer (a person who writes about mechanical and computer issues). As a release from the demands of her technical writing career, she turned to fiction writing, having gained inspiration from her reading of Louise Erdrich's novel of Native American family life, *Love Medicine*.



Amy Tan.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

First novels

Despite Tan's achievements, her literary career was not planned; in fact, she first began writing fiction as a form of therapy. Considered a workaholic by her friends, Tan had been working ninety hours per week as a freelance technical writer. She became dissatisfied with her work life, however, and hoped to rid herself of her workaholic tendencies through psychological counseling. But when her therapist fell asleep several times during her counseling sessions, Tan quit and decided to cut back her working hours by jumping into jazz piano lessons and writing fiction instead. Tan's first literary efforts were

stories, one of which secured her a position in the Squaw Valley Community of Writers, a fiction writers' workshop. Tan's hobby soon developed into a new career when her first novel, *The Joy Luck Club*, was published in 1989.

Tan's *The Joy Luck Club*, received the Commonwealth Club gold award for fiction and the American Library Association's best book for young adults award in 1989 and stayed on the *New York Times's* best-seller list for nine months. In 1993, Tan produced and coauthored the screenplay (script for a movie) for *The Joy Luck Club* which was made into a critically acclaimed film. It was adapted for the stage in a production directed by Tisa Chang for Pan Asian Repertory in 1999. Tan's second novel, *The Kitchen God's Wife*, was published in 1991 followed by the children's books *The Moon Lady* (1992) and *The Chinese Siamese Cat* (1994). The year 2001 saw the release of yet another successful novel, *The Bonesetter's Daughter*.

Tan's *The Joy Luck Club* is made up of sixteen stories told by four Chinese immigrant women and their four American-born daughters, linked together by the narrative of June, whose mother had founded a women's social club in China. Nearly forty years later, June's mother has died. The surviving members, the "aunties," recruit June to replace her mother, then send her to China to meet her half-sisters and inform them of the mother's death. When June expresses doubts about her ability to execute this assignment, the older women respond with disappointment. June then realizes the women rightly suspect that she, and their own daughters, know little of the women's lives and the strength and hope they wished to give the next generation.

Throughout the novel, the various mothers and daughters attempt to demonstrate their own concerns about the past and the present and about themselves and their relations.

Critical praise

Amy Tan's novels, *The Joy Luck Club* and *The Kitchen God's Wife*, were enthusiastically received by critics as well as the book-buying public. Focusing on the lives of Chinese American women, Tan's books introduce characters who are uncertain as she once was about their Chinese background. Tan remarked in a *Bestsellers* interview that though she once tried to distance herself from her ethnicity, writing *The Joy Luck Club* helped her discover "how very Chinese I was. And how much had stayed with me that I had tried to deny." Upon *The Joy Luck Club's* release, Tan quickly became known as a gifted storyteller, a reputation she upheld with the publication of *The Kitchen God's Wife*.

Tan's *The Joy Luck Club* was praised as a thought-provoking, engaging novel. In *Quill and Quire*, Denise Chong wrote: "These moving and powerful stories share the irony, pain, and sorrow of the imperfect ways in which mothers and daughters love each other. Tan's vision is courageous and insightful." In her review for the *Toronto Globe and Mail*, Nancy Wigston declared that Tan's literary debut "is that rare find, a first novel that you keep thinking about, keep telling your friends about long after you've finished reading it." Some critics were particularly impressed with Tan's ear for authentic dialogue. Carolyn See, for instance, wrote in the *Los Angeles Times Book Review* that Tan ranks among the "magicians of language."

Tan's *The Kitchen God's Wife* deals with a young woman in California who realizes a

greater understanding of her mother's Chinese background. A generation gap exists between the two heroines: Mother Winnie has only awkwardly adapted to the relatively freewheeling ways of American—particularly Californian—life; daughter Pearl, on the other hand, is more comfortable in a world of sports and fast food than she is when listening, at least initially, to her mother's recollections of her own difficult life in China. As Winnie recounts the secrets of her past, including her mother's mysterious disappearance, her marriage to a psychotic and brutal man, the deaths of her first three children, and her journey to the United States in 1949, Pearl is able to view her mother in a new light and gathers the courage to reveal a secret of her own.

Critics hailed Tan's *The Kitchen God's Wife*, admiring its touching and bittersweet humor. Sabine Durrant, writing in the *London Times*, called the book "gripping" and "enchanting," and Charles Foran, in his review for the *Toronto Globe and Mail*, proclaimed Tan's work "a fine novel" of "exuberant storytelling and rich drama." In a *Washington Post Book World* review, Wendy Law-Yone asserted that Tan exceeded the expectations raised by her first book, declaring that "*The Kitchen God's Wife* is bigger, bolder and, I have to say, better" than *The Joy Luck Club*.

Tan continues to write. In 2001 her novel *The Bonesetter's Daughter* was released to much of the same praise as her earlier books.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Amy Tan*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2000.

Kramer, Barbara. *Amy Tan, Author of The Joy Luck Club*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1996.

Shields, Charles J. *Amy Tan*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

ELIZABETH TAYLOR

Born: February 27, 1932

London, England

American actress

Elizabeth Taylor is one of film's most famous women, having starred in over fifty films and having won two Academy Awards. She also attracted attention because of her eight marriages and her devotion to raising money for research to fight acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; a virus that destroys the body's ability to fight off infection).

Began acting at nine

Elizabeth Rosemond Taylor was born in London, England, on February 27, 1932, to American parents Francis and Sara Taylor. Her father was a successful art dealer who had his own gallery in London. Her mother was an actress who had been successful before marriage under the stage name Sara Sothorn. Taylor has an older brother, Howard, who was born two years earlier. In 1939 the family moved to Los Angeles, California, where Taylor was encouraged and coached by her mother to seek work in the motion picture industry. Taylor was signed by Universal in 1941 for \$200 a week.

Success and special treatment

In 1942 Taylor signed a contract with Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer, the biggest and best studio of the time, and landed a part in *Lassie Come Home*. In 1943 she was cast in *National Velvet*, the story of a young woman who wins a horse in the lottery and rides it in England's Grand National Steeplechase. Taylor was so determined to play the role that she exercised and dieted for four months. During filming she was thrown from a horse and suffered a broken back, but she forced herself to finish the project. *National Velvet* became both a critical and commercial success.

Taylor loved her work, the costumes, the makeup, and the attention. Columnist Hedda Hopper, a friend of Taylor's mother, declared that at fifteen Elizabeth was the most beautiful woman in the world. Making films such as *Little Women*, *Father of the Bride*, *Cynthia*, and *A Place in the Sun*, Taylor began to gain a reputation as a moody actress who demanded special treatment. In May 1950 she married Conrad N. Hilton Jr., whose family owned a chain of hotels, but the union lasted less than a year. After divorcing Hilton, she married British actor Michael Wilding in February 1952. They had two sons.

Between 1952 and 1956 Elizabeth Taylor played in many romantic films that did not demand great acting talent. In 1956 she played opposite James Dean (1931–1955) in *Giant*, followed by the powerful *Raintree County* (1957), for which she was nominated (put forward for consideration) for an Academy Award for the first time. In *Suddenly Last Summer* (1959) she received five hundred thousand dollars (the most ever earned by an actress for eight weeks of work) and another Academy Award nomination.

Movies and marriages

In 1956 Taylor and Wilding separated, and in February 1957 she married producer Mike Todd. Taylor was shaken by James Dean's death and her friend Montgomery Clift's (1920–1966) near-fatal automobile accident, which occurred when the actor was driving home from a party at her house. In March 1958 her husband Mike Todd died in a plane crash. Taylor began trying to ease her grief with pills and alcohol. Her performance in the film *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof* (1958) won her an Academy Award nomination and led to a relationship with singer Eddie Fisher, who had been Mike Todd's best man at their wedding. Soon after his divorce from actress Debbie Reynolds (1932–), who had been Taylor's matron of honor, Taylor and Fisher were married in May 1959.

In 1960 Taylor turned in one of her best performances in *Butterfield 8*, for which she won an Oscar as Best Actress. A few months later, in 1961, she signed with 20th Century-Fox for \$1 million for the film *Cleopatra*, also starring Richard Burton (1925–1984). The two stars were soon romancing off the set as well as on, leading to criticism from the Vatican, which referred to the two stars as "adult children." Upset and confused over her tangled relationships, Taylor attempted suicide in early 1962. By 1964, however, she and Burton had each divorced their spouses and were married.

Taylor won another Oscar for her performance alongside Burton in *Who's Afraid of Virginia Woolf?* (1966). Over a dozen films followed, as did a divorce from Burton. The couple remarried in October 1975 before divorcing for the second and final time in July 1976. In 1978 Taylor married for the seventh time. Her new husband was John Warner, a candi-



Elizabeth Taylor.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

date for the U.S. Senate in Virginia. According to one biographer, Taylor broke "all the rules for being a good political wife." She had also gained considerable weight, and the press attacked her about it. After Warner was elected, he and Taylor divorced.

Pain and loss

Taylor then moved to Broadway for the first time in a well-received staging of *The Little Foxes*. She and Richard Burton appeared together in a 1983 production of *Private Lives*, but critics felt that the dramatic spark between them was no longer there. In 1983 Taylor checked into the Betty Ford Clinic in California

for treatment for her alcohol addiction. The death of Burton in August 1984, however, combined with back pain and general ill health, led to her return to drinking and drugs.

Taylor was also alarmed as a number of her friends, including actor Rock Hudson (1925–1985) and fashion designer Halston, became ill with AIDS. Taylor began to speak out on behalf of AIDS research. In 1985 she became the cofounder and chair of the American Foundation for AIDS Research (AmFAR). Her “Commitment to Life” benefit of that year was the first major AIDS research fundraiser staged by the Hollywood community.

Taylor returned to the Betty Ford Clinic in 1988, where she met a forty-year old construction worker named Larry Fortensky. Their friendship continued outside the clinic and they married in 1991. In 1993 the Academy of Motion Picture Arts and Sciences honored Taylor with a special humanitarian (supporter of human welfare) award for her years with AmFAR. In 1994 Taylor returned to the movies after a fourteen-year absence for a small part in *The Flintstones*. She then announced her retirement from films. Her marriage to Fortensky ended in 1996.

Later years

In February 1997 Taylor participated in the ABC-TV (American Broadcasting Company-television) special, “Happy Birthday Elizabeth—A Celebration of Life,” which marked her sixty-fifth birthday and raised money for AIDS research. The following day she underwent an operation to remove a two-inch tumor from her brain. She also underwent operations on her hip and broke her back in 1998. In the summer of 1999 she fell and suffered a fracture to her spine.

In May 2000 Taylor was dubbed Dame Commander of the Order of the British Empire, the female version of a knight. Queen Elizabeth (1926–) presented her with the award for services to the entertainment industry and to charity. That same year she was given the Marian Anderson Award for her efforts on behalf of the AIDS community. She also returned to the hospital briefly after coming down with pneumonia. Taylor is a beautiful, much-beloved woman with a larger-than-life presence, both on and off the screen.

For More Information

- Amburn, Ellis. *The Most Beautiful Woman in the World: The Obsessions, Passions, and Courage of Elizabeth Taylor*. New York: Cliff Street Books, 2000.
- Heymann, C. David. *Liz: An Intimate Biography of Elizabeth Taylor*. New York: Carol Publishing Group, 1995.
- Kelley, Kitty. *Elizabeth Taylor: The Last Star*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1981.
- Maddox, Brenda. *Who's Afraid of Elizabeth Taylor?* New York: M. Evans, 1977.
- Walker, Alexander. *Elizabeth: The Life of Elizabeth Taylor*. New York: G. Weidenfeld, 1991.

PETER ILYICH TCHAIKOVSKY

Born: May 7, 1840
Votkinsk, Russia
Died: November 6, 1893
St. Petersburg, Russia
Russian composer

Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky was one of the most loved of Russian composers. His music is famous for its strong emotion, and his technical skill and strict work habits helped guarantee its lasting appeal.

Early years

Born on May 7, 1840, in Votkinsk in the Vyatka district of Russia, Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky was the son of a successful engineer. Peter and his brothers and sister received a sound education from their French governess. His parents sometimes took him to concerts, and after one such evening he complained that he could not fall asleep because of the music stuck in his head. He was devoted to his mother, and at age four he and his sister composed a song for her. Her death when he was fourteen was a huge blow to him.

Tchaikovsky attended law school in St. Petersburg, Russia, and, while studying law and government, he took music lessons, including some composing, from Gabriel Lomakin. Tchaikovsky graduated at the age of nineteen and took a job as a bureau clerk. He worked hard, but he hated the job; by this time he was totally absorbed by music. He soon met the Rubinstein brothers, Anton (1829–1894) and Nikolai (1835–1881), both of whom were composers. Anton was a pianist second only to Franz Liszt (1811–1886) in technical brilliance and fame. In 1862 Anton opened Russia's first conservatory (a school that focuses on teaching the fine arts), under the sponsorship of the Imperial Russian Music Society (IRMS), in St. Petersburg. Tchaikovsky was its first composition student.

Early works

Tchaikovsky's early works were well made but not memorable. Anton Rubinstein was demanding and critical, and when Tchaikovsky graduated two years later he was still somewhat frightened by Anton's harshness. In 1866 Nikolai Rubinstein invited Tchaikovsky to Moscow, Russia, to live with him and serve as professor of composition at the Moscow Conservatory, which he had just established. Tchaikovsky's father was now in financial (money-related) trouble, and the composer had to support himself on his meager earnings from the conservatory. The musical poems *Fatum* and *Romeo and Juliet* that he wrote in 1869 were the first works to show the style he became famous for. *Romeo and Juliet* was redone with Mily Balakirev's (1837–1910) help in 1870 and again in 1879.

During the 1870s and later, there was considerable communication between Tchaikovsky and the Rubinsteins on the one hand and the members of the "Mighty Five" Russian composers—Balakirev, Aleksandr Borodin (1834–1887), Modest Mussorgsky (1839–1881), Nicolai Rimsky-Korsakov (1844–1908), and César Cui—on the other. It was widely reported that the two groups did not get along, but this was not true. Tchaikovsky worked as an all-around musician in the early 1870s, and, as was expected of a representative of the IRMS, he taught, composed, wrote critical essays, and conducted (although he was not a great conductor). In 1875 he composed what is perhaps his most universally known and loved work, the Piano Concerto No. 1. Anton Rubinstein mocked the piece, although he himself often performed it years later as a concert pianist. Also popular was Tchaikovsky's ballet *Swan Lake* (1876). It is the most success-



Peter Ilyich Tchaikovsky.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

ful ballet ever written if measured in terms of broad audience appeal.

A disastrous marriage

In 1877 Tchaikovsky married the twenty-eight-year-old Antonina Miliukova, his student at the conservatory. It has been suggested that she reminded him of Tatiana, a character in his opera *Eugene Onegin*. His unfortunate wife, who became mentally ill and died in 1917, not only suffered rejection by her husband but also the vicious criticism of his brother Modeste Tchaikovsky. Modeste, like Peter, was a misogynist (one who hates women). Modeste attacked Antonina in

a biography he wrote about Peter. This was an attempt to shield Peter and mask his weaknesses. Later biographers repeated and even exaggerated Modeste's claim that Antonina was cheap and high-strung.

Tchaikovsky never stuck around to find out what she was like. Within a few weeks he had fled Moscow alone for an extended stay abroad. He made arrangements through his relatives to never see his wife again. In his correspondence of this period—indeed through a large part of his career—he was often morbid (gloomy) about his wife, money, his friends, even his music and himself. He often spoke of suicide. This, too, has been reported widely by Tchaikovsky's many biographers. Even during his life critics treated him unkindly because of his open, emotional music. But he never sought to change his style, though he was dissatisfied at one time or another with most of his works. He also never stopped composing.

Arrangement with Madame von Meck

Tchaikovsky became involved in another important relationship at about the same time as his marriage. Through third parties an unusual but helpful arrangement with the immensely wealthy Nadezhda von Meck was made. She was attracted by his music and the possibility of supporting his creative work, and he was interested in her money and what it could provide him. For thirteen years she supported him at a base rate of six thousand rubles a year, plus whatever "bonuses" he could manage to get out of her. He was free to quit the conservatory, and he began a series of travels and stays abroad.

Von Meck and Tchaikovsky purposely never met, except for one or two accidental

encounters. In their correspondence Tchaikovsky discusses his music thoughtfully; in letters to his family he complains about her cheapness. He dedicated his Fourth Symphony (1877) to her. Tchaikovsky finished *Eugene Onegin* in 1879. It is his only opera generally performed outside the Soviet Union. Other works of this period are the Violin Concerto (1881), the Fifth Symphony (1888), and the ballet *Sleeping Beauty* (1889).

Later years

Tchaikovsky's fame and his activity now extended to all of Europe and America. To rest from his public appearances he chose a country retreat in Klin near Moscow. From this he became known as the "Hermit of Klin," although he was never a hermit. In 1890 he finished the opera *Queen of Spades*, based on a story by the Russian poet Aleksandr Pushkin (1799–1837). Tchaikovsky was happy when, despite the criticism of "experts," the opera was well received. In late 1890 Von Meck cut him off. He had reached the point where he no longer depended on her money, but he was still upset by her rejection. Even his brother Modeste expressed surprise at his anger. Tchaikovsky had an immensely successful tour in the United States in 1891.

The Sixth Symphony was first heard in October 1893, with the composer conducting. This work, named at Modeste's suggestion *Pathétique*, was poorly received—very likely because of Tchaikovsky's conducting. Tchaikovsky never knew of its eventual astonishing success, for he contracted cholera (a disease of the small intestine) and died, still complaining about Von Meck, on November 6, 1893.

For More Information

- Cencetti, Greta. *Tchaikovsky*. Columbus, OH: Peter Bedrick Books, 2002.
- Garden, Edward. *Tchaikovsky*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2000.
- Holden, Anthony. *Tchaikovsky: A Biography*. New York: Random House, 1995.

ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON

Born: August 6, 1809

Somersby, England

Died: October 6, 1892

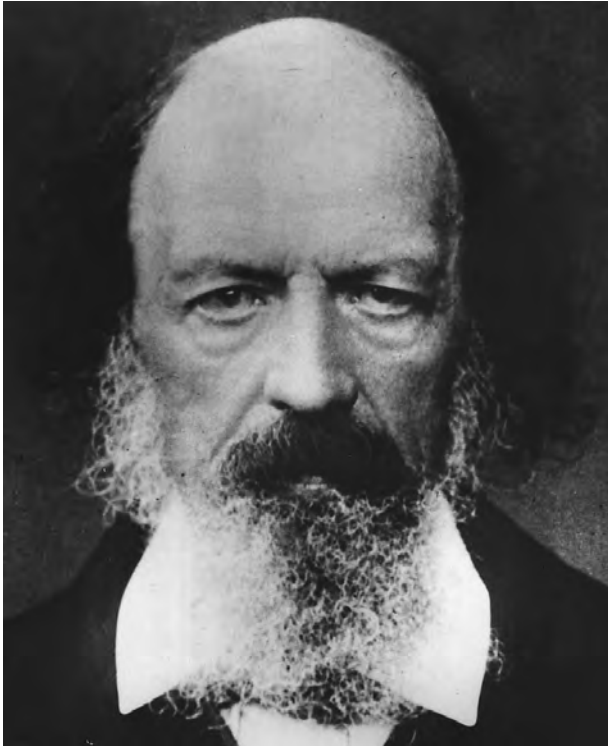
Haslemere, England

English poet

Alfred, Lord Tennyson was regarded by many in his generation as the greatest poet of Victorian England. A superb craftsman in verse, he wrote poetry that ranged from confident assertion to black despair.

His early days

Alfred, Lord Tennyson was born on August 6, 1809, in the village of Somersby, Lincolnshire, England. His parents were the Reverend George Clayton Tennyson and Elizabeth Fytche Tennyson. He had seven brothers and four sisters. His father was an educated man, but was relatively poor. He was a country clergyman (church official). Though he was not very wealthy, he did have a large library. Alfred read widely in this library, and he learned to love reading, especially poetry,



Alfred, Lord Tennyson.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

at an early age.

As Tennyson's father grew older, he became more passionate and melancholy (sad). He began drinking heavily, suffered from lapses of memory, and once even tried to kill his eldest son. Misfortune, not surprisingly, haunted the whole Tennyson family. The year he died, the elder Tennyson said of his children, "They are all strangely brought up."

Early poetry and Cambridge

Tennyson began writing poetry as a child. At twelve he wrote a six-thousand-line epic (a long poem about a real or fictional

heroic figure) in imitation of Sir Walter Scott (1771–1832). Other models were Lord Byron (1788–1824), and Percy Bysshe Shelley (1792–1822). In 1827 there appeared a small volume entitled *Poems by Two Brothers*. The book, despite its title, included poems by three of the Tennyson brothers, a little less than half of them probably by Alfred. That same year he entered Trinity College, Cambridge University. Tennyson's undergraduate days were a time of intellectual and political turmoil in England. He belonged to a group called the Apostles. The institutions of church and state were being challenged, and the Apostles debated these issues. He also took up the cause of rebels in Spain.

Those who knew Tennyson as a university student were impressed by his commanding physical presence and his youthful literary achievements. In 1831 his father died, and Tennyson left the university without taking a degree.

Love of beauty and obligation to society

In the volume entitled *Poems*, which Tennyson published in 1832, a recurring theme is the conflict between a selfish love of beauty and the obligation to serve society. The collection includes "The Lady of Shalott," a narrative set in the England of King Arthur (a mythical king of England). Tennyson was saddened by some of the reviews of this book and by the death of a close friend. For the next ten years he did not publish anything. In 1840 he invested what money he had inherited in a plan to make woodworking machinery. By 1843 he had lost his small inheritance.

Turning point

Poems, Two Volumes (1842) signaled a change in Tennyson's fortunes. It contained one of the several poems that would eventually make up the *Idylls of the King*. Other poems in this collection are "Ulysses," a dramatic monologue (speech given by one person) in which the aging king urges his companions to undertake a final heroic journey. In "The Two Voices" he wrote of an interior debate between the wish to die and the will to live. *Poems, Two Volumes* was well received. The prime minister (head of government) of England, who was particularly impressed by "Ulysses," awarded Tennyson a pension (a fixed annual amount of money) that guaranteed him two hundred pounds a year.

In Memoriam

The greatest year of Tennyson's life was 1850. On June 1 he published *In Memoriam*, the long elegy (an artistic piece expressing sadness over someone's death) inspired by the death of his friend Arthur Hallam. Less than two weeks later he married Emily Sellwood, with whom he had fallen in love fourteen years before. Finally, in November, he was appointed poet laureate (official poet of a country) to succeed William Wordsworth (1770–1850). Tennyson's years of uncertainty and financial insecurity were over. He became the highly regarded poetic spokesman of his age.

In Memoriam is a series of 129 lyrics (short poems) of varying length, all composed in the same form. The lyrics may be read individually, rather like the entries in a journal, but the poem has an overall organization. It moves from grief through acceptance to joy. The poem combines private feeling with a confusion over the future of

Christianity, which was a feeling many of Tennyson's age group shared.

Although Tennyson was now settled and prosperous, his next book, *Maud and Other Poems* (1855), is notable for another study in sadness. Tennyson described the poem as a "little Hamlet," a reference to the play written by William Shakespeare (1564–1616). It almost certainly expresses some of the author's youthful anxieties as recollected in his middle age. Of the other poems in the 1855 volume, the best-known are "The Charge of the Light Brigade" and "The Ode on the Death of the Duke of Wellington," perhaps the greatest of the poems written by Tennyson in his capacity as poet laureate.

The Idylls of the King

Between 1856 and 1876 Tennyson's principal concern was the composition of a series of narrative poems about King Arthur and the Round Table. He worked on this project for more than twenty years. One section was written as early as 1833. Another part was not published until 1884. As published in 1889, *The Idylls of the King* consisted of twelve blank-verse (unrhymed iambic pentameter [lines of five poetic feet]) narratives (the idylls) that dealt with Arthur, Merlin, Lancelot, Guinevere, and other figures in the court. The individual narratives are linked by a common theme: the destructive effect of incorrect passion on an honorable society. The Round Table is brought down in ruins by the unlawful love of Lancelot and Guinevere.

Some of Tennyson's peers regretted that he had expended so much attention on the legendary past. However, it is clear that this poetic myth of a dying society expressed some of his fears for nineteenth-century England.

Plays and last years

Tennyson had a long and immensely productive literary career. A chronology (list of works by date) shows that he did ambitious work until late in his life. In his sixties he wrote a series of historical verse plays—"Queen Mary" (1875), "Harold" (1876), and "Becket" (1879)—on the "making of England." The plays were intended to revive a sense of national grandeur and to remind the English of their liberation from Roman Catholicism.

Tennyson's last years were crowned with many honors. The widowed Queen Victoria (1819–1901) ranked *In Memoriam* next to the Bible as a comfort in her grief. In 1883 Tennyson was awarded a peerage (rights of nobility).

Tennyson died in Haslemere, England, on October 6, 1892. He was buried in Westminster Abbey after a great funeral. The choir sang a musical setting for "Crossing the Bar," Tennyson's poem that is placed at the end of all collections of his work.

For More Information

- Bloom, Harold, ed. *Tennyson*. Broomall, PA: Chelsea House, 1999.
- Lang, Cecil Y., and Edgar F. Shannon, eds. *The Letters of Alfred Lord Tennyson*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1981.
- Ricks, Christopher. *Tennyson*. 2nd ed. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1989.
- Shaw, W. David. *Alfred Lord Tennyson: The Poet in an Age of Theory*. New York: Twayne, 1996.
- Tennyson, Hallam. *Alfred, Lord Tennyson: A Memoir*. New York: Macmillan, 1897. Reprint, Boston: Milford House, 1973.

**VALENTINA
TERESHKOVA**

Born: March 6, 1937

Maslennikovo, Russia

Russian cosmonaut

Valentina Tereshkova was the first woman in space, orbiting the earth forty-eight times in *Vostok VI* in 1963. She orbited the Earth for almost three days, showing that women have the same ability in space as men. Later she toured the world promoting Soviet science and feminism. She also served on the Soviet Women's Committee and the Supreme Soviet Presidium (government committee).

Early years

Valentina Vladimirovna "Valya" Tereshkova was born on March 6, 1937, in the Volga River village of Maslennikovo. Her father, Vladimir Tereshkov, was a tractor driver. He had been a Russian Army soldier during World War II (1939–45; a war fought mostly in Europe that pitted Great Britain, France, the United States, and the Soviet Union against Italy, Germany, and Japan). He was killed during the war when Valentina was two. Her mother Elena Fyodorovna Tereshkova was a worker at the Krasny Perekop cotton mill. She single-handedly raised Valentina, her brother Vladimir, and her sister Ludmilla in economically trying conditions. Valentina helped her mother at home and was not able to begin school until she was ten.

Tereshkova later moved to her grandmother's home in nearby Yaroslavl, where she

worked as an apprentice at a tire factory in 1954. In 1955 she joined her mother and sister as a loom operator at the cotton mill. Meanwhile, she took correspondence courses (courses taught through the mail) and graduated from the Light Industry Technical School. An ardent communist (believer that there should be no private property), she joined the mill's Komsomol (Young Communist League) and soon advanced to the Communist Party.

Joins space program

In 1959 Tereshkova joined the Yaroslavl Air Sports Club and became a skilled amateur (nonprofessional) parachutist. Inspired by the flight of Yuri Gagarin (1934–1968), the first man in space, she volunteered for the Soviet space program. Although she had no experience as a pilot, her achievement of 126 parachute jumps gained her a position as a cosmonaut (Russian astronaut) in 1961. At the time the Russian space program was looking for people with parachuting experience, because cosmonauts had to parachute from their capsules after they came back into Earth's atmosphere.

Five candidates were chosen for a one-time woman-in-space flight. Tereshkova received a military rank in the Russian air force. She trained for eighteen months before becoming chief pilot of the *Vostok VI*. All candidates underwent a rigorous (difficult) course of training, which included tests to determine the effects of being alone for long periods, tests with machines made to create extreme gravity conditions, tests made to duplicate the zero gravity weightless conditions in space, and parachute jumps.

Admiring fellow cosmonaut Yuri Gagarin was quoted as saying, "It was hard



Valentina Tereshkova.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

for her to master rocket techniques, study spaceship designs and equipment, but she tackled the job stubbornly and devoted much of her own time to study, poring over books and notes in the evening."

Into space

At 12:30 P.M. on June 16, 1963, Junior Lieutenant Tereshkova became the first woman to be launched into space. Using her radio callsign (nickname) Chaika (Seagull), she reported, "I see the horizon. A light blue, a beautiful band. This is the Earth. How beautiful it is! All goes well."

Tereshkova was later seen smiling on Soviet and European TV, pencil and logbook floating weightlessly before her face. Vostok VI made forty-eight orbits (1,200,000 miles) in 70 hours, 50 minutes, coming within 3.1 miles of the previously launched *Vostok V*, which was piloted by cosmonaut Valery Bykovsky. By comparison, the four American astronauts who had been in space before this flight had a combined total of thirty-six orbits.

Tereshkova's flight confirmed Soviet test results that women had the same resistance as men to the physical and psychological stresses of space. In fact, tests showed that women could actually tolerate G-forces (gravitational forces) better than men.

Upon her return Tereshkova and Bykovsky were hailed in Moscow's Red Square, a large plaza in Moscow used for official celebrations. On June 22 at the Kremlin she was named a Hero of the Soviet Union. Presidium Chairman Leonid Brezhnev (1906–1982) decorated her with the Order of Lenin and the Gold Star Medal.

A symbol of the liberated Soviet woman, Tereshkova toured the world as a goodwill ambassador, promoting the equality of the sexes in the Soviet Union. She received a standing ovation at the United Nations. With Gagarin, she traveled to Cuba in October as a guest of the Cuban Women's Federation and then went to the International Aeronautical Federation Conference in Mexico.

Unfortunately, Tereshkova and the other female Russian cosmonauts were not taken as seriously inside the Soviet Union as they were outside. The Russians used the female cosmonauts for publicity purposes to show how women were treated equally in their country.

In truth, however, they were never thought of as the equals of the "regular," that is, male, cosmonauts, and they never received the same quality of flight assignments.

After Tereshkova's flight

On November 3, 1963, Tereshkova married Soviet cosmonaut Colonel Andrian Nikolayev, who had orbited the earth sixty-four times in 1962 in the *Vostok III*. Their daughter, Yelena Adrianovna Nikolayeva, was born on June 8, 1964. Doctors, who were fearful of her parents' space exposure, carefully studied the girl, but no ill effects were found.

Tereshkova, after her flight, continued as an aerospace engineer in the space program. She also worked in Soviet politics, feminism, and culture. She was a deputy to the Supreme Soviet between 1966 and 1989, and a people's deputy from 1989 to 1991. Meanwhile, she was a member of the Supreme Soviet Presidium from 1974 to 1989. During the years from 1968 to 1987, she also served on the Soviet Women's Committee, becoming its head in 1977. Tereshkova headed the USSR's International Cultural and Friendship Union from 1987 to 1991, and later chaired the Russian Association of International Cooperation.

Tereshkova summarized her views on women and science in an article titled "Women in Space," which she wrote in 1970 for the American journal *Impact of Science on Society*. In that article she said, "I believe a woman should always remain a woman and nothing feminine should be alien to her. At the same time I strongly feel that no work done by a woman in the field of science or culture or whatever, however vigorous or demanding,

can enter into conflict with her ancient ‘wonderful mission’—to love, to be loved—and with her craving for the bliss of motherhood. On the contrary, these two aspects of her life can complement each other perfectly.”

Valentina Tereshkova still serves as a model not only for the women of her native country, but for women throughout the world who wish to strive for new goals.

For More Information

Lothian, A. *Valentina: First Woman in Space*. Edinburgh: Pentland Press, 1993.

O’Neill, Lois Decker. “Farthest Out of All: The First Woman in Space,” in *Women’s Book of World Records and Achievements*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday/Anchor Press, 1979, pp. 739–740.

Sharpe, Mitchell R. “*It Is I, Sea Gull*”: *Valentina Tereshkova, First Woman in Space*. New York: Crowell, 1975.

WILLIAM MAKEPEACE THACKERAY

Born: July 18, 1811

Calcutta, India

Died: December 24, 1863

London, England

English novelist

The English novelist William Makepeace Thackeray created unrivaled panoramas (thorough and complete

studies of subjects) of English upper-middle-class life, crowded with memorable characters displaying the realistic mixture of virtue, vanity, and vice.

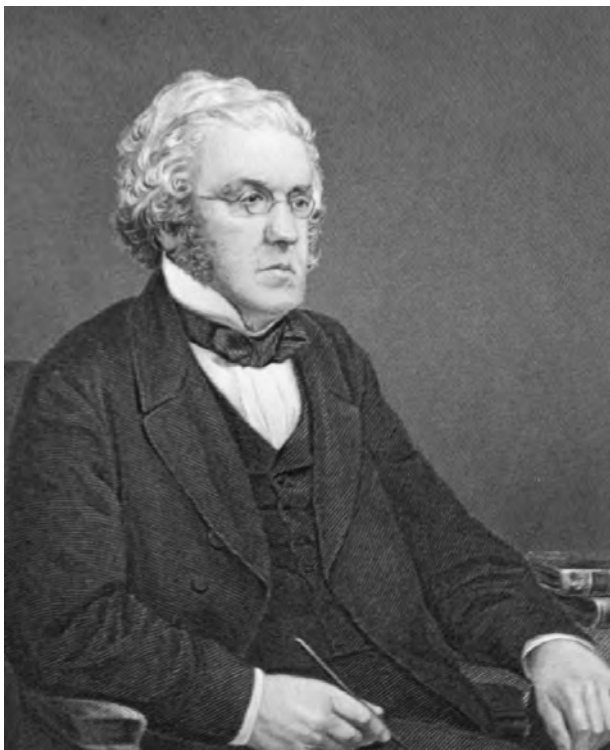
Early life

William Makepeace Thackeray was born on July 18, 1811, in Calcutta, India. He was the only child of Richmond and Anne Thackeray. His family had made its fortunes in the East India Company for two generations. In 1817, after the death of his father, five-year-old Thackeray was sent to England to live with his aunt while he received his education. He was a precocious (showed the characteristics of an older person at a young age) child and showed a talent for drawing.

Around 1818 Thackeray’s mother married Major Carmichael Smyth, an engineer and author. In 1821 the two moved back to England and reunited with Thackeray, who developed a close relationship with his stepfather. When Thackeray was eleven, he was sent to the prestigious Charterhouse School. Schoolmates described him as a student who was not too serious, but very sociable. Also, he did not enjoy or participate in any sports or games. However, he did learn about gentlemanly conduct—an ideal that later he both criticized and upheld.

Education

In 1829 Thackeray entered Trinity College at Cambridge University, where he was only an average student. He left the university the next year, convinced that it was not worth his while to spend more time in pursuit of a second-rate degree under an unsuitable educational institution. A six-month stay in Weimar, Germany, gave Thackeray a more



William Makepeace Thackeray.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

sophisticated polish, as well as a more objective view of English manners. After Thackeray returned to London, he began studying law at the Middle Temple. He seemed more devoted to the fashionable but expensive habits of drinking and gambling that he had acquired at Cambridge, however.

At the age of twenty-one Thackeray rejected law and went to Paris, France, to study French, to draw, and to attend plays. The inheritance he acquired at that age soon disappeared into bad business ventures, bad investments, and loans to needy friends. Unfortunately, he was unable to distinguish himself as an artist. He met Isabella Shawe

while in Paris, and they married in 1836. They had two daughters.

Magazine writing

Between 1837 and 1844 Thackeray wrote critical articles on art and literature for numerous papers and journals, but he contributed most of his fiction of this period to *Fraser's Magazine*. In *The Memoirs of C. J. Yellowplush*, which appeared in a series from 1837 to 1838, he parodied (humorously wrote in the style of) the high-flown language of "fashnabble" novels. In *Catherine* (1839–1840) he parodied the popular criminal novel. "A Shabby Genteel Story" (1840) and other short compositions explored the world of rogues (dishonest people) and fools in a spirit of extreme and bitter disappointment. *The Irish Sketch Book* (1843) and *Notes of a Journey from Cornhill to Cario* (1845), supposedly written by the confirmed Londoner Mr. M. A. Titmarsh, were in a lighter vein.

In the fall of 1840 Thackeray's wife suffered a mental breakdown from which she never recovered. This experience profoundly affected his character and work. He became more sympathetic and less harsh in his judgments, and came to value domestic affection as the greatest good thing in life. These new attitudes emerged clearly in the best of his early stories, "The History of Samuel Titmarsh and the Great Hoggarty Diamond" (1841). In this tale an obscure (not distinct) clerk rises to sudden success and wealth but finds true happiness only after ruin has brought him back to hearth and home.

Adopting the mask of an aristocratic (upper-class) London bachelor and clubman named George Savage Fitz-Boodle, Thackeray next wrote a number of papers satirizing

(pointing out and devaluing sin or silliness) his way of life. The series called “Men’s Wives,” which was written at the same time, shows a maturing sense of comedy and tragedy. With *The Luck of Barry Lyndon* (1844) Thackeray returned to an earlier subject, the gentleman scoundrel. His central theme is the ruin of a young man’s character by false ideals of conduct and worldly success.

As a regular contributor to the satiric magazine *Punch* between 1844 and 1851, Thackeray finally achieved widespread recognition. His most famous contribution was *The Snobs of England, by One of Themselves* (1846–1847). It was a critical survey of the manners of a period in which the redistribution of wealth and power caused by industrialism (the rise of industry) had shaken old standards of behavior and social relationships.

Thackeray’s novels

Vanity Fair (1847–1848) established Thackeray’s fame permanently. Set in the time just before and after the Battle of Waterloo (1815; a battle that ended French domination of Europe), this novel is a portrait of society and centers on three families interrelated by acquaintance and marriage. In the unrestrained and resourceful Becky Sharp, Thackeray created one of fiction’s most engaging characters.

In *Pendennis* (1849–1850) Thackeray concentrated on one character. The story of the development of a young writer, the first part draws on Thackeray’s own life at school, at college, and as a journalist. The second half, which he wrote after a severe illness, lost the novel’s focus. It presents only a superficial (having insincere and shallow qualities) analysis of character in Pen’s struggle to

choose between a practical, worldly life and one of domestic virtue.

The History of Henry Esmond (1852), Thackeray’s most carefully planned and executed work, is a historical novel set in the eighteenth century. He felt a temperamental sympathy with this age of satire and urbane wit. *Esmond* presents a vivid and convincing realization of the manners and historical background of the period. It contains some of Thackeray’s most complex and firmly controlled characters.

The Newcomes (1854–1855) is another serial. Supposedly written by the hero of *Pendennis*, it chronicles the moral history of four generations of an English family. The most massive and complex of Thackeray’s social panoramas, it is also the darkest in its relentless portrayal of the defeat of humane feeling by false standards of respectability.

Later career

Thackeray, feeling that he had written himself out, returned to earlier works for subjects for his later novels. *The Virginians* (1858–1859) follows the fortunes of Henry Esmond’s grandsons in the United States, and *The Adventures of Philip* (1862) continues “A Shabby Genteel Story.” His later career included an unsuccessful campaign for Parliament as a reform candidate in 1857, and two lecture trips to the United States in 1852 and 1855. A founding editor of the *Cornhill Magazine*, he served it from 1859 to 1862.

Thackeray was 6 feet 3 inches tall, and a pleasant and modest man, fond of good food and wine. In the years of his success he openly took great pleasure in the comforts of the society that he portrayed so critically in

his novels. Thackeray died on December 24, 1863, in London, England.

When William Makepeace Thackeray began his literary career, Charles Dickens (1812–1870) dominated English prose (having to do with the common language) fiction. Thackeray's writing style was formed in opposition to Dickens's accusation of social evils, and against the artificial style and sentimentality (emotionalism) of life and moral (having to do with right and wrong) values of the popular historical romances. Although critical of society, Thackeray remained basically conservative (a person who prefers to preserve existing social and political situations without change). He was one of the first English writers of the time to portray the commonplace with greater realism. This approach was carried on in the English novel by Anthony Trollope (1815–1882).

For More Information

Peters, Catherine. *Thackeray's Universe: Shifting Worlds of Imagination and Reality*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1987.

Shillingsburg, Peter L. *William Makepeace Thackeray: A Literary Life*. New York: Palgrave, 2001.

Taylor, D. J. *Thackeray*. London: Chatto & Windus, 1999.

TWYLA THARP

Born: July 1, 1941

Portland, Indiana

American dancer and choreographer

Dancer and choreographer (one who develops and directs dances) Twyla Tharp is known for developing a unique style that merged ballet and modern dance techniques with various forms of American vernacular (everyday) dance.

Early years

Twyla Tharp was born in Portland, Indiana, on July 1, 1941, the daughter of Lecile and William Tharp. Her grandparents on both sides were Quakers and farmers. She was named after Twila Thornburg, the "Princess" of the eighty-ninth Annual Muncie Fair in Indiana. Her mother changed the "i" to "y" because she thought it would look better on a marquee (a sign outside a theater). Twyla was the eldest of four children. She had twin brothers and a sister, Twanette. Her mother, a piano teacher, began giving Twyla lessons when she was eighteen months old.

When Tharp was eight years old, the family moved to the desert town of Rialto, California, where her parents built and operated the local drive-in movie theater. The house her father built in Rialto included a playroom with a practice section featuring a built-in floor for tap dancing, ballet barres (rails used for dance exercises and stretches), and closets filled with acrobatic mats, batons, ballet slippers, castanets (mini-sized percussion instruments that are attached to the thumb and forefinger), tutus, and capes for matador routines. Her well-known tendency as a workaholic and a perfectionist began with her heavily scheduled childhood.

Tharp began her dance lessons at the Vera Lynn School of Dance in San Bernardino, California. Then she studied with the Mraz sisters. She also studied violin,

piano, drums, Flamenco dancing, castanets, cymbals, and baton twirling with Ted Otis, a former world champion. At age twelve she began studying ballet. She attended Pacific High School and spent her summers working at the family drive-in.

Young adulthood

Tharp entered Pomona College as a freshman, moving to Los Angeles, California, that summer to continue her dance training with Wilson Morelli and John Butler. At midterm of her sophomore year she transferred to Barnard College in New York City. She studied ballet with Igor Schwezoff at the American Ballet Theater, then with Richard Thomas and his wife, Barbara Fallis. She began attending every dance concert she could and studied with Martha Graham (1893–1991), Merce Cunningham (1919–), and Eugene “Luigi” Lewis, the jazz teacher.

In 1962 Tharp married Peter Young, a painter whom she had met at Pomona College. Her second husband was Bob Huot, an artist. Both marriages ended in divorce. Huot and Tharp had one son, Jesse, who was born in 1971.

Start as an artist

Tharp graduated from Barnard College in 1963 with a degree in art history. She made her professional debut that year with the Paul Taylor dance company, billed as Twyla Young. In the following year, at age twenty-three, she formed her own company and began experimenting with movement in an improvisatory (made up on the spot) manner.

For the first five years Tharp and her dancers struggled, but by the early 1970s she



Twyla Tharp.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

began to be recognized for the breezy style of dance that added irreverent squiggles, shrugged shoulders, little hops, and jumps to conventional dance steps, a technique she called the “stuffing” of movement phrases.

Among the most creative of her early pieces is *The Fugue* (1970) for four dancers, set to the percussive beat of their own feet on a floor set up with microphones. In 1971 she choreographed *Eight Jelly Rolls* to music by Jelly Roll Morton (1890–1941) and *The Bix Pieces* to music by jazz musician Bix Beiderbecke (1903–1931).

Tharp performed as a member of her company until the mid-1980s. She stopped dancing to concentrate on her many projects for television and film, as well as for her company. She returned to performing in 1991. Other works for her company include *Sue's Leg* (1975), *Baker's Dozen* (1979), *In the Upper Room* (1986), and *Nine Sinatra Songs* (1982) set to the music of Frank Sinatra (1915–1998).

Beyond her own dance company

In 1973 Tharp created a work for the Joffrey Ballet, her first for a company other than her own and her first work for dancers on pointe (on the tip of the toe). Tharp used the Joffrey dancers and her own company in a work entitled *Deuce Coupe*, set to music by the Beach Boys. Teenage graffiti artists created the setting on stage each night. It was a huge success.

Tharp then went on to create *As Time Goes By* (1973) for the Joffrey; five works for the American Ballet Theater, including *Push Comes to Shove* (1976) and *Sinatra Suite* (1984), both with leading roles for Mikhail Baryshnikov (1948–); *Brahms-Handel* (1984) in collaboration with Jerome Robbins for the New York City Ballet; and *Rules of the Game* (1989) for the Paris Opera Ballet.

Tharp's work for her own company and for the ballet troupes made her among the first to demand a "crossover" dancer, one who would be equally at home in ballet and modern dance technique. With the success of *Deuce Coupe*, Tharp was in demand everywhere for her irreverent, funky-look choreography that appealed to the widest array of audiences in the United States.

New projects

Tharp made her first television program for the Public Broadcasting Service (PBS) series *Dance in America* (1976). She continued in television with *Making Television Dance* (1980), *Scrapbook Tapes* (1982), *The Catherine Wheel* (1983) for the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC), and the television special *Baryshnikov by Tharp* (1985). Her film work began in 1978 with *Hair*, followed by *Ragtime* (1980), *Amadeus* (1984), and *White Nights* (1985). Tharp directed two full-evening productions on Broadway: *The Catherine Wheel* (1981) and the stage adaptation of the film *Singing in the Rain* (1985).

By 1987 Tharp was forced to disband her company because raising money to keep her dancers on salary was getting difficult. She was also interested in various other projects. She was invited to join the American Ballet Theater as artistic associate with Baryshnikov. When he departed the American Ballet Theater in 1989, she left as well, taking her ballets from the theater's repertory (the works regularly presented by a performance company). After that her works were presented by the Boston (Massachusetts) Ballet and the Hubbard Street Dance Company, based in Chicago, Illinois.

Work in the 1990s

After leaving the American Ballet Theater, Tharp embarked on a variety of endeavors that kept her in the forefront of American dance, including an autobiography (a book written by oneself about oneself), *Push Comes to Shove*, published in 1992; a series of tours with pick-up companies of dancers recruited mainly from the ballet troupes where she had worked; and a new work for the Boston Bal-

**CLARENCE
THOMAS**

let, which premiered in April 1994. Tharp continued to tour nationally and internationally with her assistant, Shelley Washington Whitman, often working without a company of her own or a permanent support base.

In 1996 she choreographed *Born Again*, a trio of new dances. They were performed by a group of thirteen young unknown dancers, who were selected in a series of nationwide auditions and trained by Tharp and Whitman. She returned to the American Ballet Theater in 1995 with successful revisions of two recent works, *Americans We* (1995) and *How Near Heaven* (1995), and a new work, *The Elements*.

In 2000 Tharp choreographed a new work for the New York City Ballet based on Beethoven's (1770–1827) seventh and eighth symphonies. In 2001 Tharp made the Lafayette Presbyterian Church in New York City the permanent home for her company. This was her first permanent base in her thirty-five-year career.

Tharp is the recipient of many awards, including a creative citation in dance from Brandeis University (1972), the MacArthur "Genius" Award (1992), and five honorary (earned without completing the usual requirements) doctorates. She has established her own unique style, combining various dance and musical styles.

For More Information

Livet, Anne, ed. *Contemporary Dance*. New York: Abbeville Press, 1978.

Rogosin, Elinor. *The Dance Makers: Conversations with American Choreographers*. New York: Walker, 1980.

Tharp, Twyla. *Push Comes to Shove*. New York: Bantam, 1992.

Born: June 23, 1948

Pin Point, Georgia

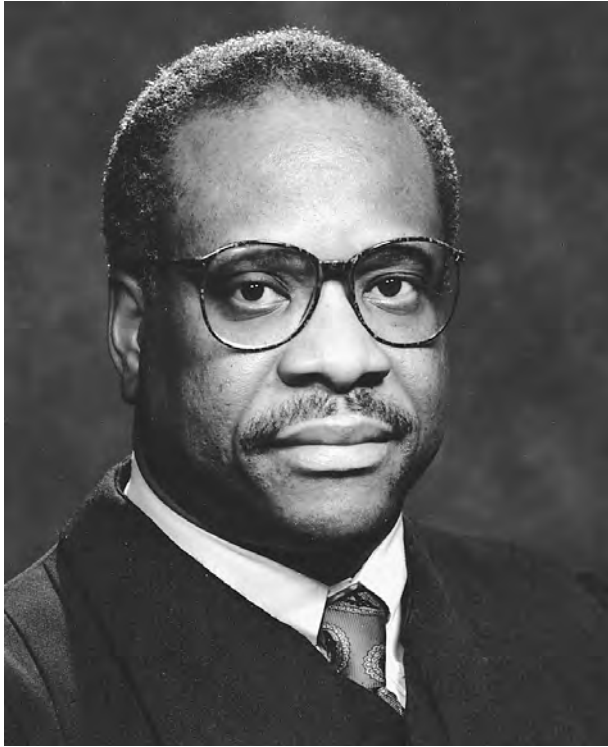
American Supreme Court justice

President George Bush (1924–) named Clarence Thomas to the U.S. Supreme Court in 1991. Since joining the Court, Thomas—the second African American to serve on the court—has often voted with the more conservative justices.

Georgia childhood

Clarence Thomas was born in the tiny coastal town of Pin Point, Georgia, on June 23, 1948. As a very young boy he lived in a one-room shack with dirt floors and no plumbing. When Thomas was two years old, his father walked out on the family. As a result, at the age of seven he and his younger brother were sent to live with their grandfather, Myers Anderson, and his wife in Savannah, Georgia. Anderson, a devout Catholic and active member of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), sent Thomas to a Catholic school staffed by nuns.

In remarks reported by *Jet* magazine, Thomas has said that he grew up speaking Gullah, a creole dialect spoken by African Americans on the coastal islands of the southeastern United States. Unlike other Supreme Court justices, he rarely asks questions from the bench during court proceedings. He has said that he developed this habit of silent listening when he was young because he found it a struggle to speak "stan-



Clarence Thomas.

Courtesy of the Supreme Court of the United States.

standard English” correctly in school. Nevertheless, he was always a strong student.

In 1964 Thomas’s grandfather withdrew him from the all-black religious high school he was attending and sent him to an all-white Catholic boarding school in Savannah. Despite being confronted with racism (a dislike or disrespect of a person based on his or her race), Thomas made excellent grades and played on the school’s football team. Thomas’s grandfather next sent him to Immaculate Conception Seminary (a place for religious education) in northwestern Missouri after his graduation from high school in 1967. Although Thomas was not the only

African American student, he still was troubled by poor race relations. A racist remark he overheard about the assassination of Martin Luther King Jr. (1929–1968) caused him to decide that he would not become a priest.

Turning to the law

Thomas left the seminary and enrolled at Holy Cross, a college in Worcester, Massachusetts. There he was a devoted student who also participated on the track team, did volunteer work in the community, and helped found the Black Student Union at Holy Cross. He also met Kathy Ambush, whom he married after graduating in 1971. The couple had one son, but divorced in 1984. (Thomas married his second wife, Virginia Lamp, in 1987.)

Thanks to his excellent academic record, Thomas was admitted to the law schools at Yale, Harvard, and the University of Pennsylvania. He chose Yale because of the financial support it offered him as part of its affirmative action policy to attract students from racial and ethnic minorities. At Yale he continued to do well academically, and he appeared to fit in socially as well. Yet, years later, he described his “rage” and loneliness at feeling snubbed by white people who viewed him as someone who could only attend Yale through an affirmative action program.

First government posts

Thomas graduated from Yale law school in 1974 and accepted a position on the staff of Missouri’s Republican attorney general, John Danforth (1936–). In 1979 he moved to Washington, D.C., and became a legislative assistant to Danforth on the condition that he not be assigned to civil rights issues. His

resentment toward some aspects of affirmative action, combined with his grandfather's lessons on self-sufficiency and independence, had moved Thomas into a circle of African American conservatives.

Thomas's conservative ideas soon brought him to the attention of the presidential administration of Ronald Reagan (1911–). In 1981 Thomas was appointed assistant secretary for civil rights in the U.S. Department of Education. Thomas openly stated that minority groups must succeed by their own merit. He asserted that affirmative action programs and civil rights legislation do not improve living standards.

In 1982 Thomas became the chairman of the U.S. Equal Employment Opportunity Commission (EEOC), which was designed to enforce laws against discrimination (unequal treatment based on age, disability, nationality, race, religion, or sex) in the workplace. Thomas served two consecutive terms as chairman, despite having previously sworn he would never work at the EEOC.

Supreme Court nomination

In 1990 President George Bush (1924–) appointed Thomas to the Washington, D.C., circuit of the United States Court of Appeals, a common stepping stone to the Supreme Court. Thomas served on this court for only one year. Despite this relatively limited experience, Bush nominated Thomas to replace retiring Supreme Court Justice Thurgood Marshall (1908–1993) on July 1, 1991.

Senate hearings to confirm Thomas's nomination appeared to be moving along smoothly until allegations by Anita Hill, a former EEOC employee, were made public. On

October 8, Hill held a press conference in which she made public the main points of testimony she previously had given the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI). Protests by some women's groups led the Senate confirmation committee to publicly review Hill's charges.

Anita Hill's charges

Hill charged that while she worked at the EEOC nearly a decade earlier Thomas pestered her for dates and told stories in her presence about pornographic film scenes and his own sexual ability. Hill claimed that Thomas's actions made it difficult for her to do her job and caused physical distress. Nevertheless, she continued to contact Thomas voluntarily even after he helped arrange for her appointment as a law professor at the University of Oklahoma.

Hill, Thomas, and witnesses on both sides testified about the allegations during the televised confirmation hearings, which were among the most widely viewed political events in television history. Thomas denied any wrongdoing. He remarked that the process had been a harrowing personal ordeal for him and his wife. Referring to the acts of violence by which whites had terrorized blacks in the American South in which he grew up, Thomas characterized the televised hearings as a "high-tech lynching." In the end, Thomas was confirmed by a 52-48 margin, the smallest—according to *Time* magazine—by which any justice has been confirmed in the past century.

Hill's allegations helped to make sexual harassment a major political issue. The phrase itself had varying and even conflicting definitions. Nevertheless, local, state, and national laws were passed to stop workplace

practices that could make other employees uncomfortable. Meanwhile, articles and books continued to debate whether Hill's specific charges against Thomas were valid.

The quiet justice

After joining the Supreme Court, Thomas voted frequently with Justice Antonin Scalia (1936–) and Chief Justice William Rehnquist (1924–), thereby siding with the court's leading conservatives (people who resist change and prefer to keep traditions). Although generally silent during oral arguments at court proceedings, Thomas has been visible in his opinion writing from the beginning. Reviewers of his legal essays and opinions (the written arguments by which court justices explain the reasons for their ruling or their disagreement with the ruling) agree that they are clear, well researched, and consistent. However, African American political groups criticized Thomas for maintaining his conservative values in cases affecting minorities.

For the first few years after his appointment, Thomas tended to keep a low public profile. Starting in 1996, however, he began to make occasional appearances before conservative political groups. Since the election of George W. Bush (1946–) as president in 2000, he has been increasingly hailed as a judicial hero by American conservatives.

For More Information

Danforth, John. *Resurrection: The Confirmation of Clarence Thomas*. New York: Free Press, 1994.

Gerber, Scott Douglas. *First Principles: The Jurisprudence of Clarence Thomas*. New York: New York University Press, 1999.

Greenya, John. *Silent Justice: The Clarence Thomas Story*. Ft. Lee, NJ: Barricade Books, 2001.

Halliburton, Warren J. *Clarence Thomas, Supreme Court Justice*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow, 1993.

Smith, Christopher E., and Joyce A. Baugh. *The Real Clarence Thomas: Confirmation Veracity Meets Performance Reality*. New York: P. Lang, 2000.

Thomas, Andrew Peyton. *Clarence Thomas: A Biography*. San Francisco: Encounter Books, 2001.

DYLAN THOMAS

Born: October 27, 1914

Swansea, Carmarthenshire, Wales

Died: November 9, 1953

New York, New York

Welsh poet

The Welsh poet Dylan Thomas has been hailed as one of the most important poets of the century. His lyrics rank among the most powerful and captivating of modern poetry.

Welsh childhood

Dylan Marlais Thomas was born in the Welsh seaport of Swansea, Carmarthenshire, Wales, on October 27, 1914. His father, David John, was an English teacher and a would-be poet from whom Dylan inherited his intellectual and literary abilities. From his

mother, Florence, a simple and religious woman, Dylan inherited his mood, temperament, and respect for his Celtic heritage. He had one older sister, Nancy. He attended the Swansea Grammar School, where he received all of his formal education. As a student he made contributions to the school magazine and was keenly interested in local folklore (stories passed down within a culture). He said that as a boy he was “small, thin, indecisively active, quick to get dirty, curly.” During these early school years, Thomas befriended Daniel Jones, another local schoolboy. The two would write hundreds of poems together, and as adults Jones would edit a collection of Thomas’s poetry.

After leaving school, Thomas supported himself as an actor, reporter, reviewer, scriptwriter, and with various odd jobs. When he was twenty-two years old, he married Caitlin Macnamara, by whom he had two sons, Llewelyn and Colm, and a daughter, Aeron. After his marriage, Thomas moved to the fishing village of Laugharne, Carmarthenshire.

Begins writing career

To support his growing family, Thomas was forced to write radio scripts for the Ministry of Information (Great Britain’s information services) and documentaries for the British government. He also served as an aircraft gunner during World War II (1939–45; a war fought between Germany, Japan, and Italy, the Axis powers; and England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States, the Allies). After the war he became a commentator on poetry for the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC). In 1950 Thomas made the first of three lecture tours through the



Dylan Thomas.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

United States—the others were in 1952 and 1953—in which he gave more than one hundred poetry readings. In these appearances he half recited, half sang the lines in his “Welsh singing” voice.

Thomas’s poetic output was not large. He wrote only six poems in the last six years of his life. A grueling lecture schedule greatly slowed his literary output in these years. His belief that he would die young led him to create “instant Dylan”—the persona of the wild young Welsh bard, damned by drink and women, that he believed his public wanted. When he was thirty-five years old, he described himself as “old, small, dark, intelli-

gent, and darting-doting-dotting eyed . . . balding and toothlessing.”

During Thomas's visit to the United States in 1953, he was scheduled to read his own and other poetry in some forty university towns throughout the country. He also intended to work on the libretto (text) of an opera for Igor Stravinsky (1882–1971) in the latter's California home. Thomas celebrated his thirty-ninth birthday in New York City in a mood of gay exhilaration, following the extraordinary success of his just-published *Collected Poems*. The festivities ended in his collapse and illness. On November 9, 1953, he died in St. Vincent's Hospital in New York City. Some reports attribute his death to pneumonia brought on by alcoholism, others to encephalopathy, a brain disease. His body was returned to Laugharne, Wales, for burial.

Literary works

Thomas published his first book of poetry, *Eighteen Poems* (1934), when he was not yet twenty years old. “The reeling excitement of a poetry-intoxicated schoolboy smote the Philistine as hard a blow with one small book as Swinburne had with *Poems and Ballads*,” wrote Kenneth Rexroth. Thomas's second and third volumes were *Twenty-five Poems* (1936) and *The Map of Love* (1939). The poems of his first three volumes were collected in *The World I Breathe* (1939).

By this time Thomas was being hailed as the most spectacular of the surrealist poets, or poets who used fantastic imagery of the subconscious in their verse. He acknowledged his debt to James Joyce (1882–1941) and dotted his pages with invented words and puns (the use of two or more words that sound the same, usually for humorous pur-

poses). Thomas also acknowledged his debt to Sigmund Freud (1856–1939), stating: “Poetry is the rhythmic, inevitably narrative, movement from an overclothed blindness to a naked vision. . . . Poetry must drag further into the clear nakedness of light more even of the hidden causes than Freud could realize.”

A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Dog (1940) is a collection of humorous autobiographical (having to do with writing about oneself) sketches. Thomas loved the wild landscape of Wales, and he put much of his childhood and youth into these stories. He published two more new collections of poetry, both of which contained some of his finest work: *Deaths and Entrances* (1946) and *In Country Sleep* (1951). *Collected Poems, 1934–1953* (1953) contains all of his poetry that he wished to preserve.

Themes and style

Thomas claimed that his poetry was “the record of my individual struggle from darkness toward some measure of light. . . . To be stripped of darkness is to be clean, to strip of darkness is to make clean.” He also wrote that his poems “with all their crudities, doubts, and confusions, are written for the love of man and in praise of God, and I'd be a damned fool if they weren't.” Passionate and intense, vivid and violent, Thomas wrote that he became a poet because “I had fallen in love with words.” His sense of the richness and variety and flexibility of the English language shines through all of his work.

The theme of all of Thomas's poetry is the celebration of the divine (godly) purpose he saw in all human and natural processes. The cycle of birth and flowering and death, of love and death, are also found throughout his

poems. He celebrated life in the seas and fields and hills and towns of his native Wales. In some of his shorter poems he sought to recapture a child's innocent vision of the world.

Thomas was passionately dedicated to his "sullen art," and he was a competent, finished, and occasionally complex craftsman. He made, for example, more than two hundred versions of "Fern Hill" before he was satisfied with it. His early poems are relatively mysterious and complex in sense but simple and obvious in pattern. His later poems, on the other hand, are simple in sense but complex in sounds.

Under Milk Wood, a radio play commissioned by the BBC (published 1954), was Thomas's last completed work. This poem-play is not a drama but a parade of strange, outrageous, and charming Welsh villagers. During the twenty-four hours presented in the play, the characters remember and ponder the casual and crucial moments of their lives. *Adventures in the Skin Trade and Other Stories* (1955) contains all the uncollected stories and shows the wit and humor that made Thomas an enchanting companion.

For More Information

- Brinnin, John Malcolm. *Dylan Thomas in America*. New York: Paragon House, 1989.
- Ferris, Paul. *Dylan Thomas: The Biography*. Washington, DC: Counterpoint, 2000.
- Fryer, Jonathan. *Dylan: The Nine Lives of Dylan Thomas*. London: K. Cathie, 1993.
- Goodby, John, and Chris Wigginton, eds. *Dylan Thomas*. New York: Palgrave, 2001.

Thomas, David N. *Dylan Thomas: A Farm, Two Mansions and a Bungalow*. Bridgend, Wales: Saren, 2000.

Thomas, Dylan. *Portrait of the Artist as a Young Dog*. Norfolk, CT: New Directions, 1940.

HENRY DAVID THOREAU

Born: July 12, 1817

Concord, Massachusetts

Died: May 6, 1862

Concord, Massachusetts

American writer

Henry David Thoreau was an accomplished American writer, as well as an outstanding transcendentalist, a person who seeks to rise above common thought or ideas. He is best known for his classic book, *Walden*.

New England childhood

Henry David Thoreau was born on July 12, 1817, in Concord, Massachusetts, and lived there most of his life; it became, in fact, his universe. His parents were permanently poor, as his father failed in several business ventures. Thoreau was raised along with three siblings, but his brother's death in 1842 and a sister's death in 1849 deeply affected him. He attended Concord Academy, where his record was good but not outstanding. Nevertheless, he entered Harvard University in 1833 as a scholarship student. Young as he was he established a reputation at Harvard



Henry David Thoreau.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

for being an individualist, one who follows his own will. He was friendly enough with his fellow students, yet he soon saw that many of their values could never become his.

After Thoreau graduated in 1837, he faced the problem of earning a living. He taught briefly in the town school, taught for a longer while at a private school his brother John had started, and also made unsuccessful efforts to find a teaching job away from home. Meanwhile, he was spending a good deal of time writing—he had begun a journal in 1837, which ran to fourteen volumes of close-packed print when published after his death. He wanted, he decided, to be a poet.

Enchanted by nature

America was not supportive of its poets as a rule. Thoreau spent much of his life attempting to do just what he wanted while at the same time surviving, for he wanted to live as a poet as well as to write poetry. He loved nature and could stay indoors only with effort. The beautiful woods, meadows, and waters of the Concord neighborhood attracted him like a drug. He wandered among them by day and by night, observing the world of nature closely and sympathetically. He named himself, half humorously, “inspector of snow-storms and rainstorms.”

Thoreau’s struggles were watched with compassion by an older Concord neighbor, who was also one of America’s great men—Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1882). Emerson proved to be Thoreau’s best friend. In 1841 Emerson invited Thoreau to live at his home and to make himself useful there only when it would not interfere with his writing. In 1843 he got Thoreau a job tutoring in Staten Island, New York, so that he could be close to the New York City literary market.

Most of the time, however, Thoreau lived at home. A small room was all he needed. He never married, and he required little. At one point he built a cabin at Walden Pond just outside Concord, on land owned by Emerson, and lived in it from 1845 to 1846. There, he wrote much of his book *Walden*.

Literary works

Thoreau wrote nature essays both early and late in his career. They range from the “Natural History of Massachusetts” (1842), which is supposedly a review but seems to be a delightful discussion on the world of nature

around him, to the poetic “Autumnal Tints” and “Walking” (both 1862), which appeared shortly after his death. He also wrote three rather slender volumes that might be termed travel books: *The Maine Woods* (1864), *Cape Cod* (1865), and *A Yankee in Canada* (1866). Each was made up of essays and was first serialized (arranged and distributed at set times by a publisher) in a magazine. They were published in book form after Thoreau’s death on May 6, 1862.

Thoreau’s two most interesting books are hard to classify, or sort. They are not travel books, nor are they polemics (arguments to oppose an accepted opinion). The first is *A Week on the Concord and Merrimack Rivers* (1849), issued at his own expense. As a framework he used two river adventures he and his brother John had made, and he drew heavily from his journal of that time. He filled out the book with other journalizing (keeping a record of), bits of poetry, old college themes, and youthful philosophizing (seeking knowledge). The result was a book that a few enthusiasts (people who follow a special interest) hailed but that the public ignored.

Walden (1854), however, attracted followers from the beginning, and today editions of it crowd the bookshelves of the world. Though basically it is an account of Thoreau’s stay beside Walden Pond, it is also many other things. It is a how-to-do-it book, for it tells how to live one’s life with a minimum of distasteful labor. It is an apologia, or formal defense. It is a spiritual (or rather, philosophical) autobiography (a book written about oneself). It is a book of seasons. And it is a defiant declaration to the world, for Thoreau was crowing in triumph at his ability to live as he pleased.

The transcendentalist

Thoreau was, so to speak, a working transcendentalist. Thoreau put his personal stamp on those higher ideals of transcendentalism and translated them into action. For example, when a neighbor wanted to hire him to build a wall, Thoreau asked himself whether this was the best way to use his time and decided it was much better to walk in the woods. Transcendentalists regarded nature, both as symbol and actuality. Thoreau made Mother Nature into something like a deity, or god, and he spent more time in the world of nature than any other transcendentalist.

As Thoreau grew into middle age, he inevitably made a few changes. He had to take over the little family business after his father died, since there was no one else to do it. He did some surveying (mapping out land for development) and he became more of a botanist (one who studies plants) and less of a transcendentalist. His spells of illness increased during the 1850s. By December 1861 he no longer left the Thoreau house. By the next spring he could hardly talk above a whisper. He died on May 6, 1862. In spite of the painful last years of his life, his end was peaceful. “Never saw a man dying with so much pleasure and peace,” one of his townsmen observed.

During an elegy (a poem to praise the dead) for Thoreau, Emerson characterized him as a hermit and stoic (unaffected by pleasure or pain), but added that he had a softer side that showed especially when he was with young people he liked. Furthermore, Thoreau was resourceful and ingenious—he had to be, to live the life he wanted. He was patient and had to be to get the most out of nature. He could have been a notable leader, given all of those qualities, but, Emer-

son remarked sadly, Thoreau chose a different path. Nevertheless, Thoreau was a remarkable man, and Emerson gave him the highest possible praise by calling him wise. "His soul," said Emerson in conclusion, "was made for the noblest society."

For More Information

Anderson, Charles R. *The Magic Circle of Walden*. New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston, 1968.

Harding, Walter. *The Days of Henry Thoreau*. New York: Knopf, 1965. Reprint, Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1992.

Paul, Sherman. *The Shores of America: Thoreau's Inward Exploration*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 1958. Reprint, New York, Russell & Russell, 1971.

Richardson, Robert D. *Henry Thoreau: A Life of the Mind*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1986.

Salt, Henry Stephens. *The Life of Henry David Thoreau*. London: R. Bentley & Son, 1890.

Thoreau, Henry David. *Walden*. Boston: Ticknor and Fields, 1862. Multiple reprints.

JIM THORPE

Born: May 28, 1888

Bellemonta, Oklahoma

Died: March 28, 1953

Lomita, California

American football player, baseball player, and Olympic athlete

American track star and professional football and baseball player Jim Thorpe was the hero of the 1912 Olympic Games in Stockholm, Sweden, but had his gold medals taken from him for his status as a professional athlete.

Athletic youth

James Francis Thorpe (Native American name, Wa-tho-huck, or Bright Path) was born south of Bellemonta, near Prague, Oklahoma, on May 28, 1888. He was the son of Hiran P. Thorpe, of Irish and Sac-Fox Indian descent, and Charlotte View, of Potawatomi and Kickapoo descent. He grew up with five siblings, although his twin brother, Charlie, died at the age of nine. Jim's athletic abilities showed at a very early age, when he learned to ride horses and swim at the age of three. Thorpe first attended the Sac-Fox Indian Agency school near Tecumseh, Oklahoma, before being sent to the Haskell Indian School near Lawrence, Kansas, in 1898.

When Thorpe was sixteen, he was recruited to attend a vocational school (a school to learn a trade) for Native Americans, the Carlisle Indian School in Pennsylvania. His track potential was obvious in 1907, when he cleared the high jump bar at 5 feet 9 inches while dressed in street clothes. Glenn S. "Pop" Warner, the school's legendary track and football coach, asked him to join the track team. That fall Thorpe made the varsity football team, playing some but starting the next year as a running back. In 1908 Thorpe was awarded third team All-American status, the highest honor for a collegiate athlete.

Following the spring of 1909, when Thorpe starred in track, he left the Carlisle school with two other students to go to North

Carolina, where they played baseball at Rocky Mount in the Eastern Carolina Association. Thorpe pitched and played first base for what he said was \$15 per week. The next year he played for Fayetteville, winning ten games and losing ten games pitching, while batting .236. These two years of paid performances in minor league baseball would later tarnish his 1912 amateur Olympic status.

Thorpe had matured to almost six feet in height and 185 pounds and led Carlisle to outstanding football seasons in 1911 and 1912. In 1911, against Harvard University's undefeated team led by the renowned coach Percy Houghton, Thorpe kicked four field goals—two over 40 yards—and the game ended in a stunning 18-15 victory. Carlisle lost only two games in 1911 and 1912, against Penn State and Syracuse University, but conquered such teams as the U.S. Army, Georgetown University, Harvard, and the University of Pittsburgh. In his last year he scored twenty-five touchdowns and 198 points, and for the second year in a row he was named All-American by football pioneer Walter Camp (1859–1925).

Star of the 1912 Olympics

During the summer of 1912, before Thorpe's last year at Carlisle, he was chosen to represent the United States at the Stockholm Olympics in the decathlon (ten track events) and the pentathlon (five track events). He was an easy victor in the pentathlon, winning four of the five events (broad jump, 200 meter dash, discus, and 1,500 meter race), losing only the javelin. In the decathlon Thorpe set an Olympic mark of 8,413 points that would stand for two



Jim Thorpe.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

decades. King Gustav of Sweden addressed Thorpe as the “greatest athlete in the world” and presented him with several gifts, including one from Czar Nicholas of Russia (1868–1918)—a silver, 30-pound likeness of a Viking ship, lined with gold and containing precious jewels.

The gold medal ceremony for the decathlon, Thorpe said, was the proudest moment of his life. A half-year later charges against Thorpe for professionalism led to Thorpe's confession that he had been paid to play baseball in North Carolina in 1909 and 1910. (Actually, Thorpe had been paid cash by coach “Pop” Warner as an athlete at

Carlisle before that.) Shortly thereafter the Amateur Athletic Union (AAU) and the American Olympic Committee declared Thorpe a professional, asked Thorpe to return the medals won at the Olympics, and erased his name from the record books.

Thorpe, a great athlete but not a great baseball player, almost immediately signed a large \$6,000-per-year, three-year contract with the New York Giants, managed by John J. McGraw. Thorpe was to be mainly as a gate attraction. His six-year major league career resulted in a .252 batting average with three teams: the New York Giants, the Cincinnati Reds, and the Boston Braves. He batted .327 in 1919, his last year in the majors.

Thorpe signed to play professional football in 1915 with the Canton Bulldogs for the "enormous" sum of \$250 a game. Attendance at Canton immediately skyrocketed, and Thorpe led Canton to several championships over its chief rival, the Massillon Tigers. In 1920 he was appointed president of the American Professional Football Association, which would become the National Football League. Thorpe was the chief drawing power in professional football until Red Grange (1903–1991) entered the game in 1925.

The campaign to restore his medals

Honors for past athletic achievements kept coming to Thorpe. At mid-century the Associated Press (AP) polled sportswriters and broadcasters to determine the greatest football player and most outstanding male athlete of the first half of the twentieth century. Thorpe outdistanced Red Grange and Bronko Nagurski (1908–1990) for the title of the greatest football player. He led Babe Ruth (1895–1948) and Jack Dempsey (1896–

1983) for the most outstanding male athlete, being paired with Babe Didrikson Zaharias (1914–1956), the outstanding female athlete.

This recognition, however, did not influence the United States Olympic Committee to help restore Thorpe's Olympic medals. There had been an attempt in 1943 by the Oklahoma legislature to get the AAU to reinstate Thorpe as an amateur. Thirty years later the AAU did restore his amateur status. In 1952, shortly before his death, there was an attempt by Congressman Frank Bow of Canton, Ohio, to get Avery Brundage, president of the United States Olympic Committee (USOC) to use his good offices to restore Thorpe's medals to him. This effort failed. Following Brundage's death in 1975, the USOC requested the International Olympic Committee to restore Thorpe's medals, but it was turned down. Not until 1982, when USOC president William E. Simon met with the International Olympic Committee president Juan Antonio Samaranch, was the action finally taken.

Outside of athletics, Thorpe's life had much more tragedy than two gold medal losses. Besides his twin brother Charlie's death when he was nine years old, his mother died of blood poisoning before he was a teenager. Four years later, shortly after Thorpe entered Carlisle, his father died. Following his marriage to Iva Miller in 1913, their first son died at the age of four from polio, a life-threatening disease that affects development in children. Twice divorced, he had one boy and three girls from his first marriage, and four boys from his second marriage in 1926 to Freeda Kirkpatrick. His third marriage was to Patricia Askew in 1945. His place in sports history, though, was estab-

lished well before he died of a heart attack on March 28, 1953 in Lomita, California, at the age of sixty-four.

For More Information

Birchfield, D. L. *Jim Thorpe, World's Greatest Athlete*. Parsippany, NJ: Modern Curriculum Press, 1994.

Farrell, Edward. *Young Jim Thorpe: All-American Athlete*. Mahwah, NJ: Troll Associates, 1996.

Lipsyte, Robert. *Jim Thorpe: 20th-Century Jock*. New York: HarperCollins, 1993.

Richards, Gregory B. *Jim Thorpe, World's Greatest Athlete*. Chicago: Children's Press, 1984.

Wheeler, Robert W. *Jim Thorpe: World's Greatest Athlete*. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1979.

JAMES THURBER

Born: December 8, 1894

Columbus, Ohio

Died: November 2, 1961

New York, New York

American writer and artist

James Thurber was an American writer and artist. One of the most popular humorists (writers of clever humor) of his time, Thurber celebrated in stories and in cartoons the comic frustrations of eccentric yet ordinary people.

Early life in Ohio

James Grove Thurber was born on December 8, 1894, in Columbus, Ohio, to Charles Leander and Mary Agnes Thurber. The family soon moved to Virginia where Charles was employed as a secretary to a congressman. While playing with his older brother, Thurber was permanently blinded in his left eye after being shot with an arrow. Problems with his eyesight would plague Thurber for much of his life. After Charles's employer lost a reelection campaign, the Thurbers were forced to move back to Ohio. Thurber attended the local public schools and graduated high school with honors in 1913. He went on to attend Ohio State University—though he never took a degree—and worked for some years afterwards in Ohio as a journalist.

Life in New York City

Thurber moved to New York City in 1926 and a year later he met writer E. B. White (1899–1985) and was taken onto the staff of the *New Yorker* magazine. In collaboration with White he produced his first book, *Is Sex Necessary?* (1929). By 1931 his first cartoons began appearing in the *New Yorker*. These primitive yet highly stylized characterizations included seals, sea lions, strange tigers, harried men, determined women, and, most of all, dogs. Thurber's dogs became something like a national comic institution, and they dotted the pages of a whole series of books.

Thurber's book *The Seal in the Bedroom* appeared in 1932, followed in 1933 by *My Life and Hard Times*. He published *The Middle-aged Man on the Flying Trapeze* in 1935, and by 1937, when he published *Let Your*



James Thurber.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Mind Alone!, he had become so successful that he left his position on the *New Yorker* staff to become a freelance writer and to travel abroad.

The Last Flower appeared in 1939; that year Thurber collaborated with White on a play, *The Male Animal*. The play was a hit when it opened in 1940. But this was also the year that Thurber was forced to undergo a series of eye operations for cataract and trachoma, two serious eye conditions. His eyesight grew steadily worse until, in 1951, it was so weak that he did his last drawing. He spent the last decade of his life in blindness.

Later years

The last twenty years of Thurber's life were filled with material and professional success in spite of his handicap. He published at least fourteen more books, including *The Thurber Carnival* (1945), *Thurber Country* (1953), and the extremely popular account of the life of the *New Yorker* editor Harold Ross, *The Years with Ross* (1959). A number of his short stories were made into movies, including "The Secret Life of Walter Mitty" (1947), which is also regarded as one of the best short stories written in the twentieth century.

Thurber died of pneumonia (an infection of the lungs) on November 2, 1961, just weeks after suffering a stroke. Thurber left behind a peculiar and unique comic world that was populated by his curious animals, who watched close by as aggressive women ran to ground apparently spineless men. But beneath their tame and defeated exteriors, Thurber's men dreamed of wild escape and epic adventure and, so, in their way won out in the battle of the sexes.

For More Information

Bernstein, Burton. *Thurber: A Biography*. New York: Dodd, Mead, 1975. Reprint, New York: Arbor House, 1985.

Fensch, Thomas. *The Man Who Was Walter Mitty: The Life and Work of James Thurber*. The Woodlands, TX: New Century Books, 2000.

Grauer, Neil A. *Remember Laughter: A Life of James Thurber*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1994.

Kinney, Harrison. *James Thurber: His Life and Times*. New York: H. Holt, 1995.

Thurber, James. *My Life and Hard Times*. New York: Harper, 1933. Reprint, New York: Perennial Classics, 1999.

MARSHAL TITO

Born: May 25, 1892

Kumrovec, Croatia

Died: May 4, 1980

Ljubljana, Yugoslavia

Yugoslav politician and president

The Yugoslav statesman Marshal Tito became president of Yugoslavia in 1953. He directed the rebuilding of a Yugoslavia devastated in World War II and the bringing together of Yugoslavia's different peoples until his death in 1980.

Brief history of Yugoslavia

From its creation in 1918 until the country broke apart in the early 1990s, Yugoslavia was a multinational state composed of many ethnic (cultural) and religious groups. The various ethnic groups were dissatisfied with their status in the new state, opposed the domination of one ethnic group, the Serbs, and called for greater national and political rights. The country's economy was unstable and the country was surrounded by enemy states dedicated to its destruction.

Because of these conditions, many groups found support for their activities and sought to destroy order. Two of these groups were the fascists, who believed in a strong central government headed by a dictator, or

sole ruler, and the communists, who believed that goods and services should be owned and distributed among the people. Among the communists who supported a revolutionary change was Josip Broz, who is commonly known as Marshal Tito.

Tito's early years

Tito was born Josip Broz on May 25, 1892, the seventh of fifteen children of a peasant (poor farmer) family of Kumrovec, a village near Zagreb, Croatia. Tito began working on his family's farm when he was just seven years old. At the same time, he attended an elementary school where he studied until he was twelve years old. When he was fifteen years old, he began training to become a locksmith. During this time he also went to night school where he studied subjects including geography, history, and languages.

After spending several years working as a mechanic in Croatia, Slovenia, Austria, and Germany, Tito was drafted into the Austro-Hungarian army at the outbreak of World War I (1914–18) where German-led forces fought for control of Europe. He was wounded and captured by the Russians, and spent time in a prisoner-of-war camp. Tito soon joined the Red Army, the Communist group that rose to power after the Russian Revolution of October 1917 and would ultimately lead to the creation of the Communist Soviet Union.

In 1920 Tito returned to Croatia and joined the Communist Party of Yugoslavia. In 1928 he was sentenced to five years' imprisonment for Communist activity. After spending several years in the Soviet Union (the name of Communist Russia), in 1934 he was



Marshal Tito.

ected to the Central Committee and Politburo of the Yugoslav Party, the top offices of the Communist Party. In 1937 he was appointed secretary general of the Yugoslav Party after many other untrustworthy members were executed.

World War II

Tito was able to revive the Yugoslav Party and to make it a highly disciplined organization. He cleaned the ranks of disloyal members and gave the party a clear-cut and realistic policy to unite the country. For the first time, the party firmly supported the preservation rather than the breakup of Yugoslavia.

Tito was able to develop the Yugoslav Communist Party into a powerful political and military organization during World War II (1939–45), where the Axis powers of Germany, Italy, and Japan clashed with the Allied powers of America, Great Britain, and the Soviet Union.

After the Axis invasion of Yugoslavia in April 1941 and Germany's attack on the Soviet Union in June, Tito ordered the Communist Party to activate a small force to resist the Axis powers. At the same time, a movement headed by Colonel (later General) Draza Mihajlovic gained the support of the Yugoslav king Peter II. Allied officers reported that Tito's movement supported national unity rather than communism, and at the same time reported that Mihajlovic's forces had been cooperating with the Axis troops. This conflict between the two resistance leaders led to a bloody civil war.

Communist revolution in Yugoslavia

Tito's greatest accomplishment during World War II was the organization of perhaps the most effective resistance movement in the history of communism. While resisting the Axis forces, he embarked upon a communist revolution. His forces proceeded to destroy the class structure, destroy the old social and economic order, and lay the foundations for a postwar communist state system. By the end of the war, the communist military force was expanded into a large army (the National Liberation Army).

Basic policies of the Communist Party regarding the new Yugoslav state, such as federal organization of the country, were partially begun during the war. Tito provided the country with a system of temporary revolu-

tionary government—the Committee for the National Liberation of Yugoslavia. Skillfully he took advantage of every social opportunity to pursue communist political and military goals. Neither his domestic rivals nor the powerful forces of nations that occupied Yugoslavia were able to cope with the widespread activities of Tito's followers.

In December 1943 the Allies, ignoring King Peter who was exiled (forced to live) in London, declared that Tito's supporters would lead the Yugoslav forces against the occupying Axis troops. Tito's forces and those of the Soviet Union entered Belgrade, Yugoslavia, on October 20, 1944. Tito's men, however, drove the Germans from the country essentially by their own efforts, an event of the greatest importance in the future history of Yugoslavia. Unlike communist leaders of other East European countries, Tito himself had commanded the forces defeating the Axis troops and had not entered his country with the victorious Red Army. In August 1945 the Federal Republic of Yugoslavia was created.

Postwar years

From 1945 to 1953 Tito acted as prime minister and minister of defense in the government, whose most dramatic political action was the capture, trial, and execution of General Mihajlovic in 1946. Between 1945 and 1948 Tito led his country through an extreme form of dictatorship (rule by one all-powerful person) in order to mold Yugoslavia into a state modeled after the Soviet Union. In January 1953, he was named first president of Yugoslavia and president of the Federal Executive Council. In 1963 he was named president for life.

By 1953 Tito had changed Yugoslavia's relationship with the Soviet Union. He refused to approve Soviet leader Joseph Stalin's (1879–1953) plans for integrating Yugoslavia into the East European Communist bloc (a group aligned for a common cause). He now started on his own policies, which involved relaxing of central control over many areas of national life, and putting it back into the control of the citizens. Although relations between the Soviet Union and Yugoslavia improved when Soviet leader Nikita Khrushchev (1894–1971) visited Belgrade after Stalin's death in 1955, they never returned to what they were before 1948.

Tito attempted to build a bloc of "non-aligned" countries after Stalin's death. Under his leadership, Yugoslavia maintained friendly ties with the Arab states and criticized Israeli aggression in the Arab-Israeli War of 1967. He protested the Soviet invasion of Hungary in 1956 and Czechoslovakia in 1968, and maintained friendly relations with Romania after Nicolae Ceausescu (1918–1989) became its leader in 1965. Under Tito's leadership Yugoslavia was a very active member of the United Nations (UN), a multinational organization aimed at world peace.

Tito was married twice and had two sons. His first wife was Russian. After World War II he married Jovanka, a Serbian woman from Croatia many years younger than him. His wife often accompanied him on his travels. President for life, Tito ruled until his death in Ljubljana, Yugoslavia, on May 4, 1980, maintaining several homes, where he entertained a wide variety of international visitors and celebrities.

For More Information

- Dedijer, Vladimir. *The Battle Stalin Lost: Memoirs of Yugoslavia, 1948–53*. New York: Viking, 1970.
- Dedijer, Vladimir. *Tito*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1952. Reprint, New York: Arno Press, 1972.
- Pavlowitch, Stevan K. *Tito—Yugoslavia's Great Dictator: A Reassessment*. Columbus: Ohio State University Press, 1992.
- West, Richard. *Tito: And the Rise and Fall of Yugoslavia*. New York: Carroll & Graf, 1995.

J. R. R. TOLKIEN

Born: January 3, 1892

Bloemfontein, South Africa

Died: September 2, 1973

Bournemouth, England

English writer, essayist, poet, and editor

J. R. R. Tolkien gained a reputation during the 1960s and 1970s as a cult figure (a person with a devoted following amongst a small group of people) among youths discouraged by war and the technological age from his work *The Hobbit* and the trilogy that followed, *The Lord of the Rings*.

Early life

John Ronald Reuel Tolkien was born on January 3, 1892, the son of English-born parents in Bloemfontein, in the Orange Free State of South Africa, where his father

worked as a bank manager. To escape the heat and dust of southern Africa and to better guard the delicate health of Ronald (as he was called), Tolkien's mother moved back to a small English village with him and his younger brother when they were very young boys. Tolkien would later use this village as a model for one of the locales in his novels. Within a year of this move their father, Arthur Tolkien, died in Bloemfontein, and a few years later the boys' mother died as well.

The Tolkien boys lodged at several homes from 1905 until 1911, when Ronald entered Exeter College, Oxford. Tolkien received a bachelor's degree from Oxford in 1915 and a master's degree in 1919. During this time he married his longtime sweetheart, Edith Bratt, and served for a short time on the Western Front with the Lancashire Fusiliers (a regiment in the British army that used an older-style musket) during World War I (1914–18), when Germany led forces against much of Europe and America).

Begins writing

In 1917, Tolkien was in England recovering from "trench fever," a widespread disease transmitted through fleas and other bugs in battlefield trenches. While bedridden Tolkien began writing "The Book of Lost Tales," which eventually became *The Silmarillion* (1977) and laid the groundwork for his stories about Middle Earth, the fictional world where Tolkien's work takes place.

After the war Tolkien returned to Oxford, where he joined the staff of the *Oxford English Dictionary* and began work as a freelance tutor. In 1920 he was appointed Reader in English Language at Leeds University. The following year, having returned to

Oxford as Rawlinson and Bosworth Professor of Anglo-Saxon, Tolkien became friends with the novelist C. S. Lewis (1898–1963). They shared an intense enthusiasm for the myths, sagas, and languages of northern Europe, and to better enhance those interests, both attended meetings of the “Coalbiters,” an Oxford club, founded by Tolkien, at which Icelandic sagas were read aloud.

During the rest of Tolkien’s years at Oxford—twenty as Rawlinson and Bosworth Professor of Anglo-Saxon, fourteen as Merton Professor of English Language and Literature—Tolkien published several well-received short studies and translations. Notable among these are his essays “Beowulf: The Monsters and the Critics” (1936), “Chaucer as a Philologist [a person who studies language as it relates to culture]: The Reeve’s Tale” (1934), and “On Fairy-Stories” (1947); his scholarly edition of *Ancrene Wisse* (1962); and his translations of three medieval poems: “Sir Gawain and the Green Knight,” “Pearl,” and “Sir Orfeo” (1975).

The Hobbit

As a writer of imaginative literature, though, Tolkien is best known for *The Hobbit* and *The Lord of the Rings*, tales which were formed during his years attending meetings of the “Inklings,” an informal gathering of like-minded friends and writers, that began after the Coalbiters dissolved. The Inklings, which was formed during the late 1930s and lasted until the late 1940s, was a weekly meeting held in Lewis’s sitting room at Magdalen College, at which works-in-progress were read aloud and discussed and critiqued by the attendees. Having heard Tolkien’s first hobbit story read aloud at a meeting of the



J. R. R. Tolkien.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Inklings, Lewis urged Tolkien to publish *The Hobbit*, which appeared in 1937.

Tolkien retired from his professorship in 1959. While the unauthorized publication of an American edition of *The Lord of the Rings* in 1965 angered him, it also made him a widely admired cult figure in the United States, especially among high school and college students. Uncomfortable with this status, he and his wife lived quietly in Bournemouth for several years, until Edith’s death in 1971. In the remaining two years of his life, Tolkien returned to Oxford, where he was made an honorary fellow of Merton College and awarded a doctorate of letters. He was at the

height of his fame as a scholarly and imaginative writer when he died in 1973, though critical study of his fiction continues and has increased in the years since.

The world of Middle Earth

Tolkien, a devoted Roman Catholic throughout his life, began creating his own languages and mythologies at an early age and later wrote Christian-inspired stories and poems to provide them with a narrative framework. Based on bedtime stories Tolkien had created for his children, *The Hobbit* concerns the efforts of a hobbit, Bilbo Baggins, to recover a treasure stolen by a dragon. During the course of his mission, Baggins discovers a magical ring which, among other powers, can render its bearer invisible. The ability to disappear helps Bilbo fulfill his quest; however, the ring's less obvious powers prompt the evil Sauron, Dark Lord of Mordor, to seek it. The hobbits' attempt to destroy the ring, thereby denying Sauron unlimited power, is the focal point of the *Lord of the Rings* trilogy, which consists of the novels *The Fellowship of the Ring* (1954), *The Two Towers* (1954), and *The Return of the King* (1955). In these books Tolkien rejects such traditional heroic qualities as strength and size, stressing instead the capacity of even the humblest creatures to win against evil.

Throughout Tolkien's career he composed histories, genealogies (family histories), maps, glossaries, poems, and songs to supplement his vision of Middle Earth. Among the many works published during his lifetime were a volume of poems, *The Adventures of Tom Bombadil and Other Verses from the Red Book* (1962), and a fantasy novel, *Smith of Wootton Major* (1967). Though many of his

stories about Middle Earth remained incomplete at the time of Tolkien's death, his son, Christopher, rescued the manuscripts from his father's collections, edited them, and published them. One of these works, *The Silmarillion*, takes place before the time of *The Hobbit* and tells the tale of the first age of Holy Ones (earliest spirits) and their offspring.

Nonetheless, Tolkien implies, to take *The Lord of the Rings* too seriously might be a mistake. He once stated that fairy stories in itself should be taken as a truth, not always symbolic of something else. He went on to say, "but first of all [the story] must succeed just as a tale, excite, please, and even on occasion move, and within its own imagined world be accorded literary belief. To succeed in that was my primary object."

Nearly thirty years after his death, the popularity of Tolkien's work has hardly slowed. In 2001 *The Lord of the Rings: The Fellowship of the Ring* was released as a major motion picture. The magic of Tolkien's world won over both the critics and public alike as the movie was nominated in thirteen categories, including Best Picture, at the Academy Awards; it won four awards. Two more films are scheduled for release by the end of 2003.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. J. R. R. Tolkien. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2000.

Carpenter, Humphrey. J. R. R. Tolkien: A Biography. London: Allen & Unwin, 1977. Reprint, Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1988.

Grotta, Daniel. J. R. R. Tolkien: Architect of Middle Earth. Philadelphia: Running Press Book Publishers, 2002.

Neimark, Anne E. *Myth Maker: J. R. R. Tolkien*. San Diego: Harcourt Brace, 1996.

Pearce, Joseph. *Tolkien: Man and Myth*. San Francisco: Ignatius Press, 1998.

Shippey, T. A. J. *R. R. Tolkien: Author of the Century*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 2001.

LEO TOLSTOY

Born: August 28, 1828

Tula Province, Russia

Died: November 9, 1910

Astapovo, Russia

Russian novelist

The Russian novelist and moral philosopher (person who studies good and bad in relation to human life) Leo Tolstoy ranks as one of the world's great writers, and his *War and Peace* has been called the greatest novel ever written.

Early years

Leo (Lev Nikolayevich) Tolstoy was born at Yasnaya Polyana, his family's estate, on August 28, 1828, in Russia's Tula Province, the youngest of four sons. His mother died when he was two years old, whereupon his father's distant cousin Tatyana Ergolsky took charge of the children. In 1837 Tolstoy's father died, and an aunt, Alexandra Osten-Saken, became legal guardian of the children. Her religious dedication was an important early influence on Tolstoy. When she died in 1840, the children were sent to Kazan, Rus-

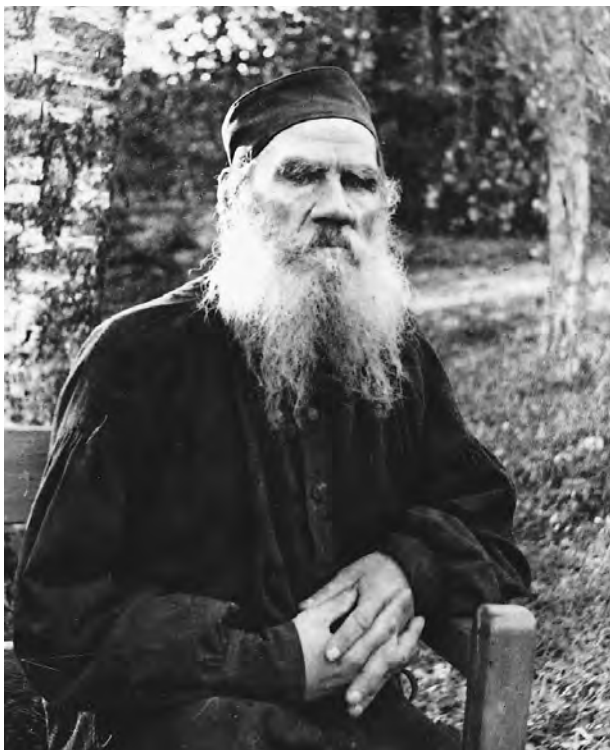
sia, to another sister of their father, Pelageya Yushkov.

Tolstoy was educated at home by German and French tutors. He was not a particularly exceptional student but he was good at games. In 1843 he entered Kazan University. Planning on a diplomatic career, he entered the faculty of Oriental languages. Finding these studies too demanding, he switched two years later to studying law. Tolstoy left the university in 1847 without taking his degree.

Tolstoy returned to Yasnaya Polyana, determined to become a model farmer and a "father" to his serfs (unpaid farmhands). His charity failed because of his foolishness in dealing with the peasants (poor, working class) and because he spent too much time socializing in Tula and Moscow. During this time he first began making amazingly honest diary entries, a practice he maintained until his death. These entries provided much material for his fiction, and in a very real sense the collection is one long autobiography.

Army life and early literary career

Nikolay, Tolstoy's eldest brother, visited him at in 1848 in Yasnaya Polyana while on leave from military service in the Caucasus. Leo greatly loved his brother, and when he asked him to join him in the south, Tolstoy agreed. After a long journey, he reached the mountains of the Caucasus, where he sought to join the army as a Junker, or gentleman-volunteer. Tolstoy's habits on a lonely outpost consisted of hunting, drinking, sleeping, chasing the women, and occasionally fighting. During the long lulls he first began to write. In 1852 he sent the autobiographical sketch *Childhood* to the leading journal of the day, the *Contemporary*. Nikolai Nekrasov, its



Leo Tolstoy.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

editor, was ecstatic, and when it was published (under Tolstoy's initials), so was all of Russia. Tolstoy then began writing *The Cossacks* (finished in 1862), an account of his life in the outpost.

From November 1854 to August 1855 Tolstoy served in the battered fortress at Sevastopol in southern Ukraine. He had requested transfer to this area, a sight of one of the bloodiest battles of the Crimean War (1853–1856; when Russia battled England and France over land). As he directed fire from the Fourth Bastion, the hottest area in the conflict for a long while, Tolstoy managed to write *Youth*, the second part of his autobio-

graphical trilogy. He also wrote the three *Sevastopol Tales* at this time, revealing the distinctive Tolstoyan vision of war as a place of unparalleled confusion and heroism, a special space where men, viewed from the author's neutral, godlike point of view, were at their best and worst.

When the city fell, Tolstoy was asked to make a study of the artillery action during the final assault and to report with it to the authorities in St. Petersburg, Russia. His reception in the capital was a triumphant success. Because of his name, he was welcomed into the most brilliant society. Because of his stories, he was treated as a celebrity by the cream of literary society.

Golden years

In September 1862, Tolstoy married Sofya Andreyevna Bers (or Behrs), a woman sixteen years younger than himself. Daughter of a prominent Moscow doctor, Bers was beautiful, intelligent, and, as the years would show, strong-willed. The first decade of their marriage brought Tolstoy the greatest happiness; never before or after was his creative life so rich or his personal life so full. In June 1863 his wife had the first of their thirteen children.

The first portion of *War and Peace* was published in 1865 (in the *Russian Messenger*) as "The Year 1805." In 1868 three more chapters appeared, and in 1869 he completed the novel. His new novel created a fantastic outpouring of popular and critical reaction.

Tolstoy's *War and Peace* represents a high point in the history of world literature, but it was also the peak of Tolstoy's personal life. His characters represent almost everyone he

had ever met, including all of his relations on both sides of his family. Balls and battles, birth and death, all were described in amazing detail. In this book the European realistic novel, with its attention to social structures, exact description, and psychological rendering, found its most complete expression.

From 1873 to 1877 Tolstoy worked on the second of his masterworks, *Anna Karenina*, which also created a sensation upon its publication. The concluding section of the novel was written during another of Russia's seemingly endless wars with Turkey. The novel was based partly on events that had occurred on a neighboring estate, where a nobleman's rejected mistress had thrown herself under a train. It again contained great chunks of disguised biography, especially in the scenes describing the courtship and marriage of Kitty and Levin. Tolstoy's family continued to grow, and his royalties (money earned from sales) were making him an extremely rich man.

Spiritual crisis

The ethical quest that had begun when Tolstoy was a child and that had tormented him throughout his younger years now drove him to abandon all else in order to seek an ultimate meaning in life. At first he turned to the Russian Orthodox Church, visiting the Optina-Pustyn monastery in 1877. But he found no answer.

In 1883 Tolstoy met V. G. Chertkov, a wealthy guard officer who soon became the moving force behind an attempt to start a movement in Tolstoy's name. In the next few years a new publication was founded (the *Mediator*) in order to spread Tolstoy's word in tract (pamphlets) and fiction, as well as to

make good reading available to the poor. In six years almost twenty million copies were distributed. Tolstoy had long been watched by the secret police, and in 1884 copies of *What I Believe* were seized from the printer.

During this time Tolstoy's relations with his family were becoming increasingly strained. The more of a saint he became in the eyes of the world, the more of a devil he seemed to his wife. He wanted to give his wealth away, but she would not hear of it. An unhappy compromise was reached in 1884, when Tolstoy assigned to his wife the copyright to all his works before 1881.

Tolstoy's final years were filled with worldwide acclaim and great unhappiness, as he was caught in the strife between his beliefs, his followers, and his family. The Holy Synod (the church leaders) excommunicated (kicked him out) him in 1901. Unable to endure the quarrels at home he set out on his last pilgrimage (religious journey) in October 1910, accompanied by his youngest daughter, Alexandra, and his doctor. The trip proved too much, and he died in the home of the stationmaster of the small depot at Astapovo, Russia, on November 9, 1910. He was buried at Yasnaya Polyana.

For More Information

Rancour-Laferriere, Daniel. *Tolstoy on the Couch: Misogyny, Masochism, and the Absent Mother*. New York: New York University Press, 1998.

Troyat, Henri. *Tolstoy*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1967. Reprint, New York: Grove Press, 2001.

Wilson, A. N. *Tolstoy*. London: H. Hamilton, 1988.

HENRI DE TOULOUSE-LAUTREC

Born: November 24, 1864

Albi, France

Died: September 9, 1901

Malromé, France

French painter

The French painter Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec depicted the Parisian night life of cafés, bars, and brothels (houses of prostitution, where sexual acts are traded for money)—the world that he inhabited at the height of his career.

Crippled childhood

Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec, a direct descendant of an aristocratic family of a thousand years, was born on November 24, 1864, at Albi, France, to Alphonse-Charles and Adèle Zoë. His wild and colorful father lived in moderate luxury, hunting with falcons and collecting exotic weapons. Henri began to draw at an early age and found the arts an escape from his loving but over-protective family.

In 1878 Toulouse-Lautrec suffered a fall and broke one femur (thigh bone). A year later he fell again and broke the other one. His legs did not heal properly. His torso developed normally, but his legs stopped growing and were permanently deformed. Many attribute his health problems to the fact that his parents were first cousins.

In 1882, encouraged by his first teachers—the animal painters René Princeteau and John Lewis Brown—Toulouse-Lautrec decided to devote himself to painting, and

that year he left for Paris. Enrolling at the École des Beaux-Arts, he entered the studio of Fernand Cormon. In 1884 Toulouse-Lautrec settled in Montmartre, an area in north Paris, where he stayed from then on, except for short visits to Spain, where he admired the works of El Greco (1541–1614) and Diego Velázquez (1599–1660). In England he visited celebrated writer Oscar Wilde (1854–1900) and painter James McNeill Whistler (1834–1903). At one point Toulouse-Lautrec lived near painter Edgar Degas (1834–1917), whom he valued above all other contemporary artists (artists from his time) and by whom he was influenced. From 1887 his studio was on the rue Caulaincourt next to the Goupil printshop, where he could see examples of the Japanese prints of which he was so fond.

By habit Toulouse-Lautrec stayed out most of the night. He frequented many entertainment spots in Montmartre, especially the Moulin Rouge cabaret (a nightclub with entertainment). He also drank a great deal. His loose lifestyle caught up with him—he suffered a breakdown in 1899. His mother had him committed to an asylum, a hospital for the mentally ill, at Neuilly, France. He recovered and set to work again, but not for very long. He died on September 9, 1901, at the family estate at Malromé, France.

The influence of Parisian nightlife

Toulouse-Lautrec moved freely among the dancers, the prostitutes, the artists, and the intellectuals of Montmartre. From 1890 on his tall, lean cousin, Dr. Tapié de Celeyran, accompanied him, and the two, depicted in *At the Moulin Rouge* (1892), made a colorful pair. Despite his deformity,

Toulouse-Lautrec was extremely social and readily made friends and inspired trust. He came to be regarded as one of the people of Montmartre, for he was an outsider like them, fiercely independent, but with a great ability to understand everything around him.

Among the painter's favorite subjects were the cabaret dancers Yvette Guilbert, Jane Avril, and La Goulue and her partner, Valentin le Désossé, the contortionist (an acrobat who demonstrates extraordinary bodily positions). Through the seriousness of his intention, Toulouse-Lautrec depicted his subjects in a style bordering on, but rising above, caricature (exaggeration). He took subjects who often dressed in disguise and makeup as a way of life and stripped away all that was not essential, thus revealing each as an individual—but a prisoner of his own destiny.

The two most direct influences on Toulouse-Lautrec's art were the Japanese print, as seen in his slanted angles and flattened forms, and Degas, from whom he derived the tilted perspective, cutting of figures, and use of a railing to separate the spectator from the painted scene, as in *At the Moulin Rouge*. But the genuine feel of a world of wickedness and the harsh, artificial colors used to create it were Toulouse-Lautrec's own.

Unusual types performing in a grand show attracted Toulouse-Lautrec. In his painting *In the Circus Fernando: The Ringmaster* (1888) the nearly grotesque (distorted and ugly), strangely cruel figure of the ringmaster is the center around which the horse and bareback rider must revolve. From 1892 to 1894 Toulouse-Lautrec produced a series of interiors of brothels, where he actually lived for a while and became the companion of the women. As with his paintings of cabarets, he



Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

caught the feel of the brothels and made no attempt to glamorize them. In the *Salon in the Rue des Moulins* (1894) the prostitutes are shown as ugly and bored beneath their makeup; the madam (woman in charge) sits quietly in their midst. He neither sensationalized nor drew a moral (having to do with right and wrong) lesson but presented a certain interpretation of this side of society for what it was—no more and no less.

Color lithography and the poster

Toulouse-Lautrec broadened the range of lithography (the process of printing on metal) by treating the tone more freely. His

strokes became more summary (executed quickly) and the planes more unified. Sometimes the ink was speckled on the surface to bring about a great textural richness. In his posters he combined flat images (again the influence of the Japanese print) with type. He realized that if the posters were to be successful their message had to make an immediate and forceful impact on the passerby. He designed them with that in mind.

Toulouse-Lautrec's posters of the 1890s established him as the father of the modern large-scale poster. His best posters were those advertising the appearance of various performers at the Montmartre cabarets, such as the singer May Belfort, the female clown Cha-U-Kao, and Loïe Fuller of the Folies-Bergère.

In an 1893 poster of dancer Jane Avril, colored partially in bright red and yellow, she is pictured kicking her leg. Below her, in gray tones so as not to detract attention, is the diagonally placed hand of the violinist playing his instrument. There is some indication of floorboards but no furniture or other figures. The legend reads simply "Jane Avril" in white letters and "Jardin de Paris" in black letters.

For More Information

Cooper, Douglas. *Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec*. London: Thames and Hudson, 1988.

Frey, Julia. *Toulouse-Lautrec: A Life*. New York: Viking, 1994.

Frey, Julia. *Toulouse-Lautrec: A Life*. New York: Viking, 1994.

Heller, Reinhold. *Toulouse-Lautrec: The Soul of Montmartre*. New York: Prestel, 1997.

EIJI TOYODA

Born: September 12, 1913

Kinjo, Nishi Kasugai, Japan

Japanese businessman and engineer

Eiji Toyoda is a former chairman of the Toyota Motor Company. His family-run business made revolutionary changes in the way automobiles were made.

Family business

Eiji Toyoda was born September 12, 1913, in Kinjo, Nishi Kasugai, Aichi, Japan, the son of Heikichi and Nao Toyoda. Toyoda's uncle, Sakichi, founded the original family business, Toyoda Automatic Loom Works, in 1926 in Nagoya, about 200 miles west of Tokyo, Japan. The family was so involved in the business that Eiji's father Heikichi (younger brother of Sakichi) even made his home inside the spinning factory. Such an early exposure to machines and business would have a significant effect on Toyoda's life.

Sakichi ultimately sold the patents (documents that give a person the legal right to control the production of an invention for a specific period of time) for his design to an English firm for two hundred fifty thousand dollars, at a time when textiles was Japan's top industry and used the money to pay for his eldest son Kiichiro's venture into auto making in the early 1930s.

After graduating in 1936 with a mechanical engineering degree from the University of Tokyo—training ground for most of Japan's future top executives—the twenty-three-year-

old Toyoda joined the family spinning business as an engineering trainee and transferred a year later to the newly formed Toyota Motor Company. The company was a relative newcomer to the auto business in Japan. Eiji worked on the A1 prototype, the forerunner of the company's first production model, a six-cylinder sedan that borrowed heavily from Detroit automotive technology and resembled the radically styled Chrysler Airflow model of that period. During those early years, Toyoda gained lots of hands-on experience.

Expansion

In this spare time, Eiji Toyoda studied rockets and jet engines and, on the advice of his cousin, even researched helicopters. World War II (1939–45)—when Japan fought alongside Germany and Italy against France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and the United States—left Japan's industry in a shambles, and the automaker began rebuilding its production facilities from scratch. But while Kiichiro Toyoda was rebuilding the manufacturing operations, Japan's shattered economy left the company with a growing bank of unsold cars. By 1949, the firm was unable to meet its payroll, and employees began a devastating fifteen-month strike (where workers walk out in protest)—the first and only walk-out in the company's history—which pushed Toyota to the brink of bankruptcy. In 1950 the Japanese government forced Toyota to reorganize and split its sales and manufacturing operations into separate companies, each headed by a nonfamily member. Kiichiro Toyoda and his executive staff all resigned. Kiichiro died less than two years later.

Eiji Toyoda, meanwhile, had been named managing director of the manufacturing arm,



Eiji Toyoda.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photo.

Toyota Motor Company. He was sent to the United States in 1950 to study the auto industry and return to Toyota with a report on American manufacturing methods. After touring Ford Motor's U.S. facilities, Toyoda turned to the task of redesigning Toyota's plants to incorporate advanced techniques and machinery.

President of Toyota

In 1967 Toyoda was named president of Toyota Motor Company—the first family member to assume that post since Kiichiro resigned in 1950. A year later, the two branches of the company were unified in the new Toyota Motor Corporation, with Eiji

Toyoda as chairman and Shoichiro Toyoda as president and chief executive officer.

The Toyodas led their company to a record year in 1984. Toyota sold an all-time high 1.7 million vehicles in Japan and the same number overseas and profits peaked at \$2.1 billion in 1985. While that performance would certainly earn Toyota a mention in automotive history books, Eiji Toyoda and his company may be better remembered for a unique management style that has been copied by hundreds of Japanese companies and is gaining growing acceptance in the United States. The Toyota approach, adopted at its ten Japanese factories and twenty-four plants in seventeen countries, has three main objectives: keeping inventory to an absolute minimum through a system called *kanban*, or “just in time;” insuring that each step of the assembly process is performed correctly the first time; and cutting the amount of human labor that goes into each car.

What Toyoda accomplished for Toyota Motor was dazzling success at a time when Detroit automakers were struggling to stay profitable. Toyota, Japan’s number one automaker, spearheaded the tidal wave of small, low-priced cars that swept the United States after successive energy crises in the mid- and late-1970s. In addition to running the largest corporation in Japan—and the world’s third largest automaker, behind General Motors (GM) and Ford—Toyoda has overseen the development of a highly efficient manufacturing system that is being copied worldwide. Although Eiji Toyoda gave up his post as chairman in 1994, he continues to hold the title of honorary chair of the company.

For More Information

Toyoda, Eiji. *Toyota: Fifty Years in Motion*. New York: Kodansha International, 1987.

HARRY S. TRUMAN

Born: May 8, 1884

Lamar, Missouri

Died: December 26, 1972

Kansas City, Missouri

American president, vice president, and senator

Harry S. Truman (1884–1972), thirty-third president of the United States, led America’s transition from wartime to peacetime economy, created the Truman doctrine, and made the decision to defend South Korea against communist invasion.

A shy start

Harry S. Truman was born in Lamar, Missouri, on May 8, 1884. He went to high school in Independence, Missouri. From 1900 until 1905 he held various small business positions, then for the next twelve years he farmed on his parents’ land. In 1917, soon after the United States entered World War I (1914–18; a war fought in Europe between the Central Powers—Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Turkey—and the Allies—France, Great Britain, Russia, Italy, Japan, and, after 1917, the United States), he enlisted in the artillery, serving in France. After returning from the war, he married Bess Wallace

(1885–1982) in 1919. The couple had one child, Margaret.

As Truman grew to manhood, he achieved a notable change. As president he would be known for his outgoing personality and for his use of such tough-talking phrases as “The buck stops here!” and “If you can’t stand the heat, get out of the kitchen.” As a boy, however, Truman was anything but tough and outgoing. He was accident-prone and sickly, and his poor vision and thick glasses forced him to avoid the rough activities in which other boys engaged. Instead, he stayed indoors, taking piano lessons and reading. One of his favorite books as a boy, *Great Men and Famous Women*, detailed the lives of influential historical and political figures.

Political beginnings

A loyal Democrat, Truman entered politics in the 1920s. He was elected as a Jackson County, Missouri, judge in 1922 and served until 1924. He was presiding judge from 1926 to 1934, giving close attention to problems of county administration.

In the national election of 1934, Truman, who was a firm supporter of President Franklin Roosevelt (1882–1945), was chosen U.S. senator from Missouri. Relected in 1940, he gained national attention as chairman of the Senate Committee to Investigate the National Defense Program. He kept his chairmanship loyal to the Roosevelt administration. When Roosevelt was nominated for a fourth presidential term in June 1944, he chose Truman for vice president.

Thrust into the presidency

Roosevelt was reelected, but after Truman had served only eighty-two days as his



Harry S. Truman.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

vice president, Roosevelt died suddenly on April 12, 1945. Truman then became the president. He quickly took command, and in his first address to Congress he promised to continue Roosevelt’s policies. That July he attended the Potsdam Conference, Germany, at which the United States, Great Britain, and the Soviet Union set terms for the administration of Germany after World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers—Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allied powers—mainly Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, and after 1942, the United States). Later in the summer he authorized the dropping of the atomic bomb on Hiroshima, Japan, on August 6, 1945, and

approved the surrender of the Japanese in a treaty signed on September 2, 1945.

The Truman administration quickly took steps to dismantle the military forces and the agencies set up to conduct the war, as well as to resume production of peacetime goods. Truman was soon forced to tackle inflation (a steep rise in the cost of living) and new demands by labor unions. He showed his power of quick decision declaring wage increases that were needed to cushion the blows from changes in the economy. He also sternly opposed measures to restrict labor organizations and acted to maintain union rights.

Truman also called for a broad program of social welfare. Although sharp friction developed between the Truman administration and conservatives (people who resist change and prefer to keep traditions) in Congress, he pushed measures through Congress for clearing away slums, construction of low-cost housing, health insurance, and the establishment of the Council of Economic Advisers to help citizens gain full employment.

In his foreign policy, Truman was alarmed by the growing power of the Soviet Union, a communist nation. He feared the spread of Soviet influence in eastern Europe and Asia, and he supported strong Western reaction to the threat of Soviet expansion. As Soviet aggressiveness made the international scene stormier, he gave vigorous support to the establishment of the United Nations.

Truman Doctrine

In the wake of World War II, Turkey and Greece seemed to be at risk of economic collapse and communist takeover. To prevent this from happening, Truman backed the leaders of his State Department in their stand

for continued American support to democracy abroad and asked Congress for \$400 million in funds to sustain Turkey and Greece. He also announced the Truman Doctrine (March 12, 1947), declaring that the United States would support all free peoples who were resisting attempts to dominate them, either by armed minorities at home or aggressors outside their borders.

Truman's policy made it possible for members of his state department to push through Congress the important measure known as the Marshall Plan, which began in April 1948. The plan provided for the transfer of large amounts economic aid from Western nations to countries in Europe and Asia that were threatened by communist domination. The presidential campaign of 1948 came as the Marshall Plan gathered widespread support from democratic governments in Europe, South America, Africa, and elsewhere.

Reelection

In 1948 Truman entered the presidential contest and fought a stubborn battle against Republican Thomas E. Dewey (1902–1971). Truman faced heavy odds in this presidential race. Besides the Democratic and Republican candidates, the entry of two new political parties into the battle made the outcome doubtful.

As the election drew near most newspapers seemed confident that Dewey would win. Public opinion polls also indicated a Dewey victory. On election night, Truman went to bed as the *Chicago Tribune* published a special issue with the headline “Dewey Defeats Truman!” The next morning, however, Truman awoke to find the he had not only carried the country by more than two million votes but had also brought in a Democratic Congress.

Korean War

On Sunday, June 25, 1950, the Korean War (1950–53) began when North Korean Communist forces invaded the Republic of South Korea. Truman at once summoned an emergency conference and announced that he would pledge American armed strength for the defense of South Korea. By September 15, American troops, supported by other forces of the United Nations, were in action in Korea. Truman held firm in the costly war that followed but hesitated to approve a major advance across the Yalu River on the northwest border of North Korea and China. China had entered the war on North Korea's side partly to protect its territory in this area.

In April 1951, amid national frustration over the war, Truman dismissed General Douglas MacArthur (1880–1964) as head of the Far East Command of the U.S. Army. He took this action on the grounds that MacArthur—a national hero of World War II (1939–45)—had repeatedly challenged the Far Eastern policies of the administration and had recommended the use of bombs against Chinese forces north of the Yalu. Such an attack against the Chinese might have provoked open war with the Soviet Union and cost the United States the support of important allies in the war. Nevertheless, MacArthur's dismissal was highly controversial, and Truman announced that he would not run again for the presidency. He retired to private life, publishing two volumes of memoirs (memories) in 1955 and 1956.

Lasting popularity

Truman died on December 26, 1972, but his popularity continued to soar long after his death. New books and movies about him

have continued to appear, and he has been commemorated with a U.S. postage stamp.

For More Information

- Ferrell, Robert H. *Harry S. Truman: A Life*. Columbia: University of Missouri Press, 1994.
- Hamby, Alonzo L. *Man of the People: A Life of Harry S. Truman*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1995.
- Leavell, J. Perry. *Harry S. Truman*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.
- McCoy, Donald R. *The Presidency of Harry S. Truman*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 1984.
- McCullough, David S. *Truman*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1992.
- Schuman, Michael. *Harry S. Truman*. Springfield, NJ: Enslow, 1997.
- Truman, Harry S. *The Autobiography of Harry S Truman*. Edited by Robert H. Ferrell. Boulder: Colorado Associated University Press, 1980.

DONALD TRUMP

Born: 1946

New York, New York

American businessman and real estate developer

An American real estate developer, Donald Trump became one of the best known and most controversial businessmen of the 1980s and 1990s.



Donald Trump.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Privileged childhood

Donald John Trump was born in 1946 in Queens, New York City, the fourth of five children of Frederick C. and Mary MacLeod Trump. Frederick Trump was a builder and real estate developer who specialized in constructing and operating middle income apartments in the Queens, Staten Island, and Brooklyn sections of New York. Donald Trump was an energetic and bright child, and his parents sent him to the New York Military Academy at age thirteen, hoping the discipline of the school would channel his energy in a positive manner. Trump did well at the academy, both socially and academically, ris-

ing to be a star athlete and student leader by the time he graduated in 1964.

During the summers, Trump worked for his father's company at the construction sites. He entered Fordham University and then transferred to the Wharton School of Finance at the University of Pennsylvania, from which he graduated in 1968 with a degree in economics.

Trump seems to have been strongly influenced by his father in his decision to make a career in real estate development, but the younger man's personal goals were much grander than those of his father. After graduating college, Trump joined the family business, the Trump Organization. In 1971 Trump moved his residence to Manhattan, where he became familiar with many influential people. Convinced of the economic opportunity in the city, Trump became involved in large building projects in Manhattan that would offer opportunities for earning high profits, utilizing attractive architectural design, and winning public recognition.

Building an empire

When the Pennsylvania Central Railroad entered bankruptcy, Trump was able to obtain an option (a contract that gives a person the authority to sell something for a specific price during a limited time frame) on the railroad's yards on the west side of Manhattan. When plans for apartments were refused because of a poor economic climate, Trump promoted the property as the location of a city convention center, and the city government selected it over two other sites in 1978. Trump's offer to drop a fee if the center were named after his family, however, was turned down, along with his bid to build the complex.

In 1974 Trump obtained an option on one of the Penn Central's hotels, the Commodore, which was unprofitable but in an excellent location near Grand Central Station. The next year he signed a partnership agreement with the Hyatt Hotel Corporation, which did not have a large downtown hotel. Trump then worked out a complicated deal with the city to revamp the hotel. Renamed the Grand Hyatt, the hotel was popular and an economic success, making Trump the city's best known and most controversial developer.

In 1977 Trump married Ivana Zelnickova Winklmayr, a New York fashion model who had been an alternate on the 1968 Czech Olympic Ski Team. After the birth of the first of the couple's three children in 1978, Donald John Trump, Jr., Ivana Trump was named vice president in charge of design in the Trump Organization and played a major role in supervising the renovation of the Commodore.

In 1979 Trump rented a site on Fifth Avenue next to the famous Tiffany & Company as the location for a monumental \$200 million apartment-retail complex designed by Der Scutt. It was named Trump Tower when it opened in 1982. The fifty-eight-story building featured a six-story courtyard lined with pink marble and included an eighty-foot waterfall. The luxurious building attracted well-known retail stores and celebrity renters and brought Trump national attention.

Atlantic City

Meanwhile Trump was investigating the profitable casino gambling business, which was approved in New Jersey in 1977. In 1980 he was able to acquire a piece of property in

Atlantic City, New Jersey. He brought in his younger brother Robert to head up the complex project of acquiring the land, winning a gambling license, and obtaining permits and financing. Holiday Inns Corporation, the parent company of Harrah's casino hotels, offered a partnership, and the \$250 million complex opened in 1982 as Harrah's at Trump Plaza. Trump bought out Holiday Inns in 1986 and renamed the facility Trump Plaza Hotel and Casino. Trump also purchased a Hilton Hotels casino-hotel in Atlantic City when the corporation failed to obtain a gambling license and renamed the \$320 million complex Trump's Castle. Later, while it was under construction, he was able to acquire the largest hotel-casino in the world, the Taj Mahal at Atlantic City, which opened in 1990.

Back in New York City, Trump had purchased an apartment building and the Barbizon-Plaza Hotel in New York City, which faced Central Park, with plans to build a large condominium tower on the site. The tenants of the apartment building, however, who were protected by the city's rent control and rent stabilization programs, fought Trump's plans and won. Trump then renovated the Barbizon, renaming it Trump Parc. In 1985 Trump purchased seventy-six acres on the west side of Manhattan for \$88 million to build a complex to be called Television City, which was to consist of a dozen skyscrapers, a mall, and a riverfront park. The huge development was to stress television production and feature the world's tallest building, but community opposition and a long city approval process delayed construction of the project. In 1988 he acquired the Plaza Hotel for \$407 million and spent \$50 million renovating it under his wife Ivana's direction.

Declining wealth

It was in 1990, however, that the real estate market declined, reducing the value of and income from Trump's empire; his own net worth plummeted from an estimated \$1.7 billion to \$500 million. The Trump Organization required massive loans to keep it from collapsing, a situation that raised questions as to whether the corporation could survive bankruptcy. Some observers saw Trump's decline as symbolic of many of the business, economic, and social excesses from the 1980s.

Yet Trump climbed back and was reported to be worth close to \$2 billion in 1997. Donald Trump's image was tarnished by the publicity surrounding his controversial separation and the later divorce from his wife, Ivana. But Trump married again, this time to Marla Maples, a fledgling actress. The couple had a daughter two months before their marriage in 1993. He filed for a highly publicized divorce from Maples in 1997, which became final in June 1999.

On October 7, 1999, Trump announced the formation of an exploratory committee to inform his decision of whether or not he should seek the Reform Party's nomination for the presidential race of 2000, but backed out because of problems within the party.

A state appeals court ruled on August 3, 2000, that Trump had the right to finish an 856-foot-tall condominium on New York City's east side. The Coalition for Responsible Development had sued the city, charging it with violation of zoning laws by letting the building reach heights that towered over everything in the neighborhood. The city has since moved to revise its rules to prevent more of such projects. The failure of Trump's oppo-

nents to obtain an injunction (a court order to stop) allowed him to continue construction.

For More Information

- Blair, Gwenda. *The Trumps: Three Generations That Built an Empire*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 2000.
- Hurt, Harry, III. *The Lost Tycoon: The Many Lives of Donald J. Trump*. New York : W. W. Norton, 1993.
- O'Donnell, John R., with James Rutherford. *Trumped!: The Inside Story of the Real Donald Trump*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1991.
- Tucille, Jerome. *Trump: The Saga of America's Master Builder*. New York: D. I. Fine, 1985.

SOJOURNER TRUTH

Born: 1797

Ulster County, New York

Died: November 26, 1883

Battle Creek, Michigan

African American abolitionist

One of the most famous nineteenth-century black American women, Sojourner Truth was an uneducated former slave who actively opposed slavery. Though she never learned to read or write, she became a moving speaker for black freedom and women's rights. While many of her fellow black abolitionists (people who campaigned for the end of slavery) spoke

only to blacks, Truth spoke mainly to whites. While they spoke of violent uprisings, she spoke of reason and religious understanding.

Sojourner Truth was born Isabella Baumfree around 1797 on an estate owned by Dutch settlers in Ulster County, New York. She was the second youngest in a slave family of the ten or twelve children of James Baumfree and his wife Elizabeth (known as “Mau-Mau Bett”). When her owner died in 1806, Isabella was put up for auction. Over the next few years, she had several owners who treated her poorly. John Dumont purchased her when she was thirteen, and she worked for him for the next seventeen years.

In 1817 the state of New York passed a law granting freedom to slaves born before July 4, 1799. However, this law declared that those slaves could not be freed until July 4, 1827. While waiting ten years for her freedom, Isabella married a fellow slave named Thomas, with whom she had five children. As the date of her release approached, she realized that Dumont was plotting to keep her enslaved. In 1826 she ran away, leaving her husband and her children behind.

Wins court case to regain son

Three important events took place in Isabella’s life over the next two years. She found refuge with Maria and Isaac Van Wageningen, who bought her from Dumont and gave her freedom. She then underwent a religious experience, claiming from that point on she could talk directly to God. Lastly, she sued to retrieve her son Peter, who had been sold illegally to a plantation owner in Alabama. In 1828, with the help of a lawyer, Isabella became the first black woman to take a white man to court and win.



Sojourner Truth.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

Soon thereafter, Isabella moved with Peter to New York City and began following Elijah Pierson, who claimed to be a prophet. He was soon joined by another religious figure known as Matthias, who claimed to be the Messiah. They formed a cult known as the “Kingdom” and moved to Sing Sing (renamed Ossining) in southeast New York in 1833. Isabella grew apart from them and stayed away from their activities. But when Matthias was arrested for murdering Pierson, she was accused of being an accomplice. A white couple in the cult, the Folgers, also claimed that Isabella had tried to poison them. For the second time, she went to court.

She was found innocent in the Matthias case, and decided to file a slander suit against the Folgers. In 1835 she won, becoming the first black person to win such a suit against a white person.

Changes name

For the next eight years, Isabella worked as a household servant in New York City. In 1843, deciding her mission was to preach the word of God, Isabella changed her name to Sojourner Truth and left the city. Truth traveled throughout New England, attending and holding prayer sessions. She supported herself with odd jobs and often slept outside. At the end of the year, she joined the Northampton Association, a Massachusetts community founded on the ideas of freedom and equality. It is through the Northampton group that Truth met other social reformers and abolitionists, including Frederick Douglass (1817–1895), who introduced her to their movement.

During the 1850s, the issue of slavery heated up in the United States. In 1850 Congress passed the Fugitive Slave Law, which allowed runaway slaves to be arrested and jailed without a jury trial. In 1857 the U.S. Supreme Court ruled in the case of Dred Scott (1795?–1858) that slaves had no rights as citizens and that the government could not outlaw slavery in new territories.

Lectures to hostile crowds

The results of the Scott case and the unsettling times did not frighten Truth away from her mission. Her life story, *Narrative of Sojourner Truth*, cowritten with Olive Gilbert, was published in 1850. She then headed west and made stops in town after town to speak

about her experiences as a slave and her eventual freedom. Her colorful and down-to-earth style often soothed the hostile crowds she faced. While on her travels, Truth noted that while women could be leaders in the abolitionist movement, they could neither vote nor hold public office. Realizing she was discriminated against on two fronts, Truth became an outspoken supporter of women's rights.

By the mid-1850s, Truth had earned enough money from sales of her popular autobiography to buy land and a house in Battle Creek, Michigan. She continued her lectures, traveling throughout the Midwest. When the Civil War began in 1861, she visited black troops stationed near Detroit, Michigan, offering them encouragement. Shortly after meeting U.S. president Abraham Lincoln (1809–1865) in October 1864, she decided to stay in the Washington area to work at a hospital and counsel freed slaves.

Continues fight for freed slaves

Following the end of the Civil War, Truth continued to work with freed slaves. After her arm had been dislocated by a streetcar conductor who had refused to let her ride, she fought for and won the right for blacks to share Washington streetcars with whites. For several years she led a campaign to have land in the West set aside for freed blacks, many of whom were poor and homeless after the war. She carried on her lectures for the rights of blacks and women throughout the 1870s. Failing health, however, soon forced Truth to return to her Battle Creek home. She died there on November 26, 1883.

For More Information

- Gilbert, Olive. *Narrative of Sojourner Truth*. Boston: Self-published, 1850. Reprint, New York: Penguin Books, 1998.
- Krass, Peter. *Sojourner Truth*. New York: Chelsea House, 1988.
- Mabee, Carleton, with Susan Mabee Newhouse. *Sojourner Truth: Slave, Prophet, Legend*. New York: New York University Press, 1993.
- McKissack, Patricia, and Fredrick McKissack. *Sojourner Truth: A Voice for Freedom*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow, 1992.
- Painter, Nell Irvin. *Sojourner Truth: A Life, a Symbol*. New York: Norton, 1996.
- Rockwell, Anne F. *Only Passing Through: The Story of Sojourner Truth*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2000.

TU FU

Born: c. 712

Kung-hsien, China

Died: c. 770

Tanzhou, China

Chinese poet

Tu Fu was a great Chinese poet of the Tang dynasty, a family that ruled China from 618 to 907. He is known as a poet-historian for his portrayal of the social and political disorders of his time and is also noted for his artistry and craftsmanship.

The life of Tu Fu

Born in Kung-hsien, Honan, of a scholar-official family, Tu Fu lost his mother in early childhood. His father, a minor district official, remarried, and the boy lived for some time with his aunt in Loyang, the eastern capital. In his youth he traveled widely in the Yangtze River and Yellow River regions. He first met the poet Li Po (c. 701–762) in 744 in North China and formed a lasting friendship with him. In 746 Tu Fu went to Ch'ang-an, the capital, in search of an official position, but he failed to pass the literary examination or to win the support of influential people. In 751 he sent a *fu* (rhymed prose) composition to the emperor for each of three grand state ceremonies. While the emperor appreciated Tu Fu's literary talents, he failed to award the poet an office or payment.

After a long, uneventful wait in Ch'ang-an, where Tu Fu's resources were exhausted and his health declined, he was offered a minor position at court. Just then the An Lu-shan rebellion broke out (December 755). The country was thrown into chaos when rebels tried to overthrow the T'ang Dynasty. The rebels captured Tu Fu, but he escaped. He lived the life of a refugee (someone forced away from home for political reasons) for some time before he was able to join the new emperor's court in exile, a court set up in foreign lands after being ousted. As a reward for his loyalty, he was appointed "Junior Reminder" in attendance upon the emperor. In late 757 he returned with the court to Ch'ang-an, which had been recovered from the rebels, but he did not stay there long. He had offended the emperor with his advice and was banished (sent away) to a provincial post, or a remote border post. He soon gave it



Tu Fu.

Reproduced by permission of the Picture Desk, Inc.

up and in the fall of 759 started a long journey away from the capital.

Tu Fu spent the next nine years (759–768), the most fruitful period of his poetic career, in various cities in Szechwan, China. He settled down with his family in Ch'eng-tu, the provincial capital, where he built a thatched cottage and led a quiet, happy, though still extremely poor life. Occasionally he had to go from one city to another to seek employment or to escape uprisings within the province. For a year or so, he was appointed by Yen Wu, the governor general of Ch'eng-tu district, as military adviser in the governor's headquarters and assistant secre-

tary in the Board of Works. Upon Yen Wu's death in 765, Tu Fu left Ch'eng-tu for a trip that took him to a number of places along the Yangtze River. Three years later he reached Hunan. After having roamed up and down the rivers and lakes there for almost two years (768–770), he died of sickness on a boat in the winter of 770.

Tu Fu's poetry

The rich and varied experiences in Tu Fu's life went into the making of a great poet. His works reveal his loyalty and love of the country, his dreams and frustrations, and his sympathy for the sad status of the common people. He was an eyewitness to the historical events in a critical period that saw a great, prosperous nation ruined by military rebellions and wars with border tribes. Eager to serve the country, Tu Fu was helpless in stopping its disasters and could only faithfully record in poems his own observations and feelings. While some of his poems reflect his mood in happier moments, most of them tell of his poverty, his separation from and longings for his family, his terrible life during the war, and his encounters with refugees, draftees, and recruiting officers.

Tu Fu possesses a remarkable power of description, with which he clearly presents human affairs and natural scenery. Into his poetry he introduces an intense, dramatic, and touching personalism through the use of symbols and images, irony and contrast. Above all, he has the ability to rise above the world of reality to the world of imagination. An artist among poets, he excelled in a difficult verse-form called *lü-shih* (regulated verse), of which he is considered a master.

For More Information

Davis, A. R. *Tu Fu*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1971.

Tu Fu. *A Little Primer of Tu Fu*. Edited by David Hawkes. Oxford, England: Clarendon Press, 1967.

Tu Fu. *Tu Fu: The Autobiography of a Chinese Poet*. Edited by Florence Ayscough. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1929.

Tu Fu. *Tu Fu: Selected Poems*. Edited by Rewi Alley. Peking, China: Foreign Language Press, 1990.

TUTANKHAMEN

Born: c. 1370 B.C.E.

Died: c. 1352 B.C.E.

Egyptian king and pharaoh

Tutankhamen was the twelfth king of the eighteenth Egyptian dynasty (reigned 1361–1352 B.C.E.). Although his reign was relatively unimportant, Tutankhamen became the most famous of the pharaohs (Egyptian kings) when his treasure-filled tomb was discovered in the early twentieth century. The vast and untouched contents of his tomb offered historians great insight into the ancient Egyptian culture.

Early life

Little is known of Tutankhamen's childhood; even the identity of his parents remains a mystery. Historians believe Tutankhamen was the son of either Amenophis III or Akhenaten. His mother was probably one of

the king's many wives, most likely Kiya, a wife of Akhenaten who was often referred to as the "Greatly Beloved Wife."

Tutankhamen was only a child when he became king, for although he reigned eight full years, examination of his body has shown that he was little more than eighteen years old at the time of his death. He may have owed his rise to king to his marriage to Ankhnesamun, the third daughter of the fourteenth century Egyptian rulers, Ikhnaton and Nefertiti. The couple would have no children.

Tutankhamen had originally been named Tutankhaten, meaning "gracious life is Aton," but both he and Ankhnesamun (originally Ankhnespaten) dropped from their names all references to the sun god Aton and the cult (a religious following) that was promoted by Akhenaten. He then became known as Tutankhamen, "gracious life is Amon (an Egyptian god)." Soon after, the royal couple abandoned Amarna, the city built by Akhenaten for the sole worship of Aton. Tutankhamen apparently left the city very early in his reign, for, with the exception of a few scarabs (Egyptian beetles that were inscribed and buried alongside mummies), no trace of him has been found at Amarna.

The reign of King Tutankhamen

The addition to Tutankhamen's label as "Ruler of Southern On" shows that he regarded Thebes as his capital city. There can be little doubt that he made every effort to satisfy the supporters of the god Amun; a *stèle* (statue) erected near the Third Pylon of the temple of Karnak depicts Tutankhamen offering to gods Amun and Mut. The accompanying text tells of the state of decay into which the temples and shrines of the gods had fallen



Tutankhamen.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

during the period of Aten. Tutankhamen had a large hall at Luxor decorated with reliefs illustrating the festival of Amen-Re.

Despite the existence of the standard paintings of the pharaoh slaying his foes, it is doubtful that Tutankhamen engaged in any serious military operations. Tutankhamen was a trained archer and in his tomb were found many trophies from his hunts.

There is some indication that the actual power behind the throne was an elderly official named Ay, who is depicted on a fragment of gold leaf with Tutankhamen. On another

fragment Ay bears the title of vizier, or high government official. He had already posed as a coregent (coruler) before the death of Tutankhamen. After Tutankhamen's death, Ay married his widow. The cause of Tutankhamen's death is unknown, although, due to skull damage found in his remains, many believe he was assassinated.

The tomb of Tutankhamen

Tutankhamen is probably the best-known of the pharaohs, owing to the fortunate discovery of his treasure-filled tomb virtually intact. His burial place in the Valley of the Kings had escaped the fate of the tombs of other ancient Egyptian kings. Fortunately, the entrance was hidden from tomb raiders by debris heaped over it during the cutting of the later tomb of the twelfth century B.C.E. King Ramses VI. In 1922 Howard Carter (1873–1939) discovered Tutankhamen's tomb after searching for nearly ten years. Tutankhamen's tomb remains as one of the greatest and most important discoveries in archeology (the study of ancient forms of life). From Carter's discovery, historians were able to piece together the life of King Tutankhamen.

The tomb room contained more than five thousand objects, many of which were covered with gold and beautifully carved. The most famous of these objects is probably the lifelike gold mask that covered the face of Tutankhamen's mummy. Carter also uncovered military items, clothing, jewelry, and many statues of Tutankhamen and Egyptian gods. In fact, there were so many items in the tomb that many are still being examined today and have yet to be displayed in museums—nearly eighty years after their discovery.

For More Information

Brier, Bob. *The Murder of Tutankhamen: A True Story*. New York: Putnam, 1998.

Carter, Howard, and A. C. Mace. *The Tomb of Tut-ankh-amen*. New York: Cooper Square Publishers, 1963.

Desroches-Noblecourt, Christiane. *Tutankhamen: Life and Death of a Pharaoh*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1965.

El Mahdy, Christine. *Tutankhamen: The Life and Death of the Boy-King*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 2000.

James, T. G. H. *Tutankhamun*. Vercelli, Italy: Friedman/Fairfax Publishers, 2000.

DESMOND TUTU

Born: October 7, 1931

Klerksdorp, South Africa

South African antiapartheid activist and religious leader

In the 1980s Archbishop Desmond Tutu became South Africa's most well-known opponent of apartheid, that country's system of racial discrimination, or the separation of people by skin color. In 1984, he was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize for his work in South Africa.

Apartheid

South African apartheid allowed white Africans, who made up 20 percent of the population, to reserve for themselves about

87 percent of the land, most natural resources, and all meaningful political power. Black Africans who found themselves in lands reserved for whites were made citizens of one of ten homelands, which the white-controlled government (but virtually no one else) called nations. In order to remove black people from areas reserved for whites, the government kicked out many from their homes, though their families had in some cases occupied them for decades. Black South Africans in the Republic were forced into the lowest-paying jobs, denied access to most public places, and had drastically lower life expectancies than whites. Meanwhile, white South Africans had one of the highest standards of living in the world.

Black opposition to these conditions began in 1912 when the African National Congress (ANC) was formed. Until the 1960s it engaged in various peaceful campaigns of protest that included marches, petitions, and boycotts (refusing to purchase or participate in businesses)—actions which ultimately helped blacks little. In 1960, after police fired on a crowd at Sharpeville, South Africa, killing sixty-nine and wounding many others, and after the ANC leader Nelson Mandela (1918–) was imprisoned for life in 1964, many black Africans decided to abandon the policy of nonviolent resistance. Most ANC members, led by Oliver Tambo, left South Africa and launched a campaign of sabotage (destruction) from exile. The government increased its violence in return. In 1976, five hundred black students were shot during protests, and in 1977 and 1980 black leader Steve Biko (1946–1977) and trade unionist Neil Aggett were killed while in police custody. Beginning in 1984 violence again swept South Africa. By the time the government



Desmond Tutu.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

declared a state of emergency in June 1986, more than two thousand individuals had been killed.

Rise of Tutu

Against this backdrop Desmond Tutu emerged as the leading spokesman for non-violent resistance to apartheid. Desmond Mpilo Tutu was born on October 7, 1931, to Zachariah and Aletta Tutu, in Klerksdorp, a town in the Transvaal region of South Africa. Tutu was born a Methodist but became an Anglican when his family changed religions. The Tutu family moved to Johannesburg, South Africa, when Desmond was twelve

years old. In Johannesburg he first met the Anglican priest Trevor Huddleston who was strongly against apartheid and became Tutu's main role model. At the age of fourteen he contracted tuberculosis, a terrible disease which effects the lungs and bones, and was hospitalized for twenty months. He wanted to become a doctor, but because his family could not afford the schooling, he became a teacher.

When the government instituted a system of racially discriminatory education in 1957, a system that would separate black students from white students, Tutu left teaching and entered the Anglican Church. Ordained (declared a priest) in 1961, he earned a bachelor of arts degree in 1962 from the University of South Africa, and then a master's degree from the University of London. From 1970 to 1974 he lectured at the University of Lesotho, Botswana, and Swaziland. In 1975 he became dean of Johannesburg, a position from which he publicly challenged white rule. He became bishop of Lesotho in 1976, and in 1985 bishop of Johannesburg. A short fourteen months later, in April 1986, he was elected archbishop of Cape Town, South Africa, the first black person to head the Anglican Church in southern Africa.

Begins the fight

By the 1980s clergymen (religious leaders) were among the most passionate opponents of apartheid within South Africa. Allan Boesak, a biracial minister, and Beyers Naude, head of the Christian Institute, were unusually outspoken. Naude was silenced in the late 1970s by being banned, a unique South African punishment by which the victim was placed under virtual house arrest (forced to stay at home by court order) and could not

speak or be quoted publicly. Tutu's international recognition as a critic of apartheid came when he became first general secretary of the South African Council of Churches in 1978.

Nobel Prize

The problem faced by antiapartheid clergymen was how to oppose both violent resistance and apartheid, which was itself increasingly violent. Tutu was determined in his opposition, and he spoke out both in South Africa and abroad, often comparing apartheid to Nazism (a radical movement of racial superiority led by Adolf Hitler [1889—1945]) and communism (where a strong-handed government controls goods and services within a country). As a result the government twice revoked his passport, and he was jailed briefly in 1980 after a protest march. Tutu's view on violence reflected the tension in the Christian approach to resistance: "I will never tell anyone to pick up a gun. But I will pray for the man who picks up a gun, pray that he will be less cruel than he might otherwise have been. . . ."

Another issue Tutu faced was whether other nations should be urged to apply economic sanctions (limitations) against South Africa. Many believed that sanctions would hurt the white-controlled economy, therefore forcing apartheid to end. Others believed the sanction would hurt the black community more. Tutu favored sanctions as the only hope for peaceful change. He also opposed the "constructive engagement" policy of U.S. president Ronald Reagan (1911–). When the new wave of violence swept South Africa in the 1980s and the government failed to make fundamental changes in apartheid, Tutu pronounced constructive engagement a failure.

A new era

In 1989 F. W. de Klerk (1936–) was elected the new president of the Republic of South Africa. He had promised to abolish apartheid, and at the end of 1993 he made good on his promise when South Africa's first all-race elections were announced. On April 27, 1994, South Africans elected a new president, Nelson Mandela, and apartheid was finally over. Mandela symbolized South Africa's new freedom, since until 1990 he had spent twenty-seven years as a political prisoner because of his outspoken opposition to apartheid.

In 1997 Tutu received the Robie Award for his work in humanitarianism. The award came in the midst of Tutu's battle with prostate cancer, and shortly after the presentation he announced plans to undergo several months of cancer treatment in the United States. As head of South Africa's Truth and Reconciliation Commission, a group that investigates apartheid crimes, Tutu planned to set up an office in the United States, where he could continue his work throughout the rigorous cancer treatment. It was determined in October 1999 that the cancer had not spread to other parts of Tutu's body. In August 2001, Tutu returned to South Africa after spending two years in the United States undergoing cancer treatment.

Receiving the Robie was certainly not Tutu's first recognition: he was the second South African to earn the Nobel Peace Prize. The first was Albert Luthuli of the ANC, who received it in 1960 for the same sort of opposition to apartheid.

For More Information

Bentley, Judith. *Archbishop Tutu of South Africa*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow, 1988.

Du Boulay, Shirley. *Tutu: Voice of the Voiceless*. Grand Rapids, MI: Eerdmans, 1988.

Lantier, Patricia and David Winner.. *Desmond Tutu: Religious Leader Devoted to Freedom*. Milwaukee: G. Stevens Children's Books, 1991.

Lelyveld, Joseph. *Move Your Shadow*. New York: Time Books, 1985.

Tutu, Desmond. *The Rainbow People of God*. New York: Doubleday, 1994.

MARK T WAIN

Born: November 30, 1835

Florida, Missouri

Died: April 21, 1910

Redding, Connecticut

American writer and humorist

Mark Twain, American humorist (comic writer) and novelist, captured a world audience with stories of boyhood adventure and with commentary on man's faults that is humorous even while it probes, often bitterly, the roots of human behavior.

Childhood along the Mississippi

Mark Twain was born Samuel Langhorne Clemens on November 30, 1835, in the frontier village of Florida, Missouri. He

spent his boyhood in nearby Hannibal, on the banks of the Mississippi River, observing its busy life, fascinated by its romance, but chilled by the violence and bloodshed it bred. Clemens was eleven years old when his lawyer father died. In order to help the family earn money, the young Clemens began working as a store clerk and a delivery boy. He also began working as an apprentice (working to learn a trade), then a compositor (a person who sets type), with local printers, contributing occasional small pieces to local newspapers. At seventeen his comic sketch "The Dandy Frightening the Squatter" was published by a sportsmen's magazine in Boston, Massachusetts.

In 1853 Clemens began wandering as a journeyman printer to St. Louis, Missouri; Chicago, Illinois; New York, New York; and Philadelphia, Pennsylvania; settling briefly with his brother, Orion, in Iowa before setting out at twenty-two years old to make his fortune, he hoped, beside the lush banks of the Amazon River in South America. Instead, traveling down the Mississippi River, he became a steamboat river pilot until the outbreak of the Civil War (1861–65), when Northern forces clashed with those of the South over slavery and secession (the South's desire to leave the Union).

Western years

In 1861 Clemens traveled to Nevada, where he invested carelessly in timber and silver mining. He settled down to newspaper work in Virginia City, until his reckless pen and redheaded temper brought him into conflict with local authorities; it seemed profitable to escape to California. Meanwhile he had adopted the pen name of Mark Twain, a

riverman's term for water that is just safe enough for navigation.

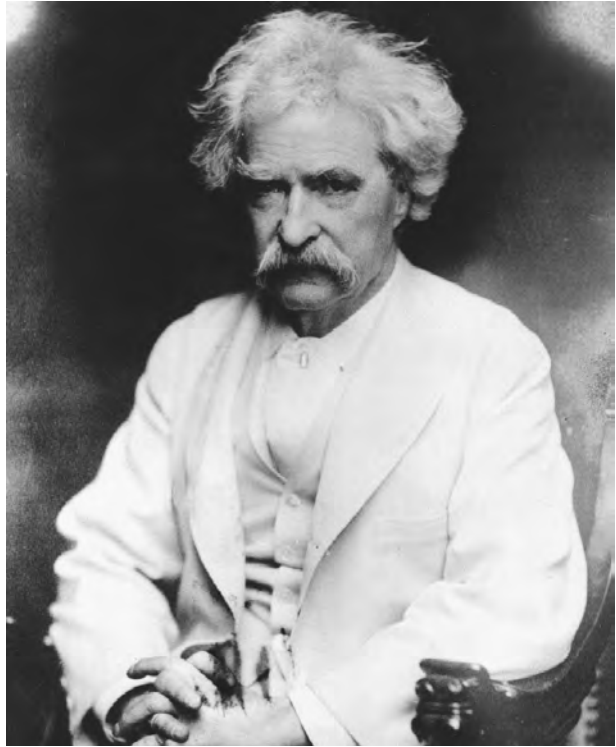
In 1865, Twain began to write a short story, *The Jumping Frog of Calaveras County*, which first brought him national attention. Most of his western writing was hastily, often carelessly, done and he later did little to preserve it.

Traveling correspondent

In 1865 the *Sacramento Union* commissioned Mark Twain to report on a new excursion service to Hawaii. His accounts as published in the newspaper provided the basis for his first successful lectures and years later were collected in *Letters from the Sandwich Islands* (1938) and *Letters from Honolulu* (1939). His travel accounts were so well received that he was contracted in 1866 to become a traveling correspondent for the *Alta California*; he would circle the globe, writing letters.

In 1870 Twain married Olivia Langdon. After a brief residence in upstate New York as an editor and part owner of the *Buffalo Express*, he moved to Hartford, Connecticut, where he lived for twenty years; there three daughters were born, and prosperity as a writer and lecturer (in England in 1872 and 1873) seemed guaranteed. *Roughing It* (1872) recounted Mark Twain's travels to Nevada and reprinted some of the Sandwich Island letters.

Meanwhile Mark Twain's account of steamboating experiences for the *Atlantic Monthly* (1875; expanded to *Life on the Mississippi*, 1883) captured the beauty, glamor, and danger of the Mississippi River. Boyhood memories of life beside that river were written into *The Adventures of Tom Sawyer* (1875), which immediately attracted young and old



Mark Twain.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

alike. With more exotic and foreign settings, *The Prince and the Pauper* (1882) and *A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court* (1889) attracted readers also, but *The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn* (1885), in which Mark Twain again returned to the river scenes he knew best, was considered unacceptable by many.

“Tom” and “Huck”

Twain's *Tom Sawyer*, better organized than *Huckleberry Finn*, is a narrative of innocent boyhood play that accidentally discovers evil as Tom and Huck witness a murder by Injun Joe in a graveyard at midnight. The boys run away, are thought dead, but turn up at their

own funeral. Tom and Huck decide to seek out the murderer and the reward offered for his capture. It is Tom and his sweetheart who, while lost in a cave, discover the hiding place of Injun Joe. Though the townspeople unwittingly seal the murderer in the cave, they close the entrance only to keep adventuresome boys like Tom out of future trouble. In the end, it is innocent play and boyish adventuring which really triumph.

Huckleberry Finn is considered by many to be Mark Twain's finest creation. Huck lacks Tom's imagination; he is a simple boy with little education. One measure of his character is a proneness to deceit, which seems instinctive, a trait shared by other wild things and relating him to nature—in opposition to Tom's tradition-grounded, book-learned, imaginative deceptions. *The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn*, a loosely strung series of adventures, can be viewed as the story of a quest for freedom and an escape from what society requires in exchange for success. Joined in flight by a black companion, Jim, who seeks freedom from slavery, Huck discovers that the Mississippi is peaceful (though he is found to be only partially correct) but that the world along its shores is full of trickery, including his own, and by cruelty and murder. When the raft on which he and Jim are floating down the river is invaded by two criminals, Huck first becomes their assistant in swindles but is finally the agent of their exposure.

Whatever its faults, Twain's *Huckleberry Finn* is a classic. Variouslly interpreted, it is often thought to suggest more than it reveals, speaking of what man has done to confuse himself about his right relation to nature. It can also be thought of as a treatment of man's

failures in dealing with his fellows and of the corruption that man's only escape is in flight, perhaps even from himself. Yet it is also an apparently artless story of adventure and escape so simply and directly told that novelist Ernest Hemingway (c.1899–1961) once said that all American literature begins with this book.

Last writings

After a series of unsuccessful business ventures in Europe, Twain returned to the United States in 1900. His writings grew increasingly bitter, especially after his wife's death in 1905. *The Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg* (1900) exposed corruption in a small, typical American town. *Eve's Diary* (1906), written partly in memory of his wife, showed a man saved from bungling only through the influence of a good woman.

In 1906 Twain began to dictate his autobiography to Albert B. Paine, recording scattered memories without any particular order. Portions from it were published in periodicals later that year. With the income from the excerpts of his autobiography, he built a large house in Redding, Connecticut, which he named Stormfield. There, after several trips to Bermuda to improve his declining health, he died on April 21, 1910.

For More Information

Kaplan, Justin. *Mr. Clemens and Mark Twain: A Biography*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1966.

Krauth, Leland. *Proper Mark Twain*. Athens: University of Georgia Press, 1999.

Paine, Albert Bigelow. *Mark Twain, A Biography: The Personal and Literary Life of*

Samuel Langhorne Clemens. New York: Harper & Bros., 1912. Reprint, Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1997.

Twain, Mark. *The Autobiography of Mark Twain*. New York: Harper, 1959. Reprint, New York: Perennial Classics, 2000.

Ward, Geoffrey C., and Dayton Duncan. *Mark Twain*. New York: Knopf, 2001.

Wecter, Dixon. *Sam Clemens of Hannibal*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1952. Reprint, New York: AMS Press, 1979.



JOHN UPDIKE

Born: March 18, 1932

Shillington, Pennsylvania

American author and poet

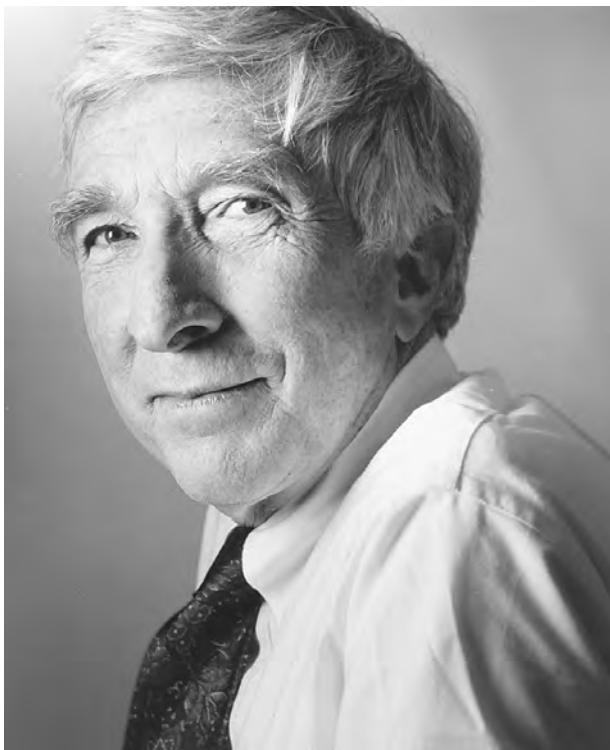
Author John Updike mirrored his America in poems, short stories, essays, and novels, especially the four-volume “Rabbit” series.

Early life

John Hoyer Updike was born on March 18, 1932, in Shillington, Pennsylvania. His

father, Wesley, was a high school mathematics teacher, the model for several sympathetic father figures in Updike’s early works. Because Updike’s mother, Linda Grace Hoyer Updike, had literary dreams of her own, books were a large part of the boy’s early life. A sickly child, Updike turned to reading and art as an escape. In high school, he worked on the school newspaper and excelled in academics and upon graduation was admitted into Harvard University in Cambridge, Massachusetts.

At the age of twenty-two, Updike began his writing career when he published his first story “Friends from Philadelphia,” in the *New Yorker* in 1954. Since childhood Updike had admired the *New Yorker* and always dreamed



John Updike.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

of becoming a cartoonist for the magazine. He majored in English at Harvard where he developed his skills as a graphic artist and cartoonist for the *Lampoon*, the college's humor magazine. In 1953, his junior year at Harvard, he married Mary Pennington, a Radcliffe art student. Upon graduation the following year, Updike and his bride went to London, England, where he had won a Knox fellowship (scholarship) for study at the Ruskin School of Drawing and Fine Art in Oxford, England.

Updike returned to the United States in 1955 and took a job as a staff writer at the

New Yorker at the invitation of famed editor E. B. White (1899–1985), achieving a life-long goal. But after two years and many “Talk of the Town” columns, he left New York City for Ipswich, Massachusetts, to devote himself full time to his own writing.

Twenty years of poetry

Updike began his remarkable career as a poet in 1958 by publishing his first volume, a collection of poems titled *The Carpentered Hen*. It is a book of light, amusing verse in the style of Ogden Nash (1902–1971) and Robert Service (1874–1958). The poetry possesses several styles shared by his fiction: careful attention to the sounds of words and of their meanings, the use of popular culture by identifying objects by familiar brand names, and the imitation of the popular press through advertising language.

Updike's output of light verse diminished with the publication of each succeeding volume of poems. His poetry has been collected in several volumes, among them *Telephone Poles and Other Poems* (1963); *Midpoint* (1969), which is a personal look at the midpoint of his life; and *Tossing and Turning* (1977), which some critics consider his finest collection of verse.

The “Rabbit” series and other novels

Although Updike's reputation rests on his complete body of work, he was first established as a major American writer upon the publication of his novel *Rabbit Run* (1960)—although at that date no one could have predicted the rich series of novels that would follow. It chronicled the life of Harry (Rabbit) Angstrom, creating as memorable an American character as any that appeared in

the twentieth century. Harry Angstrom's life peaked in high school where he was admired as a superb basketball player. But by the age of twenty-six he is washed up in a dead-end job, demonstrating gadgets in a dime store, living a disappointed and constricted life. His natural reaction to this problem is to "run" (as would his namesake). And he runs, fleeing his wife and family as though the salvation of his soul depends upon it. The climax of Rabbit's search results in tragedy, but it is to the credit of Updike's skill that great sympathy for a dislikable character is brought forth from readers.

The second novel in the series, *Rabbit Redux* (1971), takes up the story of Harry Angstrom ten years later at the age of thirty-six. Updike continues Rabbit's story against a background of current events. The novel begins on the day of the moon shot, when the first human walked on the moon. It is the late 1960s and the optimism of American technology is countered by the sour feelings towards race riots, antiwar protests, and the drug culture. His family is falling apart, mirroring the problems of the country at large. Rabbit finally overcomes his dismal situation and brings "outsiders" into his home, attempting to recreate his family.

The next book in the series is *Rabbit Is Rich* (1981), which won the 1982 Pulitzer Prize. Rabbit is forty-six and finally successful, selling Japanese fuel-efficient cars during the time of the oil crisis in the 1970s. In this novel Rabbit's son Nelson's failure becomes the counterweight to Rabbit's success.

Rabbit at Rest (1990) brings Rabbit into the 1980s to confront an even grimmer set of problems: acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS; an incurable disease that

attacks the immune system), cocaine addiction, and terrorism. Rabbit suffers a heart attack and is haunted by ghosts of his past. Death looms ever larger. In these four novels an insignificant life presses and insists itself upon our consciousness, and we realize that this life has become the story of our common American experience recorded over three decades.

Other works

Updike wrote many other major novels, including *The Centaur* (1963), *Couples* (1965), *A Month of Sundays* (1975), *The Witches of Eastwick* (1984), *Brazil* (1993), and *Bech at Bay* (1998). Updike was also the author of several volumes of short stories, among them *Pigeon Feathers* (1962), *The Music School* (1966), *Bech: A Book* (1970), *Museums and Women* (1972), and *Bech Is Back* (1982).

In 1999 Updike published *More Matter: Essays and Criticism*, a collection of occasional pieces, reviews, speeches, and some personal reflection. On February 27, 2000, his novel *Gertrude and Claudius* was published by Knopf. The book was based on William Shakespeare's (1564–1616) play *Hamlet*.

Updike has been honored throughout his career: twice he received the National Book Critics Circle Award and the Pulitzer Prize. He also received the American Book Award and was elected to the American Academy of Arts and Letters. Updike has been one of the most productive American authors of his time, leading even his most dedicated fans to confess, as Sean French did in *New Statesman and Society*, "Updike can write faster than I can read."

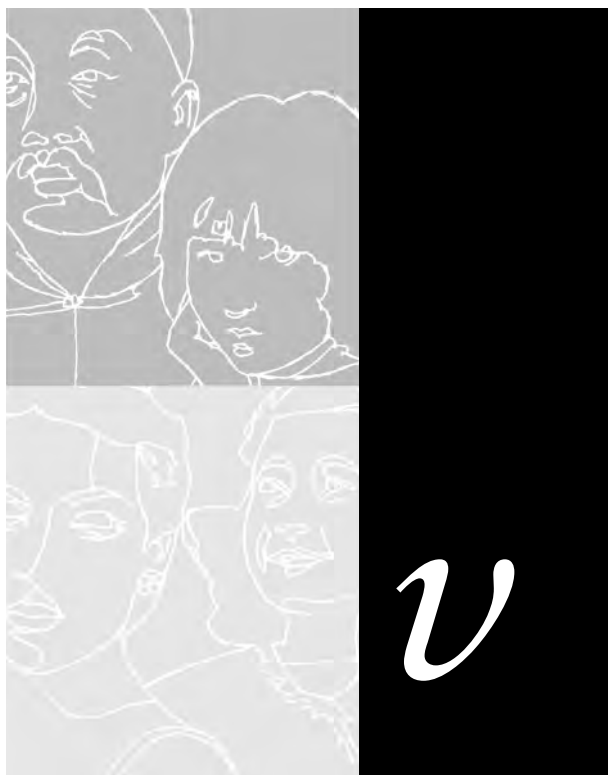
For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *John Updike*. Broomall, PA: Chelsea House, 1987.

De Bellis, Jack. *The John Updike Encyclopedia*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 2000.

Schiff, James A. *John Updike Revisited*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1998.

Updike, John. *Self-Consciousness: Memoirs*. New York: Knopf, 1989.



VINCENT VAN GOGH

Born: March 30, 1853
Groot-Zundert, Holland
Died: July 29, 1890
Auvers, France
Dutch painter

Vincent Van Gogh was a Dutch painter whose formal distortions and humanistic concerns made him a major pioneer of twentieth-century expressionism, an artistic movement that emphasized expression of the artist's experience.

Childhood

Born on March 30, 1853, at Groot-Zundert in the province of Brabant, Holland, Vincent Willem Van Gogh was the son of a Protestant minister, Theodorus Van Gogh. Exactly a year before his birth, his mother, Cornelia, gave birth to an infant, also named Vincent, who was stillborn, or dead upon birth. His grieving parents buried the child and set up a tombstone to mark the grave. As a result, Vincent Van Gogh grew up near the haunting sight of a grave with his own name upon it. His mother later gave birth to Theo, his younger brother, and three younger sisters. Not much is known about Van Gogh's earlier education, but he did receive some encouragement from his mother to draw and

paint. As a teenager he drew and painted regularly.

Van Gogh's uncle was a partner in Goupil and Company, art dealers. Vincent entered the firm at the age of sixteen and remained there for six years. He served the firm first in The Hague, the political seat of the Netherlands, and then in London, England, where he fell in love with his landlady's daughter, who rejected him. Later he worked for Goupil's branch in Paris, France.

Because of Van Gogh's unpleasant attitude, Goupil dismissed him in 1876. That year he returned to England, worked at a small school at Ramsgate, and did some preaching. In early 1877 he clerked in a bookshop in Dordrecht. Then, convinced that the ministry ought to be his calling, he joined a religious seminary in Brussels, Belgium. He left three months later to become an evangelist (a preacher) in a poor mining section of Belgium, the Borinage. Van Gogh exhibited the necessary dedication, even giving away his clothes, but his odd behavior kept the miners at a distance. Once again, in July 1879, he found himself dismissed from a job. This period was a dark one for Van Gogh. He wished to give himself to others but was constantly being rejected.

In 1880, after much soul searching, Van Gogh decided to devote his life to art, a profession he accepted as a spiritual calling. When in London he had visited museums, and he had drawn a little while in the Borinage. In October 1880 he attended an art school in Brussels, where he studied the basics of perspective (representing three-dimensional objects on a two-dimensional surface) and anatomy (the human body). From April to December 1881 he stayed with

his parents, who were then in Etten, and continued to work on his art. At this time, too, he studied at the academic art school at The Hague, where his cousin Anton Mauve taught.

Dutch period

During Van Gogh's Dutch period (1880–1886) he created works in which his overriding concerns for his fellow man were growing. His subjects were poor people, miners, peasants, and inhabitants of almshouses, or houses for the poor. Among his favorite painters at this time were Jean François Millet (1814–1875), Rembrandt (1606–1669), and Honoré Daumier (1808–1879). Complementing Van Gogh's dreary subject matter of this time were his colors, dark brownish and greenish shades. The masterpiece of Van Gogh's Dutch period is the *Potato Eaters* (1885), a night scene in which peasants sit at their meal around a table.

Van Gogh decided to go to Paris in early 1886, partially because he was drawn to the simple and artistic life of the French city. His younger brother, Theo, was living in Paris, where he directed a small gallery maintained by Goupil and Company. Theo had supported Vincent financially and emotionally from the time he decided to become a painter, and would continue to do so throughout his life. The letters between the brothers are among the most moving documents in all the history of Western art. Vincent shared Theo's apartment and studied at an art school run by the traditional painter Fernand Cormon, where he met Émile Bernard (1868–1941) and Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec (1864–1901), who became his friends.

By now Van Gogh was largely under the influence of the impressionists, a style of painting where the artist concentrates on the immediate impression of a scene by the use of light and color. Especially influenced by Camille Pissarro (1830–1903), Van Gogh was persuaded to give up the gloomy tones of his Dutch period for bright, high-keyed colors. Also, his subject matter changed from the world of peasants to a typically impressionistic subject matter, such as cafés and cityscapes around Montmartre, an area of northern Paris. He also copied Japanese prints. While subjects and handling were obviously taken from impressionism, there frequently could be detected a certain sad quality, as in a scene of *Montmartre* (1886), where pedestrians are pushed to the outer sides of an open square.

Stay at Arles

Longing for a place of light and warmth, and tired of being entirely financially dependent on Theo, Van Gogh left for Arles in southern France in February 1888. The pleasant country about Arles and the warmth of the place restored Van Gogh to health. In his fifteen months there he painted over two hundred pictures. At this time he applied color in simplified, highly dense masses, his drawing became more energetic and confused than ever before, and objects seemed to radiate a light of their own without giving off shadows. During this period he also turned to painting portraits and executed several self-portraits. Among the masterpieces of his Arles period are the *Fishing Boats on the Beach at Saintes-Maries* (June 1888); the *Night Café* (September); and the *Artist's Bedroom at Arles* (October).

At Arles Van Gogh suffered fainting spells and seizures (involuntary muscle



Vincent Van Gogh.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

spasms). The local population began to turn against him as well. Paul Gauguin (1848–1903), responding to his invitation, visited him in October 1888, but the two men quarreled violently. Gauguin left for Paris. Van Gogh, in a fit of remorse and anger, cut off his ear. On May 9, 1889, he asked to be admitted to the asylum at Saint-Rémy-de-Provence, a hospital for the mentally ill.

Production at Saint-Rémy

In the year Van Gogh spent at the asylum he worked as much as he had at Arles, producing 150 paintings and hundreds of drawings. Van Gogh suffered several attacks but

was completely peaceful in between. At this time he received his first critical praise (a good review), an article by the writer Albert Aurier.

During Van Gogh's stay at Saint-Rémy, his art changed markedly. His colors lost the intensity of the Arles period: yellows became coppers; reds verged toward brownish tones. His lines became restless. He applied the paint more violently with thicker impasto, the application of thick layers. Van Gogh was drawn to objects in nature under stress: whirling suns, twisted cypress trees, and surging mountains. In *Starry Night* (1889) the whole world seems engulfed by circular movements.

Van Gogh went to Paris on May 17, 1890, to visit his brother. On the advice of Pissarro, Theo had Vincent go to Auvers, just outside Paris, to submit to the care of Dr. Paul Gachet, an amateur painter and a friend of Pissarro and Paul Cézanne (1839–1906).

Last year at Auvers

Van Gogh arrived at Auvers on May 21, 1890. He painted a portrait of Dr. Gachet and portraits of his daughters, as well as the *Church of Auvers*. The blue of the Auvers period was not the full blue of Arles but a more mysterious, flickering blue. In his last painting, the *Cornfield with Crows*, Van Gogh showed a topsy-turvy world. The spectator himself becomes the object of perspective, and it is toward him that the crows appear to be flying.

At first Van Gogh felt relieved at Auvers, but toward the end of June he experienced fits of temper and often quarreled with Gachet. On July 27, 1890, he shot himself in a lonely field and died the morning of July 29, 1890.

For More Information

- Arnold, Wilfred Niels. *Vincent Van Gogh: Chemicals, Crises, and Creativity*. Boston: Birkhäuser, 1992.
- Greenberg, Jan. *Vincent Van Gogh: Portrait of an Artist*. New York: Delacorte Press, 2001.
- Hammacher, Abraham M. *Genius and Disaster: The Ten Creative Years of Vincent Van Gogh*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1968.
- Isom, Joan Shaddox. *The First Starry Night*. Dallas: Whispering Coyote Press, 1997.
- Lubin, Albert J. *Stranger on the Earth: A Psychological Biography of Vincent Van Gogh*. New York: Da Capo Press, 1996.
- Metzger, Rainer, and Ingo F. Walther. *Vincent Van Gogh: 1853–1890*. New York: Taschen, 1998.
- Schapiro, Meyer. *Vincent Van Gogh*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1980.

JAN VERMEER

Born: October 30, 1632

Delft, Netherlands

Died: December 15, 1675

Delft, Netherlands

Dutch painter

The Dutch painter Jan Vermeer of Delft transformed traditional Dutch themes into images of fantastic poise and peace, rich with symbolic meaning.

Mysterious childhood

The documented facts about Jan Vermeer's life are few. He was born on October 30 or 31, 1632, in Delft, Netherlands, the second of two children to Digna Baltens and Reynier Jansz. His father was an art dealer and silk weaver who also kept a tavern, and Vermeer probably took over the business after his father's death in 1655. It is presumed that his father, who was actively involved with the local artists and collectors, was an early influence on the young child. Vermeer supposedly began his training as an artist around the mid-1640s.

In 1653 Vermeer married a well-to-do Catholic girl from Gouda; they had eleven children. In the year of his marriage he became a master in the Delft painters' guild (an association), of which he was an officer from 1662 to 1663, and again, from 1669 to 1670. He seems to have painted very little and to have sold only a fraction of his limited production, for the majority of his paintings were still in the hands of his family when he died. His dealings in works by other artists seem to have supported his family reasonably well until he was financially ruined following the French invasion of 1672, when France invaded the Spanish Netherlands. He died in 1675 and was buried on December 15. The following year his wife was forced to declare bankruptcy.

Nothing is known about where Vermeer was educated and trained as a painter. In part because verses written following the death of Carel Fabritius (1622–1654) in 1654 mention Vermeer as his successor as Delft's leading artist, it has been suggested that Fabritius was Vermeer's teacher. Certainly Fabritius helped develop Vermeer's interest in perspective experiments (experiments with depth)



Jan Vermeer.

Reproduced by permission of the Bridgeman Art Library.

and his use of a light-flooded wall as a background for figures. But Fabritius lived in Delft only after 1650, by which time Vermeer would have been well on his way toward the completion of his training.

Early works

The warm colors of *The Procuress* relate it to paintings of the Rembrandt school (styled after the painter Rembrandt [1606–1669]) of the 1650s, but its subject matter and composition reflect influence by paintings of the 1620s by the Utrecht Caravaggists, a group of painters in Utrecht, Netherlands, who stressed a new, international style. Considered

to be earlier than *The Procuress* are two pictures that resemble it because of the color scheme, dominated by reds and yellows, and because they are larger in size and scale than Vermeer's later works. *Christ in the House of Martha and Mary* is similar to compositions by Hendrick Terbrugghen (1588–1629) and Gerrit van Honthorst (1590–1656), who spread the Caravaggesque (having to do with the painting style of Italian painter Caravaggio [c. 1571–1610]) style in Holland. *Diana and Her Companions*, Vermeer's only mythological subject, is also suggestive of Italy. It is his only painting of figures in a landscape setting.

After these three diverse experiments, which may have owed something to Vermeer's familiarity with works in his father's stock of art, he painted the *Girl Asleep at a Table*, in which he used the warm range of colors of his other early pictures but in terms of subject matter and composition plunged into the mainstream of current Delft painting.

The Soldier and Laughing Girl, marked the shift between Vermeer's early and mature works in that pointillé (gleaming highlights of thick layers of paint, which brightens the surface) appeared for the first time.

Mature period

Vermeer's style just before 1660 is also well represented by *The Cook*. The rich paint surface with its extraordinary quality, the monumental figure perfectly balanced in space and involved in a humble task, and the intense colors dominated by yellow and blue all show Vermeer at the height of his powers.

Following these works, which are assumed to have immediately followed 1660, come the "pearl pictures." *The Concert* of about 1662 and the *Woman with a Water Jug*

of perhaps a year later display the pleasing charms of this period.

More complicated compositions and especially larger space representations mark the major works of the last decade of Vermeer's life. The *Allegory of the Art of Painting* (c.1670) is large and complex in both composition and meaning. On the whole it is not influenced by the hardness and dryness that weakened his later works, such as the *Allegory of the Catholic Faith*.

The quietness, peacefulness, order, and unchanging world of Vermeer's art provide hints of immortality, or the idea that one cannot be affected by death. Perhaps that is why this painter, whose works appear to be as clear as the light of day, has always been thought to be mysterious.

For More Information

Gowing, Lawrence. *Vermeer*. New York: Harper & Row, 1970.

Larsen, Erik. *Jan Vermeer*. New York: Smithsonian, 1998.

Wheelock, Arthur K., Jr. *Jan Vermeer*. New York: Abrams, 1981.

Wheelock, Arthur K. *Vermeer & the Art of Painting*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1995.

**JULES
VERNE**

Born: February 8, 1828

Nantes, France

Died: March 24, 1905

Amiens, France

French novelist and writer

The French novelist Jules Verne was the first authentic writer of modern science fiction. The best of his works, such as *Twenty Thousand Leagues Under the Sea* and *Journey to the Center of the Earth*, are characterized by his intelligent foresight into the technical achievements that are within man's grasp.

Early life

Jules Gabriel Verne was born on February 8, 1828, in Nantes, France, the eldest son of a prosperous lawyer, Pierre Verne, and his wife Sophie. Raised in a middle-class family, Jules despised his parents' constant drive to achieve middle-class respectability. Always rebellious but unsuccessful, Verne learned to escape into his own world of imagination. These feelings would show up in many of Verne's works as an adult.

An otherwise uneventful childhood was marked by one major event. In his twelfth year, Jules worked as a cabin boy on an ocean-going ship. The ship was intercepted by his father before it went to sea, and Jules is said to have promised his parents that in the future he "would travel only in imagination"—a prediction fulfilled in a manner his parents could not have imagined.

Career as a playwright

In 1847 Verne went to Paris, France, to study law, although privately he was already planning a literary career. Owing to the friendship he made with French author Alexandre Dumas the Elder (1802–1870), Verne's first play, *Broken Straws*, was produced—with some success—in 1850. From 1852 to 1855 he held a steady and low-pay-



Jules Verne.

ing position as secretary of a Paris theater, the Théâtre Lyrique. He continued to write comedies and operettas and began contributing short stories to a popular magazine, *Le Musée des familles*.

During a visit to Amiens, France, in May 1856, Verne met and fell in love with the widowed daughter of an army officer, Madame Morel (née Honorine de Viane), whom he married the following January. The circumstance that his wife's brother was a stockbroker may have influenced Verne in making the unexpected decision to embrace this profession. Membership in the Paris Exchange did not seriously interfere with his literary labors,

however, because he adopted a rigorous timetable, rising at five o'clock in order to put in several hours researching and writing before beginning his day's work at the Bourse.

First novels

Verne's first long work of fiction, *Five Weeks in a Balloon*, took the form of an account of a journey by air over central Africa, at that time largely unexplored. The book, published in January 1863, was an immediate success. He then decided to retire from stockbroking and to devote himself full time to writing.

Verne's next few books were immensely successful at the time and are still counted among the best he wrote. *A Journey to the Center of the Earth* (1864) describes the adventures of a party of explorers and scientists who descend the crater of an Icelandic volcano and discover an underground world. *The Adventures of Captain Hatteras* (1866) centers on an expedition to the North Pole (not actually reached by Robert Peary until 1909). In *From the Earth to the Moon* (1865) and its sequel, *Round the Moon* (1870), Verne describes how two adventurous Americans—joined, naturally, by a Frenchman—arrange to be fired in a hollow projectile from a gigantic cannon that lifts them out of Earth's gravity field and takes them close to the moon. Verne not only pictured the state of weightlessness his "astronauts" experienced during their flight, but also he had the vision to locate their launching site in Florida, where nearly all of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration's (NASA) space launches take place today.

Later works

Verne wrote his two masterpieces when he was in his forties. *Twenty Thousand Leagues*

Under the Sea (1870) relates the voyages of the submarine *Nautilus*, built and commanded by the mysterious Captain Nemo, one of the literary figures in whom Verne incorporated many of his own character traits. *Around the World in Eighty Days* (1873) is the story of a successful bet made by a typical Englishman, Phineas Fogg, a character said to have been modeled on Verne's father, who had a mania for punctuality, or the art of timeliness.

Other popular novels include *The Mysterious Island* (1875) and *Michael Strogoff* (1876). Verne's total literary output comprised nearly eighty books, but many of them are of little value or interest today. One noteworthy feature of all his work is its moral idealism, which earned him in 1884 the personal congratulations of Pope Leo XIII (1810–1903). "If I am not always what I ought to be," Verne once wrote, "my characters will be what I should like to be." His interest in scientific progress was balanced by his religious faith, and in some of his later novels (such as *The Purchase of the North Pole*, 1889), he showed himself to be aware of the social dangers of uncontrolled technological advance.

Verne the man

Verne's personality was complex. Though capable of bouts of extreme liveliness and given to joking and playing practical jokes, he was basically a shy man, happiest when alone in his study or when sailing the English Channel in a converted fishing boat.

In 1886 Verne was the victim of a shooting accident, which left him disabled. The man that shot him proved to be a nephew who was suffering from mental instability.

This incident served to reinforce Verne's natural tendency toward depression. Although he served on the city council of Amiens two years later, he spent his old age in retirement. In 1902 he became partially blind and he died on March 24, 1905 in Amiens.

For More Information

- Costello, Peter. *Jules Verne: Inventor of Science Fiction*. London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1978.
- Evans, I. O. *Jules Verne and His Work*. New York: Twayne, 1966. Reprint, Mattituck, NY: Aeonian Press, 1976.
- Jules-Verne, Jean. *Jules Verne: A Biography*. New York: Taplinger Publishing Company, 1976.
- Lottman, Herbert R. *Jules Verne: An Exploratory Biography*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1996.
- Lynch, Lawrence W. *Jules Verne*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1992.
- Teeters, Peggy. *Jules Verne: The Man Who Invented Tomorrow*. New York: Walker and Company, 1993.

AMERIGO VESPUCCI

Born: March 9, 1451

Florence, Italy

Died: February 22, 1512

Seville, Spain

Italian navigator

A Florentine navigator and pilot major of Castile, Spain, Amerigo Vespucci, for whom America is named, played a major part in exploring the New World.

Childhood

The father of Amerigo Vespucci was Nastagio Vespucci, and his uncle was the learned Dominican Giorgio Antonio Vespucci, who had charge of Amerigo's education. The entire family was cultured and friendly with the Medici rulers of Florence, a family that ruled Italy from the 1400s to 1737. Domenico Ghirlandaio (1449–1494) painted Amerigo in a family portrait when the youth was about nineteen. However, the explorer had reached his forties by the time he began his voyage to America, so Ghirlandaio's painting shows only an approximate idea of Vespucci's mature appearance.

It is known that Vespucci visited France, in his uncle's company, when he was about twenty-four years old, and that his father intended for him a business career. He did get involved in business, first in Florence and then in Seville, Spain, in a bank. Later, in Seville, he entered a partnership with a fellow Florentine, Gianetto Berardi, and this lasted until Berardi's death at the end of 1495.

Meanwhile, Christopher Columbus (1451–1506) had made his first two voyages to the West Indies, and he returned from the second in June 1496. At this time, he and Vespucci met and talked, and Amerigo appears to have been doubtful of Columbus's belief that he had already reached the outskirts of Asia. Moreover, Vespucci's curiosity about the new lands had been aroused, together with a determination—though no longer young—to see them himself.



Amerigo Vespucci.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

First voyage

According to a controversial letter, Vespucci embarked from Cadiz, Spain, in a Spanish fleet on May 10, 1497. Serious doubts have been raised about the letter's authenticity (based on fact), because dates in the letter do not coordinate with authenticated events, and because the voyage, if made, presents serious geographical problems and seems to have passed unnoticed by the cartographers (mapmakers) and historians of the time.

If the letter is real, the ships passed through the West Indies—sighting no islands—and in thirty-seven days reached the

mainland somewhere in Central America. This would predate Columbus's discovery of the mainland of Venezuela by a year. On their return to Spain, Vespucci's men discovered the inhabited island of "Iti," identified by some as Bermuda. However, by 1522 the Bermudas were unpopulated. The expedition returned to Cadiz in October 1498.

Vespucci, in all probability, voyaged to America at the time noted, but he did not have command and as yet had had no practical experience piloting a ship. Inexperience could explain many of the errors in the letter, but the strong likelihood remains that the letter was altered.

In 1499 Vespucci sailed again, and this time there is proof of the expedition besides his own letters. His education had included mathematics, and he had surely learned a great deal from his first crossing. From Cadiz, they first dropped to the Cape Verde Islands and then divided forces in the Atlantic. Vespucci explored to Cape Santo Agostinho, at the shoulder of Brazil, after which he coasted westward past the Maracaibo Gulf. This may have been the first expedition to touch Brazil as well as the first to cross the Equator in New World waters. During these travels, Vespucci probably discovered the mouth of the Amazon River.

A new world

Two years later Amerigo went on his most important voyage, this time for King Manuel I (1469–1521) to Brazil. Vespucci, having already been to the Brazilian shoulder, seemed the person best qualified to go as an observer with the new expedition. Vespucci did not command at the start but ultimately took charge at the request of the Portuguese officers.

This voyage traced the South American coast from a point above Cape São Roque to Patagonia. Among the important discoveries were Guanabara Bay (Rio de Janeiro) and the Rio de la Plata, which soon began to appear on maps as Rio Jordán. The expedition returned by way of Sierra Leone and the Azores, and Vespucci, in a letter to Florence, called South America *Mundus Novus* (New World).

In 1503 Amerigo sailed in Portuguese service again to Brazil, but this expedition failed to make new discoveries. The fleet broke up, the Portuguese commander's ship disappeared, and Vespucci could proceed only a little past Bahia before returning to Lisbon, Portugal, in 1504. He never sailed again.

Vespucci's legacy

In 1507 a group of scholars at St-Dié in Lorraine brought out a book of geography entitled "Cosmographiae introductio." One of the authors, Martin Waldseemüller, suggested the name America, especially for the Brazilian part of the New World, in honor of "the illustrious man who discovered it." After some debate, the name was eventually adopted.

During his last years, Amerigo held the office of pilot major, and it became his duty to train pilots, examine them for ability in their craft, and collect data regarding New World navigation. He remained pilot major until his death on February 22, 1512, a month short of his fifty-eighth birthday.

For More Information

Arciniegas, Germán. *Amerigo and the New World: The Life and Times of Amerigo*

Vespucci. New York: Knopf, 1955. Reprint, New York: Octagon Books, 1978.

Baker, Nina Brown. *Amerigo Vespucci*. New York: Knopf, 1956.

Donaldson-Forbes, Jeff. *Amerigo Vespucci*. New York: PowerKids Press, 2002.

Fradin, Dennis Brindell. *Amerigo Vespucci*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1991.

Pohl, Frederick Julius. *Amerigo Vespucci, Pilot Major*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1944, revised edition 1966.

Swan, Barry. *Amerigo Vespucci*. Wembly, Middlesex, England: Valley Press, 1998.

VICTORIA

Born: May 24, 1819

London, England

Died: January 22, 1901

Isle of Wight, England

English queen

Victoria was queen of Great Britain and Ireland from 1837 to 1901 and empress of India from 1876 to 1901. During her reign, England grew into an empire of 4 million square miles and 124 million people. As queen, she saw slavery end in the colonies, saw her country undertake successful wars in the Crimea, Egypt, the Sudan, and South Africa, acquired the Suez Canal, and established constitutions in Australia and Canada.



Victoria.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Early life and the throne

Alexandrina Victoria was born in Kensington Palace, London, on May 24, 1819. She was the only child of Edward, Duke of Kent (1767–1820), by Mary Louis Victoria (1786–1861). Her father died when she was very young and her early years were disrupted by family arguments. She grew up under her mother's care and that of Louisa Lehzen, her German governess. The education Victoria received from Lehzen was limited, and she spoke only German until she was three years old.

From 1832 Victoria's mother took her on extended tours through England. On May 24,

1837, she came of age, and on June 20, after the death of her uncle William IV (1765–1837), she inherited the throne. Her chief advisers at first were Prime Minister Lord Melbourne, a Whig (or a member of the liberal political party), and Baron Stockmar, a German sent to London by her uncle King Leopold of the Belgians as adviser to his eighteen-year-old niece. On June 28, 1838, her coronation (crowning ceremony) took place.

In October her first cousin Albert Edward (1819–1861) of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, came to London. Victoria fell in love with him instantly, proposed to him, and they were married on February 10, 1840. It was a happy marriage and restored the influence of the Crown, which had weakened during the reigns of those that ruled before her. Prince Albert was granted a thirty-thousand-pound annual income by Parliament, the governing body of Great Britain. He also was named regent (acting ruler) in the event of the queen's death in childbirth, and in 1857 was made Prince Consort by Victoria.

In June 1842 Victoria made her first railway journey from Slough, the station nearest Windsor Castle, to Paddington, and in that same year she first went to Scotland, traveling by sea. In 1843 Victoria and Albert visited King Louis Philippe (1773–c.1850). She was the first English monarch to land in France since Henry VIII (1491–1547) visited Francis I (1494–1547) in 1520. King Louis Philippe's return visit was the first voluntary visit to England of any French ruler. In 1845 Victoria, with Albert, made the first of many trips to Germany, staying at Albert's birthplace, Rosenau.

Queen of England

In 1844 Queen Victoria had Osborne Palace built for her on the Isle of Wight and

in 1848 Balmoral Castle in Scotland. Until the end of her life she spent part of each spring and fall in these places. In 1851 she and Prince Albert were much occupied with the Great Exhibition, a world's fair held in London and the first of its kind.

In 1856 Victoria and Albert visited Napoleon III (1808–1873) in Paris, and in 1857 the Indian Mutiny against British rule in India led to Victoria's writing that there now existed in England "a universal feeling that India [should] belong to me." In 1858 the British charter that opened trade with Asia, known as the East India Company, was dismantled. That same year Victoria's eldest child, Victoria, married Prince (later Emperor) Frederick of Prussia (today known as Germany). In March 1861 Victoria's mother died, and her eldest son, Albert Edward, while in camp in the Curragh in Ireland, had an affair with an actress called Nelly Clifden. The affair worried Victoria and Albert, who were planning his marriage to Princess Alexandra of Denmark. Meanwhile, Albert was suffering from typhoid fever, a terrible disease that causes fever and other symptoms and is easily spread, and died on December 14, 1861, at the age of forty-two.

In 1862 Victoria's daughter Alice married Prince Louis of Hesse, and a year later her eldest son, the Prince of Wales, married Princess Alexandra of Denmark. Victoria supported Prussia during its war with Denmark over Schleswig-Holstein (a state in northwest Germany) and she approved Russia's brutal crushing of Poland's national uprising in 1863. In 1865 in the Seven Weeks War between Prussia and Austria, Victoria was again pro-Prussian. In 1867 Victoria entertained the Khedive of Egypt and the Sultan of Turkey.

In the Franco-Prussian War of 1870 between France and Prussia, Victoria was still pro-Prussian, though she welcomed the French empress Eugénie and allowed her and the emperor to live at Chislehurst. In 1873 Prime Minister William Gladstone (1809–1898) resigned, and in 1874, to Victoria's delight, Benjamin Disraeli (1804–1881) became prime minister, the chief advisor to the throne. He called the plump, tiny queen "The Faery" and admitted he loved her. That same year Victoria's son Prince Alfred married Marie, daughter of the Russian czar (king), who insisted she be called "Imperial," not "Royal Highness." This encouraged Victoria to look into officially assuming the title "Empress of India," which she did on May 1, 1876.

In 1875 Disraeli bought the majority of the Suez Canal, a key waterway for trade in the Mediterranean Sea, from the bankrupt Khedive of Egypt. That same year Gladstone roused the country with stories of "Bulgarian atrocities" where twelve thousand Bulgarian Christians had been murdered by the Turks. In 1877 Russia declared war on Turkey; Victoria and Disraeli were pro-Turk, sending a private warning to the czar of Russia that, were he to advance, Britain would join in the fight against Russia. In 1878 at the Congress of Berlin, Disraeli obtained, as he told Victoria, "peace with honour."

Last years

In 1887 Victoria's golden jubilee (fifty years in power) was celebrated, and ten years later, her diamond jubilee (sixty years in power) was magnificently celebrated. In 1899 the Boer War broke out, where British soldiers fought against Dutch forces in South Africa. In 1900 Victoria went to Ireland,

where most of the soldiers who fought on the British side were recruited. In August she signed the Australian Commonwealth Bill, bringing Australia in the British Empire, and in October lost a grandson in the war.

On January 22, 1901, Queen Victoria died. At sixty-three years, Queen Victoria enjoyed the longest reign in British history. During her reign the British crown was no longer powerful but remained very influential. The Victorian age witnessed the birth of the modern world through industry, scientific discovery, and the expansion of the British empire. Her reign also witnessed the beginnings of pollution, unemployment, and other problems that would plague the twentieth century.

For More Information

Erickson, Carolly. *Her Little Majesty: The Life of Queen Victoria*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1997.

Hibbert, Christopher. *Queen Victoria: A Personal History*. New York: Basic Books, 2000.

Rennell, Tony. *Last Days of Glory: The Death of Queen Victoria*. New York: Viking, 2000.

Vallone, Lynne. *Becoming Victoria*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2001.

Weintraub, Stanley. *Victoria: An Intimate Biography*. New York: Dutton, 1987.

GORE VIDAL

Born: October 3, 1925

West Point, New York

American writer

Gore Vidal is one of America's most important literary figures on the basis of an enormous quantity of work, including novels, essays, plays, and short stories.

Influenced by politics

Eugene Luther Gore Vidal was born into a family long important in American politics on October 3, 1925, in West Point, New York. His maternal grandfather was Thomas P. Gore, senator from Oklahoma; his father, Eugene Luther Vidal, was director of air commerce under President Franklin D. Roosevelt (1882–1945); and he is distantly related to Albert Gore (1948–), vice president of the United States in the administration of President Bill Clinton (1946–). Although Vidal was never close to his mother, Nina, he had to live with her after his parent's divorce in 1935. As a child Vidal spent long hours in his grandfather's vast library. There young Vidal began to develop his love of literature and history.

The importance of politics in Vidal's life is obvious from his statement, "The only thing I've ever really wanted in my life was to be president." But Vidal did more than talk: he was the Democratic Party candidate for Congress from New York's 29th District (Duchess County) in 1960; he served in the President's Advisory Committee on the Arts under John F. Kennedy (1917–1963) from 1961 to 1963; he was a cofounder of the New Party, backing Senator Eugene McCarthy (1916–), from 1968 to 1971; he was cochairman and secretary of state-designate of the People's Party in the period 1970–1972; and he ran unsuccessfully for the nomination as the Democratic Party's senatorial candidate in California in 1982.

Literature wins over politics

Although always involved in politics, Vidal was a central figure in literature after 1946. In that year, while working as an editor at E. P. Dutton, he published his first novel, *Williwaw*, based on his service during the last years of World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers: Germany, Japan, and Italy—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States).

After the poorly received *In a Yellow Wood* in 1947, Vidal had his first best-seller with *The City and the Pillar*, a successful but scandalous novel about a homosexual (a person sexually attracted to a member of their own sex). Although many critics termed it groundbreaking because the hero is an all-American youth, its tragic ending is rather conventional for its time. It may or may not be coincidence that his next five novels were negatively reviewed and were all commercial failures.

In 1954 Vidal developed what he called his five-year plan—that is, to go to Hollywood, write for films and television, and make enough money to be financially independent for the rest of his life. Between 1956 and 1970 he wrote or collaborated on seven screenplays, including the film version of Tennessee Williams's (1911–1983) *Suddenly Last Summer*, on which he worked with the playwright in 1959. Between 1954 and 1960 he also completed fifteen television plays.

Returns to the novel

After the novel *Washington, D.C.*, in 1967, he wrote another novel, *Myra Brecken-*



Gore Vidal.

Reproduced by permission of the Kobal Collection.

ridge (1968), the saga of a homosexual male converted into a female via a sex change operation, called by Nat Hentoff in the *Village Voice*, “the first popular book of perverse pornography.” After a long stay on the best-seller lists, it was made into a movie.

Two Sisters (1970) was followed by ten novels, a number of them about politics. They were *Burr* (1973), *Myron* (1974), *1876* (1976), *Kalki* (1978), *Creation* (1981), *Duluth* (1983), *Lincoln* (1984), *Empire* (1987), *Hollywood* (1990), *The Smithsonian Institution* (1998), and *The American Presidency* (1998), the text of Vidal's three-part British television series.

Fame as a critic

While the general public enjoyed Vidal as a novelist, more sophisticated readers and the critics praised him more for his essays, many of which had appeared first in periodicals, published between 1962 and 1993. *The Second American Revolution* (1982) won the National Book Critics Circle Award for Criticism in 1982 and *United States* won the National Book Award in Nonfiction in 1993.

Continuing with literary nonfiction, Vidal released a critically successful memoir in 1995, *Palimpsest: A Memoir*. In it he reflected upon a life peopled with such interesting friends and acquaintances as his relative Jackie Kennedy (1929–1994), President John F. Kennedy (1917–1963), and many others he mixed with in the literary and political scene. In 2000, Vidal's novel *The Golden Age* was published.

In May 2000, Vidal gained controversy by announcing plans to attend the execution of Timothy McVeigh, who was convicted of masterminding the bombing of a federal office building in Oklahoma City, Oklahoma, in 1995, resulting in the deaths of 169 people. Due to scheduling conflicts, Vidal was unable to attend.

For More Information

Baker, Susan, and Curtis S. Gibson. *Gore Vidal: A Critical Companion*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1997.

Kaplan, Fred. *Gore Vidal: A Biography*. New York: Doubleday, 1999.

Kiernan, Robert F. *Gore Vidal*. New York: F. Ungar Publishing Company, 1982.

Vidal, Gore. *Palimpsest: A Memoir*. New York: Random House, 1995.

Born: October 15, 70 B.C.E.

Andes, Italy

Died: September 21, 19 B.C.E.

Brundisium, Italy

Roman poet

Virgil, or Publius Vergilius Maro, is regarded as one of the greatest Roman poets. The Romans regarded his *Aeneid*, published two years after his death, as their national epic (a long poem centered around a legendary hero).

Early years and education

Virgil was born on October 15, 70 B.C.E., at Andes near Mantua in Cisalpine Gaul (modern Mantova, 20 to 25 miles southwest of Verona, Italy) of humble parentage. His father, either a potter or a laborer, worked for a certain Magius, who, attracted by the intelligence and industry of his employee, allowed him to marry his daughter, Magia. Because the marriage improved his position, Virgil's father was able to give his son the education reserved for children of higher status. Virgil began his study in Cremona, continued it in Milan, and then went on to Rome to study rhetoric (the study of writing), medicine, and mathematics before giving himself to philosophy (the study of knowledge) under Siro the Epicurean. His education prepared him for the profession of law (the alternative was a military career), but he spoke only once in court. He was shy, retiring, and of halting speech—no match for the aggressive, well-spoken lawyers of the Roman court.

Virgil returned from Rome to his family's farm near Mantua to spend his days in study and writing and to be near his parents. His father was blind and possibly dying. His mother had lost two other sons, one in infancy, the other at the age of seventeen. When Virgil's father died, she remarried and bore another son, Valerius Proculus, to whom Virgil left half his fortune.

In appearance Virgil was tall and dark, his face reflecting the rural lower-class stock from which he came. His health was never strong. Horace (65–8 B.C.E.) tells us that on a journey to Brundisium in 37 B.C.E., he and Virgil were unable to join their fellow travelers in their games for he had sore eyes and Virgil was suffering from indigestion. Poor health and his shy nature and love of study made him a recluse, or one who withdraws from the world.

The farm of Virgil's father was among the land confiscated (forcefully taken) as payment for the victorious soldiers of the Battle of Philippi (42 B.C.E.). But Augustus (63 B.C.E.–14 C.E.) restored the farm to the family. Virgil then rendered thanks to young Caesar in his first *Eclogue*.

The final phrase of the epitaph (etching on a tombstone) on Virgil's supposed tomb at Naples runs "cecini pascua, rura, duces (I sang of pastures, of sown fields, and of leaders)." This summarizes the progression from *Eclogues* to *Georgics* to *Aeneid* (which appeared in that order) and, as has been said, "proposes a miniature of the evolution of civilization from shepherds to farmers to warriors."

Pastoral poems

The *Eclogues* (this, the more usual title, means "Select Poems"; they are also known as



Virgil.

Reproduced by permission of the
Gamma Liaison Network.

Bucolics, or "Pastorals") were written between 42 B.C.E. and 37 B.C.E. These ten poems, songs of shepherds, all about one hundred lines long, were modeled on the pastoral poems, or *Idylls*, of Theocritus of Syracuse (c. 310–250 B.C.E.).

Eclogue 4, the so-called Messianic *Eclogue*, is the best known. Written in 40 B.C.E., during the temporary rule of Pollio (76 B.C.E.–4 C.E.), Virgil's benefactor (one who gives financial aid) a year or two previously, it hails the birth of a baby boy who will usher in a golden age of peace and prosperity in which even nature herself will participate. The golden age is the new

era of peace for which Augustus was responsible, and the child is thought to be the expected offspring of Augustus and Scribonia (the infant turned out to be a girl).

The Georgics (“Points of Farming”), a didactic (intended to instruct) poem in four books, was written from 37 B.C.E. to 30 B.C.E. Book 1 treats the farming of land; Book 2 is about growing trees, especially the vine and the olive; Book 3 concerns cattle raising; and Book 4, beekeeping.

The Aeneid

The *Aeneid* is one of the most complex and subtle works ever written. An epic poem of about ten thousand lines and divided into twelve books, it tells of the efforts of the Trojan hero, Aeneas, to find a new homeland for himself and his small band of followers, from the time he escapes from burning Troy until he founds Lavinium (in Italy), the parent town of Rome.

Shortly after Actium, the final battle of the Roman civil war 31 B.C.E., Augustus, the victor, was looking for a poet who could give to his accomplishments their proper literary enhancement in an epic poem. Maecenas (c. 70–8 B.C.E.) offered the commission to Propertius and to Horace, both of whom declined as graciously as possible. Virgil had been less reluctant than the other two and found, through his imagination, a solution. His epic of Augustan Rome would be cast in mythological form, making use of the legend of the founding of Rome by Aeneas, a Trojan hero mentioned by Homer (ninth or eighth century B.C.E.), who, tradition held, escaped from Troy and went to Italy. Virgil’s models were the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey* of Homer.

The *Aeneid* can be divided into two parts of six books each or into three parts of four books each. Books 1 through 4, organized around Aeneas’s narration of the destruction of Troy and his wanderings, have Carthage as their dramatic setting; Books 5 through 8 act as entertainment between the drama of 1 through 4 and 9 through 12, the story of the fighting in Italy. Moreover, the even-numbered books are highly dramatic, while the odd-numbered books reflect a lessening of tension and have less dramatic value.

Last years

Virgil worked on the *Aeneid* for the last eleven years of his life. The composition of it, from a prose (writing) outline, was never easy for him. Augustus once wrote asking to see part of the uncompleted work. Virgil replied that he had nothing to send and added, “I have undertaken a task so difficult that I think I must have been mentally ill to have begun it.”

In 19 B.C.E. Virgil resolved to spend three more years on his epic after taking a trip to Greece, perhaps to check on some details necessary for his revision. At Megara he contracted a fever and became so ill that he returned to Brundisium, where he died on September 21. He left instructions that the *Aeneid* should be burned, but Augustus refused and ordered Varius and Tucca, two friends of the poet, to edit it for publication. It appeared in 17 B.C.E.

For More Information

Gale, Monica. *Virgil on the Nature of Things*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 2000.

Levi, Peter. *Virgil: His Life and Times*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1999.

Wright, David H. *The Roman Vergil and the Origins of Medieval Book Design*. London: British Library, 2001.

ANTONIO VIVALDI

Born: March 4, 1678

Venice, Italy

Died: July 26, 1741

Vienna, Austria

Italian composer, violinist and priest

Antonio Vivaldi was an Italian violinist and composer whose concertos—pieces for one or more instruments—were widely known and influential throughout Europe.

Childhood and early career

Antonio Vivaldi was born in Venice, Italy, on March 4, 1678. His first music teacher was his father, Giovanni Battista Vivaldi. The elder Vivaldi was a well-respected violinist, employed at the church of St. Mark's. It is possible, though not proved, that as a boy Antonio also studied with the composer Giovanni Legrenzi (1626–1690).

Antonio was trained for a clerical (religious service) as well as a musical life. After going through the various introductory stages, he was ordained (authorized) a priest in March 1703. His active career, however, was devoted to music. In the autumn of

1703 he was appointed as a violin teacher at the Ospitale della Pietà in Venice. A few years later he was made conductor of the orchestra at the same institution. Under Vivaldi's direction, this orchestra gave many brilliant concerts and achieved an international reputation.

Vivaldi remained at the Pietà until 1740. But his long years there were broken by the numerous trips he took, for professional purposes, to Italian and foreign cities. He went, among other places, to Vienna, Italy, from 1729 to 1730 and to Amsterdam, Netherlands, from 1737 to 1738. Within Italy he traveled to various cities to direct performances of his operas. He left Venice for the last time in 1740. He died in Vienna on July 26 or 27, 1741.

Vivaldi's music

Vivaldi was very productive in vocal and instrumental music, sacred and secular (non-religious). According to the latest research, he composed over seven hundred pieces—ranging from sonatas (instrumental compositions usually with three or four movements) and operas (musical dramas consisting of vocal and instrumental pieces) to concertos (musical compositions for one or two vocal performers set against a full orchestra).

Today the vocal music of Vivaldi is little known. But in his own day he was famous and successful as an opera composer. Most of his operas were written for Venice, but some were performed throughout Italy in Rome, Florence, Verona, Vicenza, Ancona, and Mantua.

Vivaldi was also one of the great eighteenth century violin virtuosos, or musicians with superb ability. This virtuosity is reflected in his music, which made new demands on



Antonio Vivaldi.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

violin technique. In his instrumental works he naturally favored the violin. He wrote the majority of his sonatas for one or two violins and thorough-bass. Of his concertos, 221 are for solo violin and orchestra. Other concertos are for a variety of solo instruments, including the flute, the clarinet, the trumpet, and the mandolin. He also wrote concertos for several solo instruments, concerti grossi, and concertos for full orchestra. The concerto grosso features a small group of solo players, set against the full orchestra. The concerto for orchestra features differences of style rather than differences of instruments.

Orchestral music

Vivaldi's concertos are generally in three movements, arranged in the order of fast, slow, fast. The two outer movements are in the same key; the middle movement is in the same key or in a closely related key. Within movements, the music proceeds on the principle of alternation: passages for the solo instrument(s) alternate with passages for the full orchestra. The solo instrument may extend the material played by the orchestra, or it may play quite different material of its own. In either case, the alternation between soloist and orchestra builds up a tension that can be very dramatic.

The orchestra in Vivaldi's time was different, of course, from a modern one in its size and constitution. Although winds were sometimes called for, strings constituted the main body of players. In a Vivaldi concerto, the orchestra is essentially a string orchestra, with one or two harpsichords or organs to play the thorough-bass.

Some of Vivaldi's concertos are pieces of program music, for they give musical descriptions of events or natural scenes. *The Seasons*, for instance, consists of four concertos representing the four seasons. But in his concertos the "program" does not determine the formal structure of the music. Some musical material may imitate the call of a bird or the rustling of leaves; but the formal plan of the concerto is maintained.

Vivaldi's concertos were widely known during and after his lifetime. They were copied and admired by another musician, Johann Sebastian Bach (1685–1750). In musical Europe of the eighteenth century Vivaldi was one of the great names.

For More Information

- Heller, Karl. *Antonio Vivaldi: The Red Priest of Venice*. Portland, OR: Amadeus Press, 1997.
- Kolneder, Walter. *Antonio Vivaldi: His Life and Work*. Edited by Bill Hopkins. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1970.
- Landon, H. C. Robbins. *Vivaldi: Voice of the Baroque*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1996.
- Morgenstern, Sheldon. *No Vivaldi in the Garage: A Requiem for Classical Music in North America*. Boston: Northeastern University Press, 2001.

VOLTAIRE

Born: November 21, 1694

Paris, France

Died: May 30, 1778

Paris, France

French poet and philosopher

The French poet, dramatist, historian, and philosopher Voltaire was an outspoken and aggressive enemy of every injustice but especially of religious intolerance (the refusal to accept or respect any differences).

Early years

Voltaire was born as François Marie Arouet, perhaps on November 21, 1694, in Paris, France. He was the youngest of the three surviving children of François Arouet and Marie Marguerite Daumand, although

Voltaire claimed to be the “bastard [born out of wedlock] of Rochebrune,” a minor poet and songwriter. Voltaire’s mother died when he was seven years old, and he developed a close relationship with his godfather, a free-thinker. His family belonged to the upper-middle-class, and young Voltaire was able to receive an excellent education. A clever child, Voltaire studied under the Jesuits at the Collège Louis-le-Grand from 1704 to 1711. He displayed an astonishing talent for poetry and developed a love of the theater and literature.

Emerging poet

When Voltaire was drawn into the circle of the seventy-two-year-old poet Abbé de Chaulieu, his father packed him off to Caen, France. Hoping to stop his son’s literary ambitions and to turn his mind to pursuing law, Arouet placed the youth as secretary to the French ambassador at The Hague, the seat of government in the Netherlands. Voltaire fell in love with a French refugee, Catherine Olympe Dunoyer, who was pretty but barely educated. Their marriage was stopped. Under the threat of a *lettre de cachet* (an official letter from a government calling for the arrest of a person) obtained by his father, Voltaire returned to Paris in 1713 and was contracted to a lawyer. He continued to write and he renewed his pleasure-loving acquaintances. In 1717 Voltaire was at first exiled (forced to leave) and then imprisoned in the Bastille, an enormous French prison, for writings that were offensive to powerful people.

As early as 1711, Voltaire, eager to test himself against Sophocles (c. 496–406 B.C.E.) and Pierre Corneille (1606–1684), had written a first draft of *Oedipe*. On November 18,



Voltaire.

1718, the revised (changed for improvement) play opened in Paris to a sensational success. The *Henriade*, begun in the Bastille and published in 1722, was Voltaire's attempt to compete against Virgil (70–19 B.C.E.) and to give France an epic poem (a long poem centered around a legendary hero).

While Voltaire stayed in England (1726–1728) he was greatly honored; Alexander Pope (1688–1744), William Congreve (1670–1729), Horace Walpole (1717–1797), and Henry St. John, Viscount Bolingbroke (1658–1751), praised him; and his works earned Voltaire one thousand pounds. Voltaire learned English by attend-

ing the theater daily, script in hand. He also absorbed English thought, especially that of John Locke (1632–1704) and Sir Isaac Newton (1642–1727), and he saw the relationship between free government and creative business developments. More importantly, England suggested the relationship of wealth to freedom. The only protection, even for a brilliant poet, was wealth.

At Cirey and at court, 1729–1753

Voltaire returned to France in 1729. One product of his English stay was the *Lettres anglaises* (1734), which have been called “the first bomb dropped on the Old Regime.” Their explosive potential (something that shows future promise) included such remarks as, “It has taken centuries to do justice to humanity, to feel it was horrible that the many should sow and the few should reap.” Written in the style of letters to a friend in France, the twenty-four “letters” were a clever and seductive (desirable) call for political, religious, and philosophic (having to do with knowledge) freedom; for the betterment of earthly life; for employing the method of Sir Francis Bacon (1561–1626), Locke, and Newton; and generally for striving toward social progress.

Prior to 1753 Voltaire did not have a home; but for fifteen years following 1733 he had stayed in Cirey, France, in a château (country house) owned by Madame du Châtelet. While still living with her patient husband and son, Émilie made generous room for Voltaire. They were lovers; and they worked together intensely on physics and metaphysics, a philosophy which investigates the nature of reality.

Honored by a respectful correspondence

with Frederick II of Prussia (1712–1786), Voltaire was then sent on diplomatic (having to do with international affairs) missions to Prussia. But Voltaire's new interest was his affair with his widowed niece, Madame Denis. This affair continued its passionate and stormy course to the last years of his life. Émilie, too, found solace in other lovers. The simple and peaceful time of Cirey ended with her death in 1749.

Voltaire then accepted Frederick's repeated invitation to live at court. He arrived at Potsdam (now in Germany) with Madame Denis in July 1750. First flattered by Frederick's hospitality, Voltaire then gradually became anxious, quarrelsome, and finally bored. He left, angry, in March 1753, having written in December 1752: "I am going to write for my instruction a little dictionary used by Kings. 'My friend' means 'my slave.'" Frederick took revenge by delaying permission for Voltaire's return to France, by putting him under a week's house arrest at the German border, and by seizing all his money.

Sage of Ferney, 1753–1778

Voltaire's literary productivity did not slow down, although his concerns shifted as the years passed while at his estate in Ferney, France. He was best known as a poet until in 1751 *Le Siècle de Louis XIV* marked him also as a historian. Other historical works include *Histoire de Charles XII*; *Histoire de la Russie sous Pierre le Grand*; and the universal history, *Essai sur l'histoire générale et sur les mœurs et l'esprit des nations*, published in 1756 but begun at Cirey. An extremely popular dramatist until 1760, he began to be outdone by competition from the plays of William Shakespeare (1564–1616) that he had introduced to France.

The philosophic *conte* (a short story about adventure) was a Voltaire invention. In addition to his famous *Candide* (1759), others of his stories in this style include *Micromégas*, *Vision de Babouc*, *Memnon*, *Zadig*, and *Jeannot et Colin*. In addition to the *Lettres Philosophiques* and the work on Newton (1642–1727), others of Voltaire's works considered philosophic are *Philosophie de l'histoire*, *Le Philosophe ignorant*, *Tout en Dieu*, *Dictionnaire philosophique portatif*, and *Traité de la métaphysique*. Voltaire's poetry includes—in addition to the *Henriade*—the philosophic poems *L'Homme*, *La Loi naturelle*, and *Le Désastre de Lisbonne*, as well as the famous *La Pucelle*, a delightfully naughty poem about Joan of Arc (1412–1431).

Always the champion of liberty, Voltaire in his later years became actively involved in securing justice for victims of persecution, or intense harassment. He became the "conscience of Europe." His activity in the Calas affair was typical. An unsuccessful and depressed young man had hanged himself in his Protestant father's home in Roman Catholic city of Toulouse, France. For two hundred years Toulouse had celebrated the massacre (cruel killings) of four thousand of its Huguenot inhabitants (French Protestants). When the rumor spread that the dead man had been about to abandon Protestantism, the family was seized and tried for murder. The father was tortured; a son was exiled (forced to leave); and the daughters were forcefully held in a convent (a house for nuns). Investigation assured Voltaire of their innocence, and from 1762 to 1765 he worked in their behalf. He employed "his friends, his purse, his pen, his credit" to move public opinion to the support of the Calas family. In 1765, Parliament declared the Calas family innocent.

Voltaire's influence continued to be felt after his death in Paris on May 30, 1778.

For More Information

Carlson, Marvin. *Voltaire and the Theatre of the Eighteenth Century*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 1998.

Mason, Haydn. *Voltaire: A Biography*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1981.

McLean, Jack. *Hopeless But Not Serious: The Autobiography of the Urban Voltaire*. Edinburgh, Scotland: Mainstream Pub. Projects, 1996.

WERNHER VON BRAUN

Born: March 23, 1912

Wirnitz, Germany

Died: June 16, 1977

Alexandria, Virginia

German-born American scientist

The German-born American space scientist Wernher von Braun, the “father of space travel,” developed the first practical space rockets and launch vehicles. His advancements were instrumental in space exploration and in putting the first men on the moon.

An inspired student

Born on March 23, 1912, in Wirnitz, Germany, Wernher von Braun's father, Baron Magnus von Braun, was a founder of the German Savings Bank, a member of the Weimar

Republic Cabinet, and minister of agriculture. His mother, the former Emmy von Quistorp, a musician and amateur astronomer (one who studies the universe), was a strong influence on her son, especially after she gave her son a telescope as a present. Wernher spent his childhood in several German cities, as the family moved wherever Magnus was transferred.

At the French Gymnasium, Wernher excelled in languages but failed physics and mathematics. He then attended the Hermann Lietz School at Ettersburg Castle, where he developed an intense interest in astronomy and overcame his failures in other subjects. Fascination with the theories of space flight then prompted him to study mathematics and physics with renewed interest. Before he graduated, he was teaching mathematics and tutoring other students.

Von Braun enrolled in the Charlottenburg Institute of Technology in Berlin. He became an active member of the Verein für Raumschiffahrt (VfR; Society for Space Travel) and an associate of Hermann Oberth (1894–1989), Willy Ley (1906–1969), and other leading German rocket enthusiasts. In 1930 Oberth and von Braun developed a small rocket engine, which was a technical success.

German army rocket program

Adolf Hitler (1889–1945) rose to power and became chancellor (leader) of Germany on January 30, 1933. Still upset about the restrictions of the Treaty of Versailles that ended World War I (1914–18), the German army looked to rebuild its forces. The treaty severely restricted Germany's production of weapons, such as guns and cannons. But the

treaty made no mention of rockets, and German military planners hoped to develop rockets as weapons. They immediately turned to von Braun.

When World War II (1939–45) began, Germany gave rocket development highest priority. While von Braun developed a large rocket named the V-2, the Nazis (Hitler's army) wanted it as a weapon of war. Von Braun had a different vision: space travel.

By 1943 von Braun's rocket complex was the primary target of the Allied forces (America, France, and Great Britain). When Germany was near collapse, von Braun evacuated his staff to an area where the Americans might capture them. He reasoned that the United States was the nation most likely to use his resources for space exploration. The rocket team, which consisted of more than five thousand coworkers and their families, surrendered to U.S. forces on May 2, 1945.

Early U.S. rocket experiments

During questioning by Allied officers, von Braun prepared a report on rocket development and applications in which he predicted trips to the moon, orbiting satellites, and space stations. Recognizing the potential of von Braun's work, the U.S. Army authorized the transfer of von Braun, 112 of his engineers and scientists, 100 V-2 rockets, and the rocket technical data to the United States.

In 1946 the team moved to what is now the White Sands Proving Grounds in New Mexico. In 1950 they relocated to the Redstone Arsenal in Huntsville, Alabama, where von Braun remained for the next twenty years. He used his free time to write about space travel and to correspond with his fam-



Wernher von Braun.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

ily and his cousin, Maria von Quistorp. In early 1947 he obtained permission to return to Germany to marry Maria. They had three children. On April 15, 1955, von Braun and forty of his associates became naturalized citizens.

The Russian space program outpaced that of the United States in the 1950s. When the Russians successfully put *Sputnik I* into space and the U.S. Navy's Vanguard program failed, the United States turned to von Braun's group. Within ninety days, on January 31, 1958, the team launched the free world's first satellite, *Explorer I*, into orbit.

U.S. space program

After the creation of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA), von Braun was appointed director of the George C. Marshall Space Flight Center at Huntsville, Alabama, on July 1, 1960. The space agency sought his advice about techniques later used in landing on the moon. Just before Christmas, 1968, a Saturn V launch vehicle, developed under von Braun's direction, launched *Apollo 8*, the world's first spacecraft to travel to the moon. In March 1970 NASA transferred von Braun to its headquarters in Washington, D.C., where he became deputy associate administrator.

Von Braun resigned from NASA in July 1972 to become vice president for engineering and development with Fairchild Industries of Germantown, Maryland. Besides his work for that aerospace firm, he continued his efforts to promote human space flight, helping to found the National Space Institute in 1975 and serving as its first president. On June 16, 1977, he died of cancer at a hospital in Alexandria, Virginia.

For More Information

Bergaust, Erik. *Wernher von Braun: The Authoritative and Definitive Biographical Profile of the Father of Modern Space Flight*. Washington, DC: National Space Institute, 1976.

Lampton, Christopher. *Wernher von Braun*. New York: Watts, 1988.

Piszkievicz, Dennis. *Wernher von Braun: The Man Who Sold the Moon*. Westport, CT: Praeger, 1998.

Stuhlinger, Ernst, and Frederick I. Ordway III. *Wernher von Braun, Crusader for Space: An Illustrated Memoir*. Malabar, FL: Krieger, 1994.

KURT VONNEGUT

Born: November 11, 1922

Indianapolis, Indiana

American writer, essayist, and dramatist

Kurt Vonnegut is acknowledged as a major voice in American literature and applauded for his subtle criticisms and sharp portrayal of modern society.

Early life

Kurt Vonnegut Jr. was born on November 11, 1922, in Indianapolis, Indiana, the son of a successful architect, Kurt Sr., and his wife, Edith Sophia. Vonnegut was raised along with his sister, Alice, and brother Bernard (whom he spoke of frequently in his works). Fourth-generation Germans, the children were never exposed to their heritage because of the anti-German attitudes that had spread throughout the United States after World War I (1914–18; a war in which many European countries, some Middle Eastern nations, Russia, and the United States fought against Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Turkey). Because of the Great Depression (the severe economic downturn in the 1930s), the Vonneguts lost most of their wealth and the household was never the same. Vonnegut's father fell into severe depression and his mother died after overdosing on sleeping pills the night before Mother's Day. This attainment and loss of the "American Dream" would become the theme of many of Vonnegut's writings.

After attending Cornell University, where he majored in chemistry and biology,

he enlisted in the United States Army, serving in the World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers: Germany, Italy, and Japan—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States). This would set the stage for another crucial element for his writings when he was taken prisoner by the German army. Following the war, Vonnegut studied anthropology at the University of Chicago and later moved to Schenectady, New York, to work as a publicist for the General Electric Corporation. During this period, he also began submitting short stories to various journals, and in 1951, he resigned his position at General Electric to devote his time solely to writing.

The novels

Vonnegut published several novels throughout the 1950s and 1960s, beginning with *Player Piano* in 1952. *Player Piano* depicts a fictional city called Ilium in which the people have given control of their lives to a computer humorously named EPICAC, after a substance that causes vomiting. *The Sirens of Titan* (1959) takes place on several different planets, including a thoroughly militarized Mars, where the inhabitants are electronically controlled. The fantastic settings of these works serve primarily as a metaphor (comparison) for modern society, which Vonnegut views as absurd to the point of being surreal (irrational; dreamlike), and as a backdrop for Vonnegut's central focus: the hapless human beings who inhabit these bizarre worlds and struggle with both their environments and themselves.

Vonnegut once again focuses on the role of technology in human society in *Cat's Cradle* (1963), widely considered one of his best



Kurt Vonnegut.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

works. The novel recounts the discovery of a form of ice, called *ice-nine*, which is solid at a much lower temperature than normal ice and is capable of solidifying all water on Earth. *Ice-nine* serves as a symbol of the enormous destructive potential of technology, particularly when developed or used without regard for the welfare of humanity.

Slaughterhouse-Five

Vonnegut's reputation was greatly enhanced in 1969 with the publication of *Slaughterhouse-Five*, an antiwar novel that appeared during the peak of protest against

American involvement in the Vietnam War (1955–75; when American forces aided South Vietnam in their fight against North Vietnam).

Vonnegut described *Slaughterhouse-Five* as a novel he was compelled to write, since it is based on one of the most extraordinary and significant events of his life. During World War II when he was a prisoner of the German Army, Vonnegut witnessed the Allied bombing of Dresden, Germany, which destroyed the city and killed more than one hundred thirty-five thousand people. One of the few to survive, Vonnegut was ordered by his captors to aid in the grisly task of digging bodies from the rubble and destroying them in huge bonfires. Because the city of Dresden had little military value, its destruction went nearly unnoticed in the press. *Slaughterhouse-Five* is Vonnegut's attempt to both document and criticize this event.

Like Vonnegut, the main character of *Slaughterhouse-Five*, named Billy Pilgrim, was present at the bombing of Dresden and has been deeply affected by the experience. His feelings develop into spiritual uncertainty that results in a nervous breakdown. In addition, he suffers from a peculiar condition, of being “unstuck in time,” meaning that he randomly experiences events from his past, present, and future. The novel is therefore a complex, nonchronological (in no order of time) narrative in which images of suffering and loss prevail.

Breakfast of Champions

After the publication of *Slaughterhouse-Five*, Vonnegut entered a period of depression during which he vowed, at one point, never to write another novel. He concentrated,

instead, on lecturing, teaching, and finishing a play, *Happy Birthday, Wanda June*, that he had begun several years earlier. The play, which ran Off-Broadway from October 1970 to March 1971, received mixed reviews. There were several factors which could be interpreted as the cause of Vonnegut's period of depression, including, as he admitted, the approach of his fiftieth birthday and the fact that his children had begun to leave home. Many critics believe that, having at last come to terms with Dresden, he lost the major inspiration for much of his work; others feel that *Slaughterhouse-Five* may have been the single great novel that Vonnegut was capable of writing. Whatever the cause, *Breakfast of Champions* marked the end of his depression and a return to the novel.

In *Breakfast of Champions*, as in most of Vonnegut's work, there are very clear autobiographical tendencies. In this novel however, the author seems to be even more wrapped up in his characters than usual. He appears as Philboyd Sludge, the writer of the book, which stars Dwayne Hoover, a Pontiac dealer (Vonnegut once ran a Saab dealership) who goes berserk after reading a novel by Kilgore Trout, who also represents Vonnegut. Toward the end of the book, Vonnegut arranges a meeting between himself and Trout, whom Robert Merrill calls his “most famous creation,” in which he casts the character loose forever; by this time the previously unsuccessful Trout has become rich and famous and is finally able to stand on his own.

Later work

Breakfast of Champions and *Slapstick, or Lonesome No More* (1976) both examine the widespread feelings of despair and loneliness

that result from the loss of traditional culture in the United States; *Jailbird* (1979) recounts the story of a fictitious participant in the Watergate scandal of the Richard Nixon (1913–1994) administration, a scandal which ultimately led to the resignation of the president; *Galapagos* (1985) predicts the consequences of environmental pollution; and *Hocus-Pocus; or, What's the Hurry, Son?* (1990) deals with the implications and aftermath of the war in Vietnam.

In the 1990s, he also published *Fates Worse Than Death* (1991) and *Timequake* (1997). Before its release Vonnegut noted that *Timequake* would be his last novel. Although many of these works are highly regarded, critics frequently argue that in his later works Vonnegut tends to reiterate themes presented more compellingly in earlier works. Nevertheless, Vonnegut remains one of the most-loved American writers.

Kurt Vonnegut Jr. is currently teaching advanced writing classes at Smith College, and in November of 2000, he was named the State Author of New York.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Kurt Vonnegut*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2000.

Marvin, Thomas F. *Kurt Vonnegut: A Critical Companion*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press, 2002.

Morse, Donald E. *Kurt Vonnegut*. San Bernardino, CA: Borgo Press, 1992.

Vonnegut, Kurt. *Fates Worse Than Death: An Autobiographical Collage of the 1980s*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1991.

Vonnegut, Kurt. *Palm Sunday: An Autobiographical Collage*. New York: Delacorte Press, 1981.



RICHARD WAGNER

Born: May 22, 1813

Liepzig, Germany

Died: February 13, 1883

Venice, Italy

German composer

The German operatic composer Richard Wagner was one of the most important figures of nineteenth-century music. Wagner was also a crucial figure in nineteenth-century cultural history for both his criticism and polemical writing, or writing that attacks established beliefs.

Early life

Wilhelm Richard Wagner was born on May 22, 1813, in Leipzig, Germany, into a middle-class family. Raised along with eight siblings, his father, Friedrich, died shortly after Richard's birth, and within the year his mother, Johanna, married Ludwig Geyer. There is still some controversy as to whether or not Geyer, a traveling actor, was Wagner's real father. As a child, Wagner showed little talent or interest in anything except for writing poetry.

Wagner's musical training was largely left to chance until he was eighteen, when he studied with Theodor Weinlig in Leipzig, Germany, for a year. He began his career in 1833 as choral director in Würzburg and composed



Richard Wagner.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

his early works in imitation of German romantic compositions. Ludwig van Beethoven (1770–1827) was his major idol at this time.

First works

Wagner wrote his first opera, *Die Feen* (The Fairies), in 1833, but it was not produced until after the composer's death. He was music director of the theater in Magdeburg from 1834 to 1836, where his next work, *Das Liebesverbot* (Forbidden Love), loosely based on William Shakespeare's (1564–1616) *Measure for Measure* was performed in 1836. That year he married Minna Planner, a singer-actress active in local theatrical life.

In 1837 Wagner became the first music director of the theater in Riga, Russia (now the capital of Latvia), where he remained until 1839. He then set out for Paris, France, where he hoped to make his fortune. While in Paris, he developed an intense hatred for French musical culture that lasted the remainder of his life, regardless of how often he attempted to have a Parisian success. It was at this time that Wagner, in financial desperation, sold the scenario for *Der fliegende Holländer* (The Flying Dutchman) to the Paris Opéra for use by another composer. Wagner later set to music another version of this tale.

Wagner returned to Germany, settling in Dresden in 1842, where he was in charge of the music for the court chapel. *Rienzi*, a grand opera in imitation of the French style, enjoyed a modest success. In 1845 *Tannhäuser* premiered in Dresden and proved the first undoubted success of Wagner's career. In November of the same year he finished the poem for *Lohengrin* and began composition early in 1846. While at work on *Lohengrin* he also made plans for his tetralogy (a series of four dramas), *Der Ring des Nibelungen* (The Ring of the Nibelungen), being captivated by Norse sagas. In 1845 he prepared the scenario for the first drama of the tetralogy to be written, *Siegfried's Tod* (Siegfried's Death), which later became *Die Götterdämmerung* (The Twilight of the Gods).

Years of exile

Wagner had to flee Dresden in 1849 in the aftermath of the Revolution of 1848, which resulted in an unsuccessful uprising against the German monarchy or king. He settled in Switzerland, first in Zurich and then near Lucerne. He remained in Switzer-

land for the most part for the next fifteen years without steady employment, banished from Germany and forbidden access to German theatrical life. During this time he worked on the *Ring*—this dominated his creative life over the next two decades.

The first production of *Lohengrin* took place in Weimar under Franz Liszt's (1881–1886) direction in 1850 (Wagner was not to see *Lohengrin* until 1861). The year 1850 also saw publication of one of Wagner's most vulgar tracts, *The Jew in Music*, in which he viciously attacked the very existence of Jewish composers and musicians, particularly in German society.

In 1853 Wagner formally began composition on the *Rheingold*; he completed the scoring the following year and then began serious work on the *Walküre*, which was finished in 1856. At this time he was toying with the notion of writing the drama *Tristan and Isolde*. In 1857 he finished the composition of Act II of *Siegfried* and gave himself over entirely to *Tristan*. This work was completed in 1859, but it was mounted in Munich only in 1865.

Last years

In 1860 Wagner received permission to reenter Germany except for Saxony, an area in eastern Germany. He was granted full amnesty (political freedom) in 1862. That year he began the music for *Die Meistersinger von Nürnberg* (The Mastersingers of Nuremberg), which he had first thought of in 1845. The *Meistersinger* was completed in 1867; the first performance took place in Munich the following year. Only then did he pick up the threads of the *Ring* and resume work on Act III of *Siegfried*, which was finished in September

1869, a month that also saw the first performance of the *Rheingold*. He wrote the music for *Götterdämmerung* from 1869 to 1874.

The first entire *Ring* cycle (*Rheingold*, *Walküre*, *Siegfried*, and *Götterdämmerung*) was given at the Festspielhaus, the shrine Wagner built for himself at Bayreuth, in 1876, over thirty years after the idea for it had first come to mind. He finished *Parsifal*, his final drama, in 1882. Wagner died on February 13, 1883, in Venice, Italy, and was buried at Bayreuth.

For More Information

Gutman, Robert W. *Richard Wagner: The Man, His Mind, and His Music*. New York: Harcourt, Brace & World, 1968. Reprint, San Diego: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1990.

Lee, M. Owen. *Wagner: The Terrible Man and His Truthful Art*. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1999.

Magee, Bryan. *The Tristan Chord: Wagner and Philosophy*. New York: Metropolitan Books, 2001.

Newman, Ernest. *Wagner as Man and Artist*. New York: Vintage Books, 1960.

ALICE WALKER

Born: February 9, 1944

Eatonton, Georgia

African American novelist

Pulitzer Prize-winning novelist Alice Walker is best known for her stories about African American women who

achieve heroic stature within the borders of their ordinary day-to-day lives.

Early life

Alice Malsenior Walker was born on February 9, 1944, in Eatonton, Georgia, to Willie Lee and Minnie Tallulah (Grant) Walker. Like many of Walker's fictional characters, she was the daughter of a sharecropper (a farmer who rents his land), and the youngest of eight children. At age eight, Walker was accidentally injured by a BB gun shot to her eye by her brother. Her partial blindness caused her to withdraw from normal childhood activities and begin writing poetry to ease her loneliness. She found that writing demanded peace and quiet, but these were difficult things to come by when ten people lived in four rooms. She spent a great deal of time working outdoors sitting under a tree.

Walker attended segregated (separated by race) schools which would be described as inferior by current standards, yet she recalled that she had terrific teachers who encouraged her to believe the world she was reaching for actually existed. Although Walker grew up in a poor environment, she was supported by her community and by the knowledge that she could choose her own identity. Moreover, Walker insisted that her mother granted her "permission" to be a writer and gave her the social, spiritual, and moral substance for her stories.

Upon graduating from high school, Walker secured a scholarship to attend Spelman College in Atlanta, Georgia, where she got involved in the growing Civil Rights movement, a movement which called for equal rights among all races. In 1963, Walker received another scholarship and transferred

to Sarah Lawrence College in New York, where she completed her studies and graduated in 1965 with a bachelor's degree. While at Sarah Lawrence, she spent her junior year in Africa as an exchange student. After graduation she worked with a voter registration drive in Georgia and the Head Start program (a program to educate poorer children) in Jackson, Mississippi. It was there she met, and in 1967 married, Melvyn Leventhal, a civil rights lawyer. Their marriage produced one child, Rebecca, before ending in divorce in 1976.

Writing and teaching careers begin

In 1968, Walker published her first collection of poetry, *Once*. Walker's teaching and writing careers overlapped during the 1970s. She served as a writer-in-residence and as a teacher in the Black Studies program at Jackson State College in Tennessee (1968–69) and Tougaloo College in Mississippi (1970–71). While teaching she was at work on her first novel, *The Third Life of Grange Copeland* (1970), which was assisted by an award from the National Endowment for the Arts (1969; a government program to provide money to artists). She then moved north and taught at Wellesley College, in Massachusetts, and the University of Massachusetts at Boston (both 1972–73). In 1973 her collection of short stories, *In Love and Trouble: Stories of Black Women*, and a collection of poetry, *Revolutionary Petunias*, appeared. She received a Radcliffe Institute scholarship (1971–73), a Rosenthal Foundation award, and an American Academy and Institute of Arts and Letters award (both in 1974) for *In Love and Trouble*.

In 1976 Walker's second novel, *Meridian*, was published, followed by a Guggen-

heim award (in 1977–1978). In 1979 another collection of poetry, *Goodnight, Willie Lee, I'll See You in the Morning*, was published, followed the next year by another collection of short stories, *You Can't Keep a Good Woman Down* (1980).

Walker's third novel, *The Color Purple* was published in 1982, and this work won both a Pulitzer Prize and the American Book Award the following year. Walker was also a contributor to several periodicals and in 1983 published many of her essays, a collection titled *In Search of Our Mother's Gardens: A Collection of Womanist Prose* (1983). Walker worked on her fourth novel while living in Mendocino County outside San Francisco, California.

Walker's novels

Walker's first novel, *The Third Life of Grange Copeland*, centers on the life of a young African American girl, Ruth Copeland, and her grandfather, Grange. As an old man, Grange learns that he is free to love, but love does not come without painful responsibility. At the climax of the novel, Grange summons his newly found knowledge to rescue his granddaughter, Ruth, from his brutal son, Brownfield. The rescue demands that Grange murder his son in order to stop the cycle of cruelty.

Walker's third and most famous novel, *The Color Purple*, is about Celie, a woman so down and out that she can only tell God her troubles, which she does in the form of letters. Poor, black, female, alone and uneducated, held down by class and gender, Celie learns to lift herself up from sexual exploitation and brutality with the help of the love of another woman, Shug Avery. Against the backdrop of Celie's letters is another story about African customs. This evolves from her



Alice Walker.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

sister Nettie's letters which Celie's husband hid from Celie over the course of twenty years. Here, Walker presented problems of women bound within an African context, encountering many of the same problems that Celie faces. Both Celie and Nettie are restored to one another, and, most important, each is restored to herself.

Walker's writing analyzed

At the time of publication of Walker's first novel (in 1970), she said in a *Library Journal* interview that, for her, "family relationships are sacred." Indeed, much of

WALKER, MADAME C. J.

Walker's work describes the emotional, spiritual, and physical devastation that occurs when family trust is betrayed. Her focus is on African American women, who live in a larger world and struggle to achieve independent identities beyond male domination. Although her characters are strong, they are, nevertheless, vulnerable. Their strength resides in their acknowledged debt to their mothers, to their sensuality, and to their friendships among women. These strengths are celebrated in Walker's work, along with the problems women encounter in their relationships with men who regard them as less significant than themselves merely because they are women. What comes out of this belief is, of course, violence. Hence Walker's stories focus not so much on the racial violence that occurs among strangers but the violence among friends and family members, a kind of deliberate cruelty, unexpected but always predictable.

Walker began her exploration of the terrors that beset African American women's lives in her first collection of short stories, *In Love and Trouble*. Here she examined the stereotypes about their lives that misshape them and misguide perceptions about them. Her second short story collection, *You Can't Keep a Good Woman Down*, dramatizes the strength of African American women to rebound despite racial, sexual, and economic difficulties.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Alice Walker*. New York: Chelsea House, 1989.

Gentry, Tony. *Alice Walker*. New York: Chelsea, 1993.

Lauret, Maria. *Alice Walker*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1999.

Walker, Alice. *The Way Forward Is with a Broken Heart*. New York: Random House, 2000.

Winchell, Donna Haisty. *Alice Walker*. New York: Twayne, 1992.

MADAME C. J. WALKER

Born: December 23, 1867

Delta, Louisiana

Died: May 25, 1919

New York, New York

African American businesswoman

As a manufacturer of hair care products for African American women, Madame C. J. Walker, born Sarah Breedlove, became one of the first American women millionaires.

Struggling childhood

Madame C. J. Walker, named Sarah Breedlove at birth, was born December 23, 1867, in Delta, Louisiana, to Owen and Minerva Breedlove, both of whom were emancipated (freed) slaves and worked on a cotton plantation. At the age of six Sarah's parents died after the area was struck by yellow fever, a deadly disease oftentimes spread by mosquitoes. The young girl then moved to Vicksburg to live with her sister Louvinia and to work as a housemaid. She worked hard from the time she was very young, was extremely

poor, and had little opportunity to get an education. In order to escape the terrible environment created by Louvinia's husband, Sarah married Moses McWilliams when she was only fourteen years old. At eighteen she gave birth to a daughter she named Lelia. Two years later her husband died.

Sarah then decided to move to St. Louis, Missouri, where she worked as a laundress (a woman who washes people's clothes as a job) and in other domestic positions for eighteen years. She joined St. Paul's African Methodist Episcopal Church and put her daughter through the public schools and Knoxville College. Sarah, who was barely literate (able to read and write), was especially proud of her daughter's educational accomplishments.

Develops hair care products

By the time Sarah was in her late thirties, she was dealing with hair loss because of a combination of stress and damaging hair care products. After experimenting with various methods, she developed a formula of her own that caused her hair to grow again quickly. She often said that after praying about her hair, she was given the formula in a dream. When friends and family members noticed how Sarah's hair grew back, they began to ask her to duplicate her product for them. She began to prepare her formula at home, selling it to friends and family and also selling it door to door.

Sarah began to advertise a growing number of hair care products with the help of her family and her second husband, Charles Joseph Walker, a newspaperman whom she had married in 1906 after she moved to Denver, Colorado. She also adopted her husband's initials and surname as her professional name,



Madame C. J. Walker.

Reproduced by permission of the Granger Collection.

calling herself Madame C. J. Walker for the rest of her life, even after the marriage ended. Her husband helped her develop mail marketing techniques for her products, usually through the African American-owned newspapers. When their small business was successful, with earnings of about ten dollars a day, Walker thought she should continue to expand, but her husband thought otherwise. Rather than allow her husband's wishes to slow her work, the couple separated.

Business booms

Walker's business continued to expand. She not only marketed her hair care products

but also tutored African American men and women in their use, recruiting a group called “Walker Agents.” Her products were often used with a metal comb that was heated on the stove, then applied to straighten very curly hair. She also began to manufacture a facial skin cream. The hair process was controversial (open to dispute) because many felt that African American women should wear their hair in natural styles rather than attempt to change the texture from curly to straight. In spite of critics, Walker’s hair care methods gained increasing popularity among African American women, who enjoyed products designed especially for them. This resulted in growing profits for Walker’s business and an increasing number of agents who marketed the products for her door to door.

Walker worked closely with her daughter Lelia and opened a school for “hair culturists” in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania,—Lelia College—which operated from 1908 to 1910. In 1910 the Walkers moved to Indianapolis, Indiana, where they established a modern factory to produce their products. They also began to hire African American professionals who could direct various aspects of their operation. Among the workers were tutors who helped Walker get a basic education.

Walker traveled throughout the nation demonstrating her products, recruiting salespersons, and encouraging African American entrepreneurs (business investors). Her rounds included conventions of African American organizations, churches, and civic groups. Not content with her domestic achievements, Walker traveled to the Caribbean and Latin America to promote her business and to recruit individuals to teach her hair care methods. Observers estimated

that Walker’s company had about three thousand agents for whom Walker held annual conventions where they were tutored in product use, hygienic (cleaning) care techniques, and marketing strategies. She also gave cash awards to those who were most successful in promoting sales.

At Lelia’s urging, Walker purchased property in New York City in 1913, with the belief that a base in that city would be important. In 1916 she moved to a luxurious townhouse she had built in Harlem, and a year later to an estate called Villa Lewaro she had constructed at Irvington-on-Hudson, New York.

Charity and legacy

Although Walker and her daughter lived well, they carefully managed each aspect of their business, whose headquarters remained in Indianapolis, and gave to a number of philanthropic (charity) organizations. According to rumor, Walker’s first husband was lynched (killed by a group of people acting outside of the law). Perhaps it was partially for this reason that Walker supported antilynching legislation (laws) and gave generously to the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), eventually willing that organization her estate in Irvington-on-Hudson. The Walkers generously supported religious, educational, charitable, and civil rights organizations.

Walker did not listen to her doctors’ warnings that her fast-paced life was hurting her health. On May 25, 1919, when she was fifty-one years old, she died of hypertension (high blood pressure). Her funeral service was held in Mother Zion African Methodist Episcopal Zion Church in New York City.

Celebrated African American educator Mary McLeod Bethune (1875–1955) delivered the eulogy (a tribute), and Walker was buried at Woodlawn Cemetery in the Bronx. Her daughter, Lelia, took over her role as president of the Madame C. J. Walker Manufacturing Company.

For More Information

- Bundles, A'Lelia Perry. *On Her Own Ground: The Life and Times of Madam C. J. Walker*. New York: Scribner, 2001.
- Lasky, Kathryn. *Vision of Beauty: The Story of Sarah Breedlove Walker*. Cambridge, MA: Candlewick Press, 2000.
- Lommel, Cookie. *Madam C. J. Walker*. Los Angeles: Melrose Square, 1993.
- McKissack, Pat. *Madam C. J. Walker: Self-Made Millionaire*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow, 1992.
- Taylor, Marian. *Madam C. J. Walker*. New York: Chelsea Juniors, 1994.
- Yannuzzi, Della A. *Madam C. J. Walker: Self-Made Businesswoman*. Berkeley Heights, NJ: Enslow, 2000.

BARBARA WALTERS

Born: September 25, 1931

Boston, Massachusetts

American newscaster and reporter

Drawing the highest pay in the history of television broadcasting at the time, Barbara Walters became

the first woman coanchor of a network evening newscast. She developed to a high art the interviewing of public figures.

Early life

Barbara Walters was born to Dena (Selett) and Lou Walters on September 25, 1931, in Boston, Massachusetts. Her only brother, Burton, had died of pneumonia before Barbara was born, and her sister, Jacqueline, was born mentally handicapped. Her father operated a number of nightclubs, resulting in Barbara attending schools in Boston, New York City, and Miami Beach, Florida. Because of this lifestyle, Walters grew up a lonely and shy child and was especially close to her only playmate and sister, Jacqueline.

Walters earned a bachelor's degree in English from Sarah Lawrence College in 1954. After working briefly as a secretary she landed a job with the National Broadcasting Company's (NBC) New York affiliate WRCA-TV where she quickly rose to producer and writer. She also held various writing and public relations jobs, including a stint as a women's program producer at WPIX-TV in New York City.

Walters's abilities and experience in research, writing, filming, and editing earned her a job as news and public affairs producer for Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS) television. There she wrote materials for noted personalities who appeared on the CBS morning show that competed with NBC's *Today* program. She left CBS because she believed further advancement was unlikely.

Moving in front of the camera

In 1961 Walters was hired by NBC as a writer with an occasional on-the-air feature



Barbara Walters.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

for the *Today* show. Within three years Walters became an on-camera interviewer and persuaded such notables as Mamie Eisenhower (1896–1979), Anwar Sadat (1918–1981), and H. R. Haldeman (1926–1993) to appear with her.

Meanwhile, a number of different “show business” women held the post as the “*Today* girl,” but none had a journalism background. Mainly they engaged in small talk and read commercials. Some at NBC began to think a different kind of woman might help the show. When the spot was unexpectedly opened, Walters was given the “*Today* girl” slot on a trial basis. The public readily

accepted this bright, on-the-air newswoman, who also continued to write and produce much of her own material. A few months later, Hugh Downs (1921–) said Walters was the best thing that had happened to the *Today* show during his time as host. They would later be teamed on ABC’s program *20/20* as competition to CBS’s *Sixty Minutes*.

Today featured stories by Walters that included socially significant topics, and frequently she got on-the-spot experience which gave her reports even more credibility. As her reputation grew, NBC made her a radio commentator on *Emphasis* and *Monitor*. She also participated in such NBC specials as “The Pill” and “The Sexual Revolution” (1967), and in 1969 she covered the ceremony which conferred Prince Charles (1948–) as the Prince of Wales.

Finally in 1974 Walters was named cohost of the *Today* show. By then, her status as a broadcaster had risen to such heights that she had twice been named to *Harper’s Bazaar’s* list of “100 Women of Accomplishment” (1967 and 1971), *Ladies Home Journal’s* “75 Most Important Women” (1970), and *Time’s* “200 Leaders of the Future” (1974). As the most influential woman on television, others soon competed for her talents.

Million-dollar newswoman

In 1976 Walters accepted a million-dollar-a-year contract for five years to move to ABC, where she became television’s first network anchorwoman, the most prestigious job in television journalism. She also anchored and produced four prime-time specials and sometimes hosted or appeared on the network’s other news and documentary programs. Her contract stirred professional criti-

cism and jealousy. It not only doubled her income from NBC and her syndicated show, *Not For Women Only*, but it also made her the highest paid newscaster in history at that time. Walter Cronkite (1916–), John Chancellor, and Harry Reasoner then received about four hundred thousand dollars.

Executives of other networks cried that their established anchors might demand salary increases, questioned what they perceived as a “show biz” tint to the dry task of news reporting, and questioned whether the public would accept a woman news anchor. (ABC’s private polls before they made their record offer indicated only 13 percent preferred a male anchor, and they knew her presence could easily increase advertising revenues far exceeding her salary.)

Despite Walters’s sharp, probing interviewing techniques, she seldom seemed to alienate the person she was interviewing. She revealed some of the secrets of her success in her book *How to Talk With Practically Anybody About Practically Anything* (1970). Others attributed her interviewing success to her amazing ability to ask primarily those questions that the public would want answered.

However, Walters still had her critics. Some interview-subjects said her nervousness distracted them. Others claimed she was so eager that disastrous mistakes occurred, citing the instance when she grabbed another network’s microphone as she dashed to get a unique interview. Washington press corps members charged that she acted more as a “star” than as a reporter on presidential trips. However, her professional admirers outnumbered those who criticized her. Walter Cronkite noted her special interviewing talents. Sally Quinn, former rival on *CBS Morn-*

ing News, commented how “nice” Walters was to her.

Still on top

Walters’s personal life held considerable interest to the public. Her brief marriage to businessman Bob Katz was annulled, or made void; her thirteen-year marriage to Lee Guber, a theatrical producer, ended in divorce. Still they remained friendly, sharing mutual love for their daughter, Jacqueline Dena. In 1985 she married Merv Adelson, who had also previously been wed twice.

Walters has had a reputation for often being the first to interview world leaders. During the 1996 presidential campaign she interviewed the first African American Chair of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, General Colin Powell (1937–), after his retirement from the military. She has also had exclusive interviews with both Christopher Darden and Robert Shapiro of the O. J. Simpson murder trial, noted by the media as one of the most controversial murder trials of the twentieth century. Walters also had exclusive interviews with billionaire David Geffen, then with Christopher Reeve (1952–) following the horseback riding fall that left him paralyzed. In 1999, Walters was the first to be granted a public interview by Monica Lewinsky, the former White House intern whose affair with President Bill Clinton (1946–) led to his impeachment trial by the U.S. House of Representatives.

Walters’s elevation to top-paid broadcaster was credited with raising the status of other women journalists. Her own prowess as a broadcaster exploring socially important issues and as top-notch interviewer were undeniable. In addition, she excelled at bringing to the television public subjects that

ranged from show business personalities to heads of state.

In September 2000, Walter renewed her contract with ABC. The lucrative deal reportedly pays Walters \$12 million per year, making her one of the highest paid news anchors in the world.

For More Information

Malone, Mary. *Barbara Walters: TV Superstar*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow, 1990.

Oppenheimer, Jerry. *Barbara Walters: An Unauthorized Biography*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1990.

Remstein, Henna. *Barbara Walters*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1999.

AN WANG

Born: February 7, 1920

Shanghai, China

Died: March 24, 1990

Boston, Massachusetts

*Chinese-born American inventor, engineer,
and business executive*

An Wang made important inventions relating to computer memories and to electronic calculators. He was the founder and longtime executive officer of Wang Laboratories Incorporated, a leading American manufacturer of computers and word processing systems.

Childhood and education

An Wang was born the oldest of five children on February 7, 1920, in Shanghai, China, to Yin Lu and Zen Wan Wang. His father taught him English at home and Wang began his formal schooling at age six when he entered the third grade. In elementary school, Wang began to excel in science and mathematics. He became interested in radio as a high school student, built his own radio, and went on to study communications engineering at Chiao-Tung University in his native city. After graduation he stayed on at the university for another year as a teaching assistant. With the outbreak of World War II (1939-45; a war in which France, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, the United States, and other European forces fought against those of Germany, Japan, and Italy), Wang moved to inland China, where he spent the war designing radio receivers and transmitters for the Chinese to use in their fight against Japan.

Wang left China in the spring of 1945, receiving a government stipend (financial support) to continue his education at Harvard University in Cambridge, Massachusetts. He completed his master's degree in communications engineering in one year. After graduation, he worked for an American company for some months and then for a Canadian office of the Chinese government. In 1947, he returned to Harvard University and rapidly completed a doctorate degree in engineering and applied physics. Wang married in 1949, and he and his wife had three children. Six years later Wang became an American citizen.

Invention

In the spring of 1948 Howard Aiken (1900–1973) hired Wang to work at the Harvard Computation Laboratory. This institution had built the ASSC Mark I, one of the world's first digital computers, a few years earlier and was developing more advanced machines under a contract from the U.S. Air Force. Aiken asked Wang to develop a way to store and retrieve data in a computer using magnetic devices. Wang studied the magnetic properties of small doughnut-shaped rings of ferromagnetic material, or materials that can become highly magnetized. Wang soon developed a process where one could read the information stored in a ring by passing a current around it. Researchers at the nearby Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT) and elsewhere were interested in the idea of magnetic core storage of information and greatly developed it for use in various computers. Wang published an account of his results in a 1950 article coauthored by W.D. Woo, another Shanghai native who worked at Harvard. He also patented his invention and, despite a long court fight, earned substantial royalties (money earned from sales) from International Business Machines (IBM) and other computer manufacturers who used magnetic core memories. These cores remained a basic part of computers into the 1970s.

Wang was not happy with having others develop and sell his inventions. In 1951 he left the Computation Laboratory and used his life savings to start his own electronics company. He first sold custom-built magnetic shift registers for storing and combining electronic signals. His company also sold machines for magnetic tape control and numerical control. In the mid-1960s Wang



An Wang.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

invented a digital logarithmic converter that made it possible to perform routine arithmetic electronically at high speeds and relatively low cost. Wang desktop calculators were soon available commercially, replacing traditional machines with mechanical parts. Several calculators operated on one processing unit. These early electronic calculators sold for over one thousand dollars per keyboard. They were used in schools, scientific laboratories, and engineering firms. By 1969, Wang Laboratories had begun to produce less expensive calculators for wider business use. However, Wang saw that the introduction of other technology would allow competitors to

sell electronic handheld calculators at a much lower price than the machines his company offered.

Time to change

Confronted with the need to find new products, Wang directed his firm toward the manufacture of word processors and small business computers. The first Wang word processing systems sold in 1976. They were designed for easy access by those unfamiliar with computers, for broad data base management, and for routine business calculations. In addition to such computer networks, the company developed personal computers for office use.

Wang began his business in a room above an electrical fixtures store in Boston, Massachusetts, with himself as the only employee. By the mid-1980s the company had expanded to over fifteen thousand employees working in several buildings in the old manufacturing town of Lowell, Massachusetts, and in factories and offices throughout the world. To acquire money to finance this expansion and to reward competent employees, Wang Laboratories sold stock and piled up a considerable debt. The Wang family retained control of the firm by limiting administrative power to a special class of shareholders. In the early 1980s when company growth slowed while debt remained large, Wang made some effort to reduce his personal control of the business and follow regular corporate management practices.

While remaining a company officer and leading stockholder, Wang gave increased responsibilities to his son Frederick and to other managers. Wang intended to devote

even more time to educational activities. He served as an adviser to several colleges and as a member of the Board of Regents of the University of Massachusetts. Wang also took a particular interest in the Wang Institute of Graduate Studies which he founded in 1979. This school offers advanced degrees in software engineering. Difficult times in the computer industry soon led Wang to turn his concentration from these projects and resume full-time direction of Wang Laboratories.

Later years and slowing business

In the last decades of the twentieth century, Wang's economic structure faltered. In 1982 the organization generated more than a billion dollars a year, and by 1989 sales were \$3 billion a year. But Wang Laboratories fell on hard times as well. In the early 1990s the former minicomputer maker fell into Chapter 11 bankruptcy and Wang died of cancer in March of 1990 at the age of seventy.

On January 30, 1997, the Eastman Kodak Company bought the Wang Software business unit for \$260 million in cash. The deal put Kodak into the document imaging and workflow business and took Wang out of software. Wang also began a relationship with Microsoft, and Michael Brown, chief financial officer for Microsoft, sat on Wang's board of directors. The reorganization enabled the company to prosper once again.

Wang's engineering insight and business success made him a fellow (member) of the Institute of Electrical and Electronic Engineers and a fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He received an honorary doctoral degree from the Lowell Technological Institute.

For More Information

Hargrove, Jim. *Dr. An Wang, Computer Pioneer*. Chicago: Children's Press, 1993.

Kenney, Charles. *Riding the Runaway Horse: The Rise and Decline of Wang Laboratories*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1992.

Pugh, E. W. *Memories That Shaped an Industry*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1984.

Wang, An, and Eugene Linden. *Lessons: An Autobiography*. Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley, 1986.

BOOKER T. WASHINGTON

Born: April 5, 1856

Franklin County, Virginia

Died: November 14, 1915

Tuskegee, Alabama

African American educator, author, and leader

Booker T. Washington, African American educator and leader, founded Tuskegee Institute for black students. His "Atlanta Compromise" speech made him America's major black leader for twenty years.

Born into slavery

Booker Taliaferro (the Washington was added later) was born a slave in Franklin County, Virginia, on April 5, 1856. His mother was the plantation's cook, while his father, a local white man, took no responsibility for him. From a very early age, Washington recalled an intense desire to learn to read and write.

Washington's mother married another slave, who escaped to West Virginia during the Civil War (1861–65; a war in which Northern forces fought against those of the South over, among other things, secession, or the South's desire to leave the Union). She and her three children were liberated (freed) by a Union army in 1865 and, after the war, joined her husband in West Virginia.

Desire to learn

The stepfather put the boys to work in the salt mines in Malden, West Virginia. Booker eagerly asked for education, but his stepfather gave in only when Booker agreed to work in the mines mornings and evenings to make up for earnings lost while in school. He had known only his first name, but when students responded to roll call with two names, Booker desperately added a famous name, becoming Booker Washington. Learning from his mother that he already had a last name, he became Booker T. Washington.

Overhearing talk about an African American college in Hampton, Virginia, Washington longed to attend the school. Meanwhile, as houseboy for the owner of the coal mines and saltworks, he developed sturdy work habits. In 1872 he set out for Hampton Institute. When he ran out of money, he worked at odd jobs. Sleeping under wooden sidewalks, begging rides, and walking, he traveled the remaining eighty miles and, tired and penniless, asked for admission and assistance. After Hampton officials tested him by making him clean a room, he was admitted and given work as a janitor.

Hampton Institute, founded in 1868 by a former Union general, emphasized manual training. The students learned useful trades

WASHINGTON, BOOKER T.



*Booker T. Washington.
Reproduced by permission of the
Fisk University Library.*

and earned their way. Washington studied brickmasonry (laying of bricks) along with other courses. Graduating in 1876, he taught in a school for two years. Studying at Wayland Seminary in Washington, D.C., he became bored with classical education, considering his fellow students to be more interested in making an impression and living off the black masses than in serving mankind. He became convinced that practical, manual training in rural skills and crafts would save his race, not higher learning, which separated the reality of the black man's miserable existence. In 1879 he was invited to teach at

Hampton Institute, particularly to supervise one hundred Native Americans admitted experimentally. He proved a great success in his two years as part of the teaching staff.

Tuskegee Institute

In 1881 citizens in Tuskegee, Alabama, asked Hampton's president to recommend a white man to head their new black college. He suggested Washington instead. The school had an annual legislative appropriation (government money) of two thousand dollars for salaries, but no campus, buildings, students, or staff. Washington had to recruit students and teachers and raise money for land, buildings, and equipment. Hostile rural whites who feared education would ruin black laborers accepted his demonstration that his students' practical training would help improve their usefulness. He and his students built a kiln, an oven used for making bricks, and they erected campus buildings brick by brick.

Under Washington's leadership, Tuskegee Institute became an important force in black education. Tuskegee pioneered in agricultural extension, sending out demonstration wagons that brought better methods to farmers and sharecroppers (farmers who work land owned by another and give a portion of the crop in exchange for the use of the land). Graduates founded numerous "little Tuskegees." African Americans immersed in the poverty of cotton sharecropping improved their farming techniques, income, and living conditions. Washington urged them to become capitalists (business investors), founding the National Negro Business League in 1900. Black agricultural scientist George Washington Carver (c. 1864–1943) worked

at Tuskegee from 1896 to 1943, developing new products from peanuts and sweet potatoes. By 1915 Tuskegee had fifteen hundred students and a larger endowment (designated funds) than any other black institution.

“Atlanta Compromise”

In 1895 Washington gave his famous “Atlanta Compromise” speech. Although he shared the late Frederick Douglass’s (1817–1895) long-range goals of equality (idea that all races are equal) and integration (bringing different races together), Washington criticized disturbing the peace and other protest strategies. He urged black people to drop demands for political and social rights, concentrating instead on improving job skills and usefulness. “The opportunity to earn a dollar in a factory just now is worth infinitely more than the opportunity to spend a dollar in an opera-house,” he said. He appealed to white people to rely on loyal, proven black workers, pointing out that the South would advance to the degree that blacks were allowed to secure education and become productive.

Washington’s position so pleased whites, North and South, that they made him the new black spokesman. He became powerful, having the deciding voice in federal appointments of African Americans and in philanthropic grants (charitable donations) to black institutions. Through subsidies, or secret partnerships, he controlled black newspapers, therefore silencing critics. Impressed by his power and hoping his tactics would work, many black people went along. However, increasingly during his last years, such black intellectuals as W. E. B. Du Bois (1868–1963), John Hope (1868–1936), and William Monroe Trotter (1872–1934) criticized his surren-

der of civil rights (the fight for racial equality) and his stressing of training in crafts, some irrelevant, while forgetting liberal education, which stressed social improvements for black people. Opposition centered in the Niagara Movement, founded in 1905, and the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), which succeeded it in 1910.

Although outwardly calm and nonconfrontational, Washington secretly financed and encouraged attempts and lawsuits to block Southern moves to segregate (to separate black and white Americans) black people and stop them from gaining citizenship. He had lost two wives by death and married a third time in 1893. His death on November 14, 1915, cleared the way for black people to return to Douglass’s tactics of protesting for equal political, social, and economic rights. Washington won a Harvard honorary degree in 1891. His birthplace in Franklin County, Virginia, is now a national monument.

For More Information

- Harlan, Louis R. *Booker T. Washington: The Making of a Black Leader, 1856–1901*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1972.
- Harlan, Louis R. *Booker T. Washington: The Wizard of Tuskegee, 1901–1915*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1983.
- Neyland, James. *Booker T. Washington*. Los Angeles: Melrose Square, 1992.
- Nicholson, Lois P. *Booker T. Washington*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 1997.
- Scott, Emmett S., and Lyman Beecher Stowe. *Booker T. Washington*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1916.

Washington, Booker T. *My Larger Education*. Miami, FL: Mnemosyne Publishers, 1969.

Washington, Booker T. *Up from Slavery*. New York: Doubleday, Page & Co., 1901. Reprint, New York: New American Library, 2000.

GEORGE WASHINGTON

Born: February 22, 1732

Bridges Creek, Virginia

Died: December 14, 1799

Mount Vernon, Virginia

American president, politician, and military leader

George Washington (1732–1799) was commander in chief of the American and French forces in the American Revolution (1775–83) and became the first president of the United States.

Virginia childhood

George Washington was born at Bridges Creek (later known as Wakefield) in Westmoreland County, Virginia, on February 22, 1732. His father died when he was eleven years old, and the boy spent the next few years living in different households throughout Virginia. He lived with his mother near Fredericksburg, with relatives in Westmoreland, and with his half brother in Mount Vernon.

Not much is known about Washington's childhood. Many American children have heard the story of how the young Washing-

ton took a hatchet and cut down a cherry tree, then admitted his deed because his honest character would not allow him to lie. This tale was probably invented by Mason Locke Weems (1759–1825), author of the biography of Washington that appeared the year after his death. At the age of fourteen Washington had planned to join the British navy but then reluctantly stayed home in obedience to his mother's wishes. By the age of sixteen he had obtained a basic education in mathematics, surveying (the process of measuring and plotting land), reading, and the usual subjects of his time. In 1749 Washington was appointed county surveyor, and his experience on the frontier led to his appointment as a major (a military officer who is above a captain) in the Virginia militia (a small military force that is not part of the regular army) in 1752.

French and Indian War

Washington began to advance in the military ranks during the French and Indian War (1754–63), the American portion of a larger conflict between France and Great Britain over control of overseas territory. In America, this conflict involved a struggle between the two countries over a portion of the Ohio River Valley. Before the war began, Virginia governor Robert Dinwiddie (1693–1770) appointed Washington to warn the French moving into the Ohio Valley against invading English territory. Dinwiddie then made Washington a lieutenant colonel (a military officer who is above a major), with orders to dislodge the French at Pennsylvania's Fort Duquesne, but a strong French force beat the Virginia troops. This conflict triggered the beginning of French and Indian War, and

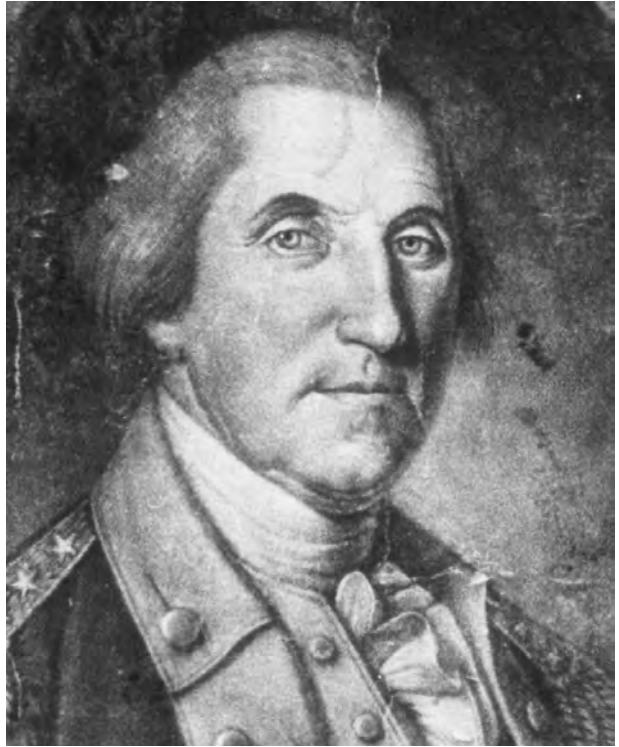
Great Britain dispatched regular troops in 1755 to remove the French by force.

Later in the year, Dinwiddie promoted Washington to colonel (a military officer who is above a lieutenant colonel) and made him commander in chief of all Virginia troops. In 1758 he accompanied British troops on the campaign that forced the French to abandon Ft. Duquesne. With the threat of violence removed, Washington married Martha Custis (1731–1802) and returned to his life at Mount Vernon.

Early political career

Washington had inherited local importance from his family. His grandfather and great-grandfather had been justices of the peace, a powerful county position in eighteenth-century Virginia. His father had served as sheriff, church warden, and justice of the peace. His half-brother Lawrence had been a representative in the Virginia legislature from Fairfax County. George Washington's entry into politics was based on an alliance with the family of Lawrence's father-in-law.

Washington was elected to the Virginia House of Burgesses (an early representative assembly in Virginia) in 1758 as a representative from Frederick County. From 1760 to 1774 he served as a judge of Fairfax County. His experience on the county court and in the colonial legislature molded his views on British taxation of the thirteen American Colonies (which became the first thirteen states of the United States) after 1763. He opposed the Stamp Act (which placed a tax on printed materials) in 1765. In the 1760s he supported the nonimportation of goods (refusal to import goods) as a means of



*George Washington.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.*

reversing British policy. In 1774 he joined the call for a meeting of representatives who would define policies for all thirteen colonies, called the Continental Congress, that would take united colonial action against recent laws directed by the British against Massachusetts.

In July 1774 Washington led the county meeting that was held to adopt the Fairfax Resolves, which he had helped write. These resolves (resolutions) influenced the adoption of the Continental Association, a plan devised by the First Continental Congress (1774) for enforcing nonimportation of British goods. They also proposed the cre-

ation of a militia company in each county that was not under the control of a British-appointed governor. This idea became the basis of the development of the Continental Army, the united military forces of the American colonies fighting the British.

By May 1775 Washington, who headed the Fairfax militia company, had been chosen to command the companies of six other counties. When the Second Continental Congress (1775) met after the battles of Lexington and Concord (the first battles of the Revolution) in Massachusetts, Washington was elected unanimously as commander in chief of all Continental Army forces. From June 15, 1775, until December 23, 1783, he commanded the Continental Army. After the French joined the war on the American side in 1778, it was Washington who headed the combined forces of the United States and France in the War of Independence against Great Britain.

Revolutionary Years

Throughout the Revolutionary years Washington developed military leadership, administrative skills, and political sharpness. From 1775 to 1783 he functioned, in effect, as the chief executive of the United States. His wartime experiences gave him a sense of the importance of a unified position among the former colonies. His writings suggested that he favored a strong central government.

Washington returned to his estates at Mount Vernon at the end of the Revolution. There was little time for relaxation, as he was kept constantly busy with farming, western land interests, and navigation of the Potomac River. Finally, Washington led the proceedings at the Federal Convention in 1787 that

led to ratification, or confirmation, of the new American constitution.

First American president

The position of president of the United States seemed shaped on the generally held belief that Washington would be the first to occupy the office. In a day when executive power was regarded with suspicion, the constitution established an energetic and independent chief executive. Pierce Butler (1744–1822), one of the Founding Fathers, noted that the Federal Convention would not have made the executive powers so great “had not many of the members cast their eyes toward General Washington as President.”

After he was unanimously chosen as president in 1789, Washington helped translate the new Constitution into a workable instrument of government. With his support, the Bill of Rights (a written list of basic rights that are guaranteed to all citizens) was added to the Constitution; an energetic executive branch was established in American government; the departments of state, treasury, and war became official parts of the American president’s cabinet; the federal court system was begun; and Congress’s power to tax was used to raise money to pay the Revolutionary War debt and to establish American credit at home and abroad.

As chief executive, Washington consulted his cabinet on public policy. He presided over their differences, especially those between Thomas Jefferson (1743–1826) and Alexander Hamilton (1755–1804). Jefferson and Hamilton represented two opposing sides of an extremely important debate during this time about the role of a strong federal government in gov-

erning the former British colonies. Hamilton advocated a strong, centralized federal government, whereas Jefferson, fearing that the executive leader would have too much power, pressed for strong states' rights. Hamilton's position is known as the Federalist position; Jefferson's is known as the anti-Federalist or, later, the Republican position (not to be confused with the present-day Republican political party).

Washington approved the Federalist financial program and later, the Hamiltonian proposals, such as funding of the national debt, assumption of the state debts, the establishment of a Bank of the United States, the creation of a national coinage system, and an internal tax on goods. He also presided over the expansion of the federal union from eleven states (North Carolina and Rhode Island ratified [approved] the Constitution after Washington was sworn in as president) to sixteen (Vermont, Kentucky, and Tennessee were admitted between 1791 and 1796). Washington's role as presidential leader was of great importance in winning support for the new government's domestic and foreign policies.

Second term

Despite his unanimous election, Washington expected that the measures of his administration would meet opposition—and they did. By the end of his first term the American political party system was developing. When he mentioned the possibility of retirement in 1792, both Hamilton and Jefferson agreed that he was “the only man in the United States who possessed the confidence of the whole” country and urged him to continue with a second term.

Washington's second term was dominated by foreign-policy considerations. Early in 1793 the French Revolution, which had overthrown the French monarchy in 1789, became the central issue in American politics. France had declared war on Great Britain and appointed Edmond Genet (1763–1834) as minister to the United States. Determined to keep America out of the war and free from European influence, Washington issued a neutrality proclamation (a statement that the United States would not take sides or become involved in the conflict), although the word “neutrality” was not used.

Despite the proclamation, Genet supplied French pirates in American ports and organized expeditions against Florida and Louisiana (which were not then part of the United States). For his undiplomatic conduct, the Washington administration requested and obtained his recall to France. In the midst of the Genet affair, Great Britain began a blockade of France and began seizing neutral ships trading with the French West Indies. Besides violating American neutral rights (the territorial rights of a neutral country), the British still held posts in the American Northwest. The Americans claimed that they plotted with the Indians against the United States.

In 1794 Washington sent John Jay (1745–1829) to negotiate a settlement of the differences between the British and the Americans. Although Jay's Treaty was vastly unpopular—the British agreed to leave the Northwest posts but made no concessions on other key issues—Washington finally accepted it. The treaty also paved the way for a new treaty with Spain, which had feared an alliance of American and British interests against Spain in the Western Hemisphere.

Washington's contributions

Nearly all observers agree that Washington's eight years as president demonstrated that executive power was completely consistent with the spirit of republican government. The term "republican" here refers to the principles of a republic, a form of government in which citizens have supreme power through elected representatives and in which there is no monarchy (hereditary king or queen). Washington put his reputation on the line in a new office under a new Constitution. He realized that in a republic the executive leader, like all other elected representatives, would have to measure his public acts against public opinion. As military commander during the Revolution, he had seen the importance of administrative skills as a means of building public support of the army. As president, he used the same skills to win support for the new federal government.

Despite Washington's dislike of fighting among political "sides," his administrations and policies spurred the beginnings of the first political party system. This ultimately identified Washington with the Federalist party, especially after Jefferson's retirement from the cabinet in 1793.

Retirement

Washington's public service did not end with his retirement from the presidency. During the presidency of John Adams (1735–1826), when America seemed on the brink of a war with France, Adams appointed him commander in chief of the American forces. Washington accepted with the understanding that he would not take field command until troops had been recruited and equipped. Since Adams settled the differences with France by diplomatic negotiations, Washing-

ton never assumed actual command. He continued to live at Mount Vernon, where he died on December 14, 1799.

At the time of Washington's death, Congress unanimously adopted a resolution to erect a marble monument in the nation's capital in honor of his great military and political accomplishments. The Washington Monument was completed in 1884.

For More Information

- Brookhiser, Richard. *Founding Father: Rediscovering George Washington*. New York: Free Press, 1996.
- Clark, E. Harrison. *All Cloudless Glory: The Life of George Washington*. Washington, DC: Regnery Publishers, 1995.
- Emery, Noemie. *Washington, A Biography*. New York: Putnam, 1976.
- Ferling, John E. *Setting the World Ablaze: Washington, Adams, Jefferson, and the American Revolution*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2000.
- Osborne, Mary Pope. *George Washington: Leader of a New Nation*. New York: Dial Books for Young Readers, 1991.
- Rosenburg, John. *First in War: George Washington in the American Revolution*. Brookfield, CT: Millbrook Press, 1998.

**JAMES
WATT**

Born: January 19, 1736
Greenock, Scotland

Died: August 25, 1819

Heathfield, England

Scottish engineer, instrument maker, and inventor

The British instrument maker and engineer James Watt developed an efficient steam engine that was a universal (covering everything) source of power and thereby provided one of the most essential technological parts of the early industrial revolution (a period of rapid economic growth that involved increased reliance on machines and large factories).

Watt's early years

James Watt was born on January 19, 1736, in Greenock, Scotland, the son of a shipwright (a carpenter who builds and fixes ships) and merchant of ships' goods. As a child James suffered from ill health. He attended an elementary school where he learned some geometry as well as Latin and Greek, but he was not well enough to attend regularly. For the most part he was educated by his parents at home. His father taught him writing and arithmetic, and his mother taught him reading.

Of much more interest to James was his father's store, where the boy had his own tools and forge (furnace to shape metals), and where he skillfully made models of the ship's gear that surrounded him. His father taught him how to craft things from wood and metal. He also taught James the skill of instrument making. As a youngster he played with a small carpentry set his father gave him, taking his toys apart, putting them back together, and making new ones.

In 1755 Watt was apprenticed (working for someone to learn a craft) to a London,

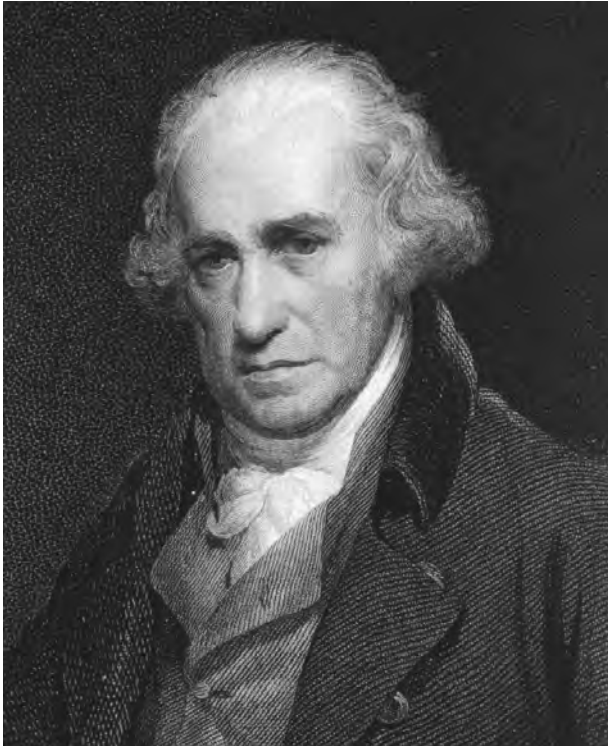
England, mathematical instrument maker. At that time the trade primarily produced navigational (ship steering) and surveying (land measuring) instruments. Watt found London to be unpleasant, however. A year later he returned to Scotland.

Watt wanted to establish himself in Glasgow, Scotland, as an instrument maker. However, restrictions imposed by the tradesmen's guilds (associations of craftsmen) stood in his way. Friends at the University of Glasgow eventually arranged for him to be appointed as "mathematical instrument maker to the university" in late 1757. About this time Watt met Joseph Black, who had already laid the foundation (base) of modern chemistry and of the study of heat. Their friendship was of some importance in the early development of the steam engine.

Invention of the steam engine

At the University of Glasgow, Watt had become engaged in his first studies on the steam engine. During the winter of 1763–64 he was asked to repair the university's model of an earlier model of the steam engine made by Thomas Newcomen around the year 1711. After a few experiments, Watt recognized that the fault with the model rested not so much in the details of its construction as in its design. He found that a volume (amount of space taken up by an object or substance) of steam three or four times the volume of the piston cylinder (chamber with a moving object inside of it) was required to make the piston move to the end of the cylinder.

The solution Watt provided was to keep the piston at the temperature of the steam (by means of a jacket heated by steam) and to condense (make less dense) the steam in a



James Watt.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

separate vessel (chamber) rather than in the piston. Such a separate condenser avoided the large heat losses that resulted from repeatedly heating and cooling the body of the piston, and so engine efficiency was improved.

It took time for Watt to turn a good idea for a commercial invention into reality. A decade passed before Watt solved all the mechanical problems. Black lent him money and introduced him to John Roebuck of the Carron ironworks in Scotland. In 1765 Roebuck and Watt entered into a partnership.

Watt still had to earn his own living but his employment as surveyor of canal construc-

tion left little time for developing his invention. However, Watt did manage to prepare a patent application on his invention, and the patent was granted on January 5, 1769.

By 1773 Roebuck's financial difficulties brought not only Watt's work on the engine to a standstill but also Roebuck's own business. Matthew Boulton, an industrialist (someone who owns and operates a factory) of Birmingham, England, then became Watt's partner. Watt moved to Birmingham. He was now able to work full time on his invention. In 1775 Boulton accepted two orders to build Watt's steam engine. The two engines were set up in 1776 and their success led to many other orders.

Improvements in the steam engine

Between 1781 and 1788 Watt modified and further improved his engine. These changes combined to make as great an advance over his original engine as the latter was over the Newcomen engine. The most important modifications were a more efficient use of the steam, the use of a double-acting piston, the replacement of the flexible chain connection to the beam by the rigid three bar linkage, the provision of another mechanical device to change the reciprocating (back and forth) motion of the beam end to a rotary (circular) motion, and the provision of a device to regulate the speed.

Having devised a new rotary machine, the partners had next to determine the cost of constructing it. These rotary steam engines replaced animal power, and it was only natural that the new engine should be measured in terms of the number of horses it replaced. By using measurements that millwrights (people who build mills), who set up horse gins (ani-

mal-driven wheels), had determined, Watt found the value of one “horse power” to be equal to thirty-three thousand pounds lifted one foot high per minute. This value is still used as the standard for American and English horsepower. The charge of building the new type of steam engine was based upon its horsepower from that time forward.

Other inventions

On Watt’s many business trips, there was always a good deal of correspondence (letters) that had to be copied. To avoid this tiresome task, he devised letter-press copying. This works by writing the original document with a special ink. Copies are then made by simply placing another sheet of paper on the freshly written sheet and then pressing the two together.

Watt’s interests in applied (practical) chemistry led him to introduce chlorine bleaching into Great Britain and to devise a famous iron cement. In theoretical chemistry, he was one of the first to argue that water was not an element (basic substance of matter made up of only one kind of atom) but a compound (substance made up of two or more elements).

In 1794 Watt and Boulton turned over their flourishing business to their sons. Watt maintained a workshop where he continued his inventing activities until he died on August 25, 1819.

Watt’s achievements in perfecting the steam engine have been recognized worldwide. The watt, a unit of electrical power, was named after him.

For More Information

Champion, Neil. *James Watt*. Chicago: Heinemann Library, 2001.

Robinson, Eric, and A. E. Musson. *James Watt and the Steam Revolution*. New York: A. M. Kelley, 1969.

Sproule, Anna. *James Watt: Master of the Steam Engine*. Woodbridge, CT: Blackbirch Press, 2001.

JOHN WAYNE

Born: May 26, 1907

Winterset, Iowa

Died: June 11, 1979

Los Angeles, California

American actor

American actor John Wayne played characters that typically showed a heroic American “can-do” spirit in over seventy-five films, mostly Westerns and war movies. He is considered an icon in American film.

“The Duke”

John Wayne was born Marion Mitchell Morrison, of Scotch-Irish descent, to Clyde and Mary Morrison on May 26, 1907, in Winterset, Iowa. He had one brother, Robert Emmet Morrison. He received his nickname “Duke” while still a child, because of his love for a dog of that name. His father was a pharmacist whose business ventures did not succeed. In 1914, when Duke was six, the family moved to California where his father was able to open a drugstore. In 1926 his parents were divorced.



John Wayne.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

From the age of twelve Duke helped his father at his drugstore in his spare time. He also supported himself with a variety of odd jobs, including stints as a delivery boy and as a trucker's helper. At first he aspired to attend the Naval Academy and become a naval officer but things did not work out as planned. Fortunately, he was a star football player on the Glendale High School team, and he was accepted at the University of Southern California on a football scholarship. But an accident soon ended his playing career and scholarship. Without funds to support himself, he left the university in 1927 after two years there.

In college Duke worked at the Fox studio lots in Los Angeles, California, as a laborer, prop boy, and extra. While doing so he met director John Ford (1895–1973), who took an interest in him (and would over the years have a major impact on his career). In 1928, after working at various odd jobs for some months, he was again employed at the Fox studios, mostly as a laborer but also as an extra and bit player. His efforts generally went unbilled, but he did receive his first screen credit as Duke Morrison.

Becoming "John Wayne"

Wayne's first real break came in 1929, when through the intervention of Ford he was cast as the lead in a major Fox production, the Western movie *The Big Trail*. According to some biographers, Fox executives found his name inappropriate and changed it to John Wayne, the last name being taken from the American Revolutionary general "Mad Anthony" Wayne.

The Big Trail was not a success and Fox soon dropped Wayne. During the 1930s he worked at various studios, mostly those on what was known as "Poverty Row." Wayne appeared in over fifty feature films and serials, mostly Westerns. He even appeared in some films as "Singing Sandy." Tall, likeable, able to do his own stunts, it appeared that he was doomed to be a leading player in low-budget films.

However, thanks to Ford, with whom Wayne had remained friends, he was cast as the lead in the director's film *Stagecoach*, a 1939 Western that became a hit and a classic. This film was a turning point in Wayne's career. And although it took time for him to develop the mythic-hero image which pro-

pelled him to the top of the box office chart, he was voted by movie exhibitors as one of the Top Ten box office attractions of the year—a position he maintained for twenty-three of the next twenty-four years.

Superstar

Wayne appeared in over seventy-five films between 1939 and 1976 when *The Shootist*, his last film, a Western, was released. In the vast majority of these films he was a man of action, be it in the American West or in U.S. wars of the twentieth century. As an actor he had a marvelous sense of timing and of his own persona, but comedy was not his specialty. Action was the essence of his films. Indeed, critics have repeatedly emphasized the manner in which he represented a particular kind of “American Spirit.”

As a box-office superstar Wayne had his choice of roles and vehicles, but he chose to remain with the types of films he knew best. As the years passed his only admission to age was from the roles he played. He went from wooing leading ladies, such as Marlene Dietrich (1901–1992) (*Pittsburgh*, 1942), Gail Russell (*Angel and the Badman*, 1947), and Patricia Neal (*Operation Pacific*, 1951) to more mature roles as a rowdy father figure (*McClintock*, 1963), an older brother (*The Sons of Katie Elder*, 1965), and a kind marshal (*Rio Lobo*, 1970).

Wayne's politics were not always right-of-center, but in the latter part of his life he became known for his anticommunism (a political theory where goods and services are owned and distributed by a strong central government) activities. His conservatism began in the mid-1940s. He served as head of the anticommunist Motion Picture Alliance

for the Preservation of American Ideals; supported various conservative Republican politicians, including Barry Goldwater and Richard Nixon (1913–1994); and spoke out forcefully on behalf of various causes such as American participation in the Vietnam War (1955–75; when American forces aided South Vietnam with their struggle against North Vietnam).

Later career

Wayne's politics also influenced his activities as a producer and director. Wayne's production companies made all kinds of films, but among them were *Big Jim McClain* (1951), in which he starred as a process server for the House Un-American Activities Committee fighting communists in Hawaii, and *Blood Alley* (1955), in which he played an American who helps a village to escape from the Communist Chinese mainland to Formosa. The two films that Wayne directed also are representative of his politics: *The Alamo* (1960) is an epic film about a heroic last stand by a group of Texans in their fight for independence against Mexico and included some preaching by the Wayne character about democracy as he saw it; and *The Green Berets* (1968), in which Wayne played a colonel leading troops against the North Vietnamese, which was an outspoken vehicle in support of America's role in the war.

Wayne was married three times. He had four daughters and three sons by two of his wives (Josephine Saenez, 1933–1945, and Pilar Palette Weldy, after 1954). His second wife was Esperanza Diaz Ceballos Morrison (1946–1954). Wayne was the recipient of many awards during his career, including an Oscar for his role as the hard-drinking, one-

eyed, tough law man in *True Grit* (1969) and an Academy Award nomination for his playing of the career marine in *Sands of Iwo Jima* (1949). Plagued by various illnesses during the last few years of his life, he publicly announced his triumph over lung cancer in 1964. But a form of that disease eventually claimed his life on June 11, 1979.

For More Information

Davis, Ronald L. *Duke: The Life and Image of John Wayne*. Norman: University of Oklahoma Press, 1998.

Levy, Emanuel. *John Wayne: Prophet of the American Way of Life*. Metuchen, NJ: Scarecrow Press, 1988.

McGhee, Richard D. *John Wayne: Actor, Artist, Hero*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland, 1990.

Roberts, Randy, and James S. Olson. *John Wayne: American*. New York: Free Press, 1995.

Shepherd, Donald, and Robert Slatzer with Dave Grayson. *Duke: The Life and Times of John Wayne*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1985.

DANIEL WEBSTER

Born: January 18, 1782

Salisbury, New Hampshire

Died: October 24, 1852

Marshfield, Massachusetts

American orator and lawyer

Daniel Webster, a notable public speaker and leading constitutional lawyer, was a major congressional spokesman for the Northern Whigs during his twenty years in the U.S. Senate.

Childhood

Daniel Webster was born in Salisbury, New Hampshire, on January 18, 1782. His parents were Ebenezer, who worked as a tavern owner and a farmer and was also involved in politics, and his second wife, Abigail. While a child, Daniel earned the nickname "Black Dan" for his dark skin and black hair and eyes. The second youngest of ten children, Daniel developed a passion for reading and learning at a young age. His formal education began in 1796 when he started at Phillips Academy in Exeter. Then when he was fifteen, Daniel went on to Dartmouth College.

After graduating from Dartmouth, Daniel studied law and was admitted to the bar (an organization for lawyers) in 1805. He opened a law office in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, in 1807, where his success was immediate. He became a noted spokesman for the Federalists (a leading political party that believed in a strong federal government) through his addresses on patriotic occasions. In 1808 he married Grace Fletcher.

Early years in politics

Elected to the U.S. House of Representatives in 1813, Webster reenergized the Federalist minority with his attacks on the war policy of the Republicans, the opposing political party. Under his leadership the Federalists often successfully obstructed war measures.

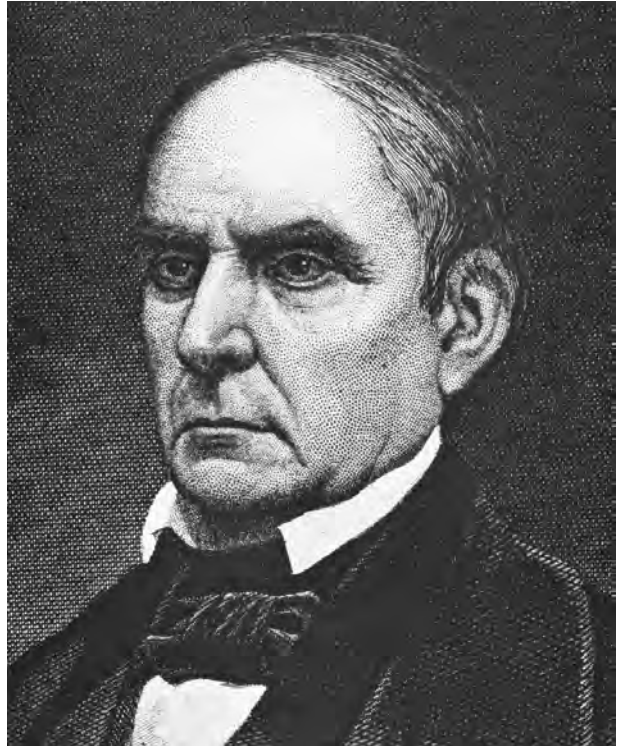
After the War of 1812, when American and British forces clashed over shipping rites, he called for the restructuring of the Bank of the United States, but he voted against the final bill, which he considered defective. As the representative of a region where shipping was basic to the economy, he voted against the protective tariff (tax).

Webster left politics for a while when he moved to Boston, Massachusetts. As a result of his success in pleading before the U.S. Supreme Court, Webster's fame as a lawyer grew, and soon his annual income rose to fifteen thousand dollars a year. In 1819 Webster secured a triumph in defending the Bank of the United States in *McCulloch v. Maryland*. On this occasion Supreme Court Chief Justice John Marshall drew from Webster's brief the belief that the power to tax is the power to destroy. In 1824 Webster was also successful on behalf of his clients in *Gibbons v. Ogden*.

When Webster returned to the U.S. House of Representatives in 1823, his speeches began to attract national attention. From 1825 to 1829 Webster was one of the most faithful backers of President John Quincy Adams (1767–1848), supporting federal internal improvements and supporting Adams in his conflict with Georgia over the removal of the Cherokee Indians.

The Senator

When Webster was elected to the Senate in 1827, he made the first about-face in his career when he became a champion of the protective tariff. This shift reflected the growing importance of manufacturing in Massachusetts and his own close involvement with factory owners both as clients and as friends. It was largely due to his support that the "Tar-



Daniel Webster.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

iff of Abominations" was passed in 1828. His first wife died shortly after he entered the Senate, and in 1829 he married Catherine Le Roy of New York City.

In January 1830 Webster electrified the nation by his speeches in response to the elaborate explanations of the Southern states' rights doctrines (teachings) made by Senator Robert Y. Hayne of South Carolina. In memorable phrases Webster exposed the weaknesses in Hayne's views and argued that the Constitution (the document that states the principles of the American government) and the Union rested upon the people and not upon the states. These speeches, delivered

before crowded Senate galleries, defined the constitutional issues which disturbed the nation for nearly thirty years.

The person

Webster was at the height of his powers in 1830. Regarded by others as one of the greatest orators (public speakers) of the day, he delivered his speeches with tremendous dramatic impact. Yet in spite of his emotional style and the passionate character of his speeches, he rarely sacrificed logic for effect. His striking appearance contributed to the forcefulness of his delivery. Tall, rather thin, and always clad in black, Webster's face was dominated by deep, luminous black eyes under craggy brows and a shock of black hair combed straight back.

In private Webster was more approachable. He was fond of gatherings and was a lively talker, although at times given to silent moods. His taste for luxury often led him to live beyond his means. While his admirers worshiped the "Godlike Daniel," his critics thought his constant need for money deprived him of his independence. During the Panic of 1837, a desperate financial crisis resulting from the expansion into western lands, he was in such desperate circumstances as a result of excessive investments in western lands that only loans from business friends saved him from ruin. Again, in 1844, when it seemed financial pressure might force him to leave the Senate, he permitted his friends to raise a fund to provide him with an income.

Secretary of State

Webster was one of the leaders of the anti-Andrew Jackson (1767–1845) forces

that came together in the Whig party, a political party which opposed Jackson's Democrats. Regardless, Webster did endorse President Jackson's stand during the nullification crisis in 1832, where several states threatened to leave the Union unless granted the right to "nullify," or make void, certain federal laws. In 1836 the Massachusetts Whigs named Webster as their presidential candidate, but in a field against other Whig candidates he polled only the electoral votes of Massachusetts. In recognition of his standing in the party and in gratitude for his support during the campaign, President William Henry Harrison (1773–1841) appointed him secretary of state in 1841. He continued in this post under John Tyler (1790–1862), who succeeded to the presidency when Harrison died a month after he was sworn in as president. Among other accomplishments, Webster sent Caleb Cushing (1800–1879) to the Orient (Far East) to establish commercial relations with China, although he was no longer in office when Cushing concluded the agreement. Late in 1843 Webster, feeling that he no longer enjoyed Tyler's confidence, gave in to Whig pressure and retired from office.

Webster, in spite of his disappointment at not receiving the presidential nomination in 1844, actively campaigned for Henry Clay (1777–1852), his rival within the party. On his return to the Senate in 1844, Webster opposed the annexation (acception into the Union) of Texas and as well as the expansionist policies that peaked in the war with Mexico (1846–48), when American forces clashed with Mexico over western lands. After the war he worked to remove slavery from the newly acquired territories which resulted in the Wilmot Proviso.

Although Northern businessmen agreed, the average citizen was outraged over Webster's speech of March 1850 in defense of the new Fugitive Slave Law, a law that provided for the return of escaped slaves. Webster again became secretary of state in July 1850, in Millard Fillmore's Cabinet. In 1852 he lost his last hope for the presidency when the Whigs passed over him in favor of General Winfield Scott (1786–1866), a former Democrat. Deeply outraged, he refused to support the party candidate. He died just before the election on October 24, 1852.

For More Information

Baxter, Maurice G. *One and Inseparable: Daniel Webster and the Union*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1984.

Lodge, Henry Cabot. *Daniel Webster*. Boston: Houghton, Mifflin, 1883. Reprint, New York: Chelsea House, 1981.

Peterson, Merrill D. *The Great Triumvirate: Webster, Clay, and Calhoun*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1987.

Remini, Robert V. *Daniel Webster: The Man and His Time*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1997.

NOAH WEBSTER

Born: October 16, 1758

West Hartford, Connecticut

Died: May 23, 1843

New Haven, Connecticut

American lexicographer

Noah Webster, American lexicographer (one who compiles a dictionary), remembered now almost solely as the compiler of a continuously successful dictionary, was for half a century among the more influential and most active literary men in the United States.

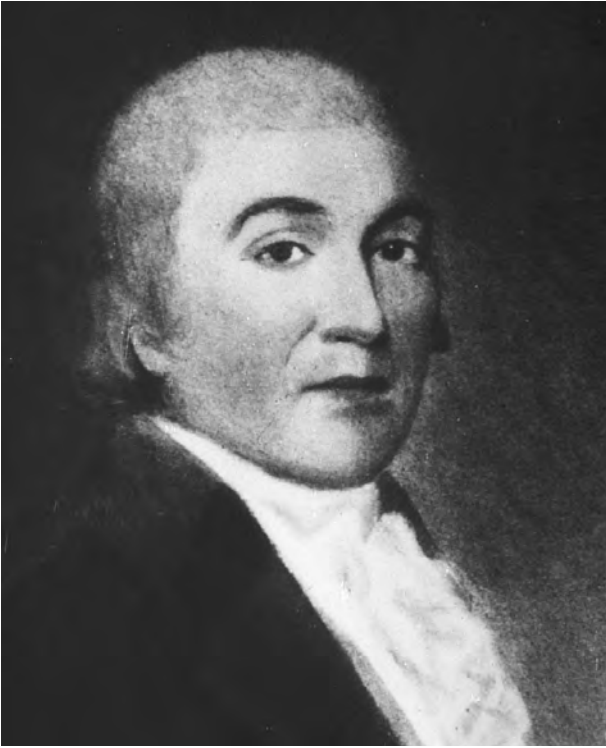
Early life

Noah Webster was born on October 16, 1758, in West Hartford, Connecticut. The fourth son of five children of Noah and Mercy Steele Webster, young Noah showed exceptional scholarly talents as a child, and his father sacrificed much in order that his son would gain the best education available.

In 1774, at age sixteen, Webster entered Yale College, sharing literary ambitions with his classmate Joel Barlow and tutor Timothy Dwight. His college years were interrupted by terms of military service. After his graduation in 1778, Noah began studying law, but because his father could no longer support him, he took a job as a schoolmaster in Hartford, Litchfield, and Sharon, all in Connecticut. Meanwhile, he read widely and studied law. He was admitted to the bar (an association for lawyers) and received his master of arts degree in 1781. Dissatisfied with the British-made textbooks available for teaching, he determined to produce his own. He had, he said, "too much pride to stand indebted to Great Britain for books to learn our children."

Schoolmaster to America

Webster soon developed the first of his long series of American schoolbooks, a speller titled *A Grammatical Institute of the English*



Noah Webster.

Courtesy of the National Archives and Records Administration.

Language, Part I (1783). Known for generations simply as *The Blue-back Speller*, it was in use for more than a century and sold over seventy million copies. His book's effect on students is said to have been unequalled in the history of American elementary education. Part II of the *Grammatical Institute*, a grammar, reprinted often under various titles, appeared in 1784. Part III, a reader, in the original 1785 edition included sections from yet-unpublished poetry by Dwight and Barlow. Though the reader had a shorter life and more vigorous competition than other parts of the *Institute*, it set a patriotic (having to do with the

love for one's country) and moralistic (having to do with right and wrong) pattern followed by rival books, some of which were thought to attract attention because they were more religiously orientated. Webster stressed what he called the "art of reading" in later volumes, including two secularized (nonreligious) versions of *The New England Primer* (1789, 1801), *The Little Reader's Assistant* (1790), *The Elementary Primer* (1831), and *The Little Franklin* (1836).

Webster toured the United States from Maine to Georgia selling his textbooks, convinced that "America must be as independent in *literature* as she is in *politics*, as famous for *arts* as for *arms*," but that to accomplish this she must protect by copyright (the legal right of artistic work) the literary products of her countrymen. He pleaded so effectively that uniform copyright laws were passed early in most of the states, and it was largely through his continuing effort that Congress in 1831 passed a bill which ensured protection to writers. On his travels he also peddled (sold from door to door) his *Sketches of American Policy* (1785), a vigorous plea on behalf of the Federalists, a then-popular political party that believed in a strong central government. In Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, where he paused briefly to teach school and see new editions of his *Institute* through the press, he published his politically effective *An Examination into the Leading Principles of the Federal Constitution* (1787).

In New York City, Webster established the *American Magazine* (1787–88), which he hoped might become a national periodical (magazine distributed regularly). In it he pled for American intellectual independence, education for women, and the support of Feder-

alist ideas. Though it survived for only twelve monthly issues, it is remembered as one of the most lively, bravely adventuresome of early American periodicals. He continued as a political journalist with such pamphlets as *The Effects of Slavery on Morals and Industry* (1793), *The Revolution in France* (1794), and *The Rights of Neutral Nations* (1802).

Language reform

But Webster's principal interest became language reform, or improvement. As he set forth his ideas in *Dissertations on the English Language* (1789), theatre should be spelled theater; machine, masheen; plough, plow; draught, draft. For a time he put forward claims for such reform in his readers and spellers and in his *Collection of Essays and Fugitiv [sic] Writings* (1790), which encouraged "reezoning," "yung" persons, "reeding," and a "zeel" for "lerning"; but he was too careful a Yankee to allow odd behavior to stand in the way of profit. In *The Prompter* (1790) he quietly lectured his countrymen in corrective essays written plainly, in a simple and to-the-point style.

After Webster married in 1789, he practiced law in Hartford for four years before returning to New York City to edit the city's first daily newspaper, the *American Minerva* (1793–98). Tiring of the controversy (open to dispute) brought on by his forthright expression of Federalist opinion, he retired to New Haven, Connecticut, to write *A Brief History of Epidemic and Pestilential Diseases* (1899) and to put together a volume of *Miscellaneous Papers* (1802).

The dictionaries

From this time on, Webster gave most of his attention to preparing more schoolbooks,

including *A Philosophical and Practical Grammar of the English Language* (1807). But he was primarily concerned with assembling *A Compendious Dictionary of the English Language* (1806); its shorter version, *A Dictionary . . . Compiled for the Use of Common Schools* (1807, revised 1817); and finally, in two volumes, *An American Dictionary of the English Language* (1828). In range this last surpassed (went beyond) any dictionary of its time. A second edition, "corrected and enlarged" (1841), became known popularly as *Webster's Unabridged*. Conservative contemporaries (people of the same time or period), alarmed at its unorthodoxies (untraditional) in spelling, usage, and pronunciation and its proud inclusion of Americanisms, dubbed the work as "Noah's Ark." However, after Webster's death the rights were sold in 1847 to George and Charles Merriam, printers in Worcester, Massachusetts; and the dictionary has become, through many revisions, the foundation and defender of effective American lexicography.

Webster's other late writings included *A History of the United States* (1832), a version of the Bible (1832) cleansed of all words and phrases dangerous to children or "offensive especially to females," and a final *Collection of Papers on Political, Literary and Moral Subjects* (1843). Tall, redheaded, lanky, humorless, he was the butt of many cruel criticisms in his time. Noah Webster died in New Haven on May 23, 1843.

For More Information

Micklethwait, David. *Noah Webster and the American Dictionary*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland, 2000.

Moss, Richard J. *Noah Webster*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1984.

Rollins, Richard M. *The Long Journey of Noah Webster*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1980.

Snyder, K. Alan. *Defining Noah Webster*. Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 1990.

Unger, Harlow G. *Noah Webster: The Life and Times of an American Patriot*. New York: John Wiley & Sons, 1998.

ORSON WELLES

Born: May 16, 1915

Kenosha, Wisconsin

Died: October 10, 1985

Los Angeles, California

American actor, writer, and director

Orson Welles was a Broadway and Hollywood actor, radio actor, and film director. His earliest film production, *Citizen Kane*, was his most famous, although most of his other productions were notable as well.

Early life and education

Orson Welles was born George Orson Welles in Kenosha, Wisconsin, on May 6, 1915, the second son of Richard Welles, an inventor, and Beatrice Ives, a concert pianist. The name George was soon dropped. The family moved to Chicago, Illinois, when Welles was four, and two years later his parents separated formally. The comfortable family life in which Orson was born gradu-

ally fell apart. Orson lived with his mother for the next few years and was deeply involved with her artistic lifestyle. Upon her death, his father resumed the task of continuing the eight-year-old Orson's education. An important early influence on his life was Maurice Bernstein, an orthopedist who would eventually be his guardian after his father's suicide in 1928. Upon Dr. Bernstein's suggestion, young Orson was enrolled in the progressive Todd School in Woodstock, Illinois. There, Orson was first introduced to theater and learned a great deal about production and direction. His formal education ended with graduation in 1931.

After a short stay in Ireland, where Welles was involved in the theater as an actor, he returned to Chicago where he briefly served as a drama coach at the Todd School and coedited four volumes of plays by William Shakespeare (1564–1616). He made his Broadway debut with Katharine Cornell's company in December 1934. He and John Houseman (1902–1988) joined forces the next year to manage a unit of the Federal Theatre Project, one of the work-relief arts projects established by the New Deal, a major nationwide social program intended to spark economic recovery during the 1930s. Welles's direction was inspired, injecting new life into various classics, including an all-African American *Macbeth*, the French farce (humorous ridicule) *The Italian Straw Hat*, and the morality (having to do with right and wrong) play *Dr. Faustus*.

The Mercury Theatre

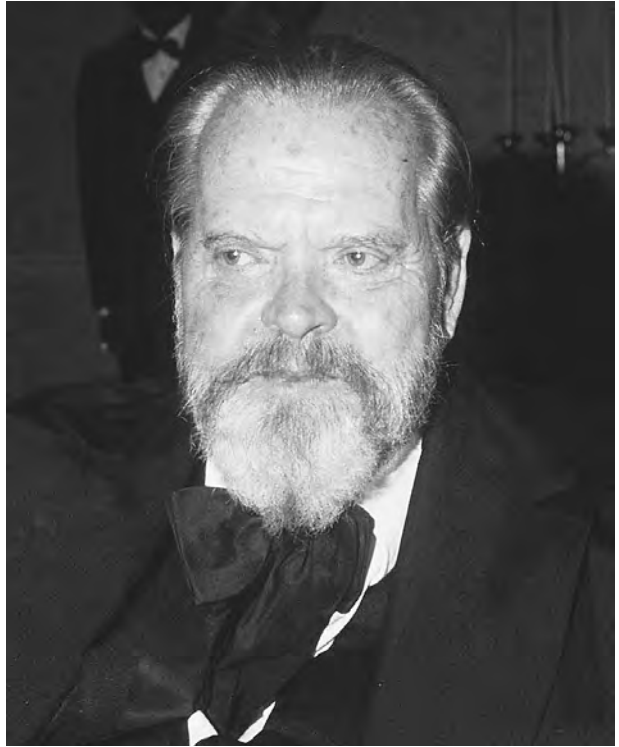
Welles and Houseman broke with the Federal Theatre Project over its attempt to shut down their June 1937 production of

Marc Blitzstein's pro-labor *The Cradle Will Rock*. They organized the Mercury Theatre, which over the next two seasons had a number of extraordinary successes, including a modern dress *Julius Caesar* (with Welles playing Brutus), an Elizabethan working-class comedy *Shoemaker's Holiday* (rewritten by Welles), and George Bernard Shaw's (1856–1950) *Heartbreak House* (with the twenty-four-year-old Welles convincingly playing an elderly man). Welles also found time to play "The Shadow" on radio and to supervise a "Mercury Theatre on the Air," whose most notorious success was an adaptation of H. G. Wells's (1866–1946) *War of the Worlds*, which resulted in panic as many listeners believed that Martians were invading New Jersey.

In 1939 the Mercury Theatre collapsed as a result of economic problems and Welles went to Hollywood, California, to find the cash to resurrect it. Except for a stirring dramatization of Richard Wright's (1908–1960) *Native Son* in 1940, an unhappy attempt to stage Jules Verne's (1828–1905) *Around the World in 80 Days* (music and lyrics by Cole Porter (c.1891–1964) in 1946, and an unsatisfactory *King Lear* in 1956, his Broadway career was over. He did continue theater activity overseas: during the 1950s he successfully staged *Moby Dick* in England, directed Laurence Olivier (1907–1989) in the London production of Eugène Ionesco's *Rhinoceros*, and wrote a script for the Roland Petit ballet.

Citizen Kane and other films

Following an early flirtation with movies and after casting around some months for a subject, Welles filmed *Citizen Kane* in 1939



Orson Welles.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

and 1940. Since its release in 1941 this film has generally been praised as one of the best movies of all time. It is a fascinating study of a newspaper publisher. Controversy surrounds the production of this film, which Welles is credited with producing, directing, and coscripting. He also played the leading role. However one views the making of this film, there is no doubt about his role as its catalyst (a provider of action or quick change).

Years later Welles declared "I began at the top and have been making my way down ever since." All the films he directed are of interest, but none matched his initial achieve-

ment of *Citizen Kane*. Among his other films are *The Magnificent Ambersons* (1942), *The Lady From Shanghai* (1946), *Othello* (1952), *Touch of Evil* (1958), *The Trial* (1962), and *F Is for Fake* (1973). Most of these films have been marked by disputes and Welles often disowned the final version. His critics argue that a self-destructive tendency caused these problems and cite his experiences with the unfinished *It's All True*, which he embarked on in Brazil in 1942 before finishing the final editing of *The Magnificent Ambersons*. But his supporters called it a destroyed masterpiece (in his absence, one hundred thirty-one minutes were edited down to a final release print of eighty-eight minutes).

A somewhat hammy actor with a magnificent voice, Welles appeared in over forty-five films besides his own. In some of these films, such as *The Third Man* (1949) and *Compulsion* (1959), he was superb. But all too many were junk movies such as *Black Magic* (1949) and *The Tartars* (1960). He accepted these so that he might earn the funds necessary to finance films of his own such as *Chimes at Midnight* (released in 1966, a film based on various Shakespeare plays).

Later career

For various reasons Welles left the United States after World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis: Italy, Japan, and Germany—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States), and for three decades lived a kind of uprooted existence abroad, with occasional visits back to America for movie assignments or other work. An intelligent individual with many interests, Welles during World War II had put in a stint as a columnist at the liberal *New*

York Post and later gave some thought to a political career. During the latter part of his life, despite being dogged by ill health, he earned a comfortable living doing television commercials for companies such as Paul Masson wines, putting much of what he earned into the production of various films, including *The Other Side of the Wind* (which dealt with an old filmmaker and which was unfinished at the time of his death as well as being involved in litigation, or legal matters). A superb storyteller, Welles—after moving back to the United States in the mid-1970s—was much in demand as a guest on television talk shows.

Married three times, Welles had children with each wife: Virginia Nicolson (Christopher), Rita Hayworth (Rebecca), and his widow Paola Mori (Beatrice). He had many friends in his lifetime, including Oja Kodar, a Yugoslav artist who was his companion and assistant from the mid-1960s onward. Welles shared an Academy Award for the script of *Citizen Kane* and in 1975 was honored by the American Film Institute with a Life Achievement Award. His other awards include a 1958 Peabody Award for a TV pilot. Welles died of a heart attack on October 10, 1985.

For More Information

- Carringer, Roger. *The Making of Citizen Kane*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1985.
- Higham, Charles. *Orson Welles: The Rise and Fall of an American Genius*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1985.
- Leaming, Barbara. *Orson Welles, a Biography*. New York: Viking, 1985.

Taylor, John Russell. *Orson Welles: A Celebration*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1986.

Thomson, David. *Rosebud: The Story of Orson Welles*. New York: Knopf, 1996.

Welles, Orson, and Peter Bogdanovich. *This Is Orson Welles*. New York: Harper-Collins, 1992.

EUDORA WELTY

Born: April 13, 1909

Jackson, Mississippi

Died: July 22, 2001

Jackson, Mississippi

American writer and editor

Eudora Welty is considered one of the most important authors of the twentieth century. Although the majority of her stories are set in the American South and reflect the region's language and culture, critics agree that Welty's treatment of universal (covering or including all) themes and her wide-ranging artistic influences clearly cross all regional boundaries.

Southern childhood

Eudora Alice Welty, the oldest of her family's three children and the only girl, was born on April 13, 1909, in Jackson, Mississippi. That neither of her parents came from the Deep South may have given her some detachment from her culture and helped her become a careful observer of its manners. Her father, Christian Welty, had been raised on a

farm in Ohio and had become a country school teacher in West Virginia. Marrying a fellow teacher, Chestina Andrews, he moved to Jackson to improve his fortunes by entering business. From bookkeeper in an insurance company, he eventually advanced to president. Welty described hers as a happy childhood in a close-knit, bookish family. One of her earliest memories was the sound of her parents' voices reading favorite books to one another in the evenings.

Welty's education in the Jackson schools was followed by two years at Mississippi State College for Women between 1925 and 1927, and then by two more years at the University of Wisconsin and a bachelor of arts degree in 1929. Her father, who believed that she could never earn a living by writing stories, encouraged her to study advertising at the Columbia University Graduate School of Business in New York City during 1930 and 1931. The years in Wisconsin and New York broadened Welty's horizons, and the time she spent in New York City was especially meaningful for it was during the peak of The Harlem Renaissance, an artistic awakening that produced many African American artists. Welty and her friends went to dances in Harlem clubs and to musical and theatrical performances all over the city.

Welty returned to Jackson in 1931 after her father's death and worked as a part-time journalist, copywriter, and photographer for the Works Progress Administration (WPA), which was aimed at providing jobs for writers. The latter job took her on assignments throughout Mississippi, and she began using these experiences as material for short stories. In June 1936, her story "Death of a Traveling Salesman" was accepted for publication



Eudora Welty.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

in the journal *Manuscript*, and within two years her work had appeared in such respected publications as the *Atlantic* and the *Southern Review*.

Produces fiction

Critical response to Welty's first collection of stories, *A Curtain of Green* (1941), was highly favorable, with many commentators predicting that a first performance so impressive would no doubt lead to even greater achievements. Yet when *The Wide Net, and Other Stories* was published two years later, critics were split as some praised the work and others slammed it.

As Welty continued to develop her vision her fictional techniques gained wider acceptance. Indeed, her most complex and highly symbolic collection of stories, *The Golden Apples*, won critical acclaim, and she received a number of prizes and awards throughout the following decade, including the William Dean Howells Medal of the Academy of Arts and Letters for her novella *The Ponder Heart* (1954).

Occupied primarily with teaching, traveling, and lecturing between 1955 and 1970, Welty produced little fiction. These were years of personal difficulty, as she nursed her mother through a long fatal illness and lost both of her brothers. She was nevertheless at work on long projects, notably *Losing Battles*, which she continued to shape for a decade. Then, in the early 1970s, she published two novels, *Losing Battles* (1970), which received mixed reviews, and the more critically successful *The Optimist's Daughter* (1972), which won a Pulitzer Prize.

Although Welty had published no new volumes of short stories since *The Bride of Innisfallen* in 1955, the release of her *Collected Stories* in 1980 renewed interest in her short fiction and brought all-around praise. In addition, the 1984 publication of Welty's *One Writer's Beginnings*, an autobiographical (having to do with a book written about oneself) work describing her own artistic development, further clarified her work and inspired critics to reinterpret many of her stories. She continued to protect the essential privacy of her daily life, however, by discouraging biographic inquiries, carefully screening interviews, and devoting most of her energies to her work. During the later 1970s this work consisted largely of collecting her nonfiction

writings for publication as *The Eye of the Story* and of assembling her short stories as *The Collected Stories of Eudora Welty*. With these two important collections she rounded out the shape of her life's work in literary commentary and fiction.

Later career

An invitation to give a series of lectures at Harvard in 1983 resulted in the three autobiographical pieces published as *One Writer's Beginnings* the next year. Perhaps because she wished to forestall (keep away) potential biographers or because she came to accept public interest in a writer's early experiences in shaping her vision, Welty provided in *One Writer's Beginnings* a recreation of the world that nourished her own imagination. Characteristically, however, she left out family difficulties and other personal matters, focusing instead on the family love of books and storytelling, the values and examples her parents provided, and the physical sensations of life in Jackson that influenced her literary sensitivities.

Welty's fictional chronicle of Mississippi life adds a major comic vision to American literature, a vision that supports the power of community and family life and at the same time explores the need for peace. In his 1944 essay, Robert Penn Warren (1905–1989) identifies these twin themes in Welty's work as love and separateness. While much of modern American fiction has focused on isolation and the failure of love, Welty's stories show how tolerance and generosity allow people to adapt to each other's weaknesses and to painful change. Welty's fiction particularly celebrates the love of men and women, the fleeting joys of childhood, and

the many dimensions and stages of women's lives.

With the publication of *The Eye of the Story* and *The Collected Stories*, Eudora Welty achieved the recognition she has long deserved as an important American fiction writer. Her position was confirmed in 1984 when her autobiographical *One Writer's Beginnings* made the best-seller lists with sales over one hundred thousand copies. During the early decades of her career, she was respected by fellow writers but often dismissed by critics as an oversensitive "feminine" writer. The late 1970s and 1980s, however, saw a critical reevaluation (the act of examining the same thing over again) of her work.

In August of 2000, *Country Churchyards*, with photographs by Welty, excerpts from her previous writings, and new essays by other writers, was published. Welty was inducted into the National Women's Hall of Fame in Seneca Falls, New York, on October 7, 2000. Welty died at the age of ninety-two on July 22, 2001, in Jackson, Mississippi.

For More Information

- Aevlin, Albert J. *Welty: A Life in Literature*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 1987.
- Carson, Barbara Harrell. *Eudora Welty: Two Pictures at Once in Her Frame*. Troy, NY: Whitston, 1992.
- MacNeil, Robert. *Eudora Welty: Seeing Black and White*. Jackson: University of Press of Mississippi, 1990.
- Welty, Eudora. *One Writer's Beginnings*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1984.



Edith Wharton.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

EDITH WHARTON

Born: January 24, c. 1861

New York, New York

Died: August 11, 1937

Paris, France

American author

Edith Wharton, American author, chronicled the life of upper-class Americans between the late nineteenth to early twentieth century. She is best known for her novels *The House of Mirth* and *The Age of Innocence*.

Childhood

Edith Wharton was born Edith Newbold Jones in New York City, on January 24, probably in 1861. Like many other biographical facts, she kept her birth year secret. Gossip held that the family's English tutor—not George Frederic Jones—was really Edith's father. The truth may never be known, but Edith evidently believed the story. After the Civil War (1861–65), when Northern forces clashed with those of the South, George Jones took his family to Europe, where they could have a better quality of life. In Europe, young Edith began to develop her love of literature and writing.

Back in New York City, by the age of eighteen Edith had published poems in magazines and in a privately printed volume and had experimented with fiction. However, events put off her writing career. The family's second long European trip ended in her father's death. In New York City again, she evidently fell in love with Walter Berry; yet she became engaged to Edward Wharton, eleven years her senior and a wealthy Bostonian. They were married in 1885.

Time to write

Marriage brought Edith Wharton two things she valued most, travel and leisure for writing. In the early 1890s her stories began appearing in magazines, but her first commercial success was a book written with an architect, *The Decoration of Houses* (1897). She sought help on it from Walter Berry, who remained in some uncertain way part of her life until his death in 1927. Soon after this book, Wharton suffered a nervous breakdown. For therapy her physician suggested she write fiction. In 1899 a collection of sto-

ries, *The Greater Inclination*, appeared—the first of her thirty-two volumes of fiction.

In 1905, after Wharton began her friendship with writer Henry James (1843–1916), her first masterpiece, *The House of Mirth*, laid bare the cruelties of the New York City society. Her range was apparent in *Tales of Men and Ghosts* (1910), a collection of chillers, and in the celebrated novella *Ethan Frome* (1911). In 1910 the Whartons moved to France, where Edward Wharton suffered a nervous breakdown and was placed in a sanatorium, a hospital for the mentally unstable. After their divorce in 1913, Edith Wharton stayed in France, writing lovingly about it in *French Ways and Their Meanings* (1919) and other books.

The Age of Innocence, a splendid novel of New York, won the Pulitzer Prize (1921), and a dramatization of Wharton's novella *The Old Maid* won the Pulitzer Prize for drama (1935). Edith Wharton died of a heart attack on August 11, 1937, and was buried in Versailles, France, next to Walter Berry.

For More Information

Dwight, Eleanor. *Edith Wharton: An Extraordinary Life*. New York: Abrams, 1994.

Joslin, Katherine. *Edith Wharton*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Kellogg, Grace. *The Two Lives of Edith Wharton: The Woman and Her Work*. New York: Appleton-Century, 1965.

Lewis, R. W. B. *Edith Wharton: A Biography*. New York: Harper & Row, 1975.

Wharton, Edith. *Backward Glance*. New York: Scribner, 1934. Reprint, New York: Scribner, 1964.

JAMES WHISTLER

Born: July 10, 1834

Lowell, Massachusetts

Died: July 17, 1903

London, England

American painter and etcher

The American painter, etcher, and lithographer James Whistler created a new set of principles for the fine arts, championed art for art's sake, and introduced a subtle style of painting in which atmosphere and mood were the main focus.

Early life

James Abbott McNeill Whistler was born in Lowell, Massachusetts, on July 10, 1834, the son of Major George Whistler, a railroad engineer, and Anna McNeill. In 1842 Czar Nicholas I (1796–1855) of Russia invited Major Whistler to build a railroad from St. Petersburg to Moscow and offered the princely salary of twelve thousand dollars a year. In St. Petersburg the family lived luxuriously, with several servants, and James and his brother had a governess and a Swedish tutor. Because French was the court language, the boys soon became fluent in it. On one occasion the Whistlers took a trip fifteen miles out of St. Petersburg to Tsarkoe Selo. Here, in the palace built by Catherine the Great (1729–1896), there was a suite of apartments in the Chinese style containing many fine examples of Oriental porcelain. James was fascinated by this collection and later became a collector of blue-and-white porcelain.

Whistler's interest in drawing, which had begun when he was four, greatly increased



James Whistler.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

during the years in Russia, and in 1845 he was enrolled in a drawing course at the Academy of Fine Arts in St. Petersburg. In 1849 Major Whistler died, and Mrs. Whistler returned to the United States with her sons, settling in Pomfret, Connecticut. James decided he wanted to go to the U.S. Military Academy at West Point, which his father had attended, and obtained an appointment in 1851. At West Point he stood first in the drawing course but did poorly in chemistry. Because he constantly broke the rules, he racked up two hundred eighteen demerits (marks for bad conduct) and as a result was dismissed in 1854.

After an unsuccessful apprenticeship (a job acquired to learn a trade) with the Winaas Locomotive Works in Baltimore, Maryland, Whistler obtained a job in Washington, D.C., with the Coast and Geodetic Survey. He was always late, often absent, and was the despair of his employer. However, he had the finest training in etching (the process of producing a design or a picture off a hard surface with the use of chemicals) and learned the basic principles of printmaking.

Departure for Europe

With a three hundred fifty dollar-a-year inheritance from his father, Whistler went abroad to study art. He arrived in Paris, France, in 1855 and at once threw himself into the artistic life of the French students. While copying in the Parisian art museum the Louvre in 1858, Whistler met Henri Fantin-Latour (1836–1904), who in turn introduced him to Alphonse Legros (1837–1911) and other artists, including the great realist painter Gustave Courbet (1819–1877). In 1858 Whistler brought out *Twelve Etchings from Nature*, known as the French Set. The next year his first important painting, *At the Piano*, influenced by Fantin-Latour and Dutch seventeenth-century interiors, was rejected by the Paris Salon (an art gallery), although it was accepted by the Royal Academy in London, England, in 1860.

Whistler's painting *Wapping* (1861) shows the influence of Courbet's realism, an art style that seeks to capture reality. One of the figures in the foreground is the redheaded Irish beauty Joanna Hiffernan, known as Jo, who became both Whistler's model and mistress. He painted her as *The White Girl* (1862), standing in a white dress, against a

white background, with her red hair over her shoulder. The figure is medieval (having to do with the Middle Ages) in feeling with a remoteness and deep-thinking gaze that place it close to the Pre-Raphaelite painters, a band of painters that reacted against the unimaginative and traditional historical paintings of their time. Whistler knew their work; he had met Dante Gabriel Rossetti (1828–1882) in 1862 and was decidedly influenced by the Pre-Raphaelites at this time. Although *The White Girl* was rejected by the Royal Academy in 1862 and the Paris Salon of 1863, it was a sensation at the Salon des Refusés, admired by artists though laughed at by the public.

In 1863 Whistler leased a house in the Chelsea section of London, where he set up housekeeping with Jo. His mother arrived late that year and spent the rest of her life in England. Whistler became a collector of blue-and-white porcelain as well as Oriental costumes, in which he posed his models for such pictures as *La Princess du pays de la porcelaine* (1864).

The nocturnes

In 1871 Whistler published the sixteen etchings, *Views of the Thames*, known as the Thames Set. He also did a series of atmospheric paintings which he called nocturnes. He liked to go out on the river at twilight and was fascinated by the foggy or misty effects in the fading light. In putting these impressions on canvas from memory, he made use of the Japanese concept of space as a well-balanced design in which perspective plays no part. In the famous *Arrangement in Grey and Black, the Artist's Mother* (1872) he composed the picture with disarming simplicity, keeping the Japanese concept of space in mind.

During 1877 Whistler exhibited several paintings, including *Falling Rocket*, a nocturne showing the mysterious and elusive (hard to grasp) effects of fireworks at night at Cremorne Gardens. It outraged John Ruskin (1819–1900), considered the country's finest judge of good taste in England, and he wrote an insulting review of the exhibition. Whistler sued him for libel (a written statement that hurts someone's public image) in what was the most sensational art trial of the century and was awarded very little money. The trial ruined Whistler financially, and he had to sell his new house and sell off his porcelain collection.

Fortunately, the Fine Arts Society commissioned Whistler to do twelve etchings of Venice, Italy. He spent fourteen months in Venice doing many etchings as well as small oils, watercolors, and pastels. His etching style was now completely changed. He treated his themes with the utmost delicacy, using a spidery line and lively curves, and he often wiped the plates to give tone. His Venetian work sold well and he was financially reestablished. He took a house in London with Maud Franklin, who had replaced Jo as model and mistress.

On the evening of January 31, 1885, Whistler delivered at Prince's Hall the "Ten O'Clock," his famous lecture summing up his theories on the nature of beauty in polished prose. He mentioned the poetry that evening mists produce when "the tall chimneys become campanili and the warehouses are palaces at night."

Master lithographer

One of Whistler's finest achievements was in the field of lithography (the process of printing on metal), which he concentrated on for a ten-year period beginning in 1887.

Drawing in the most spirited way, he used a stump as well as a pencil and obtained effects never achieved by a lithographer before him. He had great ability with watercolors and small oils which sometimes depicted the seaside or shop fronts in Chelsea. In portraiture he favored full-length standing poses, influenced by Diego Velázquez (1465–1524), and was more concerned with subtle tones and atmosphere than he was with exact likenesses.

In 1888 Whistler married E. W. Godwin's widow, Beatrix. The Whistlers moved to Paris in 1893 but two years later were back in England. Trixie, as his wife was called, died of cancer in 1896. After her death, Whistler maintained studios in both Paris and London. He died in London on July 17, 1903.

For More Information

Anderson, Ronald K., and Anne Koval James McNeill. *Whistler: Beyond the Myth*. New York: Carroll & Graf, 1995.

Berman, Avis. *James McNeill Whistler*. New York: H. N. Abrams, 1993.

Fleming, Gordon H. *James Abbott McNeill Whistler: A Life*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Whistler, James M. *The Gentle Art of Making Enemies*. New York: John W. Lovell Company, 1890. Reprint, New York: Dover Publications, 1967.

E. B. WHITE

Born: July 11, 1899

Mount Vernon, New York

Died: October 1, 1985

North Brooklin, Maine

American essayist and author

E. B. White was one of the most influential modern American essayists, largely through his work for the *New Yorker* magazine. He also wrote two children's classics and revised William S. Strunk's *The Elements of Style*, widely used in college English courses.

Becoming a writer

Elwyn Brooks White was born on July 11, 1899, in Mount Vernon, New York, the son of a piano manufacturer, Samuel Tilly White, and Jessie Hart. The family was comfortably well off, but not wealthy. Raised with two brothers and three sisters, White attended local public schools in Mount Vernon. He went on to attend Cornell University, graduating in 1921.

White was offered a teaching position at the University of Minnesota, but turned it down because his goal was to become a writer. He worked for the United Press International and the American Legion News Service in 1921 and 1922 and then became a reporter for the *Seattle Times* in 1922 and 1923. White then worked for two years with the Frank Seaman advertising agency as a production assistant and copywriter. During this time he had poems published in "The Conning Tower" of Franklin P. Adams, the newspaper columnist who helped several talented young people achieve success during the 1920s and 1930s.

New Yorker

In 1925 White published the article "Defense of the Bronx River" in the *New Yorker* magazine, his first piece in this publi-

cation. It led to his being named a contributing editor in 1927, an association which continued until his death in 1985.

From the time of its origin, *The New Yorker* was one of the most well-received periodicals in the nation. It featured such celebrities as Alexander Woolcott, Dorothy Parker (1893–1967), Robert Benchley (1889–1945), and George S. Kaufman (1889–1961) as contributors, so White was in the company of the best when he was added to the staff.

At some time White became the principal contributor to the magazine's column "Notes and Comment" and set the tone of informed, intelligent, tolerant, faintly amused city life in observations on the passing scene, a feature that continued after his death.

A name for himself

In 1929 White published a poetry collection, *The Lady Is Cold*, and then joined fellow *New Yorker* writer James Thurber (1894–1961) in *Is Sex Necessary?* Freudian psychology, or the study of the subconscious, had been enormously influential in America in the 1920s, giving rise to many volumes analyzing or presenting advice on the subject. The time was ripe for a parody (a literary or artistic work that copies the style of an existing subject in order to make fun of it) of such books, and these two came up with a witty, low key work featuring passages like this: "The sexual revolution began with Man's discovery that he was not attractive to Woman, as such. . . . His masculine appearance not only failed to excite Woman, but in many cases it only served to bore her. The result was that Man found it necessary to develop attractive personal traits to offset his



E. B. White.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

dull appearance. He learned to say funny things. He learned to smoke, and blow smoke rings. He learned to earn money. This would have been a solution to his difficulty, but in the course of making himself attractive to Woman by developing himself mentally, he had inadvertently [unintentionally] become so intelligent an animal that he saw how comical the whole situation was."

Also in 1929, White married *New Yorker* editor Katharine Sergeant Angell; the marriage produced one son. He published *Ho Hum* in 1931, *Another Ho Hum* in 1932, *Every Day Is Saturday* in 1934, and in 1936, in the *New Yorker*, under the pseudonym (pen

name) Lee Strout White, the essay "Farewell My Lovely!" One of his best-known pieces, it was suggested to him by a manuscript submitted by Richard L. Strout of the *Christian Science Monitor*. It served as the basis for the book *Farewell to the Model T*, published later that same year.

White's next work was a poetry collection, *The Fox of Peapack* (1938), the same year that he began the monthly column "One Man's Meat" for *Harper's* magazine, a column which lasted five years. There followed the essay collection *Quo Vadimus?* in 1939; an editing job with his wife, *The Subtreasury of American Humor*, in 1941; and *One Man's Meat*, a collection of his *Harper's* columns, in 1942.

Children's books

In 1945 White entered a new field with great success, writing *Stuart Little* for children. The story of a mouse born to normal human parents was clearly intended to console young people who thought themselves different or odd, and it carried the message that Stuart's parents never batted an eye when their son turned out to be a mouse and that the hero could build himself a good life.

After *The Wild Flag* in 1946 and *Here Is New York* in 1949, White returned to children's literature with his most popular book in the genre (category), *Charlotte's Web*, in 1952. The story of the bond between the young pig Wilbur and the clever spider who saves his life is a look at the power of friendship and a reminder to young readers that death is a part of life. *The Second Tree from the Corner* came in 1954. Three years later White and his wife gave up their New York City apartment and moved permanently to North Brooklin, Maine.

Elements of Style

While an undergraduate at Cornell, White had taken a course with Professor William S. Strunk Jr. Strunk used a text he had written and published at his own expense, a thin volume titled *The Elements of Style*. White edited it, revised it, and added the chapter "An Approach to Style," offering such advice as "Place yourself in the background; do not explain too much; prefer the standard to the offbeat." The book sold widely and became a college campus fixture for the next twenty years in several editions.

Honors began to pour in for White. He won the Gold Medal for Essays and Criticism from the National Institute of Arts and Letters in 1960, the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1963, the Laura Ingalls Wilder Medal for his children's books in 1970, and the National Medal for Literature in 1971. In 1973 he was elected to the American Academy of Arts and Letters.

E. B. White's influence was great, particularly in his popular essays, which served as models for two generations of readers. In the 1930s, 1940s, and 1950s, the *New Yorker* was judged by critics to be a model of elegant yet simple style in nonfiction, and White was in no small measure responsible for this reputation. He died on October 1, 1985, in North Brooklin, Maine.

For More Information

- Craats, Rennay. *E. B. White*. Mankato, MN: Weigl Publishers, 2002.
- Elledge, Scott. *E. B. White: A Biography*. New York: Norton, 1984.
- Gherman, Beverly. *E. B. White: Some Writer!* New York: Atheneum, 1992.

Sampson, Edward C. *E. B. White*. New York: Twayne Publishers, 1974.

Tingum, Janice. *E. B. White: The Elements of a Writer*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 1995.

WALT WHITMAN

Born: May 31, 1819

West Hills, New York

Died: March 26, 1892

Camden, New Jersey

American poet

Walt Whitman is generally considered to be the most important American poet of the nineteenth century. He wrote in free verse (not in traditional poetic form), relying heavily on the rhythms of common American speech.

Childhood and early career

Walt Whitman was born on May 31, 1819, in West Hills, Long Island, the second of nine children. His family soon moved to Brooklyn, where he attended school for a few years. Young Whitman took to reading at an early age. By 1830 his formal education was over, and for the next five years he learned the printing trade. For about five years, beginning in 1836, he taught school on Long Island; during this time he also founded the weekly newspaper *Long-Islander*.

By 1841 Whitman was in New York City, where his interests turned to journalism. His short stories and poetry of this period were

indistinguishable from the popular work of the day, as was his first novel, *Franklin Evans, or the Inebriate* (1842). For the next few years Whitman edited several newspapers and contributed to others. He was dismissed from the *Brooklyn Eagle* because of political differences with the owner. In 1848 he traveled south and for three months worked for the *New Orleans Crescent*. The sheer physical beauty of the new nation made a vivid impression on him, and he was to draw on this experience in his later poetry.

First edition of Leaves of Grass

Not much is known of Whitman's literary activities that can account for his sudden transformation (change) from journalist and hack writer into revolutionary poet. The first edition of *Leaves of Grass* (1855) opened with a rather casual portrait of Whitman, the self-professed "poet of the people," dressed in workman's clothes. In a lengthy preface Whitman announced that his poetry would celebrate the greatness of the new nation—"The Americans of all nations at any time upon the earth have probably the fullest poetical nature. The United States themselves are essentially the greatest poem"—and of its peoples—"The largeness of nature or the nation were monstrous without a corresponding largeness and generosity of the spirit of the citizen." Of the twelve poems (the titles were added later), "Song of Myself," "The Sleepers," "There Was a Child Went Forth," and "I Sing the Body Electric" are the best known today. In these Whitman turned his back on the literary models of the past. He stressed the rhythms of common American speech, delighting in informal and slang expressions.



Walt Whitman.

Courtesy of the National Archives and Records Administration.

The first edition of *Leaves* sold poorly. Fortunately, Whitman had sent Ralph Waldo Emerson (1803–1892) a free copy, and in his now famous reply, Emerson wrote: “I find it the most extraordinary piece of wit and wisdom that America has yet contributed. . . . I greet you at the beginning of a great career.” Emerson’s enthusiasm for *Leaves of Grass* was understandable, for he had strongly influenced the younger poet. Whitman echoed much of Emerson’s philosophy in his preface and poems. Emerson’s letter had a profound impact on Whitman, completely overshadowing the otherwise poor reception the volume received.

Second edition of *Leaves of Grass*

For the second edition of *Leaves of Grass* (1856), Whitman added twenty new poems to his original twelve. With this edition, he began his lifelong practice of adding new poems to *Leaves of Grass* and revising those previously published in order to bring them into line with his present moods and feelings. Also, over the years he was to drop a number of poems from *Leaves*.

Among the new poems in the 1856 edition were “Crossing Brooklyn Ferry” (one of Whitman’s masterpieces), “Salut au Monde!,” “A Woman Waits for Me,” and “Spontaneous Me.” Most of the 1855 preface he reworked to form the nationalistic poem “By Blue Ontario’s Shore.” Like the first edition, the second sold poorly.

The third edition of *Leaves* (1860) was brought out by a Boston publisher, one of the few times in his career that Whitman did not have to publish *Leaves of Grass* at his own expense. This edition, referred to by Whitman as his “new Bible,” contained the earlier poems plus one hundred forty-six new ones. For the first time Whitman arranged many of the poems in special groupings, a practice he continued in all later editions. The most notable of these “groups” were “Children of Adam,” a gathering of love poems, and “Calamus,” a group of poems celebrating the brotherhood and comradeship of men, or, in Whitman’s phrase, “manly love.”

Whitman and the Civil War

Soon after the outbreak of the Civil War (1861–65; a war between regions of the United States in which Northern forces clashed with those of the South), Whitman

went to Virginia to search for his brother George, reported wounded in action. Here Whitman experienced the war firsthand. He remained in Washington, D.C., working part-time in the Paymaster's Office. He devoted many long hours serving as a volunteer aide in the hospitals in Washington, ministering to the needs of the sick and wounded soldiers. His daily contact with sickness and death took its toll. Whitman himself became ill with "hospital malaria." Within a few months he recovered. In January 1865 he took a clerk's position in the Indian Bureau of the Department of the Interior.

The impact of the war on Whitman was reflected in his separately published *Drum-Taps* (1865). In such poems as "Cavalry Crossing a Ford," "The Wound-Dresser," "Come Up from the Fields Father," "Vigil Strange I Kept on the Field One Night," "Sight in Camp in the Daybreak Gray and Dim," and "Year That Trembled and Reel'd Beneath Me," Whitman caught with beautiful simplicity of statement the horror, loneliness, and anguish caused by the war.

Later career

Following the Civil War and the publication of the fourth edition, Whitman's poetry became increasingly preoccupied with themes relating to the soul, death, and immortality (living forever). He was entering the final phase of his career. Within the span of some dozen years, the poet of the body had given way to the poet of internationalism (not concentrating on a single country) and the cosmic (relating to the universe). Such poems as "Whispers of Heavenly Death,"

"Darest Thou Now O Soul," "The Last Invocation," and "A Noiseless Patient Spider," with their emphasis on the spiritual, paved the way for "Passage to India" (1871), Whitman's most important (and ambitious) poem of the post-Civil War period.

In 1881 Whitman settled on the final arrangement of the poems in *Leaves of Grass*, and thereafter no revisions were made. (All new poems written after 1881 were added as annexes [additions] to *Leaves*.) The seventh edition was published by James Osgood. The Boston district attorney threatened prosecution against Osgood unless certain poems were removed. When Whitman refused, Osgood dropped publication of the book. However, a Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, publisher reissued the book in 1882.

In his last years Whitman received the respect due a great literary figure and personality. He died on March 26, 1892, in Camden, New Jersey. *Leaves of Grass* has been widely translated, and Whitman's reputation is now worldwide.

For More Information

Allen, Gay Wilson. *The Solitary Singer: A Critical Biography of Walt Whitman*. New York: Macmillan, 1955. Reprint, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1985.

Loving, Jerome. *Walt Whitman: The Song of Himself*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1999.

Reef, Catherine. *Walt Whitman*. New York: Clarion Books, 1995.

Reynolds, David S. *Walt Whitman's America: A Cultural Biography*. New York: Knopf, 1995.

ELIE WIESEL

Born: September 30, 1928

Sighet, Romania

Romanian-born American writer and teacher

Romanian-born American writer, speaker, and teacher Elie Wiesel is a survivor of the Holocaust, the massive killing of Jews by the Nazis, Germany's radical army during World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers: Italy, Germany, and Japan—and the Allies: England, France, the Soviet Union, and the United States). Wiesel is currently the chairman of the United States Holocaust Memorial Council.

Childhood

Elie Wiesel was born in Sighet, Romania, on September 30, 1928. He was the third of four children and the only son of Shlomo and Sarah Wiesel. Wiesel was encouraged by his father to learn modern Hebrew literature, and his mother encouraged him to study the sacred Jewish texts. His father instilled in him the ability to reason and from his mother, he learned faith. When he was fifteen, Wiesel and his family were taken to the concentration camps (harsh political prisons) at Birkenau and Auschwitz, Poland, where he remained until January 1945 when, along with thousands of other Jewish prisoners, he was moved to Buchenwald in a forced death march. Buchenwald was freed on April 11, 1945, by the U.S. Army, but neither Wiesel's parents nor his younger sister survived. His two remaining sisters survived, and they were reunited after the war ended in 1945.

After the war Wiesel went to France where he completed secondary school, studied at the Sorbonne in Paris, France, and began working as a journalist for an Israeli newspaper. In 1956 he moved to New York City to cover the United Nations (UN; a multinational organization aimed at world peace) and became a U.S. citizen in 1963. He was the Andrew Mellon Professor of Humanities at Boston (Massachusetts) University in the mid-1980s.

His writings

Wiesel's writings bear witness to his year-long ordeal and to the Jewish tragedy. In 1956 Wiesel's first book, a Yiddish memoir entitled *And the World Was Silent*, was published in Argentina. Two years later a much smaller version of the work was published in France as *La Nuit*. After the 1960 English language publication of *Night*, Wiesel wrote more than thirty-five books: novels, collections of short stories and essays, and plays. His works established him as the most widely known and admired Holocaust writer.

Only in *Night* does Wiesel speak about the Holocaust directly. Throughout his other works, the Holocaust looms as the shadow, the central but unspoken mystery in the life of his protagonists, or main characters. Even pre-Holocaust events are seen as warnings of impending doom. In *Night* he narrates his own experience as a young boy transported to Auschwitz where suffering and death shattered his faith in both God and humanity. *Night* is widely considered a classic of Holocaust literature.

Night was followed in 1961 by *Dawn*, the story of a young Holocaust survivor brought to work for the underground in preindepend-

dence Israel. Young Elisha is ordered to execute a British army officer in retaliation for the hanging of a young Jewish fighter. Through Elisha's ordeal, Wiesel describes the transformation of the Jewish people from defenseless victims into potential victimizers. The execution occurs at dawn, but the killing is an act of self-destruction with Elisha its ultimate victim.

The struggle between life and death continues to dominate Wiesel's third work of the trilogy (a set of three), but in *The Accident* (*Le Jour* in French), published in 1962, God is not involved in either life or death. The battle is waged within the protagonist, now a newspaper correspondent covering the United Nations, who is fighting for life after an accident. In these three early works Wiesel moved from a universe greatly influenced by God to a godless one. The titles of his books grow brighter as the presence of God becomes dimmer, yet the transition is never easy.

Other roles

Wiesel, in addition to his literary activities, played an important role as a public orator, or speaker. Each year he gave a series of lectures on Jewish tradition at New York City's 92nd Street Young Men's Christian Association (YMCA). These lectures formed the basis for his retelling of Jewish tales: stories of Hasidism (eighteenth- and nineteenth-century Jewish pietists [people who stress extreme religious studies and practices]) which Wiesel published in *Souls on Fire* (1972), *Somewhere a Master* (1982), and *Four Hasidic Masters* (1978). Biblical legends are covered in *Messengers of God* (1975), *Images from the Bible* (1980), and *Five Biblical Portraits* (1981). Wiesel spun his own tales in



Elie Wiesel.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

such works as *Legends of Our Time* (1968), *One Generation After* (1970), and *A Jew Today* (1978). The themes of these stories remained tragedy and joy, madness and hope, the fragility of meaning, and the quest for faith.

As a social activist, Wiesel used his writing to plead for Jews in danger and on behalf of all humanity. From his trips to Russia in 1965 and 1966, he produced *The Jews of Silence* (1966) which describes Wiesel's visits with Soviet Jews, or Jewish people living in the Soviet Union (the former country made up of Russia and several smaller states and run by communism, a political system where goods and services are owned and distributed

by a strong central government). Wiesel captured the spiritual reawakening that was to mark the struggle of Soviet Jewry during the 1970s and 1980s. Soviet Jews were not Wiesel's Jews of silence. Western Jews, who dared not speak out on their brothers' behalf, were the silent ones.

Honored

Wiesel was the recipient of numerous awards throughout his career, including the Nobel Peace Prize in 1986. His humanitarian activities were also rewarded with many honors, such as Eleanor Roosevelt Memorial Award (1972) and the International League for Human Rights humanitarian award (1985). Numerous honors have been established in his name, including the Elie Wiesel Chair in Holocaust Studies at Bar-Ilan University and the Elie Wiesel Chair in Judaic Studies at Connecticut College.

Later work

In 1979 President Jimmy Carter (1924–) named Wiesel chair of the President's Commission on the Holocaust, which recommended creation of a memorial museum and educational center in Washington, D.C. In 1980 Wiesel was appointed chairman to the U.S. Holocaust Memorial Council. In 1985 Wiesel led the opposition to President Ronald Reagan's (1911–) trip to a German military cemetery which contained the graves of Adolf Hitler's (1889–1945) elite S.S. Waffen soldiers.

Speaking in 1984 at the White House, where President Reagan presented him with the Congressional Gold Medal, Wiesel summarized his career, "I have learned that suffering confers no privileges: it depends on what one

does with it. This is why survivors have tried to teach their contemporaries how to build on ruins; how to invent hope in a world that offers none; how to proclaim faith to a generation that has seen it shamed and mutilated."

For More Information

- Brown, Robert McAfee. *Elie Wiesel: Messenger to All Humanity*. South Bend, IN: Notre Dame University Press, 1989.
- Cargas, Harry J. *Conversations with Elie Wiesel*. South Bend, IN: Justice Books, 1992.
- Greene, Carole. *Elie Wiesel: Messenger from the Holocaust*. Chicago: Children's Press, 1987.
- Wiesel, Elie. *All Rivers Run to the Sea: Memoirs*. New York: Knopf, 1995.
- Wiesel, Elie. *Night*. New York: Hill and Wang, 1960.

OSCAR WILDE

Born: October 16, 1854

Dublin, Ireland

Died: November 30, 1900

Paris, France

Irish-born English author, dramatist, and poet

The English author Oscar Wilde was part of the "art for art's sake" movement in English literature at the end of the nineteenth century. He is best known for his brilliant, witty comedies including the play *The Importance of Being Earnest* and his classic novel *The Picture of Dorian Gray*.

Outstanding childhood

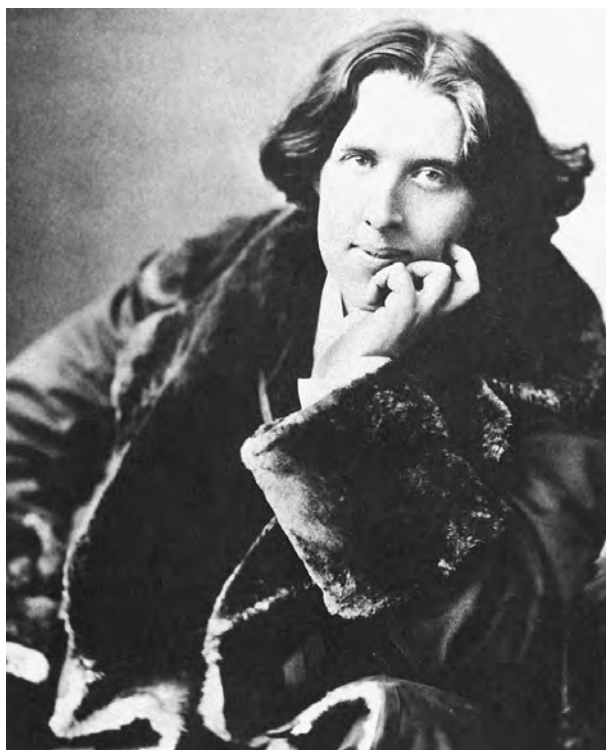
Oscar Fingall O'Flahertie Wills Wilde was born in Dublin, Ireland, on October 16, 1854. His father, Sir William Wilde, was a well-known surgeon; his mother, Jane Francisca Elgee Wilde, wrote popular poetry and other work under the pseudonym (pen name) Speranza. Because of his mother's literary successes, young Oscar enjoyed a cultured and privileged childhood.

After attending Portora Royal School in Enniskillen, Ireland, Wilde moved on to study the classics at Trinity College, Dublin, from 1871 to 1874. There, he began attracting public attention through the uniqueness of his writing and his lifestyle. Before leaving Trinity College, Wilde was awarded many honors, including the Berkely Gold Medal for Greek.

Begins writing career

At the age of twenty-three Wilde entered Magdalen College, Oxford, England. In 1878 he was awarded the Newdigate Prize for his poem "Ravenna." He attracted a group of followers whose members were purposefully unproductive and artificial. "The first duty in life," Wilde wrote in *Phrases and Philosophies for the Use of the Young* (1894), "is to be as artificial as possible." After leaving Oxford he expanded his cult (a following). His iconoclasm (attacking of established religious institutions) clashed with the holiness that came with the Victorian era of the late nineteenth century, but this contradiction was one that he aimed for. Another of his aims was the glorification of youth.

Wilde published his well-received *Poems* in 1881. The next six years were active ones.



Oscar Wilde.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

He spent an entire year lecturing in the United States and then returned to lecture in England. He applied unsuccessfully for a position as a school inspector. In 1884 he married, and his wife bore him children in 1885 and in 1886. He began to publish extensively in the following year. His writing activity became as intense and as inconsistent as his life had been for the previous six years. From 1887 to 1889 Wilde edited the magazine *Woman's World*. His first popular success as a fiction writer was *The Happy Prince and Other Tales* (1888). *The House of Pomegranates* (1892) was another collection of his fairy tales.

Sexuality of Oscar Wilde

In 1886 Wilde became a practicing homosexual, or one who is sexually attracted to a member of their own sex. He believed that his attacks on the Victorian moral code was the inspiration for his writing. He considered himself a criminal who challenged society by creating scandal. Before his conviction (found guilty) for homosexuality in 1895, the scandal was essentially private. Wilde believed in the criminal mentality. "Lord Arthur Savile's Crime," from *Lord Arthur Savile's Crime and Other Stories* (1891), treated murder and its successful cover-up comically. The original version of *The Picture of Dorian Gray* in *Lippincott's Magazine* emphasized the murder of the painter Basil Hallward by Dorian as the turning point in Dorian's downfall. Wilde stressed that criminal tendency became criminal act.

Dorian Gray was published in book form in 1891. The novel was a celebration of youth. Dorian, in a gesture typical of Wilde, is parentless. He does not age, and he is a criminal. Like all of Wilde's work, the novel was a popular success. His only book of formal criticism, *Intentions* (1891), restated many of the views that *Dorian Gray* had emphasized, and it points toward his later plays and stories. *Intentions* emphasized the importance of criticism in an age that Wilde believed was uncritical. For him, criticism was an independent branch of literature, and its function was important.

His dramas

Between 1892 and 1895 Wilde was an active dramatist (writer of plays), writing what he identified as "trivial [unimportant] comedies for serious people." His plays were

popular because their dialogue was baffling, clever, and often short and clear, relying on puns and elaborate word games for their effect. *Lady Windermere's Fan* was produced in 1892, *A Woman of No Importance* in 1893, and *An Ideal Husband* and *The Importance of Being Earnest* in 1895.

On March 2, 1895, Wilde initiated a suit for criminal libel (a statement that damages someone's reputation) against the Marquess of Queensberry, who had objected to Wilde's friendship with his son, Lord Alfred Douglas. When his suit failed in April, countercharges followed. After a spectacular court action, Wilde was convicted of homosexual misconduct and sentenced to two years in prison at hard labor.

Prison transformed Wilde's experience as extremely as had his 1886 introduction to homosexuality. In a sense he had prepared himself for prison and its transformation of his art. *De Profundis* is a moving letter to a friend and apologia (a formal defense) that Wilde wrote in prison; it was first published as a whole in 1905. His theme was that he was not unlike other men and was a scapegoat, or one who bears blame for others. *The Ballad of Reading Gaol* (1898) was written after his release. In this poem a man murdered his mistress and was about to be executed, but Wilde considered him only as criminal as the rest of humanity. He wrote: "For each man kills the thing he loves, / Yet each man does not die."

After Wilde was released from prison he lived in Paris, France. He attempted to write a play in his style before his imprisonment, but this effort failed. He died in Paris on November 30, 1900.

For More Information

- Bloom, Harold, ed. *Oscar Wilde*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.
- Ellmann, Richard. *Oscar Wilde*. New York: Knopf, 1988.
- Kaufman, Moises. *Gross Indecency: The Three Trials of Oscar Wilde*. New York: Vintage Books, 1998.
- Pearce, Joseph. *The Unmasking of Oscar Wilde*. London: HarperCollins, 2000.
- Woodcock, George. *Oscar Wilde: The Double Image*. New York: Black Rose Books, 1989.

LAURA INGALLS WILDER

Born: February 7, 1867

Pepin, Wisconsin

Died: February 10, 1957

Mansfield, Missouri

American writer

American author Laura Ingalls Wilder was the creator of the much-loved children's series of "Little House" books that recounted her life as a young girl on the Western frontier during the late 1800s.

Raised on the American prairie

Laura Ingalls Wilder was born Laura Elizabeth Ingalls on February 7, 1867, in Pepin, Wisconsin, the second of four children. She once described her father, Charles

Philip Ingalls, as always jolly and sometimes reckless. Her mother, Caroline Lake Quiner, was educated, gentle, and proud, according to her daughter. Her sisters, all of whom would eventually appear in her books, were Mary, Carrie, and Grace. Laura also had a younger brother, Charles, Jr. (nicknamed Freddie), who died at the age of only nine months.

As a young girl, Laura moved with her family from place to place across America's heartland. In 1874, the Ingalls family left Wisconsin for Walnut Grove, Minnesota, where they lived at first in a dugout house. Two years later, the family moved to Burr Oak, Iowa, where Charles became part-owner of a hotel. By the fall of 1877, however, they had all returned to Walnut Grove. In 1879, the Ingalls family moved again, this time to homestead in the Dakota Territory.

The family finally settled in what would become De Smet, South Dakota, which remained Charles and Caroline's home until they died. Their second winter in De Smet was one of the worst on record. Numerous blizzards prevented trains from delivering any supplies, essentially cutting off the town from December until May. Years later, Laura wrote about her experiences as a young teenager trying to survive the cold temperatures and lack of food, firewood, and other necessities.

Laura attended regular school whenever possible. However, because of her family's frequent moves, she was largely self-taught. In 1882, at the age of fifteen, she received her teaching certificate. For three years, Laura taught at a small country school a dozen miles from her home in De Smet and boarded with a family who lived nearby.



Laura Ingalls Wilder.
Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

Married a farmer

During this same period, Ingalls came to know Almanzo Manly Wilder, who had settled near De Smet in 1879 with his brother Royal. Almanzo frequently headed out into the country on his sleigh to pick up the young teacher and drop her off at her parents' home for weekend visits. After courting for a little more than two years, they were married on August 25, 1885. Laura Wilder then quit teaching to help her husband on their farm. She later wrote about this time in her life in her book *The First Four Years*.

The couple's only surviving child, Rose, was born on December 5, 1886. Although all

homesteaders (those settling new lands) had to endure the hardships and uncertainty of farm life, the Wilders experienced more than their share of tragedy and misfortune. In August 1889, Wilder gave birth to a baby boy who died shortly after, an event that never appeared in any of her books. Her husband then came down with diphtheria, a terrible disease that causes breathing problems, which left him partially paralyzed. Finally, their house, built by Manly himself, burned to the ground.

On July 17, 1894, the Wilders began their journey to Mansfield, Missouri, the place they would call home for the rest of their lives. There they established a farm and named it Rocky Ridge. Wilder kept a journal of their experiences as they traveled. When she reached Lamar, Missouri, she sent her account of their travels through South Dakota, Nebraska, and Kansas to the *De Smet News*. This was her first published writing.

Produced her first autobiographical work

By the mid-1920s Wilder and her husband were doing little of their own farming on Rocky Ridge, which allowed her to spend most of her time writing. Around this same time, Rose returned to Missouri, built a new home for her parents on Rocky Ridge, and moved into the old farmhouse. She also began encouraging her mother to write the story of her childhood.

Wilder completed her first autobiographical work in the late 1920s. Entitled *Pioneer Girl*, it was a first-person account of her childhood on the frontier from the time she was three until she reached the age of eighteen. After Rose edited the book, Wilder submitted it to various publishers

under the name Laura Ingalls Wilder. But no one was interested in her chronicle, which contained plenty of historical facts about her childhood but little in the way of character development.

Created the “Little House” books

Refusing to become discouraged, Wilder changed her approach. The “I” in her stories became “Laura,” and the focus moved from the story of one little girl to the story of an entire family’s experiences on the new frontier. Wilder also decided to direct her writing specifically at children. Although she sometimes streamlined events, created or omitted others entirely (such as the birth and death of her brother), and opted for happier endings, she wrote about real people and things that had actually happened.

In 1932, at the age of sixty-five, Wilder published the first of her eight “Little House” books, *Little House in the Big Woods*. It told the story of her early childhood years in Wisconsin and was a huge hit with readers. *Farmer Boy*, an account of Manly’s childhood in New York state, followed in 1933. Two years later, *Little House on the Prairie* appeared on the shelves. Five more books followed that took the reader through Wilder’s courtship and marriage to Manly—*On the Banks of Plum Creek* (1937), *By the Shores of Silver Lake* (1939), *The Long Winter* (1940), *Little Town on the Prairie* (1941), and *These Happy Golden Years* (1943). New editions of all of the “Little House” books were reissued by Harper in 1953 with the now-familiar illustrations of Garth Williams (1912–1996).

Wilder was seventy-six years old when she finished the final book in her “Little House” series. By that time, she and her hus-

band had sold off the majority of their land and virtually all of their livestock, but they still lived on the remaining seventy acres of Rocky Ridge. It was there that Manly died in 1949 at the age of ninety-two.

Wilder was ninety when she died at Rocky Ridge Farm on February 10, 1957. After her death, her daughter, Rose Wilder Lane, edited the diary her mother had written as she and Manly traveled to Missouri, the one that had first appeared in the *De Smet* newspaper. The resulting book, *On the Way Home: The Diary of a Trip from South Dakota to Mansfield, Missouri, in 1894*, was published in 1962. Twelve years later, a television series based on Wilder’s stories debuted and ran for nine seasons. Through her engaging tales of life on the untamed American frontier, Wilder succeeded beyond her wildest dreams at taking a unique time and place of adventure, hardship, and simple pleasures and making it real to scores of young readers across the world.

For More Information

- Anderson, William. *Laura Ingalls Wilder: A Biography*. New York: HarperCollins, 1992.
- Miller, John E. *Becoming Laura Ingalls Wilder: The Woman Behind the Legacy*. Columbia: University of Missouri Press, 1998.
- Wadsworth, Ginger. *Laura Ingalls Wilder: Storyteller of the Prairie*. Minneapolis: Lerner, 1997.
- Wilder, Laura Ingalls. *West from Home: Letters of Laura Ingalls Wilder to Almanzo*. Edited by R. L. MacBride. New York: Harper, 1974.
- Zochert, Donald. *Laura: The Life of Laura Ingalls Wilder*. Chicago: Regnery, 1976.

THORNTON WILDER

Born: April 17, 1897

Madison, Wisconsin

Died: December 7, 1975

Hamden, Connecticut

American playwright and novelist

Novelist and playwright Thornton Wilder won two Pulitzer Prizes for his plays *Our Town* and *The Skin of Our Teeth*, written in 1938 and 1942 respectively. His most well-known novel, *The Bridge of San Luis Rey*, also won him a Pulitzer Prize in 1927.

Childhood

Thornton Niven Wilder was born on April 17, 1897, in Madison, Wisconsin, the second son of four children of Amos Parker and Isabella Wilder. In 1906 the family moved to China when his father became the United States Consul-General in Hong Kong. The teenager attended the English China Inland Mission School at Cheefoo but returned with his mother and siblings to California in 1912 because of the unstable political conditions in China at the time. While in high school, Wilder became interested in theater and began regularly attending performances of plays. He also began to demonstrate his unique talents for writing.

Graduating in 1915 from Berkeley High School, Wilder attended Oberlin College before transferring to Yale University in 1917. He served with the First Coast Artillery in Rhode Island in 1918 during World War I (1914–18), when Germany waged war

against much of Europe. After the war he returned to his studies at Yale. In 1920 he received his bachelor's degree and saw the first publication of his play *The Trumpet Shall Sound* in *Yale Literary Magazine*.

Writing professionally

Wilder started his novel *The Cabala* at the American Academy in Rome, Italy, in 1921. In New Jersey he taught at the Lawrenceville School while earning a master's degree at Princeton University. He received his degree in 1926, the publication year of *The Cabala*. Its publication came at the same time as the first professional production of *The Trumpet Shall Sound* by the American Laboratory Theater. But it was his breakthrough work, *The Bridge of San Luis Rey* (1927), that thrust him to the forefront of American literature.

A lifelong traveler, Wilder later taught at the University of Chicago, in Illinois, (1930–1936) and the University of Hawaii (1935). He volunteered in World War II (1939–45; the war fought between the Axis: Italy, Germany, and Japan—and the Allies: France, England, the Soviet Union, and the United States). During the war he served in Africa, Italy, and the United States. A lecturer at Harvard in the early 1950s, he received the Gold Medal for Fiction from the Academy of Arts and Letters in 1952. In 1962 he retired to Arizona for almost two years, then renewed his travels. Wilder was awarded the Presidential Medal of Freedom in 1963 and the National Book Committee's National Medal for Literature (first time presented) in 1965.

Career as a playwright

Wilder's first successful dramatic work, which he started at Oberlin, was *The Angel That*

Troubled the Waters (1928). A four-act play, *The Trumpet Shall Sound* (1919–20), was produced unsuccessfully off-Broadway in 1926. *The Long Christmas Dinner and Other Plays in One-Act*, published in 1931, contained three plays that gained popularity with amateur groups: *The Long Christmas Dinner*, *Pullman Car Hiawatha*, and *The Happy Journey to Trenton and Camden*. This last series marked Wilder's trademark use of a bare stage for the actors.

Wilder's first Broadway shows were translations: André Obey's *Lucrece* (1932) and *A Doll's House* (1937) by Henrik Ibsen (1828–1906). His dramatic reputation soared with *Our Town* (1938). Written for a bare stage, guided throughout by a narrator, his script examines a small town for the "something way down deep that's eternal about every human being."

Wilder's dramatic work that followed, *The Merchant of Yonkers*, failed initially in 1938. But when produced with slight changes as *The Matchmaker* in 1954, it proved a fascinating farce, or a show made ridiculous for effect. (It later re-emerged as the musical play *Hello, Dolly!* in 1963, then an overwhelming success.) Wilder mingled style and forms even more daringly in *The Skin of Our Teeth*. Here, Wilder described the human race as flawed but worth preserving. A complex and difficult play that drew from James Joyce's (1882–1941) *Finnegans Wake*, it became the work that claimed him his final Pulitzer Prize in 1943.

The essentially conservative (having to do with the commonly accepted) thematic material staged in radical styles made Wilder's plays unique. His later work included an unsuccessful tragedy, *A Life in the Sun* (or *The Alcestiad*, 1955) and three short plays of an



Thornton Wilder.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

intended fourteen-play cycle: *Someone from Assisi*, *Infancy*, and *Childhood* (produced as *Plays for Bleecker Street* in 1962).

Career as a novelist

Wilder established his reputation as a novelist with *The Cabala*, a minor work that showed Wilder's moral (having to do with wrong or right) concerns. *The Bridge of San Luis Rey*, set in eighteenth-century Peru, proved immensely popular and led to the Pulitzer Prize in 1928. *The Woman of Andros* (1930), based on Terence's (c. 185–159 B.C.E.) play *Andria* was not well received. Although Wilder's view of life encouraged heavy criti-

cism (negative judgment), *Heaven's My Destination* (1934), set in the American Midwest, grew in favor over the years. In *The Ides of March* (1948) Wilder tried a novel approach to Julius Caesar (100–44 B.C.E.). *The Eighth Day* in 1967 returned Wilder to a twentieth-century American setting that examined the lives of two families. Wilder's last novel, *Theophilus North*, was published in 1973.

In line with Wilder's diverse interests and scholarly (having to do with learned knowledge) bent, Wilder lectured and published extensively. His Harvard lectures "Toward an American Language," "The American Loneliness," and "Emily Dickinson" appeared in the *Atlantic Monthly* (1952). His topics addressed play writing, fiction, and the role of the artist in society. His range spanned from the works of the ancient Greeks to modern dramatists (writers of plays), particularly Joyce and Gertrude Stein (1874–1946). His observations and letters were published in a variety of works, from André Maurois's (1885–1967) *A Private Universe* (1932) to Donald Gallup's *The Flowers of Friendship* (1953). Wilder died of a heart attack December 7, 1975, in Hamden, Connecticut.

For More Information

Bloom, Harold, ed. *Thornton Wilder*. Philadelphia: Chelsea House, 2002.

Bryer, Jackson R. *Conversations with Thornton Wilder*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 1992.

Castronovo, David. *Thornton Wilder*. New York: Ungar, 1986.

Harrison, Gilbert A. *The Enthusiast: A Life of Thornton Wilder*. New Haven, CT: Tinknor & Fields, 1983.

TENNESSEE WILLIAMS

Born: March 26, 1914

Columbus, Mississippi

Died: February 25, 1983

New York, New York

American dramatist, playwright, and writer

Tennessee Williams, dramatist and fiction writer, was one of America's major mid-twentieth-century playwrights. He is best known for his powerful plays, *A Streetcar Named Desire* and *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof*.

Becoming Tennessee

Tennessee Williams was born Thomas Lanier Williams in Columbus, Mississippi, on March 26, 1914, the second of three children of Cornelius and Edwina Williams. His father, a traveling salesman, was rarely home and for many years the family lived with his mother's parents. As a result, the young boy developed a close relationship with his grandfather, and also his older sister, Rose. William's family life was never a happy one. His parents were resentful of each other, his mother once describing her husband as "a man's man" who loved to gamble and drink. When his father obtained a position at a shoe factory, the family moved to a crowded, low-rent apartment in St. Louis, Missouri.

About this time, young Thomas adopted the name Tennessee (presumably because many of his descendants hailed from that state). Williams grew to hate St. Louis. He and his sisters were often ridiculed by other students because of their Southern accent.

He also skipped school regularly and did poorly in his studies, preferring instead to escape into the world of reading and writing.

At the age of sixteen Williams published his first story. The next year he entered the University of Missouri but left before taking a degree. He worked for two years for a shoe company, spent a year at Washington University (where he had his first plays produced), and earned a bachelor of arts degree from the State University of Iowa in 1938, the year he published his first short story under his literary name, Tennessee Williams.

In 1940 the Theatre Guild produced Williams's *Battle of Angels* in Boston, Massachusetts. The play was a total failure and was withdrawn after Boston's Watch and Ward Society banned it. Between 1940 and 1945 he lived on grants (donated money) from the Rockefeller Foundation and the American Academy of Arts and Letters, on income scraped together from an attempt to write film scripts in Hollywood, and on wages as a waiter-entertainer in Greenwich Village in New York City.

Accomplished playwright

With the production of *The Glass Menagerie* Williams's fortunes changed. The play opened in Chicago, Illinois, in December 1944 and in New York City in March; it received the New York Drama Critics Circle Award and the Sidney Howard Memorial Award. *You Touched Me!*, written with Donald Windham, opened on Broadway in 1945. It was followed by publication of eleven one-act plays, *27 Wagons Full of Cotton* (1946), and two California productions. When *A Streetcar Named Desire* opened in 1947, New York audiences knew a major playwright had



Tennessee Williams.
Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

arrived. *A Streetcar Named Desire* won a Pulitzer Prize. The play combines sensuality, melodrama, and lyrical symbolism (a poetic representation of significant things). A film version was directed by Elia Kazan (1909–) and their partnership lasted for more than a decade.

Although the plays that followed *Streetcar* never repeated its overwhelming success, they kept Williams's name on theater marquees and in films. His novel *The Roman Spring of Mrs. Stone* (1950) and three volumes of short stories brought him an even wider audience. Some writers consider *Summer and Smoke* (1948) Williams's most sensitive play. While *The Rose*

Tattoo (1951) played to appreciative audiences, *Camino Real* (1953) played to confused ones. *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof* (1955) was a smashing success and won the New York Drama Critics Circle Award and a Pulitzer Prize.

Baby Doll (an original Williams-Kazan film script, 1956) was followed by the dramas *Orpheus Descending* (1957), *Garden District* (1958; two one-act plays, *Something Unspoken* and *Suddenly Last Summer*), *Sweet Bird of Youth* (1959), *Period of Adjustment* (1960), and *The Night of the Iguana* (1961). With these plays, critics charged Williams with publicly trying to solve personal problems, while including confused symbolism, sexual obsessions, thin characterizations, and violence and corruption for their own sake. *The Milk Train Doesn't Stop Here Anymore* (1963), *The Seven Descents of Myrtle* (1963; also called *Kingdom of Earth*), and *In the Bar of a Tokyo Hotel* (1969) neither helped Williams's standing with the critics nor proved that Williams's remarkable talent had vanished. Published after his death, *Not about Nightingales* (1998) had been written in 1938 and was Williams's first full-length play.

Later career

Through the 1970s and 1980s, Williams continued to write for the theater, though he was unable to repeat the success of most of his early years. One of his last plays was *Clothes for a Summer Hotel* (1980), based on passionate love affair between the American writer F. Scott Fitzgerald (1896–1940) and his wife, Zelda.

Two collections of Williams's many one-act plays were published: *27 Wagons Full of Cotton* (1946) and *American Blues* (1948). Williams also wrote fiction, including two novels, *The Roman Spring of Mrs. Stone* (1950)

and *Moise and the World of Reason* (1975). Four volumes of short stories were also published. *One Arm and Other Stories* (1948), *Hard Candy* (1954), *The Knightly Quest* (1969), and *Eight Mortal Ladies Possessed* (1974). Nine of his plays were made into films, and he wrote one original screenplay, *Baby Doll* (1956). In his 1975 tell-all novel, *Memoirs*, Williams described his own problems with alcohol and drugs and his homosexuality (the attraction to members of the same sex).

Williams died in New York City on February 25, 1983. In 1995, the United States Post Office commemorated Williams by issuing a special edition stamp in his name as part of their Literary Arts Series. For several years, literary enthusiasts have gathered to celebrate the man and his work at the Tennessee Williams Scholars Conference. The annual event, held along with the Tennessee Williams/New Orleans Literary Festival, features educational, theatrical and literary programs.

For More Information

- Hayman, Ronald. *Tennessee Williams: Everyone Else Is an Audience*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1993.
- Holditch, W. Kenneth. *Tennessee Williams and the South*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 2002.
- Leverich, Lyle. *Tom: The Unknown Tennessee Williams*. New York: Crown Publishers, 1995.
- Rasky, Harry. *Tennessee Williams: A Portrait in Laughter and Lamentation*. New York: Dodd, Mead, 1986.
- Spoto, Donald. *The Kindness of Strangers: The Life of Tennessee Williams*. Boston: Little, Brown, 1985.

WOODROW WILSON

Born: December 28, 1856

Staunton, Virginia

Died: February 3, 1924

Washington, D.C.

American president, governor, and educator

Woodrow Wilson was admired as a writer, a scholar, and an educator more than two decades before he became president. He spent twenty-four years working in the academic world as a professor, then as a college president, before he was elected governor of New Jersey. Two years later he was elected president of the United States, led the country through World War I (1914–18) and was the primary architect of the League of Nations.

Early years

Stephen Woodrow Wilson was born in Staunton, Virginia, on December 28, 1856, the son of Joseph and Jeanie Wilson. His father was a Presbyterian minister. Wilson briefly attended Davison University in North Carolina, but transferred to Princeton University and graduated there in 1879. He received his doctorate in 1886 from Johns Hopkins University.

In his doctoral thesis Wilson analyzed the American political system, and criticized what he believed was a breakdown of power in Congress, which was caused by the committee system. He believed that the president ought to solely lead the nation, a view that did not change once he was in the White House.

From 1886 to 1910 Wilson was in academic life—as a professor of political science at Bryn Mawr College, Wesleyan University, and Princeton. In 1902, he was named president of Princeton. He strongly favored an educational system that promoted a close relationship between teachers and students.

From academia to politics

By 1910 Wilson had established such a solid reputation as an educator that the Democratic party in New Jersey offered him the nomination for governor. After winning the election, Governor Wilson showed strong leadership, pushing through legislation dealing with such issues as employers' liability and public utilities. His success made him a prominent candidate for the presidency in 1912. He was nominated on the forty-sixth ballot, and went on to soundly defeat former president Theodore Roosevelt (1858–1919) and current president William Howard Taft (1857–1930) in the November election.

First term as president

In the first two years of his presidency Wilson dominated the Democratic-controlled Congress and secured legislation of great historical significance. The tariff (duties or a kind of tax) was revised downward, beginning a policy that was to be of substantial importance later. The Federal Reserve Act created a banking system under governmental control. The Federal Trade Commission Act created a body that has had an important role in preventing monopolies (an overwhelming concentration of power in an industry).

Early on Wilson faced difficult questions of foreign policy. Wilson refused to recognize



Woodrow Wilson.

Courtesy of the Library of Congress.

Mexico's new military dictator president, Victoriano Huerta, and worked for social reform in that country. In 1914 Wilson ordered the occupation of Veracruz to prevent Huerta from receiving arms from abroad. War was averted when the countries of Argentina, Brazil, and Chile mediated. Huerta was soon overthrown.

Beginning of World War I

In August 1914 World War I broke out in Europe. This was a particularly difficult time for Wilson. In addition to the beginning of the war, his wife, Ellen Axson Wilson

(1860–1914) died. The grieving president kept himself busy with his work and confided in his three daughters and a few close friends. His grief lightened early the following year, when he met Edith Bolling Galt (1872–1961). The couple married in December 1915.

Wilson kept the United States out of the war based on a policy of neutrality (taking no side). But there is little doubt that he sympathized with France and Great Britain and feared the victory of imperial Germany. The warring countries soon began interfering with American trade. The British restricted American commerce, but the Germans proclaimed a new kind of warfare, submarine warfare, with the prospect of American ships being sunk and their passengers and crew being lost. Wilson took German policies more seriously, because they involved the potential destruction of human life, whereas the British interfered only with trade. As early as February 1915, in response to a German declaration instituting the U-boat war, the president declared that Germany would be held to “strict accountability” for the loss of American lives.

For a time thereafter Wilson took no action. But on May 7, 1915, the liner *Lusitania* was sunk, with over a hundred American lives lost. The President addressed a stiff note to Germany. After other painful submarine episodes, Wilson convinced Germany to abandon the U-boat war in 1916.

In the meantime the presidential campaign of 1916 was approaching. Wilson was easily renominated and went on to win a close election against the Republican candidate, former Supreme Court justice (and future chief justice) Charles Evans Hughes

(1862–1948). Part of Wilson's success came from the Democratic platform that touted the president's ability to keep the United States at peace. "He kept us out of war" was a successful pro-Wilson slogan, though Wilson never promised anything about the country's future involvement in the war.

Second term as president

Wilson's efforts to bring the warring countries together were not successful. When the German government sought unlimited warfare on the sea, Wilson severed diplomatic relations with that nation but continued to hope that a direct challenge could be avoided. But on April 2, 1917, Wilson asked Congress for a declaration of war against Germany, and Congress overwhelmingly approved.

Wilson believed that the defeat of Germany was necessary, but he held out hope that at the end of the war a League of Nations might be established that would make impossible the recurrence of another bloody struggle. As early as April 1916 the president had begun to formulate his views on this. He was in favor of an association of nations that would act together against any nation that disrupted peace. There was much support for his point of view.

Fourteen Points

Throughout the war Wilson insisted on two things: the defeat of German militarism and the establishment of peace resting on just principles. In January 1918 he proposed the "Fourteen Points" that would need to be met in order to secure an armistice (cease fire) and begin serious peace negotiations. In the negotiations that autumn he made the acceptance of these points the primary condi-

tion on the part of his European associates and of the Germans as well. In November 1918 Wilson succeeded; an armistice was signed. Throughout the world Wilson was looked at with great esteem.

But difficulties loomed. The 1918 elections returned a Republican majority to Congress. The president himself stimulated partisanship by his appeal to elect a Democratic legislature. Though he selected able men to accompany him to the forthcoming peace conference in Paris, France, he did not think of accommodating the Republican opposition. By insisting on going to Paris in person and remaining there until the treaty was finished, he cut himself off from American opinion.

Treaty of Versailles and the League of Nations

At the peace conference Wilson strove to realize his ideals. He worked on drafting the Covenant of the League of Nations. This would provide for a League Council of the five great world powers and four elective members and for an assembly in which every member state would have a vote. Disputes would either go to arbitration or be decided amongst council members. If they failed to do this, they would be subjected to economic and possibly to military sanctions. They were also to agree to respect and preserve the territorial integrity and political independence of the members of the League.

At the talks that eventually led to the Treaty of Versailles, Wilson argued successfully for fairness on many issues, but he had to compromise on two vital points: France and England insisted on huge war reparations (payments for damages) against Germany; and Japan, which had joined the Allies

late in the war, was allowed to keep control of a province of China it had invaded. Wilson deeply opposed both resolutions, but he compromised to keep alive his vision for the League of Nations.

The Treaty of Versailles was not to stand the test of time. In detaching substantial territories from Germany and in fixing Germany with responsibility for the war, it furnished the basis for that German nationalism which was to strengthen with Adolf Hitler (1889–1945).

Wilson returned to the United States with a political battle ahead. Many disliked the Treaty of Versailles and opposed the “world politics” concept of the League of Nations. He erred in demanding ratification of the treaty without any changes. He made his appeal in an exhausting countrywide tour. He was hailed by large, enthusiastic crowds, but his health gave way, forcing him back to the White House. A stroke temporarily incapacitated him.

The Senate rejected unconditional ratification but adopted the treaty with reservations that Wilson refused to accept. In January 1920 a compromise was attempted. But Wilson spoiled these efforts by including the issue in the 1920 presidential campaign. In the fall election the Republican candidate, U.S. senator Warren G. Harding (1865–1923) of Ohio, easily defeated a fellow Ohioan, Governor James M. Cox (1870–1957). The new chief executive never sought to bring the Treaty of Versailles to the Senate or to bring the United States into the League, which was by now actually in existence. Wilson’s presidency ended in a stunning defeat. Despite this disappointing end to Wilson’s eight years in the White House, many historians view him as one of the country’s great presidents. Wilson died on February 3, 1924.

For More Information

- Clements, Kendrick A. *The Presidency of Woodrow Wilson*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas, 1992.
- Clements, Kendrick A. *Woodrow Wilson: World Statesman*. Rev. ed. Chicago: I. R. Dee, 1999.
- Ferrell, Robert H. *Woodrow Wilson and World War I: 1917–1921*. New York: Harper, 1986.
- Knock, Thomas J. *To End All Wars: Woodrow Wilson and the Quest for a New World Order*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1992.
- Levin, Phyllis Lee. *Edith and Woodrow: The Wilson White House*. New York: Scribner, 2001.

OPRAH WINFREY

Born: January 29, 1954

Kosciusko, Mississippi

African American television host and actress

America’s first lady of talk shows, Oprah Winfrey is well known for surpassing her competition to become the most watched daytime show host on television. Her natural style with guests and audiences on the *Oprah Winfrey Show* earned her widespread popularity, as well as her own production company, Harpo, Inc.

A difficult childhood

Oprah Gail Winfrey was born to Vernita Lee and Vernon Winfrey on an isolated farm

in Kosciusko, Mississippi, on January 29, 1954. Her name was supposed to be Orpah, from the Bible, but because of the difficulty of spelling and pronunciation, she was known as Oprah almost from birth. Winfrey's unmarried parents separated soon after she was born and left her in the care of her maternal grandmother on the farm.

As a child, Winfrey entertained herself by “playacting” in front of an “audience” of farm animals. Under the strict guidance of her grandmother, she learned to read at two and a half years old. She addressed her church congregation about “when Jesus rose on Easter Day” when she was two years old. Then Winfrey skipped kindergarten after writing a note to her teacher on the first day of school saying she belonged in the first grade. She was promoted to third grade after that year.

At six years old Winfrey was sent north to join her mother and two half-brothers in a Milwaukee ghetto, an extremely poor and dangerous neighborhood. At twelve years old she was sent to live with her father in Nashville, Tennessee. Feeling secure and happy for a brief period she began making speeches at social gatherings and churches, and one time earned five hundred dollars for a speech. She knew then that she wanted to be “paid to talk.”

Winfrey, again, was called back by her mother, and she had to leave the safety of her father's home. The poor, urban lifestyle had its negative effect on Winfrey as a young teenager, and her problems were compounded by repeated sexual abuse, starting at age nine, by men that others in her family trusted. Her mother worked odd jobs and did not have much time for supervision.



Oprah Winfrey.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

After years of bad behavior, Winfrey's mother sent her back to her father in Nashville.

A turning point

Winfrey said her father saved her life. He was very strict and provided her with guidance, structure, rules, and books. He required his daughter to complete weekly book reports, and she went without dinner until she learned five new vocabulary words each day.

Winfrey became an excellent student, participating as well in the drama club, debate club, and student council. In an Elks Club speaking contest, she won a full schol-

arship to Tennessee State University. The following year she was invited to a White House Conference on Youth. Winfrey was crowned Miss Fire Prevention by WVOL, a local Nashville radio station, and was hired by the station to read afternoon newscasts.

Winfrey became Miss Black Nashville and Miss Tennessee during her freshman year at Tennessee State. The Nashville Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS) affiliate offered her a job; Winfrey turned it down twice, but finally took the advice of a speech teacher, who reminded her that job offers from CBS were "the reason people go to college." The show was seen each evening on WTVF-TV, and Winfrey was Nashville's first African American female coanchor of the evening news. She was nineteen years old and still a sophomore in college.

Professional career

After Winfrey graduated, WJZ-TV in Baltimore, Maryland, scheduled her to do the local news updates, called cut-ins, during *Good Morning, America*, and soon she was moved to the morning talk show *Baltimore Is Talking* with cohost Richard Sher. After seven years on the show, the general manager of WLS-TV, American Broadcasting Company's (ABC) Chicago affiliate, saw Winfrey in an audition tape sent in by her producer, Debra DiMaio. At the time her ratings in Baltimore were better than Phil Donahue's, a national talk-show host, and she and DiMaio were hired.

Winfrey moved to Chicago, Illinois, in January 1984 and took over as anchor on *A.M. Chicago*, a morning talk show that was consistently last in the ratings. She changed the emphasis of the show from traditional women's

issues to current and controversial (debatable) topics, and after one month the show was even with Donahue's program. Three months later it had inched ahead. In September 1985 the program, renamed the *Oprah Winfrey Show*, was expanded to one hour. As a result, Donahue moved to New York City.

In 1985 Quincy Jones (1933–) saw Winfrey on television and thought she would make a fine actress in a movie he was coproducing with director Steven Spielberg (1946–). The film was based on the Alice Walker (1944–) novel *The Color Purple*. Her only acting experience until then had been in a one-woman show, *The History of Black Women Through Drama and Song*, which she performed during an African American theater festival in 1978.

Popularity of Oprah

The popularity of Winfrey's show skyrocketed after the success of *The Color Purple*, and in September 1985 the distributor King World bought the syndication rights (the rights to distribute a television program) to air the program in one hundred thirty-eight cities, a record for first-time syndication. That year, although *Donahue* was being aired on two hundred stations, Winfrey won her time slot by 31 percent, drew twice the Chicago audience as Donahue, and carried the top ten markets in the United States.

In 1986 Winfrey received a special award from the Chicago Academy for the Arts for unique contributions to the city's artistic community and was named Woman of Achievement by the National Organization of Women. The *Oprah Winfrey Show* won several Emmys for Best Talk Show, and Winfrey was honored as Best Talk Show Host.

Production

Winfrey formed her own production company, Harpo, Inc., in August 1986 to produce the topics that she wanted to see produced, including the television drama miniseries based on Gloria Naylor's *The Women of Brewster Place*, in which Winfrey was featured along with Cicely Tyson, Robin Givens, Olivia Cole, Jackee, Paula Kelly, and Lynn Whitfield. The miniseries aired in March 1989 and a regular series called *Brewster Place*, also starring Winfrey, debuted on ABC in May 1990. Winfrey also owned the screen rights to *Kaffir Boy*, Mark Mathabane's autobiographical (having to do with a story about oneself) book about growing up under apartheid in South Africa, as well as Toni Morrison's (1931–) novel *Beloved*.

In September 1996 Winfrey started an on-air reading club. On September 17 Winfrey stood up and announced she wanted "to get the country reading." She told her adoring fans to hasten to the stores to buy the book she had chosen. They would then discuss it together on the air the following month.

The initial reaction was astonishing. *The Deep End of the Ocean* had generated significant sales for a first novel; sixty-eight thousand copies had gone into the stores since June. But between the last week in August, when Winfrey told her plans to the publisher, and the September on-air announcement, Viking printed ninety thousand more. By the time the discussion was broadcast on October 18, there were seven hundred fifty thousand copies in print. The book became a number one best-seller, and another one hundred thousand were printed before February 1997.

The club ensured Winfrey as the most powerful book marketer in the United States. She sent more people to bookstores than morning news programs, other daytime shows, evening magazines, radio shows, print reviews, and feature articles combined. But after a six-year run with her book club, Winfrey decided to cut back in the spring of 2002 and no longer have the book club as a monthly feature.

The future

Although one of the wealthiest women in America and the highest paid entertainer in the world, Winfrey has made generous contributions to charitable organizations and institutions such as Morehouse College, the Harold Washington Library, the United Negro College Fund, and Tennessee State University.

Winfrey renewed her contract with King World Productions to continue *The Oprah Winfrey Show* through the 2003–2004 television season. Winfrey and Harpo Production company plan to develop other syndicated television programming with King World.

For More Information

- Brooks, Philip. *Oprah Winfrey: A Voice for the People*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1999.
- King, Norman. *Everybody Loves Oprah!* New York: Morrow, 1987.
- Patterson, Lillie. *Oprah Winfrey: Talk Show Host and Actress*. Hillside, NJ: Enslow, 1988.
- Stone, Tanya Lee. *Oprah Winfrey: Success with an Open Heart*. Brookfield, CT: Millbrook Press, 2001.
- Waldron, Robert. *Oprah*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1987.

ANNA MAY WONG

Born: January 3, 1905

Los Angeles, California

Died: February 3, 1961

Santa Monica, California

Asian American actress

Anna May Wong is chiefly remembered as the first actress of Asian descent to achieve stardom as the “Oriental temptress,” so much a fixture of melodramas in the late 1920s and 1930s.

Childhood

Born on Flower Street in Los Angeles, California, in 1907, Anna May Wong was named Wong Liu Tsong, which in Cantonese means “frosted yellow willow.” Wong was third-generation Chinese American; her father was born in Sacramento, California, and his father had moved to California during the Gold Rush, where thousands flocked to the state in hopes of striking it rich with gold.

Growing up, Wong and her six brothers and sisters lived in an apartment over the family’s run-down laundry. Her first memories were of constant steam and the strong odor of hot-ironed linen. As a young child, Wong became fascinated with the brand new world of movies. She began skipping Chinese school in the evenings to watch such movies as *The Perils of Pauline* (1914) at the local theater. By the time she was eleven, Wong decided she was going to be a movie actress. Against all odds, she got her first part at age fourteen when an agent hired three hundred Chinese girls as extras in the 1919 film *The*

Red Lantern. Hardly visible in the film, she went on to get a few more minor roles.

Hollywood calls

For two years, Wong worked after school as an extra without telling her parents, who, she knew, would not approve. At age sixteen, her father found her a job as a secretary, but Wong was fired as unqualified one week later. When she returned home, fearing her father’s anger, she found a letter from a director’s office offering her a role in the film *Bits of Life* (1921). It would bring Wong her first screen credit. Although Wong’s father strongly objected to his daughter’s chosen career, he eventually gave in on the condition that an adult escort, often he himself, would accompany the young Wong on the film sets at all times. When she was not in front of the cameras, her father locked her into her room on the set.

At age seventeen, Wong had one of the few romantic lead roles she would ever play in *Toll of the Sea* (1923), the first Technicolor (an early color film) feature ever made. As a young village girl who marries an American sailor, Wong captured the media’s attention for the first time. Reporters began to appear at the laundry in the hopes of catching Wong for an interview or a photo.

International fame came in 1924 with *The Thief of Bagdad*, in which Wong played an exotic Mongol slave girl opposite star Douglas Fairbanks Sr. (1883–1939). Wong’s role embarrassed her family. Although Wong would continue to support her family for many years, she remained close only to her brother, Richard.

The movie star's life

The success of *Bagdad* led to countless new offers. She appeared as an Eskimo in *The Alaskan* and a Native American girl in *Peter Pan*. In addition to film roles, Wong also worked as a model. She made a few more films, but soon became aggravated with the roles and with Hollywood's practice of casting non-Asians in the few leading Asian roles. Wong finally fled to Europe where, in London, she costarred with Charles Laughton (1899–1962) in *Piccadilly*. After the film, director Basil Dean produced a Chinese play, *A Circle of Chalk*, specifically for Wong. She successfully played opposite the rising new talent, Laurence Olivier (1907–1989), in London's New Theater.

Wong remained in Europe for three years, where she was hailed for her film and stage appearances. In Germany and France, she made foreign versions of her British films, including Germany's first sound picture. She spoke both German and French so fluently that critics could hardly believe they were hearing her voice instead of a native actress. During her career, Wong taught herself to speak English, Chinese, French, German, and Italian.

Wong's next screen role, *Daughter of the Dragon*, cast her in yet another stereotypical (having to do with opinions based on generalizations) role as the daughter of the infamous Dr. Fu Manchu. Wong then appeared in the thriller *Shanghai Express*, starring Marlene Dietrich (1901–1992). Wong's portrayal of the bad-girl-turned-good inspired better reviews than Dietrich received. Years later, the star would complain that Wong had upstaged her.



Anna May Wong.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

An early retirement

In 1942, finally fed up with the Hollywood system, Wong retired from films at the age of thirty-five. Throughout the war, she contributed to the war efforts by working for the United China Relief Fund and touring with the United Service Organizations, Inc. (USO; a group that provided entertainment and other services for the U.S. military). During the 1940s and 1950s, Wong took occasional small parts on television, even starring in her own series, *Mme. Liu Tsong*, in which she played the owner of an international chain of art galleries who was also a sleuth.

Seventeen years after retirement, Wong attempted a film comeback. She returned as Lana Turner's (1920–1995) mysterious housekeeper in the 1950 film, *Portrait in Black*. In 1961, while she was preparing for the role of the mother in *Flower Drum Song*, Wong died of a heart attack in her sleep.

For More Information

"Anna May Wong." In *Notable Asian Americans*. Edited by Helen Zia and Susan B. Gall. Detroit: Gale, 1995.

Parish, James Robert, and William T. Leonard. *Hollywood Players: The Thirties*. New Rochelle, NY: Arlington House, 1976.

TIGER WOODS

Born: December 30, 1975

Cypress, California

African/Asian American golfer

American golfer Tiger Woods is the youngest man ever, and the first man of color, to win the Masters Tournament of golf.

Childhood in golf

Tiger Woods was born Eldrick Woods on December 30, 1975, in Cypress, California. He is the only child of Earl and Kultida Woods. His parents identified their son's talent at an unusually early age. They said that he was playing with a putter before he could walk. The boy was gifted not only with excep-

tional playing abilities, but he also possessed a passion for the sport. Woods first gained national attention on a talk show when he beat the famed comedian and avid golfer Bob Hope (1903–) in a putting contest. The young boy was only three at the time, and he was quickly hailed as a prodigy, or a child with remarkable talent. Not long after that, when he was five years old, Woods was featured on the popular television show *That's Incredible!*

Tiger's father has never denied that he devoted his energies to developing his son's talent and to furthering the boy's career as a golfer. During practice sessions, Tiger learned to maintain his composure and to hold his concentration while his father persistently made extremely loud noises and created other distractions. All the while, Tiger's mother made sure that her son's rare talent and his budding golf career would not interfere with his childhood or his future happiness. His mother was a native of Thailand and passed on to her son the mystical ideals of Buddhism, an eastern religion that seeks to go beyond human suffering and existence.

In many ways Woods grew up as a typical middle-class American boy. He developed a taste for junk food and an affection for playing video games. He also spent a fair share of his time clowning around in front of his father's ever-present video camera. As for playing golf, there is no question that the sport was the focus of his childhood. He spent many hours practicing his swing and playing in youth tournaments. Woods was eight years old when he won his first formal competition. From that point he became virtually unstoppable, winning trophies and breaking amateur records everywhere. Media accounts of the boy prodigy had reached

nearly legendary proportions by 1994, when he entered Stanford University as a freshman on a full golf scholarship.

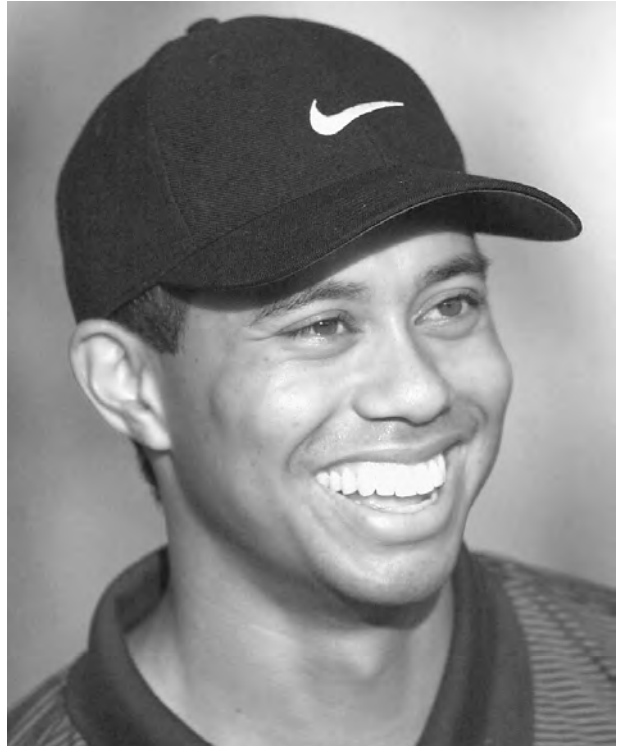
College years

During Woods's first year of college, he won the U.S. Amateur title and qualified to play in the Masters tournament in Augusta, Georgia, in the spring of 1995. Although he played as an amateur—not for prize money—Woods's reputation preceded him. By 1996, Woods had won three U.S. Amateur titles, one after another, an amazing accomplishment in itself. Woods was only twenty years old, and in August of 1996, he decided to quit college in order to play professional golf.

Four months later in December, Woods celebrated his twenty-first birthday. He marked the occasion with a legal name change, from Eldrick to Tiger. Woods had been called Tiger by his father even as a youngster. The nickname stuck, and Woods had always been known to his friends, and to the press, as Tiger. It soon became evident that he was destined for success. *Sports Illustrated* named him 1996 "Sportsman of the Year," and by January of 1997, he had already won three professional tournaments. He was a media sensation.

Tiger the champion

In April of 1997, only eight months into Woods's professional career, he played in the prestigious (important and famous) Masters tournament held at Georgia's Augusta National Golf Club. The Masters title is perhaps the greatest honor in the world of golf. In addition to hefty prize money, first-place winners are awarded a green blazer to symbolize their membership among the top golfers in the world.



Tiger Woods.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

When the tournament was over, Woods had made history as the youngest person ever to win the Masters title. His score was an unprecedented 270 strokes. His victory margin set another record—twelve strokes ahead of the runner-up. This feat was enhanced by the fact that Woods was the first man of color ever to win the title. He accepted all of these honors with grace and humility, and gave tribute to the African American golfers who came before him and helped pave the way. He also honored his mother (who is Asian) by reminding the world of his diverse ethnic background; he is African American, Thai, Chinese, Native American, and Caucasian.

Less than three months passed until July 6, 1997, when Woods won the Western Open, another major golf tournament. Critics credited his amazing success to relentless work and an extraordinary desire to win.

Impact of Tiger Woods

Woods is credited too with popularizing the sport of golf, not only among African American people and other minorities, but among children of all backgrounds. His personal sponsorship of programs for children has been reported for years, and at least one corporate sponsor found that in order to secure an endorsement (an official document of agreement) from Tiger Woods the price would include the added cost of a generous donation to the Tiger Woods Foundation for inner city children.

In 1999 Woods achieved the greatest moment in his career when he won the PGA Championship by one shot. He had been in the lead for most of the tournament, but lost his lead on the last day, making his one stroke victory over Sergio Garcia even more memorable for the crowd that had gathered to watch. Woods continued his success in November 1999 when he shot the best total ever in the World Cup, helping to lead the United States to victory in the tournament. He was also named the PGA Tour Player of the Year for the second time on November 30, 1999, earning more than \$6.6 million in prize money during the season.

On January 9, 2000, Woods won the Mercedes Championship. It was his fifth consecutive victory and, at the time, golf's longest winning streak in forty-six years. On February 7, 2000, he extended that streak by winning the Pebble Beach National Pro-Am. He became

the first player since Ben Hogan (1912–1997) in 1948 to win six straight tour events. He went on to win the Bay Hill Invitational on March 19, 2000. On June 18, 2000, he won the U.S. Open, his third major championship. The next month, on July 23, he won the British Open, thus winning the Grand Slam. He became the youngest player to win all four major championships and just the fifth ever.

On April 8, 2001, Woods won the sixty-fifth Masters Tournament at the Augusta National Golf Club. The win made him the only golfer in history to hold the four major championship titles at the same time. Woods won the sixty-sixth Masters Tournament on April 14, 2002. At the turn of the twenty-first century, Woods was the most dominant figure in all of sports, and his name will surely be decorated throughout the record books before his career is over.

For More Information

- Owen, David. *The Chosen One: Tiger Woods and the Dilemma of Greatness*. New York: Simon and Schuster, 2001.
- Strege, John. *Tiger: A Biography of Tiger Woods*. New York: Broadway Books, 1997.
- Woods, Tiger. *How I Play Golf*. New York: Warner Books, 2001.

**VIRGINIA
WOOLF**

**Born: January 25, 1882
London, England**

Died: March 28, 1941

Lewes, Sussex, England

English novelist, critic, and essayist

The English novelist, critic, and essayist Virginia Woolf ranks as one of England's most distinguished writers of the middle part of the twentieth century. Her novels can perhaps best be described as impressionistic, a literary style which attempts to inspire impressions rather than recreating reality.

Early years and marriage

Virginia Stephen was born in London on January 25, 1882. She was the daughter of Sir Leslie Stephen, a famous scholar and philosopher (a seeker of knowledge) who, among many literary occupations, was at one time editor of *Cornhill Magazine* and the *Dictionary of National Biography*. James Russell Lowell, the American poet, was her godfather. Her mother, Julia Jackson, died when the child was twelve or thirteen years old. Virginia and her sister were educated at home in their father's library, where Virginia also met his famous friends who included G. E. Moore (1873–1958) and E. M. Forster (1879–1970). Young Virginia soon fell deep into the world of literature.

In 1912, eight years after her father's death, Virginia married Leonard Woolf, a brilliant young writer and critic from Cambridge, England, whose interests in literature as well as in economics and the labor movement were well suited to hers. In 1917, for amusement, they founded the Hogarth Press by setting and handprinting on an old press *Two Stories* by "L. and V. Woolf." The volume was a success, and over the years they published many important books, including *Pre-*

lude by Katherine Mansfield (1888–1923), then an unknown writer; *Poems* by T. S. Eliot (1888–1965); and *Kew Gardens* by Virginia Woolf. The policy of the Hogarth Press was to publish the best and most original work that came to its attention, and the Woolfs as publishers favored young and unknown writers. Virginia's older sister Vanessa, who married the critic Clive Bell, participated in this venture by designing dust jackets for the books issued by the Hogarth Press.

Virginia Woolf's home in Tavistock Square, Bloomsbury, became a literary and art center, attracting such diverse intellectuals as Lytton Strachey (1880–1932), Arthur Waley (1889–1966), Victoria Sackville-West (1892–1962), John Maynard Keynes (1883–1943), and Roger Fry (1866–1934). These artists, critics, and writers became known as the Bloomsbury group. Roger Fry's theory of art may have influenced Virginia's technique as a novelist. Broadly speaking, the Bloomsbury group drew from the philosophical interests of its members (who had been educated at Cambridge) the values of love and beauty as essential to life.

As critic and essayist

Virginia Woolf began writing essays for the *Times Literary Supplement* (London) when she was young, and over the years these and other essays were collected in a two-volume series called *The Common Reader* (1925, 1933). These studies range with affection and understanding through all of English literature. Students of fiction have drawn upon these criticisms as a means of understanding Virginia Woolf's own direction as a novelist.

An essay frequently studied is "Mr. Bennett and Mrs. Brown," written in 1924, in



Virginia Woolf.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

which Virginia Woolf described the manner in which the older-generation novelist Arnold Bennett would have portrayed Mrs. Brown, a lady casually met in a railway carriage, by giving her a house and furniture and a position in the world. She then contrasted this method with another: one that exhibits a new interest in Mrs. Brown, the mysteries of her person, her consciousness (awareness), and the consciousness of the observer responding to her.

Achievement as novelist

Two of Virginia Woolf's novels in particular, *Mrs. Dalloway* (1925) and *To the Light-*

house (1927), successfully follow the latter approach. The first novel covers a day in the life of Mrs. Dalloway in postwar London; it achieves its vision of reality through the reception by Mrs. Dalloway's mind of what Virginia Woolf called those "myriad impressions—trivial, fantastic, evanescent [vanishing], or engraved with the sharpness of steel."

To the Lighthouse is, in a sense, a family portrait and history rendered in subjective (characterized by personal views) depth through selected points in time. Part I deals with the time between six o'clock in the evening and dinner. Primarily through the consciousness of Mrs. Ramsay, it presents the clash of the male and female sensibilities in the family; Mrs. Ramsay functions as a means of balance and settling disputes. Part II is a moving section of loss during the interval between Mrs. Ramsay's death and the family's revisit to the house. Part III moves toward completion of this complex portrait through the adding of a last detail to a painting by an artist guest, Lily Briscoe, and through the final completion of a plan, rejected by the father in Part I, for him and the children to sail out to the lighthouse.

Last years and other books

Virginia Woolf was the author of about fifteen books, the last, *A Writer's Diary*, posthumously (after death) published in 1953. Her death by drowning in Lewes, Sussex, England, on March 28, 1941, has often been regarded as a suicide brought on by the unbearable strains of life during World War II (1939–45; a war fought between the Axis powers: Japan, Italy, and Germany—and the Allies: France, England, the Soviet Union, and the United States). The true explanation

seems to be that she had regularly felt symptoms of a mental breakdown and feared it would be permanent.

Mrs. *Dalloway*, *To the Lighthouse*, and *Jacob's Room* (1922) represent Virginia Woolf's major achievements. *The Voyage Out* (1915) first brought her critical attention. *Night and Day* (1919) is traditional in method. The short stories of *Monday or Tuesday* (1921) brought critical praise. In *The Waves* (1931) she masterfully employed the stream-of-consciousness technique which stresses "free writing." Other experimental novels include *Orlando* (1928), *The Years* (1937), and *Between the Acts* (1941). Virginia Woolf's championship of women's rights is reflected in the essays in *A Room of One's Own* (1929) and in *Three Guineas* (1938).

For More Information

- Bell, Quentin. *Virginia Woolf: A Biography*. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1972.
- Bond, Alma Halbert. *Who Killed Virginia Woolf?: A Psychobiography*. New York: Human Sciences Press, 1989.
- Caws, Mary Anne. *Virginia Woolf*. Woodstock, NY: Overlook Books, 2002.
- Lee, Hermione. *Virginia Woolf*. New York: A. A. Knopf, 1997.

WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

Born: April 7, 1770

Cookermouth, Cumberland, England

Died: April 23, 1850

Rydal Mount, Westmorland, England

English poet

William Wordsworth was an early leader of romanticism (a literary movement that celebrated nature and concentrated on human emotions) in English poetry and ranks as one of the greatest lyric poets in the history of English literature.

His early years

William Wordsworth was born on April 7, 1770, in Cookermouth, Cumberland, England, the second child of an attorney. Unlike the other major English romantic poets, he enjoyed a happy childhood under the loving care of his mother and was very close to his sister Dorothy. As a child he wandered happily through the lovely natural scenery of Cumberland. In grammar school, Wordsworth showed a keen interest in poetry. He was fascinated by the epic poet John Milton (1608–1674).

From 1787 to 1790 Wordsworth attended St. John's College at Cambridge University. He always returned to his home and to nature during his summer vacations. Before graduating from Cambridge, he took a walking tour through France, Switzerland, and Italy in 1790. The Alps made an impression on him that he did not recognize until fourteen years later.

Stay in France

Revolutionary passion in France made a powerful impact on Wordsworth, who returned there in November 1791. He wanted to improve his knowledge of the



William Wordsworth.

Reproduced by permission of the Granger Collection.

French language. His experience in France just after the French Revolution (1789; the French overthrew the ruling monarchy) reinforced his sympathy for common people and his belief in political freedom.

Wordsworth fell passionately in love with a French girl, Annette Vallon. She gave birth to their daughter in December 1792. However, Wordsworth had spent his limited funds and was forced to return home. The separation left him with a sense of guilt that deepened his poetic inspiration and resulted in an important theme in his work of abandoned women.

Publication of first poems

Wordsworth's first poems, *Descriptive Sketches* and *An Evening Walk*, were printed in 1793. He wrote several pieces over the next several years. The year 1797 marked the beginning of Wordsworth's long friendship with Samuel Taylor Coleridge (1772–1834). Together they published *Lyrical Ballads* in 1798. Wordsworth wanted to challenge “the gaudiness [unnecessarily flashy] and inane [foolish] phraseology [wording] of many modern writers.” Most of his poems in this collection centered on the simple yet deeply human feelings of ordinary people, phrased in their own language. His views on this new kind of poetry were more fully described in the important “Preface” that he wrote for the second edition (1800).

“Tintern Abbey”

Wordsworth's most memorable contribution to this volume was “Lines Composed a Few Miles Above Tintern Abbey,” which he wrote just in time to include it. This poem is the first major piece to illustrate his original talent at its best. It skillfully combines matter-of-factness in natural description with a genuinely mystical (magical) sense of infinity, joining self-exploration to philosophical speculation (questioning). The poem closes on a subdued but confident reassertion of nature's healing power, even though mystical insight may be obtained from the poet.

In its successful blending of inner and outer experience, of sense perception, feeling, and thought, “Tintern Abbey” is a poem in which the writer becomes a symbol of mankind. The poem leads to imaginative thoughts about man and the universe. This cosmic outlook rooted in the self is a central

feature of romanticism. Wordsworth's poetry is undoubtedly the most impressive example of this view in English literature.

Poems of the middle period

Wordsworth, even while writing his contributions to the *Lyrical Ballads*, had been feeling his way toward more ambitious schemes. He had embarked on a long poem in unrhymed verse, "The Ruined Cottage," later referred to as "The Peddler." It was intended to form part of a vast philosophical poem with the title "The Recluse, or Views of Man, Nature and Society." This grand project never materialized as originally planned.

Abstract, impersonal speculation was not comfortable for Wordsworth. He could handle experiences in the philosophical-lyrical manner only if they were closely related to himself and could arouse his creative feelings and imagination. During the winter months he spent in Germany, he started work on his magnum opus (greatest work), *The Prelude, or Growth of a Poet's Mind*. It was published after his death.

However, such a large achievement was still beyond Wordsworth's scope (area of capabilities) at this time. It was back to the shorter poetic forms that he turned during the most productive season of his long literary life, the spring of 1802. The output of these fertile (creative) months mostly came from his earlier inspirations: nature and the common people. During this time he wrote "To a Butterfly," "I Wandered Lonely as a Cloud," "To the Cuckoo," "The Rainbow," and other poems.

Changes in philosophy

The crucial event of this period was Wordsworth's loss of the sense of mystical oneness, which had sustained (lasted throughout) his highest imaginative flights. Indeed, a mood of despondency (depression) descended over Wordsworth, who was then thirty-two years old.

In the summer of 1802 Wordsworth spent a few weeks in Calais, France, with his sister Dorothy. Wordsworth's renewed contact with France only confirmed his disillusionment (disappointment) with the French Revolution and its aftermath.

During this period Wordsworth had become increasingly concerned with Coleridge, who by now was almost totally dependent upon opium (a highly addictive drug) for relief from his physical sufferings. Both friends came to believe that the realities of life were in stark contradiction (disagreement) to the visionary expectations of their youth. Wordsworth characteristically sought to redefine his own identity in ways that would allow him a measure of meaning. The new turn his life took in 1802 resulted in an inner change that set the new course his poetry followed from then on.

Poems about England and Scotland began pouring forth from Wordsworth's pen, while France and Napoleon (1769–1821) soon became Wordsworth's favorite symbols of cruelty and oppression. His nationalistic (intense pride in one's own country) inspiration led him to produce the two "Memorials of a Tour in Scotland" (1803, 1814) and the group entitled "Poems Dedicated to National Independence and Liberty."

Poems of 1802

The best poems of 1802, however, deal with a deeper level of inner change. In Wordsworth's poem "Intimations of Immortality" (March–April), he plainly recognized that "The things which I have seen I now can see no more"; yet he emphasized that although the "visionary gleam" had fled, the memory remained, and although the "celestial light" had vanished, the "common sight" of "meadow, grove and stream" was still a potent (strong) source of delight and solace (comfort).

Thus Wordsworth shed his earlier tendency to idealize nature and turned to a more sedate (calm) doctrine (set of beliefs) of orthodox Christianity. Younger poets and critics soon blamed him for this "recantation" (renouncing), which they equated with his change of mind about the French Revolution. His *Ecclesiastical Sonnets* (1822) are clear evidence of the way in which love of freedom, nature, and the Church came to coincide (come together at the same time) in his mind.

The Prelude

Nevertheless, it was the direction suggested in "Intimations of Immortality" that, in the view of later criticism, enabled Wordsworth to produce perhaps the most outstanding achievement of English romanticism: *The Prelude*. He worked on it, on and off, for several years and completed the first version in May 1805. *The Prelude* can claim to be the only true romantic epic (long, often heroic work) because it deals in narrative terms with the spiritual growth of the only true romantic hero, the poet. The inward odyssey (journey) of the poet was described not for its own sake but as a sample and as an adequate image of man at his most sensitive.

Wordsworth shared the general romantic notion that personal experience is the only way to gain living knowledge. The purpose of *The Prelude* was to recapture and interpret, with detailed thoroughness, the whole range of experiences that had contributed to the shaping of his own mind. Wordsworth refrained from publishing the poem in his lifetime, revising it continuously. Most important and, perhaps, most to be regretted, the poet also tried to give a more orthodox tinge to his early mystical faith in nature.

Later years

Wordsworth's estrangement (growing apart) from Coleridge in 1810 deprived him of a powerful incentive to imaginative and intellectual alertness. Wordsworth's appointment to a government position in 1813 relieved him of financial care.

Wordsworth's undiminished love for nature made him view the emergent (just appearing) industrial society with undisguised reserve. He opposed the Reform Bill of 1832, which, in his view, merely transferred political power from the land owners to the manufacturing class, but he never stopped pleading in favor of the victims of the factory system.

In 1843 Wordsworth was appointed poet laureate (official poet of a country). He died on April 23, 1850.

For More Information

- Davies, Hunter. *William Wordsworth: A Biography*. New York: Atheneum, 1980.
- Gill, Stephen. *William Wordsworth: A Life*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1989.

Johnston, Kenneth R. *The Hidden Wordsworth: Poet, Lover, Rebel, Spy*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1998.

Negrotta, Rosanna. *William Wordsworth: A Biography with Selected Poems*. London: Brockhampton, 1999.

WRIGHT BROTHERS

ORVILLE WRIGHT

Born: August 19, 1871

Dayton, Ohio

Died: January 30, 1948

Dayton, Ohio

WILBUR WRIGHT

Born: April 16, 1867

Millville, Indiana

Died: May 30, 1912

Dayton, Ohio

American aviators

The American aviation pioneers Wilbur and Orville Wright were the first to accomplish manned, powered flight in a heavier-than-air machine.

Their early years

Wilbur and Orville Wright were the sons of Milton Wright, a bishop of the United Brethren in Christ. Wilbur was born on April 16, 1867, in Millville, Indiana. Orville was born on August 19, 1871, in Dayton, Ohio. Until the death of Wilbur in 1912, the two

were inseparable. Their personalities were perfectly complementary (each provided what the other lacked). Orville was full of ideas and enthusiasms. Wilbur was more steady in his habits, more mature in his judgments, and more likely to see a project through.

While in high school, Wilbur intended to go to Yale and study to be a clergyman. However, he suffered a facial injury while playing hockey, which prevented him from continuing his education. For the next three years he continued his education informally through reading in his father's large library.

In their early years the two boys helped their father, who edited a journal called the *Religious Telescope*. Later, they began a paper of their own, *West Side News*. They went into business together as printers producing everything from religious handouts to commercial fliers. In 1892 they opened the Wright Cycle Shop in Dayton. This was the perfect occupation for the Wright brothers because it involved one of the exciting mechanical devices of the time: the bicycle. When the brothers took up the problems of flight, they had a solid grounding in practical mechanics (knowledge of how to build machines).

The exploits of one of the great glider pilots of the late nineteenth century, Otto Lilienthal, had attracted the attention of the Wright brothers as early as 1891, but it was not until the death of this famous aeronautical (having to do with the study of flying and the design of flying machines) engineer in 1896 that the two became interested in gliding experiments. They then decided to educate themselves in the theory and state of the art of flying.

WRIGHT BROTHERS



Wilbur Wright (left) and his brother Orville.
Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

Their beginnings in flight

The Wrights took up the problem of flight at a favorable time, for some of the fundamental, or basic, theories of aerodynamics were already known; a body of experimental data existed; and, most importantly, the recent development of the internal combustion engine made available a sufficient source of power for manned flight.

The Wright brothers began by accumulating and mastering all the important information on the subject, designed and tested their own models and gliders, built their own engine, and, when the experimental data they had inherited appeared to be inadequate or

wrong, they conducted new and more thorough experiments. The Wrights decided that earlier attempts at flight were not successful because the plans for early airplanes required pilots to shift their bodies to control the plane. The brothers decided that it would be better to control a plane by moving its wings.

First trip to Kitty Hawk

The Wright brothers proceeded to fly double-winged kites and gliders in order to gain experience and to test the data they had. After consulting the U.S. Weather Bureau, they chose an area of sand dunes near the small town of Kitty Hawk, North Carolina, as the site of their experiments. In September 1900 they set up camp there.

The Wrights's first device failed to fly as a kite because it was unable to develop sufficient lift (upward force). Instead, they flew it as a free glider. They kept careful records of their failures as well as of their successes. Their own data showed conclusively that previous tables of information they had were greatly inaccurate.

Returning to Dayton in 1901, the Wright brothers built a wind tunnel (a tunnel wherein one can control the flow of wind in order to determine its effect on an object)—the first in the United States. This is where they tested over two hundred models of wing surfaces in order to measure lift and drag (resistance) factors and to discover the most suitable design. They also discovered that although screw propellers had been used on ships for more than half a century, there was no reliable body of data on the subject and no theory that would allow them to design the proper propellers for their airship. They had to work the problem out for themselves mathematically.

The Wrights, by this time, not only had mastered the existing body of aeronautical science but also had added to it. They now built their third glider, incorporating their findings, and in the fall of 1902 they returned to Kitty Hawk. They made over one thousand gliding flights and were able to confirm their previous data and to demonstrate their ability to control motions of the glider. Having learned to build and to control an adequate air frame, they now determined to apply power to their machine.

Powered flight

The Wright brothers soon discovered, however, that no manufacturer would undertake to build an engine that would meet their specifications, so they had to build their own. They produced one that had four cylinders and developed 12 horsepower (a unit that describes the strength of an engine). When it was installed in the air frame, the entire machine weighed just 750 pounds and proved to be capable of traveling 31 miles per hour. They took this new airplane to Kitty Hawk in the fall of 1903 and on December 17 made the world's first manned, powered flight in a heavier-than-air craft.

The first flight was made by Orville and lasted only 12 seconds, during which the airplane flew 120 feet. That same day, however, on its fourth flight, with Wilbur at the controls, the plane stayed in the air for 59 seconds and traveled 852 feet. Then a gust of wind severely damaged the craft. The brothers returned to Dayton convinced of their success and determined to build another machine. In 1905 they abandoned their other activities and concentrated on the development of aviation. On May 22, 1906, they received a patent for their flying machine.

The next step

The brothers looked to the federal government for encouragement in their venture, and gradually interest was aroused in Washington, D.C. In 1907 the government asked for bids for an airplane that would meet certain requirements. Twenty-two bids were received, three were accepted, but only the Wright brothers finished their contract.

The brothers continued their experiments at Kitty Hawk, and in September 1908, while Wilbur was in France attempting to interest foreign backers in their machine, Orville successfully demonstrated their contract airplane. It was accepted by the government. The event was marred by a crash a week later in which Orville was injured and a passenger was killed.

Wilbur's trip to France proved to be a success. In 1909 the Wright brothers formed the American Wright Company, with Wilbur taking the lead in setting up and directing the business. His death in Dayton on May 30, 1912, left Orville feeling depressed and alone. In 1915 he sold his rights to the firm and gave up his interest in manufacturing in order to turn to experimental work. He had little taste for the busy activity of commercial life.

After his retirement, Orville lived quietly in Dayton, conducting experiments on mechanical problems of interest to him, none of which proved to be of major importance. His chief public activity was service on the National Advisory Committee for Aeronautics (the government agency that came before the National Aeronautics and Space Administration, or NASA), of which he was a member from its organization by President Woodrow Wilson in 1915 until his death in Dayton on January 30, 1948.

The Wright Brothers helped found modern aviation through their curiosity, their inventiveness, and their unwillingness to give up their vision.

For More Information

Culick, Fred E. C., and Spencer Dunmore. *On Great White Wings: The Wright Brothers and the Race for Flight*. Shrewsbury, England: Airlife, 2001.

Freedman, Russell. *The Wright Brothers: How They Invented the Airplane*. New York: Holiday House, 1991.

Howard, Fred. *Wilbur and Orville: A Biography of the Wright Brothers*. New York: Knopf, 1987.

Kelly, Fred C. *The Wright Brothers: A Biography Authorized by Orville Wright*. New York: Farrar, Straus, and Young, 1951. Reprint, New York: Dover Publications, 1989.

Walsh, John Evangelist. *One Day at Kitty Hawk: The Untold Story of the Wright Brothers and the Airplane*. New York: Crowell, 1975.

FRANK LLOYD
WRIGHT

Born: June 8, 1869
Richland Center, Wisconsin
Died: April 9, 1959
Phoenix, Arizona
American architect

The American architect Frank Lloyd Wright designed dramatically creative buildings during a career of almost seventy years. His work established the imagery for much of the modern architectural environment.

Early life and education

Frank Lloyd Wright was born on June 8, 1869, in Richland Center, Wisconsin, the first of three children to William, a preacher, and Anna Wright. When he was twelve years old his family settled in Madison, Wisconsin, and Wright worked on his uncle's farm at Spring Green during the summers. After the couple divorced in 1885, Frank lived with his mother, and the two shared a lasting relationship. It was from her that he developed an early love for pure geometric forms and designs, which later influenced his architecture.

Wright developed a passion for the farmland that never left him. He attended Madison High School and left in 1885, apparently without graduating. He went to work as a draftsman, and the following year, while still working, took a few courses in civil engineering at the University of Wisconsin.

In 1887 Wright moved to Chicago, Illinois, worked briefly for an architect, and then joined the firm of Dankmar Adler (1844–1900) and Louis Sullivan (1856–1924). Wright was very much influenced by Sullivan, and, although their relationship ended when Sullivan found out that Wright was designing houses on his own, he always acknowledged Sullivan's influence and referred to him as "lieber meister." In 1893 Wright opened his own office.

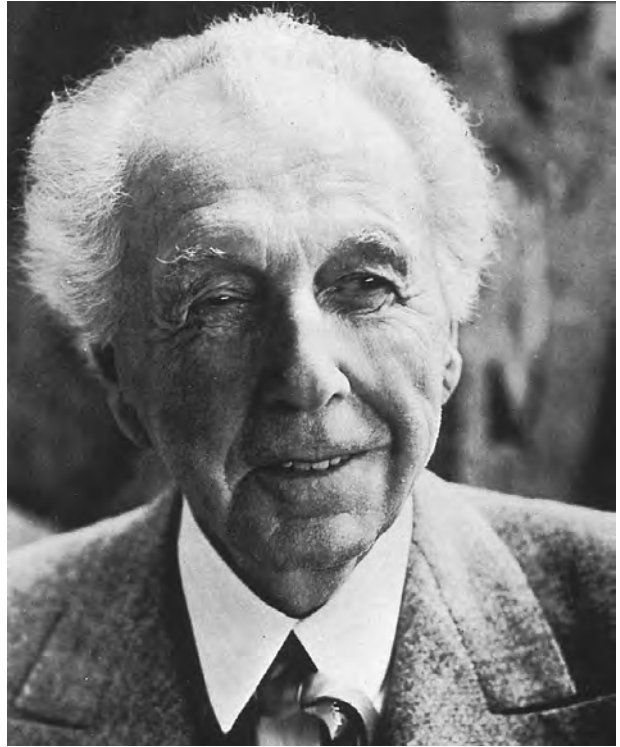
Master of domestic architecture

The houses Wright built in Buffalo, New York, and in Chicago and its suburbs before World War I (1914–18), when German-led forces pushed for European domination, gained international fame wherever there were avant-garde (having to do with new ideas and techniques) movements in the arts. Similarly, in the United States, Wright's clients were exceptional individuals and small, adventurous institutions, not governments or national corporations. A small progressive private school (Hillside Home School, Spring Green, 1902) and an occasional private, commercial firm (Larkin Company in Buffalo) came to him, but chiefly, his clients were Midwestern businessmen, practical, unscholarly, independent, and moderately successful, such as the Chicago building contractor Frederick C. Robie, for whom Wright designed houses.

Early, Wright insisted upon declaring the presence of pure cubic mass, the color and texture of raw stone and brick and copper, and the sharp-etched punctures made by unornamented windows and doors in sheer walls (Charnley House, Chicago, 1891). He made of the house a compact block, which might be enclosed handsomely by a hipped roof (Winslow House, River Forest, Illinois, 1893). Soon, the delight in the simplicity of a single mass gave way to his passion for passages of continuous, flowing spaces and he burst the enclosed, separated spaces of classical architecture, removed the containment, the sense of walls and ceilings, and created single, continuously modified spaces, which he shaped by screens, piers, and different planes and masses.

Philosophy of architecture

Wright's philosophy of architecture was composed of several radical (extreme in differ-



Frank Lloyd Wright.

Reproduced by permission of Archive Photos, Inc.

ence) and traditional ideas. There was, first, the romantic idea of honest expression: that a building should be faithful in revealing its materials and structure, as Eugène Emmanuel Viollet-le-Duc (1814–1879) had argued, without any classical ornament or fake surface or structure. There was, second, the idea that a building's form should reflect its plan, its functional arrangement of interior spaces, as Henry Latrobe and Horatio Greenough had proposed. There was, third, the belief that each building should express something new and distinctive in the times (G. W. F. Hegel [1770–1831], Gottfried Semper [1803–1879]) and specifically the new technical resources, such

as steel skeletons and electric light and elevators, which suggested skyscrapers and new forms of building (John Wellborn Root). There was, fourth, the ambition, even pride, to achieve an art appropriate to a new nation, an American art, without Continental or English or colonial dependencies. Finally, there was the theory derived by Sullivan from Charles Darwin (1809–1882) and Herbert Spencer (1820–1903) that a building should be similar to a biological organism, a unified work of art, rooted to its soil, organized to serve specified functions, and, as a form, evolved as an organism evolves, fitted to its environment, expressive of its purpose.

If the handsome Taliesin East, whose roofs are rhythmical accents on the edge of a bluff overlooking two valleys, were all that Wright left, he would be remembered as the finest architect who worked in the nineteenth-century tradition of romantic domestic design. But, early, he prepared an idea and an imagery for modern design. He achieved in the Larkin Building, Buffalo (1904; destroyed) an integration of circulation, structure, ventilation, plumbing, furniture, office equipment, and lighting.

Constant search for form

Always distinctive and independent, Wright's style changed often. For about ten years after 1915 he drew upon Mayan (an ancient Indian tribe in Mexico) ornament (Barndall House, Hollywood, California, 1920). Even then Wright avoided the barrenness and abstraction of his designs, he insisted upon having the multiple form of buildings reflect the movement of unique sites: the Kaufmann House, "Falling Water," at Bear Run, Pennsylvania (1936–37), where

interlocked, reinforced-concrete terraces are poised over the waterfall; the low-cost houses (Herbert Jacobs House, Madison, 1937); and the "prairie houses" (Lloyd Lewis House, Libertyville, Illinois, 1940). No architect was more skillful in fitting form to its terrain: the Pauson House in Phoenix, Arizona (1940) rose from the desert, like a Mayan pyramid, its battered wooden walls reflecting the mountains and desert.

Those brilliant rural houses did not reveal how Wright would respond to an urban setting or to the program of a corporate client. But in the Administration Building for the Johnson Wax Company, Racine, Wisconsin (1936–39, with a research tower added in 1950), he astonished architects with his second great commercial building (after the Larkin Building). A continuous, windowless red-brick wall encloses a high, window-lighted interior space; that space, which contains tall columns, is one of the most peaceful and graceful interior spaces in the world. At Florida Southern College he set side-by-side circle and fragmented rhombus (a four-sided circle plane), recalling Hadrian's Villa at Tivoli, Italy; he set a helix (spiral form structure) inside the Morris Gift Shop in San Francisco, California (1948–49). Ultimately, he conceived of having the helix surround a tall central space: the six-story Guggenheim Museum in New York City (1946–59), which paid in significant functional defects to gain a memorable experience in viewing art, especially where the helix affords views into a side gallery below.

The architectural drawings Wright left behind are magical and lyrical. No one might ever build accordingly, but Wright was never content with the commonplace or ordinary to

the conventional or the practical. He imagined the wonderful where others were content with the probable. Wright's drawings suggest how far his talent surpassed any client's capacity fully to realize his dream: a world of sanctuaries and gardens, of earth and machines, of rivers, seas, mountains, and prairies, where grand architecture enables men to dwell nobly.

Wright died at Taliesin West on April 9, 1959. His widow, Olgivanna, directed the Taliesin Fellowship.

For More Information

Gill, Brendan. *Many Masks: A Life of Frank Lloyd Wright*. New York: Putnam, 1987.

Secret, Meryle. *Frank Lloyd Wright: A Biography*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1998.

Smith, Kathryn. *Frank Lloyd Wright: America's Master Architect*. New York: Abbeville Press Publishers, 1998.

Thomson, Iain. *Frank Lloyd Wright*. San Diego: Thunder Bay Press, 1997.

Thorne-Thomsen, Kathleen. *Frank Lloyd Wright for Kids*. Chicago: Chicago Review Press, 1994.

RICHARD WRIGHT

Born: September 4, 1908

Natchez, Mississippi

Died: November 25, 1960

Paris, France

African American writer

The works of Richard Wright, a politically sophisticated and socially involved African American author, are notable for their passionate sincerity. He was perceptive about the universal problems that had the ability to destroy mankind.

Southern upbringing

Richard Nathaniel Wright was born in Natchez, Mississippi, on September 4, 1908. His mother was a country school teacher and his father an illiterate (a person who is unable to read or write) sharecropper, a poor farmer who shares land with other farmers. The family moved to Memphis, Tennessee, in 1914, and soon the father abandoned them. From then on Richard's education was inconsistent, but he had attained experience beyond his years. He bounced from school to school and desperately tried to make friends and fit in with his fellow classmates.

Wright knew what it was to be a victim of racial hatred before he learned to read, for he was living with an aunt when her husband was lynched (brutally attacked or killed because of one's race). Richard's formal education ended after the ninth grade in Jackson, Mississippi. The fact that his "The Voodoo of Hell's Half-acre" had been published in the local black paper set him apart from his classmates. He was a youth upon whom a dark spirit had already settled.

Becoming a writer

At nineteen Wright decided he wanted to be a writer. He moved to Chicago, Illinois, where he had access to public libraries. He read all he could of Feodor Dostoevsky (1821–1881), Theodore Dreiser (1871–1945), Henry



Richard Wright.

Reproduced by permission of Fisk University Library.

James (1843–1916), and William James (1842–1910). His interest in social problems led to a friendship with the sociologist (a person who studies the interactions of a society) Louis Wirth. When Richard's mother, brother, and an aunt came to Chicago, he supported them as a postal clerk until the job ended in 1929. After months of living on public welfare, he got a job in the Federal Negro Theater Project in the Works Progress Administration, a government relief agency. Later he became a writer for the Illinois Writers' Project.

Meantime, Wright had joined the John Reed Club, beginning an association with the Communist Party, a political party that

believes goods and services should be owned and distributed by a strong central government. His essays, reviews, short stories, and poems appeared regularly in communist papers, and by 1937, when he became Harlem editor of the *Daily Worker*, he enjoyed a considerable reputation in left-wing circles. Four novellas (short novels), published as *Uncle Tom's Children* (1938), introduced him to a large general audience.

Native Son

Wright's first novel, *Native Son* (1940), a brutally honest depiction of black, urban, ghetto life, was an immediate success. The story's protagonist, or main character, represents all the fear, rage, rebellion, spiritual hunger and the undisciplined drive to satisfy it, that social psychologists (people who are trained to study the mental and behavioral characteristics of people) were just beginning to recognize as common elements in the personality of the poor people of all races.

Wright's intention was to make the particular truth universal (all around) and to project his native son as a symbol of the poorly treated in all lands. Critics, however, unimpressed by the universal symbol, were interested instead in Wright's passionate criticisms of white racism (belief that one race is superior to another) and the lifestyle it imposed upon African Americans. Wright believed that there was a better way of social organization different from democracy (government by the people), and that Communism could be the better way. These ideas were toned down in the stage version. In 1941 Wright also published *Twelve Million Black Voices: A Folk History of the Negro of the United States*.

By 1940 Wright had married and divorced; and a few months after his second marriage, he broke with the Communist Party. (His "I Tried To Be a Communist," published in the *Atlantic* in 1944, was reprinted in 1949 in *The God That Failed*, edited by Richard Crossman.) The break freed him from social commitments that were beginning to seem troublesome. In *Black Boy*, a fictionalized autobiography (book written about oneself), his only commitment is to truth. The book was published in January 1945, and sales reached four hundred thousand copies by March. Wright accepted an invitation from the French government to visit France, and the three-month experience, in sharp contrast to his experience in his own country, "exhilarated" (excited and refreshed) him with a "sense of freedom." People of the highest intellectual and artistic circles met him "as an equal."

Years overseas

Wright, his wife, and daughter moved permanently to Paris, France. Within a year and a half Wright was off to Argentina, where he "starred" in the film version of *Native Son*. *The Outsider*, the first of three novels written in France, was deeply influenced by existentialism, a philosophy that stresses the individual experience in the universe, whose most famous spokespersons, Jean Paul Sartre (1905–1980) and Simone de Beauvoir (1908–1986), were Wright's close friends. Following *Savage Holiday* (1954), a potboiler (a book, that is usually of poorer quality, written to make money), *The Long Dream* (1958) proved that Wright had been too long out of touch with the American reality to deal with it effectively. None of the novels written in

France succeeded. His experiments with poetry did not produce enough for a book.

Nonfiction works

In 1953 Wright visited Africa, where he hoped to "discover his roots" as a black man. *Black Power* (1954) combines the elements of a travel book with a passionate political treatise, or formal writing, on the "completely different order of life" in Africa. In 1955 he attended the Afro-Asian Conference in Bandung, Indonesia, and published his impressions in *The Color Curtain* (1956). *Pagan Spain* (1956), based on two months in Spain, is the best of his nonfiction works. *White Man, Listen* (1957) is a collection of four long essays on "White-colored, East-West relations."

In 1960, following an unhappy attempt to settle in England, and in the midst of a rugged lecture schedule, Wright fell ill. He entered a hospital in Paris on November 25 and died three days later. *Eight Men* (1961), a collection of short stories, and *Lawd Today* (1963), a novel, were published after his death.

For More Information

- Fabre, Michel. *Richard Wright: Books and Writers*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 1990.
- Rowley, Hazel. *Richard Wright: The Life and Times*. New York: Henry Holt, 2001.
- Walker, Margaret. *Richard Wright, Daemonic Genius: A Portrait of the Man, a Critical Look at His Work*. New York: Warner Books, 1988.
- Webb, Constance. *Richard Wright: a Biography*. New York: Putnam, 1968.



WILLIAM BUTLER YEATS

Born: June 13, 1865

Dublin, Ireland

Died: January 28, 1939

Roquebrune, France

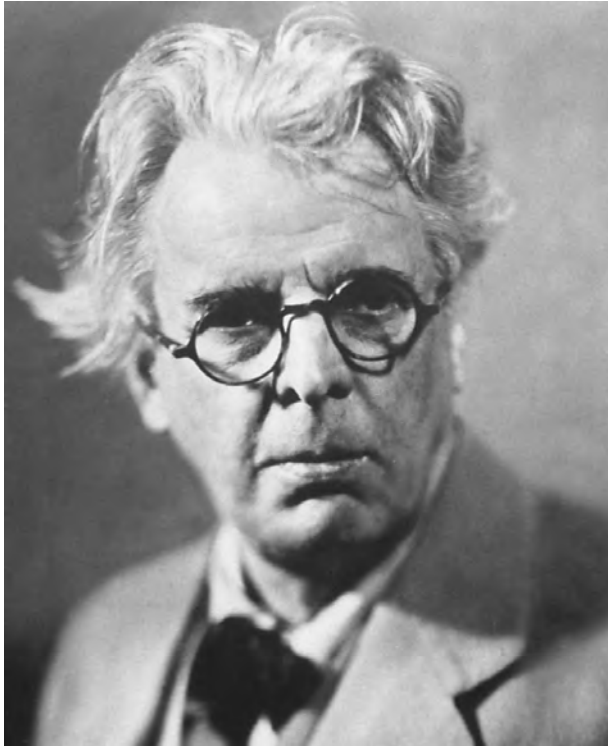
Irish poet and dramatist

William Butler Yeats was an Irish poet and dramatist (playwright). Some think he was the greatest poet of the twentieth century. He won the Nobel Prize for literature in 1923. The works of William Butler Yeats form a bridge between the romantic poetry of the nine-

teenth century and the hard clear language of modern poetry.

Early years

William Butler Yeats was born on June 13, 1865, in Dublin, Ireland. He was the oldest of four children of John Butler Yeats, a portrait artist. His father added to William's formal schooling with lessons at home that gave him an enduring taste for the classics. John Yeats had a forceful personality. His personal philosophy was a blend of aestheticism (a belief that art and beauty are important for everything) and atheism (a belief that there is no God). William felt its influence much later as it showed up in his interest in magic and the occult (supernatural)



William Butler Yeats.

Reproduced by permission of the Corbis Corporation.

sciences and in his highly original system of aesthetics (beauty).

At the age of nineteen Yeats enrolled in the Metropolitan School of Art in Dublin, intending to become a painter. In 1887 he became a literary correspondent for two American newspapers. Among his acquaintances at this time were his father's artist and writer friends, including William Morris (1834–1896), George Bernard Shaw (1856–1950), and Oscar Wilde (1856–1900).

Important friendships

In 1889 Yeats met the woman who became the greatest single influence on his life

and poetry, Maud Gonne. She was Yeats's first and deepest love. She admired his poetry but rejected his repeated offers of marriage, choosing instead to marry Major John MacBride. Gonne came to represent for Yeats the ideal of feminine beauty—she appears as Helen of Troy in several of his poems—but a beauty disfigured and wasted by what Yeats considered an unsuitable marriage and her involvement in a hopeless political cause, Irish independence.

Yeats became a founding member of literary clubs in London, England, and Dublin. During this period he became friends with the dramatist John Millington Synge (1871–1909). He was introduced to Synge in 1896, and later directed the Abbey Theatre in Dublin with him.

The American poet Ezra Pound (1885–1972) came to London for the specific purpose of meeting Yeats in 1909. Pound served as Yeats's secretary off and on between 1912 and 1916. Pound introduced Yeats to the Japanese *No* drama (a form of Japanese theater similar in many ways to Greek tragedy). Yeats's verse dramas (plays in the form of poetry) reflect the ceremonial formality and symbolism of *No*.

The death of Maud Gonne's husband seemed to offer promise that she might now accept Yeats's proposal of marriage. She turned him down in 1917. He proposed to her daughter, Iseult MacBride, only to be rejected by her too. That same year he married Miss George Hyde-Less.

Soon after their wedding, Yeats's new wife developed the power of automatic writing (writing as though coming from an outside source) and began to utter strange phrases in her sleep that she thought were dictated by spirits from another world. Yeats

copied down these fragments and incorporated them into his occult aesthetic system, published as *A Vision* in 1925. A daughter, Anne Butler Yeats, was born in 1919, and a son, William Michael, two years later.

Poet and dramatist

Yeats's first book of poems, *The Wanderings of Oisín and Other Poems*, was published in 1889. In the long title poem he began his celebration of the ancient Irish heroes Oisín, Finn, Aengus, and St. Patrick. This interest was evident also in his collection of Irish folklore, *Fairy and Folk Tales* (1888). His long verse drama, *The Countess Cathleen* (1892), was a combination of modern dramatic forms with ancient beliefs and modern Irish history. He followed this with his collection of romantic tales and mood sketches, *The Celtic Twilight* (1893). Yeats's *Secret Rose* (1897) includes poems that he called personal, occult, and Irish. More figures from ancient Irish history and legend appeared in this volume. *The Wind among the Reeds* (1899) won the Royal Academy Prize as the best book of poems published that year.

The Abbey Theater

An important milestone in the history of the modern theater occurred in 1902, when Yeats, Maud Gonne, Douglas Hyde, and George Russell founded the Irish National Theatre Society, out of which grew the Abbey Theatre Company in 1904. Yeats's experience with the theater gave to his volume of poems *In the Seven Woods* (1907) a new style—less elaborate, less romantic, and more straight forward in language and imagery.

Some of Yeats's plays show his great interest in ancient royalty and "half-forgotten things," but his poetry was unmistakably

new. Yeats's play *At the Hawk's Well*, written and produced in 1915, showed the influence of Japanese *No* drama in its use of masks and in its dances by a Japanese choreographer.

From 1918 to 1923 Yeats and his wife lived in a restored tower at Ballylee (Galway), Ireland. The tower became a prominent symbol in his best poems, notably in those that make up *The Tower* (1928).

Yeats was elected an Irish senator in 1922, a post he filled until his retirement in 1928. He received the Nobel Prize in Literature in 1923. His acceptance of the role and its responsibilities had been foreshadowed (predicted) in his poems *Responsibilities* (1914). The outbreak of civil war in Ireland in 1922 had heightened his conviction that the artist must lead the way through art, rather than through politics, to a harmonious (in tune) ordering of chaos.

Aesthetic theories and systems

Yeats devised his doctrine of the mask as a means of presenting very personal thoughts and experiences to the world without danger of sentimentality (excessive emotions). By discovering the kind of man who would be his exact opposite, Yeats believed he could then put on the mask of this ideal "antiseif" and thus produce art from the synthesis (combination) of opposing natures. For this reason his poetry is often structured on paired opposites, as in "Sailing to Byzantium."

Yeats turned to magic for the illogical system that would oppose and complete his art. He drew upon Buddhism (an ancient Eastern religion), as well as upon Jewish and Christian mystic (spiritual) books to try and capture what he thought was a harmony of the opposite elements of life

Yeats believed that history was cyclical (circular) and that every two thousand years a new cycle, which is the opposite of the cycle that has preceded it, begins. In his poem "The Second Coming," the birth of Christ begins one cycle, which ends, as the poem ends, with a "rough beast," mysterious and menacing, who "slouches towards Bethlehem to be born."

Last works

Yeats's last plays were *Purgatory* (1938) and *The Death of Cuchulain* (1938). He died in Roquebrune, France, on January 28, 1929. He had retired there because of ill health. He had the lines of one of his poems engraved on his tombstone in Ireland: "Cast a cold eye / On life, on death. / Horseman, pass by!" Yeats was not only one of the greatest poets and a major figure in the Irish literary renaissance (rebirth), but also wrote some of the greatest of all twentieth-century literature.

For More Information

Jeffares, A. Norman. *W. B. Yeats, a New Biography*. New York: Farrar Straus Giroux, 1989.

Larrisset, Edward. *Yeats the Poet: The Measures of Difference*. New York: Harvester Wheatsheaf, 1994.

Macrae, Alistair D. F. *W. B. Yeats: A Literary Life*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1994.

BORIS YELTSIN

Born: February 1, 1931

Butko, Siberia, Russia

Russian president, politician, and government official

Boris Yeltsin, who became president of Russia in 1991, was one of the most complex political leaders of his time. A longtime Communist Party leader, he was an important leader in the reform (social improvement) movements of the late 1980s and 1990s. Yeltsin was perceived at varying times as a folk hero, as a symbol of Russia's struggle to establish a democracy, and as a dictatorial figure (an all-powerful ruler).

Early life

Boris Nikolaevich Yeltsin was born into a Russian working-class family on February 1, 1931, in the small Siberian village of Butko. His parents were Nikolai and Klavdia Yeltsin. He grew up with a younger brother, Mikhail, and a younger sister, Valya. The Yeltsin family lived in communal, or group, situations, first on a farm and later at a construction site where his father worked. His family was in close contact with many other families and their privacy was extremely limited. Yeltsin lived and worked in Siberia for most of his life. His early life, like most of his countrymen in the 1930s and 1940s, was marked by hardship, and as the oldest child Boris had numerous responsibilities at home.

A strong-willed child, Boris twice stood up to the educational system. At his elementary school graduation he criticized his homeroom teacher's abusive behavior, which resulted in him being kicked out of school. He appealed the decision and, after an investigation, the teacher was dismissed. During his last year in high school Yeltsin was stricken with typhoid fever, a terrible disease that causes fever and other symptoms and is easily spread, and forced to study at home. Denied the right to take final examinations

because he had not attended school, he appealed and won. His actions were extraordinary considering this happened during the rule of Joseph Stalin (1879–1953), a period when the government had an intense stronghold on its citizens.

Trained as an engineer, Yeltsin graduated from the Ural Polytechnic Institute. He married his wife Naina at a young age and they had two daughters. The family is believed to be closely knit.

Yeltsin initially worked as an engineer in the construction industry in Sverdlovsk, moved into management of the industry, and later began a career in the Communist Party, eventually becoming first secretary of the party in Sverdlovsk. Yeltsin joined the Communist Party at age thirty, relatively late for a man with political dreams.

A party leader in Moscow

In 1985 Mikhail S. Gorbachev (1931–), the new general secretary of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union (CPSU), brought Yeltsin to Moscow to serve as secretary for the construction industry. Within a year he was appointed head of the Communist Party of Moscow. The eighteen months that followed were a time of achievement and frustration, ending in his dismissal as a candidate member of the Politburo (the top members of the Communist Party) and first secretary of the Moscow Party.

Yeltsin disliked Moscow at first and criticized the privileges of the city's political elite (highest social class). As a political leader, Yeltsin often traveled to work on public transportation and mingled with ordinary people, unusual behavior among the Soviet

elite, who usually traveled in curtained limousines. Yeltsin criticized the pace of the reforms known as *perestroika* and the behavior of some Politburo members. Yeltsin was removed as secretary of the Moscow Party, and he resigned from the Politburo. Yeltsin remained a party member, and Gorbachev appointed him a deputy minister in the construction industry, an area in which he had decades of experience.

In the late 1980s, after Yeltsin criticized *perestroika*, his personal relationship with Gorbachev fell apart. In the 1989 elections Yeltsin surprised the party by receiving 90 percent of the vote and, with great difficulty, was

elected to the small, but important, parliamentary (governing) body, the Supreme Soviet. Gorbachev was elected (chairman) president of the Soviet Union by the new parliament.

During 1989 and 1990 Yeltsin's views made him a folk hero in Moscow, where crowds chanting "Yeltsin, Yeltsin" were a frequent sight. Yeltsin was also elected to the Russian parliament, which in May 1990 selected him as chairman (president) of the Russian Republic. Later that year, Yeltsin formally resigned from the Communist Party.

President of the Republic of Russia

In June 1991 the Russian Republic held its first election for president, and Yeltsin defeated six opponents to win the presidency. As president he declared the Russian Republic independent of the Soviet Union.

Yeltsin as president of the Russian Republic (RSFSR) and Gorbachev as president of the Soviet Union agreed to cooperate on economic reform, a reversal since their relationship fell apart in 1987. However, on August 19, 1991, eight conservative party and government leaders led a coup (takeover) against the vacationing Gorbachev. Yeltsin led the dramatic opposition to the coup and secured Gorbachev's return to Moscow.

In the aftermath of Gorbachev's rescue, Yeltsin consolidated (unified) his own power. Yeltsin led the movement to dissolve the Russian parliament and outlaw the Communist Party on Russian soil. These acts further weakened Gorbachev's power base. In the fall of 1991 Yeltsin and other republic leaders declared the independence of their respective republics, and in December the presidents of Russia, Ukraine, and Belarus (Belorussia)

formed the Commonwealth of Independent States (CIS), declaring they would no longer recognize the Soviet Union as of January 1, 1992. Eight other republics joined the CIS, while four republics became completely independent. Gorbachev resigned before year's end, and as of January 1, 1992, the Soviet Union no longer existed. Yeltsin, who in 1987 had been dismissed from the Soviet leadership, became the head of post-Soviet Russia, the largest of the Soviet successor states.

A new era

Yeltsin began a new chapter in 1992 as president of independent Russia. He undertook an ambitious program of economic reform with mixed results. Businesses were returned to the private sector but the economy began to crumble. Yeltsin's policies were frequently challenged during 1992, ending in a major showdown with the Russian parliament in December 1992. Yeltsin dissolved parliament in September 1993 and a sit-in (peaceful protest) began. In early October 1993, a confrontation occurred, resulting in hundreds of deaths and injuries as well as considerable damage to several Moscow landmarks. The sit-in was eventually stopped.

Yeltsin survived the political crisis, but his reputation suffered. The democratic Yeltsin who protested in the streets of Moscow in the late 1980s was forgotten and a dictatorial (harsh leadership by one) image of Yeltsin emerged. Yeltsin remained at the helm of Russian politics, but as a less heroic figure than the Yeltsin of 1991. Although reelected in 1996, Yeltsin's future was clouded by Russia's economic crisis and the failure of his reform program, combined with the bitter aftertaste of Yeltsin's confrontation with parliament.

Losing power

After the 1996 elections it became clear that Yeltsin had deceived the Russian people about his health. In fact, he had suffered a heart attack prior to elections, and was not well. Although he continued as president, there was talk within the international and Russian community about who would take his place as president.

In 1997 Yeltsin continued to face domestic problems in his new term. The Russian financial picture continued to grow grim, industrial production slowed, and even Russian life expectancy dropped drastically, by six years. Indeed, in 1997, employees frequently waited as long as three months for payment.

Yeltsin had his political stability tested again in May of 1999 when a Communist-led attempt to impeach (to charge with misconduct) him failed. Yeltsin faced five charges—one of the most significant being the accusation that he started the war in Chechnya in 1994—but eventually the charges were dropped. Yeltsin continued to suffer from health problems during his second term, spending large amounts of time out of the public eye as a result. Despite his ill health, Yeltsin remained a dominant political force, dismissing four prime ministers during 1998 and 1999.

Stepping down

Citing the need for new leadership in Russia, Yeltsin suddenly resigned as president on December 31, 1999. Many believed that Yeltsin's declining popularity and failing health contributed to the decision that ended the leader's second term six months early. "I am stepping down ahead of term. I under-

stand that I must do it and Russia must enter a new millennium with new politicians, with new faces, with new intelligent, strong, energetic people, and we who have been in power for many years must go," Yeltsin said during a public address on Russian national television.

Though Yeltsin received praise from then-President Bill Clinton (1946–), most Russians would likely disagree with the glowing review of the leader's eight years in office. Yeltsin's attempts to create a better economy were often crippled by corruption and incompetence, and he became increasingly disliked by the Russian people as a result. Yeltsin appointed Russian Prime Minister Vladimir Putin (1952–) as acting president until a March 2000 election. Putin, a former KGB (the Soviet Union secret police) officer and popular politician, served as both acting president and prime minister. Yeltsin planned to start a political foundation and travel Europe in his retirement.

In 2001 Yeltsin was given Russia's highest award known as "Order of Service to the Fatherland, First Degree." President Putin honored Yeltsin with this award for his part in changing the future of Russia by helping to end the Soviet Union.

For More Information

Aron, Leon. *Yeltsin: A Revolutionary Life*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 2000.

Ayer, Eleanor H. *Boris Yeltsin: Man of the People*. New York: Dillon Press, 1992.

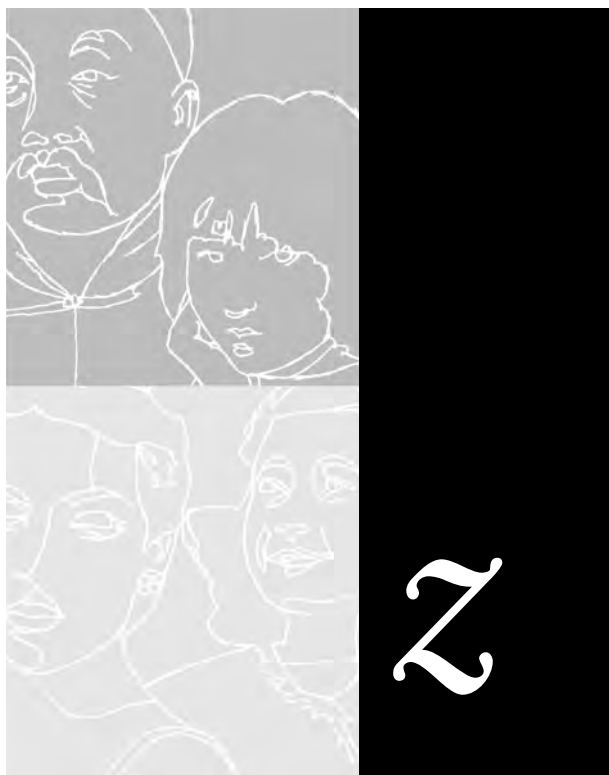
Daniels, Robert. *The End of the Communist Revolution*. New York: Routledge, 1993.

Miller, Calvin Craig. *Boris Yeltsin: First President of Russia*. Greensboro, NC: Morgan Reynolds, 1994.

YELTSIN

Morrison, John. *Boris Yeltsin: From Bolshevik to Democrat*. New York: Dutton, 1991.

Yeltsin, Boris. *Against the Grain: An Autobiography*. New York: Summit Books, 1990.



PAUL ZINDEL

Born: May 15, 1936

Staten Island, New York

American playwright, screenwriter, and author

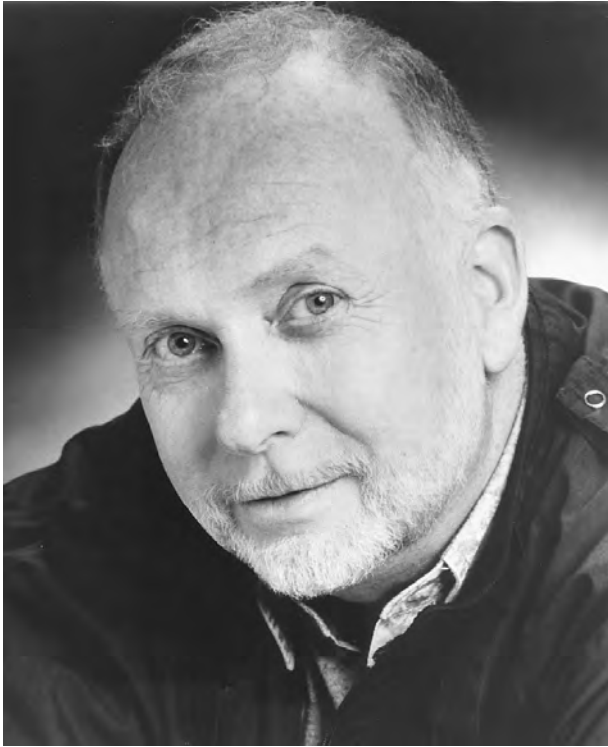
From Pulitzer prize-winning playwright to young adult fiction writer, American author Paul Zindel turned his real-life turbulent (marked by disturbance and unrest) teens into fictional stories to show teenagers that their lives and feelings do matter.

Early adventures

Paul Zindel was born on May 15, 1936, in Staten Island, New York. His father, also named

Paul, left Zindel, his older sister Betty, and his mother, Betty, for a girlfriend when young Paul was just two years old. This event began Zindel's early adventures. After his father left, Zindel's mother started moving from town to town and from job to job. From shipyard worker to dog breeder, Betty Zindel seemed unable to keep any job. Yet Zindel offered a sort of compliment to his mother: "what mother lacked in money, she made up for being able to talk a mile a minute." Zindel's mother, however, also constantly threatened suicide. Zindel described his home as a "house of fear." He coped not only by creating a fantasy life, but also by wishing he would be abducted by aliens.

In 1951, when Zindel was fifteen, his wish to escape from his home was granted—



Paul Zindel.

Reproduced by permission of AP/Wide World Photos.

although not by aliens, but by doctors. He was diagnosed with tuberculosis. Since tuberculosis is a highly contagious disease of the lungs, he was confined to the hospital for eighteen months—it was here that Zindel wrote his first play.

After recovering, Zindel graduated from high school and left home once again, this time to attend Wagner College in Staten Island. Zindel did not receive a degree in English, literature, or writing, but in 1958, received his bachelor's degree in chemistry and education. In 1959 he also completed a masters of science degree in chemistry. Following college, Zindel found work as a tech-

nical writer for a chemical company. After six months, he quit and became a chemistry teacher at Tottenville High School in Staten Island. In his free time, he continued to write plays such as *Dimensions of Peacocks* and *A Dream of Swallows*. In the early 1960s, both plays ran on stage in New York City.

Success in two genres

In the mid-1960s, Zindel wrote *The Effect of Gamma Rays on Man-in-the-Moon Marigolds*. *Gamma Rays* tells the story of Tillie, a teenager who feels smothered by her critical mother and a sister who suffers from epilepsy, a severe disorder that effects motor skills. However, Tillie finds hope for her life when the marigolds she exposed to radiation for a science project, bloom. Zindel won many awards for *Gamma Rays*, including the 1971 Pulitzer Prize in drama. Zindel, as stated in the forward to the Bantam Edition, said of this often-awarded play, "I suspect it is autobiographical, because whenever I see a production of it I laugh and cry harder than anyone else in the audience."

After viewing a televised version of *Gamma Rays*, Charlotte Zolotow, an editor at Harper & Row publishers, suggested to Zindel that he write a young adult fiction book. Zindel published *The Pigman* in 1968. *The Pigman* told the story of a betrayed friendship between two high school sophomores, John and Lorraine, and a widower named Mr. Angelo Pignati. After an illness forces Mr. Pignati, the "Pigman," out of his home, he entrusts John and Lorraine with its care and his cherished ceramic pig collection. John and Lorraine betray this trust and the Pigman's friendship, however, by throwing a party where his collection is accidentally

smashed. With this book, Zindel not only continued collecting awards, including the American Library Association's Best Young Adult Book citation, but also praise.

Writing for teenagers

Throughout the 1970s and 1980s, Zindel continued writing books for teenagers. *My Darling, My Hamburger* (1969) probed the questions about lust, sex, contraception (birth control), and abortion (a woman's right to end a pregnancy); true love was the subject in *I Never Loved Your Mind* (1970); parental pressure and friendship came under discussion in *Pardon Me, You're Stepping on My Eyeball!* (1976); and truth and the perception (the concept) of truth in *The Undertaker's Gone Bananas* (1978). A collaboration (the work of two or more people) with his wife, Bonnie Hildebrand, whom he had married in 1973, produced *A Star for the Latecomer* in 1980. In that same year, Zindel published a sequel (the next part of a story) to his most popular book *The Pigman*. *The Pigman's Legacy* returned readers to Mr. Pignati's house where John and Lorraine have a second chance to do the right thing and help another elderly man, Gus, live out his final days. However, this was not Zindel's final tale about a "Pigman."

Zindel's works in the 1990s have stretched his talents even more. In 1993 he published several children's books, including *Fright Party*, *David and Della*, and *Attack of the Killer*. That same year, he also released *The Fifth-Grade Safari*. Returning to his young adult audience, Zindel published *Loch* in 1994 and *The Doom Stone* the following year.

Over the past thirty years, Zindel has followed his Pigman's advice. From stage and screen plays to young adult fiction books, he has used his imagination and shared his real-life adventures. In 2002 Zindel was awarded the Margaret A. Edwards Award for his lifetime contribution in writing for young adults.

For More Information

- Forman, Jack Jacob. *Presenting Paul Zindel*. Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1988.
- Zindel, Paul. *The Effect of Gamma Rays on Man-in-the-Moon Marigolds*. New York: Harper, 1971.
- Zindel, Paul. *The Pigman*. New York: Bantam Books, 1968.
- Zindel, Paul. *The Pigman & Me*. New York: HarperCollins, 1992.



index

Volume numbers are in *italic*; page numbers for main entries are in **boldface**; “(ill.)” following a page number indicates an illustration on the page.

A

À la recherche du temps perdu (Remembrance of Things Past) (Proust), 8: 1528

Aaron, Hank, 1: **1–4**, 2 (ill.)

Abbasid dynasty, 8: 1555–57

Abbey Road (Beatles), 2: 184

Abbey Theatre Company (Dublin), 10: 1981

Abbott, Jack Henry, 7: 1207

Abbott, Robert, 3: 495

Abernathy, Ralph, 1: **4–7**, 5 (ill.)

Abernathy, William, 1: 4

Abolitionists

Anthony, Susan B., 1: 79–81

Brown, John, 2: 294–97

Douglass, Frederick, 4: 626–29

Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 4: 683

Lincoln, Abraham, 6: 1150–54

Stanton, Henry B., 9: 1748

Stowe, Harriet Beecher, 9: 1767

Truth, Sojourner, 10: 1840–43

Abortion, 8: 1418–19

Abrams v. United States, 5: 925

Abstract art

Kandinsky, Wassily, 6: 1050–51

Picasso, Pablo, 8: 1479–83

Absurdity (literary theme), 2: 350

Abzug, Bella, 1: **7–9**, 8 (ill.)

Academy (philosophers' school), 1: 98; 8: 1487

The Accident (Wiesel), 10: 1939

Achebe, Chinua, 1: **10–11**, 11 (ill.)

Achilles, 1: 44

Acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS). *See*

AIDS activists and researchers; Human

immunodeficiency virus (HIV)

Actium, battle of, 3: 482; 7: 1243; 10: 1876

Activists

- Abernathy, Ralph, 1: 4–7
Abzug, Bella, 1: 7–9
Anderson, Elizabeth Garrett, 1: 66–69
Anthony, Susan B., 1: 79–81
Ashe, Arthur, 1: 110–13
Atwood, Margaret, 1: 120–22
Aung San Suu Kyi, 1: 130–32
Baez, Joan, 1: 147–50
Bellocourt, Clyde, 2: 200–202
Bond, Julian, 2: 244–46
Casals, Pablo, 3: 386–88
Chavis Muhammad, Benjamin, 3: 443–46
Goldberg, Whoopi, 5: 798
Hillary, Edmund, 5: 899
hooks, bell, 5: 931–33
Hooks, Benjamin, 5: 933–36
Keller, Helen, 6: 1056–58
Mankiller, Wilma, 7: 1221–23
Menchú, Rigoberta, 7: 1286–89
Nader, Ralph, 7: 1373–76
Pran, Dith, 8: 1514–17
Reeve, Christopher, 8: 1561–63
Robeson, Paul, 9: 1596–99
Tutu, Desmond, 10: 1847–50
- ## Actors and actresses
- Allen, Woody, 1: 49–52
Angelou, Maya, 1: 73–75
Astaire, Fred, 1: 116–18
Ball, Lucille, 1: 159–61
Black, Shirley Temple, 2: 227–29
Bogart, Humphrey, 2: 242–44
Booth, John Wilkes, 2: 248–50
Brando, Marlon, 2: 278–80
Chaplin, Charlie, 3: 421–24
Connery, Sean, 3: 506–8
Cosby, Bill, 3: 518–21
Davis, Bette, 3: 556–58
Davis, Ossie, 3: 561–62
Davis, Sammy, Jr., 3: 563–65
Dean, James, 4: 567–69
Dee, Ruby, 4: 571–73
Eastwood, Clint, 4: 648–50
Garland, Judy, 4: 764–66
Goldberg, Whoopi, 5: 797–99
Grant, Cary, 5: 829–31
Hepburn, Audrey, 5: 886–88
Hepburn, Katharine, 5: 888–90
Hope, Bob, 5: 936–38
Hopkins, Anthony, 5: 938–40
Houdini, Harry, 5: 945
Jolson, Al, 6: 1025–27
Jones, James Earl, 6: 1027–29
Kelly, Gene, 6: 1058–60
Lee, Bruce, 6: 1124–25
Lee, Spike, 6: 1126–29
Madonna, 7: 1197–1200
McDaniel, Hattie, 7: 1267–70
Molière, 7: 1318–20
Monroe, Marilyn, 7: 1325–27
Olivier, Laurence, 8: 1422–24
Poitier, Sidney, 8: 1493–95
Reagan, Ronald, 8: 1557–60
Reeve, Christopher, 8: 1561–63
Robeson, Paul, 9: 1597–98
Ross, Diana, 9: 1631–33
Shakespeare, William, 9: 1704
Sinatra, Frank, 9: 1719–22
Streisand, Barbra, 9: 1777
Taylor, Elizabeth, 10: 1790–92
Wayne, John, 10: 1913–16
Welles, Orson, 10: 1922–24
Winfrey, Oprah, 10: 1954–57
Wong, Anna May, 10: 1958–60
- Actors' Studio, 2: 278; 4: 568; 7: 1326
Acts of Unity and Supremacy (1559), 4: 673
Adams, Abigail, 1: 12–15, 13 (ill.)
Adams, Ansel, 1: 15–17, 16 (ill.)
Adams, John, 1: 12–15, 17–20, 18 (ill.); 5: 848; 10: 1910
Adams, John Quincy, 6: 981
Adams, Samuel, 1: 20–22, 21 (ill.); 5: 852, 853
Adamson, George, 1: 23–25
Adamson, Joy, 1: 22–25, 23 (ill.)
Addams, Jane, 1: 25–27, 26 (ill.)
Adler, Alfred, 1: 27–28, 28 (ill.)
Adler, Stella, 2: 278
Admiralty (Great Britain), 3: 473
Adoration of the Magi (Leonardo da Vinci), 6: 1136–37
The Adventures of Augie March (Bellow), 2: 202, 203
- ## Advertising
- Bourke-White, Margaret, 2: 260
Brown, Helen Gurley, 2: 289
Johnson, Magic, 6: 1022
Klein, Calvin, 6: 1108–9
Lauren, Ralph, 6: 1118
Rockwell, Norman, 9: 1608
- The Aeneid* (Virgil), 10: 1970
Aerodynamics, 10: 1970
Aeschylus, 1: 29–30, 30 (ill.); 9: 1735
Affirmative action, 10: 1808–9
The Affluent Society (Galbraith), 4: 747
Afghanistan, 5: 785; 7: 1218–19; 8: 1514; 9: 1582
AFL-CIO. *See* American Federation of Labor and Congress of Industrial Organizations (AFL-CIO)
Africa, 4: 767–69; 5: 805–6; 6: 1122–23

- African National Congress (ANC), 10: 1847–48
 Botha, P. W., 2: 256–57
 Mandela, Nelson, 7: 1216–18; 10: 1847
- African Orthodox Church, 4: 768
- African wildlife, 1: 23–24
- Africa's Vanishing Art* (Mary Leakey), 6: 1122–23
- Afrikaners, 4: 582; 9: 1579
 Botha, P. W., 2: 255
- Agamemnon* (Aeschylus), 1: 30
- Age of Bronze* (Rodin), 9: 1613–14
- The Age of Innocence* (film), 9: 1692
- The Age of Innocence* (Wharton), 10: 1929
- The Age of Jackson* (Schlesinger), 9: 1682
- The Age of Roosevelt* (Schlesinger), 9: 1683
- Aging, 4: 741
- Agnew, Spiro**, 1: 31–33, 32 (ill.); 8: 1394, 1396
- Agriculture
 Carver, George Washington, 3: 383–86
 Chávez, César, 3: 436–38
- AIDS activists and researchers
 Ashe, Arthur, 1: 112–13
 Baltimore, David, 1: 163
 John, Elton, 6: 1011–12
 Johnson, Magic, 6: 1021
 Taylor, Elizabeth, 10: 1792
- Aiken, Howard, 10: 1901
- Ailey, Alvin**, 1: 34–36, 35 (ill.)
- Ain't I a Woman* (hooks), 5: 932
- "Ain't Misbehavin'" (song), 1: 101
- Ajax* (Sophocles), 9: 1735–36
- Akhenaten, King of Egypt (formerly Amenhotep IV), 7: 1381
- Alabama
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1094–97
- Alamo, 3: 529
- The Alamo* (film), 10: 1915
- "Alastor, or the Spirit of Solitude" (Shelley), 9: 1712
- Albert Edward, Prince Consort of England, 10: 1870
- Albright, Madeleine**, 1: 37–39, 38 (ill.)
- Alcatraz Island occupation (1969), 7: 1222
- Alchemy, 8: 1443–45
- Alcibiades, 9: 1729
- Alcohol abuse. *See also* Substance abuse
 Hopkins, Anthony, 5: 939
 Kerouac, Jack, 6: 1078
 London, Jack, 6: 1170
 Mantle, Mickey, 7: 1226
- Alcohol, legal limit, 3: 486. *See also* Prohibition
- Alcott, Bronson, 1: 39
- Alcott, Louisa May**, 1: 39–41, 40 (ill.)
- Alexander II**, Emperor of Russia, 1: 41–43, 42 (ill.)
- Alexander VI, Pope, 2: 252–53
- Alexander the Great**, Macedonian king, 1: 43–46, 44 (ill.), 98–99; 8: 1528–31
- Alfonso of Aragon, 2: 253–54
- Ali, Muhammad**, 1: 47–49, 48 (ill.)
- Alice's Adventures in Wonderland* (Carroll), 3: 370–71
- All God's Children Need Traveling Shoes* (Angelou), 1: 74
- All Quiet on the Western Front* (Remarque), 8: 1564
- All Said and Done* (Beauvoir), 2: 188
- The Allegory of Love* (Lewis), 6: 1140
- Allen, Paul, 4: 770
- Allen, Steve, 3: 373
- Allen, Woody**, 1: 49–52, 51 (ill.)
- Allende, Isabel**, 1: 52–54, 53 (ill.)
- Allende, Salvador, 1: 52–53
- Allgemeine Krankenhaus, 4: 736
- Almanac Singers, 5: 840
- Almanacs* (Nostradamus), 8: 1408
- Alpha particles, 5: 780
- Alphabet, Cherokee, 9: 1701–2
- al-Qaida, 9: 1582
- Altamont, California, 9: 1619
- Altarpieces, 1: 72; 9: 1644
- Altgeld, John Peter, 3: 552
- Altmann, Klaus. *See* Barbie, Klaus
- Alvarez, Julia**, 1: 54–56, 55 (ill.)
- Alvin Ailey American Dance Theater, 1: 35–36
- Amalgamated Association of Iron and Steel Workers, 3: 368
- Ambassadors
 Albright, Madeleine, 1: 38
 Black, Shirley Temple, 2: 227–29
 Bush, George, 2: 324
 Pocahontas, 8: 1488–90
 Rowan, Carl, 9: 1639–40
 Tereshkova, Valentina, 10: 1800
- The Amen Corner* (Baldwin), 1: 157–58
- Amendments
 Prohibition (18th), 2: 352
 women's right to vote (19th), 1: 81
- Amenhotep IV, King of Egypt (later Akhenaten), 7: 1381
- American Ballet Company, 1: 155
- American Ballet Theater, 10: 1806
- American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU), 5: 795–96
- American Communist Party, 7: 1266
- American culture
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 4: 680–83
 Frost, Robert, 4: 741–44
- American dance, 6: 1060
- An American Dictionary of the English Language* (Webster), 10: 1921
- American Federation of Labor (AFL), 5: 802–3
- American Federation of Labor and Congress of Industrial Organizations (AFL-CIO), 3: 437

- American Foundation for AIDS Research (AmFAR),
10: 1792
- American frontiersmen
Boone, Daniel, 2: 246–48
Carson, Kit, 3: 374–77
Crockett, Davy, 3: 527–29
- American Fur Company, 1: 119–20
- American Graffiti* (film), 6: 1176
- American Horse**, 1: 57–59, 58 (ill.)
- American Indian Movement (AIM), 2: 200–201
- American Institute of Public Opinion
(Gallup Poll), 4: 753
- American literature
Alcott, Louisa May, 1: 39–41
Auden, W. H., 1: 123–25
Bellow, Saul, 2: 202–4
Brooks, Gwendolyn, 2: 286–88
Buck, Pearl S., 2: 308–10
Cheever, John, 3: 447–49
Cummings, E. E., 3: 535–37
Dickinson, Emily, 4: 603–6
Eliot, T. S., 4: 670
Faulkner, William, 4: 701–4
Fitzgerald, F. Scott, 4: 718–21
Frost, Robert, 4: 741–44
Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 5: 862–65
Heller, Joseph, 5: 870–72
Hemingway, Ernest, 5: 875–77
Irving, Washington, 5: 975–77
Lewis, Sinclair, 6: 1144–45
Millay, Edna St. Vincent, 7: 1303–5
Miller, Henry, 7: 1308–10
Nash, Ogden, 7: 1379–81
O'Neill, Eugene, 8: 1428–29
Plath, Sylvia, 8: 1483–85
Poe, Edgar Allan, 8: 1490–92
Porter, Katherine Anne, 8: 1507–9
Proulx, E. Annie, 8: 1524–26
Salinger, J. D., 9: 1664–67
Sandburg, Carl, 9: 1671–73
Simon, Neil, 9: 1716–19
Sinclair, Upton, 9: 1722–24
Singer, Isaac Bashevis, 9: 1724–26
Stein, Gertude, 9: 1752–54
Steinbeck, John, 9: 1755–57
Stowe, Harriet Beecher, 9: 1766–69
Tan, Amy, 10: 1787–89
Thoreau, Henry David, 10: 1813–16
Thurber, James, 10: 1819–20
Twain, Mark, 10: 1850–52
Updike, John, 10: 1855–57
Vidal, Gore, 10: 1872–74
Vonnegut, Kurt, 10: 1884–87
- Walker, Alice, 10: 1891–94
Welty, Eudora, 10: 1925–27
Wharton, Edith, 10: 1928–29
White, E. B., 10: 1932–34
Whitman, Walt, 10: 1935–37
Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40
Wilder, Laura Ingalls, 10: 1943–45
Wilder, Thornton, 10: 1946–48
Williams, Tennessee, 10: 1948–50
Wright, Richard, 10: 1975–77
Zindel, Paul, 10: 1987–89
- American Magazine*, 10: 1920–21
“American” music, 3: 514–15
- American prairie, 10: 1943
- American Red Cross
Barton, Clara, 1: 177
Dole, Elizabeth, 4: 616
- American Revolution
Adams, Abigail, 1: 13–14
Adams, John, 1: 18–19
Adams, Samuel, 1: 20–22
Arnold, Benedict, 1: 105–8
Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 731–35
Hamilton, Alexander, 5: 846–49
Hancock, John, 5: 852–54
Henry, Patrick, 5: 883–86
Jackson, Andrew, 6: 979–80
Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 994–97
Lafayette, Marquis de, 6: 1113–15
Madison, James, 7: 1194–97
Revere, Paul, 8: 1574–76
Washington, George, 10: 1907–8
- American Telephone and Telegraph Company,
2: 199
- American West, 3: 374–77. *See also* Western films
- American Woman Suffrage Association, 5: 951;
9: 1749
- American women's suffrage. *See* Women's suffrage
- Americas, 10: 1867–69
- Amerika* (Kafka), 6: 1049
- Amiens, treaty of, 7: 1378
- Amin, Idi**, 1: 59–62, 61 (ill.)
- Amino acids, 8: 1455
- Amores* (Loves) (Ovid), 8: 1433
- Analects* (Confucius), 3: 504, 505
- “Analytical engine,” 1: 140
- Analytical Society, 1: 139
- Anatomists
Galen, 4: 748–50
Leonardo da Vinci, 6: 1138
- Anaxagoras, 8: 1473
- ANC. *See* African National Congress (ANC)
- And to Think That I Saw It on Mulberry Street* (Seuss),
5: 782

- Andersen, Hans Christian**, 1: 62–64, 63 (ill.)
- Anderson, Carl David**, 1: 64–66, 65 (ill.)
- Anderson, Elizabeth Garrett**, 1: 66–69, 67 (ill.)
- Anderson, Marian**, 1: 69–71, 70 (ill.)
- André, John, 1: 108
- Andrews, Samuel, 9: 1604
- The Andromeda Strain* (Crichton), 3: 525–26
- Andropov, Yuri, 5: 811
- Anesthesiology, 1: 82–83
- Ang Mga Maharlika, 7: 1234
- Angel Appearing to the Shepherds* (Rembrandt), 8: 1567
- Angelico, Fra**, 1: 71–73, 72 (ill.)
- Angelou, Maya**, 1: 73–75, 74 (ill.)
- Angelus Temple, 7: 1277
- Anglican Church. *See also* Church of England
Tutu, Desmond, 10: 1847–50
- Anglo-Boer War. *See* Boer War
- Anglo-Dutch War, 8: 1568
- Angstrom, Harry (literary character), 10: 1856–57
- Animal Farm* (Orwell), 8: 1432
- Animal names, 6: 1158
- Anna Karenina* (Tolstoy), 10: 1829
- Annan, Kofi**, 1: 76–79, 77 (ill.)
- Anne of Cleves, 5: 882
- Annie Allen (Brooks), 2: 287
- Annie Hall* (film), 1: 50–51
- Annunciation* (Angelico), 1: 72
- Antarctica, 5: 899
- Anthills of the Sahara* (Achebe), 1: 11
- Anthony, Susan B.**, 1: 79–81, 80 (ill.); 5: 951; 9: 1748
- Anthrax, 8: 1452
- Anthropologists
Heyerdahl, Thor, 5: 895–97
Mead, Margaret, 7: 1277–81
- Antipartheid activists
Mandela, Nelson, 7: 1217–18
Tutu, Desmond, 10: 1847–50
- Antibiotics, 2: 297–99
- Antibodies, 1: 162
- Antifungal agents, 2: 298–99
- Antiglobalization, 7: 1289
- Antigone* (Sophocles), 9: 1736
- Antigonus, King of Judea, 5: 891
- Antiparticles, 1: 65
- Antipater, 1: 99; 5: 891
- Anti-Semitism
Arendt, Hannah, 1: 91–92
Brandeis, Louis, 2: 277
Fischer, Bobby, 4: 715
Hitler, Adolf, 5: 909–10
Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1104
- Lazarus, Emma, 6: 1120–21
- Stein, Edith, 9: 1749–52
- Stoppard, Tom, 9: 1764–65
- Wagner, Richard, 10: 1891
- Antisepsis, 6: 1159–60
- Antislavery activists. *See* Abolitionists
- Antitrust actions
Microsoft, 4: 771
Roosevelt, Theodore, 9: 1630
- Antiwar activists. *See also* Vietnam War antiwar movement
Howe, Julia Ward, 5: 950
Pauling, Linus Carl, 8: 1453–56
Sakharov, Andrei, 9: 1662–64
- Apartheid, 10: 1847–48. *See also* Civil rights movement activists and participants
Botha, P. W., 2: 256–57
de Klerk, F. W., 4: 582–84
Jackson, Jesse, 6: 984
Mandela, Nelson, 7: 1216–19
Tutu, Desmond, 10: 1847–48
- Apgar Newborn Scoring System, 1: 83
- Apgar, Virginia**, 1: 81–84, 82 (ill.)
- Apocalypse Now* (film), 3: 517, 518
- Apollo 8* spacecraft, 10: 1884
- Apollo 11* spacecraft, 1: 104–5
- Apology* (Plato), 9: 1729, 1730–31
- Apostles (discussion group), 10: 1796
- Apothecaries (pharmacists)
Anderson, Elizabeth Garrett, 1: 66–69
Arnold, Benedict, 1: 106
- Apple computers, 6: 1007–10
- “April in Paris,” 1: 179
- Aqua-Lung, 3: 522
- Aquino, Benigno**, 1: 84–86, 85 (ill.); 7: 1235
- Aquino, Corazon, 1: 86; 7: 1235
- Arab Empire, 7: 1355–58
- Arab literature, 7: 1203–5
- Arab nationalist movement, 5: 963
- Arab-Israeli relations, 1: 87–89; 2: 195–96, 262–63
- Arab-Israeli War, 2: 314
- Arafat, Yasir**, 1: 86–89, 87 (ill.)
- Archeologists, 6: 1121–23
- Archetypes (Jung), 6: 1045
- Archimedes**, 1: 89–91, 90 (ill.)
- Archimedes’ principle, 1: 89
- Architects
Imhotep, 5: 972–75
Leonardo da Vinci, 6: 1136–39
Lin, Maya, 6: 1148–50
Michelangelo, 7: 1295–98
Pei, I. M., 8: 1464–67
Wright, Frank Lloyd, 10: 1972–75

- Are You Experienced?* (Hendrix), 5: 879
Are You There, God? It's Me, Margaret (Blume), 2: 239–40
- Arendt, Hannah**, 1: 91–93, 92 (ill.)
 Argall, Samuel, 8: 1489
 Argentina, 8: 1474–77
 Argumentation (Socratic), 9: 1730–31
 Arias de Avila, Pedro (Pedrarias), 4: 592
Ariel (Plath), 8: 1485
- Aristide, Jean-Bertrand**, 1: 93–96, 94 (ill.)
Aristophanes, 96–98, 97 (ill.)
Aristotle, 1: 44, 98–100, 99 (ill.); 4: 750; 8: 1444
Aristotle Contemplating a Bust of Homer (Rembrandt), 8: 1568
- Arizona
 O'Connor, Sandra Day, 8: 1417
- Arkansas
 Clinton, Bill, 3: 484, 485
 Clinton, Hillary Rodham, 3: 488
 Elders, Joycelyn, 4: 664–65
- Arkansas River, 4: 594
- Armed forces entertainment
 Hope, Bob, 5: 938
 Horne, Lena, 5: 942
- Arms and the Man* (Shaw), 9: 1708
- Armstrong, Louis**, 1: 101–2, 102 (ill.)
- Armstrong, Neil**, 1: 102–5, 104 (ill.)
- Army officers. *See* Military leaders
- Army-McCarthy hearings, 7: 1266
- Arnauld, Antoine, 8: 1448–49
- Arnaz, Desi, 1: 160–61
- Arnold, Benedict**, 1: 105–8, 107 (ill.)
- Around the World in Eighty Days* (Verne), 10: 1866
- Arrowsmith (Lewis), 6: 1144
- Artists
 Atwood, Margaret, 1: 122
 Audubon, John James, 1: 125–27
 Bacon, Francis, 1: 143–45
 Blake, William, 2: 234–37
 Botticelli, Sandro, 2: 257–59
 Cassatt, Mary, 3: 388–90
 Cézanne, Paul, 3: 411–14
 Chagall, Marc, 3: 414–16
 Dali, Salvador, 3: 549–51
 Degas, Edgar, 4: 576–78
 Donatello, 4: 619–21
 Gauguin, Paul, 4: 773–75
 Gibran, Kahlil, 5: 788–90
 Kandinsky, Wassily, 6: 1050–51
 Leonardo da Vinci, 6: 1136–39
 Lichtenstein, Roy, 6: 1146–47
 Lin, Maya, 6: 1148–50
 Manet, Édouard, 7: 1219–21
 Matisse, Henri, 7: 1255–58
 Michelangelo, 7: 1295–98
 Monet, Claude, 7: 1320–22
 Morse, Samuel F. B., 7: 1341–43
 Moses, Grandma, 7: 1345–47
 Munch, Edvard, 7: 1362–64
 Noguchi, Isamu, 8: 1398–1400
 O'Keeffe, Georgia, 8: 1420–22
 Picasso, Pablo, 8: 1479–83
 Rembrandt, 8: 1566–68
 Renoir, Pierre Auguste, 8: 1571–74
 Rivera, Diego, 9: 1593–96
 Rockwell, Norman, 9: 1607–9
 Rossetti, Dante Gabriel, 9: 1634–35
 Rubens, Peter Paul, 9: 1643–46
 Schulz, Charles M., 9: 1687–90
 Toulouse-Lautrec, Henri de, 10: 1830–32
 Van Gogh, Vincent, 10: 1859–62
 Vermeer, Jan, 10: 1862–64
 Whistler, James, 10: 1929–32
- Aryan supremacy, 8: 1436
- Ash, Mary Kay**, 1: 108–10, 109 (ill.)
- Ash Wednesday* (Eliot), 4: 671
- Ashe, Arthur**, 1: 110–13, 111 (ill.)
- Ashley, Earl of Shaftesbury, 6: 1167
- Asian campaign, 1: 45
- Asimov, Isaac**, 1: 113–15, 114 (ill.)
- Assassination attempts
 John Paul II, 6: 1014
 Reagan, Ronald, 8: 1559
- Assassinations
 Aquino, Benigno, 1: 85–86; 7: 1235
 Evers, Medgar, 4: 693
 Gandhi, Indira, 4: 757
 Kennedy, John F., 6: 1018, 1068–69; 8: 1427
 Kennedy, Robert, 6: 1062, 1070
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1097
 Lincoln, Abraham, 6: 1153–54
 Lumumba, Patrice, 6: 1181
 Malcolm X, 7: 1213
 Milk, Harvey, 7: 1298–1301
 Moscone, George, 4: 706; 7: 1300, 1301
 Sadat, Anwar, 7: 1354
- Assembly line, 4: 727
- Assisi, Italy, 4: 729–31
- The Assistant* (Malamud), 7: 1209
- Association experiment (Jungian psychology), 6: 1043
- Astaire, Fred**, 1: 116–18, 117 (ill.)
- Astor, John Jacob**, 1: 118–20, 119 (ill.)
- Astounding Science Fiction*, 1: 114
- Astronauts. *See also* Aviators and aviation
 Armstrong, Neil, 1: 102–5

- Jemison, Mae C., 6: 997–99
 Ride, Sally, 9: 1585–88
 Tereshkova, Valentina, 10: 1798–1801
- Astronomers**
 Banneker, Benjamin, 1: 166–68
 Celsius, Anders, 3: 407–8
 Copernicus, Nicolaus, 3: 510–13
 Galileo, 4: 750–52
 Gauss, Karl Friedrich, 4: 776–77
 Herschel, William, 5: 893–95
 Kepler, Johannes, 6: 1074–76
 Sagan, Carl, 9: 1659–62
Astronomia nova (Kepler), 6: 1075–76
At the Moulin Rouge (Toulouse-Lautrec), 10: 1830
 Atahualpa, 4: 593
- Atheists**
 Diderot, Denis, 4: 606–8
 Marx, Karl, 7: 1247
 Shelley, Percy, 9: 1712
- Athenian Empire**, 8: 1473–74
- Athens**
 Aeschylus, 1: 29
 Aristophanes, 1: 96–98
 Euripides, 4: 688–90
 Pericles, 8: 1472–74
 Plato, 8: 1485–88
 Sophocles, 9: 1734–37
- Athletes.** *See* specific athlete, e.g., Aaron, Hank; specific sport, e.g., Baseball
 “Atlanta Compromise” speech (Booker T. Washington), 10: 1905
 Atlanta, Georgia, 6: 1096
 Atlantic City, New Jersey, 10: 1839
Atlantic Monthly (magazine), 5: 921
 Atomic bomb, 4: 657, 710; 9: 1663; 10: 1835
 “Atomic oscillators,” 5: 869
- Atoms**
 Anderson, Carl David, 1: 64–66
 Einstein, Albert, 4: 655
 Fermi, Enrico, 4: 708–10
- Attorney generals**
 Kennedy, Robert, 6: 1071–74
 Reno, Janet, 8: 1568–71
- Attorneys.** *See* Lawyers
- Atwood, Margaret**, 1: 120–22, 121 (ill.)
- Auden, W. H.**, 1: 123–25, 124 (ill.)
- Audubon, John James**, 1: 125–27, 126 (ill.)
- Aufbau* (Jewish weekly), 1: 92
Augsburg Confession (Melancthon), 6: 1184
- Augustus**, Emperor of Rome, 1: 128–30, 129 (ill.); 8: 1433; 10: 1875
- Aung San Suu Kyi**, 1: 130–32, 131 (ill.)
- Aurora Leigh* (Elizabeth Barrett Browning), 2: 301
- Auschwitz, Poland, 1: 171; 9: 1680, 1751; 10: 1938
- Austen, Jane**, 1: 132–35, 133 (ill.)
- Austerlitz, battle of, 7: 1378
- Australopithecus boisei*, 6: 1123
- Austria, 4: 735–36, 738; 7: 1238, 1240, 1377, 1378, 1379
- Authors**
 Achebe, Chinua, 1: 10–11
 Adamson, Joy, 1: 22–25
 Allen, Woody, 1: 49–52
 Allende, Isabel, 1: 52–54
 Andersen, Hans Christian, 1: 62–64
 Angelou, Maya, 1: 73–75
 Atwood, Margaret, 1: 120–22
 Austen, Jane, 1: 132–35
 Bailey, F. Lee, 1: 150–52
 Baldwin, James, 1: 156–59
 Beauvoir, Simone de, 2: 187–89
 Bellow, Saul, 2: 202–4
 Brontë, Charlotte, 2: 283–84
 Brontë, Emily, 2: 284–86
 Brown, Helen Gurley, 2: 289–91
 Buck, Pearl S., 2: 308–10
 Camus, Albert, 2: 349–51
 Capote, Truman, 2: 354–57
 Carroll, Lewis, 3: 370–72
 Cather, Willa, 3: 397–99
 Cervantes, Miguel de, 3: 408–11
 Chaucer, Geoffrey, 3: 433–35
 Chavez, Linda, 3: 440–43
 Cheever, John, 3: 447–49
 Chekhov, Anton, 3: 449–51
 Child, Julia, 3: 459–61
 Christie, Agatha, 3: 469–71
 Churchill, Winston, 3: 472–75
 Coleridge, Samuel Taylor, 3: 496–98
 Conrad, Joseph, 3: 508–10
 Cosby, Bill, 3: 521
 Defoe, Daniel, 4: 574–76
 Dickens, Charles, 4: 600–603
 Diderot, Denis, 4: 606–8
 Dostoevsky, Fyodor, 4: 624–26
 Doyle, Arthur Conan, 4: 629–31
 Dumas, Alexandre, 4: 634–35
 Eliot, George, 4: 665–68
 Eliot, T. S., 4: 668–72
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 4: 680–83
 Farmer, Fannie, 4: 696–98
 Faulkner, William, 4: 701–4
 Fitzgerald, F. Scott, 4: 718–21
 Flaubert, Gustave, 4: 721–23
 Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 731–35
 Freud, Sigmund, 4: 735–38

- Friedan, Betty, 4: 738–41
Galbraith, John Kenneth, 4: 745–48
Galileo, 4: 750–52
García Márquez, Gabriel, 4: 762–64
Geisel, Theodor, 5: 781–83
Gibran, Kahlil, 5: 788–90
Golding, William, 5: 800–801
Gould, Stephen Jay, 5: 821–24
Greene, Graham, 5: 831–33
Grimm, Jakob and Wilhelm (Brothers Grimm), 5: 836–38
Haley, Alex, 5: 843–46
Hardy, Thomas, 5: 857–59
Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 5: 862–65
Heller, Joseph, 5: 870–72
Hemingway, Ernest, 5: 875–77
Heyerdahl, Thor, 5: 895–97
Hinton, S. E., 5: 900–902
Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 5: 920–23
Howe, Julia Ward, 5: 949–51
Hughes, Langston, 5: 954–57
Hugo, Victor, 5: 957–60
Hurston, Zora Neale, 5: 960–62
Irving, Washington, 5: 975–77
James, P. D., 6: 991–93
Johnson, Samuel, 6: 1023–24
Joyce, James, 6: 1038–39
Kafka, Franz, 6: 1047–49
Keller, Helen, 6: 1056–58
Kerouac, Jack, 6: 1076–78
King, Stephen, 6: 1098–1100
Kipling, Rudyard, 6: 1101–3
Lewis, C. S., 6: 1139–41
Lewis, Sinclair, 6: 1144–45
London, Jack, 6: 1168–70
Machiavelli, Niccolò, 7: 1188–91
Mahfouz, Naguib, 7: 1203–5
Mailer, Norman, 7: 1205–8
Malamud, Bernard, 7: 1208–10
McMillan, Terry, 7: 1273–75
Miller, Henry, 7: 1308–10
Morrison, Toni, 7: 1338–40
Nabokov, Vladimir, 7: 1371–73
Oates, Joyce Carol, 8: 1413–16
Orwell, George, 8: 1430–32
Plath, Sylvia, 8: 1483–85
Porter, Katherine Anne, 8: 1507–9
Post, Emily, 8: 1509–11
Proulx, E. Annie, 8: 1524–26
Proust, Marcel, 8: 1526–28
Remarque, Erich Maria, 8: 1564–65
Rousseau, Jean Jacques, 9: 1636–38
Rowan, Carl, 9: 1639–40
Rowling, J. K., 9: 1641–43
Rushdie, Salman, 9: 1649–51
Sagan, Carl, 9: 1659–62
Salinger, J. D., 9: 1664–67
Sandburg, Carl, 9: 1671–73
Sanger, Margaret, 9: 1673–75
Scott, Walter, 9: 1693–95
Shelley, Mary Wollstonecraft, 9: 1708–11
Sinclair, Upton, 9: 1722–24
Singer, Isaac Bashevis, 9: 1724–26
Stein, Gertrude, 9: 1752–54
Steinbeck, John, 9: 1755–57
Stevenson, Robert Louis, 9: 1757–59
Stoker, Bram, 9: 1759–61
Stowe, Harriet Beecher, 9: 1766–69
Tan, Amy, 10: 1787–89
Thackeray, William Makepeace, 10: 1801–4
Thoreau, Henry David, 10: 1813–16
Thurber, James, 10: 1819–20
Tolkien, J. R. R., 10: 1824–26
Tolstoy, Leo, 10: 1827–29
Twain, Mark, 10: 1850–52
Updike, John, 10: 1855–57
Verne, Jules, 10: 1864–67
Vidal, Gore, 10: 1872–74
Vonnegut, Kurt, 10: 1884–87
Walker, Alice, 10: 1891–94
Webster, Noah, 10: 1921
Welty, Eudora, 10: 1925–27
Wharton, Edith, 10: 1928–29
White, E. B., 10: 1932–34
Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40
Wilde, Oscar, 10: 1940–42
Wilder, Laura Ingalls, 10: 1943–45
Wilder, Thornton, 10: 1946–48
Williams, Tennessee, 10: 1950
Woolf, Virginia, 10: 1962–65
Wright, Richard, 10: 1975–77
Zindel, Paul, 10: 1987–89
- Autobiographies
Angelou, Maya, 1: 74–75
Beauvoir, Simone de, 2: 187–89
Cobb, Ty, 3: 491
Cummings, E. E., 3: 537
Dahl, Roald, 3: 545–46
Douglass, Frederick, 4: 627–28
Iacocca, Lee, 5: 969
Mankiller, Wilma, 7: 1221–22
Menchú, Rigoberta, 7: 1288
Plath, Sylvia, 8: 1485
Rudolph, Wilma, 9: 1648
Stanton, Elizabeth Cady, 9: 1747
Welty, Eudora, 10: 1926–27

The Autobiography of Alice B. Toklas (Stein), 9: 1754
The Autobiography of Malcolm X (Malcolm X and Haley), 5: 844; 7: 1213
Automobile industry
 Bieber, Owen, 2: 220–22
 Ford, Henry, 4: 726–28
 Honda, Soichiro, 5: 929–30
 Iacocca, Lee, 5: 967–70
 Kettering, Charles F., 6: 1078–80
 Toyota, Eiji, 10: 1832–34
Automobile safety, 7: 1374–75
Aviators and aviation. *See also* Astronauts
 Armstrong, Neil, 1: 103
 Bell, Alexander Graham, 2: 199–200
 Coleman, Bessie, 3: 494–96
 Earhart, Amelia, 4: 643–46
 Hughes, Howard, 5: 952–53
 Lindbergh, Charles, 6: 1154–56
 Wright Brothers, 10: 1969–72
Avril, Prosper, 1: 94

B

Baal Shem Tov, 1: 137–39, 138 (ill.)
Babbage, Charles, 1: 139–41, 140 (ill.)
Babbitt (Lewis), 6: 1144
Baby and Child Care (Spock), 9: 1741, 1742
Babylonia, 1: 45–46
The Bacchae (Euripides), 4: 690
Bach, Johann Sebastian, 1: 141–43, 142 (ill.); 3: 387
Bachman, Richard. *See* King, Stephen
Bacon, Francis, 1: 143–45, 144 (ill.)
Bacon, Roger, 1: 145–47, 146 (ill.)
Bacteria, 1: 1450–53
Bad Faces (Smoke People), 1: 57
Baez, Joan, 1: 147–50, 149 (ill.)
Baggins, Bilbo (literary character), 10: 1826
Bailey, F. Lee, 1: 150–52, 151 (ill.)
Baker, Josephine, 1: 152–54, 153 (ill.)
al-Bakr, Ahmad Hasan, 5: 963
Balanchine, George, 1: 154–56, 155 (ill.); 9: 1775; 10: 1786
Baldwin, James, 1: 156–59, 157 (ill.)
Ball, Lucille, 1: 159–61, 160 (ill.)
The Ballad of Reading Gaol (Wilde), 10: 1942
Ballard, Florence, 9: 1631
Ballerinas, in art, 4: 577–78
Ballet dancers and choreographers
 Balanchine, George, 1: 154–56
 Nureyev, Rudolf, 8: 1409–11
 Pavlova, Anna, 8: 1462–64

Tallchief, Maria, 10: 1785–87
Tharp, Twyla, 10: 1804–7
Ballets, 9: 1773–75
Ballets Russes, 1: 155
Ballistite, 8: 1397–98
Baltimore, David, 1: 161–64, 163 (ill.)
Baltimore Orioles, 6: 990–91; 9: 1591–92, 1652
Balzac, Honoré de, 1: 164–66, 165 (ill.)
Banana dance (Baker), 1: 153–54
Band of Gypsies, 5: 879–80
Bandleaders
 Basie, Count, 1: 177–79
 Calloway, Cab, 2: 342–44
 Ellington, Duke, 4: 678–80
 Gillespie, Dizzy, 5: 792–94
 Goodman, Benny, 5: 807–9
Bank war (1832), 6: 981–82
Banneker, Benjamin, 1: 166–68, 167 (ill.)
Banting, Frederick, 1: 168–70, 169 (ill.)
A Bar at the Folies-Bergère (Manet), 7: 1220
Barak, Ehud, 1: 88
Barbie, Klaus, 1: 170–73, 171 (ill.)
Barnard, Christiaan, 1: 173–75, 174 (ill.)
Barrett, Elizabeth. *See* Browning, Elizabeth Barrett
Barrow, Joseph Louis. *See* Louis, Joe
Barton, Clara, 1: 175–77, 176 (ill.)
Baseball players
 Aaron, Hank, 1: 1–4
 Cobb, Ty, 3: 490–92
 DiMaggio, Joe, 4: 608–10
 Jackson, Reggie, 6: 989–91
 Mantle, Mickey, 7: 1224–26
 Mays, Willie, 7: 1261–64
 Ripken, Cal, Jr., 9: 1591–93
 Ruth, Babe, 9: 1651–53
 Ryan, Nolan, 9: 1653–56
 Thorpe, Jim, 10: 1817
Basie, Count, 1: 177–79, 178 (ill.)
Basketball players
 Bird, Larry, 2: 224–27
 Chamberlain, Wilt, 3: 416–19
 Johnson, Magic, 6: 1020–22
 Jordan, Michael, 6: 1034–37
Bastille, storming of, 7: 1239
Ba'th Socialist Party (Arab), 5: 963
“The Battle Hymn of the Republic” (song), 5: 949–51
Battles. *See* specific battle, e.g., Little Bighorn (Montana)
Bauhaus (Weimar, Germany), 6: 1051
Bay of Pigs (Cuba), 6: 1067
Beagle, 3: 554–55

- Beat generation, 6: 1076–78
Beata Beatrix (Rossetti), 9: 1635
Beatles, 2: 181–85, 182 (ill.)
Beaumont, William, 2: 185–87, 186 (ill.)
 Beauty products, 1: 108–10
Beauvois, Simone de, 2: 187–89, 188 (ill.)
 Bebop
 Davis, Miles, 3: 559
 Gillespie, Dizzy, 5: 792–94
 Monk, Thelonious, 7: 1323
 Parker, Charlie, 8: 1445–47
 Bechet, Sidney, 1: 153
Beckett, Samuel, 2: 189–92, 190 (ill.)
 Beckwith, Byron de la, 4: 693
Beethoven, Ludwig van, 2: 192–94, 193 (ill.)
Begin, Menachem, 2: 194–96, 195 (ill.)
 Behavior, socially correct, 8: 1509–11
 Beijing, China, Tiananmen Square, 4: 589
Being and Nothingness: An Essay in Phenomenological Ontology (Sartre), 9: 1677
 Belacqua (literary character), 2: 190
 Belgium, 6: 1178–80
Bell, Alexander Graham, 2: 196–200, 197 (ill.); 6: 1057
 Bell Telephone Company, 2: 198
Bellecourt, Clyde, 2: 200–202, 201 (ill.)
Bellow, Saul, 2: 202–4, 203 (ill.)
Beloved (Morrison), 7: 1340
 Ben Eliezer, Israel. *See* Baal Shem Tov
 Ben-Gurion, David, 7: 1285
 Bennett, Harry, 4: 728
Bennett, William, 2: 204–6, 205 (ill.)
 Bentham, Jeremy, 7: 1301–2
Bergman, Ingmar, 2: 206–8, 207 (ill.)
Berlin, Irving, 2: 208–10, 209 (ill.)
 Berlin Wall, 2: 213; 8: 1538; 9: 1581, 1648
 Bernstein, Carl, 5: 826
Bernstein, Leonard, 2: 210–13, 211 (ill.)
Berry, Chuck, 2: 213–15, 214 (ill.)
 The Besht. *See* Baal Shem Tov
 Bessette, Carolyn, 6: 1071
 Bessette, Lauren, 6: 1071
 Best, Charles, 1: 169–70
 Beta decay, 4: 708
Bethune, Mary McLeod, 2: 215–17, 216 (ill.)
 Bethune-Cookman College, 2: 217
Between Past and Future (Arendt), 1: 92
Beyond the Horizon (O'Neill), 8: 1429
Bhutto, Benazir, 2: 218–20, 219 (ill.)
 Biafra, 1: 10–11
 Bible
 Jesus of Nazareth, 6: 1000–1001
 Moses, 7: 1343–45
Bieber, Owen, 2: 220–22, 221 (ill.)
 Big band era
 Armstrong, Louis, 1: 101–2
 Basie, Count, 1: 178–79
 Calloway, Cab, 2: 343
 Holiday, Billie, 5: 918–20
 Big bang theory, 5: 861
The Big Trail (film), 10: 1914
 Bill of Rights, 10: 1908
Billy the Kid, 2: 223–24, 224 (ill.)
 Bin Laden, Osama, 9: 1582
 Binomial system (plant and animal names), 6: 1158
Biochemistry and Human Metabolism (Asimov), 1: 115
 Biochemists
 Bloch, Konrad, 2: 237–39
 Brown, Rachel Fuller, 2: 297–99
 Biological determinism, 5: 823
 Biologists
 Carson, Rachel, 3: 377–79
 Pasteur, Louis, 1: 1450–53
 Bipedalism, 6: 1123
Bird, Larry, 2: 224–27, 226 (ill.)
Bird of America (Audubon), 1: 127
 Birdsong, Cindy, 9: 1633
 Birmingham (Alabama) civil rights demonstrations, 1: 6
 Birmingham Barons, 6: 1036
 Birmingham Black Barons, 7: 1262
 Birth control, 9: 1673–75
Birth Control Review (newspaper), 9: 1674
 Birth defects
 Apgar, Virginia, 1: 83–84
 Barnaard, Christian, 1: 173
Birth of the Cool (Miles Davis), 3: 559
The Birth of Tragedy (Nietzsche), 8: 1388
Birth of Venus (Botticelli), 2: 258
 Black, Josiah, 10: 1911
 Black Barons (Birmingham), 7: 1262
 Black Hills (South Dakota), 1: 58
 Black holes, 5: 861
 “Black Maria,” 4: 653
 Black Muslims (Nation of Islam). *See* Nation of Islam (Black Muslims)
 Black nationalism, 4: 767–69; 7: 1211; 9: 1598
 Black Panther Party, 3: 365–66
Black Power (Carmichael and Hamilton), 3: 365–66
Black Power (Wright), 10: 1977
 Black Power movement, 2: 292; 3: 363–66
 Black September, 1: 87
Black, Shirley Temple, 2: 227–29, 228 (ill.)
 Black Star Line shipping company, 4: 768
 Black supremacy, 7: 1212–13

- Blackett, P. M. S., 1: 65
 Blackface performances, 6: 1025
Blackwell, Elizabeth, 1: 67; 2: 229–31, 230 (ill.)
 Blaiberg, Philip, 1: 174
 Blair, Eric Arthur. *See* Orwell, George
Blair, Tony, 2: 232–34, 233 (ill.)
Blake, William, 2: 234–37, 235 (ill.); 7: 1336
 Blindness
 Braille, Louis, 2: 273–75
 Charles, Ray, 3: 430–33
 Keller, Helen, 6: 1056–58
 Thurber, James, 10: 1820
Bloch, Konrad, 2: 237–39, 238 (ill.)
The Blue Light (Das Blaue Licht) (film), 9: 1589
 Blue period, 8: 1480–81
The Blue-back Speller (Webster), 10: 1920
The Blues Brothers (film), 2: 344
Blues for Mr. Charlie (Baldwin), 1: 158
 Blues musicians and vocalists
 King, B. B., 6: 1086–89
 Smith, Bessie, 9: 1727–29
Blues Suite (Ailey), 1: 35
The Bluest Eye (Morrison), 7: 1340
Blume, Judy, 2: 239–41, 240 (ill.)
 “The Boat People” (TV news story), 2: 268
 Bob Pender Troupe, 5: 830
 “Bobby-soxers,” 9: 1721
 Boer War, 2: 255; 9: 1579
 Churchill, Winston, 3: 473
 Doyle, Arthur Conan, 4: 631
 Boers, 4: 582; 9: 1579
Bogart, Humphrey, 2: 242–44, 243 (ill.)
 Bojaxhiu, Agnes Gonxha. *See* Mother Teresa
 Boleyn, Anne, 3: 400; 5: 881
 Bolivia, 1: 172
 Bolsheviks
 Lenin, Vladimir, 6: 1133–35
 Stalin, Joseph, 9: 1744
Bolt of Lightning (Noguchi), 8: 1400
 Bomb, nuclear, 4: 657, 710
 Bonaparte (Buonaparte), Napoleon. *See* Napoleon
 Bonaparte
 Bond (James Bond) films, 3: 506–7
Bond, Julian, 2: 244–46, 245 (ill.)
 Bonney, William H. *See* Billy the Kid
Book of Virtues (Bennett), 2: 206
Boone, Daniel, 2: 246–48, 247 (ill.)
 Booth, Catharine Mumford, 2: 251, 252
Booth, John Wilkes, 2: 248–50, 249 (ill.)
Booth, William, 2: 250–52, 251 (ill.)
 Bootlegging, 2: 352–53
 Bop. *See* Bebop
 Bordentown, New Jersey, 1: 175–76
 Borgia, Cardinal Rodrigo. *See* Alexander VI, Pope
 Borgia, Cesare, 2: 253–54
Borgia, Lucrezia, 2: 252–54, 253 (ill.)
Born Free (Adamson), 1: 23–24
Born on the Fourth of July (film), 9: 1762, 1763
 Bosnia, 1: 78
 Boston Braves, 1: 2
 Boston Celtics, 2: 225–26
Boston Cooking School Cookbook (Farmer), 4: 697
 Boston Massacre (1770), 5: 852
 Boston Red Sox, 9: 1652–53
 Boston Strangler, 1: 151
 Boston Tea Party (1773), 5: 852–53, 884
 Boswell, James, 6: 1024
 Botany, 6: 1157–58
Botha, P. W., 2: 255–57, 256 (ill.); 4: 582, 583
 Bothwell, Earl of, 7: 1251
Botticelli, Sandro, 2: 257–59, 258 (ill.)
 Boulton, Matthew, 10: 1912
Bourke-White, Margaret, 2: 259–61, 260 (ill.)
Boutros-Ghali, Boutros, 2: 261–64, 262 (ill.)
 Bowdoin College, 5: 863
 Bowles, Camilla Parker, 3: 429–30; 4: 599
 Bowles, Samuel, 4: 604–5
 Boxer Rebellion, 2: 308
 Boxers
 Ali, Muhammad, 1: 47–49
 Gordy, Berry, Jr., 5: 813
 Louis, Joe, 6: 1173–75
 Marciano, Rocky, 7: 1230–32
 Boycotts
 Chávez, César, 3: 437–38
 Montgomery, Alabama, 6: 1094–95
 Bozeman, John M., 1: 57
 Bozeman Trail, 1: 57
Bradbury, Ray, 2: 264–66, 265 (ill.)
 Bradlee, Benjamin C., 5: 825
Bradley, Ed, 2: 266–68, 267 (ill.)
Brady, Mathew, 2: 269–70, 270 (ill.)
 Brahe, Tycho, 6: 1075
Brahms, Johannes, 2: 271–73, 272 (ill.)
Braille, Louis, 2: 273–75, 274 (ill.); 6: 1057
 Branch Davidians, 8: 1570–71
Brandeis, Louis, 2: 275–77, 276 (ill.)
Brando, Marlon, 2: 278–80, 279 (ill.)
 Brazil, 10: 1868–69
Breakfast at Tiffany’s (Capote), 2: 355–56
Breakfast of Champions (Vonnegut), 10: 1885–86
 Breedlove, Sarah. *See* Walker, Madame C. J.
 Breton, André François le, 4: 606, 607
 Breuer, Joseph, 4: 737
Brezhnev, Leonid, 2: 280–82, 281 (ill.); 5: 810, 811
A Brief History of Time: From the Big Bang to Black

- Holes* (Hawking), 5: 862
Brightman, Sarah, 6: 1163
Brighton Beach Memoirs (Simon), 9: 1718
British imperialism, 9: 1578
British Northwest Company, 1: 119
British South Africa Company, 9: 1579
Broadcasters
 Bradley, Ed, 2: 266–68
 Buchanan, Pat, 2: 305–8
 Cronkite, Walter, 3: 532–35
 Walters, Barbara, 10: 1897–1900
 Winfrey, Oprah, 10: 1956
Broadway
 Ailey, Alvin, 1: 35
 Angelou, Maya, 1: 74
 Ball, Lucille, 1: 161
 Berlin, Irving, 2: 210
 Bernstein, Leonard, 2: 212–13
 Calloway, Cab, 2: 343–44
 Castle, Vernon and Irene, 3: 390–93
 Dean, James, 4: 568
 Hammerstein, Oscar, 5: 851
 Hepburn, Audrey, 5: 887
 Hope, Bob, 5: 937
 Horne, Lena, 5: 943
 Jolson, Al, 6: 1026
 Jones, James Earl, 6: 1028
 Miller, Arthur, 7: 1306–7
 Porter, Cole, 8: 1505–7
 Rodgers, Richard, 9: 1610–12
 Simon, Neil, 9: 1716–19
 Sondheim, Stephen, 9: 1732–34
 Streisand, Barbra, 9: 1776–77
Brod, Max, 6: 1049
Brontë, Charlotte, 2: 283–84, 284 (ill.)
Brontë, Emily, 2: 284–86, 285 (ill.)
“Bronze Booklets,” 6: 1165
Brooks, Gwendolyn, 2: 286–88, 287 (ill.)
Brotherhood of Sleeping Car Porters (BSCP),
 8: 1553
Brothers Grimm, 5: 836–38, 837 (ill.)
The Brothers Karamazov (Dostoevsky), 4: 626
Brown, Helen Gurley, 2: 289–91, 290 (ill.)
Brown, James, 2: 291–94, 292 (ill.)
Brown, John, 2: 249, 294–97, 295 (ill.); 4: 628
Brown, Rachel Fuller, 2: 297–99, 298 (ill.)
Brown v. Board of Education, 7: 1244–45
Brownian motion, 4: 655
Browning, Elizabeth Barrett, 2: 299–302,
 300 (ill.), 304
Browning, Robert, 2: 301, 302–5, 303 (ill.)
Broz, Josip. *See* Tito, Marshal
Brunner, Jerome, 8: 1479
Bryan, William Jennings, 3: 553
Bubonic plague, 8: 1406–7
Buchanan, Pat, 2: 305–8, 306 (ill.)
Buck and the Preacher (film), 8: 1494–95
Buck, Pearl S., 2: 308–10, 309 (ill.)
Buddha, 2: 310–12, 311 (ill.)
Bukharin, Nikolai, 9: 1745
Bull Moose Party (Progressive Party), 9: 1630–31
Bülow, Hans von, 2: 273
Bunche, Ralph, 2: 312–14, 313 (ill.)
Buonamico, Francisco, 4: 750
Burger, Warren, 2: 314–17, 315 (ill.)
Burgoyne, John, 1: 107
Burma, 1: 130–32
Burnett, Whit, 9: 1665
Burns, Robert, 2: 317–20, 318 (ill.)
Burr, Aaron, 2: 320–22, 321 (ill.); 5: 848–49
Bury My Heart at Wounded Knee (Brown), 2: 201
Bush, George, 2: 323–26, 324 (ill.); 8: 1403;
 9: 1581; 10: 1809
Bush, George W., 2: 326–29, 327 (ill.); 8: 1514,
 1540; 9: 1582
Bush, Laura, 2: 327, 329–31, 330 (ill.)
“Bushell Case,” 8: 1470
Businessmen and businesswomen
 Albright, Madeleine, 1: 37–39
 Ash, Mary Kay, 1: 108–10
 Astor, John Jacob, 1: 118–20
 Bush, George, 2: 323
 Bush, George W., 2: 327
 Carnegie, Andrew, 3: 367–69
 Claiborne, Liz, 3: 478–80
 Disney, Walt, 4: 611–13
 Du Pont, Pierre, 4: 638–39
 Eastman, George, 4: 646–48
 Forbes, Malcolm, 4: 723–25
 Ford, Henry, 4: 725–29
 Gallup, George, 4: 753–54
 Gates, Bill, 4: 769–72
 Getty, J. Paul, 5: 786–87
 Gordy, Berry, Jr., 5: 813–15
 Gould, Jay, 5: 818–21
 Honda, Soichiro, 5: 929–30
 Iacocca, Lee, 5: 967–70
 Jobs, Steve, 6: 1007–10
 Johnson, Magic, 6: 1022
 Jordan, Michael, 6: 1037
 Klein, Calvin, 6: 1108–9
 Lauren, Ralph, 6: 1119
 Lee, Spike, 6: 1128
 Madonna, 7: 1199–1200
 Murdoch, Rupert, 7: 1364–66
 Palmer, Arnold, 8: 1441–43

Polo, Marco, 8: 1498–1500
Pullman, George, 8: 1533–34
Rhodes, Cecil John, 9: 1577–79
Rockefeller, John, 9: 1604–6
Schindler, Oskar, 9: 1678–81
Toyoda, Eiji, 10: 1832–34
Trump, Donald, 10: 1837–40
Walker, Madame C. J., 10: 1894–97
Wang, An, 10: 1900–1902
Butterflies, 7: 1371, 1372, 1373
Byron, George Gordon Noel, 2: 331–33, 332 (ill.)
Byzantium (Constantinople), 8: 1556

C

Caesar, Julius, 1: 128; 2: 335–38, 336 (ill.); 3: 481; 5: 891; 7: 1240, 1241–42
Calas affair, 10: 1881
Calculating machines, 1: 139–40; 8: 1448
Calculators, 10: 1901–2
Calcutta, India, 7: 1347–50
Calhoun, John C., 6: 981, 982
California
 Chávez, César, 3: 436–38
 DeMille, Cecil B., 4: 585
 Feinstein, Dianne, 4: 704–7
 Reagan, Ronald, 8: 1557–60
 Rice, Condoleezza, 9: 1580–82
California Angels, 9: 1654–55
California Institute of Technology (Cal Tech), 1: 64
California Institute of the Arts (Cal Arts), 4: 613
Caligula, 2: 338–40, 339 (ill.)
Caliph of Persia, 8: 1555–57
Callas, Maria, 2: 340–42, 341 (ill.)
Calles, Plutarco Elias, 3: 362
Calloway, Cab, 2: 342–44, 343 (ill.); 5: 792
Calvin, John, 2: 344–46, 345 (ill.)
Calvinists, 2: 318; 5: 920–21; 9: 1767
Calypso, 3: 522
Cambodia, 6: 1106; 8: 1495–98, 1514–17
Cameras, 4: 646–48
Camp David Accords, 1: 88; 3: 382
Campbell, Ben Nighthorse, 2: 346–49, 347 (ill.)
Campbell, John W., 1: 114
Camus, Albert, 2: 349–51, 350 (ill.)
Canada, 1: 106; 3: 467–69; 5: 836
Cancer research
 Ash, Mary Kay, 1: 110
 Baltimore, David, 1: 161–64
Candidiasis, 2: 298–99
The Canfield Decision (Agnew), 1: 33
Cano, Juan Sebastián del, 7: 1203
Canon, Copernicus, Nicolaus, 3: 511, 512
Canterbury Tales (Chaucer), 3: 435
“Cape liberalism,” 2: 255
Capitalism
 Gompers, Samuel, 5: 804
 Marx, Karl, 7: 1249
Capone, Al, 2: 352–54, 353 (ill.)
Capote, Truman, 2: 354–57, 355 (ill.)
Capra, Frank, 2: 357–59, 358 (ill.)
Carberger, Frank, 8: 1512, 1513
Carbolic acid, 6: 1160
Cárdenas, Lázaro, 3: 361–63, 362 (ill.)
Carloman, King of the Franks, 3: 425
Carlucci, Frank, 8: 1513
Carmel, California, 4: 650
Carmen Jones (opera), 5: 850
Carmichael, Stokely, 3: 363–66, 364 (ill.)
Carnegie, Andrew, 3: 367–69, 368 (ill.); 9: 1606
Carolingian Renaissance, 3: 424–27
Carrel, Alexis, 6: 1155
Carreras, Jose, 4: 618
A Carriage at the Races (Degas), 4: 578
Carrier-Belleuse, 9: 1613
Carroll, Lewis, 3: 370–72, 371 (ill.)
Cars. *See* Automobile industry
Carson, Johnny, 3: 372–74, 373 (ill.)
Carson, Kit, 3: 374–77, 375 (ill.)
Carson, Rachel, 3: 377–79, 378 (ill.)
Carswell, G. Harrold, 4: 740
Carter, Howard, 10: 1846
Carter, Jimmy, 2: 229; 3: 379–83, 380 (ill.); 5: 796; 6: 1063
Cartoonists
 Schulz, Charles M., 9: 1687–90
 Thurber, James, 10: 1819–20
Carver, George Washington, 3: 383–86, 384 (ill.)
Casablanca (film), 2: 243
Casals, Pablo, 3: 386–88, 387 (ill.)
Cassady, Neal, 6: 1077
Cassatt, Mary, 3: 388–90, 389 (ill.)
Cassius, Avidius, 7: 1237
Cassius, Emperor of Rome, 5: 891
The Castle (Kafka), 6: 1049
Castle, Vernon and Irene, 3: 390–93, 391 (ill.)
Castro, Fidel, 3: 363, 393–96, 394 (ill.); 4: 660
Castro Street (San Francisco, California), 7: 1300
The Cat in the Hat (Seuss), 5: 783
Cat on a Hot Tin Roof (film), 10: 1791
The Catcher in the Rye (Salinger), 9: 1666
Catch-22 (Heller), 5: 871–72
“Categorical Imperative” (Kant), 6: 1054
Caterpillar Inc., 2: 222
Cathay. *See* China

- Cather, Willa**, 3: 397–99, 398 (ill.)
- Catherine of Aragon**, queen consort of England, 3: 399–401, 400 (ill.); 5: 880, 881; 7: 1335
- Catherine the Great**, Russian empress, 3: 401–4, 402 (ill.)
- Catholic Church. *See* Roman Catholics and Roman Catholic Church
- Cats* (musical), 6: 1162–63
- Cat's Cradle* (Vonnegut), 10: 1885
- Caulfield, Holden (literary character), 9: 1666
- Cave, Edward, 6: 1023
- Cavendish, Henry**, 3: 404–7, 405 (ill.)
- CBS Evening News*, 3: 533–35
- CCP. *See* Chinese Communist Party (CCP)
- Cecil, Sir William, 4: 672–73
- Cedras, Raoul, 1: 95
- Celsius, Anders**, 3: 407–8, 408 (ill.)
- Celsius scale, 3: 407–8
- Cénacle, 5: 958
- Censorship
- Blume, Judy, 2: 241
 - Joyce, James, 6: 1038–39
 - Miller, Henry, 7: 1308–10
 - Nabokov, Vladimir, 7: 1373
- Central America, 7: 1286–89
- Central Intelligence Agency (CIA)
- Bush, George, 2: 325
 - Hughes, Howard, 5: 954
- Centuries* (Nostradamus), 8: 1408
- Ceramic walls, 7: 1318
- Cervantes, Miguel de**, 3: 408–11, 409 (ill.)
- Cézanne, Paul**, 3: 411–14, 412 (ill.)
- Chagall, Marc**, 3: 414–16, 415 (ill.)
- Challenger* disaster, 9: 1587
- Chalpin, Ed, 5: 879
- Chamberlain, Joseph, 9: 1579
- Chamberlain, Wilt**, 3: 416–19, 417 (ill.)
- Chandra. *See* Chandrasekhar, Subrahmanyan
- Chandrasekhar, Subrahmanyan**, 3: 419–21, 420 (ill.)
- Chaplin, Charlie**, 3: 421–24, 423 (ill.)
- Chapman, Mark David, 2: 184
- Chappaquiddick Island (Massachusetts), 6: 1062
- Charcot, Jean Martin, 4: 736
- Charitable work. *See also* Humanitarians; Philanthropists
- Diana, Princess of Wales, 4: 599
 - Hope, Bob, 5: 938
 - John, Elton, 6: 1012
 - Lauren, Ralph, 6: 1119
 - McEnroe, John, 7: 1272
 - Palmer, Arnold, 8: 1443
 - Streisand, Barbra, 9: 1779
- Charlemagne**, King of the Franks, 3: 424–27, 425 (ill.); 8: 1556–57
- Charles I, King of England, 3: 530–31; 7: 1314; 9: 1645
- Charles II, King of England, 7: 1315
- Charles V, King of Spain, 7: 1202
- Charles VI, King of France, 6: 1005
- Charles VII, King of France, 6: 1005–6
- Charles, Ezzard, 7: 1232
- Charles, Prince of Wales**, 3: 427–30, 428 (ill.); 4: 598–600
- Charles, Ray**, 3: 430–33, 431 (ill.)
- Charles the Great, King of the Franks. *See* Charlemagne
- Charles Town, Virginia, 2: 296
- Charlotte's Web* (White), 10: 1934
- Chaucer, Geoffrey**, 3: 433–35, 434 (ill.)
- Chávez, César**, 3: 436–38, 437 (ill.)
- Chavez, Dennis**, 3: 438–40, 439 (ill.)
- Chavez, Linda**, 3: 440–43, 441 (ill.)
- Chavez-McAdoo Bill (1938), 3: 440
- Chavis Muhammad, Benjamin**, 3: 443–46, 444 (ill.)
- Chechnya, 8: 1539
- Cheever, John**, 3: 447–49, 448 (ill.)
- Chekhov, Anton**, 3: 449–51, 450 (ill.)
- Chemical pollution, 3: 379
- Chemical warfare, 5: 965
- Chemists and chemistry
- Brown, Rachel Fuller, 2: 297–99
 - Carver, George Washington, 3: 383–86
 - Cavendish, Henry, 3: 404–7
 - Nobel, Alfred, 8: 1397–98
 - Paracelsus, Philippus Aureolus, 8: 1443–45
 - Pasteur, Louis, 1: 1450–53
 - Pauling, Linus Carl, 8: 1453–56
- Cheney, Dick**, 2: 328; 3: 451–53, 453 (ill.)
- The Chephori* (Aeschylus), 1: 30
- Chertkov, V. G., 10: 1829
- Chesnut, Mary Boykin**, 3: 454–56, 455 (ill.)
- Chess, 4: 713–15
- Chiang Kai-shek**, 3: 456–59, 457 (ill.); 7: 1228; 9: 1782
- Chicago, Illinois
- Brooks, Gwendolyn, 2: 286–88
 - Capone, Al, 2: 352–54
 - Collins, Marva, 3: 499
 - Muhammad, Elijah, 7: 1359
- Chicago Bulls, 6: 1035
- Chien-kuo fang-lueh* (Principles of National Reconstruction), 9: 1781
- Child, Julia**, 3: 459–61, 460 (ill.)
- Child psychology, 1: 27

- Childbirth and anesthesia, 1: 83
- Childe Harold's Pilgrimage* (Byron), 2: 332
- Childhood development, 8: 1477–79
- Children of Cambodia's Killing Fields: Memoirs by Survivors* (Dith Pran), 8: 1517
- Children's authors. *See also* Juvenile fiction authors
- Dahl, Roald, 3: 543–46
- Geisel, Theodor, 5: 781–83
- Kipling, Rudyard, 6: 1103
- Morrison, Toni, 7: 1340
- Stevenson, Robert Louis, 9: 1758–59
- White, E. B., 10: 1934
- Wilder, Laura Ingalls, 10: 1943–45
- Zindel, Paul, 10: 1989
- Children's Defense Fund, 3: 487, 488
- Children's health
- Apgar, Virginia, 1: 83–84
- Spock, Benjamin, 9: 1740–43
- Children's Health Act (1997), 6: 1063
- The Children's Hour* (Hellman), 5: 873
- Children's intelligence, 8: 1477–79
- Children's rights
- Clinton, Hillary Rodham, 3: 487
- Reno, Janet, 8: 1570
- Chimpanzees, 5: 805–7
- China, 1: 120; 2: 308–9; 3: 456–59, 503–6, 548; 4: 587–89; 5: 784–85, 913–14; 6: 1003–4, 1106, 1107, 1109–12, 1115–17; 7: 1188, 1226–29; 8: 1498–1500; 9: 1779–83; 10: 1843–45. *See also* People's Republic of China; Republic of China (Taiwan)
- Chinese Communist Party (CCP), 4: 587–89; 6: 1003–4
- Chinese-Soviet relations, 4: 587–88; 6: 1004
- Chinese-U.S. relations, 6: 1004
- Chisholm, Shirley**, 3: 461–64, 462 (ill.)
- Cholesterol, 2: 237–39
- Chopin, Frédéric**, 3: 464–66, 465 (ill.)
- Choral music, 1: 143
- Choreographers
- Ailey, Alvin, 1: 34–36
- Astaire, Fred, 1: 116–18
- Balanchine, George, 1: 154–56
- Graham, Martha, 5: 827–29
- Kelly, Gene, 6: 1058–60
- Nureyev, Rudolf, 8: 1409–11
- Tallchief, Maria, 10: 1785–87
- Tharp, Twyla, 10: 1804–7
- Chrétien, Jean**, 3: 467–69, 468 (ill.)
- Christ in the House of Martha and Mary* (Vermeer), 10: 1864
- Christian Mission (England), 2: 251–52
- Christian mysticism, 6: 1045
- Christianity
- Calvin, John, 2: 344–46
- Eliot, T. S., 4: 670–71
- Jesus of Nazareth, 6: 1000–1002
- Lewis, C. S., 6: 1139–41
- Luther, Martin, 6: 1181–84
- McPherson, Aimee Semple, 7: 1275–77
- More, Thomas, 7: 1334–36
- Mother Teresa, 7: 1347–50
- Nietzsche, Friedrich, 8: 1389–90
- Pascal, Blaise, 8: 1449
- Wordsworth, William, 10: 1968
- Christie, Agatha**, 3: 469–71, 470 (ill.)
- The Christus: A Mystery* (Longfellow), 6: 1173
- Chronicles of Narnia* (Lewis), 6: 1140
- Chrysler Corporation, 2: 221–22; 5: 968–69
- Chua, Ferdinand, 7: 1233
- Church of England
- Auden, W. H., 1: 123
- Dodgson, Rev. C. L. (Lewis Carroll), 3: 370–72
- Donne, John, 4: 621–23
- Elizabeth I, Queen of England and Ireland, 4: 673–74
- Henry VIII, King of England, 5: 880–83
- Lewis, C. S., 6: 1140
- Church of St. Jean Bosco (Port-au-Prince, Haiti), 1: 94
- Churchill, Winston**, 3: 472–75, 473 (ill.); 9: 1627
- Ciccone, Madonna Louise Veronica. *See* Madonna
- Cicero, Marcus Tullius**, 3: 475–78, 476 (ill.)
- Cigar-makers' unions, 5: 802
- Cimon, 8: 1473
- Circumnavigators
- Drake, Francis, 4: 632–34
- Magellan, Ferdinand, 7: 1201–3
- Citizen Kane* (film), 10: 1923–24
- The City and the Pillar* (Vidal), 10: 1873
- City Lights* (film), 3: 422
- Civic (Honda), 5: 929
- Civil Rights Act (1964), 1: 6; 6: 1018, 1096
- Civil Rights Memorial (Montgomery, Alabama), 6: 1149
- Civil rights movement activists and participants. *See also* Apartheid
- Abernathy, Ralph, 1: 4–7
- Abzug, Bella, 1: 7–9
- Agnew, Spiro, 1: 32
- Baez, Joan, 1: 147–50
- Baldwin, James, 1: 156–59
- Bond, Julian, 2: 244–46
- Bunche, Ralph, 2: 314
- Burger, Warren, 2: 316–17
- Carmichael, Stokely, 3: 363–66

- Chávez, César, 3: 436–38
 Chavez, Linda, 3: 440–43
 Chavis Muhammad, Benjamin, 3: 443–46
 Chisholm, Shirley, 3: 463
 Davis, Ossie, 3: 561–62
 Dee, Ruby, 4: 571–73
 Evers, Medgar, 4: 690–93
 Farrakhan, Louis, 4: 698–701
 Hooks, Benjamin, 5: 934
 Horne, Lena, 5: 942–43
 Jackson, Jesse, 6: 983–86
 Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1018
 Kennedy, John F., 6: 1068
 Kennedy, Robert, 6: 1068, 1074
 King, Coretta Scott, 6: 1091–94
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1094–97
 Malcolm X, 7: 1210–14
 Marshall, Thurgood, 7: 1243–46
 Mfume, Kweisi, 7: 1292–95
 Milk, Harvey, 7: 1298–1301
 Randolph, A. Philip, 8: 1552–55
 Robeson, Paul, 9: 1596–99
- Civil Service Commission, 9: 1629
- Civil War
 Alcott, Louisa May, 1: 40
 Anthony, Susan B., 1: 80
 Barton, Clara, 1: 176
 Blackwell, Elizabeth, 2: 231
 Booth, John Wilkes, 2: 249
 Brady, Mathew, 2: 269–70
 Brown, John, 2: 295
 Carson, Kit, 3: 377
 Chesnut, Mary Boykin, 3: 454–56
 Douglass, Frederick, 4: 628
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr., 5: 923–24
 Howe, Julia Ward, 5: 950
 Lincoln, Abraham, 6: 1153–54
 Stanton, Elizabeth Cady, 9: 1747
 Truth, Sojourner, 10: 1842
 Whitman, Walt, 10: 1936–37
- Civil War (Spain). *See* Spanish Civil War
- Claiborne, Liz**, 3: 478–80, 479 (ill.)
- Clark and Rockefeller, 9: 1604
- Classical literature
 Aeschylus, 1: 29
 Aristophanes, 1: 96–98
 Euripides, 4: 688–90
 Homer, 5: 926–28
 Marcus Aurelius Antoninus, 7: 1236–38
 Ovid, 8: 1432–34
 Plato, 8: 1485–88
 Socrates, 9: 1729–31
- Sophocles, 9: 1734–37
 Virgil, 10: 1874–76
- Classical music. *See also* Musicians and music
 Beethoven, Ludwig van, 2: 192–94
 Bernstein, Leonard, 2: 210–13
 Brahms, Johannes, 2: 271–73
 Casals, Pablo, 3: 386–88
 Chopin, Frédéric, 3: 464–66
 Copland, Aaron, 3: 513–15
 Debussy, Claude, 4: 569–71
 Handel, George Frideric, 5: 854–57
 Mendelssohn, Felix, 7: 1289–92
 Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus, 7: 1350–53
 Prokofiev, Dmitri, 8: 1520–22
 Schubert, Franz, 9: 1684–87
 Strauss, Johann, Jr., 9: 1771–72
 Stravinsky, Igor, 9: 1773–76
 Tchaikovsky, Peter Ilych, 10: 1792–95
 Vivaldi, Antonio, 10: 1877–78
 Wagner, Richard, 10: 1889–91
- Clay, Cassius. *See* Ali, Muhammad
 Clay, Henry, 6: 981
 Clemens, Samuel. *See* Twain, Mark
- Cleopatra**, 1: 129; 2: 337; 3: 480–83, 481 (ill.); 7: 1242–43
Cleopatra (film), 10: 1791
- Clinton, Bill**, 3: 483–86, 484 (ill.); 5: 817–18
 Albright, Madeleine, 1: 38
 Arab-Israeli peace talks, 1: 88, 89
 Ginsburg, Ruth Bader, 5: 796
 Iraq, 1: 78
- Clinton, Hillary Rodham**, 3: 487–89, 488 (ill.)
- Clockers* (film), 6: 1128
Close Encounters of the Third Kind (film), 9: 1739
 Clothing, 6: 1117–19
 “The Coalbiters” (literary group), 10: 1825
- Cobb, Ty**, 3: 490–92, 491 (ill.)
- Cocaine abuse. *See* Substance abuse
- Cohn, Harry, 2: 357
 Cohn, Roy, 7: 1266
- Cold War
 Churchill, Winston, 3: 474
 Khrushchev, Nikita, 6: 1085–86
- Cole, Nat “King,”** 3: 492–94, 493 (ill.)
- Coleman, Bessie**, 3: 494–96, 495 (ill.)
- Coleridge, Samuel Taylor**, 3: 496–98, 497 (ill.); 10: 1966, 1967
- Colette, 5: 886–87
 Collages, 8: 1481–82
 Collectives (Soviet), 9: 1746
- Collins, Marva**, 3: 499–500, 500 (ill.)
- Collins, Michael**, 3: 501–3, 502 (ill.)
- Colombia, 3: 393–94; 4: 762–64

Colonial America

- Adams, Abigail, 1: 12
- Adams, Samuel, 1: 20–22
- Arnold, Benedict, 1: 105–8
- Boone, Daniel, 2: 247
- Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 731–33
- Hancock, John, 5: 852
- Henry, Patrick, 5: 883–84
- Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 994
- Mather, Cotton, 7: 1252–55
- Penn, William, 8: 1470–71
- Revere, Paul, 8: 1574–76

Colonialism

- Bunche, Ralph, 2: 313–14
- Ho Chi Minh, 5: 913
- Kipling, Rudyard, 6: 1102–3
- Lumumba, Patrice, 6: 1178–81

The Color Purple (film), 5: 798; 6: 1031; 9: 1739;
10: 1893, 1956

Colorado

- Campbell, Ben Nighthorse, 2: 348–49

The Colossus (Plath), 8: 1484

Columbia lunar spacecraft, 1: 105

Columbus, Christopher, 10: 1867

Columbus Day riot (New York City), 9: 1721

Combustion, 3: 405–6

Comedians. *See also* Humorists

- Allen, Woody, 1: 49–52
- Ball, Lucille, 1: 159–61
- Cosby, Bill, 3: 518–21
- Goldberg, Whoopi, 5: 797–99
- Hope, Bob, 5: 936–38

Comedies

- Aristophanes, 1: 96–98
- Molière, 7: 1318–20
- Sartre, Jean-Paul, 9: 1677
- Shakespeare, William, 9: 1703
- Wilde, Oscar, 10: 1940–42

Comic Relief benefit, 5: 798

Comic strips

- Lichtenstein, Roy, 6: 1146
- Schulz, Charles M., 9: 1687–90

Commentaries (Caesar), 2: 337

Commentariolus (Copernicus), 3: 511

Commission for Racial Justice, 3: 445–46

Committee of Public Safety, 9: 1600, 1601

The Common Law (Holmes Jr.), 5: 924

Communist Manifesto (Marx), 7: 1248

Communist Party of Kampuchea (CPK), 8: 1497

Communist Party of the Soviet Union, 10: 1983

Communist Party of Yugoslavia, 10: 1821–23

Communists and communism

- Brezhnev, Leonid, 2: 280–82

Camus, Albert, 2: 351

Castro, Fidel, 3: 393–96

Deng Xiaoping, 4: 587–89

Gorbachev, Mikhail, 5: 809–12

Greene, Graham, 5: 832

Guthrie, Woody, 5: 839, 840–41

Ho Chi Minh, 5: 912–15

Khrushchev, Nikita, 6: 1083–86

Lenin, Vladimir, 6: 1131–35

Mao Zedong, 7: 1226–29

Marx, Karl, 7: 1246–49

McCarthy, Joseph, 7: 1264–67

Picasso, Pablo, 8: 1482

Pol Pot, 8: 1495–98

Rivera, Diego, 9: 1595

Stalin, Joseph, 9: 1743–46

Sun Yat-Sen, 9: 1779–83

Tito, Marshal, 10: 1821–23

Yeltsin, Boris, 10: 1983–84

“Community psychiatry,” 1: 27

Communium naturalium (Bacon), 1: 147

Company (musical), 9: 1733

“Complexes” (Jungian psychology), 6: 1043

Composers

Bach, Johann Sebastian, 1: 141–43

Beethoven, Ludwig van, 2: 192–94

Berlin, Irving, 2: 208–10

Bernstein, Leonard, 2: 211–12

Brahms, Johannes, 2: 271–73

Casals, Pablo, 3: 386–88

Chopin, Frédéric, 3: 464–66

Copland, Aaron, 3: 513–15

Davis, Miles, 3: 559–60

Debussy, Claude, 4: 569–71

Ellington, Duke, 4: 678–80

Gillespie, Dizzy, 5: 792–94

Handel, George Frideric, 5: 854–57

Jones, Quincy, 6: 1029–32

Lloyd Webber, Andrew, 6: 1161–63

Mendelssohn, Felix, 7: 1289–92

Monk, Thelonious, 7: 1323–24

Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus, 7: 1350–53

Porter, Cole, 8: 1505–7

Previn, André, 8: 1520–22

Rodgers, Richard, 9: 1610–12

Schubert, Franz, 9: 1684–87

Sondheim, Stephen, 9: 1732–34

Strauss, Johann, 9: 1771–72

Stravinsky, Igor, 9: 1773–76

Tchaikovsky, Peter Ilych, 10: 1792–95

Vivaldi, Antonio, 10: 1877–78

Wagner, Richard, 10: 1889–91

Compromise of 1850, 6: 1152

- Compson family (literary characters), 4: 703–4
- Computers
- Babbage, Charles, 1: 139–41
 - Gates, Bill, 4: 769–72
 - Jobs, Steve, 6: 1007–10
 - Wang, An, 10: 1900–1902
- Concentration camps, 1: 171, 173; 2: 261; 5: 911; 9: 1680, 1751; 10: 1938
- Concert for New York City (2001), 9: 1621
- Concord, Massachusetts, 8: 1575
- “Conditioned reflex,” 8: 1461
- Conductors
- Bernstein, Leonard, 2: 210–13
 - Brahms, Johannes, 2: 271–73
 - Mendelssohn, Felix, 7: 1291
- Confucius**, 3: 503–6, 504 (ill.); 6: 1116
- Congenital birth defects
- Apgar, Virginia, 1: 83–84
 - Barnaard, Christian, 1: 173
- Congo (Crichton), 3: 526
- Congo (Republic), 6: 1178–81
- Congress of Racial Equality (1961), 6: 1068
- Congress Party (India), 4: 756–57, 760, 761
- Congressmen and congresswomen
- Bush, George, 2: 324
 - Campbell, Ben Nighthorse, 2: 348
 - Chavez, Dennis, 3: 439
 - Cheney, Dick, 3: 452
 - Chisholm, Shirley, 3: 461–64
 - Crockett, Davy, 3: 528–29
 - Ferraro, Geraldine, 4: 711–12
 - Gore, Al, 5: 816–18
 - Hearst, William Randolph, 5: 867
 - Jackson, Andrew, 6: 980
 - Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 996
 - Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1017
 - Kennedy, John F., 6: 1065–66
 - Lincoln, Abraham, 6: 1151–52
 - Mfume, Kweisi, 7: 1294
 - Nixon, Richard, 8: 1393
 - Webster, Daniel, 10: 1916–17
- Connelly, Sean**, 3: 506–8, 507 (ill.)
- Conrad, Joseph**, 3: 508–10, 509 (ill.)
- Conservationists
- Adams, Ansel, 1: 15–17
 - Goodall, Jane, 5: 807
 - Muir, John, 7: 1360–62
- Conservative Party (Mexico), 6: 1040–42
- Conservatives, 2: 328
- Bennett, William, 2: 204–6
 - Buchanan, Pat, 2: 306–7
 - Chavez, Linda, 3: 442–43
 - McCarthy, Joseph, 7: 1266
 - Thomas, Clarence, 10: 1809
 - Wayne, John, 10: 1915
- Consolidated Iron Mines, 9: 1606
- Constitution. *See* U.S. Constitution
- Constitution of the Athenians*, 1: 99–100
- Constitutional Convention (1787), 4: 734–35; 5: 847; 7: 1192, 1195
- Continental Congress, 1: 13; 5: 847, 853, 884; 6: 994–95; 7: 1195; 10: 1907, 1908
- Continental System (Napoleon), 7: 1378
- Contraception, 4: 664; 9: 1673–75
- Contre-Machiavel* (Patericke), 7: 1191
- The Cook* (Vermeer), 10: 1864
- Cooking
- Child, Julia, 3: 459–61
 - Farmer, Fannie, 4: 696–98
- Copernicus, Nicolaus**, 3: 510–13, 511 (ill.); 4: 751, 752
- Copland, Aaron**, 3: 513–15, 514 (ill.)
- Coppola, Francis Ford**, 3: 515–18, 516 (ill.); 6: 1176
- Copyright, 10: 1920
- Corinthian League, 1: 44, 45
- Corman, Roger, 3: 516
- Cornwallis, Charles, 6: 1114
- Coryell, C. D., 8: 1455
- Cosby, Bill**, 3: 518–21, 519 (ill.)
- Cosmetics industry, 1: 108–10
- The Cosmic Connection* (Sagan), 9: 1661
- Cosmic rays, 1: 65
- Cosmologists
- Hawking, Stephen, 5: 860–62
 - Pythagoreans, 8: 1542
- Cosmopolitan* (magazine), 2: 290–91
- Cosmos* (Sagan), 9: 1661
- Cotton Club (New York), 2: 343; 4: 679; 5: 792
- Cotton, John, 7: 1253
- Counseling, 1: 27–28
- Count Basie Orchestra, 1: 178
- Courlander, Harold, 5: 845
- Cousteau, Jacques**, 3: 521–23, 522 (ill.)
- Covenant (Israelites), 7: 1345
- Cover Girl* (film), 6: 1059
- Cover Her Face* (James), 6: 992, 993
- Coward, Noel**, 3: 523–25, 524 (ill.)
- Cowboy Philosopher* books (Rogers), 9: 1616
- Craft, Robert, 9: 1775
- Crassus, 2: 336
- Crayon, Geoffrey. *See* Irving, Washington
- Crazy Horse, 1: 57, 58
- Creation* (Rivera), 9: 1594–95
- Cremona, Italy, 9: 1769–70
- Crichton, Michael**, 3: 525–27, 526 (ill.)

Crime and Punishment (Dostoevsky), 4: 626
 Crimean War, 8: 1391
 Crimes against humanity, 1: 173
 Criminals
 Billy the Kid, 2: 223–24
 Booth, John Wilkes, 2: 248–50
 Capone, Al, 2: 352–54
 Critias, 8: 1486
Critique of Dialectical Reason (Sartre), 9: 1678
Critique of Judgment (Kant), 6: 1054
Critique of Practical Reason (Kant), 6: 1053–54
Critique of Pure Reason (Kant), 6: 1052–53
 Crito (Plato), 9: 1731
Crockett, Davy, 3: 527–29, 528 (ill.)
Cromwell, Oliver, 3: 529–32, 530 (ill.)
 Cromwell, Thomas, 5: 881
Cronkite, Walter, 3: 532–35, 533 (ill.)
 Crook, George, 1: 58
Crooklyn (film), 6: 1128
Crossing the Threshold of Hope (John Paul II), 6: 1015
The Crucible (Miller), 7: 1306–7
 Cry (Ailey), 1: 36
 Cuba, 3: 393–96; 4: 660; 6: 1067
 Cuban Missile Crisis (1962), 3: 395; 6: 1068, 1086
 Cubists
 Bacon, Francis, 1: 144
 Picasso, Pablo, 8: 1479–83
 Rivera, Diego, 9: 1594
 “Cultural pluralism,” 6: 1163–66
 Cultural Revolution (China), 4: 588; 7: 1229
Cummings, E. E., 3: 535–37, 536 (ill.)
Curie, Marie, 3: 538–41, 539 (ill.)
A Curtain of Green (Welty), 10: 1926
 Curtis, Glenn, 2: 200
 Custer, George Armstrong, 1: 58; 2: 348
 Cycles of history theory, 9: 1683–84; 10: 1982
 Cyclopropane, 1: 83

D

Dada Group (art), 7: 1317
 Dada, Idi Amin. *See* Amin, Idi
 Daguerreotypes, 2: 269
Dahl, Roald, 3: 543–46, 544 (ill.)
 Dail Eireann, 3: 501–2
Daily Forward (newspaper), 9: 1725
Dalai Lama, 2: 312; 3: 546–49, 547 (ill.)
 Dale, Thomas, 8: 1489
 D’Alembert, Jean, 4: 607
 Dalglish, Adam (literary character), 6: 993
Dali, Salvador, 3: 549–51, 550 (ill.)
 Dance music, 9: 1772

Dancers

Ailey, Alvin, 1: 34–36
 in art, Degas, Edgar, 4: 578
 Astaire, Fred, 1: 116–18
 Baker, Josephine, 1: 152–54
 Balanchine, George, 1: 154–56
 Black, Shirley Temple, 2: 227
 Castle, Vernon and Irene, 3: 390–93
 Davis, Sammy, Jr., 3: 563–65
 Graham, Martha, 5: 827–29
 Hepburn, Audrey, 5: 886
 Horne, Lena, 5: 941
 Jackson, Michael, 6: 987
 Kelly, Gene, 6: 1058–60
 Madonna, 7: 1197–1200
 Nureyev, Rudolf, 8: 1409–11
 Pavlova, Anna, 8: 1462–64
 Riefenstahl, Leni, 9: 1588
 Tallchief, Maria, 10: 1785–87
 Tharp, Twyla, 10: 1804–7
Daniel Deronda (Eliot), 4: 668
 Danish literature, 1: 62–64
 Danton, Georges Jacques, 9: 1601
 Darius III, King of Persia, 1: 45–46; 8: 1529
 Darnley, Henry, 7: 1251
Darrow, Clarence, 3: 551–53, 552 (ill.)
Darwin, Charles, 3: 554–56, 555 (ill.); 5: 859;
 6: 1169
Das Kapital (Marx), 7: 1248
David (Donatello), 4: 619
David Copperfield (Dickens), 4: 602
 Davies, Emily, 1: 67
Davis, Bette, 3: 556–58, 557 (ill.)
 Davis Cup, 1: 112
Davis, Miles, 3: 559 (ill.), 559–60
Davis, Ossie, 3: 561–62, 562 (ill.); 4: 572, 573
Davis, Sammy, Jr., 3: 563–65, 564 (ill.)
Dawn (Wiesel), 10: 1938–39
 Day, Fred Holland, 5: 788
 Dayton Engineering Laboratories Company (Delco),
 6: 1079
 Dayton, Ohio
 Dayton Peace Plan, 7: 1312
 Wright Brothers, 10: 1970
De Profundis (Wilde), 10: 1942
 Deafness
 Beethoven, Ludwig van, 2: 193–94
 Bell, Alexander Graham, 2: 196–200
 Keller, Helen, 2: 197; 6: 1056–58
Dean, James, 4: 567–69, 568 (ill.)
Dearest Enemy (musical), 9: 1610
 Death (as literary subject), 2: 191
 Death camps (World War II). *See* Concentration
 camps

- Death of a Salesman* (Miller), 7: 1306
- Death penalty
 Burger, Warren, 2: 316
 O'Connor, Sandra Day, 8: 1419
- De Beers Mining Company, 9: 1579
- Debs, Eugene V., 3: 552
- Debussy, Claude**, 4: **569–71**, 570 (ill.)
- Decent and Indecent: Our Personal and Political Behavior* (Spock), 9: 1742
- Declaration of Independence
 Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 733, 734
 Hancock, John, 5: 853
 Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 994–95
- Dedalus, Stephen (literary character), 6: 1038–39
- Dee, Ruby**, 3: 561, 562; 4: **571–73**, 572 (ill.)
- The Defence of Poetry* (Shelley), 9: 1714
- Defoe, Daniel**, 4: **574–76**, 575 (ill.)
- Degas, Edgar**, 4: **576–78**, 577 (ill.); 10: 1830, 1831
- De Gaulle, Charles**, 4: **579–81**, 580 (ill.)
- Deification, 5: 974
- De Klerk, F. W.**, 2: 257; 4: **581–84**, 583 (ill.); 7: 1218; 10: 1849
- Del Cano, Juan Sebastien, 7: 1203
- Delaware
 Penn, William, 8: 1471, 1472
- Delco (Dayton Engineering Laboratories Company), 6: 1079
- Delian League, 8: 1473
- DeMille, Cecil B.**, 4: **585–86**, 586 (ill.)
- Democracy
 Dewey, John, 4: 596–97
 Pericles, 8: 1473
- Democratic Kampuchea, 8: 1497, 1516
- Democratic National Convention (Chicago, 1968), 2: 246
- Democratic Party
 Bennett, William, 2: 204–6
 Campbell, Ben Nighthorse, 2: 348–49
 Carter, Jimmy, 3: 379–83
 Chavez, Dennis, 3: 438–40
 Chisholm, Shirley, 3: 461–64
 Clinton, Bill, 3: 483–86
 Clinton, Hillary Rodham, 3: 487–89
 Feinstein, Dianne, 4: 704–7
 Ferraro, Geraldine, 4: 710–13
 Gore, Al, 2: 328–29
 Hearst, William Randolph, 5: 867
 Jackson, Jesse, 6: 985
 Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1016–19
 Kennedy, Edward, 6: 1061–63
 Kennedy, John F., 6: 1064–69
 Kennedy, Robert F., 6: 1071–74
 Roosevelt, Eleanor, 9: 1621–24
 Roosevelt, Franklin D., 9: 1624–28
- Schlesinger, Arthur, Jr., 9: 1681–84
- Truman, Harry S., 10: 1834–37
- Vidal, Gore, 10: 1872–74
- Wilson, Woodrow, 10: 1951–54
- Democratic-Republican Party, 7: 1196
- Demodokos (literary character), 5: 926
- Demonstrations
 Abernathy, Ralph, 1: 6–7
 Carmichael, Stokely, 3: 364–66
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1095–97
- Deng Xiaoping**, 4: **587–89**, 588 (ill.)
- De Niro, Robert, 9: 1691
- Densmore, John, 7: 1336
- Deposition* (Angelico), 1: 72–73
- Der Ring des Nibelungen* (Wagner), 10: 1890–91
- DeSalvo, Albert, 1: 151
- Descartes, René**, 4: **590–92**, 591 (ill.)
- Designers
 Campbell, Ben Nighthorse, 2: 348
 Klein, Calvin, 6: 1109
 Lauren, Ralph, 6: 1117–19
- De Soto, Hernando**, 4: **592–94**, 593 (ill.)
- D'Este, Alfonso, 2: 254
- Détente, 6: 1105
- Detroit, Michigan
 Ford, Henry, 4: 725–29
 Gordy, Berry, Jr., 5: 813–14
 Oates, Joyce Carol, 8: 1414
 Robinson, Smokey, 9: 1601–4
- Detroit Red Wings, 5: 947–48
- Detroit Tigers, 3: 490
- Detroit Vipers, 5: 948
- Deuce Coupe* (Tharp), 10: 1806
- Devereux, Robert, 8: 1549
- Dewey, John**, 4: **594–97**, 595 (ill.)
- Dewey, Thomas E., 10: 1836
- Dexter Avenue Baptist Church (Montgomery, Alabama), 6: 1093, 1094
- Dexter, Henrietta, 2: 297, 299
- Dharma (Buddhism), 2: 311
- Diabetes
 Banting, Frederick, 1: 169–70
 juvenile, 4: 663–64
- Diaghilev, Sergei, 1: 155
- Diallo, Amadou, 4: 573
- Dialogue Concerning the Two Chief World Systems* (Galileo), 4: 752
- “Diamond necklace affair,” 7: 1239
- Diamonds Are Forever* (film), 3: 507
- Diana and Her Companions* (Vermeer), 10: 1864
- Diana, Princess of Wales**, 3: 427, 429–30; 4: **597–600**, 598 (ill.), 678; 6: 1012
- Diaz, Porfirio, 9: 1594

- Dickens, Charles**, 4: 600–603, 601 (ill.); 10: 1804
- Dickinson, Emily**, 4: 603–6, 604 (ill.)
- The Dictator* (film), 3: 423
- Dictators
- Amin, Idi, 1: 59–62
 - Caesar, Julius, 1: 128, 2: 338
 - Deng Xiaoping, 4: 589
 - Duvalier, François, 1: 94; 4: 640–42
 - Hitler, Adolf, 5: 909–12
 - Hussein, Saddam, 5: 962–65
 - Marcos, Ferdinand, 7: 1233–35
 - Mussolini, Benito, 7: 1367–68
 - Napoleon Bonaparte, 7: 1376–79
 - Noriega, Manuel, 8: 1401–3
 - Pol Pot, 8: 1495–98
 - Qadhafi, Mu'ammar al-, 8: 1543–46
 - Stalin, Joseph, 9: 1743–46
 - Tito, Marshal, 10: 1823
- Dictionary, 6: 1024
- Dictionary compilers (lexicographers)
- Grimm brothers, 5: 838
 - Webster, Noah, 10: 1919–21
- Diderot, Denis**, 4: 606–8, 607 (ill.); 9: 1637
- Die Fledermaus* (Strauss), 9: 1772
- Diet of Worms, 6: 1183
- “Difference engine,” 1: 140
- Digestive system, 2: 185–87
- DiMaggio, Joe**, 4: 608–10, 609 (ill.); 7: 1326
- al-Din, Jalal, 5: 785
- Dinosaurs, 3: 526
- Dinwiddie, Robert, 10: 1906
- Diognetus, 7: 1236
- Dionysius I, King of Syracuse, 8: 1487
- Diplomats
- Annan, Kofi, 1: 76–79
 - Black, Shirley Temple, 2: 228–29
 - Boutros-Ghali, Boutros, 2: 261–64
 - Bunche, Ralph, 2: 312–14
 - Chaucer, Geoffrey, 3: 434
 - Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 731–35
 - Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 5: 865
 - Irving, Washington, 5: 976
 - Rowan, Carl, 9: 1639–40
- Dirac, P. A. M., 1: 65
- Directors. *See* Film directors
- Dirty Harry* (film), 4: 649
- Disappearing Acts* (McMillan), 7: 1274
- Disaster relief, 1: 177
- Discours sur les sciences et les arts* (Rousseau), 9: 1637
- Discourse on Bodies in Water* (Galileo), 4: 751
- Discourse on Method* (Descartes), 4: 591
- Discourses* (Machiavelli), 7: 1190
- Discrimination
- Abernathy, Ralph, 1: 6
 - Evers, Medgar, 4: 691
 - Ginsburg, Ruth Bader, 5: 794, 795–96
 - Milk, Harvey, 7: 1300
 - Randolph, A. Philip, 8: 1554
- Disney, Walt**, 4: 611–13, 612 (ill.)
- Disneyland, 4: 612
- Displacement (principle), 1: 89
- Disquisitiones arithmeticae* (Gauss), 4: 776
- Disraeli, Benjamin, 10: 1871
- Dissection, of animals, 5: 904
- The Disuniting of America: Reflections on a Multicultural Society* (Schlesinger), 9: 1684
- Dives in Misericordia* (Rich in Mercy) (John Paul II), 6: 1015
- DNA evidence, 8: 1419
- Do the Right Thing* (film), 6: 1127
- Dr. No* (film), 3: 506–7
- Dr. Seuss (**Geisel, Theodor**), 5: 781–83, 782 (ill.)
- Doctors. *See* Physicians; Surgeons
- Dodgson, Charles Lutwidge. *See* Carroll, Lewis
- Dolbear, Amos E., 2: 198
- Dole, Elizabeth**, 4: 613–16, 615 (ill.)
- Dole, Robert, 4: 614–15
- Dombey and Son* (Dickens), 4: 602
- Domestic violence, 2: 293
- Domingo, Placido**, 4: 616–18, 618 (ill.)
- Dominican Republic, 1: 54–55; 4: 641; 6: 1019
- Dominicans (religious order), 1: 71–73
- Don Quixote*, 3: 410–11
- Donatello**, 4: 619–21, 620 (ill.)
- Donne, John**, 4: 621–23, 622 (ill.)
- Doors (rock band), 7: 1336–37
- Dorian Gray* (Wilde), 10: 1942
- Dostoevsky, Fyodor**, 4: 624–26, 625 (ill.)
- The Double* (Dostoevsky), 4: 624
- Double stars, 5: 894
- Douglas, Stephen, 6: 1152–53
- Douglas-Hamilton, Iain, 1: 24
- Douglass, Frederick**, 4: 626–29, 628 (ill.)
- Down and Out in London* (Orwell), 8: 1430–31
- Down in the Delta* (film), 1: 75
- Doyle, Arthur Conan**, 4: 629–31, 630 (ill.); 5: 945
- The Dragons of Eden* (Sagan), 9: 1661
- Drake, Francis**, 4: 632–34, 633 (ill.)
- Drama criticism, 9: 1706–8
- Dramatic monologues, 2: 303–4
- Dramatists
- Aeschylus, 1: 29–30
 - Allende, Isabel, 1: 52–54
 - Chekhov, Anton, 3: 449–51

Christie, Agatha, 3: 471
 Coward, Noel, 3: 524
 Hardy, Thomas, 5: 859
 Hellman, Lillian, 5: 872–74
 Ibsen, Henrik, 5: 970–72
 Mamet, David Alan, 7: 1214–16
 Miller, Arthur, 7: 1305–7
 Molière, 7: 1318–20
 O'Neill, Eugene, 8: 1428–29
 Shakespeare, William, 9: 1702–6
 Shaw, George Bernard, 9: 1706–8
 Simon, Neil, 9: 1716–19
 Sophocles, 9: 1734–37
 Stoppard, Tom, 9: 1764–66
 Wilde, Oscar, 10: 1940–42
 Wilder, Thornton, 10: 1946–48
 Williams, Tennessee, 10: 1948–50
 Yeats, William Butler, 10: 1979–82

Drawbaugh, Daniel, 2: 199
Dream of Fair to Middling Women (Beckett), 2: 190
 “Dream Team,” 6: 1021, 1036
Dreaming of You (Selena), 9: 1701
Dred: A Tale of the Great Dismal Swamp (Stowe),
 9: 1768
 Drouet, Juliette, 5: 959
 Drug abuse. *See* Substance abuse
 Drug czar, 2: 206
 Drug trafficking, 8: 1401, 1402, 1403
Drum Taps (Whitman), 10: 1936
 Drummond, William, 6: 1033–34
 Drunkenness, legal limit, 3: 486
Du contrat social (Rousseau), 9: 1638
Dubin's Lives (Malamud), 7: 1210
 Duchess of Ferrara, 2: 252–54
 Dulbecco, Renato, 1: 162
Dumas, Alexandre, 4: 634–35
Dunbar, Paul Laurence, 4: 636–37, 637 (ill.)
The Dunciad (Pope), 8: 1504
 Dupin, Armandine Aurore Lucille.
 See Sand, George
 Du Pont, Coleman, 4: 638
Du Pont, Pierre, 4: 638–39, 639 (ill.)
 Durant, William C., 4: 639
 Dust Bowl, 5: 839
Duvalier, François, 1: 94–95; 4: 640–42, 641 (ill.)
 Duvalier, Jean-Paul “Baby Doc,” 1: 94; 4: 642
 Dynamite
 du Pont family, 4: 638
 Nobel, Alfred, 8: 1397
The Dynasts (Hardy), 5: 859

E

E. I. du Pont de Nemours and Company, 4: 638
Eagle lunar module, 1: 105
Earhart, Amelia, 4: 643–46, 644 (ill.)
 Earth
 density of, 3: 406
 rotation of, 3: 512; 4: 591
Earth in the Balance: Ecology and the Human Spirit
 (Gore), 5: 817
 EarthKAM, 9: 1587
 East Africa, 6: 1122–23
East of Eden (film), 4: 568, 569
 Easter Island, 5: 897
 Easter Uprising (1916), 2: 189; 3: 501
 Eastern religions, 6: 1045
Eastman, George, 4: 646–48, 647 (ill.)
 Eastman Kodak Company, 4: 647; 10: 1902
Eastwood, Clint, 4: 648–50, 649 (ill.)
 E-bikes, 5: 970
 Eck, Johann, 6: 1183
 Eckstine, Billy, 5: 793
Eclogues (Virgil), 10: 1875
 Ecology, 6: 1158
 Economic Equity Act (1982), 4: 712
Economics and the Public Purpose (Galbraith), 4: 747
 Economists and economics
 Deng Xiaoping, 4: 588–89
 Galbraith, John Kenneth, 4: 745–48
 Hamilton, Alexander, 5: 848
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr., 5: 925
 Marx, Karl, 7: 1246–49
 Mill, John Stuart, 7: 1301–3
 Stalin, Joseph, 9: 1746
 Ecosystems, Gore, Al, 5: 818
Ed Sullivan Show, 2: 182
 Edison Botanic Research Company, 4: 653
 Edison effect, 4: 652
Edison, Thomas, 2: 198, 199; 4: 650–54, 651 (ill.)
 Editors
 Brown, Helen Gurley, 2: 289–91
 Diderot, Denis, 4: 606–8
 Eliot, T. S., 4: 670
 Hearst, William Randolph, 5: 867–68
 Locke, Alain, 6: 1163–66
 Morrison, Toni, 7: 1338–40
 Onassis, Jackie Kennedy, 8: 1425–27
 Pope, Alexander, 8: 1504
 Edmonton Oilers, 5: 834–35
 Educators and education
 Alexander the Great, Macedonian king, 1: 44
 Anderson, Elizabeth Garrett, 1: 66–69
 Apgar, Virginia, 1: 84

- Arendt, Hannah, 1: 92–93
 Aristotle, 1: 98–100
 Baltimore, David, 1: 162–63
 Bell, Alexander Graham, 2: 196–200
 Bennett, William, 2: 204–6
 Bethune, Mary McLeod, 2: 215–17
 Blackwell, Elizabeth, 1: 67; 2: 229–31
 Braille, Louis, 2: 273–75
 Bush, Laura, 2: 329–31
 Chavez, Linda, 3: 440–43
 Chisholm, Shirley, 3: 462–63
 Collins, Marva, 3: 499–500
 Cosby, Bill, 3: 520
 Dewey, John, 4: 594–97
 Elders, Joycelyn, 4: 664–65
 Gallup, George, 4: 754
 Geisel, Theodor (Dr. Seuss), 5: 781–83
 hooks, bell, 5: 931–33
 Lee, Spike, 6: 1128–29
 Linnaeus, Carl, 6: 1158
 Locke, Alain, 6: 1163–66
 medical, for women, 1: 66–69
 Montessori, Maria, 7: 1331–33
 Paracelsus, Philippus Aureolus, 8: 1444–45
 Piaget, Jean, 8: 1477–79
 Rice, Condoleezza, 9: 1580–82
 Ride, Sally, 9: 1587–88
 Sagan, Carl, 9: 1659–62
 Washington, Booker T., 10: 1903–5
 Webster, Noah, 10: 1919–20
- Edward VI, King of England, 4: 672
 Edwards, Esther, 5: 815
The Effect of Gamma Rays on Man-in-the-Moon Marigolds (Zindel), 10: 1988
 Egypt, 1: 87, 88; 2: 195–96, 261–64; 3: 480–83; 5: 972–75; 7: 1203–5, 1343–45; 7: 1353–55, 1381–82; 8: 1528–31; 10: 1845–47
 Egypt-Israeli peace treaty (1979), 2: 195–96
 Eichmann, Adolf, 1: 92
Eighteen Poems (Thomas), 10: 1812
 Eighteenth Amendment (Prohibition), 2: 352
Einstein, Albert, 4: 654–57, 655 (ill.)
Eisenhower, Dwight D., 2: 315–16; 4: 657–60, 659 (ill.), 661
Eisenhower, Mamie, 4: 661–62, 662 (ill.)
 Elba, 7: 1378
 Elderly, George, 1: 151
Elders, Joycelyn, 4: 663–65, 664 (ill.)
Electra (Sophocles), 9: 1736
 Electric light bulb, 4: 652
 Electrical devices, 4: 650–54
 Electricity
 Cavendish, Henry, 3: 406
 Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 732
 Electromagnetism, 7: 1341–43
 Electronic calculators, 10: 1901–2
 Electrons
 Edison, Thomas, 4: 652
 Einstein, Albert, 4: 655
 Elementary education, 2: 205–6
Elements (Euclid), 1: 90–91; 4: 686–87
The Elements of Style (Strunk and White), 10: 1934
Eliot, George, 4: 665–68, 667 (ill.)
Eliot, T. S., 4: 668–72, 669 (ill.)
Elizabeth I, Queen of England and Ireland, 4: 663, 634, 672–75, 673 (ill.); 7: 1250–52; 8: 1548, 1549
Elizabeth II, Queen of the United Kingdom, 4: 599, 600, 675–78, 677 (ill.)
 Elizabethan Age, 5: 917
 Ellicott, Andrew, 1: 167
 Ellicott, George, 1: 166
Ellington, Duke, 2: 343; 4: 678–80, 679 (ill.), 716–17; 5: 793
Elmer Gantry (Lewis), 6: 1144
 Elsa (lion), 1: 23–24
 Emancipation of serfs (1861), 1: 42
 Emancipation Proclamation (Lincoln), 6: 1153
Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 4: 680–83, 682 (ill.); 6: 1120; 10: 1814, 1936
 Eminem, 6: 1012
Emma (Austen), 1: 135
 Emperors and empresses. *See also* Kings; Queens
 Alexander II, Russian emperor, 1: 41–43
 Alexander the Great, Macedonian king, 1: 43–46
 Augustus, Emperor of Rome, 1: 128–30
 Caesar, Julius, 2: 335–38
 Caligula, 2: 338–40
 Catherine the Great, 3: 401–4
 Charlemagne, 3: 424–27
 Genghis Khan, 5: 784–86
 Hirohito, Emperor of Japan, 5: 904–7
 Kublai Khan, 6: 1109–12
 Marcus Aurelius Antoninus, 7: 1236–38
 Napoleon Bonaparte, 7: 1376–79
 Selassie, Haile, 9: 1696–98
The Empire Strikes Back (film), 6: 1177
 Encyclicals, 6: 1014–15
Encyclopédie (Diderot), 4: 606–7
Endeavor (space shuttle), 6: 998–99
 Endocrinology, pediatric, 4: 663
Endymion: A Poetic Romance (Keats), 6: 1055
 Engels, Friedrich, 7: 1248; 9: 1744
 Engineers
 Jemison, Mae C., 6: 997–99

- Kettering, Charles F., 6: 1078–80
Leonardo da Vinci, 6: 1136–39
Toyoda, Eiji, 10: 1832–34
Wang, An, 10: 1900–1902
Watt, James, 10: 1910–13
- England, 1: 19, 86–87; 2: 232–34; 3: 399–401, 427–30, 472–75, 529–32; 4: 597–600, 672–75, 675–78; 732–34; 5: 880–83; 7: 1250, 1252; 10: 1869–72
- English literature
Austen, Jane, 1: 132–35
Brontë, Charlotte, 2: 283–84
Brontë, Emily, 2: 284–86
Browning, Elizabeth Barrett, 2: 299–302
Browning, Robert, 2: 302–5
Byron, George Gordon Noel, 2: 331–33
Chaucer, Geoffrey, 3: 433–35
Coleridge, Samuel Taylor, 3: 496–98
Conrad, Joseph, 3: 508–10
Dahl, Roald, 3: 543–46
Defoe, Daniel, 4: 574–76
Eliot, George, 4: 665–68
Eliot, T. S., 4: 670–71
Golding, William, 5: 800–801
Greene, Graham, 5: 831–33
Hardy, Thomas, 5: 857–59
Johnson, Samuel, 6: 1023–24
Joyce, James, 6: 1038–39
Keats, John, 6: 1054–56
Kipling, Rudyard, 6: 1101–3
Milton, John, 7: 1313–16
Orwell, George, 8: 1430–32
Pope, Alexander, 8: 1502–5
Shakespeare, William, 9: 1702–6
Shaw, George Bernard, 9: 1706–8
Shelley, Mary Wollstonecraft, 9: 1708–11
Shelley, Percy, 9: 1711–14
Stevenson, Robert Louis, 9: 1757–59
Stoker, Bram, 9: 1759–61
Stoppard, Tom, 9: 1764–66
Tennyson, Alfred, Lord, 10: 1795–98
Thackeray, William Makepeace, 10: 1801–4
Tolkien, J. R. R., 10: 1824–26
Wilde, Oscar, 10: 1940–42
Woolf, Virginia, 10: 1962–65
Wordsworth, William, 10: 1965–68
- Engravers
Blake, William, 2: 234–37
Revere, Paul, 8: 1574–75
- Enlightenment (Western culture)
Diderot, Denis, 4: 606–8
Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 732
Montesquieu, 7: 1329–31
Rousseau, Jean Jacques, 9: 1636–38
- Enlightenment (Buddhist), 2: 310–11
“The Enormous Radio” (Cheever), 3: 447–48
Enter the Dragon (film), 6: 1125
- Entrepreneurs
Gordy, Berry, Jr., 5: 813–15
Hughes, Howard, 5: 951–54
Jobs, Steve, 6: 1007–10
Murdoch, Rupert, 7: 1364–66
“Environmental racism,” 3: 446
- Environmentalists
Carson, Rachel, 3: 377–79
Chavis Muhammad, Benjamin, 3: 446
Cousteau, Jacques, 3: 522
Gore, Al, 5: 817
- Ephemerides, 1: 166–68
Ephialtes, 8: 1473
Epics, 5: 926–28
Epilepsy, 4: 722
Epitome astronomiae Copernicanae (Kepler), 6: 1076
Epstein, Brian, 2: 182
Equal Rights Amendment (ERA), 4: 740
Equality, racial. *See* Civil rights movement activists and participants
- Erasmus, Desiderius**, 4: 683–86, 685 (ill.)
“Erie (Railroad) War,” 5: 819–20
Erlkönig (Schubert), 9: 1685
Escape artists, 5: 943–46
Essay Concerning Human Understanding (Locke), 6: 1167–68
Essay on Conics (Pascal), 8: 1448
An Essay on Man (Pope), 8: 1505
- Essayists
Arendt, Hannah, 1: 92–93
Bellow, Saul, 2: 202–4
Camus, Albert, 2: 349–51
Capote, Truman, 2: 355
Defoe, Daniel, 4: 574–76
Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 4: 682
Gould, Stephen Jay, 5: 823
Hamilton, Alexander, 5: 847
hooks, bell, 5: 931
Johnson, Samuel, 6: 1023–24
Lewis, C. S., 6: 1139–41
Mailer, Norman, 7: 1205–8
Mamet, David Alan, 7: 1214
Mill, John Stuart, 7: 1301–3
Orwell, George, 8: 1430–32
Thoreau, Henry David, 10: 1813–16
Vidal, Gore, 10: 1873–74
White, E. B., 10: 1932–34
Woolf, Virginia, 10: 1961–62
- Estates General, 7: 1239; 9: 1599
E.T.: The Extra-Terrestrial (film), 9: 1739
Etching, illuminated, 2: 235–36

Ethiopia, 9: 1696–98
 Etiquette, 8: 1509–11
Etiquette—The Blue Book of Social Usage (Post), 8: 1510
Euclid, 1: 90–91; 4: **686–88**, 687 (ill.)
Eugene Onegin (Pushkin), 8: 1536–37
The Eumenides (Aeschylus), 1: 30
 “Eureka!” (Archimedes), 1: 89
Euripides, 4: **688–90**, 689 (ill.)
 Europe (American Revolution), 1: 14
 Europe (World War II), 4: 658
 European Union, 2: 234
Eva Luna (Allende), 1: 53–54
Evangeline (Longfellow), 6: 1172
Evangelism Vitaeor (Gospel of Life) (John Paul II), 6: 1015
 Evangelists
 Booth, William, 2: 250–52
 McPherson, Aimee Semple, 7: 1275–77
 Evans, Mary Ann. *See* Eliot, George
 “Eve of St. Agnes” (Keats), 6: 1055–56
 Event horizon, 5: 861
Evers, Medgar, 4: **690–93**, 692 (ill.)
Every Good Boy Deserves Favor (Stoppard), 9: 1766
Every Man in His Humour (Jonson), 6: 1033
Evita (musical), 6: 1162; 7: 1200; 8: 1476–77
 Evolution
 Darwin, Charles, 3: 555–56
 Gould, Stephen Jay, 5: 821–24
 Scopes trial, 3: 553
 Executive Order 8802 (U.S.), 8: 1554
 Exobiology, 9: 1661
Expensive People (Oates), 8: 1414
Experiments and Observations on the Gastric Juice and the Physiology of Digestion (Beaumont), 2: 187
 “Experiments on Rathbone-Place Water” (Cavendish), 3: 405
 Explorers
 Boone, Daniel, 2: 246–48
 Cousteau, Jacques, 3: 521–23
 de Soto, Hernando, 4: 592–94
 Drake, Francis, 4: 632–34
 Heyerdahl, Thor, 5: 895–97
 Hillary, Edmund, 5: 898–900
 Magellan, Ferdinand, 7: 1201–3
 Muir, John, 7: 1360–62
 Polo, Marco, 8: 1498–1500
 Ponce de León, Juan, 8: 1501–2
 Raleigh, Walter, 8: 1547–50
 Vespucci, Amerigo, 10: 1867–69
 Explosives
 du Pont family, 4: 638
 Nobel, Alfred, 8: 1397–98
 Extroversion, 6: 1044

F

Fabian Society, 9: 1707
 Fabritius, Carel, 10: 1863
Fahrenheit, Gabriel Daniel, 4: **695–96**
 Fairfax County, Virginia, 10: 1907
 Fairy tales
 Andersen, Hans Christian, 1: 62–64
 Grimm, Jakob and Wilhelm (Brothers Grimm), 5: 837–38
Falconer (Cheever), 3: 448
The Family Moskat (Singer), 9: 1725
Family Pictures (Brooks), 2: 288
 Family planning, 9: 1673–75
 “Family therapy,” 1: 27
 Fanck, Arnold, 9: 1588
 Fard, W. D., 7: 1358
A Farewell to Arms (Hemingway), 5: 876
 Farm workers, 3: 436–38
Farmer, Fannie, 4: **696–98**, 698 (ill.)
Farrakhan, Louis, 4: **698–701**, 699 (ill.)
 Farrow, Mia, 1: 51
 Fascists
 Hitler, Adolf, 5: 909–12
 Mussolini, Benito, 7: 1367–68
 Fashion designers
 Claiborne, Liz, 3: 478–80
 Klein, Calvin, 6: 1107–9
 Lauren, Ralph, 6: 1117–19
 Fashion fads
 Castle, Irene, 3: 392
 Madonna, 7: 1199
 Fasting, 4: 760, 761
Fat Albert and the Cosby Kids (TV show), 3: 520
 Fatah, 1: 87, 88
Fatwa, 9: 1650
 Faubus, Orval, 4: 659
Faulkner, William, 4: **701–4**, 702 (ill.)
 Fauvism
 Matisse, Henri, 7: 1256–57
 Miró, Joan, 7: 1316
 al-Fayed, Dodi, 4: 600
 Federal Communications Commission, 5: 934–35
 Federal Theatre Project, 10: 1922
 Federal Trade Commission (FTC), 4: 614
 Federalist Party
 Adams, John, 1: 19
 Burr, Aaron, 2: 320–21
 Hamilton, Alexander, 5: 847, 848; 10: 1909
 Washington, George, 10: 1910
The Federalist (“Publius”), 5: 847
Feinstein, Dianne, 4: **704–7**, 705 (ill.)
Felix Holt (Eliot), 4: 667

- The Feminist Mystique* (Friedan), 4: 739–40
 Feminists. *See also* Women's movement
 Beauvoir, Simone de, 2: 187–89
 Friedan, Betty, 4: 738–41
 hooks, bell, 5: 932
 King, Billie Jean, 6: 1090
 Stanton, Elizabeth Cady, 9: 1747–49
 Wollstonecraft, Mary, 9: 1709
 Fermat, Pierre de, 8: 1449
 Fermentation, 8: 1451
Fermi, Enrico, 4: **707–10**, 709 (ill.)
 Fermi-Dirac statistics, 4: 708
Ferraro, Geraldine, 4: **710–13**, 711 (ill.)
 Fiction writers. *See* Novelists
 Fiesole, Fra Giovanni da. *See* Angelico, Fra
 Figure painters, 1: 143–45
 Film (camera), 4: 646–48
 Film choreography, 1: 116–17
 Film directors
 Angelou, Maya, 1: 73–75
 Bergman, Ingmar, 2: 206–8
 Capra, Frank, 2: 357–59
 Chaplin, Charlie, 3: 421–24
 Coppola, Francis Ford, 3: 515–18
 Davis, Ossie, 3: 561–62
 DeMille, Cecil B., 4: 585–86
 Eastwood, Clint, 4: 649–50
 Hitchcock, Alfred, 5: 907–9
 Lee, Bruce, 6: 1125
 Mamet, David Alan, 7: 1214–16
 Olivier, Laurence, 8: 1422–24
 Poitier, Sidney, 8: 1494–95
 Riefenstahl, Leni, 9: 1588–90
 Scorsese, Martin, 9: 1690–93
 Spielberg, Steven, 9: 1737–40
 Stone, Oliver, 9: 1761–64
 Streisand, Barbra, 9: 1778
 Welles, Orson, 10: 1922–24
 Film Foundation, 9: 1692
 Film music
 Berlin, Irving, 2: 210
 Jones, Quincy, 6: 1029–32
 Porter, Cole, 8: 1505–7
 Previn, André, 8: 1521
 Rodgers, Richard, 9: 1611–12
 Film producers
 DeMille, Cecil B., 4: 585–86
 Hughes, Howard, 5: 952
 Mamet, David Alan, 7: 1214–16
 Streisand, Barbra, 9: 1778
 Filmmakers
 Allen, Woody, 1: 49–52
 Capra, Frank, 2: 357–59
 Coppola, Francis Ford, 3: 515–18
 Disney, Walt, 4: 611–13
 Lee, Spike, 6: 1126–29
 Lucas, George, 6: 1175–78
 Finch, Linda, 4: 646
 Finley, Charles O., 6: 989, 990
Finnegans Wake (Joyce), 6: 1039
 First Continental Congress, 1: 13; 5: 884; 10: 1907
 First ladies
 Adams, Abigail, 1: 12–15
 Bush, Laura, 2: 329–31
 Clinton, Hillary Rodham, 3: 487–89
 Eisenhower, Mamie, 4: 661–62
 Madison, Dolley, 7: 1191–93
 Onassis, Jackie Kennedy, 8: 1425–27
 Perón, Eva, 8: 1474–77
 Roosevelt, Eleanor, 9: 1621–24
 First Triumvirate, 2: 336; 3: 476
 First Volunteer Cavalry, 9: 1629
Fischer, Bobby, 4: **713–15**, 714 (ill.)
Fists of Fury (film), 6: 1125
Fitzgerald, Ella, 4: **715–18**, 717 (ill.)
Fitzgerald, F. Scott, 4: **718–21**, 719 (ill.)
 Fitzgerald, Zelda, 4: 719, 720–21
 Fitzpatrick, Thomas, 3: 375
Five Weeks in a Balloon (Verne), 10: 1866
The Fixer (Malamud), 7: 1210
 Flagler, H. M., 9: 1604–5
 “Flagwavers” (jazz arrangements), 1: 178–79
Flaubert, Gustave, 4: **721–23**, 722 (ill.)
 “Float like a butterfly, and sting like a bee,” 1: 47
 Florida
 de Soto, Hernando, 4: 593
 Ponce de León, Juan, 8: 1501–2
 Reno, Janet, 8: 1569–70
 Fluoroscope, 4: 652–53
 Flying machines, 10: 1969–70
 Folies-Bergère, 1: 153
 Folk singers and folk music
 Baez, Joan, 1: 147–50
 Guthrie, Woody, 5: 838–41
 Folklore, 5: 960–62
Follies (musical), 9: 1733
 Food
 Child, Julia, 3: 459–61
 Farmer, Fannie, 4: 696–98
 Food supplements, 8: 1456
 Football players
 Montana, Joe, 7: 1327–29
 Robeson, Paul, 9: 1599
 Thorpe, Jim, 10: 1816–19
For Whom the Bell Tolls (Hemingway), 5: 877
Forbes, Malcolm, 4: **723–25**, 724 (ill.)

- Ford Foundation, 4: 728
- Ford, Henry**, 4: 725–29, 727 (ill.)
- Ford, John, 10: 1914
- Ford Motor Company, 2: 221–22; 4: 726–29; 5: 968
- Fordney-McCumber Tariff Bill (1922), 3: 385
- Foreign correspondents. *See also* Journalists and journalism
- Steinbeck, John, 9: 1756
- Foreign policy
- Albright, Madeleine, 1: 39
- Alexander II, Emperor of Russia, 1: 43
- Carter, Jimmy, 3: 382
- Eisenhower, Dwight D., 4: 660
- Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 996–97
- Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1019
- Khomeini, Ayatollah, 6: 1082–83
- Madison, James, 7: 1196–97
- Rice, Condoleezza, 9: 1580–82
- Richelieu, Armand-Jean du Plessis de, 9: 1584–85
- Roosevelt, Eleanor, 9: 1623
- Roosevelt, Franklin D., 9: 1627–28
- Roosevelt, Theodore, 9: 1630
- Tito, Marshal, 10: 1823
- Truman, Harry S., 10: 1836
- Wilson, Woodrow, 10: 1951–52
- Foreman, George, 1: 48
- Fort Laramie treaties (1851, 1868), 1: 57–58
- Fort Ticonderoga, New York, 1: 106
- Fortune* magazine, 2: 260
- Fossils, 6: 1122–23
- Foundation for the Advancement of Inmate Rehabilitation and Recreation (FAIRR), 6: 1088
- Foundation* series (Asimov), 1: 115
- Foundations
- American Foundation for AIDS Research (AmFAR), 10: 1792
- Arthur Ashe Foundation for the Defeat of AIDS, 1: 112–13
- Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation, 4: 772
- Film Foundation, 9: 1692
- Ford Foundation, 4: 728
- Foundation for the Advancement of Inmate Rehabilitation and Recreation (FAIRR), 6: 1088
- Rockefeller Foundation, 9: 1606
- Streisand Foundation, 9: 1779
- Tiger Woods Foundation, 10: 1962
- The Fountain of Age* (Friedan), 4: 741
- Fountain of Youth, 8: 1501
- The Four Freedoms (Rockwell), 9: 1609
- 4 Little Girls* (documentary), 6: 1128
- Four Quartets* (Eliot), 4: 671
- “Fourteen Points” (Wilson), 10: 1953
- Fox Television, 7: 1366
- Foxfire: Confessions of a Girl Gang* (Oates), 8: 1415
- Fragrances, 6: 1108–9
- “Frame of Government” (Penn), 8: 1471
- France, 1: 19; 4: 579–81, 734; 5: 913; 6: 1005–7, 1051, 1113–15; 7: 1238–40, 1249–52, 1376–79. *See also* French and Indian War; French Resistance; French Revolution
- Francis I, King of France, 6: 1138
- Francis II, King of France, 7: 1250
- Francis of Assisi**, 4: 729–31, 730 (ill.)
- Franciscans (religious order), 1: 146–47; 4: 730–31
- Franco, Francisco, 3: 388; 7: 1369
- Franco-Prussian War
- Barton, Clara, 1: 176–77
- Howe, Julia Ward, 5: 950
- Nietzsche, Friedrich, 8: 1389
- Pasteur, Louis, 8: 1452
- Frankenstein, or the Modern Prometheus* (Shelley), 9: 1709–10
- Franklin, Benjamin**, 4: 731–35, 733 (ill.)
- Franny and Zooey* (Salinger), 9: 1666
- Frazier, Joe, 1: 48
- Frederick II of Prussia, 10: 1880–81
- Frederick, Crown Prince of Sweden, 1: 142
- Freedom of Information Act (1974), 1: 9
- Freedom of religion, 2: 316–17
- Freedom of serfs, 1: 42
- Freedom of speech, 5: 925
- Freedom riders, 3: 365; 6: 1096
- Freedom Walk (Detroit, Michigan), 6: 1096
- Frémont, John C., 3: 376
- French and Indian War
- Arnold, Benedict, 1: 106
- Boone, Daniel, 2: 247
- Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 732–33
- Washington, George, 10: 1906–7
- The French Chef* (TV show), 3: 460–61
- French impressionists. *See* Impressionists
- French literature
- Balzac, Honoré de, 1: 164–66
- Camus, Albert, 2: 349–51
- Flaubert, Gustave, 4: 721–23
- Hugo, Victor, 5: 957–60
- Molière, 7: 1318–20
- Montesquieu, 7: 1329–31
- Sand, George, 9: 1669–71
- Sartre, Jean-Paul, 9: 1676–78
- Verne, Jules, 10: 1864–67
- Voltaire, 10: 1879–81
- French Resistance
- Baker, Josephine, 1: 154

Barbie, Klaus, 1: 171
 Beckett, Samuel, 2: 190
 Camus, Albert, 2: 350–51
 Cousteau, Jacques, 3: 522
 Sartre, Jean-Paul, 9: 1676–77
 French Revolution, 1: 19
 Lafayette, Marquis de, 6: 1114
 Marie Antoinette, 7: 1238–40
 Napoleon Bonaparte, 7: 1377–78
 Robespierre, Maximilien, 9: 1599–1601
 Frescoes
 Angelico, Fra, 1: 72
 Botticelli, Sandro, 2: 258
 Rivera, Diego, 9: 1595
Freud, Sigmund, 1: 27; 4: 735–38, 737 (ill.)
 Frick, H. C., 3: 367–69
Friedan, Betty, 4: 738–41, 739 (ill.)
Frogs (Aristophanes), 1: 97
From the Earth to the Moon (Verne), 10: 1866
 Frontiersmen
 Boone, Daniel, 2: 246–48
 Carson, Kit, 3: 374–77
 Crockett, Davy, 3: 527–29
Frost, Robert, 4: 741–44, 742 (ill.)
 Fuchs, Vivian, 5: 899
 Fugitive Slave Law (1850), 10: 1842
 Fungal disease, 2: 297–99
Funny Girl (musical), 9: 1777
A Funny Thing Happened on the Way to the Forum
 (musical), 9: 1732–33
 Fur trade, 1: 118–20
 “The Future of Culture” (Curie), 3: 540
 Future predictions, 8: 1406–9

G

Gachet, Paul, 10: 1862
 Gaddafi, Muammar. *See* Qadhafi, Mu’ammar al-Gagarin, Yuri, 10: 1799
 Gaius Julius Caesar. *See* Caesar, Julius
 Gaius Julius Caesar Germanicus. *See* Caligula
 Gaius Octavius. *See* Augustus
 Galapagos Islands, 5: 896–97
Galbraith, John Kenneth, 4: 745–48, 746 (ill.)
Galen, 4: 748–50, 749 (ill.); 8: 1444
Galileo, 4: 591, 750–52, 751 (ill.)
Gallup, George, 4: 753–54, 754 (ill.)
 Gamble, James M., 2: 217
 Gamelan (Javanese instrument), 4: 570
Gandhi, Indira, 4: 754–57, 756 (ill.)
Gandhi, Mohandas, 4: 755, 758–61, 759 (ill.)
 “Gang of Four,” 4: 588

García Márquez, Gabriel, 4: 762–64, 763 (ill.)
 Gardner, Alexander, 2: 269–70
Garland, Judy, 4: 764–66, 765 (ill.); 6: 1059
 Garrett, Elizabeth. *See* Anderson, Elizabeth Garrett
 Garrett, Pat, 2: 223
 Garrett, Richard, 2: 250
Garvey, Marcus, 4: 767–69, 768 (ill.); 7: 1211
 Gases and liquids, 8: 1449
Gates, Bill, 4: 769–72, 771 (ill.)
Gates of Hell (Rodin), 9: 1614
Gather Together in My Name (Angelou), 1: 74
Gattamelata (Donatello), 4: 620–21
Gauguin, Paul, 4: 773–75, 774 (ill.); 10: 1861
 Gaul, 2: 336–37
Gauss, Karl Friedrich, 4: 775–77, 776 (ill.)
 Gaussian law of error (normal distribution), 4: 777
 Gautama, Siddhartha. *See* Buddha
The Gay Divorcee (film), 1: 116
 Gay rights
 Baez, Joan, 1: 150
 Milk, Harvey, 7: 1298–1301
 Gaza Strip, 1: 88
Geiger, Hans, 5: 779–81, 780 (ill.)
 Geiger-Mueller counter, 5: 780–81
Geisel, Theodor (Dr. Seuss), 5: 781–83, 782 (ill.)
Gemini spacecraft, 1: 104
 Gender discrimination
 Ginsburg, Ruth Bader, 5: 794, 795–96
 O’Connor, Sandra Day, 8: 1418, 1419
 Rice, Condoleezza, 9: 1582
 General Motors, 2: 220–21; 4: 728
 du Pont, Pierre, 4: 639
 Kettering, Charles F., 6: 1079–80
 Nader, Ralph, 7: 1375
 “General Natural History and Theory of the
 Heavens” (Kant), 6: 1052
 Generals
 Caesar, Julius, 2: 335–38
 Cromwell, Oliver, 3: 530–31
 De Gaulle, Charles, 4: 579–81
 Eisenhower, Dwight D., 4: 657–60
 Lafayette, Marquis de, 6: 1113–15
 MacArthur, Douglas, 7: 1185–88
 Mark Antony, 7: 1240–43
 Ptolemy I, 8: 1528–31
 Genet, Edmond, 10: 1909
 Geneva Convention, 1: 177
Genghis Khan, 5: 784–86, 785 (ill.)
 Geology, 5: 821–24
 Geometry, 1: 90–91; 4: 687
 Gauss, Karl Friedrich, 4: 777
 Pascal, Blaise, 8: 1447–48
 George I, King of England, 5: 855

- George magazine, 6: 1071
- Georgia
- Bond, Julian, 2: 245–46
 - Carter, Jimmy, 3: 381
- The Georgics* (Virgil), 10: 1876
- Germ theory
- Lister, Joseph, 6: 1160
 - Pasteur, Louis, 1: 1450–53
- German art songs (lieder), 9: 1684–87
- German language, 5: 838
- German Requiem* (Brahms), 2: 272
- German Workers' Party, 7: 1248
- Germany, 1: 170–73; 5: 909–12; 6: 1051; 7: 1246–49; 9: 1678–81
- Germany Workers Party. *See* Nazi Party
- Get on the Bus* (film), 6: 1128
- Getty, J. Paul**, 5: 786–87, 787 (ill.)
- Gettysburg Address (Lincoln), 6: 1153
- Ghost* (film), 5: 799
- Giant* (film), 4: 568, 569
- Gibran, Kahlil**, 5: 788–90, 789 (ill.)
- Gibson, Althea**, 5: 790–91, 791 (ill.)
- "The Gift Outright" (Frost), 4: 744
- Gigi* (musical), 5: 887
- Gilbert, Humphrey, 8: 1548
- Gillespie, Dizzy**, 5: 792–94, 793 (ill.); 8: 1446
- Gimpel, the Fool, and Other Stories* (Singer), 9: 1725
- Ginsburg, Ruth Bader**, 5: 794–96, 795 (ill.)
- Giovanni da Fiesole, Fra. *See* Angelico, Fra
- Girl Asleep at a Table* (Vermeer), 10: 1864
- Girondins, 9: 1600
- "Give me liberty or give me death!" 5: 884
- Gladiators, 4: 749
- Gladstone, William, 10: 1871
- Glass family (literary characters), 9: 1664–65
- The Glass Menagerie* (Williams), 10: 1949
- Glengarry Glen Ross* (Mamet), 7: 1215
- "Gloomy Sunday" (song), 5: 919
- Gnosticism, 6: 1045
- Go Quietly or Else* (Agnew), 1: 33
- Go Tell It on the Mountain* (Baldwin), 1: 158
- God. *See also* Religious leaders
- Aristotle, 1: 100
 - Calvin, John, 2: 345
 - Garvey, Marcus, 4: 769
 - Luther, Martin, 6: 1182–83
 - Moses, 7: 1343–45
 - Muhammad, 7: 1357
 - Truth, Sojourner, 10: 1842
- The Godfather* (film), 3: 517
- God's Grace* (Malamud), 7: 1210
- Godwin, William, 9: 1709
- Goeth, Amon, 9: 1680
- Goethe, Johann Wolfgang von, 9: 1685
- Gold, 5: 820
- Goldberg, Whoopi**, 5: 797–99, 798 (ill.)
- The Golden Apples* (Welty), 10: 1926
- Golden Hind* (ship), 4: 633
- Golding, William**, 5: 800 (ill.), 800–801
- Goldman, Charley, 7: 1231
- Golfers
- Palmer, Arnold, 8: 1441–43
 - Woods, Tiger, 10: 1960–62
- Gombe National Park, 5: 805
- Gompers, Samuel**, 5: 801–4, 803 (ill.)
- Gone with the Wind*, 7: 1267–70
- Gonne, Maud, 10: 1980–81
- Gonzalez, Elian, 3: 396; 8: 1571
- The Good Earth* (Buck), 2: 309
- Good manners, 8: 1509–11
- Good Master of the Name of God.
- See* Baal Shem Tov
- Goodall, Jane**, 5: 804–7, 805 (ill.)
- Goodman, Benny**, 5: 807–9, 808 (ill.)
- Goodwin, Hannibal, 4: 647
- Gorbachev, Mikhail**, 5: 809–12, 810 (ill.); 10: 1983–84
- Gordian Knot, 1: 45
- Gordy, Berry, Jr.**, 5: 813–15, 814 (ill.); 6: 987; 9: 1632
- Gore, Al**, 2: 328–29; 5: 816–18, 817 (ill.)
- The Gospel According to the Son* (Mailer), 7: 1208
- Gospel music, 6: 1086–87
- Gospel of Life (*Evangelism Vitaeor*) (John Paul II), 6: 1015
- Gospels, 6: 1000–1001
- Gothic vampire story, 9: 1760
- Gould, Jay**, 5: 818–21, 819 (ill.)
- Gould, Stephen Jay**, 5: 821–24, 822 (ill.)
- Government officials and agents
- Bennett, William, 2: 204–6
 - Boone, Daniel, 2: 248
 - Cervantes, Miguel de, 3: 410
 - Cheney, Dick, 3: 452–53
 - Defoe, Daniel, 4: 574–76
 - Dole, Elizabeth, 4: 613–16
 - Elders, Joycelyn, 4: 663–65
 - Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 731–35
 - Galbraith, John Kenneth, 4: 746
 - Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1104–7
 - Newton, Isaac, 7: 1385
 - Powell, Colin, 8: 1512–13
 - Rice, Condoleezza, 9: 1580–83
 - Rousseau, Jean Jacques, 9: 1636–37
 - Rowan, Carl, 9: 1639–40
 - Yeltsin, Boris, 10: 1982–85

Governors

- Agnew, Spiro, 1: 32
Aquino, Benigno, 1: 85
Bush, George W., 2: 328
Carter, Jimmy, 3: 379–83
Clinton, Bill, 3: 483–86
Hancock, John, 5: 852–54
Henry, Patrick, 5: 885
Juárez, Benito, 6: 1041
Reagan, Ronald, 8: 1558–59
Roosevelt, Franklin D., 9: 1626
Roosevelt, Theodore, 9: 1629
Wilson, Woodrow, 10: 1951
- Graceland (Memphis, Tennessee), 8: 1519
Graham, Katharine, 5: 824–26, 825 (ill.)
Graham, Martha, 5: 827–29, 828 (ill.); 8: 1399
Graham, Philip L., 5: 824–25
Grand Hyatt Hotel (New York City), 10: 1839
Grant, Cary, 5: 829–31, 830 (ill.)
Granz, Norman, 4: 716
The Grapes of Wrath (Steinbeck), 9: 1756
- Graphic artists
Kandinsky, Wassily, 6: 1050–51
Munch, Edvard, 7: 1362–64
- Gravitation, 3: 404–7
Gravity, 7: 1382–86
Gray, Cordelia (literary character), 6: 993
Gray, Elisha, 2: 198
Gray, Frizzell. *See* Mfume, Kweisi
Great Britain. *See* England; Ireland; Northern Ireland; Scotland
- Great Depression
Apgar, Virginia, 1: 82
Bourke-White, Margaret, 2: 260
Capone, Al, 2: 353–54
Guthrie, Woody, 5: 839
Hooks, Benjamin, 5: 933
Howe, Gordie, 5: 947
Jones, James Earl, 6: 1027
Kelly, Gene, 6: 1059
Malcolm X, 7: 1211
McDaniel, Hattie, 7: 1268
Rogers, Will, 9: 1616–17
Roosevelt, Eleanor, 9: 1623
Roosevelt, Franklin D., 9: 1626–27
Smith, Bessie, 9: 1728
Vonnegut, Kurt, 10: 1884
- Great Expectations* (Dickens), 4: 603
The Great Gatsby (Fitzgerald), 4: 720
Great Leap Forward (China, 1958), 7: 1229
Great Proletarian Cultural Revolution (GPCR). *See* Cultural Revolution (China)
“Great Society,” 6: 1018
- Great Trek (South Africa), 4: 582
The Great White Hope (play), 6: 1028
Greek comedy, 1: 96–98
Greek geometry, 1: 90–91; 4: 776
Greek medicine, 5: 902–4
Greek states, 1: 44, 45
Greek tragedy
Aeschylus, 1: 29
Euripides, 4: 688–90
Nietzsche, Friedrich, 8: 1388
- The Green Berets* (film), 10: 1915
Green Book (Qadhafi), 8: 1545
The Green Hornet (TV show), 6: 1124
Green Party, 7: 1376
Greene, Graham, 5: 831–33, 832 (ill.)
“Greenhouse effect,” 9: 1661
Greensboro, North Carolina, 6: 1095
The Gremlins (Dahl), 3: 544
Grenville, Richard, 8: 1549
Gretzky, Wayne, 5: 833–36, 834 (ill.)
Grimm, Jakob and Wilhelm (Brothers Grimm), 5: 836–38, 837 (ill.)
Grimm’s law, 5: 838
Grimus (Rushdie), 9: 1649
Griot movement (1930s), 4: 640
The Ground Beneath Her Feet (Rushdie), 9: 1651
Groundswell, Ohio State University (Lin), 6: 1150
Groupil and Company, 10: 1860
Guatemala, 7: 1286–89
Guernica (Picasso), 8: 1482
Guerrillero (Rivera), 9: 1594
Guess, George. *See* Sequoyah
Guess Who’s Coming to Dinner (film), 8: 1494
Guido di Pietro. *See* Angelico, Fra
Guillain-Barré syndrome, 5: 872
- Guitarists
Hendrix, Jimi, 5: 878–80
King, B. B., 6: 1086–89
Gunfighters, 2: 223–24
Guthrie, Woody, 5: 838–41, 840 (ill.)

H

- Haig, Alexander M., 1: 33
Hair care products, 10: 1895
Haiti, 1: 93–96; 4: 640–42
Haley, Alex, 5: 843–46, 844 (ill.)
Halley, Edmund, 7: 1384
Hamilton, Alexander, 5: 846–49, 847 (ill.); 10: 1908–9
Hamilton, Charles V., 3: 365
Hamilton, Clive. *See* Lewis, C. S.

- Hamilton, Ian, 9: 1667
- Hammerstein, Oscar**, 5: 849–51, 850 (ill.); 9: 1611, 1732
- Hampton Institute (Virginia), 10: 1903–4
- Hampton, Lionel, 5: 808
- Hancock, John**, 5: 852–54, 853 (ill.)
- Handel, George Frideric**, 5: 854–57, 855 (ill.)
- Hanska, Madame, 1: 166
- Hapsburg Empire, 9: 1584
- A Hard Day's Night* (film), 2: 183
- A Hard Road to Glory: A History of the African-American Athlete* (Ashe), 1: 112
- Hardy, Thomas**, 5: 857–59, 858 (ill.)
- Harkness, S. V., 9: 1604–5
- Harlem Globetrotters, 3: 417
- Harlem Renaissance, 5: 954–57
- Harmonice mundi* (Kepler), 6: 1076
- Haroun and the Sea of Stories* (Rushdie), 9: 1651
- Harper, Ida Husted, 1: 81
- Harpers Ferry, Virginia, 2: 295–96; 4: 628
- Harris v. New York* (1971), 2: 316
- Harrison, George, 2: 181–85
- Harry Potter and the Philosopher's Stone* (Rowling), 9: 1642–43
- Hart, Lorenz, 9: 1610–11
- Hartford Whalers, 5: 948
- Harvard College/University
 - Brandeis, Louis, 2: 275–76
 - Hancock, John, 5: 853
 - Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 5: 921
 - Mather, Cotton, 7: 1253
 - Schlesinger, Arthur, Jr., 9: 1682
- Hasidism, 1: 137–39
- Haskell, Mary Elizabeth, 5: 788
- Hasmonean dynasty, 5: 891, 892
- Hastings, Captain (literary character), 3: 469–70
- Hausa tribe (Northern Nigeria), 1: 10
- Hawking, Stephen**, 5: 860–62, 861 (ill.)
- Hawkins, John, 4: 632–34
- Hawthorne, Nathaniel**, 5: 862–65, 863 (ill.)
- Haydn, Joseph, 2: 192
- Hayley, William, 2: 236
- Hayne, Robert Y., 10: 1917
- Hays Office, 4: 586
- Haywood, William D. “Big Bill,” 3: 552
- Hazen, Elizabeth, 2: 297–99
- Head of Baudelaire* (Rodin), 9: 1614
- Head of state. *See* specific position or title, e.g., President, Queen
- “Heads” (jazz arrangements), 1: 178–79
- Healers, 1: 138
- Health Insurance and Portability Act (1996), 6: 1063
- Hearst, Patty, 1: 151
- Hearst, William Randolph**, 5: 865–68, 866 (ill.); 8: 1532
- The Heart of a Woman* (Angelou), 1: 74
- Heart transplants, 1: 173–75
- Heat, 3: 406
- Hébertists, 9: 1600–1601
- Hebsed (Egyptian jubilee festival), 5: 973–74
- Heisenberg, Werner**, 5: 868–70, 869 (ill.)
- Heliocentric system, 3: 511–12; 4: 591
- “Hellas” (Shelley), 9: 1713
- Hellenization, 5: 892
- Heller, Joseph**, 5: 870–72, 871 (ill.)
- Hellman, Lillian**, 5: 872–74, 874 (ill.)
- Help* (film), 2: 183
- Hemingway, Ernest**, 5: 875–77, 876 (ill.)
- Hendrix, Jimi**, 5: 878–80, 879 (ill.)
- Henry II, King of France, 7: 1281–82; 8: 1408
- Henry III, King of France, 7: 1283
- Henry V, King of England, 6: 1005
- Henry VI, King of England, 6: 1005–6
- Henry VIII**, King of England, 3: 399–401; 5: 880–83, 881 (ill.); 7: 1334–36
- Henry of Navarre, 7: 1282, 1283
- Henry, Patrick**, 5: 883–86, 884 (ill.)
- Hepburn, Audrey**, 5: 886–88, 887 (ill.)
- Hepburn, Katharine**, 5: 888–90, 889 (ill.)
- Hernani* (Hugo), 5: 958
- Herod the Great**, 5: 891–93, 892 (ill.)
- Herschel, Caroline, 5: 893, 894
- Herschel, William**, 5: 893–95, 894 (ill.)
- Herut (Freedom) Party (Israel), 2: 195
- Herzog* (Bellow), 2: 203
- Hess, V. E., 1: 66
- Hewlett-Packard, 6: 1008
- Heyerdahl, Thor**, 5: 895–97, 896 (ill.)
- Hieron, King of Syracuse, 1: 89
- Higginson, T. W., 4: 605
- Higher Criticism (German school), 4: 666
- Hijra, 7: 1356
- Hill, Anita, 10: 1809
- Hill, Teddy, 5: 792
- Hillary, Edmund**, 5: 898–900, 899 (ill.)
- Himalaya Mountains, 5: 898–99, 900
- Hinckley, John, 8: 1559
- “Hindoo Needle Trick,” 5: 944
- Hindus, 4: 755, 761; 8: 1550
- Hines, Earl “Fatha,” 5: 792–93
- Hinton, S. E.**, 5: 900–902, 901 (ill.)
- Hippocrates**, 5: 902–4
- Hippocratic Corpus* (Hippocrates), 5: 903–4
- Hirohito**, Emperor of Japan, 5: 904–7, 905 (ill.)
- Hispaniola, 8: 1501

- Histadruth, 7: 1284, 1285
- Historians
 Mather, Cotton, 7: 1252–55
 Schlesinger, Arthur, Jr., 9: 1681–84
 Tu Fu, 10: 1843–45
- Historical plays, 4: 634, 635
- History of Florence* (Machiavelli), 7: 1190–91
- The History of Henry Esmond* (Thackeray), 10: 1803
- A History of New York, from the Beginning of the World to the End of the Dutch Dynasty* (Irving), 5: 976
- History of the Peloponnesian Wars* (Thucydides), 5: 916
- History of Woman Suffrage* (Anthony), 1: 81
- History of Women's Suffrage* (Gage and Stanton), 9: 1749
- History plays, 9: 1703–4, 1705
- Hitchcock, Alfred**, 5: 831, **907–9**, 908 (ill.)
- Hitler, Adolf**, 3: 423; 5: 781, **909–12**, 911 (ill.); 7: 1369; 8: 1436; 9: 1589, 1627, 1678–79, 1751
- HIV. See Human immunodeficiency virus (HIV)
- H.M.S. *Beagle*, 3: 554–55
- Ho Chi Minh**, 5: **912–15**, 914 (ill.)
- Hobbes, Thomas**, 5: **915–18**, 916 (ill.)
- The Hobbit* (Tolkien), 10: 1825
- Hockey players
 Gretzky, Wayne, 5: 833–36
 Howe, Gordie, 5: 946–49
- Holiday, Billie**, 5: **918–20**, 919 (ill.)
- Holmes, Oliver Wendell**, 5: **920–23**, 921 (ill.)
- Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr.**, 2: 277; 5: **923–25**, 924 (ill.)
- Holmes, Sherlock (literary character), 4: 629–30
- Holocaust, 5: 911
 Barbie, Klaus, 1: 171
 John Paul II, 6: 1015–16
 Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40
- Holy Roman Empire, 3: 426–27
- Homer**, 1: 29; 5: **926–28**, 927 (ill.); 8: 1504
- Homestead Act (1862), 1: 57
- Homestead Mill Strike (1892), 3: 368–69
- Hominids, 6: 1123
- Homo habilis*, 6: 1123
- Homosexuality
 Cheever, John, 3: 448
 Milk, Harvey, 7: 1298–1301
 Wilde, Oscar, 10: 1942
- Honda Motor Company, 5: 929
- Honda, Soichiro**, 5: **929–30**, 930 (ill.)
- Honey and Salt* (Sandburg), 9: 1673
- Hooks, bell**, 5: **931–33**, 932 (ill.)
- Hooks, Benjamin**, 5: **933–36**, 934 (ill.)
- Hoover, Herbert, 2: 353
- “Hoovervilles,” 5: 840
- Hope, Bob**, 5: **936–38**, 937 (ill.)
- Hopkins, Anthony**, 5: **938–40**, 940 (ill.)
- Horace Mann School for the Deaf (Boston, Massachusetts), 6: 1057
- Horne, Lena**, 2: 268; 5: **940–43**, 941 (ill.)
- Horror fiction, 6: 1098–1100
- Horton, Lester, 1: 34
- Houdini, Harry**, 5: **943–46**, 945 (ill.)
- Hours of Idleness* (Byron), 2: 332
- House of Commons (England), 3: 473
- The House of Mirth* (Wharton), 10: 1929
- House of Representatives (U.S.). See Congressmen and congresswomen
- The House of the Spirits* (Allende), 1: 53
- House Unamerican Activities Committee
 Hellman, Lillian, 5: 874
 Miller, Arthur, 7: 1307
 Nixon, Richard, 8: 1393–94
- “Householders” (Buddhism), 2: 312
- Houseman, John, 10: 1922
- Houston Aeros, 5: 948
- Houston Astros, 9: 1655
- How Stella Got Her Groove Back* (McMillan), 7: 1275
- How the Garcia Girls Lost Their Accents* (Alvarez), 1: 56
- Howard, Catherine, 5: 882
- Howe, Gordie**, 5: **946–49**, 948 (ill.)
- Howe, Julia Ward**, 5: **949–51**, 950 (ill.)
- Howells, William Dean, 4: 636
- Huckleberry Finn* (Twain), 10: 1851
- al-Hudaybiya, treaty of, 7: 1356
- Hudson River Valley, 5: 975–76
- Hughes Aircraft Company, 5: 952–53
- Hughes, Howard**, 5: **951–54**, 953 (ill.)
- Hughes, Langston**, 5: **954–57**, 955 (ill.)
- Hugo, Victor**, 5: **957–60**, 959 (ill.)
- Huguenots, 9: 1584
- Hull House, 1: 26
- Human behavior, 1: 27–28
- The Human Comedy* (La Comédie humaine) (Balzac), 1: 164
- The Human Condition* (Arendt), 1: 92
- Human immunodeficiency virus (HIV)
 Ashe, Arthur, 1: 112–13
 Johnson, Magic, 6: 1021, 1022
- Human rights activists
 Aung San Suu Kyi, 1: 130–32
 Baez, Joan, 1: 147–50
 Carter, Jimmy, 3: 382
 Chávez, César, 3: 436–38
 Evers, Medgar, 4: 690–93
 Menchú, Rigoberta, 7: 1286–89
 Sakharov, Andrei, 9: 1664

- Human rights violations
 Amin, Idi, 1: 59–62
 Haiti, 1: 94
 Hitler, Adolf, 5: 909–12
 Pol Pot, 8: 1495–98
- Humanists
 Erasmus, Desiderius, 4: 683–86
 More, Thomas, 7: 1334–36
- Humanitarians. *See also* Charitable work;
 Philanthropists
 Barton, Clara, 1: 175–77
 Booth, William, 2: 250–52
 Buck, Pearl S., 2: 309
 Carter, Jimmy, 3: 379–83
 Diana, Princess of Wales, 4: 597–600
 Goldberg, Whoopi, 5: 798
 Hepburn, Audrey, 5: 886–88
 John, Elton, 6: 1011–12
 Nobel, Alfred, 8: 1397–98
 Taylor, Elizabeth, 10: 1792
 Tutu, Desmond, 10: 1849
 Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1940
- Humanitas International Human Rights
 Committee, 1: 149
- Hume, David, 9: 1638
- Humorists. *See also* Comedians
 Rogers, Will, 9: 1615–17
 Thurber, James, 10: 1819–20
 Twain, Mark, 10: 1850–52
- Hundred Years War, 6: 1005–7
- Hunt, John, 5: 898–99
- Hurston, Zora Neale**, 5: 960–62, 961 (ill.)
- Hussein, King of Jordan, 1: 87, 88
- Hussein, Saddam**, 1: 78–79; 5: 962–65, 964 (ill.);
 8: 1513
- al-Husseini, Abdel-Rahman Abdel-Raouf Arafat al-
 Qudwa. *See* Arafat, Yasir
- Husserl, Edmund, 9: 1750
- Hydrogen, 3: 405
- Hyperion* (Keats), 6: 1055
- Hysteria, 4: 736–37
- I**
- “I Am the People, the Mob” (Sandburg), 9: 1672–73
- I Can Get It for You Wholesale* (musical), 9: 1776–77
- I Know Why the Caged Bird Sings* (Angelou), 1: 74
- I Love Lucy* (TV show), 1: 161
- I Spy* (TV series), 3: 520
- Iacocca, Lee**, 5: 967–70, 969 (ill.)
- iBook computer, 6: 1010
- Ibsen, Henrik**, 5: 970–72, 971 (ill.)
- ICP. *See* Indochinese Communist Party (ICP)
- Ides of March, 2: 338
- Idris, King of Libya, 8: 1544
- The Idylls of the King* (Tennyson), 10: 1797
- Igbo tribe, 1: 10–11
- Ignition systems (automobile), 6: 1079
- Iliad* (Homer), 5: 926–27; 8: 1504
- Illinois
 Lincoln, Abraham, 6: 1150–54
- Illuminated etching, 2: 235–36
- Illustrators
 Geisel, Theodor (Dr. Seuss), 5: 781–83
 Rockwell, Norman, 9: 1607–9
- iMac computer, 6: 1010
- Imanishi-Kari, Thereza, 1: 163
- Imhotep**, 5: 972–75, 973 (ill.)
- Imitations of Horace* (Pope), 8: 1505
- Immanent Will, 5: 859
- Immigrants, advocates for, 1: 25–27
- Immunology, 9: 1667–69
- Imperialism, 6: 1103; 8: 1430; 9: 1578
- Impressionists, 7: 1220
 Cassatt, Mary, 3: 388–90
 Cézanne, Paul, 3: 413
 Degas, Edgar, 4: 576–78
 Monet, Claude, 7: 1320–22
 Renoir, Pierre Auguste, 8: 1571–74
 Van Gogh, Vincent, 10: 1861
- The Improvisatore* (Andersen), 1: 63
- In Cold Blood* (Capote), 2: 354, 356
- In Memoriam* (Tennyson), 10: 1797
- In the Circus Fernando: The Ringmaster*
 (Toulouse-Lautrec), 10: 1831
- In the Time of Butterflies* (Alvarez), 1: 56
- Incest, 2: 332–33
- Income tax evasion, 1: 33
- Income tax shelter, 5: 953
- India, 1: 46; 4: 754–57, 758–61; 10: 1869–72
- Indian National Congress, 4: 755–56
- Indiana
 Bird, Larry, 2: 224–27
Indiana (Sand), 9: 1670, 1671
 Indiana Clowns, 1: 2
Indiana Jones films, 6: 1177; 9: 1739
 Indiana Pacers, 2: 226
 Individuation, 6: 1045
- Indochinese Communist Party (ICP), 5: 914
- Indo-European languages, 5: 838
- Indulgences, 6: 1182–83
- Indulgents, 9: 1600–1601
- Industrial Light and Magic (ILM), 6: 1178
- Industrialists
 Astor, John Jacob, 1: 118–20
 Carnegie, Andrew, 3: 367–69
 Du Pont, Pierre, 4: 638–39

- Eastman, George, 4: 646–48
 Ford, Henry, 4: 725–29
 Pullman, George, 8: 1533–34
 Rockefeller, John, 9: 1604–6
- Infant and child health
 Apgar, Virginia, 1: 83–84
 Spock, Benjamin, 9: 1740–43
- Infante Ferdinand, Cardinal, 9: 1645
- Infection, in surgery, 6: 1159–60
The Infinite Plan (Allende), 1: 54
- Inflation, 3: 382
 “The Inklings” (literary group), 10: 1825
Institutes of the Christian Religion (Calvin), 2: 345
- Insulin, 1: 169–70
- Intelligence (development), 8: 1477–79
- International diplomats
 Annan, Kofi, 1: 76–79
 Boutros-Ghali, Boutros, 2: 261–64
- International Planned Parenthood Federation, 9: 1675
- International Red Cross, 1: 177
- International relations. *See also* United Nations
 Carter, Jimmy, 3: 382–83
 Deng Xiaoping, 4: 588–89
 Jackson, Jesse, 6: 984
 Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1104–7
 Nixon, Richard, 8: 1395
- International Workingmen’s Association (First International), 7: 1248
- Internationalism, 2: 263
The Interpretation of Dreams (Freud), 4: 737; 6: 1043–44
- Intestinal atresia, 1: 173
- Introversion, 6: 1044
- Inventors
 Babbage, Charles, 1: 139–41
 Banneker, Benjamin, 1: 166–68
 Bell, Alexander Graham, 2: 196–200
 Cousteau, Jacques, 3: 521–23
 Eastman, George, 4: 646–48
 Edison, Thomas, 4: 650–54
 Fahrenheit, Gabriel Daniel, 4: 695–96
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 5: 922
 Hughes, Howard, 5: 951–54
 Imhotep, 5: 973–74
 Kettering, Charles F., 6: 1078–80
 Morse, Samuel F. B., 7: 1341–43
 Muir, John, 7: 1361
 Nobel, Alfred, 8: 1397–98
 Pullman, George, 8: 1533–34
 Wang, An, 10: 1900–1902
 Watt, James, 10: 1910–13
 Wright Brothers, 10: 1969–72
- Iran, 1: 46; 3: 382; 5: 964; 6: 1081–83; 8: 1439–41
 Iran-Contra affair, 6: 1083; 8: 1513, 1560
- Iraq, 1: 78–79; 5: 962–65; 8: 1513. *See also* Persian Gulf War
- Iraqi war. *See* Persian Gulf War
- Ireland, 3: 501–3; 4: 674
- Irgun Tzevai Leumi, 2: 195
- Irish Republican Army (IRA), 3: 502
- Irish-British relations, 2: 234
- Iron Shield. *See* American Horse
- Irving, Washington**, 5: 975 (ill.), 975–77
Is My Baby All Right? (Apgar), 1: 84
Is Sex Necessary? (Thurber and White), 10: 1933
Isabella (Keats), 6: 1055
- Islam, 7: 1356–58
 Ali, Muhammad, 1: 48, 49
 Arafat, Yasir, 1: 86–89
 Farrakhan, Louis, 4: 698–701
 Khomeini, Ayatollah, 6: 1081–83
 Mahfouz, Naguib, 7: 1204–5
 Malcolm X, 7: 1210–14
 Muhammad, 7: 1355–58
 Muhammad, Elijah, 7: 1358–60
 Qadhafi, Mu’ammār al-, 8: 1543–46
 al-Rashid, Harun, 8: 1555–57
- Islands of Langerhans (pancreas), 1: 169–70
- Israel, 1: 86–89; 2: 194–96; 7: 1284–86; 9: 1681
- Israeli-Arab relations, 1: 87–89
- Israelites, 7: 1343–45
- It Happened One Night* (film), 2: 358
- Italian opera
 Handel, George Frideric, 5: 856
 Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus, 7: 1352
- Italian Renaissance
 Leonardo da Vinci, 6: 1136–39
 Michelangelo, 7: 1295–98
- Italy, 7: 1367–68; 8: 1498–1500; 10: 1867–69
It’s a Wonderful Life (film), 2: 359

J

- Jabotinsky, Vladimir, 2: 195
- Jackson, Andrew**, 6: 979–82, 980 (ill.)
- Jackson, Jesse**, 4: 700; 6: 983–86, 984 (ill.)
 Jackson Five, 6: 986–87
- Jackson, Michael**, 6: 986–89, 987 (ill.)
- Jackson, Reggie**, 6: 989–91, 990 (ill.)
- Jacobins, 9: 1600
- Jagger, Mick, 9: 1619 (ill.)
- Jamaica, 4: 767–69
- James I, King of England, 8: 1549, 1550; 9: 1705
James and the Giant Peach (Dahl), 3: 545

- James Bond films, 3: 506–7
- James, P. D.**, 6: 991–93, 992 (ill.)
- Jameson, Leander, 9: 1579
- Jane Eyre* (Brontë), 2: 283–84
- Jansenists, 8: 1448, 1449
- Japan, 5: 904–7; 9: 1627–28, 1630; 10: 1835–36
- Javanese gamelan, 4: 570
- Jay's Treaty (1794), 1: 119; 7: 1196; 10: 1909
- Jazz musicians and vocalists
- Armstrong, Louis, 1: 101–2
 - Baker, Josephine, 1: 153
 - Basie, Count, 1: 177–79
 - Calloway, Cab, 2: 342–44
 - Cole, Nat “King,” 3: 492–94
 - Davis, Miles, 3: 559–60
 - Ellington, Duke, 4: 678–80
 - Fitzgerald, Ella, 4: 715–18
 - Gillespie, Dizzy, 5: 792–94
 - Goodman, Benny, 5: 807–9
 - Holiday, Billie, 5: 918–20
 - Monk, Thelonious, 7: 1323–24
 - Parker, Charlie, 8: 1445–47
 - Previn, André, 8: 1520–21, 1522
 - Smith, Bessie, 9: 1727–29
- The Jazz Singer*, 6: 1026
- Jeet kune do, 6: 1124
- Jefferson, Thomas**, 1: 18, 167–68; 6: 994–97, 995 (ill.); 10: 1908–9
- Jemison, Mae C.**, 6: 997–99, 999 (ill.)
- Jesuits. *See* Society of Jesus (Jesuits)
- Jesus Christ Superstar* (musical), 6: 1162
- Jesus of Nazareth**, 6: 1000–1002, 1001 (ill.); 7: 1208
- Jewish Americans
- Abzug, Bella, 1: 7, 8
 - Arendt, Hannah, 1: 91–93
 - Bellow, Saul, 2: 202–4
 - Berlin, Irving, 2: 208–10
 - Bernstein, Leonard, 2: 210–13
 - Brandeis, Louis, 2: 275
 - Davis, Sammy, Jr., 3: 564
 - Heller, Joseph, 5: 870–72
 - Jolson, Al, 6: 1025–27
 - Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1104–7
 - Lazarus, Emma, 6: 1119–21
 - Malamud, Bernard, 7: 1208–10
 - Sabin, Albert, 9: 1657–59
 - Singer, Isaac Bashevis, 9: 1724–26
 - Spielberg, Steven, 9: 1737–40
 - Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40
- Jewish heritage
- Albright, Madeleine, 1: 38–39
 - Freud, Sigmund, 4: 735–36
 - Stein, Edith, 9: 1751
- Jews, World War II, 5: 911
- JFK* (film), 9: 1763–64
- Jiang Zemin**, 6: 1003–4; 8: 1540
- Jimi Hendrix Experience, 5: 879
- Jinnah, 4: 761
- Jitterbug, 2: 343
- Joan of Arc**, 6: 1005–7, 1006 (ill.)
- Jobs, Steve**, 6: 1007–10, 1008 (ill.)
- John XXIII, Pope, 6: 1068
- John, Elton**, 6: 1011–12, 1012 (ill.)
- John Paul II**, Pope, 6: 1013–16, 1014 (ill.); 9: 1751–52
- Johnson, Ben, 6: 1142
- Johnson, Lyndon B.**, 6: 1016–19, 1017 (ill.)
- Johnson, Magic**, 6: 1020–22, 1021 (ill.)
- Johnson, Marguerite. *See* Angelou, Maya
- Johnson, R. Walter “Whirlwind,” 1: 111
- Johnson, Samuel**, 6: 1023–24, 1024 (ill.)
- Jolson, Al**, 6: 1025–27, 1026 (ill.)
- Jones, Brian, 9: 1619 (ill.)
- Jones, Darryl, 9: 1620
- Jones, James Earl**, 6: 1027–29, 1028 (ill.)
- Jones, Quincy**, 6: 987, 988, 1029–32, 1031 (ill.)
- Jonson, Ben**, 6: 1032–34, 1033 (ill.)
- Jordan, 1: 87, 88
- Jordan, Michael**, 6: 1034–37, 1035 (ill.)
- Joseph and the Amazing Technicolor Dreamcoat* (musical), 6: 1162
- Journal writers
- Chesnut, Mary Boykin, 3: 454–56
 - Shelley, Mary Wollstonecraft, 9: 1710
- Journalists and journalism.
- Adams, Samuel, 1: 21
 - Allende, Isabel, 1: 52–54
 - Bond, Julian, 2: 246
 - Bourke-White, Margaret, 2: 259–61
 - Bradley, Ed, 2: 266–67
 - Buchanan, Pat, 2: 306
 - Churchill, Winston, 3: 472–73
 - Cronkite, Walter, 3: 532–35
 - Defoe, Daniel, 4: 574–76
 - Dickens, Charles, 4: 600–603
 - García Márquez, Gabriel, 4: 762–64
 - Gore, Al, 5: 816
 - Hearst, William Randolph, 5: 865–68
 - Lloyd, Henry Demarest, 9: 1606
 - Mailer, Norman, 7: 1207
 - Marx, Karl, 7: 1248
 - Murdoch, Rupert, 7: 1364–66
 - Pran, Dith, 8: 1514–17
 - Proulx, E. Annie, 8: 1525
 - Rogers, Will, 9: 1615–17
 - Rowan, Carl, 9: 1639–40

- Singer, Isaac Bashevis, 9: 1724–26
 Stoppard, Tom, 9: 1765
 Tarbell, Ida, 9: 1606
 Whitman, Walt, 10: 1935
A Journey to the Center of the Earth (Verne), 10: 1866
The Joy Luck Club (Tan), 10: 1788–89
Joyce, James, 6: 1038 (ill.), **1038–39**
 Ju (Confucianism), 3: 503–6
Juárez, Benito, 6: **1040–42**, 1041 (ill.)
 Judaism. *See also* Jewish Americans
 Baal Shem Tov, 1: 137–39
 Lazarus, Emma, 6: 1119–21
 Moses, 7: 1343–45
 Singer, Isaac Bashevis, 9: 1724–26
 Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40
Judge Priest (film), 7: 1268
 Judges. *See* Justices
 Judo, 2: 347
 Julius Caesar. *See* Caesar, Julius
Jumpers (Stoppard), 9: 1766
The Jumping Frog of Calaveras County (Twain), 10: 1851
Jung, Carl Gustav, 6: **1043–46**, 1044 (ill.)
The Jungle (Sinclair), 9: 1723
 “Jungle” dance (Baker), 1: 153–54
Jungle Fever (film), 6: 1128
Jurassic Park (Crichton), 3: 526
Jurassic Park (film), 9: 1740
 Justices
 Brandeis, Louis, 2: 275–77
 Burger, Warren, 2: 314–17
 Ginsburg, Ruth Bader, 5: 794–96
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr., 5: 923–25
 Marshall, Thurgood, 7: 1243–46
 O’Connor, Sandra Day, 8: 1416–19
 Thomas, Clarence, 10: 1807–10
 Justification doctrine, 6: 1182–83
 Juvenile diabetes, 4: 663–64
 Juvenile fiction authors. *See also* Children’s authors
 Alcott, Louisa May, 1: 39–41
 Blume, Judy, 2: 239–41
 Hinton, S. E., 5: 900–902
 Kipling, Rudyard, 6: 1103
 Zindel, Paul, 10: 1987–89
- K**
- Kafka, Franz**, 6: **1047–49**, 1048 (ill.)
 Kahlo, Frida, 9: 1595
 Kali, 8: 1551
Kandinsky, Wassily, 6: **1050–51**, 1051 (ill.)
 Kansas
 Brown, John, 2: 294–57
 Kansas City Athletics, 6: 989–90
 Kansas-Nebraska Act (1954), 2: 294–95; 6: 1152
Kant, Immanuel, 6: **1052–54**, 1053 (ill.)
 Kasavubu, Joseph, 6: 1180
 Kato (TV character), 6: 1124
 Kearny, Stephen, 3: 376
 Keaton, Diane, 1: 51
Keats, John, 6: **1054–56**, 1055 (ill.)
Keller, Helen, 2: 197; 6: **1056–58**, 1058 (ill.)
Kelly, Gene, 6: **1058–60**, 1060 (ill.)
 Kelvin, Lord (William Thompson), 2: 199
Kennedy, Edward, 6: **1061–63**, 1062 (ill.)
 Kennedy, Jackie. *See* Onassis, Jackie Kennedy
Kennedy, John F., 6: 1061, **1064–69**, 1065 (ill.), 1070; 8: 1394, 1425–27
 Cuban Missile Crisis, 3: 395
 Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1017–18
 Schlesinger, Arthur, Jr., 9: 1683
Kennedy, John F., Jr., 6: **1069–71**, 1070 (ill.)
Kennedy, Robert, 6: 1070, **1071–74**, 1072 (ill.)
 Kennedy, Ted. *See* Kennedy, Edward
 Kennedy-Douglas-Ives Bill (1957), 6: 1066
 Kentucky
 Boone, Daniel, 2: 247–48
Kepler, Johannes, 6: **1074–76**, 1075 (ill.)
 Kerkorian, Kirk, 5: 969–70
 Kern, Jerome, 5: 850
Kerouac, Jack, 6: **1076–78**, 1077 (ill.)
Kettering, Charles F., 6: **1078–80**, 1080 (ill.)
 KGB, 8: 1538
 Khadija, 7: 1355
 Khmer People’s Revolutionary Party (KPRP), 8: 1496
 Khmer Rouge, 8: 1497, 1515–17
Khomeini, Ayatollah, 5: 964; 6: **1081–83**, 1082 (ill.); 8: 1441; 9: 1650
Khrushchev, Nikita, 2: 281–82; 6: **1083–86**, 1084 (ill.)
Kidnapped (Stevenson), 9: 1758
The Killing Fields (film), 8: 1514
King, B. B., 6: **1086–89**, 1087 (ill.)
King, Billie Jean, 6: **1089–91**, 1090 (ill.)
King, Coretta Scott, 6: **1091–94**, 1092 (ill.)
King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1093, **1094–97**, 1095 (ill.); 8: 1554
 Abernathy, Ralph, 1: 5, 6
 Carmichael, Stokely, 3: 365
 Jackson, Jesse, 6: 983–84
King, Stephen, 6: **1098–1100**, 1099 (ill.)
 “Kingdom” (religious cult), 10: 1841–42
 Kings. *See also* Emperors and empresses
 Alexander the Great, Macedonian king, 1: 43–46

- Charlemagne, 3: 424–27
 Henry VIII, King of England, 5: 880–83
 Herod the Great, King of Judea, 5: 891–93
 Tutankhamen, King of Egypt, 10: 1845–47
- King's Men, 9: 1705–6
 Kinnock, Neil, 2: 232–33
- Kipling, Rudyard**, 6: 1101–3, 1102 (ill.)
 Kirov Ballet, 8: 1410
 Kirstein, Lincoln, 1: 155, 156
- Kissinger, Henry**, 6: 1104–7, 1105 (ill.)
The Kitchen God's Wife (Tan), 10: 1789
 Kitty Hawk, North Carolina, 10: 1970
 Klarsfeld, Beate, 1: 172
- Klein, Calvin**, 6: 1107–9, 1108 (ill.)
 K-meson, 6: 1130
 Knesset, 2: 194–96
The Knights (Aristophanes), 1: 97
 Knowledge, theory of, 6: 1168
Knute Rockne—All American (film), 8: 1558
 Kodak camera, 4: 647
The Kon-Tiki Expedition (Heyerdahl), 5: 896–97
 Kopechne, Mary Jo, 6: 1062
 Koran, 7: 1355; 9: 1650
 Korean Airlines Flight 007, 1: 152
 Korean War
 Agnew, Spiro, 1: 31
 Aquino, Benigno, 1: 84–85
 Armstrong, Neil, 1: 103
 MacArthur, Douglas, 7: 1187–88
 Truman, Harry S., 10: 1837
- Krieger, Robbie, 7: 1336
- Kublai Khan**, 6: 1109–12, 1111 (ill.);
 8: 1498–1500
- Kung fu, 6: 1124–25
 K'ung Fu-tzu. *See* Confucius
 Kunte Kinte (literary character), 5: 844
 Kuomintang (KMT), 7: 1227; 9: 1782
 Kuwait, 5: 965; 8: 1513
- L**
- “La Belle Dame Sans Merci” (Keats), 6: 1056
 La Grenouillère, 8: 1573
La Nouvelle Heloise (Rousseau), 9: 1638
La Peau de chagrin (Balzac), 1: 164
La Peste (The Plague) (Camus), 2: 351
La Revue Nègre, 1: 153
 Labor and delivery (childbirth), 1: 83
 Labor camps (World War II), 9: 1679–80
 Labor union activists, leaders, and organizers
 Bieber, Owen, 2: 220–22
 Chávez, César, 3: 436–38
 Gompers, Samuel, 5: 801–4
 Hoffa, James, 6: 1073
 Meir, Golda, 7: 1284–85
 Perón, Eva, 8: 1476
 Randolph, A. Philip, 8: 1552–55
- Labor union strikes
 Carnegie, Andrew, 3: 368–69
 Chávez, César, 3: 437–38
 Debs, Eugene V., 3: 552
 Gompers, Samuel, 5: 803
- Laboratory, modern, 4: 652–53
Laborem Exercens (Performing Work) (John Paul II),
 6: 1015
- Labour Party (England), 2: 232–34
Lady Byron Vindicated (Stowe), 9: 1768
 “The Lady of Shalott” (Tennyson), 10: 1796
Lady Sings the Blues (film), 5: 815; 9: 1633
- Lafayette, Marquis de**, 6: 1113–15, 1114 (ill.)
 Lahorie, Victor Fanneau, 5: 957
 Lake Champlain (battles), 1: 106
 Lakota Wars, 1: 57–59
Lamia (Keats), 6: 1056
- Land ownership
 Mexico, 3: 363
 Russia, 1: 42
- Landscapes, 8: 1567–68
 Langdon, Harry, 2: 357
 Langley, Samuel, 2: 199
- Language study and research
 Grimm, Jakob and Wilhelm (Brothers Grimm),
 5: 836–38
 Locke, John, 6: 1168
 Sequoyah, 9: 1701–2
 Webster, Noah, 10: 1921
- Lao Tzu**, 6: 1115–17, 1116 (ill.)
 Lasser, Louise, 1: 51
Last Judgment (Michelangelo), 7: 1297–98
Last Supper (Leonardo da Vinci), 6: 1137
The Last Tycoon (Fitzgerald), 4: 720
 Lastman, Pieter, 8: 1566
 Late night television, 3: 372–74
- Lauren, Ralph**, 6: 1117–19, 1118 (ill.)
 Lavalas (Avalanche) Party (Haiti), 1: 95
- Lawyers
 Abzug, Bella, 1: 7–9
 Bailey, F. Lee, 1: 150–52
 Boutros-Ghali, Boutros, 2: 261–64
 Brandeis, Louis, 2: 275–77
 Burger, Warren, 2: 314–17
 Burr, Aaron, 2: 320
 Clinton, Hillary Rodham, 3: 487–89
 Darrow, Clarence, 3: 551–53
 Dole, Elizabeth, 4: 613–16

- Ferraro, Geraldine, 4: 711
 Ginsburg, Ruth Bader, 5: 794–96
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr., 5: 924
 Hooks, Benjamin, 5: 934
 Kafka, Franz, 6: 1048
 Kennedy, Edward, 6: 1061
 Kennedy, John F., Jr., 6: 1071
 Kennedy, Robert, 6: 1071
 Lincoln, Abraham, 6: 1151–52
 Marshall, Thurgood, 7: 1243–44
 Nixon, Richard, 8: 1393
 O'Connor, Sandra Day, 8: 1416–19
 Reno, Janet, 8: 1568–71
 Thomas, Clarence, 10: 1808
 Webster, Daniel, 10: 1917
- Lazarus, Emma**, 6: 1119–21, 1120 (ill.)
Le Dernier Chouan (Balzac), 1: 164
Le Mythe de Sisyphe (The Myth of Sisyphus) (Camus), 2: 350
Leadership and America's Future in Space (Ride), 9: 1587
 League of Nations, 10: 1953–54
 Leakey, Louis, 5: 805; 6: 1122
Leakey, Mary, 5: 805; 6: 1121–23, 1122 (ill.)
The Leaning Tower and Other Stories (Porter), 8: 1508
 Learning theory, 8: 1477–79
Leaves of Grass (Whitman), 10: 1935–36
- Lecturers
 Anthony, Susan B., 1: 80–81
 Arendt, Hannah, 1: 92–93
 Dickens, Charles, 4: 600–603
 Douglass, Frederick, 4: 627
 Einstein, Albert, 4: 656
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 4: 681–83
 Frost, Robert, 4: 741–44
 Goodall, Jane, 5: 807
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 5: 922
 Keller, Helen, 6: 1056–58
 Sagan, Carl, 9: 1659–62
 Thomas, Dylan, 10: 1811–12
 Truth, Sojourner, 10: 1842
 Wilder, Thornton, 10: 1946–48
- Lee, Brandon, 6: 1125
Lee, Bruce, 6: 1124–25, 1125 (ill.)
 Lee, Harper, 2: 354
Lee, Spike, 6: 1126–29, 1127 (ill.)
Lee, Tsung-Dao, 6: 1129–31, 1130 (ill.)
- Legal writers
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr., 5: 923–25
 Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 994–97
L'Émile ou de l'éducation (Rousseau), 9: 1638
Lena Horne: The Lady and Her Music (Broadway show), 5: 943
- Lenin, Vladimir**, 6: 1131–35, 1133 (ill.); 7: 1249
 Lennon, John, 2: 181–85; 8: 1518
 Leo XIII, Pope, 10: 1866
Leonardo da Vinci, 6: 1136–39, 1137 (ill.)
 Leonidas, tutor of Alexander, 1: 44
 Leopold, Prince (Cöthen, Germany), 1: 142
 Leopold-Loeb case (1924), 3: 553
 Lepanto, battle of, 3: 409
 Lepidus, 1: 129, 7: 1242
Les Demoiselles d'Avignon (Picasso), 8: 1481
Les Feuilles d'automne (Hugo), 5: 958
Les Misérables (Hugo), 5: 960
Let It Be (Beatles), 2: 184
L'Étranger (The Stranger) (Camus), 2: 350
Letters to Judy: What Your Kids Wish They Could Tell You (Blume), 2: 241
Lettres anglaises (Voltaire), 10: 1880
 Lever and pulley, 1: 89
 Lewes, George Henry, 4: 666
 Lewinski, Monica, 3: 485
 Lewis and Clark expedition, 6: 997
Lewis, C. S., 6: 1139–41, 1140 (ill.); 10: 1825
Lewis, Carl, 6: 1141–43, 1142 (ill.)
Lewis, Sinclair, 6: 1144–45, 1145 (ill.)
- Lexicographers
 Grimm brothers, 5: 838
 Johnson, Samuel, 6: 1023–24
 Webster, Noah, 10: 1919–21
- Lexington and Concord, Battle of, 1: 106
L'Homme révolté (The Rebel) (Camus), 2: 351
 Li Erh (Li Tan). *See* Lao Tzu
 Liberal Party (Canada), 3: 467–69
 Liberal Party (Mexico), 6: 1040–42
- Liberalism
 Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 994
 Machiavelli, Niccolò, 7: 1191
 Marshall, Thurgood, 7: 1245
 Mill, John Stuart, 7: 1301–3
 Sartre, Jean-Paul, 9: 1677
- Liberia, 4: 768
 Libya, 8: 1543–46
Lichtenstein, Roy, 6: 1146–47, 1147 (ill.)
 Lieberman, Joseph, 2: 206
 Lieder (German art songs), 9: 1684–87
The Life and Strange Surprising Adventures of Robinson Crusoe (Defoe), 4: 575
The Life and Work of Susan B. Anthony (Harper), 1: 81
Life magazine, 2: 261
The Life of the Mind (Arendt), 1: 93
 Life, origins of, 9: 1661
 Light bulb, 4: 652
Like a Virgin (Madonna), 7: 1199

- Lin, Maya**, 6: 1148–50, 1149 (ill.)
Linaiuoli Altarpiece (Madonna of the Linen Guild)
 (Angelico), 1: 72
- Lincoln, Abraham**, 2: 270; 6: 1150–54, 1151 (ill.)
 Lincoln County War (New Mexico), 2: 223
 Lindbergh, Anne Spencer Morrow, 6: 1155, 1156
- Lindbergh, Charles**, 6: 1154–56, 1155 (ill.)
 “Lines Composed a Few Miles Above Tintern
 Abbey” (Wordsworth), 10: 1966–67
- Linguists
 Grimm, Jakob and Wilhelm (Brothers Grimm),
 5: 836–38
 Sequoyah, 9: 1701–2
 Webster, Noah, 10: 1921
- Linnaeus, Carl**, 6: 1157–58, 1158 (ill.)
- Lions, 1: 23–24
- Liquids and gases, 8: 1449
- Liquor. *See* Prohibition
- Lisa computer, 6: 1009
- Lister, Joseph**, 6: 1159–60, 1160 (ill.)
- Liston, Sonny, 1: 47, 48
- Liszt, Franz, 2: 271, 272
- Literacy
 Bush, Laura, 2: 329–31
 Sequoyah, 9: 1701–2
- Lithography, 10: 1831–32, 1931–32
- Little Bighorn (Montana), Battle of, 1: 58–59; 2: 348
- The Little Colonel* (film), 7: 1268–69
- Little House* books (Wilder), 10: 1945
- Little, Malcolm. *See* Malcolm X
- A Little Night Music* (musical), 9: 1733
- Little Rock, Arkansas, 4: 659
- Little Women* (Alcott), 1: 41
- Lives of the Poets* (Johnson), 6: 1024
- Lloyd, Henry Demarest, 9: 1606
- Lloyd Webber, Andrew**, 6: 1161–63, 1162 (ill.)
Lochner v. New York, 5: 925
- Locke, Alain**, 6: 1163–66, 1164 (ill.)
- Locke, John**, 6: 1166–68, 1167 (ill.); 7: 1303
- Loe, Thomas, 8: 1470
- Logicians and logic
 Aristotle, 1: 100
 Bacon, Roger, 1: 146
 Mill, John Stuart, 7: 1303
 Socrates, 9: 1729–31
- Lohengrin* (Wagner), 10: 1890–91
- Lolita* (Nabokov), 7: 1373
- Lomax, Alan, 5: 839–40
- Lon Nol, 8: 1497, 1515
- London, Jack**, 6: 1168–70, 1169 (ill.)
 London Symphony Orchestra, 8: 1521
Long Day’s Journey into Night (O’Neill), 8: 1429
 Long March (China), 7: 1228
- Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth**, 6: 1170–73,
 1171 (ill.)
 Lord Chamberlain’s Men, 9: 1704–5
Lord of the Flies (Golding), 5: 800–801
The Lord of the Rings (Tolkien), 10: 1825, 1826
 Los Angeles Kings, 5: 835
 Los Angeles Lakers, 3: 418; 6: 1020
 “Lost generation,” 9: 1753
 Lou Gehrig’s disease, 5: 860
- Louis, Joe**, 6: 1173–75, 1174 (ill.); 7: 1231
- Louis X. *See* Farrakhan, Louis
- Louis XIII, King of France, 9: 1583–84, 1645
- Louis XVI, King of France, 9: 1600
- Louis XVIII, King of France, 7: 1379
- Louis Philippe, King of France, 10: 1870
- Louisiana Purchase, 6: 996–97; 7: 1196
- Louisville Sponsors Group, 1: 47
- Love and Friendship* (Austen), 1: 133
- Love poems, 3: 536–37
- Loves (Amores)* (Ovid), 8: 1433
- Lowndes County (Alabama) Freedom Party, 3: 625
- Lucas, George**, 6: 1175–78, 1177 (ill.)
- Luce, Henry, 2: 260
- Lueger, Karl, 5: 909
- Luluabour Congress (1959), 6: 1179–80
- Lumumba, Patrice**, 6: 1178–81, 1179 (ill.)
- Lun yü* (Confucius), 3: 505
- Lunar landing (first), 1: 104–5
- Luncheon of the Boating Party* (Renoir), 8: 1573
- Luther, Martin**, 2: 344–45; 4: 686; 6: 1181–84,
 1183 (ill.)
 Lyceum (Peripatetic School), 1: 99
Lyrics of Lowly Life (Dunbar), 4: 636
 Lysimachus, tutor of Alexander, 1: 44
Lysistrata (Aristophanes), 1: 97

M

- MacArthur, Douglas**, 7: 1185–88, 1186 (ill.);
 9: 1627; 10: 1837
- Machiavelli, Niccolò**, 7: 1188–91, 1189 (ill.)
- Macintosh computer, 6: 1009
- Macleod, J. J., 1: 169–70
- Madame Bovary* (Flaubert), 4: 722–23
- Madison, Dolley**, 7: 1191–93, 1192 (ill.)
- Madison, James**, 7: 1192–93, 1194–97, 1195 (ill.)
- Madonna**, 7: 1197–1200, 1198 (ill.)
- Mafia, 9: 1721
- Magellan, Ferdinand**, 7: 1201–3, 1202 (ill.)
 “Magic realism,” 4: 763
Magical Mystery Tour (film), 2: 183–84
The Magician of Lublin (Singer), 9: 1725

- Magicians
 Carson, Johnny, 3: 372
 Houdini, Harry, 5: 943–46
- Mahfouz, Naguib**, 7: 1203–5, 1204 (ill.)
 “Mahjar poets,” 5: 789
- Mahogany* (film), 9: 1633
- Mailer, Norman**, 7: 1205–8, 1206 (ill.)
- Main Street* (Lewis), 6: 1144
- Major Barbara* (Shaw), 9: 1708
- Make-up, 1: 108–10
- Malamud, Bernard**, 7: 1208–10, 1209 (ill.)
- Malcolm X**, 5: 844; 7: 1210–14, 1212 (ill.), 1360
- Malcolm X* (film), 6: 1128
- The Maldive Mystery* (Heyerdahl), 5: 897
- Mama* (McMillan), 7: 1274
- Mamet, David Alan**, 7: 1214–16, 1215 (ill.)
 “Mammy” (song), 6: 1026
- A Man of the People* (Achebe), 1: 10
- Manchuria, 5: 906
- Mandela, Nelson**, 2: 256–57; 4: 583–84;
 7: 1216–19, 1217 (ill.); 10: 1847, 1849
- Manet, Édouard**, 7: 1219–21, 1220 (ill.)
- Manhattan Elevated Railroad (New York), 5: 820
- Manhattan Project, 4: 710
- Manifesto of the Communist Party* (Marx), 7: 1248
- Mankiller, Wilma**, 7: 1221–23, 1222 (ill.)
- Manners and etiquette, 8: 1509–11
- Mansfield Park* (Austen), 1: 134
- Mantle, Mickey**, 7: 1224–26, 1225 (ill.)
- Manzarek, Ray, 7: 1336
- Mao Zedong**, 4: 587–88; 7: 1226–29, 1227 (ill.)
- Marcellus, Marcus Claudius, 1: 90
- March of Dimes, 1: 83–84
 “March on Washington,” 1: 6; 8: 1554
- Marciano, Rocky**, 7: 1230–32, 1231 (ill.)
- Marconi, Guglielmo, 4: 652
- Marcos, Ferdinand**, 1: 84–86; 7: 1233–35,
 1234 (ill.)
- Marcos, Mariano, 7: 1233
- Marcus Annius Verus. *See* Marcus Aurelius Antoninus
- Marcus Aurelius Antoninus**, 4: 749; 7: 1236–38,
 1237 (ill.)
- Marcus Claudius Marcellus, 1: 90
- Marengo, battle of, 7: 1378
- Marie Antoinette**, 7: 1238–40, 1239 (ill.)
- Maribel Boat Lift, 3: 396
- Mark Antony**, 1: 128–29; 3: 477, 482–83;
 7: 1240–43, 1241 (ill.)
- Marple, Jane (literary character), 3: 470
- Mars, 9: 1661
- Marshall Plan, 10: 1836
- Marshall, Thurgood**, 7: 1243–46, 1244 (ill.)
- Martial arts, 6: 1124–25
- The Martian Chronicles* (Bradbury), 2: 265
- Martin, Casey, 8: 1443
- Martin Chuzzlewit* (Dickens), 4: 602
- Martin, George, 2: 182
- Martin, Joe, 1: 47
- Marx, Karl**, 6: 1170; 7: 1246–49, 1247 (ill.)
- Marxists and Marxism. *See also* Communists and
 communism
 Lenin, Vladimir, 6: 1131–35
 Mao Zedong, 7: 1227–29
 Marx, Karl, 7: 1246–49
 Stalin, Joseph, 9: 1743–46
- Mary I, Queen of England, 4: 672
- Mary Kay Cosmetics, 1: 110
- Mary of Guise, 7: 1250
- Mary Queen of Scots**, 4: 674; 7: 1249–52, 1251
 (ill.)
- Maryinsky Theatre, 8: 1463
- Maryland
 Agnew, Spiro, 1: 31–33
 Marshall, Thurgood, 7: 1243–46
 Mfume, Kweisi, 7: 1292–95
- Masekela Language* (Ailey), 1: 36
- Mass: A Theatre Piece for Singers, Players and Dancers*,
 2: 212–13
- Mass production, 4: 727
- Massachusetts
 Dickinson, Emily, 4: 603–6
 Eliot, T. S., 4: 669
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 5: 920–23
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr., 5: 923–25
 Kennedy, Edward, 6: 1061–63
 Kennedy, John F., 6: 1064–69
 Mather, Cotton, 7: 1252–55
 Revere, Paul, 8: 1574–76
 Thoreau, Henry David, 10: 1813–16
- Mastering the Art of French Cooking* (Child), 3: 460
- Masters tournament (golf), 10: 1961, 1962
- Mastin Troupe, 3: 563
- The Matchmaker* (Wilder), 10: 1947
- “Material Girl” (song), 7: 1199
- Mathematical engines, 1: 139–40
- Mathematicians and mathematics
 Archimedes, 1: 89–91
 Babbage, Charles, 1: 139–41
 Banneker, Benjamin, 1: 166–68
 Carroll, Lewis, 3: 370–72
 Chandrasekhar, Subrahmanyan, 3: 419–21
 Descartes, René, 4: 591
 Euclid, 4: 686–88
 Gauss, Karl Friedrich, 4: 775–77
 Hawking, Stephen, 5: 860–62
 Newton, Isaac, 7: 1382–86

- Pascal, Blaise, 8: 1447–48
 Pythagoras, 8: 1541–42
Mather, Cotton, 7: **1252–55**, 1253 (ill.)
 Mather, Increase, 7: 1253
Matisse, Henri, 7: **1255–58**, 1257 (ill.)
 “Matthias,” 10: 1841–42
 Mau Mau, 1: 60
Maud and Other Poems (Tennyson), 10: 1797
Maud Martha (Brooks), 2: 287
Mavra (Stravinsky), 9: 1774
Mayo Brothers, 7: **1258–61**, 1260 (ill.)
Mayo, Charles H., 7: **1258–61**, 1259 (ill.)
Mayo, William J., 7: **1258–61**, 1260 (ill.)
 Mayors
 Aquino, Benigno, 1: 85
 Eastwood, Clint, 4: 650
 Feinstein, Dianne, 4: 704–7
Mays, Willie, 7: **1261–64**, 1263 (ill.)
 Mbeki, Thabo, 7: 1218
McCarthy, Joseph, 5: 874; 6: 1071; 7: **1264–67**,
 1265 (ill.), 1306–7
 “McCarthyism,” 7: 1266
 McCartney, Paul, 2: 181–85
 McCarty, Henry. *See* Billy the Kid
 McClellan, George, 6: 1073
McDaniel, Hattie, 7: **1267–70**, 1268 (ill.)
McDonnell’s Farm (Grandma Moses), 7: 1347
McEnroe, John, 7: **1270–72**, 1271 (ill.)
 McGee, Willie, 1: 8
McMillan, Terry, 7: **1273–75**, 1274 (ill.)
McPherson, Aimee Semple, 7: **1275–77**,
 1276 (ill.)
Mead, Margaret, 7: **1277–81**, 1279 (ill.)
Mean Streets (film), 9: 1691
 Mecca, Muhammad, 7: 1356
Medea (Euripides), 4: 690
 Medical education
 Anderson, Elizabeth Garrett, 1: 66–69
 Blackwell, Elizabeth, 2: 229–31
 Medical Register (England), 1: 67, 68
 Medical research
 Apgar, Virginia, 1: 81–84
 Banting, Frederick, 1: 168–70
 Beaumont, William, 2: 185–87
Medici, Catherine de’, 7: **1281–83**, 1282 (ill.);
 8: 1408
 Medici Chapel (Michelangelo), 7: 1297
 Medici family, 7: 1189
 Medici, Maria de’, 9: 1583, 1645
 Medicine
 Anderson, Elizabeth Garrett, 1: 66–69
 Apgar, Virginia, 1: 81–84
 Blackwell, Elizabeth, 1: 67; 2: 229–31
 Hippocrates, 5: 902–4
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 5: 922
 Imhotep, 5: 974–75
 Mayo, Charles H., 7: 1258–61
 Mayo, William J., 7: 1258–61
 Paracelsus, Philippus Aureolus, 8: 1443–45
 Pavlov, Ivan Petrovich, 8: 1459–62
 Sabin, Albert, 9: 1657–59
 Salk, Jonas, 9: 1667–69
 Medina, Muhammad, 7: 1355–56
 Meditation, 2: 310
Meditations (Marcus Aurelius), 7: 1237–38
Meditations on First Philosophy (Descartes), 4: 591
Mein Kampf (Hitler), 5: 910
Meir, Golda, 7: **1284–86**, 1285 (ill.)
 Meister, Joseph, 8: 1452, 1453
 “Melanctha” (Stein), 9: 1754
 Meletus, 9: 1730–31
 “Meliorist,” 5: 859
 Meloney, Marie, 3: 540
 Melville, Herman, 5: 864
Memorable Providences, Relating to Witchcrafts and Possessions (Mather), 7: 1254
Men and Women (Robert Browning), 2: 304
Menchú, Rigoberta, 7: **1286–89**, 1287 (ill.)
Mendelssohn, Felix, 7: **1289–92**, 1291 (ill.)
 Mensheviks, 6: 1133
 Merchant marines
 Conrad, Joseph, 3: 509
 Kerouac, Jack, 6: 1077
 Mercury Records, 6: 1030
 Mercury Theater, 10: 1922–23
 Meriwether, David, 3: 377
 Mesons (mesotrons), 1: 66
 Messianic Eclogue (Virgil), 10: 1875
Metamorphoses (Ovid), 8: 1434
The Metamorphosis (Kafka), 6: 1049
 Metempsychosis, 8: 1541
 Method acting, 2: 278
 “Method of exhaustion” (mathematics), 1: 91
 Method of least squares (Gauss), 4: 777
 Metropolitan Opera, 1: 155–56
 Pavlova, Anna, 8: 1463
 Sills, Beverly, 9: 1715
 Meursault (literary character), 2: 350
 Mexican Revolution, 3: 361–63
 Mexican War
 Carson, Kit, 3: 376
 Crockett, Davy, 3: 529
 Mexico, 3: 361–63; 6: 1040–42
 Meyer, Eugene, 5: 824–25
Mfume, Kweisi, 7: **1292–95**, 1293 (ill.)
Michelangelo, 6: 1139; 7: **1295–98**, 1297 (ill.)
 Michelozzo, 4: 620

- Michigan
 Robinson, Smokey, 9: 1601–4
 Mickey Mouse, 4: 611–12
 Microbes, 1: 1450–53
 Microsoft Disk Operating System (MS-DOS), 4: 770–71
 Middle Ages, 1: 145–47
 Middle East
 Albright, Madeleine, 1: 39
 Arafat, Yasir, 1: 86–89
 Begin, Menachem, 2: 195–96
 Boutros-Ghali, Boutros, 2: 262–63
 Bunche, Ralph, 2: 314
 Carter, Jimmy, 3: 382
 Clinton, Bill, 3: 485–86
 Hussein, Saddam, 5: 962–65; 8: 1513
 Jackson, Jesse, 6: 984
 Khomeini, Ayatollah, 6: 1081–83
 Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1106–7
 Mubarak, Hosni, 7: 1353–55
 Pahlavi, Mohammad Reza Shah, 8: 1439–41
 Middle-class America, 3: 447–49
Middlemarch (Eliot), 4: 667–68
Midnight Express (film), 9: 1763
Midnight's Children (Rushdie), 9: 1649
 Midwestern frontier, 3: 397–99
 Migrant workers, 3: 436–38
 Mihajlovic, Draza, 10: 1822, 1823
 Military leaders
 Alexander the Great, Macedonian king, 1: 44–46
 Amin, Idi, 1: 59–62
 Arafat, Yasir, 1: 86–89
 Arnold, Benedict, 1: 105–8
 Barbie, Klaus, 1: 170–73
 Caesar, Julius, 2: 335–38
 Charlemagne, King of the Franks, 3: 424–27
 Chiang Kai-shek, 3: 456–59
 Eisenhower, Dwight D., 4: 657–60
 Genghis Khan, 5: 784–86
 Hitler, Adolf, 5: 909–12
 Jackson, Andrew, 6: 980–81
 Joan of Arc, 6: 1005–7
 MacArthur, Douglas, 7: 1185–88
 Mubarak, Hosni, 7: 1353–55
 Napoleon Bonaparte, 7: 1376–79
 Noriega, Manuel, 8: 1401–3
 Pericles, 8: 1474
 Powell, Colin, 8: 1511–14
 Ptolemy I, 8: 1528–31
 Qadhafi, Mu'ammal al-, 8: 1543–46
 Stalin, Joseph, 9: 1746
 Washington, George, 10: 1906–8
Militia Company of Captain Frans Banning Cocq (Rembrandt), 8: 1567
Milk, Harvey, 4: 706; 7: **1298–1301**, 1299 (ill.)
Mill, John Stuart, 7: **1301–3**, 1302 (ill.)
The Mill on the Floss (Eliot), 4: 666–67
Millay, Edna St. Vincent, 7: **1303–5**, 1304 (ill.)
Miller, Arthur, 7: **1305–7**, 1306 (ill.)
Miller, Henry, 7: **1308–10**, 1309 (ill.)
 Millikan, R. A., 1: 64–65
 Million Man March, 4: 701
 Mills, Anson, 1: 59
Milosevic, Slobodan, 7: **1310–13**, 1311 (ill.)
Milton, John, 7: **1313–16**, 1314 (ill.)
 Milwaukee Brewers, 1: 3
 Ministry of Trade and Industry (MITI) (Japan), 5: 929–30
 Minivan (Chrysler), 5: 968
 Minnesota
 Burger, Warren, 2: 315
 “Minnie the Moocher” (song), 2: 342, 343, 344
 Minstrel shows
 McDaniel, Hattie, 7: 1267–68
 Smith, Bessie, 9: 1727
 Minton's (New York), 7: 1323
The Miracle Ahead (Gallup), 4: 754
 Miracle workers, 1: 138
 Miracles, 6: 1000–1001
 The Miracles (group), 9: 1602
Miró, Joan, 7: **1316–18**, 1317 (ill.)
The Mismeasure of Man (Gould), 5: 822–23
 Missionaries, 7: 1347–50
 Mississippi River
 de Soto, Hernando, 4: 594
 Twain, Mark, 10: 1850, 1851
 Mississippi
 Evers, Medgar, 4: 690–93
 King, B. B., 6: 1086–89
 Welty, Eudora, 10: 1925–27
Mississippi University for Women v. Hogan, 8: 1418
 Missouri
 Boone, Daniel, 2: 248
 Brown, John, 2: 295
 Eliot, T. S., 4: 669
 Truman, Harry S. 10: 1834–35
 Missouri Pacific Railroad, 5: 820
 “Mr. Bennett and Mrs. Brown” (Woolf), 10: 1963–64
Mr. Deeds Goes to Town (film), 2: 358
Mr. Smith Goes to Washington (film), 2: 358–59
Mrs. Dalloway (Woolf), 10: 1964
 Mitusov, Stephan, 9: 1773
Mo' Better Blues (film), 6: 1128
 Model A Ford automobile, 4: 727

- Model T Ford automobile (Tin Lizzie), 4: 727
- Modern art
 Cézanne, Paul, 3: 413
 Chagall, Marc, 3: 414–16
 Gauguin, Paul, 4: 775
 Kandinsky, Wassily, 6: 1050–51
 Lichtenstein, Roy, 6: 1146–47
 Matisse, Henri, 7: 1255–58
- Modern dance
 Ailey, Alvin, 1: 34–36
 Graham, Martha, 5: 827–29
 Tharp, Twyla, 10: 1804–7
- Modern jazz
 Gillespie, Dizzy, 5: 793
 Monk, Thelonious, 7: 1323–24
- Modern nursing, 8: 1390–92
- Modern philosophy
 Descartes, René, 4: 590–92
 Hobbes, Thomas, 5: 917
- Modern research laboratory, 4: 652–53
- Modern surgery, 6: 1159–60
- Modern Times* (film), 3: 422–23
- Modernists (poetry), 1: 124
- Molecular biologists
 Baltimore, David, 1: 162
 Pauling, Linus Carl, 8: 1453–56
- Molière**, 7: 1318–20, 1319 (ill.)
- Mommaerts, Elizabeth, 9: 1585
- Mona Lisa* (Leonardo da Vinci), 6: 1138
- Mondale, Walter, 4: 712
- Monet, Claude**, 7: 1320–22, 1321 (ill.); 8: 1572, 1573
- Möngkë, Mongol khan, 6: 1110
- Mongols
 Genghis Khan, 5: 784–86
 Kublai Khan, 6: 1109–12
- Monk, Thelonious**, 7: 1323–24, 1324 (ill.)
- Monks
 Buddhist, 2: 312
 Erasmus, Desiderius, 4: 683–85
- Monologues, dramatic, 2: 303–4
- Monomaniac, in literature, 1: 165
- Monopolies
 Microsoft, 4: 771
 Standard Oil, 9: 1605–6
- Monroe, Marilyn**, 7: 1325–27, 1326 (ill.)
- Montana, Joe**, 7: 1327–29, 1328 (ill.)
- Montesquieu**, 7: 1329–31, 1330 (ill.)
- Montessori, Maria**, 7: 1331–33, 1332 (ill.)
- Montgomery (Alabama) bus boycott, 1: 5
- Montgomery Improvement Association (MIA), 1: 5; 6: 1094–95
- Monticello, 6: 994, 997
- Montmartre (Paris), 10: 1830
- Montpelier, Virginia, 7: 1193, 1197
- Moon landing (first), 1: 104–5
- Moore, Archie, 7: 1232
- The Moor's Last Sigh* (Rushdie), 9: 1651
- Morality
 Bennett, William, 2: 206
 Nietzsche, Friedrich, 8: 1389–90
 Spock, Benjamin, 9: 1742
- More, Thomas**, 7: 1334–36, 1335 (ill.)
- Morgan, J. P., 9: 1606
- Morris, Desmond, 1: 24
- Morris, George S., 4: 595
- Morrison, Jim**, 7: 1337 (ill.), 1338–40
- Morrison, Toni**, 7: 1338–40, 1339 (ill.)
- Morrow (Lindbergh), Anne Spencer, 6: 1155, 1156
- Morse, Samuel F. B.**, 2: 269; 7: 1341–43, 1342 (ill.)
- “Mortimer Mouse,” 4: 611
- Moscone, George, 4: 706; 7: 1300, 1301
- Moses**, 7: 1343–45, 1344 (ill.)
- Moses, Grandma**, 7: 1345–47, 1346 (ill.)
- Mother Teresa**, 7: 1347–50, 1349 (ill.)
- Motion, 7: 1382–86
- “Motion of the Solar System in Space” (Herschel), 5: 894
- Motion picture camera, 4: 653
- Motorcycles, Honda, 5: 929
- Motown
 Gordy, Berry, Jr., 5: 813–15
 Jackson Five, 6: 987
 Robinson, Smokey, 9: 1601–4
 Ross, Diana, 9: 1631–33
- Moulin, Jean, 1: 171
- Moulin Rouge cabaret (Paris), 10: 1830
- Mount Everest (Nepal), 5: 898–99, 900
- Mountaineers, 5: 898–900
- Movement National Congolais (MNC) Party, 6: 1179
- Movie directors. *See* Film directors
- Movies. *See also* Films
 Edison, Thomas, 4: 653
- Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus**, 7: 1350–53, 1351 (ill.)
- Mu meson (muon), 1: 66
- Mubarak, Hosni**, 2: 263; 7: 1353–55, 1354 (ill.)
- Muckrakers
 Lloyd and Tarbell, 9: 1606
 Sinclair, Upton, 9: 1722–24
- Mudd, Samuel, 2: 250
- Muhammad**, 7: 1355–58, 1357 (ill.)
- Muhammad, Benjamin Chavis. *See* Chavis
 Muhammad, Benjamin
- Muhammad, Elijah**, 4: 699; 7: 1211–12, 1213, 1358–60, 1359 (ill.)

- Muhammad, Sultan of Khiva, 5: 785
 Muhammad, (Wallace) Warith Deen, 4: 699–700;
 7: 1360
Muir, John, 7: 1360–62, 1361 (ill.)
 Multiculturalism, 9: 1684
 Mumford, Catharine, 2: 251, 252
Munch, Edvard, 7: 1362–64, 1363 (ill.)
 Murals
 Miró, Joan, 7: 1318
 Rivera, Diego, 9: 1594–95
Murder at the Vicarage (Christie), 3: 471
Murdoch, Rupert, 7: 1364–66, 1365 (ill.)
Murphy (Beckett), 2: 190
 Muse française, 5: 958
 Musharraf, Pervez, 2: 220
 Musical instruments, 9: 1769–71
 Musical theater
 Astaire, Fred, 1: 116–17
 Berlin, Irving, 2: 210
 Hammerstein, Oscar, 5: 849–51
 Porter, Cole, 8: 1505–7
 Rodgers, Richard, 9: 1610–12
 Sondheim, Stephen, 9: 1732–34
 Musicians and music
 Armstrong, Louis, 1: 101–2
 Bach, Johann Sebastian, 1: 141–43
 Baez, Joan, 1: 147–50
 Basie, Count, 1: 177–79
 Beatles, 2: 181–85
 Beethoven, Ludwig van, 2: 192–94
 Berlin, Irving, 2: 208–10
 Berry, Chuck, 2: 213–15
 Brahms, Johannes, 2: 271–73
 Brown, James, 2: 291–94
 Calloway, Cab, 2: 342–44
 Casals, Pablo, 3: 386–88
 Charles, Ray, 3: 430–33
 Chopin, Frédéric, 3: 464–66
 Cole, Nat “King,” 3: 492–94
 Copland, Aaron, 3: 513–15
 Davis, Miles, 3: 559–60
 Debussy, Claude, 4: 569–71
 Ellington, Duke, 4: 678–80
 Gillespie, Dizzy, 5: 792–94
 Goodman, Benny, 5: 807–9
 Guthrie, Woody, 5: 838–41
 Handel, George Frideric, 5: 854–57
 Hendrix, Jimi, 5: 878–80
 Jackson, Michael, 6: 986–89
 Jones, Quincy, 6: 1029–32
 King, B. B., 6: 1086–89
 Lloyd Webber, Andrew, 6: 1161–63
 Mendelssohn, Felix, 7: 1289–92
 Monk, Thelonious, 7: 1323–24
 Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus, 7: 1350–53
 Parker, Charlie, 8: 1445–47
 Previn, André, 8: 1520–22
 Robinson, Smokey, 9: 1601–4
 Rolling Stones, 9: 1618–21
 Selena, 9: 1698–1701
 Strauss, Johann, 9: 1771–72
 Stravinsky, Igor, 9: 1773–76
 Tchaikovsky, Peter Ilych, 10: 1792–95
 Vivaldi, Antonio, 10: 1877–78
 Wagner, Richard, 10: 1889–91
 Muskie, Edmund S., 1: 37
 Muslims, 7: 1320–21
 Ali, Muhammad, 1: 48, 49
 Arafat, Yasir, 1: 86–89
 Farrakhan, Louis, 4: 698–701
 Khomeini, Ayatollah, 6: 1081–83
 Malcolm X, 7: 1210–14
 Muhammad, 7: 1355–58
 Muhammad, Elijah, 7: 1358–60
 al-Rashid, Harun, 8: 1555–57
 Muslims of India, 4: 761
Mussolini, Benito, 7: 1367–68, 1368 (ill.); 9: 1697
 Mustang (Ford), 5: 968
Mutiny on the Bounty (film), 2: 279
 Muybridge, Eadweard, 1: 145
My Antonia (Cather), 3: 397
My Darling, My Hamburger (Zindel), 10: 1989
 “My Mammy” (song), 6: 1026
 “My Way” (song), 9: 1722
 Myanmar, 1: 130–32
 Mycostatin (nystatin), 2: 297–99
 Myerson Plan, 7: 1285
Myra Breckenridge (Vidal), 10: 1873
 Mystery writers
 Christie, Agatha, 3: 469–71
 James, P. D., 6: 991–93
 “Mystic hexagram,” 8: 1448
 Mystics, 8: 1550–52
The Myth of Sisyphus (Camus), 2: 350
- ## N
- NAACP. *See* National Association for the
 Advancement of Colored People (NAACP)
Nabokov, Vladimir, 7: 1371–73, 1372 (ill.)
Nader, Ralph, 7: 1373–76, 1374 (ill.)
The Naked and the Dead (Mailer), 7: 1206
 Nalundasan, Julio, 7: 1233
 Namphy, Henri, 1: 94
 Napoleon III, 10: 1871

- Napoleon Bonaparte**, 6: 1114–15; 7: **1376–79**, 1377 (ill.)
- Narrative of Sojourner Truth* (Truth and Gilbert), 10: 1842
- NASA. *See* National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA)
- Nash, Ogdan**, 7: **1379–81**, 1380 (ill.)
- Nation of Islam (Black Muslims)
- Chavis Muhammad, Benjamin, 3: 446
- Farrakhan, Louis, 4: 698–701
- Malcolm X, 7: 1211–13
- Muhammad, Elijah, 7: 1211–12, 1213, 1358–60
- National Advisory Committee for Aeronautics (NACA), 1: 103
- National Advisory Committee for Women, 1: 9
- National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA), 1: 103–5; 10: 1883
- Armstrong, Neil, 1: 103–5
- Jemison, Mae C., 6: 998–99
- Ride, Sally, 9: 1586–87
- von Braun, Wernher, 6: 998–99
- National Assembly (France), 9: 1599–1600
- National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), 1: 5
- Bond, Julian, 2: 246
- Bunche, Ralph, 2: 314
- Chavis Muhammad, Benjamin, 3: 445–46
- Evers, Medgar, 4: 691–93
- Hooks, Benjamin, 5: 934–35
- King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1094
- McDaniel, Hattie, 7: 1269
- Mfume, Kweisi, 7: 1294–95
- Walker, Madame C. J., 10: 1896
- National Cash Register Company (NCR), 6: 1079
- National Convention (France), 9: 1600
- National Council of Negro Women, 2: 217
- National Endowment for the Humanities (NEH), 2: 204, 205
- National Farm Workers Association (NFWA), 3: 437
- National Fascist Party (Italy), 7: 1368
- National Front Party (Iran), 8: 1440
- National Geographic Society, 2: 199
- National Guard, 2: 327
- National Humanities Center, 2: 204, 205
- National League for Democracy (NLD), 1: 131
- National Negro Business League, 10: 1904
- National Organization for Women (NOW), 4: 740
- National Party (South Africa), 2: 255; 4: 582–84
- National Socialist Germany Workers Party
- See* Nazi Party
- National Star* (tabloid), 7: 1365
- National Theatre (England), 8: 1424
- National Traffic and Motor Vehicle Safety Act (1966), 7: 1375
- National Velvet* (film), 10: 1790
- National Woman Suffrage Association, 5: 951; 9: 1749
- Native Americans policy, 6: 982
- Native Son* (Wright), 10: 1976
- Natural Born Killers* (film), 9: 1764
- Natural history
- Audubon, John James, 1: 125–27
- Hirohito, 5: 905
- The Natural* (Malamud), 7: 1209
- Natural resources, 9: 1630
- Naturalists
- Adamson, Joy, 1: 22–25
- Audubon, John James, 1: 125–27
- Darwin, Charles, 3: 554–56
- Linnaeus, Carl, 6: 1157–58
- Muir, John, 7: 1360–62
- The Nature of the Chemical Bond and the Structure of Molecules and Crystals* (Pauling), 8: 1455
- Navigators
- Drake, Francis, 4: 632–34
- Vespucci, Amerigo, 10: 1867–69
- Nazi Party, 1: 91–92; 9: 1678–81
- Barbie, Klaus, 1: 170–73
- Geiger, Hans, 5: 781
- Hitler, Adolf, 5: 910–12
- Lindbergh, Charles, 6: 1156
- Riefenstahl, Leni, 9: 1589
- Stein, Edith, 9: 1751
- Necker, Jacques, 7: 1239
- Neele, Christian Gottlob, 2: 192
- Nefertiti**, 7: **1381–82**, 1382 (ill.)
- Negro World* (newspaper), 4: 768
- Nehru, Jawaharlal, 4: 755; 6: 1095
- Nerves, 8: 1461, 1462
- Netherlands, 9: 1751
- Neurology, 4: 736–37
- Neutrality, 6: 996
- Neutron physics, 4: 709
- “The New Colossus” (Lazarus), 6: 1121
- New Comedy (Greek), 1: 97–98
- New Deal programs, 3: 440; 4: 639; 9: 1617, 1623, 1682
- New England
- Frost, Robert, 4: 741–44
- Mather, Cotton, 7: 1255
- New England Woman Suffrage Association, 5: 951
- New Fairy Tales and Stories* (Andersen), 1: 64
- New Guinea, 7: 1279
- New Hospital for Women and Children (London), 1: 68–69

- The New Industrial State* (Galbraith), 4: 747
- New Jersey
 Barton, Clara, 1: 175–76
 Penn, William, 8: 1471
- A New Life* (Malamud), 7: 1209–10
- New Mexico
 Billy the Kid, 2: 223
 Chavez, Dennis, 3: 438–40
 O’Keeffe, Georgia, 8: 1420–21
- The New Negro: An Interpretation* (Locke), 6: 1165
- New Testament, 6: 1000–1001
- New World, 10: 1867–69
- New York
 Anthony, Susan B., 1: 79–81
 Astor, John Jacob, 1: 118–20
 Burr, Aaron, 2: 320–21
 Clinton, Hillary Rodham, 3: 489
 Kennedy, Robert, 6: 1074
 Roosevelt, Franklin D., 9: 1624–28
 Roosevelt, Theodore, 9: 1628–29
 Sanger, Margaret, 9: 1674–75
 Stanton, Elizabeth Cady, 9: 1747–49
- New York City Ballet, 1: 156; 10: 1787
- New York City Opera, 9: 1715, 1716
- New York Giants, 7: 1262–64
- New York Mets, 9: 1654
- New York Morning Journal* (newspaper), 5: 866
- New York Philharmonic, 2: 211
- New York Post* (newspaper), 7: 1366
- New York Rangers, 5: 835
- New York Shakespeare Festival, 6: 1028, 1029
- New York State Married Woman’s Property and Guardianship Law (1860), 1: 80
- New York World* (newspaper), 5: 866; 8: 1532
- New York Yankees, 4: 609–10; 6: 991; 9: 1653
- Mantle, Mickey, 7: 1224–26
- Ruth, Babe, 9: 1651–53
- New Yorker*
 Capote, Truman, 2: 355
 Cheever, John, 3: 447
 Nash, Ogden, 7: 1380
 Thurber, James, 10: 1819
 Updike, John, 10: 1855–56
 White, E. B., 10: 1932–33
- New York–Paris flight, 6: 1154–55
- New Zealand, 5: 898–900
- Newborns (health evaluation), 1: 83–84
- Newcomen, Thomas, 10: 1911
- The Newcomes* (Thackeray), 10: 1803
- Newport Folk Festival, 1: 148
- News broadcasters
 Bradley, Ed, 2: 266–67
 Cronkite, Walter, 3: 532–35
 Walters, Barbara, 10: 1897–1900
- News Corporation Limited, 7: 1365
- News of the World* (newspaper), 7: 1365
- Newspaper publishers
 Graham, Katharine, 5: 824–26
 Hearst, William Randolph, 5: 865–68
 Murdoch, Rupert, 7: 1364–66
 Pulitzer, Joseph, 8: 1531–33
- Newspaper writers
 Adams, Samuel, 1: 21
 Hughes, Langston, 5: 956
- Newsweek* (magazine), 5: 825
- Newton, Isaac**, 7: **1382–86**, 1383 (ill.)
- NeXT computer, 6: 1009–10
- Nguyen Sinh Cung. *See* Ho Chi Minh
- Niagara movement, 10: 1905
- Nicaragua, 4: 592; 8: 1513, 1560
- Nicholas I, Emperor of Russia, 1: 41; 8: 1536
- Nietzsche, Friedrich**, 8: **1387–90**, 1388 (ill.)
- Nigeria, 1: 10
- Night* (Wiesel), 10: 1938
- Night and Day* (Miró), 7: 1318
- Night in St. Cloud* (Munch), 7: 1363
- “*Night Watch*” (Rembrandt), 8: 1567
- Nightingale, Florence**, 8: **1390–92**, 1391 (ill.)
- Nineteen Eighty-four* (Orwell), 8: 1432
- Nineteenth Amendment, 1: 81
- Ninety-Five Theses (Luther), 6: 1182–83
- Ninth Symphony (“Ode to Joy”) (Beethoven), 2: 194
- Nitroglycerin, 8: 1397
- Nixon* (film), 9: 1764
- Nixon, Richard**, 1: 9; 8: **1392–96**, 1395 (ill.), 1401
- Agnew, Spiro, 1: 32–33
- Buchanan, Pat, 2: 306
- Burger, Warren, 2: 316
- Bush, George, 2: 324
- Kennedy, Edward, 6: 1062–63
- Kennedy, John F., 6: 1067
- Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1106
- “Nkomati Accord,” 2: 257
- Nobel, Alfred**, 8: **1397–98**, 1398 (ill.)
- Nobel Prize, 8: 1397–98
- Nobel Prize winners
 Addams, Jane, 1: 25–27
- Anderson, Carl David, 1: 64–66
- Annan, Kofi, 1: 76–79
- Aung San Suu Kyi, 1: 130–32
- Baltimore, David, 1: 161–64
- Banting, Frederick, 1: 168–70
- Beckett, Samuel, 2: 189–92
- Bellow, Saul, 2: 202–4
- Bloch, Konrad, 2: 237–39
- Buck, Pearl S., 2: 308–9
- Bunche, Ralph, 2: 312–14

- Camus, Albert, 2: 349–51
 Carter, Jimmy, 3: 379–83
 Chandrasekhar, Subrahmanyan, 3: 419–21
 Curie, Marie, 3: 538–41
 Dalai Lama, 3: 546–49
 de Klerk, F. W., 4: 581–84
 Einstein, Albert, 4: 654–57
 Eliot, T. S., 4: 668–72
 Faulkner, William, 4: 701–4
 Fermi, Enrico, 4: 707–10
 Golding, William, 5: 800–801
 Heisenberg, Werner, 5: 868–70
 Hemingway, Ernest, 5: 875–77
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1094–97
 Kipling, Rudyard, 6: 1101–3
 Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1104–7
 Lee, Tsung-Dao, 6: 1129–31
 Lewis, Sinclair, 6: 1144–45
 Mahfouz, Naguib, 7: 1203–5
 Mandela, Nelson, 4: 584; 7: 1216–19
 Menchú, Rigoberta, 7: 1286–89
 Morrison, Toni, 7: 1338–40
 Mother Teresa, 7: 1347–50
 Pauling, Linus Carl, 8: 1453–56
 Pavlov, Ivan Petrovich, 8: 1459–62
 Roosevelt, Theodore, 9: 1624–28
 Sakharov, Andrei, 9: 1662–64
 Shaw, George Bernard, 9: 1706–8
 Singer, Isaac Bashevis, 9: 1724–26
 Steinbeck, John, 9: 1755–57
 Tutu, Desmond, 10: 1847–50
 Yeats, William Butler, 10: 1979–82
- Nogi, Maresuke, 5: 905
- Noguchi, Isamu**, 8: 1398–1400, 1400 (ill.)
- Non-Euclidian geometry, 4: 777
- Nonviolent civil rights movement
 Abernathy, Ralph, 1: 6
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1094–97
- Noonan, Fred, 4: 645
- Norgay, Tenzing, 5: 898–99
- Noriega, Manuel**, 8: 1401–3, 1402 (ill.), 1513
- Normal distribution (Gaussian law of error), 4: 777
- Norman, Jessye**, 8: 1404–6, 1405 (ill.)
- North Africa (World War II), 4: 658
- North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO),
 4: 658–59, 660
- North Carolina
 Chavis Muhammad, Benjamin, 3: 445–46
 Dole, Elizabeth, 4: 613–16
- North of Boston* (Frost), 4: 743
- North Vietnam, 6: 1068. *See also* Vietnam War
- Northampton Association, 10: 1842
- Northanger Abbey* (Austen), 1: 134
- Northern Cheyenne tribe, 2: 346
- Northern Ireland, 2: 234
- Nostradamus**, 8: 1406–9, 1407 (ill.)
- Not without Laughter* (Hughes), 5: 956
- Notes from the Underground* (Dostoevsky), 4: 625
- Notre Dame de Paris* (Hugo), 5: 958
- Novelists
- Achebe, Chinua, 1: 10–11
 Alcott, Louisa May, 1: 39–41
 Allende, Isabel, 1: 52–54
 Alvarez, Julia, 1: 54–56
 Andersen, Hans Christian, 1: 62–64
 Atwood, Margaret, 1: 120–22
 Austen, Jane, 1: 132–35
 Balzac, Honoré de, 1: 164–66
 Beckett, Samuel, 2: 189–92
 Blume, Judy, 2: 239–41
 Brontë, Charlotte, 2: 283–84
 Brontë, Emily, 2: 284–86
 Buck, Pearl S., 2: 308–10
 Camus, Albert, 2: 349–51
 Cervantes, Miguel de, 3: 408–11
 Conrad, Joseph, 3: 508–10
 Defoe, Daniel, 4: 574–76
 Dickens, Charles, 4: 600–603
 Dostoevsky, Fyodor, 4: 624–26
 Dumas, Alexandre, 4: 634–35
 Dunbar, Paul Laurence, 4: 636–37
 Eliot, George, 4: 665–68
 Faulkner, William, 4: 701–4
 Fitzgerald, F. Scott, 4: 718–21
 Flaubert, Gustave, 4: 721–23
 García Márquez, Gabriel, 4: 762–64
 Greene, Graham, 5: 831–33
 Haley, Alex, 5: 843–46
 Hardy, Thomas, 5: 857–59
 Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 5: 862–65
 Heller, Joseph, 5: 870–72
 Hemingway, Ernest, 5: 875–77
 Hinton, S. E., 5: 900–902
 Hughes, Langston, 5: 954–57
 Hugo, Victor, 5: 957–60
 Hurston, Zora Neale, 5: 960–62
 James, P. D., 6: 991–93
 Joyce, James, 6: 1038–39
 Kafka, Franz, 6: 1047–49
 Kerouac, Jack, 6: 1076–78
 King, Stephen, 6: 1098–1100
 Kipling, Rudyard, 6: 1101–3
 Lewis, C. S., 6: 1139–41
 Lewis, Sinclair, 6: 1144–45
 London, Jack, 6: 1168–70
 Mahfouz, Naguib, 7: 1203–5

- Mailer, Norman, 7: 1205–8
 Malamud, Bernard, 7: 1208–10
 McMillan, Terry, 7: 1273–75
 Miller, Henry, 7: 1308–10
 Morrison, Toni, 7: 1338–40
 Nabokov, Vladimir, 7: 1371–73
 Oates, Joyce Carol, 8: 1413–16
 Orwell, George, 8: 1430–32
 Plath, Sylvia, 8: 1483–85
 Porter, Katherine Anne, 8: 1507–9
 Proulx, E. Annie, 8: 1524–26
 Proust, Marcel, 8: 1526–28
 Remarque, Erich Maria, 8: 1564–65
 Rowling, J. K., 9: 1641–43
 Rushdie, Salman, 9: 1649–51
 Salinger, J. D., 9: 1664–67
 Scott, Walter, 9: 1693–95
 Shelley, Mary Wollstonecraft, 9: 1708–11
 Sinclair, Upton, 9: 1722–24
 Singer, Isaac Bashevis, 9: 1724–26
 Steinbeck, John, 9: 1755–57
 Stevenson, Robert Louis, 9: 1757–59
 Stoker, Bram, 9: 1759–61
 Stowe, Harriet Beecher, 9: 1766–69
 Tan, Amy, 10: 1787–89
 Thackeray, William Makepeace, 10: 1801–4
 Tolkien, J. R. R., 10: 1824–26
 Tolstoy, Leo, 10: 1827–29
 Twain, Mark, 10: 1850–52
 Updike, John, 10: 1855–57
 Verne, Jules, 10: 1864–67
 Vidal, Gore, 10: 1872–74
 Vonnegut, Kurt, 10: 1884–87
 Walker, Alice, 10: 1891–94
 Welty, Eudora, 10: 1925–27
 Wharton, Edith, 10: 1928–29
 White, E. B., 10: 1932–34
 Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40
 Wilde, Oscar, 10: 1940–42
 Wilder, Laura Ingalls, 10: 1943–45
 Wilder, Thornton, 10: 1946–48
 Williams, Tennessee, 10: 1950
 Woolf, Virginia, 10: 1962–65
 Wright, Richard, 10: 1975–77
 Zindel, Paul, 10: 1987–89
Novum instrumentum (Erasmus), 4: 685
 Nuclear disarmament and weapons reduction
 Gore, Al, 5: 816
 Sakharov, Andrei, 9: 1664
 Nuclear fission, 4: 709–10
 Nuclear test ban, 6: 1068
 Nuclear test ban treaty, 8: 1455
 Nuclear winter, 9: 1661–62
 Nullification, 6: 981, 982
 Numbers, theory of, 4: 776
Nureyev, Rudolf, 8: 1409–11, 1410 (ill.)
 Nurses and nursing
 Earhart, Amelia, 4: 644
 Nightingale, Florence, 8: 1390–92
 Sanger, Margaret, 9: 1673–75
Nuts (film), 9: 1778
 Nystatin (Mycostatin), 2: 297–99
- O**
- O Pioneers!* (Cather), 3: 397
 Oakes, Richard, 7: 1222
 Oakland Athletics, 6: 989–90
Oates, Joyce Carol, 8: 1413–16, 1414 (ill.)
 Obote, Apolo Milton, 1: 60–61
 Obscenity charges, 6: 1039
 Occhialini, G. P. S., 1: 65
 Occultism, 6: 1045
O'Connor, Sandra Day, 8: 1416–19, 1417 (ill.), 1559
 Octavia, 3: 482
 Octavian, 3: 482–83; 5: 891, 892; 7: 1242. *See also* Augustus; Second Triumvirate
 October Revolution, 6: 1135
The Odd Couple (Simon), 9: 1717, 1718
 “Ode to Joy” (Ninth Symphony) (Beethoven), 2: 194
Odyssey (Homer), 5: 926–27; 6: 1039
Oedipus (Sophocles), 9: 1737
Oedipus Rex (Sophocles), 9: 1736
Of Love and Shadows (Allende), 1: 53
Of Mice and Men (Steinbeck), 9: 1756
 Offenbach, Jacques, 9: 1772
 Office of National Drug Control Policy, 2: 206
 Ohio
 Wright brothers, 10: 1969–71
 O'Horgan, Tom, 7: 1299
 Oil industry
 Bush, George, 2: 323
 Getty, J. Paul, 5: 786–87
 Pahlavi, Mohammad Reza Shah, 8: 1440
 Rockefeller, John, 9: 1604–6
 Ojibwa tribe, 2: 200
O'Keefe, Georgia, 8: 1420–22, 1421 (ill.)
 Oklahoma
 Mankiller, Wilma, 7: 1221–23
Oklahoma (musical), 5: 851; 9: 1612
 Old Comedy (Greek), 1: 96–97
 “Old Ironsides” (Holmes), 5: 921
The Old Man and the Sea (Hemingway), 5: 877

- Old Testament, 7: 1343–45
 Oldham, Andrew Loog, 9: 1618
 Olduvai Gorge, Tanzania, 6: 1123
 Oliver, Joe “King,” 1: 101
Oliver Twist (Dickens), 4: 601–2
Olivier, Laurence, 8: **1422–24**, 1423 (ill.)
 Olympias, Queen of Macedon, 1: 43–44
 Olympic Games
 Ali, Muhammad, 1: 49
 Ashe, Arthur, 1: 111
 Bird, Larry, 2: 226
 Gretzky, Wayne, 5: 836
 Johnson, Magic, 6: 1020–22
 Jordan, Michael, 6: 1036
 Lewis, Carl, 6: 1141–43
 Owens, Jesse, 8: 1435–37
 Riefenstahl, Leni, 9: 1590
 Rudolph, Wilma, 9: 1646–48
 Thorpe, Jim, 10: 1816–19
 “On Quantum Mechanical Interpretation of Kinematic and Mechanical Relations” (Heisenberg), 5: 869
On Revolution (Arendt), 1: 92
On the Beautiful Danube (Strauss), 9: 1772
 “On the Pulse of the Morning” (Angelou), 1: 75
On the Road (Kerouac), 6: 1078
 Onassis, Aristotle, 2: 342; 8: 1427
Onassis, Jackie Kennedy, 6: 1066, 1070; 8: **1425–27**, 1426 (ill.)
One Hundred Years of Solitude (Cien años de soledad) (García Márquez), 4: 762–63
 “One O’Clock Jump,” 1: 178
One Writer’s Beginnings (Welty), 10: 1926–27
O’Neill, Eugene, 8: **1428–29**, 1429 (ill.)
 Onyx Club (New York), 5: 793
 Open-heart surgery, 1: 173–74
 Opera singers
 Anderson, Marian, 1: 69–71
 Callas, Maria, 2: 340–42
 Norman, Jessye, 8: 1404–6
 Pavarotti, Luciano, 8: 1456–59
 Price, Leontyne, 8: 1522–24
 Sills, Beverly, 9: 1714–16
 Operatic composers and librettists
 Handel, George, 5: 855–56
 Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus, 7: 1352–52
 Rousseau, Jean Jacques, 9: 1636–37
 Stein, Edith, 9: 1753, 1754
 Wagner, Richard, 10: 1889–91
 Operation Desert Shield, 8: 1513
 Operation PUSH (People United to Save Humanity), 6: 984
The Operations of the Geometrical and Military Compass (Galileo), 4: 750–51
 Operettas, 9: 1772
 Opinion polls, 4: 753–54
The Oprah Winfrey Show (TV show), 10: 1956
Opticks (Newton), 7: 1385
 Optics, 7: 1382–86
Optics (Euclid), 4: 688
Opus publications (Bacon), 1: 147
 Oratorios, 5: 856
 Orators
 Cicero, 3: 475–78
 Henry, Patrick, 5: 883–86
 Jackson, Jesse, 6: 983–86
 Lincoln, Abraham, 6: 1150–54
 Webster, Daniel, 10: 1916–19
 Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40
Orators (Auden), 1: 123
Oresteia (Aeschylus), 1: 30
 Organists
 Bach, Johann Sebastian, 1: 141–43
 Handel, George Frideric, 5: 854–57
 Organization of African Unity, 9: 1698
 Organized crime, 2: 352–54; 9: 1721
Orient Express (Greene), 5: 832
Origin of Species (Darwin), 3: 554
 Origins of life, 9: 1661
The Origins of Totalitarianism (Arendt), 1: 92
 Ornithology, 1: 125–27
Orpheus (ballet), 1: 156
 Orthomolecular medicine, 8: 1455–56
Orwell, George, 8: **1430–32**, 1431 (ill.)
 Osawatomie, Kansas, 2: 295
 Osiander, Andrew, 3: 512
 Oslo Accords, 1: 88
 Oswald, Lee Harvey, 6: 1069
The Other Side/El Otro Lado (Alvarez), 1: 56
Other Voices, Other Rooms (Capote), 2: 355
Our American Cousin (play), 2: 250
Our Town (Wilder), 10: 1947
The Outsider (Wright), 10: 1977
The Outsiders (Hinton), 5: 901
 “Over the Rainbow” (song), 4: 765
Ovid, 8: **1432–34**, 1434 (ill.)
Owens, Jesse, 8: **1435–37**, 1436 (ill.); 9: 1590
 Oxford Group (Auden Generation), 1: 123, 124
 Oxford University, 9: 1579; 10: 1825
- ## P
- Pacific Northwest, 1: 118–19
Pacific Overtures, 9: 1733
 Pacifism, 8: 1565
 Pacifists. *See* Peace activists

Pahlavi, Mohammad Reza Shah, Shah of Iran,
6: 1081–82; 8: **1439–41**, 1440 (ill.)

Painters

Adamson, Joy, 1: 22–25
Atwood, Margaret, 1: 122
Bacon, Francis, 1: 143–45
Blake, William, 2: 234–37
Botticelli, Sandro, 2: 257–59
Cassatt, Mary, 3: 388–90
Cézanne, Paul, 3: 411–14
Chagall, Marc, 3: 414–16
Dali, Salvador, 3: 549–51
Degas, Edgar, 4: 576–78
Gauguin, Paul, 4: 773–75
Kandinsky, Wassily, 6: 1050–51
Leonardo da Vinci, 6: 1136–39
Lichtenstein, Roy, 6: 1146–47
Manet, Édouard, 7: 1219–21
Matisse, Henri, 7: 1255–58
Michelangelo, 7: 1295–98
Monet, Claude, 7: 1320–22
Moses, Grandma, 7: 1345–47
Munch, Edvard, 7: 1362–64
O’Keeffe, Georgia, 8: 1420–22
Picasso, Pablo, 8: 1479–83
Rembrandt, 8: 1566–68
Renoir, Pierre Auguste, 8: 1571–74
Rivera, Diego, 9: 1593–96
Rockwell, Norman, 9: 1607–9
Rossetti, Dante Gabriel, 9: 1634–35
Rubens, Peter Paul, 9: 1643–46
Toulouse-Lautrec, Henri de, 10: 1830–32
Van Gogh, Vincent, 10: 1859–62
Vermeer, Jan, 10: 1862–64
Whistler, James, 10: 1929–32
A Pair of Blue Eyes (Hardy), 5: 858
Pakistan, 2: 218–20; 4: 755, 761
Pale Horse, Pale Rider (Porter), 8: 1508
Paleontology, 5: 821–24
Palestine, 1: 86–89; 2: 195, 314; 7: 1285
Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO), 1: 86–88
Palestinian National Authority (PNA), 1: 88, 89
Palimpsest: A Memoir (Vidal), 10: 1873
Palm Sunday (Christianity), 6: 1001
Palmer, Arnold, 8: **1441–43**, 1442 (ill.)
Palomar Ballroom (Los Angeles), 5: 808
Panama, 8: 1401–3
Panama Canal, 9: 1630
Pan-African movement, 9: 1698
Panchen Lama, 2: 312
Pancreas, 1: 169–70
Panda’s “thumb,” 5: 822
Panic of 1837, 10: 1918

Paracelsus (Robert Browning), 2: 303

Paracelsus, Philippus Aureolus, 8: **1443–45**,
1444 (ill.)

Paralysis, 8: 1562–63

“Paranoic-Critical method” (Dali), 3: 550

Parenting, 2: 241

Paris Accords, 8: 1497

Paris, France

Baker, Josephine, 1: 153–54

Degas, Edgar, 4: 577–78

Picasso, Pablo, 8: 1480

Stein, Gertrude, 9: 1753

Toulouse-Lautrec, Henri de, 10: 1830

Van Gogh, Vincent, 10: 1860

Whistler, James, 10: 1930

Wright, Richard, 10: 1977

Parker, Charlie, 5: 792–93; 8: **1445–47**, 1446 (ill.)

Parker, Tom, 8: 1519

Parkinson’s disease

Ali, Muhammad, 1: 49

Reno, Janet, 8: 1571

Parks, Rosa, 1: 5; 6: 1094

Parody, 10: 1933

Parr, Catherine, 5: 882

Parthian War, 7: 1236–37, 1242

Particle physics

Anderson, Carl David, 1: 64–66

Lee, Tsung-Dao, 6: 1129–31

Pascal, Blaise, 8: **1447–48**, 1448 (ill.)

Passion week (Christianity), 6: 1001–2

Pasteur, Louis, 6: 1159, 1160; 8: **1450–53**,
1451 (ill.)

Pasteurization, 8: 1451

Patericke, Simon, 7: 1191

Patrol torpedo (PT) boat, 6: 1065

Paul Revere’s Ride (Longfellow), 8: 1575

Pauli, Wolfgang, 4: 708

Pauline: A Fragment of a Confession (Robert
Browning), 2: 302–3

Pauling, Linus Carl, 8: **1453–56**, 1454 (ill.)

Pavarotti, Luciano, 4: 618; 8: **1456–59**, 1457 (ill.)

Pavlov, Ivan Petrovich, 8: **1459–62**, 1460 (ill.)

Pavlova, Anna, 8: **1462–64**, 1463 (ill.)

Peace activists

Addams, Jane, 1: 25–27

King, Coretta Scott, 6: 1091–94

Pauling, Linus Carl, 8: 1455

Peace of St. Germain, 7: 1282

Peacock, Mildred (literary character), 7: 1274

“Peanuts” (comic strip), 9: 1687–90

Peasants

Chinese, 7: 1228

Russian, 1: 41–42

- Pediatric medicine
 Elders, Joycelyn, 4: 663
 Spock, Benjamin, 9: 1740–43
- Pedrarias (Arias de Avila, Pedro), 4: 592
- Pei, I. M.**, 8: 1464–67, 1465 (ill.)
- Pelé**, 8: 1467–69, 1468 (ill.)
- Pelléas et Mélisande* (opera), 4: 570–71
- Peloponnesian Wars, 1: 97; 8: 1486
- Pendennis* (Thackeray), 10: 1803
- Pender, Bob, 5: 830
- Penicillin, 2: 298
- Peninsular War, 7: 1378
- Penn, William**, 8: 1469–72, 1470 (ill.)
- Pennsylvania
 Penn, William, 8: 1471
- Pennsylvania Assembly, 4: 732–33
- Penrose, Roger, 5: 862
- The Pensées* (Pascal), 8: 1449
- “Pentagon Papers,” 5: 825
- Pentecostal Church, 1: 157, 158
- People’s Republic of China, 4: 587–89; 6: 1106;
 7: 1226–29; 8: 1395; 9: 1779–83. *See also* China;
 Republic of China (Taiwan)
- People’s Republic of Kampuchea, 8: 1498, 1516
- Pepin, King of the Franks, 3: 425
- Peptides, 8: 1455
- “Percussive movements” (modern dance), 5: 827
- Performing Work (*Laborem Exercens*) (John Paul II),
 6: 1015
- Perfume, 6: 1108–9
- Pergamon (Asia Minor), 4: 748–49
- Pericles**, 8: 1472–74, 1473 (ill.)
- Perinatology, 1: 81–84
- Peripatetic School (Lyceum), 1: 99
- Perkins Institute for the Blind (Boston,
 Massachusetts), 6: 1057
- Perón, Eva**, 8: 1474–77, 1475 (ill.)
- Persia, 1: 45–46; 8: 1500, 1555–57
- Persian Communist Party, 8: 1440
- Persian Gulf War
 Bush, George, 2: 325
 Cheney, Dick, 3: 453
 Hussein, Saddam, 5: 965
 Powell, Colin, 8: 1513–14
- The Persian Letters* (Montesquieu), 7: 1330–31
- The Persians* (Aeschylus), 1: 29
- Personal computers, 6: 1009
- Personalities, 6: 1044–45
- Perspective, 6: 1136–39
- Persuasion* (Austen), 1: 135
- Peru, 4: 592–93; 5: 896
- Pesticides, 3: 379; 7: 1374
- Pétain, Henri Philippe, 4: 579–80
- Peter, Emperor of Russia, 3: 401–2
- Petrashvsky Circle, 4: 624–25
- Phaedo* (Plato), 8: 1486–87
- The Phantom Menace* (film), 6: 1178
- Pharaoh, Tutankhamen, 10: 1845–47
- Phenomenology, 9: 1750
- Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, 1: 107
 Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 732
 Philadelphia Centennial Exposition, 2: 198
- Philadelphia 76ers, 3: 418
- The Philadelphia Story* (film), 5: 889–90
- Philadelphia Warriors, 3: 417
- Philanthropists. *See also* Humanitarians
 Carnegie, Andrew, 3: 367–69
 Charles, Ray, 3: 433
 Cobb, Ty, 3: 492
 Eastman, George, 4: 648
 Ford, Henry, 4: 728
 Gates, Bill, 4: 772
 Lauren, Ralph, 6: 1119
 Rockefeller, John, 9: 1604–6
 Roosevelt, Eleanor, 9: 1621–24
 Walker, Madame C. J., 10: 1896
 Winfrey, Oprah, 10: 1957
- Philip II, King of Macedon, 1: 43, 44, 98
- Philip IV, King of Spain, 9: 1645
- Philippines, 1: 84–86; 7: 1187, 1233–35
- Philoctetes* (Sophocles), 9: 1736–37
- Philosophers
 Arendt, Hannah, 1: 91–93
 Aristotle, 1: 98–100
 Bacon, Roger, 1: 145–47
 Bennett, William, 2: 204
 Buddha, 2: 310–12
 Camus, Albert, 2: 349–51
 Cicero, 3: 475–78
 Confucius, 3: 503–6
 Descartes, René, 4: 590–92
 Dewey, John, 4: 594–97
 Diderot, Denis, 4: 606–8
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 4: 680–83
 Galen, 4: 748–50
 Hobbes, Thomas, 5: 915–18
 Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 994–97
 Kant, Immanuel, 6: 1052–54
 Lao Tzu, 6: 1115–17
 Locke, Alain, 6: 1163–66
 Locke, John, 6: 1166–68
 Marcus Aurelius Antoninus, 7: 1236–38
 Marx, Karl, 7: 1246–49
 Mill, John Stuart, 7: 1301–3
 Montesquieu, 7: 1329–31
 Nietzsche, Friedrich, 8: 1387–90

- Paracelsus, Philippus Aureolus, 8: 1445
 Penn, William, 8: 1469–72
 Plato, 8: 1485–88
 Pythagoras, 8: 1540–42
 Rousseau, Jean Jacques, 9: 1636–38
 Sartre, Jean-Paul, 9: 1676–78
 Socrates, 9: 1729–31
 Stein, Edith, 9: 1749–52
 Voltaire, 10: 1879–81
Philosophiae naturalis principia mathematica
 (Newton), 7: 1384
 Phips, William, 7: 1254
 Phoenicians, 5: 927
 Phonograph, 2: 199; 4: 652
 Photoelectric effect, 4: 655
 Photographers and photography
 Adams, Ansel, 1: 15–17
 Bacon, Francis, 1: 144–45
 Bourke-White, Margaret, 2: 259–61
 Brady, Mathew, 2: 269–70
 Carroll, Lewis, 3: 370–72
 Cousteau, Jacques, 3: 521–23
 Eastman, George, 4: 646–48
 Riefenstahl, Leni, 9: 1590
 Physically disabled, 6: 1056–58
 Physicians. *See also* Surgeons
 Anderson, Elizabeth Garrett, 1: 66–69
 Apgar, Virginia, 1: 81–84
 Blackwell, Elizabeth, 1: 67; 2: 229–31
 Doyle, Arthur Conan, 4: 630
 Elders, Joycelyn, 4: 663–65
 Freud, Sigmund, 4: 736
 Galen, 4: 748–50
 Hippocrates, 5: 902–4
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 5: 920–23
 Imhotep, 5: 973–74
 Jemison, Mae C., 6: 997–99
 Lister, Joseph, 6: 1159–60
 Locke, John, 6: 1167
 Mayo, Charles H., 7: 1258–61
 Mayo, William J., 7: 1258–61
 Montessori, Maria, 7: 1331–33
 Nostradamus, 8: 1406–9
 Paracelsus, Philippus Aureolus, 8: 1443–45
 Sabin, Albert, 9: 1657–59
 Salk, Jonas, 9: 1667–69
 Spock, Benjamin, 9: 1740–43
 Physicists and physics
 Anderson, Carl David, 1: 64–66
 Cavendish, Henry, 3: 404–7
 Curie, Marie, 3: 538–41
 Einstein, Albert, 4: 654–57
 Fermi, Enrico, 4: 707–10
 Galileo, 4: 750–52
 Geiger, Hans, 5: 779–81
 Hawking, Stephen, 5: 860–62
 Heisenberg, Werner, 5: 868–70
 Lee, Tsung-Dao, 6: 1129–31
 Newton, Isaac, 7: 1382–86
 Ride, Sally, 9: 1585–88
 Sakharov, Andrei, 9: 1662–64
Physics and the Metaphysics (Aristotle), 1: 100
 Physiology, 8: 1459–62
 Pi meson (pion), 1: 66
Piaget, Jean, 8: **1477–79**, 1478 (ill.)
 Pianists
 Basie, Count, 1: 177–79
 Bernstein, Leonard, 2: 211
 Brahms, Johannes, 2: 271–73
 Charles, Ray, 3: 430–33
 Chopin, Frédéric, 3: 464–66
 Cole, Nat “King,” 3: 492–94
 Ellington, Duke, 4: 678–80
Piano Concerto in D Minor (Brahms), 2: 272
Picasso, Pablo, 8: **1479–83**, 1481 (ill.)
 Pierce, Franklin, 5: 863, 864
 Pierson, Elijah, 10: 1841
 Pietists, 6: 1052
 Pietro, Guido di. *See* Angelico, Fra
The Pigman (Zindel), 10: 1988–89
 Pilate, governor of Judea, 6: 1002
 Pilots. *See* Aviators and aviation
 Pink period, 8: 1481
Pioneer Girl (Wilder), 10: 1944
 Pippa (cheetah), 1: 24
 Pitchblende, 3: 539
 Pixar (computer animation), 6: 1010
 Pizarro, Francisco, 4: 592–93
 Plague, 8: 1406–7, 1445
The Plague (Camus), 2: 351
 Plane geometry, 4: 687
 Planets
 Banneker, Benjamin, 1: 166–68
 Kepler, Johannes, 6: 1075–76
 Sagan, Carl, 9: 1660–61
 Plant names, 6: 1158
Plath, Sylvia, 8: **1483–85**, 1484 (ill.)
Plato, 1: 98, 100; 8: **1485–88**, 1486 (ill.); 9: 1729,
 1730
Platoon (film), 9: 1762, 1763
Player Piano (Vonnegut), 10: 1885
 Playwrights
 Aeschylus, 1: 29–30
 Angelou, Maya, 1: 73–75
 Aristophanes, 1: 96–98
 Baldwin, James, 1: 156–59

- Beckett, Samuel, 2: 189–92
 Camus, Albert, 2: 349–51
 Chekhov, Anton, 3: 449–51
 Christie, Agatha, 3: 471
 Coward, Noel, 3: 523–25
 Davis, Ossie, 3: 561–62
 Diderot, Denis, 4: 606–8
 Dumas, Alexandre, 4: 634–35
 Eliot, T. S., 4: 668–72
 Euripides, 4: 688–90
 Hardy, Thomas, 5: 859
 Hellman, Lillian, 5: 872–74
 Ibsen, Henrik, 5: 970–72
 Jonson, Ben, 6: 1032–34
 Mamet, David Alan, 7: 1214–16
 Miller, Arthur, 7: 1305–7
 Molière, 7: 1318–20
 O'Neill, Eugene, 8: 1428–29
 Shakespeare, William, 9: 1702–6
 Shaw, George Bernard, 9: 1706–8
 Simon, Neil, 9: 1716–19
 Sophocles, 9: 1734–37
 Stoppard, Tom, 9: 1764–66
 Verne, Jules, 10: 1865
 Wilde, Oscar, 10: 1940–42
 Wilder, Thornton, 10: 1946–48
 Williams, Tennessee, 10: 1948–50
 Yeats, William Butler, 10: 1979–82
 Zindel, Paul, 10: 1987–89
- Plaza Hotel (New York City), 10: 1840
 Plutarch, 1: 89
 Pneumonia, 2: 298
- Pocahontas**, 8: 1488–90, 1489 (ill.)
- Poe, Edgar Allan**, 8: 1490–92, 1491 (ill.)
Poems (Elizabeth Barrett Browning), 2: 301
Poems, Chiefly in the Scottish Dialect (Burns), 2: 318
 Poetry, fairy tale as, 1: 64
- Poets
- Alvarez, Julia, 1: 54–56
 - Angelou, Maya, 1: 73–75
 - Atwood, Margaret, 1: 120–22
 - Auden, W. H., 1: 123–25
 - Beckett, Samuel, 2: 189–92
 - Blake, William, 2: 234–37
 - Bradbury, Ray, 2: 264–66
 - Brooks, Gwendolyn, 2: 286–88
 - Browning, Elizabeth Barrett, 2: 299–302
 - Browning, Robert, 2: 302–5
 - Burns, Robert, 2: 317–20
 - Byron, George Gordon Noel, 2: 331–33
 - Chaucer, Geoffrey, 3: 433–35
 - Coleridge, Samuel Taylor, 3: 496–98
 - Cummings, E. E., 3: 535–37
 - Defoe, Daniel, 4: 574–76
 - Dickinson, Emily, 4: 603–6
 - Donne, John, 4: 621–23
 - Dunbar, Paul Laurence, 4: 636–37
 - Eliot, T. S., 4: 668–72
 - Frost, Robert, 4: 741–44
 - Gibran, Kahlil, 5: 788–90
 - Hardy, Thomas, 5: 857–59
 - Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 5: 921, 922
 - Homer, 5: 926–28
 - Hughes, Langston, 5: 954–57
 - Jonson, Ben, 6: 1034
 - Keats, John, 6: 1054–56
 - Kipling, Rudyard, 6: 1102
 - Lazarus, Emma, 6: 1119–21
 - Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth, 6: 1170–73
 - Michelangelo, 7: 1297
 - Millay, Edna St. Vincent, 7: 1303–5
 - Milton, John, 7: 1313–16
 - Morrison, Jim, 7: 1336–38
 - Nash, Ogden, 7: 1379–81
 - Ovid, 8: 1432–34
 - Plath, Sylvia, 8: 1483–85
 - Poe, Edgar Allan, 8: 1490–92
 - Pope, Alexander, 8: 1502–5
 - Pushkin, Aleksandr, 8: 1535–37
 - Rossetti, Dante Gabriel, 9: 1635
 - Sandburg, Carl, 9: 1671–73
 - Scott, Walter, 9: 1694
 - Shakespeare, William, 9: 1702–6
 - Shelley, Percy, 9: 1711–14
 - Tennyson, Alfred, Lord, 10: 1795–98
 - Thomas, Dylan, 10: 1810–13
 - Tu Fu, 10: 1843–45
 - Updike, John, 10: 1856
 - Virgil, 10: 1874–76
 - Voltaire, 10: 1879–81
 - Whitman, Walt, 10: 1935–37
 - Wordsworth, William, 10: 1965–68
 - Yeats, William Butler, 10: 1979–82
- Poirot, Hercule (literary character), 3: 469–70
- Poitier, Sidney**, 8: 1493–95, 1494 (ill.)
- Poitivists, 4: 666
- Pol Pot**, 8: 1495–98, 1496 (ill.)
- Pola, Arrigo, 8: 1457
- Poland, 6: 1013–16; 9: 1679
- Police Athletic League (PAL), 5: 790
- Polio
- Roosevelt, Franklin D., 9: 1626
 - Rudolph, Wilma, 9: 1646–47
- Polio vaccine
- Sabin, Albert, 9: 1657–59
 - Salk, Jonas, 9: 1667–69

- Political activists
 Ali, Muhammad, 1: 49
 Bond, Julian, 2: 244–46
 Casals, Pablo, 3: 386–88
 Mandela, Nelson, 7: 1216–19
 Robeson, Paul, 9: 1598
 Spock, Benjamin, 9: 1742
- Political dissidents, 9: 1662–64
- Political philosophers
 Arendt, Hannah, 1: 91–93
 Confucius, 3: 505
 Hobbes, Thomas, 5: 917–18
 Machiavelli, Niccolò, 7: 1188–91
 Montesquieu, 7: 1329–31
- Political theorists
 Hobbes, Thomas, 5: 915–18
 Locke, John, 6: 1166–68
 Rousseau, Jean Jacques, 9: 1636–38
- Politicians and political leaders. *See* specific positions or titles, e.g., Prime Ministers or Emperors
- Pollution, 3: 379, 523; 5: 897
- Polo (clothing brand), 6: 1118
- Polo, Marco**, 6: 1111–12; 8: **1498–1500**, 1499 (ill.)
- Polynesia, 5: 896–97
- Polyphony, 1: 141–43
- Pompey (Roman general), 2: 336, 337; 3: 476; 7: 1241
- Ponce de León, Juan**, 8: **1501–2**, 1502 (ill.)
- Pontifex maximus, 2: 336
- Ponyboy (literary character), 5: 901
- Poole, Elijah. *See* Muhammad, Elijah
- Poor, advocates for
 Abzug, Bella, 1: 8
 Addams, Jane, 1: 25–27
 Aristide, Jean-Bertrand, 1: 94
 King, Coretta Scott, 6: 1093
 Perón, Eva, 8: 1474–77
 Ramakrishna, Sri, 8: 1550–52
- Poor People's Campaign, 1: 6–7
- Pop music. *See* Popular music
- Pope, Alexander**, 8: **1502–5**, 1503 (ill.)
- Pope John Paul II, 6: 1013–16
- Popular music
 Berlin, Irving, 2: 208–10
 Bernstein, Leonard, 2: 210–13
 Berry, Chuck, 2: 213–15
 Brown, James, 2: 291–94
 Davis, Sammy, Jr., 3: 563–65
 Fitzgerald, Ella, 4: 717–18
 Jackson, Michael, 6: 986–89
 Presley, Elvis, 8: 1517–20
 Robinson, Smokey, 9: 1601–4
 Ross, Diana, 9: 1631–33
 Selena, 9: 1698–1701
 Sinatra, Frank, 9: 1719–22
 Streisand, Barbra, 9: 1776–79
- Popular science writers
 Asimov, Isaac, 1: 113–15
 Gould, Stephen Jay, 5: 822–23
 Sagan, Carl, 9: 1659–62
- Porisms* (Euclid), 4: 688
- Port-au-Prince, Haiti, 1: 93, 94
- Porter, Cole**, 8: **1505–7**, 1506 (ill.)
- Porter, Katherine Anne**, 8: **1507–9**, 1508 (ill.)
- A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Dog* (Thomas), 10: 1812
- A Portrait of the Artist as a Young Man* (Joyce), 6: 1038–39
- Portraiture
 Brady, Mathew, 2: 269–70
 Degas, Edgar, 4: 576–78
 Rembrandt, 8: 1566
- Portugal, 7: 1201–3
- Positively Fourth Street* (Hajdu), 1: 150
- Positrons, 1: 64–66
- The Possessed* (Dostoevsky), 4: 626
- Post, Emily**, 8: **1509–11**, 1510 (ill.)
- Postcards (Proulx), 8: 1526
- The Posthumous Papers of the Pickwick Club* (Dickens), 4: 601
- Postimpressionism, 9: 1594
- Potato Eaters* (Van Gogh), 10: 1860
- Potawatomie, Kansas, 2: 295
- Potsdam Conference (1945), 10: 1835
- Pound, Ezra, 4: 670, 743; 10: 1980
- Powell, Colin**, 8: **1511–14**, 1512 (ill.)
- Powell, Mike, 6: 1143
- Power stations (electric), 4: 652
- Praetor, 2: 336
- Prairie life, American, 3: 397–99; 10: 1943
- Pran, Dith**, 8: **1514–17**, 1515 (ill.)
- Predestination, 2: 344, 345
- Prehistoric man, 6: 1123
- Prejudice, racial. *See* Racism and race relations
- The Prelude* (Wordsworth), 10: 1968
- Premiers
 De Gaulle, Charles, 4: 579–81
 Khrushchev, Nikita, 6: 1083–86
- “Prepared environment,” 7: 1333
- Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood, 9: 1634–35
- Presidential election 2000, 8: 1419
 Bush, George W., 2: 329
 Gore, Al, 5: 818
- The Presidential Papers* (Mailer), 7: 1207

Presidents

- Adams, John, 1: 17–20
Amin, Idi, 1: 59–62
Arafat, Yasir, 1: 86–89
Aristide, Jean-Bertrand, 1: 93–96
Botha, P. W., 2: 255–57
Bush, George, 2: 323–26
Bush, George W., 2: 326–29
Cárdenas, Lázaro, 3: 361–63
Carter, Jimmy, 3: 379–83
Chiang Kai-shek, 3: 456–59
Clinton, Bill, 3: 483–86
De Gaulle, Charles, 4: 579–81
de Klerk, F. W., 4: 581–84
Duvalier, François, 4: 640–42
Eisenhower, Dwight D., 4: 657–60
Ho Chi Minh, 5: 912–15
Hussein, Saddam, 5: 962–65
Jackson, Andrew, 6: 979–82
Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 994–97
Jiang Zemin, 6: 1004
Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1016–19
Juárez, Benito, 6: 1040–42
Kennedy, John F., 6: 1064–69
Lincoln, Abraham, 6: 1150–54
Madison, James, 7: 1194–97
Mandela, Nelson, 7: 1216–19
Marcos, Ferdinand, 7: 1233–35
Milosevic, Slobodan, 7: 1310–13
Mubarak, Hosni, 7: 1353–55
Nixon, Richard, 8: 1392–96
Putin, Vladimir, 8: 1537–40
Reagan, Ronald, 8: 1557–60
Roosevelt, Franklin D., 9: 1624–28
Roosevelt, Theodore, 9: 1628–31
Sun Yat-Sen, 9: 1779–83
Tito, Marshal, 10: 1821–23
Truman, Harry S., 10: 1834–37
Washington, George, 1: 14; 10: 1906–10
Wilson, Woodrow, 10: 1951–54
Yeltsin, Boris, 10: 1982–85
- Presley, Elvis**, 3: 432; 8: 1517–20, 1518 (ill.)
Previn, André, 8: 1520–22, 1521 (ill.)
Price, Leontyne, 8: 1522–24, 1523 (ill.)
Pride and Prejudice (Austen), 1: 134
- Prime ministers
- Begin, Menachem, 2: 194–96
Bhutto, Benazir, 2: 218–20
Blair, Tony, 2: 232–34
Botha, P. W., 2: 255–57
Castro, Fidel, 3: 393–96
Chrétien, Jean, 3: 467–69
Churchill, Winston, 3: 472–75
Gandhi, Indira, 4: 754–57
Lumumba, Patrice, 6: 1178–81
Meir, Golda, 7: 1284–86
Putin, Vladimir, 8: 1537–40
Tito, Marshal, 10: 1823
- Prime numbers, 4: 687
The Prime of Life (Beauvoir), 2: 188
The Prince (Machiavelli), 7: 1189–90, 1190
The Prince of Tides (film), 9: 1778
- Princes and princesses
- Charles, Prince of Wales, 3: 427–30
Diana, Princess of Wales, 4: 597–600
Pocahontas, 8: 1488–90
- Principia* (Newton), 7: 1384
Principles of National Reconstruction (Chien-kuo fang-lueh), 9: 1781
Privacy Act (1974), 1: 9
The Procuress (Vermeer), 10: 1863
- Producers
- Jones, Quincy, 6: 1029–32
Streisand, Barbra, 9: 1778
Winfrey, Oprah, 10: 1957
- Professors. *See* Educators and education; specific individual, e.g., Einstein, Albert; Teachers
- Profiles in Courage* (Kennedy), 6: 1066
“Progressive education” (Dewey), 4: 596–97
Progressive Party (Bull Moose Party), 9: 1630–31
Prohibition, 2: 352–54
Project Excellence, 9: 1640
“Project Trinity,” 4: 710
Proletariat, 6: 1132
Prometheus Bound (Aeschylus), 1: 30
“Prometheus Unbound” (Shelley), 9: 1713
The Prophet (Gibran), 5: 789
Proposals (Simon), 9: 1719
- Protestantism
- Calas affair, 10: 1881
Luther, Martin, 6: 1181–84
Milton, John, 7: 1313–16
More, Thomas, 7: 1334–36
- Protests. *See* Civil rights movement activists and participants; Demonstrations
- Proulx, E. Annie**, 8: 1524–26, 1525 (ill.)
Proust, Marcel, 8: 1526–28, 1527 (ill.)
Provincial Letters (Pascal), 8: 1448–49
Prufrock and Other Observations (Eliot), 4: 670
Prussia, 3: 401
Przywara, Erich, 9: 1751
- Psychiatrists and psychiatry
- Adler, Alfred, 1: 27–28
Jung, Carl Gustav, 6: 1043–46
“Psychic religion,” 4: 631
Psycho (film), 5: 908

Psychoanalysts and psychoanalysis
Auden, W. H., 1: 123
Freud, Sigmund, 4: 736–38
“Psychological Types” (Jung), 6: 1044–45
Psychologists and psychology
Adler, Alfred, 1: 27
Freud, Sigmund, 4: 735–38
Jung, Carl Gustav, 6: 1043–46
Mead, Margaret, 7: 1280
Piaget, Jean, 8: 1477–79
Ptolemy, 2: 337; 3: 512
Ptolemy I, 8: **1528–31**, 1529 (ill.)
Ptolemy II, 3: 480–81
Ptolemy III, 3: 481
Ptolemy IV, 3: 481
Public health, 8: 1390–92
Public opinion, 4: 753–54
Publishers
Douglass, Frederick, 4: 626–29
Forbes, Malcolm, 4: 723–25
Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 731–35
Garvey, Marcus, 4: 767–69
Graham, Katharine, 5: 824–26
Hearst, William Randolph, 5: 865–68
Kennedy, John F., Jr., 6: 1069–71
Murdoch, Rupert, 7: 1364–66
Pulitzer, Joseph, 8: 1531–33
Publius Ovidius Naso. *See* Ovid
Publius Vergilius Maro. *See* Virgil
Puerto Rico, 8: 1501–2
Pugachev, Yemelyan, 3: 403
Pulitzer, Joseph, 5: 866–67; 8: **1531–33**,
1532 (ill.)
Pulitzer Prize winners
Auden, W. H., 1: 124
Bellow, Saul, 2: 203
Brooks, Gwendolyn, 2: 287
Buck, Pearl S., 2: 309
Copland, Aaron, 3: 513
Graham, Katharine, 5: 824–26
Hemingway, Ernest, 5: 875–77
Lindbergh, Charles, 6: 1156
Malamud, Bernard, 7: 1208–10
Mamet, David Alan, 7: 1214
Millay, Edna St. Vincent, 7: 1303–5
Miller, Arthur, 7: 1305–7
O’Neill, Eugene, 8: 1428–29
Proulx, E. Annie, 8: 1524–26
Sagan, Carl, 9: 1659–62
Sandburg, Carl, 9: 1671–73
Schanberg, Sydney, 8: 1515
Schlesinger, Arthur, Jr., 9: 1681–84
Sinclair, Upton, 9: 1722–24
Updike, John, 10: 1855–57

Walker, Alice, 10: 1891–94
Welty, Eudora, 10: 1925–27
Wharton, Edith, 10: 1928–29
Wilder, Thornton, 10: 1946–48
Williams, Tennessee, 10: 1948–50
Zindel, Paul, 10: 1987–89
Pulley and lever, 1: 89
Pullman, George, 8: **1533–34**, 1534 (ill.), 1553
“Punctuated equilibrium,” 5: 822
Puritans, 4: 674; 7: 1252–55
Pushkin, Aleksandr, 8: **1535–37**, 1536 (ill.)
Putin, Vladimir, 8: **1537–40**, 1538 (ill.); 10: 1985
Putnam, George Palmer, 4: 645
Pyramids, 5: 973–74
Pythagoras, 8: **1540–42**, 1541 (ill.)

Q

Qadhafi, Mu‘ammar al-, 1: 61; 4: 700; 8: **1543–46**,
1544 (ill.)
al-Qaida, 9: 1582
Quadrupartite Agreement (1971), 6: 1105–6
Quadriplegia, 8: 1563
Quakers, 8: 1470–71
Quantum mechanics, 5: 869; 8: 1454
Quarrymen, 2: 182
Quayle, Dan, 5: 817
Quebec, Canada, 1: 106
Queen (Haley), 5: 845
“Queen Mab” (Shelley), 9: 1712
Queens. *See also* Emperors and empresses
Catherine of Aragon (queen consort),
3: 399–401
Elizabeth I, Queen of England and Ireland,
4: 672–75
Elizabeth II, Queen of the United Kingdom,
4: 675–78
Marie Antoinette, Queen of France,
7: 1238–40
Mary, Queen of Scots, 7: 1249–52
Nefertiti, 7: 1381–82

R

The Ra Expeditions (Heyerdahl), 5: 897
Rabbit novels (Updike), 10: 1856–57
Rabies vaccine, 8: 1452
Rabin, Yitzhak, 1: 88
“Race record,” 9: 1727
Racism and race relations
Aaron, Hank, 1: 3

- Abernathy, Ralph, 1: 6
 Baldwin, James, 1: 156–59
 Bradley, Ed, 2: 267–68
 Brooks, Gwendolyn, 2: 287
 Bunche, Ralph, 2: 314
 Chavez, Linda, 3: 440–43
 Chavis Muhammad, Benjamin, 3: 443–46
 Evers, Medgar, 4: 691–92
 Gandhi, Mohandas, 4: 758
 Horne, Lena, 5: 942
 King, Coretta Scott, 6: 1092
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1094–97
 Malcolm X, 7: 1212
 McDaniel, Hattie, 7: 1269
 Owens, Jesse, 8: 1436
 Rice, Condoleezza, 9: 1582
 Robeson, Paul, 9: 1598
 South Africa, 2: 256–57; 4: 758. *See also*
 Apartheid
 Thomas, Clarence, 10: 1808
 Wright, Richard, 10: 1975
- Radiation and radioactivity, 3: 538–39
 Fermi, Enrico, 4: 709
 Geiger, Hans, 5: 780
- Radio broadcasters and journalists
 Bradley, Ed, 2: 266–68
 Buchanan, Pat, 2: 305–8
 Carson, Johnny, 3: 372–73
 Cronkite, Walter, 3: 532–33
 Rogers, Will, 9: 1617
 Roosevelt, Eleanor, 9: 1623
 Thomas, Dylan, 10: 1811
- Radio plays, 9: 1765
- Radium, 3: 539
- Rafsanjani, Hashemi, 9: 1651
- Raging Bull* (film), 9: 1692
- Ragtime, 2: 210
- Raiders of the Lost Ark* (film), 6: 1177
- Railroad industry
 Carnegie, Andrew, 3: 367
 Gould, Jay, 5: 818–21
 Pullman, George, 8: 1533–34
 Vanderbilt, Cornelius, 5: 819–20
- “Rainbow coalition,” 6: 985
- Raising of the Cross* (Rubens), 9: 1644
- The Rake’s Progress* (Stravinsky), 9: 1775
- Raleigh, Walter**, 8: 1547–50, 1548 (ill.)
- “Rally of the French People,” 4: 581
- Ramakrishna, Sri**, 8: 1550–52, 1551 (ill.)
- Randolph, A. Philip**, 8: 1552–55, 1554 (ill.)
- The Rape of the Lock* (Pope), 8: 1503
- Raphael (painter), 6: 1139
- al-Rashid, Harun**, 8: 1555–57, 1556 (ill.)
- Raskob, John J., 4: 638, 639
- Raskolnikov (literary character), 4: 626
- Rasselas, Prince of Abissinia* (Johnson), 6: 1024
- “Rat Pack,” 3: 564; 9: 1721
- “The Raven” (Poe), 8: 1492
- Ray of Light* (Madonna), 7: 1200
- Ray, Robert, 3: 489
- Reading club (Winfrey), 10: 1957
- Reagan, Ronald**, 2: 205, 325; 3: 442; 6: 1063, 1083; 8: 1402–3, 1417, 1557–60, 1559 (ill.)
- Real estate developers
 Astor, John Jacob, 1: 120
 Johnson, Magic, 6: 1022
 Pullman, George, 8: 1534
 Trump, Donald, 10: 1837–40
- Reason and experience, 6: 1053–54
- The Rebel* (Camus), 2: 351
- Rebel without a Cause* (film), 4: 568, 569
- Reconstruction, 4: 628
- Records of the Historian* (Ssu-ma Ch’ien), 3: 503; 6: 1115–16
- Red Cloud, 1: 57, 58
- Red Cross (American), 1: 175–77
- Redeemer of Man* (John Paul II), 6: 1014–15
- Reeve, Christopher**, 8: 1561–63, 1562 (ill.)
- Reflecting telescope, 7: 1382–86
- Reflections on Progress, Peaceful Coexistence and Intellectual Freedom* (Sakharov), 9: 1663
- Reform Party, 2: 307
- Reformation
 Erasmus, Desiderius, 4: 685–86
 Henry VIII, King of England, 5: 881–83
 Luther, Martin, 6: 1181–84
 More, Thomas, 7: 1334–36
- Reformers
 Addams, Jane, 1: 25–27
 Alcott, Louisa May, 1: 39–41
 Alexander II, Emperor of Russia, 1: 42–43
 Blackwell, Elizabeth, 2: 229–31
 Calvin, John, 2: 344–46
 Gandhi, Mohandas, 4: 758–61
 Howe, Julia Ward, 5: 949–51
 Luther, Martin, 6: 1181–84
 Sakharov, Andrei, 9: 1662–64
 Stanton, Elizabeth Cady, 9: 1747–49
- Reign of Terror, 9: 1599
- Relativity, theory of, 4: 656
- Relief sculpture, 4: 619–20
- Religious freedom, 8: 1469–72
- Religious leaders
 Baal Shem Tov, 1: 137–39
 Booth, William, 2: 250–52
 Buddha, 2: 310–12

- Calvin, John, 2: 344–46
 Chavis Muhammad, Benjamin, 3: 443–46
 Farrakhan, Louis, 4: 698–701
 Francis of Assisi, 4: 729–31
 Gandhi, Mohandas, 4: 758–61
 Henry VIII, King of England, 5: 880–83
 Jackson, Jesse, 6: 983–86
 Jesus of Nazareth, 6: 1000–1002
 Joan of Arc, 6: 1005–7
 John Paul II, 6: 1013–16
 Khomeini, Ayatollah, 6: 1081–83
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1094–97
 Luther, Martin, 6: 1181–84
 McPherson, Aimee Semple, 7: 1275–77
 Moses, 7: 1343–45
 Mother Teresa, 7: 1347–50
 Muhammad, Elijah, 7: 1358–60
 Pythagoras, 8: 1540–42
 Ramakrishna, Sri, 8: 1550–52
 Tutu, Desmond, 10: 1847–50
- Religious poems
 Cummings, E. E., 3: 536–37
 Eliot, T. S., 4: 670–71
- Religious prejudice, 6: 1067
- Remarque, Erich Maria**, 8: 1564–65, 1565 (ill.)
- Rembrandt**, 8: 1566–68, 1567 (ill.)
- Remembrance of Things Past* (Proust), 8: 1528
- Reményi, Eduard, 2: 271
- Renaissance, 8: 1434
 Angelico, Fra, 1: 73
 Borgia, Lucrezia, 2: 254
 Botticelli, Sandro, 2: 257–59
 Donatello, 4: 619–21
 Erasmus, Desiderius, 4: 683–86
 Jonson, Ben, 6: 1032–34
 Leonardo da Vinci, 6: 1136–39
 Machiavelli, Niccolò, 7: 1188–91
 Michelangelo, 7: 1295–98
- “Renaissance” (Millay), 7: 1304
- Reno, Janet**, 8: 1568–71, 1570 (ill.)
- Renoir, Pierre Auguste**, 8: 1571–74, 1572 (ill.)
- Republic of China (Taiwan), 3: 456–59. *See also*
 China; People’s Republic of China
- Republic* (Plato), 8: 1487–88
- Republic of the Congo, 6: 1178–81
- Republican Party
 Agnew, Spiro, 1: 31–32
 Buchanan, Pat, 2: 306–7
 Burger, Warren, 2: 315–16
 Bush, George, 2: 323–26
 Bush, George W., 2: 326–29
 Campbell, Ben Nighthorse, 2: 349
 Chavez, Linda, 3: 442
 Dole, Elizabeth, 4: 613–16
 Eisenhower, Dwight D., 4: 657–60
 Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1104–7
 Lincoln, Abraham, 6: 1152–54
 McCarthy, Joseph, 7: 1264–67
 O’Connor, Sandra Day, 8: 1416–19
 Pulitzer, Joseph, 8: 1531–33
 Reagan, Ronald, 8: 1557–60
 Roosevelt, Theodore, 9: 1624–28
- Research
 Edison, Thomas, 4: 650–54
 Gallup, George, 4: 753–54
 Research laboratory, 4: 652–53
 Resistance, French (World War II)
 Baker, Josephine, 1: 154
 Barbie, Klaus, 1: 171
 Beckett, Samuel, 2: 190
 Camus, Albert, 2: 350–51
 Cousteau, Jacques, 3: 522
 Sartre, Jean-Paul, 9: 1676–77
- The Resplendence of Truth* (John Paul II), 6: 1015
- Resurrection, Jesus of Nazareth, 6: 1002
- Retroviruses, 1: 162
- The Return of the Jedi* (film), 6: 1177
- Revelations* (Ailey), 1: 35
- Revere, Paul**, 8: 1574–76, 1575 (ill.)
- Review* (Defoe), 4: 574
- Revisionist Zionist Movement, 2: 194–95
- Revivalism, 7: 1276–77
- “The Revolt of Islam” (Shelley), 9: 1713
- The Revolution* (weekly paper), 1: 80
- Revolutionaries
 Cárdenas, Lázaro, 3: 361–63
 Castro, Fidel, 3: 393–96
 Collins, Michael, 3: 501–3
 Ho Chi Minh, 5: 912–15
 Khomeini, Ayatollah, 6: 1081–83
 Lenin, Vladimir, 6: 1131–35
 Mao Zedong, 7: 1226–29
 Marx, Karl, 7: 1246–49
 Qadhafi, Mu’ammār al-, 8: 1543–46
 Robespierre, Maximilien, 9: 1599–1601
 Sun Yat-Sen, 9: 1779–83
 Tito, Marshal, 10: 1821–23
- Revolutionary Command Council (RCC), 5: 963
- Revolutionary War. *See* American Revolution
- Revolver* (Beatles), 2: 183
- Rheumatoid arthritis, 1: 175
- Rhodes, Cecil John**, 9: 1577–79, 1578 (ill.)
- Rhodesia, 9: 1579
- Rhythm and blues (R&B) musicians and music
 Brown, James, 2: 291–94
 Charles, Ray, 3: 430–33

- Robinson, Smokey, 9: 1601–4
 Ross, Diana, 9: 1631–33
 Ricardo, Lucy and Ricky (TV characters), 1: 161
 Riccio, David, 7: 1251
Rice, Condoleezza, 9: 1580–83, 1581 (ill.)
 Rice, Tim, 6: 1161–63
Rich in Mercy (John Paul II), 6: 1015
 Richards, Keith, 9: 1619 (ill.)
Richelieu, Armand-Jean du Plessis de,
 9: 1583–85, 1584 (ill.)
 Riddle, Nelson, 9: 1721
Ride, Sally, 9: 1585–88, 1586 (ill.)
Riefenstahl, Leni, 9: 1588–90, 1589 (ill.)
 Right to vote, women's. *See* Women's suffrage
 Riley, Pat, 6: 1020
 Rimsky-Korsakov, Nikolai, 9: 1773
The Ring and the Book (Robert Browning), 2: 304
 Riot (Brooks), 2: 288
Ripken, Cal, Jr., 9: 1591–93, 1592 (ill.)
 Riskin, Robert, 2: 358
Rite of Spring (Stravinsky), 4: 571
Rivera, Diego, 9: 1593–96, 1594 (ill.)
 Road films, 5: 937
The Road to Wigan Pier (Orwell), 8: 1431
 Road trips, 6: 1078
 Robeson, Anna Louisa, 9: 1596
Robeson, Paul, 5: 942; 9: 1596–99, 1597 (ill.)
 Robeson, William Drew, 9: 1596
Robespierre, Maximilien, 9: 1599–1601,
 1600 (ill.)
Robinson Crusoe (Defoe), 4: 575
 Robinson, Jackie, 1: 2
Robinson, Smokey, 5: 813–14; 9: 1601–4,
 1602 (ill.)
 Robots, 1: 115
 Roche, James M., 7: 1375
 Rock and roll musicians and music
 Beatles, 2: 181–85
 Berry, Chuck, 2: 213–15
 Hendrix, Jimi, 5: 878–80
 Jackson, Michael, 6: 986–89
 Morrison, Jim, 7: 1336–38
 Presley, Elvis, 8: 1517–20
 Robinson, Smokey, 9: 1601–4
 Rolling Stones, 9: 1618–21
 Rock paintings, prehistoric, 6: 1122–23
 Rockefeller Center (New York), 9: 1595
 Rockefeller Foundation, 9: 1606
Rockefeller, John, 9: 1604–6, 1605 (ill.)
 Rockets, 10: 1882–84
Rockwell, Norman, 9: 1607–9, 1608 (ill.)
Rodgers, Richard, 5: 851; 9: 1610–12, 1611 (ill.)
Rodin, Auguste, 9: 1613–15, 1614 (ill.)
 Roebuck, John, 10: 1912
 Rogers, Ginger, 1: 116–17
Rogers, Will, 9: 1615–17, 1616 (ill.)
 Rolfe, John, 8: 1489
Rolling Stones, 9: 1618–21, 1619 (ill.)
 Rollins, Sonny, 3: 560
 Roman Catholics and Roman Catholic Church
 Aristide, Jean-Bertrand, 1: 93–94
 Bacon, Roger, 1: 147
 Calas affair, 10: 1881
 Calvin, John, 2: 344–45
 Cather, Willa, 3: 398
 Diderot, Denis, 4: 606–8
 Donne family, 4: 622
 Francis of Assisi, 4: 729–31
 Galileo, 4: 591, 751–52
 Greene, Graham, 5: 832–33
 John Paul II, 6: 1013–16
 Kennedy, John F., 6: 1067
 Luther, Martin, 6: 1182–83
 Machiavelli, Niccolò, 7: 1190
 Mary Queen of Scots, 7: 1249–52
 More, Thomas, 7: 1334–36
 Mother Teresa, 7: 1347–50
 Richelieu, Armand-Jean du Plessis de,
 9: 1583–85
 Stein, Edith, 9: 1749–52
 Tolkien, J. R. R., 10: 1826
 Roman Empire
 Caesar, Julius, 2: 335–38
 Caligula, 2: 338–40
 Herod the Great, 5: 891–93
Roman Holiday (film), 5: 887
 Romance plays, 9: 1706
 Romanticism
 Byron, George Gordon Noel, 2: 331–33
 Chopin, Frédéric, 3: 464–66
 Coleridge, Samuel Taylor, 3: 496–98
 Hugo, Victor, 5: 958
 Keats, John, 6: 1054–56
 Shelley, Percy, 2: 333; 9: 1711–14
 Wordsworth, William, 10: 1965–68
 Rome, 1: 73, 128–30; 2: 335–38, 338–40;
 3: 475–78, 481; 4: 749; 6: 1000–1002;
 7: 1236–38, 1240–43, 1296
Roosevelt, Eleanor, 9: 1621–24, 1622 (ill.)
Roosevelt, Franklin D., 2: 217; 9: 1609, 1622,
 1624–28, 1625 (ill.); 10: 1835
Roosevelt, Theodore, 5: 925; 9: 1628–31,
 1629 (ill.)
Roots (TV series), 5: 844–45
Roots: The Saga of an American Family (Haley),
 5: 844–45

- “Rope-a-dope” boxing style, 1: 49
- Ross, Diana**, 5: 815; 6: 987; 9: 1631–33, 1632 (ill.)
- Rossetti, Dante Gabriel**, 9: 1634–35, 1635 (ill.)
- “Rough Riders,” 9: 1629
- Round Table Conference, Belgium (1959), 6: 1180
- Rousseau, Jean Jacques**, 9: 1636–38, 1637 (ill.)
- Rowan, Carl**, 9: 1639–40, 1640 (ill.)
- Rowlatt Acts (1919), 4: 760
- Rowling, J. K.**, 9: 1641–43, 1642 (ill.)
- Royal Astronomical Society, 1: 140
- Royal service
- Cervantes, Miguel de, 3: 410
 - Chaucer, Geoffrey, 3: 433–35
 - Raleigh, Walter, 8: 1548
 - Rubens, Peter Paul, 9: 1645
- Royal Society, 7: 1384, 1385
- Rozier, Ferdinand, 1: 126
- Rubber Soul* (Beatles), 2: 183
- Rubber, synthetic, 4: 653
- Rubens, Peter Paul**, 9: 1643–46, 1644 (ill.)
- Rubinstein, Anton and Nikolai, 10: 1793
- Rudolph, Wilma**, 9: 1646–48, 1647 (ill.)
- Rulers. *See also* specific position, e.g., Kings; Statesmen
- Alexander II, Russian emperor, 1: 41–43
 - Alexander the Great, Macedonian king, 1: 43–46
 - Charlemagne, 3: 424–27
 - Cleopatra, 3: 480–83
 - Genghis Khan, 5: 784–86
 - Hirohito, Emperor of Japan, 5: 904–7
 - Medici, Catherine de’, 7: 1281–83
 - Ptolemy I, 8: 1528–31
 - al-Rashid, Harun, 8: 1555–57
 - Stalin, Joseph, 9: 1743–46
- Rules for the Direction of the Mind* (Descartes), 4: 590–91
- “Rumble in the Jungle,” 1: 48
- Rumblefish* (Hinton), 5: 901–2
- Rushdie, Salman**, 6: 1083; 7: 1205; 9: 1649–51, 1650 (ill.)
- Ruskin, John, 8: 1527; 10: 1931
- Russell, Bill, 3: 418
- Russia, 1: 41–43; 3: 401–4; 5: 809–12; 6: 1083–86, 1131–35; 8: 1537–40; 9: 1743–46; 10: 1982–85.
- See also* Soviet Union
- Russian Orthodox Church, 3: 401, 402
- Russian Revolution
- Alexander II, 1: 43
 - Kandinsky, Wassily, 6: 1050–51
 - Khrushchev, Nikita, 6: 1084
 - Lenin, Vladimir, 6: 1133–35; 9: 1744–45
 - Marx, Karl, 7: 1249
 - Stalin, Joseph, 9: 1744
- Russian Social Democratic Workers Party, 9: 1744
- Russian space program, 10: 1799, 1883
- Rusticiano, 8: 1500
- Rustin, Bayard, 3: 364
- Ruth, Babe**, 9: 1651–53, 1652 (ill.)
- Rutherford, Ernest, 5: 780
- Ryan, Nolan**, 9: 1653–56, 1655 (ill.)

S

- Sabin, Albert**, 9: 1657–59, 1658 (ill.), 1669
- Sabrina* (film), 5: 887
- Sacco-Vanzetti case, 9: 1724
- The Sacred Disease* (Hippocrates), 5: 904
- Sadat, Anwar, 1: 88; 2: 195–96, 262
- Sagan, Carl**, 9: 1659–62, 1660 (ill.)
- St. Bartholomew’s Day massacre, 7: 1283; 8: 1547
- St. Francis of Assisi. *See* Francis of Assisi
- St. George and the Dragon* (Donatello), 4: 619
- St. Louis Blues, 5: 835
- St. Mark* (Donatello), 4: 619
- St. Martin, Alexis, 2: 186
- St. Mary’s Dispensary (London), 1: 68–69
- St. Valentine’s Day massacre, 2: 353
- Sakharov, Andrei**, 2: 282; 9: 1662–64, 1663 (ill.)
- Sakkara Step Pyramid, 5: 973–74
- Salem (Massachusetts) witchcraft trials, 7: 1254
- Salesian Order (Society of St. Francis de Sales), 1: 93
- Salinger, J. D.**, 9: 1664–67, 1665 (ill.)
- Salk, Jonas**, 9: 1659, 1667–69, 1668 (ill.)
- Salmagundi* (Irving), 5: 976
- Salon in the Rue des Moulins* (Toulouse-Lautrec), 10: 1831
- “Salt March,” 4: 760
- Salvation Army, 2: 250–52
- Salvidar, Yolanda, 9: 1700
- Samoa, 7: 1278–79; 9: 1758–59
- Samsa, Gregor (literary character), 6: 1049
- San Francisco Examiner* (newspaper), 5: 866
- San Francisco 49ers, 7: 1329
- San Marco Monastery (Florence, Italy), 1: 72
- San Pascual, Battle of, 3: 376
- Sand and Foam* (Gibran), 5: 789–90
- Sand, George**, 3: 466; 9: 1669–71, 1670 (ill.)
- The Sand Reckoner* (Archimedes), 1: 91
- Sandburg, Carl**, 9: 1671–73, 1672 (ill.)
- Sanger, Margaret**, 9: 1673–75, 1675 (ill.)
- Sanhedrin, 6: 1002
- Santa Ana, Antonio López de, 6: 1041
- Saratoga, New York, 1: 107
- Sartre, Jean-Paul**, 2: 187–88; 9: 1676–78,

- 1677 (ill.)
The Satanic Verses (Rushdie), 6: 1083; 7: 1205;
 9: 1650–51
Satchmo the Great (documentary), 1: 102
 Satellite television, 7: 1366
Satires of Circumstance (Hardy), 5: 859
 Satirists
 Jonson, Ben, 6: 1032
 Montesquieu, 7: 1329–31
 Orwell, George, 8: 1430–32
 Pope, Alexander, 8: 1502–5
 Shelley, Percy, 9: 1713
 “Satisfaction” (song), 9: 1619
Saturday Evening Post, 9: 1608, 1609
Scarface (film), 9: 1763
 Scat singing, 1: 101; 2: 343
 Schanberg, Sydney, 8: 1515
Schenck v. United States, 5: 925
Schindler, Oskar, 9: **1678–81**, 1679 (ill.)
Schindler’s List (film), 9: 1740
 Schine, G. David, 7: 1266
Schlesinger, Arthur, Jr., 9: **1681–84**, 1683 (ill.)
 Schmeling, Max, 6: 1174
 Schober, Franz von, 9: 1685–86
School Daze (film), 6: 1127
 School of American Ballet, 1: 155
 Schooling. *See* Educators and education
 Schopenhauer, Arthur, 5: 859
Schubert, Franz, 9: **1684–87**, 1685 (ill.)
Schulz, Charles M., 9: **1687–90**, 1688 (ill.)
 Schumann, Clara, 2: 271–72, 273
 Schumann, Robert, 2: 271–72
 Schwartz, Barry, 6: 1108, 1109
Science (magazine), 2: 199
 Science fiction writers
 Asimov, Isaac, 1: 113–15
 Bradbury, Ray, 2: 264–66
 Scientific instruments, 4: 695–96
 Scientists and science
 Aristotle, 1: 98–100
 Audubon, John James, 1: 127
 Babbage, Charles, 1: 139–41
 Bacon, Roger, 1: 145–47
 Baltimore, David, 1: 162–64
 Banneker, Benjamin, 1: 166–68
 Banting, Frederick, 1: 168–70
 Bell, Alexander Graham, 2: 196–200
 Carver, George Washington, 3: 383–86
 Cavendish, Henry, 3: 404–7
 Celsius, Anders, 3: 407–8
 Chandrasekhar, Subrahmanyan, 3: 419–21
 Copernicus, Nicolaus, 3: 510–13
 Curie, Marie, 3: 538–41
 Darwin, Charles, 3: 554–56
 Descartes, René, 4: 591
 Edison, Thomas, 4: 650–54
 Einstein, Albert, 4: 654–57
 Elders, Joycelyn, 4: 663–65
 Fermi, Enrico, 4: 707–10
 Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 732
 Galen, 4: 748–50
 Galileo, 4: 750–52
 Goodall, Jane, 5: 804–7
 Gould, Stephen Jay, 5: 821–24
 Hawking, Stephen, 5: 860–62
 Heisenberg, Werner, 5: 868–70
 Herschel, William, 5: 893–95
 Heyerdahl, Thor, 5: 895–97
 Hippocrates, 5: 902–4
 Jemison, Mae C., 6: 998–99
 Jung, Carl Gustav, 6: 1043–46
 Kepler, Johannes, 6: 1074–76
 Lee, Tsung-Dao, 6: 1129–31
 Leonardo da Vinci, 6: 1136–39
 Linnaeus, Carl, 6: 1157–58
 Lister, Joseph, 6: 1159–60
 Mead, Margaret, 7: 1277–81
 Newton, Isaac, 7: 1382–86
 Pascal, Blaise, 8: 1449
 Pasteur, Louis, 1: 1450–53
 Pauling, Linus Carl, 8: 1453–56
 Pavlov, Ivan Petrovich, 8: 1459–62
 Pythagoras, 8: 1540–42
 Ride, Sally, 9: 1587–88
 Sagan, Carl, 9: 1659–62
 Salk, Jonas, 9: 1667–69
 von Braun, Wernher, 10: 1882–84
 Scopes trial (1925), 3: 553
Scorsese, Martin, 9: **1690–93**, 1691 (ill.), 1762
 Scotland, 7: 1249–52
 Scott, Dred, 10: 1842
Scott, Walter, 9: **1693–95**, 1694 (ill.)
 Screen Actors Guild, 8: 1558
 Screenwriters
 Bradbury, Ray, 2: 264–66
 Chaplin, Charlie, 3: 421–24
 Lucas, George, 6: 1175–78
 Mamet, David Alan, 7: 1214–16
 Scorsese, Martin, 9: 1690–93
 Screwball comedies, 5: 830–31
The Screwtape Letters (Lewis), 6: 1140
 Sculptors
 Degas, Edgar, 4: 578
 Donatello, 4: 619–21
 Gauguin, Paul, 4: 773–75
 Leonardo da Vinci, 6: 1136–39

- Lichtenstein, Roy, 6: 1146–47
 Lin, Maya, 6: 1148–50
 Matisse, Henri, 7: 1255–58
 Michelangelo, 7: 1295–98
 Noguchi, Isamu, 8: 1398–1400
 Rodin, Auguste, 9: 1613–15
- SD (Nazi intelligence and security). *See*
 Sicherheitsdienst (SD)
- The Sea Around Us* (Carson), 3: 378
The Sea Gull (Chekhov), 3: 451
The Seasons (Vivaldi), 10: 1878
- Second Bank of the United States, 6: 981
 Second Continental Congress, 6: 994–95; 10: 1908
The Second Sex (Beauvoir), 2: 188
The Second Stage (Friedan), 4: 741
 Second Triumvirate, 1: 129; 3: 477; 7: 1242
- Secondat, Charles Louis de, Baron de Montesquieu.
See Montesquieu
- “The Secret Life of Walter Mitty” (Thurber),
 10: 1820
- Secretaries of state (U.S.)
 Albright, Madeleine, 1: 37–39
 Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1104–7
 Madison, James, 7: 1196
 Powell, Colin, 8: 1511–14
 Webster, Daniel, 10: 1918
- Secretaries-general (United Nations)
 Annan, Kofi, 1: 76–79
 Boutros-Ghali, Boutros, 2: 261–64
- Segregation, 1: 6
 Aaron, Hank, 1: 2
 Bond, Julian, 2: 245
 Carmichael, Stokely, 3: 364
 Chavis Muhammad, Benjamin, 3: 444
 Davis, Sammy, Jr., 3: 565
 Evers, Medgar, 4: 692
 hooks, bell, 5: 931
 King, Coretta Scott, 6: 1091
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1094–97
 Marshall, Thurgood, 7: 1244
 Randolph, A. Philip, 8: 1554
 Walker, Alice, 10: 1892
- Seize the Day* (Bellow), 2: 202–3
- Selassie, Haile**, 9: **1696–98**, 1697 (ill.)
- Selden patent, 4: 727
- Selena**, 9: **1698–1701**, 1700 (ill.)
- Seleucid dynasty, 5: 891
- “Self-determination,” 1: 27
- Self-Portrait* (Rembrandt), 8: 1568
- Semple, Aimee. *See* McPherson, Aimee Semple
- Semple, Robert, 7: 1276
- Senate (Rome), 1: 128–29; 2: 337, 338
- Senators
- Aquino, Benigno, 1: 85
 Bond, Julian, 2: 246
 Campbell, Ben Nighthorse, 2: 346–49
 Chavez, Dennis, 3: 438–40
 Clinton, Hillary Rodham, 3: 487–89
 Feinstein, Dianne, 4: 704–7
 Gore, Al, 5: 816–18
 Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1017
 Kennedy, Edward, 6: 1061–63
 Kennedy, John F., 6: 1066–67, 1073
 Kennedy, Robert, 6: 1074
 Marcos, Ferdinand, 7: 1234–35
 McCarthy, Joseph, 7: 1264–67
 Truman, Harry S., 10: 1835
 Webster, Daniel, 10: 1917–18
- Seneca Falls (women’s rights convention), 1: 79–80;
 9: 1748
- Sensation and sense perception, 5: 917; 6: 1168
- Sensationalism, in journalism, 5: 866–67
- Sense and Sensibility* (Austen), 1: 133–34
- September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks. *See* Terrorist
 attacks (September 11, 2001)
- Sequoyah**, 9: **1701–2**, 1702 (ill.)
- Serbia, 7: 1310–13
- Serfs, Russian, 1: 41–42
- Serial publications
 Dickens, Charles, 4: 601, 602
 Doyle, Arthur Conan, 4: 630
- Settlement houses, 1: 26
- Seven Wonders of the World, 5: 973–74
- The Seven Year Itch* (film), 7: 1326
- The Seventh Seal* (film), 2: 207
- Sex and sexuality
 Blume, Judy, 2: 240–41
 Brown, Helen Gurley, 2: 290
 Elders, Joycelyn, 4: 663–64
 Freud, Sigmund, 4: 737–38
 Hurston, Zora Neale, 5: 962
- Sex and the Single Girl* (Brown), 2: 290
- Sex education, 4: 664–65
- Sexism
 Spock, Benjamin, 9: 1743
 Tereshkova, Valentina, 10: 1800
- Sexual harassment, 10: 1809–10
- Seymour, Jane, 5: 882
- Sforza, Giovanni, 2: 253
- Sgt. Pepper’s Lonely Hearts Club Band* (Beatles),
 2: 183
- Shabazz, Betty, 7: 1212–13
- El-Shabazz, El-Hajj Malik, 7: 1213. *See also*
 Malcolm X
- Shah of Iran. *See* Pahlavi, Mohammad Reza Shah
- Shakespeare in Love* (film), 9: 1766

- Shakespeare, William**, 8: 1422–23; 9: 1702–6, 1704 (ill.), 1597
- Shame* (Rushdie), 9: 1649
- Sharif, Nawaz, 2: 219
- Sharpville, South Africa, 7: 1217
- Shaw, George Bernard**, 9: 1706–8, 1707 (ill.)
- Shelley, Mary Wollstonecraft**, 9: 1708–11, 1710 (ill.), 1712
- Shelley, Percy**, 2: 333; 9: 1709–10, 1711–14, 1712 (ill.)
- Shelley, Timothy, 9: 1709, 1710, 1711
- Sheppard, Samuel H., 1: 151
- Sherman, Allen, 3: 519
- Sherpas, 5: 898, 900
- She's Gotta Have It* (film), 6: 1127
- Shia Islamic tradition, 6: 1081. *See also* Islam
- Ship of Fools* (Porter), 8: 1508–9
- The Shipping News* (Proulx), 8: 1526
- Shirley* (Brontë), 2: 284
- The Shootist* (film), 10: 1915
- Short story writers
- Atwood, Margaret, 1: 122
 - Bradbury, Ray, 2: 264
 - Capote, Truman, 2: 355
 - Cheever, John, 3: 447–49
 - Chekhov, Anton, 3: 449–51
 - Dunbar, Paul Laurence, 4: 636–37
 - Faulkner, William, 4: 703
 - Fitzgerald, F. Scott, 4: 720
 - García Márquez, Gabriel, 4: 762
 - Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 5: 862–65
 - Irving, Washington, 5: 975–77
 - Joyce, James, 6: 1038
 - Kafka, Franz, 6: 1047–49
 - Kipling, Rudyard, 6: 1101–3
 - London, Jack, 6: 1169–70
 - Malamud, Bernard, 7: 1208–10
 - McMillan, Terry, 7: 1273–75
 - Oates, Joyce Carol, 8: 1413–16
 - Poe, Edgar Allan, 8: 1490–92
 - Porter, Katherine Anne, 8: 1507–9
 - Proulx, E. Annie, 8: 1525–26
 - Salinger, J. D., 9: 1666–67
 - Singer, Isaac Bashevis, 9: 1724–26
 - Stoker, Bram, 9: 1760–61
 - Thackeray, William Makepeace, 10: 1801–4
 - Updike, John, 10: 1857
 - Walker, Alice, 10: 1894
 - Welty, Eudora, 10: 1926–27
- Showa Tenno. *See* Hirohito, Emperor of Japan
- Showboat* (musical), 5: 850
- “Shuttle” diplomacy, 6: 1106–7
- Shuttle, space. *See* National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA)
- Shutzstaffel (SS—Nazi security squad)
- Barbie, Klaus, 1: 170–73
 - Schindler, Oskar, 9: 1679–80
- Sicherheitsdienst (SD—Nazi intelligence and security), 1: 171
- Sick Child* (Munch), 7: 1363
- Sickle cell anemia, 8: 1455
- Siddal, Elizabeth, 9: 1634–35
- Siddhartha Gautama. *See* Buddha
- Sikhs (India), 4: 757
- Silas Marner* (Eliot), 4: 667
- The Silence of the Lambs* (film), 5: 939
- Silent Spring* (Carson), 3: 379
- Silkworms, 8: 1451–52
- Sills, Beverly**, 9: 1714–16, 1715 (ill.)
- The Silmarillion* (Tolkien), 10: 1824
- Silver Jubilee (Elizabeth II), 4: 676–77
- “Silver Sewer” Award, 2: 206
- Simon, Neil**, 9: 1716–19, 1717 (ill.)
- Simpson, O. J., 1: 152
- Sinatra, Frank**, 9: 1719–22, 1720 (ill.)
- Sinclair, Upton**, 9: 1722–24, 1723 (ill.)
- Singer, Isaac Bashevis**, 9: 1724–26, 1725 (ill.)
- Singers
- Anderson, Marian, 1: 69–71
 - Armstrong, Louis, 1: 101–2
 - Baez, Joan, 1: 147–50
 - Baker, Josephine, 1: 152–54
 - Beatles, 2: 181–85
 - Berry, Chuck, 2: 213–15
 - Brown, James, 2: 291–94
 - Callas, Maria, 2: 340–42
 - Calloway, Cab, 2: 342–44
 - Cole, Nat “King,” 3: 492–94
 - Davis, Sammy, Jr., 3: 563–65
 - Domingo, Plácido, 4: 616–18
 - Fitzgerald, Ella, 4: 715–18
 - Garland, Judy, 4: 764–66
 - Guthrie, Woody, 5: 838–41
 - Holiday, Billie, 5: 918–20
 - Horne, Lena, 5: 940–43
 - Jackson, Michael, 6: 986–89
 - John, Elton, 6: 1011–12
 - Jolson, Al, 6: 1025–27
 - Jones, Quincy, 6: 1031
 - King, B. B., 6: 1086–89
 - Madonna, 7: 1197–1200
 - McDaniel, Hattie, 7: 1267–70
 - Morrison, Jim, 7: 1336–38
 - Norman, Jessye, 8: 1404–6
 - Pavarotti, Luciano, 8: 1456–59
 - Presley, Elvis, 8: 1517–20

- Price, Leontyne, 8: 1522–24
 Robeson, Paul, 9: 1596–99
 Robinson, Smokey, 9: 1601–4
 Rolling Stones, 9: 1618–21
 Ross, Diana, 9: 1631–33
 Selena, 9: 1698–1701
 Sills, Beverly, 9: 1714–16
 Sinatra, Frank, 9: 1719–22
 Smith, Bessie, 9: 1727–29
 Streisand, Barbra, 9: 1776–79
Singin' and Swingin' and Gettin' Merry Like Christmas
 (Angelou), 1: 74
Singin' in the Rain (film), 6: 1060
 Singularity, theory of, 5: 860–61
 Sino-Japanese War (1937), 7: 1228
 Sino-Soviet relations, 4: 587–88
The Sirens of Titan (Vonnegut), 10: 1885
 Sisters of Loretto, 7: 1347–50
 Sistine Chapel (Michelangelo), 7: 1296
 Sisyphus, 2: 350
 Sit-in movement (civil rights), 6: 1095–96
 Sitting Bull, 1: 58
 Six-Day War, 1: 87; 2: 195
60 Minutes, 2: 266–68
The Sketch Book (Irving), 5: 976
The Skin of Our Teeth (Wildier), 10: 1947
 “Skiffle” music, 2: 181
 Skywalker Ranch, 6: 1177–78
Slaughterhouse-Five (Vonnegut), 10: 1885–86
The Slave (Singer), 9: 1726
 Slavery opponents
 Anthony, Susan B., 1: 80
 Brown, John, 2: 294–96
 Lincoln, Abraham, 6: 1150–54
 Sleeping car (railroad), 8: 1533–34
 Slim Buttes (Montana), Battle of, 1: 59
 Smallpox, 7: 1254–55
Smith, Bessie, 9: 1727–29, 1728 (ill.)
 Smithsonian Institution, 2: 199; 3: 461
 Smoke People (Bad Faces), 1: 57
 SNCC. *See* Student Nonviolent Coordinating
 Committee (SNCC)
 Soccer, 8: 1467–69
 Social activists and reformers
 Addams, Jane, 1: 25–27
 Alexander II, Emperor of Russia, 1: 42–43
 Ali, Muhammad, 1: 49
 Ashe, Arthur, 1: 110–13
 Bernstein, Leonard, 2: 212, 213
 Casals, Pablo, 3: 388
 Chavez, Linda, 3: 440–43
 Churchill, Winston, 3: 473
 Goldberg, Whoopi, 5: 798
 Hillary, Edmund, 5: 899
 Nader, Ralph, 7: 1373–76
 Sanger, Margaret, 9: 1674–75
 Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40
 Social behavior, 8: 1509–11
 Social philosophy, 7: 1331
 Social reform (realistic) play, 5: 971
 Social security system, 9: 1626–27
 Socialism
 Chaplin, Charlie, 3: 423
 Gompers, Samuel, 5: 803
 Hussein, Saddam, 5: 963–65
 Lenin, Vladimir, 1: 1132–15
 London, Jack, 6: 1170
 Marx, Karl, 7: 1246–49
 Shaw, George Bernard, 9: 1707
 Sinclair, Upton, 9: 1722–24
 Socialist Party (Italy), 7: 1367
 Socially correct behavior, 8: 1509–11
 Society of Apothecaries (L.S.A.) degree (England),
 1: 68
 Society of Jesus (Jesuits), 8: 1448, 1449
Socrates, 8: 1486–87; 9: 1729–31, 1730 (ill.)
 Socratic method of argumentation, 9: 1730–31
Sollicitudo Rei Socialis (John Paul II), 6: 1015
Something Happened (Heller), 5: 872
Sondheim, Stephen, 5: 851; 9: 1732–34,
 1733 (ill.)
The Song of Hiawatha (Longfellow), 6: 1172
Songs of Experience (Blake), 2: 236
Songs of Innocence (Blake), 2: 236
 Songwriters
 Berlin, Irving, 2: 208–10
 Berry, Chuck, 2: 213–15
 Burns, Robert, 2: 317–20, 319
 Calloway, Cab, 2: 342–44
 Coward, Noel, 3: 524
 Gordy, Berry, Jr., 5: 813–15
 Guthrie, Woody, 5: 838–41
 Hammerstein, Oscar, 5: 849–51
 Hendrix, Jimi, 5: 878–80
 Holland-Dozier-Holland, 9: 1632
 Jackson, Michael, 6: 986–89
 John, Elton, 6: 1011–12
 King, B. B., 6: 1086–89
 Morrison, Jim, 7: 1336–38
 Porter, Cole, 8: 1505–7
 Robinson, Smokey, 5: 814; 9: 1601–4
 Rodgers, Richard, 9: 1610–12
 Schubert, Franz, 9: 1684–87
Sonnets from the Portuguese (Elizabeth Barrett
 Browning), 2: 301
 Sonography (night writing), 2: 274
Sophocles, 9: 1734–37, 1736 (ill.)

- Sopranos
 Norman, Jessye, 8: 1404–6
 Price, Leontyne, 8: 1522–24
 Sills, Beverly, 9: 1714–16
- Soul music
 Brown, James, 2: 291–94
 Charles, Ray, 3: 432
- The Sound and the Fury* (Faulkner), 4: 703
- South America, 4: 633
- South Carolina
 Chesnut, Mary Boykin, 3: 454–56
- South of Freedom* (Rowan), 9: 1639
- South Pole, 5: 899
- South Sea Islands, 9: 1758–59
- South Vietnam, 6: 1068. *See also* Vietnam War
- Southeast Asia Treaty Organization (SEATO), 4: 660
- Southern Christian Leadership Conference (SCLC)
 Abernathy, Ralph, 1: 6
 Angelou, Maya, 1: 74
 Bond, Julian, 2: 245
 Hooks, Benjamin, 5: 934
 Jackson, Jesse, 6: 983–84
 King, Coretta Scott, 6: 1093
 King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1095–97
- Southey, Robert, 3: 497
- Southwest in paintings, 8: 1420–22
- Soviet Union, 2: 280–82; 5: 809–12; 6: 1067, 1068, 1083–86, 1131–35; 7: 1228, 1249; 8: 1440, 1537–40; 9: 1580, 1662–64, 1743–46; 10: 1982–84. *See also* Russia
- Space. *See* Astronauts; National Aeronautics Space Administration (NASA)
- Spain, 3: 399–401; 4: 592–94, 632–34; 7: 1201–3; 8: 1501–2
- Spanish American War, 9: 1629
- Spanish Armada, 4: 633–34, 674
- Spanish Civil War, 8: 1431, 1482; 9: 1598
- Spanish Singer* (Manet), 7: 1219
- Sparta, 1: 97–98; 8: 1473, 1474, 1486
- Spassky, Boris, 4: 714
- Special effects
 Lucas, George, 6: 1175–78
 Spielberg, Steven, 9: 1737–40
- Spector, Phil, 2: 184
- Speechwriters and speeches
 Buchanan, Pat, 2: 306
 Cicero, 3: 475–78
- Speer, Albert, 9: 1589
- Spencer, Diana. *See* Diana, Princess of Wales
- Sphere* (Crichton), 3: 526
- Spielberg, Steven**, 9: 1737–40, 1738 (ill.)
- Spinal-cord injury, 8: 1563
- Spinks, Leon, 1: 49
- The Spirit of St. Louis*, 6: 1155
- The Spirit of the Laws* (Montesquieu), 7: 1330–31
- Spiritualism
 Doyle, Arthur Conan, 4: 631; 5: 945
 Houdini, Harry, 5: 945, 946
 Hugo, Victor, 5: 960
- Spock, Benjamin**, 9: 1740–43, 1741 (ill.)
- The Spook Show* (Goldberg), 5: 797–98
- Sports. *See also* specific athlete, e.g., Aaron, Hank; specific sport, e.g., Baseball; specific team, e.g., Detroit Red Wings
- Sports photography, 9: 1590
- The Spotted Sphinx* (Adamson), 1: 24
- Spring* (Botticelli), 2: 258
- SS (Nazi security squad). *See* Schutzstaffel (SS—Nazi security squad)
- Stagecoach* (film), 10: 1914–15
- Stalin, Joseph**, 6: 1084–85; 9: 1743–46, 1745 (ill.)
- Stamp Act, 1: 18, 21; 4: 733, 734; 5: 884; 8: 1575
- Standard Oil Company, 9: 1605–6
- Standard reasoning tests, 8: 1477–78
- Stanislaw, King of Poland, 3: 403
- Stanley Home Products, 1: 109
- Stanton, Elizabeth Cady**, 1: 80; 5: 951; 9: 1747–49, 1748 (ill.)
- Stanwyck, Barbara, 2: 358
- A Star Is Born* (film), 4: 766; 9: 1778
- Star Wars* films, 6: 1176–77
- Stardust Memories* (film), 1: 51
- Starr, Ringo, 2: 181–85
- The Starry Messenger* (Galileo), 4: 751
- Starry Night* (Van Gogh), 10: 1862
- Stars 1: 166–68; 3: 419–21; 5: 894
- State Law and Order Restoration Council (SLORC), 1: 131
- Statesmen. *See* specific position, e.g., Presidents
- Statue of Liberty, 6: 1119–21
- Statue of Liberty–Ellis Island Centennial Commission, 5: 968–69
- Steam engine, 10: 1911–13
- Steamboats, 10: 1850
- Steel, 3: 367–69
- Stein, Edith**, 9: 1749–52, 1750 (ill.)
- Stein, Gertrude**, 9: 1752–54, 1753 (ill.)
- Steinbeck, John**, 9: 1755–57, 1756 (ill.)
- Stem-cell research, 1: 163–64
- Step Pyramid (Sakkara), 5: 973–74
- Stereoscope, 5: 922
- Stern, Itzhak, 9: 1679
- Stevenson, Robert Louis**, 9: 1757–59, 1758 (ill.)
- Stewart, Jimmy, 2: 358–59
- Stieglitz, Alfred, 8: 1420

- Stock Market Crash (1929), 5: 839; 9: 1617
- Stockdale, James B., 5: 817
- Stoker, Bram**, 9: 1759–61, 1760 (ill.)
- Stone, Oliver**, 9: 1761–64, 1763 (ill.)
- Stoppard, Tom**, 9: 1764–66, 1765 (ill.)
- Stowe, Harriet Beecher**, 9: 1766–69, 1768 (ill.)
- Stradivari, Antonio**, 9: 1769–71, 1779 (ill.)
- The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde* (Stevenson), 9: 1758–59
- “Strange Fruit” (song), 5: 919
- The Stranger* (Camus), 2: 350
- Strategic Arms Limitations Treaty (SALT), 6: 1105
- Strauss, Johann**, 9: 1771–72, 1772 (ill.)
- Stravinsky, Igor**, 4: 571; 9: 1773–76, 1774 (ill.)
- Strayhorn, Billy, 4: 679; 5: 943
- Stream of consciousness, 6: 1039
- A Streetcar Named Desire* (Williams), 2: 278; 10: 1949
- Streisand, Barbra**, 9: 1776–79, 1777 (ill.)
- Strike Hard anticrime drive (China), 6: 1004
- String quartets, 7: 1352
- Strunk, William S., Jr., 10: 1934
- Stuart Little* (White), 10: 1934
- Student Nonviolent Coordinating Committee (SNCC), 6: 1095
- Bond, Julian, 2: 245
- Carmichael, Stokely, 3: 365–66
- Studies in Word Association* (Jung), 6: 1043
- Substance abuse. *See also* Alcohol abuse
- Brown, James, 2: 293
- Garland, Judy, 4: 766
- Holiday, Billie, 5: 919–20
- John, Elton, 6: 1011–12
- Kerouac, Jack, 6: 1078
- Louis, Joe, 6: 1175
- Morrison, Jim, 7: 1337
- Presley, Elvis, 8: 1519
- Robinson, Smokey, 9: 1603
- Taylor, Elizabeth, 10: 1792
- Suetonius, 2: 339, 340
- Suez Canal, 10: 1871
- Suffrage (women’s)
- Anthony, Susan B., 1: 79–81
- Howe, Julia Ward, 5: 951
- Stanton, Elizabeth Cady, 9: 1747–49
- Sugar Act, 1: 20–21
- Sullivan, Anne, 6: 1057
- Sullivan, Louis, 10: 1972
- “A Summary View of the Rights of British America” (Jefferson), 6: 994
- Sun, 3: 513; 4: 591
- Sun* (newspaper), 7: 1365
- The Sun Also Rises* (Hemingway), 5: 876
- Sun Yat-Sen**, 9: 1779–83, 1780 (ill.)
- Sunspots, 4: 751
- Super Bowl, 7: 1327–29
- Superman* (film), 8: 1562
- “Superman” (Nietzsche), 8: 1389
- Supreme Court justices
- Brandeis, Louis, 2: 275–77
- Burger, Warren, 2: 314–17
- Ginsburg, Ruth Bader, 5: 794–96
- Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr., 5: 923–25
- Marshall, Thurgood, 7: 1243–46
- O’Connor, Sandra Day, 8: 1416–19
- Thomas, Clarence, 10: 1807–10
- Supremes (singing group), 9: 1631–33
- Surgeon general, 4: 665
- Surgeons. *See also* Physicians
- Barnard, Christiaan, 1: 173–75
- Beaumont, William, 2: 185–87
- Doyle, Arthur Conan, 4: 629–31
- Lister, Joseph, 6: 1159–60
- Mayo, Charles H., 7: 1258–61
- Mayo, William J., 7: 1258–61
- Surrealists
- Bacon, Francis, 1: 144
- Chagall, Marc, 3: 414
- Dali, Salvador, 3: 549–51
- Miró, Joan, 7: 1317
- Surveying, 1: 167
- “Survival of the fittest,” 3: 556
- Sutton Place (London, England), 5: 787
- Sweeney Todd* (musical), 9: 1733
- Swerling, Jo, 2: 357–58
- Swimmer, Ross, 7: 1223
- Swing Era
- Basie, Count, 1: 178–79
- Calloway, Cab, 2: 343
- Goodman, Benny, 5: 807–9
- Sinatra, Frank, 9: 1720
- Smith, Bessie, 9: 1728
- Switchboard, telephone, 2: 198
- The Symphony of Psalms* (Stravinsky), 9: 1775
- Symposium* (Plato), 9: 1729
- Synge, John Millington, 10: 1980
- Synthetic rubber, 4: 653
- Syracuse (Sicily), 1: 89–91
- Syria, 1: 88

T

- Tabulae Rudolphinae* (Kepler), 6: 1076
- Taft, William Howard, 9: 1631
- Taiwan, 3: 456–59
- Taj Mahal (Atlantic City, New Jersey), 10: 1839

- Taliban, 9: 1582
 Talking-pictures, 6: 1026
Tallchief, Maria, 10: 1785–87, 1786 (ill.)
Tan, Amy, 10: 1787–89, 1788 (ill.)
 Tang dynasty (China), 10: 1843
 Tanners, 8: 1450
Tannhäuser (Wagner), 10: 1890
 Tanzania, 1: 62; 6: 1123
Tao te ching (Lao Tzu), 6: 1116–17
 Taoism, 6: 1115–17
 Tarbell, Ida, 9: 1606
 “Tariff of Abominations” (1828), 10: 1917
 Tariff of 1832, 6: 982
Tartuffe (Molière), 7: 1320
 Taupin, Bernie, 6: 1011
Taxi Driver (film), 9: 1692
 Taxidermy, 1: 127
Taylor, Elizabeth, 10: 1790–92, 1791 (ill.)
 Taylor, Mick, 9: 1619–20
Tchaikovsky, Peter Ilych, 10: 1792–95, 1794 (ill.)
 Teachers
 Anderson, Elizabeth Garrett, 1: 66–69
 Apgar, Virginia, 1: 84
 Aristotle, 1: 98–100
 Ashe, Arthur, 1: 110–13
 Asimov, Isaac, 1: 115
 Barton, Clara, 1: 175–77
 Bell, Alexander Graham, 2: 196–200
 Bennett, William, 2: 204–6
 Bethune, Mary McLeod, 2: 215–17
 Braille, Louis, 2: 273–75
 Chisholm, Shirley, 3: 462–63
 Collins, Marva, 3: 499–500
 Confucius, 3: 503–6
 Dewey, John, 4: 594–97
 Graham, Martha, 5: 827–29
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 5: 920–23
 hooks, bell, 5: 931–33
 Jesus of Nazareth, 6: 1001
 John Paul II, 6: 1014–15
 King, Coretta Scott, 6: 1091
 Lao Tzu, 6: 1116–17
 Linnaeus, Carl, 6: 1158
 Montessori, Maria, 7: 1331–33
 Paracelsus, Philippus Aureolus, 8: 1444–45
 Ramakrishna, Sri, 8: 1550–52
 Sagan, Carl, 9: 1659–62
 Washington, Booker T., 10: 1904
 Techno-thrillers (fiction), 3: 525–27
 Teen pregnancy, 4: 664
 Teenage fiction. *See* Juvenile fiction
 Teenaged “rebels”
 Campbell, Ben Nighthorse, 2: 347
 Dean, James, 4: 567–69
A Teenager’s Guide to Life and Love (Spock),
 9: 1742–43
 Teheran, Iran, 3: 382
 Tejano (Tex-Mex) music, 9: 1698–1701
 Telegraph, 2: 197
 Carnegie, Andrew, 3: 367
 Edison, Thomas, 4: 651
 Morse, Samuel F. B., 7: 1341–43
 Telephone, 2: 197–98
 Telescopes
 Galileo, 4: 751
 Herschel, William, 5: 894
 Television
 Angelou, Maya, 1: 75
 Asimov, Isaac, 1: 115
 Astaire, Fred, 1: 117, 118
 Ball, Lucille, 1: 159–61
 Bradley, Ed, 2: 266–68
 Capote, Truman, 2: 356
 Carson, Johnny, 3: 372–74
 Child, Julia, 3: 460–61
 Cosby, Bill, 3: 520–21
 Cousteau, Jacques, 3: 522–23
 Cronkite, Walter, 3: 533–34
 Dee, Ruby, 4: 572–73
 Ed Sullivan Show, 2: 182
 Goldberg, Whoopi, 5: 799
 Jones, Quincy, 6: 1030–31
 McCarthy, Joseph, 7: 1266
 Mfume, Kweisi, 7: 1295
 Murdoch, Rupert, 7: 1366
 Pavarotti, Luciano, 8: 1458
 “Peanuts” comic strip, 9: 1689
 Reagan, Ronald, 8: 1558
 Streisand, Barbra, 9: 1777
 Tharp, Twyla, 10: 1806
 Vidal, Gore, 10: 1873
 Walters, Barbara, 10: 1897–1900
 Winfrey, Oprah, 10: 1954–57
 Temin, Howard M., 1: 162
 Temperature scale
 Celsius, Anders, 3: 407–8
 Fahrenheit, Gabriel Daniel, 4: 695–96
The Tempest (Shakespeare), 9: 1706
 Temple, Ed, 9: 1647
 Temple, Shirley. *See* Black, Shirley Temple
 Ten Commandments, 7: 1345
The Ten Commandments (film), 4: 586
The Tenants (Malamud), 7: 1210
Tender Is the Night (Fitzgerald), 4: 720

- Tennessee
 Crockett, Davy, 3: 527–29
 Hooks, Benjamin, 5: 933–36
 Jackson, Andrew, 6: 980
 Scopes trial (1925), 3: 553
- Tennis players
 Ashe, Arthur, 1: 110–13
 Gibson, Athea, 5: 790–91
 King, Billie Jean, 6: 1089–91
 McEnroe, John, 7: 1270–72
- Tennyson, Alfred, Lord**, 10: 1795–98, 1796 (ill.)
- Tenors
 Domingo, Placido, 4: 616–18
 Pavarotti, Luciano, 8: 1456–59
- Tereshkova, Valentina**, 10: 1798–1801, 1799 (ill.)
- Terrorism
 early PLO, 1: 87–88
 Hearst, Patty, 1: 151
 Iraq, 5: 965
 Qadhafi, Mu‘ammar al-, 8: 1543–46
- Terrorist attacks (September 11, 2001)
 Ali, Muhammad, 1: 49
 Blair, Tony, 2: 234
 Bush, George W., 2: 329
 Bush, Laura, 2: 331
 Cheney, Dick, 3: 453
 Chrétien, Jean, 3: 469
 Mandela, Nelson, 7: 1218–19
 Powell, Colin, 8: 1514
- “Tetractys of the Decad,” 8: 1542
- Tex* (Hinton), 5: 902
- Texas
 Bush, George, 2: 323–26
 Bush, George W., 2: 326–29
 Bush, Laura, 2: 329–31
 Crockett, Davy, 3: 529
 Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1016–19
 Porter, Katherine Anne, 8: 1507–9
- Texas Rangers, 2: 328; 9: 1655
- Thackeray, William Makepeace**, 10: 1801–4, 1802 (ill.)
- Tharp, Twyla**, 10: 1804–7, 1805 (ill.)
- That They May Be One* (John Paul II), 6: 1015
- That Was Then, This Is Now* (Hinton), 5: 901
- Their Eyes Were Watching God* (Hurston), 5: 962
- Them* (Oates), 8: 1414
- Thembu tribe, Transkei, South Africa, 7: 1216
- Theme Parks, 4: 612–13
- Theophrastus, 1: 100
- Therapy, psychological, 1: 27
- Thermidorian Reaction, 9: 1601
- Thermodynamics, 4: 655
- Thermometers
 Celsius, Anders, 3: 408
 Fahrenheit, Gabriel Daniel, 4: 696
- Thermonuclear weapons, 9: 1663
- The Thief of Baghdad* (film), 10: 1958
- Things Fall Apart* (Achebe), 1: 10
- The Third Life of Grange Copeland* (Walker), 10: 1892, 1893
- Third Reich, 9: 1589. *See also* Hitler, Adolf; Nazi Party
- Thirty Tyrants, 8: 1486
- This Side of Paradise* (Fitzgerald), 4: 719–20
- Thomas, Clarence**, 10: 1807–10, 1808 (ill.)
- Thomas, Dylan**, 10: 1810–13, 1811 (ill.)
- Thoreau, Henry David**, 10: 1813–16, 1814 (ill.)
- Thorpe, Jim**, 10: 1816–19, 1817 (ill.)
- A Thousand Days: John F. Kennedy in the White House* (Schlesinger), 9: 1683
- Thrall, Henry, 6: 1024
- Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality* (Freud), 4: 737
- “Three Laws of Robotics,” 1: 115
- Three Lives* (Stein), 9: 1754
- “Three People’s Principles” (Sun Yat-Sen), 9: 1781, 1782
- Three Tales* (Flaubert), 4: 723
- Three Tenors, 4: 618; 8: 1459
- “Three Women: A Monologue for Three Voices” (Plath), 8: 1484
- “Thrilla in Manila,” 1: 49
- Thriller* (Jackson), 6: 987–88, 1031
- Through the Looking Glass and What Alice Found There* (Carroll), 3: 371
- Al-Thulathia* (Mahfuz), 7: 1204
- Thurber, James**, 10: 1819–20, 1820 (ill.)
- Thus Spake Zarathustra* (Nietzsche), 8: 1390
- Tiananmen Square (Beijing, China), 4: 589; 6: 1003
- Tiberius, Emperor of Rome, 2: 339
- Tibet, 2: 312; 3: 546–49
- Tiger Eyes* (Blume), 2: 240
- The Tigris* (Heyerdahl), 5: 897
- The Tilled Field* (Miró), 7: 1317
- Timeline* (Crichton), 3: 527
- Times* (London newspaper), 7: 1365
- Tin Lizzie (Model T Ford automobile), 4: 727
- “Tintern Abbey” (Wordsworth), 10: 1966–67
- Tito, Marshal**, 10: 1821–23, 1822 (ill.)
- To the Lighthouse* (Woolf), 10: 1964
- Today* (TV show), 10: 1898
- Toghril (Mongol leader), 5: 784
- Tohai Seiki Company, 5: 929
- Toklas, Alice B., 9: 1753

- Tolkien, J. R. R.**, 10: 1824–26, 1825 (ill.)
- Tolstoy, Leo**, 10: 1827–29, 1828 (ill.)
- Tom Sawyer* (Twain), 10: 1851
- The Tonight Show*, 3: 373–74
- “Tonton macoutes,” 1: 94; 4: 641
- Topics and Analytics* (Aristotle), 1: 100
- Torah, 1: 138
- Tordesillas, treaty of, 7: 1201
- Torrijos, Colonel Omar, 8: 1401–2
- Torrio, Johnny, 2: 352
- Totalitarianism
Arendt, Hannah, 1: 91
Stalin, Joseph, 9: 1746
- “Tough guys,” 2: 242
- Toulouse-Lautrec, Henri de**, 10: 1830–32, 1831 (ill.)
- Townshend Acts, 1: 21
- Toy Story* (film), 6: 1010
- Toynbee Hall (London, England), 1: 26
- Toyoda, Eiji**, 10: 1832–34, 1833 (ill.)
- Toyoda, Kuchiro, 10: 1832–33
- Toyota Motor Company, 10: 1833–34
- Track and field athletes
Lewis, Carl, 6: 1141–43
Owens, Jesse, 8: 1435–37
Rudolph, Wilma, 9: 1646–48
Thorpe, Jim, 10: 1816–19
- Tracy, Spencer, 5: 890
- Trade routes, 6: 1111–12
- Trade unions, 8: 1552–55
- Trafalgar, battle of, 7: 1378
- Tragedians
Aeschylus, 1: 29–30
Euripides, 4: 688–90
Shakespeare, William, 9: 1705–6
Sophocles, 9: 1734–37
- Trail of Tears, 7: 1221, 1223
- Traitors, 1: 105–8
- Transcendentalists
Cummings, E. E., 3: 536
Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 4: 680–83
Thoreau, Henry David, 10: 1815–16
- Transmaritima Bolivia, 1: 172
- Transvaal, South Africa
de Klerk, F. W., 4: 583
Rhodes, Cecil John, 9: 1578
- Travels with Charley* (Steinbeck), 9: 1757
- Travesties* (Stoppard), 9: 1766
- Treason, 2: 322
- Treasure Island* (Stevenson), 9: 1758
- The Treasure of the Sierra Madre* (film), 2: 243
- A Tree of Night and Other Stories* (Capote), 2: 355
- The Trial* (Kafka), 6: 1049
- Tribal activism, 2: 200–202
- Triptych* (Bacon), 1: 145
- Triumph of the Will* (film), 9: 1589
- Triumvirate (First), 2: 336; 3: 476
- Triumvirate (Second), 1: 129; 3: 477; 7: 1242
- Trojan War, 1: 30
- Tropic of Cancer* (Miller), 7: 1308
- Troy Female Seminary, 9: 1747–48
- The True-Born Englishman* (Defoe), 4: 575
- Truman Doctrine, 10: 1836
- Truman, Harry S.**, 7: 1188; 9: 1628, 1682–83; 10: 1834–37, 1835 (ill.)
- Trump, Donald**, 10: 1837–40, 1838 (ill.)
- Trumpeters
Armstrong, Louis, 1: 101–2
Davis, Miles, 3: 559–60
Gillespie, Dizzy, 5: 792
- Trusts
Northern Securities Corporation (railroads), 9: 1630
Standard Oil Trust, 9: 1605–6
- Truth, Sojourner**, 10: 1840–43, 1841 (ill.)
- Tu Fu**, 10: 1843–45, 1844 (ill.)
- Tuan Ch'i-jui, 9: 1782
- Turgot, A. R. J., 7: 1239
- Tuskegee Institute
Carver, George Washington, 3: 384–85; 10: 1904–5
Washington, Booker T., 10: 1904–5
- Tutankhamen**, 7: 1382; 10: 1845–47, 1846 (ill.)
- Tutu, Desmond**, 10: 1847–50, 1848 (ill.)
- Twain, Mark**, 10: 1850–52, 1851 (ill.)
- Twenty Thousand Leagues Under the Sea* (Verne), 10: 1866
- “Twin-heart” operation, 1: 174–75
- “Twinkie Defense,” 7: 1301
- “Two Essays on Analytical Psychology” (Jung), 6: 1044
- Two New Sciences* (Galileo), 4: 752
- Two Treatises* (Locke), 6: 1167
- Typewriters, 4: 651
- Tyrants. *See also* Dictators
Amin, Idi, 1: 59–62
Caligula, 2: 338–40
Duvalier, François, 4: 640–42
Hussein, Saddam, 5: 962–65
Marcos, Ferdinand, 7: 1233–35
Pol Pot, 8: 1495–98
Stalin, Joseph, 9: 1743–46
- Tzaddikim, 1: 138

U

- Uganda, 1: 59–62
- Ukraine, 6: 1085
- Ulysses (Joyce), 6: 1039
- Umkhonto we Sizwe (Spear of the Nation), 7: 1217
- Uncertainty principle (Heisenberg) 5: 868–70
- Uncle Tom's Cabin* (Stowe), 9: 1767–68
- Unconscious, 6: 1043–44
- Under Milk Wood* (Thomas), 10: 1813
- Underground Railroad, 9: 1596
- Undersea exploration, 3: 521–23
- The Undersea World of Jacques-Yves Cousteau* (TV series), 3: 522
- UNICEF, 5: 887–88
- Unified field theory
- Hawking, Stephen, 5: 861
 - Heisenberg, Werner, 5: 870
- Union Pacific Railroad, 5: 820
- Unions. *See* Labor union activists, leaders, and organizers; Labor union strikes
- United Automobile Workers (UAW), 2: 220; 4: 728
- United Church of Christ, 3: 445
- United Farm Workers Organizing Committee (UFWOC), 3: 437, 438
- United Kingdom. *See* England; Great Britain; Northern Ireland; Scotland
- United Nations
- Albright, Madeleine, 1: 38
 - Annan, Kofi, 1: 76–79
 - Aung San Suu Kyi, 1: 131
 - Black, Shirley Temple, 2: 228–29
 - Boutros-Ghali, Boutros, 2: 263–64
 - Bunche, Ralph, 2: 312–14
 - Bush, George, 2: 324
 - Hepburn, Audrey, 5: 887–88
 - Hussein, Saddam, 5: 965
 - Qadhafi, Mu'ammar al-, 8: 1545
 - Roosevelt, Eleanor, 9: 1623
- United States, 1: 7–9, 12–15, 17–22, 25–27, 31–33, 37–39, 79–81, 88, 105–8; 2: 204–6, 215–17, 244–50, 275–77, 294–97, 305–8, 312–17, 320–31, 346–49; 3: 374–77, 379–83, 451–53, 461–64, 483–89, 527–29; 4: 613–16, 626–29, 657–65, 690–93, 704–7, 710–13, 731–35; 5: 794–96, 816–18, 852–54, 883–86, 923–25; 6: 979–86, 994–97, 1016–19, 1061–69, 1071–74, 1091–97, 1104–7, 1150–54; 7: 1185–88, 1191–97, 1210–14, 1243–46, 1264–67, 1298–1301; 8: 1392–96, 1416–19, 1425–27, 1469–72, 1511–14, 1557–60, 1568–71, 1574–76; 9: 1580–83, 1621–31; 10: 1807–10, 1834–37, 1840–43, 1906–10, 1916–19, 1951–54. *See also* Colonial America; U.S.
- Universal Negro Improvement Association and African Communities League (UNIA-ACI), 4: 767–68
- Universal science, 1: 146–47
- University of Chicago, 9: 1606
- University of Maryland Law School, 7: 1244, 1246
- Unsafe at Any Speed* (Nader), 7: 1375
- Updike, John**, 10: 1855–57, 1856 (ill.)
- Uranium, 3: 538–39
- U.S. army
- Eisenhower, Dwight D., 4: 658
 - Seventh Cavalry, 1: 58–59
- U.S. Army Counter Intelligence Corps, 1: 171–72
- U.S. Bureau of Indian Affairs, 2: 201
- U.S. Bureau of Records, 1: 176
- U.S.-China relations, 6: 1106
- U.S. Coast Guard, 5: 844
- U.S. Constitution, 10: 1908
- Constitutional Convention (1787), 4: 734–35; 5: 847; 7: 1192, 1195
 - Nineteenth Amendment (women's right to vote), 1: 81
 - Thirteenth Amendment (abolition of slavery), 9: 1748
- U.S. Department of Education, 2: 205–6
- U.S. Department of Justice, 1: 172–73
- U.S. Equal Opportunity Commission (EEOC), 10: 1809
- U.S. foreign policy
- Albright, Madeleine, 1: 39
 - Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1105–6
- U.S. Interior Department, 1: 58
- U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff, 8: 1513
- U.S. Lawn Tennis Association (USLTA), 1: 111
- U.S.-Myanmar relations, 1: 132
- U.S. Office of National Drug Control Policy, 2: 206
- U.S. Open
- Ashe, Arthur, 1: 111–12
 - King, Billie Jean, 6: 1089–90
 - McEnroe, John, 7: 1271–72
- U.S. Postal Service, 4: 733
- U.S. presidents. *See* Presidents
- U.S. secretaries of state. *See* Secretaries of state
- U.S. Senate. *See* Senators
- U.S.-Soviet relations, 2: 282; 5: 811
- U.S. space programs, 1: 104–5
- U.S. Steel Corporation, 3: 369
- U.S. Supreme Court. *See* Supreme Court justices
- U.S. vice presidents. *See* Vice presidents
- U.S.-Vietnam relations, 3: 486
- Ut Unum Sintor* (That They May Be One) (John Paul II), 6: 1015
- Utopia* (More), 7: 1334–35
- Utrecht Caravaggists, 10: 1863

V

Vaccines

Pasteur, Louis, 1: 1450–53

Sabin, Albert, 9: 1657–59

Salk, Jonas, 9: 1667–69

Vail, Alfred, 7: 1342

Valley of the Kings (Egypt), 10: 1846

Vampires, 9: 1760

Van Dyck, Anthony, 9: 1644

Van Gogh, Vincent, 4: 774; 10: **1859–62**, 1861 (ill.)

Vanderbilt, Cornelius, 5: 819–20

Vanity Fair (Thackeray), 10: 1803

Vatican, 1: 73

Vaudeville performers

Astaire, Fred, 1: 116

Davis, Sammy, Jr., 3: 563

Garland, Judy, 4: 764

Grant, Cary, 5: 830

Hope, Bob, 5: 936

Jolson, Al, 6: 1025–27

Rogers, Will, 9: 1615–17

Venice, 8: 1498–1500

Venus, 9: 1660–61

Ver, Fabian C., 1: 86

The Verdict (Kafka), 6: 1048

The Verdict (Mamet), 7: 1215

Veritatis Splendor (The Resplendence of Truth) (John Paul II), 6: 1015

Vermeer, Jan, 10: **1862–64**, 1863 (ill.)

Verne, Jules, 10: **1864–67**, 1865 (ill.)

Verrocchio, Andrea del, 6: 1136

Versailles, treaty of, 10: 1953–54

Verus, Lucius, 7: 1236

Vespucci, Amerigo, 10: **1867–69**, 1868 (ill.)

Vice presidents

Adams, John, 1: 14

Agnew, Spiro, 1: 31–33

Burr, Aaron, 2: 320–22

Bush, George, 2: 323–26

Cheney, Dick, 3: 451–53

Gore, Al, 5: 816–18

Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1018

Nixon, Richard, 8: 1392–96

Roosevelt, Theodore, 9: 1629

Truman, Harry S., 10: 1835

Victoria, Queen of Great Britain and Ireland and Empress of India, 10: **1869–72**, 1870 (ill.)

Victorians

Dickens, Charles, 4: 600–603

Hardy, Thomas, 5: 859

Vidal, Gore, 10: **1872–74**, 1873 (ill.)

Vienna, Austria

Brahms, Johannes, 2: 272–73

Freud, Sigmund, 4: 735–38

Strauss, Johann, 9: 1771–72

Vienna Psychoanalytic Society, 1: 27

Vietnam, 5: 913–15. *See also* Vietnam War

Vietnam Veterans' Memorial (Washington, D.C.), 6: 1148–49

Vietnam War

Ali, Muhammad, 1: 48

Bradley, Ed, 2: 267, 268

Bush, George W., 2: 327

Carter, Jimmy, 3: 381

Gore, Al, 5: 816

Graham, Katharine, 5: 825

Ho Chi Minh, 5: 915

Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1018, 1019

Kennedy, Edward, 6: 1061

Kennedy, John F., 6: 1068

Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1106

Nixon, Richard, 8: 1394–95

Powell, Colin, 8: 1512

Stone, Oliver, 9: 1762

Vietnam War antiwar movement

Abzug, Bella, 1: 8

Ali, Muhammad, 1: 48

Baez, Joan, 1: 149

Bernstein, Leonard, 2: 212

Bond, Julian, 2: 245

Carmichael, Stokely, 3: 366

Chisholm, Shirley, 3: 463

King, Coretta Scott, 6: 1093

King, Martin Luther, Jr., 6: 1097

A View from Above (Chamberlain), 3: 419

View of the Thames (Whistler), 10: 1931

Villa, Pancho, 3: 362

Violins

Stradivari, Antonio, 9: 1769–71

Vivaldi, Antonio, 10: 1877–78

Virgil, 10: **1874–76**, 1875 (ill.)

Virgin of the Rocks (Leonardo da Vinci), 6: 1137

Virginia

Henry, Patrick, 5: 883–86

Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 995

Madison, James, 7: 1194–97

Pocahontas, 8: 1488–90

Washington, George, 10: 1906

Virginia Revolutionary Conventions, 5: 884, 885

Virologists

Baltimore, David, 1: 161–64

Sabin, Albert, 9: 1657–59

Salk, Jonas, 9: 1667–69

Viruses, 1: 1450–53

- Vision after the Sermon* (Gauguin), 4: 774
Vita Caroli Magni (Einhard), 3: 426
The Vital Center: The Politics of Freedom
 (Schlesinger), 9: 1682–83
 Vitamin C, 8: 1455–56
Vivaldi, Antonio, 10: 1877–78, 1878 (ill.)
 Vivekananda, 8: 1552
 Vizier, Ay, 10: 1846
 Vizier (Egypt), 5: 972–75
Voices of the Night (Longfellow), 6: 1171–72
Volpone, or the Fox (Jonson), 6: 1033
 Volta Laboratory, 2: 199
Voltaire, 10: 1879–81, 1880 (ill.)
Von Braun, Wernher, 10: 1882–84, 1883 (ill.)
 Von Meck, Nadezhda, 10: 1794–95
Vonnegut, Kurt, 10: 1884–87, 1885 (ill.)
 Voting, women's right to. *See* Women's suffrage
 Voting Rights Act (1965), 1: 6; 6: 1018
- W**
- Wabash Railroad, 5: 820
 Waco, Texas, 8: 1570–71
Wagner, Richard, 10: 1889–91, 1890 (ill.)
 Brahms, Johannes, 2: 272
 Debussy, Claude, 4: 570
 Nietzsche, Friedrich, 8: 1388–89
Waiting to Exhale (McMillan), 7: 1275
 Walcott, Jersey Joe, 7: 1231–32
Walden (Thoreau), 10: 1815
 “Walker Agents,” 10: 1896
Walker, Alice, 10: 1891–94, 1893 (ill.)
Walker, Madame C. J., 10: 1894–97, 1895 (ill.)
 Walker, Margaret, 5: 845
Wall Street (film), 9: 1763
 Wallace, George, 6: 1097
 Wallace, Henry A., 3: 385
Walters, Barbara, 10: 1897–1900, 1898 (ill.)
 Waltzes, 9: 1772
The Wanderings of Oisín and Other Poems (Yeats),
 10: 1981
Wang, An, 10: 1900–1902, 1901 (ill.)
 Wang Laboratories, 10: 1902
Wapping (Whistler), 10: 1930
War and Peace (Tolstoy), 10: 1828–29
 War crimes
 Barbie, Klaus, 1: 172–73
 Milosevic, Slobodan, 7: 1310–13
 Pol Pot, 8: 1495–98
 War of 1812
 Astor, John Jacob, 1: 120
 Beaumont, William, 2: 185
 Jackson, Andrew, 6: 980–81
 Madison, Dolley, 7: 1193
 War on terrorism, 3: 453
 Warren, Earl, 4: 659
 Warriors (Native American), 1: 57–59
Washington, Booker T., 10: 1903–5, 1904 (ill.)
Washington, George, 1: 14; 10: 1906–10,
 1907 (ill.)
 Adams, John, 1: 19
 Arnold, Benedict, 1: 106, 107, 108
 Bellocourt, Clyde, 2: 200
 Hamilton, Alexander, 5: 846, 848
 Lafayette, Marquis de, 6: 1114
Washington Post (newspaper), 5: 824–26
 Washington Wizards, 6: 1037
 Washkansky, Louis, 1: 174
The Wasteland (Eliot), 4: 670
 Water
 Cavendish, Henry, 3: 405–6
 Fahrenheit, Gabriel Daniel, 4: 696
Water Music (Handel), 5: 855
 Water screw, 1: 90
 Watergate scandal, 5: 826
 Buchanan, Pat, 2: 306
 Burger, Warren, 2: 316
 Bush, George, 2: 324
 Clinton, Hillary Rodham, 3: 487–88
 Hughes, Howard, 5: 954
 Nixon, Richard, 8: 1395–96
 Waterloo, battle of, 7: 1379
 Watson, Thomas, 2: 197–98
Watt, James, 10: 1910–13, 1912 (ill.)
Watt, Watt (Beckett), 2: 190–91
 Watts, Charlie, 9: 1619 (ill.)
Waverly (Scott), 9: 1694
Wayne, John, 10: 1913–16, 1914 (ill.)
 “We Remember: A Reflection on the Shoah”
 (John Paul II), 6: 1015–16
The Weary Blues (Hughes), 5: 956
 Weavers (folk group), 5: 841
 Webb, Chick, 4: 716
 Webern, Anton, 9: 1775
Webster, Daniel, 10: 1916–19, 1917 (ill.)
Webster, Noah, 10: 1919–21, 1920 (ill.)
A Week on the Concord and Merrimack Rivers
 (Thoreau), 10: 1815
 Weems, Mason Locke, 10: 1906
 Weinberger, Caspar, 8: 1512, 1513
 Welch, Joseph, 7: 1266
Welles, Orson, 10: 1922–24, 1923 (ill.)
Welty, Eudora, 10: 1925–27, 1926 (ill.)
 Wesley, John, 2: 251
 West Bank, 1: 88

- West Germany, 9: 1681
 West Indies, 4: 767–69
West Side Story, 2: 212; 9: 1732
 Western films
 Eastwood, Clint, 4: 649
 Wayne, John, 10: 1914–15
 Western guides, 3: 374–77
 Western thought
 Aristotle, 1: 100
 Kant, Immanuel, 6: 1053
 Western Union, 2: 198–99; 5: 820–21
 Westernization
 of China, 6: 1111–12
 of Russia, 3: 401–4
 Westhead, Paul, 6: 1020
 Westside Preparatory School (Chicago), 3: 499
Wharton, Edith, 10: 1928–29, 1928 (ill.)
What's New, Pussycat? (film), 1: 50
What's to Be Done? (Lenin), 6: 1133
 Whig Party, 10: 1918
Whistler, James, 10: 1929–32, 1930 (ill.)
The White Album (Beatles), 2: 184
 White, Dan, 4: 706; 7: 1301
White, E. B., 10: 1819, 1932–34, 1933 (ill.)
The White Girl (Whistler), 10: 1930–31
 Whitewater scandal, 3: 485, 489
Whitman, Walt, 10: 1935–37, 1936 (ill.)
Why England Slept (Kennedy), 6: 1064
Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40, 1939 (ill.)
Wilde, Oscar, 10: 1940–42, 1941 (ill.)
Wilder, Laura Ingalls, 10: 1943–45, 1944 (ill.)
Wilder, Thornton, 10: 1946–48, 1947 (ill.)
 Wildlife preservationists, 1: 22–25
 Wilhelm Ernst, Duke (Weimar, Germany), 1: 142
 William III, King of England, 4: 574, 575
Williams, Tennessee, 10: 1948–50, 1949 (ill.)
 Williamson, Sonny Boy, 6: 1087
 Wills, William D., 3: 496
Wilma (Rudolph), 9: 1648
 Wilmington (North Carolina) 10, 3: 445
 Wilson, Alexander, 1: 127
 Wilson, Mary, 9: 1631
 Wilson, Teddy, 5: 808
Wilson, Woodrow, 10: 1951–54, 1952 (ill.)
 Wimbledon tennis tournament
 Ashe, Arthur, 1: 112
 Gibson, Athea, 5: 791
 King, Billie Jean, 6: 1089–90
 McEnroe, John, 7: 1271–72
 Windsor, Charles, Prince of Wales, 3: 427–30, 428 (ill.)
Winfrey, Oprah, 10: 1954–57, 1955 (ill.)
 Wing chun, 6: 1124
Winning of the West (Roosevelt), 9: 1629
 Wisconsin
 McCarthy, Joseph, 7: 1264–67
 Witchcraft trials
 Mather, Cotton, 7: 1254
 Miller, Arthur, 7: 1306
With Shuddering Fall (Oates), 8: 1414
The Wiz, 6: 987
The Wizard of Oz (film), 4: 765
 Wojtyla, Karol. *See* John Paul II
 Wolsey, Thomas, 5: 881; 7: 1335
Woman in White (Picasso), 8: 1482
Woman Rebel (newspaper), 9: 1674
 Women in medicine
 Apgar, Virginia, 1: 81–84
 Garrett, Elizabeth, 1: 66–69
 Women, nineteenth century, 1: 25
 Women's clothing, 3: 478–80
 Women's movement
 Abzug, Bella, 1: 7–9
 Anthony, Susan B., 1: 79–81
 Beauvoir, Simone de, 2: 187–89
 Blackwell, Elizabeth, 2: 229–31
 Chisholm, Shirley, 3: 463
 Earhart, Amelia, 4: 643–46
 Friedan, Betty, 4: 738–41
 Ginsburg, Ruth Bader, 5: 794–96
 King, Billie Jean, 6: 1090
 Stanton, Elizabeth Cady, 9: 1747–49
 Women's National Loyal League, 1: 80
 Women's rights conventions, 1: 79–80
 Women's suffrage
 Anthony, Susan B., 1: 79–81
 Howe, Julia Ward, 5: 951
 Perón, Eva, 8: 1475–76
 Stanton, Elizabeth Cady, 9: 1747–49
Wong, Anna May, 10: 1958–60, 1959 (ill.)
 Wood, Ron, 9: 1620–21
Woods, Tiger, 10: 1960–62, 1961 (ill.)
 Woodward, Bob, 5: 826
Woolf, Virginia, 2: 301; 10: 1962–65, 1964 (ill.)
 Word processors, 10: 1902
Wordsworth, William, 3: 497–98; 10: 1965–68, 1966 (ill.)
 Workers Party of Kampuchea (WPK), 8: 1497
 Works Progress Administration (WPA), 10: 1925
 World Gift Company, 1: 109
 World Health Organization (WHO), 1: 76
The World of Jacques-Yves Cousteau (TV special), 3: 522
 World peace, 8: 1455
 World Population Conference, 9: 1675
 World Trade Center. *See* Terrorist attacks (September 11, 2001)

World War I

Banting, Frederick, 1: 168
Bogart, Humphrey, 2: 242
Castle, Vernon, 3: 392
Curie, Marie, 3: 540
De Gaulle, Charles, 4: 580
Doyle, Arthur Conan, 4: 631
Earhart, Amelia, 4: 644
Edison, Thomas, 4: 653
Ford, Henry, 4: 727–28
Geiger, Hans, 5: 780
Gompers, Samuel, 5: 803–4
Hemingway, Ernest, 5: 875
Hitler, Adolf, 5: 910
Lenin, Vladimir, 6: 1134
MacArthur, Douglas, 7: 1185–88
Mayo, Charles H., 7: 1260
Mayo, William J., 7: 1259–60
Remarque, Erich Maria, 8: 1564
Rockwell, Norman, 9: 1608
Roosevelt, Franklin D., 9: 1625
Wilson, Woodrow, 10: 1952–53

World War II

Agnew, Spiro, 1: 31
Arendt, Hannah, 1: 91–92
Baker, Josephine, 1: 154
Barbie, Klaus, 1: 170–73
Beckett, Samuel, 2: 190
Bourke-White, Margaret, 2: 261
Brezhnev, Leonid, 2: 281
Camus, Albert, 2: 350–51
Capra, Frank, 2: 359
Churchill, Winston, 3: 474, 475
Cousteau, Jacques, 3: 521–22
Coward, Noel, 3: 524
Dahl, Roald, 3: 544
Davis, Sammy, Jr., 3: 563
De Gaulle, Charles, 4: 579–81
DiMaggio, Joe, 4: 610
Eisenhower, Dwight D., 4: 657–60
Gandhi, Mohandas, 4: 761
Greene, Graham, 5: 833
Guthrie, Woody, 5: 840
Heisenberg, Werner, 5: 870
Heller, Joseph, 5: 871
Hemingway, Ernest, 5: 877
Hirohito, 5: 906
Hitler, Adolf, 5: 911–12
Hope, Bob, 5: 937–38
Horne, Lena, 5: 942
John Paul II, 6: 1013
Johnson, Lyndon B., 6: 1017
Kennedy, John F., 6: 1064–65

Khrushchev, Nikita, 6: 1085
Kissinger, Henry, 6: 1104
Lenin, Vladimir, 6: 1134
Lindbergh, Charles, 6: 1156
MacArthur, Douglas, 7: 1187
Mailer, Norman, 7: 1206
Marciano, Rocky, 7: 1230
Marcos, Ferdinand, 7: 1233–34
McCarthy, Joseph, 7: 1265
Mead, Margaret, 7: 1280
Muhammad, Elijah, 7: 1359
Mussolini, Benito, 7: 1368
Nixon, Richard, 8: 1393
Olivier, Laurence, 8: 1423
Roosevelt, Franklin D., 9: 1627–28
Sabin, Albert, 9: 1658
Salinger, J. D., 9: 1664–67
Sartre, Jean-Paul, 9: 1676–77
Schindler, Oskar, 9: 1678–81
Stein, Edith, 9: 1749–52
Stein, Gertrude, 9: 1754
Steinbeck, John, 9: 1756
Stoppard, Tom, 9: 1764–65
Tito, Marshal, 10: 1822
Truman, Harry S., 10: 1835–36
von Braun, Wernher, 10: 1882–83
Vonnegut, Kurt, 10: 1885, 1886
Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40

World Wildlife Fund, 1: 24

Wounded Knee, South Dakota, 2: 201

Wozniak, Steve, 6: 1009

Wright Brothers, 10: 1969–72, 1970 (ill.)

Wright, Frank Lloyd, 10: 1972–75, 1973 (ill.)

Wright, Orville, 10: 1969–72, 1970 (ill.)

Wright, Richard, 1: 157; 10: 1975–77, 1976 (ill.)

Wright, Wilbur, 10: 1969–72, 1970 (ill.)

Writers. *See also* Authors; Essayists; Novelists;

Playwrights; Poets

Achebe, Chinua, 1: 10–11

Adams, Samuel, 1: 21

Adamson, Joy, 1: 22–25

Alcott, Louisa May, 1: 39–41

Allen, Woody, 1: 49–52

Allende, Isabel, 1: 52–54

Alvarez, Julia, 1: 54–56

Andersen, Hans Christian, 1: 62–64

Angelou, Maya, 1: 73–75

Arendt, Hannah, 1: 91–93

Aristophanes, 1: 96–98

Asimov, Isaac, 1: 113–15

Atwood, Margaret, 1: 120–22

Austen, Jane, 1: 132–35

Balzac, Honoré de, 1: 164–66

Beauvoir, Simone de, 2: 187–89
 Bellow, Saul, 2: 202–4
 Blume, Judy, 2: 239–41
 Bradbury, Ray, 2: 264–66
 Brontë, Charlotte, 2: 283–84
 Brontë, Emily, 2: 284–86
 Brown, Helen Gurley, 2: 289–91
 Buck, Pearl S., 2: 308–10
 Camus, Albert, 2: 349–51
 Capote, Truman, 2: 354–57
 Carroll, Lewis, 3: 370–72
 Carson, Rachel, 3: 377–79
 Cather, Willa, 3: 397–99
 Cervantes, Miguel de, 3: 408–11
 Chaplin, Charlie, 3: 421–24
 Chaucer, Geoffrey, 3: 433–35
 Cheever, John, 3: 447–49
 Chekhov, Anton, 3: 449–51
 Chesnut, Mary Boykin, 3: 454–56
 Child, Julia, 3: 459–61
 Christie, Agatha, 3: 469–71
 Churchill, Winston, 3: 472–75
 Cicero, 3: 475–78
 Coleridge, Samuel Taylor, 3: 496–98
 Conrad, Joseph, 3: 508–10
 Coppola, Francis Ford, 3: 515–18
 Cosby, Bill, 3: 521
 Cousteau, Jacques, 3: 521–23
 Defoe, Daniel, 4: 574–76
 Descartes, René, 4: 590–92
 Dewey, John, 4: 594–97
 Dickens, Charles, 4: 600–603
 Diderot, Denis, 4: 606–8
 Donne, John, 4: 621–23
 Eliot, George, 4: 665–68
 Eliot, T. S., 4: 668–72
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 4: 680–83
 Faulkner, William, 4: 701–4
 Fitzgerald, F. Scott, 4: 718–21
 Franklin, Benjamin, 4: 731–35
 Freud, Sigmund, 4: 735–38
 Friedan, Betty, 4: 738–41
 Galbraith, John Kenneth, 4: 745–48
 Galen, 4: 748–50
 Galileo, 4: 750–52
 Geisel, Theodor, 5: 781–83
 Gibran, Kahlil, 5: 788–90
 Golding, William, 5: 800–801
 Gould, Stephen Jay, 5: 821–24
 Greene, Graham, 5: 831–33
 Grimm, Jakob and Wilhelm (Brothers Grimm),
 5: 836–38
 Haley, Alex, 5: 843–46
 Hardy, Thomas, 5: 857–59
 Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 5: 862–65
 Heller, Joseph, 5: 870–72
 Hemingway, Ernest, 5: 875–77
 Hinton, S. E., 5: 900–902
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 5: 920–23
 Holmes, Oliver Wendell, Jr., 5: 923–25
 hooks, bell, 5: 931–33
 Howe, Julia Ward, 5: 949–51
 Hughes, Langston, 5: 954–57
 Hugo, Victor, 5: 957–60
 Hurston, Zora Neale, 5: 960–62
 Irving, Washington, 5: 975–77
 James, P. D., 6: 991–93
 Jefferson, Thomas, 6: 994–97
 Johnson, Samuel, 6: 1023–24
 Jonson, Ben, 6: 1032–34
 Joyce, James, 6: 1038–39
 Kafka, Franz, 6: 1047–49
 Keller, Helen, 6: 1056–58
 Kerouac, Jack, 6: 1076–78
 King, Stephen, 6: 1098–1100
 Kipling, Rudyard, 6: 1101–3
 Lewis, C. S., 6: 1139–41
 Lewis, Sinclair, 6: 1144–45
 Lindbergh, Charles, 6: 1156
 London, Jack, 6: 1168–70
 Machiavelli, Niccolò, 7: 1188–91
 Mahfouz, Naguib, 7: 1203–5
 Mailer, Norman, 7: 1205–8
 Malamud, Bernard, 7: 1208–10
 Mamet, David Alan, 7: 1214–16
 Marx, Karl, 7: 1248–49
 Mather, Cotton, 7: 1252–55
 McMillan, Terry, 7: 1273–75
 Mead, Margaret, 7: 1277–81
 Miller, Arthur, 7: 1305–7
 Miller, Henry, 7: 1308–10
 Molière, 7: 1318–20
 Morrison, Toni, 7: 1338–40
 Nabokov, Vladimir, 7: 1371–73
 Nash, Ogden, 7: 1379–81
 Nietzsche, Friedrich, 8: 1387–90
 Oates, Joyce Carol, 8: 1413–16
 Orwell, George, 8: 1430–32
 Plath, Sylvia, 8: 1483–85
 Poe, Edgar Allan, 8: 1490–92
 Polo, Marco, 8: 1498–1500
 Porter, Katherine Anne, 8: 1507–9
 Post, Emily, 8: 1509–11
 Proulx, E. Annie, 8: 1524–26
 Proust, Marcel, 8: 1526–28
 Remarque, Erich Maria, 8: 1564–65
 Rousseau, Jean Jacques, 9: 1636–38
 Rowan, Carl, 9: 1639–40

- Rowling, J. K., 9: 1641–43
 Rushdie, Salman, 9: 1649–51
 Sagan, Carl, 9: 1659–62
 Salinger, J. D., 9: 1664–67
 Sandburg, Carl, 9: 1671–73
 Sanger, Margaret, 9: 1673–75
 Sartre, Jean-Paul, 9: 1676–78
 Scott, Walter, 9: 1693–95
 Shakespeare, William, 9: 1702–6
 Shelley, Mary Wollstonecraft, 9: 1708–11
 Simon, Neil, 9: 1716–19
 Sinclair, Upton, 9: 1722–24
 Singer, Isaac Bashevis, 9: 1724–26
 Stanton, Elizabeth Cady, 9: 1747–49
 Stein, Gertrude, 9: 1752–54
 Steinbeck, John, 9: 1755–57
 Stevenson, Robert Louis, 9: 1757–59
 Stoker, Bram, 9: 1759–61
 Stone, Oliver, 9: 1761–64
 Stowe, Harriet Beecher, 9: 1766–69
 Tan, Amy, 10: 1787–89
 Thackeray, William Makepeace, 10: 1801–4
 Thoreau, Henry David, 10: 1813–16
 Thurber, James, 10: 1819–20
 Tolkien, J. R. R., 10: 1824–26
 Tolstoy, Leo, 10: 1827–29
 Twain, Mark, 10: 1850–52
 Updike, John, 10: 1855–57
 Verne, Jules, 10: 1864–67
 Vidal, Gore, 10: 1872–74
 Vonnegut, Kurt, 10: 1884–87
 Walker, Alice, 10: 1891–94
 Webster, Noah, 10: 1921
 Welles, Orson, 10: 1922–24
 Welty, Eudora, 10: 1925–27
 Wharton, Edith, 10: 1928–29
 White, E. B., 10: 1932–34
 Wiesel, Elie, 10: 1938–40
 Wilde, Oscar, 10: 1940–42
 Wilder, Laura Ingalls, 10: 1943–45
 Wilder, Thornton, 10: 1946–48
 Williams, Tennessee, 10: 1948–50
 Woolf, Virginia, 10: 1962–65
 Wright, Richard, 10: 1975–77
 Zindel, Paul, 10: 1987–89
- Writing, Cherokee, 9: 1701–2
Wuthering Heights (Brontë), 2: 286
 Wyman, Bill, 9: 1619 (ill.)
 Wyoming
 Cheney, Dick, 3: 452–53
- ## X
- X, Malcolm. *See* Malcolm X
 Xenophon, 9: 1729
 X-15 rocket-engine plane, 1: 103
- ## Y
- Yahya ibn Khalid, 8: 1555
 “Year Zero” (Cambodia), 8: 1516
Yeats, William Butler, 10: **1979–82**, 1980 (ill.)
Yellow Submarine (film), 2: 184
Yeltsin, Boris, 5: 812; 8: 1539; 10: **1982–85**, 1983 (ill.)
Yentl (film), 9: 1778
Yol (Alvarez), 1: 56
 Yom Kippur War, 1: 87; 7: 1286, 1354
 Yosemite Valley, 7: 1362
 Yossarian (literary character), 5: 871
You Can’t Take It With You (film), 2: 358
You Have Seen Their Faces (Bourke-White), 2: 261
 Young adult literature
 Alcott, Louisa May, 1: 39–41
 Blume, Judy, 2: 239–41
 Hinton, S. E., 5: 900–902
 Zindel, Paul, 10: 1987–89
 Young, Lester, 5: 919
 “You’re a Good Man, Charlie Brown,” 9: 1689
 Yüan Dynasty (China), 6: 1110
 Yugoslavia, 7: 1310–13; 10: 1821–23
 Yukawa, H., 1: 66
- ## Z
- Zacchow, Friedrich Wilhelm, 5: 854
 Zambia, 2: 256–57
 Zarzuela, 4: 617
 Zeus, 1: 30
 Zia ul-Haq, General, 2: 218
 Ziegfeld Follies
 Hope, Bob, 5: 937
 Rogers, Will, 9: 1615
Zindel, Paul, 10: **1987–89**, 1988 (ill.)
 Zionists and Zionism
 Begin, Menachem, 2: 194–95
 Lazarus, Emma, 6: 1121
 Meir, Golda, 7: 1284–86
 Zola, Émile, 3: 412, 413; 7: 1220